

COLUMBIA LIBRARIES OFFSITE
AVERY FINE ARTS RESTRICTED

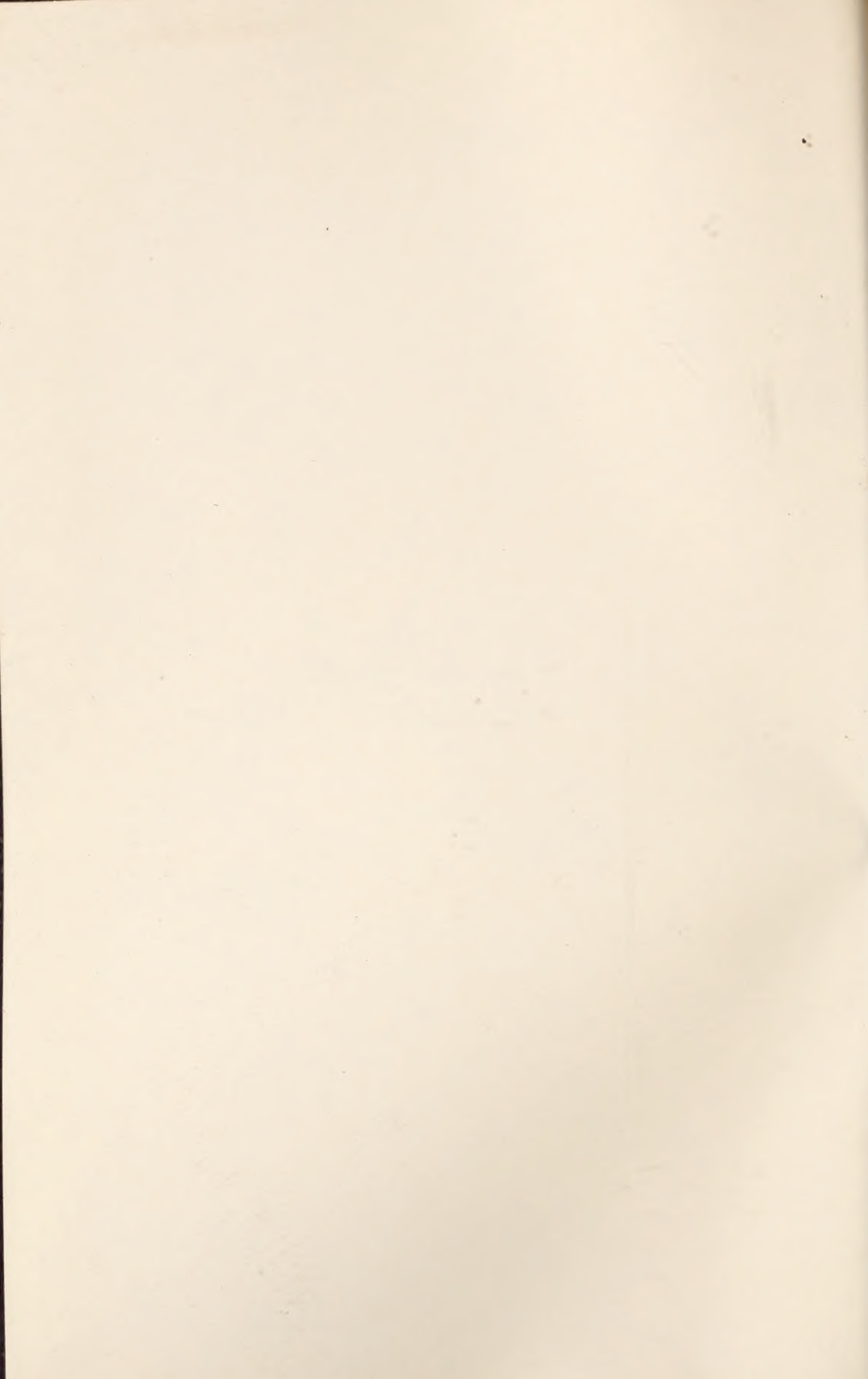


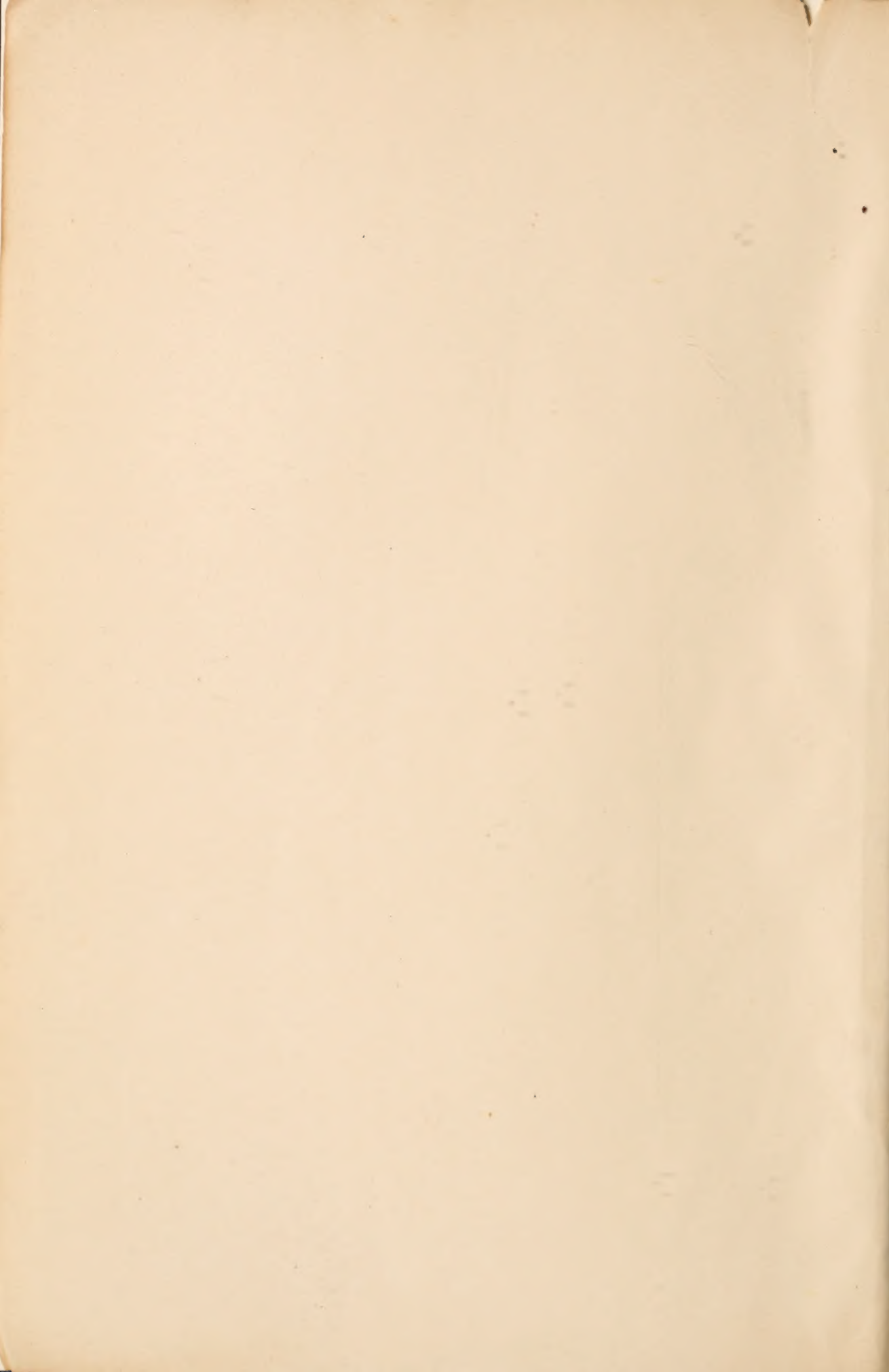
AR01397443

AVERY ARCHITECTURAL AND FINE ARTS LIBRARY
GIFT OF SEYMOUR B. DURST OLD YORK LIBRARY



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2013





—HISTORY—

OF

WESTCHESTER COUNTY,

NEW YORK,

INCLUDING

MORRISANIA, KINGS BRIDGE, AND WEST FARMS,

WHICH HAVE BEEN ANNEXED TO NEW YORK CITY.

BY

J. THOMAS SCHARF, A. M., LL. D.

Author "History of Maryland," "Chronicles of Baltimore," "History of Baltimore City and County," "History of St. Louis City and County," "History of the City of Philadelphia, Pa.," etc., etc. Corresponding Member of the Historical Societies of New York, Pennsylvania, Wisconsin, Minnesota, Virginia, Georgia, South Carolina, Historic and Genealogical Society of New England, Philosophical Society of Ohio, etc., etc.

ASSISTED BY A STAFF OF CAREFULLY SELECTED EXPERTS IN EVERY DEPARTMENT.

IN TWO VOLUMES, ILLUSTRATED.

VOL. II.

PHILADELPHIA:

L. E. PRESTON & CO.

1886.

OFFSITE

F

127

.WS

S3

Copyright, 1886,

BY L. E. PRESTON & CO.

All Rights Reserved.

ILLUSTRATIONS.

VOLUME II.

	On or opposite page		On or opposite page
Abendroth Brothers, Eagle Iron & Stove Works	698	Brandreth, William, Portrait of	360
Abendroth, W. P., Portrait of	706	Brown, Fayette P., Portrait of	124
Acknowledgments of Deeds	580	Brown, N., Homestead of	703
Adams, Miles, Portrait of	564	Burdsall, Ellwood, Portrait of	719
Agate, Joseph, Residence of	123	Byram Bridge	679
Anderson, James W., Portrait of	574	Carpenter, F. M., Portrait of	617
Anderson, John, Portrait of	308	Carpenter, John W., Portrait of	454
Andre House, near Peekskill	373	Chivvis, F. W., Portrait of	759
Andre, John, Portrait of	201	Clapp, D. F., Portrait of	408
Ambler, Benjamin I., Portrait of	586	Clark, A. Mead, Portrait of	587
Arnold, Benedict, Portrait of	199	Clinton, George, Portrait of	269
Arnold, Mrs. Benedict	200	Cobb, Lyman, Jr., Portrait of	114
Arms of the Van Cortlandts	423	Cochran, William F., Residence of	2
Asbury, Bishop Francis, Portrait of	60	Coffey, William S., Autograph of	759, 764
Appleton, D. S., Residence of	184	Cole, Rev. David, Autograph of	172
Aqueduct Arch at Sing Sing	322	Colgate, James B., Portrait of	78
Aqueduct Bridge across the Pocantico	307	Colgate, James B., Residence of	79
Aqueduct Bridge, Yonkers	38	Collins, R. S., Residence of	714
Baird, Rev. Charles W., Autograph of	701, 719	Conkling, William H., Portrait of	761
Barrett, Joseph, Autograph of	608, 628, 643	Corley, Rev. Charles B., Portrait of	74
Barron, Dr. John C., Residence of	246	Cornell, Nathaniel, Portrait of	460
Barton, William, Residence of	189	Cornell, Thomas C., Portrait of	103
Bashford, Miss Joanna C., Portrait of	144	Cortlandt, Lieutenant-Governor Pierre, Portrait of	430
Bedford, Early Farm Map of	582	Cortlandt Manor-House, Cortlandt	426
Bedford, Map of	597	Cowdin, Elliot C., Portrait of	619
Beekman, Mrs. Cornelia, Portrait of	286	Croton Boarding and Day School	420
Bischoff, Henry W., Portrait of	623	Croton Lake	462
Blaklee, Ebenezer G., Portrait of	359	Crosby, Enoch	517
Bleakley, William, Portrait of	415	Culver, Charles E., Autograph of	497, 535
Boehm, Rev. Henry, Portrait of	61	Cumming, Rev. W. J., Autograph of	423, 469
Bradley, D. Ogden, Portrait of	261	Dam at Croton Lake	464
Brady, E. B., Portrait of	561	Decker, T. W., Residence of	510
Brandreth, B., Portrait of	358	Diagram showing Remains of French Ovens	180

	On or opposite page		On or opposite page
Dickey, Andrew, Residence of	332	Irving Family Burial-Plot	237
Duncomb, Alfred H., Portrait of	760	Irving's House, Tablet on	236
Dunham, John B., Portrait of	758	Irving, Washington, "Sunnyside," the home of	234
Dutch Church, Sleepy Hollow	289	Jay Cemetery, Rye	698
Early Farm Map of Sing Sing	325	Keeler, Walter, Residence of	514
East Chester, Draft of Boundary	721	Keeler, J. W., Autograph of	561
East Chester, Map of, in 1797	731	Kingsland, Ambrose C., Portrait of	309
Eickemeyer, R., Portrait of	104	Klunder, C. F., Portrait of	330
Elephant Monument	480	Land Gate, Rye, England	648
Epitaphs from Sleepy Hollow Cemetery	295	Landrine House	206
Ettlinger, Louis, Residence of	422	Law, Walter W., Residence of	30
Farrington, H. P., Portrait of	406	Lawrence, W. Fred., Portrait of	119
Farrington, Harvey P., Residence of	407	Lee, Enos, Portrait of	442
Ferris, Benson, Portrait of	260	Lewis, George, Jr., Residence of	232
Field, Benjamin H., Portrait of	444	Lewisboro, Map of	537
Field, Cyrus W., Portrait of	270	Lings, Rev. Albert A., Portrait of	75
Field, Cyrus W., Residence of	191	Livingston, Chancellor Robert R., Portrait of	455
Field, Cyrus W., "The Washington Building"	271	Livingston, Van Brugh, House	186
Fisher, Dr. George J., Autograph of	365	Lord, Frederick A. and W. Addison Burnham, Residence of	174
Flagg, Ethan, Portrait of	38	Lord & Burnham, Horticultural Building	174
Fort, Rye	651	Lounsbery, James, Residence of	588
Fort, Gable End	652	Lounsbery, John W., Portrait of	709
Fowler, Philemon H., Portrait of	751	Lounsbery, Richard P., Residence of	588
Frost, John W., Portrait of	419	Lowerre, Seaman, Portrait of	164
Frost, Jordan C., Portrait of	443	Ludlow Street Reformed Church Chapel, Yonkers	71
Getty, Robert P., Portrait of	45	Lyon, Stephen, Portrait of	584
Great Stone at the Wading-Place, Rye	657	McComb, J. J., Residence of	188
Greenburgh and Mount Pleasant, Map of	178	McCord, Henry D., Portrait of	325
Guion's Tavern	755	Mangam, Daniel D., Portrait of	334
Guiteau, F. W., Residence of	193	Mangin, Capt. John, Portrait of	44
Halsey House, East Chester	752	Manor House and Surroundings in 1842	10
Halstead House	671	Masters', Misses, School, Dobbs Ferry	188
Hart, John C., Portrait of	454	Mead, Solomon, Portrait of	546
Haviland's or Penfield House, Rye	669	Medal, the Captors'	219
Hepworth, S. S. & Co., Machine Works, Yonkers	111	Mills, D. O., Portrait of	512
High Bridge	465	Monument (old) erected to the Captors of Andre	226
Hobbs, John, Portrait of	46	Monument (new) erected to the Captors of Andre	228
Holden, J. G. P., Portrait of	90	Morgan, George D., Residence of	190
Holder, F. T., Residence of	26	Mount Pleasant, Map of	317
Holmes, John C., Portrait of	550	Moses, David B., Portrait of	326
"Home Lot," Rye	658	Nappeckmack House in 1851, Yonkers	143
Horton, Elias Q., Portrait of	440	Newman, Amos, Portrait of	575
Horton, Stephen D., Portrait of	404	Nisbet, W. F., Residence of	22
Horton, W. H., Autograph of	643	North Salem, Map of	503
Horton, W. James, Portrait of	441	Noxon, Isaac B., Portrait of	357
Hopkins, F. T., Portrait of	498	Odell House, Rochambeau's Headquarters	179
Hopkins, F. T., Residence of	499	Odell, Isaac, Portrait of	276
Hunt, Daniel, Portrait of	500	Oliver, John W., Portrait of	92
Hunt, Levi, Portrait of	613	Olmsted, John, Portrait of	116
Hoyt, James E., Portrait of	577	Otis, Charles R., Portrait of	100
Indian Autographs	581	Otis, E. G., Portrait of	98

ILLUSTRATIONS.

v

	On or opposite page		On or opposite page
Otis, Norton P., Portrait of	101	St. John's Rectory and Glebe in 1809	57
Palmer, Stephen, Portrait of	319	St. Paul's Church, East Chester	725
Park, Charles, Residence of	712	St. Vincent's Retreat for the Insane, Harrison	711
Park, Joseph, Portrait of	707	Sanders, James P., Portrait of	136
Park, Joseph, Residence of	672	Satterlee, S. K., Portrait of	702
Patterson, Rev. William, Portrait of	572	Satterlee, S. K., Residence of	703
Paulding and Requa Houses	265	Schieffelin, H. Maunsell, Residence of	86
Peekskill, View of	389	Scriba, Augustus M., Portrait of	417
Peene, Joseph, Sr., Portrait of	148	Shonnard, Mr. and Mrs. Edward F., Portraits of	168
Phillipe Manor-House and Sleepy Hollow Mill	311	Silver, David, Portrait of	263
Phillipe Manor-House, Putnam Co., N. Y.	175	Silver, George, Residence of	251
Phillipe, Mary, Portrait of	13	Skinner, Halcyon, Portrait of	108
Phraner, Wilson, Portrait of	342	Sleepy Hollow Bridge	306
Pierce, Moses, Portrait of	318	Smith, Alexander & Sons', Carpet Works, Yonkers	106
Pond, N. C., Portrait of	705	Smith, Caleb, Portrait of	167
Potter, O. B., Portrait of	328	Smith, Francis S., Residence of	646
Presbyterian Church, Poundridge	571	Smith, George T., Autograph of	574
Presbyterian Church, Rye (exterior)	686	Smith, M. H., Portrait of	51
Presbyterian Church, Rye (interior)	687	Smith, N. F., Residence of	515
Presbyterian Church, Sing Sing	341	Smith, Miss Priscilla, Residence of	158
Preston, Right Rev. Monsignor Thos. S., Portrait of	73	Sniffin's Hill	677
Purser, Geo. H., Portrait of	170 a	Snyder, Edwin, Portrait of	593
Purser, Geo. H., Residence of	170 b	Spencer, James E., Portrait of	620
Quackenbush, David, Portrait of	762	Spencer, John S., Portrait of	622
Quick, S. B., Portrait of	508	Spencer Optical Works	621
Quick, S. B., Residence of	509	Stapler, Joseph, Jr., Residence of	277
Quick, S. Francis, Portrait of	170	Stewart, George, Portrait of	166
Quintard, George W., Portrait of	700	Stewart, James, Portrait of	165
Quintard, George W., Residence of	701	Stillman, James, Property of	322
Radford, Thomas, Portrait of	169	Stoors, Richard A., Residence of	514
Raymond, Aaron, Portrait of	592	Strang, Albert, Portrait of	438
Reformed Church and Parsonage, Yonkers	69	Strang, A. R., Portrait of	437
Reid's Mill, built in 1739	753	Strang, Daniel, Portrait of	438
Reynolds, Alvah, Portrait of	545	Strang, Martin L., Portrait of	439
Richards, A. C., Residence of	192	Strang's Tavern, Rye	668
Roberts, Lewis, Portrait of	279	Strange, Theo. A., Portrait of	244
Roberts, Lewis, Residence of	280	Strange, Theo. A., Residence of	245
Roberts, R. A., Residence of	132	Stuart, Gilbert, Portrait of	191
Robertson, George W., Portrait of	405	Tarrytown, View of	194
Robertson, Henry, Portrait of	590	Taylor, Alexander, Portrait of	704
Robertson, Jabez, Portrait of	591	Taylor, Alexander, Jr., Portrait of	704
Rockwell, Samuel D., Portrait of	113	Taylor, Alexander, Jr., Residence of	644
Roscoe, Caleb, Portrait of	353	Terry, John T., Portrait of	242
Ryan, William, Portrait of	708	Terry, John T., Residence of	243
Rye Beach	672	Tingue, W. J., Hawthorne Woolen-Mills	680
Rye Ferry	665	Tingue, W. J., Residence of	681
Rye, in Sussex, England	649	Todd, Harvey M., Portrait of	486
Rye, Map of Indian Tracts	643	Todd, John A., Autograph of	283, 321
Rye Seminary	695	Todd, Oliver U., Portrait of	485
St. John's Episcopal Church and Rectory, 1886	59	Tompkins, John B., Portrait of	461
St. John's Episcopal Church, Yonkers, 1752	56	Townsend, Samuel O., Portrait of	638

ILLUSTRATIONS.

	On or opposite page		On or opposite page
Trexor, John B., Portrait of	76	Webb, W. H., Residence of	248
Trexor, John B., Residence of	77	Wells, Lemuel, Map of Estate, purchased in 1813	19
Underhill, Edward B., Portrait of	458	Wells, Lemuel, Map of Estate, divided in 1843	21
Underhill, Edward B., Residence of	459	Weston, Edward, Residence of	130
Underhill House	448	White Plains in 1721	661
Van Cortlandt, Catherine E., Autograph of	436	Whitefield, George, Portrait of	394
Van Cortlandt, Pierre, Portrait of	436	Williams, J. E., Portrait of	272
Van Wart, Alexander, Portrait of	320	Willsea, Abram O., Portrait of	250
Vail, Jonathan, Portrait of	118	Worthington, Henry R., Portrait of	274
Vane on Old Dutch Church, Sleepy Hollow	173	Worthington, Henry R., Residence of	275
Ventilator	466	Worthington Memorial Chapel	275
Warburton Avenue Baptist Church, Yonkers	80	Wright, C. J., Portrait of	400
Waring Hat Manufactory	95	Yonkers City Hall, 1886 (Old Manor-House)	29
Waring, John T., Portrait of	96	Yonkers, Map of Central Part of, in 1847	24
Washburn, Joshua B., Portrait of	625	Yonkers, Village of, 1868-72.	26
Washburne, S. Ferris, Portrait of	363	Young, Townsend, Portrait of	361
Water Tower at High Bridge	467		

CONTENTS OF VOLUME II.

CHAPTER I.	PAGE.
YONKERS,	1-172
BY REV. DAVID COLE, D. D.	

CHAPTER II.	PAGE.
GREENBURGH,	172-283
BY REV. JOHN A. TODD, D. D.	

CHAPTER III.	PAGE.
MOUNT PLEASANT,	283-321
BY REV. JOHN A. TODD, D. D.	

CHAPTER IV.	PAGE.
OSSINING,	321-365
BY GEORGE JACKSON FISHER, M. D.	

CHAPTER V.	PAGE.
CORTLANDT,	365-436
BY REV. WILLIAM J. CUMMING.	

CHAPTER VI.	PAGE.
YORKTOWN,	436-469
BY REV. WILLIAM J. CUMMING.	

CHAPTER VII.	PAGE.
SOMERS,	469-499
BY CHARLES E. CULVER.	

CHAPTER VIII.	PAGE.
NORTH SALEM,	499-535
BY CHARLES E. CULVER.	

CHAPTER IX.	PAGE.
LEWISBORO,	535-561
BY J. W. KEELER.	

CHAPTER X.	PAGE.
POUNDRIDGE,	561-574
BY GEORGE THATCHER SMITH.	

CHAPTER XI.	PAGE.
BEDFORD,	574-608
BY JOSEPH BARRETT.	

CHAPTER XII.	PAGE.
NEW CASTLE,	608-629
BY JOSEPH BARRETT.	

CHAPTER XIII.	PAGE.
NORTH CASTLE,	629-643
BY JOSEPH BARRETT and W. H. HORTON.	

CHAPTER XIV.	PAGE.
RYE,	643-709
BY REV. CHARLES W. BAIRD, D. D.	

CHAPTER XV.	PAGE.
HARRISON,	709-720
BY REV. CHARLES W. BAIRD, D. D.	

CHAPTER XVI.	PAGE.
EAST CHESTER,	720-764
BY REV. WILLIAM S. COFFEY, A. M.	



THE

HISTORY OF WESTCHESTER COUNTY.

TOWN HISTORIES.

CHAPTER I.

YONKERS.

BY REV. DAVID COLE, D.D.,
Pastor of the Reformed Church, Yonkers.

SECTION I.

Introductory.

THE word "Yonkers" is from the Holland *Jonkheer*—Eng., "Young Nobleman,"—applied between 1646 and 1655 by the Hollanders to Adriaen Van Der Donck, first white owner of the territory. They called him "De *Jonkheer*," and his estate "De *Jonkheers land*," or briefly, "De *Jonkheers*." This phrase fixed itself upon the locality and, among the later English-speaking people, easily passed into "The Yonkers." It never gave way to the decisive term "Yonkers" till March 7, 1788, when the Legislature of New York united upon the latter as a designation for this¹ as one of the twenty described towns into which it divided the county of Westchester. The town that day defined, remained without change till December 16, 1872, when the southern portion of it was set off as the town of Kingsbridge. Meanwhile, however, from April 12, 1855, the name Yonkers, besides being used of the town, had also been more restrictively applied to a small village of about nine hundred acres laid off within the town, extending one mile and seven-tenths upon the Hudson, and to the east an average of eight-tenths of a mile in breadth. Such, down to December 16, 1872, had been the various applications of the name. It now stands for a county town and a city of identical area, bounded on the north by the town of Greenburgh, on the east

by the middle of the Bronx River, on the south by the city of New York and on the west by the Hudson. In treating of the history of Yonkers, we shall have to use the word in all the various applications in which we have thus shown that it has been or is employed.

By air-line the city hall of Yonkers is eighteen miles northeast from the southern extremity of New York City, nine and a half miles southwest from the courthouse of Westchester County at White Plains, one hundred and twelve miles south from Albany and two hundred and twenty miles northeast from Washington. The length of the west side, or Hudson River boundary of the city, is four and a third miles, and that of its east side, or Bronx River boundary, is six and a half miles, while its breadth is along its northern line a little more than four miles, and along its southern line a little less than three. It contains seventeen and a half square miles, and its population, in 1880, was given as eighteen thousand eight hundred and ninety-two. It is, of course, much larger now. More than half this population is compacted, as to its homes, within less than one square mile in the southwestern part of the city.

The topography of Yonkers, the character of its rocks and soils and the abundance and purity of its streams render it in a wonderful degree pleasing to the eye, conducive to health and adapted to homes and ornamental cultivation. It has a delightful variety of hill and dale that can never be materially changed, and a natural beauty of scenery not to be surpassed. It abounds in rocks with alkaline properties which nourish and stimulate vegetation. Its soil is so various as to produce a very large variety of trees and flora. It is full of the natural stimulants of a luxuriant vegetation, being generally a fine reddish loam which sustains rich carpetings of verdure and an endless profusion of native trees, all of which combine to clothe the landscape with beauty. Prominent among the native trees are the elm, hickory,

¹ The following are the words of the act as relating to this town: "And all that part of the County of Westchester, bounded easterly by Bronx River, southerly by the town of Westchester, westerly by the County of New York and Hudson's River, and northerly by the north bounds of a tract of land called 'The Yonkers,' shall be and hereby is erected into a town by the name of Yonkers."

hemlock and chestnut, to which are added the maple and the oak, both of many varieties. And three very valuable streams—the Nepperhan (or Saw-Mill), the Sprain and the Grassy Sprain—enter the city from the north. The Nepperhan, after flowing nearly parallel with the Hudson many miles, from its rise in the town of Mount Pleasant, turns sharply to the west and empties into the river about one mile above the south line of the city, while the Sprain and Grassy Sprain, uniting about three miles northeast of the mouth of the Nepperhan, flow on in a southeasterly direction under the name of the Sprain, finally discharging into the Bronx. These streams are of very great value to the city. The Nepperhan has been extensively used for milling purposes, and from the Sprain brooks Yonkers derives an inexhaustible supply of water of the most excellent quality. Entering the city from the north are also five prominent ridges, which trend southward with considerable regularity, but are sufficiently broken at convenient points to admit of such east and west roads as necessity requires. Beginning from the west side, the first of these ridges extends southward along the Hudson, without a break, till it is cut off at Getty Square by the bend of the Nepperhan. On this ridge and its slopes, along North Broadway, Palisade, Warburton and other avenues and streets crossing them, are located most of the palatial residences of Yonkers. South of the break of this ridge, at Getty Square, the ground between South Broadway and the Hudson, with the exception of the pretty rise on the line of Hawthorne Avenue, is a depressed plateau as far as Ludlow Street. Below this it again rises into a ridge, which enters New York City at Mount St. Vincent, and continues unbroken till it terminates abruptly at Spuyten Duyvil. The second ridge, entering the city from the north, between the Nepperhan and Sprain Rivers, is at some more northerly points sufficiently depressed to admit of cross-roads, but does not decidedly break till it reaches Yonkers Avenue, at the south end of Oakland Cemetery. Below this break it soon reappears and continues in a succession of knolls, of which Nodine and Park Hills are the most prominent. The course of this knoll-chain is still southward between the valley of Tibbett's Brook and South Broadway: it finally terminates at Van Cortland Lake. Except on Nodine Hill, on which a large and thriving community has its homes, this second ridge, with its continuation of knolls, is still largely covered with native forest-trees, though many fine ferns may be seen along its slopes. The third ridge, entering the city from the north, between the Sprain and Grassy Sprain, is, as to its northern part, completely enclosed by these streams, breaking up abruptly at their junction. Below the junction, however, there is at once a resumption of high ground, beginning with the well-known Valentine's Hill and continuing, with occasional slight depressions, all the way down to the Harlem River. This ridge, on both

its northern and southern sections, might be, if used, a very valuable agricultural tract. But it is largely in the hands of wealthy non-residents, who, satisfied with the immense prospective value they see in it, will not lease or rent it at present for farm uses at rates admitting of profits to farmers. It is said that the highest land in the city of Yonkers, four hundred and twenty-five feet above the Hudson, is at the point at which this third ridge comes in from Greenburgh. The fourth and fifth ridges, entering the city from the north, both terminate finally above the mouth of the Sprain. The former lies between the Grassy Sprain and Central Park Avenue, and the latter between Central Park Avenue and the Bronx. Such is the general topography of Yonkers. Direct east and west roads within it are nowhere possible, but openings a little winding, yet sufficiently convenient for such roads, are found where they seem to be needed. The easiest and most used of these is that which leaves the Hudson at the foot of Main Street, crosses Getty Square, follows along New Main Street and Nepperhan Avenue to Yonkers Avenue, and along the latter avenue to the Bronx River. The hills of Yonkers form one of its most enchanting features and give the city that eminently healthful character which makes it so desirable as a place for homes, and is attracting to it more and more every year people of wealth and culture. Refinement and capital are turning the summits of these hills into palace-sites, their beautiful slopes into terrace-gardens and the winding roads of the city into fascinating drives, while every year, as it comes, will develop for Yonkers new means of rapid transit to neighboring points, and especially to the business portions of the great metropolis so near at hand. It is to the history and present condition of this beautiful city, thus favored as to topography, soil, streams and general prospects and possibilities, that the following pages are to be devoted. We shall take up the territory it occupies from its first discovery by white men, in 1609, and bring its history down through its succeeding periods to the present time.

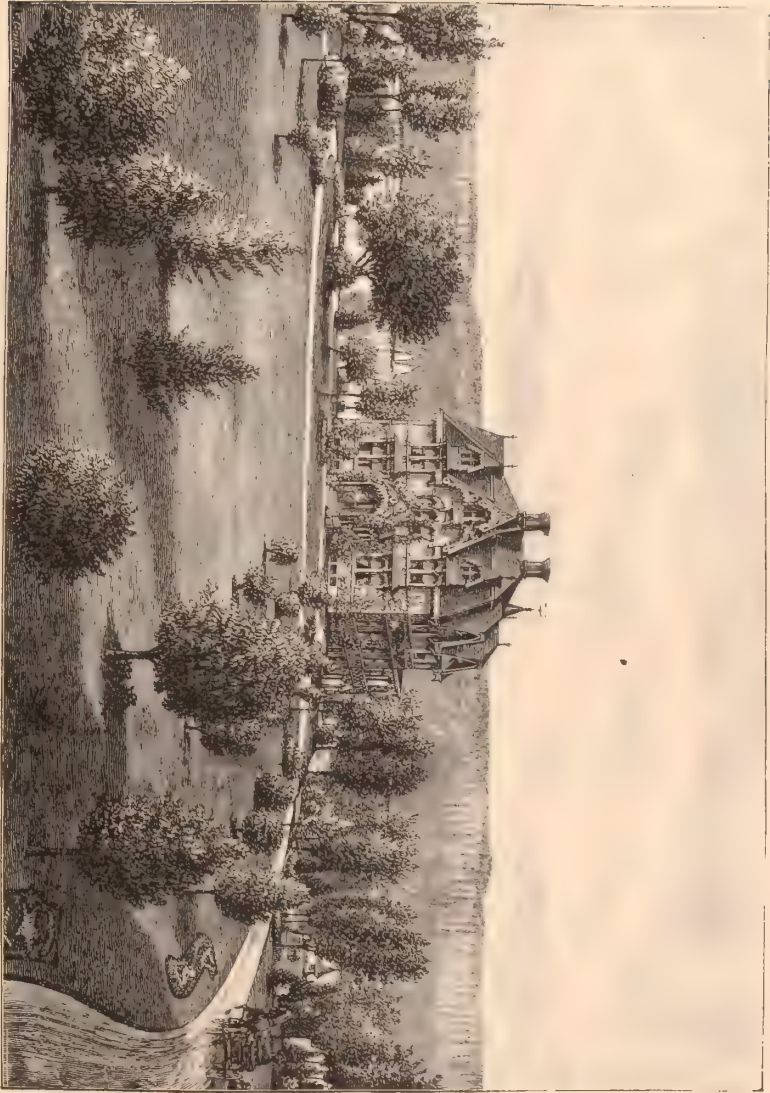
SECTION II.

Period of Discovery and Dutch Rule.

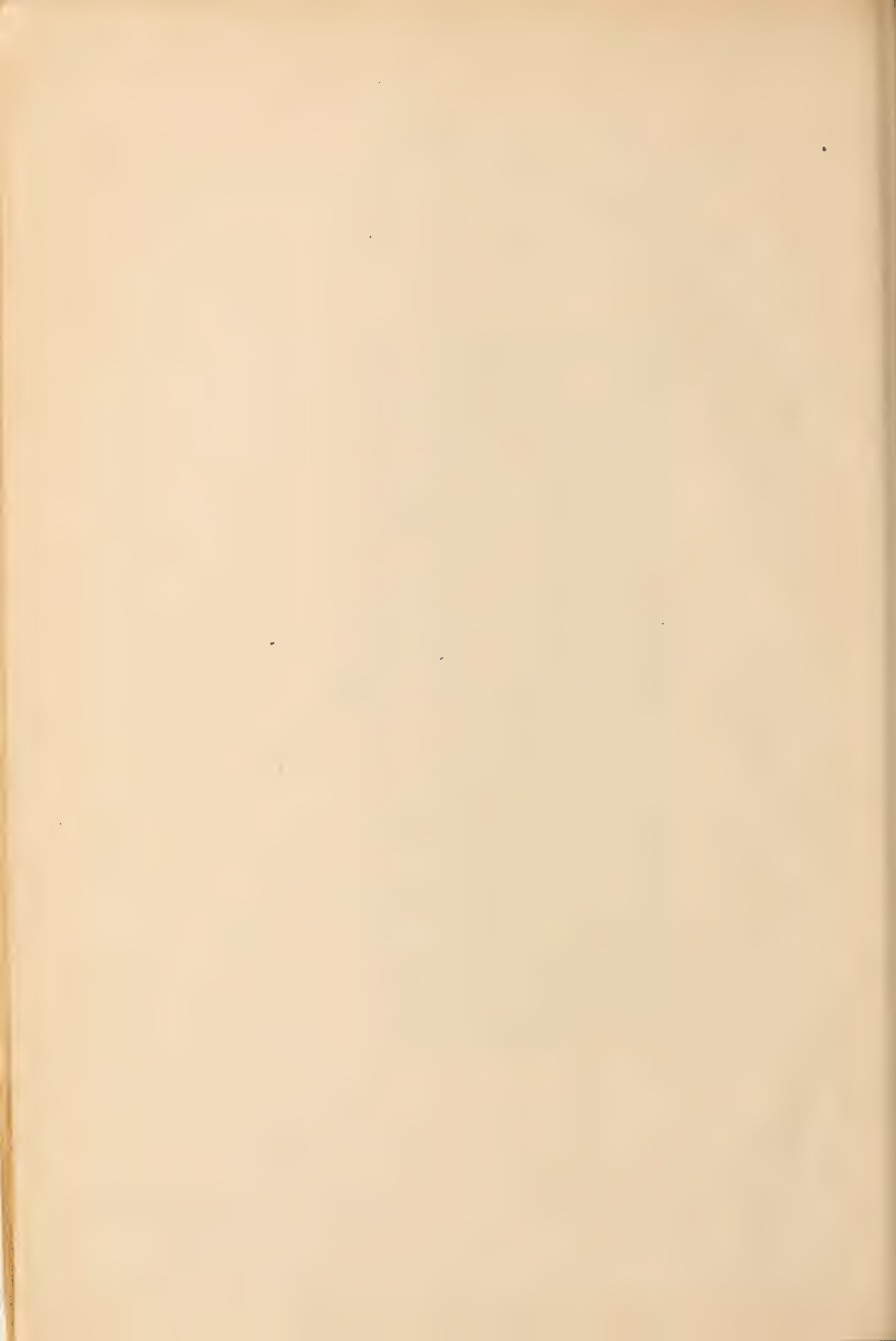
(1609-1664.)

The discovery of America is assigned to the year 1492. That of this locality, however, was reserved for more than a century later. No white man ever ascended the Hudson River till 1609. At that time the territory hereabout was occupied by Indians. We must speak briefly of some of these former occupants of American soil, and especially of those of them who lived here.

The greatest savage nation on this continent three hundred years ago was the Algonquin. Mr. Bancroft thinks it numbered in 1639 about ninety thousand. Its general area extended from the Esquimaux to the southern boundary of South Carolina, and from the



"DUNCRAGGAN,"
RESIDENCE OF WM. F. COCHRAN,
YONKERS, N. Y.



Atlantic to the Mississippi. It embraced all the present State of New York, except a reservation in the Western, Central and Northern parts, which belonged to that powerful confederation of Senecas, Cayugas, Onondagas, Oneidas and Mohawks, known in history as "The Iroquois," or "The Five Nations." Below this confederation's eastern and southern limit, at the mouth of the Mohawk, on the west side of the Hudson River, perhaps as far south as Haverstraw, and on the east side in length as far south as Spuyten Duyvil, and in breadth all the way from the Hudson to the Connecticut, lay the Mohegans. Over the river, below Haverstraw, were the Tappans in the North and the Monseys in the South. On New York island was the Manhattan tribe, from which the island took its early name.

All Indian tribes were divided into families, and each family had one or more villages. From Poughkeepsie southward, along the east side of the river, the Mohegan tribe had the Wappinger family above, and in the Highlands, the Kitchawank family along the Croton, the Sintsinck family within our present town of Ossining, and the Weckquaskeck family from the Sintsincks down to Spuyten Duyvil, and between the Hudson and the Bronx Rivers. The Weckquaskeck family of the Mohegan tribe of the Algonquin nation were the Indians of this site.¹ Their name is

¹ Some maintain that on this side of the Hudson, the Mohegans came down only to the northern boundary of Yonkers, and that Yonkers was Manhattan, not Mohegan ground. This view was taken by the historian, Henry B. Dawson of Morrisania, in his Yonkers "Gazette Series" of 1866. It evidently rests on the following passages from early writers, which seem to us to have been misunderstood:

(a) De Laet ("Description of the New Netherland," 1625) says: "On the east side, upon the main land, dwell the Manhattans, etc."

The author, in making this statement, is regarding the landscape and river from a point between Nutten (or Governor's) Island and Communipaw. It is while looking from this point, that, having just named and still thinking of Governor's Island, he refers to the *main land on the east side*, evidently meaning Manhattan Island. In the same connection, still viewing objects from this point, he says, "On the west side (meaning Communipaw) are the Sanhickans. . . they dwell within the Sandy Hook, and along the bay, as well as in the interior of the country."

(b) Van Der Donck ("History of New Netherland," 1650) speaking of the languages of the American Indians, says they may be "counted as four,—viz.: Manhattan, Minquas, Savanoos and Wappanoos. With the Manhattans (he adds) we include those who live in the *neighboring places along the North River*, on Long Island and at the Neversink. With the Minquas we include the Senecas, the Maquas and the other inland tribes. The Savanoos are the Southern nations, and the Wappanoos are the Eastern nations."

This author has here been understood to mean that the Manhattan tribe extended upward to "the *neighboring places along the North River*," whereas he clearly means this only,—that of the four general Indian languages, of which he speaks, the Manhattan language was spoken by the Indians "along the North River." This was true. The Mohegans were closely allied to the Manhattans. Both were Algonquins, and both used the same tongue.

(c) De Vries ("Voyages," 1656) says: "Opposite Tappaan lies a place called Weckquaskeck."

"Opposite Tappaan," as the word Tappaan is here used, was Dobbs Ferry, not Yonkers. It is true that "Weckquaskeck," in the restricted sense of the *principal village* of the Weckquaskeck family, was at Dobbs Ferry. But this did not imply that the Weckquaskeck family did not extend southward to Spuyten Duyvil, any more than it implied that it did not extend northward to Tarrytown. It really lay along the river

said to mean "the place of the bark kettle." It was applied, not to the family only, but to a rivulet emptying into the Hudson at Dobbs Ferry, and further still, to a family village at the rivulet's mouth. One of the Weckquaskeck villages was here, around the mouth of the Nepperhan. The family called it Nappeckamack, or "the rapid water settlement," evidently from the impetuous character of the stream, then flowing along without an artificial restraint. The word "Nepperhaem" was also used, possibly for the country around the village. "Nepperhan," as now applied to the Saw-Mill River, is probably from one or the other of these terms. In the upper part of our county, at a little village along this river, known by its people as Unionville, is a postal station known as "Neperan." Probably these orthographies all came from one source.

The Weckquaskecks were devoted to hunting and fishing and mostly negligent of agriculture. Though moved by many generous instincts, they were yet strangers to the motives which govern civilized men. The topographic conditions of the country they had never undertaken to modify. On the north of the Nepperhan, within the few hundred feet they occupied above its mouth, the wooded land sloped down to the stream without a break; and on the south the flowing water was encircled by a close bluff (see our map of 1847), which excavation has now set back to make room for the present Main Street and building lots beyond it. If one would fancy how Nappeckamack and its people appeared in 1609, let him call up what we read of American Indians, with their wigwams, scant attire, dark superstitions, implements of hunting and war and general habits of life. Let him set aside all present buildings and streets and restore the original conditions of the river-front. Let him bring back the forests and wild beasts, hush the hum of mills and the whistles of factories and locomotives, and put back the purity of the Nepperhan with the other conditions, as we have described them, of the original natural scene. Upon that scene have passed in two hundred and seventy-seven years all the

all the way from Spuyten Duyvil to the Sing Sing Creek, and at the north extended eastward to the Armonck (now the Byram) River. Along the Hudson it had at least three villages,—Alpeonck (Tarrytown), Weckquaskeck (Dobbs Ferry) and Nappeckamack (Yonkers), at the mouth of the Nepperhan. When De Vries speaks of Weckquaskeck, he refers not to the family, but to the middle one of these three villages. Van Tienhoven, Director Kieft's secretary, also refers to the middle village when he speaks of Weckquaskeck as "five (fifteen English) miles above New Amsterdam."

Bolton ("History of Westchester County") says in his Introduction: "The Manhattans had their principal settlement on New York Island and from thence north to the bounds of Yonkers, nearly opposite Tappaan." He, of course, based this statement on the passages we have explained. In his map of the Indian territory of Westchester County he contradicts it by carefully encircling the Saw-Mill to its very mouth with the word "Weckquaskecks" and by so turning off the word "Manhattans" as to make it include only the towns of Morrisania, West Farms and perhaps Westchester. We notice also that he calls the castle of Nipmehsen, on Berrien's Neck (Spuyten Duyvil Point), a Mohegan castle, which is certainly correct.

changes through which has come into being the Yonkers of to-day.

The first Europeans who saw Napeckamack were the commander and crew of the historic "Half-Moon," which passed it on the 14th of September, and again on the 3d of October, 1609, in ascending and descending the Mohegan, Shatemuc or Cohatatea, various names given by the Indians to the river now known as the Hudson.¹ The famous commander, an Englishman by birth, had kept a minute diary of all he had seen. On his return to the Holland East India Company, in whose employ he had made his voyage, he gave it a stirring account of the harbor, river and country visited. The company was not moved by his report, but Holland merchants, eager for an American trade, appealed to the Holland government to send a trading vessel here. The appeal was at first unheeded. Private enterprise, however, soon became active. By 1614 a lively fur trade with the Indians had been started, and one or two forts for its protection had been built upon the river. Knowledge of these facts at last aroused the States-General, and on the 27th of March they offered to grant exclusive rights and privileges to any company that would undertake special commerce with the Manhattans. Upon this a company was quickly formed at Amsterdam, which fitted out two ships and sent them here for exploration. Their commanders having returned with glowing reports, the company submitted to the government a

map of the new country, and applied for and received the promised grant. Their map and the charter they received first gave the name "New Netherland" to an immense region extending from the Atlantic coast indefinitely inward, and from the latitude of Philadelphia to the latitude of Montreal. In 1621 a war between Holland and Spain, which had been held in suspense by a truce for twelve years, was resumed. To strengthen itself for the coming conflict, the Holland government resolved to organize an armed mercantile association of gigantic power to "build forts, plant settlements, prosecute trade and assist in crushing piracy and the common enemy." From this act sprang into being the West India Company, to which was committed the government of the New Netherland already mapped out, and which continued to control it till 1664, although its monopoly was abolished in 1638. The central power of this company was vested in the five chambers of Amsterdam, Zealand, the Maeze, North Holland and Friesland. The five chambers, however, committed the general management of the company's affairs to a board of nineteen directors, in which board each chamber was represented according to the proportion it owned of the general stock. The special interests of the New Netherland province were put under the control of the strongest of the five chambers, that of Amsterdam. As to all matters on which the charter did not speak, the will of the company was to be the law here. The charter gave the company enormous powers, but bound it to the strictest responsibility in regard to treaties with the Indians, settlement of the country and measures for promoting trade, foreshadowing in this act an unswerving integrity for which all the national acts of Holland were distinguished during the control of the West India Company.

In 1623 the company formally set up the province of New Netherland, and with this act began the true settlement of Manhattan Island by Holland people. They had no idea of making the mapped-out territory their own, except by purchase. In fact their mapping out had been to their minds a mere defining of bounds within which they meant to work up trade, and the West India Company never seriously thought of formal colonization here till after its famous capture of the Spanish Plate (or Silver) fleet in 1628. That capture brought to Holland about five million dollars from the nation that had for sixty years been robbing it of its people and means. Taking advantage of the good feeling kindled by this success, the company asked and obtained of the government the celebrated "Charter of Privileges and Exemptions," which bears date June 7, 1629. When it received this charter, the Board of Nineteen at once issued proposals under it for a settlement of the province. These proposals contemplated a strictly feudal basis of colonization, after the usage of the Fatherland, by which we mean a basis of immense landed proprietorships and small subordinate tenancies, not at the time

¹ Brodhead, historian of the State of New York (vol. i. pp. 28, 29), affirms that on the night of the 13th of September, while on his journey up the river, Hudson anchored his vessel just above Yonkers, in sight of "a high point of land, which showed out five leagues to the north." This "high point" Brodhead makes to have been "Verdrietig Hook," or "Tedious Point," just north of Nyack. At the suggestion of the historian Dawson, who made special study of this matter years ago, we have carefully examined Juet's "Journal of Hudson's Voyage," and are convinced that the anchorage on the night of the 13th was so far from being "just above Yonkers," that it was really below Manhattanville. The journal of the 14th, the day afterwards, compared with that of the 13th, makes this clear. It is as follows:

"Sept. 14th.—In the morning we sailed up the river twelve leagues . . . and came to a strait between two points, . . . and it (the river) trended northeast by north one league. . . . The river is a mile broad; there is very high land on both sides. Then we went up northwest a league and a half, deep water; then northeast five miles; then northwest by north two leagues and a half. The land grew very high and mountainous, etc."

So says the Journal. The course of the river and the conformation of its shores make it certain that the "strait between two points," here spoken of, was the strait between Stony Point and Verplanck's. The point of anchorage on the night of the 13th had been twelve leagues (thirty-six miles) south of this strait. The tables of the Hudson River Railroad give the distance from Montrose Station (Verplanck's) to Manhattanville as about thirty-four miles. The point of anchorage, therefore, was two miles lower, or at least as far south as Eighty-fifth Street.

And now, going back to the journal of the 14th, we have this statement:—"We anchored all night and had a high point of land, which showed out to us, bearing north by east, five leagues off from us." What was this point? Not "Tedious Point," above Nyack, but the north end of the Palisades, nearly opposite Dobbs Ferry. This point was about "five leagues off" from Eighty-fifth Street. And if any one will take an observation of the direction of the river line northward from Eighty-fifth Street, he will discover that though the Palisades are on the west side of the river, yet they bear strongly upward to the northeast from the point at which we have assumed that Hudson lay.

designed, however, to carry with them the oppression that characterized English feudalism. Whoever would, within five years, plant a colony of fifty persons over fifteen years of age, might become absolute owner and lord of any manorial tract he might colonize. Such tract might extend to the length of sixteen miles, or if along a river, of eight miles on each side, and as far into the interior as circumstances might require. One inflexible condition was to go with each grant, viz., that no land, even after being granted by the company, should become the grantee's, except as he should also purchase it of the Indians. Through this insistence on moral principle in land transactions, the Holland government gained the confidence of the Indians and established a claim to the enduring respect of the world. It never seized an acre of land or broke a business contract. Every direction from the States-General, every act of the Board of Nineteen, every step of the chamber of Amsterdam and every executive act of a Director-General, so far as business dealings went, emphasized this moral integrity. The annals that illustrate it throw glory on the Holland name.

On the 6th of May, 1626, under Director Minuit, they bought Manhattan Island of the Indians, for a price, indeed, that now seems to us ridiculously small, viz., twenty-four dollars,—but still a price that satisfied the Indians, and was then fully up to the island's worth. Subsequently they bought, in the same way, Long Island, Staten Island, Governor's Island, the shores of New Jersey opposite New York, all the county of Westchester, large tracts along the Hudson and large tracts on the Connecticut and Delaware besides. Many of the Indian deeds of these purchases still exist, and many now lost are referred to in later deeds still extant. The earliest preserved Indian conveyance of lands in Westchester County is of a tract it calls Kekeshick. This tract, down to 1872, was within the town of Yonkers. It was at that date set off with the town of Kingsbridge. The Indians conveyed it to the West India Company August 3, 1639. But they had sold Westchester tracts to the Hollanders before that. The deeds of all earlier sales, however, are lost. But passing now from Indian deeds to Holland settlers, to the grantings of manorial patents by the West India Company, we have to say that the oldest such grantings, of which deeds still remain, are those of Staten Island and Hoboken to Michael Pauw in 1630, and that of Rensselaerwyck to Kiliaen Van Rensselaer in 1631. O'Callaghan cites more than six hundred land grants, many of them manorial patents, bestowed before the close of the Dutch rule in 1664.

We have shown that down to 1623 all movements on Manhattan Island and along the Hudson were by private traders. In these the territory of the Weckquaskecks did not become involved. Even down to the close of the Dutch rule in 1664, but few white persons probably settled on it. With 1623, however,

formal government of the province had been set up. Its seat had been established on Manhattan Island, and was called New Amsterdam. At this seat from that year the West India Company was represented, as to authority, by successive Directors-General of its own appointment. The last four of these men, Peter Minuit, Walter Van Twiller, William Kieft and Peter Stuyvesant, are best known to history. Beyond the responsibility it imposed on them for integrity in business transactions, the company laid scarcely any check upon these men. As to details of government, they were left almost wholly to their own will. So each director in his turn ruled with an arbitrariness that would rarely brook advice. This greatly retarded the growth of the Holland population. Especially it held it back from extension over neighboring territory. As to Weckquaskeck ground, probably few white people came to reside upon it even down to the close of the Dutch period. Isolated families would not come here in any event. Trade interests and fear of the Indians would keep them in the city. Then, too, the Dutch system did not encourage single farms. It looked to manors. And this brings us to a manorial grant during the Dutch period, which began the shaping of Yonkers. A Hollander named Van Der Donck secured such a grant from the West India Company in 1646, under the conditions of the charter of 1629.

SKETCH OF VAN DER DONCK.—Adriaen Van Der Donck, born at Breda, in Holland, was educated at Leyden, and afterwards studied law and was admitted to practice in his native country. His standing at home may be inferred from the fact that the Patroon Van Rensselaer selected him and brought him to this country to become sheriff of Rensselaerwyck. He came late in 1641, and held that office for the next five years. It is not surprising, however, that a man of his intelligence and fine culture, and of no mean monetary resources, became ambitious for a manor of his own. On the 22d of October, 1645, he married Mary, daughter of Rev. Francis Doughty, a rich Long Island patroon, and soon afterwards, drawn by his new relatives, and driven by troubles in his Rensselaerwyck experience,¹ came to live in New Amsterdam. He was not long in perceiving the charms and advantages of the lower Weckquaskeck region, and when he applied to the West India Company for it, the company being under obligations to him for money loaned and services rendered, readily granted his application, only binding him to pay the Indians for any parts of the ground which they had not already released to the company itself. The deed of the tract granted to Van Der Donck called the tract "Nepperhaem." The Hollanders sometimes

¹ We have not thought it necessary to encumber these pages with the details of his life as an employe of Van Rensselaer, which have been so often written. The histories of Brodhead, O'Callaghan and Mrs. Lamb, consulted by index, will give what any one may desire in reference to these details.

called it "Colen Donck," or "The Colony of Donck," and sometimes "De Jonkheers,"—a fact out of which grew, as has been stated, the singular name of the later town.

The northern boundary of Van Der Donck's land extended from the mouth, on the Hudson River, of a little stream then called Amackassin (three miles or more north of the present Yonkers Hudson River Railroad Station) to the Bronx River, and its southern boundary, beginning at Spuyten Duyvil, ran over to the same river by an irregular line, taking in at least some of what was subsequently known as the Manor of Fordham. His manor was therefore nearly coincident with the town of Yonkers, as subsequently set off by the act of March 7, 1788. Van Der Donck undoubtedly chose this land for its natural beauty, the qualities of its soil, its wood, the water-power of its Nepperhan River and its nearness to the trading post and market. It was not formally erected into a manor till 1652, six years after the date of the grant. He was out of the country during a large part of these six years. This may in part account for the delay, but it is further possible that it took most of the interval to secure the release of all the parts of the territory from the native owners of the soil.

Van Der Donck lived till 1655. From 1649, however, he was embroiled, with many others, in a conflict with the direction of the West India Company. In the spring of that year he was chosen one of Stuyvesant's "Nine Men," an auxiliary and advisory company, to the constitution and annual popular election of which Stuyvesant had consented the year before, in order to allay a discontent which, by his imperious conduct, he had excited among the people. Deeming the director tyrannical, Van Der Donck, after his election, at once took ground against him. Stuyvesant, enraged at his course, was so impolitic as to have him arrested and imprisoned. In August, having been released, he was sent to Holland with a remonstrance against the New Amsterdam direction, prepared by himself at the request of his associates of the "Nine," who all signed it with him. The paper still exists. He was met in Holland by agents of Stuyvesant, who, of course, vehemently denied its charges. These agents had the ready ear of the home authorities, and Van Der Donck was defeated. The steps he had taken only drew upon him ill-will and persecution. When he wished to return to America, he was stopped by the government, even at the moment when he was about leaving with his family. He was detained till 1653. During the interval he was regarded with suspicion and watched. Yet, while abroad, he received, in 1652, from the University of Leyden, the honorary degree of "Juris utriusque doctor," or "Doctor of civil and canon law." And in the same year he secured the erection of his Yonkers land into a manor, and its confirmation to him by that highest authority, the States-General. But he was still, for a time, not allowed to come

home. He employed his forced leisure, however, in writing part of a history of New Netherland, still extant. Yet the most interesting part of the history he had meant to write, the part respecting the administration of the New Amsterdam government, the West India Company prevented him from writing, by refusing him access to its records. Then, also, he sought to send over colonists, but was not allowed to do so. And when, in 1653, he was about leaving for America, to a petition for leave to practice law in New Amsterdam, he received answer that he might do so only to the extent of giving asked advice. He came home in the summer of 1653, but went back to Holland in December. What time he last returned does not appear, but he died in New Amsterdam in 1655. We have not the light for judgment between him and Stuyvesant, but all testimony says he was one of the ablest men of the province. And his history, his "Remonstrance" and his other papers, still preserved, throw much light upon his time. It is not probable that, in business and political transactions, he was without fault. The history of his connection with Rensselaerwyck, as detailed by O'Callaghan and others, shows that Van Rensselaer had fallen out with him for what he deemed dishonorable business acts. But we know no more about his personal and private character than this.

Van Der Donck, we think, never became a resident upon his manor, unless he did so within a year of his death. In a paper written in Holland, he says that before 1649 he had built a saw-mill here, and laid out a farm and plantation, and adds that he had resolved to fix his own residence at Spuyten Duyvil, and had really begun to build there and cultivate the soil. He also speaks of intending to complete the work. But there is reason to believe that death defeated his purpose, and that he had not put many colonists on his manor or derived income from it in the form of land rents, though he may have succeeded in doing something through his mill. During his time the name "De Jonkheer" had obtained that foothold from which it has never been dislodged, and the "Nepperhan" had come to be called by the Dutch name "De Zaag Kill" (Eng. The Saw Creek), which was subsequently lengthened into "The Saw-Mill Creek" (or river), a name even yet quite as frequently given to it as the name Nepperhan of its earlier days.

Of Van Der Donck's relatives or descendants we have nothing trustworthy. His mother Agatha, and his brother Daniel are said to have come to America in 1652, and we read of an Anna and a Guisbert Van Der Donck, who may have been Daniel's wife and son. That Adriaen had himself a child or children seems implied in the statement that in 1649 he was prevented from coming home *with his family*. One Cornelis Van Der Donck received land from Stuyvesant in 1655. This may have been a brother. It is said that there are still Van Der Doncks of Adriaen's stock on

Long Island. Before 1666 his widow married Hugh O'Neal of Patuxent, Maryland, and in 1671 she went to Maryland to live. Colendonck remained in her possession till 1667, as we shall show. But whether she carried out Van Der Donck's building project at Spuyten Duyvil, or herself ever derived any income from the manor, cannot now be known.

About this time the Dutch period closed. Charles II. of England, coming to the throne in 1660, soon turned his thoughts to New Netherland, to which he regarded England as having a claim. In 1664 he patented the whole province to his brother James, Duke of York and Albany, and in the same year he sent Colonel Richard Nicolls to New Amsterdam with a fleet to demand its surrender, with instruction, if this should be refused, to take it by force. The Dutch were not prepared for defense, and soon surrendered. Nine years later, in 1673, they retook the city. But in the next year a treaty between England and Holland gave it over conclusively to the former. So the period of Dutch rule virtually ended in 1664, and the English rule began, which continued really to the date of our Declaration of Independence, but nominally even till September, 1783. At that date the treaty was signed at Versailles, in which England recognized American Independence, and from this event we strictly compute the beginning of our distinct national life.

SECTION III.

Colonial and Revolutionary Period.

(1664-1783.)

The length of this new period was one hundred and nineteen years. It began almost without practical shock to the people of New Netherland. The English noted their strong points, and especially the happy effects of their business integrity. Colonel Nicolls, appointed first English Governor, promptly assured the ten thousand settlers of the extensive province that established rights and usages should be respected. He kept his word, and though few more Hollanders came to America after 1664, yet most of those already here and having business interests remained. On the 8th of October, 1666, Governor Nicolls, on her application, gave to Mrs. O'Neal a new patent, confirming her in the possession of Colendonck. In two sales, October 30, 1666, and May 16, 1667, she sold it to her brother, Elias Doughty. Doughty disposed of it through four successive sales. First, September 18, 1667, he sold to John Archer of Westchester, the extreme southern portion of it, four years after taken into the Manor of Fordham. And then he sold, *before* 1670, what was called Lower Yonkers, to William Betts, George Tibbetts and Joseph Hadley; *in* 1670, one square mile on the Bronx River (still known as "Mile Square") to Francis French, Ebenezer Jones and John Westcott; and on the 29th of November, 1672, all the rest, known as Upper Yonkers, in equal

thirds, to Thomas Delaval, Thomas Lewis and Frederick Philipse. This is the introduction to Yonkers of Frederick Philipse, afterwards first lord of the historic Manor of Philipsburgh. He bought his first land here in November, 1672.

Before proceeding to the history of the Philipses, we may stop to think of the condition of Colendonck in 1672, as to settlers. Great difficulties must have attended the early adoption of it for homes. Probably not many white residents were here when Mrs. O'Neal finally sold her estate.¹ We have spoken, however, of Van Der Donck's mill. The operatives employed in it must have lived in its vicinity. There is a tradition, though we do not know of any historic basis for it, that he had built a house of Holland brick on the rising ground on or near the site of our Manor (or City) Hall. Probably there were a few farmers here and there located over the manor. The settlement on Manhattan Island, a small community on the New Jersey shore, a few families at Nyack and Haverstraw, and the family of Jonas Bronck on the east side of the present county, were the nearest white neighbors. Of the Indians, there were probably a large number. In addition to the village around the bend and at the mouth of the Nepperhan, there was another at Riverdale, and still another at Spuyten Duyvil. Of course it was for the interest of the few whites to maintain friendly relations with the Indians, and in their attempts to do so they succeeded with but few exceptions. It is said that Van Der Donck and his white settlers always treated them with good faith and kindness, and the natural result of this was that they kept their friendship to the end.

ACQUISITIONS OF LAND BY PHILIPSE.—And now we must become clear, as far as we can, upon the successive land grants to and purchases of Philipse, and their dates. They began, as we have seen, with November, 1672, and went on at least to 1687. On the 12th of January, 1693, he had confirmed to him, by royal charter from William and Mary, all the land (with the exception of the "Mile Square" and the tract sold by Doughty to John Archer in 1677, and which is believed to have included the Island of Paperinemen, hereinafter described) between the Bronx and the Hudson from the Croton River to the southern boundary of old Colendonck, and besides this, the Tappan salt meadows west of the river. This immense territory was all acquired between 1672 and 1687, through grants and purchases. Sometimes a purchase was made from the Indians, and a Governor's confirmation obtained later, and sometimes a Governor's grant was obtained first and the purchase effected afterwards. There are even cases of three or four steps with a single piece of land, viz., a grant from a Gov-

¹ Of all Westchester County thirty years later than this, the reports of the Church of England's "Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts" say, "There were computed to be in it not above two thousand souls in the year 1702."

ernor, a purchase from the Indians, a confirmation by the Governor and a subsequent quit-claim from the Indians. In speaking of the acquisition of a piece, sometimes the date of one of these steps is given, and sometimes the date of another. This occasions confusion, where it is overlooked. On the 23d of December, 1684, Governor Dongan confirmed to Philipse all the parcels he had acquired to that date. The royal charter gives many of the dates of grants and purchases, and twice it has the date of a confirmation. But upon some dates it is silent. The pieces of land lying between the Hudson and Saw-Mill Rivers centered about the mouths or lay along the courses of small streams emptying into the Hudson at various points between the Kitchawan (Croton) River on the north, and Paperinemen (Spuyten Duyvil) on the south. They took their names, as tracts, from these streams, and so were known as "The Sintsinck tract," "The Pocantico tract," "The Bissightick tract," etc. The land between the Saw-Mill and Bronx Rivers, from the north line of Yonkers to the northernmost boundary of the subsequent Philipsburgh Manor, was purchased in one piece. Taking the tracts in geographical order from the north, those fronting on the Hudson and going back to the Saw-Mill River only were the Sintsinck (Sing Sing) tract, the Pocantico (Tarrytown) tract, the Bissightick (Irvington) tract, the Weckquaskeck (Dobbs Ferry) tract, the Upper Yonkers and Lower Yonkers tracts, while that beginning from the upper line of Yonkers and embracing all land between the Saw-Mill and Bronx, all the way up to the Croton River, was the Nepperhan tract. Having thus given all these tracts in their geographical order, we shall now speak of them more fully, and in the order of their acquisition.

1. The Upper Yonkers tract, containing seven thousand seven hundred and eight acres, bounded on the north by the rivulet Mackackassin and the *great stone* (a stone still lying on the Hudson River bank and marking the point from which our northern Yonkers boundary starts eastward), on the east by the Bronx and the land of Francis French & Co., on the south by land of William Betts, George Tibbetts and Thomas Hadley, and on the west by the Hudson River. A patent for this "Upper Yonkers" was obtained from Governor Dongan by John Delaval (son and heir of the original purchaser, Thomas Delaval), Frederick Philipse and Geertje Lewis (executrix of Thomas Lewis), February 19, 1685. Philipse bought the share of Delaval August 27, 1685, and that of the heirs of Lewis June 12, 1686. So by the last date he had possessed himself of all Upper Yonkers.

2. The Pocantico tract was granted to him by Governor Andros April 1, 1680, bought from the Indians April 23, 1681, and confirmed by Dongan December 23, 1684. All the dates are from the charter. Bolton (vol. i. p. 506) gives Andros' grant. He also has the Indian deed, but gives its date as December 10, 1681. There may have been this difference of time between

the date of the purchase and that of the conveyance.

3. The Bissightick tract, purchased from the Indians April 8, 1682, and confirmed by Dongan December 23, 1684. Dates from charter.

4. The Weckquaskeck tract, bought of the Indians September 6, 1682, and confirmed by Dongan December 23, 1684. Dates from charter.

5. The Nepperhan tract, bought of the Indians May 7, 1684, and confirmed by Dongan December 23, 1684. Bolton gives the deed twice. The first time (i. p. 270) he calls it "The Deed of Neppiran," and the second time (i. p. 507) "The Deed of Weckquaskeck." The tract lay along the Saw-Mill River and was Weckquaskeck territory. He gives the date of the deed as June 5, 1684. The difference between May 7th, as given above, and June 5th, is again without doubt that of the interval between the purchase and the conveyance.

6. The Sintsinck tract. This was granted, ratified and confirmed to Philipse by Dongan on the 11th of November, 1686. Date from charter. It had, however, been bought of the Indians by Philipse August 24, 1685, and confirmed by Dongan to his son Philip Philipse, January 12, 1686. The charter recites that Philip reconveyed it to his father, which accounts for the fact that in the following November it was confirmed to him the second time (Bolton, vol. ii. pp. 2, 3).

7. The Tappan Meadows,¹ confirmed to Philipse by Dongan June 27, 1687. Date from charter, which also states that Philipse had bought the meadows from George Lockhart and Janet, his wife, February 20, 1685.

8. The Lower Yonkers tract. The particulars of the purchase of this tract we cannot find. It is included in the grant of the great charter of June 12, 1693. It embraced the island of Paperinemen, or Paperinemo, the flat beginning at the bridge at Kingsbridge, extending northward to Cortland Station on the New York City and Northern Railroad, and encircled by Tibbett's Brook on the west, Spuyten Duyvil on the south and a then existing water passage on the east, which is now closed by an alluvial deposit. In applying for his charter, Philipse especially asked for a grant of this flat, together with the right to erect a bridge over the Spuyten Duyvil ferry and to take toll from all passengers and droves of cattle to pass

¹ In answer to inquiries, we state here that the name "Tappan," as applied to the locality on the west side of the river, has nothing in common with the family name "Tappan," so familiar to the people of New York and New England. Rev. John Heckewelder, a Moravian missionary among the Pennsylvania Indians a century ago, says it is a corruption of the Delaware Indian word "Thuphane," or "Tuphanne," meaning "cold stream." A tribe of the name existed in 1609, upon the ground now called Tappan. The Dutch called the expansion of the river between Irvington and Piermont "Tappan Zee." It is still called "Tappan Bay." The Tappan tribe, like the other tribes, were driven westward. Representatives from it appeared at Tappan within the last fifty years, drawn to the spot by traditions retained among them of the place as their early home.

over it. The flat was granted to him, and also the right he asked for, and the family retained both as long as the Philipse Manor continued. Uncertainty, however, hangs over its acquisition by Philipse. Some have thought it really belonged to the land conveyed to John Archer by Elias Doughty in 1667; that the heirs of Archer, finding that Philipse's charter included it, called his title in question; and that the difficulty was adjusted by Philipse through some lease arrangement, the terms of which were faithfully observed during the continuance of the Philipse Manor, so that the question was never renewed. Be this as it may, it is at least certain that no purchase of the tract by Philipse can now be traced.

In this way the immense Manor of Philipsburgh grew up and was finally confirmed. From the whole property the royal grantors only required an annual tax of four pounds and twelve shillings, to be paid at Fort Amsterdam. The only sale, as far as we know, ever made from it by Mr. Philipse, was that of fifty acres, known as George's Point, to his son-in-law, Jacobus Van Cortlandt, October 16, 1699.¹

Meanwhile, November 1, 1683, the county of Westchester, one of New York's ten original counties, had been set off. No change was made in the limits of this county till January 1, 1874, when the old towns of Morrisania and West Farms and the then newly-created town of Kingsbridge were set off to the city and county of New York.

THE PHILIPSE FAMILY.—With Yonkers the Philipse family and property were controllingly identified from 1672 to the outbreak of the American Revolution. Information respecting the family origin and history must therefore be given.

It is said to have been originally a noble family of Bohemia. The spelling of the name was "F-e-l-y-p-s-e." Felypse (in full Felypsen)—Eng. Philipse (Philipsen), means "son of Philip." The family had left Bohemia for Friesland, one of the Holland provinces. At what date is not known. Tradition connects the step with religious persecution as its cause. Bolton (i. p. 508) says the members of this family who first took it were the widow of Right Honorable Viscount Philipse and her children.² Among the latter was

¹ Bolton has two references to these fifty acres (ii. p. 587). First, he states that Joseph Hadley sold them to Matthias Buckhout, February 22, 1670, and Buckhout sold them to Philipse, January 22, 1694. But we have noticed that they had been already confirmed to Philipse in the charter of 1693. Then, again, he gives us an Indian deed for the same fifty acres to Jacobus Van Cortlandt and others, bearing date August, 1701, although the property had then already been owned by the parties named for years. The explanation of this apparent confusion has been anticipated. First, the grant was given, then the purchase had to be effected, and finally, in 1701, some question as to original title being raised, a fresh quit-claim deed from the Indians was obtained. The necessity for this last step seems to have arisen again and again in the early days.

² It is said that the earlier generations had been Hussites, and that their descendants continued firm in the faith. The famous "Thirty Years' War," which broke out in 1618, and afterwards involved the peace of all Western Europe, started in Bohemia. The Bohemians rose for liberty, and this opened the conflict. The wildest persecutions followed.

Frederick Philipse, father of the first lord of this manor. This Frederick, soon after the settling in Friesland, married Margaret Dacres. It is said that he had a brother Adolphus. This is probable, as the name Adolphus comes in again and again in later generations. Margaret Dacres is said to have been of the parish of Dacre, in England. We have no account of her immediate family; but we are told that the parish has a baronial castle, the ancient seat of the barons of Acre, the exploits of one of whose ancestors as a crusader at Acre, in Palestine, obtained for the family this name. Frederick Philipse and Margaret Dacres, bringing with them their son Frederick (no other child appears in their American history), are sometimes said to have come to New York in 1658. But Valentine's "History of New York City" (p. 317) has the son on a New York tax-list in 1655, and Bolton says he was named as an appraiser of New York property in 1653. He also says it is asserted and not improbable, that he came over with Stuyvesant in 1647. If so, he was twenty-one years old when he first saw America. It is now said that he began his life in this country poor, though there is also an opposite tradition. He had learned the carpenter's trade in Holland, and for a time followed it here. We are told that he worked on the old Dutch church in the fort. By great industry and tact, however, and with remarkable good fortune, he rose rapidly, left his trade and became a wonderfully successful merchant.³ He first married, in 1662, Margaret Hardenbroek, widow of the rich Pieter Rudolphus De Vries, with one child, Maria De Vries, whom he adopted, and who is known in history as Eva Philipse.⁴ Mrs. Margaret Philipse, a woman of rare energy, always reserved to

At least thirty-six thousand Bohemian families sought refuge in Saxony, Sweden, Poland, Holland, etc. (See Art. "Bohemia," in Appleton's Encyclopædia). Probably it was during this proceeding, in or soon after 1618, that the honorable lady above named fled, taking her children and whatever she could carry with her of her property to Friesland (not East Friesland, as has been said). It is certain that she did not settle there before 1618, and also that she was there before 1626, as her son Frederick, father of the first lord of the Philipsburgh Manor, had married before that, and her grandson was born in Friesland in that year.

³ Whether he began here with or without means, it is certain that his large future fortune grew, first, out of his own mercantile shrewdness in home trade with the Indians and in shipping trade with the East and West Indies; secondly, out of Governor Stuyvesant's grants to him of New York City lots; thirdly, out of his marriages; and lastly, out of the favor he enjoyed with the English Governors and government, which gained for him at last the grant of the great Manor of Philipsburgh. Of course, when we speak of his wealth, we speak comparatively only, according to the wealth of his time. All he had was not to be compared, as to absolute amount, with what we call princely wealth to-day.

⁴ The New York Collegiate Church Record has the baptism of this child. She is entered as "Maria." Some have thought this a mistake of the entry clerk. Others have suggested that there may have been both a "Maria" and an "Eva" De Vries, and that Maria had died. But this would be to suppose Eva left unbaptized, as no Eva is in the baptismal record. It is known that the name of the widowed grandmother of Frederick Philipse, who originally left Bohemia for Friesland, was Eva. We venture the suggestion that when Philipse, upon his marriage with the widow Margaret De Vries, adopted her only child "Maria" as his own, he may have required her name to be changed to "Eva" to perpetuate the name of one whose history and memory must have been to him very dear.

herself the management of her own fortune, even to the extent of purchasing ships, and sailing in them as her own supercargo. Yet she always cherished her husband's business interests. But he himself soon became a wealthy man in his own right. In 1674 already he was rated at eighty thousand guilders, which was far beyond the fortune of any other person in the city. His first wife having died in 1690 or 1691, he married, November 30, 1692, Catharina Van Cortlandt, daughter of Oloff Stevensen Van Cortlandt, and widow of the late wealthy merchant, John Dervall. She brought him two fortunes, one from her former husband and another from her father. All these estates and all his own accumulations besides came to him before the Manor of Philipsburgh was confirmed to him in 1693. At his death in 1702, he owned, in addition to this manor, his former New York City residence on Stone Street, between Whitehall and Broad, besides other property in city mortgages and real estate, and also a place in Bergen County, N. J. He was known as "The Dutch Millionaire."

He was a New York City Common Councilman more than twenty years, under all the colonial Governors from Sir Edmund Andros (1674) to the Earl of Bello-mont (1698). He was intimate with all the leading men of the colony in church and State, and was historically connected with every important New York event of his time. He was a man of commanding personality. After he became lord of this manor his power was baronial, and though he ruled with consideration, he was still imperious in his will and made himself felt as a lord. During his mercantile life his extensive and complicated relations gave him wonderful opportunities and exposed him to extraordinary temptations. Complicity with piracy, smuggling and the slave trade were persistently charged upon him, and strong efforts were made to throw him out of the Common Council and bring about the confiscation of his great estate. These matters are rehearsed in our colonial history. Through real personal merit, however, together with his high family associations and the power of his wealth, he had become a man of almost unlimited influence, and continued to hold this influence to the end of his life. From 1693 to his death, November 6, 1702, he lived in Castle Philipse, at Tarrytown. In 1699, perhaps at the prompting of his wife, Catharina Van Cortlandt, he built the Re-



MANOR HOUSE AND SURROUNDINGS IN 1842.

formed Church of Sleepy Hollow, which still stands. In the communion of that church he died. The following entry by his widow is from her family Bible:

"Anno 1702, the 6th of November, Sunday night at ten o'clock, my husband, Frederick Philipse, died, and lies buried in the church-yard in the manor named Philipsborough."

His will is dated November 26, 1700. It was admitted to probate December 9, 1702. His widow survived him at least down to 1730, as her will is dated January 30th of that year.

"MANOR HOUSE."—We cannot pass the life of the first Lord Frederick Philipse without taking up the subject of this ancient relic, now owned by the city of Yonkers and used by it as a city hall. The first Lord Philipse never saw more than the south end of it. It is claimed that this south end was built in 1682. Mrs. Lamb assumes that this was so. Whether she rests her assumption on any other support than Bolton's statement that it is reported to have been built in that year, we do not know.

Mrs. Lamb has another statement (we know not from whence it comes), which, if it be correct, gives it strong probability. It is that the first Mrs. Philipse (Margaret Hardenbroek) had the south front door of the house made in Holland and brought over in one of her own ships in 1681. Then the house must have been built about the

same time. At any rate, this identifies it with the first Mrs. Philipse, showing that it was built before 1691, when at latest she died. And it shows that she was taking pride in the building, as if she meant it for her own residence, and not for a mere tenement-house. Probably nothing can be proved, but let us suggest a theory;—

It is claimed both that the south part of this building was erected in 1682, and that part of Castle Philipse at Tarrytown was erected in 1683. If it be asked why two manor-houses were erected, we answer,—Neither of these two houses was built for a manor-house. Mr. Philipse owned one-third of Upper Yonkers (his one-third no doubt included the site of our city hall and the adjacent mill started by Van Der Donck) from 1672, ten years before the date claimed for the Yonkers building, and he owned the Pocantico site from 1680, three years before the date claimed for the Tarrytown

building.¹ Now Mr. Philipse was not a "lord" in 1682 or 1683, nor for many years later, but simply a plain merchant intent on business. He bought this site in 1672, as the site of Van Der Donck's mill, long established, and he secured the Pocantico site in 1680, as a site for a new mill. And he built the two houses here and at Tarrytown, not for manor-houses, but for plain country residences with the mills. He often wrote of the two sites as "The Upper Mills" and "The Lower Mills," and our theory is, that the house here, near the old Van Der Donck mill site, was built by him in 1682 for his own personal residence, and that he and his first wife lived in it till the death of the latter, in 1690 or 1691. One reason for this belief is, that this already cleared spot offered the strongest immediate attractions for residence. Another is, that even for years before 1682, Philipse had an actual business going on here, and it would be natural for him to settle in the vicinity of it. And a third is, that for several years after 1682, Philipse's business must have called him almost daily to the city. Ten miles less of drive (his quickest mode of traveling then) would be a great consideration. And still a fourth is, that more money and care were evidently put upon this building at Yonkers than on the one at Tarrytown, as if this were intended to be the better and more serviceable house.

What Mr. and Mrs. Philipse built of this house, as we now have it, only reached from the south front to the south side of the present east and west hall. Examination of the framing beneath this hall gives indication that the space it occupies was, previous to the addition of 1745, taken up with an outside portico

¹ Bolton has three passages on this subject:—

In vol. i. pp. 510, 511, he says, "Upon the east bank of the Pocantico Philipse built his first manorial residence, which, on account of its great strength and armament, was called Castle Philipse. There the first lord of the manor lived in rugged feudal style until the lower house was built at Yonkers."

In vol. i. p. 531, speaking of Castle Philipse, he says,—“The western end of the building is evidently the remains of a much older edifice, probably coeval with the erection of a mill in 1683.”

In vol. ii. p. 632, speaking of our Yonkers manor-house, he says,—“The present front was erected in 1745. The rear is reported to have been built soon after the Philipse family purchased here in 1682, although the favorite residence at first appears to have been Castle Philipse, in Sleepy Hollow.”

All these passages answer themselves.

1. They assume that the first lord lived at Tarrytown first and at Yonkers later. The contrary is known to have been the fact. There was no "first lord" till 1693, and the "first lord" (in that year constituted) is known to have spent his closing years at Tarrytown with his second wife, the two quietly devoting themselves to the founding and directing of the Sleepy Hollow Church, which was organized in 1697, and whose house of worship was built in 1699.

2. It is known, that whether the Yonkers house was built in 1682 or not, it really was built during the life of Margaret Hardenbroek, who died in 1690 or 1691, two or three years before there was a "first lord." And yet it is affirmed in one of the above passages that in Castle Philipse at Tarrytown, the "first lord" of the manor lived in rugged feudal style until the lower house was built at Yonkers.

3. These passages reveal, what is no doubt true, that Castle Philipse and its "armament" were not built in 1683, but were a later development (perhaps by or soon after 1693) from a simpler house built in 1683, at the same time with the mill.

of dimensions coincident with the present hall itself. The part of the house they built is of brick brought from Holland. Its architecture is of that mixed English and Dutch style known as "Colonial." Its foundation, outer walls, beams, rafters, doors and staircase are all very heavy, according to the ideas of the times. The ceilings and mantels were richly ornamented, and the large open fire-places were floored with Holland brick, backed with inscribed iron fire-plates and side-faced with the old Dutch Scripture tiles, each representing some Bible incident.² If we would conceive of the outside surroundings of the substantial building during the life of the first lord, we must displace all the developments of later years. All around must have retained nearly its absolute primitive wildness. There were still savages about, and these sometimes indulged in raids upon the whites. It is believed, from evidence gained in near excavations, that there is from the cellar of the house an underground passage to a well, now covered by the roadway of Woodworth Avenue—a passage for escape in case of a raid. This suggests another reason for believing that Castle Philipse is a later building than this. That castle is built with conditions of a fort. Provisions for guns, it is said, may still be seen in its cellar walls. Probably these arrangements for defense there were suggested by the experience of need which residence in this earlier building had developed. But we need speak no further of this house. Margaret Philipse died in 1690 or 1691. Her husband, after having been married again, died in 1702. All the children he left behind him, including the adopted daughter, Eva, were hers. They were as follows:

1. Eva Philipse, the adopted daughter, born July 6 and baptized October 3, 1660. She married, May 31, 1691 (May 7th, commonly given, was the date of the

² Mr. Robert P. Getty has furnished us with the following notes from his own memorandum:

"The main hall of the building is eleven feet wide, its stairs are four feet and its front door, opening south, is eight by four feet. The east and west rooms on the first floor are twenty-three feet four inches by twenty-one feet. The front and rear doors are in two parts, according to the usage of the times. The stone foundation is two feet thick, and the walls above are twenty inches. The south front is built with gneiss stone rubble-work. All openings of doors and windows are trimmed with brick, said to be from Holland. All sills and lintels are of pine or oak wood. All cornices and trimmings inside are wood. The old kitchen, under the west room, is laid with stone (not blue-stone), eighteen inches square. Where these stones were obtained is not known. Many of them are fossiliferous. The floor-beams are oak, nine by eight feet, hewn, three feet apart. The floor-planks were sawn by hand in a saw-pit. The front-door platform and steps are Nyack red sand-stone. All windows on first story have outside shutters, and all windows on second story, inside shutters. In all panelings of doors and windows the mouldings are solid. The hinges, bolts, etc., are ordinary blacksmith work. The chimney-breasts and hearth-stones are seven feet wide. On each side of each chimney is a deep closet. Some of the closets have sash fronts, while others have solid doors. Some fronts of chimney-breasts, above the mantels, are paneled and others are carved. In the west room of the second story the fire-place jambs are lined with one hundred and six tiles, five inches square, each one illustrating a passage of Scripture. The iron fire-brick is dated 1760, and has upon it a casting representing Elijah as being fed by the ravens."

bans), Jacobus Van Cortlandt (a brother of the second Mrs. Frederick Philipse), who was born July 7, 1658, and died in 1739. The husband in 1699 bought of his father-in-law the fifty acres alluded to above. This tract formed the nucleus of the large Van Cortlandt estate in Lower Yonkers, now within the city of New York. Jacobus and Eva Van Cortlandt were the ancestors of the Yonkers (youngest) branch of the Van Cortlandt family (for an extended account of this branch, see the New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, vol. v. pp. 168-171).

2. Philip Philipse, date of birth not given, but entry of baptism on New York Collegiate Church Records, March 18, 1663. His father owned an estate, called "Spring Head," on the island of Barbadoes, and placed this son upon it. Philip married Maria Sparks, daughter of the Governor of the island. It is supposed the marriage took place about 1694. Philip and Maria both died in 1700, leaving but one child,—Frederick,—born at Spring Head but five years before their own death, and seven years before the death of his grandfather, one of whose direct heirs he was to become. Lord Philipse, on the death of his son Philip in 1700, promptly sold the Barbadoes estate, intending thereby to prevent his grandson from remaining on the island. This end was answered. The boy, however, did not come here, but was sent at once by his mother's relatives to England, and kept away from the Philipsburgh manor till he was grown up. This circumstance gave a wholly new turn to the church relations of the Philipse line, as will be seen further on.

3. Adolphus Philipse, baptized in New York November 15, 1665; died in 1749 (for biographical sketch of him, see Documents relating to Colonial History of New York, vol. vi. p. 56).

4. Annetje (Anna) Philipse, baptized in New York November 27, 1667. She married Philip French, July 6, 1694. These had a son,—Philip French, Jr. (baptized November 27, 1697),—who married Susanna Brockholst in 1720, and they also had through Philip and Susanna a granddaughter,—Susanna French,—who married, about 1745, William Livingston, known between 1776 and 1790 as "the war Governor of New Jersey." And again William Livingston and Susanna French had a daughter,—Sarah Livingston,—who, on the 28th of April, 1774, became the wife of Chief Justice John Jay (for the line of Philip and Anna French, see New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, vol. ix. p. 118, etc.).

5. Rombout Philipse, baptized in New York January 19, 1690. He probably died very young, as his name does not appear again.

Lord Philipse (1st) left all his real estate in New York City and Bergen County to his two daughters,—Eva Van Cortlandt and Anna French. The Philipsburgh manor he left in two sections,—one from Dobbs Ferry northward to his son Adolphus, and the other from Dobbs Ferry southward, including Yonkers, to

his grandson Frederick, born in Barbadoes. The manor lay in this divided state forty-seven years. Adolphus, during this period, added to his section a Putnam County tract, thenceforward designated as "the Highland estate." In 1749 he died, unmarried, and his section came to his nephew, Frederick, just mentioned. This restored the Philipse manor to its original integrity, not broken again till it fell apart, as later on we shall see, with the reason for it, in 1785.

THE SECOND LORD PHILIPSE.—So then the grandson of the first lord of the manor became its second lord. Born in Barbadoes and educated in England, he never knew the Reformed (or Holland) Church of his Philipse ancestors, but was trained in and became deeply devoted to the Church of England. We do not know when he came to live on his manor. Perhaps it was about 1719,¹ when he married Joanna, a daughter of Governor Anthony Brockholst. He died of consumption July 26, 1751, in his fifty-seventh year, leaving his wife and five of his ten children to survive him. His wife was killed in 1765 by a fall from her carriage on the Highland estate.

The second Lord Philipse was long baron and second judge of the exchequer, and represented Philipsburgh in the Colonial Assembly continuously for twenty-seven years. The testimony is that he was an affectionate father, an indulgent landlord, liberal to the poor, a true patriot and universally venerated. He enlarged his manor-house here in 1745, extending it to the north, changing its front to the east and giving it its imposing array of windows, its two porticoes as now seen, and its surmounting balustrade, from within which views of the river and the Palisades were commanded. Close under the roof were sleeping-places for some, perhaps all, of the family slaves, more than fifty in number. He also laid out a lawn between the house and the post-road (now Broadway). As for the addition to the house, it copied, in a good degree, the features of the older part. It was built for ages of wear. The evidences of this appear as one inspects and examines the whole as it remains with us to this day.

One of the latest acts of the second lord was to devise a farm east of the Saw-Mill River as a glebe for a Yonkers Church of England and a residence for the rectors of said church. For the building of the church on the site given, he directed his executors to expend four hundred pounds from coming rentals of the manor. Part of the land he designated is that now taken up by our St. John's and Oakland Cemeteries. The church that came into being on the foundation of this bequest was St. John's, on Broadway, the oldest church by many years within the limits of Yonkers. The heirs fulfilled the direction of the will in all re-

¹ Bolton in several places puts this marriage in 1726. But, as our list of the children shows, the first three were born respectively in 1720, 1723 and 1724. Bolton's pedigree of Philipse (opposite p. 514 of vol. i.) is unreliable as to many of its dates.

spects, except that they built the church on the site of the present edifice. The glebe along the Saw-Mill remained in the possession of the parish almost a hundred years. The rectors lived on it till 1845, when the present rectory, near the church, was built. We shall refer to this more fully in connection with our account of the churches of the city.

As we have said, the second Lord Philipse married, about 1719, Joanna, daughter of Governor Anthony Brockholst. She was born February 15th and baptized November 6, 1700. By this marriage there were ten children, as follows:

1. Frederick Philipse, who became third lord of the manor. He was never called Lord, however, but always Colonel Philipse. Born September 12th and baptized September 14, 1720. Died at Chester, England, April 30, 1785.

2. Susanna Philipse, born February 2, 1723; died in infancy.

3. Philip Philipse, baptized August 28, 1724; died May 9, 1768. Married Margaret Marston and had three sons,—Adolphus, Frederick and Nathaniel. After Philip's death his widow married the Rev. John Ogilvie, DD., assistant rector of Trinity Church, New York City.

4. Maria Philipse, baptized March 30, 1726; died young.

5. Susanna Philipse, baptized September 20, 1727; died at Thornbury, England, November, 1822, aged ninety-five years. Married, about 1750, Captain (afterwards Colonel) Beverley Robinson, of New York City, a native of Virginia, born about 1722 and died at Thornbury in 1792. The country residence of Colonel and Mrs. Robinson was on the east side of the Hudson, a little southeast of Garrison's. It was erected in 1750, and was very celebrated down to the time of the Revolution (for the history of Colonel Robinson and family, which is of great interest, see Robert Beverley's "History of Virginia;" Documents relating to Colonial History of New York, vol. viii. p. 806; New York Genealogical and Biographical

Record, vol. ix. p. 121; and consult by index Mrs. Lamb's "History of New York City"). Robinson's ancestors, himself and his children were all very prominent. The Robinson estate was confiscated in 1779.

6. Mary Philipse, born July 5, 1730; died in England July 18, 1825, aged ninety-five. Married, July 19, 1758 (Trinity Church record), Colonel Roger Morris, born in England January 28, 1727, and died there September 13, 1794. Their country-seat was that in later years familiarly known as the "Jumel estate," on the high bank of the Harlem River, at One Hundred and Sixty-ninth Street. Like Colonel Robinson, Colonel

Morris adhered to the crown at the time of the Revolution, and his estate was confiscated in 1779. Robinson and Morris received from the English government seventeen thousand pounds each as a reimbursement for their losses in this way. The remains of Colonel and Mrs. Morris are interred at York.

Mary Philipse's history possesses special interest on account of her reputed beauty and accomplishments, and the effect which, according to the historian Sparks, these are said to have had upon Colonel George Washington when he met her at the city residence of Beverley Robinson in 1756. The story is now strongly dis-



MARY PHILIPSE.

credited (see New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, vol. ix. pp. 122-123; also Documents relating to Colonial History of New York, vol. viii. p. 590, and consult by index the history of New York by Mrs. Lamb).

7. Margaret Philipse, baptized February 4, 1733; never married; died in 1752.

8. Anthony Philipse, baptized July 13, 1735; died young.

9. Joanna Philipse, baptized September 19, 1739; died young.

10. Adolph Philipse, baptized March 10, 1742; died young.

THE THIRD LORD (OR "COLONEL") PHILIPSE.—

Of the second lord's children, the oldest, Frederick, born September 14, 1720, became the third and last lord of the manor. He was a colonel in the militia, and was, in his time and is in written annals, more known as "Colonel" than as "Lord Philipse." He was graduated at King's (now Columbia) College, New York City. He married Elizabeth Rutgers, a widow, daughter of Charles Williams, and had, according to authorities, at least eleven children. It is not necessary here for us to attempt to follow these children, as no one of them ever appears in our county history. Colonel Philipse, like his father, loved the Church of England, and St. John's Church owes much to his fostering care and liberality. He not only carried out his father's directions in setting apart the glebe along the Saw-Mill River road, but he personally gave the two acres on which St. John's Church, Sunday-school chapel and rectory now stand. A shrinking temperament, it is said, kept him back very much from public affairs. Yet he was a member of the Colonial Assembly. On assuming his estate in 1751, he thoroughly refurnished the manor-house, and afterwards maintained a very showy style of living, of which, however, his wife is said to have been the inspiration. Lady Philipse was very fond of display. An aged lady of Yonkers, remembered by several still among us, and who knew Mrs. Philipse well, stated that it was her pride to appear on a road, skillfully reining four jet-black steeds with her own hands. The statement that she was killed by a fall from her carriage seems to have been misplaced. That was, as stated above, the end of the second Lady Philipse.

The manor-house and Manor of Philipsburgh bring over us a spell. This does not grow, however, out of impressions of enormous money value in the buildings or the lands. To appreciate what these were really worth under the Philipses, we have to put back the since increased population, the since expended labor in clearing off forests, shaping farms and roads and planting ornamental and fruit-trees, and the present market, which growth of population and expanding needs have created. All of Philipsburgh that lay within old Colendonck was probably not worth in 1682 fifty cents an acre, and the part of the manor-house built in 1682 did not probably cost beyond twenty-five hundred dollars. Nor does the spell upon us grow out of any impression we have of the amazing liberality of the Philipse family in leaving or giving money to build and endow a church. We must not measure their liberality by any present standard. It was according to the ideas of their time. When the second Lord Philipse left four hundred pounds for a church building, it was understood that the amount should be mostly levied as a tax upon the tenants of his manor, and paid in cash or in labor. He had a right, under his charter, to levy such tax. His power was almost unlimited. He held criminal court annually, both here and at Tarrytown, and he exercised legislative, judicial and executive powers, even to the

extent of sometimes inflicting capital punishment. He had the control of all church matters within his manor and power to levy taxes and collect them by distraint. He appointed assessors and collectors and there was no appeal from his acts. What does bring the spell over us is the thought that on this spot, now so free, there could have been such feudal power but little more than a century ago. This manor, down to 1776, was the domain of potentates who had more personal prerogative and power within their limit than Queen Victoria has to-day within her realm. If our venerable manor hall, if the venerable horse-chestnut tree that stands near it, if the stream that in 1609 came plunging without check over its rocky bed,—if all these could become articulate and tell us of what used to be in the days of which we have been writing, we should have revealed to us the vastness of the difference between the feudalism of those days and the widespread freedom we enjoy to-day.

There are associated with our manor hall many real historic incidents of interest and many stories which are of doubtful foundation. It entertained within its walls many of the best known historic persons of the colonial period. Washington and some of his generals are said to have passed several days and nights within it about the time of the battle of White Plains, in October, 1776. The southwest room, in the second story, is especially sacred to memory as the general's bed-chamber. To the romantic story of his fascination with Mary Philipse we have already alluded as now discredited. If, however, the incident ever occurred, it is not connected with this house or with the Revolutionary period, but with the city home of Beverley Robinson and with the year 1756. Mary Philipse grew up within this house, however, and, on the 19th of January, 1758, was married to Colonel Morris within its walls.

With Colonel Philipse's tenure of the manor came in that series of events which culminated in the outbreak of the American Revolution. The subject of this convulsing struggle, as far as it affected Westchester County, or is connected with its history, has been treated in a general paper at the beginning of this work. As far as we know, there were no skirmishes within the town of Yonkers; but, lying as the town did within the "neutral ground," its ridges and valleys were afflicted with raids that did great injury to the homes and property of its people. Our only work here is to bring to a close the history of the Philipse family, as connected with our town, and tell of the collapse, and the changes that accomplished the collapse, of the Philipse manor.

Colonel Philipse declined to espouse the American cause in 1776. The American authorities arrested him after the battle of White Plains and removed him to Hartford. In 1777 he took refuge in New York and afterwards went to England, where he died at Chester April 30, 1785, at nearly sixty-five years of age. He

was buried in the Cathedral Church of that city. A tablet, erected in that church to his memory, pays a tribute to his personal qualities, which is, no doubt, eminently just.¹ Prepared from the English point of view, however, it reflects severely on what it calls "the late rebellion in North America," and "the usurped Legislature" of this province. What prompted this tombstone attack was that our Legislature, in 1779, had declared Colonel Philipse attainted of treason and his property confiscated to the State. It took this course with many who maintained adherence to the crown. The British government, however, partly reimbursed these people for their losses, as we have already seen in the cases of Colonels Robinson and Morris. Similarly considerate of Colonel Philipse, it gave him about three hundred thousand dollars. In this way came to an end the Manor of Philipsburgh, and also the American history of the Philipse family, as far as it was connected with Yonkers. Persons who have been interlocked with the family still live in Putnam County, and also in that part of New York City added to it from the town of Yonkers in recent years. For the latter, the Van Cortlandt family, see that part of this history relating to our late town of Kingsbridge. But we have given all that is necessary for any one who wishes to know the general history of Yonkers down to 1783, and here we leave the family of Philipse.

SECTION IV.

Close of the Revolution to Purchase of Lemuel Wells.

(1783-1813.)

IN 1784 the Legislature of New York directed the appointment of commissioners to sell confiscated es-

¹What we understand to be a fac-simile of the inscription on this tablet, copied by the late Ethan Flagg, Esq., of Yonkers, during a visit to Chester in 1882, is now in the Yonker's City Hall, in the room of the Common Council "Committee on History and Historical Relics." It is as follows:

"Sacred to the Memory
of
Frederick Philipse, Esquire, Late of the
Province of New York; A Gentleman in Whom
the Various social domestic and Religious
Virtues were eminently United. The Uniform
Rectitude of His conduct commanded the
Esteem of others; Whilst the Benevolence of His
Heart and Gentleness of His Manners secured
their Love, firmly attached to His Sovereign
and the British Constitution, He opposed, at
the Hazard of His life, the late Rebellion in
North America; and for this Faithful discharge
of His Duty to His King and Country He was
Proscribed, and His Estate, one of the Largest in
New York, confiscated, by the usurped Legislature
of that Province. When the British Troops were
withdrawn from New York in 1783 He quitted
A Province to which He had always been an
Ornament and Benefactor, and came to
England, leaving all His Property behind Him;
which reverse of Fortune He bore with
that calmness, Fortitude and Dignity
which had distinguished Him through
every former stage of Life.

He was born at New York the 12th day of September
in the year 1720; and Died in this Place the 30th
day of April, in the Year 1783 Aged 65 Years."

tates. Isaac Stoutenburgh and Philip Van Cortlandt were appointed such commissioners for the Philipsburgh Manor, and in 1785 they offered it for sale in tracts which had been mapped out for the purpose. These tracts, as far as they were within the limits of the present city of Yonkers (excluding so much of the former town as was set off as the town of Kingsbridge in 1872), have been mapped and catalogued with great pains by Mr. Matthew K. Couzens, of our city. His map gives the old tenants of the manor, also those who bought tracts at the sales, with the number of acres they purchased. The old tenants were allowed the preference, and many of them availed themselves of it. The names of the purchasers and the acres they purchased were as follows: Evert Brown, 312, at the rock "Sigghes," in the northwest corner; Peter Forshee, 170, on the river at Forshee's Landing; Charles Duryea, 29; Abraham Lent, 41, at Hog Hill; Abraham Odell, 324, on both sides of the Nepperhan, near Hog Hill; Philip Livingston, 31, on the west side of the Nepperhan; Jacobus Dyckman, 39, just north of the latter; Andrew Bostwick, 74½, in two lots, adjoining the last, and 81 in three other lots, extending to the Hudson; Benjamin Fowler, 305; Isaac Vermilyea, 510, in the northern part; Thomas Sherwood, 396, between the Sprain and the Grassy Sprain Brooks; Patience Burnett, 173; Jacob Vermilyea, 221; Isaac and Thomas Smith, 185; Elisha Barton, 135; Dennis Lent, 128½; Caleb Smith, 130; Eleazar Hart, 154; Stephen Sherwood, 24½, near the junction of the Sprain and Grassy Sprain; Isaac Odell, 144; Frederick Underhill, 125; Mary Valentine, 76, at Tuckahoe; Abigail Sherwood, 125; John Bowne, 156; James Smith, 165; Abijah Hammond, 69; H. Cortright, —; Thomas Barker, 189; Elnathan Hunt and Nicholas Underhill, 157; Richard Morris, 136; John Lawrence, 175, in two lots, extending from the Hudson to the Nepperhan; Henry Odell, 360; S. Taylor, 184; Isaac Lawrence, 210; Ward Hunt, 343; Dennis Post, 135, at Post's Hill; Thomas Valentine, 338, at Valentine's Hill; Joseph Oakley, 164; J. Williams, 177; Henry Brown, 113; Parsonage lot, 107;² Jacobus Dyckman, 6; Stephen Oakley, 29½; Robert Reid, 141; John Lamb, 202; Robert Johnson and Lewis Ogden, 190, at Strawberry Hill; Cornelius P. Low, two lots, at the mouth of the Nepperhan, containing together 320½ acres; David Hunt, 41; Mary Merrill, 14½; — Archer, 18½; Thomas Sherwood, 2; Margery Rich, 92; Isaac Post, 293; Jacob Post, 313; Elnathan Taylor, 99; John Lawrence, 248; William Crawford, 202; Benjamin Oakley, 65; William Hyatt, 89; John Devoe, 136; Frederick Van Cortlandt, 105; Jesse Husted, —; and Samuel Lawrence, 300.

²This lot, or glebe, already referred to in the history of the Philipses, is spoken of in existing documents of the last century as consisting of two hundred and even of two hundred and fifty acres. Here it is put down at one hundred and seven acres. Upon inquiry and study of proof, we think it could never have been more.

Among the names of tenants and purchasers of 1785 we recognize the following as still perpetuated in Yonkers, viz.: Archer, Baker, Barker, Bowne, Brevoort, Brown, Burnett, Crawford, Devoe, Dyckman, Farrington, Fowler, Forshee, Hammond, Hart, Hunt, Husted, Hyatt, Johnson, Lamb, Lawrence, Lent, Oakley, Odell, Post, Reid, Reynolds, Rich, Sherwood, Smith, Taylor, Underhill, Valentine, Van Cortlandt, Vermilyea, Warner and Williams. To these, of our own knowledge, we can add Garrison, Kniffin, Lefurgy, Merrill and Nodine, all here a century ago, and here still. They are not on the map, because not represented just then among the tenants or buyers of the real estate. Among all these names we detect five only as Huguenot, viz., Devoe, Forshee, Lefurgy, Nodine and Vermilyea. It is remarkable that so few persons from the Huguenot settlement at New Rochelle, started one hundred and four years before 1785, had found their way over here. But so it was, and the earliest new Huguenot name we can find on Yonkers records after this is "Guion." We have "Guion's Mills" on our map of 1813. Later years have brought to Yonkers more of these names, but the five given above are the only Huguenot names now in our directory that have been represented here a hundred years, and of these, Lefurgy and Nodine are not on the map of the tenants or buyers of 1785.

Such is a general statement of the disposition of all the manor property that lay within the limits of the present city of Yonkers. We come now to the special disposition and history of that object of deepest interest, the manor-house. This was put up by the commissioners and sold on the 9th of September, with three hundred and twenty acres of land, to Cornelius P. Low, a New York merchant, for fourteen thousand five hundred and twenty pounds.¹ Mr. Low never occupied it, but conveyed it on the 12th of May, 1786, to William Constable, also a New York merchant.

¹The following is from the records of the sale of this land by Isaac Stoutenburgh and Philip Van Cortlandt, commissioners of forfeitures.

"Sold to Cornelius P. Low, of New York, Gentleman, for fourteen thousand five hundred and twenty pounds, all that certain mansion house, mills, stables and farm or parcel of land, situate, lying, and being in the Manor of Philipsburgh, County of Westchester and State of New York, known and distinguished heretofore as the place of residence of the late Frederick Philipse, Esq., being bounded westerly by Hudson's River, southerly by land in possession of the widow Rich, easterly by land sold to David Hunt and the run of water called the Saw-Mill River, and a lot of land in the possession of Archer, and northerly by land sold to Robert Johnston,—containing within said limits three hundred and twenty acres,—reserving and excepting out of the same two acres whereon the church stands, two acres whereon Thomas Sherwood the gardener, lives, and about two acres of meadow adjoining to Saw-Mill River and the road, it being part of the globe land; also two lots of woodland, Nos. 12 and 13, containing each thirty-three acres, bounded southerly by land sold to Andrew Bostwick, easterly by lots Nos. 16 and 17, northerly by lot No. 11, and westerly by the Post Road."

This passage describes the manor house and with it the three hundred and twenty acres of land sold to Cornelius P. Low, September 9, 1785, and which, in 1813, fell into the hands of Lemuel Wells, and subsequently became the practical center, first of the village and then of the city of Yonkers. Maps furnished further on will make this property and its relations more clear.

Mr. Constable sold it April 29, 1796, for thirteen thousand five hundred pounds, to Jacob Stout of New York, and Mr. Stout, in his turn, conveyed it, April 1, 1802, to Joseph Howland of Norwich, Conn. Mr. Howland became involved in financial difficulties, and, after struggling with the property for ten years, petitioned for the discharge of his debts. The results of the legal course upon his petition were an action in Chancery, and an issue, February 20, 1813, of a decree of sale. The premises were thereupon offered at auction and sold, April 20, 1813, to Lemuel Wells, a merchant of New York, for fifty-six thousand dollars. This tract of three hundred and twenty acres became a centre of population and business life, from which has been developed the Yonkers of the present, whose antecedents and history it is the aim of this narrative to give.

When Mr. Low had bought his three hundred and twenty acres, in 1785, there stood upon these acres, of course, that old landmark, the manor-house; the flour-mill a little south of it, on the north side of the Nepperhan; a saw-mill on the opposite side of the stream, near the point where the Post road crossed it; Hunt's tavern (in 1813 known as the Indian Queen Inn, and later still as the Nappeckamak House), on the site of the present Getty House; St. John's Church (on the same site as now), with two acres of ground; a fish-house on the river-bank half a mile to the north, and a school-house a mile and a half to the south of the central point. These were at that time the *institutions* of Yonkers. At Tuckahoe, three miles or more northeast from the Manor-House, there were then a school-house, a blacksmith-shop, a race-ground, a tavern and sixteen dwellings. The locality known as "Mile Square" had not belonged to the Philipsburgh Manor and had not been been confiscated. It had upon it thirteen houses, which, with their lands, were owned and some of them occupied, by S. Bertine, J. Farrington, T. Rich, Reynolds' Tavern, A. Archer, Eliza Rich, J. Garnou, Benjamin Hunt and D. Oakley. Altogether, on the whole territory now covered by the city of Yonkers, there were then about sixty houses. This was in 1785.

During the period from the year just named to 1813, transfers of property within the limits of the present city were frequently made and occasional improvements followed. But little progress, however, was made in the direction of population. The churches upon the whole ground were three only (this continued to be so in fact till 1828), viz.: St. John's (Episcopal), whose edifice had been built in 1752-53, but whose ecclesiastical organization had not been effected till 1787; the Methodist Episcopal at Tuckahoe, regularly organized in 1797; and St. John's (Episcopal) at Tuckahoe, whose building was erected in 1797, but whose organization was reserved to July 18, 1853. The history of all these churches will be given further on.

SECTION V.

The Town of Yonkers.

Soon after the confiscation sales, viz.: on the 7th of March, 1788, the town of Yonkers, one of the twenty original towns of Westchester County, was set apart. We have before shown that up to this time the region had been called, not "Yonkers," but "The Yonkers."¹ In this year (1886) the town is

¹There will be no period of our history at which better than here we can introduce some fragments relating to "The Yonkers" from the records of early Westchester supervisors. They are curiosities in their way, and they throw side-lights on the usages that had prevailed in this region before "The Yonkers" became "Yonkers," in 1788.

In the year 1722 an act was passed by the Colonial Legislature, by which the freeholders and inhabitants of any town, manor, liberty and precinct in the county of Westchester were authorized to choose supervisors, the election of whom should be held on the first Tuesday of April in each year. How soon this privilege was embraced by the people of "The Yonkers," or how continuously they availed themselves of it after having once embraced it, we do not know, but we first find them exercising it in 1772. From that date forward, with some irregularities, till 1788, when the town was set apart, we have two sets of supervisors connected with this region—one for the Manor of Philipsburgh and the other for the precinct of "The Yonkers."

The supervisors for the manor were as follows: 1772-74, Justice William Davis; 1775-77, none; 1778, Joseph Paulding; 1779-82, none; 1783-84, William Paulding; 1785, William Davis; 1786, Jonathan Horton; 1787, Isaac Requa. This closed the manor period.

The supervisors for the precinct were as follows: 1772-74, Colonel James Van Cortlandt; 1775-82, none; 1783-84, Israel Honeywell; 1786, William Hadley; 1787, David Hunt. This closed the precinct period.

We find the following proceedings of the supervisors with their dates: October 7, 1772, William Stivers, a petit constable of Philipsburgh, was allowed £1 1s. 1d. for transporting John Horton; Peter Brunt, another constable, £1 9s. 6d. for transporting Nancy Bolton; Horroy Davis, a third constable of the same place, £4 for transporting Mary Golden and her children; and Peter Martling, another constable of the same place, for transporting Nancy Manning.

In the same year the assessment upon Philipsburgh for county expenses was £13 11s. 6d., being much more than that of any other town, precinct or manor in the county. To this was added: "Extra to Philipsburgh warrant for the poor, and the money to be paid to Justice Deen, £134 17s. 6d.—the collection is included." In the same apportionment the amount set down for the precinct of Yonkers (which probably included Mile Square and part, at least, of Lower Yonkers, not owned by the proprietor of Philipsburgh) was £5 17s. 3d., to which is added—"Extra to Yonkers warrant, 40s. 2d. to be paid into the hands of Frederick Fowler for building a stocks and whipping-post."

In 1778 the supervisor of Philipsburgh refused to deliver to the Board of Supervisors "an assessment of leased lands on the tenant or person in possession to the full value of such lands," and the supervisors submitted the matter, with other delinquencies, to the Senate and Assembly, with what results, however, we do not know.

In February, 1779, the supervisors determined to tax the Quakers. Under this decision the levy upon the Quakers of Philipsburgh was £660, that for the class throughout the county being £2220. The whole tax at that time apportioned to the manor of Philipsburgh was £2401 11s. In December of the same year, the Senate and Assembly having directed a military tax of £60 upon each person of the Quakers, the amount of tax falling upon this class in the manor of Philipsburgh was found to be £1680. The Quakers seem, in a few years after this, to have disappeared from Yonkers, for in 1802, while taxes appear against them in the county, none are found against them in this town. The tax upon Quakers to which these acts point was laid upon them as a commutation for military duty which they refused to perform.

In the contingent expenses for 1784 occurs the following item: "To Thomas Sherwood, Constable of The Yonkers, for committing Richard Barrack and Nathaniel Palmer, prisoners in criminal process, to the jail of the city and county of New York, £4 14s."

In 1786 the amount apportioned to the support of the poor for the Manor of Philipsburgh was £115 10s., and for the precinct of Yonkers, £14 10s. Richard Garrison that year received £2 8s. for numbering the

of course ninety-eight years old. Its limits on the north, east and west have never been changed. From the south end of it, however, a portion has been given up. By an act of the county supervisors, December 16, 1872, the terms of which were ratified and confirmed by the Legislature, February 28, 1873, all of the old town lying south of an east and west line, coinciding with the north boundary of the Mount St. Vincent property, was set off as a new town under the name of Kingsbridge. And the last-named town, on the 1st of January, 1874, became by annexation, a corporate part of the county and city of New York. The town of Yonkers, as distinguished from the city, ceased from that date.

The early records of the town-meetings from 1788 to 1820 we have not found. The meetings were most commonly held at the old tavern on the site of the Getty House, which has been already mentioned. The earliest minutes we find, beginning with 1820, are loosely kept, sometimes being even destitute of dates. The town clerks from 1820 to the organization of the city (for later clerks, see under "The City of Yonkers") were as follows: 1820-24, Caleb Smith; 1825-34, John Williams; 1835-45, John Bashford; 1846, George B. Rockwell; 1847-49, James L. Valentine; 1850, George B. Rockwell; 1851, Henry V. Bashford; 1852-53, Samuel W. Chambers; 1854-56, Anson B. Hoyt; 1857-58, William H. Post; 1859-60, Lyman Cobb, Jr.; 1861, Charles W. Starr; 1862, Abraham R. Van Houten; 1863-65, Charles W. Starr; 1866, John G. P. Holden; 1867, Edmund T. Morris; 1868, John J. Pendergrast; 1869, Henry V. Clark; 1870-71, James W. Mitchell.

The supervisors, from the organization of the town, have been as follows: 1788, David Hunt; 1789, James Archer; 1790-94, William Hadley; 1795-96, John Robert; 1797-1800, Garret Dyckman; 1801,

inhabitants in the Manor of Philipsburgh, and Thomas Sherwood received 12s. for performing the same office in Yonkers.

Affairs in this section appear to have been conducted carelessly. At several dates neither Yonkers nor even Philipsburgh seems to have been represented in the Board of Supervisors. And on the 2d of September, 1788 (the town having now been created), Yonkers was in arrears in its accounts with the county to the amount of £39 4s., which amount was added to its apportionment for that year. In the minutes of October the following entry appears:

"A warrant this day issued by order of the supervisors to the Collector of Yonkers to collect the sum of £52 10s. 7d., for arrears due from that place, of State taxes, and also of taxes for the contingent charges of this county, and in case the sum of £39 4s. should be collected thereon for arrears of State taxes, that then the sum for such arrears, contained and specified in a warrant to that place of the 2d of September last, shall cease to be collected."

That the arrears of Yonkers were not promptly met even after this, however, appears from the supervisor's account for 1789, made June 16th, when there was apportioned to Yonkers £14 3s. 3d., and for the support of the poor, £57 5s. 6d., and in addition, "To Yonkers, for arrears of a tax granted by a law passed the 11th of April, 1787, £145 1s. 6d." In 1790, however, the arrearage had been reduced to £27 12s. 9d., which was probably paid that year, as no arrearage subsequently to this appears against Yonkers.

Under the act for the encouragement of schools, passed April 9, 1795, the sum apportioned to Yonkers was £25 7s. This was reduced in the following year.

William Hadley; 1802-24, Isaac Vernilyea; 1825-41, Caleb Smith; 1842-44, Prince W. Paddock; 1845-49, William W. Scrugham; 1850-53, James L. Valentine; 1854-55, William G. Ackerman; 1856-57, William W. Scrugham; 1858-59, Augustus Van Cortlandt; 1860, Ethan Flagg; 1861-62, James L. Valentine; 1863, Ethan Flagg; 1864-66, Isaac H. Knox; 1867-68, Ethan Flagg; 1869, Edward De Witt; 1870-71, Ethan Flagg. The city, coming in at this point, has been represented in the Board of Supervisors as follows: 1872-73, Charles R. Dusenberry; 1874, John Henry Williams; 1875-77, Jacob Read; 1878-81, James V. Lawrence; 1882-86, Jacob Read.

The following table shows the growth of the town of Yonkers from 1790. It gives for the years indicated the population, the number of taxable persons and the assessed valuation of real and personal estate:

Year.	Population.	Taxable Persons.	Property Valuation.
1790	1,125	—	—
1800	1,176	175	—
1810	1,365	204	—
1815	954	217	—
1820	1,586	210	—
1825	1,621	249	—
1830	1,761	264	—
1835	1,879	250	—
1840	2,068	269	—
1845	2,517	286	—
1850	4,199	418	1,275,809
1855	7,554	1629	4,290,672
1860	11,848	1511	5,173,863
1865	12,756	3170	4,558,189
1870	18,318	4800	6,506,164
1875	17,232	5117	20,906,304
1880	18,892	5920	17,167,178
1885	—	—	18,659,486

SECTION VI.

Period of Lemuel Wells.

(1813-1842.)

WE stated near the close of our fourth section that on the 20th of April, 1813, the old manor house of Philipsburgh, sold by the commissioners of 1785, with three hundred and twenty acres of land, to Cornelius P. Low, came into the possession of Lemuel Wells, a New York merchant, who bought it at auction for the sum of fifty-six thousand dollars. Mr. Wells enjoyed the property for twenty-nine years. His only son and child having died before him, he

himself finally passed away February 11, 1842, at the age of eighty-two years, both childless and intestate. Some people still living in Yonkers remember the purchase of 1813, and very many well remember the commanding form of Mr. Wells, which, down to 1842, continued to be seen upon the streets in his daily walks. He was born in Berlin, Conn. The oldest of his ancestors of whom we are informed was Richard Wells, of the Manor of Wells, Cambridgeshire, England. The earliest representative of the family in this country was Samuel Wells, who first settled in Wethersfield, Conn., but, in 1639, removed, with his sons—John, Samuel and Thomas—to Milford, in the same State. Their later history is extensively interwoven with that of the Congregational Church of New Britain.

A map of the tract bought by Mr. Wells in 1813 is still preserved. We give a copy of it. The only road marked upon it is the old Post road from Albany to New York, now called Broadway. There are, however, two lanes,—one entering from the Post road Bridge, and running round on the present Dock Street and Nepperhan Street only as far as John Copcutt's present mahogany-mill, and the other entering also from the Post road, opposite the grounds now occupied by St. Aloysius' School, and running eastward over the present Guion Street, and thence outward to Mr. Copcutt's factory in the "Glen." The latter of these lanes is marked on the map as the "Lane leading to Guion's Mills." The Saw-Mill River then swept over its entire bed, with nothing to hide any part of it from the eye except the simple Post Road Bridge. Twenty-six buildings only, of all kinds, including barns, sheds and little shops, stood on the three hundred and twenty acres of land. Of these, one was St. John's Church, five were mill buildings for grinding grain and plaster and for sawing and fulling, seven were barns and sheds and one is represented as containing "shops." This leaves but twelve buildings that could have been utilized as dwellings. One of these was the celebrated manor-house; another was the farm-house of Mr. Wells, standing on the west side of the Post road, a little north of the present Wells Avenue; a third was the Indian Queen Inn, on the site of the earlier "Hunt's Tavern," in which the lords of the Manor of Philipsburgh had in the previous century held courts-leet and courts-baron; a fourth was an old stone building in the "Lane leading to Guion's Mills," and perhaps as old as the manor house itself; and a fifth was a structure standing next to St. John's Church on the north, probably looked upon in its day as an imposing edifice. It was subsequently moved into Riverdale Avenue, behind the Reformed Church, where it stands to-day in a dilapidated condition. The building marked on the map of 1813 as the "Indian Queen Inn," and on later maps as the "Nappeckamack House," is also still standing, but much enlarged, at the northwest corner of New Main Street and Nepperhan Avenue.

¹In Thomas Smith's Directory for 1858-59, which we had not seen till we had closed this fifth section, we find the population of Yonkers put at 12,900 in 1874 and at 608 in 1712. But Mr. Smith reminds his readers that at those dates "Yonkers" was an indefinite term. Bolton, in his "Church in Westchester County," gives the population at 249 in 1704, 260 in 1708 and 260 in 1712. Probably no ordinances can be placed on any of these figures as indicating the number of people on the ground now covered by Yonkers. Mr. Smith's directory contains a brief but very interesting sketch of the vicinity. He had seen the old town record-book, which we cannot find. He says of it,—“One book served the town for over fifty years, and was then not filled. It is bound in parchment. The paper is thin, strong but rough, of English manufacture. . . . The records are extremely meagre.” But he gives the supervisors of the precinct before 1772, viz. James Van Cortlandt, 1766-67; and after, 1788-91, James Van Cortlandt, 1762-72.

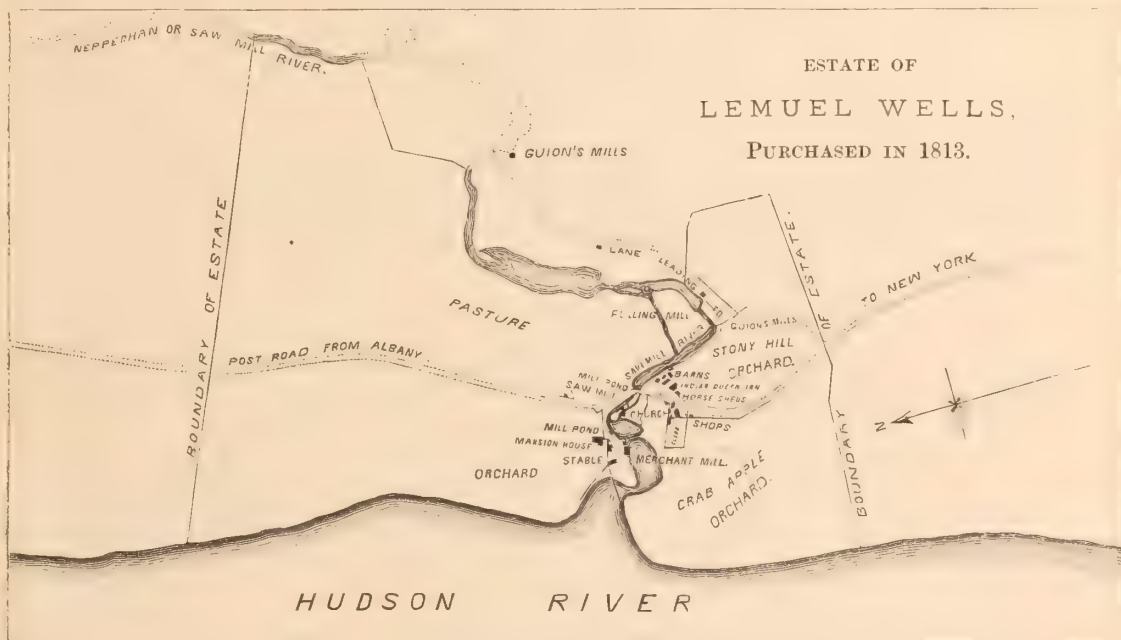
The spot on Getty Square now occupied by Mr. David Hawley's large block (till recently known as "Radford Building") was covered in 1813 with a nest of bushes and briars. It has since been raised several feet by filling. Manor Hall, with its beautiful gardens and lawns fronting on the Post road; St. John's Church, with its immediately surrounding grounds somewhat more extensive than now; the "Inn," with its outbuildings and shed; the dwellings we have named, and the mills upon the Nepperhan, with their few operatives gathered into a half-dozen poor tenement-houses, were the only evidences of a human settlement that met the eye of a passing traveler. The slope from the Post road to the river, and the hills to the east, were in part laid out in pasture-grounds and orchards, and in part covered with a waste of stone. It is said that the succession of boulders was so continuous that one might

And as families did not multiply upon the territory, of course provisions for families were not rapidly made. This was observable especially in the provision made for the education of children. The two school-houses of the town, already spoken of, both built before the Revolution, had become dilapidated and been abandoned. Major Ebenezer Baldwin¹

¹The history of Yonkers, between 1804 and 1863, is so involved in the life of Major Baldwin that an account of him must be given. We have taken sketches written and printed at the time of his death, and, with some touches of our own, have adapted what they contain to the illustration of our work.

MAJOR EBENEZER BALDWIN AND HIS TIMES.

Major Baldwin, who died on Tuesday, December 24, 1863, at the advanced age of more than eighty-eight years, was one of but few men whose life bridged over the whole interval between the American Revolution and the American Civil War. He was born November 26, 1775, at Bozrah, near Norwich, Conn., on a place belonging to his ancestors from the old Indian times. Among his memories were the alarms and excitements of the Revolutionary period. He was named after an uncle, a



have stepped from Getty Square to the present Glenwood without setting his foot upon the ground. So unlikely at that time was the surface which since, by the hand of industry and the application of capital, has been turned into a scene of thrift and beauty. Close around the manor-house, of course, the appearance was different. The grounds retained the effect of the money and toil which Colonel Philipse had expended upon them. The trees of his planting were now fully developed, and the lawn was beautiful. Outside of the special grounds of the favored mansion, however, but small beginning had been made towards bringing the three hundred and twenty acres under cultivation. The scenery of the river and Palisades was gorgeous, but few persons had been bold enough to take up any part of the rugged soil and attempt the labor of drawing out a livelihood from it.

Presbyterian minister of Danbury, eminent for scholarship and patriotism, who, on the taking of New York by the British, called upon his people to volunteer in the defense of their country, and himself marching as chaplain with the regiment from his neighborhood, soon afterwards, as a result of exposure, took the disease of which he died. Almost the entire population at the time was under military organization. The Major's father, being lame, was ranked among the minute-men—only called out to resist immediate invasion. On the 6th of September, 1781, the British, under Arnold, the traitor, attacked and destroyed New London and assaulted Fort Griswold, on the opposite side of the river. The men of the neighborhood rallied to its defense, but before their arrival the garrison had surrendered and then been massacred in cold blood. The Major at the time was but six years old. All his life he retained a vivid memory of this event. The Fort Griswold garrison consisted of the men of the neighborhood. The women and children knew that their own fathers and husbands had been slaughtered. The Major's father, with his company, arrived too late to take part in the fight, but Ezekiel Bailey, the father of his future first wife, was among the slain, and her mother stood on a rock, within musket-shot of the fort, and saw the whole action.

Some years after the war, Simeon Baldwin, another uncle, an eminent lawyer of New Haven, offered to educate his nephew at Yale and train

hired the house of Mr. Howland's gardener, started a school in it, and gave the first impulse to an educational interest which has ever since been maintained.

him to the law with his own son, Roger Sherman Baldwin, since Governor of Connecticut and Senator in Congress. The offer was a tempting one, but the decision of the young Ebenezer upon it was prophetic of the strength of the future man. He said that he looked at the hard and stony farm on which his father lived, and, while his three brothers and sisters were to be cared for, he could not feel satisfied to leave them there, and seek an easier life for himself. He afterwards learned the carpenter's trade, at which he continued to work for some time after his marriage.

Joseph Howland, the father of Gardiner and Samuel S. Howland, of New York, then resided at Norwich, and carried on business at New London—at that time one of the chief ports of the Union. He afterwards established a branch house in New York, and in 1802 bought the manor-house in Yonkers, with three hundred and twenty acres of land, for sixty thousand dollars, soon after making it his residence. The steeple of St. John's Church, in 1804, required rebuilding, and Mr. Howland, in that year a vestryman of the church, contracted with his acquaintance, Ebenezer Baldwin, of Norwich, to perform the work for the sum of five hundred dollars. It was this contract that first brought Mr. Baldwin to Yonkers. Mr. Baldwin used to tell that, during the building of the steeple, on the 12th of July, on the return of his carpenters to the church after their nooning, they were told that a special messenger had just gone by to inform his friends up the river that General Alexander Hamilton had been shot by Aaron Burr.

Through Mr. Howland's influence, Mr. Baldwin was induced to remain in Yonkers, then a hamlet of a dozen houses, and he immediately took an active part in its business. Broadway—then the Post-road—was the only street in the place. What is now Guion Street was then Guion's Lane, leading through fields to the mill at the Upper Pond, then under the direction of John Guion. The cross-road—now known as Ashburton Avenue—led to the Saw-Mill River, but this was quite out of the little settlement. And there was a lane leading to the sloop-landing at the point of the bridge upon the present Nepperhan Street. There were then the old manor-house, the old mill (on the site of Coputt's present mahogany-mill), and north of the old mill was the miller's house, standing on what is now the middle of Dock Street. Just above the dam was the cooper-shop occupied by Thaddeus Rockwell. A new tavern then recently built by Jacob Stout, occupied part of the present site of the Getty House. The old tavern, then used as a carriage-shop, stood northwest of it, and to the west of the carriage-shop, in front of where Hawley's building (recently "Radford Hall") now stands, was a country store kept by Miltus Cooper and Aaron Vark. There were also a small saw and grist-mill near where Peek's mill now is, a house belonging to St. John's Church, standing partly between the church and the road, and occupied by Gilbert Guion, Mr. Howland's farm-house, then newly built, the old house on Guion Street near School Street and perhaps three or four other buildings of less importance. All of these buildings, with one or two exceptions, were situated on Mr. Howland's property, and constituted the whole hamlet of Yonkers of that day.

Mr. Baldwin took an early and active part in the establishment of a school. Colonel Philipse, before the Revolution, had maintained one for the benefit of his tenants. His school-house, it is said, stood between the manor-house and the river. But the Revolution had broken up his school, and there had been none in the immediate neighborhood since. Mr. Baldwin found a dilapidated school-house on the Post road, near the corner of Valentine's Lane, and another on Guion's Lane, but neither was now fit for use. A small house that he had, at his first coming, built for Mr. Howland's gardener, and which stood on the Post road (nearly opposite the present Temperance Hall), became vacant soon afterwards, and was hired for a school-house at one dollar a month. Mr. Baldwin's younger brother, Erasmus, was put in this house as the first teacher, and Gilbert Guion and Captain Ruleff Stevens (then living on a farm to the north, afterward known as the Simpson farm, united in defraying the expense. The school was afterwards kept over the carriage-shop in the old tavern, on the present site of Flagg's Hall, and an Irishman named Blackburn was employed as teacher. But Blackburn proved dissipated and was soon dismissed. As he was leaving he vented both his spleen at Yonkers and his talent for verse in the following stanza, which, whatever may be otherwise thought of it, is useful as throwing light on the facts of the time:—

Dear Yonkers town, be not disguised,
Your name henceforth be stigmatized,

Our note below will give an account of this, and will help greatly to convey a clear idea of the amount of life and enterprise which marked the little hamlet of

For three miles round your school house—
One teacher can't supported be."

After the departure of this man, another Irishman, named McDermott, was employed. But pupils were few, numbering from a half-dozen to a dozen only, and no suitable room being available, the school was often for a time suspended. During the intervals the children had to be sent either to Warner's or to Mile Square, at which points the nearest other schools were in progress. In 1813 Mr. Lemuel Wells bought the Yonkers property of Mr. Howland. Before moving upon it, he stayed one night at Mr. Baldwin's. The latter, during the visit, asked him to build a school-house for the settlement. Mr. Wells at once authorized him to put up such a building as he thought proper, at an expense of four hundred dollars. The building, afterwards enlarged, was long used as the district school-house. How John Hobbs entered it as a teacher, in 1832, and what became of the building at a later day, will be found from a reading of our fourteenth section on the educational department of Yonkers. Mr. Baldwin, from the building of this house in 1814, gave his own time, attention and money to the advancement of the school and the providing of teachers, and from this period, with but brief intervals, Yonkers has maintained its public schools.

At the breaking out of the War of 1812, Mr. Baldwin took a warm interest in the defensive measures adopted by Governor Tompkins of New York, and raised a company of volunteers, numbering thirty men. They were ordered to rendezvous at Brooklyn, where they met another company from New Castle and a third from Albany, all of which had been consolidated into one company, their three captains drawing lots for the command. The lot fell upon Captain Wood of Albany. Mr. Baldwin had taken his company to Brooklyn and maintained them there at his own cost, until they were mustered into the service, and this expense the government never repaid him. He had considered himself subject to call to active service for several months, but was only under arms for thirteen days, and did not draw the land awarded to fifteen days' service and over.

After the war the company from Yonkers and the one from New Castle and a third raised in New Rochelle were organized into a battalion, and Governor Tompkins then sent Mr. Baldwin a commission as Major and placed him in command. His neighbors, after this, always addressed him as Major Baldwin, and as Major Baldwin he is always thought of and spoken of, even now.

About the year 1812, Mr. Howland had become embarrassed in his affairs, and made an assignment. Arrangements having been made to sell his Yonkers place at auction, his friends prepared to buy it in for him, provided it did not go above fifty thousand dollars. At this time the United States government was looking for a site for the navy-yard, afterwards located at Brooklyn, and Commodore Decatur visited Yonkers to study the ground. It was thought that the Saw-Mill River would furnish admirable means for the filling and discharging of a dry-dock. Mr. Baldwin informed Mr. Howland's friends of the formidable competition now threatening, and, either through their influence or some other cause, the United States was not represented at the sale. The friends then thought their interests were safe and sure. But, to their surprise, a courtly gentleman with a gold-headed cane and a slight limp in his gait, appeared on the scene, a perfect stranger to every one, and bid up the property to fifty-six thousand dollars. This was none other than Mr. Lemuel Wells, and this was his first introduction to the community among whom he spent the next twenty-nine years, respected and loved, and finally died on the 11th of February, 1842.

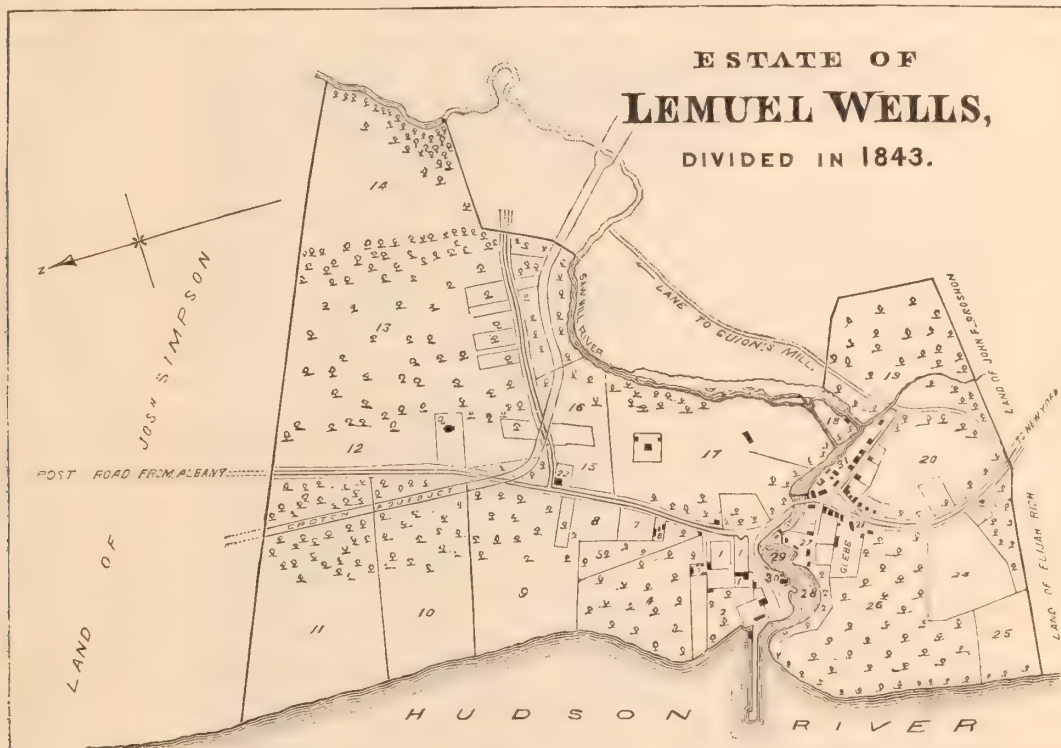
Mr. Baldwin continued an active business life till after he was seventy years of age. During the great speculation in merino sheep about 1819 to 1815) he had at one time charge of the manor-house farm. He afterwards used to speak of one of these sheep which one day ran under his wagon and broke its leg, but which afterwards, being skillfully nursed, recovered the soundness of the limb, and was sold for one thousand dollars.

At one time the Major kept a hotel on Broadway, where Weller & Welsh's store now is. During many years of the latter part of his business life he carried on a lumber yard on the sloop-wharf at the foot of the present Nepperhan Street. Afterwards he built the row of brick houses still known as the Baldwin Block, on the east side of Broadway, opposite the head of Dock Street. This was his last business enterprise. The last ten years of his life he spent in retirement.

Yonkers when Mr. Wells made his first appearance within it in 1813.

It was the general policy of Mr. Wells to keep his estate, as far as possible, undivided. He could not often be induced to sell or even lease any of his land. As a consequence, there could not be much incoming of population upon the three hundred and twenty acres. The New York and Albany stages passed up

tail it. And with the two hotels and Judge Vark's country store, nearly opposite the one on the Post road, as prominent centres of evening and holiday diversion, the period of Mr. Wells moved forward to its close in 1842. We give herewith a copy of another map, that of Mr. Wells' estate when divided in 1843, which shows some advance upon the state of things represented by the map of 1813. South of the Nepperhan



REFERENCE.

- 1. Mansion House, gardens, &c.
- 2. Orchard and Sheep house.
- 3. Farm Yard, Stables, &c.
- 4. Park Orchard.
- 5. Orchard.
- 6. Farm house.
- 7 to 12. Pasture lots.

- 13. Woods.
- 14. Pasture and meadow.
- 15 to 19. Pasture.
- 20. Stony Hill Orchard.
- 21. Church.
- 22. Methodist Church.
- 23. Indian Queen Inn.
- 24. Meadow.

- 25. Meadow.
- 26. Crab apple orchard.
- 27. Saw Mill, Grist Mill, &c.
- 28. Mill Creek.
- 29. Mill Pond and bank.
- 30. Flour mill.
- 31. Saw Mill River.

and down every day, and stopped for resting and dining, first at the old "Inn" on the Post road, and in later years at John Bashford's hotel, at the sloop landing. At the old "Inn," too, the town-meeting was for many years regularly held. One or another of these houses was, of course, the headquarters of the gossipers and politicians, the centre of rally for those eager for the latest news and those eager to re-

we have the new "Mechanic" (now New Main) Street, opened to the southward from the Square. The course of the Croton Aqueduct, completed in 1842, is also noted. At this date all buildings on the map of 1813 yet remained, except the old mill on the site of Mr. Copcutt's present mahogany-mill, which had been burned, but was replaced with a new one. Very few buildings had yet been removed from their sites of 1813. North

Major Baldwin was twice married. His first wife was a daughter of Ezekiel Bailey, one of the garrison of Fort Griswold, who was killed in its defense. She died in 1836 at nearly sixty years of age. Her mother, Mrs. Ezekiel Bailey, died in Yonkers, November 17, 1820, aged over eighty-two. His second wife was a daughter of John Williams. She lost her father, grandfather and three uncles in the Fort Griswold massacre. She died April 24, 1802, at over eighty years of age. Associated so intimately with the patriotic sacrifices of the Revolution, Major Baldwin could not fail to resent with the strongest indignation the attempt of the South, during our Civil War period, to destroy the government built up at such a cost. Through life he had always been a patriot. His character was marked by great force of will, resolute independence,

kindness of heart and an integrity that never swerved. His word was very truth itself.

In a plot in St. John's Cemetery lie the remains of the Major himself, his two wives, the mother of his first wife and three of his children, who died in infancy. At his death he left four children, most of whose names have been prominently identified with the industries and the social life of Yonkers, viz.: Judge Anson Baldwin, Ebenezer Baldwin, Jr., Mrs. William C. Waring and Mrs. Alexander Smith. All these are now deceased. But the family is at present represented in Yonkers by the third generation, among whom are Mr. Hall F. Baldwin, Mrs. Ethan Flagg, Mrs. John T. Waring, Mrs. Professor Henry M. Baird, Mr. Warren B. Smith and Mrs. William F. Cochran.

of the Nepperhan the only additional buildings of note were the district school-house; the Methodist Church, started in 1828, and its old parsonage (still standing in 1886, in the rear of its new one); a residence, also yet in being, nearly opposite the present Methodist Church parsonage; two seminaries of learning, one for young ladies and one for boys, the former afterwards enlarged and known as the Peabody House, and the latter on the crown of Locust Hill. Along Mechanic Street half a dozen straggling dwellings appear. In the Square there is but little change. The low spot of 1813, with its bushes and briars, has been raised by filling, and upon it are a few shops and business-places. On the site of the present Yonkers Savings-Bank was the residence of Mr. Lemuel W. Wells, a nephew of Mr. Lemuel Wells, and on the high ground at the southeast corner of the Post road and the present Nepperhan Avenue was the residence of Mr. Horace D. Wells. Beginning from the southwest corner of Main Street (then only a short lane leading to a mill), and taking South Broadway southward along its west side, Judge Aaron Vark kept a general country store, with the post-office, upon a corner lot which was within the limits of the now widened Main Street. Next door was an unoccupied dwelling house belonging to the Wells' estate, and noted for two of its apartments on the ground-floor thrown into one, and forming what was called "The Long Room," in which, from 1841 to 1845, the Reformed Church held its services. This building stood on the lot now occupied by Russell & Co's. bookstore, and forming the corner. Mr. Robert P. Getty afterwards purchased the building, and moved it into Riverdale Avenue, near Washington Street, where it can still be seen. South of St. John's Church were the residence and carriage-shop of James Bashford, the former standing within the edge of the present church-yard, and the latter within what is now the roadway of Hudson Street. The former of these buildings now stands in Guion Street (formerly Guion's Lane), and the latter, north of the Nepperhan River, on Palisade Avenue. South of these buildings there was no house within the three hundred and twenty acres, except the Widow Kniffin's, Thomas O. Farrington's, William Van Wagenen's and Judge Aaron Vark's, all of which still stand, but are much altered. Judge Vark's grounds are to-day the grounds of St. Aloysius' School. On what is now Nepperhan Avenue (then part of Guion Street), lived Dr. Amos W. Gates, Hiram Searl and a few others. There was, as yet, no Hudson River Railroad. The mouth of the Nepperhan covered many acres, which have since been reclaimed by filling, and are now densely occupied with buildings. On the map of 1843 appears a very long steamboat-wharf, which Mr. Wells had had carried out in 1831. Its length was about an eighth of a mile. At the head of it there was a hotel kept by John Bashford, of which we shall speak again. There was no avenue from the Post road to the river south of

the Saw-Mill, nor was there any north of it, except the one running to the Long Wharf. The south bank of the Saw-Mill was still the high bluff already spoken of,—a level plateau of forty feet elevation above the river,—which has since been removed for the opening of the present Main Street, and its contents employed to make the present valuable ground on the north side of the river. So few, even down to the death of Mr. Wells, had been the changes on the spot from the days of the Philipse. North of the Saw-Mill, between the river and the Post road, there were no buildings except the manor-house, with its farm-houses and out-houses, the flour-mill and the residence opposite the Methodist Church. The manor-house, of course, remained the central spot of interest. Its spacious front lawn, still extending to the Post road, was at this time a sweep of beauty. The broad entrance-way to it was at the head of the present Dock Street. The Nepperhan, then clear and sparkling, could be seen without interruption up and down from the Post road bridge. And the Post road, coming down from the north under a high and closely-wooded bluff on its east side, since set back to make room for business-places, met at the bridge a row of beautiful horse-chestnut trees, that fell off to the west along the north side of the stream, skirting it all the way round to the site of the old mill. One of these old horse-chestnut trees is still standing in the square, at the crossing of Dock Street and Warburton Avenue. It is a cherished object to the city, and special care is taken to guard it from injury by keeping it boxed. Mr. Wells, in 1822, told Silas Cornell and Dr. Bloodgood, of Flushing, L. I., who visited Yonkers to procure horse-chestnuts from these trees, that he had counted the rings on one of them, which he had recently removed, and that they indicated that the tree was sixty years old. He said he supposed it to have been imported from Europe by Colonel Philipse. This agreed with a statement made by Anthony Archer, who had been one of Colonel Philipse's employes, and who died in 1837, at ninety-two years of age.¹

¹ We have the following notes of the Archers, who are a very old family in Yonkers:

One Anthony Archer, about 1748, came from New York, from the Bar opposite McCamly's, and settled in Yonkers. He died about 1792 of consumption. A few days before he died he requested his son Anthony to bury him within the ground now known as St. John's Cemetery. There were no graves there then. The old man was the first buried in the grounds. The next was a daughter of Rev. Mr. Babcock, of St. John's; and the third was a child of Henry Runyon, at the time a miller of the place.

Anthony Archer (2d) was born in 1746 and died about 1837, aged nearly ninety-two years. When about eighteen years old he worked for Colonel Philipse nearly a year, making the terraces west of the manor-house and its garden (see our map of 1847). Eight or ten carmen from New York were employed. It was one of the most stony places he ever saw. There was an old burying-ground under the new sections, which was covered up. The ground between the garden and the river (now about between Dock Street and Wells Avenue) was occupied as a deer paddock. Several deer were kept in it. There was a high picket-fence around it; but sometimes the deer broke out and made for the tobacco plantations of the farmers (almost every farmer then raised tobacco). They were as fond of tobacco as of cabbage, and, in their raids upon it, they sometimes did much damage. One day a fine buck was observed to be studying the paling, apparently with a view to escape. He was look-



THE GATES HOMESTEAD.
NOW THE RESIDENCE OF W. F. NISBET,
YONKERS, N. Y.

Within the lawn all was culture. Grand old trees, domestic and foreign, some of them English yews, also supposed to have been imported by Colonel Philipse as early as 1762, still adorned the grounds, as did also a profusion of the richest plants and flowers. Along the south of the lawn was a row of locust-trees. Outside this charmed spot there were pastures, orchards and tilled fields to the fullest extent of Mr. Wells' ambition. And yet it remains true that at the date of his death the conditions of nature over by far the largest part of his land had been but little disturbed by cultivation. The region was rough beyond description in 1842, and it continued so for a few years later still. We add here a map on a larger scale, representing the surroundings of the manor-house and the lower part of the Saw-Mill River, with all buildings and other improvements, as they stood in the summer of 1847, immediately before the construction of the Hudson River Railroad. It was made by Mr. Thomas C. Cornell, of our city, from his own survey of the ground in the very year named.

SECTION VII.

From the Death of Mr. Wells to the Incorporation of the Village.

(1842-1855.)

WE have stated that Mr. Wells died February 11, 1842. He left a widow, but neither child nor will. He had had four brothers,—Elisha, Levi, Horace and Jared,—all of whom had died before him, and three of whom had left children, to the number of sixteen in all. These children, at the time of Mr. Wells' death, were all living, except one, Jared, Jr., who was represented by a single living child. By operation of law, the title to Mr. Wells' estate passed to his widow, with these fifteen children and one grandchild of his brother. The heirs to the estate were as follows:

1. The widow, Mrs. Eliza H. Wells.
2. The children of Mr. Elisha Wells (who had died in 1825), viz.: Horace D. Wells, Elisha A. Wells, Ovid P. Wells.

ing towards the Palisades. At length, drawing back, he made a spring, and, clearing the fence, soon took to the river. He was not overtaken until half-way across, and then he made bold resistance to the attempt to capture him. The son of this Anthony (Anthony 3d), who was born in 1790, never saw any deer about the place. It is supposed that they had disappeared at the time of the Revolution.

Anthony Archer (3d) related that his father had told him there was a skirmish, during the Revolution, on the crown of Ashburton Avenue, and that after it was over he had gone to the spot and found two soldiers dead,—one leaning against a tree, shot in the face, and the other lying on a stone. He went down and brought up to the spot John Williams, who was at the time superintendent of the manor property, and they two buried the men on the site where the railroad station now is. At another time there was a High Dutchman (or Hessian) shot in Yonkers, and they buried him there also. Drowned people seem to have been buried on the same spot.

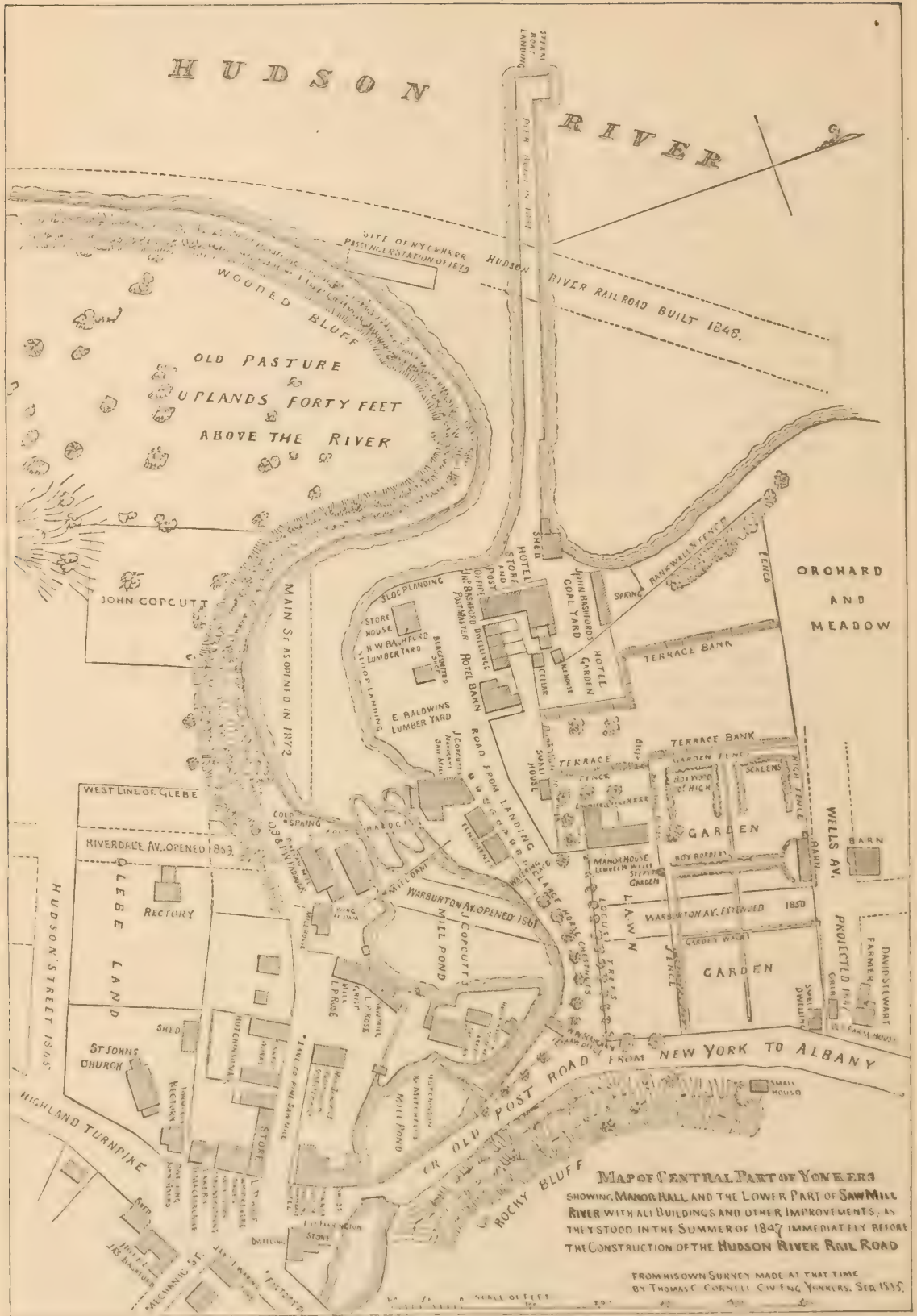
The descendants of the original Anthony Archer have been, and still are, very numerous in Yonkers, and some of them have been noted for the very long lives to which they attained. No doubt there was connection between this Archer branch and that of John Archer, who purchased land, as we have shown, of the widow of Van Der Donck, the first Yonkers patrolman.

3. The children of Mr. Levi Wells (who had died in 1823), viz.: Lydia Wells (Mrs. Augustus Flagg), Elvey Wells (Mrs. Chester Hart), Levi Wells, Lemuel W. Wells, Horace Wells, Marilla Wells (Mrs. Ralph Shipman).

4. The children and grandchild of Mr. Jared Wells (who had died in 1827), viz.: Jared Wells, Jr. (deceased, but represented by an only child, Jennet Wells), Horace Wells, Nancy Wells (Mrs. Bildad Rowley), Henry Wells, Lucy Wells, Sarah Wells (Mrs. Asahel Tuttle), Ann Eliza Wells (Mrs. John M. Patterson).

Among these heirs a partition suit was maintained, and, finally, by order of the Court of Chancery in that suit, the title became vested, by master's deed, in one of the heirs, Mr. Lemuel W. Wells. An elaborate abstract of title to this property, at the date of the settlement of the partition suit referred to, tracing its history from the grant to Van Der Donck in 1646, was made out, recorded and even published for general use. This abstract has ever since been the final appeal upon questions of title to lots within the three hundred and twenty acres. Of course, to property lying outside these acres, and still within the old Philipse manor, all appeal on questions of title can be determined beyond dispute by going back to the deeds given by the commissioners of forfeitures in 1785.

We are now within the period during which began the really vigorous life of Yonkers. The estate of Mr. Wells was now at length divided. Released from the hand that had so long kept it out of the market, and, catching the spirit of enterprise, the land so long unused, or, where used, devoted to farm purposes only, was quickly laid out in streets and lots, became the scene of busy activity and was soon dotted with beautiful residences. The Hudson River Railroad, beginning its operations in 1849, brought the newly-offered property into the liveliest demand, and population grew apace. The churches of Yonkers before 1855 had come to be eight instead of four, as they had been in 1842, the following having been added, viz.: the Reformed, St. Mary's Roman Catholic, the Baptist and the First Presbyterian. The population of the whole town at that time, still including Kingsbridge, had grown between 1842 and 1855 from not more than three thousand to seven thousand five hundred and fifty-four. The coming of the railroad gave great impulse to the place. Between 1842 and 1855 much of the slope upward from the Hudson along the whole length of the town had been redeemed from its wild condition and transformed into terraces and lawns of fascinating beauty. The industries of the place during these thirteen years began to loom up and to give lively promise of that strength and prominence to which in later days they have attained. There was great activity in all departments of enterprise and work, in mills and factories, in stores and shops, in real estate, in surveying, in outlaying, in grading, in building, in boating and trucking. The place that had been so long retired and dormant came into notice and was wide awake. It is not surprising that by 1855 the people found it necessary to organize for



MAP OF CENTRAL PART OF YONKERS
 SHOWING MAJOR HALL AND THE LOWER PART OF SAWMILL RIVER WITH ALL BUILDINGS AND OTHER IMPROVEMENTS, AS THEY STOOD IN THE SUMMER OF 1847 IMMEDIATELY BEFORE THE CONSTRUCTION OF THE HUDSON RIVER RAIL ROAD

FROM HIS OWN SURVEY MADE AT THAT TIME
 BY THOMAS C. CORNELL CIVIL ENG. YONKERS, SEP. 1855.

SCALE OF FEET
 1" = 60'

strong government and to secure some form of incorporation. This they did in that year, and to an account of the course they took and its results our next section will be devoted.

SECTION VIII.

The Village of Yonkers.

(1855-1872.)

THE village of Yonkers was incorporated under an act of the State Legislature, passed April 12, 1855. It included all that part of the town "beginning at the Hudson River, at low water-mark, at the southwesterly corner of the farm of Edward F. Shonnard, and running thence along the southerly line of said Shonnard's land south sixty-three degrees east five thousand one hundred feet to the easterly margin of the Nepperhan River; thence southerly along the easterly margin of the said Nepperhan River five thousand three hundred feet to the line between lands of Rev. R. Hubbard and lands of Lemuel W. Wells, Ethan Flagg and W. W. Scrugham; thence along said line between lands of said Wells, Flagg and Scrugham south fifty-three degrees and thirty minutes east three hundred feet to the easterly side of Walnut Street and a continuation thereof in the same direction south thirty-two degrees west five thousand two hundred feet to the line between lands of Robert P. Getty and lands of Thomas W. Ludlow; thence following said line between said Getty's and Ludlow's lands, through lands now or late of S. T. Williams, north seventy-six degrees and fifteen minutes west to the westerly line of the old Albany Post road (now called Broadway); thence through lands of Thomas W. Ludlow north seventy-six degrees and fifteen minutes west three thousand four hundred and fifty feet to the Hudson River, at low water-mark; thence northerly along the Hudson River, at low water-mark, to the place of beginning."

The charter was amended and the powers of the corporation enlarged in 1857, 1860, 1865, 1866, 1868 and 1871. The officers for which it provided were a president, six trustees, a clerk, a treasurer and a police justice. The territory of the village was divided into three wards, from each of which two trustees were to be elected by the people. The village incorporation continued till it gave way to the city incorporation in 1872.

The following were the officers of the village during its seventeen years of existence, with the years in which they were successively, and some of them again and again, elected. The annual day of election was the first Tuesday in March:

Trustees: Lemuel W. Wells, 1855-56; Reuben W. Van Pelt, 1855-57; William C. Waring, 1855; Fielding S. Gant, 1855; Thomas O. Farrington, 1855-56, 1863-64; Jacob Read, 1855; Bailey Hobbs, 1856-59; Peter F. Peek, 1856; Charles C. Merchant, 1856-57; Henry F. De Voe, 1857; Robert P. Getty, 1857-58, 1867-68; Ethan Flagg, 1857-60, 1867-68; Edward

Underhill, Sr., 1858, 1861-62; Leonard M. Clark, 1858-61; John Copcutt, 1858-61; Amos W. Gates, 1859-60; James C. Bell, 1860-61; John Wheeler, 1860-61, 1872; Joseph P. Disbrow, 1861-62; Justus Lawrence, 1861-62; William Radford, 1862-63; James W. Mitchell, 1862-66; James Stewart, 1862-63; Hall F. Baldwin, 1863-64; G. Hilton Scribner, 1863-64; Levi P. Rose, 1864-65; Robert J. Douglass, 1864-65; Patrick White, 1865-66; Thomas Smith, 1865-66, 1869; Heman C. White, 1865-66; Charles Byrnes, 1866-67; Stephen H. Thayer, Sr., 1866-69; George B. Skinner, 1867-68; C. W. Malliband, 1867; Hugh McElroen, 1868-71; Frederick A. Back, 1868-69; Ralph E. Prime, 1869-70; John W. Oliver, 1869-70; Albert Keeler, 1870-72; Ebenezer Baldwin, 1870-71; William Augustus Gibson, 1870-71; Anthony Imhoff, 1871-72; Joseph Peene, 1871-72; Hyatt L. Garrison, 1872; William Macfarlane, 1872.

Presidents: William Radford, 1855-56; William W. Woodworth, 1857-58; Robert P. Getty, 1859; Thomas F. Morris, 1860; John T. Waring, 1861-62; Everett Clapp, 1863-64; James C. Bell, 1865-66; Justus Lawrence, 1867-68; Isaac H. Knox, 1869-70; Robert P. Getty, 1871-72.

Clerks: William H. Post, from 1855 to 1859; Lyman Cobb, Jr., from 1860 to 1867; William H. Post, 1868; John G. P. Holden, 1869; William H. Doty, from 1870 to 1872.

Treasurers: John Stilwell, Egbert Howland, Evert K. Baldwin, Samuel D. Rockwell, Bailey Hobbs and George W. Cobb.

Police Justices: First, T. Astley Atkins, and Second, Edward P. Baird.

The various duties of providing for the safety and public wants of the village were, of course, the charge of the new corporation. An engine company, which had been organized and equipped in 1852, was taken under its care, additional means for extinguishing fires were provided, and public improvements were inaugurated and carried forward to keep pace with the advance of private enterprise. The police at first was very ineffective, but in 1866 a sufficient force was organized, and this force drew upon itself much commendation for its vigilance and efficiency. Lamp districts were laid out, and, in the seventeen years of the village life, good progress was made towards an effective lighting of the streets. A vast amount of labor was put upon the latter, in grading and graveling the roadways and flagging the sidewalks. The village came to be one of the best governed, best graded, best lighted villages in the country. Streets were opened or extended as the times demanded, and old roads were more clearly defined. We are able to present a fourth map, executed in 1868, within four years of the close of the village period. It shows the boundaries of the village, and within them the original three hundred and twenty acres of Mr. Wells, and, compared with the map of 1843, indicates the progress made by the locality between the death of Mr. Wells and the date

at which the people were upon the eve of applying for the incorporation of Yonkers as a city. As matter of interest, we give the dates of opening or confirmation of the principal streets and avenues upon the map of the village of Yonkers for 1872, the year which ended its existence. At the time of Mr. Wells' death, as our map of 1843 shows, there were but six roads traversing his three hundred and twenty acres, that now called Broadway and substantially parts of those now called Ashburton Avenue, Nepperhan Avenue, Guion Street, Nepperhan Street and New Main Street. All of these, except the first, are now more or less changed as to names and extent. We first speak at length of the history of these six roads and then add the descriptions and dates of opening or confirmation of the other prominent streets down to 1872.

date of the village organization of 1855. They were effected in part by the village and in part by special legislation.

2. *The present Ashburton Avenue, only from North Broadway eastward.*—This, on the map of 1843, was nothing but a country road "to Mile Square." At its Broadway end it came out on the south side of the Methodist Church, instead of the north, as Ashburton Avenue does now.

3. *The present Nepperhan Avenue, extending from South Broadway, nearly opposite Washington Street, to Robert Avenue.*—That part of this avenue which lies between South Broadway and New Main Street is a new opening made within the city period. That part of it which lies between New Main Street and Ashburton Avenue was formerly very crooked. It is



1. *The present Broadway.*—This was the old Post road from the south end of Manhattan Island ("the Battery") to Albany. We have no date for its beginning, but it is undoubtedly as old as the days of Forts Amsterdam and Orange. In the infancy of the province it had been formed with the least possible labor, following the driest ground, over or on the edges of the hills. But early in this century, about 1806, the "Highland Turnpike Company" was chartered for the purpose of improving this road. This company straightened it in many places, improved it generally and collected toll upon it for many years. These circumstances gave to the road, in addition to the old, familiar and still-preserved name of "The Post road," the name of "The Highland Turnpike," by which it is designated in many documents. Of course, the present width and beauty of this most prominent avenue of Yonkers, and the excellent quality of its roadway and sidewalks, are improvements, most of which have come upon it since the

especially interesting to know that it ran round by the edge of "The Glen," below the dam and west of Mr. Copcutt's silk-factory. In later days, however, it has been much straightened all the way from New Main Street to the Aqueduct Arch. The "Lane leading to Guion's Mills" on the map of 1813 was, as far out as these mills, nearly coincident with Nepperhan Avenue. But it is further important to know that the whole of the old Guion's Lane was once known as part of the "Saw-Mill River Road." The openings or confirmations of the new parts of the present Nepperhan Avenue were as follows: From Chestnut Street to Ashburton Avenue, September 21, 1868, and from Ashburton Avenue to Robert Avenue, December 6, 1869. The history of Nepperhan Avenue is very interesting as a study, and must be understood for the satisfaction of any one who undertakes to read the annals of Yonkers since the purchase of Mr. Wells.

4. *The present Guion Street, extending only from the*



RESIDENCE OF F. T. HOLDER,
YONKERS, N. Y.



Mansion House on South Broadway to New Main Street.—This is part of the original "Lane leading to Guion's Mills." The name Guion Street had been attached to the whole of that lane for some years before 1868 and 1869, but we have just shown that in these two years "Nepperhan Avenue" was substituted as a designation for most of it. See No. 3.

5. *The present Nepperhan Street* (wholly different from *Nepperhan Avenue*), *extending from Buena Vista Avenue, opposite the Hudson River Railroad Station, to the junction of Dock Street and Warburton Avenue.*—This is part of what the map of 1813 represented as a road leaving the Post road, and running round the edge of the Saw-Mill River to the sloop wharf, just below the old grist-mill. On the map of 1843 it still appears without change. But it has since been extended westward to Buena Vista Avenue. To make clear this street and some others near at hand, but subsequently opened, we have already given an enlarged map of the spot and its vicinity as seen in 1847, just before the opening of the Hudson River Railroad. This map has before been of use to us in illustrating many matters referred to in the early part of our work.

6. *The present New Main Street, extending from Getty Square southward to a junction with South Broadway.*—This street, from Getty Square to Nepperhan Avenue, was from its opening long known as Mechanic Street. From Nepperhan Avenue to South Broadway it was laid out under the village charter, and was known as Spring Street. The part once called Mechanic Street dates as a country road from August 25, 1836, but it was widened and graded by the village, and confirmed as a village street September 5, 1870. As illustrating some designations already given of the present Broadway and the present Nepperhan Avenue, it may be added that when this road was opened, in 1836, it was described as extending from the "Old Highland Turnpike" to the "Saw-Mill River Road."

Such were the only public roads traversing the three hundred and twenty acres of Mr. Wells down to 1843. From 1843 to 1872, however, and especially during the village period—seventeen years in length—many streets were first laid out by private enterprise, and the following important ones were, at the dates we give with them, officially opened or confirmed. Compare them with our map of 1847, as far as they are indicated on that map:

Atherton Street, from Wells Avenue to Locust Street, June 5, 1865.

Ashburton Avenue, from Broadway west to the river, March 23, 1858, and from Broadway east to the village line, November 26, 1866. This is the old road to Mile Square, and had been known as Ashburton Avenue before the incorporation of the village, in 1855.

Bashford Street, from Dock Street to Wells Avenue, July 6, 1868.

Buena Vista Avenue, from Hudson Street to St. Mary Street, June 13, 1859.

Clinton Street, from Hudson Street to St. Mary Street, November, 5, 1866.

Cottage Place, from 29 Irving Place to end of Willow Place, October 3, 1859.

Dock Street, from North Broadway to the Hudson River, laid out by Judge Woodworth in 1850, but subsequently adopted by the village.

Elm Street, from Palisade Avenue (once at this point called Factory Street) to the summit of Nodine Hill, March 12, 1860. This was a road, and known as Elm Street before the incorporation of the village in 1855.

Glenwood Avenue, from Ravine Avenue to Warburton Avenue, July 2, 1860, and from Warburton Avenue to Park Avenue November 8, 1860.

Gold Street from Warburton Avenue to the Hudson River, July 1, 1867.

Hawthorne Avenue (first called Grinnell Street), from Main Street to Ludlow Street, confirmed from Main Street to St. Mary Street September 3, 1860, and from St. Mary Street to Ludlow Street October 24, 1870.

High Street, from Broadway to Oak Hill Avenue, September 3, 1860.

Hudson Street, from Broadway to Buena Vista Avenue, June 13, 1859.

Irving Place, from Warburton Avenue to North Broadway, June 6, 1859.

Jefferson Street, from Prospect Street to Vark Street, March 23, 1868.

Kellinger Street, from the Mansion House to Park Hill Avenue, October 24, 1859.

Lamartine Avenue, from North Broadway to the Hudson River Railroad, August 3, 1868.

Locust Street, from 103 Warburton Avenue to the Hudson River, November 3, 1862.

Locust Hill Avenue, from 13 Palisade Avenue to Ashburton Avenue.

Main Street, from Getty Square west to the Hudson River, July 7, 1856. The route of this street has now been much changed by straightening and widening.

Morgan Street, from 120 Nepperhan Avenue to Brook Street, June 1, 1868.

Mulford Street, from 42 Oak Hill Avenue to Vineyard Avenue, September 5, 1870.

Oak Hill Avenue, from 139 Ashburton Avenue to High Street, September 3, 1860.

Orchard Street, from 211 Ashburton Avenue north to village line, April 11, 1870.

Palisade Avenue, from Getty Square to Lake Avenue south of Ashburton Avenue (the lower part formerly known as Factory Street), July 30, 1855; north of Ashburton Avenue, August 17, 1857.

Point Street, from 321 Warburton Avenue to Glenwood Station, October 5, 1868.

Prospect Street, from 57 South Broadway to Buena Vista Avenue, July 6, 1868. This had been a street

and known by this name even before the incorporation of the village in 1855.

Ravine Avenue, from Lamartine Avenue north nearly to village line, October 24, 1870.

Riverdale Avenue, from 30 Main Street to Kingsbridge, made up at different dates, and finally opened as one street. Confirmed from St. Mary Street to Riverdale, September 26, 1853, by the town authorities, and from St. Mary Street to Main Street by the village, August 1, 1859.

School Street, from 140 Nepperhan Avenue to Kelling Street, October 24, 1859.

St. Mary Street, from 105 South Broadway to 146 Buena Vista Avenue, July 2, 1860.

Union Place, from 255 Warburton Avenue to Hudson River Railroad, November 7, 1864.

Vineyard Avenue, from 191 Ashburton Avenue to Lake Avenue, January 16, 1865.

Washington Street, from 81 South Broadway to 44 Clinton Street, March 23, 1858.

Warburton Avenue, from 29 Main Street north to village line, July 27, 1854 (since extended to city line).

Wells Avenue, from 65 North Broadway to the Hudson River Railroad, August 16, 1855. This had been a road known as Wells Avenue before the incorporation of the village.

Willow Place (first called Smith Street), from 118 Warburton Avenue to Cottage Place, October 3, 1859.

Wood Place, from 180 Warburton Avenue to Cottage Place, October 3, 1859.

Woodworth Avenue, from 27 Wells Avenue to Glenwood Avenue, March 12, 1860.

These were the best-known streets in 1872, and the dates of opening or confirmation are the prominent dates. Into particulars we have not entered. Other improvements were also introduced, to which reference will be made, or which will be described under various headings yet to follow, viz., those of police, gas, horse railroad, etc. In 1870 the population of the whole town had grown to be eighteen thousand three hundred and fifty-seven. This, of course, as yet included Kingsbridge. Many matters had been under discussion, looking to further improvements. Some of these had been carried out, others were still in abeyance. All the principal streets had been widened and graded. The excellence of its order and the enterprise of its citizens, and the growing beauty and attractions of the place were noticed by every one. And now the time had come when a further step was to be taken. We are next to look at Yonkers as a city.

SECTION IX.

The City of Yonkers from 1872 to the Present Time.

The City of Yonkers was incorporated under an act of the State Legislature passed June 1, 1872. By the charter it was divided into four wards. The following

is the description of the city boundaries given in the original charter. In subsequent revisions the language of description has been simplified, but the lines remain the same:

"Bounded Westerly by the westerly line of the county of Westchester, northerly by the town of Greenburgh, easterly by the easterly line of the town of Yonkers, and southerly by a line drawn from the westerly line of the said county to the easterly line of the town of Yonkers, in manner following, to wit: Commencing at a point formed by the intersection of the westerly line of the said county with a line of extension westerly of the northerly line of the land belonging to the Sisters of Charity, known as Mt. St. Vincent de Paul; thence easterly along said northerly line of the land of said Sisters of Charity to Riverdale Avenue; thence still easterly and in a straight line crossing said Riverdale Avenue and South Broadway to the northwest corner of land of G. F. Codding; thence still easterly in a straight line to the northwest corner of land known as the Van Cortlandt Estate, near Highland Avenue; thence easterly along the northerly boundary line of land known as the Van Cortlandt Estate to the northeasterly corner thereof; thence running easterly in a straight line to the Bronx River to a point in the easterly line of the town of Yonkers, distant northerly twenty-one hundred feet from the northerly boundary line of Woodlawn cemetery, measured in a course bearing north twenty degrees east (present magnetic bearing) therefrom."

Such was the statement of the city boundaries in the original charter of 1872. The charter was amended again and again, February 28, 1873, June 10, 1875, April 26, 1876, April 8, 1878, and finally revised May 2, 1881. The following is the far simpler description of the boundaries as now given:

"The city shall be bounded westerly by the westerly line of the county of Westchester; northerly by the town of Greenburgh; easterly by the middle line of the Bronx River; and southerly by a line commencing at a point in the middle of the Bronx River, which bears north thirty-three degrees and thirty minutes east twenty-one hundred feet from the point of intersection of the middle line of the Harlem Railroad with the southerly line of the public highway leading from the Mile Square Road easterly to and past the Woodlawn Station on the Harlem Railroad; thence running from said point in the Bronx River on a straight line westerly, and passing through the point of intersection of the original high water mark of the easterly shore of the Hudson River with the northerly boundary line of lands of the Sisters of Charity of St. Vincent de Paul to the west bounds of the County of Westchester."

Under the charter of June 1, 1872, the passage was quickly made by the necessary process from the village to the city organization. The obligations of the village, as well as its rights and privileges, were

assumed by the city. The village officers were empowered to act as city officers in their respective places till the election and qualification of the new officers required by the charter could be brought about. The manor-house and grounds (which had been purchased by the village for its headquarters in May, 1868) now became the city hall and grounds, and were so fitted up as to adapt them to the various needs of the city government. The Common Council chamber, the City Court-room and the offices of the city judge, the city clerk, the treasurer, the receiver of taxes, the Water Board, and the city surveyor and engineers remain in the building still, and an outside building has been erected for the use of the Police Department, though it becomes daily more and more evident that the needs of the city will require enlarged accommodations in a very short time.

After the organization of the city (June, 1872) the southern part of the town of Yonkers, which reference to the city boundaries as given above will show had not been taken into the new city, was set off by act of the county supervisors, December 16, 1872, as a new town, under the name of Kingsbridge. This action of the supervisors was confirmed by the Legislature February 28, 1873. And,

furthermore, the new town of Kingsbridge, on the 1st of January, 1874, was annexed to New York City. The result of the latter act to the city of Yonkers was that it made its southern boundary coincident with the northern boundary of the City of New York.

The growth of the region occupied by this town was formerly, as has been seen, exceedingly slow. From the death of Mr. Wells population began to set towards it. From 1849 its growth was very rapid indeed till the breaking out of the Civil War. During the war period there was a repression of progress. From 1865 to 1873 the advancement was unprecedented. Through the seven years of financial trial that followed, the city scarcely held its own. Since 1880, however, it has again been growing as before. Between the incorporation of the village (1855) and the present time the population of the town has increased from about seven thousand to more than twenty

thousand, and with this growth have been developed all the public improvements that have been demanded. No city of the size of Yonkers with such recency of start has roadways and sidewalks better laid out, or streets better graded, better upheld, better lighted at night, or better shaded from summer heat. It has had, as a rule, a careful and economical city government, an effective police, a well-equipped and energetic Fire Department, and an abundant supply of the best water for domestic and public uses. The history of all these improvements we shall give further on.

The mayors of the city have been, James C. Courter, 1872-74; Joseph Masten, 1874-76, 1878-80; William Augustus Gibson, 1876-78; Norton P. Otis, 1880-82; Samuel Swift, M.D., 1882-84; William G. Stahlnecker, 1884-86; J. Harvey Bell, 1886.

The presidents of the Common Councils have been, Ethan Flagg, 1872-73; William Macfarlane, 1873-75; Charles T. Mercer, 1875-76; G. Livingston Morse, 1876-78; H. R. Hicks, 1878-79, 1881-82; Edw'd Underhill, 1879-1881; Leander Hodges, 1882-83; Edward J. Mitchell, 1883-84; Michael Mooney, 1884; Geo. H. Lowerre, 1886.

The following have been the aldermen:

First Ward.—Eli L. Seger, 1872-75; John Brennan, 1872-74; Abram S. Radcliff, 1874-76; Joseph W. Riley, 1876-78; Joseph M. Murphy, 1876-78; Thomas Egan, 1878-85; Bernard Cullen, 1878-80; Edward J. Mitchell, 1880-85; George H. Lowerre, 1885-87; William H. Casey, 1886-88.

Second Ward.—Albert Keeler, 1872-74; William Macfarlane, 1872-75; Charles T. Mercer, 1874-76, 1883-85; William H. Copeutt, 1875-77; James W. Mitchell, 1876-78; Joseph M. Tompkins, 1877-79; Edward Underhill, 1878-82; Jonathan Vail, 1879-83; Leander Hodges, 1882-83; Thomas L. Mottram, 1884-85; William Greenhalgh, Sr., 1885-87; John H. Schlobohm, 1886-88.

Third Ward.—Ethan Flagg, 1872-73; Hyatt L. Garrison, 1872-74; James Stewart, 1873-75; John S. White, 1874-76; Robert Neville, 1875-77; G. Livingston Morse, 1876-78; Frederick Shonnard, 1877-78;



YONKERS CITY HALL, 1886—(OLD MANOR HOUSE).

Isaac D. Cole, 1878-80; G. W. Valentine, 1878-79; John Pagan, 1879-81; William P. Ketcham, 1880-82; John F. Thompson, 1881-83; Fisher A. Baker, 1882-84; J. Irving Burns, 1883-85; Michael F. Murray, 1884-85; Edwin A. Quick, 1885-87; Maurice H. Downing, 1886-88.

Fourth Ward.—Henry R. Hicks, 1872-73; Zeb. H. Brower, 1872-73; Michael Mooney, 1873-77, 1883-87; Isaac V. Underhill, 1877-81, 1884-88; James F. D. Crane, 1881-83.

The office of city clerk has been filled by William H. Doty from 1872 to the present time. The city judges have been, Edward P. Baird, 1872-80; Matthew H. Ellis, 1880-84, and George B. Pentz, from 1884.

The city attorneys have been Matthew H. Ellis, 1872-75; Ralph E. Prime, 1875-77; Theodore Fitch, 1877-83; Joseph F. Daly, 1883-87.

The city treasurers have been George W. Cobb, Bailey Hobbs, Robert P. Getty and John G. P. Holden.

The various departments of the city government, and the enterprises depending upon its patronage, require the services of a large corps of officers and subordinates. These are a mayor, a president of the Common Council, eight aldermen (two from each of the four wards), a supervisor, a clerk, an attorney, a treasurer, a receiver of taxes, a street commissioner, a city surveyor, a commissioner of charities, three assessors, a pound-keeper, one constable in each of the four wards, three inspectors of election in each of the eight election districts, two scavengers, an inspector of engines and steam boilers, two examiners of engineers, a city-judge, a clerk of the City Court, a marshal, four justices of the peace, a board of five water commissioners (one of whom is president and another treasurer), a clerk for the Water Board, an engineer and superintendent for the Water Board, a Board of Health consisting of five members, with a health officer and a secretary additional, a Board of Police, consisting of four members (one of whom is president, and another secretary and treasurer), to which board are accessory an acting surgeon, a captain, two sergeants, two roundsmen, one hostler, two door-keepers and twenty patrolmen, a board of five commissioners (one of whom is president and another clerk) with a chief engineer and two assistant engineers, three members of a Board of Excise, a Board of Education composed of fifteen members, a superintendent of schools, a principal of the High School and six other principals, one for each of the six district schools of the city, twenty-two commissioners of deeds and a board of civil service examiners composed of four members. The names of the persons holding all these various offices and positions are published from year to year in the city's official reports.

The Mayor's financial report for the fiscal year ending February 28, 1885, shows the total receipts of the city for the year to have been \$566,485.35, and the total expenditures \$562,988.54. The bonded debt, March 1, 1885, was \$1,314,000. It was made up of four

classes, as follows: Consolidation bonds, \$525,000 water bonds, \$745,000; bridge bonds, \$14,000; and public building and dock bonds, \$30,000. These bonds are to be paid according to a fixed scheme of installments. The first are to run till 1902, the second are to begin with 1903 and run till 1915, the third are to run till 1889, and the fourth, beginning with 1890, are to run till 1895. The amount to fall due each year will vary from \$28,000 at the present time to \$65,000 in the year 1915.

The following comparative statistics, furnished to the compiler of this history by Robert P. Getty, Esq., may be of interest as illustrating the progress of Yonkers in financial values and taxation during the thirty years ending with 1882.

In 1852

the assessed valuation of the town (then including what has since been annexed to the city of New York) was as follows:

Real Estate.....	\$2,567,995
Personal Property.....	374,385
	<hr/> \$2,942,380

Of this valuation the since annexed portion represented about.....650,000

Leaving for the territory now occupied by the city of Yonkers.....\$2,292,380

In 1882

the assessed valuation of the city of Yonkers was as follows:

Real Estate.....	\$17,359,146
Personal Property.....	334,375
	<hr/> \$17,693,521

The amount of tax levied in 1852 was\$9,216.13
That levied in 1882 was.....\$336,217.34

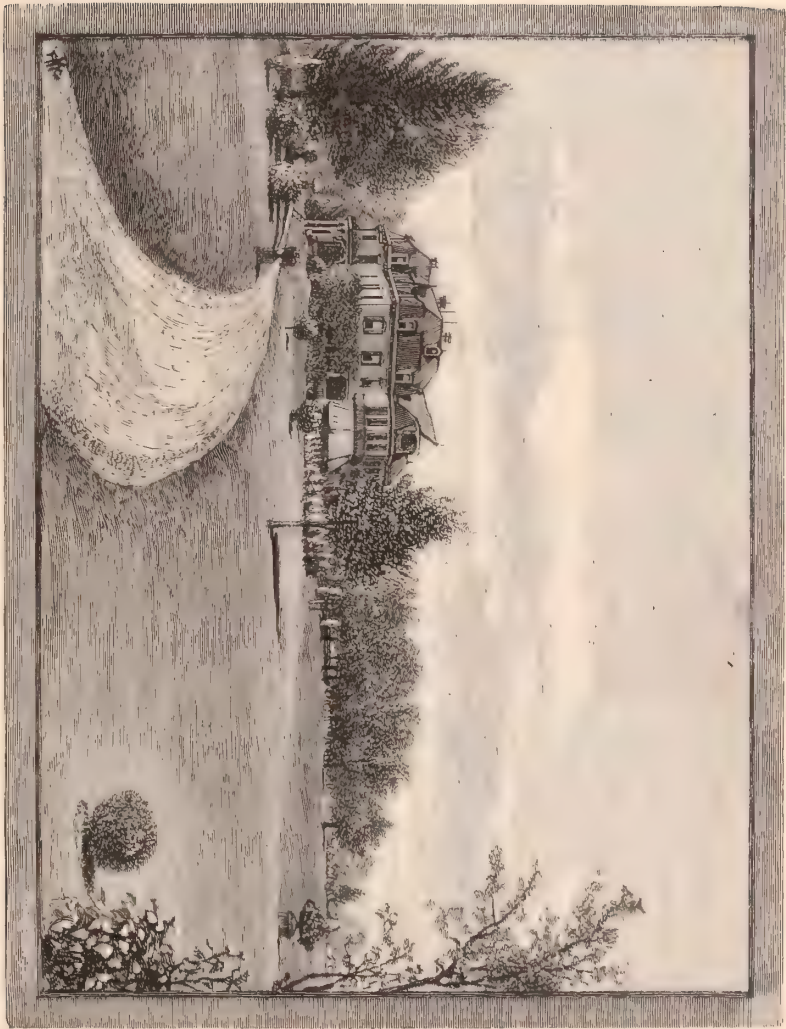
It will be seen from the above statement that while the valuation of the real and personal property in the city grew in these thirty years about eight, the amount of the tax levy increased about thirty-seven times.

The following additional statistics of the taxes of 1852 are furnished by Mr. Getty:

There were 550 tax-payers, real and personal, of whom 10 paid over \$100 each, and 540 paid less. The latter averaged about \$13.71 each, and paid in all \$7402.13. The ten paid in all \$1689.00. They were as follows:

Hudson River R. R., representing 56 acres, value, \$175,000	paid \$340.83
Hatlem R. R.....	23,000 " " 91.00
Croton Aqueduct.....	6,312 " " 51.22
Edward Bobby	860 " " 236.60
Robt. P. Getty, Hotel and Residence	63 " " 147.88
Jno. Copcut, 2 mills & 17 houses	15 " " 142.57
Thos. W. Ludlow, 5 houses	129 " " 139.15
Edward Shonard, 3 houses.....	200 " " 128.31
Joseph DeLafield.....	232 " " 121.34
Ethan Flagg	118 " " 100.10

Taxes paid by the 10	\$1689.00
Taxes paid by the 540	7402.13
Taxes paid by 55 persons on dogs alone.....	125.00
Total tax raised in 1852	\$9216.13



"HILL-CREST."

RESIDENCE OF WALTER W. LAW, YONKERS, N. Y.



Mr. Getty also furnishes the following comparative statistics of the number of buildings in the town of Yonkers respectively in 1852 and 1884.

In 1852 there were in the town 537 buildings in all.

In 1884, according to the assessors' books, there were buildings in the city as follows :

In the First Ward—685 dwelling-houses, 5 churches, 2 public-school buildings, 1 parish-school building, 1 boarding-school building, and factory property valued at \$62,500.

In the Second Ward—1076 dwelling-houses, 4 churches, 1 public-school building and factory property valued at \$479,250.

In the Third Ward—1008 dwelling-houses, 6 churches, 1 public-school building, 2 public halls, and factory property valued at \$277,000.

In the Fourth Ward—155 dwelling-houses, 2 churches, 1 chapel, and 3 public-school buildings.

In several following chapters we shall give a full history of the various departments of our city government.

SECTION X.

Departments of the City Government.

(General, Judicial, Health and Excise.)

SOME of the officers of the city are elected by the people. All others, except the Board of Education, are nominated, and, with the consent of the Common Council, appointed, by the mayor. The members of the Board of Education are appointed by the mayor without reference to the consent of the Council. Those elected by the people are the mayor, the aldermen, the supervisor, the city judge and four justices of the peace. The annual election for these officers is held on the last Tuesday of March. The term of office of all elective officers, except the justices of the peace, begins on the 15th day of April after their election. The terms of the justices of the peace begin on the following 1st of January. The mayor and the aldermen serve for two years each, the city judge and the justices of the peace for four years each and the supervisor for one year only. Each of these officers, unless his office shall become vacant under special provision of the charter, must hold it till his successor shall have been elected and shall have qualified. The mayor and aldermen serve without compensation. The supervisor receives the pay allowed by law to each town supervisor of the county. The salary of the city judge is three thousand dollars per year. The justices of the peace are entitled to the fees and compensations of justices of the peace of the several towns of the State. For information respecting the duties, powers and liabilities of all these officers, together with the manner in which any of them may be removed from office, when removal becomes necessary, we refer the reader to the printed charter of the city, which may be procured at the City Hall.

The present *elected* officers are,—

	TERM WILL EXPIRE
J. Harvey Bell.....Mayor.....	April 15, 1888
George H. Lowette.....Alderman, 1st Ward.....	1887
William H. Casey.....	1888
William Greenhalgh, Sr..... 2d "	1887
John H. Schlobohm..... " " "	1888
Edwin A. Quick..... " 3d "	1887
Maurice H. Downing..... " " "	1888
Michael Mooney..... " 4th "	1887
Isaac V. Underhill..... " " "	1888
Jacob Read.....Supervisor.....	1887
George B. Pentz.....City Judge.....	1888
John C. Small.....Justice of the Peace.....	Dec. 31, 1886
John T. Geary..... " "	1887
Alanson J. Prime..... " "	1888
Fraucis X. Donoghue..... " "	1889

The various departments of the city government, besides the general department, consisting of the Mayor and Common Council, are the judicial department, the health department, the excise department, and the departments of fire, water, police and education. Of each of these we will give a history in turn.

THE JUDICIAL DEPARTMENT.—The following paper is furnished to us by ex-City Judge Matthew H. Ellis :

The judicial department of the city of Yonkers consists of a City judge, a City Court clerk and four justices of the peace. In the act incorporating the village of Yonkers, passed April 12, 1855, as amended April 15, 1857, the town justices of the peace who resided within the corporate limits of the village performed all the judicial functions of the village government. March 30, 1866, the village charter was amended by Chapter 270, providing for a police justice, to be elected the first Tuesday in May, 1866, whose term of office should begin on the Tuesday following his election, and end on the Tuesday following the fourth annual village election thereafter, his successors to be elected for four years. He had exclusive jurisdiction in all criminal cases within the village, with like powers and duties of justices of the peace; also, in all actions brought to recover fines or penalties for violation of the ordinances of the village. In civil cases he possessed the same powers as justices of the peace, and received the same fees. His court had to be kept open daily, and he had to be present during such hours daily as the board of trustees might direct. Under this act T. Astley Atkins, Esq., was elected police justice. On the 12th of April, 1867, a special act was passed, known as Chapter 355, extending the powers and jurisdiction of the village Police Court, and providing that the police justice should receive a salary of two thousand dollars per year, paying over all fees, fines, penalties and perquisites of every kind to the village. This act was in substance incorporated into the act to consolidate and re-enact the village charter, known as Chapter 673, Laws 1868. On the 1st of March, 1870, Edward P. Baird, Esq., was elected successor to Judge Atkins. Before Judge Baird's term of office expired,

the city charter was passed (Chapter 866, Laws 1872), and this created the City Court of Yonkers. On the 18th of June, 1872, the first election under the city charter was held, and Judge Baird was elected city judge and judge of the City Court of Yonkers. This court, of course, supplanted the previous village police justice's court. The exclusive criminal jurisdiction was continued in the city judge; also power to hold courts of special sessions. The four justices of the peace were continued without criminal jurisdiction. The same civil jurisdiction possessed by the Marine (now City) Court of New York was conferred upon the City Court; also the powers of a Supreme Court Judge of Chambers. In case of absence or disability of the city judge, the mayor was empowered to designate one of the justices of the peace to act. The judge's salary was fixed at three thousand dollars. He was subject to removal by the County Court. His term of office was four years, and he must be of the degree of a counselor-at-law. The office of clerk of the City Court is also created by this act, he being appointed by the city judge. He is to perform the same duties as a clerk of the Marine Court of the city of New York, his salary being fixed at six hundred dollars. On the 8th of March, 1873, Chapter 61 was passed, being an independent act, in which the civil powers of the court are fully provided for. The jurisdiction of the Marine Court of the city of New York is continued. It is also created a Court of Record. The amount of recovery of money in an action is extended to one thousand dollars. And the forms, processes and proceedings used in Courts of Record are made applicable; the summons to be served within the city or an adjoining town; all pleadings, actions and remedies under the code of civil procedure, including provisional remedies, are made to conform to this court. A marshal of the court is appointed by the city judge.

On the 26th of April, 1878, Chapter 186 was passed, repealing all former laws repugnant thereto, so far as the same related to the civil jurisdiction. This act made provisions at length and in detail as to the civil power of the City Court, increasing its jurisdiction by express powers granted, without reference to the Marine Court of the city of New York, but still limiting the jurisdiction for a money judgment to one thousand dollars. This act retained many of the powers formerly conferred by different statutes. The city judge has under it the powers of a Supreme Court judge at Chambers; also the powers of a county judge and a justice of the peace within the city. Provisions are made for a regular jury panel, and for terms of court which the city judge may by rule designate. The jury terms, as now fixed, begin the last Monday of every alternate month, from January onward. This last act of 1878 has since been amended, to correct defects and perfect the system. The chief features of the act are, however, preserved.

In 1876 Judge Baird was re-elected city judge. He

served till the expiration of his term, in 1880, when Matthew H. Ellis, Esq., was elected his successor. In 1883 Judge Baird removed to Minneapolis, Minn., where he continued legal practice till his death. He died in that city October 26, 1885, and his remains were interred in St. John's Cemetery, in our city.

Judge Ellis served till the end of his term, April 15, 1884, when he was succeeded by George B. Pentz, Esq., who is city judge at the present time.

To this history, as furnished by Judge Ellis, we add that in the working of the judicial department of our city, especially in connection with the growth of the liquor interest, and under the growing controversy between labor and capital, the question more and more forces itself upon many minds whether the judge and justices can long continue with safety to be elected by the people among and over whom they are called to administer law. Recent events have put their official firmness to the severest strain, and have brought up this question with a freshness and an interest, the result of which may be a movement for change in the mode of providing these important officers for the city.

THE HEALTH DEPARTMENT.—We are indebted for the following paper to Dr. Galusha B. Balch, who was health officer of Yonkers from 1876-78:

As early as 1855 a Board of Health was organized within the town of Yonkers, but no effective sanitary work seems to have been done. Again, a new board was organized April 26, 1858. Its members were William W. Woodworth, Ethan Flagg, L. M. Clapp, Robert P. Getty, Edward Underhill, John Copcutt and Bailey Hobbs; William H. Post, clerk. Dr. Edward S. F. Arnold was sworn in as health officer July 21, 1858, and held the office to July, 1865, when Dr. James H. Pooley was appointed his successor. Both these gentlemen were eminently fitted for the position, and their reports show that they were abreast with the sanitary knowledge of the day, and far beyond the most advanced of the laity. The powers given them, however, were so meagre that they could accomplish but little. On the 8th of July, 1864, Dr. Arnold reported: "A negro dead with small-pox, and no one has any authority to remove the body." Four days later a meeting of the board was held, and under authority given the health officer to enforce ordinances, the dead negro was buried. Small-pox up to this time had almost a permanent home in the village.

The Citizens' Association of New York City, in connection with several eminent physicians, began a sanitary inspection of that city in 1864. The result of their labors was published, and is a work of great value. Their influence and efforts were largely instrumental in securing the passage of Chapter 74 of the laws of 1866, entitled, "An act to create a Metropolitan Sanitary District and Board of Health therein, for the preservation of life and health and prevent the spread of disease." The town of Yonkers

was included in that district, and Dr. James H. Poley was its sanitary inspector. The sanitary superintendent of the New York board, in his report of 1866, says: "A great deal has been done in abating nuisances in all the towns, through the watchfulness and energy of the local inspectors," and he mentions Yonkers in the list of towns.

Chapter 137 of the laws of 1870, reorganizing the local government of the city of New York, left out Westchester County from the control of the New York City Board of Health. For more than a year after this there was no organized Board of Health in Yonkers. Small-pox again broke out, and forced the village trustees to organize, August 1, 1871. Dr. Horace B. Pike was appointed health officer of the village. Little was done except to attend to the small-pox cases. An advance was made in April, 1872, under the suggestion of Village Trustee William A. Gibson, by adopting a code of rules or regulations for the suppression of small-pox, reporting of deaths, granting of burial permits and abating of nuisances. The town becoming the city of Yonkers, the city charter provided for a Board of Health, with large powers, to be formed of the following members *ex officio*: The Mayor as president, the president of the Common Council, the president of the Board of Police Commissioners, the president of the Board of Water Commissioners, the supervisor, the health officer, and the city clerk as the clerk of the board.

The health officer is appointed by the mayor and approved by the Common Council. Dr. Horace B. Pike was appointed health officer July 1, 1872. No rules or regulations were framed for the protection of the public health till April 21, 1873, when the old village rules were adopted. In November, 1873, the health officer began giving to the newspapers reports of the deaths occurring in the city. But no registry of vital statistics was kept till nearly two years later, when a record was begun by the health officer. In 1876 books for the registry of births, marriages and deaths were opened in the office of the city clerk.

In the spring of 1876 Dr. Galusha B. Balch was appointed health officer, and served two years. In July, 1877, he succeeded in securing the adoption of a code of ordinances by the Board of Health, which promoted its efficiency in its subsequent work.

Dr. Valentine Browne succeeded Dr. Balch in 1878, and still holds the office. Under Dr. Browne an inspection of buildings in process of erection has been instituted, similar to that adopted by the New York City board, which provides for careful plumbing, lighting and ventilation.

It is now (1885) more than eleven years since a case of small-pox occurred in Yonkers. In 1875 an epidemic of diphtheria broke out in the city and raged for about one year. More than one hundred deaths resulted from it. Under the regulations adopted by the board

in 1876, measures were inaugurated for an oversight of all contagious and infectious diseases. This oversight has been continued, and consequently there has been no widespread epidemic since, although enteric fever, scarlet fever and diphtheria have prevailed more or less in a sporadic form. The board have done what they could to secure the construction of sewers and to diminish nuisances and sources of malaria.

We add to this paper from Dr. Balch that the health of Yonkers, so far, has been proverbially excellent. The topographic conformation of the city makes the descent of its natural streams and of the contents of its artificial sewers so rapid as to prevent any accumulation or lingering of offensive or dangerous matter upon its surface. Still, the city is careful to maintain its effective Health Board, to make its sanitary condition a constant study and keep before it all information and all suggestions it may require in reference to its sanitary needs. In a comparison of sixty-eight cities, drawn in 1880 for the National Board of Health and published in its bulletin on February 19th of that year, Yonkers was found to be surpassed in fewness of deaths only by the city of Vallejo, in California. Yet it is conceded by its most intelligent men that the city possesses one feature of danger, which, however, admits of immediate relief, but to which the people, from dread of expense, and the authorities, because of this dread in the people, are slow to attend. This feature of danger is the present condition of its Nepperhan, or Saw-Mill River. The factories and mills of the city, and also innumerable dwelling-houses and places of business, are upon the banks of this stream, and the discharge of offensive and dangerous matter into it is unspeakably great. Much agitation is now (1885) going on in regard to this danger, and it will certainly be relieved at an early day. When it shall have passed away, Yonkers will have sanitary conditions not to be excelled.

The present Health Board of Yonkers is composed of Mayor J. Harvey Bell, president; Rudolf Eickemeyer, Jacob Read, Charles R. Dusenberry, Valentine Browne, M.D., health officer, and William H. Doty, secretary.

THE EXCISE DEPARTMENT.—The following paper is furnished to us by Ralph E. Prime, Esq., referred to elsewhere as a leading lawyer of Yonkers:

After the enactment of the so-called Excise Law of 1857, the sale of intoxicating liquors without license being unlawful, the granting of licenses was by the county Board of Commissioners of Excise, consisting of three commissioners, appointed by the county judge and justices of the Sessions of the county of Westchester, and this board exercised its power to grant such licenses in all the towns of the county, including, of course, the town of Yonkers. In 1870 another act was passed by the Legislature, by which, in all parts of the State, local Boards of Excise for each city, village or town were appointed. Yonkers then exist-

ing as a town, this act provided a town board for it, consisting of the supervisor and justices of the peace. But at the time, the village of Yonkers existing for municipal purposes and being situated geographically within the town of Yonkers, it also had a local Board of Excise, with power limited to the village bounds. This board consisted of the village board of trustees. In 1872 the city of Yonkers was incorporated and the charter made its bounds coincident with the bounds of the town and abolished the town government. Under the act of 1870, on the incorporation of the city, three commissioners for it were appointed by Mayor Courter, September 4, 1872. His appointment being questioned, it was confirmed by the amended charter of 1873. The first appointed excise commissioners for the city were Peter U. Fowler, Samuel B. Jones and Patrick Brown. These men continued in office till the following year. April 21, 1873, Mayor Courter appointed, and the Common Council confirmed, John Wallace, Samuel B. Jones and Peter U. Fowler as excise commissioners. These men continued in office till 1876, but their powers were meanwhile suspended by the passage of an act of 1874, which, as to the county of Westchester alone, revived the old system of county excise commissioners. The revival of that system was short of life. In 1876 the act of 1874 was repealed, and from that time the excise commissioners for Yonkers have been appointed under the city charter and the act of 1870 for the city alone. The commissioners appointed in 1876 were appointed by Mayor Gibson. They were Samuel B. Jones, John S. White and John Wheeler. The commissioners appointed in 1879 were appointed by Mayor Masten. They were Samuel B. Jones, John O'Brien and Henry Stengel. These men were reappointed by Mayor Swift in 1882, and again by Mayor Stahlnecker in 1885. They are the commissioners at the present time.

To this paper of Mr. Prime we add that this Board of Excise controls the most potential, most penetrating and furthest-reaching influence of the city of Yonkers for daily and permanent harm. Upon the police report for 1885 we find that Yonkers contains one hundred and forty-six licensed places for the sale of intoxicating drinks, and six places where these drinks are supposed to be sold without license. From the same report we learn that of seven hundred and forty arrests made in the city during the year and disposed of by the city judge, two hundred and eighty-five were for intoxication. The machinery which produces this result is in the hands of the people. The people elect the mayor and Common Council. The mayor nominates, and, with the consent of the Council, appoints the excise commissioners, who hold office for three years. The excise commissioners, when appointed, have the licensing of liquor saloons in their hands, without reserve. Of course, the responsibility of it is upon the people. Is it not imperative upon the people to think of this?

SECTION XI.

Other City Departments (Fire, Water, Police, Educational).

THE FIRE DEPARTMENT.—The following history of this department from 1852, has been furnished to us by E. Alex. Houston, M.D., who served in it from 1864; was its chief engineer from 1876 to 1880, and is one of the present fire commissioners.

Before 1852 there was no provision for the extinguishment of fires in Yonkers. The destruction by fire of a mill on what is now called Mill Street, first led the people to serious thought of need for making such provision. Mr. Robert P. Getty, always one of Yonkers' most enterprising men, procured at his own expense, and brought to town, a small "gooseneck" engine. The first fire company was organized under the name of "Protection Engine Company No. 1," with George L. Condit as foreman. Not long after the organization of the engine company, Mr. Getty also purchased a second-hand hook-and-ladder-truck, and on the 15th of August, 1853, "Hope Hook and Ladder Co. No. 1," was organized, David Chambers, foreman. Messrs. Robert P. Getty, Charles E. Waring, Jonathan Vail, H. N. Otis, Everett Clapp, Wm. T. Coleman, James Stewart, Joseph Peene and many other always public-spirited and still prominent men of the city have served their time as firemen, and as members of the hook and ladder company.

Mr. A. M. Grant next bought an engine, and housed it near his factory, and a company was formed under the name of Lady Washington Engine Company No. 2. A. G. Van Orden was the first foreman. The company ran the engine for about two years, when, Mr. Grant not being able to sell it to the people, it was locked up for a year.

These movements occurred before the incorporation of the village, which, as has been seen, took place in April, 1855. On the 1st of October of that year the village Committee on Fire and Water reported that there was no engine, fire apparatus or fire company of any kind under the jurisdiction of the village; that the engines and the hook-and-ladder truck belonged to private village residents, and that their owners were willing to dispose of them at a fair price. The committee also recommended that an appropriation of three thousand dollars be made, if the taxable voters should approve, for the purpose of purchasing the said apparatus. A special meeting of the voters was called for, and held, June 18, 1856. Only seventy-six votes were cast, of which forty-six were for the measure. After several meetings of the Trustees following this vote, and much debate on the subject, it was at last decided to purchase the engine of Mr. Grant. In the same year, 1856, it was resolved that fire limits should be fixed, and that no persons outside these limits should be taxed to support the fire department.

In 1859, Mr. Cornelius B. Lawrence, with twelve others, bought the engine formerly used by the actor

Chanfrau in his play of "Mose," for which they paid five hundred dollars. They afterwards sold it for six hundred dollars, and bought the one then known as "Howard 34," of the New York department. This company, when organized, applied to the village trustees to be recognized as a part of the Fire Department, but their application was refused on the score of economy, the late Leonard M. Clark being the only trustee who favored the application. Later on, however, January 10, 1860, the petition was granted on condition that the company pay all their expenses, and be no charge to the village. The company served creditably for nine years, and then disbanded of their own accord.

On the 5th of October, 1863, some young men organized a company under the name of "Mazeppa Hose." They shortly after disbanded, after selling their carriage, a fine one, to Hudson Hose Company, No. 1, which was organized January 8, 1868. The latter paid two hundred dollars for the carriage, spent considerable money in decorating it, and at a later day sold it to the city for three hundred and fifty dollars. Ralph I. Bush was this company's first foreman, but to Wm. R. Wilkinson, who afterwards served as foreman for eight terms, the company is indebted more than to any one else for its success. The engines were provided with tenders for carrying the hose. The tenders were usually drawn by runners,—“jumper boys” they were termed,—a sort of fireman's primary school. The presence of the boys around the houses was not desirable, though they were sometimes useful. The first chief of the department was Daniel Blauvelt, and the first assistant engineer was F. Bennett. When the latter resigned, Robert F. Rich was chosen in his place. Chief Blauvelt resigned September 7, 1863, and Eli L. Seger was chosen instead, with John S. Waterman as assistant. Anthony B. Archer was the next chief, with John S. Brown as assistant, and the next chief was Samuel L. Smith.

At a meeting of the Board of Representatives of the department, held September 16, 1867, it was decided to have two assistant engineers. An election was held October 1, 1867, at which Samuel L. Smith was elected chief, and John Crowley and David Chambers first and second assistant engineers. At this election one hundred and sixty-one votes were polled, which indicates the strength of the Department at that time. It was not altogether equal to half the present number of men enrolled as active firemen.

On the 4th of October, 1869, Samuel L. Smith was re-elected chief, with L. F. Searles and H. S. Myers as first and second assistant engineers. Chief Smith resigned on the 10th of November following, when L. F. Page was elected and served the balance of the term. On the 4th of November, 1870, John H. Matthews was elected, and on the 18th of September, 1871, L. F. Page was again chosen, with John Coon and R. Tansy first and second assistants. September 25, 1872, after Yonkers had become a city, John Coon

was elected chief, and Henry S. Myers and R. J. Wilcocks, assistants. September 24, 1874, Henry S. Myers was elected chief, and Edward J. Mitchell and E. Alex. Houston, assistants.

April 19, 1874, "City Hose Co. No. 3" was organized, with Charles Mallory as foreman, and in the spring of 1876, "Palisade Hose Co. No. 4," was added. Edward Whalen, foreman.

April, 1876, "Mountaineer Engine Co. No. 2," was organized, Simon Deitzel, foreman. This company was given the engine to that time used by Lady Washington Company, No. 2. The latter company was furnished with a hose carriage instead, and has since served as a hose company.

September 18, 1876, Assistant Engineer E. Alex. Houston was elected chief, and George A. Kemp and John Lacy, assistant engineers. To this time little or no money due the Department from foreign insurance companies had been collected. Chief Houston, assisted by George A. Mitchell, Treasurer of the Department, determined to get the money due, and after hard work collected over three hundred and fifty dollars the first year. Since then, about the same amount has been collected yearly, and divided among the several companies. Before the election of Chief Houston the only means of giving an alarm of fire had been the ringing of the church bells. He determined to secure, if possible, the erection of a proper fire alarm bell. By dint of perseverance he finally succeeded in this, and at his success the rejoicing of the firemen was great. A grand torchlight parade by the department was made July 3, 1877, which was pronounced the finest ever witnessed in the county. The expense of it, two hundred and sixty-seven dollars and seventy cents, was defrayed by contributions of the citizens. On September 16, 1878, Chief Houston was unanimously re-elected, and at the same time John Lacy and Thomas H. Dodds were elected assistant engineers.

May 26, 1879, "Irving Hose Co. No. 5" was organized, with J. R. Prote as foreman.

September 18, 1880, Chief Houston declined a re-election, and Assistant Engineer Lacy was elected chief, and Charles Fisher and Simon Deitzel assistants. In September, 1882, John Lacy was re-elected chief, and J. R. Prote and Daniel McGuinness assistant engineers.

February 1, 1884, "Houston Hose Co. No. 6" was organized with William Cairns, foreman.

The Department now consists of two engine companies for duty in that small part of the city which is on so high an elevation as not to permit the water to flow from its hydrants with power enough for the use of hose companies, one Hook and Ladder Company, which also carries two fire extinguishers, and six hose companies (*But for "High Service Water Works," see under Water Department*). It has thus a total of nine outfits, and these by the latest city reports were worked by a force of three hundred and fifty-seven men. The system is purely volunteer. Formerly the

department was under the control of the Board of Aldermen, but since the amendment of the Charter in 1881, it has been under the charge of a Board of four Fire Commissioners, appointed by the mayor and confirmed by the Aldermen. The first Commissioners appointed in this way were John O. Campbell, George A. Mitchell, Joseph Peene and John Pentreath. Mr. Peene resigned after a short term, and E. Alexander Houston was appointed in his place. The board continues to consist of the four men thus appointed, viz.:

George A. Mitchell, term of office will expire October 1, 1886; John Pentreath, term of office will expire October 1, 1887; E. Alex. Houston, term of office will expire October 1, 1888; Lawrence Kelly, term of office will expire October 1, 1889.

Before 1874, water for use at fires was had only from the Hudson or the Nepperhan, or from cisterns. But on the 1st of January of that year, the Yonkers Public Water Works having been completed, hydrant water was introduced into the city from the Sprain and Grassy Sprain Brooks which have been described. The lower basin or reservoir of the water-works is located about four miles from Getty Square. From this basin, the water is raised by steam pumps into a distributing reservoir located on a high elevation. There are about three hundred hydrants in the city. The pressure at these hydrants varies from one to one hundred and twenty-five pounds according to the lay of the land.

The Fire Department of Yonkers is regarded as one of the Model Fire Departments of the State. The cost of maintaining it for the last ten years has averaged about three thousand dollars a year. This includes the purchase of some apparatus and hose.

The present chief-engineer is John S. Brown, and the assistant-engineers are, first, James Mulcahey, and second, William Allison. Their terms will expire in September, 1886.

THE WATER DEPARTMENT.—The following history of this department is contributed by Mr. William W. Wilson, who has been chief-engineer of the water-works since March, 1874.

A disastrous conflagration which occurred in the summer of 1869, and caused the destruction of much valuable property, served to direct public attention for the first time strongly to the necessity of providing a system of water supply.

Immediately after this event (Yonkers at the time was still a village only), the Board of Trustees took speedy action, and called a public meeting to ascertain by popular vote whether the Board should undertake to provide reservoirs of water and other necessities for the extinguishment of fires. They at the same time arranged that engineers should be consulted, and requested to report upon the best means of procuring a supply of water for all purposes.

The popular vote thus called out was taken, September 11, 1869, and by a heavy majority, decided the questions proposed by the Trustees in the affirmative.

A number of meetings of the Trustees followed, in which the subject was further considered, and reports from engineers were received. The result was the calling of another popular meeting "to vote upon the question of bonding the village to the extent of two hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars for the expense of introducing water." The meeting was held on January 9, 1872, and decided the question in the negative.

Early in 1872, Yonkers was incorporated as a city, and in the autumn of that year the Mayor was authorized to appoint a Committee of citizens to cooperate with the Common Council in considering the expediency and means of procuring an ample supply of water.

The labors of this Committee were zealously undertaken, faithfully performed, and without doubt resulted in bringing about a clearer idea of what was needed to accomplish this end than the Yonkers public had previously received. The gentlemen who performed this valuable service were Thomas W. Ludlow, Dennis McGrath, Patrick White, Jacob Read, Frederick A. Back, John T. Waring, Timothy Ryan, George B. Upham, M.D., Samuel Leggett, Cyrus Cleveland, Joseph Masten, Robert P. Getty, Rudolf Eickemeyer, Isaac H. Knox, George B. Skinner, Abijah Curtiss, Charles R. Dusenberry, James Stewart and Prof. William H. C. Bartlett on the part of the citizens, and James C. Courter, Mayor, with Alderman Eli L. Seger, John Brennan, Albert Keeler, William Macfarlane, Ethan Flagg, Hyatt L. Garrison, Henry R. Hicks and Zebulon H. Brower, constituting the Common Council of the city.

The committee entered energetically upon the execution of its duties. The proper sub-committees were appointed, and much work was accomplished in considering not only the sources, but also the methods of supply. The Committee's report, together with the reports of its sub-committees, was presented January 9, 1873, and named the Nepperhan River and the Sprain Brooks as the only available sources of supply.

By resolution embodied in the report, the Common Council was requested to make early application to the Legislature for the passage of an act empowering the city to incur an indebtedness of two hundred and fifty thousand dollars for the purpose of obtaining a supply of water.

Among other matters in the report was a recommendation to appoint a committee, consisting of Messrs. Robert P. Getty, Rudolf Eickemeyer, Jacob Read and Eli L. Seger, to investigate and report whether a sufficient supply could be obtained from subterranean sources in the valley of the Nepperhan. In prosecuting this investigation, they sank a well to a considerable depth, much of it through quicksand, and reached the bed rock of the valley. Analyses of the water they encountered in their work showed that it was doubtful if a supply suitable for all purposes could be obtained from this source.

The Committee of the Common Council on laws and ordinances then caused a bill to be prepared, which was presented in the Legislature and became a law February 28, 1873. This bill is entitled "An act to provide for a supply of water for the city of Yonkers."

It provides for a Board of Water Commissioners, five in number, fixes their terms of office and how they shall be allotted, and designates the powers of the Board and the ways in which its duties shall be executed. It originally limited the issue of bonds to the sum of \$300,000, but by various amendments the amount has been since raised to \$745,000, to cover not only the expense of introducing water according to the first plans, but also to provide for the various extensions which have since been rendered necessary. Among the most important additions to the works has been the establishment of a High Service District which has involved the erection of a High Service water tower.

The members of the first board and their terms of office were as follows, viz: Rudolf Eickemeyer, five years; Robert P. Getty, four years; David Hawley, three years; Patrick White, two years, and Stephen Barker, one year. The Board was organized March 24, 1873. Before the expiration of the year Mr. Hawley and Mr. Barker resigned, and their places were filled by Mr. Isaac H. Knox and Mr. Charles Hamilton, the former of whom was made president of the board. Mr. Hamilton resigned in 1874 and was succeeded by Mr. Jacob Read.

Work was begun in the summer of 1873 and prosecuted with such vigor that a supply for fire purposes was soon obtained, and on the 1st of January 1874, water was first turned on to so much of the system of distribution as was then laid.

A small basin which has since been converted into a distributing reservoir, was constructed on Lake Avenue, at an elevation of about three hundred feet above mean high tide. Its supply for the purposes above named was derived from the flow of a small brook.

In the month of March 1874, William W. Wilson, C.E., was appointed chief engineer of the works. He immediately entered upon the labor of making the necessary surveys and investigations, to determine the source whence the permanent supply should be derived, and the method by which it should be introduced and distributed for general use.

The Sprain Brooks were chosen as the sources of supply, and a dam was built upon the Grassy Sprain at a distance of about four miles northeasterly from Getty Square. This formed a storage reservoir, having a capacity of four hundred and six millions of gallons. It covers a surface of one hundred and five acres, and its greatest depth is twenty six feet.

The waters of the Sprain Brooks are diverted and carried into the upper end of the reservoir by means of a canal cut through the lowest part of the ridge dividing the two valleys. The whole drainage area

from which the supply is derived is three thousand one hundred and twenty acres.

The water is taken from the storage reservoir, and supplied to the city by two pumping engines, one of which can furnish three and three-quarter millions of gallons in twenty four hours, and the other one-half less.

At the time of the general introduction of water there were twenty and one half miles of pipes of all sizes in use, and two hundred and sixteen hydrants. Subsequent extensions, including the High Service district, have increased the length of mains to twenty nine miles, and the number of hydrants to three hundred and ten.

When the project of constructing the storage reservoir was first presented, a strong opposition to the proposed location for it was developed, founded on a supposition by many citizens that the quality of the water would be injuriously affected by the extensive beds of peat found in its locality. The opposition was so strong, that discussion became quite warm. Finally the subject was referred by general consent to Col. J. W. Adams, C.E. and to Prof. W. Ripley Nichols to examine and report upon the engineering and chemical considerations involved in the project.

The reports of these gentlemen, separately submitted, concurred in fully endorsing the action of the Commissioners and their engineer, and this endorsement has been sustained by the results of the work they accomplished.

The works are divided into Low and High Service Districts, the former supplying elevations between tide water and two hundred and eighty feet above, and the latter greater elevations to a height of four hundred and forty feet above tide.

The High Service Works were begun in 1883, and are now completed. They are supplied by a pumping service, of a capacity of one million gallons in twenty-four hours, which draws water from the Lake Avenue distributing reservoir, and pumps into an iron tank placed in a handsome brick tower, of octagonal form, twenty-seven feet from side to side in width and one hundred feet high. From this tank the water is distributed as required.

The interest of the seven hundred and forty-five thousand dollars outstanding water bonds is met by the surplus of earnings over expenses, and by direct tax laid upon the property in what is called the water district. The water act provides also for the creation of a sinking fund, and for the liquidation of the debt by installments.

The aqueduct which conveys the water from Croton Lake to New York city, forms a bridge over Saw-mill river at Yonkers. In the county twenty-five streams cross the line of the Croton aqueduct, which are from twelve to seventy feet below the grade line, and from twenty-five to eighty-three feet below the top covering of the aqueduct. One of the most prominent of the valleys is that where the aqueduct crosses the Saw-mill

river in Yonkers, the foundation of which is fifty feet below the top covering of the aqueduct.

The Yonkers Water Board consists of the following gentlemen, some of whom, it will be observed, together with the clerk, have served from the very inception of the work: Rudolf Eickemeyer, president; Jacob Read, treasurer; John G. Peene, John Wallace, Michael Walsh. William H. Doty is clerk, and Wm. W. Wilson is superintendent. The late eminent lawyer, John M. Mason, Esq., passed the last years of his life in the service of the board, and had charge of all its legal proceedings, including the important and intricate duties belonging to the appropriation of lands for public use.

Ethan Flagg, who was for several years president of the Water Board and whose name is closely connected with the history of the growth of the village

the title to a considerable part of the tract once belonging to his granduncle, and that, with his active co-operation and largely under his direction, the plan of the prospective city was laid out substantially as we now see it.

While consecrating his energies to the furtherance of the material prosperity of Yonkers, Ethan Flagg did not, however, forget the mental, moral and religious interests of the place. He was liberal in expenditure of his time and generous in contributing of his means for the support of every institution and movement that bade fair to elevate the tone of public manners and morals. In devotion to the public service he was untiring; albeit he cared less for the reputation than for the consciousness of advancing the common weal. Enjoying a personal esteem among those who knew him well, which made his election to any public



AQUEDUCT BRIDGE OVER SAW-MILL RIVER, AT YONKERS.

and city of Yonkers, was born in West Hartford, Conn., on the 20th of July, 1820, and died in Yonkers on the 11th of October, 1884. His mother, Mrs. Lydia Wells Flagg, was a niece and one of the heirs of Lemuel Wells, the last proprietor of the manorial lands which, previous to the Revolution, had belonged to the family of Frederick Philipse. Within a year or two after the death of Mr. Wells, Ethan Flagg removed to Yonkers, which became his residence for the remainder of his life. Meanwhile he had acquired a familiarity with business pursuits during a connection of two years with a mercantile house in Boston, Mass. From the first he entertained brilliant anticipations of the future prosperity of the little settlement, then scarcely more than a hamlet, at the mouth of the Nepperhan, and he resolved to devote his time and attention to the development of its latent resources. Hence, it was that by judicious purchases he acquired

trust at their disposal well-nigh certain in advance, he consented to take upon himself at different times the duties of many of the principal positions connected with the village and city governments. Among other offices, he served as one of the members of the original Board of Trustees of the village; was one of the first aldermen and president of the Common Council of the city; was a member and for five years president of the Board of Water Commissioners, and several times represented the town in the Board of Supervisors of Westchester County. While he was a decided Republican in sentiment, his patriotism was confined by no party limits, and, during the War of the Rebellion, he gave to the government and to the agencies set on foot to mitigate the horrors of warfare his undivided and hearty support. In financial enterprises he was always a leader, never bold to rashness, and never so cautious as to endanger success. He was a director of the First



Ethan Hagg



National Bank from its inception, and was the president of the Yonkers Savings-Bank from its incorporation to the time of his death.

Many of the churches, even those with which he was not otherwise connected, were the recipients of substantial help at his hands; and it may safely be said that no appeal for a cause that he regarded as deserving was ever addressed to him without meeting with a prompt and generous response. Soon after his coming to Yonkers he joined in the efforts that led to the establishment of the Reformed (then the Reformed Dutch) Church. A few years later, when the increase of the population of the place justified the organization of the First Presbyterian Church, he entered with his accustomed energy into the enterprise, and became the largest giver, as well as one of the soundest of advisers. Besides large contributions in money, both to the original edifice and to the successive improvements and extensions, the extremely eligible and valuable plot of ground upon which the church stands was his exclusive donation.

In his business relations, Ethan Flagg was distinguished both for the correctness of his judgment respecting the conduct of affairs and for acuteness in the discernment of the character of the men with whom he had to deal. Honorable and upright in his own transactions, he looked for and appreciated in others the integrity which he himself displayed. To those who showed that they merited it he extended a confidence as rare as it is precious. He delighted in what is really the highest form of practical benevolence, for one of his ruling passions was a desire to help men who showed a readiness to help themselves, and it has been justly observed that many of the most prosperous citizens of Yonkers can trace the origin of their success to the timely support which they found in Ethan Flagg in their first efforts to advance in the world.

THE POLICE DEPARTMENT.—A very satisfactory account of this department was published in the *Yonkers Gazette* of January 6, 1877, bringing its history down to that date. The article was afterwards thrown into pamphlet form. From it we select what we need as far as it will bring us, and later matter we supply from other sources.

Before August, 1866, Yonkers had been afflicted with a very inefficient police, the creature and machine of its politicians. Those who had the employing and directing of it, seemed to care more for the votes of the classes it was their duty to keep in check than for the security and safety of the people and their property. The result was that the rough and criminal classes had things pretty much their own way. At length the people became aroused to the danger and shame of this state of affairs. A special town meeting was held at Flagg's Hall, on Saturday, July, 14, 1866, at 5.15 P. M. Lyman Cobb, Jr., justice of the peace, presided, and J. G. P. Holden, town clerk, acted as secretary. After the call for the meeting had been read and approved,

Supervisor Isaac H. Knox offered the following resolutions, which, after an exciting debate, were adopted by a vote of seventy-six ayes to forty-seven nays:

"Resolved, That it is hereby voted and determined, by the lawful voters of the town of Yonkers, in pursuance of chapter 403 of the laws of 1864, that regular patrolmen of the metropolitan police to the number of fourteen, of whom at least four shall be mounted, shall be appointed by the board of metropolitan police for the said town of Yonkers, and that the sum of twenty thousand dollars be raised by tax in such town for contribution to the metropolitan police fund, to pay such regular patrolmen.

"Resolved, That it shall be the duty of the presiding officer and the clerk of this town meeting to present to the board of metropolitan police, and to the board of supervisors of the county of Westchester, a certified copy of the proceedings of this town meeting, as far as such proceedings relate to the appointment and pay of regular patrolmen of the metropolitan police of said town—said copies to be certified under the hand and seal of said presiding officer and clerk."

On Friday, the 10th of August, 1866, a detail from the Metropolitan police force arrived in the town, consisting of a captain, two sergeants and twelve patrolmen. This force took possession and command of the building then known as Melah's Hotel, in Dock Street, near Warburton Avenue, which had been leased for them. The lock-up was located on James Street. The building on Dock Street was afterwards purchased by the town and made a headquarters for the police. We shall refer to this again.

The following article from the *Yonkers Gazette* of August 11, 1866, gives the names of the new force and shows the feeling of the paper and of the citizens in reference to their coming:—

"THE METROPOLITAN POLICEMEN ON DUTY.—The vexed and long agitated police question is finally settled, and we hope it may prove to be settled for the best interests of the town and village. There need no longer be daily excited debates over this matter. The newly-detailed men from the metropolitan police force arrived here yesterday, being ordered to report to Captain Wilson, at the station house in Yonkers, next door to Dr. Reeves's store, Dock street, at 1 o'clock p. m., on Friday, the 10th of August, 1866. The town of Yonkers is designated as a sub-station of the thirty-second precinct. The board of police commissioners have made a detail of twelve patrolmen and two sergeants to do duty in this town under Capt. Alanson S. Wilson, as follows: Sergt. James M. Flandreau, from the thirty-second precinct; Sergt. John Mangin, thirtieth; Patrolmen—J. M. King, third; G. A. Kinsler, fifth; James McLaughlin, seventh; E. Spencer, tenth; Geo. W. McCullough, eleventh; F. Boyd, thirteenth; C. Weston, fourteenth; Wm. Irvin, seventeenth; C. W. Austin, twenty-second; Joseph H. Wilson, thirty-second; J. N. Foster, seventeenth; and M. T. Hall, sixteenth. Last night the newly-arrived guardians of the peace went on duty, being detailed to their respective beats by Sergt. Flandreau, who is the chief officer at this station in the absence of Capt. Wilson. A portion of the force for this part of the thirty-second precinct will be mounted and patrol the outskirts of the town. The officers and men detailed for duty here appear to be "the right men in the right place," and that they will faithfully and fearlessly perform their duty we have no doubt. Let all rowdies and evil-disposed persons hereabouts henceforth be on their good behavior if they don't wish to be summarily dealt with. The present police do not fear your ballots, and are no respecters of persons when their duty calls them to make arrests.

The effect of the new arrangement became at once apparent. It continued in operation till the 10th of April, 1871, a little less than five years. During this period a strong and safe hand was felt to be present in the town and controlling. The *Gazette* details in

its article some of the more noteworthy cases of arrests and their results, and shows that the department was thoroughly efficient. The good order of the town came to be proverbial. Yet after a time, a change was made. Not from any dissatisfaction with the force, but from a general feeling that the town ought to have its own independent police department, a separate Yonkers police was established, whose history will be given below.

The changes made upon, or that occurred within the force during the nearly five years of its existence, are given in the *Gazette* article as follows:

August 16, 1866, patrolman Joseph H. Wilson returned to New York, and patrolman George W. Osborn was detailed to fill his place.

December 14, 1866, patrolman William Irvin was transferred to the sixteenth precinct, and was succeeded by patrolman Leon Doncourt.

January 29, 1867, an event transpired which came near depriving Yonkers of one of the most efficient officers it ever had, viz. : sergeant John Mangin, who has now (1886) been at the head of the force many years. Sergeant Mangin was on that day transferred to the nineteenth precinct, but the mistake of this transfer became so quickly apparent to the authorities that he was returned to his Yonkers post the very next day.

April 6, 1867, patrolman Elijah Spencer was transferred to the nineteenth precinct, and patrolman Leonard Walters from the fourteenth precinct was sent to fill his place.

July 22, 1867, patrolman Cornelius Weston and on the next day patrolman Charles W. Austin were promoted to the rank of roundsmen. They were the first roundsmen appointed on the Yonkers force.

November 17, 1868, patrolman Justin N. Foster died of consumption. This was the only death within the force during the connection of Yonkers with the Metropolitan police.

September 25, 1869, patrolman G. A. Kinsler was transferred to the thirty-second precinct.

October 7, 1869, patrolman George W. McCullough was dismissed from the force.

October 17, 1869, patrolman Matthew T. Hall was transferred to the twenty-first Precinct, and Patrolman John Clark was detailed from that precinct to fill his place.

HISTORY OF THE SEPARATE YONKERS POLICE. —We now copy almost without change from the *Gazette* article down to its date, January 6, 1877.

The Yonkers police force was organized on the 10th of April, 1871. On the 30th of March preceding, the act providing for the formation of a local police was signed by the Governor, and the men from the old Metropolitan force were given till the 1st of May, to elect whether they would remain with the Yonkers police or return to New York. They had all made their selection by the 10th, when the force was organized as follows:

John Mangin, captain; James M. King, Charles W. Austin, sergeants; George W. Osborn, James McLaughlin, roundsmen; John Cogans, James P. Embree, Martin Geary, John Henesey, Edward Lucas, Richard Laurie, Cassius McGregor, James H. Mealing, Michael Muldoon, Patrick Muldoon, James J. Norton, H. J. Quinn, John Redding, Sherman H. Smith, Louis Sprenger, John H. Woodruff, Frederick H. Woodruff, Samuel L. Whaley, patrolmen; Michael Foley, doorman; James McDevitt, hostler.

The following changes have since been made or have taken place in the force.

September 20, 1871, Michael Geary and Alexander Stevenson were appointed patrolmen in place of Michael Muldoon and Samuel L. Whaley.

July 2, 1872, patrolman John H. Woodruff died, and November 29, 1872, Alfred Nodine was appointed patrolman in his place.

January 29, 1873, John Houlahan; July, 21, 1873, Gideon C. Reynolds and William Carroll, and August 18, 1873, Joseph E. Johnstone and Lawrence Berrian were appointed patrolmen.

August 18, 1873, Sergeant James M. King and with him patrolman Alexander Stevenson, Patrick Muldoon and Gideon Reynolds were transferred to the Kingsbridge Station, to which also patrolmen James J. Norton and Edward Lucas had been transferred a little before. This force remained at Kingsbridge till its annexation to New York City on the 1st of January 1874, when patrolmen Stevenson and Reynolds returned to the Yonkers Station.

August 19, 1873, roundsman George W. Osborn was detailed as acting sergeant, and after the annexation of Kingsbridge to New York City, he was on the 15th of July, 1874, appointed sergeant in place of sergeant James M. King, who had gone over to the New York force at the time of the annexation.

August 18, 1873, patrolman Frederick H. Woodruff was appointed roundsman to fill the place of roundsman Osborn, promoted.

July 1, 1874, Patrick Whalen, and July 29, 1874, Charles L. Anderson were appointed patrolmen.

August 19, 1874, patrolman James P. Embree was appointed roundsman and detailed to act at the Bronxville Station.

September 16, 1874, Samuel N. Hanley was appointed patrolman.

November 21, 1874, patrolman Henry J. Quinn was appointed roundsman.

February 18, 1875, William Banks, and January 7, 1876, David Taxter were appointed patrolmen.

March 19, 1876, David Taxter resigned.

March 30, 1876, Richard Laurie, who had been dismissed, was reappointed patrolman. He was shortly after again dismissed, and James McGowan was appointed patrolman in his place.

March 30, 1876, Thomas Nolan was appointed doorman.

July 10, 1876, Theodore F. Muller, and December 1, 1876, William Hatfield, were appointed patrolmen.

January 1, 1877, patrolman James P. Embree and the next day, patrolman William Hatfield resigned.

January 15, 1877, Henry L. Hillman and James Nolan were appointed patrolmen. The former resigned August 24, 1878.

August 28, 1878, Joseph W. Archer; July 2, 1879, James G. Tice, and August 7, 1880, Peter McGowan and Henry Cooley were appointed patrolmen.

September 1, 1880, Alexander Stevenson, patrolman, resigned, and September 15, John Houlahan, patrolman, was dismissed.

October 13, 1880, William Conklin and John Riley, and November 19, 1880, William H. Lent were appointed patrolmen.

March 17, 1881, John Riley, patrolman, was dismissed, and April 1, Lawrence Berrian, patrolman, resigned.

April 20, 1881, Frank Acker and George Cooley were appointed patrolmen. The former resigned July 1, 1881.

July 20, 1881, George Frazier, Jr., was appointed patrolman.

December 17, 1881, Sergeant Charles W. Austin died.

December 22, 1881, James McLaughlin, roundsman, was promoted sergeant, and Henry J. Quinn, roundsman, was promoted to roundsman at headquarters. The same day also Richard E. Wilcox, patrolman, was detailed as acting roundsman.

January 4, 1882, John W. Edwards was appointed patrolman, and May 17, 1882, patrolmen John W. Edwards and James H. Mealing were dismissed.

June 7, 1882, Andrew J. Healey and George Dinsmore were appointed patrolmen.

August 5, 1882, Theodore Müller, patrolman, died.

October 3, 1883, August Dietzel was appointed patrolman.

October 9, 1883, the Surgeon of Police, J. Foster Jenkins, M.D., died, and September 17, 1884, Samuel Swift, M.D., acting surgeon, was appointed surgeon.

October 29, 1884, Michael Foley, doorman and, January 31, 1885, Charles L. Anderson, patrolman, were dismissed.

February 11, 1885, Edward Murray and Howard Esmond were appointed patrolmen.

May 1, 1885, Richard M. Johnstone, hostler, was promoted to patrolman.

May 9, 1885, John Cary was appointed station-house keeper.

May 20, 1885, George Shuler, was appointed acting hostler on probation.

May 22, 1886, Louis Sprenger, patrolman, died.

HEADQUARTERS OF THE FORCE.—The headquarters of the police, as before stated, were from the beginning, and still are, in the three-story brick building on Dock Street, formerly known as Melah's Hotel. The building was at first rented annually for five years. Then it was purchased by the old town of Yonkers for twelve thousand dollars. It is now the property of the city. On the right of its entrance

from the street, as it has been fitted up and furnished, is a large office, in which at an inrailed desk a sergeant on duty always sits day and night. Within the railing are various telegraph instruments of the general, citizens' and bank lines controlled by the police. On the wall at the left of the entrance are ten square black walnut cases with glass doors. This outfit is called "The Rogue's Gallery." It contains many hundreds of photographs of criminals, including all the noted ones who have been captured in New York and elsewhere outside of Yonkers. Captain Mangin has also a collection of photographs of the law-breakers of Yonkers itself. In the rear of this room is the captain's private office, comfortably and handsomely fitted up. Within this room is a case with glass doors, which holds the battery of the citizens' line of telegraph. The room also contains two wardrobes used by the captain and sergeants. In the basement are strong cells lined with zinc, with brick ceilings and grated doors, from which it would seem impossible for the most ingenious prisoner to escape. In the front part is a lodging-room for tramps. On the second floor in the front is a large apartment for the meetings of the police commissioners, and in the rear are a bedroom for the captain and a sitting-room for the men. There are also two smaller hall bedrooms for the sergeants. On the third floor are three bedrooms for patrolmen and two for the roundsmen. All these rooms are connected with the office below by bells, so that at any moment all the men from all parts of the building may be brought to the office at the requirement of the captain or sergeant upon the ringing of the bells.

At the time of the organization of the Yonkers police in 1871, there were two sub-police stations—one at Kingsbridge and one at Bronxville, but in July, 1874, as Kingsbridge had been annexed to New York City, the former passed under the control of the New York police. The Bronxville sub-station is the only one now connected with the Yonkers headquarters. At present one roundsman only—Joseph E. Johnstone—is detailed to duty at the Bronxville station.

The central office in Dock Street has telegraphic communication with the New York City Central office, the Bronxville sub-station, all the banks, and the houses of many private citizens, the latter by means of the citizens' line. The connection between headquarters and New York was effected on Thursday, June 20, 1867, and at half-past seven o'clock in the evening of that day the first message was sent as follows:

The sergeants of this rural station return their thanks to the commissioners and superintendent, and the citizens are congratulating us on our police telegraphic connection with the empire city.

—CROWLEY.

On Saturday, February 24, 1874, the line to Bronxville sub-station was completed, and at 8.20 P.M. the following message was sent by Superintendent Crowley:

HEADQUARTERS OF POLICE,
No. 9 Dock Street
YONKERS, February 24, 1874.

To Charles R. Dinsaberg, Esq., President of the Board of Police.
"We congratulate the rural district upon practical annexation to itself, and in recognizing the claim that 'as goes Tuckahoe so goes the state,' sincerely hope the telegraph will prove of value in aiding you to go straight.

"Very truly yours,
"Geo. W. Cobb, Sec'y."

On Friday, the 10th of April, 1874, the first signal-box was put in working order, and the following message sent from box No. 4, on Ashburton Avenue: "29," meaning "Captain Mangin is here." A few seconds afterwards "27" was returned from headquarters, meaning "Sergeant Austin is in this office."

On the 27th of July, 1875, a burglary was committed at the residence of Mr. Thomas W. Ludlow in South Yonkers. Upon the occurrence of this event a number of citizens expressed a desire to have telegraphic communication opened between their residences and the police headquarters. The idea was considered a good one, and seventeen citizens at once signed an agreement to have such connection formed. The work was begun at once and perfected under the supervision of Superintendent Crowley and Captain Mangin, and in a short time was ready for use. The first instrument was placed in George H. Purser's residence, and on January 11, 1876, the first business message was sent across the line from H. F. Baldwin's residence—"246"—which translated into words means, "Notify Dr. Upham he is wanted here forthwith." All the required telegraphic instruments were made and put in working order by Messrs. Pierce & Jones, of 149 William Street, New York.

All of our banks have telegraphic communication with headquarters by special-wires, forming a complete burglar alarm. There is an indicator at headquarters, and at each of the banks they have a key with which they can call the sergeant at headquarters, or answer a signal. Each bank has its appropriate number and when it signals the station its number is shown on the indicator. By this means if a suspicious character enters the bank and attempts to perform any unlawful act the bank official can have a policeman on hand in less than five minutes, while he engages the suspected person in conversation or in any other manner. All the safes are so connected that the slightest tampering with the doors will signal headquarters. This telegraph is an invaluable acquisition and the robbery of our banks is literally out of the question.

In all these various branches of the telegraph the message is not spelled out and received as in the ordinary mode, but is sent by numerical signals, and at each terminus is a manual containing the definition to these numbers, so that when headquarters are signaled the sergeant goes to the instrument, announces he is there and receives the number of the message, and, if he does not already know it,

he turns to the manual and finds it. In communicating with New York, Bronxville, or one or two of the post boxes, if the sergeant wishes to send a special message he uses a dial instrument and can thus send any message required. The dial instruments are only located at headquarters, Bronxville sub-station, Box No. 7, Tuckahoe road, Box No. 8, Underhill street, Box No. 9, at Hunt's Bridge, Box No. 11, at Morsemere, Box No. 333, at Mr. Frederic Shonnard's, and Box No. 44, at Captain Mangin's residence. These different boxes have proved of immense value to the force, inasmuch as a man may be recalled almost at a moment's warning, without the necessity of sending a messenger after him, and when he reports at the box the sergeant can tell him either to return to headquarters, or remain on his post, or give him other instructions. During the night a signal is received from these boxes every five or seven minutes, but during the day time not so often.

The police are permitted to make use of all the instruments of the citizens' lines, and receive in this way signals from almost every quarter of the city. There are now, besides the sub-station at Bronxville, seventeen telegraph stations, all belonging to the city, their location being as follows:

At No. 235 Ashburton Avenue.	At No. 37 Post Street
At No. 5 Oak Hill Avenue.	At No. 34 Garden Street.
At No. 24 Riverdale Avenue.	At No. 43 Nolme Hill.
At No. 345 Tuckahoe Road.	At No. 27 Nepperhan Avenue
At No. Underhill Avenue.	At No. 47 North Broadway.
At No. 423 Bronx River Road.	At No. 66 Hawthorne Avenue.
At No. 253 South Broadway.	At No. 64 Orchard Street.
At No. 11 North Broadway.	At No. 45 Riverdale Avenue.
At No. 62 Warburton Avenue.	

In addition to all these telegraphic arrangements, the police office has a telephone, and by courtesy the permission to call upon any house in the city that has telephonic connections.

The brick building in the City Hall grounds, between the Hall and Warburton Building contains the police stables. It was built in 1873-74, the work being accepted by the city on the 9th of February in the latter year. Its cost was \$6,338.60. Its arrangements are model in every respect. A new building for the police headquarters within the City Hall grounds was under contemplation in 1875. Plans were invited and the common council even went so far as to adopt certain plans on the 10th of May, 1875. But nothing further was ever done.

The present force is composed of the following officers and men:

Samuel Swift, M.D., surgeon, appointed September 17, 1881.
John Mangin, captain, on the force from 1866, and appointed captain April 10, 1871.
George W. Osborn, sergeant, appointed July 15, 1871.
James McLaughlin, sergeant, appointed December 22, 1881.
Frederick H. Woodruff, roundsman, appointed August 18, 1873.
Henry J. Quinn, roundsman, appointed November 21, 1874.
George Shuler, hostler.
Thomas Nolan, doorkeeper, appointed March 30, 1876.
John Carey, doorkeeper, appointed May 8, 1885.
John T. Redding, patrolman, appointed April 29, 1871.

William Carroll, patrolman, appointed July 21, 1873.
 Gideon C. Reynolds, patrolman, appointed July 21, 1873.
 Joseph E. Johnstone, patrolman, appointed August 18, 1873; detailed acting roundsman at Bronxville sub-station December 27, 1876.
 Richard E. Wilcox, patrolman, appointed November 21, 1874; detailed acting roundsman at headquarters December 21, 1881.
 James McGowan, patrolman, appointed March 30, 1876.
 James Nolan, patrolman, appointed January 13, 1877.
 James G. Tice, patrolman, appointed July 2, 1879.
 Peter McGowan, patrolman, appointed August 7, 1880.
 Henry Cooley, patrolman, appointed August 12, 1880.
 William Conklin, patrolman, appointed October 13, 1880.
 William H. Lent, patrolman, appointed November 19, 1880.
 George Cooley, patrolman, appointed April 12, 1881.
 George E. Dinsmore, patrolman, appointed June 7, 1882.
 Andrew J. Healy, patrolman, appointed June 7, 1882.
 August Dietzel, patrolman, appointed October 3, 1883.
 Howard Esmond, patrolman, appointed February 11, 1885.
 Edward Murray, patrolman, appointed February 11, 1885.
 Richard M. Johnstone, patrolman, appointed May 1, 1885.

No term of office is assigned to the Captain, and all the other men hold their office during good behaviour.

The cost of the police protection of the city for the year ending Dec. 1, 1884, was \$36,564.91. The record of the force under the direction of Captain Mangin has been excellent always. The following table will give some idea of its labors in compelling obedience to the laws and in the enforcement of good order. It comprises the arrests by it during the year covered by the latest report.

	Males	Females	Total.
Assault	10	2	12
Assault and battery	90	9	99
Assault, felonious	4	0	4
Abandonment	3	1	4
Attempted rape	1	0	1
Abduction	1	0	1
Burglary	3	0	3
Bigamy	1	0	1
Cruelty to children	6	5	11
Disorderly conduct	46	3	49
Forgery	1	0	1
Habitual drunkenness	0	3	3
Insanity	6	3	9
Intoxication	215	21	236
Intoxication and disorderly conduct	46	3	49
Larceny, grand	6	1	7
Larceny, petit	50	6	56
Malicious mischief	28	1	29
Malicious trespass	3	0	3
Misdemeanor	21	2	23
Suspicious persons	8	0	8
Till-tapping	2	0	2
Vagrancy	39	8	47
Violation of corporation ordinances	58	3	61
Violation of excise law	21	0	21
	669	71	740

In addition to arrests the police are under orders to examine every store and place of business at night and see that it is secured, report street lamps unlighted, &c., &c. And when citizens mean to be absent from town for a season, if they inform the police of the fact, special vigilance is given to their premises till they return. Of hundreds of premises intrusted to their care in this way, but one has ever yet been molested, and in that case, the thieves were arrested and the property recovered.

Captain John Mangin, the present (1886) chief of the police of the city of Yonkers, was born in Tipperary, Ireland, January 10, 1828. His father, Thomas Mangin, who married Mary, daughter of Martin Eagan, was a land steward on the estate of Mr. Friend. The educational opportunities of young Mangin were very limited, and pursued under great difficulties. He was obliged to walk five miles to a school, which was kept in a shoemaker's shop, and his father was compelled to pay the sum of seven shillings and sixpence a quarter. It is perhaps owing to this fact that Captain Mangin has so strong an admiration for the American system of public schools.

At the age of twenty Captain Mangin married Mary, daughter of Michael Purdy, and soon after emigrated to America, landing in New York in August, 1848. His first business in the New World was working on the Hudson River Railroad, at the rate of seventy-five cents a day. His faithful performance of duty attracted attention, and when trains commenced running he was appointed station agent at Manhattanville. In this position he remained eight years, and was then appointed agent at Yonkers, where he remained from 1857 to 1860, in which year he joined the New York police force, and, having shown his ability and intelligence by making several important arrests, he was, at the end of ten months, made roundsman, and two months after was promoted to sergeant. In the draft-riots he took a prominent part, and was severely injured. After this he was sent, with Captain Walling, to Staten Island, in anticipation of a riot which was threatened, owing to the establishment of a quarantine station. In August, 1866, he was sent, with Sergeant James Flandreau and twelve patrolmen, to Yonkers, and remained stationed there as sergeant till the Metropolitan Police District was abolished, in 1870. In 1871 he was made captain of police in Yonkers, and remained there with four of his former companions. Of these, two, George W. Osborne and James McLaughlin are now sergeants, and two, Charles W. Austin, who was also sergeant, and John H. Woodruff, are dead.

During his whole career of twenty-five years as police officer Captain Mangin has ever won the respect of the community by his strict regard for duty, and an impartiality which is not influenced by any motives of national or religious affiliations, and his well-known integrity and honesty of purpose render his example worthy of imitation. In company with the more intelligent of his race, Captain Mangin is a warm supporter of the public-school system, and he is well known as a man of liberal and enlightened views.

Captain Mangin has four children,—Thomas H., who is sergeant of police in New York; Michael J., a clerk in the employ of the Erie Railroad Company, and two daughters, Theresa and Mary F., who are now at school in the city of Montreal.

THE POLICE COMMISSION.—The law under which

the Yonkers police was organized in 1871 directed that the commission should consist of the president of the village, the supervisor of the town, the senior justice of the peace, the city treasurer and the receiver of taxes. Made up in this way the first Board consisted of Messrs. Robert P. Getty, Ethan Flagg, Augustus Van Cortlandt, George W. Cobb and William W. Woodworth, who held those offices respectively in the order named. As their successors, Messrs. James C. Courter, Thomas Smith, Lyman Cobb, Jr., and Kellogg Francis were members of the police commission. In June 1872 however, when Yonkers had become a city, the method of forming the Board was changed. It was provided that its members should be appointed by the Common Council. Now they are appointed by the Mayor and confirmed by the Common Council.

At present the Commission thus appointed consists of the following gentlemen:

Charles R. Dusenberry, President
George W. Cobb, Secretary and
Treasurer.
Joseph Poene,
Arthur J. Burns.

Twice in the history of the Commission, both times within the city period, effort has been made to establish against it or certain members of it a charge of malfeasance in the administration of its funds, once in the summer of 1876, and again in the summer of 1885. Both times the proceeding originated in the common Council with a resolution or resolutions offered by an Alderman. Each of these efforts excited the profoundest interest throughout the city. Each proved wholly futile, and left the Commission strengthened in the general confidence. It is quite evident that the Yonkers public believes both in its police commission and in its police.

The Department has what was originally termed a "Widows and Orphans Fund," but is now called a "Police Pension Fund," the object of which is to render assistance to the families of officers who may

be injured or killed while in the discharge of their duty. We notice in the last detailed financial report of the Commission that the growth of this fund during the year was made up of annual two per cent assessments voluntarily borne by the men on their salaries, of the proceeds of sales of unclaimed goods, of special fees for sealing weights and measures, of the yield of an entertainment, of donations by a number of citizens, of fines, of interests on deposits in the Savings' Banks and on loans on bond and mortgage. The fund at the time of the report amounted to \$8593.44.



Robert Parkhill Getty, who was a member of the first Board of Police Commissioners and who has been so long identified with the business interests of Yonkers, was born near Londonderry, Ireland, May 1, 1811. His ancestors are said to have lived near Dundee, Scotland, and his grandfather, Robert, was one of the Scotch Covenanters. His father, Samuel, married Mary Parkhill. Their children were Nancy, wife of Richard McCotter; Eliza, wife of Robert Ralston; Mary, wife of Hugh Downs; Jane, Robert P. (the subject of this sketch), Matilda, wife of Thompson Morrison; Eleanor and Samuel. The father of this family was a merchant, and traded in West India goods; was a prominent man in his native place and an elder in the church for twenty nine years. Owing to severe reverses he was compelled to retire from business, and, with his fam-

ily, emigrated to America in 1824.

Robert Parkhill Getty was intended by his father for the ministry, a plan which was defeated by his financial misfortunes. When he, with his father, came to this country he was thirteen years old, and first obtained employment in the grocery-store of James Cleland, in New York. Here he remained till 1828, when he went into business with Sylvanus Scherhorn, with whom he was afterwards a partner.

He set up a grocery and liquor-store on his own account, but was induced to give it up by the advice of friends, who were opposed to the liquor traffic. He served a regular apprenticeship at the cooper's trade, and was thoroughly acquainted with the provision-packing business and the inspection laws of the State. His opportunities for attending school ended in 1823, and about this time he became acquainted with Professor Parker (an ex-professor of Harvard), who took so great an interest in his welfare that he offered to instruct him evenings gratuitously, an act of kindness which was terminated after one meeting by the sudden death of the venerable professor. In 1835 he commenced business with Jeremiah Robins, in which he was successful. His first speculation, which was in city lots in Buffalo, was disastrous. Soon after he was chosen superintendent of the Association of Inspectors of Beef and Pork,

an association which enjoyed peculiar facilities for making money, and when this came to an end he went into business with Martin Waters, and then with Drake B. Palmer. In 1844 he was appointed inspector by Governor Bouck, and re-appointed by Governor Wright. In 1861 he received the appointment of United States government inspector, and, during his continuance in office eight hundred and fifty thousand packages went through his hands, which represented a value of twenty-nine million dollars. He was the first to send American bacon to England, and his brand commanded

ever after a premium in the market. He was also largely engaged in building in the city of New York. In 1849 he came to Yonkers and

built his present residence. He built the "Getty House," now the principal hotel in Yonkers, in 1851, and also erected the buildings on the southwest corner of Main Street and Broadway; these were sold to John T. Waring in 1868. Very few men have held more local offices than Mr. Getty. In 1848 he was alderman in New York, and, in 1847 and '48, a member of the Board of Education. He was for many years one of the trustees of the village of Yonkers, and was president in 1859 and 1860, and also in 1871 and 1872.

A few of the many positions he has held may be mentioned: Director of the Hudson River Railroad, director of the Bank of North America, of the Yonkers

Bank, Merchants' Insurance Company, Corn Exchange, president of the Cumberland Coal and Iron Company, vice-president of Produce Exchange, director of West Side Elevated Railroad. He filled many offices of a fiduciary character, and in every one his business capacity and integrity have been conspicuous. In politics, Mr. Getty was early among the opponents of slavery, and he was a member of the first Republican Convention. Mr. Getty married Rebecca, daughter of Douw Van Buren, of Schodack Landing. Their children are Samuel E., Harriet, wife of William A. McDonald; Douw V. B. (deceased), Rebecca M., Robert A., Moses D., William F. H., John, Mary M., Eleanor C. and Emma.

Mr. Getty is the present city treasurer of Yonkers, and has held the office for several years. Throughout his entire life he has been distinguished for the utmost

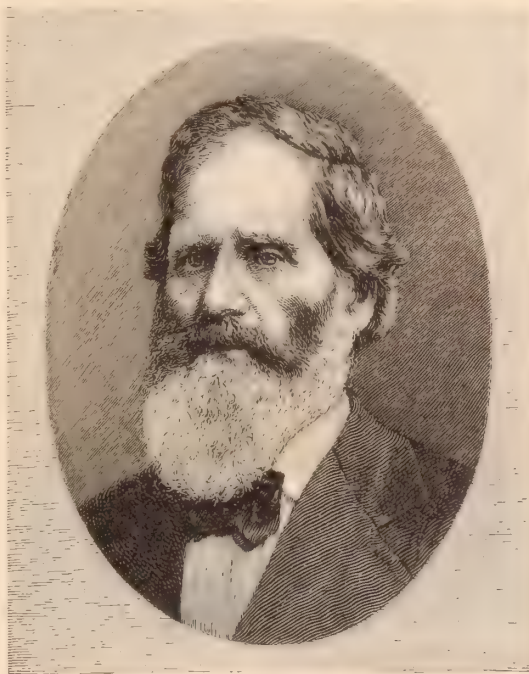
promptness in all business matters, and in every position of trust has been thoroughly faithful to his charge.

THE EDUCATION DEPARTMENT. -What were the schools existing within the colonial period we can not now ascertain. Allusion has already been made to two public school-houses at the beginning of the present century, both worn out and abandoned, and both without doubt dating back as far at least as the time of the Revolution. It is fortunate for us in taking up this subject, that we have still living in Yonkers, a veteran Yonkers teacher of wonderfully retentive memory, who has been

identified either practically, or through lively interest, with the Yonkers schools for more than fifty years. From him we have drawn

out much of what we are able to relate respecting the early public schools of the town. We are permitted to introduce our subject with a portrait and a brief sketch of this interesting man.

John Hobbs, one of a large family of children, was born June 17, 1801, in the town of Princeton, Mass. When old enough to go, he was sent to the district school, which was generally taught for ten or twelve weeks in the summer by a female, and for about the same length of time in the winter by a male, teacher. After reaching ten or eleven years of age and becoming able to work, he was sent to school in the winter only, and kept at home in the summer to help on the farm.

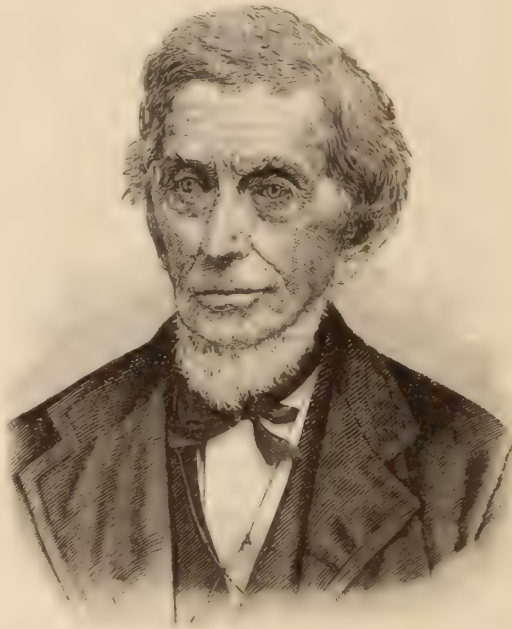


Robt A Getty

In 1819 and 1820, during a small part of each year, he attended an Academy at New Salem, Massachusetts. In November, 1820, riding for six successive days on the back of a colt but three and a half years old, he made a journey of three hundred miles into the State of Maine, where he taught a district school at Lincolnville during the following winter. In the spring, he returned to his home, accomplishing the travel by the same mode of conveyance, and in the same length of time, and devoted the following summer to farming. The next winter he taught a public school in Hubbardston, a town adjoining that of his home. The following summer and fall he was a clerk in a country store, and the next winter he again taught the Hubbardston school. In April, 1823, resolved on making teaching his life work, he set out from home with all his extra clothing in a handkerchief, and a few dollars in his pocket, to look for a school in need of a permanent teacher. Roads were bad and public conveyances were untrustworthy. Mostly on foot therefore, he traveled as far as the State of Pennsylvania. Not finding what he desired, he retraced his way to New York, walked up to Dobbs Ferry, and there learning from a farmer, with whom he stopped over night, that a public school was without a teacher, engaged himself at once, boarded round and had for about four months a successful school. At the end of these months, he received and accepted a call to the public school of White Plains, which he conducted for the next three years. Being called from the public school of White Plains to that of Tarrytown, he labored in the latter village for two years more. At this point in his career, being solicited by a White Plains lawyer to enter his office and study law, the lawyer offering him twenty dollars a month during his course of study, he complied. But soon finding the study of law uncongenial, and receiving a call at the time to a school in the western part of Greenwich, Connecticut, he resumed the teaching work, and taught in that place two years. After this he came to Westchester county again and opened a private school in Portchester. Six months after, however, he gave up this undertaking at the solicitation of the Rector of Trinity church, New

Rochelle, who invited him to associate with himself in an effort to establish a boarding and day school in that place. It was after about a year and a half in that association, that he at last received a call to the public school of Yonkers, upon the charge of which he entered in the beginning of April, 1832. The trustees of the school at the time were, Major Ebenezer Baldwin, John Bashford, and Jonathan Lawrence.

The Yonkers school, when he took it, had been waiting several weeks for him to close his engagement at New Rochelle. During this time, two private schools had been opened here by ladies, and had together collected fifty-two pupils. Mr. Hobbs opened the public schools with about twenty, but before the end of his quarter, had drawn away from the private schools all of their pupils but six. The existing school house soon becoming too small, he made the fact known to the trustees, who referred him to Mr. Lemuel Wells, the owner of the property. After some delay that gentleman determined to erect a new school building, and turn the old one into a tenement house. When the new house was finished, Mr. Hobbs entered it with his school. In it he taught twelve years, performing all the duties and labors of the establishment, from those of janitor upward. During part of the same period, also, he was inspector of schools and teachers for the town of Yonkers.



John Hobbs

In 1843 the Supervisors of the County, wholly on their own motion, appointed him Superintendent of the Public Schools of the county, at the time one hundred and fifty in number. Throughout the first year of his superintendency, he employed an assistant at his own expense, and retained his headship of the Yonkers school, paying but one visit to each of the county schools. At the end of his first year, however, he resigned his own school, and gave his whole time to the superintendency. His official term in due time ending, he was unanimously reappointed. In 1847 the system was changed, and with the change the office of Superintendent was abolished. One of the duties it had devolved on its incumbent had been examination of the district libraries and weeding out of unsuitable books. Mr. Hobbs having proved him-

self thorough in his work, his reputation had gone abroad, and he was now urged by many persons in Westchester and Rockland Counties, and even by some in parts of Dutchess County to make a specialty of selecting books for the libraries. Compliance with this solicitation gave turn to the entire remainder of his public and active life. It brought him into contact with publishing and book firms, with whom he entered into permanent engagements. From 1849 to 1875, twenty-five years, he gave himself to the scrutiny, selection and furnishing of school books, from which work, after having achieved in it an honorable and a substantial success, he retired upon a competency about eleven years ago. His residence, with ample grounds, is at No. 65 Ashburton Avenue. Over eighty five years of age, he still enjoys vigorous health, is of erect and manly form and figure, retains his memory of the past to a remarkable degree, keeps up an interest in passing things, delights to mingle in assemblies of teachers and to be present at school examinations and exhibitions, and never seems happier than when questioned about the schools of the past. He is a man of the first character for business integrity, for decision of judgment and promptness in action, and as might be expected, for fondness for what is stable, and aversion to change. As a churchman he was a worthy member of St. John's Church for forty years. He is now a member and strong supporter of Christ Church. We have taken pleasure in committing to permanent record these notes of the life of one who has long been one of the oldest and most respected citizens of Yonkers.

Mr. Hobbs says the school house to which he came in 1832 was a very old building indeed. He thinks it may have been the first public school house ever erected in the town. But we have already spoken of two that had been abandoned long before. Yet the date of the erection of Mr. Hobbs' school-house must have been very far back. We have no clew to it. It was a small one story frame building of about 15x30 feet. It stood directly north of the Broadway Methodist Episcopal church, on what is now the northeast corner of North Broadway and Ashburton Avenue. Of course in 1832, Ashburton Avenue had not been formed. The old country road to the Saw Mill River then passed on the south side of the Methodist Church (at the time but four years old) instead of on the North side, as Ashburton Avenue does now. This arrangement made the lay of the land such that the lot of the church and the lot of the school adjoined, instead of being separated as now, by a street coming in between.

Mr. Hobbs' immediate predecessor in the school had been Mr. Lewis H. Hobby, who subsequently became a teacher in the primary department of the University of New York, and finally, after many years of teaching, died at Greenwich, Conn. The names of Mr. Hobby's predecessors are lost. The two private schools mentioned in the sketch of Mr.

Hobbs as once started by ladies, were located, one on Mechanic (at present New Main Street), where Mr. John Bashford's carriage shop, now stands, and the other in Broadway, on the site now occupied by Thompson & Fowler's store.

In regard to the erection of the new school-house by Mr. Wells, and the disposition of the old one, we learn the following particulars: Mr. Wells first agreed to erect the wood-work of an additional room to the old building, if others would prepare the foundation. This was done, but Mr. Wells, after putting up a portion of the addition, changed his mind, and erected instead a new and more commodious house on the same lot, a little further to the north. It was about twenty by forty feet in size. The school-room was divided into two sections by a sliding-door. The boys were seated in one of the sections, and the girls in the other, while the teacher occupied a position between the two and commanding both. This building was first occupied in 1833.

The old building, which in 1833, gave way to the more commodious house, was eventually demolished, after having been used at different times, first as private school quarters, and subsequently as a tenement house. And the building erected in 1833, after in its turn becoming too small for the needs of Yonkers, was sold to Mr. David Stewart, Sr., who bought a large surrounding tract of land with it. Another story was added to the building by him. It has just been sold by Mr. Stewart's descendants to the Yonkers Club. The club will build a house for itself upon its site.

In 1845, when Mr. Hobbs, after having held his superintendency of the county schools for one year, resigned his position as principal of the Yonkers public school, Joseph Denslow, son of Oliver Denslow, a well-known citizen of Yonkers, became his successor. Mr. Denslow continued with the school till 1846, when the school was removed to a new house on School Street, which formed the nucleus of the present Yonkers public school No. 2. Of this we shall speak below. Mr. Denslow afterwards became a physician, settled and practiced in New York City, and died there.

Previous to the incorporation of Yonkers as a city in 1872, there were in the town six public schools, known as Nos. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5 and 6, numbered according to their dates of formation. Each of these schools was, as to control, independent of the others, having its own separate board of trustees. No. 3 was at Mosholu, within the territory at a later day set off as the town of Kingsbridge, and later still annexed to the city of New York. Within the last two years, however, a new school has been opened in Yonkers, to which again the No. 3 has been assigned. Then, too, a school of superior grade to all the rest has been formed. It was first denominated the "Central," but is now called the "High" School. So the city has now seven schools, the High School and six pri-

mary and grammar schools, known as Nos. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5 and 6.

The High School is at present accommodated in a leased building, entered from Hudson street between South Broadway and Riverdale Avenue. No. 1 is a small ungraded school, with but one teacher. It has a large new building, located on the Saw-Mill River Road, about three-quarters of a mile north of St. John's and Oakland Cemeteries. No. 2 is a very large graded school, with many teachers and many hundreds of pupils. It is located on a very high elevation between Waverley and School Streets and fronting on both. No. 3 is a new school, first opened in 1884. It has a new building, so far carried to one story only and waiting to be completed, when its completion may be needed. It is located on Hamilton Avenue, not far from the south line of the city. No. 4 is a small ungraded school, with one teacher only, but has a fine building, just erected upon Trenchard Avenue, on the east side of the city, near the Bronx River. No. 5 is a small ungraded school, with but one teacher. Its building is in good order and located at the corner of Central Avenue and the Tuckahoe Road. No. 6 is a very large graded school with many teachers and many hundreds of pupils. It has a large and commodious building, located on Ashburton Avenue, a little west of North Broadway.

All these schools (except No. 3, recently formed) were wholly independent of each other till July 12, 1881, when they were consolidated under a legislative act passed May 27 of that year, providing for the appointment by the Mayor of one city Board of Education, to consist of fifteen members who were to have the control of all the public schools. The history and statistics of Nos. 1, 4 and 5 before 1881 we cannot give. But we have the following particulars in regard to Nos. 2 and 6, the *large* public schools, which will be of interest:

School No. 2. The nucleus of the present building was put up in 1846, and at once in that year received the pupils from the old school on North Broadway, whose history we have given. The new house was two stories in height and those who built it are said to have expressed the hope that it would "be large enough for all time." The progress of events has shown that their hope was disappointed. It has been so often remodelled and enlarged that those who knew the original building can hardly tell where it is in the present house. The school was erected into a Union Free School August 11, 1858, with its old principal, Mr. M. B. Patterson, continued in his position. The subsequent principals, down to 1881, when the schools were consolidated under one Board of Education, were Thomas O'Reilly, elected July 18, 1862; Andrew J. Hannas, elected February 23, 1865 and John A. Nichols, elected May 9, 1867. The latter held his position till 1881, when he was elected by the City Board, Superintendent of the City Schools.

The following gentlemen were members of the

Board of Education of No. 2 between 1858, the date of its organization as a Union Free School, and 1881, when it passed under the control of the City Board: William N. Seymour, James H. Monckton, John Hobbs, Josiah Rich, Thomas Smith, J. Henry Williams, John M. Mason, George B. Upham, M.D., Jacob Read, James W. Mitchell, Augustus W. Doren, Thomas O. Farrington, Rev. Victor M. Hulbert, Hiram K. Miller, Robert P. Getty, Rev. David Cole, William Radford, William Iles, Rudolf Eickemeyer, William Macfarlane, Edward Simmons, Duncan Smith, George Stewart, Frederick A. Back, John P. Ritter, James V. Lawrence, Halcyon Skinner, John O. Campbell and Rufus Dutton. The Presidents of the Board during the period were John Henry Williams, David Cole, Rudolf Eickemeyer and Duncan Smith.

School No. 6.—This school was established under a special legislative act, passed April 19, 1861. Its school-house on Ashburton Avenue became ready for use and was opened June 16, 1862, with Mr. James Weir Mason as principal. Mr. Mason resigned his principalship at the end of the first year, and Mr. Thomas Moore was appointed October 1, 1863. Mr. Moore held his position till the consolidation of 1881, from which time male principals of the Grammar-Schools, except for one year, have been discontinued. School No. 6 and School No. 2 were founded originally by different elements, and the former claimed for its organization, its course of study, its teaching, its pupils, its examinations and its commencements a superiority over the latter. Efforts were made to bring them under a consolidated government by voluntary consent of their boards and constituents. But this claim always prevented. Whatever may at any time have been the justice of any such claim by or for No. 6, of course all ground for it long ago passed away. The equipments of both schools are now almost without limit for completeness. Both have ample accommodations and outfits, and both enjoy the unlimited confidence of the whole city.

The following gentlemen were members of the Board of Education of No. 6, between its first opening in 1862, and 1881 when it passed under control of the city board: John M. Mason, George B. Upham, M.D., Isaac H. Knox, Everett Clapp, Britton Richardson, Stephen H. Thayer, Sr., J. Foster Jenkins, M.D., Abijah Curtis, George B. Pentz, Edward P. Baird, John W. Oliver, William F. Cochran, James P. Sanders, Ezekiel Y. Bell, Edward O. Carpenter, James Stewart, Daniel T. Macfarlan, Frederick C. Oakley, William S. Carr, Matthew H. Ellis, Thomas C. Cornell, Edwin R. Keyes, John H. Keeler, Valentine Browne, M.D., Samuel Swift, M.D., Fayette P. Brown and Dennis Murphy. The presidents of the board during the period were in the order named,—Justus Lawrence, Dr. George B. Upham, John M. Mason, Edward P. Baird, Isaac H. Knox, James P. Sanders, Matthew H. Ellis and Dr. Samuel Swift.

Before the consolidation of 1881 the territory of the city had been districted with reference to the public-schools, and parents who, living within one district, preferred to send their children to the school of another, were charged rate bills for tuition. Annual school-meetings of the people were held at the respective school-houses on the first Tuesday evening of October. At these meetings the trustees made their reports to the people, submitted estimates of the current year's working expenses and asked for appropriations to meet them, which were granted and raised by separate tax for the public-schools. These meetings were closed with the voting for trustees. It had been apparent for a few years before 1881 that Yonkers was outgrowing this plan, which was evidently not adapted to large cities. Indeed, it had been almost the last city in the State, if not the very last, to retain it. The popular meetings of October, 1880, showed the need for a change. During the following session of the legislature a bill for consolidation was prepared by ex-Judge Matthew H. Ellis and approved by other competent gentlemen and its passage secured. It was passed May 27, 1881, and went into operation the same year. It provided for the appointment by the Mayor, independent of confirmation by the Common Council, of fifteen citizens as a city Board of Education, to be entrusted with the management of the entire educational department of the city. Hon. Norton P. Otis, at the time Mayor of Yonkers, made the first appointments. When the gentlemen appointed held their first meeting, July 12, 1881, they divided themselves into five classes, consisting of three members in each class. The first board was, as a result, constituted as follows; To serve

For one year, William F. Cochran, Duncan Smith, Matthew H. Ellis.

For two years, John Thurton, Peter Mitchell, William H. Thrall.

For three years, Charles Lockwood, Thomas B. Caulfield, Rudolf Eickemeyer.

For four years, Ethelbert Belknap, Rufus Dutton, Frederic Shonnard.

For five years, Michael Mooney, Frederick A. Back, Frederick C. Oakley.

The new act requires the board to appoint a suitable person, not one of its own members, to act as its clerk and as superintendent of the common schools of the city, to perform the duty of supervision and all other duties, which the board may from time to time direct. Such person is to be a salaried officer.

The first city superintendent appointed by the board August 2, 1881, was Mr. John A. Nichols, who had been principal of Public school No. 2, from May 9, 1867. The health of Mr. Nichols proving unequal to the burdens of the office, he resigned at the end of the first year, July 12, 1882. Mr. Andrew J. Rickoff, who had been superintendent of the public schools of Cleveland, Ohio, for many years, was next appointed, July 13, 1882. Mr. Rickoff had a responsible

connection with a book publishing house, and finding himself overburdened with double cares, resigned the office in September, 1883. Thereupon, on the 9th of October, Mr. Charles E. Gorton, a graduate of the University of Michigan, who had been a teacher in No. 2 for nine years, and its principal for one year, was taken after one year in the principalship of the Central School, in which he was commanding very great respect for his efficiency, and made city superintendent. He began his work on the 1st of November. This election gave universal satisfaction. Mr. Gorton is still city superintendent. Under his care and management, through the wise direction and cooperation of the board, the educational system of Yonkers is growing in symmetry, and developing strength adapted to the wants of the city. One of the earliest subjects to which the Consolidated Board gave its attention was the formation of a school of superior grade, in which pupils desiring a higher education, might be taught in studies above the Grammar-School course. They gave to this institution the title, "The Central School." After three years of experience with it, encouraged by the general approbation of it manifested by the citizens, they have thought it wise to change its name. They now call it "The High-School." It is justifying its name. The time seems not yet to have arrived for it to have a separate building and ground of its own. But proper accommodations for it must, in the nature of things, soon come.

The courses of study in the Yonkers Public Schools, from the High-School down to the Primaries, including the courses of the evening schools, are so similar to those of the schools of other cities that we need not indicate them here. They are detailed in the printed annual reports of the Board of Education.

The board have given all needed care to the properties of the various schools. Besides leasing and fitting up the High-School, they have built a new house for No. 4 on Trenchard Avenue at Mile Square, and organized a new school, known as No. 3, building a fine house for its accommodation on Hamilton Avenue. Of course, they have also been careful to keep in good order and develop according to need the buildings of the other schools. For their own meetings, they have secured and adapted a special building on Hudson Street within the High School grounds. An apartment of this building has been fitted for a central public school library. All the formerly separate libraries of the various schools, containing together in 1883 about 3400 volumes, have been brought here, and are kept under the care of a librarian employed by the board. New books are being constantly added to the library, and all the books are available to the public as well as to the schools of the city.

The board now employs besides the city superintendent, Mr. Charles E. Gorton, the following corps of teachers:

In the High-School, the principal Mr. Edward

R. Shaw, a graduate of Lafayette College, with three assistants and a special teacher of Music and Drawing. Mr. Shaw began in the High School November 1, 1883.

In No. 1, Miss Phebe E. Palmer, principal.

In No. 2, Miss Caroline J. Dresser, principal, with twenty assistants.

In No. 3, Miss Ray A. Campbell, principal, with one assistant.

In No. 4, Miss Jessie F. Bross, principal.

In No. 5, Mrs. E. B. Merritt, principal.

In No. 6, Miss Mary E. Spencer, principal with sixteen assistants.

Besides these teachers, it employs, as has been said, a librarian and a variable number of special teachers for music, drawing, etc. The librarian is Miss Agnes Claxton. The first teacher of music was Professor Alfred Andrews, whose standing as a master and teacher of his art is very high, and the practical results of whose work in the schools has been among the most brilliant features of their annual commencements for many years.

The money for the support of the public schools, under the act of 1881, instead of being asked of and voted by the people as before, is now asked of and voted by the Common Council, and included within the general taxes of the city. A report to September 1 is annually made by the Board of Education to the council. In the report made September 1, 1885, the amount of money received for all purposes during the year just then passed, was reported as \$66,996.88, and the amount expended for all purposes as \$63,607.79. The appropriation asked for the year to end September 1, 1886, was \$53,151, of which \$27,000 was for teachers' wages. Of course, in both these cases, much of the money solicited was for the new building and furnishing operations in which the board was engaged.

The total number of children on the registers of all the schools for the year ending September 1, 1885, was: boys, 1535; girls, 1358; total, 2893. The average daily attendance was: boys, 949; girls, 825; total, 1774. The evening schools during the same year had a register of 512, and an average attendance of 157. The school census, taken July, 1885, revealed the existence in the city of 8076 children of school age; in other words, between five and twenty-one years old.

The mayor appoints each year three gentlemen to fill the places of regularly outgoing members of the Board of Education, and he also fills vacancies created through removals, resignations and deaths. Besides the first board, whose names are given above, the following gentlemen have served as members, viz.: Edward Le Moyne, Anthony Imhoff, G. Livingston Morse, Oliver P. Buel, William B. Edgar, Merwin N. Jones, F. T. Holder, Francis O'Neill, Thomas Ewing, David Hawley, Christian F. Tietjen, Charles Reed, John H. Hubbell.

The present board consists of the following members:

	Term expires.
Duncan Smith, President from the beginning.....	July 10, 1887
Frederic Sheppard, Vice-President.....	July 10, 1880
Anthony Imhoff.....	July 10, 1886
Frederick A. Back.....	July 10, 1886
G. Livingston Morse.....	July 10, 1886
Oliver P. Buel.....	July 10, 1887
William P. Edgar.....	July 10, 1887
Peter Mitchell.....	July 10, 1888
Merwin N. Jones.....	July 10, 1888
Francis O'Neill.....	July 10, 1888
Thomas Ewing.....	July 10, 1889
David Hawley.....	July 10, 1889
Christian F. Tietjen.....	July 10, 1889
Charles Reed.....	July 10, 1890
John H. Hubbell.....	July 10, 1890

One of the oldest public school educators now living in Yonkers, but who has not been connected with the system in this city, is Merritt H. Smith. Mr. Smith was the son of Merritt H. Smith, of Smithtown, Long Island and was born in the city of New York, November 27, 1812.

In very early childhood his parents feared that he might remain speechless, as he manifested no symptoms of speech for two or three years. After that, however, their fears were dispelled, as the gift was imparted to him in unusual measure. He soon regained the time he had lost, having in a very few months after, made such progress as to be able to read the Bible, of which he became quite a student. So retentive was his memory that in a few years he had learned all the New Testament, the Book of Genesis, the Psalms, the Proverbs and many other parts of the Old Testament.

At the age of nine years, being of an active turn of mind and desirous to earn something for himself, Mr. Smith, while other boys spent their leisure time in amusement and play, conceived the idea of manufacturing and selling small band-boxes. This soon ripened into a wholesale paying business, the whole of his time between school hours being consumed in cutting out, sewing and papering the boxes, and, with a few samples, visiting the fancy stores and soliciting their custom.

He discontinued this business after the 1st of May, 1825, when the New York High School was opened in Crosby Street, and he was chosen by Mr. Nathaniel C. Hart to assist him in the introductory department.

The following year (1826), Mr. Hart was appointed superintendent of the House of Refuge, then located where Madison Square now is, which resulted in the termination of Mr. Smith's labors in the New York High School.

With a good recommendation from his former employer he applied to the Public School Society, and they appointed him, July, 1826, though not yet fourteen years old, an assistant in public school No. 2, located in Henry Street. Being very ambitious, his labors were severe and incessant—frequently obliging him to take the entire charge of the school—then containing five hundred pupils. After seven years of service in school No. 2 he was promoted and trans-

ferred, in 1833, to school No. 13 in Madison Street, where he remained for several years.

It was while engaged here that he was run over by a car on the Harlem Railroad, which was then in process of construction, an accident in which he narrowly escaped losing his life. From school No. 13 he was again transferred to public school No. 7, in Christie Street.

Naturally of a frail constitution his laborious duties, after a few years, began to tell upon his strength, and, finding his health somewhat impaired, he commenced the study of anatomy and physiology. For some time he attended lectures with the idea of fitting himself for a physician, if necessary, or at least to understand the best means of restoring and preserving his own health.

Finally his health became so poor from dyspepsia and confinement that he was a mere wreck, and was forced, in the summer of 1845, to resign his situation as a teacher, after spending twenty years of his early life in the profession. He then gave his entire attention to the study of health, consulting all the distinguished writers on that subject, both foreign and domestic, which resulted in his adoption of a course of physical training and of rigid dietetic habits, by the aid of which, in a few years, he regained the health he had lost.

So valuable were the benefits derived from the course adopted by him in his own person that he felt constrained to recommend it to others, both in private and by lectures in public.

He was one of the original founders of the Rutgers Fire Insurance Company in 1853, and is at present one of only seven of its originators who survive. He has also been a director in the Hamilton Fire Insurance Company for the last twenty-five years. He has been connected with some of the public improvements in the city of New York, such as the opening of Lexington Avenue, the extension of Canal and the widening of Walker Streets, and also the widening of Whitehall Street, from the Battery to Bowling Green.

Mr. Smith was converted in early life, and, during the past forty years, has held prominent official positions in the Madison Street Church, Cherry Street Church, the Second Avenue Church in Harlem, New York City, and, for the last seventeen years, in the First Methodist Episcopal Church of Yonkers, of which he is now the president of the board of trustees.

Mr. Smith is a gentleman now well along in years. His steady business life and consistent Christian character have been a power for good in the community of which he has ever been a useful and esteemed citizen.

SECTION XII.

Parish and Private Schools

We bring these into immediate connection with the Educational Department of the city that we may exhibit at one glance all the facilities it affords for the education of children and youth.

St. Mary's Parish School.

—The city has two parish schools, respectively attachments of St. Mary's and St. Joseph's Roman Catholic parishes, whose histories will be included among those of the city churches. These schools had their foundation, no doubt, in the practice of the Roman Catholics of connecting parish schools with their churches, and

have gathered strength from their desire to associate special religious training with secular education. We are indebted to Mr. Thomas C. Cornell for a printed pamphlet containing

ample historical sketches of all the Roman Catholic schools, from which we draw the following statements. The school property now owned by St. Mary's Church, on St. Mary Street, was purchased in 1852 by Rev. Thomas S. Preston, then pastor of the church. A small school-house, fifteen by twenty-five feet, was at once erected on it. The parish school of the church had been opened in the early spring of that year in the basement of a dwelling-house still standing on the northwest corner of St. Mary and Clinton Streets. The school was begun with less than a dozen boys and girls together.



Mr. H. Smith

When, later on in the year, it was first opened in the new school-house just mentioned, it did not have more than two dozen, but next year the number was over eighty. In March, 1854, it had ninety-two. Then for a time it was closed.

In February, 1856, the Rev. Edward Lynch became pastor of the church. Within a fortnight after his settlement, he reopened the school. The girls, at first twenty-two in number, he placed under Miss Josephine Dwight in his sacristy, and the boys, about as many, under Mr. James Webb in his small school-house. Very soon after, the basement of the new school-house was fitted up for the girls, who increased to eighty the first year. And later still, early in 1857, the boys were removed to a basement which, at a cost of about six hundred dollars, had been constructed beneath the church. From that year till 1860, the little school house was occupied by the girls under the care of the Sisters of Charity.

In 1859 Father Lynch began, and in 1860 completed what had been with him an ambition from the time of his settlement, the erection of a new school-house. This building was fifty by fifty-five feet and two stories high, with a basement and an attic. It was first put to use in September, 1860. Its cost was ten thousand dollars. The girls were at once placed on the first floor under the continued care of Sisters Chrysostom¹ and Winnefred, who had taught them from 1857, and the boys' school was opened in 1861, on the upper floor, under the care of Brother Clementian (now Vice-President of Manhattan College) as director, with three assistants. When possession was taken of the new school-house, in 1860, the number of pupils, boys and girls, had increased to about three hundred.

Father Lynch died May 5, 1865, and Rev. Charles T. Slevin at once succeeded him. At his coming, Sisters Ann Cecilia and M. Maurice were conducting a school of one hundred and fifty-five girls, and the Brothers had one hundred and fifty boys. Father Slevin continued the school as he had found it. From November 1876 the boys' school was discontinued till September, 1877, when it was reopened by Rev. Charles R. Corley, the successor of Father Slevin, who had been obliged to be absent from his post by reason of ill health, and who finally died July 18, 1878.

Rev. Mr. Corley, on coming to Yonkers, made the parish schools one of his first cares. In September, 1877, he reopened the boys' school with Brother El-waren as principal, with three assistants and about two hundred and fifteen children. He found Sister Martina in charge of the girls' department with about three hundred scholars. In September, 1878, she was succeeded by Sister Maria Magdalena, with several

sisters as assistants. The school is now in charge of Sister M. Arsenia. The boys' school since September, 1882, has been in charge of Brother Denis, with three brothers as assistants.

Mr. Cornell, in his pamphlet, gives the following statistics for the schools for the seven years preceding September, 1884:

	Girls.	Boys.	Total.
1878.....	327.....	255.....	582
1879.....	342.....	280.....	622
1880.....	354.....	293.....	647
1881.....	358.....	299.....	657
1882.....	370.....	313.....	683
1883.....	386.....	327.....	713
1884.....	400.....	340.....	740

It remains to be stated that during 1885, the building erected by Rev. Mr. Lynch in 1860, was greatly enlarged at a cost of about \$20,000. The corner stone of this building was blessed on Sabbath July 5, 1885, with appropriate ceremonies. The building is three stories in height, and has a frontage of one hundred and twenty feet on St. Mary St. with a depth of fifty-three feet.

ST. ALOYSIUS' BOARDING ACADEMY FOR BOYS.—Before we come to St. Joseph's parochial school, we must speak of this educational institution of the Roman Catholics whose foundation preceded St. Joseph's in order of time.

After frequent solicitation to do so, the Sisters of Charity at last decided to undertake a boarding school for for boys so young as still to need woman's care. For this purpose the property now occupied by St. Aloysius' Academy on the corner of South Broadway and Vark Street was purchased by them in November 1868. The cost of it was forty-two thousand dollars. The grounds comprise four and a half acres. Large additions have been made to the house. It has become the headquarters of a community of the Sisters of Charity. The first Superior of the school was Sister Ann Cecilia. The present Superior is Sister Mary Pius, who has been in charge since April 1871. The Academy is also the home of the sisters teaching in the parish school of St. Mary's. Including those in that charge, there is in the building a community of fourteen sisters. Besides sister Mary Pius, the Superior, the teachers and other ladies who reside in the building are sisters M. Symphorosa, Marie Stella, M. Clementia, Agnes Teresa, M. Serene, M. Euphrosyne, M. Leonora, M. Hilary and Clara Vincent in charge of St. Aloysius, and M. Arsenia, Agnes Loyola, M. Myra and Frances Clare in charge of the parish school. The information we have does not extend to the details of St. Aloysius' school, but we understand that the institution has been a success.

ST. JOSEPH'S PARISH SCHOOL.—St. Joseph's parish was set off from St. Mary's in 1871. In June of that year, Rev. A. A. Lings, assistant at St. Mary's, was made pastor of the new parish. In July, Rev. Mr. Lings bought the lot at present occupied by St. Jo-

¹ During the period of Sister Chrysostom's connection with the school she was ill for a long time. And it is interesting to note that during her illness her place was supplied for a year and a half by Sister Ambrosia, who was subsequently put in charge of the Girls' Protectory at Westchester, and is now Mother Superior of the Sisters of Charity in the diocese.

seph's church at the corner of Ashburton and Oak Hill (now St. Joseph) Avenues, and by the spring of 1872 the present building, designed for a school house, and since temporarily used in part for a church, was completed. St. Joseph's Parish school was opened in class rooms in its upper story, in Sept. 1872, with about three hundred pupils. We take the following statement verbatim from Mr. Cornell's pamphlet. It contains, presented from the Roman Catholic point of view, a history of some very important events which occurred in Yonkers between 1878 and 1881.

"Father Lings made the public claim that since his schools gave to the children of the district all the secular education they could get in the public schools, and at much less expense, and since he thus saved the district the great cost of new class rooms and more teachers, the school board should pay at least the small cost of his schools. He claimed to do for less than ten dollars per year what cost the district more than twenty-five dollars. After a good deal of discussion, the matter was brought before the annual meeting of the district, held on October 8, 1878, under a resolution approving of hiring additional class-rooms in St. Joseph's Church, at a nominal rent, whenever the board of education might think proper and under such conditions as the board should approve. By a misunderstanding among some of the voters, as to the question voted on, 33 votes in favor of the school were thrown away, and the votes stood:—For the resolution, 197; for appropriating \$3000 for St. Joseph's School, 17; for trustees, 16; total, 230. Against the resolution, 207.

"The resolution was declared lost, but this result being unsatisfactory, a special meeting of the district was called the following spring, to be held on the 10th of June, 1879, to vote on the question of establishing a branch school in St. Joseph's Church under the school board. Much feeling and discussion were excited and the meeting was largely attended. The vote stood, for the branch school, 387, against it, 430, blank, 1.

"At this time the attendance in St. Joseph's parish school was three hundred and seventy-four. The school was discontinued at the end of June, 1879, but in September, 1881, it was reopened under the charge of the Sisters of Charity, for whose use Father Lings had bought the adjoining house and lot north of the school, and fitted it up at a cost of about seven thousand dollars. The sisters have the boys' school as well as the girls', but in separate class rooms and with separate yards and entrances. Sister M. Stephen, of the Academy of St. Aloysius, who had for several years charge of St. Joseph's Sunday-school, was put in charge of the new house at St. Joseph's, where she now has six assistant teachers, besides the lay assistance in the school. In the autumn of 1882 the school numbered 203 boys and 281 girls; total, 484. In January, 1883, the register was 530, and the average

attendance for the month 458." Sister Stephen's assistants are Sisters M. Esperanza, Rosa Lima, M. Joseph Berchmans, Marie Angelé and Maria Clotilda."

PRIVATE SCHOOLS AND ACADEMIES.—We know of none of these before the period of Lemuel Wells (1813-42). Mr. Wells himself, however, in 1840, two years only before his death, built two houses and founded two schools, one for boys and the other for girls, both of which after his death became noted. The seminary for boys was conducted in the building at 72 Locust Hill Avenue, which is now owned and occupied by Mr. John H. Hubbell. Its first principal was a Mr. Burrill, but it became chiefly prominent under the management of another, of whom we must give an account.

GEORGE W. FRANCIS, A.M., was born in Pittsfield, Mass., September 29, 1799. He was graduated at Williams College in 1826; then studied law and was licensed to the bar in 1829. During his study of law he taught schools in Pittsfield, Mass., and Lansingburgh, N. Y. After being admitted he did not practice his profession, but devoted most of his time to teaching. He was principal of the high school in Troy, N. Y., in 1830 and 1831, and then taught a select school in the same city till 1836. The following two years, till the fall of 1837, he spent in business. From 1837 to 1845 he again taught a select school in Troy. In 1845 he was induced to come to Yonkers to take charge of the boys' school of which we have spoken. He rented its building till 1847, and then bought it. Bringing to Yonkers ample experience and large popularity as a teacher, he started his school here as a boarding and day-school, limiting his pupils to twenty of each class. The success of the school at once became and continued marked. The boarding department he maintained ten years and the day-school till 1860. In that year he finally retired from teaching. The school building he sold to Mr. Anson Baldwin in 1862. In after years he followed business for a time. He was deputy clerk in the Yonkers village clerk's office in 1871 and 1872, and also for several years commissioner of common schools.

Mr. Francis still lives in Yonkers, at 29 Hawthorne Avenue, and is vice-president of the Yonkers Savings Bank. He is now about 87 years of age. He has been an instructor of a large number of youth, many of whom have become noted, and some of whom are very wealthy men. His advanced life has brought him experience of severe trials, but it has not been without its bright side as well. An incident in his recent history was of very substantial and timely service to this veteran teacher. On his 84th birth-day a number of his old pupils, now widely scattered over the country, on the proposition of warmly attached representatives of his former Yonkers school, sent him the sum of \$1350 as a testimonial of their reverent respect and sincere esteem. No deed ever gave greater pleasure to Yonkers people. Their kindest regard will

follow Mr. Francis as long as he is spared as one of their historic men.

The seminary for girls stood on a lot some distance north from Ashburton Avenue, running through from North Broadway to the present Palisade Avenue. George W. Bleecker was the first manager of this school. A lady followed him. Neither succeeded, but the school like that of Mr. Francis, became noted under the management of another, of whom we must speak somewhat at length.

William C. Foote, A. M., was born in North Haven, Connecticut, November, 6, 1811, was prepared for college in New Haven, and was graduated at Yale in 1832. He studied in the New Haven seminary and was regularly licensed to the ministry in 1836. Utter physical prostration however compelled him to forego the profession to which he had devoted himself. In 1839 he was induced to take charge of a ladies' seminary at Newburgh, N. Y. and from thence in 1845 he came to Yonkers about the same time with Mr. Francis. Assuming the management of the girls' school here, he gave it the character of a boarding and day-school, and by dint of energy, soon raised it to a high reputation. His pupils ranged in age from ten to twenty years. They were taught in all the studies then deemed essential to a finished education for ladies; including French, music and painting. Mr. Foote employed many assistants in the various departments. He carried on the seminary for ten years, and then discontinued teaching for two years, during which he built his present residence at 235 Palisade Avenue. After this, he successfully conducted for about fifteen years a day-school in a building west of his residence, and fronting on North Broadway. At the end of this time he retired permanently from the work of teaching. Mr. Foote is also one of the historic men of Yonkers, commands the highest respect of its citizens, and will continue to do so as long as he lives.

After Mr. Foote left the girls' school in 1855, a gentleman who had been at the head of the New York City Rutgers Female Institute, took charge of it, intending to continue it on Mr. Foote's plan. His effort however was not a success. Then Prof. Nathaniel W. Starr took the house and occupied it until 1867 with a boys' school. After his departure, the building was used as a boarding-house. Passing through numerous hands, and being greatly enlarged, it finally became known, and obtained considerable popularity under the name of "The Peabody House." After awhile, however, this lost its success. Recently the whole property has been sold and the building demolished. Soon no one will be found to remember the former appearance of the site.

Many of the prominent ladies of Yonkers received their education from Mr. Foote and his teachers in that early school. The school of Rev. Montgomery R. Hooper, may be considered its successor. An account of this will be given further on.

In addition to these schools founded by Mr. Wells, and made eminent through the names of Mr. Francis and Mr. Foote, there is linked with the past the memory of another, which, during most of its history, had a wide reputation as a boarding and day-school and was the educator of a large number of boys, several of whom, both in Yonkers and elsewhere, are now notable men. This school was conducted in the buildings at the corner of South Broadway and Hudson St. It was founded in 1854, and its successive principals were three in number, viz: Mr. Washington Hasbrouck (now principal of the State Normal School of New Jersey at Trenton), Mr. Moses N. Wisewell, and Mr. Benjamin Mason, the last of whom conducted it for many years, and with whom it came to an end. Its discontinuance was one of the results of the financial stringency of the period ending with the year 1880. Mr. Mason, a graduate of the New York University of the class of 1843, a gentleman of good social standing and extensive influence, and a good disciplinarian and teacher, conducted it with fine success and growing reputation. It was known during his time as the "Yonkers Collegiate and Military Institute." Mr. Mason was an enthusiast in his work, employed excellent assistants, and spared neither money nor toil upon his boys. In despite of all this, however, his school declined within the period named, and finally after heroic struggles to save it, he was compelled to give it up. And his own end was very sad. After teaching in other places for a time, he was filling an engagement in Milwaukee, Wisconsin, when as a boarder in the Milwaukee Hotel, he perished in the conflagration by which that building was destroyed on the night of the 10th of January, 1882.

In addition to these more prominent private schools of the past there have been many attempts to maintain such schools, some of which have been more successful and enduring, and others of very short duration. Perhaps among them all, that of Miss Emily A. Rice, whose boarding and day school was located on Locust Hill Avenue, but is now conducted at Ocean Grove, N. J., was the foremost. We recall some local schools for small children, boys or girls or both, of a closely select character, formed and maintained by groups of families, which combined for their support. These schools were not intended to attract public notice and need not be catalogued here. We pass now to the private schools still in existence. They are as follows:

REV. MR. HOOPER'S ACADEMY.—This is now the oldest private school in the city. Rev. Montgomery R. Hooper, A. M., is a native of Monmouth County, N. J., was graduated at the College of New Jersey in the class of 1860, and immediately afterwards appointed teacher of Latin, Greek and Mathematics, in Newark Academy, at Newark, N. J. In that position he taught five years, during the latter part of the time holding to the academy the relation of Vice-Principal

and senior teacher. He left his post in Newark to assume a similar one in Prof. Samuel A. Farrand's Collegiate Academy, in New York City. From this academy he was invited to his present field of labor by a written call, signed by a number of the most prominent citizens of Yonkers. His school, as already stated, may be regarded as the lineal successor of the school which originally gained its reputation under Mr. Foote. Prof. Nathaniel W. Starr, having left it in 1867, Charles B. Goodsell, A.M., one of his assistants, at once started with some of its pupils, a school of his own. But Mr. Goodsell died in the same year and it was upon his death that Mr. Hooper was invited to Yonkers to succeed him. He began his Yonkers work in a building on the west side of North Broadway, a little north of Wells Avenue. It has been recently torn down. At the beginning of his first term he had seventeen pupils. Rev. Mr. Hooper is a clergyman of the Protestant Episcopal Church and a scholar of high order. His career as a teacher of twenty-six years, eighteen of which have been spent in Yonkers, has been a great success. His academy prepares boys for any college or scientific school, or for West Point or the Naval Academy. It has all departments from the primary to the academic and has had upon its rolls in all four hundred and five pupils, of whom several have rewarded their teacher by winning distinction in professions and in the other walks of life.

"THE YALE SCHOOL FOR BOYS."—This school was begun in 1877 by Theodore F. Leighton, A.B., a graduate of the Yale College class of 1874. It is now carried on by Mr. and Mrs. Leighton as associate principals. Its location is at 145 North Broadway. It is of a high character, and has, during its career of eight years, enjoyed a good patronage and been a success. Its aims are similar to those of the school last described, and it has sent boys to college from year to year, maintaining a good reputation for its work. It has passed its period of probation long ago and is established in public confidence. Its principals are untiringly industrious and thoroughly honest in their work, and will no doubt continue to enjoy the stand they have attained.

"PROF. DAVISON'S INSTITUTE."—This is a school, limited to ten pupils, most of whom are boarders. The founder and proprietor of it is Rev. Isaac S. Davison, a clergyman of the Presbyterian Church, a graduate of the College of New Jersey and of Princeton Theological Seminary. He was formerly a pastor in New York City, but left his pastorate to become a teacher. Having purchased the Dwight High-School in Brooklyn, he opened it under the name of the Brooklyn High-School in 1859. It was at once thronged with pupils. Later on the name was changed to Prof. Davison's Institute, and the school, under this name, was continued by its founder till 1881. In that year Prof. Davison came to Yonkers and has since given himself to the care of the select

school above-mentioned. His number of boys being limited, he is always full, and has been compelled to decline many applications.

ADDITIONAL PRIVATE SCHOOLS.—Besides the foregoing, there are in the city the following institutions under private proprietorships: Mrs. K. T. Holbrook's "School for Young Ladies and Children," its location known as Orchard Terrace and fronting at No. 111 Locust Hill Avenue; Mrs. John Moffat's "Home School for Misses and Children," at her residence, No. 9 Prospect Street; Miss Crocker and Miss Herzog's "Day School for Young Ladies and Girls," at No. 179 North Broadway; Miss Anna M. Palmer's "Kindergarten," in the Yale School building; Miss S. N. MacAdam's "Classes in English and French," at Vista Cottage, 77 and 79 Buena Vista Avenue; and Mrs. Kellogg's "Select School for Children," at No. 145 North Broadway.

All these schools have obtained good reputations. Some of them are of several years' standing and have done much valuable work in the city.

SECTION XIII.

The Churches of Yonkers.

THE earliest whites of Yonkers, and, in fact, of all the Manor of Philipsburgh, were, of course, adherents of the Holland Reformed Church. But, strange to say, no church of their order was formed within the limits of the manor till 1697, when the Sleepy Hollow Reformed Church was organized at Tarrytown, and no other till 1843, when the Reformed Church was organized at Yonkers. It would seem that the Dutch people of Colendonck, or "The Yonkers," as this territory was variously called, must have attended the original Reformed Church in New York City (founded in 1628), or contented themselves with occasional missionary visits to them of that church's minister or ministers, or lived without observance of religious worship at all. It is to be feared that most of them did the last. The first Lord Philipse and his second wife, Catharina van Cortlandt, gave proof of substantial interest in their denomination by securing the organization of the Tarrytown church in 1697 and building a house for it in 1699. No doubt some of the Yonkers people connected themselves with that church. This is all we can now know or surmise of the church doings of the Dutch people, who were the earliest occupants of Yonkers ground.

How the Philipse line was diverted from the Reformed Church and became ardently devoted to the Church of England has been already related. The second lord was born in Barbadoes and educated from his earliest years in England and wholly under English influence. He came to Yonkers about 1719, founded and trained his family in his own faith, and in this way prepared them to meet with their powerful support what, in the Providence of God, was to be the first formal effort to plant religion on Yonkers

ground. The Congregational Church was the earliest to secure a foothold within the county of Westchester, and the French Reformed Church was the next. But neither of these ever touched Yonkers. The third church to enter the county was the Church of England, and to this was given the privilege of putting forth the first formal religious efforts here.

The Church of England, though not under organization, yet in character and spirit, appeared in New York at once after the surrender of 1664. Governor Nicolls called a convention in the very next year, for the purpose of considering the general interests of the province. The Convention assembled at Hempstead, L. I., on the 28th of February, 1665, and Westchester was represented in it. It framed a code that, under the name of "The Duke's Laws," continued in

incorporated under the act of 1784, and the precinct was set off as a parish by itself.¹

More than thirty years, however, before it became independent, it had been lifted into prominence

¹ The first operations of the Church of England within this county were carried on under the direction of a missionary organization of the church, incorporated in 1702 and still in existence, known as the "Venerable Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts." A copy of the proceedings of this society, published by David Humphrey, its secretary, in 1730, has been put into our hands, and from it we take the following very interesting paragraph, relating to our county and the society's operations in it from 1702 onward to this date:

"Westchester County lies on the sea coast to the west (?) of Hudson River. The people here were more English than in any county of the government. It contains a very great tract of land, and generally the best of any in those parts. There were computed to be in it not above two thousand souls in the year 1702, but the goodness of the soil seemed to promise it would in time be a very populous place. The whole county is sixteen (?) miles in length, containing six small towns—Westchester, Eastchester, New Rochelle, Rye, Mamaroneck and Bedford—besides two small places, called Lower Yonkers and Philipsburgh. This was the state of the place in 1702. The inhabitants of Westchester, the chief town, were the first who desired a missionary in the country. They built a church in pursuance of the act for building five churches, and fifty pounds a year was settled on the minister. The society appointed the Rev. Mr. Bartow missionary here in the year 1702. Lord Cornbury, then Governor of the province, fixed Mr. Bartow's chief residence at Westchester. However, as there were several other places which wanted his assistance, he divided his labors among them, according to the society's directions. He often visited Eastchester, New Rochelle and Yonkers. He had good success in his mission, and wrote to the society in 1704: 'I have been now two years in actual service of my mission in this parish, and, by the blessing of God, have been instrumental in bringing many into the communion of our church, who are constant and devout in their attendance on divine worship. Those who were enemies at my first coming are now zealous professors of the ordinances of the gospel. The inhabitants of my parish live scattered and much dispersed, which occasions my duty to be the more



OLD ST. JOHN'S EPISCOPAL CHURCH AS BUILT IN 1752.

operation till 1683, the year in which Westchester County was erected. Included within this code were provisions to meet the religious wants of the people. Under these provisions, the English Church did more or less missionary work within our county. But no formal step was taken toward parish definition in the county till 1693. On the 24th of March in that year, the Colonial Legislature divided the county into the two parishes of Westchester and Rye, the former "to have the care of Westchester, Eastchester, Yonkers and the Manor of Pelham," and the latter "the care of Rye, Mamaroneck and Bedford." In each of these parishes, a parent church was at once formed. That of the Westchester parish was planted in the village of Westchester on the east side of the county, and was called St. Peter's. To the parish of St. Peter's, Yonkers was missionary ground till the year 1787, when on the 15th of September, 1784, the church was

difficult.' Mr. Bartow continued very industrious in his mission and well respected by the people. His cure was very large. The number of inhabitants at Westchester was about 550, at Eastchester, above 400, and at Yonkers, 250. He used to preach at Eastchester (which was now made a distinct parish and had built a church) once a month, where he had a large congregation. The people here were generally of the Presbyterian persuasion till Mr. Bartow came among them. But in the year 1703 they embraced the Church of England worship, and received him for their minister. There is no parsonage-house here, but there are twenty-three acres of glebe land given for the use of the Church of England minister forever. As often as he could he visited Yonkers. A large congregation, chiefly of Dutch people, came to hear him. There was no church built here, so they assembled for divine worship at the house of Mr. Joseph Bobite, and sometimes in a barn when empty. Mr. Bartow continued very diligent in the discharge of all the duties of his ministerial office. He gained over a great number to the church communion. He persuaded many grown persons who were negligent of all religion of the advantage of baptism, gave them baptism, and they became very sober members of the church. He instructed and baptized many negroes. He gained the general love and esteem of his people, and, after twenty-five years of laborious service in the church, died in 1728. The society have sent the Rev. Mr. Standard to succeed him, who is settled there."

through the liberality of the Philipse family. The second lord Philipse, taking possession of his manor here about 1719, cherished with liberality till his death in 1751, the missionary work of the parish of Westchester carried on between the Hudson and the Bronx. In his will, dated June 6, 1751, less than two months before he died, he devised in trust to his heirs a farm with residence and outbuildings for the use of ministers who might be called to labor here in the service of the Church of England, and directed that his executors should expend £400 from the rentals of his manor, in erecting on the farm a church building for the use of the people. The third lord, known as Colonel Philipse, carried out the will of his father so far as to set apart the farm devised for the use of the ministers, but with wise forecast himself donated, for the church building, the central and far more convenient site which St. John's Church has always occupied. This latter plot was originally somewhat larger than it now is. Its lines on Broadway and Hudson Streets remain unchanged. But it has been much reduced on the west by the opening of Riverdale Avenue, and somewhat increased on the north-west by the purchase of the lots on the southeast corner of Riverdale Avenue and Main Street. The first church building was erected in 1752-53.

All of that building that was combustible was burned in May, 1791, but was restored in the next year in its precise original outward form. It was consecrated on the 1st of August of the same year, by Right Rev. Samuel Provoost, D.D., first bishop of the State of New York. On the day of its consecration it first received the name of St. John's Church. At the rebuilding the interior was slightly modified. And as we have elsewhere stated, the steeple was rebuilt in 1804, by Mr. Ebenezer Baldwin, then of Norwich, Conn. But many more years passed away before necessity arose for the building's enlargement. In 1849 transepts were added and other and considerable improvements were made to meet the needs and tastes of a suddenly and rapidly incoming population. Later still, in 1870, the old building was nearly all demolished and the present elegant church was erected. The attachment of the people to their historic edifice, however, led them to retain and work into the new structure the old south wall, which still stands as it was put up in 1752, and shows the door by which the first church was originally entered. The views we furnish with this narrative give to our readers the appearance of each of the houses in which St. John's

congregation has worshipped from the beginning of its history to the present time.

The site of the original glebe is now centrally represented by the combined areas of St. John's and Oakland Cemeteries, elsewhere described in this work. The smaller cemetery, still called St. John's, is a development from the early, simple church burial ground. The site of the rectory and its out-buildings was near the Saw-Mill River Road. The rectory stood within the spot now occupied by the pretty grove of trees near the road and directly opposite the large carpet factory of Alexander Smith & Sons.

From the setting apart of the glebe till 1845, the church rectors lived upon it. At that time it was sold, of course for an amount which would now be deemed trifling, and with the proceeds of the sale the



ST. JOHN'S RECTORY AND GLEBE ON SAW MILL RIVER ROAD IN 1809.

present rectory within the church grounds was built. The only land now owned by St. John's Church is St. John's Cemetery and the square on which their church rectory and Sunday-school building stand. The Sunday-school building grew out of the later needs of the church. It was erected about 1860 and has proved a valuable accession to the facilities of the people for parish and church work.

At the period of the confiscation of the Manor or Philipsburgh (1785), special legislative action became necessary for the preservation to this church of the real estate it had received from the Philipse family. By two acts, respectively in 1786 and 1792, the New York Legislature first conveyed and then confirmed the property to it for ever. We have shown that the

land on the Saw-Mill River Road is set down in the proceedings of the time as consisting of one hundred and seven acres. It has been stated at two hundred and even at two hundred and fifty in various papers, but we think it was never more than one hundred and seven.

Down to 1828, St. John's was the only church on the west or Hudson River side of the town. Yonkers families, of whatever antecedents, worshipped in it. Its rectors officiated at all the funerals, performed all the marriage ceremonies and administered all the baptisms. Of course, therefore, among St. John's Church families have been many who have represented great solidity and strength, and several which, like the Philipse family, are now historic. Traditions of much interest are connected with the church. Its history, down to 1855, with many original documents of interest, is given with much fulness by Rev. Robert Bolton in his "Church in Westchester County," and the reader is referred to this for information beyond what we have given. We must not omit, however, to state that Yonkers remained missionary ground and part of the parish of Westchester for many years after the church was built in 1752. It was not erected into an independent parish till 1787. Consequently ministers who labored here before that date were not in the true sense rectors of this church, but simply missionaries. Nor must it be forgotten that the name St. John's does not go back of August 1st, 1792, the day of the consecration of the church rebuilt after the fire. We have quite a clear record of all ministers who ever officiated here either as missionaries or rectors

1. *Before the erection of the church in 1752—1753.* It is stated by Rev. Mr. Bolton (Church in Westchester County, p. 486) that a Rev. Warham Mather labored a short time on this ground. But the first minister of whom we have definite account was the Rev. John Bartow, and the next was the Rev. Thomas Standard. Both these were rectors of St. Peter's, the Westchester or parent church, and Yonkers was to them simply missionary ground. The former became rector of St. Peter's in 1702, and died in 1725 or 1726, and the latter was inducted in 1725 or 1726, and died in 1759 or 1760. It was during Mr. Standard's rectorship of St. Peter's, and missionary work here, that the first Yonkers church building was erected.

2. *Between the erection of the church and the setting off of the Yonkers parish in 1787,* the following ministers did work here.

Rev. John Milner, third rector of St. Peter's. Inducted in 1761, and resigned in 1765.

Rev. Harry Munro. Not a rector of St. Peter's, but set apart by the "Society for the Propagation of the Gospel" as a special missionary for the precinct of Yonkers, at that time still in the parish of Westchester. Received his license as a missionary in 1764, and resigned the charge of this precinct in 1768.

Rev. Luke Babcock. Another missionary set apart to this precinct by the same Society. Received his license in 1770, and died in the rectory here Feb. 10, 1777 in the thirty-ninth year of his age. A tablet to his memory, set in the wall of the church, gives the date of his birth as July 6, 1738, and calls him a "rector of this church." But the church at the time was a mission only.

Rev. George Panton. Another missionary appointed in 1777. Resigned in 1782. The period of Mr. Panton was that of the Revolutionary War. The difficulties in the way of the mission during this period were very great, and after the withdrawal of this missionary no further effort was made to supply his place till 1789 or 1790. Meanwhile, in 1787, the Yonkers precinct of the parish of Westchester was itself erected into an independent parish. Andrew Fowler, at the time a lay reader, but afterwards a minister, labored on this ground in 1786 after Mr. Panton had left, but under no church appointment as far as is now known.

3. Since the independent parish of Yonkers was erected, the church has had rectors as follows :

Rev. Elias Cooper,¹ born in Holland Jan. 5, 1758. Ordained deacon June 21, 1789. He had begun to labor in Yonkers in 1788 and was ordained priest June 11, 1790. Mr. Cooper was the first real "rector" of the Yonkers church, which received the name St. John's about three years after his settlement. He remained in the rectorship twenty-seven years, dying in it on the 16th of January 1816, aged 58 years and 11 months. The church contains a wall tablet to his memory. Mr. Cooper organized and taught a school during his pastorate. His school house is shown in our drawing of the rectory and glebe as they were in 1809. It stands immediately south of the rectory. He was really the originator of St. John's Church at Tuckahoe, which has had a church building from 1798. We shall speak of this further on.

Rev. William Powell.—Became rector in 1816. Resigned the rectorship Aug. 10, 1819.

Rev. John Grigg.—Rector from 1820—1823. Resigned.

Rev. John West.—Rector from 1823—1828. Resigned.

¹ Bolton (Church in Westchester Co., pp. 513 and 514) is in a difficulty over the history of Rev. Mr. Cooper, which we can believe. He was, as he states, a son of the Rev. Warmeldus Kuyppers. The latter however was not a Lutheran, but a Reformed Dutch minister, and he was born, not in Germany, as the writer p. 516 is "inclined to believe," but in Holland. The year of his birth was 1732, and he served in the ministry of the Reformed Dutch Church in this country at least from 1760 till his death in 1797. He preached at Schraalenburgh in Bergen Co., and it is said that his son Elias could, as he entered the door of his Yonkers church on a Sabbath, sometimes hear his father's church bell across the river. He had at least three sons besides Elias who became ministers and all served in the Reformed Church in this country. Viz., Rev. Gerardus Arende Kuyppers, b. at Curaçoa in 1766; Rev. Zechariah H. Kuyppers, b. at Rhinebeck, N. Y., in 1771; and Rev. William Provost Kuyppers, b. at Hackensack, N. J., in 1773. (See the invaluable "Manual of the Reformed Church in America," by Rev. E. Tanjore Corwin, D.D. Third Edition.)

Rev. Alexander H. Crosby.—Became rector in 1828, and served eleven years, dying in the rectorship Jan. 4, 1839, at 35 years of age. The church contains a wall tablet to his memory. He is remembered by many still in the congregation. Indeed he is still represented in it by his own descendants.

Rev. Smith Pyne.—Rector from 1839—1840. Resigned.

Rev. Henry Lemuel Storrs.—Born July 1, 1811. Became rector in 1841 and served eleven years, dying in the rectorship May 16, 1852. The church contains a wall tablet to his memory. During his period St. John's at Tuckahoe, which had before ranked as a chapel only, was consecrated. The new rectory within the church grounds was also built, and the enlargement of the church by the addition of transepts took place.

Rev. Abraham Beach Carter, D.D.—Became rector June 12, 1852, and served about sixteen and a half years, resigning December 1868. He left Yonkers for New York City, where he labored for several years. He is now rector of St. John's, Dubuque, Iowa.

Rev. Thomas A. Jaggar, D.D.—Became rector in 1869, and resigned in 1870 to assume a rectorship in Philadelphia. He has been now for many years Bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church for the Southern Diocese of Ohio.

Rev. William S. Langford, D.D.—Became rector in 1870, and resigned in July 1875, to take the charge of St. John's, Elizabeth, N. J. He now lives in New York City and is General Secretary of Domestic and Foreign Missions in the Episcopal Church.

Rev. Addison B. Atkins, D.D.—Rector from Dec. 1, 1875 to May 1879. Resigned. Is now rector at Conshohocken, Pa.

Rev. James Haughton, now in charge. Became rector Oct. 1, 1879. Was born in Boston, educated at Harvard College, in Andover Theological Seminary, and at Erlangen, Germany. Was ten years missionary in Exeter and in Hanover, N. H., and three years Dean of All Saints' Cathedral in Albany, N. Y., before coming to Yonkers. Besides accomplishing excellent pulpit and pastoral work, Mr. Haughton has been successful in reducing a church debt of \$60,000 to \$49,000, and also in bringing down the interest on what remains, so that its burden is less felt by the people. The officers of this church are:

Wardens, Silvanus Mayo, Walter H. Paddock.

Vestrymen, William F. Cochran, William F. Lawrence, Edgar Logan, Stephen H. Thayer. John Penreath, William M. Morgan, Frederick Von Storch, William H. Fisher.

The prominent membership of St. John's church is effectively organized for various forms of parish and outside work. Among the institutions of Yonkers is St. John's Riverside Hospital. This has enlisted the sympathy and care of St. John's people. But they are always doing a large amount of good in

less observed ways, through their teaching force and their charities. They have done much for the German population, though perhaps much of their work in this direction, if not all of it, has now been given over to Christ Church and its rector, Rev. Mr. Ullmann, a native German, who has been till recently, assistant minister of St. John's, and has for a long time done the German work. And finally, the ladies of St. John's have been very active among the poor and the children, thus helping to meet a pervading need of the city, which calls for all the resources of all its



ST. JOHN'S EPISCOPAL CHURCH AND RECTORY, 1886.

churches and societies, and of its appropriate public funds besides for its supply.

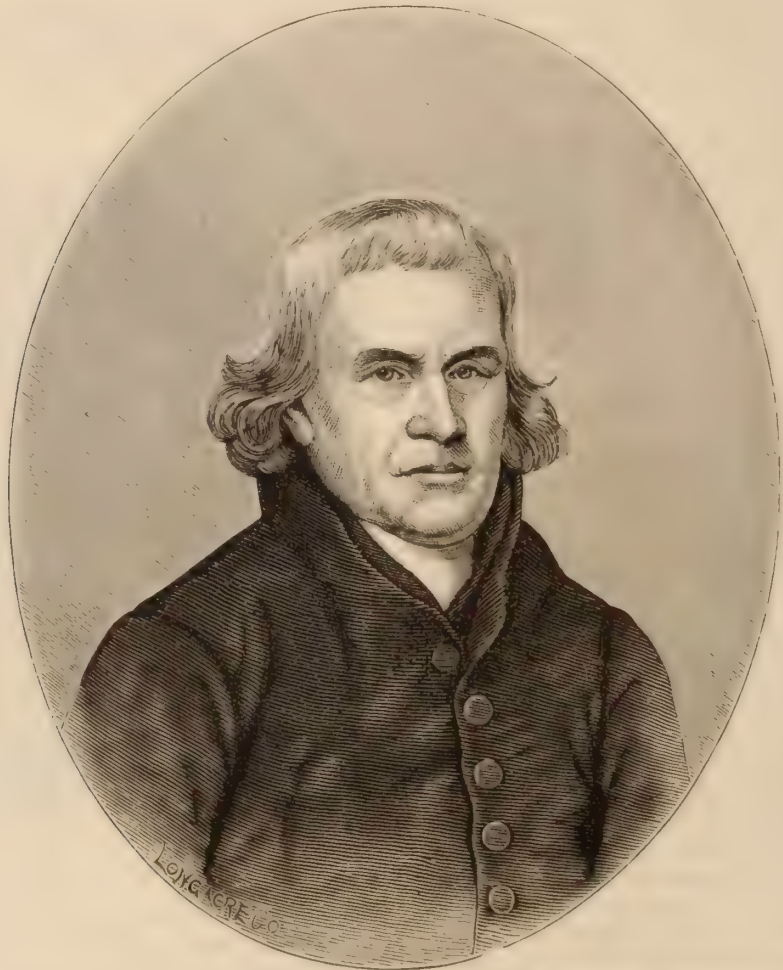
THE OTHER CHURCHES AND THE MISSIONS.—Having given so full an account of the oldest church in the city, we shall now follow with the histories of the other churches, all but two of which originated within the present century. We first give a list of them in the order of their dates of organization, without reference to denominations, and then treat them under the headings of their various denominations, arranging these respectively in the order of their oldest churches.

The list of the churches younger than St. John's, on Broadway, in order of their organization, is as follows:

First Methodist Episcopal of Yonkers (at Tuckahoe)	1797
St. John's Episcopal (at Tuckahoe) not a parish till 1853, but its house built in	1798
Methodist Episcopal, on North Broadway	1828
Reformed, on South Broadway	1843
St. Mary's Roman Catholic, on St. Mary Street	1848
Warburton Avenue Baptist, formerly Mount Olivet Baptist	1849
First Presbyterian, on North Broadway	1852
Westminster Presbyterian, on Warburton Avenue	1858
St. Paul's Episcopal, on North Broadway	1858
Hope Unitarian, on North Broadway	1858
Central Methodist Episcopal, on Hudson Street	1870
African Methodist Episcopal Zion, on New Main Street	1871
St. Joseph's Roman Catholic, on St. Joseph Avenue	1871

Arranged in the order of their oldest churches, the denominations are represented in the city as follows :

1. THE METHODIST EPISCOPAL. *First Methodist Episcopal of Yonkers (at Tuckahoe).*—In the chronological list of the individual churches furnished above, we have given this church as dating from 1797. It is right, however, to preface its history with a preliminary statement given to us by Rev. William E. Ketcham, late pastor of the Methodist Church on Broadway (See next article). Having studied records carefully, he writes :



BISHOP FRANCIS ASBURY, OF THE METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.

Christ Protestant Episcopal, on Nepperhan Avenue	1872
St. John's German Evangelical Lutheran, on Hudson Street	1873
Messiah Baptist (Colored), on North Broadway	1874
Dayspring Presbyterian, Walnut Street and Oliver Avenue	1879
German Methodist Episcopal, New Main Street	1880

Besides these, there are three chapels and a mission, of which the Nepperhan Avenue Baptist Chapel and the Ludlow St. Reformed Chapel will be considered with their churches, and the Wood Hill Union Chapel and the Mile Square Union Sunday-school, not connected with churches, will be considered separately.

“The time of the introduction of Methodism into Yonkers cannot be definitely stated. The Rev. Francis Asbury preached in Tuckahoe, however, and a Methodist society was formed there in 1771, the same year in which Methodism was introduced into New Rochelle by Rev. Joseph Pilmoor, one of Rev. John Wesley's missionaries. In 1773, Mr. Peter Bonnett was active in securing preaching places, and had opened his own house for the Methodists. After his death, the widow Sherwood's house became the

preaching place. It stood on the site of the present residence of Mr. Charles R. Dusenberry. In July, 1797, Bishop Asbury writes,—‘I met the society at the substitute house (the widow Sherwood’s). * * * Thus, after twenty-six years since this society was formed, they are about to build a place for the worship and the word of God.’ That church (Tuckahoe) was dedicated Christmas Day, 1797, by Bishop Asbury. He being too feeble to walk, was carried in a chair from Mrs. Sherwood’s to the church, and performed the ceremony seated in a chair.”

To this introductory statement, we are able to add the following information from the venerable Stephen Barker, a prominent officer of that church, who has been so long identified with it as to know its history thoroughly.

In 1797 Bishop Asbury was providentially compelled to stop at the house of Bishop Sherwood, who lived where Mr. Jacob Merritt now lives, near the present church. Bishop Sherwood’s mother was one of the first Methodists of the Tuckahoe region. Her sons, Moses, Bishop and Jonathan were all Methodists and among the founders of the church soon afterward built. There was preaching in her house by the Rev. Barnabas Matthias during Bishop Asbury’s stay at Bishop Sherwood’s

in 1797. The Tuckahoe Church was organized immediately afterwards. Moses Sherwood at once deeded ground for a church for the consideration of twenty-five dollars, and the house was promptly erected. Rev. Mr. Ketcham has told us above that it was dedicated on Christmas Day, 1797, and has given a very touching circumstance that marked the occasion. The church was really organized at the time, but was never legally incorporated till February 13, 1855. The deed for the ground and the papers of incorporation are still in hand. The church, from its inception in 1797, called itself “The First Methodist Episcopal Church of Yonkers,” and this name is embodied in the legal papers named.¹

¹The following interesting extract from “Bangs’ History of the

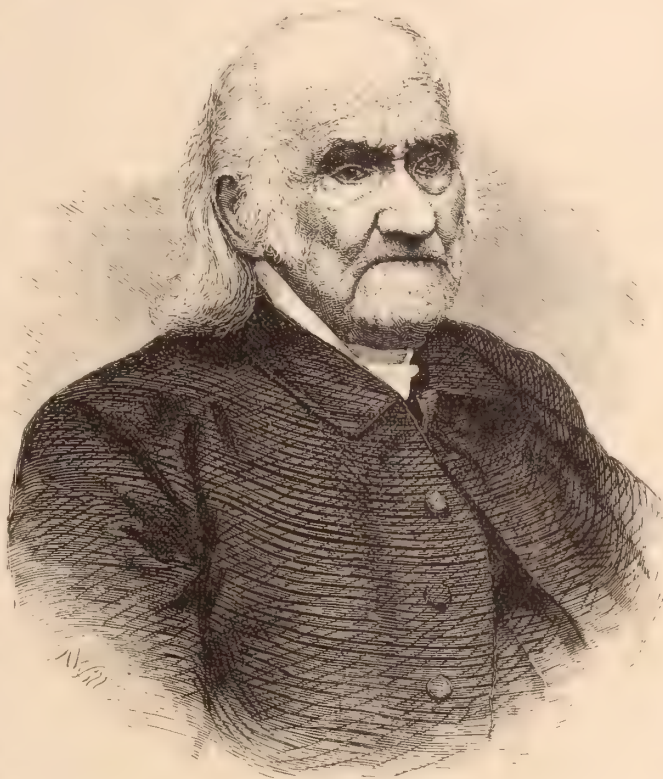
The first Trustees were elected December 25, 1800, as the minutes show. They were—First Class, Lewis Dubois and Henry Cronck,—Second Class, Jonathan Sherwood and Bishop Sherwood,—Third Class, Aaron Lawrence and Jabez Fowler. There is no further minute on the book till December 25, 1818, when the election is recorded of Peter Underhill and Jonathan Sherwood as Trustees to fill vacancies. From this date the minutes have been preserved.

The relations of this church and of Methodist Churches hereabout till 1858, are made clear by Rev. Mr. Ketcham in our later article from him upon his own church. It was with what was called the New

Rochelle circuit from 1798 to 1825. Then from 1826 to 1852, it was with a circuit which from 1826 to 1836 bore the name of the Kingsbridge Circuit, and from 1836 to 1852 the name of the Yonkers Circuit. Between the last two dates, the churches of Kingsbridge (or Mosholu), Yonkers (on Broadway) and Tuckahoe were joined together, but between 1853 and 1858 Yonkers was dropped from this connection, and Mosholu and Tuckahoe were left by themselves. In 1858 Tuckahoe was made a separate station. From that date, the preachers for Tuckahoe till 1867, when the present church edifice was built, were:

Rev. Nathaniel Mead, 1858–59; Rev. W. H. Evans, 1859–60; Rev. A. M. Hough, 1860–62; Rev. Aaron K. Sandford, 1862–64; Rev. Erastus L. Prentice,

Methodist Episcopal Church” (vol. ii. p. 60, edition 1839), is here given to explain the cause of Bishop Asbury’s tarry with Mr. Bishop Sherwood, in 1797. From the valley of the Cumberland (where he had exhausted himself with overwork) he was on his way northward to attend a conference at Wilbraham, Mass. On the way he was seized with a fever. The passage says: “The fever increasing, he was obliged to stop at Tuckahoe, at the house of Bishop Sherwood, where he was treated with great kindness. While there, he makes the following reflections: ‘The kindness of the Sherwood family is great, . . . If I had not been at home here, what additional distress of mind would have attended me! My friends, also, were welcome to come and see me on the Sabbath Day, at the widow Sherwood’s. I had the pleasure of hearing our dear brother Matthias make a pointed, profitable, and powerful discourse. It is now eight weeks since I have preached.’”



REV. HENRY BOEHM.

1864-67. From 1828 to 1858, the preachers had been mostly the same to be mentioned with the next article, the church being in connections as above noted.

Rev. Mr. Prentice (the last named of these ministers) brought about the building of the present marble church. The property is considered worth about twenty thousand dollars. The cost of it to the congregation, however, was comparatively light, as the marble was given in a neighboring quarry, and the people made their contributions largely in labor and work. And yet it is a very valuable possession. It drew from Bishop Edmund S. Janes, at its dedication, the exclamation, "It is a beauty." The corner stone had been laid by him in September, 1866, and he also dedicated the house on the 20th of February, 1867. At the laying of the corner stone, Father Henry Boehm, who had been one of the former travelling companions of Bishop Asbury, was present, being at the time ninety years of age. He lived on, after this, to reach more than a hundred years.

The preachers from the date of dedication have been: Rev. Gideon Draper, D.D., Rev. S. M. Vernon, Rev. John W. Ackerly, Rev. Oscar Haviland, Rev. Benjamin N. Lewis, Rev. George W. Terbush, Rev. John W. Selleck, Rev. Frank Bottome, D.D.

The present pastor is the Rev. David McCartney, who is serving the church with great acceptance. The church has a parsonage near the Rail Road Station, built by the Rev. Nathaniel Mead in 1858.

The Sunday School numbers about seventy pupils and seventeen officers and teachers. The Superintendent is Isaac V. Underhill.

The church has about eighty members. The present officers are:

Trustees: Nathaniel Reynolds, Isaac V. Underhill, James S. Young, Caleb F. Underhill (President), George Ferris, Elisha Patrick and Stephen Barker.

Stewards: Frank De Grate, Charles A. Hodgman, Nathaniel Reynolds, Caleb F. Underhill, Isaac V. Underhill, James S. Young and Stephen Barker.

The money collected during the last reported year for all objects was seventeen hundred dollars, of which one thousand dollars was paid to the pastor, three hundred dollars to Missions, Domestic and Foreign, thirty-five dollars to the Presiding Elder, eighty-six dollars to superannuated preachers, thirty dollars to the poor, and the rest to church institutions and current expenses.

The oldest stone in the grave-yard bears the date 1800. The yard has been the burying-ground of the surrounding country. The Sherwood and many other families are buried in it. It is now almost filled with graves.

Methodist Episcopal, on North Broadway, at the corner of Ashburton Avenue. This church is, in the order of time, the second Methodist Episcopal Church founded within the limits of the present city of Yonkers. Our history of it is mostly from its late pastor, the Rev. Wm. E. Ketcham. It has been

popularly called "The First Methodist Episcopal Church of Yonkers, N. Y." That it is not "The First" however, has been shown. But there were several reasons for the contrary impression. The Hudson River side of the town of Yonkers, in which both churches are located, has been more distinctively known as Yonkers, while the east side, at the point where the real First Methodist Church of Yonkers is, has been more distinctively known as Tuckahoe. Its post-office is called Tuckahoe. Then too, in the minutes of the New York Conference, the two churches have been spoken of, not by their corporate names, but as the Tuckahoe and Yonkers Churches. And again, when the Central Methodist Episcopal Church on Hudson Street was organized (see next article), it became natural at once to call the Broadway Church "The First Methodist," for distinction. These names will probably hold with the people. But the church we are now describing is, really, "The Second Methodist Episcopal Church" of the city.

The Revs. Francis Asbury, Thomas Ware and Freeborn Garrettson preached in nearly every adjacent neighborhood in 1771, 1772, 1786 and 1788, and it is highly probable that some one of these preachers, or some itinerant from the early New Rochelle circuit, which in 1787, was the only circuit in Westchester County, occasionally preached here. There was certainly no *regular* Methodist preaching on the Hudson River side of the town till after 1824. The first sermon now remembered as heard hereabout from a Methodist preacher was delivered in the little school-house elsewhere described as standing at the northeast corner of North Broadway and Ashburton Avenue. A class of five members was organized. In due time this became one of the regular appointments on the Kingsbridge Circuit. This was in 1826. The beginning thus made soon led to the calling of a quarterly meeting. At this meeting which was largely attended, a Methodist love-feast was held in the school-house and a sermon was preached under the trees outside.

On the 21st of April, 1828, Mr. Lemuel Wells gave a deed of the land upon which the church still stands, to Alfred Thompson, Joseph Oakley, Frederic Shonnard, Thomas Griffin and David Oakley, in trust, for the Methodist Episcopal Church. During the following autumn the church was dedicated. That silver-tongued orator, Rev. Noah Levings preached the dedicatory sermon.

On the 14th of August, 1839, Frederic Shonnard and his wife, "for the love and affection which they bore toward said church and one dollar," deeded to Christ Methodist Episcopal Church—the original corporate name—the plot of ground used for the parsonage. The parsonage here meant still stands on the rear of the lot, but is designated as "the old parsonage," a new one having been built in 1871. The new parsonage cost five thousand dollars.

The first house of worship has just been taken down, and the people are about to build a beautiful church edifice, to be finished during this year, 1886.¹ The late house, erected in 1828, first faced the south, the road from Mile Square then running in front of it. It was originally small and had a small gallery and a plain pulpit. In 1854 the building was turned around so as to face Port Road. At the same time it was lengthened, and widened at the pulpit end, by the addition of wings. The interior was also rearranged and beautified, and the basement was fitted up for a Sunday-School room. The building was cosy and comfortable in the interior. The pulpit had a painting behind it representing archways and a recess. It could accommodate about four hundred people. One of its wings was used for seating. The other was at one time occupied by the organ and choir. They were afterwards removed to the gallery. The building had long been wholly inadequate for the needs of the people, and general joy is felt, both by the congregation and all Yonkers people, over the new church now assured. The plans for the latter involve a probable expenditure of about thirty-five thousand dollars. The building will occupy the same site so long occupied by the first house.

The Sunday School of this church is large. There are now on its roll three hundred and six scholars and forty teachers. The superintendent is Mr. Abram Austin. The school has a department of Chinamen. Their number at present is thirty. Two of these, Fred Coon and Lau Hing Jone, are members of the church. The Chinamen are taught by members during the week. Their department is regarded by the church as an important missionary feature. The church has at present three hundred and fifty members and fifty probationers. The congregations are well sustained from year to year.

The officers and committees of the church are as follows:—

Pastor, Rev. Abraham T. Palmer, D.D., No. 156 North Broadway.
Resident Bishop, Wm. L. Harris, D.D., LL.D., 805 Broadway, New York.
Presiding Elder, Rev. G. H. Gregory, D.D., 75 East 111th Street, New York.

TRUSTEES.

M. H. Smith, president; John C. Havemeyer, vice-president; Charles R. Leffingwell, secretary and treasurer, S. Francis Quick, John E. Andrus, Benj. S. Washburn, James B. Odell, John Sherwood.

TRUSTEES COMMITTEES.

(Appointed by M. H. Smith, president, for 1886—1887.)

Church: S. F. Quick, C. R. Leffingwell, J. C. Havemeyer.
Finance: Charles R. Leffingwell, John E. Andrus, S. F. Quick.
Repairs and Supplies: J. B. Odell, John Sherwood, B. S. Washburn.

STEWARDS.

(Elected by Quarterly Conference. April, 1886, to April, 1887.)

J. C. Havemeyer, M. H. Smith, J. S. Vincent, Abram Austin, C. R. Leffingwell, John Embree, B. A. Starr, E. M. Hermance, William Jones, Frank Connelly. District Steward, J. C. Havemeyer; Alternate, C. R. Leffingwell; Recording Steward, Abram Austin.
Chorister and organist, Frederick E. Hubbell; sexton, George Senior.

QUARTERLY CONFERENCE COMMITTEES.

Missions: C. R. Leffingwell, J. C. Havemeyer.
Sabbath Schools: J. S. Vincent, M. H. Smith, J. C. Havemeyer.
Tracts: Wiltsey Austin, H. N. Palmetier, John Cummings.
Church Extension: B. S. Washburn, W. Jones, John Embree.
Parsonage and Furniture: S. F. Quick, C. R. Leffingwell.
Temperance: F. Connelly, J. S. Vincent, J. B. Odell.
Education: A. Austin, W. B. Sing.
Church Records, M. H. Smith, A. Austin.
Conference Claimants: S. F. Quick, A. Austin, E. M. Hermance.
Bible: John W. Oliver, J. Sherwood, J. L. Platt.
Preacher's Salary: M. H. Smith, S. F. Quick, J. C. Havemeyer.

CLASS LEADERS.

W. L. Walters; assistant, T. Billings.
A. Austin.
Wm. Jones; assistant, H. N. Palmetier.

The church has an efficient Ladies' Aid Society and Young People's Association. Its Sabbath-school Missionary Society gathers much money for missionary work. The church finances are well managed. A statement of the prospective demands for the year is sent to all members and contributors, and the money is collected chiefly by the envelope system in weekly payments. The income and disbursements for the year ending April 1, 1885, amounted to \$3,600. The missionary collection last year amounted to \$346.76.

The Rev. William E. Ketcham, the last pastor, whose efficient work prepared the way for the building of the new church, is a native of New York City, was trained first in the City Institute and subsequently at Amenia Seminary, then under the presidency of Rev. Cyrus D. (now Bishop) Foss. Before entering upon his theological studies, he was a clerk in a large mercantile establishment in the city. He joined the New York Conference in 1858, and was appointed to New Windsor Circuit, Orange County, N. Y. Subsequently he devoted four years to missionary work in New York by Conference appointment and under the direction of the City Church Extension and Missionary Society. He had been stationed at Mount Kisco before receiving his appointment to this church, which was given in April, 1883. He was much beloved by his people as a pastor and friend, and highly regarded in Yonkers as a minister and citizen. He obtained upwards of \$30,000 in pledges towards the enterprise. The successive pastors from the beginning of the church have been as follows:—

1828, Rev. E. Hibbard; 1829-30, Rev. R. Seaman; 1831-32, Rev. E. Hibbard; 1833-34, Rev. E. Smith; 1835, Rev. T. Evans; 1836-37, Rev. E. Oldron and J. D. Bangs; 1838, Rev. J. Davies; 1839, Rev. H. Hatfield; 1840, Rev. Thomas Burch; 1841, Rev. D. I. Wright; 1842-43, Rev. John A. Selleck; 1844-45, Rev. J. C. Green; 1846-47, Rev. C. C. Keys; 1848-49, Rev. Salmon C. Perry; 1850-51, Rev. Paul R. Brown; 1852, Rev. P. L. Hoyt; 1853, Rev. P. L. Sanford; 1854, Rev. George Brown; 1855-56, Rev. J. B. Hagany; 1857-58, Rev. P. Ward; 1859-60, Rev. L. H. King, D.D.; 1861-62, Rev. Edwin R. Keyes; 1863-65, Rev. Joseph B. Wakeley; 1866, Rev. L. H. King, D.D.; 1866-69, Rev. Morris D'C. Crawford, D.D.; 1870-71, Rev. Frank Bottome, D.D.; 1872-74, Rev. R. M. Stratton, D.D.; 1875-77, Rev. F. Hamlin; 1878-79, Rev. L. H. King, D.D.; 1880-82, Rev. Delos Lull; 1883 to 1886, Rev. William E. Ketcham; 1886, Rev. Abraham J. Palmer, D.D.

Central Methodist Episcopal on Hudson Street. On the 23d of September, 1870, William Jackson, John Embree, John C. Campbell, Searing Howell, Orange

¹ The last service in the old church was held on the evening of June 6, 1886. The house was crowded and the sermon was preached by the Rev. Lucius H. King, D.D.

Webster, Reuben Barnes, Sylvanus Cokalet and C. F. Moulton held a meeting at the house of William Jackson on Riverdale Avenue and resolved that it was expedient to form a Methodist Society and provide a temporary place of worship in the South part of Yonkers and that the services of a Methodist preacher should be secured for effecting that purpose.

A committee appointed on a place of worship procured the Hall over the Yonkers Savings Bank at \$600 a year. The society furnished the hall at an expense of \$400. Presiding Elder Ferris was asked to give his approval of the organization and to appoint the Rev. George W. Lord, pastor. He did so, and soon after the details of the organization were perfected.

Prayer meetings were held frequently at private houses, and the first service in the new place of worship was a prayer meeting on Thursday evening, October 20, 1870. The first Sabbath service was held on the 23d. The Rev. E. A. Hill preached in the morning and the Rev. Mr. Andrus in the evening. The hall holding 200, was well filled both times. The following Sabbath, Mr. Lord began his ministrations.

The Sabbath-school was organized on the first Sabbath, Mr. C. E. Moulton being elected superintendent.

At Rev. Mr. Lord's first service, he received the names of twelve members of the North Broadway Methodist Church. Rev. Dr. Bottomc, pastor of that church, readily granted letters of dismission to these members, and from them as a nucleus "The Central Methodist Church of Yonkers" has grown.

On the 14th of September, William Jackson, Charles R. Brush, Reuben Barnes, Orange Webster, John Embree, John C. Campbell, Joseph L. Proseus, Searing Howell and Sylvanus Cokalet were elected trustees of the church. William Jackson was chosen president of the board; Charles R. Brush, secretary; and Reuben Barnes, treasurer. And Mr. Lord appointed the following stewards, viz: Joseph Hughes, John Carpenter, John Forsyth, Obadiah Eddy, John Platt, J. C. Burnett, J. W. Bynon, J. B. Thompson and M. R. Oakley.

A spirited revival set in at once, and fifty-eight probationers were received before the spring. In less than six months, the membership including probationers, rose to one hundred and forty-four.

A very handsome communion service was presented to the church by Mr. William H. Veitch, early in the winter.

The congregation increased so rapidly that the hall soon became too small, and Getty's Hall (later known as Grand Army Hall), just south of the Yonkers Savings-Bank was rented. Several efforts were made by the society to obtain a site for a church building. In September, 1871, the present site on Hudson Street was bought. The lot is seventy-five by one hundred and twenty, and its cost was seven thousand dollars. Richard Jones, of Brooklyn, architect, was employed

to draw plans for a building, and when the committee was ready to build, the contract for the mason work was awarded to John C. Campbell & Son for thirteen thousand nine hundred dollars, and that for the carpenter work to D. & M. Oakley for fifteen thousand dollars, making the entire cost twenty-eight thousand nine hundred dollars. The church was completed in 1873, and dedicated in July of that year. A subscription was taken at the dedication service, amounting to thirteen thousand dollars. The financial panic of that year, however, was the occasion of much of the money thus subscribed being lost.

Rev. Frederick S. Barnum succeeded Rev. Mr. Lord in 1872, and Mr. Barnum was followed by Rev. A. H. Ferguson in 1874. Rev. Mr. Ferguson's pastorate was a pleasant success. It began with a bonded debt of fifteen thousand dollars and a floating debt of eleven thousand five hundred dollars. There were no special revivals during this pastorate, but the church was in a healthy spiritual state. The current expenses were met, and nine thousand dollars of the interest paying debt was removed.

The Rev. Ezra Tinker followed Rev. Mr. Ferguson in 1877, but remained one year only. During this year, a revival, conducted by Rev. E. P. Hammond the Evangelist, resulted in much spiritual stimulus to the church. Mr. Tinker was followed in 1878 by Rev. Alexander McLean. At this time, the Mutual Life Insurance Company, of New York City, which held a mortgage of twelve thousand dollars on this church, threatened foreclosure. This produced such a feeling that the church trustees resigned in a body, by the advice of the pastor. After complimentary resolutions, recognizing their fidelity, had been passed by the congregation, a new board was elected, containing some new members, and better feeling began to prevail. During Rev. Mr. McLean's pastorate, three revivals occurred, over seven thousand dollars of indebtedness vanished, a strip of land, twelve by seventy-five feet, in the rear of the church lot was purchased, the current expenses were met and the floating debt was paid. The success of this pastorate ending in 1881, was very great to the beloved pastor and to the struggling church. While it was passing, at the celebration of the tenth anniversary of the organization, one thousand dollars were raised in cash and subscriptions.

The session of the New York Conference for 1881 was held in this church, and at its close Rev. P. R. Hawkshurst was appointed its pastor. Financial affairs were easier during this pastorate, and there were several revivals of religion, which brought considerable addition to the communion.

In 1884 the Rev. Lucius H. King, D.D., became pastor, but after one year resigned on account of ill-health. The church at the beginning of 1884 had two hundred and fifty-two members and forty probationers. Its indebtedness was twelve thousand dollars and the value of its property forty thousand dollars.

Its Sunday-school had on its roll two hundred and forty-one scholars, and twenty-seven officers and teachers. Solomon D. Oakley was its acting Superintendent.

Since April, 1885, the Rev. Charles W. Millard has been the pastor. At his coming, valuable improvements were made within the church building, the most important of which were those at the pulpit end of the auditorium. The platform was brought further forward and a valuable organ, one of the most useful, as well as ornamental additions to the furniture, was built behind it. The character and address of the new pastor, and his success so far are pledges of a prosperous pastorate.

The present Trustees are Reuben Barnes, President; John Forsyth, Marvin Oakley, A. S. Radcliff, A. W. Serrell, Hiram Barnes, S. L. Cooper, John Harriman, J. W. Goodile, Treas., and the Stewards are, Thomas Caddoo, David L. Oakley, S. C. Van Tassel, B. G. Berrian, J. J. Relyea, J. W. Bynon, John Stilwell, William J. Webb, leaving two vacancies to be filled. The church is a plain brick structure with an auditorium seating about five hundred persons.

African Methodist Episcopal Zion, on New Main street. This church was organized in May, 1871, by the Rev. Jacob Thomas, of New York City. It began with ten members, and William Griffin, chairman; James Lawson, Madison Milford, Frank Moultrie, Isaac Peake, Albert Skinner, and Harrison Ward as Trustees. For the church uses, they rented Townsend Hall, number 50 North Broadway, and kept it for two years. The Rev. Isaac Jenkins was the first pastor. He was zealous, and under his pastorate the church prospered. The Rev. Adam Jackson succeeded. During his time there were revivals of power. The membership increased to forty and the Sunday school flourished. In 1875, the Rev. George E. Jackson became pastor. At this time services were held in Rooney's Hall. He remained two years. Under him the membership steadily increased, the Sunday school flourished, and the Hooper school building was leased with a view of purchasing it after a time. In 1877 the Rev. T. Davis became pastor, but remained six weeks only. He was succeeded by the Rev. J. C. Dodge, of Binghampton, N. Y., who continued about a year. The interest now seemed to wane. The Rev. E. J. Miller came next and did well for two years. He was succeeded by the Rev. William Dorsey, brought over from the New England Conference, who was pastor a year and five months. Some trouble arising over his domestic affairs, he was superseded by the Rev. J. A. Evans, of Newburg. Under his pastorate the Society partly recovered, but remained financially straitened. In March, 1883, the Rev. Geo. E. Jackson, the present pastor, was recalled. During his time a new church for the Society has been erected on New Main street. It was dedicated on the 12th of April, 1885. Prominent gentlemen of the First Presbyterian Church of Yonkers have so interested themselves in the success of this church, that at a

"Harvest Home" held by the people on Tuesday evening, the 27th of October, 1885, their property was announced to be without debt. At the dedication service, the Rev. John Reid, of the First Presbyterian church, preached the sermon to a crowded house. The church is now a decided success.

German Methodist Episcopal on New Main Street.—A mission was started among the Germans of Yonkers by a number of German Methodists in August, 1880, the meetings being held in the hall of the Women's Christian Temperance Union, next to the Yonkers Savings Bank on South Broadway. The building has since been removed. The first effort was to start a Sunday-school. It began with five teachers and four scholars. Mr. John Kopp was chosen superintendent and holds the position still.

Three or four weeks later the attempt was made to begin church services. The first sermon was heard by but three auditors, Mrs. Augusta Krahn and Mr. and Mrs. Henry H. Kroenke. The minister was the Rev. John J. Mesmer, who then had charges in Mount Vernon and New Rochelle. He was a Swiss, and had received his education in Germany.

From this tryingly small beginning a little society of German Methodists has sprung up. It is now in an encouraging condition. The number of members is sixteen, and the average attendance about fifty or sixty. The place of meeting has been changed to Humboldt Hall, on New Main Street. The Sunday-school now numbers about eighty scholars and has fourteen teachers.

The ministers of the church have been as follows, viz.: 1880-81, Rev. John J. Mesmer; 1881-82, Rev. Ernst Hartmann; 1882-83, Rev. Charles Brodmeier; 1883-86, Rev. Henry Miller; 1886, Rev. George Henry Gieger.

The church was incorporated in 1882 and the first trustees were J. William Bauer, Henry Bauer, Henry Kronke, Jacob Genzlinger and Sida H. Wicht. The present Trustees are the same, except that Otto Schulz is in the place of Henry Kroenke. This congregation has an interesting Swedish service every week. It is attended by about thirty Swedes. The congregation has bought a lot for a church, and will re-erect upon it the demolished First Methodist Church building, which they have received as a gift.

THE PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL—St. John's Protestant Episcopal at Tuckahoe.—We have our account of this mostly from Mr. Charles R. Dusenberry. It has been said that the Rev. Elias Cooper, rector of St. John's on Broadway from 1789 to 1816, started this church. It was not, however, an independent parish till 1853. But its building was erected in 1798 as a Mission Chapel of the earlier St. John's. The ground and house were the gift of Mr. John Bowne, a gentleman of English descent and the owner of an estate in the vicinity. The building was not consecrated till 1847, after the addition of a small vestry room to it. In 1853 the parish was

erected. In 1867 a chancel was added, and since that it has undergone still further repairs, additions and decorations. It has at present no rector. The vicinity is so sparsely settled that the church has scarcely an opportunity yet to grow, but no doubt this will be much changed in the future. The ministers have been,—

Rev. Charles Jones, really rector from 1853-58; Rev. Augustus St. Clair, supply only, from 1859-60; Rev. David Doremus, supply only, from 1860-61; No incumbent from 1861-65; Rev. Angus M. Ives, supply only, from 1865-80; Rev. Samuel B. Moore, really rector from 1881-84.

The Rev. Angus M. Ives, though never really its rector, yet served the church with great faithfulness for fifteen years and died at his post. He was a very sincere, excellent and solid man, whose ministry was thoroughly respected and is tenderly remembered by the people. A wall tablet to his memory is erected in the church.

The latest issued statistics of the church, those of 1883, were as follows:—Communicants, 55; Catechists and Sunday school teachers, 6; Sunday school children, 34. The money contributed during the preceding year had been \$1125.50, of which one thousand dollars had been devoted to parish purposes.

The building is a small structure with its sides shingled. It is very pleasant inside. It stands on a high summit, from which an extensive view is commanded. The lot around it is used as a burial ground and contains many graves, among which those of the founders of the church and their descendants are prominent.

The officers of the church for 1885 and 1886 are:

Wardens.—Senior, Charles R. Dusenberry; Junior, William H. Underhill.

Vestrymen.—Samuel M. Raisbeck, Wilbur S. Underhill, Samuel B. Jones, Samuel S. Horton, William J. Fee, Robert S. Johnson, Richard M. Thompson, Thomas Dunn.

St. Paul's Protestant Episcopal, on North Broadway.—Our history is substantially from Rev. William H. Mills, D. D., its present Rector. The Young Men's Missionary Associations of St. John's Parish, early in the summer of 1858, prepared a room in Mechanic (now New Main) street, for holding mission services. About the same time the Rev. Darius R. Brewer, Rector of Emanuel Parish, Newport, R. I., while visiting relatives in Yonkers, was invited to take charge of the mission. After due consideration he consented, and entered on his charge on the first Sabbath in September.

The mission was so successful as to awaken a desire for the organization of a parish. The Rev. Dr. Carter, Rector of St. John's, cordially gave his canonical consent to the step. Accordingly on the 15th of December, 1858, a new parish was legally incorporated under the title of "The Rector, Wardens, and

Vestry of St. Paul's Church." The following gentlemen were elected wardens and vestrymen: Senior Warden, Henry Anstice; Junior Warden, J. Foster Jenkins, M. D. Vestrymen—E. W. Candee, S. Emmett Getty, Thomas F. Morris, William Beal, Edward Martin, Thomas Furniss, Thomas W. Bird-sall, R. W. Nisbett. None of these gentlemen are now connected with the parish. Dr. Jenkins, who died in October, 1882, was for some years the last remaining. He continued to his death firmly attached to the parish, and gave himself earnestly to its interests with his wise counsel, his self-sacrificing labors, his generous giving, and his pure Christian life. His name is honored in the parish, and his memory is blessed.

In the Spring of 1859, the Getty Lyceum Hall, now a part of the Getty House, was obtained for the better accommodation of the people. In the autumn of the same year, further removal was made to Farrington Hall, which was afterwards destroyed by fire, and replaced by the Radford building. A permanent location for the parish church was purchased the same year on North Broadway, near Ashburton avenue. Messrs. R. Upjohn & Co., architects, were engaged to furnish plans for a church edifice.

On the 16th of April, 1859, less than one year after the organization of the parish, the corner-stone of St. Paul's church was laid by Bishop Potter, according to the usual forms of the Diocese. The Rev. Dr. Tyng, Rector of St. George's, in New York City, the Rev. Dr. Carter, Rector of St. John's, of Yonkers, and the Rev. Mr. Brewer, made addresses.

The foundation of the building was put up by Hugh Curran. The mason work was done by Daniel Blauvelt, and the carpenter work by the firm of Ackert & Quick.

The church was opened for worship on Easter Day, April 8, 1860. The consecration was necessarily postponed until the building should be free from debt. The Rev. Mr. Brewer was invested with the office of Rector of the parish, on Sabbath, April 22d, by Bishop Clark, of Rhode Island.

The order for the burial of the dead was first used in the church on the first day of June, 1860, when the remains of Ellen G. Brewer, the rector's little daughter, not quite three years of age, were taken into the house, to be borne from it shortly afterwards to the narrow house appointed for all living.

The gathering of the congregation and the building of the church, which had called out the greatest interest and energy, were now to be succeeded by the slower and more difficult work of bringing the parish into unity and spiritual strength. The support of the parish had hitherto been provided for by the voluntary contributions of the congregation. But on the 14th of April, 1862, the male members were called together to consider the question, "Shall the means for maintaining public worship in this church be provided by renting the pews?" It was decided in the

affirmative by a large majority and the rector approved the decision. He had been an earnest advocate of the Free Church system, but he found it could not succeed in Yonkers. The result here was a periodical deficiency in the income. The change was not carried into effect till April 1, 1863. This action brought about an increase of the congregation, for in the same year the church had to be enlarged by the addition of a south aisle. By this the original design was completed, and twenty-three more pews were added. The money needed for this enlargement was advanced by Messrs. Anstice and Mulford, who were secured by a mortgage on the building. An addition was also built on the west end to receive a new organ.

In the spring of 1864, Mr. Brewer spoke of resigning his charge on account of impaired health. A meeting of the parishioners was immediately called, passed a resolution asking him to hold back his resignation, and requested the vestry to offer him a vacation and a continuance of his salary during the interval. A purse of \$1200 was also made up and presented to him. Influenced by these proofs of his people's affection, he decided to remain with them, in case his health, through rest, should be restored. He resumed his duties on the 1st of October, after an absence of four months.

In 1865, the mortgage debt of \$5000 on the church was paid. The ladies of the parish began the movement by raising \$1900, and the work was completed through individual subscriptions. The church auditorium during the same year was greatly improved by coloring the walls and graining the wood work. A floating debt of \$1500 was also paid. The building, now free from incumbrance, was consecrated on Thursday, December 28, 1865, by Bishop Horatio Potter, assisted by the Rev. Dr. Washburn, and the Revs. Guilbert, Dickinson, Lyle, Hepburn and Brewer.

Mr. Brewer's health however, continuing impaired, he hoped a change to another parish might be the means of restoring his health and increasing his usefulness. He also thought the Yonkers parish had reached a point at which its further growth and strength would be promoted by a change of rector. So, on the 1st of June, 1866, he tendered his resignation to take effect on the 4th of July. His ministry of exactly eight years had been a great success. A congregation had been gathered, the parish had been organized, a church had been built, freed from debt, and consecrated. He is still remembered with the greatest affection, especially by the poor, to whom he most kindly ministered. And it is a testimony to the gentleness of his nature, that he was loved by all the other churches as well as his own. His personal magnetism was so great, that his departure was lamented as a great popular loss. He went from Yonkers to the Church of the Reformation in Brooklyn, and subsequently from Brooklyn to Christ Church, Westerly, L. I., where he died a few years ago.

The Rev. Uriah T. Tracy succeeded Mr. Brewer on the 4th of October, 1866. He remained till October 4, 1869, just three years. He is now rector of the parish of the Epiphany of New York City. After a vacancy of two months, on the 9th of December, 1869, the Rev. S. G. Fuller was elected rector of the parish. He resigned February 1, 1871, to become rector of St. Paul's, Syracuse, where he died a few years after. The next pastor was the Rev. David F. Banks, who was elected February 13, 1871. Mr. Banks possessed superior pulpit and administrative ability. The Rev. Arthur Sloan was his assistant for one year. After a ministry of about five years Rev. Mr. Banks resigned January 31, 1876. He died at Southport, Conn. The Rev. Arthur Sloan became a minister in the same place. The Rev. C. Maurice Wines succeeded Mr. Banks and entered on his charge on the first Sabbath in May, 1876. He resigned September 27, 1879. He was stationed in Philadelphia after leaving Yonkers, but is now at Coopers-town, N. Y.

The present rector is the Rev. William H. Mills, D.D., who took charge of the parish on the 1st of February, 1880. Dr. Mills is a native of Newton, Mass., was graduated at Brown University, Providence, R. I., studied theology in the same place under Bishop Henshaw, entered into deacon's orders in Grace Church, Providence, R. I., in 1852, and into priest's orders in the same church August 30, 1853. His first charge was of St. Peter's Church, Mantion, R. I., and he has since been successively rector of the Church of the Messiah, Providence, R. I., of St. Mary's, Dorchester, Mass., of St. Paul's, Erie, Pa., and of St. Paul's, Yonkers, N. Y.

The members of St. Paul's at present are two hundred and twenty. The Sunday-school has an enrollment of about one hundred and fifty scholars. Mr. Charles W. Seymour is the superintendent.

There are connected with the church the following societies: The Parochial Society, composed of ladies; the St. Agnes Guild, composed of young ladies; the Industrial School to lead sewing, the Mothers' Meeting Society to meet poor mothers for the purpose of instructing them, the Women's Auxiliary to the General Missionary Society, the Girls' Friendly Society for the purpose of bringing together girls who are here without homes for social purposes and instructions, and St. Paul's Guild for boys and young men. The Yonkers "Nursery and Home" is also under the charge of the ladies of St. Paul's Church.

The present officers of the parish are as follows: Senior Warden, Charles W. Seymour; Junior Warden, Samuel Swift, M.D.; Vestrymen, E. M. Le Moynes, A. C. Benedict, M.D., A. A. Patton, E. D. Harris, G. F. Whitney, M.D., J. Foster Jenkins, Charles S. Bonner, treasurer, and William A. Pardoe.

Christ Protestant Episcopal on Nepperhan Avenue.— In 1867 Miss Caroline Jones, who had spent most of

her life in Yonkers, appointed Rev. Lyman Cobb, Jr., her trustee for establishing a Mission Church or school in the place, and gave him one thousand dollars as the nucleus of a fund to that end. Shortly after she made her will, appointing Mr. Cobb and her sister, Miss Louisa Jones, her executors, and leaving to Mr. Cobb a lot of land for a church building, but authorizing the sale of the said lot if thought best, and the purchase of another site. After her death the lot, not being desirable for a church, was sold, and the proceeds, with the one thousand dollars mentioned, were invested in the Yonkers' Savings Bank. In 1871 Mr. Cobb selected the following gentlemen to join him in organizing a Free Church, viz.: J. Foster Jenkins, M.D., Britton Richardson, S. Emmet Getty, George W. Cobb, Rev. M. R. Hooper and Rev. Charles W. Seymour. The site at the corner of Nepperhan Avenue and Elm Street was chosen in 1872. At that time the Savings Bank investment had grown to about six thousand dollars. The lot was purchased for four thousand dollars, a mortgage was given for the whole amount and the six thousand dollar fund was used in erecting the church. The corner-stone was laid in 1872. The house was constructed of wood, with the outer walls filled in with brick with deafened floors, slate roof, stained glass windows and a seating capacity of two hundred and twelve persons. A pretty vestry room with two large windows was provided in a wing off from the chancel. The chancel window is a reproduction of the window in Calvary Church of New York City, and was furnished by the same artist. It is a memorial donated by Miss Louisa Jones, who also gave as memorials the Bishop's Chair, the priest's chair, the stalls, the Lectern, the pulpit and the altar cloth. Miss Sarah Jones, another sister, donated the communion service and Rev. Lyman Cobb, Jr., gave a memorial font. The first service was held in July, 1872. Rev. Lyman Cobb, Jr., officiated for a while, holding the morning services. Services in the afternoon were held by the various clergymen of Yonkers, Hastings and Riverdale. The Rev. S. S. Lewis afterwards officiated two years, and the Rev. William Hyde one year. Others succeeded till 1880, when the interest on the mortgage being behindhand, Mr. James C. Bell, the mortgagee, foreclosed it, and bought in the property. Subsequently he deeded it to Mr. Cobb, who assumed the payment of a new mortgage of four thousand eight hundred dollars by giving his personal bond. Mr. Cobb now resumed the charge and held it with occasional assistance till April, 1884, when he left home for a tour in Europe. During his absence his son (having a power of attorney for the purpose) sold the property to Mrs. Virginia Clark. After this, services were held regularly by Mr. Robert S. Carlin, a student in the General Theological Seminary of New York City.

From July, 1872, two Sunday and frequent week day services were held regularly. Recently the church has become flourishing. On Easter Monday, 1886,

Mr. Theodore J. Bayer and Mr. Charles H. Stengel were elected wardens; and Messrs. William Webb, W. C. Poole, Henry Gaul, John Braithwaite, Samuel Hayward, Henry Back, Albert Hanson and George Taylor, vestrymen. The vestry clerk is Mr. S. Hayward. On the 16th of June, the Rev. August Ulmann was elected Rector. From June 1, 1884, he had been assistant minister of St. John's. He assumed his new charge July 1, 1885.

Rev. Mr. Ulmann, born in Zellerfeld, Prussia, in 1845, was educated in the public schools, and after further private preparation, entered the "Schullehrer Seminar" (Normal School), to prepare for a position as school-master. In October, 1864, he became tutor in the family of Baron Von Hammerstein, a Hanoverian nobleman, with whom in 1886 he removed to Dresden. In April, 1867, he entered as tutor the family of Mr. John Carey, Jr., of New York, living in Dresden. In October, 1870, he left Germany with Mr. Carey, stayed one winter in England, and finally came to America, July 4, 1871. In October, 1872, he settled in New York as private instructor, and as organist and choir director of Trinity Church. In April, 1875, he was admitted candidate for Holy Orders. In September, 1876, he went to St. Paul's School, Concord, N. H., as master of French and German. Thence he came to the General Theological Seminary in New York, in September, 1880, at which he was graduated in 1884. On the 8th of June of the same year, he was ordained deacon by the bishop of New York, and on the 21st of December was ordained priest. He received the degree of S. T. B. (Bachelor of Sacred Theology) from the General Theological Seminary in June, 1885.

Rev. Mr. Ulmann has had much experience in teaching and planning. His pastoral career opens with excellent promise. The church is very active, and much good must be the result of its new organization and its many forms of work and earnestness of life.

THE REFORMED.—*Reformed Church on South Broadway with its Reformed Church Chapel on Ludlow Street.* The early history of this church is given in an address delivered by its present pastor at its twenty-fifth anniversary in April, 1868, and supplemented in a sermon also delivered by him at its fortieth anniversary in April, 1883. Both these deliverances are in print, and may be consulted by any one who desires fuller information than we have room for here. The following statement is closely condensed:

The Reformed church (till 1867 known as "The Protestant Reformed Dutch Church") of Yonkers, grew out of a mission movement started in 1841. To that year, all church-going people in the vicinity had attended the only churches then existing on the east side of the town, viz.: St. John's Episcopal and the Methodist Episcopal on Broadway. There were, however, some residents who desired a church of Presbyterian faith and order. Mr. Eben S. Hammond, a student of the theological seminary at

New Brunswick, N. J., about to graduate in July, first preached to these people on the 18th of April, 1841. Two days after, he met Rev. George Du Bois of Tarrytown, and Rev. William S. Moore of Unionville, Reformed Church ministers, and so impressed them with what he had seen, that they brought the subject before the Classis of New York at a meeting held the same day, and secured the appointment of a committee consisting of Rev. Peter I. Van Pelt, D.D., of Fordham; Rev. Thomas De Witt, D.D., of New York; and Rev. George Du Bois to visit Yonkers and report at the fall session. Rev. Mr. Du Bois acted promptly, and during the summer actually started a Yonkers mission. His friend and former

the 1st of August, Mr. Hammond directed the attention of the people to his classmate, Victor Moreau Hulbert, who in July had been licensed to preach the gospel. By invitation, Mr. Hulbert visited them, preaching in both places on the 21st of August, 1842. His sermon to his Yonkers audience, forty in number, was from Solomon's Song, 8: 5. He was promptly engaged by the two congregations as a permanent supply. The church at Greenville was organized with ten members, and its house of worship was dedicated November 9, 1842. Mr. Hulbert was at once called as its pastor, and ordained and installed on the 4th of January, 1843. He continued to be both its pastor and the supply of the Yonkers mission till



REFORMED CHURCH AND PARSONAGE.

parishioner, Mr. Charles Dusenberry, of Tuckahoe, cordially promoted the work. The committee's report to Classis on the 19th of October, 1841, resulted in the appointment of temporary supplies for the mission. The first of these, Rev. Dr. Samuel A. Van Vranken, of New York, preached October 25th, and thus the formal movement under Classical auspices began. The services were held in the "Long Room" already mentioned, and were well attended from the beginning.

On the 13th of June, 1842, the corner-stone of a Reformed Church was laid at Greenville, about seven miles to the northeast and in the neighborhood of Mr. Dusenberry's home. Both Greenville and Yonkers now needed permanent supplies. About

November 12, 1845. On the 23d of April, 1843, however, the latter furnished twenty-eight members, ten by letter and eighteen by profession, who were organized into a church. It is, therefore, from this latter day, that the Reformed Church of Yonkers dates its proper corporate life.

On the 12th of November, 1845, Rev. Mr. Hulbert, having accepted a call from the Yonkers Church, was installed as its pastor. He continued in this relation till April 18, 1848, over two years and four months, making his first term of service as missionary and pastor both, about five years and a half in length. During this period the heirs of Mr. Lemuel Wells fulfilled his known intention by conveying to the people the lot on which the church stands, and soon

after the edifice was erected. The first service in it was held August 24th, and it was dedicated August 27, 1845. The building has since been lengthened thirty-six feet to the west, and internally improved.

Rev. Mr. Hulbert was twice pastor of the church. His first withdrawal from it in April, 1848, was upon a call made, declined, repeated and then accepted from the Reformed Church of Flatbush, Ulster County, N. Y. Upon its first presentation, a written protest against its acceptance, signed by almost every person in his church here, led him to decline it. Its urgent repetition, however, brought its acceptance. When he left Yonkers there had been upon the church-roll one hundred and sixteen members, of whom one hundred were still in the communion.

The next pastor was the Rev. Isaac S. Demund, called from the Houston Street Reformed Church of New York City, and installed in Yonkers, October 8, 1848. On the 8th of January following, the consistory made a contract for a parsonage on a lot adjoining the church lot on the south, and presented by Mr. Ethan Flagg. It was built in 1849, and occupied by the pastors till 1852. Rev. Mr. Demund remained with the congregation till April 16, 1850. At his departure one hundred and twelve members were left on the roll.

Rev. Mr. Demund left Yonkers for the Reformed Church of Belleville, N. J. The pulpit was then vacant for nine months. The people invited Rev. Mr. Hulbert to return, but he declined. On the 21st of October they extended a call to the Rev. Dwight M. Seward, then pastor of the Congregational Church of West Hartford, Conn. Rev. Mr. Seward accepted this call, and was installed in Yonkers, February 12, 1851. The membership during the vacancy had diminished to one hundred and nine. During Rev. Mr. Seward's pastorate the Reformed Churches of Westchester County, previously connected with the Classis of New York, were organized into the Classis of Westchester which continues to the present time.

Rev. Mr. Seward remained with the church a few days over fourteen months, till April 26, 1852. On the morning of that day the membership was 118. Yonkers had now been receiving its first rapidly increasing population. The additions to the Reformed Church had been numerous, and like the previously existing membership, had consisted largely of people whose antecedents and preferences were not of or for the Reformed Church. Great efforts were made to change the denomination of the church. Formal steps were taken towards transferring it to the Presbyterian connection. It was at one time thought by some that the transfer had been effected, when powerful opposition appeared, the membership standing 72 against the movement to but 46 for it. Finally separation was determined upon, and the 46 members, with the pastor, withdrew on the 26th of April, 1852, and on the 10th of May were received by the Third

Presbytery of New York, and organized into the First Presbyterian Church of Yonkers. This movement was inevitable. It was simply the beginning of a series of events looking to timely provision for the various denominational homes the locality would thenceforward increasingly require. It was accompanied with acrimony, but this after a time passed away. The necessity for the event will appear from the following analysis of the material of the Reformed Church membership when it occurred. It consisted of the pastor and 118 members. The pastor and 46 members withdrew, leaving 72 members behind, not one of whom then or ever afterwards followed the withdrawing party. Of those who withdrew, the pastor was a Congregationalist by education and ecclesiastical antecedents; 16 of the members had united with the church by letter from Congregational and 13 by letter from Presbyterian churches. The remaining seven had united with it by letter from Reformed churches, but of these seven, six were Congregationalists and the other one was a Presbyterian by antecedent. Of the 72 who remained, 38 had entered by profession, and 12 by letter from Reformed churches. This material was solidly attached to the Reformed Church. We state these particulars only to show historically the naturalness of what occurred. Its accompanying circumstances were trying to many on both sides, but its results to the general church only met an inevitable necessity and contributed to the general good.

The separation was attended with division of the property. The withdrawing members agreed to take the parsonage, with all outstanding debts, except a trifling note, and the church building and lot, without incumbrance, were retained by the congregation. The parsonage continued for a time to be occupied by Rev. Mr. Seward. The lot, as stated, had been a gift of Mr. Ethan Flagg, one of the outgoing members, and the cost of the building was still a debt, which the Presbyterian brethren consented to assume. So the Reformed Church lost nothing for which it had paid. Yet the giving up of the parsonage was a great loss from the equipment it had enjoyed as a church, and a trial from which it did not wholly recover for many years.

The people now again called the Rev. Mr. Hulbert, and their second call he accepted. His second installation took place November 9, 1852, and he retained his second pastorate till September 21, 1865, nearly thirteen years. As missionary and pastor together, he served the church nearly eighteen years and seven months. His two pastorates, exclusive of his early missionary relation, extended over an aggregate period of about fifteen years and four months. He was called from Yonkers in September, 1865, to found a Reformed Church in White Plains. From that church, in 1872, he was called to the Reformed Church of Marbletown, Ulster County, N. Y., where he labored till April 1, 1884, when being about three-

score and ten years of age, he retired finally from active pastoral work.

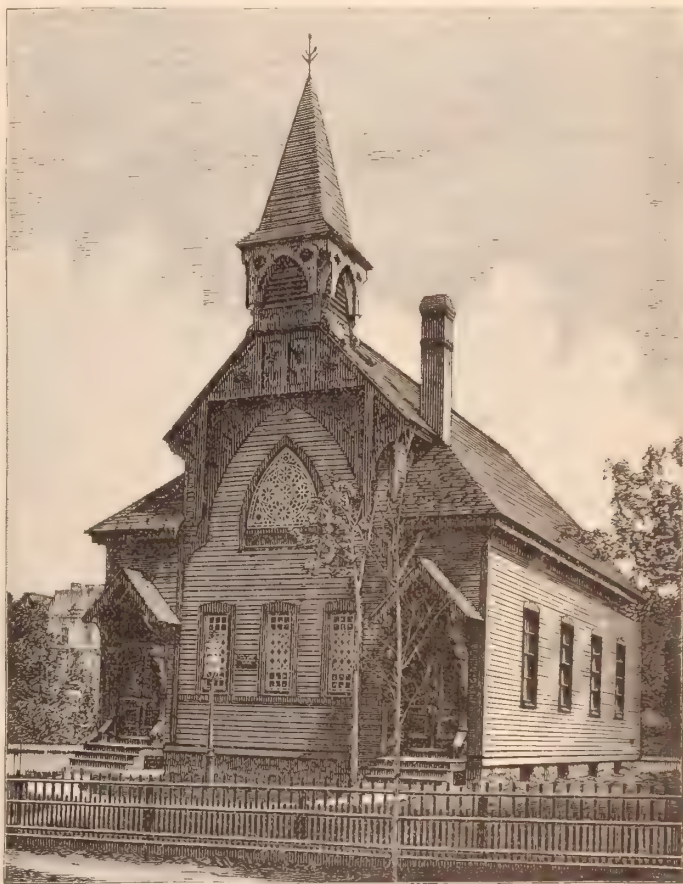
The second Yonkers pastorate of Rev. Mr. Hulbert opened with great life in the church. At its close, in 1865, one hundred and forty-eight members were left upon the rolls. At his coming the church filled again so rapidly that its enlargement to its present size soon became imperative. A parsonage was also built within the church lot on the north side of the church, and the pastor entered it at or about the time when the enlarged building was rededicated, in June, 1854. This parsonage was afterwards removed to the northeast corner of Prospect and Clinton Streets, and continued to serve its end till the spring of 1872. The church prospered during Dr. Hulbert's second pastorate, but its financial burdens were great, and when it closed, in 1865, it left a solid debt of \$6,000, and a floating debt of \$1650 more. But the pastor had done an earnest work and its future was assured.

All the three pastors of this church thus named are still living. Rev. Mr. (long since Dr.) Hulbert resides in Battle Creek, Mich. Rev. Mr. Demund, born in 1803, and now over eighty-two years of age, lives at Ridgewood, N. J., and Rev. Mr. (also long since Dr.) Seward, lives at South Norwalk, Conn. All, as far as is known, enjoy comfortable health. It is not yet time to speak suitably of their personal character, scholarly attainments and ministerial records. The praise of Rev. Mr. Demund remains in the church and in the community. We shall speak again of Rev. Dr. Seward with the history of the First Presbyterian Church. The long identification of Rev. Dr. Hulbert with the Reformed Church, as its founder and builder, entitles him to the gratitude of his old church and of all Yonkers people. His entire work in Westchester County, as pastor at Greenville, at Yonkers and at White Plains, covered a period of nearly twenty-six years, and throughout the county he was everywhere known.

The present pastor is the Rev. David Cole, D.D., called December 8, 1865, received by the church as pastor-elect December 10th, and installed January 10, 1866. He is now in his twenty-first year of service. A few particulars respecting the experience of the church during his period will make its history complete.

It began with a debt of seven thousand six hundred and fifty dollars, solid and floating, of which one thousand six hundred and fifty dollars was paid at once. In the summer of 1868 the new lecture-room was built and other improvements were made. In the same and the next year the church was heavily

assessed for the widening of Broadway in front of its lot and of Riverdale Avenue in its rear, as well as for the opening and grading both of Prospect and Clinton Streets on the south and west of its parsonage. In the spring of 1872 the Prospect Street property was sold, and the fine parsonage at 122 Warburton Avenue was built at a cost of sixteen thousand dollars. In the summer of 1872 the church was re-roofed and refloored, and its pews were reset in a new arrangement at a total cost of over five thousand five hundred dollars. After all these outlays were added to the previous debt and the continuous run-



LUDLOW STREET REFORMED CHURCH CHAPEL.

ning expenses, the church was found to have paid everything down to thirteen thousand five hundred dollars. During the spring of 1875, in the darkest of times, the congregation took up this debt and swept it all away. In 1884 the first parsonage, now 43 S. Broadway, already referred to as lost to the church in 1852, was recovered by purchase, and on the 9th of November of the same year a new chapel in Ludlow Street, about half a mile south of the church, having been just completed, was presented to the church and dedicated to the service of God. This building is now used for a Sabbath-school of the church, and will doubtless result in due time in the development

of a Second Reformed Church for the city. All these changes and purchases, together with the running expenses of the church, have involved the giving of a great deal of money. The total amount contributed within this church down to April 1, 1886, was \$167,100.73, and of this the amount given to benevolent objects was \$27,821.90, or about one-sixth of the whole. The debt on the church's property just now is \$3,800 on its parsonage. The new chapel, now more than a year old, has still upon it a mortgage of \$3,000. Such is a concise history of the temporal matters of this church, since December 10, 1865. The property of the church, as a whole, is very valuable. Its house of worship and adjoining parsonage stand not far from the business centre of the place. The property is all in the best of order. The house of worship is too small for the church's mission in Yonkers. This is the only defect in the temporalities of this congregation. Some of its people have the matter very much at heart, and relief may come at no distant day.

Many precious seasons of revival have been enjoyed by this church during the present pastorate, notably that of 1874, when forty-two were added on profession, and that of 1878, when the additions on profession were fifty-four. In general, however, the ingathering, while marked by steadiness, has been more slow. The total number of additions since December 10, 1865, has been five hundred and forty-eight, of whom three hundred and thirty have entered by profession. The number now on the roll, exclusive of certain persons set aside because their whereabouts is not known, is three hundred and forty-seven.

The church rents its pews, but receives its income mostly through weekly envelopes, a plan which adapts itself admirably to its people.

Its schedule of services and its whole working force and order, as to meetings, societies, etc., are always lying before the public in a printed circular, and need not be given here.

The first elders were Lemuel W. Wells and Duncan Macfarlane, and the first deacons were Frederick Nodine and Ralph Shipman. The present elders are William G. Sekeman, James Stewart, Joseph H. Palmer, Hyatt L. Garrison, George Stewart and John Pagan, and the present deacons are Joseph Peene, James P. Cumming, Virgil Myers, Walter A. Drinkwater, James Kellock and Christian F. Tietjen.

The church has two Sunday-schools, one held in the morning in the church-building, the other in the afternoon in the Ludlow Street chapel. The aggregate of scholars in both is two hundred and seventy-four. The superintendent of the church-school is Mr. Christian F. Tietjen, and the superintendent of the chapel-school is Mr. George Stewart.

THE ROMAN CATHOLIC.—The history of these churches, as well as that of their schools already given, is furnished by Mr. Thomas C. Cornell.

The earliest religious services of the Roman Catholic Church in Yonkers were held among the Catholic laborers upon the Croton Aqueduct in 1836-39, by the Rev. James Cummiskey of St. Joseph's Church, New York, a church built by him about 1834. Father Cummiskey exercised his office among the laborers on the work from New York to Sing Sing, saying Mass in whatever private room or rude building he could obtain. In Yonkers, during the building of the arches over the Saw-Mill River, a laborers' settlement existed for several years among the trees on the bluff, near where Summit Street now crosses the aqueduct, and in this vicinity Father Cummiskey occupied a small building on Sundays as a chapel. It was the first Roman Catholic Chapel in Yonkers. Several Roman Catholic families remained after the completion of the aqueduct, but Father Cummiskey did not return after 1840, nor had he any successor till the beginning of work on the Hudson River Railroad in the latter part of 1847.

St. Mary's Church on St. Mary St. Bishop Hughes opened St. John's College at Fordham in 1841, under the Rev. John McCloskey—afterwards Cardinal—as its first President. In 1846 he transferred the College to the Jesuits who have since conducted it. The Bishop had so few priests that he was glad to give to the Jesuits of the College the charge of Westchester County, and the Rev. John Ryan, S. J., was charged with the Mission of Yonkers. Work was begun on the Rail Road in September 1847, and in October Father Ryan said his first Mass in Yonkers in the principal room of a dwelling-house near where Nepperhan Avenue now crosses the Nepperhan River, and subsequently continued his work in a vacant store room in the adjacent dye factory of Samuel Morgan. The dwelling-house and the dye factory were long ago burned. In the summer of 1848 Father Ryan hired at three dollars a week the upper story of the first three story brick building in Yonkers, then just erected by Mr. Ethan Flagg. The house little changed, still stands at the corner of Palisade Avenue (then Factory St.) and New Main (then Mechanic) Street. In the autumn of 1848, Father Ryan ventured to begin the erection of a brick church, after a design of Mr. Patrick C. Keeley, an architect of eminence. The lot, on what is now called St. Mary Street, was the gift of Hon. Wm. W. Woodworth, and Father Ryan's Building Committee were Wm. W. Woodworth, Thomas C. Cornell and Hugh Donohue. The lot was 85 feet wide on the street by 130 feet deep. Four years later 50 feet were added to the width. The building, 40x70, was inclosed with bare brick walls, with no ceiling but the roof, and with the windows rudely boarded up. The first Mass was said in it on Christmas, 1848. The Church was dedicated "to the Blessed Virgin Mary conceived without sin," and hence is sometimes called St. Mary's, and sometimes the "Church of the Immaculate Conception." The church then erected now

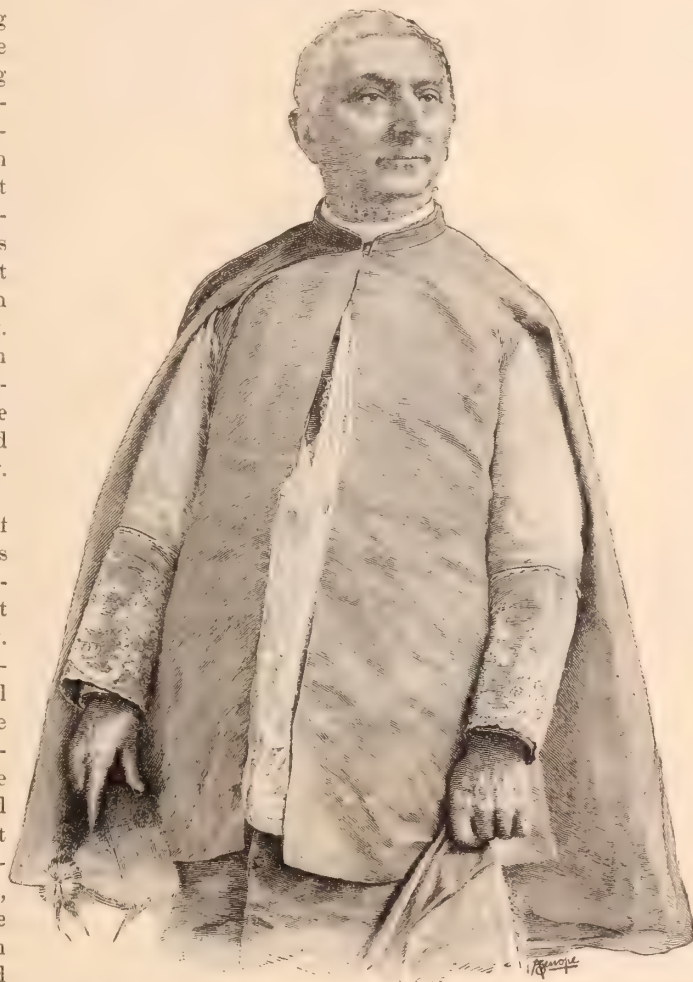
forms that part of the present church, which lies forward of the transepts. The enameled glass windows were substituted for the rough boards in the summer of 1849, and the spire as designed by Mr. Keeley, was erected with a contribution from Judge Woodworth in the fall of the same year. But the church continued without plaster or ceiling, and the only seats were rough board benches without backs. Father Ryan continued in charge, with occasional aid from Fathers Driscoll, Du Ranquet, Daubresse, Tissot and others of his colleagues at St. John's, and said Mass every Sunday and Holy Day, coming from his duties at the college the preceding evening and returning on Sunday evening, till 1850, when he was made the first president of the College of St. Francis Xavier, then just opened in Fifteenth Street, New York. He was succeeded in the charge of Yonkers by Rev. Hippolyte Bienvenue, S. J., and subsequently by Rev. Louis Jouin, S. J.

In the summer of 1851 the Rev. Thomas S. Preston, then recently ordained, but later the Right Rev. Monsignor Preston—a prelate of the Papal household—was made the first resident pastor of Yonkers. The church still remained as Father Ryan left it, with rough, unplastered brick walls, and open above to the roof. Father Preston immediately finished the church and put in pews making four hundred and twenty seats, of which not more than half a dozen sittings remained unrented. He also put in an organ, and a choir under Professor Wm. F. Muller. In 1852 he bought the school-house property on the north side of St. Mary Street, and opened the first parish school. In 1853 he built a small parochial residence. In October 1853, Archbishop Hughes recalled Father Preston to New York, making him secretary and subsequently chancellor of the diocese, and he was temporarily succeeded in Yonkers by the Rev. John McMahon.

In May 1854, the Rev. Eugene Maguire was put in charge of the church, and remained till February, 1856. During his time St. Mary's Cemetery was first opened in the Sprain Valley, on land given by Mr. John Murtha. In 1855 the State census reported the usual attendance of the Roman Catholic Church of Yonkers at eight hundred, which would indicate a Roman Catholic population of from twelve to sixteen hundred. The same census makes the population of the village 4170.

The Rev. Edward Lynch succeeded Father Maguire in February 1856.

He greatly developed the parish schools, placed the girls under the Sisters of Charity in 1857, built a large school-house in 1860, putting the boys under the Christian Brothers, and in 1863 enlarged the church by adding transepts, chancel and vestry, and increasing the seating capacity from four hundred and twenty to one thousand, at which it still remains. In 1859 the parish work had so increased that Father Lynch had his first assistant priest, the Rev. S. A. Mullady, previously of the Society of Jesus, who was succeeded in 1861 by Father Biretta, an Italian Franciscan, later by the Rev. Patrick Brady, then by Rev. T. Byrne and in October, 1864, by Rev. Wm. H. Oram. Father Lynch died while in charge of St. Mary's parish, on the 5th of May 1865, and



RIGHT REV. MONSIGNOR THOS. S. PRESTON, LL.D.

in the tenth year of his very successful pastorate.

The Rev. Charles T. Slevin succeeded Father Lynch in May, 1865. He put up the handsome marble altar in 1866, and added the three large paintings in the altar recess at a cost of about two thousand dollars. In 1868 he made the first addition to the pastoral residence, fifteen years after it was first built, and the following year added to it the front building. Father Slevin took pains to have good church music, and was the first to have a paid choir. He put in a

new organ in 1872, which still remains. His first assistant priest was Rev. Albert A. Lings, who came in 1867 and remained till 1871, when he was charged with the organization of the new parish of St. Joseph. He was succeeded as assistant at St. Mary's by Rev. Bernard Goodwin, and in February, 1872, by Rev. J. Byron, who remained until June, 1874. In 1873, Father Slevin obtained leave of absence on account of ill-health, and was in Europe from February to October, the Rev. Edward McKenna occupying his place while he was away. In June, 1874, Father Byron was succeeded as assistant by Rev. Eugene McKenna, who remained till May, 1875, when he was followed for a short time by Rev. J. W. Hays. But before this, in October, 1874, the Rev. Andrew O'Reilley came to take the place of assistant pastor, which he yet fills, after a service of twelve years. Father Slevin was in failing health for several years, and, while still holding the charge of pastor of St. Mary's, died among his kindred in North Easton, Mass., on the 18th of July, 1878.

Rev. Charles R. Corley was sent to supply Father Slevin's place in June, 1877, and still remains in charge of the parish, with Rev. Andrew O'Reilley as assistant; and since 1884, Rev. James F. McLaughlin has been an assistant also. Father Corley has given great attention to the parish schools, and they have been very successful. In 1885 he built an addition to the school building, erected by Father Lynch in 1860,

more than doubling its capacity, at a cost of twenty thousand dollars. The church had been for some time out of debt, and it is not believed that any permanent debt will be created by this addition to the school-house.

Father Corley estimates the membership of St. Mary's at between four and five thousand. At each of the four Masses every Sunday the church is filled, making a total attendance of about three thousand. At the Mission given in the church by the Paulist Fathers in September, 1885, the communicants were thirty-eight hundred. The marriages and baptisms for the past four years have been as follows:

Year	Baptisms	Marriages
1882	162	30
1883	152	34
1884	168	38
1885	197	45

St. Mary's Church is incorporated under the general law, the trustees being Archbishop Corrigan, Right Rev. Monsignor William Quin, V.G., Rev. Charles R. Corley (*all ex-officio*), Mr. John Wallace and Mr. Francis O'Neill.

The history and statistics of St. Mary's parish school have been given already.

St. Joseph's Church, on Ashburton and St. Joseph Avenues.—The parish of St. Joseph was set off from St. Mary's in May, 1871. The division line has not been officially defined with accuracy, but is assumed to follow Yonkers Avenue from the Bronx to the Croton aqueduct; thence by the aqueduct to the arches crossing the Saw-Mill River, and down the river, leaving the glen to Garden Street, on the upland, within the parish; thence by Garden Street to Locust Hill Avenue, and thence to the Hudson River. Rev. Albert A.

Lings, at that time assistant at St. Mary's, was made the first pastor, a charge which he still holds, and the Rev. Anthony Molloy has been his assistant since November, 1876. The Rev. Father Shadler was an occasional assistant before Father Molloy, and the Rev. Michael Montgomery was assistant during Father Lings' absence in Europe, Egypt and Palestine in 1881. A third priest, the Rev. J. J. Coffey has been added in 1886; and one of the priests from St. Joseph's says Mass every Sunday morning among the laborers on the New Aqueduct.



REV. CHARLES R. CORLEY.

The Sunday and Saturday evening services were first opened in the assembly-room of Public School No. 6 early in July, 1871, the church paying fifteen dollars a week rent. That same month Father Lings bought for seventeen thousand dollars the present church lot, one hundred and fifteen feet front on Ashburton Avenue and two hundred and seventeen feet deep along Oak Hill (now St. Joseph) Avenue, with an old dwelling-house on the premises, which was made the parochial residence. In September he laid the corner-stone of a brick building, forty-five by eighty-two feet, two stories high, with basement and attic, placed on the north part of the Oak Hill Avenue front and designed for a school-house, but with the lower part temporarily fitted up for a church, with a seating capacity of nearly six hundred. The first Mass was said in the new building on the 8th of De-

ember, 1871, although this building was not finished until the following spring. A parish school was opened in the upper story in the autumn of 1872. The erecting and furnishing of the new building cost about twenty thousand dollars. In 1877, the old dwelling-house being no longer fit for use, a new brick residence for the clergy was built on the east side of the Ashburton Avenue front, leaving the corner of the two avenues for a future church building, to be erected in due time.

St. Joseph's Church was incorporated under the general law in 1876. The present trustees are Archbishop Corrigan, Vicar-General Quin and Father Lings, *ex officio*, and Mr. Michael Walsh and Mr. Thomas B. Caulfield, of the congregation.

Father Lings estimates his people at four thousand, and on Sundays the church is densely crowded at each of the four Masses. The corner-stone of the new St. Joseph's Church was laid by Archbishop Corrigan on the 16th of May, 1886, and the building is to be finished during the year. The length is 150 feet, the width 65 feet, and the height of the ceiling 65 feet from the floor. The pews will furnish 1,083 seats on the ground floor, and a spacious gallery at one end, and besides accommodating the organ and choir, will make space for 400 sittings more, so that the church can easily seat 1,500 persons without using the aisles. The edifice is designed, in the Gothic style, of brick and stone, and will be one of the finest churches in Yonkers. When completed it will have cost \$60,000. The architect is Mr. William Shickel, of New York, and the builders are Dennis Murphy and Antony Imhoff, of Yonkers.

The marriages and baptisms for the past four years have been as follows:

Year.	Baptisms.	Marriages.
1882	120	46
1883	148	36
1884	176	36
1885	162	45

In 1881 Father Lings bought the property adjoining the school-house on the north, with a dwelling upon it, which he fitted up for the Sisters of Charity, at a cost of about seven thousand dollars. It has since been occupied by a community of seven Sisters, under Sister M. Stephen, who have charge of the Sunday-schools as well as the parish school of the church.

The number of pupils in attendance upon the parish school for the last four years has been as follows:

Year.	Boys.	Girls.	Total.
1882	203	281	484
1883	227	300	527
1884	235	328	563
1885	268	350	627

THE BAPTIST—*Warburton Avenue Baptist Church and Nepperhan Avenue Baptist Chapel*.—The first prayer-meeting of Baptists in Yonkers was held Tuesday evening, March 5, 1847, in the house of Mr. Peter F. Peek. At this service there were present Mr. and Mrs. Peek, Mr. and Mrs. George Van Ness, Mr. and Mrs. B. F. Crane, Mr. and Mrs. Ferrin, Mrs. Chambers, Mrs. McGill and Miss Strothers. The last-named lady lived in Yonkers but a few months.

The first sermon preached in Yonkers by a Baptist clergyman to a Baptist audience was delivered by the celebrated Rev. John Dowling, D.D., of New York, in Mr. Peek's parlors, in August, 1847. His text was, "Weeping may endure for a night, but joy cometh in the morning."

At a meeting held May 14, 1849, at the residence of Mr. B. F. Crane, the Rev. D. Henry Miller offered a resolution that a Baptist Church be organized. It was adopted and seven persons enrolled themselves as members that evening, viz.: Peter F. Peek and Abbie J. Peek, his wife, B. F. Crane and Emeline Crane, his wife, George Van Ness, Elias Whipple and the Rev. D. Henry Miller. One week

later the following were added: Mrs. Lucy Miller, wife of Rev. D. Henry Miller, Mr. Miller's mother, A. C. Van Ness, Jonathan Odell and his wife, Mrs. Rosina Whipple, Miss A. Minnerly and Mrs. M. A. Chambers.

The Rev. D. Henry Miller was the first pastor of the church, and preached his first sermon to his people in Flagg's Hall, at the northeast corner of Palisade Avenue and New Main Street (then Factory and Mechanic Streets). The meetings continued to be held in that place till a church was built. On the 23d of May the new organization was formally recognized by a council of members and delegates from the neighboring churches.

The corner-stone of the church building was laid October 24, 1850, when the members numbered twenty-six. The edifice was finished and dedicated



REV. ALBERT A. LINGS.

in 1852. It stood on North Broadway, on the spot now occupied by the new Temperance Hall of the Woman's Christian Temperance Union. It was of brick, fifty-two by sixty-three feet, with a square tower sixty feet high on the southeast corner. It contained a basement capable of seating about two hundred, and a main audience-room, which, with the end gallery, opposite the pulpit, could accommodate between three hundred and four hundred persons. The church was known for years as the Mount Olivet Baptist Church.

The most historically important event connected with the development of the congregation was the presentation to it, by Messrs. John B. Trevor and James B. Colgate, of its present splendid house of worship. Its corner-stone was laid April 11, 1868, and the completed building was dedicated June 20, 1869.

The account of the origin, erection and dedication of this church is given in a special history prepared and published by a committee appointed by the church June 30th, 1869, and consisting of the Rev. A. J. F. Behrends, its pastor, Deacon Peter F. Peek, Bros. G. Hilton Scribner and James Randell, of the church, and Mr. Luther W. Frost, of the congregation. We give the substance of it here.

As early as 1863, at least, the building of a new house in a more favorable location was agitated among a few, but did not definitely engage attention until the regular church meeting, held October 2, 1867, when the following communication from Bros. Trevor and Colgate was read by the pastor:

"TO THE MOUNT OLIVET BAPTIST CHURCH, YONKERS.

"*Dear Brethren:*—Feeling a deep interest in the advancement of the cause of Christ, and under obligations to him for many blessings, and as expressive of our love for him and for the church which he has purchased with his own blood, we propose to erect and give to you a church edifice according to the plans herewith submitted, with the ground, being about 218 feet on Ashburton Avenue, and 294 feet, more or less, on Warburton Avenue, besides an additional piece adjoining the easterly side, 50 by 100 feet, free from all debt, on the following conditions:

"1. The Church, on entering into possession, is to be known as the '*Warburton Avenue Baptist Church*,' instead of '*Mount Olivet Baptist Church*.'

"2. The Church is to relinquish to the undersigned all its rights titles, etc. (if it have any), to the eight lots on the northerly side of the Manor House property.

"3. The Church shall not encumber with debt, or sell the said property; and it is distinctly agreed between us that it is to be used as a Baptist place of worship for all time.

"4. The Church is to use the said building and grounds for no other purpose than those of a religious character, all meetings of a political or secular character being forbidden to be held on the premises.

"5. The Church is to raise the sum of ten thousand dollars in cash, which is to be spent in furnishing the new edifice, under the direction of the architect, E. L. ROBERTS, ESQ., and should there be any surplus, it is to be spent toward paying for an organ to be used in said building.

"6. In case of any dispute arising hereafter as to what is a Baptist Church, it is to be settled by the creed of the present Church, in which its doctrines are fully set forth.

"Should the Church agree to accept the property on the above conditions, and instruct its Trustees to receive the same, we agree to deposit in the hands of F. A. COE, ESQ., of Yonkers, a deed to be held by him in trust, and to be surrendered to your Trustees on these conditions being fully complied with.

" Hoping the above propositions will meet with your approval, and be favored with the blessing of God, we are, dear brethren,

" Very truly yours,

" JOHN B. TREVOR.

" JAMES B. COLGATE."

This communication was referred to a committee, consisting of Bros. Edward Bright, P. F. Peek and Isaac G. Johnson, who submitted the following report, whose appended resolutions were unanimously and heartily adopted:

" The Committee, to whom was referred the communication of Bros. JOHN B. TREVOR and JAMES B. COLGATE, is profoundly impressed with the generous and noble work they propose to do, and the reasonableness of all the conditions upon which the Church is to accept the gift. Such a church edifice as they intend to build at their own expense will be more than impressive, and delightful evidence of the estimation in which they hold their Christian and denominational convictions. It will also prove to be, as your Committee believe, an inestimable blessing to the community in which it is to be located, and to the cause of evangelical truth throughout the world. For it is to be from generation to generation, the spiritual home of a living church of Jesus Christ, and such a church is everywhere and always the best and most potent conservative force in the world.

" The Christian men and women here assembled should, therefore, accept this munificent gift of their brethren with fervent gratitude to God, and with no other thought or purpose than to regard it as a perpetual argument for the existence of a living, united, and aggressive church within its walls,—a church that shall evermore hold to and hold forth the truth as it is in Christ Jesus; the truth as he, and those whom he personally instructed, held and illustrated it.

" The Committee recommend, therefore, the adoption of these resolutions:

" *Resolved*, That in the spirit of the sentiment herein expressed, and in the hope of the fullest realization of all the blessings herein intimated, this Church does hereby express its profound gratitude to God for the timely, munificent and noble gift proposed by Bros. JOHN B. TREVOR and JAMES B. COLGATE.

" *Resolved*, That the Trustees of the Church and Society be, and they are hereby, requested and instructed to accept the conditions on which Bros. TREVOR and COLGATE propose to transfer the deed of the new church edifice, and to take the necessary measures to carry into prompt and complete effect every condition named in their communication.

" *Resolved*, That a copy of this report be communicated to Bros. TREVOR and COLGATE, individually, by the Pastor and Clerk of the Church.

" EDWARD BRIGHT.

" PETER F. PECK.

" ISAAC G. JOHNSON."

The corner-stone of the new house of worship was laid on the 11th of April, 1868, with appropriate services, in which the pastor was cordially assisted by the Rev. U. T. Tracy, rector of St. Paul's Episcopal Church; the Rev. M. D'C. Crawford, D.D., pastor of the Methodist Episcopal Church; the Rev. David Cole, D.D., pastor of the Reformed Church; the Rev. D. M. Seward, D.D., pastor of the First Presbyterian Church; and the Rev. L. W. Mudge, pastor of the Westminster Presbyterian Church, all of them active pastors within the bounds of the village corporation.

The building is located on the corner of two of the principal avenues in the village, from one of which its name is derived. Its extreme length, including the two-story chapel in the rear, is one hundred and fifty-four feet, and its extreme width in front is ninety feet. The chapel is ninety by thirty-six feet. The walls are thirty feet in the clear from the water-table to the roof cornice, and the roof has a perpendicular elevation of nearly thirty-two feet. The main tower



John B. Trevor



"GLENVIEW."

RESIDENCE OF JOHN B. TREVOR,
YONKERS, N. Y.

and spire are on the southwesterly corner, and rise to an elevation of one hundred and sixty feet from the water-table, surmounted by a beautiful and symmetrical stone cross. On the southeasterly corner is an octagon tower, sixty feet high. The architecture is the Romanesque, or round-arched. The main audience-room is eighty by sixty feet, with galleries on both sides and on the end opposite the pulpit. There are two hundred and six pews in this room, of which one hundred and forty-eight are on the main floor and fifty-eight in the galleries, giving the house a seating capacity of from one thousand to twelve hundred. The furniture is of solid black walnut, oiled and waxed. The ceiling and walls are handsomely frescoed, the coloring being subdued in general tone. The windows are all of stained glass. The organ is still in process of construction under the direction of Henry Erben, Esq., of New York City, and will be of great power, with two banks of keys and thirty-five stops. There is a fine, spacious baptistery under the pulpit platform, from which there are convenient communications with the robing rooms. These, with a church parlor, intended for social gatherings, thirty-seven by thirty-two feet, and pastor's study and library, occupy the first floor of the chapel. The second floor contains the Sabbath-school and lecture-room, sixty-nine by thirty-two feet, with an end gallery for the infant department of the Sabbath-school, and separated from the main room by sliding glass-doors. This room is furnished with semi-oval, cane-bottom settees, and the walls and ceiling are painted and lightly frescoed. Both this room and the audience-room are lighted from great reflectors in the ceiling. A great deal of attention has been given to the thorough ventilation of the building, and considerable money has been expended on the same, under the very just notion that pure air, and plenty of it, *is cheap at any price*. The architect pronounces it one of the very best ventilated buildings in the country. The structure, including towers and spire, is built of Belleville freestone, of a handsome brown color, and the roof is of the best quality of slate. The entire cost of the ground, building, appointments, etc., is nearly two hundred thousand dollars, all of which, with the exception of ten thousand dollars raised by the church and society, has been generously and cheerfully contributed by Bros. John B. Trevor and James B. Colgate.

When this enterprise was under serious consideration—the site having already been purchased and the plans adopted—Louisa S. Stewart, the beloved wife of our brother, John B. Trevor, was called home. For many years an active and useful member of the Mount Olivet Baptist Church, and a great but patient sufferer during the closing years of her life, she fell asleep on the 7th of September, 1867, and her body rests in the city of the dead at Greenwood, with God keeping tender watch over her dust. A choice memorial tablet of the finest Aberdeen granite is firmly set

in the southerly wall of the main audience-room, near the southeasterly corner, and a marble vase and flowers, of purest vein and exquisitely carved, set in a projecting Gothic marble frame, and fronting the enclosed tablet, seems to perpetuate in silent, solid stone, the delicate fragrance of her pure Christian life. The tablet bears the following inscription:

In Memory of
LOUISA S. STEWART,
WIFE OF
JOHN B. TREVOR,
Born May 21, 1836.
Entered into rest
September 7, 1867.
UNWAVERING IN HER FAITH,
SHE DIED REJOICING IN
THE SAVIOUR.

The following account of a special meeting of the church and society, held on Monday evening, June 7, 1869, is taken from the columns of the *Examiner and Chronicle*:

"The deed of the superb gift, made by Messrs. TREVOR and COLGATE was formally presented and accepted in a meeting of the Church on Monday evening last. In presenting the deed, Mr. COLGATE spoke as follows:

"*Mr. Chairman and Brethren*:—About thirty years since, in conversation with my friend, GARRETT N. BLEEKER, I expressed to him a hope that I might live to build a house of worship for the service of God. This hope, since then secretly cherished, is about to be fulfilled.

"Nothing belongs to me in this enterprise which does not belong equally to my associate and friend, JOHN B. TREVOR.

"In the erection of this house of worship, we trust we have been actuated by no motives which will not bear the scrutiny of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

"We are not careful to reply to those who may charge us with extravagance. Such we would refer to the answer of our Lord, in reply to the question: "Ought not this ointment be sold for more than two hundred pence and given to the poor?" And we would also remind such that the oldest historical fact on record pertaining to public worship is that God had respect to the sacrifice of Abel, who offered the firstlings of his flock, while he rejected the meaner offering of Cain, as insulting to his Creator.

"In conveying this property, we have imposed some conditions, in which we think the Church will cheerfully acquiesce.

"1. The property can not be sold, but must be used solely for a Baptist church.

"2. Its use is restricted to religious purposes only, excluding every thing secular.

"3. The Church is debarred the right to encumber the property.

"And, brethren, may peace dwell ever with you. May these new walls never reverberate with the strife of brethren, but may they resound with the teachings of God's Word, accompanied with the notes of praise and prayer. May the interesting associations clustering around the old be transferred to the new edifice, and there be entwined with dearer and fresher and more glorious associations; and may "He who dwelleth between the cherubim shine forth" and fill the house with his glory.

"We now most cheerfully and cordially tender to you this deed of the property."

"The pastor responded in a few words, and G. H. SCRIBNER, Esq., read the carefully drawn document, which, besides being a full deed of conveyance, embodies the complete Articles of Faith of the Church, adherence to which is a perpetual condition of the gift. He then moved the resolution by which the Church received the property—one of the largest donations ever made by two individuals to a church of Christ. And the Church will do well to remember that it 'is never to be encumbered'—which, by a free interpretation, must mean that no mortgage is to rest upon its stone and mortar, and no dead formalism is to crush the life out of the worship and enterprise of which it is to be the home and centre."

John B. Trevor who is one of the most liberal among the benefactors of the educational, benevolent and religious enterprises of the Baptist Church, was born in Philadelphia. After leaving school he entered a wholesale dry-goods house, where he remained four or five years, when he went to the West Indies, and afterward spent several months in Europe. He then went to Iowa and Missouri, thence to New Orleans, and then for six months had charge of a mining property in North Carolina, which was owned in Philadelphia. In 1849 he became a stock broker in New York City, and has since continued in that business, although part of the time in an indirect way. He has held no political office except that of Elector of President and Vice President in 1880, when he was chosen upon the Republican ticket to represent the twelfth congressional district and voted for Garfield and Arthur on that ticket.

Mr. Trevor has made large gifts to the Warburton Avenue Baptist Church, Yonkers, and to the various organizations of the Baptist church with which he is connected. He has given to the Rochester Theological Seminary, which is under the patronage of the New York Baptist Union for Ministerial Education, at various times, sums aggregating \$166,677.99. Trevor Hall, which is occupied by the seminary, is one of his gifts to the institution. He has given \$120,000 to the University of Rochester, and \$79,000 to Madison University. His chief interest in the University arises from his conviction that it is doing a great work for the cause of higher education. In view of the increasing antagonism between the agricultural interest and the railroad corporations, Mr. Trevor regards it as very important that all our young men who are educated in colleges should be well informed on all economic questions; and the opinions upon these questions, entertained and taught by Dr. Anderson, president of the University, have received his heartiest approval.¹ Mr. Trevor came to Yonkers in 1861 and has resided there since that time. His beneficence and constant liberality have rendered his name an honor in the community.

Mr. James Boorman Colgate, so well known throughout Westchester County and the country at large for his deep interest in all philanthropic movements, was born in the city of New York, March 4, 1818. The family is of English stock, appearing in the county of Kent as early as the beginning of the fifteenth century. The first of the name in this country was Robert Colgate, who had been prominent among the freedom-loving yeomanry of Kent, in the days of the American Revolution, as an outspoken advocate of the cause of the colonies. Subsequently sympathizing with some of the principles of the French Revolution, and joining in the demand for reform in England, he was in danger of arrest; but, through the friendly suggestion of Pitt, who had been

a companion of his boyhood, he decided to remove from England, and, early in 1795, left his home with his wife and children for the United States, his departure being marked by many tokens of regard from the people of Kent. He resided for some time in Maryland, but spent his last years in Delaware County, N. Y.

William Colgate, the eldest of his sons, entered into business in the city of New York in 1806, and built up the well-known house of Colgate & Co., in Dutch and John Streets, of which he was the head till his death in 1857, having maintained for half a century a high reputation for sagacity, sterling commercial integrity and Christian character. His surviving sons are Samuel, at the head of the old house; Robert, of the Atlantic White-Lead Company, and James, the subject of this sketch.

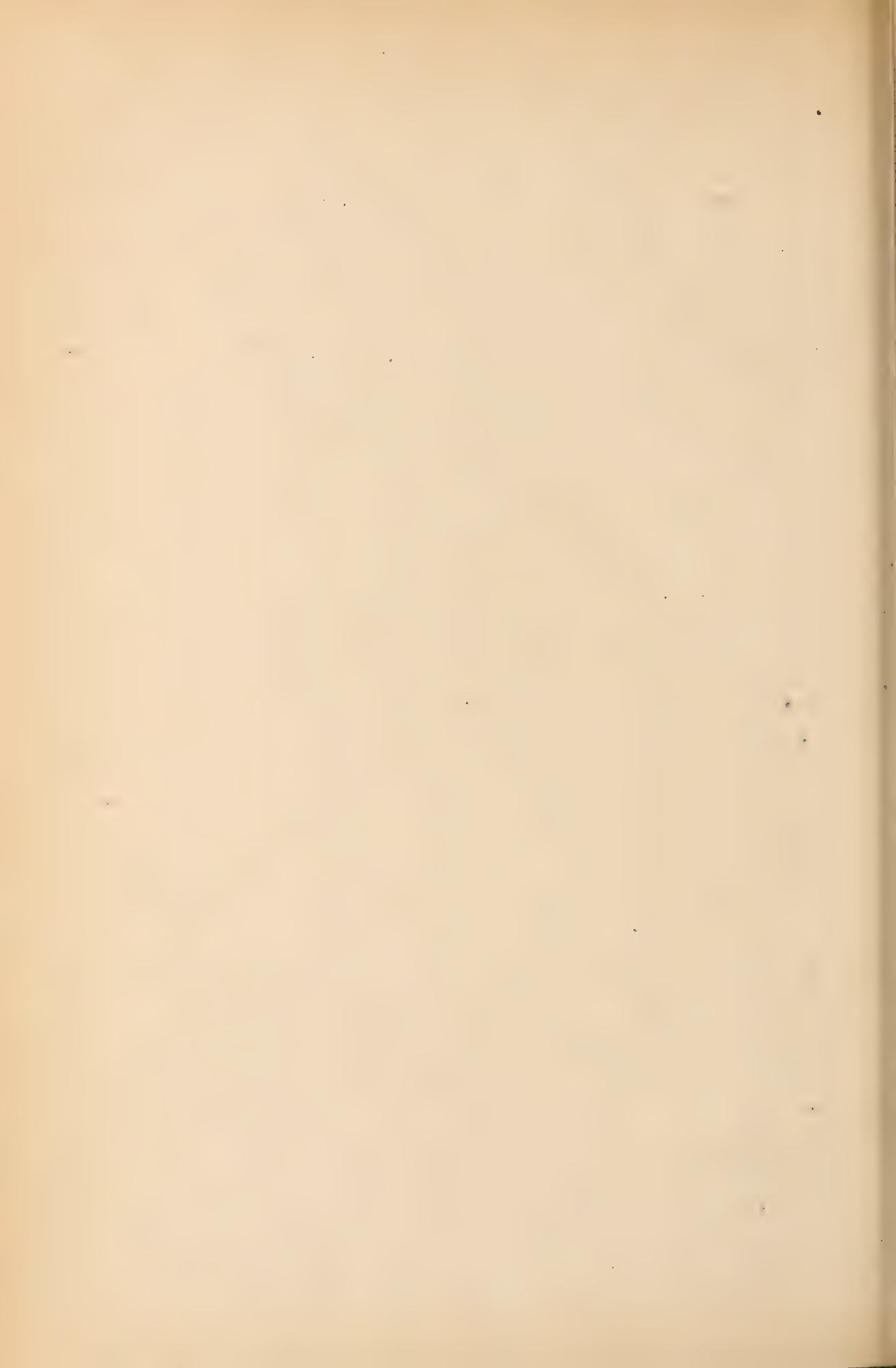
James B. Colgate received his early education partly in Connecticut and partly in New York City. At the age of sixteen he was prepared for college, but his mind turned to business, and he spent the next seven years in acquiring a thorough knowledge of mercantile life. The last four years of his clerkship were passed in the well-known commission house of Boorman, Johnson & Co. Failing in health, he spent the larger portion of the year 1841 in Europe. On his return he accepted an opening in the wholesale dry-goods business. In 1852 he entered Wall Street as a dealer in stocks, associating himself with Mr. John B. Trevor, under the firm-name of Trevor & Colgate. In 1857 they added a bullion department, and established themselves at No. 47 Wall Street. This has always been the leading bullion-house of this country. To this branch of the business Mr. Colgate has especially directed his attention. He was among the first to organize, during the Civil War, the New York Gold Exchange, of which he was for many years president. His papers advocating the remonetization of silver, and expressing views in which he at one time stood almost alone, have been extensively read, and evince his well-known strength and independence of judgment.

Mr. Colgate's leading interest, apart from his business, has been given to education and general Christian benevolence. At the age of twenty-one, moved by convictions which had influenced his whole life, he became a professing Christian and identified himself with the Baptist denomination. Beginning in his early business career, while receiving but a moderate salary, he has made it a life-principle to give a percentage of his income for the promotion of Christianity in all departments of its work. This self-resolved pledge has been more than kept. He has been fortunate in his association with a partner who has sympathized with him in his purposes, and has emulated his gifts. Mr. Colgate and Mr. Trevor united in building the Baptist Church in Yonkers, New York, at a cost of one hundred and ninety thousand dollars, in giving fifty thousand dollars to the

¹ From the Public Service of the State of New York.



Wm. P. Vincent





RESIDENCE OF JAMES B. COLGATE,
GLENWOOD, WESTCHESTER CO., N. Y.

Baptist Church Extension Fund, and in fostering many other enterprises, both benevolent and educational.

Mr. Colgate's devotion to the cause of Christian education was, in part, the result of his early home-training, and has thus been shared by his brother Samuel and others of the family. William Colgate, the father, was one of the leading corporators of Madison University. The Colgate Academy building was erected in 1873 at the sole expense of Mr. James B. Colgate. He gave also forty-two thousand dollars toward endowing the principalship. Mr. Colgate's interest in Madison University has been more than an inheritance or a sentiment, however profound. It has rooted itself in his intellectual and moral convictions. He fully appreciates the worth of higher Christian education to his denomination, and so to the world. He became a member of the board of trustees of Madison University in 1861, and, in 1864 was elected president of the board, which position he still holds. Since January, 1865, he has, at various times, contributed to the invested funds of the University no less than two hundred and forty-seven thousand dollars, besides expending an additional sum of sixty thousand dollars for the building and grounds of Colgate Academy. These repeated and munificent gifts have not been due to any pressure of solicitation, but have been spontaneous offerings. He has led all others in his desire for the prosperity of the University. His donations, having been prompted by principle, have been altogether free from ostentation. Neither has his interest in the University been alloyed with any of those personal elements that frequently enter into large benefactions. He has never subordinated the welfare of the University to any of those private ends, fancies or friendships. Mr. Colgate's beneficence has not been confined to one institution. He has been alive to the claims of others. He has given, for his wife (daughter of the late Governor Colby, of New Hampshire), about ninety thousand dollars to the Colby Academy, at New London, N. H.; also twenty thousand dollars to Rochester University; ten thousand dollars to the Peddie Institute, at Hightstown, N. J., besides liberal sums to Columbian College, Washington, D. C.; to Rochester Theological Seminary; to the Cook Academy, at Havana, N. Y., and to other institutions, both at the North and South. To these donations may be added his gifts to needy churches and to various missionary and benevolent societies.

Mr. Colgate is a man of strong physique, with a countenance that betrays intelligence, frankness and force. He has indomitable energy, breadth and acuteness of intellectual perception and deep religious convictions. Associated with these is a love of truthfulness so intense as to produce a thorough intolerance of all shams and false pretensions. His character is also equally marked by the openness and geniality of his nature and his great kindness of heart. He deservedly holds a high place among the princely givers

of our times, and it is to be hoped that many other men of large wealth may emulate his example.¹

We take pleasure in presenting to the citizens of Yonkers this short sketch of one of the city's oldest residents—one whose truly religious tendencies and liberal spirit have long made themselves felt in the town, both to its own honor and the lasting benefit of others.

Opening of the Sabbath-School Room.—Formal possession was taken of the new Sabbath-school room on the morning of the day of dedication, June 20, 1869. The church-school, Brother Heman L. White, superintendent, and the Spring Street Mission school, Brother Edward Bright, superintendent, marched from the old house in a solid procession of six hundred strong, preceded by a beautiful silk banner, a gift to the church-school from its superintendent. Arrived at the new room, which was crowded in every part, addresses of welcome were delivered by Brothers Colgate and Trevor, Heman L. White, superintendent of the church-school, Rev. Dr. Edward Bright, superintendent of the mission-school, Mr. Gray, a former Superintendent of the church-school, and Rev. Mr. Behrends, the pastor. The exercises were closed with singing, and next in the order of the day came the

Dedication of the Church.—At half past ten the main audience-room was thronged with a large, interested audience, who had gathered from far and near to share in the joy of the dedication day. The pastor, Rev. A. J. F. Behrends, Rev. C. D' W. Bridgman, D.D., of Albany, and Rev. Edward Bright, D.D., of Yonkers, occupied seats on the pulpit platform. After the invocation and the singing of the 933d hymn in the Psalmist, the following selections from Scripture were read by Dr. Bridgman: Psalm cxxii., Acts xvii. 24-28, and 1 Cor. iii. 11-23. The dedicatory prayer was then offered by Dr. Bright, a member of the church. After the singing of the 338th hymn, the pastor preached the dedicatory sermon, from Haggai ii. 9, after which the choir sang the sentence beginning: "How beautiful are thy dwellings, O Lord of Hosts!"

At half-past three o'clock P.M., the house was crowded to its utmost capacity, hundreds being unable to gain admittance, by the members of the various village churches and congregations, to join in a general Christian congratulatory service. A portion of Scripture was read, and prayer offered by the Rev. L. W. Mudge, pastor of the Westminster Presbyterian Church. The pastor of the church, in the opening address, extended a most hearty Christian welcome to the pastors who were present, and through them to their respective churches, and was met with a response of equally outspoken cordiality in addresses by the Rev. M. D'C. Crawford, D.D., of the Methodist Episcopal Church, the Rev. Dr. Cole, of

¹ From the Public Service of the State of New York, 1880, '81, '82.

the Reformed Church, and the Rev. Thomas A. Jagars, rector of St. John's Episcopal Church. The meeting was one of marked heartiness, and inspiring to the highest degree.

In the evening a very large audience listened, with unwearied interest, to a forcible plea for "Faith in God," from the Rev. C. D'W. Bridgman, D.D., pastor of the Pearl Street Baptist Church, Albany. This service closed the dedicatory exercises. On Monday evening another and an enthusiastic meeting was held in the church, at which the pastor presided, and Rev. Dr. Bright and William Allen Butler, Esq., of Yonkers, and Rev. Dr. J. R. Kendrick, of the Tabernacle Baptist Church of New York City, made interesting addresses. In this way was introduced to Yonkers a gift which is beyond all praise for its liberality, its good taste and its useful character. The pastor, Rev. Mr. Behrends, was the manly scholar and the scholarly man to receive such a gift with graceful neatness of address, and to put it at once to its fullest capacity for usefulness. He had filled the pulpit of the earlier house from 1865 to 1869, preaching to all the audience it would hold, and now he had the pleasure of welcoming full and often packing audiences in this large and imposing house of the Lord. In 1873, however, he received and accepted a call to a Baptist Church in Cleveland, Ohio. Later on he became a Congregationalist, and pastor of a Congregational Church in Providence, R. I. Now he is pastor of the Congregational Church in Brooklyn, N. Y., formerly known as Rev. Dr. Henry Martyn Scudder's. Rev. Dr. Behrends (as he is now known) is a preacher of great power. From his entrance into the ministry he has always been a growing man, and long ago he came to be widely known, so that he needs no further word from us here.

The pastors of the Warburton Avenue Baptist Church have been as follows:

- Rev. D. Henry Miller, began 1849; resigned 1856.
- Rev. J. R. Scott, began 1858; resigned 1860.
- Rev. John C. C. Clarke, began 1862; resigned 1865.
- Rev. A. J. F. Behrends, began 1865; resigned 1873.
- Rev. William T. Burns, began 1874; resigned 1875.
- Rev. Henry M. Sanders, began 1876; resigned 1881.
- Rev. Edward P. Farnham, began 1883; resigned 1886.

The Rev. D. Henry Miller is now stationed at Greenpoint, L. I.; the Rev. J. R. Scott has been called to his heavenly reward; the Rev. J. C. C. Clarke has a charge in Madison, Wis.; the Rev. A. J. F. Behrends, D.D., is in Brooklyn, as stated above. The Rev. William T. Burns was a native of Ohio, and upon taking his charge in Yonkers, had just been graduated at the Rochester Theological Seminary. He is at present stationed at Camden, N. J.

The Rev. Henry M. Sanders, who followed, was born in New York City, and was graduated at Yale College, and afterward at the Union Theological Seminary of New York City. The Warburton Avenue Baptist Church was his first charge. He left it to become pastor of the Forty-second Street Baptist

Church in New York City, where he still is. He has earned a high reputation as an eloquent and successful preacher. During the five years of his stay in Yonkers the church was in a flourishing condition, and there was an increase of one hundred and fifty-one members.

After Rev. Mr. Sanders' departure there was a vacancy of eleven months. A call was then extended to the Rev. Edwin P. Farnham, pastor of the Friendship Street Baptist Church, of Providence, R. I., which was accepted. Rev. Mr. Farnham is a native of Litchfield, Conn., and a graduate of Brown University and Rochester Theological Seminary. He is a most faithful and earnest student, preacher and pastor, is loved by all who know him, and was doing excellent work in the city when owing to affliction in his family and obstacles beyond his control, he suddenly resigned his charge, preaching his last sermon to an immense and deeply sympathetic audience on the evening of the 25th of April, 1886. The church is now again without a pastor.

The church, in 1884, contained five hundred and eighty-seven members. Its present deacons are James B. Colgate, Isaac G. Johnson, William Holme, Samuel Dinsmore and W. N. Bailey. It has a chapel on Nepperhan Avenue, built for the accommodation of a mission Sunday-school, which it has sustained for many years. The school was started on the second Sabbath of November, 1863, and owed its origin chiefly to Rev. Edward Bright, D.D., and his daughter. The meeting to organize it was held in a room in the second story of the morocco-factory near the corner of Nepperhan Avenue and New Main Street, and was largely attended, those present being almost all members of the Mount Olivet Baptist Church. The following Sabbath, when teaching was begun, the children present were so numerous that seats for all could not be procured. The meeting was held in the morocco-factory for a few Sabbaths only, when it was removed to a building on Spring (now New Main) Street, at present known as Teutonia Hall. This hall had very soon to be enlarged to make room for the children. A vigorous canvass of Nodine Hill and other parts of the town for scholars was made at the outset by teachers in the school and by Rev. Henry Bromley, a missionary secured by Dr. Bright for this purpose. For about three years and a half of the continuance of the school in the Spring Street building, Captain Holmes, a former sea captain, was employed as the regular missionary, and by his zeal and energy added greatly to the growth of the school. After his death, Mr. Bromley again entered the field for a time, but afterwards became employed in missionary work in Brooklyn.

Rev. Dr. Bright was the first superintendent. He held the office for nine years. He was followed successively by Mr. Van Kirk, Capt. Holmes and Mr. John A. Amelung. Mr. Amelung remained in the office about six years. Then, about four years ago, R.



WARBURTON AVENUE BAPTIST CHURCH.

YONKERS, N. Y.

Oliver Phillips, M.D., was elected. The present Superintendent is Mr. William H. Belknap.

The school remained in the Spring Street building for many years. When the Mount Olivet Baptist Church building on North Broadway was left by its people for their new church on Warburton Avenue, it was taken down, and its materials were used in the construction of a chapel on Nepperhan Avenue for the mission school. A few years ago this building was enlarged to double its first capacity, and now again within a year it has been further and much enlarged to meet the continuously growing prosperity of this school. The school is said to be the largest in the city. It has sixty-seven teachers, besides its officers. The average attendance each Sabbath during the first six months of 1886 was about five hundred scholars. There were seven hundred on the roll. Collections from the school are largely devoted to procuring of clothing for poor children, that they may be able to attend the school decently clad. The result is that very little appearance of poverty is seen among the children at the chapel.

Messiah Baptist Church (colored), on North Broadway.—This church was established by a number of colored people of Yonkers in 1874, and has occupied from the beginning, a hall in the second story, of No. 50 North Broadway. The church was not officially recognized till the 12th of August, 1876. The first regularly ordained pastor was the Rev. R. D. Winn; he was followed by the Rev. Joseph M. Francis. Then the Rev. Wm. S. Bass served the church as its pastor till March, 1882. From 1883 the pastor has been the Rev. Albert Miller. The number of members is forty. A Sunday-school was organized May 21, 1881. It has five teachers and forty-three scholars, of whom eighteen are adults. Charles S. Fariess is the Superintendent.

The first board of trustees of this church were Richard R. Bailey, Chairman; A. Johnson, Edward Bush, Charles Mann, J. Cox, James White and Joseph Maltby.

THE PRESBYTERIANS—First Presbyterian Church on North Broadway.—The history of the Reformed Church, already given, has supplied the introductory information needed to an understanding of the origin of this church. On the 26th of April, 1852, Rev. Dwight M. Seward, then pastor of the Reformed Church, with forty-six of the members, separated from the church, and on the 10th of May were received by the Third Presbytery of New York, and organized into the First Presbyterian Church of Yonkers. The first elders of the church were Lemuel W. Wells and Samuel S. Barry. The first pastor was the Rev. Dwight M. Seward, and the members at the organization were the forty-six members from the Reformed Church.

The church edifice was begun on the 15th of November, 1853, and dedicated in May, 1854. Its seating capacity is about one thousand. The congregation

before the dedication worshipped in Getty's Hall, on Mechanic (now New Main) Street.

Rev. Dwight M. Seward (long since Dr. Seward) continued to be pastor of the church for more than eighteen years, till June 20, 1870, when he resigned his charge on account of impaired health. During his period five hundred and twenty members were added to the original membership of the church, and two hundred and twenty-three were lost by deaths and dismissions, leaving three hundred and forty-three on the register at its close. Rev. Dr. Seward was born at Durham, Conn., July 31, 1811, and was graduated at Yale College in the class of 1831. After spending a year as a teacher in the Institution for the Deaf and Dumb in New York City, he pursued his theological studies in Yale Theological Seminary, and was then on the 3d of February 1836, ordained to the ministry, and installed pastor of the Congregational Church of New Britain, Conn. He remained in this pastorate six years, till June 15, 1842. During this short time he did a great work for this church, resulting in the addition of about two hundred to its communion. From 1842 to 1845 he was stated supply of a Congregational Church at Middlefield, Conn., and from 1845 to 1850 pastor of a Congregational Church at West Hartford, Conn., whence he was called to Yonkers. Dr. Seward was a thorough scholar, a neat and tasteful writer, an impressive preacher, a most faithful, loving and successful pastor, and a warm Christian brother and friend. Resting awhile after leaving Yonkers, he resumed work, rendering excellent service during several summers among the churches and Sunday-schools of the Adirondack region, and subsequently in Portland, Me. He is at present living in retirement at South Norwalk, Conn. The great work of his life was this work of over nineteen years in Yonkers. He left the impress of a most valuable service here, and the record of this service will follow him to his reward above.

The next pastor was the Rev. T. Ralston Smith, D.D. He was installed March 1, 1871, and retained his pastorate until March 21, 1879, when he received and accepted a call to the pulpit of the Westminster Presbyterian Church of Buffalo, N. Y., which he still occupies. Dr. Smith was born in the city of Philadelphia and was graduated at the University of Pennsylvania. Immediately after graduation he taught for a time in one of the leading classical academies of his native city, and then was for one year president of the Eastern Dispensary of New York City. Subsequently having studied for the ministry in Philadelphia under private pastoral instruction, he was pastor successively of the First Presbyterian Church, Delaware City, Del., of the Houston Street Presbyterian Church, New York City, and of the Seventh Presbyterian Church, New York City. From 1866 to 1871 he was one of the secretaries of the American Bible Society. It was from his secretaryship that in 1871 he was called to his Yonkers pastorate. Dr.

Smith is a rarely ready, neat, and clear speaker and a man of most accurate scholarship and regular habits, who enjoys in the highest degree the confidence of his own denomination and of the general Christian Church. He has occupied and still holds many positions of honor and trust, filling them all with signal ability. He was acting permanent clerk of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in 1864, and has been temporary clerk of the same body several times. He was permanent clerk of the Synod of New York and New Jersey (N. S.) and of the Synod of New York after the reunion from 1862 to 1879, has been stated clerk of the Consolidated Synod of New York from 1882, and was moderator of the Synod of Western New York in 1881. The Doctorate of Divinity was conferred upon him many years ago by the trustees of Williams College. He left many warm friendships behind him in Yonkers, where he had rendered eight years of earnest service. During his pastorate here he was successful in bringing into being, and putting on a solid foundation, the third Presbyterian organization of the city, known as the Dayspring Church.

The present pastor is the Rev. John Reid, who was installed November 6, 1879. He was born at St. John, N. B., was educated in the public schools of New York City, and was graduated at the New York University in 1870, and at the Theological Seminary at Princeton in 1873. After brief pastorates in Paterson and in Hoboken, N. J., he entered his present position. His pastorate has been a very high success to the church in its temporal affairs, and in the arousal of the people to activity in Christian work. In the summer of 1880 the church building was greatly improved in appearance internally, being frescoed, supplied with stained-glass windows, and newly carpeted. The new chapel in the rear of the church, providing Sunday-school, lecture and ladies' rooms, and pastor's study, was built about the same time. The entire cost of these improvements and additions was about twenty thousand dollars. In 1883 a mortgage of ten thousand dollars, long resting on the parsonage property, was generously paid off by Mr. Walter W. Law, a member of the church. In 1884 the amount of ten thousand dollars was subscribed, the old manse removed, and a beautiful and commodious new one erected. The church property is beautifully located, all in perfect condition, and now wholly without incumbrance. The congregation is financially and socially one of the strongest, and the pastor is very popular in the pulpit and out of it. The people have many ways in which they display their activity and liberality in church and mission work, and they have been able to exert a great influence and accomplish a great deal of good. At the present time they are conducting with good success, a new mission work in the vicinity of Alexander Smith & Son's carpet-works, upon a street known as Moquette Row.

The following statistics of the church are furnished to us: The number of communicants in the spring of 1886 was four hundred and forty, and the number of Sunday-school teachers and scholars three hundred and forty-three. The present elders are William C. Foote, Samuel D. Rockwell, Lucius E. Clark, John W. Skinner, Walter Graves and Theodore Gilman. The deacons are John Thompson, G. Livingston Morse, E. B. Schoonmaker, A. H. Johnson, Robert M. Reeves and Thomas Adams. The trustees are G. Livingston Morse, Lucius E. Clark, John W. Rockwell, William Allen Butler, Jr., William B. Strang, Walter W. Law, John Olmsted, William P. Ketcham, Horace H. Thayer. The superintendent of the Sunday-school is W. W. Ellsworth.

The Sunday-school is a society supporting a missionary in the Northwest. The Ladies' Missionary Association, comprising the Foreign, Home and Local branches, is doing a noble work, in which it expends about seven or eight hundred dollars a year.

Westminster Presbyterian Church, on Warburton Avenue.—The history of this church, like those of nearly all the Yonkers churches already given, has been carefully and minutely written, and preserved in print. To the date of the laying of the corner-stone of the present church, May 20, 1880, we condense from valuable historic pamphlet, prepared by the Rev. Lewis W. Mudge and the Rev. John Dixon, two of the pastors, and bringing everything down to that day.

The church was organized February 3, 1858. It grew out of a nominally union, but really Presbyterian movement started as early as 1855. In that year, on the 16th of September, a mission Sunday-school was begun in Yonkers, just then formed into a village. It was held in the district school house and known as "The School Street Mission Sunday-School." Mr. Ebenezer Curtice was the superintendent, and Mr. John Davidson the assistant. It opened with ten scholars and five teachers. In May, 1856, Mr. Rollin A. Sawyer, of the Union Theological Seminary, was invited to act as missionary in connection with the school. By Christmas, 1856, the roll showed one hundred and fifty scholars and twenty-five teachers. On the 5th of April, 1857, the school was removed to Getty Lyceum, no room in the district school-house being large enough for it. Preaching began April 26, 1857, with about eighty hearers. On the 18th of October, Mr. Sawyer was employed as a stated supply, and from that time there were regular services. The first prayer-meeting was held at John Fisher's on Brook Street, with twenty-seven persons. The place of meeting became too small, and was changed to Grant's Hall, Guion Street. At Christmas, 1857, the school numbered two hundred and eighty-seven scholars and thirty-six teachers. The name was then changed to "The First Mission Sunday-School of Yonkers." During the summer and fall it had been visited with a great outpouring of the Spirit. There were many conversions and the ques-

tion what to do with the converts and inquirers was pressed on the teachers. A meeting was called January 19, 1858, to consider the subject. Fifteen persons, all but one teachers in the school, were present. It was the opinion of all that the circumstances called for a new organization, and the following resolutions were unanimously adopted, and signed with the accompanying names :

"Resolved, That we who are here present deem it our duty to form a new Presbyterian Church in Yonkers.

"Resolved, That we apply to the Third Presbytery of New York to effect the proposed organization.

"Resolved, That Messrs. John Davidson, Josiah Rich and Archibald Baxter be a committee to make application to the Rev. Dr. Hatfield, of New York City, to procure the necessary action of the said Presbytery.

"Resolved, That we, being members of the First Presbyterian Church, Yonkers, address the following communication to the pastor of said church: 'We, the undersigned, members of your church, deeming it to be our duty to form a new church in this village, respectfully request you to furnish us with the necessary letters of dismission.'

" ARCHIBALD BAXTER.	JESSIE BAXTER.
HENRY H. PARSONS.	EMELIE PARSONS.
JOSIAH RICH.	CARRIE M. RICH.
JOHN NAIRN.	JANET C. NAIRN.
JOHN DAVIDSON.	ANNE DAVIDSON.
H. A. UNDERWOOD.	EMMA P. UNDERWOOD.
DUNCAN C. RALSTON.	MARY RALSTON.
WILLIAM STEEDMAN.	MARION P. STEEDMAN."

To this, at an adjourned meeting, held January 20, 1858, there were added the names of Charlotte Baird and Lucy Marsh.

On January 25, 1858, the Third Presbytery of New York received and entertained the application, and on the 3d of February, 1858, the church was organized with the already named eighteen persons as members. Rev. D. B. Coe, D.D., presided, and organized the church under the name of the Westminster Church, Yonkers. Rev. D. M. Seward, D.D., Rev. V. M. Hulbert, D.D., and Dr. Kinsley also took part in the exercises of organization. A congregational meeting followed, when Messrs. Archibald Baxter, Henry A. Underwood and William Steedman were elected elders, the two latter receiving ordination, and Messrs. John Davidson and John Nairn were chosen deacons. Of the original eighteen, but three remain in the communion of the church at this day—Mr. Josiah Rich, Mrs. Charlotte Baird and Miss Lucy Marsh. As this history is to go on record, courtesy to other denominations demands some explanation of the fact that a union enterprise was so abruptly turned into a Presbyterian Church. The fact is it was never a union Sunday-school but in name. Its originators and supporters, its missionary and stated supply, and, as far as any record shows, every one of its teachers, were Presbyterian. If any members of other churches were connected with the school, the record shows conclusively that it was by accident of invitation or personal interest, and that no other than Presbyterians were ever connected with its support or control.

The church has had five pastors, including the present one, Rev. Charles P. Fagnani. We will name

them and then consider its history under the successive names,—Rev. Rollin A. Sawyer, Rev. Samuel T. Carter, Rev. Lewis W. Mudge, Rev. John Dixon, Rev. Charles P. Fagnani.

Rev. Rollin A. Sawyer (now Dr. Sawyer) was called February 11th, and ordained and installed February 17, 1858, the services being held in the Getty Lyceum. Rev. Mr. Sawyer, as already stated, had served as the missionary of the Sunday-school from May, 1856. The first work of the church, after its organization and the ordination and installation of a pastor, was to take care of the new converts already mentioned. The first who presented themselves were Mr. and Mrs. Frederick Lorenz. Thirty-two were added at the first communion, March 14, 1858, and the first year brought in a membership of one hundred and ten.

At a meeting held October 28, 1858, a resolution that it was expedient to build a house of worship was adopted, and a committee on building was appointed. In June, 1858, the congregation removed from Getty Square to a hall at the corner of North Broadway and Wells Avenue, known as "The Lecture-Room." In due time Messrs. Rich, Chamberlain and Lawrence gave ground for a church. The church was built, and on the first Sabbath in May, 1859, it was dedicated. It cost about eight thousand dollars of which a considerable amount remained as a debt at the time of the dedication. The earnest, beloved and successful pastor was, immediately after this event, laid aside by illness for four months. He succeeded in putting the church on a very firm foundation, and especially in starting it upon a very active career of home and benevolent work, but could not regain his physical health at the time, and finally, on the 3d of April, 1862, tendered his resignation. From the first Sabbath in July the pulpit was vacant till the 15th of October, 1862. Rev. Dr. Sawyer was subsequently pastor at Dayton, Ohio, and Greenwich, Conn., and is now pastor of the Gilead Church, at Carnel, N. Y. When he left the Westminster Church its membership was one hundred and thirty-seven.

Rev. Samuel Thompson Carter, a son of Mr. Robert Carter, the well-known publisher of New York City, was graduated at the New York University in 1858, and studied theology in Edinburgh, Scotland, and at Princeton, N. J. He was ordained and installed as pastor of this church November 13, 1862. The church, during Mr. Carter's pastorate, was for some time prosperous, and was especially noted for its delightful social character, to which the exceptionally amiable temperament and good judgment of the pastor gave great impulse. In time, however, owing to unhappy elements in the congregation, over which he had no control, a dissonance arose, and the pastor having no need to submit to what was growingly distasteful to his Christian heart, tendered his resignation April 9, 1867, and the pulpit was declared vacant April 21st. The disturbing persons were few, but just then strong. The congregation at large was devotedly attached to its pastor,

and warmly cherishes his memory still. Upon his departure, a large number of his friends withdrew from the communion of the church, and united with other churches of the village. At this date one hundred and fifty-five names were left on the membership roll, which, however, these withdrawals greatly reduced. The debt on the church was paid during Rev. Mr. Carter's pastorate. After he left Yonkers he was pastor of the Yorkville Presbyterian Church in New York City for two years. Then, in 1868, he became pastor of the Presbyterian Church of Huntington, L. I., where he still remains.

Rev. Lewis W. Mudge, son of a well-known and highly respected city missionary of Brooklyn, was graduated at the College of New Jersey in 1862, and at Princeton Theological Seminary in 1866. During his seminary study, which he continued for four years, he was a tutor in Greek in the college. He was ordained and installed as pastor of the Westminster Church on the 1st of August, 1867. On his arrival here he found the church scattered. The 155 enrolled members left by Rev. Mr. Carter had dwindled to 98. The expenses of the church stood at more than \$3000, while its income was but \$1040. A debt of \$3000 had accumulated. Rev. Mr. Mudge was courageous himself, and found the remaining people willing and hopeful. He possessed accomplishments, which became at once practicably available. Dismissing the precentor, who had been sustained at cost, he himself, a fine vocal and instrumental musician, managed his own musical service. The elements of the church were now thoroughly changed. All discordant parties left. The church became, and for many years continued to be, a missionary church. Rev. Mr. Mudge's pastorate extended over almost ten years. It ended May 6, 1877. He had a peculiar adaptation to the special mission of the church during his period, which was that of drawing, confirming and upbuilding. He gathered his people from the middle and poorer classes, and organized and trained them effectively. He had a very unusual power with young people, and a very kindly spirit towards other churches. Soon, with the assistance of excellent advisers and co-workers, he put the church on a sure and safe financial foundation, from which it has never moved. His ten years were crowded with clearly-planned and industriously executed work. With him, as with his successors, the Westminster Church grew to be what Yonkers people call a "working church." Its Sunday-school, its Young People's Association, its Industrial School, its work among the Germans and the colored people, its cottage prayer-meetings and its general mission work were all carried on with wonderful industry and success. The thought of building a new church, which was a necessity for the organization, occupied Rev. Mr. Mudge's time and thought very strongly, but the times from 1873 were adverse, and this work was left to his successor. Rev. Mr. Mudge was called in 1877 to the pastorate of the Second Presbyterian Church of

Princeton, N. J. His Yonkers pastorate was dissolved May 6, 1877. He still continues in his Princeton charge.

Rev. John Dixon was born in Canada, and was graduated from Princeton Theological Seminary in 1873. His first pastorate was of the First Presbyterian Church of Providence, R. I. He was installed pastor of the Westminster Presbyterian Church Oct. 11, 1877. At his coming there were two hundred and ninety members on the church roll. Rev. Mr. Dixon met the church and carried it forward on the high plane of efficiency it had reached under its preceding pastor. He was called from Yonkers in the summer of 1884 to the charge of the First Presbyterian Church of Trenton, N. J., where he now is. His Yonkers pastorate was nearly seven years in length. His general characteristics were earnestness, good judgment, financial skill, untiring industry and never-ceasing faithfulness. The church gathered strength apace during his period in every department of its work. While it maintained its missionary simplicity and thoughtful interest in the more depressed classes, and did every thing it could to lift them up socially as well as spiritually, it went further, and itself grew in social influence and in financial power. It is the great characteristic of this church that every one in it is drawn into some form of work for and with the church, and in this way becomes a constituent part of the church's working force. It did not have, for many years, the status and strength enjoyed by some of its neighboring churches. But it knows how to turn every one and every element in it to account, and the result is that it has become at last one of the very strongest churches in the city, and is becoming stronger every year.

The great event of Rev. Mr. Dixon's pastorate was the building of the new church. The foundation for this building was begun in the fall of 1879, and the corner-stone was laid May 20, 1880. It was dedicated in the fall of 1881. The cost of the building and ground, with that of the furniture, was about \$35,000, of which all except about \$5000 was paid during Mr. Dixon's pastorate. The church was built of gray stone, and had a seating capacity of five hundred. Its dimensions, with the lecture-room in the rear, were sixty-two by one hundred and seven feet. It was prepared for a gallery, but none was erected. The building was an ornament to the city and a great credit to the people. The site on Warburton Avenue is nearly opposite to that of the first house. Its internal arrangements, both of church and lecture-room, were unique, but very attractive, and admirably adapted to the work of the pastor and people. The Sunday school of the church was always large and a model of organization and working plan. The church services were well attended and so was the prayer-meeting. There was a large opening future before this active church; but the fine building was destined to be destroyed.

Rev. Charles P. Fagnani is on his father's side of

Italian and on his mother's side of New England descent. He was born in New York City and was graduated at its City College and its Union Theological Seminary. For two years before coming to Yonkers he was employed by the Fourth Avenue Presbyterian Church (Dr. Howard Crosby's) as missionary in charge of its Grace Mission Chapel. He was installed in the spring of 1885, and though recently started on his Yonkers charge, had made a most excellent impression for devotedness to his work, and for ability to present truth with clearness, conciseness and power. Under his ministry the church was continuing its activity in every good work, when to the great grief of his people and of the whole city, his health gave way. It soon became apparent that considerable time would be required for his restoration. In March, 1886, his people tendered to him a vacation of indefinite length, with a continuance of his salary. He is away from Yonkers now. It is hoped that his recovery will be speedy and permanent. Shortly after his departure on his vacation, the Westminster Church took fire from a defect in its heating apparatus, and the interior of its auditorium, and also that of its lecture room, were destroyed. The fire occurred on the morning of the Sabbath day, April 30, 1886. Providentially the loss was covered by a sufficient insurance. The work of restoring was begun promptly and will soon be finished. Improvements will be made in the Church with the reconstruction, and it will be more liberally fitted up for its growing work than it was before.

The elders of the church are James Biggerstaff, John H. Brown, William McKim, J. R. McWilliam, Charles R. Otis, Ralph E. Prime, John T. Sproull, and the deacons are Alexander O. Kirkwood, Arthur T. Machin, Morton W. Newman, William L. Odell. The trustees are William L. Odell, president; Walter Thomas, clerk; Edgar Jewell, William McKim, R. Beattie Brown, Charles R. Otis, Norton P. Otis, C. Wormersley and William H. Scott. The superintendent of the Sunday-school is Mr. Ralph E. Prime. The number of its officers and teachers is forty-four, and that of its scholars on the roll is four hundred and eighty-three.

Dayspring Presbyterian Church, Walnut Street and Oliver Avenue. The following facts are mostly obtained from the pastor, Rev. Mr. Allison: During many years previous to 1872 the public religious services east of Walnut Street, on Nodine Hill, consisted chiefly of cottage prayer-meetings, held at the house of Mr. Solomon Corsa and at other private houses. In the spring of 1857 open-air services were conducted by the Rev. Robert Kirkwood, a Presbyterian minister, of whom we give some account in another part of our work. The Rev. Pelatiah Ward, a Methodist clergyman, was associated with him in his labors. The Rev. Mr. Ward was killed at the head of his company at the second battle of Bull Run.

In 1864 Judge T. Astley Atkins, Mr. John N. Stearnes and Mr. Britton Richardson, members of the Episcopal Church, invited Mr. John McCoy, who then lived in New York, to become City missionary in Yonkers. Mr. McCoy accepted their invitation and was at work in that capacity when a Yonkers Home Missionary Society was formed. That society, organized October 4, 1865, was composed of representatives of seven churches, viz.: the two Episcopal, the Reformed, the two Presbyterian, the Methodist and the Baptist. Mr. McCoy was employed by it. In 1868-69 Mr. A. V. Wittmeyer, a student in Union Theological Seminary, was also at work in Yonkers under the society. Both Mr. McCoy and Mr. Wittmeyer, in the prosecution of their work, were welcomed as workers by many residents on the east side of the city.

In 1866 the Westminster Presbyterian Church engaged Mrs. Elizabeth Russell as Bible-reader. She established a cottage prayer-meeting on Nodine Hill. The number of houses in that section at the time was fifty-two, "one for each Sabbath in the year." In 1867 the Rev. Lewis W. Mudge, pastor of the Westminster Presbyterian Church, took charge of the meetings, and for several years was seldom absent. Upwards of thirty or forty were received into the communion of the Westminster Church as the fruits of this meeting.

On the 2d of October, 1871, the First Presbyterian Church organized a Home Missionary Society, which, on November 16, 1871, decided to erect a house of worship on Nodine Hill. "Dayspring Chapel" was adopted as the name of the new building (See Luke i. 79). It was dedicated on Sunday afternoon, April 28, 1872. After an invocation, reading of the Scriptures, and prayer by the Rev. Henry M. Baird, D.D., Mr. Charles Lockwood, who for many years had been deeply interested in and identified with the religious work on Nodine Hill, read a historical sketch. The hymn, "All hail the power of Jesus' name" was sung, after which the Rev. T. Ralston Smith, D.D., pastor of the First Presbyterian Church, delivered an address and then the chapel was formally dedicated.

After the singing of a beautiful hymn, written for the occasion, an address was delivered by Mr. William Allen Butler, the chairman of the executive committee of the First Presbyterian Church Missionary Association.

On the 26th of May, 1872, at the close of the afternoon service in the chapel, the Dayspring Sunday-school was organized, with thirty-one scholars on the roll. Messrs. Charles Lockwood, Richard Wynkoop, J. T. Travis, W. C. Foote, John W. Skinner, John Edwards, Arthur Hay, Mrs. M. C. Hughes, Miss Irene Newell, Miss Helen Foote, Miss Annie E. Smith and Miss Annie Phillips offered their services as teachers. Mr. Charles Lockwood was elected superintendent and Mr. Arthur Hay secretary and librarian. Early in 1873, Mr. A. J. Titsworth, a senior in

Union Theological Seminary, preached in the chapel. On the 27th of April, 1873, Mr. C. E. Allison, a student in the same seminary, preached and soon after was placed in charge of the work by the First Church Missionary Association.

The year of the building of the chapel was followed by seven years of plenty. In 1875, through the liberality of Mr. William Allen Butler, Mr. Walter W. Law, Mr. Henry M. Schieffelin, Mr. L. E. Clark, Mr. Charles Lockwood and others, the building was enlarged and a belfry erected. On the bell which was placed in it is the inscription—"Let him that heareth say come."

So rapid was the growth of religious interest among the residents on the east side of the city, and so continually "the foot of the reaper trod on the heel of the sower," that in the spring of 1879 steps were taken to organize a church. On April 13th the executive committee of the First Church Association passed the following preamble and resolution:

"Whereas The congregation worshipping in Day-Spring Chapel has paid off the mortgage on the lots on which the chapel stands, and now proposes to apply to the Presbytery of Westchester for organization as a church;

"Resolved That the committee hereby approves of such application, and in case the same is granted by the Presbytery, will recommend to the Missionary Association of the First Presbyterian Church of Yonkers to vest in the church to be so organized all its property on Nodine Hill so long as it shall be used as a Presbyterian Church."

At a meeting of the Presbytery of Westchester, held at Stamford, Conn., April 15, 1879, an application for a church organization was presented in behalf of the congregation worshipping in Dayspring Chapel, Yonkers, N. Y. On the 21st of April, 1879, the church extension committee of the Presbytery met in Yonkers, at the residence of Mr. Charles Lockwood, Palisade Avenue, and in the evening repaired to Dayspring Chapel, when the church was organized with a membership of ninety four. The members of the committee of Presbytery who participated in the services were the Rev. Dr. Phraner, of Sing Sing, the Rev. Dr. Baird, of Rye, the Rev. A. R. Macoubrey, of Brewster's, and Elder Wells, of Peekskill. Mr. C. E. Allison read the names of those who had been dismissed from other churches in order to organize a new church. As the names were read the members arose. After the ordination of elders and deacons, addresses were delivered. Mr. Charles Lockwood referred to the rare blessings the chapel had enjoyed, and Elder Wm. C. Foote said—"When an affectionate mother gives her daughter at the marriage altar to another, she does not cease to love her. The mother-church will not cease to watch with affectionate interest this Dayspring Presbyterian Church, the child of her prayers and love. Indeed, were I to give you one word as a motto, it would be the word commended by an aged apostle—*Love*. 'Little children, love one another.' Cultivate the Christian grace of charity. Most heartily can I, in behalf of the First Church, congratulate you upon the auspicious begin-

ning of your independent church life." The benediction was pronounced by the Rev. Henry M. Baird, D.D., of Yonkers. So was planted in the eastern quarter of the city, towards the sun-rising, a golden candlestick to hold up, for years to come, the light of the Gospel, to bless the present generation and to illuminate the hearts of children and children's children. From the date of the erection of the Dayspring Chapel to that of the organization of the Dayspring Presbyterian Church, the First Church expended about seventeen thousand dollars in fostering the work. Among the most liberal contributors were Messrs. Henry M. Schieffelin, Wm. Allen Butler, Charles Lockwood, L. E. Clark, W. W. Law, Ethan Flagg and R. W. Bogart. Mr. Wm. R. Mott served the association efficiently as treasurer. One of the most active and beloved friends of the east side work was Mr. P. Kelly, who continued to promote its interests down to 1882, the year of his death.

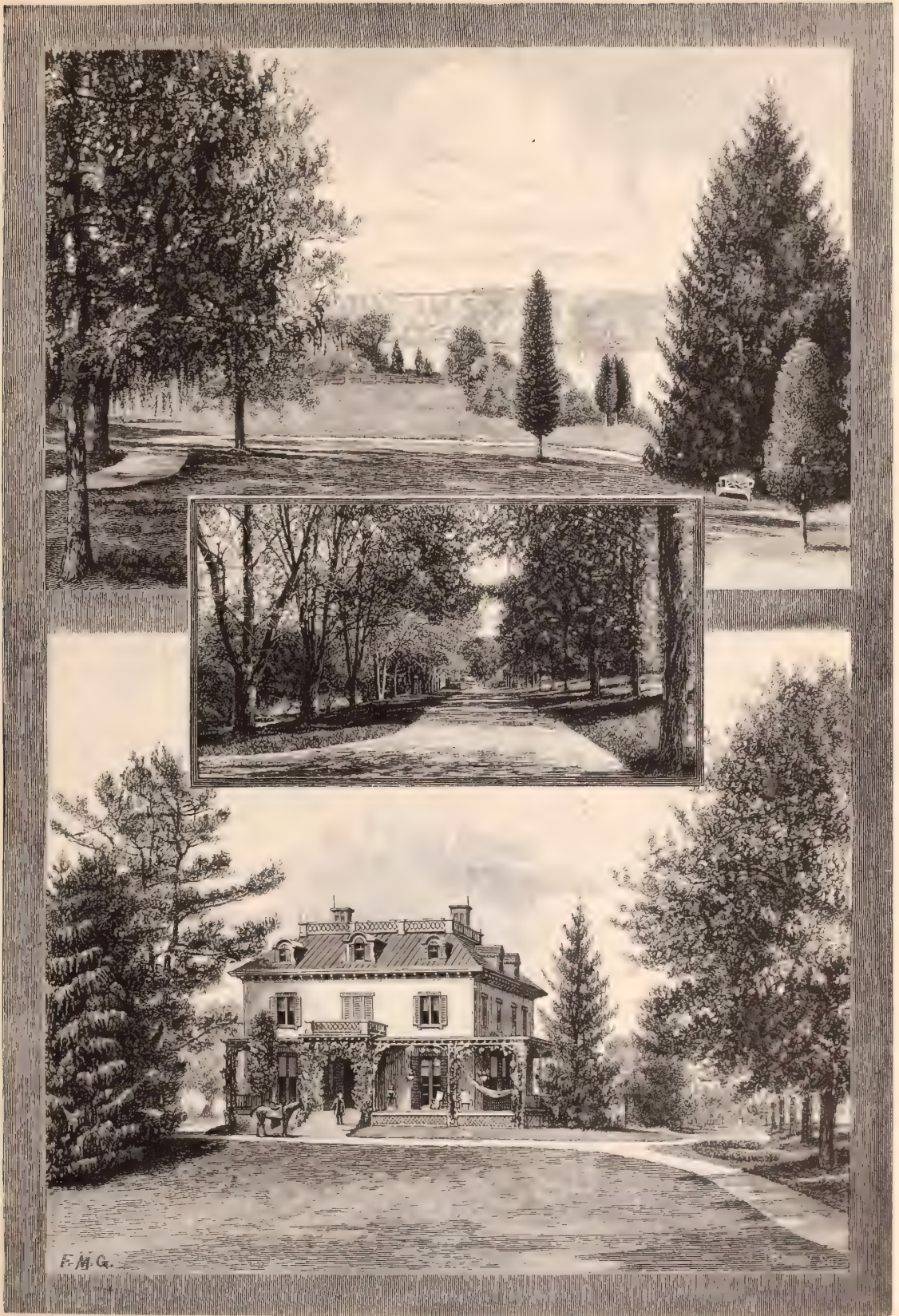
The church has enjoyed gracious revivals since its organization, and is now recognized as one of the most flourishing and useful of the Yonkers churches. The growth of the Sunday-school has been largely due to the liberality and fidelity of Mr. Charles Lockwood, who has been its superintendent since its organization in 1872. The large infant class, which for several years was efficiently taught by Miss Ida Belknap, is one of the most interesting Sunday-school classes in the city. The prosperity of the vigorous Young People's Association is largely due to Mr. William Smith. Doubtless in the near future another and more commodious edifice will be erected to meet the requirements of the growing congregation.

The first elders of the church were William Bates, Thomas Moore and H. H. Ferguson; and the first deacons were Alfred Hill, Samuel Granger and William Smith. The present elders are William Smith, Thomas Moore and John Cutbill. Samuel J. Berrian, Thomas Hope and Ogden M. Wilson have also served the church as deacons.

The members of the first board of trustees were Charles R. Culver, Thomas F. Hope, Samuel J. Berrian, Charles H. Pease, Joshua Smith, Benjamin Sutherland, John A. Smith, Leonard Mapes and John F. Poole. Since the organization and incorporation of the church Messrs. Samuel Granger, William Wharmby, Charles Conklin, John H. Cutbill, James McGraw, William C. Blackett, William Bromley, Robert L. Field, Alfred Hill, John Craft and Thomas D. Mitchell have served as trustees for one term or more. Mr. Charles R. Culver was the faithful treasurer of the church from its organization to May, 1884. He was succeeded by the present treasurer, Mr. William Smith.

The number of members of the church in 1885 is one hundred and sixty, and the number of scholars enrolled in the Sunday-school is two hundred and fifty-one.

We add, respecting the Rev. Charles Elmer Allison,



"ASHTON."

RESIDENCE OF H. MAUNSELL SCHIEFFELIN,
YONKERS, N. Y.

pastor of the church from its organization, that he was born near Amity, Orange County, N. Y. He was prepared for college at Chester Academy, Chester, N. Y., and was graduated at Hamilton College in 1870, and at the Union Theological Seminary in 1874. He was licensed to preach by the Presbytery of Hudson, in session at Middletown, Orange County, N. Y., and was ordained at Yonkers on the 30th of April, 1879. On the same day he was installed pastor of the Dayspring Presbyterian Church, to which he had been called April 24th, having previously preached in the chapel six years. In his twelve years of labor in Yonkers, Rev. Mr. Allison has been a most active, zealous and popular minister and a most effective and successful worker. In the pulpit he is clear, direct and impressive. All his sermons and addresses are warm and magnetic. He is a close student and a good thinker, and above all he is noted for a kind heart, and for a profound interest in all that belongs to the highest needs of the people. Too much cannot be said for his devotion to his work, and its useful results to his own church and to the city. He is always ready to respond to calls for service, and is especially acceptable as a reader and speaker in every social gathering that may be held.

THE UNITARIANS--*Hope Unitarian Church, on North Broadway.*—We have its history from a former pastor, Rev. Mr. Stowell. The First Unitarian Congregational Church of Yonkers had its beginning in a call, which was issued on the 30th of June, 1856, desiring all those interested in the cause of liberal Christianity to meet for religious services in the Getty Lyceum on the 6th of July following. The originators of the movement were Gilman Dudley, Gorham Parks, George Macadam, James M. Drake and Cyrus Cleveland.

These invitations were printed and sent to such families in Yonkers, Riverdale, Spuyten Duyvil, Fort Washington, Hastings and Irvington as were known to have been reared in the Unitarian faith, or were supposed to have Unitarian leanings.

The result was a gathering of about two hundred people to hear the first Unitarian sermon ever preached in Yonkers. It was delivered by the Rev. Samuel S. Osgood, D.D., then pastor of the Church of the Messiah, in New York.

The services were continued each Sabbath morning in the Lyceum, with the assistance of various clergymen, until the first Sabbath of September, when they ceased for several months. In the following spring, application being again made for the use of the Lyceum, it was found that it had been engaged for fortnightly services by the Universalists. The Unitarians then engaged it for alternate Sabbaths, and the two bodies generally attended both meetings. In the autumn the services were once more discontinued.

In the spring of 1858 St. Paul's Episcopal Church was formed, and, that church taking the Lyceum for the year round, the Unitarians were compelled to

look elsewhere. At the same time the still feeble organization met with a severe blow in the sudden death of one of its chief pillars of strength, George Macadam, a noble, true and earnest young man, who had endeared himself not only to the members of this church, but to all who knew him. This loss arrested further effort for a time. After a little period, however, Rev. A. A. Livermore, D.D., editor of the *New York Christian Inquirer*, came to Yonkers to live, and kindly offered his services to the society. As no hall could be procured, Dr. Livermore began preaching at the houses of some of the members. From the difficulty about a hall, the society was soon relieved by the kindness of a Presbyterian minister, Rev. Mr. Cook, who was conducting a boys' school at the corner of Broadway and Hudson Street, and who offered the use of his school-room to the congregation without cost, and himself several times preached very acceptably to those who assembled in it. The society soon afterwards succeeded in securing Flagg's Hall, on Palisade Avenue, corner of Mechanic (now New Main) Street, where it worshipped till the present church building was erected, in 1858. The society was incorporated under the laws of the State of New York, and the Rev. Dr. Livermore was duly installed as its pastor.

The church edifice was designed by Mr. J. Wray Mould. It was built by Baldwin & Bradley, masons, and Ackert & Quick, carpenters, and John McLean was the painter and decorator. It was dedicated on the 30th of December, 1861, Rev. Henry W. Bellows, D.D., Rev. Samuel S. Osgood, D.D., and Rev. O. B. Frothingham, of New York, Rev. Frederick A. Farley, D.D., and Rev. N. A. Staples, of Brooklyn, and others taking part in the services.

Dr. Livermore resigned the pastorate in August, 1863, to accept the presidency of the theological school at Meadville, Pa.

In June of 1864, Rev. Israel F. Williams was chosen pastor, but on the very day that had been appointed for his ordination he died from exhaustion and a fever he had contracted while in the service of the Sanitary Commission.

The later pastors have been Rev. Joseph May, from July, 1865, to August, 1867; Rev. Rushton D. Burr, from June, 1868, to June, 1877; Rev. George L. Stowell, from December, 1880, to 1884; and Rev. John Heddaeus, from 1884 to 1886. The church is now without a pastor.

In the interval of three years between the pastorates of the Rev. Mr. Burr and the Rev. Mr. Stowell the services were chiefly conducted by the laymen, Messrs. Duncan Smith and Fisher A. Baker. Printed sermons were read each Sabbath from the works of Channing, Orville Dewey, Freeman Clarke, Phillips Brooks, Norman McLeod, Dean Stanley, F. W. Robertson and others.

The society celebrated its twenty-fifth anniversary July 6, 1881, at the house of Mr. Thomas F. Gane.

During the war this church contributed very generously to the Sanitary Commission, and after the war it maintained for three years a teacher at the South for the education of the freedmen.

THE LUTHERAN—*St. John's German Evangelical Lutheran Church, on Hudson Street.*—The early history of this church and of the first unsuccessful attempt to start a German Church in Yonkers is given in a printed pamphlet, containing the history of the Westminster Presbyterian Church, under the heading, "Work among the Germans." The following facts have been obtained from Rev. Frederick W. Foehlinger, the present pastor:

The first pastor of the church was the Rev. J. H. Sommer, who came from Hastings to take the position. His pastorate began near the end of 1870 and ended December 1, 1872. The first baptism by him was that of a child, named Marie Johanna Gugel, September 11, 1870. Rev. Mr. Sommer was afterwards stationed in Brooklyn, having his residence, in 1884, at 281 Prospect Avenue. His successor was the Rev. Leo Koenig, whose pastorate lasted from December 1, 1872, to December 1, 1877. Mr. Koenig was born in Germany. On coming to this country he studied theology at the Lutheran Seminary, in Philadelphia. Yonkers was his first field of labor. After leaving it he went to Syracuse, N. Y., and afterwards to New York City, where he is stationed now, his residence being 80 West Twelfth Street.

The Rev. Arminius Volquarts succeeded the Rev. Mr. Koenig, and was pastor from December, 1877, to November, 1878. After leaving Yonkers, Mr. Volquarts was stationed at Egg Harbor, N. J., where he died March 11, 1882, at the age of thirty-seven years and two months.

The Rev. Frederick William Foehlinger was Mr. Volquarts' successor and is now pastor of the church. He was born in Rhenish Prussia, near Coblenz, was educated at the University of Bonn, and after coming to this country, in 1848, studied for the ministry in the Lutheran Seminary at Fort Wayne, Ind. For five years after his graduation he was Professor of Doctrinal Theology ("Symbolics," as the Germans designate it) in this seminary. In 1857 he became pastor of the Trinity German Lutheran Church, corner of Avenue Band and East Ninth Street, New York City, and in 1872 pastor of Emanuel German Lutheran Church, on Eighty-third Street, near Third Avenue, in the same city. From the last church he came to his present charge.

The church is a small brick structure with a single auditorium, and stands at No. 46 Hudson Street, near the corner of Hawthorne Avenue. It was erected in 1874. For over a year before it was ready for use the congregation had held its services in the chapel of St. John's Episcopal Church. The present number of members is one hundred and twenty. The value of the church property is \$12,000. The Sunday-school in connection with the church has one hundred

scholars on its rolls, and sixteen officers and teachers, six of the latter being ladies and ten of them gentlemen. Wm. Beutler is the superintendent.

The officers of the church are—Elders, Gerhart Klotte, Charles Scheek, John Hailfinger and Henry Dietrich; Trustees, Frederick Grieder, Secretary, Henry Meinhardt, John Hitzelberger and William Beutler.

Wood Hill Union Chapel.—This chapel is about three miles out from Getty Square, on the Saw-Mill River road.

A Sunday-school was started in 1864 by Mr. Henry B. Odell, in the dining-room of his cottage on Wood Hill, near the site of the present chapel. Eight or ten scholars were present on the first day. The attendance gradually increased, and the place of meeting was after some time changed by Mr. Odell to an out-building which was larger than the dining-room and was used by him as a kitchen and laundry. The Rev. Thomas R. G. Peck, then pastor of the Reformed Church at Hastings, became very much interested in the work at Wood Hill, and volunteered as the leader of religious services on Sabbath evenings. His offer was eagerly embraced, and for a number of years he continued to perform this duty. The interest of Yonkers ministers and of many Yonkers laymen, prominent in church work, was also enlisted, and very frequently evening services were conducted by one or more of them at Rev. Mr. Peck's request.

The attendance soon so increased that the building became too small to hold the people. Frequently a portion of the audience was compelled to listen from the outside through the open windows of the building. This suggested an effort to build a chapel. Mr. Odell gave about a quarter of an acre of ground as a site, and two neighborhood fairs were held and were very successful. The first netted about twelve hundred dollars. The building of a small chapel was in due time begun, and, by the aid of further fairs and entertainments, was completed and paid for, its cost being about three thousand dollars. It was opened without formal dedication about four years after the start of the Sunday-school.

Services were held in the chapel by various pastors and laymen for a number of years, the Rev. Mr. Peck being the usual leader. The first trustees were Luther Chambers, John B. Wells, James Varian, Daniel Curry and Henry B. Odell. For a long time the interest in the chapel was great. The Sunday-school grew to one hundred and twenty-five scholars, and the audience reached an average of one hundred and fifty. Once a month a service of song was given, at which addresses were made. At various seasons fairs or entertainments were held, the receipts from which were devoted to the payment of the expenses of the chapel services and school.

About 1875 a change began in the neighborhood. For a time, probably owing to the building of the New York City and Northern Railroad, it became

unhealthy and was largely forsaken by its people. This visitation has now long since passed away, but at the time it was paralyzing to the chapel services. Rev. Mr. Peck also, about this time, ceased to lead the movements, which was a very severe loss. A number of the supporters of the work, and among them Mr. Odell himself, its projector, moved away. For two or three years after this the chapel was closed. In 1881 Mr. William Allen Butler, Jr., conducted a Sunday-school for the summer, but again the house was closed for the winter for want of means to carry it on. In 1883 and 1884 Mr. H. C. Fuller carried on a Sunday-school during the summer months. The building continues, however, to be closed during the winters. At present no services are held in it at all.

Mile Square Union Sunday-School.—The history of the early reservation, known as Mile Square, has been given in the former part of this work. The locality still retains its ancient name. It lies on the Bronx River and about half-way between the Yonkers and Mount Vernon Churches. Till 1868 it was not made by any church or churches a special field for Christian work. This was partly because its families were comparatively few and partly because what families it had were most of them connected with the churches named. In 1868 Mrs. J. M. Hunter and Mrs. Isaac S. Valentine, the former of the First Presbyterian Church and the latter of the Reformed Church of Yonkers, interested themselves in the children of the sparse settlement, who were without religious instruction, and opened an afternoon Sunday-school in the district school-house of the place. Both were aided by the young people of their families who were themselves also members of the churches named. The Sunday-school they began is still in existence, and its services are still conducted on the plan adopted at the beginning. At one time the average attendance of children was about fifty. But the neighborhood, instead of growing, lost in members, and the scholars are now not so many. The school was always a Union School, although about three-fourths of its teachers were members of Reformed Churches. From a series of fairs a fund amounting to about one thousand dollars was obtained, which is to be used, whenever the suitable time may come, in providing this school with a building of its own. Mr. Isaac S. Valentine was the first superintendent of the school, but Mr. Marcus Clements, of Mount Vernon, is now the superintendent, having filled the position very many years.

Mrs. Isaac S. Valentine began as early as 1870 to plan for preaching services in the neighborhood. She opened her own parlor for these services, which, by her invitation, were conducted by her own pastor, the Rev. Dr. Cole of the Reformed Church of Yonkers, on two or three occasions, beginning with September 13, 1870. This very excellent lady, however, at this very time was rapidly declining

under a consumption, which terminated her life on the 25th of February, 1871. Mrs. Hunter soon after removed from Mile Square, and the idea of preaching services was not, by any resident of the Square, afterward renewed. Subsequently, in 1875, Rev. Dr. Cole, having a few of his church families in the neighborhood, himself proposed to begin, without cost to the people, regular monthly preaching services in the district school-house. He invited the Rev. Mancius H. Hutton, of the Mount Vernon Reformed Church, to join with him in this movement, so that between the two, preaching services might be held every fortnight. Rev. Mr. Hutton, not feeling equal to the strain of preaching three times a day, did not enter into such engagement, but preached occasionally notwithstanding. Rev. Dr. Cole held his first service on Sabbath evening, April 18, 1875, and continued to preach in the school-house once a month for the next six years, holding his last service on Sabbath evening, January 16, 1881. The meetings through most of this period were well sustained and often very warm. On Sabbath evening, March 25, 1877, after the benediction had been pronounced, one or two persons earnestly requested prayer for themselves. In an instant the movement extended to fifteen or twenty, and the Holy Spirit fell upon those present with great power. The result was a considerable ingathering of precious souls by surrounding churches. Toward the close of the six years, however, the financial pressure of 1873-80 was found to have nearly destroyed the neighborhood. The taxes upon the farms were so heavy that many were bankrupted, and population was in this way driven out. In some spots several houses, one after another, were left vacant. The meetings became so reduced that it was determined to discontinue them, especially as nearly all who attended them were connected with churches in the vicinity. Many persons had co-operated with Rev. Dr. Cole, among whom Mr. John Thurton and Mr. Marcus Clements, members of the Reformed Church of Mount Vernon, were prominent. In 1878 and 1879, as stated above, a fund of one thousand dollars was raised for building purposes. This is still on hand, to be used when thought best, for the starting of some movement which it is hoped will prove permanent. The rapid outgrowth of New York City will no doubt soon be felt by this locality. It may not be long before the money will be called into requisition and the work will be begun.

SECTION XIII.

The City Newspapers.

We have seen that population did not begin to gather with much strength on Yonkers ground till within about thirty-seven years. The comparative recency of the settlement makes the history of Yonkers newspapers a brief one. The papers of the place which date from furthest back, and have a really es-

tablished foothold, are two only,—“*The Yonkers Gazette*,” the older of the two, published weekly, and “*The Yonkers Statesman*,” which issues both a weekly and a daily edition. The *Gazette* is published on Saturday and the *Weekly Statesman* on Friday. We give a brief history of each of these papers.

THE YONKERS GAZETTE.—In 1852, three years before the date of the village incorporation, Thomas Towndrow, a collector of Westchester County news for the New York papers, came to Yonkers one day in search of items. Mr. Thomas C. Cornell, on whom he called, asked him why a newspaper could not be started in Yonkers. He caught at the question and the result was that in a few days thereafter he himself came to the place, bringing Thomas Smith with him as his printer and associate, and began a paper under the name of *The Yonkers Herald*. The two soon disagreeing over business questions, Mr. Towndrow withdrew and left the paper to Mr. Smith, who published it alone for some years as editor and proprietor. In the spring of 1864 it was purchased from him¹ by the “Yonkers Democratic Publishing Association,” and was for a short time edited by E. K. Olmsted and J. G. P. Holden together. Mr. Olmsted soon leaving it to assume an editorial position on the *New York Journal of Commerce*, Mr. Holden after his departure became the responsible editor.

Mr. Holden’s connection with the paper dates from its first number under the Democratic Publishing Association, which was issued May 7, 1864.

With the paper of June 4, 1864, the name was changed to *The Gazette*.

From and including the issue of March 4, 1865, to and including that of March 31, 1866, Henry B. Dawson of Morrisania, the historian, was editor of the paper, Mr. Holden being associate editor and business manager. During this period the historical genius of Mr. Dawson was strongly impressed upon the paper, and it became especially useful to historians through its publication of the famous “Gazette Series,” afterwards collected and published in a limited number of copies, which were sold at a hundred dollars each and have since been noted for their value as volumes for reference. This value will probably increase as years go on.

With the issue of May 6, 1866, Mr. Holden assumed the sole editorial control of the *Gazette*, which he has since maintained without interruption. On the 15th of the same month its title was lengthened to *The Yonkers Gazette*, and by this name it has become widely known. During 1866, Mr. Holden secured a controlling interest in the stock, and soon after bought

out the balance. Since that he has been sole owner as well as editor, and in his hands the paper has obtained a national reputation as one of the brightest and most readable of the local weeklies published in the country. The paper has been enlarged four times since May, 1864, and is now a folio of nine columns to the page. Politically it is Democratic, but has been independent in its treatment of all general subjects arising from time to time before the press.

Mr. J. G. P. Holden, the genial editor and proprietor of the *Yonkers Gazette*, was born at Poughkeepsie, Dutchess County, N. Y., August 22, 1834, being the eldest son of Thomas and Sarah Parker Holden. After a good common-school education he was graduated at the Quintilian Seminary, Poughkeepsie, then under the directorship of Rev. Eliphaz Fay. From school-life he at once entered upon a thorough preparation for that vocation in life which he has since so highly honored, taking a position as “devil” in the office of the Poughkeepsie *Telegraph*, September 2, 1850, and, through six years of faithful application, working his way step by step to a mastery not only of the practical requirements of newspaper work, but to editorial fitness as well. During this time he also served two years as assistant postmaster of Poughkeepsie (under the administration of Franklin Pierce), and in the summer of 1858 went to New York City for a brief season of work on the *Journal of Commerce*. Returning to Poughkeepsie in November of the same year, he connected himself with the *Daily Press* as local editor and cashier, and in April, 1859, bought a fourth interest in the same, his associate publishers being A. S. Pease and J. W. Spaight. From this time until the spring of 1863 Mr. Holden continued (barring a short service as reporter and proof-reader on the *New York Sun*) his association with the Poughkeepsie *Press*, but, in May of this year, formed a copartnership with J. H. Hager for the establishment of the *Daily Poughkeepsian*. With this venture his interests were allied until the close of 1863, and in the following spring, having disposed of his interest in the *Poughkeepsian*, he responded to a telegram from Elon Comstock, Esq., at that time one of the proprietors of the *New York World*, requesting his coming to Yonkers to take charge of the *Yonkers Herald*, as business manager and local editor. With this paper—the name of which was shortly after changed to the *Yonkers Gazette*—Mr. Holden has ever since been connected, having been its editor since March, 1866, and, during most of the time, its sole proprietor. It is his conduct of this paper which has proven his eminent fitness for his calling, the fame of the *Gazette* being world-wide, not only for its elevated tone, versatility and humor, but for its splendid make-up and typographical beauty. To every element of this success Mr. Holden has contributed his genius, personally overlooking the weekly arrangement of its forms, and imparting to its letter-press not only much of editorial force and effectiveness, but no

¹ Thus, in 1864, the original *Yonkers Herald* passed from the hands of Thomas Smith. Mr. Smith, however, remained in Yonkers and followed the business of printing. In May, 1866, he began a publication under the name of *The Yonkers Herald*, and later he again for a long time published a paper called *The Yonkers Herald*. Mr. Smith was widely known, and exercised a considerable influence for many years among politicians. He died in Yonkers in August, 1874.



J. G. P. Holden.

little of that pungency which has given the *Gazette* place in the front rank of entertaining journals. As a writer of political editorials, he excels in that power of concentration which is especially effective, and as one of the original paragraphers (in which sphere his *nom de plume* of Nonpareil Quadrat, X. P. D., is so well known) he yet gives the sparkle of wit to many brief comments on the news and foibles of the day. His quick conception, too, of humor and sentiment in others has been of rare service in brightening the weekly issues of his paper, and, as "Ralph Redwood," he has for a long time demonstrated this by "Diamonds of Thought," mined from the best current literature. His interest in New York journalism is attested by his many years' membership in the New York Press Association, to the promotion of whose success he has given much time and labor, and by which he has been consecutively honored as secretary, vice-president and president.

Mr. Holden's public-spiritedness has been manifest throughout his career. At Poughkeepsie he was for eight years an active member of the Fire Department and one of the organizers of the Ellsworth Greys, an independent military company formed on receipt of the news of the tragic death of Colonel Elmer Ellsworth, which company (attached to the Twenty-first Regiment New York National Guards) served three months during the War of the Rebellion. In Yonkers he was an original member of the Palisade Boat Club; trustee, eleven years secretary and now vice-president of the People's Savings-Bank; allied himself with Nepperhan Lodge, No. 736, F. and A. M.; and became member of the board of directors of the Free Reading-Room. Although he has never been an office-seeker, the Democratic party (of which he has always been a consistent supporter) has made repeated recognition of his valuable services, he being, in turn, chosen as town clerk, village clerk and city treasurer, having been appointed to the last office by Mayor William G. Stahlnecker, and duly confirmed and installed March 11, 1885, and reappointed by Mayor Bell, May 24, 1886.

Although not a professor of religion, Mr. Holden has been for thirty years a pew-holder in the Baptist Church and a firm believer in its doctrines, this belief being, perhaps, an inheritance from his maternal grandfather, George Parker, of Lancashire, England, who left his country because of religious persecution, and established at Poughkeepsie the first Baptist Society in that part of this country. In November, 1864, Mr. Holden was married to Miss Maria E. Le Count, of Brooklyn, who, with the three children born to them,—Edwin R., George P. and Mary,—shares with him the comforts of their charming Yonkers home. This happy alliance has added not a little to the elements of Mr. Holden's success, steadfast encouragement and wise counsel having emphasized the industry, business alertness, intelligence

and sound judgment that have contributed to win for him the fair fame which is now his popular award.

THE YONKERS STATESMAN.—In 1856, one year after the incorporation of the village, and four years after the beginning of *The Yonkers Herald*, Mr. Thomas C. Cornell, whose passing question had been the means of bringing that paper into existence, not being in sympathy with the political direction given to it by Mr. Smith, united with others in the effort to start a Whig journal. At the time the new law-firm of Stedwell & Mann, had just been formed in the village. Mr. Jeremiah H. Stedwell, one of the gentlemen interested in the project, brought to Yonkers to edit such a journal, his friend Mr. Matthew F. Rowe, who was publishing a paper at the time in Peekskill. On the 23d of February, 1856, Mr. Rowe issued the first number of a weekly paper under the name of *The Examiner*. The population of the town at the time was seven thousand five hundred and fifty-four. Mr. Rowe ran the paper as a personal enterprise till 1863. About 1861, however, another weekly, called *The Clarion*, had been started. In 1863 the *Examiner* and the *Clarion* were both purchased by Everett Clapp, Justus Lawrence, G. Hilton Scribner and others. Both names were dropped, and a paper was started with Mr. Rowe as the editor, and *The Yonkers Statesman* as the name. This arrangement continued until October, 1864, when Justus Lawrence and Matthew F. Rowe became the proprietors. In 1869 Mr. Rowe became the sole owner. In 1872 John W. Oliver was engaged as associate editor, and in that capacity first and as editor afterwards, he continued till April, 1881, when the paper was purchased by the "Yonkers Publishing Company," a corporation organized under the laws of the State with a cash capital of ten thousand dollars. By this company Mr. Oliver was engaged and continues to be employed as editor and publisher. He was for many years a printer in the city of New York, and, of course, is thoroughly familiar with the working details of the printing department. He has been prominent in politics, is a keen observer of passing events, municipal, State and national, and though now over seventy years of age, maintains a physical and mental vitality and vivacity which insure a wide-awake paper with every issue. It is worthy of note that he was the original founder of the order known as the "Sons of Temperance" in this country.

On the 10th of November, 1883, the first number of *The Yonkers Daily Statesman* was issued. It is now in its third year. It contains the telegraphic despatches of the New York Associated Press, reports of the markets, and full county and local news. From the beginning it has been a marked success. It is the only daily paper published in Westchester County.

Though Republican in politics, the *Statesman* is outspoken in the interests of the people, and so speaks on all subjects as to maintain a due independ-

ence and command the general popular confidence and respect.

John W. Oliver, the editor of the *Yonkers Statesman*, was born April 30, 1815. His father was a farmer in Baltimore County, Md., and died in 1823, leaving a widow and four children, three of whom still survive, John being the eldest. In his twelfth year he was bound by the Orphans' Court of Baltimore to Benjamin Edes, to learn the printing business. Mr. Edes died of cholera in 1832, and John's unexpired term of apprenticeship was sold by the widow, according to the laws of Maryland, to Thomas Boothby, with whom he served out his time, which expired April 30, 1835. Such education as he has was picked up in the printing-office.

Seeing little prospect of advancement in Baltimore, on the 5th of May following, with bundle in hand and less than five dollars in pocket, he started on foot for York, Pa. Finding no encouragement there he, pushed on to Philadelphia, and then to New York. He arrived in the metropolis about noon, May 15th, an entire stranger, and with just six cents in his pocket. In less than an hour he was at work; in less than a month he was foreman of the office, and in less than two years he had an office of his own.

Like all young men without capital, he had a severe struggle to maintain a business existence. Early in the winter of 1840 he conceived the idea that a small cylinder-press for job-printing would be a great improvement. He consulted Colonel Richard M. Hoe, who said the idea was entirely practicable, and that he would make such a press, and guarantee it to work, for six hundred dollars. But the trouble was to raise the money. Mr. Oliver called on George Bruce, the wealthy type-founder, who had furnished nearly all his material, explained his object and asked that gentleman to furnish the press and give the young beginner an opportunity to pay for it by instalments with interest, taking a mortgage on his whole establishment as security. After a little reflection Mr. Bruce replied, with characteristic deliberation,—“Well, Mr. Oliver, in the first place, I consider your theories in regard to the cylinder-press, entirely visionary; and, in the second place, it is a rule with me not to allow my capital to be used by

those who have no capital, to bring them into competition with my customers who have capital.” “Good day, Mr. Bruce!” was the only reply of the young man as he retired.

In the spring of 1840 Mr. Oliver helped to organize the Washingtonian movement in New York. In 1842 he and his brother Isaac organized the Order of the Sons of Temperance. Under the firm-name of Oliver & Brother they conducted the printing business and published *The New York Organ*, a weekly paper of large circulation, and perhaps the only temperance paper in this country ever made remunerative. In 1844 the brothers were doing a large and growing business at the southeast corner of Nassau and Fulton Streets, then known as the Sun Building. Mr. Hoe

made for them the long-coveted job cylinder-press, and it proved a complete success. Its introduction largely increased their business, so that several others were successively procured. When Oliver & Brother were in the height of their prosperity, one day, as John was seated at his desk, the door opened and in walked George Bruce. A busy scene met his view. “Well, friend Oliver,” he said pleasantly, shaking hands, “I am seventy today, and I thought I could not pass the time more agreeably than to call upon some of my old friends, and I include you among the number. I have kept an eye upon you, and have rejoiced at your success. I remember very well our interview about the little cylinder-press, and now I have come to confess to you



JOHN W. OLIVER.

that I was wrong and you were right.” The interview was exceedingly pleasant.

The business of Oliver & Brother became so extensive as to require their whole attention. So they disposed of *The Organ*, bought the lot No. 32 Beekman Street, erected upon it a five-story white marble building, with basement and under-cellar, and fitted it up with all modern appliances for steam-printing. Some years after John W. Oliver sold out to his brother, with a view of retiring. But an idle life did not suit him and he was soon in business again.

In August, 1866, he purchased a home in Yonkers, but continued business in New York. In the summer of 1872 he sold out his printing business, again intending to retire, but becoming uneasy, the very next day after he quit his New York business he

made an arrangement with M. F. Rowe, proprietor of *The Yonkers Statesman*, as editor, and, with a slight intermission of two months, he has conducted that paper, first as a weekly, and, for more than two years past, as daily and weekly, down to the present time.

His present commanding relations to the *Statesman* are shown in the general account of the paper.

He is in the seventy-first year of his age; has been happily married twice; has four living children—three daughters, all married, and one son, now engaged with him on *The Statesman*; has buried two sons and one daughter, and has been a communicant of the Methodist Episcopal Church since 1842. In politics he was an old line Whig, and has been a Republican since the formation of that party.

In reference to both the *Gazette* and the *Statesman*, we feel called to add that they have been potent factors in the prosperity of Yonkers. One now thirty-three and the other twenty-nine years old, they have both been identified with the entire history of the village and the city. They have shared with the pulpits and the schools as educators of the popular thought and will, and have gained a very solid foothold and an influence wide and strong. Respectively, they have fairly represented their own partisan politics, and have often come into sharp collision. But when local questions of clear bearing have arisen, they have co-operated heartily in the advocacy of the people's and the city's best interests, and Yonkers has felt and owned their power. They now occupy positions of great responsibility, and in view of the rapidly-growing tendency of Yonkers in every direction of development and activity, this responsibility is certain to increase every year.

Other newspapers have been started from time to time, but no one of them has fought its way to permanence. We have already named the second *Yonkers Herald*, published by Mr. Thomas Smith. It was continued by his son, Henry T. Smith, for a time after his father's death, but finally suspended. In 1881 the *Plaindealer* was started by Thomas L. Mottram, and in 1882 William Shrive began to publish the *Free Press*. In 1882 also, E. C. Bruce began the publication of *The Yonkers Democrat*. The same paper was afterwards published by M. H. Clark, as *The Democrat News*. Besides all these, we had a paper published every Wednesday, called *The Yonkers Journal*. It was a German paper. Its third page was confined to news from Germany. All these papers are now discontinued. The only paper, besides the *Gazette* and the *Statesman*, still published, is *The Yonkers Herald*.

SECTION XIV.

The City Industries.

The manufactures of Yonkers are varied and extensive. They embrace carpets, hats, plows, elevators and hat machinery. In these lines they are the most

extensive in the country. There are also manufactories of morocco, mowing-machines, gas, ale, mineral waters, wool and yarn, wool extract, pickles, glue, sugar, plumbers' tools, general machinery, shirts, neckties and bows, carriages, rubber goods and iron castings. The Nepperhan, below Warburton Avenue, furnishes power to a number of small shops and mills. Upon it are located two manufactories of sashes, blinds and doors, four stair-builders' shops, three wood-turning factories, a pattern-factory, a veneer-shop, grist-mill and ten shops of carpenters and builders.

The industries mentioned above have grown up with the rapid growth of the village and city. Going back forty years, we find the Nepperhan occupied by two saw-mills and a grist-mill and plaster-mill (manufacturing plaster for the neighboring farms) below the crossing of Broadway, and above that point two sites upon it occupied by mahogany or veneer-mills and two others occupied by hat-factories. The mills and factories will now be noticed separately and their history given. This history was largely collected and written for us by Mr. Richard M. Bayles, of Long Island, who devoted himself industriously to this work in August, 1885. We have, however, arranged it for ourselves, and made many additions from our own personal knowledge and from conversation with the various proprietors. As we have done in the case of the churches, so here we give first a chronological list, and then a detailed description of all these industries of our city.

ORDER OF DATES OF THE VARIOUS INDUSTRIES.

Yonkers Flour Mill	—
The Hat Industry	1828
John Copcutt's Veneer Mill	1845
Kitteringham's Morocco Factory	1850-69
Osterheld & Eickemeyer	1854
Otis Bros. & Co. (Elevator Works)	1854
The Yonkers Gas Light Company	1854
The Silk Works	1855
D. Saunders' Sons	1857
Underhill's Brewery	1858
Howell's Sugar Refinery	1862
Arms and Mowing Machines	1862-63
Alexander Smith & Son's Carpet Company	1865
Smith's Soda Water Factory	186-
Westchester Gas Light Co., Yonkers Fuel Gas Co., and Yonkers Fuel, Light and Power Co	1875-84
Fleming's Wool Extract Factory	1876
The New York Plow Co	1878
Rose, McAlpin & Co. (Nepperhan Leather Works)	1879
The Municipal Gas Co	1879
The Westchester Telephone Co	1880
Medicinal Manufactures	1881
The Fern Brook Carpet Co	1881
The Washburn & Moore Manufacturing Co	1882
Hepworth & Co.'s Sugar Machinery	1883
Yonkers District Telegraph Co	1884
The American Gear Co	1885

YONKERS FLOUR-MILL.—We put this first in order, not because this particular mill is the oldest in Yonkers,—it dates from 1851-52 only,—but because the flour-milling and the saw-milling industries are in general the oldest of our industries, both of them dating even from the days of Adriaen Van Der Donck, who died in 1655. Examination of our map of 1847 will show that at that date what is

now Main Street was a mere lane running down only to a "Pine saw-mill" run by O. S. & P. W. Paddock, and that at about its half-way point, where the *Yonkers Statesman* building now stands, it branched off, passing a grist-mill and a saw-mill, both run by Levi P. Rose, to a bold projection in a turn of the Saw-Mill River, on which stood a carpet-factory, operated by Hutchinson & Mitchell. Of the last firm we shall speak again, under the head of Alexander Smith & Sons Carpet Co. Our object now is to retain for history's sake the fact that the grist-milling and saw-milling are the oldest industries of Yonkers. The saw-milling started when the place was a forest, and the grist-milling is as old as the needs of the inhabitants for the bread used by civilized people. The site of John Copcutt's saw-mill is also indicated on our map of 1847. This mill was built in 1845, on the foundation of a pre-occupying grist-mill, which had been burned. The said grist-mill may have been the very original mill of Van Der Donck. But more probably it was a larger one built before 1700, by Frederick Philipse.

The present "Yonkers Flour-Mill," standing on the site of the former Hutchinson & Mitchell's factory, was built in 1851 or 1852, not long after that factory had been burned. It is devoted to grist work and the general grinding of grains. It has been successively run by F. S. Miles, Miles & Peek, Peek & Wolf, Peter F. Peek and Cornelius W. Peek, who is its proprietor now.

THE HAT INDUSTRY.—The making of bodies for silk hats began in Yonkers as early as 1828. Its general history for several years thereafter is given in a sketch of Mr. John T. Waring. It is enough here to say that the business took prominent form in 1838, when William C. Waring and Anson F. Baldwin formed a partnership under the firm-name of Wm. C. Waring & Co. and began business on the site now occupied by the silk-factory of the W. H. Copcutt Manufacturing Co., at the sixth fall of the Saw-Mill River. Even this firm at first made hat bodies only. But later they began the manufacture of wool hats, thus inaugurating the business for which Yonkers has long been so noted. Their factory was burned in 1844 and they then moved to the fifth fall, next below their old site, and the site on which the Elm Street factory of the Alexander Smith & Sons Carpet Co. now stands. Here a dam had been built by Lemuel Wells and Obed and Prince W. Paddock in 1837, the former owning the land on the west and the two latter that on the east side of the dam. Waring & Baldwin purchased the privilege of Mr. Wells and erected a frame building, in which they established the manufacture of wool hats. This building, erected in 1844, is still standing and is part of the equipment of the carpet-factory.

John T. Waring, who had been in Yonkers since 1834, and who had been engaged with his brother William in the factory just mentioned, in 1849 established himself in the business on Chicken Island,

lying further down the stream, and, later still, occupied a building on the north side of Elm Street. In 1862 he erected the large building on the south side of the same street and established his hat-factory in it. Waring & Baldwin having dissolved partnership and the former having built another factory further up, three hat-factories were in successful operation at the same time. With frequent changes in partnerships and name, these establishments carried on the work on a scale of growing magnitude. Mr. Baldwin again joined Mr. Wm. C. Waring. Finally, however, he withdrew from the business. Mr. Wm. C. Waring, in 1862, sold out the factory to Hall F. Baldwin and Ethan Flagg, who operated it for fifteen years as the "Union Hat-Factory." Mr. Flagg withdrew in 1877 and Hall F. Baldwin conducted the business until the spring of 1883, when it was closed.

William C. Waring, after the sale of his factory mentioned above, was admitted as a partner into the firm of John T. Waring & Co. This firm failed in September, 1876, and the business was conducted by Wm. C. Waring as agent, and subsequently by Charles H. Coffin. In 1877, however, the firm of Wm. C. Waring, Belknap & Co. was organized, and the works, known as the "Eagle Hat-Factory," were again put into operation on an apparently permanent basis.

The premises of this company, fronting on Elm Street, comprise upwards of two acres of land, almost covered with substantial brick buildings. The main one of these buildings is two hundred and twenty-five feet long, fifty feet wide and five stories high, with two extensions,—one of three stories, measuring two hundred by forty feet, containing the engine and boiler-rooms and other rooms for the various operations of the factory, and the other occupied as the dye-shops and blocking department. Steam elevators communicate with the different floors. The establishment is supplied with power by steam-engines having a capacity of nearly five hundred horsepower. It is capable of working over eight hundred operatives and has once turned out as many as one thousand dozen hats in a day.

This establishment in September, 1882, passed out of the hands of Wm. C. Waring, Belknap & Co., and since then has not been occupied.

The factory occupied by Howard W. Flagg was built by Mr. Ethan Flagg in 1875 and 1876, the manufacture of wool hats having been begun in it in the latter year. The business was first conducted by a firm composed of H. W. and W. W. Flagg. The latter sold out his interest to the former in the fall of 1876. The appointments of this factory give it a capacity of about two hundred dozen hats per day. It employs about one hundred hands, and annually pays in wages about twenty-four thousand dollars. It is a brick building, four stories high, eighty by one hundred feet in area and has added to it a dye-house forty feet square, and an engine-house and drying-rooms forty-five by forty feet and two stories high.

The Yonkers Hat Manufacturing Co. began business, in April, 1883, in the buildings on John Street. The members of the company are E. V. Connet, Ethelbert Belknap, William R. Mott, William H. Belknap, James Stewart and George W. Beach. The company occupy the building formerly occupied by W. C. Waring, Belknap & Co.

The Waring Hat Manufacturing Co., with Mr. John T. Waring as President, carries on its work in the large brick building originally built for the Star Arms Co., and later occupied by other companies, the last of which was the New York Plow Co. It stands on Vark Street, between Hawthorne and Riverdale Avenues. The Waring Hat Manufacturing Co. began in this building in 1884. In 1885 they began to manufacture tapestry velvet carpets. Their business was started with a brisk success, and is rapidly growing. They employ about five hundred hands.

The brain and nerve which first achieve brilliant success in enterprise, then bear up bravely under sweeping reverses, and, finally, against very great disadvantages regain a solid business footing with assured prospect of a business triumph, are, by universal consent, entitled to high respect and honorable mention. The career of Mr. John T. Waring, known in Yonkers as boy and man for more than half

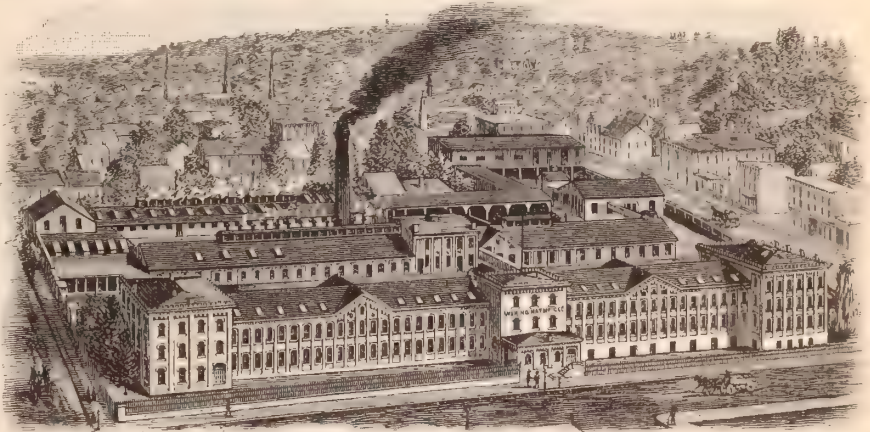
a century, and as one of its leading manufacturers for thirty years, has furnished a distinguished example of capacity and courage, and seems, despite of trying reverses in recent years, about to be crowned, after all, with high success. A brief sketch of his life and business history will be in place and acceptable to his fellow-citizens among these annals of the city.

The Waring family is of English descent, and is believed to have migrated to this country from Liverpool. Its first location here, as far as known, was within the present South Norwalk, Conn., in the vicinity of which families of the name still exist.

John Waring, grandfather of John T. Waring, removed to Southeast (then Dutchess, now Putnam County, N. Y.) about 1750, accompanied by two brothers,—Thaddeus and Samuel. John Waring was married twice. His first wife was Catharine Tuthill, and his second was Mary Elwell. He had nine children,—Lewis, Charles, John, Peter, Isaac, Samuel, Polly (married George Gregory), Joanna (married

Col. — Williams) and Susannah (married Jonathan Smith). These children were the parents of large families, now widely scattered through the country. Peter, the fourth of them (born in 1782, died in 1849) and his wife, Esther, daughter of Thomas Crosby and Hannah Snow, worthy people of Putnam County, became the parents of the following children, named in order of their ages: Jarvis A., William C., Aurelia (married Isaac V. Paddock), Jane (married Robert W. Newman), Laura (married Selden Hubbell), Hannah (married David Underwood), John T., Marietta (married David H. Ketchum), Charles E. and Catharine (married Levi Roberts). Most of these children have lived many years in Yonkers, and the four sons through their adult lives have been prominent Yonkers business men. Of these ten children, Mr. Jarvis A. Waring, died in October, 1872, and Mr. William C. Waring and Mrs. Robert W. Newman have died in 1886.

John T. Waring was born at Southeast, November 7, 1820, and passed his boyhood till 1834 with but lit-



THE WARING HAT MANUFACTORY.

tle experience of change at his parents' home. Meanwhile, in 1828, his brother, William C., and Hezekiah Nichols had come down to Yonkers and begun the hatting business in the "Glen," on the spot now taken up by Copcutt's silk-factory. Reverses and changes came over this firm and its business during the next six years, which it would be foreign to the object of this article to recount. In the spring of 1834, however, Mr. William C. Waring started upon the same spot in the "Glen" the new firm of "Paddock & Waring." It was at or about the opening of this new firm's experience that John T. Waring entered its employ and began to learn the hatting business. The new firm ran on till 1837, when, feeling the effects of the then widely prevailing financial depression, it strengthened itself by a reorganization, and took on the name of William C. Waring & Co. In this name it did business till 1844, when the buildings in the Glen were burned. In the same year a new building was erected for it on what is now designated as Elm

Street. The building still stands, being part of the property occupied by the Elm Street and Palisade Avenue Carpet-Factory. Through all the business changes of his brother from 1834 to 1844, Mr. Waring had continued with him, devoting himself to the mastery of the trade. From 1844 to 1849 he had a business interest in the firm. In 1849 he began hatting on his own account in an old building on the site, in the Nepperhan River, then and still known as "Chicken Island." From this time till 1876, a period of twenty-seven years, his business career was a continuously growing success. In 1857 he bought the factory of William C. Waring & Co., on the present Elm Street, enlarged it and carried on his own business in it for the next five years. In 1862 he built his large hat-factory on the opposite side of the since-opened street and at once entered upon a fourteen-year period of the greatest prosperity. With his increased facilities in this building his business grew till he had over eight hundred men in his employ and was making hats at the rate of eight hundred dozen a day. By 1876 a capital of forty-five hundred dollars, with which he had begun in the new building in 1862, had grown to a capital of nearly a million. It was at this point that he was struck with reverses. In 1868, under the stimulus of his great success, he had purchased the splendid site and begun to develop the magnificent property in the northern part of Yonkers, which has since become famous under the name of "Greystone," intending them for his own future home. The grounds, buildings and total improvements are said to have cost him nearly half a million dollars. Being visited in 1876 with overwhelming reverses in his business, he lost all he had previously gained. His beautiful mansion and grounds were sold for one hundred and fifty thousand dollars to Hon. Samuel J. Tilden.

Upon this experience, Mr. Waring, with his eldest son, Arthur Baldwin, who was through his whole period of trial and has been through all his effort at recovery his father's devoted helper and efficient support, entered into a large contract with the State of Massachusetts for the employment of its convict labor, left Yonkers, settled near Boston, and, nothing daunted, began business anew. His energy in his new field was crowned with deserved success. In 1884, having filled out his contract, he returned to Yonkers, and has recently bought the large property on Vark Street, built during the late war for the manufacture of arms and originally known as the "Starr Arms Works." This property he has thoroughly renovated and stocked with abundant machinery of the most improved kind. Operations have now been begun in it, and, under Mr. Waring's energetic business management, the works promise to take their place among the largest and most vigorous works of this manufacturing city. Possessing a perfect knowledge of the hatting trade in all its branches, Mr. Waring has become the inventor of several important processes in

hat-making, and especially of a hat-sizing machine, from which he derives a large income.

Mr. Waring was connected with the Republican party from its organization and was a firm supporter of the Union cause during the Civil War. In 1861 he was elected president of the village of Yonkers. During that year war meetings were held in the town and a large number of men enlisted for the army. The faith of the town was pledged by resolutions passed at these meetings for the support of the families of the enlisting men while they might be away from home; and they were about moving to the field, when it occurred to them to doubt whether the pledge of the popular meetings was a sufficient security for the care of those they were about to leave behind. At once they declared their unwillingness to proceed unless the president of the village would personally become security for the fulfilment of the popular pledge. This Mr. Waring promptly did, and so strong was the confidence of the men and their families in him that the difficulty vanished and the recruits went out to the service of the country. Mr. Ethan Flagg accompanied Mr. Waring the next day in the work of looking up the families of the seventy-five men who had gone, and found that the town was left with the care of sixty-five such families upon its hands.

Mr. Waring married Jeannette P., daughter of the late Anson Baldwin, himself for many years a leading manufacturer and active citizen of Yonkers. Mr. and Mrs. Waring have had the following ten children: Arthur B., Grace (married Lewis Roberts), John T., Jr. (deceased), John T., Jr., Cornelia B., Pierre C., Susan B., Anson (deceased), James Palmer and Janet. The family has been prominently identified with the social life of Yonkers, and, being connected with St. John's Episcopal Church, has contributed much to the church's influence and usefulness. Energetic in all his business affairs, Mr. Waring's successes have been due in part to his thorough grasp of all the details and needs of his business, and, in part, to that absolute faith in himself which his whole career has so well justified. No man has done more to impress himself upon his place of residence than he. He will always be thought of as a foremost representative of Yonkers' leading business men. Yonkers' history would not be full without a tribute to his name.

THE SILK-WORKS.—In 1855 Mr. George B. Skinner, who had begun the manufacture of sewing-silk and twist, at Mausfield, Conn., established the business in Yonkers, on the east side of the Nepperhan, in a stone building that had been erected a year or two before for a cotton-factory. In 1868 Mr. Skinner admitted to partnership with him William Iles, who had been his superintendent from the start, and the firm-name was made George B. Skinner & Co., which form it continues to bear. Machine twist is a specialty in its manufacture, and about one hundred and fifty hands are employed. The machinery is driven by water supplied by the Saw-Mill River.



John J. Training



The firm of Macfarlane & Westney (William Macfarlane and William Westney) began the manufacture of machine twist and sewing-silk in the basement of George B. Skinner's factory, in March, 1859. Mr. Westney withdrew after about four months, and Mr. Macfarlane carried on the business alone.

In 1862 or 1863 he moved to a frame building on Chicken Island, and in 1865 to a building which had just been erected by Mr. Ethan Flagg, on James Street, in which the Fair of the Sanitary Commission in the time of the war had been held. The factory remains in this building. It occupies two floors, forty-five by one hundred feet in area. William Macfarlane died February 5, 1883, and his sons, W. W. and Albert E. became owners of the business, though the father's name is retained. On the death of Albert E. Macfarlane, in May, 1884, W. W. Macfarlane became the proprietor. About sixty hands are employed, and material for warp and filling for silk goods is produced.

Copcutt & Myers began the manufacture of spool silk, machine twist and embroideries in December, 1866. The firm was composed of William H. Copcutt and William A. Myers. A brick building, twenty-five by one hundred feet and three stories high, had been erected by Mr. Copcutt about two years before, and had been occupied for a while by Cummings & Mensing, of New York City, for the manufacture of ladies' dress trimmings. This building was now taken by the new firm of Copcutt & Myers, and it has ever since been known as Copcutt's Mill, the site being still occupied by the same building, though the building is greatly enlarged. It is said that a logwood-factory had previously stood upon this site, operated by a firm known as Russell, Styles & Hibbard. By the withdrawal of Mr. Myers from the Copcutt firm in 1872, and the admission of John Copcutt in his place, the firm name became changed to William H. Copcutt & Co., The factory was now enlarged, and the manufacture of ribbons and piece goods was begun. This work grew so rapidly that after a time the entire energy of the firm was given to it, the production of spool silk, machine twist, and embroideries being abandoned. On the 28th of August, 1883, the William H. Copcutt Manufacturing Company was incorporated with a capital of one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. The members of this company were John Copcutt, R. Copcutt, William H. Copcutt and John R. Warren. This organization continues. About three hundred hands are employed in the factory, the motive-power being furnished partly by the Nepperhan and partly by steam.

OTIS BROTHERS & Co. (Elevator-Works).—The Elevator-Works of Otis Brothers & Co., the largest in the world, were established in the year 1854 by Elisha G. Otis, in the building at the foot of Vark Street now occupied by the New York Plow Company. At his death in 1861, his sons Charles R. and Norton P. Otis became proprietors, under the name of N. P. Otis & Brother. In August, 1864, J. M. Alvord was taken in as a partner and the name took the form of Otis

Brothers & Co., which it has since retained. In 1867 Mr. Alvord sold his interest to the Otis Brothers, after which a stock company was formed with Charles R. Otis, president; Norton P. Otis, treasurer; and N. H. Stockwell, secretary. On the resignation of the latter, which occurred the same year, J. L. Hubbard was made secretary. On a reorganization of the corporation June 1, 1882, its capital stock was increased to five hundred thousand dollars, at which it now stands. The officers at the same time were changed to the following: Wm. E. Hale, president; W. Frank Hall, vice-president; Wm. A. Gibson, treasurer, and H. G. Tarr, secretary.

The manufactory at the corner of Woodworth and Wells Avenue has been occupied from 1868 till now. The number of men employed in the works in 1854 was from six to ten. In 1883 the firm employed about three hundred and fifty in the factory here, and about as many more outside in various places in putting up their work. In 1854 five or six elevators were built and in 1883 six hundred. The works cover an area of about one and a half acres. The main business office is at Nos. 92 and 94 Liberty Street, New York. The company construct both passenger and freight elevators of all kinds—hydraulic, steam and belt—the last-mentioned being operated by a belt attached to machinery which can be put to other uses in the same building. The company claim that their elevators carry more passengers daily in the city of New York than the elevated railroads carry, and that they manufacture more elevators than all others engaged in the business together.

Since January 1, 1883, they have made a specialty of elevator inspection, which consists in sending a competent man to make a critical examination of the condition of an elevator, whose report and suggestions in respect to needed repairs or alterations will insure the greatest possible degree of safety and efficiency with reference to the elevator he inspects.

"The Otis family trace their origin to John Otis, who, with his family, came from Hingham, in Norfolk, England June, 1635, in company with the Rev. Peter Hobart, and took the freeman's oath the 3d of March following. He was probably a substantial yeoman, who left his country partly to accompany his pastor, a staunch, non-conforming clergyman. His will, dated May 3, 1657, and proved 28th of July in the same year, is recorded in the first volume of the Suffolk Registry of Probate. John Otis is also mentioned in the records of Hingham, Mass., as being a landholder there in 1668-69."

The manuscript journal of the Rev. Mr. Hobart contains two or three entries relating to this family, as does also a tract written by a lawyer, Thomas Lechford, a dissenting member of Mr. Hobart's church, of which but two copies are now in existence in this country, one of which is to be found in the Ebeling collection in the library of Howard University. An extract from the "Otis Genealogy" by the late Horatio N. Otis reads as follows: "Few families in New Hamp-

shire or elsewhere suffered more from the constant and cruel assaults of the Indians than the family of Richard Otis. He himself, with one son and one daughter, was killed in 1689, and his wife and child were captured and sold to the French. At the same time a number of his grandchildren were carried captive, and a few years after some of his grandchildren were killed, and others made prisoners by the Indians. In a word, every one of his children alive (in 1689) and many of his grandchildren—what few escaped with their lives—suffered in their persons and property from the warfare of the savage foe. They lived in constant peril and alarm. Their houses were fortified for defense against the red man and in their acts of devotion they carried their arms in their hands." The Richard of whom this speaks is supposed to have been a son of John Otis, formerly of Hingham, and the extract serves to show the sufferings to which these hardy searchers after religious liberty were subjected.

In the years that have succeeded these early days of trial and exposure the Otis family has numbered among its members many honored and distinguished names, prominent among which are those of James Otis, the Revolutionary statesman and patriot, and his nephew, Harrison Gray Otis. "James Otis was born at Great Marshes, Mass., February 5, 1725; died in Andover, May 23, 1783. He graduated at Harvard College in 1743, studied law in Boston, was admitted to the bar in 1748 in Plymouth, where he began to practice, and in 1750 removed to Boston. In 1760 he published a treatise entitled 'The Rudiments of Latin Prosody, with a dissertation on letters and the principles of Harmony in Poetic and Prosaic Composition.' In 1761 he delivered his famous argument on the question, whether the persons employed in enforcing the acts of trade should have the power to invoke generally the assistance of all the executive officers of the colony. Mr. Otis was at that time advocate-general, but, deeming the writs of assistance illegal, refused to argue in behalf of them and resigned. He was then employed upon the other side and produced a profound impression. The judges evaded giving a decision, and the writs, although secretly granted at the next term, were never executed. The next year Mr. Otis was elected to the Legislature, where his eloquence soon placed him at the head of the popular party, and justified his claim to the title of the 'great incendiary of New England.' On June 6, 1765, he moved that a 'congress of delegates be called from the several colonies.' The motion was adopted, and a circular letter was sent to the other colonies, in consequence of which the Stamp Act Congress met in New York in October of that year. Mr. Otis was one of the delegates to this body, and a member of the committee to prepare an address to the House of Commons. In May, 1767, he was elected Speaker of the Provincial House, but was negatived by the Governor.

When Chas. Townsend's plan of taxation had passed Parliament, the Massachusetts House sent in 1768 another circular letter requesting the colonies to unite in some suitable measures of redress. On the message of Governor Bernard requiring the letter to be rescinded, Mr. Otis made a speech, pronounced by the friends of the government to be 'the most violent, insolent, abusive and treasonable declaration that perhaps ever was delivered,' and in consequence, the House refused to rescind by a vote of ninety-two to seventeen." Mr. Otis was ever upon the side of American freedom and lost no opportunity, even at the risk of his life, to express the strong opinions which he held. John Adams said, speaking of him, "I have been young and now am old, and I solemnly say I have never known a man whose love of his country was more ardent and sincere, never one who suffered so much, never one whose services for any ten years of his life were so important and essential to the cause of his country as were those of Mr. Otis from 1760 to 1770."¹

President Adams also remarked, in referring to Mr. Otis' memorable speech in opposition to writs of assistance, "I do say in the most solemn manner that Mr. Otis' oration against writs of assistance breathed into this nation the breath of life."

The impetuous genius of James Otis supplied what was wanting in Adams' well-poised temperament. He was an accomplished scholar, a charming speaker and richly endowed with dashing and brilliant qualities. His first published work, in 1760, was a treatise on "The Rudiments of Latin Prosody," with a dissertation on the principles of harmony in composition. He prepared a similar work on Greek prosody, which was never published. The following year, 1761, he was called to take the leading part in the great trial of the writs of assistance.

Here his remarkable gifts had a fair and adequate field for their exercise. The trial involved not only great pecuniary interests, but the political and civil rights of a continent, and gave ample opportunity for the display of his varied learning, masterly reasoning and captivating eloquence. From this time forward he knew neither rest nor peace. In 1762, after a sharp controversy with Governor Bernard on a question of his right to authorize expenditures without the knowledge of the House of Representatives of Massachusetts, in which Otis was sustained by the House, he published a spirited vindication of its action, which still further stimulated the spirit of resistance of executive power. The title of this masterly work was, "A Vindication of the Conduct of the House of Representatives of the Province of the Massachusetts Bay," printed by Edes & Gill, 1762. John Adams, writing of it many years after, said: "Look over the Declaration of Rights and Wrongs, issued by Congress in 1774; look into the writings of Dr.

¹ See "Life of James Otis," by William Tuckar, Boston, 1826.



E. G. Otis

Price and Dr. Priestly; look into all the French constitutions of government; and, to cap the climax, look into Thomas Paine's "Common Sense, Crisis and Rights of Man,"—what can you find that is not to be found in solid substance in this vindication of the House of Representatives?"

This fugitive pamphlet, the fundamental argument on which Constitutional liberty rests, presented in clear array the whole armory of reasoning with which the statesmen of the Revolution fought their later battles. This was followed two years later by "The Rights of the Colonies Asserted and Vindicated," written with ability and spirit, but making apparent concessions to the authority of Parliament, which excited great distrust and caused a loss of confidence in the steadiness of his judgment which was never fully recovered. His last work appeared in 1765, under the title of "Considerations on behalf of the Colonists, in a Letter to a Noble Lord," an eminently patriotic and useful contribution to the discussion; but presenting views concerning a consolidate empire and parliamentary representation of the colonies, not shared by many persons on either side of the contest.¹

"Harrison Gray Otis, nephew of the preceding, was born in Boston October 8, 1765; died there October 28, 1848. He graduated at Harvard College, 1783, studied law and was admitted to the bar in 1786. In 1796 he was elected from Boston to the State Legislature, and succeeded Fisher Ames in Congress, where he soon became a leader of the Federal party. He served two terms in Congress, and in 1801 was appointed United States district attorney for Massachusetts. Subsequently he became a member of the State Legislature, and was Speaker of the House from 1803 to 1805 and president of the Senate from 1805 to 1811. He was chairman of the legislative committee, which in 1814 reported in favor of calling a convention of the New England States at Hartford to consider the best mode of redressing the grievances inflicted on those States by the war with Great Britain. He was a leading member of that convention, and was one of three commissioners appointed by Massachusetts to go to Washington and make a representation to the Federal government. In 1814 he was appointed judge of the Court of Common Pleas of Massachusetts, which office he held till 1818, when he took his seat in the United States Senate, to which the Legislature had elected him in the preceding year. In 1820, in the debate on the Missouri question, he advocated with great force the restriction of the extension of slavery. In 1829 he was elected mayor of Boston, and in 1832 retired from public life. He was distinguished as a popular orator, and during his later years strongly opposed the abolition movement."

Harrison Gray Otis, until his election without opposition for three successive terms as mayor of Boston, had been prominent in public affairs almost from

the time of his leaving college. In 1788, when twenty-three years of age, he delivered the Fourth of July oration before the town authorities. He was a man of courtly manners and winning address. His style of oratory was much admired in those days; but his published speeches and addresses fail to sustain the reputation which he held among his contemporaries. His political popularity had been on the wane for some years, and he could not forbear making a pathetic reference to the fact in his first inaugural address as mayor. This address, delivered in Faneuil Hall in the presence of a large assembly of citizens, had for its principal object the vindication of Mr. Otis' political career. To afford him an opportunity for so doing, in a sort of semi-official way, was probably the chief inducement to his acceptance of the office. His connection with the Hartford Convention having been made the basis of a charge of disloyalty, he took occasion to "distinctly and solemnly assert that at no time in the course of my life have I been present at any meeting of individuals, public or private, of the many or the few, or privy to any correspondence of whatever description, in which any proposition having for its object the dissolution of the Union, or its dismemberment in any shape, or a separate confederacy, or forcible resistance to the government or laws, was ever made or debated; that I have no reason to believe that any such scheme was ever meditated by distinguished individuals of the old Federal party."

Hon. Stephen Otis, a member of the State Legislature of Vermont, born December 20, 1773, was also a man of distinguished ability, and was widely known for his public spirit and for his liberal tendencies. He was a gentleman of much learning, and was looked up to by those around him for advice and counsel, not only in political but in financial and private matters. Mr. Otis was the father of six children, the youngest of whom, Elisha G. Otis, so well known as the inventor of the Otis elevator, was born August 3, 1811. Like his father, Mr. Otis began life as a farmer, remaining thus engaged till his nineteenth year, when he first began to turn his attention in the direction of mechanical pursuits.

About this time he left his home at Halifax for the city of Troy, New York, where for five years he took an active part in building operations. While here, June 2, 1834, he married Miss Susan A. Houghton, of Halifax, Vt., (who died February 25, 1842, leaving two sons, Charles R. and Norton P.), and four years afterward, in 1838, returned to Vermont, where he engaged in the manufacture of wagons and carriages, continuing thus till 1845. In August, 1846, he married, for his second wife Mrs. Betsey A. Boyd.

Mr. Otis then removed to Albany, N. Y., where he assumed charge of the construction of machinery in a large manufactory in that city. After four years' service in this capacity he started a factory of his own, but the undertaking not proving successful, he

¹ Delano A. Goldard, "Memorial History of Boston," Vol. III. p. 140

was obliged to give it up, and accept the invitation of a firm in Hudson City, N. J., to the superintendency of its works at that place. In the following year (1852) the business of the company with which he had identified himself was transferred to the location now occupied by the Plow-Works, in Yonkers.

Here Mr. Otis assumed entire guidance of the machinery department of what was then called the bedstead-factory, also having charge of the erection of some of the buildings connected with the establishment. During the building and equipment of this factory it became necessary to construct an elevator for use on the premises, during the erection of which Mr. Otis developed some original devices, the most important of which was one for preventing the fall of the platform in case of the breaking of the lifting rope. This machine attracted the attention of some New York manufacturers, and soon after he received an order for two or more of these machines to go to that city. This was the beginning of the elevator business, which in late years has assumed such gigantic proportions.

For a number of years he continued the construction of elevators as he received orders for them, combining, however, very many branches of mechanical business.

Finally he separated himself from the Bedstead Manufacturing Company, and started in a general manufacturing business on his own account, leasing a part of their building for this purpose. At the opening of the World's Fair at the Crystal Palace, in New York City, Mr. Otis placed a small elevator on exhibition, containing the improvements made by him up to that time. He attracted considerable attention by getting upon the platform, running it up some distance and then cutting the rope, thus demonstrating the safety of his invention against accident and consequent loss of life. This action gave publicity to his invention, and from that time forward the business increased till, at the time of his death, in April, 1861, it had become the principal business of the works, and the Otis Elevator was widely known.

Mr. Otis was a man of varied attainments and great mental power. He was possessed of much mechanical and inventive ability and could with equal facility and skill perform the duties of a journeyman mechanic or direct large numbers of workmen in the line of any of four distinct trades. He was a man of great energy and enterprise, pursuing whatever he undertook with great enthusiasm and never failing to accomplish his purpose within the time set. Business was to him a recreation and a pleasure, and many of his richest and most original ideas were the fruit of his leisure hours.

Among the inventions of Mr. Otis which have added lustre to his name, and which have formed the groundwork of many similar inventions in later days, are a machine for making blind staples, an automatic wood-turning machine, a railway bridge for

carrying trains across a river without impeding navigation and at the same time doing away with the dangers of a draw, a very ingenious automatic steam-plough and a rotary oven for use in the manufacture of bread.

From early life he entertained ardent temperance and anti-slavery views and towards its close frequently gave utterance to the prediction that slavery would be swept from our country within ten years,—a prediction which was verified within five years subsequent to his death. Mr. Otis was a member of the First Methodist Church, and was greatly beloved not only by its people, but by the community at large for the interest of which he was an ardent worker. He left two sons, Charles R. and Norton P., the oldest of whom, Charles R. Otis, was born in Troy, N. Y., April 29, 1835. Mr. Otis followed all the varied movements of his father preparatory to his final success, attending schools both at Halifax and in Albany, N. Y. Like his father, he early developed a fondness for machinery and machine work, and at the age of thirteen he entered the factory with his father, learning his trade as a machinist and remaining in the business till its sale in 1882. At the age of fifteen Mr. Otis became infatuated with steam-engines, and secured for himself the position of engineer in the manufactory at Hudson City (then Bergen, N. J.).

From the windows of the factory in Bergen, where he was engaged, the large European and other steamers could be seen going and coming, and he was soon possessed of a desire to become chief engineer on an ocean or North River steamer. This purpose continued with him for several years and he spent much time in study and preparation for what he then intended should be the business of his life. A year later, however, upon his father's removing to Yonkers, his early ambitions gradually gave way or became merged in the dawning of the elevator business, about two years subsequent to the removal to Yonkers. Not more than two or three orders for elevators had been secured by his father when he believed he could see a great business in the future of the invention if properly pushed. He therefore urged strongly the abandonment of all other lines of business for the special manufacture of safety elevators, there being at that time no one in this country or in the world so far as known, who was exclusively engaged in this particular line.

At this time (1854-58) his father was doing a small business, employing from five to fifteen men, of whom he had charge as foreman. Soon after (1859-60) the necessity for an elevator with its own independent engine, to run only as the platform or car was put in motion and capable of high speed, was felt, and his father designed, constructed and patented such an engine, consisting of two connected reversible oscillating cylinders, very compactly arranged, and this hoisting-engine marked the beginning of the system of steam elevators now in extensive use throughout



Chas. F. Otis



Abner P. Otis



Robert, Esq.

the United States, and without which it would be practically impossible to carry on the business of the country within the space allotted to it, and especially in the high buildings which now characterize all our large cities. This engine proving somewhat defective in operation, Mr. Otis himself, in 1860-61, invented and patented an important improvement which effectually remedied its most troublesome defect, and from that time forward for several years this hoisting-engine continued to be the standard machine in its line.

On the election of Mr. Lincoln and the breaking out of the Rebellion in 1860 and 1861, there was a period of financial depression, during which the elevator business was prostrated, and losses and misfortune left it at the time of Mr. E. G. Otis' death in 1861, much encumbered and paralyzed. Mr. Otis, at this time twenty-six years of age, had accumulated in savings about fifteen hundred dollars. His brother, Mr. Norton P. Otis, had also a few hundred dollars, and together they decided to attempt a resuscitation of the business as a specialty, and if possible to work it up to a permanent, enduring and prominent industry. Other lines were dispensed with, and the Otis Brothers devoted their time and energy solely to the designing and manufacture of elevator machinery to meet every possible requirement and demand in that line. The following winter, 1861-62, the gradual revival in trade incident upon the opening of the war and the demands of the government for war materials began to be felt and elevators came in for a share in the improved state of affairs. The first two orders of the firm amounted to the munificent sum of seventy dollars. At this time, as in earlier and later years, Mr. Otis worked almost incessantly, and sometimes during the entire night. Many improvements were made and brought out, chiefly in the direction of securing greater safety in the use of elevator apparatus, and a large number of patents were taken out at various times as the business progressed, more than fifteen of which were the invention of Charles R., Norton P. also originating and patenting many valuable devices. In 1862 the business amounted to not more than fifteen thousand dollars, increasing gradually from that time till in 1865, the business for the year was \$80,000. In 1868 the total business \$135,000, and in 1872 it was \$393,000. In 1881 it was \$600,000, and rapidly increasing, so that when the Otis Brothers retired, in June, 1882, the business was firmly established upon a basis of a million dollars per annum or upwards. In the early portion of 1882 the long-continued overwork and insufficient rest and recreation began to take effect upon Mr. Otis' health, resulting in insomnia, which continued for several months. Finally it was deemed best to give up the business, which was accomplished by sale on the 1st day of June, 1882.

In 1867 the concern, which up to that time had been in the form of a partnership, was organized into a stock company, the Otis Brothers holding a large

majority of the stock. They afterwards purchased what was outstanding for a part of the period subsequent to the company organization, so that at the time of retirement they were the sole owners.

On the organization of the company in 1867, Mr. Otis was chosen president, and remained in that capacity to the end of his connection with the business.

He united with the Westminster Church, March 3, 1859, and was elected superintendent of the Sabbath-school in 1877, an office which he retained till 1884. On June 20, 1880, he became an elder, and at the time of the erection of the new church edifice rendered valuable service as chairman of the building committee, both he and his brother having been large contributors toward the erection and furnishing thereof. During his whole business life he was closely identified with the manufacturing interests of Yonkers, and with the internal improvements of the city.

Both before and since his retirement from business Mr. Otis has interested himself considerably in real-estate matters, having built extensively in different portions of Yonkers.

He married, August 28, 1861, Miss Carrie F. Boyd, to whose uniform cheerfulness and untiring care and helpfulness he owes much of his past and present success. Though he has no children of his own, he has brought up and educated several, some of whom have been orphans and some children of relatives. He is a deep student and delights in the perusal of classical and scientific works, of which he has been enabled to collect a large number. He has been an extensive traveler, his latest tour having been a journey through Europe, from which he wrote several letters to the local papers, which were published and read with great interest by the public.

Hon. Norton P. Otis, the younger of the two sons of Elisha G. Otis and one of the most popular young men in Westchester Co., was born in Halifax, Windham Co., Vt., March 18, 1840. He attended school in Halifax, Albany, Hudson City, N. J., and finally finished at District School No. 2, in Yonkers. In his eighteenth year he entered his father's factory, and after his father's decease, together with his brother, assumed control of the business, the history of which has just been given.

Like his brother, he invested his all in the concern, and its advancement and subsequent success were largely due to his untiring activity and careful attention. During the first ten years a very considerable portion of his time was spent in visiting the various cities and towns throughout the United States and Canada for the purpose of introducing the Otis elevators. Upon the incorporation of the company, in 1867, he was elected treasurer and retained that position till his retirement from business, in 1882. In the spring of 1880 Mr. Otis received the nomination of the Republicans for mayor of the city of Yonkers, and at the election

following was chosen for the place by a handsome majority. His services as mayor were such as to win not only the approbation of his own party, but the confidence and esteem of the opposition. During his term the Fire Department was reorganized, the charter for the new public dock was obtained, the entire plan and system of public-school management was changed (Mr. Otis appointing the first school board under the consolidated system), a new pumping-engine was added to the water-works, and at the same time a reduction of more than seventy-five thousand dollars was made in the indebtedness of the city. In the fall of 1883 he was nominated for Assembly, being again elected by a good majority in an overwhelming Democratic district. While in the State Legislature he brought forward many bills, which served to give him great popularity with all well-meaning and thoughtful people, among which was one giving protection to the Hudson River towns against being overrun by drunken Sunday excursionists and New York roughs, and another for the reduction of exorbitant rates of fare on State railroads.

In 1877 Mr. Otis married Miss Lizzie A. Fahs, of York, Pa., a most estimable and accomplished lady, and has had four children, three of whom, Charles Edwin, Sidney and Arthur Houghton, are living, the youngest, Susan Elizabeth, having died in infancy.

He has been much interested in the Westminster Church, and his donations towards its erection and maintenance have been large and frequent. Mr. Otis was formerly a member of many social and benevolent organizations, and it is doubtful if any citizen at present in Yonkers has received more respect from or is more popular with the younger element of society in the place. On the whole, the Otis Brothers have been for years a power in the business, social and religious life of Yonkers and of the county at large.

THE YONKERS GAS-LIGHT COMPANY.—This company was organized early in 1854, chiefly through the public spirit of Colonel (afterwards Judge) William W. Scrugham, who continued to be one of the most influential men in its management till his death, in August, 1867. The articles of association were executed on the 14th of April, 1854, and named as directors Sylvester S. Batten, Timothy C. Dwight, Robert P. Getty, Thomas C. Cornell, Robert Grant, James Scrymser, Josiah Rich, Francis S. Miles and William Warburton Scrugham. The same gentlemen, with the addition of John Olmsted and Henry F. Devoe, were the original incorporators. The first meeting of the board was held in Colonel Scrugham's law-office, then on the southwest corner of South Broadway and Dock Street, on the 8th of May, 1854. At this meeting James Scrymser was elected president and Colonel Scrugham secretary and treasurer. A contract was soon after made with S. S. Batten, of Newark, N. J., to build and equip works capable of supplying a daily consumption of ten thousand feet, with four miles of street mains, and under this contract gas was delivered in November, 1854.

The site of the works was a part of the site still occupied, on Woodworth Avenue, above Ashburton Avenue. The price paid for the land, works, mains and equipments complete was \$69,200, of which \$5000 was paid in cash and \$64,200 in the stock of the company. The capital stock was at first fixed at \$70,000. But, August 29, 1860, it was increased to \$100,000, and, July 13, 1864, it was further increased to \$150,000. Again an increase was authorized, February 16, 1877, to \$300,000, only a part of which has been issued, the actual capital in 1884 being \$200,000, with a bonded debt of a little over \$100,000.

The gross sales of gas for the first year (1855) were about 1,000,000 feet, at \$4 per 1000 feet, and the gas was about of the strength of twelve candles. In 1860 the sales had reached 4,200,000 feet; in 1870, 11,259,000 feet; and in 1875, 21,144,000 feet. Since 1875 there has been much competition in gas in Yonkers. The largest sale of this company in any single year was 33,000,000 feet. The illuminating power of the gas was increased from twelve candles in 1860 to eighteen candles in 1870, and since 1880 it has been at twenty-five candles. The price of gas was reduced to \$3.50 in 1861, but, under the high prices of labor and material during the war, it was again raised, first to \$4, and afterwards, when, as in 1865, gas coal went up from \$6 to \$17.50, to \$5.75 a thousand feet. It was reduced in 1866 to \$5; in March, 1870, to \$4.50; and in March, 1874, to \$4.

Street gas-lamps were first lighted in Yonkers in April, 1861, when fifty-two lamps were erected, of which twenty-eight were on the east side of Warburton Avenue. These lamps were lighted with three feet burners, from one hour after sunset till midnight on the nights when there was no moon, at \$2 per year for each lamp. By 1870 the number of lamps had increased to one hundred and fifty-five, when the experiment of lighting the streets with naphtha was made for one year. This did not prove satisfactory, and in 1871 gas was reinstated, with the number of lamps increased to three hundred and sixty-one. These were now lighted for every night and all night the year round, for \$25 a year each. In January, 1873, a new agreement was made at \$33.33 a lamp, with the number increased to four hundred. In the beginning of 1880 the Yonkers Gas-Light Company was lighting four hundred and seven lamps in the city at \$27.50, and about one hundred in the district annexed to New York City at \$30 each. The company has now about thirty-five miles of mains in use and one thousand consumers.

The board of directors in 1886 consists of Robert P. Getty and Thomas C. Cornell (both in the board from the first), Geo. Peters, Samuel D. Babcock, S. H. Condict, E. C. Moore, Warren B. Smith, James Slade and James Bruce. The following have also served as directors during the periods specified: Henry W. Bashford, July 18, 1855, to July 12, 1865; Ethan Flagg, July 15, 1857, to July 13, 1864; Aaron



Thomas C. Cornell

Forum. Vol. 1884

Peck, July 18, 1858, to July 11, 1860; John Chadwick, July, 1859, to July, 1862; John C. Littell, June, 1860, to his death, in January, 1874; Stephen H. Plum, from 1860 to his death, in 1885; Thomas W. Ludlow, July, 1863, to September, 1877; James M. Gardiner, July, 1865, to January, 1877; John Olmstead, June, 1872, to September, 1877; Henry Anstice, June, 1877, to June, 1880; Alexander Smith, September, 1877, to his death, in November, 1878.

The following gentlemen have held office during the terms indicated: Presidents,—James Scrymser, May, 1854, to November, 1855; Robert P. Getty, November, 1855, to July, 1857; Thomas C. Cornell, July, 1857, to the present. Secretaries,—William W. Scrugham, May, 1854, to August, 1867; James M. Gardiner, September, 1867, to 1870; Cyrus Cleveland, March, 1870; James M. Gardiner, June, 1871, to 1881; James D. McIntyre, December, 1881, to the present. Treasurers,—William W. Scrugham, May, 1854, to 1858; Henry W. Bashford, July, 1858; Thomas C. Cornell, June, 1860, to the present time.

The superintendents have been Isaac Battin, from beginning to 1855; William Beal, from 1856 to 1866; James Slade from 1866 to the present time.

The company made coal gas for more than twenty-five years, to 1879, since which time it has chiefly made water gas, by a process of its own, with illuminating power averaging about twenty-five candles. The price of gas now (1885) is \$1.25 per thousand feet.

Mr. Thomas Clapp Cornell, the President and Treasurer of the Yonkers Gas Company, is of an old Westchester County family, settled in Scarsdale since 1727. He was born January 7, 1819, in Flushing, Queens County, L. I., where his parents then conducted a boarding school for girls. His father, Silas Cornell, son of Benjamin, was born in the old Scarsdale homestead in 1789.¹ His mother, Sarah Mott, daughter of Adam, was born in North Hempstead, Queens County, in 1791, in the old Mott homestead, on the shore of the Sound, which had then been in the family for a hundred years and is still in the possession of the descendants of its founder. Both his father's and his mother's families for half a dozen generations were among the staunchest Quaker yeomanry of the two counties. In 1823, Silas Cornell removed to a farm, near Rochester, N. Y., where during the winter months he had a little school, the only school his son Thomas ever attended. The aggregate of his schooling did not reach three years, and was ended before he was twelve years old. Whatever he learned beyond that was in hours saved from daily labor. When he was fifteen he was doing a man's work on the farm, and keeping up his studies by spending an hour or two before breakfast, often by lamplight, at his Latin or Greek grammar or mathematics. His father became the surveyor of the neighborhood, and in 1836 removed

to the adjacent city of Rochester, as surveyor and civil engineer, and Thomas was his principal assistant. After coming of age in 1840 he entered the engineer department of the State on the Erie Canal enlargement, and had charge of work on the Combined Locks at Lockport. In 1844-46 he was in the employ of the Canadian government, at Montreal, on the Lachine Canal, and in the office of the engineer of the Provincial Board of Public Works. Early in 1846 he went to Europe and spent a year and a half in France, Germany, Switzerland, Italy, England and Scotland. He sought in each country he visited to associate exclusively with its natives and to speak with them in their own tongue. He returned to America in the latter part of 1847 and was immediately employed in the construction of the Hudson River Railroad, as assistant engineer from Spuyten Duyvil to Dobbs Ferry. This brought him to the then small hamlet of Yonkers, where, when his section of the railroad was finished, he decided to remain. He did almost all the surveying and engineering of Yonkers for many years, with occasional work as architect. In 1854 he co-operated with Messrs. Scrugham, Getty and others in founding the Yonkers Gas-Light Company, which first delivered gas in November of that year. He has been president of the company since 1857, and also its treasurer since 1860. Mr. Cornell has also been a director of the bank of Yonkers, now the First National Bank, since 1856. He was also for many years a trustee of the Yonkers Savings-Bank and chairman of its finance committee, until he said he had done his share of the work, and declined to serve longer. He was one of the founders of the Yonkers and New York Fire Insurance Company, and one of its directors from its organization, in 1863, to its dissolution by the great Chicago fire in 1871. In 1852, Mr. Cornell first proposed and aided in founding the first newspaper in Yonkers, the *Yonkers Herald* (now the *Yonkers Gazette*). Three or four years later, the *Herald* having become hostile to himself and friends, he co-operated with Messrs. Matthew F. Rowe and the late Jeremiah H. Stedwell in founding the *Yonkers Examiner* (now the *Statesman*), and he has been a frequent contributor to its columns ever since.

In politics, Mr. Cornell was brought up in the Whig party, but was always an Abolitionist, and was one of the first signers of the call for the original organization of the Republican party in Yonkers, three days after the nomination of Fremont, in June, 1856, and has always supported the party, but has never accepted any political office, nor any other office, except that of trustee of School No. 6, to which he was elected in 1877. He has been a member of the Union League Club of New York since 1870.

While in Europe, Mr. Cornell abandoned the Protestantism of his ancestors, and in 1847 was received, at Lyons, into the Roman Catholic Church, of which he is still a zealous member. He bore an active part in the founding of St. Mary's Church, Yonkers, in

¹ "The Scarsdale Cornells" will be found elsewhere in the history of the town of Scarsdale.

1848, and its parish schools in 1859, and St. Joseph's Church in 1871, and in the establishment of the Sisters of Charity at Mount St. Vincent in 1856. In 1882 he prepared and published a history of the "Beginnings of the Roman Catholic Church in Yonkers."

Mr. Cornell married, May 2, 1850, Miss Jane E. Bashford, of Yonkers. They have no surviving children. In 1869 they built and occupied the handsome residence on Riverdale Avenue, near Mt. St. Vincent, which they recently sold to Miss Clara Morris, the distinguished actress, who now makes it her home.

JOHN COPCUTT'S VENEER MILL.—One of the early Yonkers industries, of which but little is now noticed or known, was the manufacture of mahogany into veneers for cabinet-work. This mill was established, in 1845, by Mr. John Copcutt, upon the site, as we have already shown, of the old grist-mill, which had been burned. The foundations of the old mill still remain as the support of the present building. Mr. Copcutt, before coming to Yonkers, had owned from 1835, a mahogany-mill at West Farms. He is now one of Yonkers' oldest citizens, and has made a record of untiring industry and of deserved success.

KITTERINGHAM'S MOROCCO-FACTORY.—The business of pulling wool and manufacturing morocco and sheepskin from hides was started in Yonkers about 1850, at the corner of Nepperhan Avenue and New Main Street, by Robert Grant. By a chemical process the wool was so acted upon that it was easily separated from the skin. In 1869, Mr. James Kitteringham occupied the same place as a morocco manufacturer and continued there three years. Later he became a member of the firm of Rose, McAlpin & Co., of which we give an account below. His original factory is not now in existence, and he himself has retired from the firm just named.

OSTERHELD & EICKEMEYER.—One of the most important contributions to the hat manufacturing industry of Yonkers is the business of this firm in the inventing and making of its machinery. The business was established in 1854 by Mr. George Osterheld, a brother of the member of that name in the present firm. The growth of it has been steady and great. Though the specialty of the establishment is machinery of every description for hat manufacturing, yet a wide variety of machine-work is also done. The manufacture of mowing-machines was begun in 1881, this branch being conducted under the name of R. Dutton & Co., a stock union in which this firm are large shareholders. The mowing-machine branch is carried on in the two upper stories of the building, and about seventy-five finished machines are annually turned out. The firm under notice was formed by Mr. Rudolf Eickemeyer joining Mr. Osterheld, and the latter was succeeded in April 1880, by his brother Henry, who now represents that name in the firm. The building in which the hat machinery and general machinist work is manufactured is seventy-five by one hundred and fifty feet in area, and three stories high.

Another building, forty by seventy-five feet, and also three stories high, used by the business, was added in 1882. A large steam-power and about fifty hands are employed. The most of these hands are skilled mechanics. All kinds of machines, tools and appliances used in making wool and felt hats and all parts of the same are made. This firm is justly regarded as a large contributor to the distinction which Yonkers enjoys as a manufacturing centre. The value of its business amounts to seventy-five or eighty thousand dollars a year.

Mr. Rudolph Eickemeyer, of the firm of Osterheld & Eickemeyer, is a well-known manufacturer and inventor. He was born in a small village in the Palatinate of Bavaria, where his father held the office of forester. He continued to reside in his native place, attending the school there, till he was thirteen years of age, when he left home to attend a Real school at Kaiserslautern, where after remaining about two years, he was sufficiently advanced in his studies to enter the Polytechnic Institute at Darmstadt.

These schools were devoted mainly to scientific and technical branches of instruction, including mathematics, civil and mechanical engineering, surveying, architecture, etc., it being the object to prepare the students for mechanical pursuits.

In 1848, when the rebellion broke out in France, and the people of several of the countries of Europe revolted against their governments, young Eickemeyer, with his boon companion, classmate, and, in after-years, business partner, the late George Osterheld, joined the opposition party, and in the following year fought under General Sigel against the present Emperor of Germany.

As is well known, this revolt was unsuccessful. Through it the young men who had taken arms against their sovereign were placed in an unpleasant position, and though they were amnestied their surroundings became unendurable. So at the expiration of another year, they embarked for New York, where they arrived safely on the 22d of November, 1850.

The journey over, Eickemeyer and his companion found themselves in a strange city with only a limited sum of money and very little prospect of work. Fortunately, the Erie Railway was in course of construction at that time, and as it offered opportunities to willing workers, the young men made their way to Buffalo by rail, and thence walked to Lodi, where they found employment on the road.

In the spring of 1851 Mr. Eickemeyer returned to Buffalo, where he found employment in the Buffalo Steam-Engine Works, one of the largest machine-shops in that city, his duty being to assist in making the first mowing-machines produced in this State. He continued at these shops till 1853, when he left Buffalo to take charge of the repairs in the marble-mills then in full operation at Hastings-on-the-Hudson. His stay in this place was of short duration. In the following year, September 1, 1854, he removed to Yonkers, and, with Mr. Osterheld, who had been with him in all the places mentioned, opened an es-



R. C. C. Meyer

tablishment, the business at first being confined mainly to repairing tools used in the hat-shops and other factories at Yonkers.

While attending to these duties Mr. Eickemeyer became familiar with the art of hat manufacturing as conducted at that period, and almost intuitively apprehending and appreciating its needs, gave his serious attention to the work of supplying the necessary mechanical aids. As a result of his study, he very soon produced a small machine for making leather hat-bands. The popular shape of hat at that time was called the Ledger Hat, after the story-paper of that name which Robert Bonner had just purchased and was advertising in all parts of the country. This hat was finished with a leather band and binding; the band had both edges turned under and was embossed by being pressed between figured rollers; the turning of the edges of the band had to be done by hand, a process too slow and tedious to enable hat manufacturers to supply the increasing demand for the hat. Mr. Eickemeyer proved equal to the emergency, and in a short time made the machine above mentioned, which folded and embossed the band at a single operation. From this have been developed the present universally-used machines for making the sweat-leathers used in hats of every description.

A year or two later Mr. Eickemeyer constructed the first sewing-machine used to sew the leathers into the hats. This made a peculiar stitch, which is called a whip-stitch. From seventy-five to one hundred of these machines were produced, the manufacturers continuing to use them for a number of years, till they were superseded by others of different construction. The stitch then introduced, however, is retained to the present day in some of the best button-hole machines, and within a year past a machine for sewing leathers into hats, embracing the same stitch, has been patented.

At the beginning of our late war Mr. Eickemeyer decided to use his sewing-machine tools for the manufacture of fire-arms, and accordingly, for a number of years, revolvers in considerable quantities were made at the Yonkers factory, though the regular business was not neglected upon this account.

In 1865 he invented and patented his first hat-stretcher and also a machine to pounce hats in a cone-shape, and, in the following year, together with Mr. Osterheld, he invented the first successful hat-blocking machine. From that time forward a specialty was made of hatting machinery, and nearly all the force of the shop was devoted to its production. Mr. Eickemeyer's time and attention was mainly taken up in improving the machines already produced. These improvements in stretches, blockers, formers, fulling-mills, hat-presses, hat-ironing machines, sizing-machines, sewing-machines, etc., etc., furnished the subject-matter of a large number of letters-patent granted to him during the past twenty-eight years, of which he has taken out about one hundred, nearly all of which have met with success.

In 1869 Mr. Eickemeyer invented and perfected a driving mechanism for mowing-machines, which proved to be the simplest and easiest-running device ever produced. The machine, the "Haymaker," was entered at the Centennial Exhibition, where, being the lightest draft machine exhibited, it received a bronze medal. Three similar medals were awarded the firm for their exhibit of hatting and other machinery.

The mowing-machine, which is known as the "New Champion Mower," is now manufactured on an extensive scale at Springfield, O., and in a modified form, as a one-horse mower, by a firm in Yonkers. Mr. Eickemeyer's latest inventions in hatting machinery include a hat-shaving machine and one to make blocks and flanges. He is now engaged in perfecting and introducing a set of machines to curl and shape hats, which will undoubtedly prove as successful as the great number of other machines invented by him.

The inventions of Mr. Eickemeyer are in use all over the world, and the firm of which he is a member has a large export trade, not only with Europe, but also with New Zealand and Australia, the two last places having lately imported some of their machinery. Of late he has given some attention to electric matters, and will probably in time be able to show some of the results of his study in this branch of science. Some of his mechanical inventions have cost him many years of thought and work, not consecutively conducted, but renewed from time to time, and advanced step by step, after each process had been mentally wrought out.

Mr. Eickemeyer married Miss Mary T. Tarbell, of Dover, Me., in July, 1856, and has six children. He is held in the highest regard by his fellow-townsmen, who, in 1869, elected him trustee of public school No. 2, of which he was almost immediately elected President and so remained till the time of the consolidation and reorganization of the schools, in which movement he was a most prominent worker, and a member of the first Board. Mr. Eickemeyer served with Co. H, 17th Regt., (from Yonkers) at the time of the Rebellion.

When the project of constructing water-works was contemplated Mr. Eickemeyer was appointed on the first committee to examine plans, etc., and when the Board of Water Commissioners was organized in March, 1873, he was chosen as one of the members, and has held the office continuously to the present time, and for the last two years has been president of the board. He is also a director in the First National Bank. It affords us great pleasure to present his fellow-townsmen with this sketch of Mr. Eickemeyer, who has been so wonderfully and uniformly successful in his inventive efforts to supply the hat manufacturing industry with efficient machinery, and who is still patiently and persistently working out new problems of a similar character, or seeking to achieve the perfection of what he has hitherto only partially completed.¹

¹ The above sketch, with slight modification, is taken from *The Hat, Cap and Fur Trade Review* for August, 1882.

D. SAUNDERS' SONS.—The industry conducted by this firm of brothers was started by their father, David Saunders. He was born at Cupar Angus, Scotland, in July, 1809, came to New York in 1850, settled in Yonkers in 1854, and died here August 6, 1873. He started business in 1857, using part of Peek's flour-mill for a shop, but afterwards moved below the dam into Copcutt's building, subsequently known as the Pencil-Factory. Here he was burned out in 1868. After the fire he built his factory in Atherton Street, which was first occupied May 1, 1870. This is now the site of the business of the firm.

The business at first was ordinary jobbing, and making special machinery for parties wishing it for particular purposes in their work. Afterwards the manufacture of lathes and drilling-machines was adopted as a specialty, till the shop, in 1868, was burned, with its entire contents, including the whole stock of patterns and drawings for tools. Then attention was turned to gas and steam-fitters' tools, which at the time offered a fair field for improvement, and to the perfecting of these the firm has directed its thought and work to the present time.

The business was a success from the start, although slow at first for want of capital. The loss by fire in 1868 was a great check to it, as the work of years was destroyed in a night.

The firm is the possessor of several important patents. When it started, the father and the sons, William, Alexander, Leslie and Andrew, formed it. William died in 1865, and another son, Irving, was taken in. The father died, as stated, in 1873, and Andrew died April 8, 1885. The latter had devised and perfected many inventions.

The main part of the building in Atherton Street is of brick, three stories high, and sixty-five by forty-five feet in dimensions. There are, in addition, a boiler-room, blacksmith shops and wooden extensions for machine shops, store-rooms, etc. The firm has employed at times as many as one hundred men.

UNDERHILL'S BREWERY.—The brewery establishment of Edward Underhill's Son, the only one of the kind in Yonkers, is located on Chicken Island. The business was begun by Edward Underhill, Sr., in a building on the same island, which had been occupied by Mr. John T. Waring's hat-factory. The first barrel of ale was brewed on the 1st day of March, 1858. The building being partially destroyed by fire, the present building was erected, and the business moved into it in 1861. Changes in the proprietorship were frequent. The founder of the business was succeeded by Henry & Co., who were in turn followed by their predecessor. Then William Jackson and Robert Edgar became partners with Edward Underhill, Jr., under the firm-name of E. Underhill & Co. William Jackson retired from the firm in 1869, and Mr. Edgar retired at a later date. Henry M. Underhill was a partner for awhile, since which the business has been conducted by Edward Under-

hill, under the name of E. Underhill's Son. The products are ales and porter.

HOWELL'S SUGAR REFINERY.—The sugar refinery of B. H. Howell's Son & Co., located on the river just south of the railroad depot, was established by Edward Underhill in 1862. Brown sugar is extracted from molasses and sent to New York to be purified, and brought to the condition of white sugar. The main building is of brick, one hundred by forty feet, and three stories high. There are also two other buildings, one story high, one of which is one hundred by thirty-six feet, and the other one hundred and five by forty-two feet. Both are used for the granulating process and for storage. Mr. William C. Waring was associated with Mr. Underhill in 1863, and the firm-name was Underhill & Waring. In 1864 Mr. Underhill withdrew and Edward W. Cole took his place, making the firm Waring & Cole. By the admission of Mr. A. W. Doren in 1864, the retirement of Mr. Waring in 1865, and the subsequent admission of Mr. Jacob Read, the firm became Cole, Doren & Read. Mr. Cole dropped out in 1866, and the firm was then Doren & Read. Mr. Doren died in 1868, and his interest was purchased by Mr. Read, from whom, in 1870, the establishment passed into the hands of Benjamin Howell & Co., Mr. Read remaining as its superintendent. Another change, subsequently made, brought the firm-name to its present form.

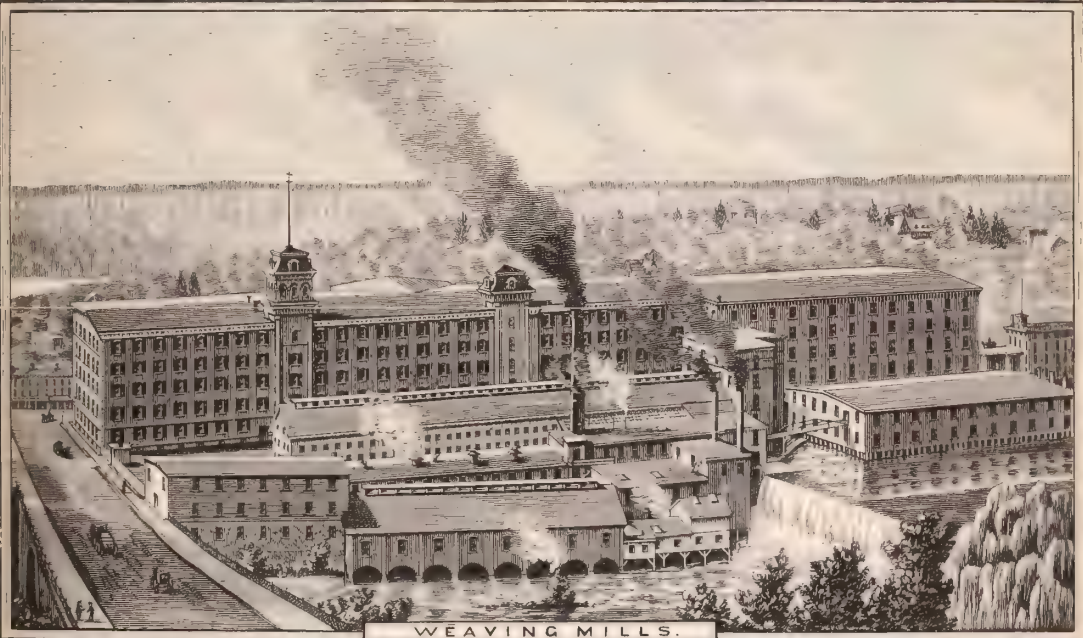
FIRE-ARMS AND MOWING-MACHINES.—During the last war the manufacture of fire-arms was a lively industry in many places. The large building fronting on Vark Street, between Riverdale and Hawthorne Avenues, and now used by the Waring Hat Manufacturing Company, was erected in 1862 or 1863 to supply the demand for fire-arms. "The Star Arms Company" was organized, and Mr. Everett Clapp was its president. With the close of the war the demand for its products ceased, and the building was unused till February 1867, when the Clipper Mowing-Machine Company opened it for the manufacture of mowing-machines. This company carried on business till 1874 or 1875, when it dissolved.

ALEXANDER SMITH & SONS CARPET COMPANY.—The earliest carpet-factory of Yonkers was that of Hutchinson & Mitchell, the site of which is represented on our map of 1847, and is now occupied by the Yonkers Flour-Mill, already described. Hutchinson & Mitchell used only hand-looms, and their work was conducted on a small scale. Their simple work was arrested by the burning of their factory in 1851 or 1852.

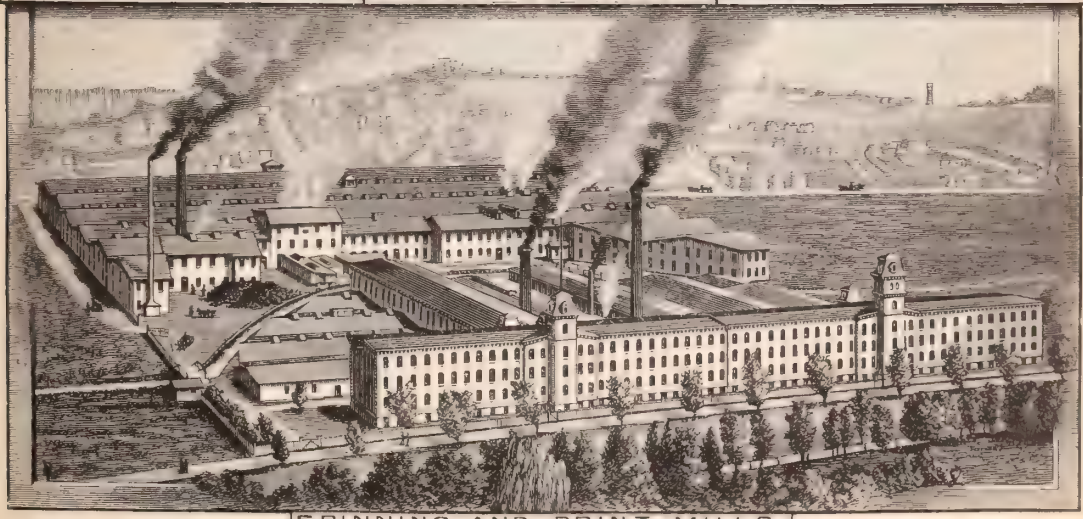
At the present time the manufacture of carpets by this company is the largest industry in Yonkers. It is under one proprietorship and management, though it occupies three of the largest plants in the city. One of these is at the corner of Palisade Avenue and Elm Street, near the heart of the city. The main building is of brick, fronting about four hundred feet



MOQUETTE MILLS.



WEAVING MILLS.



SPINNING AND PRINT MILLS.

ALEXANDER SMITH & SONS CARPET CO.
YONKERS, N. Y.

on Palisade Avenue. It has a width of fifty-five feet, and is five stories high at the south end, which faces on Elm Street. Large dyeing-houses and other accessory buildings are connected with it. On the northeastern outskirts of the city, facing about five hundred feet in length, on the west side of the Saw-Mill River road, and directly opposite the Yonkers Cemetery, stands the second mill. This one is about sixty feet wide and three stories high, with a basement. It was built by Alexander Smith & Sons in 1871. About a quarter of a mile further up the beautiful valley of the Nepperhan stands the third mill of this company. Like the other two, it is a brick building. It is four stories high, with a basement, being five hundred and eighty-four feet long and about fifty-five feet wide. It stands on the west side of the stream and faces on Nepperhan Avenue. Large dyeing-houses or drum-rooms are near these mills. One of them is about two hundred feet wide, five hundred feet long and two stories high.

The business of carpet-weaving was established in Yonkers by Alexander Smith in 1865; after he had twice lost a factory by fire in West Farms, where he had been pursuing the carpet business since about 1845. The invention of improved looms for the manufacture of tapestry, velvet, moquette and Axminster carpets, which he developed in Yonkers, and which are operated by steam-power, enabled him to manufacture his goods at prices considerably below those that had prevailed and the growth of the business, when once fairly under way in Yonkers, was rapid.

Mr. Smith, like many other inventors of note, met with many discouragements and reverses before he could get his Moquette and Axminster looms so working as to show what possibilities lay within them. The successive fires at West Farms, already mentioned, were not sufficient, however, to break his spirit. Twelve years of his life—years of labor, anxiety and experiment—were passed before he could bring this loom to a condition that he thought would insure success. Although thus twice defeated, he did not give up the struggle, but returned to it with renewed energy. He came to Yonkers after the second fire at West Farms, which occurred in 1864 and stripped him of everything belonging to his factory and his looms, and left him only a national flag which had waved above his building and had by some means escaped. He was fortunate in the aid he now secured in his business, fortunate in his business associations and fortunate in his continued experiments. His reputation for ability, industry and integrity made him the leader in the branch in which he was engaged. He perfected the improvements he had made in looms and in spinning and weaving processes, and secured patents for his inventions in Great Britain and France. In those countries they have been accepted, their superiority admitted and the inventions brought into extensive use. Mr. Smith died November 5, 1878, at the age of sixty years, having

been born near Trenton, N. J., on the 14th of October, 1818. He died on the evening of an election day, having just been elected to Congress by the willing votes of his fellow-citizens, to which his own grateful employes lent all possible sympathy, from their sense of obligation to him as their employer and friend. We shall speak more fully of this in a later part of our work.

After the death of Alexander Smith the business was continued by his heirs under the firm-name of Alexander Smith & Sons' Carpet Co., of which the president is Mr. Warren B. Smith, and the secretary and treasurer is Mr. William F. Cochran. When Mr. Smith died, the number of operatives employed in his mills was about sixteen hundred. The present number is about three thousand. The machine-shops of the company are connected with the mill on Palisade Avenue and nearly all the machines used in their factories are constructed here. This carpet mill is used principally for weaving tapestry Brussels and velvet carpets. The mills all together contain six hundred and sixty-five looms, of which three hundred and sixty-five are for tapestry and velvet, and three hundred are for Moquette, Axminster and Chenille carpets.

The history of these great works has been from the beginning one of nearly uninterrupted progress. It is necessary, however, to make this history complete, to say that in 1885 a serious and disastrous strike broke out among the operatives. It began about the middle of March and continued till the beginning of the following July. Of course it very much crippled the mills, and it caused the loss of very many thousands of dollars to the operatives who participated, or were unwillingly involved, in it. It also brought great injury to all the general business of Yonkers, which very much depends on the continued progress of its industries, among which this is the greatest. All Yonkers has reason to hope that no such occurrence, from all its future experience, may have to be put on record again.

Among the names of the famous inventors whose skill and ingenuity have advanced our manufactures, and increased the wealth of our country, an honorable place is due to the name of Halcyon Skinner, who was born at Mantua, Ohio, March 6, 1824, and who has long been identified with the Smith & Louis Carpet Company. His father, Joseph Skinner, married Susan Eggleston, and lived at Springfield, Mass. He was a man of great mechanical ability and almost always followed mechanical occupations, being a good workman at several trades.

Among other work he engaged in the manufacture of violins and constructed a set of machines for forming the various parts of those instruments with speed and accuracy.

Among these machines was one for cutting wood into thin strips for the sides of violins. And this was so successful, that he was led to construct another for

cutting veneers for general use. He was the first who invented a practical machine for that purpose. While his father was thus employed, the son was attending school in the winter and working during the summer, sometimes at mechanical work and sometimes for the neighboring farmers. In 1838 his father moved to West Farms in Westchester County, and for a while his machine was operated at that place. But as it did not prove to be a financial success he went back to the business of making violins and seemed on the road to success, when on the 6th of March, 1845, the mill took fire and all his machines and stock were destroyed. Young Skinner then went to work as a carpenter, and was engaged in that business till the fall of 1849. About that time he met Alexander Smith, who owned a small carpet-factory and was engaged with John T. McNair, in making some experiments in parti-coloring yarn to be used in the manufacture of ingrain carpets. The object was to dye different parts of a skein of yarn of different colors, so that when woven, each color should come in its proper place and thus avoid a striped appearance, which is so great a defect in ingrain carpet. This required reels of peculiar construction, with an apparatus for holding the skeins and lowering them into the dye vats accurately to any depth required. As Halcyon had become known as a skillful workman, Mr. Smith applied to him to make the necessary machinery and he was engaged for a considerable time in planning and constructing. In the spring of 1850, matters were so far advanced that Mr. Smith resolved to begin the manufacture of a new style of carpet, and as Mr. Skinner had succeeded in overcoming the difficulties incident to the work, and the new fabric met with favor from the trade, a new building was erected, and in the course of two years, about one hundred hand-loom were put in operation and the business was carried on very prosperously.

In 1855 Mr. Smith applied to him for the assistance of his skill to invent some method by which a power-loom could be made to weave Axminster or tufted carpet. To this invention Mr. Skinner devoted his time and attention and planned some devices by which the various operations required might be accomplished. Upon exhibiting these to Mr. Smith, he was convinced of the practicability of the design, and directed him to continue his efforts and see what could be done. In 1856 he obtained a patent with Mr. Smith, and made an experimental loom, which although necessarily imperfect, demonstrated the practicability of his ideas. He continued to make changes and improvements, and in 1860, had a very complete and satisfactory loom in operation. The next year he made a still more perfect loom, which Mr. Smith intended to exhibit at the International Exhibition in London, in 1862, but in January of that year, his factory was entirely destroyed by fire, except an outbuilding which contained the new loom. Mr. Skinner took the loom to the exhibition and remained

with it till the close, and on his return he obtained a new patent. In the meantime, a new factory had been erected and for a year or two he was engaged in experimenting with a power-loom for weaving ingrain carpet. In the spring of 1864 the factory was again destroyed, the building in which the new looms were being again saved. In the fall Mr. Smith removed his business to Yonkers and purchased the premises now owned by the tapestry weaving-mill. The tapestry ingrain manufacture was again started and a number of looms which had been purchased from a concern in Massachusetts, were set up, but they proved so defective that they narrowly escaped being sold for old iron. Mr. Skinner then took them in hand and succeeded in getting them in working condition. He also invented and had built a number of looms on an improved plan, which were very successfully operated for several years, or until Mr. Smith discontinued the business. Several Axminster looms were added and a new factory erected. At this time Mr. Smith resolved to engage in the manufacture of tapestry carpets and procured looms and machinery from England. The business was successful, but the looms were clumsy and inconvenient. Mr. Skinner was again called upon to make improvements, and he succeeded to such an extent, that the old looms were sold for a small price to make room for the new ones. Shortly afterward, Mr. Smith again applied to him to invent a power-loom for weaving Moquette carpets and thus produce a fabric nearly equal to Axminster and costing considerably less. Mr. Skinner's efforts were successful and he soon had a loom which gave very promising results. A large building was erected at the corner of Elm Street and Palisade Avenue, which was soon filled with the new looms and the machinery connected with them. In 1878 his looms were introduced into England and France, and Mr. Skinner spent some time in those countries putting them in operation. On his return he obtained new patents, and at the end of 1882, there were two hundred tapestry, one hundred and six Moquette and about thirty Axminster looms in operation. As the demand increased, a new company was started, and new buildings erected for the purpose of manufacturing Moquettes exclusively, and one hundred looms were started at the new works. After running awhile in this way, arrangements were made to transfer all the Moquette business to the new establishment, and the room in the old works was filled with looms and other machinery for weaving tapestry carpets. One hundred and fifty new looms were built, and at the same time additions were made to the first mill, nearly doubling its capacity. In 1884 the business was still further extended, and another building was erected capable of accommodating one hundred and fifty looms, and fifty new ones were added. At the beginning of 1885, there were in operation three hundred and fifty tapestry looms, about two hun-



H. Körner



dred and twenty Moquette looms and eight Axminster, and arrangements made for still greater extension of the business. The out-put per day was over twenty-six thousand yards of carpet, making about eight million yards per year, and the works furnish occupation for thirty-five hundred operatives and employes of various grades.

This business, which is now the most extensive establishment in the city of Yonkers, owes its existence to the wonderful mechanical ingenuity of Mr. Skinner, and his inventions and improvements have justly placed him in a high rank among American inventors.

Mr. Skinner married Eliza Pierce, who died in 1869. He subsequently married Adelaide, daughter of Henry P. Cropsey, of Brooklyn. His children are Charles E., Albert L., Herbert Y., Uretta B. and Aurelia L., all by his first marriage.

SMITH'S SODA WATER FACTORY.—The establishment of D. H. Smith, at first situated on the corner of Main Street and Warburton Avenue, was moved to a new building on Engine Place, James and John Streets. The premises are eighty feet square, and accommodate a large business in the manufacture of soda water, supplying druggists and dealers with charged fountains and bottling soda and other beverages. The average bottling done here is about one thousand dozen daily, but the facilities are such that fifteen hundred dozen could be turned out with ease. Mr. Smith started before 1870, and has been over sixteen years in the business in Yonkers.

WESTCHESTER GAS-LIGHT Co.—Under this head we may condense the history of a succession of efforts to establish an Illuminating and Fuel Gas Company in Yonkers, which has as yet neither succeeded nor wholly failed. On the 20th of September, 1870, the village authorities granted to a corporation organized under the name of "The People's Gas Co.," the right to manufacture illuminating gas, and lay pipes through the streets for its distribution. This company went so far as to build a holder on the west side of Nepperhan Avenue north of Ashburton, but without going any further, sold out, November 23, 1872, to another organization called "The City Gas Company." This company, without doing anything at all, sold out to the Westchester Gas-Light Company, which was incorporated in 1875. This new company really carried forward operations, piped the city to a certain extent, and manufactured and sold gas for several years. In 1879 another company was incorporated under the name of the Yonkers Fuel Gas Company. This company leased the already existing property of the Westchester Gas Company, and also itself built new works near the river-front, on Nepperhan Street. Its object in doing the latter was to supply a strong, crude gas for fuel, but the experiment did not command popular support. The affairs of both these companies went into the hands of a receiver in October, 1883, and in this condition they still remain. But in May, 1884, still

another company was incorporated, called "The Yonkers Fuel, Light, and Power Company." This company leased from the receiver just mentioned the works of both the last two companies named. It is solvent and is manufacturing gas now. But meanwhile, holders of mortgages on the property it leases have foreclosed, and the property is now advertised for sale. It is understood that some arrangement, either under those who are now carrying on the operations or under wholly new hands, is likely to be made, by which work will be continued, and these developments will not after all be practically thrown away.

FLEMING'S WOOL EXTRACT FACTORY.—This was started by John K. Fleming in 1876. The business is that of extracting the wool from rags, so that it can be used again. It was begun on Nepperhan Street, but in 1877 it was moved to Chicken Island in a building leased of Edward Underhill. This was burned in 1881, causing a loss of four thousand dollars. The present factory, on Bridge Street, near Ludlow Station, was then built and occupied. It employs from twelve to fifteen hands. There is in the State but one other establishment of this kind, and that is located at Little Falls.

THE NEW YORK PLOW COMPANY.—The business from which this has grown was started at Peekskill by Messrs. Minor & Horton as far back as the year 1826. In 1863 that business fell into the hands of the Peekskill Plow Company. This afterwards consolidated with the New York Plow Company, which had then been recently started at Newark, N. J., and the business was transferred thither. The works there having been burned, the business was removed to Yonkers in 1878, where the large building on Vark Street, between Riverdale and Hawthorne Avenues, previously used by the Clipper Mowing-Machine Company, was secured and occupied till 1882. Then the business was removed to its present location at the foot of Vark Street. The foundry here is eighty by one hundred and fifty feet, the forge-shop forty-two by two hundred and ten feet and the pattern-shop, which is fireproof, forty by forty feet. There are also a brick machine-shop, containing the offices, and a two-story store-house. The average number of hands employed the year through is about one hundred and thirty. Plows, harrows, cultivators, ensilage and fodder-cutters and other agricultural implements are manufactured, and many of their goods are sent to foreign countries. The officers of the company are James B. Brown, president; J. W. Douglass, secretary; and John Pentreath, superintendent. The New York office is at No. 55 Beekman Street.

ROSE, McALPIN & Co. (Nepperhan Leather-Works).—This firm, composed of G. L. Rose, G. L. McAlpin and W. W. McAlpin, began business in 1879 at the place formerly occupied by James Kitteringham. They admitted Mr. Kitteringham to partnership with them, but he soon withdrew. In 1882 they erected the works on Elm Street, known as the

Nepperhan Leather-Works, for the purpose of manufacturing morocco of all descriptions, in addition to fancy leathers, in which they had previously been engaged. The works employ from one hundred and fifty to two hundred men.

THE MUNICIPAL GAS COMPANY.—This company was organized June 2, 1879. Its original trustees were W. C. Fargo, G. W. King, B. F. Sherman, F. W. Allen and E. J. Jerzmanowski. The capital stock was limited to one hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars. Works were erected at Ludlow and gas was manufactured from water, under the process patented by C. Tessie de Montay. The works at Ludlow are well built, and are in their arrangement and security so nearly perfect that the insurance companies take risks on them at twenty to thirty-three and one-third per cent. less premium than on any other gas-works in the city. The company has mains in nearly every street in Yonkers, but its operations are not extended beyond the city limits. They have a capacity for manufacturing one hundred and fifty thousand feet a day, the gas being twenty-two to twenty-four candle-power. The company had the contract for lighting the city till July, 1885. Lamps were kept burning all night for fifteen dollars a lamp per year. There are in the city six hundred and six public lamps. The price of gas in 1885 was \$1.25 per thousand feet. The officers of the company are Dr. Samuel Swift, president; Peter U. Fowler, vice-president; J. Foster Jenkins, secretary and treasurer; and T. B. Crowell, superintendent. G. W. King was president from the organization for about six months, when he was succeeded by B. F. Sherman, and he, in turn, was followed by Dr. Swift May 4, 1884.

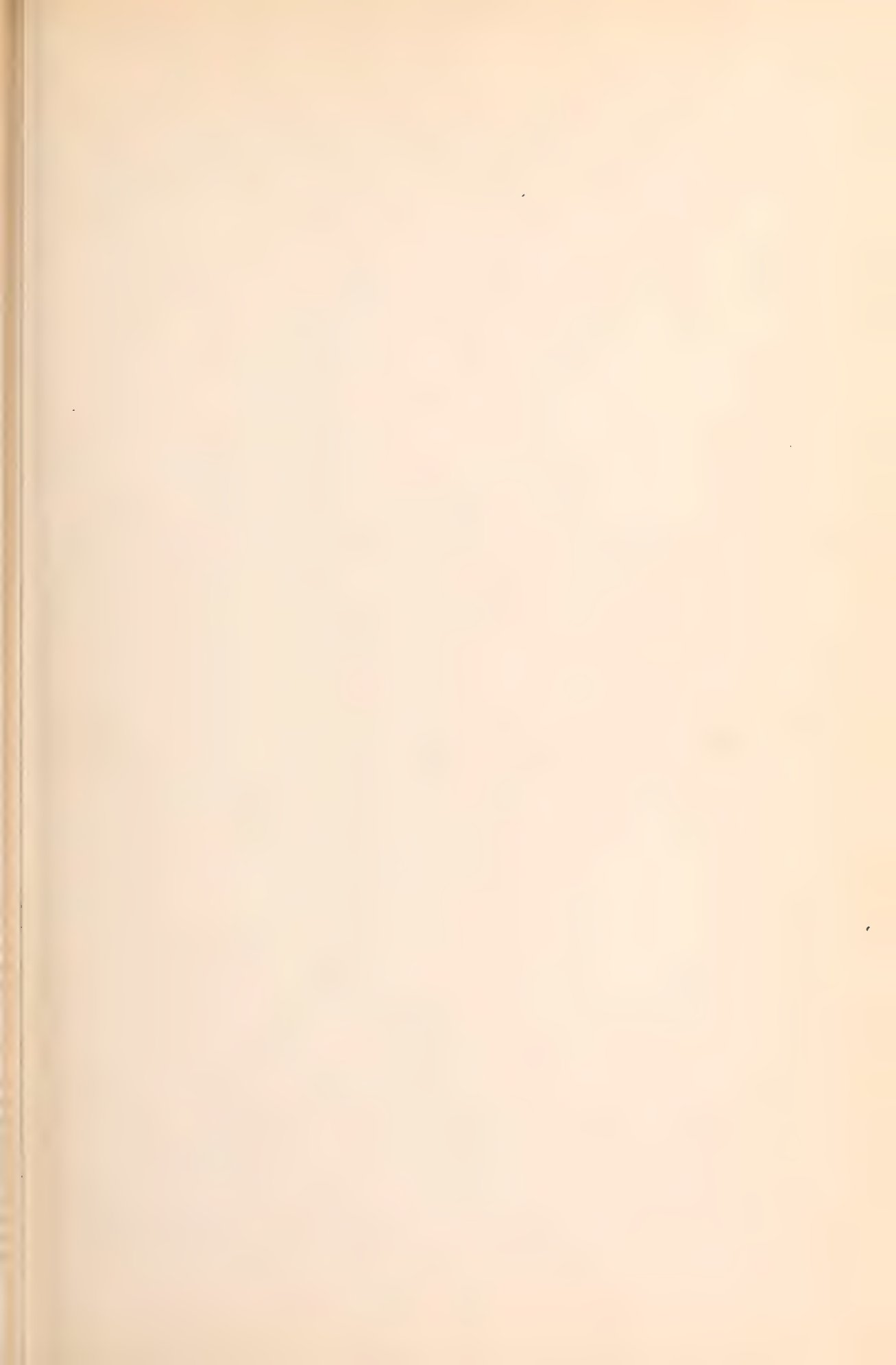
THE WESTCHESTER TELEPHONE COMPANY.—A telephone exchange was started in Yonkers under the management of the Western Union Telegraph Company January 6, 1880. It had forty-five subscribers. It was sold by the Western Union to the Metropolitan Telegraph and Telephone Company of New York City about July 1st of the same year, and became the property of the Westchester Telephone Company about October 1, 1881. At that time the company was not fully organized with a complete system of officers. The organization was completed about a month later. George L. Philips then became general manager in place of L. B. Harris, who had acted as such up to that time. General C. H. Barney was general superintendent for awhile, beginning in December, 1881. These managers operated from their office in New York City, the local exchange and the general oversight of the business in this locality being conducted by Miss A. H. Adgate. About January 1, 1882, W. R. Cabot was appointed assistant general manager, with his office in Yonkers. He continued in that position till December of the same year, after which there was no general superintendent on the field till the appointment of R. E. Alexander, the present assistant manager, about

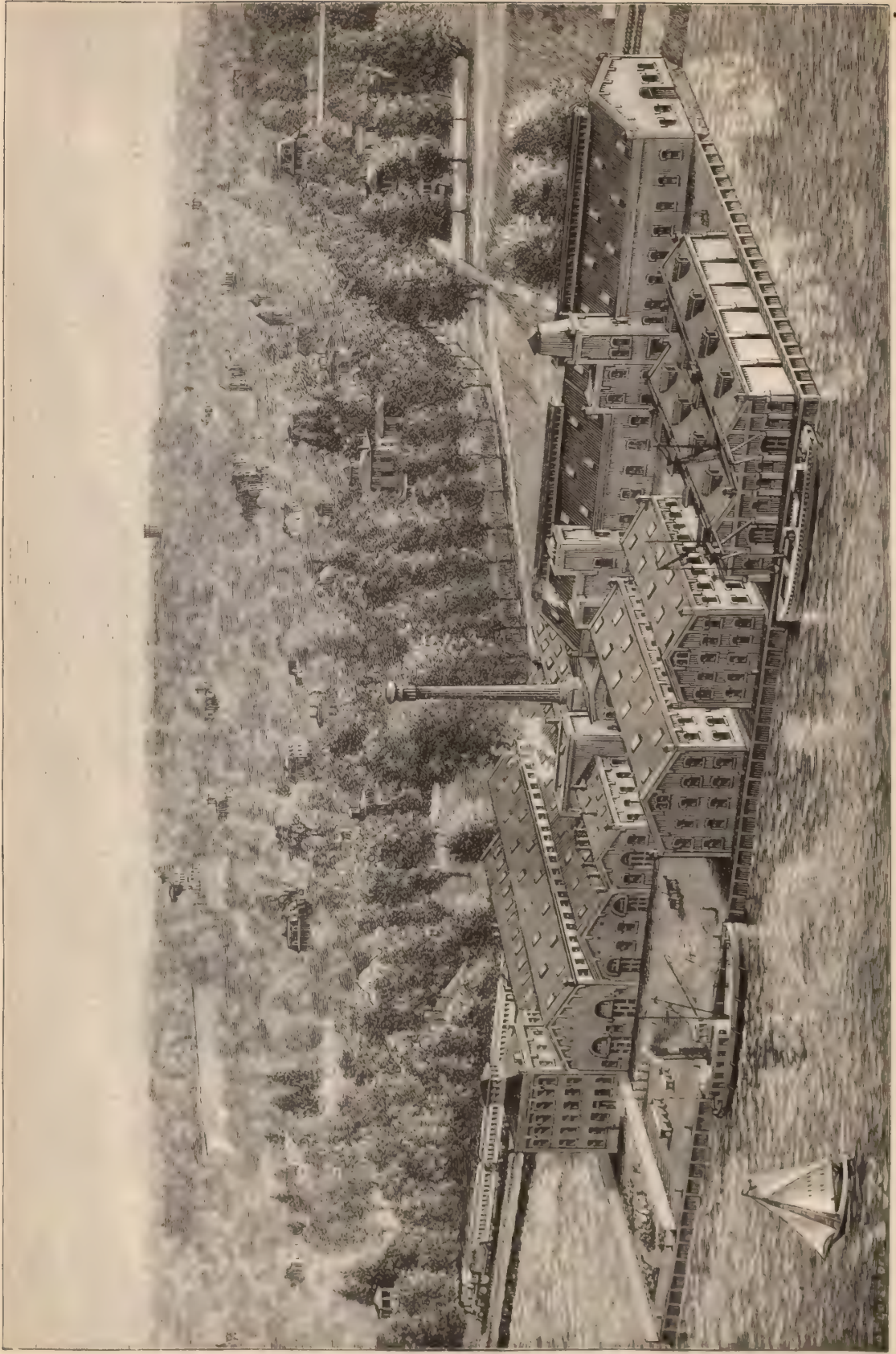
October 1, 1883. Miss Adgate was the first manager of the Yonkers Exchange, serving from the time it was opened till April 30, 1884, when she resigned, and the duties of that position were assumed by the assistant manager.

The company is incorporated under the general State law, and operates under licenses from the American Bell Telephone Company. Nearly all the stock is held by parties outside of Yonkers, and the central offices of the company are in New York City. Its officers are Dexter A. Smith, president; H. L. Storke, vice-president and general manager; and C. F. Cutler, secretary and treasurer. The district of its operations comprises the territory north of New York City to a line thirty-three and one-third miles from the City Hall, and including Haverstraw and Nyack on the west side of the river. The exchanges are at Peekskill, Sing Sing, Tarrytown, White Plains, Mount Vernon, Hartsdale, Port Chester, Rye, New Rochelle Westchester, Haverstraw and Nyack. These exchanges have connections with smaller towns and villages near them. The district is connected with New York, and by this means connections may be made with any city or locality in this section of the country. The Yonkers Exchange has two hundred and sixty-four subscribers and in the whole district there are about six hundred subscribers more. There are in the district about one thousand miles of wire, and the work of maintaining and operating is done by thirty-nine employees.

MEDICINAL MANUFACTURES.—On the 12th of January, 1885, a fire occurred which destroyed an immense building standing between Dock Street and Nepperhan Street, and facing the bend of the Nepperhan River. This building was constructed by the late C. H. Lilienthal, and was long used by him as a tobacco-factory. At the time of the fire it had been occupied since 1881 by Reed & Carnsick, manufacturers of beef peptonoids, and by the Maltine Manufacturing Co. for the manufacture of maltine. In the spring of 1884 it became also the headquarters of the New York Pharmaceutical Association for the manufacture of Lactopeptine. The fire destroyed machinery and stock belonging to these companies to the amount of ninety thousand dollars in value. The Maltine Manufacturing Company since the fire have carried on their operations in the building on Palisade Avenue, formerly occupied by Flagg's factory. They are in that building now.

THE FERN BROOK CARPET CO.—This company, located near Ludlow Station, began business in the spring of 1881, having been in operation before, under the name of the Hamilton Wooloid Co. The product sought was "wooloid," which was obtained by subjecting hair to a chemical process that gave it a crimp and spring, in effect closely resembling wool, at the same time subduing its glossy and wiry appearance. The process was the invention of Mr. Gideon Hamilton, who was secretary and treasurer of the





S. S. HEPWORTH & CO.,
GENERAL SUGAR MACHINERY AND MACHINE TOOLS,
YONKERS N. Y.

original corporation, while Charles R. Flint was its president. In the summer of 1882 the works began to produce from this material yarns for ingrain carpets, using the wooloid as a basis in combination with wool and camels' hair.

The connection of Mr. Hamilton with the company was dissolved in April, 1883, and a reorganization took place. Mr. Flint remained its president, William N. Ivins became vice-president and treasurer, and H. T. Bragg secretary and superintendent of the works. The stock capital was made \$50,000, and in the fall of that year the plant for spinning was doubled at an expense of about \$15,000. The company was again reorganized October 1, 1885, under the name of "The Fern Brook Carpet Co.," Messrs. W. & J. Sloane, of New York, taking an interest in the new departure, Mr. Walter W. Law becoming president, and Mr. Ivins and Mr. Bragg remaining treasurer and superintendent as before. The new company now have six sets of woolen cards, nine hundred and fifty-four spindles, forty-five two-ply and five three-ply ingrain looms, dye-houses, etc., complete for the manufacture of two and three-ply ingrain carpets of the very best quality. The first installment for the manufacture of Wilton and Body Brussels carpets is now in the mills and in operation. The indications are that in the future the manufacture of this line of goods will supersede other work in these mills.

THE WASHBURN & MOORE MANUFACTURING CO.—This company was organized for the manufacture of sanitary plumbing apparatus. It began business at its present location, corner of Dock and River Streets, in March, 1882. The manufactures of the company include a number of patented fixtures, of which Mr. C. H. Moore, one of the company, and a practical plumber, is the inventor. The company make the "Star" and "Eclipse" water-closets, which they claim are so constructed as absolutely to prevent the escape of sewer gas into a dwelling. Their "no overflow basin and bath valve" obviates the necessity for an overflow pipe for basins and baths. They also manufacture improved hydrants and street washers. The business extends throughout the country. They have fitted up with their apparatus the mansions of Wm. H. Vanderbilt, Samuel J. Tilden, Prof. J. Ogden Doremus, the buildings of the Mutual Life Insurance Co., in New York, the building of the Chicago Board of Trade and many others.

HEPWORTH & Co.'s SUGAR MACHINERY.—S. S. Hepworth & Co., who had, since 1875, been established in New York City, removed to Yonkers and established here the manufacture of machinery for sugar plantations and refineries in May, 1883. This firm is said to be the only one engaged in this branch of manufacture in the United States. Other lines of machinery, such as engines, lathes and machinists' tools, are also made here. The grounds covered by the buildings of the company lie on the river and between it and the railroad track, and are in extent

one hundred and thirty-five by three hundred feet. The capacity of the works is equal to the employment of three hundred hands.

THE YONKERS DISTRICT TELEGRAPH CO.—This company was incorporated in January, 1884, and fully organized about the 1st of February. Its capital stock was fixed at fifteen thousand dollars, nearly all of which was taken. The original board of directors were Dr. Samuel Swift, Theodore Fitch, Stephen D. Field, George W. Blanchard, George H. Warren, E. L. Le Moyne and S. E. Simonds. The company has had very good success in its business, evidently supplying a need which is strongly felt. One year and a half from its organization it declared a semi-annual dividend of three per cent. on the stock which had been taken and it is supposed that its earnings will enable it to continue similar dividends. The officers are Dr. Samuel Swift, president; George W. Blanchard, secretary and general manager; and George H. Warren, treasurer. The working force consists of Miss A. H. Adgate, manager, with an assistant manager, a sergeant and seven messenger boys, who are ready to go at any call to any part of the city or to any other city or town to which they may be sent.

THE AMERICAN GEAR COMPANY.—This is Yonkers' most recent industrial organization. It was formed within 1885. It is incorporated under the manufacturing laws of the State of New York, with one hundred thousand dollars capital stock. It has its business office in the city of New York, and its new factory in Yonkers, between the Hudson River and the railroad, a few rods south of the Glenwood Station. The company gives special attention to fine gear-cutting of every description, under a new system exclusively its own, by which all gears are cut geometrically correct to any regular or fractional pitch, conforming to either the English or Metric measurements. A noted feature of their business is bevel gearing, which, previous to the introduction of their system and improved machinery, could not be cut accurately and economically. They also build universal milling-machines, steam, gas and electric motors, power hoisting and safety clutches for elevators, wire book stitching and calendar eyeletting machines, geometric, rosette and jewelers' lathes, engineers' ruling and routing-machines, and a variety of ticket, label and fancy color printing-presses. In maintaining a high standard of work so great difficulties are met in securing intelligent, good mechanics, that this company has decided to connect with its practical work a mechanical school or department of physical science, lectures, mechanical drawing, etc., for the instruction of select apprentices to supply the company's own needs, and to meet a great public want for a higher grade of mechanics. The president of the American Gear Company is Benjamin W. Cole, the vice president and treasurer is Henry Y. Chubb, and the superintendent is William Heckert.

This completes the list of industries hitherto organ-

ized in Yonkers. But even while we are writing we hear of others projected. The adaptation of the locality to manufacturing industries seems to have no limit. They have doubled here within the last ten years. They give employment to many thousands of people. No one can predict to what extent they will yet grow, and their growth will hasten all other forms of growth, and will bring with these all the conditions they will require,—business, schools, churches, means of transportation and public works of every kind. There is a growth without limit before the people, the conditions of which will depend, humanly speaking, wholly upon their own good judgment and practical wisdom in appreciating and applying the forces within their reach on every hand.

SECTION XV.

The City Banks.

The city has two banks for discount and two for savings. The "Yonkers Savings-Bank" is the oldest of these institutions. It was incorporated under a special act. The date of its incorporation was April 13, 1854, and it began business June 13th of the same year. The next in order is the "First National Bank of Yonkers, N. Y.," which was originally chartered under the name of "The Bank of Yonkers," and began business on the 10th of August, 1854. The third is the "People's Savings-Bank of the Town of Yonkers," which was incorporated April 5, 1866, and opened for business April 27, 1867. And the youngest is the "Citizens' National Bank of the City of Yonkers," which was incorporated under the National Bank Act, December 5, 1872, and began business February 1, 1873. In regard to the Savings-Banks we state, as an incident bearing equally on both, that an act was passed by the Legislature of 1875 to conform all savings institutions to a uniformity of powers, rights and liabilities. Under this act, their mode of doing business, their rates of dividends, etc., are fixed by law.

We give the histories of the four Yonkers banks in the order of time in which they began to do business.

YONKERS SAVINGS-BANK.—This is now thirty-two years old. Its board of trustees was originally forty-one in number, but under the act of 1875, referred to above, it was reduced to twenty-five. The original trustees were Ethan Flagg, Robert P. Getty, J. Henry Williams, William Radford, Thomas O. Farrington, Horatio G. Prall, John T. Waring, Edward W. Candee, Henry W. Bashford, Lemuel W. Wells, Samuel D. Rockwell, William L. Atwater, William N. Seymour, Bailey Hobbs, Duncan Macfarlane, Charles Archer, Henry F. Devoe, George Gilroy, Amos W. Gates, James C. Bell, James L. Valentine, Joseph S. Hawkins, William G. Ackerman, John Olmsted, Robert Grant, William W. Scrugham, Jonathan Odell, Benjamin Brown, Fielding S. Gant, Joseph H. Jennings, George H. Bell, Frederick A. Coe, Samuel S. Barry, John Stilwell, James Scrymser, Josiah Rieh, Edward F. Shonnard, Henry A. Underwood, Law-

rence Post, Jr., Jacob Read and Cornelius M. Odell. Twenty-seven of these men have since died, and eleven more have been dropped, so that of them all none are now in the direction except Robert P. Getty, J. Henry Williams and Jacob Read.

The present trustees (there being eight vacancies) are Robert P. Getty, J. Henry Williams, Jacob Read (original incorporators), George W. Francis, Frederick A. Back, S. Emmet Getty, Stephen H. Thayer, Jr., Sylvanus Mayo, J. W. Rockwell, Samuel P. Holmes, S. Francis Quick, George W. Read, Joseph A. Lockwood, G. Livingston Morse, Fred. Von Storch, William H. Thorne and Frederic Shonnard. The officers are Robert P. Getty, president; Jacob Read and George W. Francis, vice-presidents; S. Emmet Getty, secretary; J. Henry Williams, treasurer; and Lyman Cobb, Jr., cashier.

From the date of organization to 1864 the bank was open for business on Tuesday and Saturday evenings only. From 1864 it has been open daily as well as on those evenings. Its first evening hours were from 6.30 to 8 P.M., and its first day hours were from 10 to 12 A.M., and from 2 to 5 P.M. In later years its hours have been from 9 to 12 A.M., from 2 to 5 and from 6 to 8 P.M.

From 1854 to 1859 Mr. Egbert Howland, cashier of the Bank of Yonkers, acted as business manager, under the title of clerk. From 1859 to 1867 Mr. Samuel D. Rockwell was the clerk and for part of that time the treasurer also. In 1867 he resigned both these offices. Then Mr. Lyman Cobb, Jr., who had been trustee from 1863 and had in 1866 resigned his trusteeship to accept the assistant clerkship, was elected clerk, and Mr. Isaac H. Knox was chosen treasurer. Mr. Cobb still holds his office, but in 1873 the title clerk was changed to the title cashier. Mr. Knox resigned the treasurership in 1874 and Mr. J. Henry Williams, a trustee from the beginning to now, was elected in his place, and holds the office to-day.

Mr. Ethan Flagg was the bank's only president from its opening till his death on the 11th of October, 1884, a period of more than thirty years. Then Mr. Getty, a trustee from the beginning, was elected president, and he continues in the office still.

In 1867 Mr. Raffaele Cobb was employed by his father as an assistant in the clerkship. In 1874 the trustees gave him a regular appointment as clerk, which he still holds. He has served in the bank for eighteen years.

In 1859 the deposits with the bank from organization had amounted to fifty-seven thousand eight hundred and eighty dollars. In 1867 they had increased to three hundred and fifty thousand dollars. On the 1st of January, 1886, they had reached the sum of \$8,359,715.

During its first five years the Yonkers Savings-Bank conducted its business at the Bank of Yonkers (now the First National Bank). The next two or three years it conducted it in a store on the opposite

side of the street. Then it hired and occupied rooms in the Getty House, on the corner of New Main Street. In 1866 it was determined to erect a new building for it on Getty Square. The result was the erection of the present elegant banking-house, of which it took possession April 19, 1868. It is of brown stone in front and has three stories and a basement. It covers forty by seventy feet on the ground. In the cellar is a steam-heating apparatus. The basement is rented for offices. The banking is conducted on the first floor in a front apartment, thirty-five by forty feet, provided with Lillie's safety vault, consisting of two chambers and a fire-proof vault in the rear, secured by three combination locks. The trustees' room, in the rear of the banking-room, is twenty-five by forty feet.

The bank has a police telegraph attachment to its safe and call, which will bring an officer in one minute. The second floor has accommodations for the use of the janitor, and also contains the Yonkers Lyceum Hall. The third floor has a main lodge-room, thirty-five by fifty-one feet, with a sixteen-foot ceiling and four ante-rooms. This floor has always been occupied by the Freemasons. The erection of this building gave great impulse to business. In four years the amount of deposits doubled, and in five years more it doubled again, rounding the million. It has been thought also that it very much helped the boom in real estate, which occurred immediately

thereafter, when building lots in some quarters doubled in value, actual sales being made at two thousand four hundred dollars, when the amount paid just two years before had been one thousand two hundred dollars. It also had an influence in reducing the rate of interest on Yonkers city indebtedness.

The Bank, January 1, 1886, reported to the Bank Department the amount due depositors as \$1,392,842.71, and the surplus as \$137,072.

The amount credited to depositors for the preceding six months was \$24,300.48. The first six months in 1854 had reached but \$124.16. On the 1st of January 1877, however, \$29,640 had been credited. The whole amount of interest credited to depositors from the organization to the 1st of January 1886, was

\$840,110.63, and the whole amount of money deposited was \$8,359,715, making a total of \$9,199,825.63. The whole amount that had been paid depositors was \$7,806,982.92, and the amount remaining on hand and due them was \$1,392,842.71. The number of open accounts was 5099. It will be seen from this financial statement that the bank is in a sound condition.

Samuel Darling Rockwell, one of the founders of the Yonkers Savings Bank, was born in the town of Ridgefield, Conn., January 23, 1810. His parents were well to do farmers for those days, whose Christian fidelity made a happy home. Here he remained during his early youth, enjoying the advantages of a common school during winter, and working on the old homestead during the summer. In 1825 his father procured for him a situation in the city of New York, where he learned the trade of watch-maker and jeweler, continuing in the same establishment until he became the owner and succeeded his employer in 1837. In the fall of 1844 he came to Yonkers, purchased a site and built a small cottage, and in the spring of 1845 removed from the city with his family, being one of the first of the business men of New York to locate here, but going daily to and from his business by way of the Harlem road for several years previous to the building of the Hudson River Railway. He was soon



Samuel D. Rockwell

followed by many who, like himself, sought relief from a crowded city in the pure air of Yonkers, which was at that time a thinly inhabited country town, containing only about 3000 inhabitants. He afterwards withdrew from business in New York, and established a real estate agency which he still continues. He has ever been intimately connected with all schemes for public improvement, and especially interested in all that concerns the welfare of the public schools. In religion he is connected with the First Presbyterian Church, and was one of the first to assist in organizing a church of that denomination in Yonkers. Mr. Rockwell married Oril James, daughter of Jacob Sherman, of Brinfield, Mass. Their children are John William, who is now residing in Yonkers; George Sigourney, who was killed at the battle of Stone River, 1863, at the age of twenty-three, Frances

Elizabeth, wife of John H. Riker, of New York City; Julius Talcott, who married Imogene, daughter of Alfred Jones, and is now residing in this city.

Mr. Rockwell is one of the oldest citizens of Yonkers and is well known as a man of enlarged views, and no one has a better claim to be considered a representative man of the city.

Lyman Cobb, Jr., the cashier of the Yonkers Savings-Bank is the son of the eminent Lyman Cobb, the author of the numerous school books whose circulation may be counted by millions. This celebrated lexicographer was a native of Lenox, Massachusetts, and removed to New York, where the greater part of his life was spent in the preparation of the works which have given him a lasting and well-deserved fame. Mr. Cobb was born September 18th, 1800, and married Miss Harriet Chambers, of Caroline, Tompkins County, N. Y., April 7, 1822. Their children were Sarah Jane, born in Rochester, N. Y., March 20, 1823, married Wm. C. Duncan July 1, 1846, died July 7, 1847; Eleanor Mack, born in Berkshire, Tioga County, April 3, 1825; Lyman, Jr., born in Caroline, Tompkins County, September 18, 1826; Hannah Louisa, born August 13, 1828; George Whitney, born in New York, October 11, 1835; William Henry, born June 12, 1837; Charles Frederick, born December 3, 1848, and Eugene Wheaton, born October 16, 1851. After a long life of activity and usefulness this celebrated man died in October, 1864, at Colesburg, Potter County, Penn., and rests in peace in the cemetery of that quiet village.

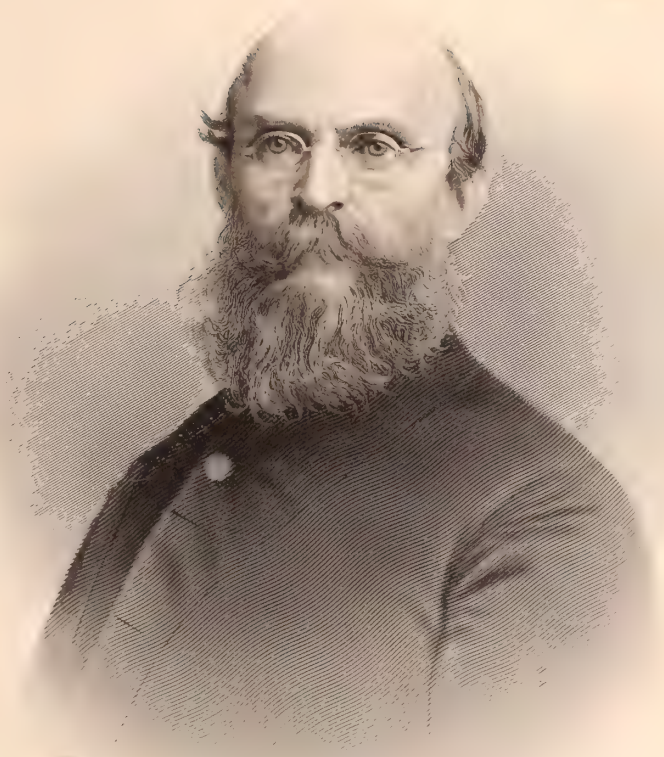
Lyman Cobb, Jr., whose portrait appears in this work, passed the earlier part of his life in New York, where he was engaged as assistant to his father, in the preparation of his numerous works on educational subjects. His close application to business made such inroads upon his health that in 1850 he removed to Yonkers, seeking the benefit of the country air. For two years he was book-keeper in the employ of Marshall Lefferts, a well-known business man and Colonel of the famous Seventh Regiment of New York. While in his employ the labor devolved upon him of keeping five distinct sets of books, a burden too onerous to be borne for a great length of time, and he resolved to make Yonkers his permanent home. Here he taught school for three years, and was soon reckoned among the prominent citizens of the village, being elected Clerk of the village (a position which he held for seven years), and was for sixteen years justice of the peace, performing all the civil and criminal business of the office during a large portion of the time. He was elected trustee and secretary of the Yonkers Savings Bank, which he held for three years, when he resigned to accept the office of cashier, and has continued in that position for the last seventeen years. In 1869 he was ordained deacon in the Episcopal Church, and established a Mission Church, a full account of which will be found in another place. His connection with the City Hospital as chaplain, dur-

ing the last ten years, and the daily service conducted by him, shows his active interest in the cause of philanthropy, and as President of the Young Men's Christian Association, his ability and willingness to do good have been fully shown. In the Masonic fraternity Mr. Cobb holds an honorable place, being a member of four different bodies. He was for four years Master of Rising Star Lodge, No. 450, a charter member of Nepperhan Lodge, No. 736, and was first High Priest of Nepperhan Chapter, No. 177. He was Charter Member and thrice Illustrious Master of Nepperhan Council, and Charter Member and Commander of Yonkers Commandery, No. 47, and is now treasurer of the Council and the Lodge. In 1884, in company with his wife, daughter and youngest son, he made a tour of several European countries.

Mr. Cobb was married to Miss Cornelia Drake, of Little Falls, Herkimer County, November 4, 1845. Their children are Raffaele, born January 3, 1850; married to Martha C. East, and has two children—Raffaele, Jr., and Cornelia Willis; Francis Eugene, born September 14, 1852, and married to Miss Katharine B. Mann, of Watkins, N. Y.; Minnie Putnam, born March 17, 1857, and Frederic Lyman, born October 20, 1862. The only daughter, Miss Minnie P. Cobb, has just died in May 1886.

As a citizen of Yonkers Mr. Cobb holds a high and honorable position. A firm supporter of the Episcopal Church, and a devout member, he is in charity with all Christian denominations. His character, in society, is that of an honest and careful business man, and he has gained the well-deserved reputation of a good and useful citizen.

THE FIRST NATIONAL BANK OF YONKERS, N. Y.—This bank also was organized in 1854. It began business on the 10th of August in that year, and, like the Yonkers Savings-Bank, is now thirty-one years old. Its original directors, named in the articles of association, were Amos W. Gates, Ethan Flagg, Robert P. Getty, Henry F. Devoe, Lemuel W. Wells, William H. Arthur, William G. Ackerman, Fielding S. Gant, William C. Waring, James L. Valentine, John Olmsted, John Stilwell and Henry W. Bashford. The directors since elected, in the order of their election, have been Abraham Hatfield, John T. Waring, Thomas C. Cornell, James C. Bell, Joseph S. Hawkins, William W. Scrugham, Jeremiah Robins, John W. Mills, Edward Underhill, Isaac H. Knox, Cornelius M. Odell, John H. Morris, Jonathan Odell, George B. Skinner, Henry Bowers, Alexander Smith, William L. Cogswell, James Faulkner, James Stewart, William A. Dibble, James M. Drake, Charles Clark, William H. Doty, Warren B. Smith, Rudolf Eickemeyer, Augustus Marsh, William D. Olmsted, Samuel P. Holmes, William F. Cochran and William P. Ketcham. Total number of directors from the beginning, forty-one. Of these, the following are the directors in July, 1886, viz., John Olmsted, Robert P. Getty, John T. Waring, Thomas C. Cornell, Isaac H.



Lyman Cobb Jr.



Knox, James Stewart, Warren B. Smith, Rudolf Eickemeyer, Charles Clark, William H. Doty, Augustus Marsh, William F. Cochran and William P. Ketcham.

Mr. John Olmsted has been president from the beginning, being still in the active duties of the office. The first cashier was Mr. Egbert Howland, who resigned May 1, 1875, on account of impaired health, and died January 12, 1878. Mr. Howland, before coming to Yonkers, had started and been successively the cashier of the two banks of discount still flourishing in Peekskill and Somers. He was the working power of the First National Bank of Yonkers during his connection with it. Mr. William D. Olmsted became cashier of the bank when Mr. Howland resigned in 1875, having been assistant cashier from September 15, 1871. Mr. Olmsted resigned the cashiership September 10, 1878, when Mr. Wallis Smith was appointed cashier. Mr. Smith is still in office. Mr. James T. Howland entered the bank at its opening, as clerk. Subsequently he became assistant to the cashier. For many years now he has been the bank teller. Mr. John H. Keeler was appointed book-keeper April 1, 1868, and resigned February 1, 1873. Mr. Wallis Smith succeeded Mr. Keeler, and kept the position till he was made cashier. Peter S. Abrams was employed as office-clerk and runner in 1862, was promoted to the position of second teller in 1872, and resigned June 1, 1877. He has since died. Edward Gibson was engaged as junior clerk June 4, 1875, and, when Mr. Smith was promoted, was placed in charge of the dealers' ledger, at which he still remains. Wells Olmsted was engaged as junior clerk in September, 1878, and holds the position now. Luke Simpson was employed as janitor in April, 1873, and is janitor still.

Of the original directors, Amos W. Gates, Ethan Flagg, Henry F. Devoe, Lemuel W. Wells, William H. Arthur, Fielding S. Gant, James L. Valentine and John Stilwell have died. And of the directors since elected, the same is true of Abraham Hatfield, Joseph S. Hawkins, William W. Scrugham, Jeremiah Robins, John W. Mills, Edward Underhill, Cornelius M. Odell, Alexander Smith, William L. Cogswell, James Faulkner and William A. Dibble. The total number lost by death has been nineteen.

The bank in December, 1864, changed its relations from a State bank to a National bank, with the title which it now holds and which stands at the beginning of this article. The circulation of the former bank, ninety thousand dollars, was assumed by the new bank, and some of the notes representing it have even yet not been presented for redemption.

The bank began business in a small room in the Getty House, receiving at its opening thirteen deposits, amounting to eleven thousand nine hundred and twenty-six dollars. Its first dividend was paid on the 10th of April, 1855, to one hundred and thirty-three shareholders. Its capital stock is one hundred and

fifty thousand dollars, its surplus fund is thirty-seven thousand five hundred dollars, its undivided profits are \$15,185.11, and its individual deposits (subject to check) amount to \$485,775.78. It has paid dividends with regularity from its beginning, its business having been throughout a continuous success.

Two years nearly after its opening the directors leased of Mr. Robert P. Getty the rooms at the south end of the Getty House, and, in March 1863, they erected a safety vault in these rooms and an additional apartment in the rear. These premises they occupied till they took possession of their present building. They are now occupied by the Citizens' National Bank.

Plans for a bank building (on a lot of ground next south of the Getty House, twenty-two feet front, to which six feet, bought of the Anderson estate, were soon added), made by J. Davis Hatch, were adopted in September, 1871, and work was begun at once. In January, 1872, the Yonkers Savings-Bank trustees formally invited this bank to occupy a portion of their banking-rooms, free of charge, till the completion of the new building, but this liberal offer proved unnecessary, and, with proper acknowledgment, was declined.

The vaults of the present bank were built and placed in position by Lewis Lillie, formerly of Troy, N. Y., as soon as the building was enclosed.

The building committee reported estimates for counters, desks, furniture and fixtures on the 1st of November, 1872, most of which were furnished by the carpenters (Seeger & Smith), who, together with the masons (J. & G. Stewart), completed the building about the 1st of May of the following year.

On the 30th of April, 1873, after business hours, the treasure and books of the bank were removed to the new vault; and on the next day business was begun in the new banking-rooms, where it has been conducted since. The office-hours of the bank are from nine A.M. to three P.M. of each day.

On the 8th of August, 1879, the directors of this bank celebrated the twenty-fifth anniversary of its organization with appropriate ceremonies. The history of the bank to the time was carefully prepared, and printed in the Yonkers papers. The statement we have given, as far as it refers to its record down to that date, is condensed from that history. For what has transpired since, we have been indebted to the cashier of the bank, who has courteously answered our questions in reference to its present details.

John Olmsted, one of the oldest citizens of Yonkers, and president of the First National Bank of that city, was born in Spencertown, Columbia County, N. Y., October 4, 1811. His grandfather, Jonathan Olmsted, was a native of Connecticut, born in 1745. He married Thankful Crosby. Their son Jonathan was born June 12, 1782, and settled in Spencertown, where he practiced as a physician, and also conducted a small country store. In those primitive

times the usual fee for a professional visit was twenty-five cents, or fifty cents if called to travel a long distance. To obtain goods for his store he made occasional visits to New York, when it sometimes took him two weeks to make the trip on the slow-sailing sloops, the only craft used in early times. After a life of usefulness he died at the early age of forty-two, leaving a family of six daughters and one son. The son, John Olmsted (subject of this sketch), left home at the age of thirteen and found employment in a store in South Hadley, Mass. It was here that he earned his first dollar. Being one of the scholars in the Sunday-school, his aunt offered him one dollar for every thousand verses of the New Testament which he could commit to memory. The result was his learning from the second chapter of Matthew to the eleventh chapter of Luke, inclusive, somewhat more than two thousand two hundred verses. He returned in the fall of 1826 and taught a district school in his native town with good success, the wages being twelve dollars a month. As was customary in those days, the teacher "boarded round." In the spring of 1827 he obtained a clerkship in the store of James Clark, of Kinderhook, and remained one year. He then went to New York and entered the wholesale grocery-store of Stephens, Lippincott & Co., 52 Front Street. The former members of this firm had retired rich and the partners were then Charles Robb and John L. Stephens. The latter

had studied law and had entered the firm to get some practical knowledge of mercantile life. He afterwards became an extensive traveler, and his "Travels in the Holy Land" and "Travels in Central America, Chiapas and Yucatan" are among the most interesting books of travel ever written by an American.

In 1832 Mr. Olmsted was sent by the firm as a witness in a suit to be tried at Plattsburgh, and he retains a vivid remembrance of meeting troops of people who were fleeing from Canada to escape the cholera then raging. After his return he found the dreaded disease ravaging New York. Business was almost suspended and he could stand in the store-

door and see no one in the street, nor any vessels in the slips. The great fire of 1835 destroyed their place of business, only a safe with books and papers and a few valuable goods being saved. In 1834 Mr. Olmsted made a visit to Niagara Falls, then a long and tedious journey. For a part of the way he traveled on the "Mohawk and Hudson" Railroad, the first in the State, its meagre accommodations being very far behind the equipments of modern times. In the spring of 1837 Mr. Olmsted formed a partnership with Mr. H. G. Herbert, under the firm-name of Herbert & Olmsted, with Mr. Ira Davenport, of Steuben County, N. Y., as special partner, in the wholesale grocery business, at No. 62

Front Street, New York. This business he continued at that place and at No. 72, on the same street, till 1850, when he leased the store, No. 203 Fulton Street, and occupied it till he closed up his business in 1854.

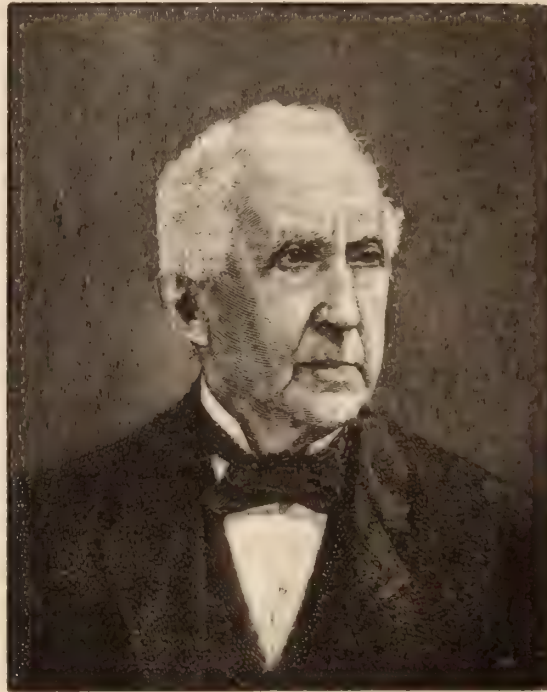
In May, 1837, Mr. Olmsted married Lucinda, only daughter of William Davenport, of Spencertown, N. Y. They had six children, four of whom are now living.

Mr. Olmsted lived in New York till 1850, when he purchased a lot and built a house at Yonkers where he has since made his home. When the Bank of Yonkers was organized he was elected president and has retained the position till the present time.

Soon after the close of the late war he made a trip to Virginia and visited the battle-fields which are now famous

in history. In 1868, in company with one of his sons, he went to California, *via* Isthmus of Panama. The events of this journey were graphically described in a series of letters which appeared in the local papers and were afterwards printed in book-form for private circulation. In 1874 he crossed the Atlantic and traveled extensively in Europe, and in 1877 he again went abroad in company with his family.

Mr. Olmsted is for the third time a widower, having married for his second wife, Miss Lucy Flagg, of Yonkers, a grandniece of Lemuel Wells, on the 4th of October, 1854. She died in the summer of 1858, leaving one child. In March, 1869, Mr. Olmsted was united to Miss Harriet Burr, a granddaughter of



John Olmsted

Major Van Campen, of Angelica, N. Y., and one of the pioneers of Western New York. Mrs. Olmsted died suddenly on the 13th of May, 1885.

Mr. Olmsted is a trustee of the First Presbyterian Church. He has been the treasurer of the church for more than thirty years, but has never held any political or civil office. In the business circles of the city there is no man who stands higher for business ability and integrity than he.

THE PEOPLE'S SAVINGS-BANK OF THE TOWN OF YONKERS.—This bank was incorporated April 5, 1866, and began business April 27, 1867. Its first trustees were Robert J. Douglass, Andrew Archibald, Orrin A. Bills, Jonathan Vail, William Radford, William B. Edgar, George B. Skinner, James P. Sanders, William Macfarlane, George F. Coddington, John Phillips, Thomas F. Morris, Eli L. Seger, Nelson Ackert, Levi P. Rose, Henry F. Brevoort, Peter U. Fowler, M. W. Rooney, Clinton M. Davis, George B. Pentz and James W. Mitchell. Of these twenty-one men, Robert J. Douglass, Orrin A. Bills, William Radford, William Macfarlane, George F. Coddington, John Phillips, Nelson Ackert, M. W. Rooney, Clinton M. Davis and James W. Mitchell are now dead.

The trustees since elected have been John Wheeler, Philip A. Deyo, Isaac G. Johnson, Lawrence R. Condon, Rudolf Eickemeyer, Joseph Masten, William A. Gibson, George Stewart, Peter E. Radcliff, John G. P. Holden, James C. Courter, William H. Copcutt, J. G. Herriott, Peter J. Elting, Norton P. Otis, Rufus Dutton, Charles Reed, Charles H. Emerson, James E. Bloomer, C. M. Moseman, Frank E. Wheeler, Halcyon Skinner, Robert Neville, John Embree, A. T. Kear, Abram C. Mott, Charles T. Mercer, John Wallace, Charles E. Gorton, John Crowther, George H. Selleck and A. P. Hazard. Of these, Joseph Masten, Peter E. Radcliff, Robert Neville and John Crowther are dead.

The present trustees are Jonathan Vail, John Wheeler, John G. P. Holden, Charles H. Emerson, Halcyon Skinner, John Embree, Abram C. Mott, John Wallace, Charles E. Gorton, James P. Sanders, Lawrence R. Condon, Peter J. Elting, Rufus Dutton, Frank E. Wheeler, A. T. Kear, Charles T. Mercer, George H. Selleck, Charles Reed and A. P. Hazard. The president is Rufus Dutton; the vice-presidents are J. G. P. Holden and Peter J. Elting; the treasurer is George W. Cobb; the secretary is A. C. Mott; and the counsel is James P. Sanders.

The bank is open daily from ten to one and two to four; and on Monday, Wednesday and Saturday evenings from half-past six to eight.

It reported to the Bank Department, January 1, 1886, its amount due to depositors as \$445,970.47 and its surplus as \$20,357.37. The whole amount credited to depositors since organization has been \$172,184.00; the whole amount of money deposited since organization has been \$2,898,641.47; total, \$3,070,825.47; the whole amount of money paid depositors has been

\$2,624,855.00; amount due depositors, as stated above, \$445,970.47.

The presidents of the bank, in the order named, have been William Radford, Thomas F. Morris, George B. Pentz, Joseph Masten, Charles Reed and Rufus Dutton. Its only treasurer has been George W. Cobb. Its secretaries have been James P. Sanders, J. G. P. Holden and Abram C. Mott. Its first business was done in the Radford building, now belonging to Mr. David Hawley. Its present accommodations are in the Anderson building, next south of the First National Bank.

THE CITIZENS' NATIONAL BANK OF THE CITY OF YONKERS.—This bank was incorporated December 5, 1872. The first meeting of its stockholders to elect directors was held January 31, 1873, and the bank was opened for business the next day. The first directors elected were Charles H. Hamilton, Peter U. Fowler, Jonathan Vail, William H. Copcutt, Joseph Peene, Henry R. Hicks, William Macfarlane, James Ackerman, Lyman Cobb, Jr., William G. Ackerman, Charles R. Dusenberry and John Wheeler. Those elected since have been Charles E. Waring, Levi W. Flagg, William S. Carr, Ezekiel J. Elting, William Fred. Lawrence, Philip A. Deyo, Peter J. Elting, John H. Keeler, Joseph Masten, Isaac M. Dyckman and Andrew Deyo. All these men are living except William Macfarlane and Joseph Masten. The present directors are Charles E. Waring, Henry R. Hicks, Charles R. Dusenberry, William Fred. Lawrence, Ezekiel J. Elting, Philip A. Deyo, Peter U. Fowler, Isaac M. Dyckman, Peter J. Elting, Jonathan Vail, William H. Copcutt and Andrew Deyo.

Charles H. Hamilton was the bank's first president, but held the office for one year only. From that time Jonathan Vail has been the only president. The only vice president has been Peter U. Fowler, and the only cashier has been John H. Keeler. The teller of the bank is Henry M. Anderson, the book-keeper is George W. Peene and the runner is Robert B. Light.

The bank began business in the Yonkers Savings-Bank building, but on the 1st of May, 1873, moved into the rooms then vacated by the First National Bank, in the south end of the Getty House. In these rooms it still remains.

This bank has one hundred thousand dollars' worth of United States four per cent. bonds to secure its circulation. The bonds were bought at ninety-nine and a half, and are now quoted at one hundred and twenty-six and a half.

The bank has paid regular semi-annual dividends from the beginning, twenty-four in all, amounting in the aggregate to \$81,500. It has a surplus fund of twenty thousand dollars, and its undivided profits in hand are \$10,000.00, showing in all profits, less expenses, premiums, loans, etc., amounting to \$106,187.19.

Its business statement for June 3, 1886, was as

follows : Resources—loans and discounts, \$267,488.77. Liabilities—capital stock paid in, \$100,000 ; surplus fund, \$20,000 ; undivided profits, \$10,000 ; total liabilities, \$548,553.14 ; total net deposits, \$334,060.86.

The public confidence in all the Yonkers banks is thorough. The stability of the directors and of all the prominent officers is shown by their history. Noted among the long-standing trustees of the savings-banks and the directors of the banks of discount, are a few who have been connected with them as such from the beginning, and many others of whom this statement is nearly applicable. The money and property foundation on which the banks rest has been shown to be solid, and most of the men who have been in their direction have been among the safest and strongest men the Yonkers business-community has ever known. Among the officers of the banks, it will not be deemed invidious if we especially speak of Mr. John Olmsted, the only president the First National Bank has ever had, and whose business carefulness and integrity through all the strain of the last thirty-one years of financial experience have been without a stain. He is now one of our most venerable citizens, but remains ever at his post, true to the trust committed to his hands. All whose affairs are to any special extent involved in the management of this bank feel a great sense of safety in having their business interests in the keeping of such a careful head.

In January, 1883, the Yonkers Savings-Bank had a little experience which cannot be left out by one professing to give its history. At the beginning of the afternoon of Thursday, the 25th, a rumor was somehow started that it was in trouble. How it originated has never been learned. Various statements were made at the time. One was that a woman having called at the bank to draw money just before two o'clock, and finding it not yet open, had immediately afterwards remarked on the street or in a store, that she had been to the bank for money, but that *the bank had closed its doors and she could not get it*. However the rumor was started, the effect was electric. A run on the bank began during its afternoon hours, and continued for the next two days, dying out gradually with the closing hours of Saturday. The officers had securities in their hands at the time on which they could have realized \$800,000, if it had been necessary. They continued courteously to meet every demand upon them during all their regular hours, and when they closed successively at twelve and five, remained with applicants yet in the bank till half-past one and half-past six, till the last applicant had his money. They paid out in all seventy-four thousand dollars, every dollar of which, as it went out, only strengthened the bank more and more, while those who were the victims of the excitement suffered the loss of their interest due, and a few of them were even so unfortunate as to dissipate within a few hours, all their principal besides. It is

said that nearly all the amounts were re-deposited in the bank within the next six months, and that most of them were returned in the identical bills and silver which had been paid out.

The instability of earthly things is proverbial, but it would seem that all the Yonkers banks are as solid and safe as any such institutions can be.

The ancestor of Jonathan Vail, the president of the Citizens' National Bank, was John Vail, who is said to have come to this country from Wales and settled at Goshen, Orange County. The old family homestead was located in what is known as "East Division." John Vail was succeeded by his son Abram, whose son John married Jane Reid, and they were the parents of the subject of this sketch, who was born at Minisink, November 15, 1824. When a child, he removed with his parents to Franklin Square, in the town of Walkill. His education was obtained at Montgomery Academy, and at the age of twenty-one he went to New York and engaged in the dry goods business, which he carried on successfully for many years. In 1857 he came to Yonkers, which has since that time been his home, and, continuing in his former business, he established the firm of Vail & Elting. He retired from the firm in 1868. In 1873 he was one of the incorporators of the Citizens' National Bank, and was elected Vice-President. In the fall of that year he was elected President of the institution, a position which he still holds. In 1879 he was elected alderman for the second ward of Yonkers, and held that office for four years, and is at present one of the loan commissioners of the county, having been appointed by Governor Cleveland in 1882. In politics he is a staunch Democrat, but his strict attention to business has led him to take comparatively little part in political affairs.

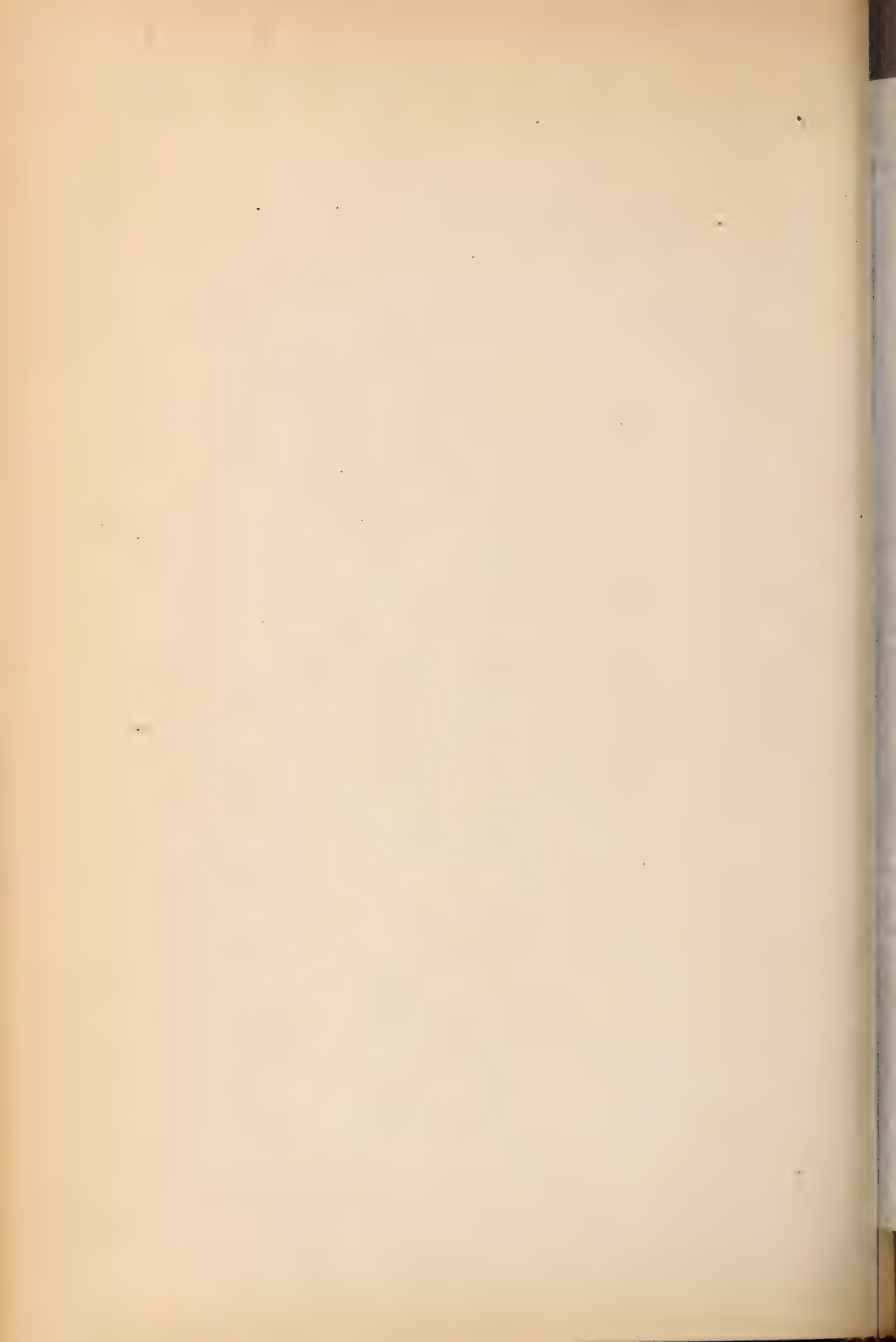
Mr. Vail married Catharine, daughter of Jacob Devoe, of New York, and has two children, Frederick C. and Clara Jane.

William F. Lawrence, one of the directors of the Citizens' National Bank is one of Yonker's most progressive citizens. The families bearing the name of Lawrence, and which are so numerous in this county, are the descendants of three brothers—John, William and Thomas—who came to America in 1635, and in 1644, in company with several others, obtained a patent from Governor Kieft for the land now included in the town of Hempstead, Long Island.

Thomas Lawrence, the youngest of these brothers, in 1665 became the owner of a large tract of land in Newtown, L. I., and afterwards bought the whole of Hellgate Neck, having an extended front on the East River. He was the ancestor of the family of the name now living in this county. His descendant, Major Samuel Lawrence, was a prominent citizen of Yonkers. His homestead was on the north side of the private road known as "Valentine's Lane," and west of Riverdale Avenue. He married Miss Abigail



Jonathan Tail



Pell, and left a family of five children,—Jonathan; Bishop; Mary, wife of William Scudder; Isabella, wife of James Valentine; and Nicholas, who left no descendants.

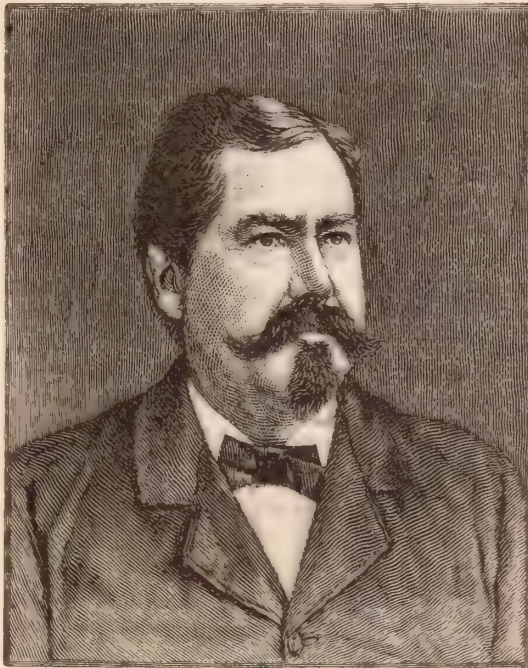
Jonathan, the oldest son, married Sarah, daughter of Aaron Reed. They were the parents of six children,—Maria, wife of Isaac Taylor; Robert, who married Eliza Crisfield; Eliza, wife of — Tice; Jane, wife of Henry Danks; Samuel, who died unmarried; and William H., who was born February 28, 1813, and died January 13, 1879. He married Maria V. Back. Their children are Harriet, wife of Milo S. Baker, of Los Angeles, Cal.; Mary Frances, Francis, Henry and Arthur, all deceased; William F., the subject of this sketch; James V., who married Charlotte, daughter of Mrs. Emma D. E. N. Southworth, the well-known authoress; Isabella; Arnette O., now living in Yonkers; Cecil R., Herbert H. and Eugene G., all of whom are now residing in Colorado.

William F. Lawrence was born in Yonkers January 15, 1841. His father, who was justly esteemed as an active and useful citizen, and held many public positions, did not fail to instill into his mind at an early age habits of industry, which he has never ceased to exercise. Leaving home at the age of fourteen, he first found employment in the office of Hon. Wm. W. Scrugham, but shortly after entered as a clerk in a grocery-store, where he remained four years. He then

became book-keeper for the firm of Reed, Speedling & Co., lumber and coal dealers, and soon after purchased the interest of Mr. Reed, and became a partner in the firm. One of the members of the firm retiring, the business was continued under the firm-name of Speedling & Lawrence. Mr. Speedling died in 1872, and Mr. Lawrence became the sole proprietor of the business, which has since been conducted with his brother, James V., under the firm-name of "Lawrence Bros." The business of this firm is very exten-

sive, and has kept pace with the rapid growth of the city of Yonkers. Mr. Lawrence, in addition to this, is largely interested in real estate in various parts of the city. He is also one of the directors of the Citizens' National Bank of Yonkers, a trustee of the "Yonkers Fuel, Light and Power Company," and a stockholder and trustee of the company owning the *Weekly and Daily Statesman*. A Republican in politics, Mr. Lawrence has been frequently solicited to serve as a candidate for local offices, but has persistently declined, except when once induced to run for the office of alderman, his time and attention being wholly devoted to his business, which owes its success to his industrious energy.

Mr. Lawrence and his family are connected with the St. John's Episcopal Church, of which he is one of the vestry and a warm supporter. He married Mary J., daughter of Mr. William Weddle, of Rochester, N. Y., November 21, 1869. They have four children,—W. H. Stanley (who died October 16, 1880), Mabel, Maud and Arthur.



W. F. Lawrence.

SECTION XVI.

Public Charities and Voluntary Charitable Institutions.

All communities in our country have been called to provide for the helpless poor and suffering. Yonkers must have felt this demand upon it from a very early period. Till within the last fifty years, however, the sparseness of the settlement and the

simple habits of its people must have made living very cheap. Still there was some helpless poverty, and especially during inclement seasons, when work gave out. We have the preserved minutes of a "Yonkers Association for Improving the Condition of the Poor," in existence during the winter immediately preceding the incorporation of the village. It deserves a few words of tribute, as being typical of many associations which have existed in the past, but for which more permanent arrangements have since been quite generally substituted. The winter

of 1854 and 1855 seems to have been very severe and to have brought great distress on many in Yonkers. At a meeting of the people "held at the Getty House on the evening of January 3, 1855, to take into consideration the propriety of raising a fund to relieve the poor of the town, J. A. Underwood was chosen chairman and James L. Valentine secretary." On motion it was resolved "that the town be laid off in five sections, each comprising a school district; that a committee on supervision be appointed for each district; that in Districts 1, 3, 4 and 5 the school trustees of each District be such committee for the district, while in district No. 2 John Hobbs, J. Henry Williams, W. H. Lawrence, Samuel S. Barry, Wm. C. Foote, Geo. Macadam and James W. Mitchell be the committee." The following resolutions were also adopted:

"That said committee have power to add to their number if necessary.

"That the following persons constitute a central committee, viz., Thomas C. Cornell, John T. Waring, Duncan Macfarlane, Thomas O. Farrington, Lemuel W. Wells, Samuel D. Rockwell and Henry A. Underwood.

"That said committee have power to add to their number, or to fill any vacancies that may occur, and to make all necessary arrangements by appointing visitors, dividing the town into districts, and devising all other methods that they may deem expedient for the relief of the poor.

"That the central committee have power to employ poor persons to break stone, to be used on the road from the bridge by the Broadway House to Ackerman & Deyo's store."

Thus was started a very active temporary association for charity. Its minutes show very frequent meetings held from January 12th to March 12th, when the work ceased, probably because the work season was again coming on. In an "Appeal to the Public," made by the committee in March, over the names of Samuel D. Rockwell, chairman, and Thomas C. Cornell, secretary, it was stated that during their work they had extended aid to one hundred and fifty-one families and given seven hundred and forty-three tickets for provisions and fuel, at a total cost of five hundred and twenty-one dollars. The money they had received from subscribers had been five hundred and eighty-three dollars. They intimated that they would soon have to suspend operations if they did not receive more funds. We have no minutes of later than a fortnight after the date of this appeal, and so we judge that no more funds came in.

Of movements of the kind here described there have been many. The people have been compelled to look after their poor. In general, however, the direct ministries to them have been by the churches and by town, village or city boards. To these ministries have always been added the giving at households and business counters or on the public streets. Churches of the right spirit have always gladly min-

istered to their own poor members and also to the other deserving subjects of poverty. Their aggregate giving to the poor has reached a vast amount throughout our land. And then, too, from the beginning of every really enlightened and benign government, public provision has always been made for the poor. One of the city departments of Yonkers is its department for attention to its poor. The present commissioner of charities is Mr. George Rayner. The city reports show that the amount expended by him in his work during the year ending February 28, 1885, was \$2688.57.

It always was and more and more is felt, in large communities at least, that loose giving to unknown persons is an evil. It encourages deception as well as indolence, and largely victimizes the charitably disposed. Much thought has been given to this matter, and the result has been the devising of an institution now existing in a number of cities and towns and represented in Yonkers. We let this institution speak for itself by giving, with its name and a statement of its start and organization, a liberal extract from its first annual report, made December 12, 1883, together with the items of its treasurer's latest printed report.

CHARITY ORGANIZATION SOCIETY OF THE CITY OF YONKERS.—This society was organized January 15, 1883. At the meeting for organization, Hon. Norton P. Otis, Hon. G. Hilton Scribner, Howard R. Butler, Thomas C. Cornell, G. Livingston Morse, William W. Scrugham, A. C. Benedict, M.D., Thomas F. Gane, Lyman Cobb, Jr., His Honor the Mayor, *ex officio*, and the Commissioner of Charities, *ex officio*, were chosen as the executive committee of the society. The first three gentlemen, in the order named, were respectively chosen president, vice-president and treasurer. Two committees, a relief committee and a finance committee, were also elected. Mr. James S. Fitch was chosen secretary, and the central office of the society was fixed on Buena Vista Avenue, opposite the Hudson River Railroad station. The city was laid off into six divisions, and these divisions were sub-divided into twenty-six districts. The divisions were designated as the Northwest, Northeast, Central, Southeast, West and Southwest. To each division was assigned a lady chairman and a number of district visitors. The objects of the society are clearly stated in the report named above. It says,—

"This society has for its objects the discouragement of mendicancy and indiscriminate alms-giving, and the elevation and improvement of the condition of the poor. To accomplish these ends, it endeavors to procure accurate information as to the condition of each and every case of poverty existing in the city of Yonkers, to ascertain the extent of relief afforded by the churches, benevolent societies and individuals, to direct the attention of these charitable agencies to the specific cases, to establish a system of visitation to the homes of the poor, to furnish reports on cases applying to societies or individuals, and, in general,

to prevent the misdirection of charitable effort in Yonkers, so that the greatest amount of good may be accomplished by such effort. It should be understood that the main object of the society is not to dispense relief, but rather to ascertain and sift out all the deserving cases and to see that they are assisted through the proper channels. Still, in cases where no adequate relief can be obtained from other sources, the society is obliged to render assistance itself, the expenses of such incidental help being defrayed from a relief fund raised by the society and kept distinct for this purpose."

The rest of the report gives the results of the first year's working, together with the report of the treasurer. There was also published in 1883 a constitution, with rules for district visitors, and with an alphabetical directory of the visiting districts and supervisory divisions. The secretary has also an outline blank to be used by visitors and others in stating particulars respecting applicants, and a ticket to be given to the latter by citizens in directing them for aid to the society's office. The work of the society in one year of experience had shown that about four hundred persons or families had asked for assistance in Yonkers in the preceding eighteen months, and that at the central office nearly six hundred carefully detailed reports of cases had been collected and were systematically filed. Whatever may be the future of this society, its plan seems to be good, and the work it has already accomplished is considerable. What any citizen needs to know about a Yonkers individual or family appealing to him for aid, he may learn from its files, and, whenever vagrants apply to him, he may readily dispose of them by a method protective and safe. What must be had to secure permanence and efficiency for such a society is popular sympathy and support and popular observance of its principles and suggestions in regard to all cases of application.

The present executive committee (1885) is nearly the same as at first, in respect to its members. We notice that Mr. Howard R. Butler has dropped out and Mr. Fisher A. Baker has come in, and that the treasurer is Mr. Thomas C. Cornell. The president and vice-president have not been changed. The latest treasurer's report in printed form is for the year ending December 12, 1883. The receipts that year had been \$840.26, and the expenditures \$839.03. We are informed that the figures for the year ending January 1, 1885, were somewhat larger. The society is still at its work. It needs funds, as every charitable society needs them, and we think the Yonkers people will not let it go unsupplied.

THE NURSERY AND HOME.—This institution is an adjunct of St. Paul's Protestant Episcopal Church. A lady of the church in 1880 "suggested to the rector the opening of a day *Nursery*, promising to be responsible for the rent of rooms for the purpose." The object was "to provide a place where children too young to go to school might be safely left and cared

for while the mothers were away from home at their days' work. In this way mothers could be given the opportunity of supporting their children at home without placing them in some charitable institution, and mothers who had never contributed to the support of their children might be encouraged to make the effort." The Institution went into operation on St. Paul's day, in 1880, as a *Nursery* under the care of ladies of the church.

Almost immediately after the opening, however, new interests pressed upon the lady organizers of this work. Some children without mothers were brought to them, and they extended their plan so as to receive these children by the month, and even by the year. And then necessity pressed upon them to make arrangements for the care of aged women. Within four months from the inception of their work the house in Carlisle Place, in which they had begun their movement, proved inadequate, and on the 1st of May, 1881, a large, finely located, and excellently adapted building on Palisade Avenue was opened, and work upon a widened plan was begun. By common consent, the institution, with this new departure, took the name of *The Nursery and Home*. The house is 176 Palisade Avenue.

The officers of the society (1885) are Mrs. O. E. Hosmer, president; Miss L. R. Brereton, secretary; Mrs. H. G. McDonald, treasurer; and the managers are Mrs. A. M. Brereton, Mrs. J. H. Clark, Mrs. W. H. Mills, Mrs. C. H. Whittemore, Miss F. M. Middleton, Mrs. A. McNulty, Mrs. J. H. Satterlee, Mrs. Dr. Reinfelder. The physicians are Drs. Samuel Swift and A. C. Benedict. The house-mother is Mrs. J. H. Denniston. The committee on admissions are Mrs. A. M. Brereton and Miss F. M. Middleton. The house committee are Mrs. O. E. Hosmer, Mrs. A. M. Brereton, Mrs. J. H. Clark and Mrs. W. H. Mills, and the clothing committee are Mrs. C. H. Whittemore and Mrs. J. H. Clark. The visitor is the Rev. William H. Mills, D. D., rector of St. Paul's Episcopal Church.

The treasurer's report to January 1, 1884, showed the receipts of the previous year to have been \$3095.15 and the expenditures \$3089.84.

The regular meetings of the managers are held on the first Tuesdays of the month, and the anniversary is held on St. Paul's day, when a public reception is given and the annual report is read. The number of children received in the first year had been forty-four, of whom twenty-two had been removed and three, in less than one month, had died. There were four aged women in the Home.

The rate per day for one child from a family is ten cents, and for more than one, five cents each. The board is payable by the week. When mothers are able, they are expected to clothe their children, and when the children are very sick, they are expected to be with and take care of them.

Seventy-five dollars per annum secures a free cot

for a child, and one hundred and fifty dollars per annum a free bed for an aged woman in the *Nursery and Home*.

SOCIETY OF ST. VINCENT DE PAUL.—This benevolent society was organized February 18, 1877, as an adjunct of St. Joseph's Roman Catholic Church. The officers at the last report we have seen were Rev. A. A. Lings, Spiritual director; Thomas B. Caulfield, president; Oliver P. Buel, vice-president; Valentine Browne, M.D., treasurer; and Michael Walsh, secretary.

The society was chartered in 1882. The work accomplished during the year ending January 1, 1884, was stated as follows:

Families on list, twenty-three, number of persons in these families, sixty-six, and money expended, three hundred dollars. The members are divided into visiting committees. There are six visiting districts, and each district has two members to supervise it. The society is managed wholly by men. About fifty dollars had been given, in the year mentioned, to purchase clothing for the poor. All the needs were met by the members themselves.

YONKERS SOCIETY FOR THE PREVENTION OF CRUELTY TO CHILDREN.—This society was organized in 1881. The date of its incorporation was December 14th. Its object is defined in its title. It was stated in its second annual report that the first society of the kind was formed in New York City in 1875, and that in 1883 there were about fifty in the United States and many in Europe and South America. During the year preceding December 12, 1883, fifty-two complaints had been made to the society, involving the welfare of ninety-three children. Twenty-five of these had been sent to institutions or provided with comfortable homes elsewhere, and the influence of the society had been exerted in many cases to relieve the children without removing them from their families. Several cases are detailed in the report with much fulness, and present thrilling illustrations of the great need for this society. The pamphlet containing this report gives all the reports of the president, counsel and secretary, the lists of members and contributors and a catalogue of the kindred societies throughout the world. It is thus replete with valuable and interesting information. We may further state that at a monthly meeting of the society, held September 11, 1885, reports showed that during the summer just closed complaints had been received and action taken involving the welfare of twenty-five children. Fourteen of these had been placed in institutions, having been found either forsaken, or amid such vicious and wretched surroundings that there was no hope of improving their condition except by removal. In one case four young children were abandoned by both parents, although the father was able to support them, and measures were being taken to compel him to do so. Two adults, convicted of cruelty to children, had been punished by fine or imprisonment.

These statements are sufficient to show the need for such a society; and also its great value. The office of the secretary is in Flagg's building, corner of Palisade Avenue and New Main Street. The officers are Galusha B. Balch, M.D., president; John O. Campbell, vice-president; Stephen H. Thayer, Jr., counsel; Cyrus Cleveland, John W. Skinner and Henry Rankin Freeland, executive committee; and Richard W. Bogart, Thomas B. Caulfield, R. T. Pettingill, Hiram K. Miller, Henry Kroenke, Cyrus Cleveland, John W. Skinner, Henry Rankin Freeland and C. H. Leffingwell, directors.

The society, during the year ending 1883, had eighty members and contributors, and had expended about one hundred and fifty dollars. It is wholly dependent on popular charity, and that it is entitled to all that considerate friends will give it for the work has been abundantly shown by the statements we have made.

ST. JOHN'S RIVERSIDE HOSPITAL.—This institution was founded in 1869 and chartered in 1870. Rev. Thomas A. Jaggard, D.D., now bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church for the Southern District of Ohio, was at this period rector of St. John's Episcopal Church on Broadway for about one year. Finding need of provision for the sick poor of his parish, he brought the attention of his people to the subject, and the result was the opening, about November 1, 1869, of "St. John's Invalid Home." The Home was opened in a small house at the southwest corner of Warburton and Ashburton Avenues. This house soon proved to be too small even for the need originally contemplated. But other needs revealed themselves, and were pressing. Accidents were frequently occurring in the city, and especially on the railroad, and there was demand for an adequate hospital to meet them. Edmund S. F. Arnold, M.D., for many years one of Yonkers' practicing physicians, and a man of distinguished ability in his profession, had, in 1862, prepared and delivered, first before the New York State Medical Society and again before the Surgical Section of the New York Academy of Medicine, an address on "Medical Provision for Railroads as a Humanitarian Measure." The recall now of Dr. Arnold's plea, illustrated as to its points in the actual demands upon "The Invalid Home" during its few months of experience, led to an expansion of ideas. About May 1, 1870, the founders of the Home rented a large building, known as the Grove House, on the east side of Woodworth Avenue, a little north of Locust Street. The next step was the securing of a charter for the institution, under the new name of "St. John's Riverside Hospital."¹ The date of the charter was May 27, 1870, and the trustees were

¹ In a "History of the Westminster Presbyterian Church," published in pamphlet form in 1889, we find this statement:—"The originator of the idea of the Riverside Hospital, as well as its originator and main helper up to the time of his withdrawal from Yonkers, was Dr. J. H. Pooley, now professor in Starling Medical College, Columbus, Ohio."



RESIDENCE OF THE LATE JOSEPH AGATE,

W. G. B. DEL.

twenty-four in number, the names of eight of whom were placed in the act of incorporation, viz.: Rev. Thomas A. Jaggar, Frederick C. Oakley, Thomas O. Farrington, S. Emmet Getty, John T. Waring, Henry Bowers, Charles L. Cozzens and William H. Beers. The first officers were Frederick C. Oakley, president; Edward C. Moore, vice-president; Thomas O. Farrington, treasurer; and S. Emmet Getty, secretary. The medical staff consisted of Drs. Edmund S. F. Arnold, J. Foster Jenkins, James H. Pooley, George B. Upham and E. H. Ludlow. The plan of internal management was committed to ladies. Mrs. James B. Silkman was appointed first directress, Mrs. J. Agate, second directress, and Mrs. William F. Cochran, secretary.

The Grove House and grounds, at first rented, were afterwards purchased, and have since been the permanent hospital property. The building remains substantially as it was when bought, the only change being the erection of a small addition upon the north side.

At or not long after the incorporation of the hospital it absorbed the interest and property of an earlier association by steps of which an account must be given.

In 1865 the Supervisor and Justices of the peace of the town of Yonkers, constituting the Town Board of Health, took steps (and subsequently by act of the Legislature, passed March 15, 1866, they obtained authority) to raise money by tax upon the town for the purchase of property for a hospital or pest-house. The money was raised, and part of the Alexander B. Mott property on the Mile Square road, a little south of Palmer Avenue, was bought. Soon after this movement a voluntary society was formed, chartered and formally organized under the name of the "Yonkers Hospital Association." Then the Town Board went further and secured another act from the Legislature, under date of May 30, 1868, directing them to convey the Mott property mentioned to this new association, which they at once did. And finally, after the springing up of "St. John's Riverside Hospital," the "Yonkers Hospital Association" having sold the Mott property and received part of the proceeds in cash and part in a mortgage, paid over the cash and transferred the mortgage to St. John's Riverside Hospital. The cash went towards paying for the Grove House, which was bought for twelve thousand five hundred dollars, and the mortgage on the Mott property is still held by the managers of the Riverside Hospital. A condition made by the Yonkers Hospital Association in transferring this property to the new Hospital was that it should perpetually endow two beds in the latter for the use of the association making the transfer, or such person or persons as it might thereafter elect. The right to these beds the Yonkers Hospital Association afterwards transferred to the city of Yonkers.

The hospital building (formerly the Grove House) is of brick, is three stories in height, and has a base-

ment. The first floor is devoted to the surgical ward, the operating-room, the dispensary, the dining-room and the kitchen; the second story to the medical ward and the accommodation for the hospital employees, and the third story to the wards for women and children, and the room for severe cases of sickness. There are thirty-two beds in the building. The immediate charge of the hospital is committed to a matron and a corps of nurses. Mrs. Sarah Rickey has been matron for many years. The resident physicians have been numerous. Dr. F. H. Strong is the resident physician now.

The number of patients admitted between April, 1871 and October 1, 1885, was 2,614. The number annually admitted constantly increases. In the year ending April 1, 1872 it was 110, while in that ending April 1, 1885 it was 256. The dispensary was started in 1872, and down to October 1, 1885 had treated 19,310 patients.

The hospital is supported almost wholly by voluntary contributions and by the proceeds of various forms of social effort. It has an endowment fund of \$10,964.34, of which one thousand dollars was received by bequest from Mrs. Alexander Smith, and the rest was obtained from the sources we have described.

A stated meeting of the managers is held on the third Monday of each month. The present officers and managers are as follows: William F. Cochran, president; ———, vice-president; Charles L. Cozzens, secretary; Lyman Cobb, Jr., treasurer; S. Emmet Getty, Henry Bowers, James Stewart, Richard W. Bogart, James Lawson, Edward A. Nichols, Alonzo H. Johnson, William P. Ketcham, Horace H. Thayer, Ethelbert Belknap, George R. Smith, G. Hilton Scribner, Edward M. Le Moyne, William F. Nisbet, John O. Campbell, Edward Underhill, J. H. Hubbell, Alexander Forbes, Philip Verplanck, George E. Ketcham and Norton P. Otis.

The chaplain is Rev. Lyman Cobb, Jr. Religious services are held daily, and on the afternoon of each Sabbath a sermon is read or there is formal preaching. The religious services have been conducted after the Episcopal order. This seems to have been due to the start the hospital originally received from St. John's Church, rather than to any definite intention. It is certain that its managers desire it to be unsectarian. The preachers at the Sabbath afternoon services have frequently been from pulpits not Episcopalian, and great effort has been made by the managers themselves to bring about such a composition of the board as will, as nearly as possible, represent equally all the denominations of the city. All the churches are now asked to unite in adopting a hospital Sabbath, on which contributions may be taken in them all at once for this institution. The advantages of the hospital are free to all, and it is intended to be an object of interest and sympathy to and with all people alike, without regard to any distinction of church or sect.

The late Fayette Putnam Brown took a very active

part in the charitable and benevolent institutions of Yonkers. He was several years a trustee of the First Presbyterian Church, and also served for some time as a trustee of the St. John's Riverside Hospital.

He was born in Pittsford, Vt., February 15, 1829. His ancestors were among the earliest of the Puritan settlers in the country. They located at Salisbury, Conn., at least as early as 1635. From Salisbury a portion of the family removed to Vermont. In that State, Mr. Brown's father, Elijah Brown, third of the name, married Mary, daughter of Judge Samuel Williams. The mother of this lady, whose name was Polly, was a daughter of Tarrant Putnam, and a niece of Israel Putnam, the patriot and soldier of Revolutionary fame.

Fayette passed the early portion of his life at Pittsford, but removed to Providence, R. I., while young. In the latter city, he was for several years cashier of the State Bank.

On the breaking out of the late war, he was among the first who answered to the country's call for men. He enlisted in and was sergeant of Company I, Eleventh Rhode Island Regiment, in which he served one year, the regiment being assigned to the defense of Washington. At the expiration of this time, having received an appointment as General Agent of the Mutual Life Insurance Company of New York for the State of Vermont, he took up his residence in Rutland, where he remained till 1870, attending to the business of his office. In that year, the southern portion of the State of New York being added to the territory under his agency, he removed to Yonkers, where he passed the remainder of his life. In Yonkers, he soon became identified with the activities of the place.

Politically Mr. Brown was a Republican. For a number of years he was a member of the Republican Central Committee of the City. At one time he was an active and useful member of one of the Yonkers Boards of Education. And later still, he was widely known as the first President of the Yonkers Publishing Company.

During his later years he suffered much from ill health, and prosecuted his business with difficulty in consequence of it. Yet in despite of great physical suffering, no one remembers hearing him complain or seeing him despond. To the last day of his life, his cheerfulness of temperament threw sunshine all around. It was so exceptionally uniform under the circumstances as to be marvellous. It will be the first thing in the thought of all who knew him upon every recall of the man.

In the hope of recuperating his strength, Mr. Brown spent the winter of 1884-85 in Florida. This step, however, was without avail. Shortly after his return, he died very suddenly on the 21st of May, 1885. His death was very especially startling, as he had been at his work and in the street the day before.

Mr. Brown married Abby W., daughter of Dr.

George W. Tyler, of Providence, R. I., and six children were the result of this union. Three of the children died in infancy. Mrs. Brown and the remaining children, Fayette W., George T., and Elizabeth T. continue to reside in Yonkers.

The deceased husband and father was regarded as a valuable, public-spirited citizen. He was a man of large heart and fine sensibilities, and will not soon be forgotten by a people among whom his social nature and good qualities were widely known and recognized.

SECTION XVII.

Christian Associations and Unions.

Under this heading we speak, in the order of their dates of organization, of the Yonkers Branch Bible Association (1857), the Young Men's Catholic Association of St. Joseph's Roman Catholic Church (1871), the Woman's Christian Temperance Union with its Young Woman's Department (1874-78), and the Young Men's Christian Association (1880).

THE YONKERS BRANCH BIBLE ASSOCIATION.— This association is an auxiliary to the Westchester County Bible Society. It was formed in November, 1857, at a meeting held in the Reformed Church. Jonathan Odell was president of that meeting and William Montgomery was secretary. An address was delivered by Rev. Wilson Phraner, at the time secretary of the County Society. Those present formed themselves into the "Bible Association of Yonkers, auxiliary to the Westchester County Bible Society," adopted a constitution and elected William N. Seymour president, J. Henry Williams vice-president, William Steedman secretary, and William G. Ackerman treasurer. Ethan Flagg and William Montgomery of the First Presbyterian Church, William Bidders and James Youmans of the Mount Olivet Baptist Church, Henry Austin and Thomas O. Farrington of St. John's, Gustavus A. Rollins and Anson B. Hoyt of the Reformed Church, and Joseph Pollock of the Methodist Church, were chosen the executive committee. How vigorously the association began its work is not known, but after a few years it fell into decay. Subsequently, however, at a meeting held at the First Presbyterian Church August 27, 1866, it was revived. Mr. Richard Wynkoop was made secretary. Mr. Wynkoop was earnest in the cause. Through his efforts the association was for a long period from this date well sustained. At a meeting held at St. Paul's Episcopal Church, August 21, 1867, the name was changed to its present form standing at the head of this article, and a Depositary was added to its officers. The constitution was revised in 1869, and further amended in 1870. The officers elected in the latter year were Henry Bowers, president; John W. Oliver, vice-president; Richard Wynkoop, secretary; Samuel D. Rockwell, treasurer; and Gabriel P. Reeves, Depositary. The executive committee were Thomas H. Cuthell,



Hayden P. Brown

George W. Farnum, Cyrus Cleveland, Matthew H. Ellis, Benjamin Mason, Wilbur F. Washburn, Walter Underhill, George Stewart, James H. Pooley, M.D., Hyatt L. Garrison, John Mott, George H. Petrie, Frederick C. Oakley, Charles L. Cozzens, Charles W. Seymour, William C. Waring, John Jordan, George W. Sweney and Stephen Barker. The presidents since that year have been Henry Bowers, 1871; John W. Oliver, 1872-83; John H. Brown, 1884-86. The vice-presidents have been John W. Oliver, 1871; John H. Brown, 1872-83; William R. Mott, 1884-86. The secretaries have been Richard Wynkoop, 1871-75; John W. Skinner, 1880-82; Walter Thomas, 1884-86. The only Treasurer has been Samuel D. Rockwell, and the only Depositary Gabriel Reeves, M.D. Contributions to the County Society were made in different years as follows: In 1871, \$675; in 1872, \$685; in 1873, \$589; in 1874, \$420; in 1875, \$122.13; in 1876, \$245.70; in 1877, \$71.71; in 1878, \$37.76; in 1880, \$265; in 1881, \$202.60; in 1882, \$118.75; in 1883, \$72.18; in 1884, \$7.44; and in 1885, \$193.53. The smallness of the amounts reported as paid to the County Society in some of these years (notably in 1884) was due to the fact that the branch association used its money in supplying Yonkers with Bibles, instead of paying it over. Still, it is true that this Yonkers Branch Association has in some years been quite apathetic in regard to the great interest it was organized to cherish.

THE YOUNG MEN'S CATHOLIC ASSOCIATION OF ST. JOSEPH'S ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH.—This association was formed in September, 1871, about the same time that the church was organized. Its first officers were Rufus C. Duff, president; Michael F. Murray, vice-president; T. J. O'Sullivan, secretary; Henry Towle, treasurer; and Cyril Williams, librarian. Its objects were, first, to gather the young men of the church into a body, in order to bring them more carefully and closely under the guidance of the church and their pastor, and withdraw them from the influence of evil associations; secondly, to give them an opportunity of improving their minds and disseminating useful information through the library and reading-room, and to afford them the opportunity for social enjoyment; and thirdly, to assist the pastor in the religious discipline and instruction of the male children of the parish.

The first care of the society was to provide itself with a library, and, by various means, partly by gifts and partly by purchase, a considerable number of books were soon collected. Almost all the money received from initiation fees, from monthly dues and from other sources was devoted to this purpose. During its first year the association gathered over forty members. It first occupied a room in Public School No. 6, in which, at the time, St. Joseph's Church was holding its services. When, in the latter part of 1871, the church moved into its new building on Oak Hill (now St. Joseph) Avenue, the asso-

ciation removed with it into one of the upper rooms. Five or six years later a room was fitted up for it in the basement, and this room it still occupies. The cost of the fitting-up was about six hundred dollars, which has been mainly defrayed from the proceeds of amateur dramatic performances given by the association in Radford Hall. These performances, which are still a feature of the association, were usually comedies and were always well attended.

The society has now about sixty active members and twenty-five honorary members. It has connected with it a reading-room and a circulating library of four hundred volumes. It has also a fully equipped brass band of seventeen pieces. The society's officers for 1884 were Thomas McGrath, president; John Garvin, vice-president; Thomas Booth, recording secretary; David Lynch, corresponding secretary; Maurice Downing, librarian; and James Conners, assistant librarian. The rooms are open every evening till ten o'clock.

THE WOMEN'S CHRISTIAN TEMPERANCE UNION.—During the time of the Women's Crusade in 1874, the ladies of Yonkers organized themselves and held daily prayer-meetings throughout the summer. A "Band of Hope" meeting was held once a week. The visiting of saloons, so vigorously carried out in many other parts of the country for reform purposes, was not much adopted here. Temperance tracts were distributed and a petition was circulated, asking the Board of Excise to refuse or restrict the granting of licenses. One of the principal movers in the work was Mrs. Judge Chauncey Shaffer, who was chosen president of the organization then formed. Miss Helen A. Rollins was made vice-president, Miss Helen MacFarlan secretary, and Mrs. Galusha B. Balch treasurer.

Meetings were not kept up during the next year, but the seed that had been sown was coming forward, and the sentiment against the liquor traffic and in favor of active work by the ladies in the temperance cause was taking deeper root. In the early part of 1878 the Woman's Christian Temperance Union of Yonkers was organized. Their business meetings were held weekly and the work of the union was prosecuted with much zeal and perseverance.

What was done exerted a healthful influence upon the community, and gave good impulse to the cause of temperance in the city. The work was carried on through different channels and in various forms. Temperance literature was introduced into the Sunday-schools, and placed for free distribution in the railroad station. A weekly prayer-meeting was kept up. Sabbath afternoon services were regularly held, and also a great many meetings for lectures, Bible readings and song services. Special prayer-meetings were added to the regular ones. The pledge was circulated, the poor and needy were visited and supplied with garments, furniture, shelter and other necessaries. A Band of Hope was organized November

15, 1878, consisting of youth who were pledged to abstain from the use of intoxicants, from tobacco and from the use of profane language. The Band reached a membership of about two hundred and fifty, and held weekly meetings. The association also maintained "social evenings" at their rooms four or five evenings in the week (at which an average of seventy-five was regularly present), sustained a coffee-room and assisted persons out of employment in procuring situations. The "social evenings" drew men and boys, mostly of between ten and twenty years, who were provided with means for social amusement, games and reading, and for a part of each evening with hymn-books and musical leading and singing. During the first two years the pledge of abstinence from intoxicants, tobacco and profanity was signed at these gatherings by one hundred and forty-nine persons. The coffee-room was kept open daily from six A.M. to nine P.M. Various articles of wholesome food were supplied at cheap rates or given to the destitute and deserving. In a single year the sales were 6877 cups of tea, 16,630 cups of coffee; 26,921 rolls, 36,884 slices of bread, 4445 plates of pork and beans, and many other articles besides. The total amount received from these sales was \$3905.70, and the amount paid out from what was sold was \$2824.76.

The place occupied was on South Broadway. The building had been known as "Grand Army Hall." It has since been removed to make room for the station of a proposed elevated railroad. The Women's Union occupied it jointly with another organization, composed of men only, and known as the Temperance Reform Club. When it was torn down the work of the Union had for a time to be largely suspended till the present new hall on Broadway was completed. The prayer-meetings, however, were in the interim constantly held in the various churches, and the Band of Hope's meetings were maintained in Humboldt Hall. During the first two years of the Union Mrs. Mary Hughes, Mrs. Rev. Alexander McLean, Mrs. E. A. Hill, Mrs. M. Haviland Smith and Miss M. J. Barnes were prominent in carrying on the work.

In 1880 the erection of a special building for the Union and its work began to be agitated. A lot on South Broadway, sixty by seventy, was offered by Messrs. Trevor and Colgate (the lot on which the Mount Olivet Baptist Church had formerly stood), and in March, 1881, a fair was held in Warburton Hall for the starting of a building fund. The fair was continued four days, from the 15th to the 18th inclusive. It netted one thousand dollars for the fund.

During 1880 the receipts from the coffee-room were \$1652.78 more than those of the preceding year, and the other departments of the work were sustained with success. The receipts and expenditures for the year ending April 1, 1881, were nearly equal, the former being \$5701.80, and the latter \$5703.40.

The officers of the Union in 1881 were a president, ten vice-presidents, a secretary, an assistant secretary

and a treasurer. The vice-presidents, one from each church, were Miss Helen A. Rollins, of the Reformed Church; Mrs. G. B. Balch, of the First Presbyterian; Miss Caroline H. Tripler, of the Baptist; Miss E. C. Howe, of the Broadway Methodist; Mrs. Cyrus Cleveland, of the Unitarian; Mrs. A. C. Benedict, of the Westminster; Mrs. A. T. Kerr, of the Central Methodist; Mrs. Samuel Granger, of the Dayspring; Mrs. R. E. Prime, of St. John's; and Mrs. E. Krah, of the German Methodist. The president was Mrs. M. H. Smith, the secretary Miss J. Van Pelt and the treasurer Mrs. E. A. Fredenburgh. There were also three standing committees—a devotional committee of fifteen, a visiting committee of ten, and a coffee-room committee of twelve, two for each secular day in the week.

For the year 1882 the officers were Mrs. M. H. Smith, president; Mrs. G. B. Balch, corresponding secretary; Miss Emma Van Wagner, secretary; Miss Emma L. French, assistant secretary; and Mrs. E. A. Fredenburgh, treasurer, with the usual vice-presidents and committees. The building project made good progress. Intimation being made to the Union that the building lot would be deeded to it as soon as the sum of ten thousand dollars should be pledged for a building, a subscription was circulated which brought five thousand dollars to the fund, and a stock company was planned to raise the other five thousand dollars by the sale of five hundred ten dollar shares. This plan did not succeed, and so the subscription method was further pushed. The "social evenings" were kept up from October to May on Monday, Wednesday and Friday of every week. The coffee-room was still maintained, and the expenses for this and the various other branches of the Union's work amounted to \$6500.92 for the year ending April 1, 1882. During that year a lecture by Hon. P. T. Barnum was given for the benefit of the building fund, the proceeds of which were \$91.80. That fund had now amounted to fifteen hundred dollars in hand, besides subscriptions pledged. During 1882 it became certain that the necessary amount to secure Messrs. Trevor & Colgate's generous offer could not be raised. So the building committee accepted a twenty years' lease of the ground, with the privilege at the end of that time of removing any building they might erect. In the latter part of that year, the Grand Army Hall being unfit for use, the "social evenings" and the coffee-room were given up, the latter becoming under the circumstances too heavy to carry. The building fund in 1882 amounted to nearly four thousand dollars, including the pledged subscriptions. During 1883 the foundation of the new building was put up, and on Monday, March 31, 1884, the corner-stone was laid with appropriate ceremonies. The foundation was meant for a building to cost eight thousand dollars. At the laying of the corner-stone addresses were made by Rev. William E. Ketcham, of the First Methodist Church, and by Rev.

Dr. Miller, who had been the first pastor of the church once standing on the site occupied by the foundation of the new hall. Under the stone was placed a box containing a copy of the constitution of the W. C. T. U., copies of the reports of the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children, and copies of *The Union Signal*, *Our Work*, *The Crystal Fount* and the *Yonkers newspapers*.

The officers of the Union for 1883 remained the same as in 1882, except that Miss Lilian Dealing was made assistant secretary, and the officers of 1883 were also continued in 1884. During the year 1885 the building was completed. Down to April 1st a little more than six thousand dollars had been paid out on it. About one-third of this had been raised by subscription during the year. We give the names of all who gave fifty dollars or over. Mrs. E. S. Cochran gave \$500; Hon. S. J. Tilden, \$500; Messrs. J. & G. Stewart, \$200; Mrs. M. H. Smith, \$105; Mrs. Alexander Smith, \$100; Mr. W. F. Washburn, \$60; Mr. S. F. Quick, \$53; Mr. Wm. A. Butler, \$50; Mr. Ethan Flagg, \$50; Hon. G. Hilton Scribner, \$50; Mr. R. Barnes, \$50; Mr. William H. Bradford, of New York City, \$50; and Mrs. E. J. Moore, of New York City, \$50.

Meetings are held at the hall every Sabbath. The coffee-room and lodging-rooms and rooms for "social evenings" are now in use. A reading-room and library will be features of the Hall. The present officers are Mrs. M. H. Smith, president; Mrs. Dr. Balch, corresponding secretary; Miss Emma Van Wagner, recording secretary; Miss G. A. Hicks, assistant secretary; Miss Helen A. Rollins, treasurer for Union; Mrs. C. P. Bynon, treasurer for Building Fund, and Mrs. Dr. Balch, treasurer for Coffee Room. The vice-presidents, one from each church, are Miss H. A. Rollins, of the Reformed Church; Mrs. Dr. Balch, of the First Presbyterian; Mrs. J. E. Van Vorst, of the First Methodist; Miss C. Tripler, of the Baptist; Mrs. Cyrus Cleveland, of the Unitarian; Miss G. A. Hicks, of the Westminster; Mrs. A. Radcliff, of the Central Methodist; Mrs. R. E. Prime, of St. John's; Mrs. W. D. Mills, of St. Paul's; Mrs. Louis Genzlinger, of the German Methodist; Mrs. Wm. Schmeckenbecher, of the Dayspring; and Mrs. Lyman Cobb, Jr., of Christ Episcopal.

The various departments of work, in each of which superintendents and committees are appointed, are, juvenile work, Sunday-school work, temperance literature, prison and station-house work, statistics of liquor traffic, legislation memorials, influencing the press, on unfermented wines, mothers' work and parlor meetings, influencing physicians not to prescribe alcohol, evangelistic work, women's exchanges, social evenings, entertainments and coffee-room.

THE YOUNG WOMAN'S CHRISTIAN TEMPERANCE UNION is a branch of the Woman's Christian Temperance Union first described, and holds kitchen garden classes on Monday, Tuesday and Wednesday

afternoons, from three to five o'clock. Its officers are Miss Florence J. Parsons, president and superintendent, and Miss M. J. Barnes, secretary.

THE YOUNG MEN'S CHRISTIAN ASSOCIATION.—The first movement towards establishing this association was made by Rev. John Dixon, then pastor of the Westminster Presbyterian Church of Yonkers (now pastor of the First Presbyterian Church of Trenton, N. J.), and Mr. Ralph E. Prime. These gentlemen called a meeting of pastors and others for the evening of December 29, 1880, to consider the subject. The meeting was held, but did not result in the adoption of any practical measures. Several other meetings succeeded, but for a considerable time no definite end was reached. In August, 1881, Mr. John C. Havemeyer, a resident of Yonkers and a member of the State Committee, brought it up again. At a meeting held at his residence on the 29th of that month, it was decided that an association was necessary for Yonkers, and a call was extended to Mr. Frank R. Wardle, general secretary of the Rochester, N. Y., Association, to take the position of General Secretary. Mr. Wardle was exceptionally adapted to that post. He accepted, and began his work here September 1, 1881. A meeting to take steps for organization was held September 5th, at which were enrolled as first members ten gentlemen who were present, and seventeen others who had signified their deep interest in the movement. The following temporary officers were elected: President, J. C. Havemeyer; First Vice-President, G. Livingston Morse; Second Vice-President, Dr. R. O. Phillips; Recording Secretary, Walter A. Drinkwater; and Treasurer, Lyman Cobb, Jr. The rooms at No. 2 Palisade Avenue, still used by the Association, were at once rented till May 1, 1882, at the rate of six hundred dollars per year. A constitution was adopted on the 10th of October following, and on the 24th the following permanent officers were chosen: President, John C. Havemeyer; Vice-President, Walter W. Law; Recording Secretary, Colgate Hoyt; Treasurer, Lyman Cobb, Jr. The officers for the second year, elected October 1, 1882, were: President, John C. Havemeyer; Vice-President, Colgate Hoyt; Recording Secretary, Walter Graves; Treasurer, Charles F. Cox. The report of the work of the first year showed that the association had held devotional meetings for young men every Sabbath at 4.30 P.M., meetings for Bible study every Friday evening, a business meeting on the second Monday evening of every month, a directors' meeting on the first Saturday of every month, familiar talks to young men on Wednesday evenings from January to April, four social receptions, a lawn party and a college reception, besides the annual business meeting and a week of prayer for young men in November. At the first anniversary meeting, held in the First Presbyterian Church, Wednesday evening, October 25, 1882, Rev. Theodore L. Cuyler, D.D., of Brooklyn, addressed the association.

The need of such an association in Yonkers is apparent from the fact that there are at least three thousand young men living in the city. Many of this number are attracted here by the industries of the place, the extensive carpet, hat and silk-factories especially. Many others are clerks in New York City, who find it to their advantage to board in Yonkers. Many young men in many employments are without their family or home influences, and peculiarly exposed to the temptations that beset life in cities. The objects of the association are to develop the Christian character and usefulness of its members, and to improve the social, mental, physical and spiritual condition of young men. Besides the officers already mentioned, the association has a board of twelve directors, with executive and finance committees; also department committees on Christian work, membership, entertainment, visitation of the sick, employment and boarding-houses, receptions, rooms and library, and boys' work. The whole number of members at the close of the first year was two hundred and five, of whom one hundred and seventy were active or associate members, whose dues were two dollars annually, twenty-four were sustaining members, paying ten dollars a year, and eleven were honorary members, made so by the payment of one hundred dollars. The expenses for the first year, including furnishing the rooms, were \$3534.07. The receipts were \$3554.79. A balance of \$19.92 was left in the treasury. During the year eight lectures on familiar subjects were given by men capable of treating these subjects profitably, and these lectures were attended by an average audience of seventy-six.

The association was incorporated according to the laws of New York, May 3, 1882, by the filing of the necessary papers, and so placed on a proper foundation to become permanent, and to hold property whenever it may reach the strength to erect a building of its own. Its work in its various branches was from the first encouragingly successful. Mr. Wardle, after doing a most excellent service, resigned July 1, 1883, to enter a larger field, the State Secretaryship for Ohio. He was succeeded here by Mr. Myron W. Scudder, who held the secretaryship just one year, till July 1, 1884, retiring from it on a recall to a principalship of the public school of Fort Plain, N. Y., from which he had been called to this secretaryship in 1883. Mr. Scudder is of the celebrated missionary family of that name, and was himself born in India during the missionary service of his father, Rev. Ezekiel C. Scudder, D.D., in that country. He is a graduate of Rutgers College, New Brunswick, N. J., and a young man of great promise. His popularity in Yonkers was great. The association, after his resignation, was without a general secretary more than six months. Mr. Asa B. Bixby, the present general secretary, entered upon his work on the 15th of January, 1885. Mr. Bixby was educated in the seminary for young men at Binghamton, N. Y., and

from that institution went at once into special training for general secretaryship of a Christian Association. Before coming to Yonkers, he had served seven years as general secretary, first at Knoxville, Tenn., and next at Atlanta, Ga., from which latter place he was called to Yonkers. In his short career here he has proved himself eminently fitted for his work and place. The officers of the association elected besides those already mentioned, have been,—Presidents: G. Livingston Morse, from October, 1883, to February, 1884; Lyman Cobb, Jr., from February, 1884, to April, 1885, Rev. Henry M. Baird, D.D., LL.D., from April, 1885, to April, 1886. The president now is Mr. John T. Sproull. The vice-presidents have been Lyman Cobb, Jr., October, 1883 to February, 1884; Chas. R. Otis, elected April 14, 1884; John C. Havemeyer, elected April 13, 1885, and Samuel B. Hawley, elected April, 1886. The recording secretaries have been Walter Graves, elected October, 1883, Robert M. Reeves, April, 1884, and Harold Brown, April, 1885; and the treasurers, Rafaele Cobb, October, 1883; George Stewart, May, 1884, and Lyman Cobb, Jr., from the latter date. The present directors are Geo. Stewart, John T. Sproull, Walter Graves, Dr. E. I. Harrington, John T. Horton, James S. Fitch, C. R. Leffingwell, W. H. Belknap, W. A. Drinkwater, W. W. Middlebrook, Wells Olmsted, James Kellock, Frank B. Hickey, S. L. Cooper, W. W. Ellsworth and Ralph E. Prime. The total membership is now 410. For the year ending May 1, 1886, the expenses were \$3350. The average daily attendance at the reading-room was 159, and at the parlor 62. Four lectures on travel and science were given during the year also 15 "familiar talks" on health subjects, and eight musical entertainments and monthly and special receptions. The evening classes in German, vocal music (two classes), book-keeping, penmanship and arithmetic were attended by an aggregate enrollment of 161.

The cost of newspapers, periodicals, etc., for the reading-room was two hundred and fifty dollars last year. The parlor is supplied with games for amusement. A young men's meeting is regularly sustained at 4.15 P.M. on the Sabbath, in the hall above the reading-room. It has an average attendance of 55. A workers' training-class and a Bible-class are held every Saturday evening. These together have an average attendance of 24.

A department of boys' work was started October 23, 1882, and this, in April, 1884, was organized into a distinct branch of the association. It occupies the room on the third floor and is open for the entertainment of boys, daily, from nine o'clock to six o'clock, except on Sabbaths and at hours when the public schools are in session. Boys from nine to seventeen, having a good moral character and being members of Sunday-schools, are admitted to membership at an annual due of fifty cents, and, when once admitted, may remain members till they reach twenty years of

age. The object of this branch is the social, mental and moral improvement of the boys of the city. It has a membership of 136. Its room is supplied with a library of one hundred and seventy-four volumes and the leading boys' papers are kept on file in it. Boys' prayer-meetings are held every Sabbath afternoon, talks are given to the boys two nights every week, except during the summer, and sociables and occasional excursions are provided. The total attendance at the room during the year ending in April last was eighty-six hundred and eight.

The Association is now forming a library. It has already collected about 500 volumes, all presented to it by its friends.

SECTION XVIII.

Libraries, Literary Associations and Reading-Rooms.

IN the tower of St. John's Church, more than thirty years ago, lay a pile of old books, labeled as the property of a Young Men's Library Association. No one now can give an account of that association, but there is a tradition that, finding itself in a decline, it had turned over its books to St. John's Church for any use to which the church might choose to put them. As far as is now known, no other movement towards a public library was made till 1854, one year before the village was incorporated. The Getty House, whose history, including that of its famous lyceum or concert-room, we shall give further on, had been built in the winter and spring of 1851-52. In 1854 one of the most vigorous, interesting and successful efforts ever made in Yonkers towards general culture was inaugurated, whose first report, published in 1855, lies before us, and of which we must give an account. We take our sketch partly from the report and partly from our own and others' memory of the library, which continued to exist till 1866.

Early in the year named a few resident gentlemen conferred with each other on the propriety and feasibility of establishing a library and reading-room, chiefly for the benefit of the young men of the place. A preliminary meeting was held January 30, 1854, and arrangements were made for action. On the 1st of March a public meeting was held at the Getty House. Mr. Thomas O. Farrington was appointed chairman, and Mr. Henry W. Bashford secretary. Mr. Josiah Rich made an address, practical and stimulating. A constitution was adopted, and several gentlemen promised to join the effort. On the 13th these gentlemen met, subscribed the constitution, organized a society and elected Josiah Rich, president; Thomas O. Farrington, vice-president; Henry W. Bashford, secretary; William N. Seymour, treasurer; and Henry M. Coffin, librarian. The other first managers were Samuel D. Rockwell, George Macadam, Frederic S. Cozzens, Augustus N. Smith, Lemuel W. Wells (who resigned during the year and was succeeded by Jeremiah Robins), Samuel B. Cowdrey, A. Robinson, Henry F. Devoe, Robert F. Bucklin and Thomas C. Cornell.

Rooms were hired in the building, now 21 South Broadway (Wheeler's Block), and fitted up for the use of the association, which began simply as a library association, but soon took the additional character of a debating society, and, later on, became famous as a lecture-providing association. In each of these respects we shall speak of it. The opening year of the society was also the opening year of the Yonkers Gas Company, and the society, in the rooms we have mentioned, had, during its first winter of experience, the advantage of the new artificial light.

The library department of this association's work was inaugurated on Monday evening, May 22d. President Rich and the clergymen of the town delivered addresses to a large audience.

Eleven life and one hundred and eleven annual members were enrolled the first year, and several hundred books were donated by societies and individuals, of which the following were noteworthy: St. John's Church gave one hundred and twenty volumes (said to have been the volumes in its tower, to which we have referred); William N. Seymour, fifty; Henry Durell, twenty-seven; John Stevens, thirty; George P. Putnam (the publisher, then a resident of Yonkers), two hundred; J. A. Underwood, thirty; Rev. Robert Baird, D.D., thirty; Nepperhan Lodge, a large Bible; Josiah Rich, Lewis Gaylord Clark (of the *Knickerbocker Magazine*, a visitor in Yonkers), Russell Smith and others, several more. With these donated books the library was begun. At the same time several magazines and newspapers were supplied for a reading-room. Mr. Putnam was deeply interested in the association, and, in addition to his large gift just mentioned, gave many periodicals. Mr. Underwood, too, gave another and very choice donation of books during the first year. These books were catalogued and put in charge of the librarian. The librarians throughout the whole history of the library to 1866 were Henry M. Coffin, John Vail, W. D. Carpenter, Alonzo Bell, Mrs. R. J. Grace (now Mrs. Abram C. Mott) and Miss Anna T. Bate.

The library society was incorporated on the 9th of August, 1859, with the following board of trustees: John M. Mason, Robert P. Getty, Cyrus Cleveland, Justus Lawrence, Bailey Hobbs, George Leeds, J. H. Stedwell, William Bell and J. Henry Williams.

The presidents, from the beginning to the close of the library's history, were, in succession, Josiah Rich, George Macadam, George P. Putnam, John Stevens, John M. Mason, Rev. Darius R. Brewer and John M. Mason again.

During its first five years the library was voluntarily supported. The act of incorporation of 1859, however, defined the society as "The Yonkers Circulating Library Association," fixed the number of its trustees at nine, and the annual day for their election as the first Wednesday of May, provided for shares of stock at five dollars cash, *paid down*, and made the annual fee on each share one dollar, each shareholder

to be a member of the association. To this arrangement the society itself, in its by-laws, added a further plan for income by offering to outsiders, for fixed amounts, the use of the library for one, two, three or six months, or for a year, according as each one might be able or willing to pay.

This library, during its existence of twelve years, ending with 1866, accumulated books, including a small number of pamphlets, to the number of more than nine thousand. Its room was in the second story of the south end of the Getty House. At last public interest in it declined. It fell behind in its finances. Great effort was made by a few to revive it, but without success. To the great regret of a considerable number who had fully appreciated it, but did not have the means to save it, it had to be sacrificed for debt. Its volumes were put up at auction and mostly sold. What books were left unsold were sent up to the public library of Public School No. 2, where they were added to its then small library foundation. They now form part of a general public library under the care of the City Board of Education, and will be referred to again in connection with that library.

THE YONKERS DEBATING SOCIETY was part of the same movement. The first annual report mentioned includes also part of *its* story. It was formed among the members of the Library Association, and held its first meeting on Thursday evening, May 25, 1854. It held thirty-four regular meetings the first year, had about forty active members on its roll and many visitors always at its meetings. It held its public debates and other exercises in Flagg's Hall, at the corner of the streets now known as Palisade Avenue and New Main Street. Its presidents were, in succession, William L. Cowdrey, Samuel B. Cowdrey, E. P. Robbins, Alonzo Bell and T. S. Finnin. Its vice-presidents were S. Emmet Getty, Edward P. Baird, T. S. Finnin, William Beal, and its secretaries were Edward P. Baird, Hall F. Baldwin, Alonzo Bell, J. B. Farrington, T. S. Finnin and Lyman Cobb, Jr. The questions debated the first year are all given, and show that the society kept itself steadily abreast with the times. On the 20th of March, 1855, the first anniversary exercises were publicly held. There was music by Dods-worth's band; there were orations by W. L. Cowdrey, president, and Edward P. Baird; recitations by C. Cowdrey, J. C. Olmstead, Hall F. Baldwin and J. Rich, Jr.; and essays by J. Webb and S. Emmet Getty. The report says: "The celebration of the anniversary was attended by one of the largest audiences ever assembled in Yonkers, and passed off with great *clat*."

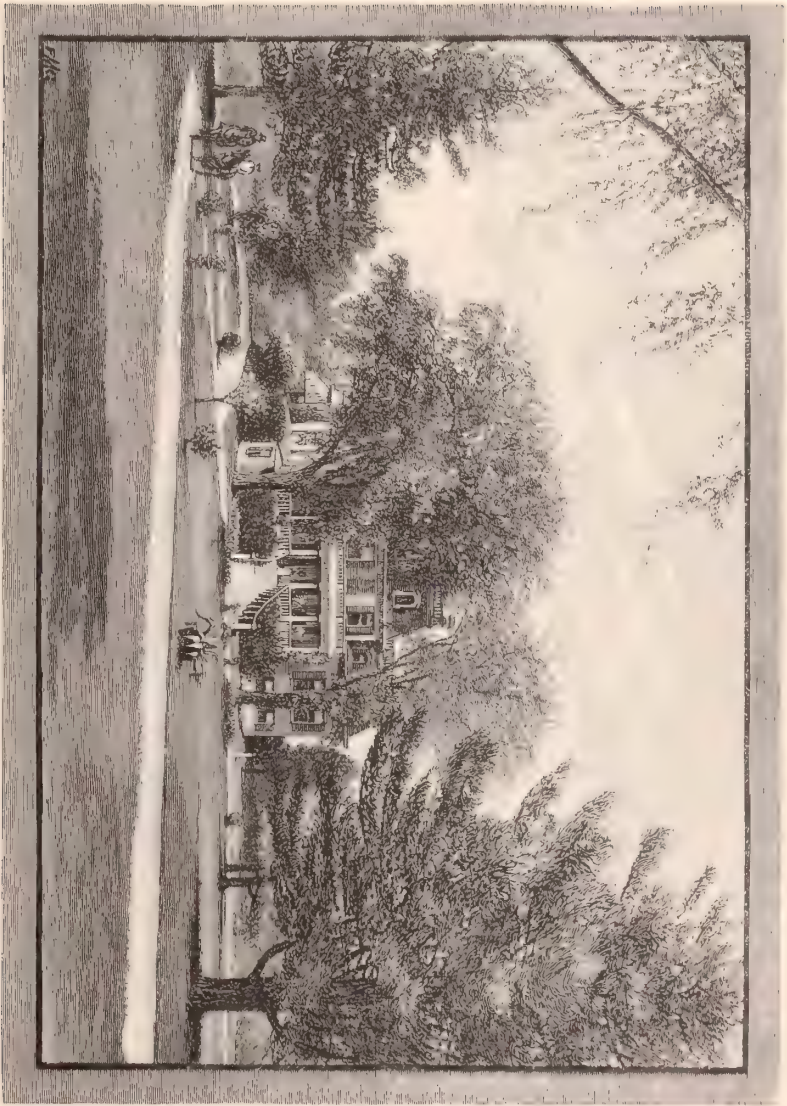
THE LECTURE COMMITTEE AND THE LECTURES were the third and last outgrowth of the same association's life. The first winter was enlivened with the delivery of a fine series of lectures. The report states that the lectures were given in the Lyceum of the Getty House, of which we shall speak presently. The first lecture committee were Josiah Rich, A. N. Smith and

George Macadam. The lecturers and their subjects are given. On the 27th of November, George W. Curtis made his first appearance here as a lecturer before an American audience, his subject being "The Gold and Gilt of Young America." His successors and their subjects were Henry Ward Beecher on "The Ministry of the Beautiful;" Parke Godwin on "The Future of the Republic;" Prof. O. Doremus (two lectures) on "The Chemistry of the Air" and "The Chemistry of the Ocean;" Rev. Dr. John Lord (two lectures) on "Richelieu" and "Napoleon Bonaparte;" Prof. Doremus again (two lectures) on "Geology" and "Physical Geography;" Prof. Stephen Alexander, of Princeton, N. J. (two lectures) on "The Vastness of the Visible Creation" and "The Primordial Arrangement of the Existing Systems;" and Rev. Henry Giles on "Spheres of Temper."

Such was the first year's course. Fifty gentlemen gave ten dollars each in advance to secure it, and this, with the receipts at the door, resulted in a total in-bringing of seven hundred and nineteen dollars, and a netting of \$113.50 to the treasury.

The lectures were subsequently kept up till the winter of 1859-60. We have before us, as we write, the files of the *Yonkers Herald*, giving the regularly advertised programme of the successive winters' lectures. The regular lecturers of the remaining four winters were, first, four pastors of the village itself,—Rev. A. A. Jävermore, D.D., Rev. Victor M. Hulbert, Rev. J. B. Hagany (two lectures) and Rev. Henry D. Miller,—and besides these, the following gentlemen, all of them of national, and many of them of world-wide reputation: Rev. W. A. Bartlett (2), Rev. George W. Bethune, D.D., Park Benjamin, J. B. Brown, Henry Ward Beecher, W. H. Burleigh, Rev. Henry W. Bellows, D.D., George W. Curtis (3), Rev. E. H. Chapin, D.D. (3), Prof. J. W. Fowler, Rev. Roswell D. Hitchcock, D.D. (2), Oliver Wendell Holmes, M.D. (2), Rev. Thomas Starr King (2), Herman Melville, Wendell Phillips, J. C. Richmond, George Sumner (3), Prof. B. Silliman, Jr., John G. Saxe, Hon. John Thompson, Rev. Joseph P. Thompson, D.D., F. H. Underwood, George Vanderhoef, Rev. A. A. Willets, D.D., Rev. A. Woodbury and E. H. Whipple.

Beside these regular lecturers and their lectures, the lecture committee afforded to the community a few memorable extras. Many Yonkers people delight to speak of having heard William M. Thackeray deliver his famous lecture on "Charity and Humor" in the Lyceum, on the 30th of November, 1855. We have the printed hand-bill of the lecture before us as we write. The interest felt in it is shown by the printing on this bill of a time-table of the railroad, announcing that extra trains will be run northward and southward to carry the people to and from the lecture, and also giving places for the sale of the tickets in New York City. The lecture committee named on this hand-bill are Robert P. Getty, George P. Putnam, George Macadam and Josiah Rich. Nor is it forgotten



"FAIRVIEW."
RESIDENCE OF EDWARD WESTON,
YONKERS, N. Y.

in Yonkers that Edwin Forrest gave here, in the Lyceum, on the 1st of March, 1853, the only public reading he ever gave in his life. It is said that he gave it in the interest of one of the Yonkers churches, and that its proceeds went to the building or completing of the church's steeple. Notwithstanding Mr. Forrest's long practice as an actor, the appearing before an imposing lecture audience alone, unsupported by any of the stage arrangements to which he had been accustomed, caused him such distress that he positively refused to repeat the effort in any place. Committees from different localities met him at the platform after his reading, and entreated him to make other engagements, but without avail. So he gave but one public reading in his life, and this was in the Getty Lyceum.

In the last winter of the association's work as a debating society and a lecture association (1859-60) it met with a powerful competition, which, probably, caused its final abandonment of these departments of its work. Another course of lectures, with distinguished lecturers, was projected in the interest of the Westminster Presbyterian Church, which had just been organized and wished to raise money. The lecturers were Rev. T. L. Cuyler, D.D., Rev. Samuel D. Burchard, D.D., William W. Howe, Rev. W. H. Milburn, Rev. Henry M. Scudder, D.D., Rev. Abraham Beach Carter, D.D., (rector of St. John's), Rev. Rollin A. Sawyer (pastor of the church), Rev. Samuel H. Cox, D.D., Rev. W. A. Bartlett, Rev. Walter F. Clark, D.D., and Rev. William Adams, D.D.

In this way, during that winter, was run a double course of lectures, all of which must have been lectures of great attractiveness. We notice that the chairman of this second lecture committee was Mr. Josiah Rich, who had been the first president of the Yonkers Association. His interest in the success of the Westminster Church, of which he was a member, of course drew him into this enterprise. The result of the winter's effort, however, was the discontinuance of the earlier lecture work.

Such was the interest of the leading men of Yonkers, at the period named, in the intellectual enjoyment and culture of the community and especially of its young men. It was a period in which all over the country the passion for public debates and lectures was at its height. The strength of Yonkers society was in these movements, and the names of the lecturers, together with the fact that the lectures ran on for five successive winters, must be taken as proof of the hold they must have had upon the place. There has been no subsequent movement of the kind to compare with this. Other attractions have since superseded debates and lectures to a very great extent. To their history and progress we must next give our thought.

YOUNG PEOPLE'S LITERARY ASSOCIATIONS.

The city has a number of these, some of them for both sexes and others for but one. Some of them are

within the church circles, though not organically part of them, like St. Joseph's Young Men's Catholic Association, which is incorporated and funded, and which we therefore thought proper to place under the heading of "Christian Unions." But we have had many and have now some exceedingly important and valuable Young People's Associations for literary culture within our churches. The Westminster Church has one as old as the church itself, and the Dayspring Presbyterian another, of whose age nearly the same is true. The Warburton Avenue Baptist Church also has one. Others have had such associations and some of them may have them still, more or less thriving. And some of these Young People's Associations have told with great power again and again upon the activity and spiritual life of their churches. Nor do we forget that outside of the churches there have been and are circles for culture. We have a Chautauqua Circle, which has been very active. To each of three associations outside the churches we give a few lines.

THE VIEWVILLE LITERARY ASSOCIATION.—This association, having for its object the improvement of its members in literature and science, and having the adjuncts of a reading-room and library, was incorporated in the latter part of 1879. On the 9th of January, 1880, Mr. Charles Lockwood, of Yonkers, presented it with a lot and a building he had erected on it, for the accommodation of its meetings and reading-room, with the expression of a wish that their institution might promote growth in Christian manhood, and counteract those influences which wreck character. The building, substantial, neat and well adapted to its objects, stands on Oliver Avenue, Nodine Hill, in a part of the city which, from its high elevation and the extensive views it affords, is known as Viewville. The members frequently hold public literary and musical entertainments and debates on the questions of the day. The room is open to the public on all evenings except those of Sabbaths. The society has had the following officers: Presidents, Rev. Charles E. Allison, H. H. Ferguson, William Webb, Samuel Granger, Thomas L. Mottram; Secretaries, William Smith, Rev. Charles E. Allison, William Bates and Rev. Charles E. Allison again; Treasurers, William Smith, Rev. Charles E. Allison, William Bates, William Webb. The trustees have included all the gentlemen named, and also Messrs. P. Kelly, Robert Harper, William Wharmby, James McKittrich, Joshua Smith, Thomas Iles and John B. Lees.

ATHENA.—This Association was also formed in 1879, with Isaac N. Cook as president, Edwin A. Oliver as secretary, Charles E. Finkel as treasurer, and a membership of fourteen. Its object was mutual improvement and enjoyment. The meetings were first held in Reeves' Building, at the corner of Warburton Avenue and Dock Street, the apartment used being now known as the Hall of the Knights of Pythias. The membership has increased to sixty, and the later

place of meeting has been in the Warburton Building. Two successful courses of lectures have been given to the public under the management of Athena, one in the winter of 1882-83, and one in that of 1883-84. The lecturers were Daniel Dougherty of Philadelphia; Robert J. Burdette of the *Burlington Hawkeye*; Rev. T. De Witt Talmage, D.D., George M. Towle, Prof. Ralph G. Hibbard of Brown University; Rev. Henry Ward Beecher, Col. L. W. Copeland of Chicago; and R. J. De Cordova of New York City. The officers of the society for 1844 were Prof. George H. Hooper, president; Arthur G. Ballard, secretary; and Charles E. Finkel, treasurer. The meetings of the society are now temporarily suspended.

More than for its lecture courses, Athena has been distinguished in Yonkers for its own occasional appearances before the public in programmes wholly peculiar to itself. These programmes have presented, through papers, debates, orations and mock trials, a rôle of wit and humor and of thought and skill which it would be hard to excel. Their censorship of persons, social usages and daily incidents, and even of the members themselves, especially through their paper, known as *Athena Argus*, has been so keen as to leave very few persons or things untouched. The paper carried fun to a rollicking extent, yet, as far as we know, the members have always maintained good humor among themselves, and always had pleasant times.

THE KNICKERBOCKER SOCIETY.—The design of this body of young men, like that of the last two named, is to promote the literary culture of its members. It was organized Sept. 26, 1884, by seven young men, viz.: Edwin I. Harrington, M.D., William C. Kellogg, Joseph Hover, Robert P. Getty, Jr., H. Beattie Brown, Henry S. Hathaway and Robert M. Reeves. At the organization the first four of these gentlemen, in the order named, were respectively chosen president, vice-president, secretary and treasurer for the first year.

Since the organization Gabriel Reeves, Everett Masten, George E. Adams, Frank Howard Cole, Thomas Ewing, Jr., Merritt H. Smith, Jr., Moses D. Getty and Willard Carpenter have been added to the membership, and the following are now, in the second year, the officers: Joseph Hover, president; Henry S. Hathaway, vice-president; Frank Howard Cole, secretary; Edwin I. Harrington, treasurer; and H. Beattie Brown, curator.

The reading of a paper and its discussion, with frequent poetical and prose contributions, and debates have formed the programme at each meeting. The meetings for the first year were held every second week at the offices of the members, the club having as yet no permanent room. They are now held in rented rooms in the Warburton Building.

To the statement thus furnished to us by the first President, we add, as matter of personal observation,

that the aim of the society is not culture of the intellect only, but also of kindly personal feeling, of pleasant manner, and of all characteristics that make young men a power for good. It has opened auspiciously, and, in view of the high stand it has taken at the outset upon all matters that look to the development of a strong and noble manhood, we can not doubt that it will become, if it remains true to its promise, growingly a Society to which it will be an honor and a profit to belong.

GENERAL PUBLIC LIBRARIES AND READING-ROOMS.

The oldest foundation of books for public use in Yonkers continuously built upon to the present time, is that which till recently has been in the keeping of the various public schools. Each of the schools had its own library. Recently the City Board of Education has brought all their libraries to its own headquarters within the High School grounds on Hudson Street, and with them begun the formation of one central collection under the name of the "Yonkers Public Library," designed not only for the pupils of the schools, but for the citizens at large, who may desire to avail themselves of it. When this step was taken, in 1884, it was found that the number of collected volumes was three thousand three hundred and seventy-one. As stated in our article on the "Yonkers Circulating Library" formed in 1854, a considerable number of these books, originally belonging to that library, had been sent up to the library of Public School No. 2, after the auction sale of 1866. So the sources from which the three thousand three hundred and seventy-one volumes just mentioned originally came are understood. They were, of course, partly from books donated to the public schools by individuals or purchased with regular library money. But part of them were from the old Yonkers Library, and no doubt some of them even came from the collection spoken of as lying before 1854 in the tower of St. John's Church. The City Board, when collecting these books, found that they had at their disposal, with which at once to build up a library, four years' accumulation of State Library money, amounting to seven hundred and forty dollars, and five years' accumulation of City Library money, raised by tax, amounting to one thousand two hundred and fifty dollars,—total, one thousand nine hundred and ninety dollars. From this fund they have already added to the library one thousand two hundred and twenty-nine volumes at a cost of \$1628.47. It now contains four thousand six hundred volumes. It will continue to receive its annual apportionment from the State, based on the number of teachers and pupils in attendance on the schools, and also its annual income from city tax. Probably neither will fall below the amount at which it has stood for the last few years. The State apportionment has been one hundred and eighty-five dollars per year, and the city apportionment two



"MAPLE TERRACE."
RESIDENCE OF R. A. ROBERTS,
YONKERS, N. Y.



hundred and fifty dollars. With this steady income at its disposal, the library will be a steadily growing institution. The board manifests deep interest in it now, and will seek to give it a character adapted to the public need. It is said to be faithfully used by many persons, both the young people in the schools and older and younger people in the outside city. It is certain that, with its steady income, its certainty of good management and of good judgment in the selection of its books, Yonkers has better hope for a permanent and noble library than it ever had, or ever could have, in any public library depending on mere voluntary contributions, or even on stock and rate subscriptions for its support. We cannot see how this library can fail to be a success.

YONKERS FREE READING-ROOM.—This has just been given up, and we speak of it only as a matter of history. During the Grant and Colfax campaign of 1868 a Republican Club occupied a room in the Radford building, in which Republican campaign newspapers and literature were kept for reading, circulation and reference. The temporary experience and advantages of this room suggested to thoughtful men the opening, after the election, of a more permanent reading-room for the city. A card, dated November 14, 1868, and signed by Messrs. William Allen Butler, D. R. Jaques, William T. Coleman and James B. Colgate, was sent to several prominent citizens of Yonkers, inviting them to an informal meeting to confer and act upon the subject. The meeting was held in the club-room on Wednesday evening, November 18th, and a committee of seventeen leading gentlemen was appointed to raise money and prosecute the work. They did so with a zeal which indicated their great interest in the trust reposed in them, and the late club-room having been secured at a rental of five hundred dollars per annum, the reading-room was opened on the 29th of December following. All classes of people took active interest in the project, and the opening exercises, consisting of addresses, singing and recitations, were attended by a large and enthusiastic audience. The room was supplied with a library, and the Yonkers and New York newspapers and the leading religious and literary weeklies and magazines were kept on file. The reading-room was for many years well sustained. The cost of maintaining it was about fifteen hundred dollars a year, and was met by contributions from public-spirited people. Among the leading contributors were William Allen Butler, James B. Colgate, John B. Trevor, E. A. Nichols, Rudolf Eickemeyer and Stephen Thayer, Jr. Mr. Butler was president for a number of years, and the librarians, in order of succession, were J. W. Alexander, Allen Taylor, Ebenezer Curtice and S. C. Van Tassel. In 1880 the library was removed to No. 20 Main Street. Upon the springing up of the Young Men's Christian Association, with its free reading-room, a number of the supporters of the Yonkers Free Reading-Room turned their

support to it, and proposed the abandonment of the former. Mr. E. A. Nichols, however, volunteered to maintain the old reading-room at his own expense, and did so for a time. In the spring of 1884 Mr. Cyrus Cleveland offered to bear the expense of keeping it open on Sundays, which had not been done before. Its ordinary daily hours were from four to ten P.M. and its Sabbath hours from two to ten. Under these conditions it continued in operation for a time, but still gradually declined, and before 1885 it was judged best to give it up. It is said that the library contained four hundred and seventy-five bound volumes, on a very considerable variety of subjects. These were, or became, the property of Mr. E. A. Nichols, who finally removed them from the rooms. So the Yonkers Free Reading-Room, after having been in existence about sixteen years, and having served during much of that time a very useful, practical purpose, came at last to an end, being superseded by the arrangements of the Young Men's Christian Association.

YONKERS FREE LIBRARY FOR SELF-SUPPORTING WOMEN.—We separate this from "General Public Libraries and Reading Rooms" because, as its name indicates, it has the need of a special class of persons in view. It was instituted May 1, 1880, under the direction and management of several young ladies, who wished to provide wholesome literature of an entertaining and instructive character for the many working-women of Yonkers, to whom no other means of procuring it seemed at hand. It was started in two small, plainly-furnished rooms at No. 49 Palisade Avenue, near the factories. Five hundred books, mostly second-handed, donated by friends, composed it, and all necessary expenses connected with the movement were defrayed by voluntary contributions. During the first summer it was open on Saturdays from five to six P.M. But so marked was its success that in the fall a regular librarian—Miss Mary B. Daniels—was engaged, and the library, in addition to its Saturday opening as before, was opened also on Mondays and Wednesdays from half-past eleven to one o'clock. The first year there were six hundred applicants for books, and from sixty-five to eighty-five volumes were drawn weekly, the circulation for the year amounting to over three thousand. Since then the library has been increased by donations and purchases till now it numbers twelve hundred books.

In May, 1883, the use of the brick house No. 48 Palisade Avenue, was, by the owner, Mr. Samuel Shethar, given to the library for a term of years, and the house was fitted up by him to suit the needs of the institution. Through the liberality of other friends also, carpets and furniture were provided, and on the 1st of September the library was moved into this new and attractive place. The young ladies, who had previously acted simply as a committee, now organized themselves into a society under the name of the "Yonkers Free Circulating Library for Self-supporting Women." The officers were Miss Butler presi-

dent and treasurer, and Miss Mary B. Daniels secretary. The executive committee were Miss Butler, Miss Uhl, Mrs. Walter Graves and Miss Baird.

Besides the library there is also a free reading-room, open certain evenings in the week. And further, there is a parlor and class-room tastefully and conveniently fitted up, and especially devoted to the meetings of the Library Association, an organization under the charge of the executive committee and designed for the improvement and enjoyment of its members. Self-supporting women, over sixteen years of age, may become members of the association by the payment of a small membership fee and faithful adherence to the rules prescribed by the executive committee. And all members are entitled to attendance on the evening classes in choral music, needle-work and penmanship, and the lectures and entertainments, and to participate in any other privileges that may from time to time be added. There are, at the present time, about seventy-five members in the association.

SECTION XIX.

Orders and Clubs.

Within this section we catalogue, as far as we know them, and give some account of, all the still unmentioned combinations,—orders, societies and associations,—secret and open, literary, benevolent, social and athletic, of the city. We present, first, general heads, and then follow, under each of these, with their detail of chapters or branches. The oldest of the orders is that of the Free-Masons. To their various bodies we give the opening place.

FREE-MASONS.

These have two Blue Lodges, a Chapter, a Council, a Commandery and an adjunct to the two lodges, known as the Board of Masonic Relief. We notice each of these in its turn.

RISEING STAR LODGE, No. 450, FREE AND ACCEPTED MASONS.—This lodge was organized in 1826. Its warrant was issued Sept. 7th of that year, and contained the names of Amos W. Gates, Worshipful Master; Robert Dingee, Senior Warden; and Oliver C. Denslow, Junior Warden. The charter was surrendered September 12, 1831, and Masonry slumbered for many years thereafter in Yonkers, as in many other places, owing to the prevalent popular opposition of the day. The lodge was, however, reorganized January 22, 1851. Its original number had been 393, but at the reorganization it was changed to 142. On the reunion of the Grand Lodges of the State of New York, in 1858, the different lodges were renumbered, and that of this lodge was further changed to 450, which it still retains. Among its early members were Amos W. Gates, M.D., Oliver C. Denslow, M. N. Wisewell, William W. Scrugham, Edward Underhill, Frederic S. Cozzens, John M. Mason, James Jenkinson, Robert F. Rich, J. Foster Jenkins, M.D.,

and Robert J. Douglass, all of whom are now dead. James Jenkinson attained the distinction of Grand Master of one of the Grand Lodges of the State, which position he held at the time of the union. Oliver C. Denslow was at one time Grand Senior Warden of the State.

Where the lodge held its meetings before 1858 we cannot learn, but for a very long time from that year it occupied the upper floor of what is now No. 6 North Broadway. Thence it removed to the hall attached to the Getty House, and thence again to its present rooms, in the Yonkers Savings Bank building.

The still-living member longest connected with the lodge is Mr. A. C. Mott, who has been its secretary more than a quarter of a century. The communications of the lodge occur on the second and fourth Wednesdays of each month. The officers for 1884 were John E. Murphy, W.M.; Joseph Greenhalgh, S.W.; Anton Wagner, J.W.; Wallis Smith, Treasurer; Abram C. Mott, Secretary; Edwin A. Quick, Chaplain; Eugene Timeson, S.D.; George W. Brown, J.D.; W. H. Greenhalgh and John Griffin, Masters of Ceremonies; Charles E. Skinner, Marshal; William Westney, Tiler; Jacob Read, T. R. Murphy and W. H. Greenhalgh, Trustees. The Past Masters of the lodge now living are Haynes L. Warren, Theodore Terrell, Thomas C. Murphy, Eugene Timeson, J. E. Murphy, Henry Stengel and Edwin A. Quick. The present membership is about one hundred and sixteen.

NEPPERHAN LODGE, No. 736, F. AND A. M.—This lodge was organized with a dispensation from the Grand Master of the State, in February, 1875, the Grand Lodge granting a warrant for it at its meeting in the following June. Its first officers were Eli L. Seger, W.M.; William A. Gibson, S.W.; and Matthew H. Ellis, J.W. The lodge has occupied Masonic Hall, in the Yonkers Savings Bank building, from its beginning. Its Past Masters have been Eli L. Seger, William A. Gibson, Ralph 'E. Prime, William W. Wilson, Charles Reed and Lyman Cobb, Jr. Ralph E. Prime has served the Grand Lodge as District Deputy Grand Master and Commissioner of Appeals. The officers for 1884 were Charles Reed, W.M.; George W. White, S.W.; J. B. Griggs, J.W.; Lyman Cobb, Jr., Treasurer; J. Frank Lyman, Secretary; Ralph E. Prime, Chaplain; Moses D. Getty, S.D.; F. A. Rigby, J.D.; John W. Rockwell, Marshal; John Nesbit, and Samuel L. Berrian, Masters of Ceremonies; William Westney, Tiler; Ralph E. Prime, F. A. Rigby and W. W. Wilson, Trustees. It has about forty members, and holds its communications on the first and third Tuesdays of each month.

NEPPERHAN CHAPTER, No. 117, ROYAL ARCH MASONS.—This Chapter was organized by a dispensation issued by Darius A. Ogden, Grand High Priest of the State of New York, and received its warrant from the Grand Chapter February 3, 1864. The

first three officers named in the warrant were Lyman Cobb, Jr., High Priest; Eli L. Seger, King; and Robert F. Rich, Scribe. The meetings of the chapter were at first held in the Getty House Lyceum, whence its quarters were removed to Masonic Hall, in the Yonkers Savings Bank, where they remain. The convocations are held on the first and third Wednesdays of each month, except July and August. The High Priests have been Lyman Cobb, Jr., J. Foster Jenkins, M.D., Eli L. Seger, Robert F. Rich, William H. Doty, Haynes L. Warren, George W. White, Oliver Chambers, Ralph E. Prime, Edwin A. Quick and Charles Reed. The officers in 1884 were Ralph E. Prime, High Priest; Lyman Cobb, Jr., King; William P. Mott, Scribe; William B. Edgar, Treasurer; J. S. Fitch, Secretary; M. D. Getty, Chaplain of the Host; Charles Reed, Principal Sojourner; Edwin A. Quick, Royal Arch Chaplain; H. Stengel, Master of the Third Veil; W. H. Geer, Master of the Second Veil; S. L. Berrian, Master of the First Veil; and E. A. Quick, Charles Reed and J. F. Lyman, trustees. The chapter has about forty members.

NEPPERHAN COUNCIL, No. 70, ROYAL AND SELECT MASONS.—This council was organized in July, 1877, by dispensation from George M. Osgoodby, Grand Master of the Royal and Select Masters of the State, and received its warrant in the same year. The warrant contains the names of Ralph E. Prime, Thrice Illustrious Master; Lyman Cobb, Jr., Right Illustrious Deputy Master; and William A. Gibson, Illustrious Principal Conductor of the Work. It has held its assemblies, from its start, in Masonic Hall, but by authority of the Grand Council it convenes alternately in Yonkers on the first Wednesday and in Mount Vernon on the third Monday of each month, except July and August. It now numbers forty members. The officers for 1884 were G. D. Pond, Master; J. E. Murphy, Deputy Master; J. M. Tompkins, Principal Conductor of the Work; Lyman Cobb, Jr., Treasurer; E. A. Quick, Recorder; Lyman Cobb, Jr., Chaplain; Theodore Taylor, Captain of the Guard; S. S. Crane, Conductor of the Council; M. D. Getty, Marshal; R. B. Disbrow, Steward; and William Westney, Sentinel.

YONKERS COMMANDERY, No. 47, KNIGHTS TEMP-LAR.—This commandery was organized under a dispensation of the Grand Commandery of the State, bearing date April 10, 1869. The first officers were Lyman Cobb, Jr., Eminent Commander; Eli L. Seger, Generalissimo, and W. H. Doty, Captain-General. Its first meetings were held in the lodge-room in the Getty House, but it was subsequently quartered in Masonic Hall. Its stated meetings are held on the second and fourth Tuesdays of each month, except July and August. It has about thirty members. The Past Commanders have been Lyman Cobb, Jr., Joseph M. Tompkins, William A. Gibson and Charles Reed. Its officers in 1884 were Charles Reed, Eminent Commander; J. Frank Lyman, Generalissimo; Washington M. Postley, Captain-General; Lyman

Cobb, Jr., Prelate; W. B. Edgar, Treasurer; A. C. Mott, Recorder; James S. Fitch, Senior Warden; James M. Tompkins, Junior Warden; H. A. Daniels, Standard-Bearer; E. Belknap, Sword-Bearer; James Stewart, Warden; James F. D. Crane, First Guard; J. C. Courter, Second Guard; W. W. Wilson, Third Guard; and William Westney, Captain of the Guard.

YONKERS BOARD OF MASONIC RELIEF.—In December, 1878, a compact was formed between the two Masonic lodges of the city, under which this board was organized, to afford temporary relief to sojourners. The board is composed of the Masters and Wardens of both lodges, six in all. Its funds are derived from assessments on the lodges, according to a scale designated in the company. The board adopted its own by-laws, which were approved by the lodges, and it remains in operation. Its first members were Theodore Terrell, Eugene Timeson and Thomas R. Murphy, from Rising Star Lodge, and Ralph E. Prime, W. W. Wilson and Joseph A. Lockwood, from Nepperhan Lodge. Mr. Abram C. Mott has been its only secretary and treasurer. Meetings are held in different places on the second Wednesday of January, March and May, on the first Tuesday of September and November, and on the first Tuesday of December (St. John the Evangelist's Day).

INDEPENDENT ORDER OF ODD-FELLOWS.

This order was first represented in Yonkers by Nepperhan Lodge, No. 181, I. O. O. F. This lodge was granted a charter September 30, 1845, but surrendered it again February 26, 1855. We mention it now only as matter of history. The petition for it in 1845 was made by Samuel W. Chambers, James Borlane, Horatio S. Gates, M.D., Ezra B. Keeler, Alfred H. Hyatt, William Mann, James Hughes, Peter Garrison, William Henry Garrison, William P. Reviser and Matthias Warner. The lodge met in the upper room of a building on the south side of Main Street, adjoining the building which faced on Getty Square. At the time of the surrender of the charter there were eight members, as follows: Samuel W. Chambers, Jacob Read, Charles F. Belknap, Ezra B. Keeler, William P. Mott, William Mann, F. R. Bostwick and John Stevens. The last five named held honors as Past Grands. The lodge had once experienced a period of prosperity, during which its membership reached about one hundred and twenty-five.

The I. O. O. F. have now in the city Yonkers Lodge, No. 232, and Shaffner Encampment, No. 100.

YONKERS LODGE, No. 232, I. O. O. F.—This lodge was organized May 12, 1870, with five members. The first officers were Robert B. Light, N. G.; and Eli L. Loschenkohl, Secretary. The first quarters of the lodge were in the building on the southwest corner of Main Street and Getty Square. It was removed thence to the Anderson Building, over the People's Savings-Bank, and thence again, in May, 1876, to its present quarters, in Warburton Hall. Here it enjoys

elegant rooms, owning furniture and fixtures which cost over two thousand dollars. The lodge is prosperous. It has a fund of over six thousand five hundred dollars. Its membership is one hundred and fifteen. Meetings are held every Thursday night throughout the year. The present officers (1885) are Howard T. Schultz, N. G.; Theodore J. Bayer, V. G.; William Plumb, Rec. Sec.; James D. McIntyre, Permanent Secretary; Jacob Rose, Treasurer. The trustees are James D. McIntyre, George R. Goss and Roger Sullivan.

SHAFFNER ENCAMPMENT, No. 100, I. O. O. F.—The Encampment or Patriarchal branch of Odd-Fellowship is higher than that of the lodge, possession of the Third or Scarlet Degree being a necessary qualification for the attainment of the Patriarchal, the Golden Rule and the Purple, which are the Encampment degrees.

Shaffner Encampment, No. 100, of Yonkers, named in honor of Col. Talfiero P. Shaffner, of Kentucky, was instituted January 29, 1883. The charter members were J. Edwin Butler, Myer Loewenthal, Theodore J. Bayer, Isaac D. Cole, Robert B. Light, Roger Sullivan, David P. Tasheira, George C. Reid, R. Fawcett, August Ulrich, J. McQuade, Jas. Grifing, William W. Kinneir, Solon Lapham, Thomas A. Rhodes, John Bright, Richard M. Johnstone and Jacob Rose.

The first officers of the encampment were,—Chief Patriarch, Theodore J. Bayer; High Priest, Roger Sullivan; Senior Warden, August Ulrich; Junior Warden, Richard M. Johnstone; Treasurer, David P. Tasheira; Scribe, Thomas E. Lee.

The officers, October 1, 1885, were—Chief Patriarch, Thomas A. Rhodes; H. P., Howard T. Schultz; S.

W., Q. A. Shaffer; J. W., Charles P. Ward; Scribe, William Plumb; Treasurer, David P. Tasheira.

The membership at the same date was forty-one.

YONKERS REBEKAH DEGREE, No. 95.—The Rebekah Degree is a side degree which is conferred upon the wives, sisters and daughters of Odd-Fellows.

Application by over twenty ladies who had received the degree was made to the Grand Lodge in August, 1885, to charter a Rebekah Lodge in Yonkers, and the charter was granted, but the lodge has not yet been instituted.

James Patterson Sanders, Past Grand Sire of the Independent Order of Odd-Fellows, has been a member of Yonkers Lodge, No. 232, since October 3, 1872, and has held the highest offices in the gift of that Order in the world. His national reputation among Odd-Fellows, and his residence of nearly forty years in this county, suggest as fitting a short sketch of his life at this point. He was born in Dutch St., New York City, on the 5th of April, 1819, and received his elementary education in the private schools of that city. At the age of seventeen he apprenticed himself to the hating trade in Danbury, Conn. During his apprenticeship he employed his mornings and evenings and odd moments



Yours fraternally J. P. Sanders
P. G. Sire

of leisure in the study of law, had passed his examination and was qualified for admission to the bar upon attaining his majority. In 1846 he removed to Peekskill and opened a hat-store, at the same time keeping up the study of the profession of law. After a period spent in the office of Edward Wells, Esq., he was admitted to practice in the courts of New York. In 1859 he removed to the village of Yonkers, and opened a law-office. He has ever since enjoyed a lucrative practice, and

is now the senior member of the bar in the city. He was initiated into Samaritan Lodge of Odd-Fellows, at Danbury, Conn., September 6, 1843, and joined Courtland Lodge, No. 6 at Peekskill, in January, 1847. He was elected Grand Patriarch of the Grand Encampment of this State in 1850, Grand Master in 1858, Deputy Grand Sire of the United States in 1864, and Grand Sire of the Order throughout the world in 1866. He has been a representative to the Grand Lodge and Grand Encampment of this State since 1847, was first made representative from this State to the Sovereign Grand Lodge (then G. L. U. S.) in 1852, and has been a regular attendant at the sessions of that grand body, never having missed a session since 1860. He is now, with one exception, its oldest continuous member. Mr. Sanders was president of the Board of Education of School District No. 6, in the city of Yonkers, for three years. He has never accepted any other public office. He is a man tall of stature, robust in build, strong of mind and purpose, endowed with a wonderfully retentive memory, of a kind and cheerful disposition, and is widely known and universally respected.

HOME FOR THE AGED AND INFIRM, I. O. B. B.

We introduce this here because it is not a charitable institution, but the property of an "Order" founded for the benefit of its own members. Each inmate of it has secured for himself the right to be taken care of in it by his own contributions to it through a series of years. It was founded by the First District of the Independent Order of B'nai B'rith ("Sons of the Covenant"), a Jewish secret and beneficial order, organized in 1841, of which the society of this First District extends over the States of New York, Connecticut, Rhode Island, Massachusetts and the Dominion of Canada. The accumulation of a fund for forming a Home like this was begun in 1856, with an annual assessment of one dollar on each member of the society. In 1876 enough money had been accumulated to warrant the undertaking of the building. A tract of nine and five-eighths acres of land in Yonkers, at the corner of South Broadway and Valentine's Lane, was bought for thirty-seven thousand five hundred dollars, and in 1881 the society appointed the following building committee to plan and erect the house, viz.: Joseph Fox, chairman; Adolph L. Sawyer, Simeon M. Roeder, Solomon Sulzberger, Sigmund Hamburger, Julius A. Levy, Joseph E. Newbinger, Leopold Friedlander, Morris Adler, Benno Horwitz, Myer Hellman, Julius Bien, Dr. Sigmund Waterman, Louis Lewengood, Joseph Loth, Mayer Zunder, Isaac Wallach, G. A. Herrman, Sigmund H. Seligman, Israel J. Salomon and Samuel Levy.

The corner-stone was laid in August, 1881, and on the 28th of June, 1882, the building was dedicated with imposing ceremonies. Addresses were delivered by several members of the society, and also an address

was made by Hon. Samuel Swift, M.D., at the time mayor of Yonkers. The cost of the building was eighty-five thousand dollars, and of the grounds and building together one hundred and twenty-two thousand five hundred dollars. The fund accumulated had amounted to \$153,933.69, so that the society took possession of its fine property not only out of debt, but even with a surplus in hand of over thirty thousand dollars. The furniture cost about six thousand dollars additional, but part of this was met by a Ladies' Auxiliary Society, composed of the mothers, sisters, wives and daughters of members of the order.

The building is an L in shape, having one front of one hundred and twenty-one feet facing westward, and another of seventy-nine feet facing northward. Each arm of it is fifty feet deep, and the whole, including the mansard finish, is four stories in height. The building has also a tower seventy-three feet high. The rooms are large and airy, the ceilings are about eleven feet high, and the ventilation is thorough. The building was designed by H. J. Schwartzman, architect, and erected by Messrs. J. & G. Stewart, of Yonkers, masons, and C. W. Klappert's Sons, carpenters. Its first floor contains, on the south side of its fine hall, the office of the superintendent, the room of the board of governors, a reception-room for ladies (in which is a very fine testimonial presented to Julius Bien, chief officer of the order, by its members) and the rooms of the superintendent and his family, and on the north side, the large dining-room, the kitchen, laundry, store-room and other rooms. The upper floors are principally devoted to the chambers of the inmates. On the second floor, in the wing facing northward, is a synagogue, and adjoining this is a handsome parlor. On the fourth floor are the hospital and the servants' quarters. The rooms of the officials are handsomely furnished, and those of the inmates, some of which are for married and others for single persons, are all very neat and comfortable. The view from the balcony of the building northward is among the most beautiful that can be imagined. It takes in the whole of the densely populated part of Yonkers, and also the Hudson River all the way to Sing Sing. The building is of brick, and a number of its front windows are of stained glass. Wide gravel walks and drives completely encircle it, the grounds are well cultivated and adorned, there is a rich and productive garden at hand, and altogether the place presents a peculiarly beautiful appearance.

The income of the Home is about ten thousand dollars a year, derived from the yearly collection of one dollar from each member of the society, and an annual contribution of two dollars from each member of the Ladies' Auxiliary Society, together with the interest on the surplus already mentioned. This income makes the institution independent of all charitable donations.

The synagogue in the second story, already spoken

of, was dedicated September 8, 1882, by the Rev. Drs. Kohler and Jacobs. Services are conducted in it by Rev. Veis Traub, an inmate. Louis Fauerbach and his wife were the first superintendent and matron of the Home. Their successors in the position are Mr. and Mrs. B. M. Behrens. The first inmates were admitted June 29, 1882, the day after the Home was dedicated, and the first death of an inmate occurred on the 14th of January, 1883.

The management of the institution is vested in a board of governors, consisting of twenty-one members of the district society. They hold their stated meetings on the first Sunday of every month. A visiting-committee of sixty is appointed from the Ladies' Auxiliary Society, and is divided into sub-committees of two, each of which visits the Home once every month. The first board of governors were Joseph Fox, president; Henry S. Herrman, vice-president; Julius Bien, Dr. S. Waterman, Joseph Sulzberger, Louis Lewengood, M. A. Hecksher, Ferdinand Kurzman, Moses Minzeshimer, Solomon Latz, Joseph Loth, Gustav Simon, Israel Nussbaum, Mayer Zunder, Isaac Rosnosky, Morris Ballin, William Bennett, Moses Klein, Moses S. Hyman, Rudolph Sampfer and David Wile. But little change has yet been made in the board. The number of inmates is now about twenty-five, and the cost per week of keeping them is a little more than two dollars each.

SOCIAL, ATHLETIC AND AQUATIC CLUBS.

The city has many of these. We give a short account of each as furnished to us.

THE YONKERS LYCEUM.—This association, having for its object the promotion of mental and physical culture, social intercourse and amusement, was organized on the 7th of July, 1868. Its original members were Edward Underhill, Henry M. Underhill, Edwin M. Jackson, Robert G. Jackson, James Moffat and A. O. Lawrence. Edward Underhill was the first president. The association was organized under the title of "The Young Men's Lyceum of Yonkers," but in 1872 it was incorporated under its present name.

Literary entertainments have been given by it at times, and in 1874-75-76 athletic exhibitions were given, consisting of walking, running and jumping matches, throwing weights, etc. The Lyceum, however, is chiefly a social club. Its first quarters were on Chicken Island, in the building now occupied by the Fourth Separate Company, of which we shall give an account below. About 1881 they were changed to the Yonkers Savings-Bank building, where the association has a room attractively furnished, provided with three billiard tables, and containing a library of several hundred volumes. It has a membership of one hundred.

The officers for 1885 are John O. Campbell, president; E. M. Jackson, 1st vice-president; W. R. Beers, 2d vice-president; W. R. Mott, recording

secretary; Randolph Lowerre, corresponding secretary; Edward Underhill, treasurer; and J. G. Sanger, librarian. The directors in 1884 were Ethelbert Belknap, H. H. Thayer, J. T. Baker, Charles E. Gorton, W. H. King and W. R. Mott.

SONS OF ST. GEORGE.—**COLUMBIA LODGE, No. 122,** of the Sons of St. George, was organized in the spring of 1873. Its first officers were John Rowland, Past Grand President; Edward Underhill, Worthy President; Frederick K. Shears, Vice-President; George Rayner, Jr., Secretary; and Thomas Tyler, Sr., Treasurer. The original number of members was twenty-five, but within a year or two it has increased to one hundred. But few changes have been made in the officers. Meetings are held in Odd-Fellows' Hall, in the Warburton Building, on the first and third Wednesdays of each month. The President is Joseph Greenhalgh and the Secretary is Thomas E. Hampson. Athletic sports are made a prominent feature of the social recreations.

PALISADE BOAT CLUB.—Early in the history of Yonkers its young men turned their attention to aquatic sports, and quite a number of boat clubs have been formed. One of the earliest of them was the "Excelsior," which existed previous to 1867, and another was the "Ivanhoe," whose headquarters were at Glenwood.

In 1866 the Palisade Base Ball Club, which had gained numerous victories on the land, went in search of laurels on the water also. A crew was selected from the membership, which was pitted in a race against the Excelsiors and was beaten. After this the Palisade Boat Club was organized on the 16th of October, 1866, its first membership being largely composed of members of the ball club. Henry Amelung was president; J. G. P. Holden, vice-president; Henry V. Clark, secretary; and Henry F. Brevoort, treasurer. Other original members were James G. Woodworth, Hiram G. Smith, M. F. Rowe, Robert Fawcett, J. E. Millard, A. L. Amelung, E. A. Rollins, Joseph H. Jennings and William H. Myers. In the following year the club joined the Hudson River Amateur Association and participated in a grand review of clubs belonging to it, which took place at Elysian Fields. It was incorporated March 2, 1868. It participated in races with the Nereids of Brooklyn, and the Vespers of Yonkers, in the race with the last of which it won, pulling an eight-oared barge three miles in nineteen minutes. This took place October 7, 1874, the oarsmen being Isaiah Frazier, H. H. Thayer, W. H. Guernsey, A. Moffat, C. H. Martin, Isaac D. Cole, Robert C. Jackson and W. H. Myers, with H. B. Starr, coxswain. A banquet was tendered to the winning crew at the Mansion House in the evening.

Since this victory the club has engaged in no contests of notable interest. Annual regattas have usually taken place in the fall. A silver tankard, known as the "Love Cup," and valued at two hundred and fifty

dollars, is rowed for in single sculls, the winner having his name inscribed on it. The club remains in possession of the cup. The present handsome clubhouse, situated above Peene's dock, is the successor of a much smaller and plainer one. It is the property of the association, which also owns sixteen boats of various size and model. Individual members also own many others. The membership of the club in 1885 was about sixty-five and the officers were as follows: Robert G. Jackson, president; H. B. Starr, vice-president; Louis N. Morris, corresponding secretary; Wm. W. Scrugham, recording secretary; Edwin M. Jackson, treasurer; E. Martin, Jr., captain; and ———, lieutenant. The trustees are W. R. Beers, M. A. Van Winkle, H. T. Keyser, George H. Lowerre and H. O. Tallmadge.

VESPER ROWING ASSOCIATION.—This was organized August 12, 1867. The original members were eight in number. They were Thomas Franklin, R. C. Elliott, Benjamin Mason, William Macfarlane, James T. Howland, Thomas Fearon, William Hull and George Watt. It probably gained more fame on the water than any other similar club that has existed in Yonkers. The Vespers were represented by Thomas Fearon, who participated in a single scull race in a regatta of the Hudson Amateur Rowing Association at the Elysian Fields a short time after the organization of this club. Mr. Fearon carried off the championship, a feat which he repeated the two following years.

The chief fame of this association was gained by its four-oared crew, which was almost invincible among amateurs in its time. It was composed of Thomas Fearon, Owen Van Winkle, William Macfarlane and John H. Keeler. They met many of the expert amateur clubs of the country, and won a number of victories. Among these were one over the Nassau Club, of New York, at Yonkers, June 28, 1871, and another over the Argonauts, of Bergen Point, N. J., on the Kill Von Kull, August 29, 1871. They also entered the regatta of the National Amateur Association at Philadelphia, June 13, 1872. There were seven entries for the race, which was rowed in heats over a course one and a half miles in length on the Schuylkill River. In the second trial heat the Vespers' crew won, making the passage in the remarkably quick time of nine minutes and four seconds. This record has never since been beaten by any four-oared crew on the same course. In the final heat, which took place between the Coopers of Savannah, and the Vespers, a collision occurred by the deflection of the Vespers' boat from her course, owing to which the first prize was awarded to the Coopers, though the Vespers' boat reached the goal ahead. A second prize, however, was awarded the latter, and this—a silver tankard—is still in the possession of Mr. Thomas Fearon. The association a few years later began to decline, and has now for several years been extinct. In its prosperous days it had about

thirty members. Its headquarters were always at Glenwood, in the boat-house which is now occupied by the Vesper Yachting Association.

YONKERS YACHT CLUB.—This club was organized in 1878 with the following officers: Alanson J. Prime, commodore; Charles T. Mercer, vice-commodore; Thomas L. Mottram, secretary; William H. Devoe, treasurer; and J. W. Garrison, Sylvanus Cokalete and A. W. Serrell, trustees. It opens every season with a cruise and a "clam-bake" on the 30th of May, and generally has two regattas—one in May and the other in September—and a cruise in August. Among its contests that have excited most interest were the races for a challenge cup offered by Commodore Prime, to be owned by the first yacht that should win three races for that cup, and another prize to a ladies' race, in which each yacht was required to carry a lady. The first was won by the "Pinafore," owned by John Nesbit, and the second by the "Rambler," owned by John H. Thorne. In the "free-for-all" race, given under the auspices of the Vesper Yachting Association in the fall of 1883, the "Daisy," owned by J. Kitteringham of this club, was the victor. The club has about sixty members, who own in all nineteen yachts. Alanson J. Prime has been its commodore from the beginning to the present time. The secretary is Gabriel Reeves.

VESPER YACHTING ASSOCIATION.—This association was organized in the summer of 1881 with seven members, viz., Captain Hyatt L. Garrison, Thomas Fearon, James Shaughnessy, Thomas O. Shaughnessy, Augustus Bailey, John Watt and Abram C. Gould. Ownership of some sort of a sailing craft was made an essential condition of membership. Thomas Fearon was chosen commodore, and held that position for two seasons, when he was followed by Augustus Bailey, the present commodore. The vice-commander is John Watt, and Jas. Shaughnessy is secretary and treasurer.

The association opens its season, on the 30th of May, with a cruise on the Hudson. From that time to the 1st of September races are made weekly, the prize being a pennant, which the boat winning the greatest number of times during the season retains at the end. This prize, in 1882, was won by the "Mary S." (owned by the Shaughnessy Brothers) and in 1883 by the "Ray Howland" (belonging to Thomas Fearon). The club also holds annual regattas. One of the most interesting of these was a regatta organized by this club, which was made open to all clubs on the river, between Tarrytown and the Columbia Yacht Club House, in New York. It was held September 29, 1883, and the prize was won by the "Daisy," of the Yonkers Yacht Club.

OSCEOLA CLUB.—This is a social organization which was started in 1874. It occupies a room in the People's Savings-Bank building. Its membership is restricted to twenty by its laws, and this number of members it has. It gives a ball every winter and an excursion on the water every summer.

THE YONKERS CLUB.—This club was organized in December, 1880. Its headquarters are 101 North Broadway, and its officers in 1885 were Samuel Swift, M.D., president; Abijah Curtiss, vice-president; ———, treasurer; Rev. M. R. Hooper, secretary; Harry Holbrook, W. L. Heermance, Theodore Fitch, John Reid, Stephen D. Field and ———, governors. The objects of the club are purely social. It has a reading-room, a card-room and a billiard-room. Ordinary meetings are held on Wednesday and Saturday evenings, but its rooms are open every day and every evening of the week. The club has recently purchased property on North Broadway, opposite St. Paul's Church, and is building for itself a permanent house.

TEMPERANCE ORGANIZATION.

HOPE LODGE, No. 55, I. O. G. T. (Independent Order of Good Templars).—This lodge was instituted November 3, 1871, by a charter from the Grand Lodge of the State of New York, which is subordinate to the Right Worthy Grand Lodge. This order was instituted to promote the cause of temperance, and exacts from each member a solemn pledge never to use, and never to give to others as a beverage, anything that will intoxicate. The organization is non-sectarian and non-political. It receives both sexes, and both are equally eligible to its offices. Prohibition is one of its cardinal principles, but it leaves all free as to their votes. The Lodge meets in Grand Army Hall every Friday evening. It was at one time strong and influential, and did some good in the way of reclaiming drunkards, but has now fallen off in membership and strength. Its first officers were Robert Pollock, W. C. T.; M. M. Blakemore, W. V. T.; James Persise, W. Chap.; William Welling, W. T.; Addie H. Denike, W. A. T.; Carrie Sawyer, W. Treas.; Henry P. Weimar, W. M.; Kate Gordon, W. D. M.; Ellen A. Hemmingway, W. G.; William Bailey, W. Sent.; Nellie A. Whiting, R. H. S.; Rachel Archer, L. H. S.; Peter V. Hoyt, P. W. C. T.

MUTUAL BENEFIT ASSOCIATION.

YONKERS LODGE, No. 1872, KNIGHTS OF HONOR.—This is a "Number" of a very extensive organization, enrolling throughout the country not less than one hundred and ninety thousand members. Its object is mutual insurance by assessments on its members. The Yonkers "Number" is eight years old. It consists of about forty members, who meet in Reeves' Building on the second and fourth Wednesdays of each month. It gives to the family or heirs of each member two thousand dollars at his death. Its officers are Jerome Barnes, Dictator; J. Willet Bynon, Treasurer; and C. W. Bynon, Financial Secretary.

MILITARY ORGANIZATIONS.

KITCHING POST, No. 60, GRAND ARMY OF THE REPUBLIC.—An association of veterans of the Civil War was formed in Yonkers in 1866, but became too much involved in partisan sympathies and was aban-

doned. Afterwards nearly the same company of men obtained a charter for the Grand Army Post whose title is given above. The charter of the post was dated January 7, 1868. The charter members were E. T. Morris, S. C. Van Tassel, James Stewart, P. Kelly, G. W. Farnam, A. H. Tompkins, E. C. Nodine, James Carter, George Hendrickson, William Riley and Daniel S. Munn. The post was named in honor of Colonel J. Howard Kitching, of the Sixth New York Artillery.¹ The first settled place of meeting was in a building which stood beside the Yonkers Savings-Bank and has since been torn down to make room for the station of the projected elevated road. Thence the post moved to Flagg's Hall in Getty Square, and thence again to its present room on the northeast corner of Palisade Avenue and Main Street, known as Grand Army Hall. The membership at one time had reached one hundred and fifty, but, owing to the inevitable conditions that restrict it, it has now fallen to one hundred and twenty-five, and must grow smaller and smaller, as the veterans, one after another, pass away. The officers in 1885 are Commander, James Sheridan; Senior Vice-Commander, Joseph Irvin; Junior Vice-Commander, Augustus Kipp; Officer of the Day, Caleb T. Woolheiser; Surgeon, James Brazier, Sr.; Chaplain, William W. Yerks; Adjutant, Charles T. Betts; Quartermaster, Charles J. Luther; Officer of the Guard, George W. Lockwood; Sergeant-Major, Henry Nesler; Quartermaster-Sergeant, John Ryer. The regular meetings of the post are held on the first and third Monday evenings of each month.

THE FOURTH SEPARATE COMPANY.—This is a company of militia, now formed of Yonkers young men. It has, however, a history of outgrowth which is interesting. Companies H and B (the former the older), of the Seventeenth Regiment New York State Militia, of the late war period, were from Yonkers and vicinity. They served thirty days at Fort McHenry. In due time, of course, their regiment was disbanded. But, in 1870, a new Third Regiment National Guards State of New York was formed. Of this regiment, Company H was from Yonkers, and about half of its men were from Companies H and B, of the old Seventeenth Regiment. In the summer of 1874 the Third Regiment, in its turn, was disbanded. Its Company H, however, the only one of which this was the case, was retained in service and ordered to headquarters to await directions. Their directions, when received, proved to be to form Company D of the Sixteenth Battalion. The Sixteenth Battalion was afterwards mustered out of service on the

¹ Colonel Kitching (born July 16, 1818 and died at Dobbs Ferry January 10, 1865, at twenty-six and a half years of age) was a most interesting young man. He was wounded on the 14th of October, 1864, in the engagement at Cedar Creek, Virginia, and subsequently died from the amputation of a limb. President Johnson conferred upon him the rank of Brevet Brigadier-General, to take effect from August 1, 1864. The life of this young officer is published in a little volume issued by Hurd & Houghton, N. Y., in 1873.

31st of December, 1881, with the repeated accompanying circumstance that this Company D, the only one of which this was the case, was retained in service and designated as the "Fourth Separate Company." As such, it was formally organized January 1, 1882.

The company occupies an armory on Chicken Island, but the county not long since appropriated twenty-three thousand dollars to build an armory for its use. Ground was broken for the building on the 29th of September, 1885. The site is at the corner of Waverley Street and Maple Street (late Davidson's Lane). The captains of the company, from its beginning, under the designation of Company H, of the Third Regiment, in 1870, have been William Macfarlane, Matthew H. Ellis, Isaac D. Cole, Isaiah Frazier and Raffaele Cobb. The last-named gentleman is the captain now, while the first lieutenant is John I. Pruyn, and the second lieutenant is William H. McVicar. The company has, on at least three different occasions, been suddenly called out for purposes of protection in cases of disturbance and apprehended danger.

GERMAN SOCIETIES.

These are at present four in number. We give them in the order of their formation.

THE YONKERS TEUTONIA.—A German singing and literary society was organized in 1854 or 1855, under the name of the Yonkers Liederkrantz. In its formation Frederick Hempel, Albert Ludke, Robert Krapkowski and Philip Berenger were the chief movers. They engaged Professor William F. Müller, a teacher of music, to instruct them in singing. The start was made with eight members. Soon after, the title was changed to "Männerchor and Liederkrantz," and later it was further changed to its present form. It was incorporated under this name—the Yonkers Teutonia—on the 23d of November, 1867. Its first place of meeting was at the house of Philip Happel on Hudson Street; then it met at the house of Nicholas Rost, on North Broadway; and later, it occupied a school-house, standing where the banks now are, on Getty Square. Subsequently still, meetings were again held in private houses, till the association purchased the property known as Teutonia Hall, which it now occupies. The hall is a one-story building, with a basement. It stands at the corner of New Main and Brook Streets. It contains a dining-room, reading-room, bar-room and hall, the latter being fitted up with a stage for amateur theatricals, which are generally given as often as twice during each winter. The property, with its furniture, cost about twelve thousand dollars. The membership includes both sexes, and is now about one hundred and fifty. The officers in 1885 were Gustav Remler, president; Henry Maretsky, vice-president; Franz Hoffman, recording secretary; Gustav Heine, financial secretary; Joseph Lambrecht, treasurer; John Schlobohm, Joseph Geizenhauer and Fritz Cassens, trustees.

SÖHNE DER FREIHEIT (SONS OF FREEDOM), YONKERS LODGE, No. 82.—This is a German secret society, paying weekly benefits to its sick members and sums of money to the families of its deceased members, which sums are raised by assessments on the living. It was organized here in 1872 and now has thirty-four members. There are about ninety lodges of the order in New York State. The lodge meets in the hall over Dr. Reeve's drug-store. Its present officers are William Isele, president; Christian Reitenhauer, secretary; and Conrad Roth, treasurer. In this society, if a married member dies, his wife or heirs receive three hundred dollars; if the wife of a member dies, he receives two hundred dollars, and if a member is sick, he receives six dollars a week while his sickness lasts.

HOLSATIA LODGE, No. 27, D. O. H. (DEUTSCHER ORDEN HARUGARI).—This lodge was instituted November 9, 1872. Its founders were John Knöchal, William Knöchal, Carl Yörgens, Christian Toaspen, John Schlobohm and Max Schmöger. Its object is to assist Germans who are not able to speak the English language, and are thus debarred from the benefits of other societies. Sick members of this society receive six dollars a week while they are laid aside, and the widow or dependent heirs of a deceased member receive at his death one hundred dollars. Any married member who loses a wife by death receives fifty dollars. Since its organization the society has paid out over eight thousand dollars in these benefits. It paid about eight hundred dollars in 1883 alone. Its first meeting-place was in the Temperance Hall at the corner of Main Street and Broadway. Thence it moved to the old Masonic Temple, in the Getty House, and later to the house of John Schlobohm, No. 48 St. Mary Street, at the corner of Riverdale Avenue, where Mr. Schlobohm had prepared for its use a hall, named by him Harugari Hall. It was afterward moved to its present quarters over Reeve's drug-store, corner of Warburton Avenue and Dock Street. The members are now ninety in number. The officers are August Koch, president; Peter Thomann, vice-president; Louis Wolf, secretary; John Schlobohm, treasurer; and Alexander F. Piltz, financial secretary. John W. Bauer was district deputy for Westchester County, in 1884.

YONKERS TURN-VEREIN.—This society was started on the 1st of August, 1875, with thirteen members. Its first officers were R. Kersting, president, and A. Lange, secretary. It first occupied a room on South Broadway, between Prospect and Washington Streets. Thence it moved to the third floor of the Radford building. Its membership is now about sixty. The society has a small library and property to the value of about one thousand two hundred dollars. It holds meetings on the second and fourth Sundays of each month. The officers for 1885 are August Nitsch, president; Louis Wolf, vice-president; Henry Gaelecker, recording secretary; Julius Herrmann, correspond-

ing secretary; Fritz Goertelmyer, treasurer; John Bauer, first captain; Christian Reitenauer, second captain; John Althoen, custodian; E. Credo, librarian; and Fred. Gross, Fred. Meyer and Conrad Roth, trustees.

IRISH SOCIETIES.

As far as we can learn, the number of these in the city is three, as follows:

ANCIENT ORDER OF HIBERNIANS, DIVISION No. 2.—This division was organized here in August, 1873, and is known as "Division No. 2, A. O. H." Its place of meeting has always been in the Montgomery Club Hall, over the People's Savings-Bank. It has about one hundred and ten members, and meets on the first Monday in each month. The society is composed of Irishmen and pays weekly benefits to its sick members, and also certain amounts at the deaths of its members to the families they leave. Its officers are Patrick Curran, president; Richard Fitzgerald, vice-president; Maurice Conway, recording secretary; Patrick Berry, financial secretary; and Declan Troy, treasurer. Division No. 1 of the same order was organized in 1884. It meets in the same room as Division No. 2. Its present officers are Matthew Reilly, president; Andrew Delhanty, vice-president; Charles Foster, recording secretary; William Cauley, financial secretary; and Patrick Clark, treasurer.

MONTGOMERY CLUB, CLAN-NA-GAEL A.—This is a social organization of Irishmen or Irish-Americans. It was organized about fifteen years ago, and was known originally as the McClure Club. It comprises many of the leading business men of this nationality in Yonkers. Its officers change several times a year. The membership is about two hundred. The club meets weekly in the hall of the People's Savings Bank building. The furniture of the hall is owned by the Club.

MAIDEN CITY LODGE OF LOYAL ORANGEMEN, No. 63.—This lodge was organized November 10, 1884, and has a membership of thirty-nine. It is of an order described at length under the article "Orangemen" in Appleton's Encyclopædia, and needing no further definition here. The present officers are Frederick Bell, Worshipful Master; William Beatty, Deputy; W. J. Bell, Recording Secretary; Robert Hogg, Financial Secretary; Robert Wylie, Treasurer; Henry Bell, Chaplain; and Samuel Mills, Tiler. The lodge meets in Grand Army Hall on the second and fourth Mondays of each month.

SECTION XX.

Hotels and Large Boarding Houses.

The word "hotels" was not applied to houses of entertainment hereabout till within the present century. Such places were previously called "inns" or "taverns." Through Yonkers lay a prominent stage-route—that between New York and Albany. At short intervals along this route places of halting for the many passing stages, and of refreshment for the travelers and

the horses, were established. One who will follow the old route from the metropolis to the State capital will find very many of these old houses still standing, but fallen, of course, into disuse. They were substantially all of one type. The one here, of which we give a cut below, was a fair specimen of them all. They were long, low buildings, of two stories in height, with an open stoop and portico extending along the entire front. A sign post stood before each one, with an arm, from which swung a large sign, adorned with a coarse daub, under which the name of the proprietor of the tavern, and within or over which the name of his tavern, was painted. In front of each was a water-trough, and adjoining each was a very long shed, of sufficient dimensions to receive and cover many teams and wagons, and provided with an ample number of feed-boxes, from which horses, during a brief tarry, might partake of their oats or other food, as the case might be. Within the tavern was sure to be, first of all, a bar-room, to which the halting guest seldom failed to pay his first respects. The next essential feature was the dining-room, where the food was always of the substantial kind. The vegetables, eggs and milk almost always came from the proprietor's own garden and farm close at hand. And the waiters were in nearly every case the wife and children of the proprietor, assisted by the negroes, who in the early days, were almost always slaves. In the second story of the house were the bed-rooms, all the furniture of which was of the simple, primitive style. The bedsteads were high, corded and surmounted with the old-fashioned frame and tester, whose object seemed to be to keep all air from the sleeper below. The beds were of straw beneath and of feathers overlying, and the straw, feathers, linen quilts and counterpanes all came, as to raw material and as to weaving, from the neighborhood of the houses they adorned. These houses have now been largely superseded by the modern "hotels." On off-roads or in remote districts their type still prevails. When one would think of the Yonkers of earlier days, he must go back to one of these taverns, of which we are here to give some account.

Down to 1852 there stood upon the site of our present and imposing Getty House a tavern of the old type. It had been built by Jacob Stout between 1796 and 1802, in place of the old Hunt's tavern of previous days. The earlier tavern had been associated with all the public acts of the lords of the manor. In it they held their courts and administered the laws, of which they were alike the makers, interpreters and appliers. After their days, from the erection of the town of Yonkers (March 7, 1788., the town-meetings had always been held at this tavern. And, of course, all the public stir of the little hamlet always centred around it or its successor, built by Mr. Stout. Never did a stage drive up to it without encountering all the idlers of the place. And at times it found waiting for it many, too, who were not idlers,

but who depended on its arrival to bring them the news which formed the great relief to the community's daily quiet routine. The low politicians and the local wiseheads, real and pretentious, were always sure to be at the tavern in the evenings. Such was the picture. Its like can still be seen in sparsely-settled localities along great routes of travel. It continued to be seen here in all its simplicity till the steamboats began to interfere with the business of the stages, and to a considerable extent even till 1849, when the Hudson River Railroad came and entirely broke it up. The old tavern was finally removed in 1852 to make room for a house of quite another type.

What the name of the earliest tavern or the name of its proprietor had been before 1756, we cannot find. In 1756 the proprietor was Edward Stevenson, and in 1783 it was conducted by David Hunt. Of what family Hunt was no one now knows. There are Hunts on our list of the land-buyers of 1785, already given.



"THE NAPPECKAMACK HOUSE" OR "THE INDIAN QUEEN INN," AS IT APPEARED IN 1851.

On our map of 1813 the latter house is called "The Indian Queen Inn" and on our map of 1843 it is called "The Nappeckamac House." Mr. Thomas C. Cornell remembers the sign bearing the latter name. Mr. John Henry Williams, whose father became the proprietor of the house about 1814 or 1815, and who himself was born in it in 1816, remembers it was called "The Eagle Hotel" in his boyhood, and Mr. Robert P. Getty, who bought the property in 1851, and removed the house to make way for his large hotel, says he thinks "The Nappeckamack House" was a fancy name given to it by some of its frequenters. And still further, we learn that its most common name among the people was "The Stage-House." As early as 1816 it was kept by Mr. Elisha Williams. Other proprietors succeeded in the following order: Captain Isaac Ruton, Colonel John Williams, De Witt C. Kellinger, M.D., Ralph Shipman (who kept it as a temperance house), John Armstrong (retired from it in 1837),

Harvey Green (till about 1840), David Underhill (till about 1844), Starr Rockwell and James Bashford. Mr. Bashford was its last proprietor. In 1851 the building was removed to make room for the present Getty House. It now stands, much altered and enlarged, at the corner of New Main Street and Nepperham Avenue.

Mr. Elisha Williams and Colonel John Williams were sons of John Williams, Sr., who had been steward of the Philipsburgh Manor under Colonel Fred. Philipse. The family is supposed to be, on the Williams side, of Welsh origin. John Williams was a man of commanding presence, of upright and high character, and a vestryman of St. John's Church. Till Colonel Philipse went to England he lived on what is now called "The Valley Farm," near the South Yonkers Station, on the New York City and Northern Railroad. The colonel, upon leaving, put him in charge of the Manor Hall, and he lived in it. At the confiscation sales he was the purchaser, as we have seen, of one hundred and seventy-seven acres. He had several children, of whom, as stated above, Elisha and John were, in succession, proprietors of the old tavern. Elisha was the father of Dr. Abraham V. Williams, a physician of New York City, a man of exceptional mental gifts and professional ability, to whom is credited the first suggestion of the famous structure known as the High Bridge. Another of his sons is our highly respected townsman, Mr. J. Henry Williams, one of the three only remaining original trustees of the Yonkers Savings-Bank, and now for many years past its treasurer. Mr. Williams is one of the few men left who have for forty years been so identified with the development of Yonkers, that with its record their names come in at every turn. He is a man of the highest integrity, of polished and attractive manners, and holds the confidence and esteem of Yonkers people, and will hold them as long as he lives.

In the later days of the old tavern it had a lively competitor for the patronage of travelers and guests in another house, which stood down at the sloop wharf, and was kept by Mr. John Bashford. Its position is indicated on our map of 1847. It was a well-kept house and gained a strong hold in Yonkers, because the post-office and a store were connected with it, and because its proprietor was a man of remarkable magnetism and almost unbounded political influence. He died in 1848, at forty-seven years of age. He continued to be postmaster till his death, when his widow, Mrs. Esther A. Bashford, became his successor, and held the office till she resigned it in 1861. Mrs. Bashford and two of her seven children, Mr. Henry W. Bashford and Mrs. Thomas C. Cornell still live in Yonkers. The local estimate of Mr. Bashford's family may be inferred from the fact that when the Bank of Yonkers was organized, in 1854, the portrait of his eldest daughter—Miss Joanna C. Bashford (now Mrs. William Hindhaugh)—was

adopted by the directors as an adornment for their bank-notes. It remained on those notes until 1865, when the bank became national. The portrait is here reproduced from one of the notes still preserved in the bank.

Mr. Bashford's house was so popular that it was adopted as the stage-house for some years, the drivers willingly turning out of the way from the post-road for the advantages of this house. It is said that while our above description of the average old post-road taverns is "to the life," it is no description of this house. The following account of it is furnished by one who remembers it well, and has in mind the appearance of the Nepperhan at its side and the high bluff opposite, just as they were forty years ago:

"It was a long, two-story house, of a reddish-brown color, but with no accompanying sign-post or sign or proprietor's name in sight, and with no external intimation that it was an inn. It stood near the Hudson, at the mouth of the Nepperhan, whose water then ran clear as the water of a mountain brook. Broad verandas, also two stories high, covered its whole front. The building was handsomely



MISS JOANNA C. BASHFORD.

shaded by several large willows, and the high wooded bluff, towards which the house almost faced, looked down on it from the opposite side of the creek, while the gardens and the open ground and the fields behind hind the house all combined to give the place the air of an ample, quiet rural home by the water side. I wish a picture of the place had been preserved, but such is not the case."

Mr. Bashford was captain of the Yonkers Militia, and his son Henry was his color-bearer from the time he was old enough to carry a flag.

THE GETTY HOUSE was built, in 1851-52, by Mr. Robert P. Getty, at the corner of South Broadway and Mechanic (now New Main) Street. Mr. Getty, an enterprising and prosperous merchant of New York City, bought property on South Broadway in 1848, and settled here in 1849. A man of intensely active nature, thoroughly experienced in business and politics, an old member of the New York Common Council and of the New York Board of Education, and of vigorous public spirit and practical mind, he began, from the very first moment of his life in Yonkers, to impress himself on every Yonkers interest.

The records we have given of our village and city, of our governmental departments, of our public improvements, our banks and other prominent institutions bring out his name inevitably at almost every

point, as they do the names of several other men, who have been identified with the active life of the place, and out of whose brains and substance the Yonkers of to-day has been almost literally evolved. Mr. Getty is still living, and to his clear memory and the files of Yonkers papers he has preserved we are indebted for many early facts which others seem to have wholly forgotten. In 1851 he bought the old tavern property, removed the house and proceeded to build his fine hotel, which was finished by the summer of 1852. Before the old house was removed Mr. J. Henry Williams was careful to have it and its surroundings daguerretyped. *The Hudson River Chronicle* of June 8, 1852, contained a full description of a flag presentation at the newly-erected Getty House of Yonkers on the 2d of June, then just passed. One hundred and sixteen ladies of the place, in admiration of Mr. Getty's enterprise in projecting and erecting such a splendid hotel, and including within it a concert-room for public lectures and concerts, had determined to present him with a flag to wave above the building. The ceremony of presentation took place in the concert-room, in the presence of a large concourse of citizens, when Colonel (afterwards Judge) William W. Scrugham, on behalf of the ladies, presented their beautiful gift. The address of Colonel Scrugham, and also the response of Mr. Getty, are given in full in the paper. During the ceremonies a salute of five guns was fired, and at their close a series of verses, composed for the occasion, was sung by a choir.

In addition to these statements we add a few other matters of interest. Mr. Getty meant to name his hotel "The Havemeyer," in honor of his early and firm friend, ex-Mayor William F. Havemeyer, of New York City. But a number of his friends, during a night, took the liberty to express their own feeling and the general sense of Yonkers people by placing upon the front of the building the letters which are seen upon it to-day, and which fixed the name of the hotel, beyond recall, as "The Getty House." The concert-room referred to was at first one of the adjuncts of the hotel, but when, in later years, its concert use interfered with the quiet of the guests, a change was made. It ceased to be used for public purposes about 1866 or 1867.

The hotel walls are of brick and stone, having a frontage of one hundred and eight feet on Broadway and one hundred and sixty feet on New Main Street. The building is of the form of an L and is four stories high. It contains a hundred rooms. Its cost was between forty and fifty thousand dollars. Its lower story on Broadway and Main Streets is used for business purposes. During the past year it has been supplied with steam-heating apparatus. It is now owned by Mr. Charles E. Waring. The managing proprietors of it before May 1, 1860, were Henry Durell, Edward Dusenberry and Robert L. Buckland. On the 1st of May, 1860, Mr. Oliver W. Doty, an experienced

hotel-keeper of Poughkeepsie, assumed its management, but dying in a few months, was succeeded, in December of the same year, by his son, Mr. William H. Doty, who has now been its proprietor for more than twenty-five years. Under his management the house has maintained a continuous popularity, and it still enjoys an excellent success.

THE MANSION HOUSE, on the corner of South Broadway, between Guion and Kellinger Streets, was built about 1835 by Dr. De Witt C. Kellinger, who had been one of the proprietors of the old tavern. Dr. Kellinger kept his new house as a hotel for a number of years and gained for it a fine reputation. Previous to his death, in November, 1859, however, it took on more the character of a boarding-house, and this it has now been for many years. It belongs at present to Dr. Kellinger's daughters, Mrs. Judge Scrugham and Miss Joanna Kellinger. It has been conducted successively by Mrs. Sarah C. Brewster, Miss Mary Bigelow, Mr. Platt, Messrs. Johnson & Evans, Mrs. Norman K. Shears, Miss Josephine Russell, and its present proprietor, Mr. Samuel C. Downing. It was at first two stories and a half in height, but was afterwards raised another story. It has forty-two rooms and is a very popular resort.

THE DUNWELLYN at No. 35, 37 and 39 Ravine Avenue, was opened in 1881 by Mrs. Norman K. Shears, who had been proprietress of the Mansion House. The building first occupied was No. 39, a two-story double mansion with a mansard roof. To this were soon added two new three-story buildings, Nos. 35 and 37. These are connected with the first house by a covered passage-way. Four cottages on the opposite side of the street have now also been added to the establishment. The whole property is owned by Mr. Henry A. Dingee and managed by Mrs. Shears as a boarding-house. It accommodates eighty persons.

The only boarding-house of real celebrity besides those mentioned here, has been the "Peabody House," spoken of in another part of our work, and now demolished. There are, however, many private boarding-houses. Several houses are opened for boarders in the summer, which are otherwise employed during the rest of the year.

When speaking of once prominent hotels, we did not mention one which stood during Major Baldwin's days, on the site of the present No. 5 North Broadway, now Meller & Welsh's store. Its shed extended northward to the Saw-Mill River bridge. At one time it was called the "Broadway House." Its greatest reputation was obtained during Major Baldwin's proprietorship of it. Then it was a very superior and popular house. It had, however, later proprietors. There have been many smaller hotels, some of which are still kept, and others of which are traditions of the past. Probably the most prominent of the smaller hotels of the present is the "Yonkers Hotel," opposite the Hudson River Railroad Station. It

is a new building, upon the site of an old one of the same name, formerly popular under the management of Colonel Oliver C. Denslow. Many places in the city now are called hotels by their keepers, merely to cover certain conditions under the present laws that regulate excise and license. We have at least a dozen such places, each of which takes on the name of "Hotel." But Yonkers has no prominent and noted hotels and boarding-houses, so far as we know, except those we have named and described.

SECTION XXI.

Public Halls.

The first apartments in Yonkers, which were used for public assemblies, other than the churches, were on the first floor of an unoccupied dwelling-house which, allowing for the widening of Main Street, since made, must have stood exactly on the present southeast corner of that street and South Broadway, where Russell & Co.'s book-store now is. They were spacious parlors separated by folding-doors. The length of the two, when the doors were opened gave to the whole the popular name of "The Long Room." This apartment has been mentioned before in our history as that in which the first Reformed Church services, and, in fact, all its services, were held from 1841 till its house of worship was completed, in 1845. The building, as already stated, was afterwards moved into Riverdale Avenue, near Washington Street, where it may still be seen.

The first building erected in Yonkers with an express intention to supply a needed public hall was erected in 1845 by Mr. Ethan Flagg. It stood and still stands at the corner of New Main Street and Palisade Avenue (once Mechanic and Factory Streets). The hall occupied the second floor and was known as Flagg's Hall. It had seating capacity for two hundred and fifty persons, and was used for a long time for all kinds of public meetings. A room on the third floor of the same building has been the meeting-place for several different lodges and societies, and is now known as Grand Army Hall. St. Mary's Roman Catholic Church began its life in this building. The Baptist Church, too, began in it in 1849, and the Unitarian Church did the same in 1858. This hall, after the completion of Getty Lyceum in 1852, being less used for public meetings, was turned to business purposes. Of the Lyceum we have spoken before. It was on the Main Street side of the Getty House, and its front wall falls about two feet back from the rest of the building.

RADFORD HALL BUILDING (recently purchased and turned into offices and dwellings by David Hawley, Esq.) stands on Getty Square, between North Broadway and Palisade Avenue, fronting southward. It occupies the site of an earlier building, erected by Mr. Thomas O. Farrington about 1857, known as the Farrington Building, and containing a hall known as Farrington Hall. This earlier structure was consumed

on the 3d of January, 1866, in a great conflagration which swept away sixty thousand dollars' worth of property, including, besides many less important business concerns, the *Statesman* newspaper office and the armory of the National Guard. Mr. William Radford, a resident of Yonkers, afterwards a member of Congress, bought the site after the fire, and erected the Radford Building, providing in the third story of it a spacious hall, known thenceforward as Radford Hall. Farrington Hall and its successor, Radford Hall, were, each in its period, prominent halls of the place.

THE WASHBURN (NOW WARBURTON) BUILDING, adjoining the City Hall ground on the north, was erected in 1876 by Benjamin S. Washburn & Son, hardware merchants of the city. It is a brick building, three stories high, with a mansard roof, very firmly built and fitted up with all modern improvements. It covers a lot of seventy-five feet front on Warburton Avenue and extending back two hundred feet. The ground floor is occupied with stores, and the second story with offices. The third story, on the south side, is devoted to a large hall, heated with steam and provided with the best apparatus for lighting, for ventilation and for quick egress in case of fire. The room is forty-two by eighty-five feet, exclusive of the stage. With its gallery, it has seating capacity for eight hundred and sixty-six persons. It has a commodious stage, fitted up with the usual conveniences for dramatic performances. This public hall was opened June 1, 1876, in the presence of a very large assembly of people, with vocal and instrumental music and with addresses by prominent gentlemen of the city. At a later day the gentlemen whose public spirit had projected it and brought it into being were overcome by business reverses and lost their valuable property. It passed into the hands of its builders, Messrs. James & George Stewart, and afterwards into the hands of Mr. James C. Bell. In transactions which followed it lost its original name. The building is now known as Warburton Building, and its hall is known as Warburton Hall.

THE WARBURTON HALL ASSOCIATION was incorporated May 16, 1881. It came at once into the possession of the Washburn Building, which had just been purchased by some of its members on the 30th of April. The association was organized with a capital of \$30,000, in three hundred shares of \$100 each. The incorporators were Messrs. William Allen Butler, Warren B. Smith, Walter W. Law, James Stewart and George Stewart. The building was purchased for \$56,000, and improved at a cost of \$4000, making its entire cost to the association, \$60,000. In the hands of the new association, as under the management of the original owners, the hall was popular and its history one of good success.

Still, there were objections to it, on account of its height from the ground, and, in addition to this, there were many who desired a larger, better adapted and

more attractive place for fashionable assemblies and brilliant dramatic entertainments. This led to the construction, by the Warburton Hall Association, of the auditorium known as Music Hall, adjoining Warburton Hall on the north. The first brick of this structure was laid on the 20th of August, 1883, and the completed building was opened on Monday evening, April 14, 1884. The opening entertainment consisted of a vocal and instrumental concert, in which the Yonkers Glee Club, Miss Henrietta Beebe, a well-known vocalist, and the St. Cecilia's String Quartette Club took part, and an address was delivered by William Allen Butler, Esq. The first dramatic entertainment given was "The Rajah," by the Madison Square Company.

This hall is said to be capable of seating one thousand people. It is located in the rear of the Warburton Building, occupying the west end of the same ground, lying on Woodworth Avenue. The main entrance is from Warburton Avenue, through a spacious corridor, whose floor is level with the sidewalk. The hall also has abundant means of ingress and egress on its Woodworth Avenue side. The auditorium is fifty-five by fifty-one feet, and has parquet, balcony and gallery, with four proscenium and four open boxes. It is fitted up with every accessory for a first-class concert-hall. The present officers of the association are Mr. William Allen Butler, president, and Mr. Walter W. Law, treasurer. Mr. John Bright is its agent and manager.

The only other prominent hall of the city at present is in the new building of the Woman's Christian Temperance Union. This a fine, spacious auditorium, capable of seating not less than two hundred and fifty people. Undoubtedly this hall will be consecrated to the special objects of the Union, and, thus consecrated, will become a powerful educator in the city. Whatever is done with it will be worthy of the principles by which the Union has been and will be guided at all times.

Besides these prominent halls of the past and present, our history has incidentally brought out a number of smaller ones to which we cannot give further space here. Many apartments in the city are called halls, which are not for public uses, but belong to orders, clubs, lodges, etc. We have Teutonia Hall, Columbia Hall, Humboldt Hall, etc., etc. We need not speak of these again.

CASINO SKATING RINK.—This is an immense building, one of many erected in the country to meet the demands of roller-skating. It stood on the southeast corner of Riverdale Avenue and Hudson Street. It was a frame building, covered with corrugated iron, and covered an area of ninety by one hundred and thirty feet. It was built by W. E. Crosby & Co., and opened to the public in December, 1884. The galleries, it is said, would seat one thousand people, and the floor often had as many as eight hundred skaters upon it at a time. The building, however,

after standing about two years, took fire in some mysterious way in April, 1886, and was quickly burned to the ground.

SECTION XXII.

Travel and Transportation.

Communication with New York was one of the earliest necessities of the white settlers of this region. Of course, till within the present century, it could be carried on only by land conveyances and by boats on the Hudson. Road vehicles and river crafts are known to have been for a long time exceedingly rude, and traveling and transportation were, of course, correspondingly uncomfortable and tedious. The tardiness of the early river travel was significantly expressed in the name given by craftsmen to the land projection above Nyack, which, after it first came into view of those ascending the river, was always long, and often very long indeed, in being reached. They called it "Verdrietig Hoeck," or "Tedious Point." And there was no improvement in the river navigation, as to comfort or speed, till after 1800. The best patronized conveyances till then continued to be the Albany and New York stages, of which we have spoken in connection with the old Yonkers tavern. The first steamboat appeared in 1807. But no way steamboat stopped at Yonkers till 1831, when Mr. Wells put out his Long Wharf to invite steamboats. The water was not deep enough, and, besides this, as we shall see shortly, the farmers and store-keepers hereabout managed their own freighting. No doubt most Yonkers people of to-day will be surprised to learn that the earliest way steamers never touched points of our town, but made their landings on the other side, at Closter (now Alpine) and Lower Closter. This side did not supply passengers or freight enough to attract a steamer at first, while the other side did give a considerable patronage to the passing boats. People of the Yonkers side who wished to take one of the said boats were then rowed across to do so. From 1831, however, the steamboats began to stop at Yonkers. But in 1849 another very important development came in. The Hudson River Railroad began its operations in that year. This at once brought to an end the New York and Albany Stage Line, and it also started an interference with the river travel, which never can cease. At different times since, effort has been made to force the steamboating into vigor again, by multiplying boats, putting down fares, etc. About fifteen years ago an active rivalry reigned for a time. Ten different boats touched at Yonkers daily on their round trips. But, of course, there was no profit in the arrangement to any of them, and the boats were quickly withdrawn. The only local passenger steamboat now plying regularly between Yonkers alone and New York is the "Caroline A. Peene." Besides this one, however, a favorite Nyack boat, the "Chrystenah," touches here daily, having done so for many years. And the popular New York and Albany day

boats touch here tri-weekly as they go up and down. The railroads are nearly fatal to the steamboat business now.

Ferry-boats run almost every summer between Yonkers and Alpine. As, however, but little freight is carried, and the passenger travel is mostly for pleasure, there is not enough profit in the ferry to lift it into prominence or permanence. The patronage of the ferry-boats is very limited indeed.

The great pressure of travel to and from Yonkers is upon the railroads. Two lines of railroad pass through the city, and a third passes within about one hundred yards of its eastern boundary, along its entire length. These roads are the Hudson River, the New York City and Northern, and the Harlem Division of the New York Central. Upon them scores of trains are run northward and southward every day. Large numbers of these are local trains, and all of them together make opportunities of communication between New York City and Yonkers from 5 A.M. and midnight almost constantly. The Hudson River road has its prominent Yonkers station at the foot of Main street, and two stations of less note, one called "Ludlow," about a half a mile to the south, and another called "Glenwood," about a mile to the north of it. The New York City and Northern has two stations within the city, one in the northern part, called "North Yonkers," and another in the southern called "South Yonkers." The Harlem Division of the New York Central is easily accessible to all the east side population of the city at its West Mount Vernon station, just beyond the Bronx River.

The New York City and Northern railroad owns ground for a spur of about four miles in length, spoken of as to be built from its Cortland station in New York City to Getty Square. This is much needed and we suppose cannot be long delayed. If it could be furnished, no doubt this road would command by far the greater part of the travel between Yonkers and New York. At present the company invites Yonkers patronage to its road by furnishing free stage transportation between Getty Square and its South Yonkers station in connection with all its trains. This involves a tax of twenty minutes extra each way upon every person who uses the road. Yet so many submit to this tax through preference for this route that we cannot doubt what would be the result to the road, in the way of travel, if, in place of Wheaton's stages running between South Yonkers and Getty Square, we could have the trains themselves receiving and discharging their passengers at their contemplated Yonkers station, on South Broadway.

The sight and study of the city of Yonkers, with its magnificent distances, have stirred wonder in the minds of visitors at the fact that it has no horse railroad. There is now much agitation of this subject, and it cannot be long before something will be done to supply this useful convenience. There was a horse railroad about twenty years ago, starting at the Main

Street station, following up Main Street to Getty Square and then running off in two branches along North Broadway to the north line of the village of that day (see map of 1868), and along South Broadway as far as Mosholu. The ten-cent fare charged by the company possibly hurt that road. At any rate, its patronage was not such as to encourage its projectors. In 1866 or '67 the whole of Broadway, northward and southward, being upturned for widening and regrading, the rails had to be taken up, and the company did not think it worth while to relay them. There has been no horse railroad in Yonkers since. There is now, however, much talk of laying roads along many prominent streets. And especially we understand that a company has been formed for the laying of an east and west road across the county from the Hudson River at Yonkers to Long Island Sound. It is said that such a road is likely to be an early realization.

FREIGHTING.—No railroad system or wagon express for Yonkers can ever supersede the advantages of the Hudson River for freighting. While speed is growingly a first consideration for passengers, and especially for commuters, cheapness and assurance of careful handling are of far greater importance to freight. Freighting between Yonkers and New York by the river is, of course, as old as our settlement. Yet we have no account of the sloops or other freight-boats of the days before the present century. One of the first sloops now remembered was the "Emeline," sailed by Captain Isaac Ruton, already mentioned as at one time the keeper of the old Yonkers tavern. The farmers and store-keepers of the vicinity held shares in this sloop. About the same time also the sloop "Belvidere" was run between Yonkers and New York, by Oliver Read and Benjamin Archer. The exact time of these sloops is not known, but it was before 1825.

Captain Ruton, it appears, after a time gained a controlling interest in the "Emeline," and put up the rates of freight, which so displeased the other owners that, about the year 1825, they built the sloop "Independence," and put her on the route under the command of Captain John Garrison. The owners of this new sloop were the most prominent men of Yonkers. Among them were Captain Benjamin Fowler, Isaac V. Fowler, Samuel Lyon, John M. Lyon, Wm. W. Dyckman, John Dyckman, John Bashford, Judge Aaron Vark, Oliver Read, Benjamin Brown, James H. Blackwell, Garret Ackerman, Elijah Valentine, Joseph Odell, Oliver C. Denslow, David Horton, Thaddeus Rockwell, Anthony Archer, Obed Paddock, William Kerr, Prince W. Paddock, James Haynes, Abram Lent, William P. Jones, Benjamin Haynes, Valentine Odell, Samson Dyckman, Garret Garrison (father of Captain John Garrison), Hezekiah Nichols, William D. Smith, Caleb Smith, Benjamin Lent and Captain John Garrison. The latter, who was put in command of the sloop, was born at Kingsbridge in 1783.

The cargoes of the sloop consisted chiefly of farm produce on her down-trips, and of merchandise for the farmers and store-keepers on her returns. The "Independence" must have been kept on the river about six years, when she was sold. Her successor was the now long-known "Ben. Franklin," which fixed her name permanently upon the line. This was a sloop of fifty-seven tons, built for the company and launched July 4, 1831. Captain John Garrison's relations were now transferred to the "Ben. Franklin," of which he remained captain for many years, the boat continuing, during her first eight years of service, to be owned by the stock company just named. Yearly, from March 1st to about the middle of August, she made but one trip a week. Then for a short time, during the pressure of the pickle trade, at that time one of the most important Yonkers farm industries, she made two or three trips. The farmers generally accompanied their own shipments, carrying their provisions with them and making their home on their boat in their absence. The New York landing-place of the boat was a wharf at the foot of Murray Street. Its Yonkers wharf is marked on our map of 1847. It was about a hundred yards up the Nepperhan. The creek or river has since been so filled that, without the information of this map, no stranger would imagine that a boat could ever have come up to the real old landing-place of this sloop. In late years the railroad company has closed the mouth of the creek altogether. But the map makes the old conditions plain.

Captain John Garrison bought out the other owners of the "Ben. Franklin" in 1839. In this year began the connection with this line of a gentleman now one of the oldest and most prominent business men of Yonkers, and within whose family the line has now for many years been owned. We refer to Captain Joseph Peene.

When he came to Yonkers, Captain Peene, accordingly, after busying himself in various activities for a time, found employment on the "Ben. Franklin" in 1839, the year in which Captain John Garrison became her sole owner. Before 1851 he had married Miss Caroline A. Garrison, daughter of the captain, and, his father-in-law having retired, had himself become captain of the boat. In 1851 he united with his brother-in-law, Hyatt L. Garrison, who had been with him on the "Franklin," in the purchase of the "Elias Hicks," a sloop of thirty-eight tons, and at once Mr. Garrison became the captain of this sloop. In 1852 the "Hicks," after being run one year in transient business, was united with the "Franklin" to form one line of two boats, commanded respectively by Captain Peene and Captain H. L. Garrison. In 1855 Captain Peene left the line, bought a small tugboat, and towed vessels around New York harbor for one year. In 1857 he purchased the "Martin Hynes," and the same year he and Captain H. L. Garrison bought the "Ben. Franklin" of Cap-



Joseph Palmer

tain John Garrison, while, at the same time, Captain H. L. Garrison bought one-half of the "Martin Hynes" of Captain Peene. By this involved process, Captain Joseph Peene and Captain Hyatt L. Garrison became equal owners in boat property, and at this time (1857) they started the line of boats which now for so many years has been known as the "Ben. Franklin" line. It began at this date with three vessels, the "Franklin," the "Hynes" and the "Hicks," as mentioned. To this, about 1862, was added the tug-boat "J. H. Gautier," subsequently nicknamed "The Lizzie," and better known in Yonkers by that name.

The partnership of Captain Peene and Captain H. L. Garrison continued till 1864, when the former bought out his partner, and obtained sole control of the business. In subsequent years, under his management, the propeller, "John H. Hammit," and the barges, "William Lawrence," "Aunt Mary" and "Aunt Kate" were added to the line, and the wharf which had been previously rented, was purchased and became the property of Captain Peene. It is the wharf, though now very much enlarged and lengthened, which is represented on our map of 1847 as built by Mr. Lemuel Wells in 1831.

About 1873 Captain Peene gave up the business to his three sons, John G., Joseph, Jr., and George, who formed the partnership since known as "Peene Bros." These brothers have since added to the line the lighter "City of Yonkers," the steamer "Caroline A. Peene" (named in honor of their mother), the barge "Hudson River" and the tugboat "Frank A. Sears." These boats all make daily trips, the "Caroline A. Peene" with passengers and freight, and the others with freight alone. Instead of the ten tons per week which the "Ben. Franklin" carried in 1831, they carry about twelve hundred tons per week. They transport almost all the produce of the Yonkers factories, mills, markets and stores. The business is very large and prosperous, and its founders and owners exert a commanding business influence in and over the city.

The old "Ben. Franklin," now fifty-four years old, is still in good repair, and employed on the line.

Captain Joseph Peene, whose name is so intimately connected with the business of river navigation, was born in the village of Lydd, Kent, England, where his father Joseph was also born and where his family had lived for many generations. Brought up to a seafaring life, his first visit to America was as a sailor on a passenger vessel, which landed in New York in 1834. The next year he came again and resolved to make this country his home. His first employment was as a hand on board of a sloop. In 1839, as we have stated, he first commenced boating from Yonkers.

Captain Peene married Caroline, daughter of Captain John Garrison, and they are the parents of seven children,—John G., Joseph, George, William (de-

ceased), Emma (wife of Thomas Moore), and Mary A. (wife of Benjamin W. Stillwell) and Katie.

The sons have succeeded to their father's business, and are among the well-known citizens of Yonkers. Captain Peene, without being a politician, in the common acceptation of the term, is intimately connected with public affairs and has for several years held the positions of police commissioner and street commissioner, which duties he has performed to the satisfaction of his fellow-citizens. Starting in life with very moderate means, he has attained a handsome competence, and enjoys the leisure which has been well earned by a life of continued labor. Having been for many years previous a resident of this city, he built the mansion where he now lives, on Warburton Avenue, in 1870. The same year he went to Europe, and, in company with Mrs. Peene, made an extensive tour through Great Britain. Captain Peene is a member and officer of the Reformed Church of Yonkers, and is recognized by all who know him as a useful and respected citizen.

SECTION XXIII.

The Cemeteries.

Approaching as we are to the end of our history, we are reminded that a large number of the past people of Yonkers have died here, and are sleeping, as to their mortal remains, within our city limits. It is not our business here to moralize, yet we approach this subject with deep thought. The earliest burying-grounds here, as elsewhere over our country, were, first of all, family plots within the individual farms. Later on, neighborhoods would unite in selecting and owning plots for general use. And then church-yards came to be employed as burial-grounds. At first the spots of burial were not marked with slab or stone, except by prominent families, and when stones came to be commonly used they were stones that soon crumbled. As for the farm and neighborhood plots, the majority of them have now been plowed over and lost to identification, and even many of our Westchester County church burial-grounds do not to-day any longer indicate by stones the graves of the earlier dead. Within the city of Yonkers there never were more than five church burial-grounds, viz., those of St. John's, on Broadway; St. John's, at Tuckahoe; the Methodist Episcopal, at Tuckahoe; St. Mary's and St. Joseph's. Yonkers has now six cemeteries, two of which, both at Tuckahoe, are still church-yards, their churches standing within the grounds. To these grave-yards we have made sufficient reference already in the histories of their churches. Of the other four we shall speak more at length and in the order of their earliest dates.

ST. JOHN'S CEMETERY.—This is the oldest *public* burial-place in Yonkers. It was provided for by the bequest of Frederic Philippe (Second) to St. John's Church. How soon after it was opened for use, however, does not appear. Bolton (Church in Westchester

County, p. 525) says the first interment on record in this cemetery took place in 1783. It is said that its oldest existing tombstone, still legible, bears date of 1791. The ground is on a high and beautiful elevation on the east side of the Saw-Mill River road, immediately adjoining Oakland Cemetery on the north. It comprises 7.6 acres, and is still the property of St. John's Church and under its control. The carriage entrance to it from the Saw-Mill River road is on the northwest corner of the grounds. The foot entrance, further to the south, is by sixteen steps of very abrupt ascent. On the grounds are several family vaults, some of which are very old, and several quite imposing obelisks and other monuments. The most noticeable of the obelisks are those of the Baldwin, Waring and Disbrow families. The ground is now becoming very closely filled with graves. There must be a time, and it cannot be far distant, when its room will be wholly taken up.

ST. MARY'S CEMETERY (R. C.) was opened about the year 1855. It lies along the valley of the Sprain, about a mile and a half north from St. John's Cemetery, and contains 5.4 acres of ground. Part of it was a gift from Mr. John Murtha from his own farm. Within this part Mr. Murtha had already had his own family burial-plot. At first the cemetery had no entrance from the Sprain road, but was accessible only by a lane on the east side. The portions of the present grounds south of the gateway to the Sprain road, and including the site of the gateway itself, were purchased at a later date. This cemetery has a number of handsome monuments. Of course, it is not for general use, but only for the people of the Roman Catholic Church.

OAKLAND CEMETERY.—This lies in the angle inclosed by Ashburton Avenue and the Saw-Mill River road, and extends northward to St. John's Cemetery and eastward over the high ledge seen from the road just named. Its ground is part of the glebe devised by the second Lord Philipse, in 1751, to St. John's Church. That church early set off as a burial-ground the northern part of their glebe, which is now known as St. John's Cemetery. The rest it appropriated as a farm, and on this it built its first rectory. Part of that farm is now Oakland Cemetery. The rectory once standing within it no longer exists, as our history of the church has shown. Oakland Cemetery is a new name given in 1882. The cemetery was first established by the Yonkers Cemetery Association on the 3d of December, 1866, under the provisions of a general act of 1847. The first board of trustees were Thomas W. Ludlow, Isaac H. Knox, Charles W. Bathgate, Leonard W. Jerome, Adolphus Smedberg, Richard Lawrence (in place of William W. Scrugham, who had been elected, but had died soon after), Robert P. Getty, Henry Bowers, James C. Bell, William H. Anthon, William G. Ackerman and John T. Waring. By permission of the Supreme Court, the vestry of St. John's Church had sold a large part of

their glebe, and this land was now secured, by this association for a cemetery. The land covers what had once been in three farms,—the Seymour farm, the Biggs farm and the Beebe farm,—together comprising about one hundred acres. All this land, just before the company obtained it, was in the hands of Leonard W. Jerome, who conveyed it to the company for certificates, to the redemption of which one-half the receipts for the sale of lots was pledged. The aggregate amount of these certificates was two hundred thousand dollars. In 1870 a settlement was effected with Mr. Jerome, in which he surrendered all certificates remaining in his hands in exchange for the Biggs farm, containing about forty acres and valued at eighty-one thousand dollars. This settlement left the cemetery with an area of sixty-five acres. The construction of roads, a receiving vault and other improvements were provided for by the issue of seven per cent. bonds. The amount of these bonds that had been issued in 1880 was sixteen thousand five hundred dollars and the interest had fallen in arrears. In 1882 the association was reorganized under the name of the "Oakland Cemetery Association," and the former bondholders became stockholders to an equal amount. The amount of stock issued was twenty-six thousand six hundred and seventy-five dollars. The officers elected at the time of reorganization still hold. They are Edward Weston, president; Frederic Shonard, vice-president; J. Christy Bell, Jr., secretary; J. Harvey Bell, treasurer. The other trustees are Henry Bowers, Cyrus Cleveland, William L. Heermann, James Stewart, John W. Alexander, John Eylers, Robert P. Getty and William F. Cochran.

It is peculiarly appropriate that this land, once set apart by Lord Philipse for church purposes, should thus carry out the pious intentions of its donor, though in a way he never could have foreseen. From the valley of the Nepperhan the land rises gradually to the east, culminating in a considerably extensive plateau, covered with groves, containing some of the finest old forest-trees growing in this part of the State. The level ground is admirably adapted for burial-plots, while the hillside affords ready facilities for the construction of vaults and tombs. Abundant springs of water gush forth at several points among the rocks, which add much to the life of the ground. By action of the board of supervisors the tract is exempted forever from taxation. No road or street can be constructed through it, and every owner of a burial-plot holds his property by a title, which can never be assailed, even by his creditors in the event of his becoming unfortunate in business. Many plots have been sold and many have been beautifully adorned. Among the latter, those of Alexander Smith, Thomas W. Ludlow, Jr., Judge William W. Scrugham, the Dyckman family and the Peene family are prominent. A receiving vault, built in the side of the hill, about a quarter of a mile back from the entrance, is of gray stone and cost about eight thousand dollars. The

entrance to the cemetery is a particularly easy one, at the southwest corner of the grounds.

ST. JOSEPH'S CEMETERY (R. C.) is the youngest of all. It is the larger of the Roman Catholic cemeteries, located on the western side of the Saw-Mill River Valley, between three and four miles north from Getty Square and containing about twenty acres. The land was bought of Mr. Ethan Flagg in August, 1877. About three hundred interments have already been made in it. A monument erected by Rev. A. A. Lings, down to this date (1886) the only pastor of St. Joseph's Church, is one of the most conspicuous objects in the grounds.

SECTION XXIV.

The Bi-Centennial Celebration.

(October 18, 1882.)

During the mayoralty of the Honorable William A. Gibson, the Yonkers Common Council, on the 19th of December, 1877, adopted the following preamble and resolutions, offered by Alderman Frederic Shonnard :

"Whereas in the present City Hall, formerly the hall of the ancient manor of Philipsse, the city of Yonkers possesses one of the most interesting of such relics of our antiquity in the state, if not in the nation—a building and a site which have been rendered interesting in history by the generous hospitality of the Philipsse family to the distinguished people of their day, among whom was General Washington—a building, part of which dates back to 1682, is now nearly two hundred years old, and has been a silent witness of the growth of this place from a rude settlement trafficking with the Indians, to its present prosperity and beauty as a city,—

"And Whereas the possession of such a relic of the past as the seat of our city government is a matter of local interest and pride, and can be made very advantageous in adding to the romantic attractiveness of our city, and whereas to this end it is desirable in every way to stimulate the public appreciation of this and other places and things of local interest, therefore

"Be it resolved, that a permanent committee be constituted, which shall be called the 'Committee on History and Historical Relics'; that said committee shall consist of seven members; that the mayor and chairman of the Committee on Public Buildings and Grounds shall be ex-officio members of said committee (the former to be ex-officio chairman of the committee); that the remaining members shall consist of a member of the Common Council to be appointed each year and who shall hold his office for one year, and of four citizens to be appointed by the mayor, who may or may not be members of the Common Council, who shall hold office without term; and that as vacancies occur among the latter class, i. e., of private citizens, such vacancies shall be filled by the remaining members of the committee.

"And be it further resolved, That public-spirited citizens be invited to contribute relics of antiquity having a local interest, to the end of forming a representative collection, to be kept and suitably arranged for public inspection in the Manor Hall, and that the said committee be and hereby are instructed to from time to time prepare plans therefor, and report them to the Common Council for action and to make such other recommendations as may seem to them proper,

"And be it further resolved, That in all matters relating to the said Manor Hall building and grounds, referred to the Committee on Public Buildings and Grounds, the said committee are directed to consult with this 'Committee on History and Historical Relics,' and further that no action in reference to said Manor Hall building and grounds shall be taken by the Common Council without first giving an opportunity to the said committee on history to be heard thereupon.

"And be it further resolved, That the said committee are hereby authorized to expend a sum not to exceed fifty dollars in procuring the necessary printing and stationery."

¹The first of these four resolutions was afterwards twice modified—once by a resolution passed April 8, 1878, dispensing with the second member

Under these resolutions the following persons, during the preparations for the Bi-Centennial Celebration of 1882, constituted the Committee of the Yonkers Common Council on History and Historical Relics :

Hon. Samuel Swift, M.D., mayor of the city and chairman of the committee, *ex-officio*; Alderman Thomas Egan, chairman of the Common Council Committee on Public Buildings and Grounds, *ex-officio*; and Mr. Frederic Shonnard, Rev. Henry M. Baird, D.D., LL.D., Rev. David Cole, D.D.; Mr. Robert P. Getty and Ralph E. Prime, Esq.,² permanent members.

From December, 1877, the date of the committee's appointment, till the summer of 1882, the committee held periodical meetings, giving its attention to the property with the supervision of which it is intrusted, and to the collection to some extent of historical relics. It is due to Mr. Frederic Shonnard to say that to his great interest in Yonkers history the city is indebted for the earliest thought of a commemoration of the founding of our Manor Hall. Mr. Shonnard had noted and borne in mind the date of its founding, and early in the year 1882 he directed the attention of the editor of the *New York World* to it. The result was the appearance of stirring articles in that journal upon early Yonkers history, particularly the history of the Philipsse and Manor Hall.³ The *World* sug-

of the Common Council and extending the number of private citizens on the committee from four to five, and again by a resolution passed after the Bi-Centennial, October 23, 1882, further extending the number of private citizens from five to seven. During the preparations for the Bi-Centennial, the ex-officio members of the committee were the mayor and chairman of the Common Council Committee on Public Buildings and Grounds, and the number of private citizens on the committee was five.

²The committee to-day (1885) remains the same as to its permanent members, except that Duncan Smith, Esq., and Mr. Benjamin Silliman, Jr., have been added under the amendment of October 23, 1882.

³The prominence of Mr. Shonnard, in the arrangements for the Bi-Centennial, justifies a recall of his very honorable Civil War record. The facts have been gathered for us by ex-Judge Ellis, and as given below, may be added to his family history given in another part of this work.

Frederic Shonnard was mustered into the United States service September 2, 1862; commissioned as first lieutenant Company K, One Hundred and Thirty-fifth New York State Volunteer Infantry (afterwards changed to Sixth New York Heavy Artillery), with rank from August 27, 1862; commissioned captain October 7, 1863; commissioned major January 20, 1864; commissioned colonel and aid-de-camp to the Governor of the State of New York September 7, 1864; mustered out United States service January 28, 1865; commissioned as major and inspector of rifle practice in National Guard State of New York, September 13, 1875; commissioned colonel by brevet April 13, 1876.

Service in the field began in October 1862. His regiment, with other troops, marched to Gettysburg to repel the famous cavalry raid of the Confederate General J. E. B. Stuart. Subsequently in command of a detachment in Maryland suppressing blockade-running.

January, 1863, at Harper's Ferry skirmishing with guerillas and afterwards in command of an important outpost covering and guarding Harper's Ferry at Halltown, in Shenandoah Valley, on the Winchester pike. Remained at this post until forced back by the advance forces of Lee's army on his way to Gettysburg. Subsequently engaged in the pursuit of Lee on his retreat from Gettysburg. The Sixth New York Heavy Artillery was then permanently attached to the Army of the Potomac. Took part in all of its operations at Warrenton, Culpeper, New Baltimore, Rappahannock and Brandy Station, and actively engaged at the affair at Wapping Heights, Va., July 26, 1863. Detailed to the staff

gested and emphasized the propriety of a bi-centennial commemoration. One of the *World's* articles, on the 7th of July, 1882, the *Yonkers* papers republished with earnest indorsement of its suggestions, pressing upon the Committee on History and Historical Relics prompt inauguration of arrangements for a celebration. The committee responded to what seemed to be a general and strong feeling. Sensible, however, of need for wise counsel and general popular support in whatever they might undertake, they began by addressing a circular letter to the citizens generally, inviting them to meet and advise with them in the Common Council chamber on Monday evening, the 7th of August. Their invitation brought out a large number of gentlemen, who, upon hearing the object of the meeting, and being requested to express their views, entered warmly into the idea of a celebration, resolved to have one in the month of October, and gave counsel as to details of plan. At this citizens meeting it was proposed and agreed that the general features of the celebration should be a mass-meeting, an oration, a great procession displaying all the city's phases of industry and activity, a loan exhibition of relics to be held in Manor Hall, and continue ten days, decoration of buildings, evening fireworks and public illuminations. The following temporary committees were appointed to consider and report to an adjourned meeting suitable plans with probable cost:

On the public celebration and its exercises, including procession, etc.:—William L. Heermance, James V. Lawrence, John W. Oliver, F. X. Donohue, Alexander Kirkwood.

On the loan exhibition:—Benjamin Silliman, Jr., E. M. Le Moine, J. G. P. Holden, James F. Brevoort, Thomas J. Hill.

On decoration, illumination and fireworks:—William F. Möller, George W. Poucher, Thomas L. Mottram, Peter Mitchell, E. L. Thomas.

It being felt that any one called to deliver the oration would need all the time he could have to prepare, this first public meeting of citizens elected Rev. Dr. Cole as the orator. It also elected Mr. Frederic

of General R. O. Tyler, a regular officer in command of the artillery reserve of the Army of the Potomac. At battle Robertson's Tavern, November 28th and 29th, and Mine Run, November 30, 1863.

Engaged in delicate and dangerous service as *ad-de-camp*, notably one where he successfully conveyed an important order of General Buford thirty miles at night through a country unknown, with no guide but a mangled pocket compass, being a portion of the time within the enemy's outposts.

May 12, 1864, returned to his command as major Sixth New York Heavy Artillery, while the battle of Spottsylvania was in progress. In the battle of May 19th following, had his horse shot under him; the brigade in which his battalion was most conspicuous, receiving special mention from General Meade, commanding Army of the Potomac, for heroic conduct in repelling an impetuous attack of the enemy. May 23d, in the charge at North Anna Ford. May 30th, Bethesda Church. At this battle a horse was shot under him. June 1st, 2d and 3d, Mechanicsville pike and subsequently at the siege of Petersburg, and in the general storming of the works on the memorable charge on 18th June, 1864.

Shonnard as a permanent historiographer, to whom was committed the work of collecting, arranging and preparing for ultimate print in detail all material procurable for illustrating the annals of Yonkers.

The meeting then adjourned to the evening of Tuesday, August 15th, at which time it was agreed to receive the reports of the three committees.

At the meeting of the 15th the committee made clear, full and excellent practical reports, which were heartily adopted, after which the committees were discharged and the following resolution was passed:

"Resolved, That the permanent Committee on History and Historical Relics be constituted the general executive head of the Bi-Centennial celebration, and be empowered to appoint such officials and such sub-committees from the citizens at large as may be necessary to the success of the undertaking."

The meeting then adjourned.

The next evening (Wednesday, August 16th,) the committee thus empowered met at Manor Hall and organized itself as the Executive Committee of the Bi-Centennial Celebration, by which designation it was known till the celebration had passed, and all its pecuniary and other responsibilities to the celebration had been discharged. Mayor Samuel Swift was appointed its chairman; the city treasurer, Mr. Robert P. Getty, its treasurer, and Mr. Abram C. Mott its clerk; and it was decided that no payments of money should be made, except upon written orders of the committee.

The committee also at this meeting appointed the following sub-committees:

COMMITTEE ON FINANCE.

Samuel J. Tilden, Chairman.

W. F. Cochran.	R. R. Haines.
N. P. Otis.	W. W. Law.
J. C. Havemeyer.	E. A. Nichols.
David Hawley.	George D. Pitkin.
Ethan Flagg.	Charles Collins.
A. Curtiss.	John K. Myers.
G. H. Scribner.	Edward Weston.
Alexander Halliday.	R. W. Bogart.
W. B. Smith.	H. M. Schieffelin.
Barton F. Kingman.	George H. Purser.
J. B. Trevor.	R. C. Vilas.
J. B. Colgate.	Joseph Agate.

COMMITTEE ON MASS-MEETING.

N. P. Otis, Chairman.

James Stewart.	A. O. Kirkwood.
S. F. Quick.	Joseph Masten.
Ethelbert Belknap.	F. X. Donoghue.
E. P. Baird.	James V. Lawrence.
O. P. Buel.	George W. Poucher.
W. P. Ketcham.	E. M. Herri nce, M.D.
F. P. Brown.	John T. Baker.
J. H. Keeler.	Fisher A. Baker.
J. W. Oliver.	W. B. Edgar.
Matt. H. Ellis.	L. R. Condon.
E. R. Keyes.	Patrick White.
James P. Sanders.	Michael Walsh.

PROCESSION COMMITTEE.

Colonel W. L. Heermance, Chairman.

R. Eickenmeyer.	Isiah Frazier.
V. P. Humason.	Isaac D. Cole.
Henry Bowers.	Charles Conklin.
E. A. Houston.	James C. Courter.
E. J. Mitchell.	Joseph F. Daly.
William Shrive.	H. R. Hicks.
Thomas F. Morris.	Thomas Coyle.
Henry Osterheld.	Charles E. Gorton.
Peter U. Fowler.	George Stewart.
Charles R. Dusenberry.	Charles W. Seymour.
John Mangin.	John W. Rockwell.
E. Underhill.	Hall F. Baldwin.

LOAN EXHIBITION COMMITTEE.

Benjamin Silliman, Jr., Chairman.

E. M. Le Moyno.	J. Jardine.
Thomas R. Hill.	Eli L. Seger.
Frederick C. Withers.	H. R. Freeland.
I. W. Maclay.	J. G. P. Holden.
W. W. Wilson.	E. L. Thomas.
F. A. Rigby.	H. M. Pratt.
George H. Warren.	Charles E. Finkel.
W. A. Pardoe.	George Rayner.
James Brevoort.	Professor Wm. H. C. Bartlett.
Davis Paton.	John Avery.
W. F. Nisbet.	J. Harvey Bell.
Augustus Van Cortlandt.	

COMMITTEE ON DECORATION AND FIRE-WORKS.

W. F. Moller, Chairman.

Peter Mitchell.	H. F. Von Storch.
Thomas L. Mottram.	H. B. Starr.
Walter A. Drinkwater.	G. W. Farnum.
H. K. Miller.	Charles Reed.
John G. Peene.	John F. Thomson.
John Pentreath.	J. F. D. Crane.
John F. Brennan.	Leander Hodges.
Isaac N. Cook.	Jonathan Vail.
Thomas Marrau.	H. H. Thayer.
W. F. Lawrence.	Howard R. Butler.
Henry Stengel.	E. A. Quick.
James Berwick.	R. O. Phillips, M.D.

With this organization of August 16th, began an earnest work, which was carried forward to the consummation of October 18th, the day of the public celebration. The wisdom and industry of the finance committee and its success in raising the funds necessary for the executive committee's work, between four and five thousand dollars, were perfect. And the Loan Exhibition Committee discharged its duty with the most industrious zeal and with rare skill. It succeeded in interesting people, not only of the city, but of Westchester County throughout, in its object. As a result, a very valuable collection of relics was brought together, and held on exhibition, not for ten days, as originally projected, but for three weeks to meet an unexpected demand. The exhibition was held in the Common Council chamber, and was visited by many thousands of people. The details and value of the articles gathered were given in a printed catalogue, which may still be procured. What the committees on mass-meeting, procession, decoration and fireworks did may be judged from the results detailed below. Nor must we forget to record that through the courtesy of Hon. Waldo Hutchins, United States Representative from this district, the government war-

steamer "Kearsarge" was sent to Yonkers and lay before the city from the 17th to the 19th. A salute of twenty-one guns was fired from the ship at sunrise and another at sunset of the 18th, at which latter time also the rare ceremony of "manning the yards" was exhibited to the great gratification of many thousands who witnessed it from the shore. During the evening, also, the ship was splendidly illuminated with Chinese lanterns, several hundred in number, extending from the bow to the masthead, and wherever there was a place on the cordage to hang them.

From this point onward, we take our account of the great event mostly from the Yonkers papers, issued after it had passed away. The *Statesman* of the next day (Thursday) was the fullest, and the following report to the end of our chapter is chiefly from it:

The Bi-Centennial celebration of the settlement of Yonkers has passed into history. The plans were conceived on a grand scale, and it is our pleasure to record that all were so carried out as to reflect the highest praise upon their originators and promoters, and to surpass the fullest expectations.

Tuesday was so wet and foggy that much anxiety was felt as to the weather. The Bureau at Washington was consulted, and General Hazen informed us that Wednesday "would be clear and cooler," but that did not prove to be the case. The day opened foggy and sultry, and as the grand old "Kearsarge" boomed out the morning salute, and the church bells merrily chimed the chorus, there was much anxiety lest showers might interfere with the arrangements that had been made. But as the day wore on the skies brightened and at two o'clock the sun shone forth with summer heat.

Although the threatening weather deterred many from visiting the city, yet a large concourse of strangers was to be seen upon our street. And by 9 o'clock the sounds of music, the reception of guests and the various organizations marching into lines gave our thoroughfares a lively appearance.

All the arrangements were under the direction and control of the permanent Committee on History and Historical Relics, and the five assistant committees mentioned above.

How well these various committees performed their duties is attested by the success of the day. All gave themselves nobly to the work, and where all did so well we would not appear invidious, and yet it is but simple justice to award special praise to Mr. Frederic Shonnard, who labored wisely and incessantly to make the arrangements grand and complete, and to Hon. Norton P. Otis, acting chairman of the finance committee, through whose persevering industry money was secured to meet the heavy expenses.

There was a reception at 4 o'clock in the afternoon by the officers of the "Kearsarge." Arrangements were made for ferrying visitors to and from the ship and the dock at the foot of Wells Avenue, under the management of police commanded by Roundsman Quinn.

Military bands played at Manor Hall and Getty Square, from 4.30 to 5.30 o'clock.

At sunset, 5.15, there was a naval salute of twenty-one guns, the sailors at the time manning the yards of the "Kearsarge."

The extent of the procession, the ponderous character of many of the trucks, and the delay in the arrival of some of the visiting companies interfered with a prompt moving of the line at the appointed time, but by 11 o'clock the grand parade began. And it is but just to say that Grand Marshal Heermance and his efficient aids proved their entire competence by the able manner in which they overcame difficulties and brought the various departments into harmonious action.

ORDER OF THE LINE.

Platoon of Mounted Police.

Colonel William L. Heermance, Grand Marshal.

E. M. Le Moyne, Chief of Staff.

Charles M. Jesup, Adjutant-General

Aids: E. W. Ketcham, Russell J. Uhl, J. Harvey Bell, James Stewart,
J. Le Duc, George H. Warren, A. H. Johnson.
Dr. R. J. Southworth, Surgeon.

First Division.

John W. Rockwell, Marshal.

Staff: George W. Farnum, Henry Stengel, Oscar

Austin; Charles Stewart, Orderly

Twenty-five carriages containing

Mayor Swift,

The Common Council,

The Police Commissioners,

The Water Commissioners,

The Fire Commissioners,

City Treasurer, Tax Receiver,

The City Judge, Corporation Counsel,

The Assessors, Supervisor,

The Board of Education,

The Commissioners of Excise,

And Other City Officers,

The Reverend Clergy,

County Historical Society,

Invited Guests.

A Band of Music

Musicians and Sailors of the "Kearsarge."

Officers of "Kearsarge" in Carriages

Second Division.

Commanded by Captain Isiah Prazier, Marshal

Lieutenant W. H. Wray, Chief of Staff.

Dr. N. A. Warren, Surgeon.

Aids: Captain Thomas Turner, S. B. Farrington,

F. A. Curran; Sergeant, Thomas Oliver.

Band of Music.

Fourth Separate Company N. G. S. N. Y. of Yonkers.

Eleventh Separate Company of Mount Vernon.

James C. Rice Post, G. A. R., of New York.

Farnsworth Post, No. 170, G. A. R., of Mount Vernon.

Barbarie Freitchie Post, No. 11, of Brooklyn.

Kitching Post, No. 60, of Yonkers.

Archie Camp, Henry Sproule and S. C. Van Tassel

of Yonkers, representing the State

Department of the Grand Army of

the Republic.

West Point Band

Peekskill Military Academy, one hundred and ten strong, Colonel
Charles J. Wright, Commanding.

Third Division.

Fink's Band, of New York.

John Lacey, Chief Engineer; John B. Piete.

First Assistant: Daniel McGinness,

Second Assistant.

Protection Engine, No. 1, of Yonkers—sixty-five men,

Thomas Mitchell, Foreman; M. Kane, Assistant,

preceded by about thirty Honorary Members

in citizens' clothing.

Clinton Hook-and-Ladder Company, No. 1, of Mount Vernon—
thirty-two men.

Edson Lewis, Foreman; J. Baylis, Assistant

Bright's Band of Yonkers

Hope Hook-and-Ladder Company, No. 1, of Yonkers—

sixty-five men,

William Archibald, Foreman; G. M. Lam, Assistant.

Newburgh City Band.

Chapman Hose Company, No. 4, of Newburgh, thirty-five men;
fifteen invited guests.

T. H. Burke, Foreman; Philip Keelan, Assistant.

Fink's Band, of New York.

Hudson Hose Company, No. 1, of Yonkers—

forty-five men,

W. E. Flandreau, Foreman; R. Brown, Assistant.

Mountaineer Engine Company, No. 2, of Yonkers—

fifty-six men,

George Fischer, Foreman; C. Dietzel, Assistant.

Collins' Band of Newburgh.

Nicholas Powell, Chief Engineer, Charles Miller and

Samuel J. Hewitt, Assistants, of Newburgh Fire Department.

Washington Steam Engine Company, No. 4, of Newburgh—seventy-four
men, including invited guests.

A. J. Blit, Foreman; L. McCord, Assistant.

Fink's Band of New York.

Lady Washington Hose Company, No. 2, of Yonkers—
thirty-eight men,

J. McVier, Foreman; T. Franklin, Assistant.

City Hose Company, No. 1, of Yonkers—forty men,

Frederick Kearns, Foreman; P. McGrath, Assistant

Roll's Ossining Hose Band, of Sing-Sing.

Ossining Hose Company, No. 3, of Sing Sing—

thirty-five men,

John Corcoran, Foreman; George Nichol, William

Reardon, Assistants

Palisade Hose Company, No. 4, of Yonkers—forty men,

Jeremiah Harrigan, Foreman; D. Gleason, Assistant.

A Delegation from Columbia Engine Company, No. 1, of Peekskill—
twenty men,

Frank Marshall, Foreman; A. Gregory, Assistant.

Irving Hose Company, No. 5, of Yonkers—thirty-five men,

G. W. Brown, Foreman; J. Gadsby, Assistant.

In regard to the decorations of the different fire apparatus, we can hardly say sufficient. They generally were polished as bright as silver-plate could be made to shine, and decorated with flowers, flags and other ornaments in a style that evinced wondrous good taste and skill. The splendid display made by the firemen of Yonkers, as well as by those of Newburgh, Sing-Sing and Mount Vernon, formed a most attractive part of the procession. The Newburgh companies were brought to Yonkers by the "Mary Powell," which landed them here at 10 o'clock. They immediately marched into the place in the line assigned them. Clinton Hook-and-Ladder Company of Mount Vernon, were invited by Hope Hook-and-Ladder Company of Yonkers; Chapman Hose Company of Newburgh, by Hudson Hose; Washington Steam-Engine of Newburgh, by Lady Washington Hose; Ossining Hose of Sing-Sing, by Palisade Hose, and the Columbia Engine delegation by Irving Hose.

Hope Hook-and-Ladder Company entertained their guests in the old and abandoned Westminster Church, Warburton Ave., where tables were spread and a large party sat down to a fine supper in the evening. After supper, about 10 o'clock, the Mount Vernon Company went home. Lady Washington Hose took their visitors partly to the Mansion House and partly to the Peabody House, while Hudson Hose took theirs to the Yonkers Hotel. The Newburgh companies leave for home by the steamboat "Mary Powell," this afternoon, at 4 o'clock.

Fourth Division.

Commanded by John Eylers, Marshal.

Staff: Samuel Petit, Philip Kuss, Henry Haber, Dr. C. D. Marsh, Surgeon.

Bohemian Turner's Band of New York.

Fairy Car, with Two Queens and their Pages.

Bohemian Turn Verein of New York, blue suits and soft hats, and sashes.

Yonkers Turn Verein.

Yonkers Teutonia.

Young Men's Temperance Lyceum.

Independent Base Ball Club.

Clipper Base Ball Club.

Yonkers Base Ball Association

all in uniform, with bats.

Yonkers Caledonian Club in Costume.

Fifth Division.

Band.

Virgil P. Humason, Marshal.

Staff: Dr. C. A. Miles, Surgeon; Fayette P. Brown, Master Soeterman, C. S. Bousall, John Keeler.

Four stages containing Girls from Schools Nos. 2 and 6, and the Central School.

Two Hundred Boys following on foot from the same schools.

They were divided off into platoons, and each platoon was headed by a captain, who carried a large pen. Each scholar had a badge, designating the school to which he or she belonged.

Sixth Division.

Henry Osterheld, Marshal.

William Welsh, Chief of Staff; William Frederick Lawrence, Assistant Adjutant-General; Dr. G. B. Balch, Surgeon;

William Hes, Jr., Color-Bearer for Division.

Staff: G. Schlueter, George Read, G. H. Kaler, A. Archibald, Major Luckey, C. H. Rowland, G. W. White, James Pearson, C. H.

Stotts, Jr., D. Tasheira, W. Morgan, A. Ludkins, Charles

Denike, J. W. Hauser, F. E. Ellis, E. N. Wilson, R. W.

Rowland, R. Eickemeyer, Jr., W. E. Ketchum.

Band of Music.

First Battalion:

Dry Goods:

Two carriages, each drawn by four horses handsomely caparisoned, and containing representatives of Dry Goods firms of Yonkers.

Second Battalion:

John C. Shotts, Commander.

Forty Butchers on horseback, with white aprons and sleeves and red neckties.

Large truck, decorated, containing live sheep, and drawn by four noble dapple-gray horses.

Wagons of Timothy Ryan and P. Millot, nurserymen, containing flowers, seeds, etc.

Six wagons, handsomely decorated, and filled with vegetables and garden truck.

Wagon loaded with different kinds of fish, and two business wagons of William Jones.

Wagon of Henry Allen, fish-dealer.

Third Battalion:

J. B. Odell, Commander.

Aids: Charles Luther, H. E. Newman.

Each of the following named firms was represented by its respective wagons, handsomely decorated:

Acker, Edgar & Co.,

Odell & Littebrandt,

J. Embree & Son,

F. Wangenstein,

Oscar Waring,

H. C. Newman,

Thompson & Fowler,

Philip Kuss,

J. B. Prote & Son,

C. H. Van Buren,

Dennis McGrath.

Fourth Battalion:

J. G. Hatfield, Commander.

Bakers, Milkmen, etc., Great American Tea Company.

Large wagon, handsomely decorated, with two bakers in costume and mammoth loaves of bread.

Wagon with ice cream manufacturing apparatus by Jordan & Son. Handsome truck of Great Atlantic and Pacific Tea Company, drawn by six black horses.

Wagon of Dairymen.

Band.

Fifth Battalion:

John Clark, Commander.

Thirty of John Clark's employes, with leather aprons, grenadier hats and picks, followed by fifty workmen.

Ice men in carriages.

A fac-simile of Clark's Ice-House on Ludlow's dock, drawn by four horses.

G. R. Tremper's two ice-wagons.

Wagon of C. E. Waring, Jr., loaded with feed, hay, etc.

Sixth Battalion:

Thomas N. Doel, Commander.

Aids: Howard Newman, W. H. Belknap.

Large truck of A. D. Hutchinson, showing how sewing was done in 1862 and is done at the present time.

Wagon of H. S. Wyer, Photographer.

A. Caul, furniture dealer.

Frey Dyeing Establishment.

Jackson & Mahoney, hatters.

Seventh Battalion:

Thomas Marran, Commander.

Aids: Jeremiah McCue, Oscar Barker.

Band of Music.

Various trucks representing Carriage Manufacture.

Fine display of carriages by W. H. Anderson.

Wagon of J. Fegan & Co., with plumbing-pipes artistically arranged.

Wagon of L. H. Wiggins, with stoves, etc.

Wagon of Thomas Marran, tastefully decorated and containing stoves, house-furnishing goods, etc.

Sanitary Plumbing Company.

Craft, the Tanner, with a fine exhibit of skins.

Eighth Battalion:

George Stewart, Commander.

Aids: Thomas Coyle, M. R. Oakley.

Builders and Contractors:

S. F. Quick with two Houses on a truck, one representing the style of 1682, and the other a modern Italian villa.

Wagon of John A. East, making a fine show.

Trucks of J. & G. Stewart, Masons; workmen drilling stone, bricklaying, plastering, etc.

Wagon of Peter Mitchell, with display of druggists' supplies.

Wagon of A. O. Kirkwood, containing patent wash-basin, etc.

Three trucks of Thomas Coyle, contractor.

Truck of M. R. Oakley, bearing House, gable roof, painted lead-color.

Five wagons of D. H. Smith, bottler of mineral-waters, etc.

North Battalion:

John G. Peene, Commander.

Aids: Joseph Peene, Jr., George Peene.

Band of Music.

Two trucks of Peene Brothers, one bearing the facsimile of the propeller John H. Hammit, the other bearing a facsimile of the barge "Aunt Mary."

On the sides of the trucks paintings of Manor Hall, with the sloop "Ben Franklin," moored in the harbor.

Wagons of the Swift and Riker Expresses

Elegant display of Carpeting from the Alexander Smith & Sons Carpet Company.

Wagon of the Westchester Telephone Company, showing the various materials used in the business
Stage of Embree & Wheaton.

Wagon of O. T. Barker, with men making carriages—blacksmiths, painters, etc.

South Battalion:

Band of Music.

E. A. Quick, Commander.

Aids: E. L. Thomas, Thomas Stratford.

Wagons of P. A. Deyo & Son, laden with coal and flour, with inscription: "We warm the cold and feed the hungry."

Truck of Rockwell & Thomas.

Wagon of Joseph Lowenthal, clothing dealer.

Coal-wagon of Charter & Slade.

Lawrence Brothers, represented by four trucks painted in all the colors of the rainbow;

The first truck containing Lumber to build a house, the second shingles to cover it; the third bricks to build the chimney; the fourth a variety of English and American coals.

Wagon of John W. Ackerman, containing flour and feed.

Coal-wagon of L. R. Condon.

Wagon representing Cigar Manufacturing by M. Lowenthal, decorated with trees, flags and mottoes.

Wagon containing Twenty Chinese; a number of them playing on the musical instruments used in their own country.

Wagon of J. E. Parsons, loaded with lumber.

Wagon of M. Sharp, with tailors at work.

Wagon of George Mitchell, with a fine display of shoes.

Wagon of R. B. Tompkins, with kindling-wood.

Elevator Battalion.

G. W. Valentine, Marshal.

Two trucks of Otis Brothers & Co., Elevator Works, on one a large Elevator; on the other a model with shafting and all apparatus complete.

Inscriptions on the wagons, "Such a getting up-stairs," "O 'tis our aim to elevate."

Twenty-five Blacksmiths of the Otis Elevator Works, with leather aprons and hammers.

Wagon of the New York Plow Company, containing farming implements of their own manufacture.

Wagon of T. N. Doel, with castings.

Truck of Osterheld & Eckenmeyer, carrying an automatic hat blocking machine and a hat-shaving machine.

R. Dutton & Company, a one-horse haymaker.

Two Mules bearing boys with banners, one representing "The Best Family Newspaper in the Town," and the other "The Liveliest Newspaper in the County."

Wagon of P. Reardon, exhibit of wall paper.

Truck of John Small, with blacksmiths at work.

Facility Battalion

Carriage containing Street Commissioner Joseph Peene and H. L. Garrison.

Young Men's Catholic Association Band of St. Joseph's Church

SIX wagons representing the work of the Street Department.

Cart drawn by oxen representing Francis Dervieux, seamer and dyer.

Eight carriages containing invited guests.

The procession created the liveliest interest all along the route, and was received with cheers and the waving of handkerchiefs. It was over one hour in

passing a given point, and must have been at least two miles in length.

The grand stand was designed by Benjamin Silliman, Jr., architect, and erected by Bowler & Walsh, under the direction of Norton P. Otis. It was capable of seating six hundred persons.

The decorations were entrusted to C. H. Koster of New York, and he did his work well. There was a profusion of national colors, studded with shields, flags and banners of all nations, chief among them being the coat-of-arms of the United States, surrounded with American flags. Large colors attached to flagstuffs floated above. Suspended at a height of about fifty feet from the ground was a large painting representing all the flags that were used by the colonies of America, surrounding a picture of "The Banner in the Sky." In this picture two Continental soldiers, at daybreak, are seen building a camp-fire. The sun, not yet risen, casts a lurid glare on the morning clouds, and with the blue sky forms an American flag.

The exterior of the grand old Manor Hall was very appropriately and handsomely decorated. From the flagstaff hung a large national banner, with twenty-five smaller flags around the balustrade. Above the roof, in large block letters of gilt, appeared:

1682 MANOR HALL. 1882

On the south corner of the roof was a life-size Indian, with a bow and arrow; in the centre, the figure of a Hollander; and on the north corner, the figure of a Continental soldier. Coats-of-arms of the thirteen original States were placed around the building between the second-story windows. Verily, in the language of the ode, sung as below, was

Manor Hall aglow
With more than light of other days,
Two hundred years ago

An immense throng was present at the meeting. The entire ground in front of the Hall was seated with chairs, with boards before them for the protection of the feet from the damp ground. All the arrangements displayed wise forethought for comfort and convenience. At three o'clock the meeting was organized as follows:

President

Hon. Samuel Swift, Mayor

Vice-Presidents

Hon. Samuel J. Tilden

Wm. A. Butler, Esq.

Hon. Wabbe Hutchins

Hon. Edwin K. Keyes

James C. Bell, Esq.

Judge Matt. H. Ellis.

Hon. Norton P. Otis.

Erben Flagg, Esq.

Hon. G. Hilton Scribner

Hon. James C. Courter

Judge Edward P. Baird.

Robert P. Getty, Esq.

Aug. Van Cortlandt, Esq.

Everett Clapp, Esq.

Samuel D. Babcock, Esq.

John T. Waring, Esq.

Judge Abraham B. Tappan

Hon. William A. Gibson.

Rudolf Eckenmeyer, Esq.

Isaac H. Knox, Esq.

Hon. Joseph Masten

Hon. Thos. F. Morris.

Secretaries:

C. E. Gorton.	J. S. Fitch.
F. X. Donoghue.	Edgar Logan, Jr.
H. W. Flagg.	E. A. Oliver.
John M. Digney.	James Prendergast.
C. H. Harriott.	J. H. Keeler.
G. B. Ritter.	

The raised platform, prepared for six hundred persons, was reserved for the officers of the meeting, the city authorities, the guests and the reporters for the press.

The representatives of families whose successive generations have resided here during a century or more were assigned a place of special honor, and marched to the seats reserved for them, under the leadership of Mr. Augustus Van Cortlandt.

THE MAYOR'S ADDRESS.

Ladies and Gentlemen:—As president of this mass-meeting, it is solely my duty to maintain order and have the arranged programme carried out. It is a pleasure to me that what is so obviously the proper thing to do is so sure to accord with your inclination.

"You are all anxious to hear how, from the erection of our Manor Hall, two hundred years ago, this territory has been developed; how then the property of one family, the land has gradually come into the possession of many; how the Manor became the settlement, the settlement the village, the village the town and the town the city, the extent of whose professions, industries, manufactures and trades has been represented in the grand procession you have to-day witnessed.

"To a large proportion of our citizens, and probably to every one of our guests who have gratified us by accepting the invitation to be present on this occasion, this exhibit has been a surprising revelation. I doubt if any one here present had a correct estimate of the resources of Yonkers, and in a few moments it will be my pleasant duty to introduce to you Dr. David Cole, who, on account of his eminent fitness, has been selected to relate to you our history in a manner worthy of the day, and by the delivery of an oration certain in future to occupy a prominent part in all histories of this region."

The Yonkers Band, John Bright, leader, played an overture, which gave great satisfaction.

OPENING PRAYER BY REV. CHARLES R. CORLEY.

"O God, Almighty and Eternal, our Refuge and our Strength, Fountain of all goodness, Protector of all those who hope in Thee, without whose aid nothing is durable, nothing holy, we trust in Thee. Thou art kind and loving. With filial affection we call Thee Abba, Father. Look down upon us to-day and sanctify our efforts. We thank Thee and we bless Thy name. Thou hast bestowed on the land we so dearly love so many gifts that she stands among the nations as a land of promise and a home for the oppressed. Thou hast given to us material prosperity, and hast led divers people unto us as a land overflowing with milk and honey. Thou hast built up the people until the nations have looked to us, and, when in distress, have stretched out to us their hands for succor. Grant that we may draw nearer to Thee. Give to the nation abiding peace and happiness. Bless our people, bless our rulers. Grant them every virtue. Protect our chief magistrate and those committed to his charge. Bless our city and those who govern and direct it. Grant that as we increase in worldly goods we may never forget that Thou livest and reignest; that the words of Thy royal prophet may sink deeply into our hearts, that unless the Lord build the house they labor in vain that build it, that unless the Lord keep the city, he watcheth in vain that keepeth it. Thus while we celebrate the two hundredth year of our foundation as a dwelling, we celebrate Thy name and ask of Thee to bless and preserve us. We beg of Thee to give all aid to those of this our city whom we select to govern and protect us. Inspire them with a just appreciation of their office, that they may do all things agreeable to Thee. This we beg of Thee, Almighty Father, through Thy Son Christ Jesus, who with Thee and the Holy Ghost liveth and reigneth, one God, world without end. Amen. In the name of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost. Amen.

The following Bi-Centennial Ode, written by Mr. Effingham T. Hyatt, was then sung by three hundred

school children under the direction of Prof. A. Andrews, the band playing the accompaniment:

I.

"Hail, festal day! Hail, fruitful land!
Hail, bright, historic shore!
Hail, Hudson fair!—serene and grand,
Roll on forever more!
Hail, hills and vales and winding ways!
Hail, Manor Hall, aglow
With more than light of other days.
Two hundred years ago!"

II.

"Old Manor House! Thy form recalls
A name rever'd and blest—
Beneath thy roof, within thy walls
Great Washington was guest!
When Savages this land controlled,
And Progress stood dismay'd,
When Freedom sigh'd and Kings were bold,
Thy solid walls were laid!"

III.

"Ye ancient oaks, ye would not sigh
For forests level'd low,
If ye could see, with human eye,
The thrifty scenes we know,
The busy mills and holy spires,
The homes of peace and fame,
A people mov'd by good desires,
And warm'd by virtue's flame!"

IV.

"And if we all could but foretell
The blessings yet to come,
How would a grateful anthem swell
From ev'ry Yonkers home!
Sufficient, now, to praise the Lord
Of all the land and sea—
Who gave us, with this healthful sword,
Light, hope and liberty!"

The ode was received with general applause.

Rev. David Cole, D.D., then delivered his masterly oration, which will be found in our paper. Although lengthy,¹ the interest was such that Dr. Cole held the attention of his audience to the close when his carefully-prepared address was heartily applauded and warmly commended. The ode "America" was then sung by the audience standing, and Rev. James Haughton pronounced the benediction. The meeting was regarded as a complete success.

THE FIREWORKS.—The evening display of fireworks, which took place on a field on the east side of North Broadway, north of Lake Avenue, was very largely attended. The works were fine, but the misty atmosphere prevented their being displayed to the best advantage. The exhibition continued about an hour.

¹ The "oration" referred to was prepared for two ends,—first, to serve the need of the bi-centennial day as an oration, and secondly, to serve the city of Yonkers as a full historical paper, to be kept on file for reference. The more rhetorical parts of it only were delivered at the mass-meeting, and the time occupied in the delivery was exactly one hour and fifteen minutes. We add in this note that the entire paper has served as the basis for the history of Yonkers we are giving in this volume. The audience at the mass-meeting was probably not less than seven thousand in number. It covered compactly all the ground in front of Manor Hall, and all the streets around, filling even the windows of all buildings within sight of those on the platform.

1. Salute of Aerial Maroons—Fourteen inches in circumference, fired from iron mortars, and exploding at a great height with tremendous reports.

2. Prismatic Illumination—By beautifully varied fires, changing color continually, placed in selected positions and producing a most charming effect.

3. Ascent of Mammoth Balloons—Carrying a very powerful magnesium light and discharging at a great altitude a variety of novel and pleasing fireworks, concluding with a magnificent shower of gold and silver rain, brilliantly illuminated with gems of every hue, which changed color continually during their gradual descent.

4. Grand Display of Large Rockets—Peacock plumes, silver streamers, twinkling stars, golden clouds, triple parachutes, tri-colored asteroids, floating bouquets, etc., also many recent novelties of great beauty.

5. Device—The Pyrotechnical Kaleidoscope—Revolving with great rapidity, emitting cascades of liquid fire and discharging large rockets. Gold fountains, fiery whirlwinds, colored Roman candles, fanfarrouades, Italian streamers and gems and every conceivable description of fireworks. Fiery torpedoes flying through the air with great rapidity and bursting with very loud reports.

6. Flight of Illuminated Tourbillons—Forming immense cascades of fire in ascent and descent. Jewel clouds shredded with gems of every hue covering an immense space in the air.

7. Device—The Edelweiss.

8. Grand Display of Shells—Fifteen inches in diameter, Laburnum blossoms, birds of Paradise, couleur de rose, rubies and sapphires, emeralds and diamonds, gold and pink, mauve and pink, chocolate and dark blue, ultramarine and silver, purple and amber, silver rain, magenta, green and gold, turquoise, amethysts, floral wreaths, etc.

9. Ascent of Cometic Stars—Being fac-similes of meteors with brilliant fiery tails.

10. Device—Aladdin's Jeweled Tree.

11. Salvos of Aerial Sanciscous—Filling the air with intensely brilliant fires of the most fantastic forms.

12. The Aerial Acre of Variegated Gems—Produced by the simultaneous discharge of a number of our magnificent shells.

13. Device—The Vol au Vent—Bouquets of rockets, terminating in clouds of gold, great explosions of jewel and cracker mines.

14. The Laughable Firework "Jumbo."

15. Ascent of Another Balloon—Carrying powerful magnesium lights and fireworks as before.

16. Second Display of Large Rockets of every color and tint possible to be produced.

17. Display of Pain's Aerial Wonders—The Pyrotechnical Harlequinade.

18. Large Electric Shell—Lighting up the scenery for miles around with a glare of dazzling light.

19. Device—The Falls of Niagara.

20. Second Display of Shells—Eighteen inches in circumference. Golden Rain. Magnesium Lights, jewel shower, aerial bouquet, variegated gems, amber and purple, essence of moonlight, prismatic cascade, opal rain, torrent of illuminated gems, heliotropes, etc.

21. The Southern Cross.

22. Meteoric Rockets—With gold and silver rain, batteries of colored Roman candles discharging to great height in all directions, myriads of fiery globules of every hue.

23. Aerial Contortionists—A most eccentric novelty.

24. Grand Finale—A Fine Picture, thirty by forty feet, of the Old Manor House, with appropriate mottoes. Magnificent bouquet of one thousand rockets. Feu de joie.

This display closed the celebration. It left a kindly memory with all who participated in it, and gave a favorable impulse, it is believed, to patriotic feeling and to Yonkers business life. Who will they be, and what will they see, who may be present at the tri-centennial in 1982?

SECTION XXV.

The People of Yonkers.¹

We have found it impossible to write the history of Yonkers without feeling that, humanly speaking,

people have made it. We can, indeed, think of a history of a locality apart from its people. It would be a history of the actions of matter upon matter and their results; a history of changes produced by attraction and gravitation, heat and cold, moisture and drought; a history of convulsions attended by depressings and upheavings, such as we know have occurred on the very spot on which we live. If the surface of Yonkers could tell the processes through which it has come in reaching its present conformation, certainly much interest would attach to its story. But we have been impressed, while writing our past chapters, with the absolute dependence of what we have been called to record upon the men and women, and upon the words and acts of the men and women, who have lived here. Humanly speaking, these have made Yonkers. What it had not, these have brought to it—what it was not, these have made it to become and to be. So the history of Yonkers has been a history of its people, of their words and acts, and of the results of what they have said and done. We had no sooner started on our work than we found that we had to be all the time bringing in people, and now that we are finishing it, we find, on looking back, that almost every page has been a page of names. This had to be. But the thought of it suggests the painful consciousness that while bringing in so many names we have had to leave out a large number that are entitled to a high and honorable place in the annals of the territory. We shall try our utmost in the space that yet remains to us to do justice to our city's past and present people.

Certain names have been so associated with the government and with the institutions of the place that they could be traced continuously through minutes and records still preserved. Every name of a president, trustee or police justice of the village, every name of a mayor, alderman, city judge or member of a city department, every name of a pastor or officer of a church, of an editor of a paper, of a founder or leader of an industry, of an officer or employe of a bank, of a projector or executor of a reform or a charity, is preserved in existing documents. But Yonkers, like every other place, has had many important men and women, whose activity has wrought itself into the passing life of their day in such a manner as to make itself powerfully felt and to leave its traces permanently behind, but yet not in connection with organized movements, carrying with them records that preserve names. Among these, first of all, have been our resident clergymen never holding Yonkers pastorates, and all our physicians and lawyers who have not held public offices or been identified with public responsibilities. And among them, secondly, have been what we call the masses. What an immense part the masses have played in bringing

¹To prevent repetition, the editor has taken the liberty of transferring to the general chapter upon the literature and literary men of West-

chester County, to be found in the first volume of this work, a brief sketch of the "Authors and Writers of Yonkers," prepared by Rev. Dr. Cole.



RESIDENCE OF MISS PRISCILLA SMITH,
NORTH YONKERS.



into being the Yonkers of which we have been writing! How plainly its evolution has been, in large part, the work of men and women who are not only now remembered, but who were scarcely noticed while they were living, and doing their steady, telling work upon the place! We call up in our thought, not by name, but as masses, the men who have dug out and broken up the rocks that not more than forty years ago overlay and underlay the surface now presenting such a picture of beauty,—the men whose toil shaped the materials now wrought into our splendid architecture, the men who drove the planes and the saws, or who laid the stones or the bricks, or who made the mortar and carried the hods at the erection of our fine buildings, the men who graded the streets, who put down the walks, who developed the gardens, who laid out the terraces and the lawns and produced the cultivated landscapes. Standing in St. John's Cemetery sometimes and watching the covering of remains, we think even of the Yonkers men, like the venerable Lewis Ritter and William Griffin, who have spent long lives in the work of opening and filling graves. Every one, low or high, who has lived in Yonkers has had some share, less or more prominent, in furnishing the life and shaping the events out of which our history has been drawn. We have desired and tried to call up all the people to the fullest extent to which we could recall or collect names, and follow them. And when we have come to where names ceased, we have thought of the masses who have filled their lives with toil, and died without leaving their names behind. Blessed be God for the masses! Heads plan, but what would planning be without hands to carry out? Let our masses know that they are not unnoticed either by God or thoughtful men. A silent but a mighty force they are! Let them seek to be a force, not for physical toil only, but for healthful moral influence. What they have done for the surface of the city and for its architecture they can do, if they will, for the moral character of the place. They can banish liquor saloons, they can put down profanity, they can hold up the Sabbath, they can maintain order, they can sustain law, and if they do all this, they will not go unremembered by thinking men whose work it may at any time become to collect the annals of the city in which they live, and in which they toil to build it up and give it a name among the cities of the land.

We have mentioned all the past and present pastors of Yonkers churches. Among them it has been shown that Babcock, Cooper, Crosby, Storrs (all of St. John's, on Broadway), Ives (of St. John's, at Tuckahoe), Lynch and Slevin (of St. Mary's) are dead. So far no other pastor of a Yonkers church ever died during his Yonkers pastorate. But our city has been honored by the residence within it of a number of clergymen, never pastors here, some of whom have been exceedingly active and useful in special departments of work. People who have lived in Yonkers

for the last thirty years can never forget one of the most distinguished of this class of workers, the Rev. Robert Baird, D.D., who had devoted himself in young manhood to a special mission—"the extension of Protestantism and the evangelization of the world in connection with the religious and benevolent societies." An accomplished linguist, of extensive and varied literary acquisition, a man of sound judgment, magnetic in manners, Christ-loving and race-loving, simple-hearted and large-hearted, and having selected, as the medium through which to carry out his chosen work, those great evangelical corporations, the Bible Society, the Tract Society and the Sunday-School Union, he proceeded to Europe in 1835, and making Paris and Geneva his centres of operation for eight years, visited nearly every capital, found access to every court he approached, became acquainted with almost every monarch, and, gaining an influence without limit, utilized it to spread the gospel, to diffuse knowledge, to plead the interests and secure the relief of the persecuted, to promote the cause of temperance, and in every way to displace the false, to plant the true and to lift up man. Returning to America in 1843, after eight years of absence, during which time he had succeeded in forming the Foreign Evangelical Society, subsequently merged into the American and Foreign Christian Union, of which he was also the founder, he passed his remaining twenty years on earth, to his death on the 15th of March, 1863, alternately in Europe and America, using in both countries the vast influence he had acquired in furthering the mission of his life. Providing himself with necessary maps and other means of illustration, he passed, during his home sojourns, from town to town and city to city, addressing large audiences, and, in a familiar, colloquial style, interesting young and old with simple lectures on European life, introducing his hearers now into the most blood-curdling scenes of persecution and suffering, then into the most brilliant scenes of court and palace life, and never forgetting, as he talked, to weave into his lectures the most impressive representations of the educational and the religious needs of the masses among whom he had moved.

Dr. Baird was not an orator. His manner on the platform was wholly unstudied. Yet by the dignity of his presence, the manifest sincerity of his words and the clearly-defined aim of his life, he charmed adults and children alike, and, perhaps more than any other lecturer of his period, helped to give to the American people a just conception of the European world, and to the people of Europe a true idea of the American heart. It was the privilege and the honor of Yonkers to furnish a home and at last a resting-place for the remains of this distinguished minister of Christ.

And many of our people will also remember Rev. Robert McCartee, D.D., born in New York City September 30, 1791, who spent the last three years of his life in Yonkers in retirement from feeble health.

Dr. McCartee had been forty-six years in the pastorate (1816 to 1862), mostly in the cities of Philadelphia and New York. His personal qualities were overflowing geniality, extraordinary devotion and irrepressible fervor. He was especially eminent in the pulpit. Intense absorption in the lofty themes of the law and the gospel gave to his preaching an eloquence which was indescribable. His tenderness carried his hearers away with emotion. Probably no minister ever exerted a greater power over an audience than he. Some conception of his success as a preacher and pastor may be gained from the fact that during his pastorate of the Canal Street Church, in New York, its membership grew from thirty to eight hundred. He died in Yonkers on the 12th of March, 1865. Nor have our Yonkers residents of twenty-five years or more forgotten another aged minister—the Rev. Robert Kirkwood, who spent his last days as a resident here. Mr. Kirkwood was born in Paisley, Scotland, May 25, 1793; was educated in the College of Glasgow, and, after studying theology under the celebrated Dr. John Dick, in the same city, was licensed in 1828, and came at once thereafter to the city of New York. He first served the Missionary Society of the Reformed (Dutch) Church; then filled different pastorates in New York State till 1839; then spent seven years in Illinois as a domestic missionary, and subsequently served as an agent for the Bible and Tract societies. At the close of this service he transferred his ecclesiastical relations to the Presbyterian Church. In 1851, retiring from public work, he came to reside in Yonkers. His remaining years he gave to correspondence and book-making. He was a frequent correspondent of leading religious papers, published volumes entitled "Lectures on the Millennium," "Universalism Explained," "A Plea for the Bible," "Illustrations of the Offices of Christ," and also a selection of Sermons. As a preacher Mr. Kirkwood was solid and instructive, and as a companion and conversationist, he was pleasant and profitable. During his Yonkers life he added to his studies considerable outside work, which was attended with useful results. He died here on the 26th of August, 1866. Besides the three clergymen named, at least two others, never pastors in the place, have lived and died here, viz., Rev. Reuben Hubbard, of the Protestant Episcopal Church, and Rev. Timothy R. Hibbard, of the Methodist Episcopal Church. Both died before 1863. We know nothing of their history except the fact of their living and dying in Yonkers. All the five we have named have left descendants who are still residents of the city. Two of the sons of Dr. Baird are clergymen, and both of them are scholars and writers of eminence; a third was long city judge of Yonkers. Several of the children of Rev. Dr. McCartee, and also of the children of Rev. Mr. Kirkwood, have been earnest Christian workers, making their lives tell for good, some of them in other places and some of them at home.

No other resident clergymen, not pastors, are recalled by us as dying here. But a number have made Yonkers a temporary or permanent home. We have already mentioned Rev. Montgomery R. Hooper and Rev. Isaac S. Davison with their schools. Of resident clergymen wholly retired from service, we do not think of any except the Rev. Livingston Willard and the Rev. Abram C. Baldwin, of the Presbyterian Church, the Rev. William S. Moore, of the Reformed Church, and the Rev. E. A. Hill, of the Methodist Church. Two clergymen, residents here, are pastors elsewhere, viz., the Rev. J. S. Shipman, D.D., rector of Christ Episcopal Church, New York City, and the Rev. John G. Shrive, supply pastor of a Baptist Church at Williams' Bridge. Three clergymen, not pastors, but especially prominent in other positions, have had their homes in Yonkers for many years, though the first has recently taken up his abode in New York City. We refer to Rev. Edward Bright, D.D., the able editor of the *New York Examiner and Chronicle*; Rev. William W. Rand, D.D., long publishing secretary of the American Tract Society, and a zealous and indefatigable worker, whose life, through his pen, has carried benediction into many a home, and Rev. Henry Martyn Baird, D.D., LL.D., a son of Rev. Dr. Robert Baird, for many years professor of Greek in the New York University, and also for a long period corresponding secretary of the American and Foreign Christian Union. A sketch of Professor Baird is given elsewhere by the editor-in-chief of this work.

LAWYERS.—The Yonkers bar is of such recency of date that nearly all lawyers who have been identified with the place are still living. It was not till population set in rapidly that the bar began to form. The first lawyer was William W. Scrugham, born in New York City in March, 1820, and educated to the law in the office of Samuel E. Lyon, at White Plains. He settled in Yonkers in 1844. Our map of 1847 shows his law office, built by himself. When he built it, it stood a long way from any other building. Now it is in the most crowded part of the city. Mr. Scrugham was elected supervisor in 1846, and re-elected again and again till he declined further re-election. From 1847 he was the board's chairman as long as he remained in it. From his coming to Yonkers he at once rose by real merit and soon established himself in popular confidence. In 1849 he began to take a practical interest in the military organization of the State, and was first appointed lieutenant-colonel of the Seventeenth Regiment of the State militia, then colonel and finally brigadier-general, being put in command of a brigade. In 1859, by election, he became a judge of the Supreme Court of the State of New York for the Second Judicial District. He is best remembered by Yonkers people as Judge Scrugham. Not far from the close of the term of eight years for which he was elected, on the 9th of August, 1867, he died. Polished in manner, affable in intercourse,

learned in his profession, he stood in public esteem from the first as a representative lawyer and advocate. Upon his painstaking industry and fidelity as a judge, however, his reputation to-day chiefly rests. Men placed unbounded confidence in his honesty, and his judicial conduct and decisions were generally acceptable and accepted.

Upon Judge Scrugham's elevation to the bench he was succeeded in his Yonkers office by the young law firm of Lyon & Dean. Dean soon withdrawing, the firm became Lyon & Meade. The war breaking out in 1861, these two young men left for the field, intending to return. Lyon, however, resumed his work in New York City instead of Yonkers, and Wm. Creighton Meade, having contracted disease in the army, soon after died at the home of his father, the Rev. Dr. Creighton Meade, of Scarborough. The present lineal successor of Judge Scrugham is Ralph E. Prime, who, having served in the war in the Sixth Regiment New York Artillery, and won for himself the rank of lieutenant-colonel, resigned March 19, 1863, came at once to Yonkers and took the office and place of Lyon & Meade. Mr. Prime, still practicing in Yonkers, is now, as to seniority of practice, the oldest living lawyer of the place. He is a son of the late Alanson J. Prime, M.D., of White Plains, and a nephew of the brothers Prime, so widely known as the editors of the *New York Observer*. Mr. Prime is a clear-headed, industrious and persevering man in his profession, has been very prominently connected with Yonkers and its public business, is thoroughly acquainted with its history and has been very successful in his practice throughout.¹

¹ To ex-Judge Ellis, himself honestly connected, as we show below, with our Civil War service, we are indebted for the following note respecting Mr. Prime's military record. We take great pleasure in giving it, because, as the correspondence accompanying it shows, Mr. Prime was deprived through political opposition of a high honor intended for him by the Secretary of War. He was born at Fishkill, Dutchess County, N. Y., March 29, 1840. His paternal great-grandfather was a patriot of 1776; his maternal grandfather was colonel in a regiment in the War of 1812.

Enlisted in the war for the Union as private April 30 1861, in the Fifth New York Volunteers, known as "Duryea's Zouaves." Promoted sergeant June 8, 1861; second lieutenant September 5, 1861; first lieutenant July 4, 1862; captain September 30, 1862 (last two promotions for gallantry in the field). Subsequently transferred to Sixth New York Artillery as lieutenant-colonel, and March 5, 1863, nominated by the President of the United States, Brigadier-general.

On detached service October and November, 1861, when he superintended the construction of a fort at Relay House Junction, Baltimore and Ohio Railroad, Maryland. Also, at the skirmish of New Kent Court-House; also in the campaign of the eastern shore Virginia and Maryland.

Engaged in the following general battles: Big Bethel, June 10, 1861; siege of Yorktown, April, 1862; Hanover Court-House, May, 1862; Ashland Bridge, May, 1862; Mechanicsville, June 26th; Gaines' Mill, June 27th; South Mountain, September 14th; Antietam, September 17th; Beachford's Ford, September 20, 1862. Wounded at battle of Gaines' Mill June 27, 1862, with musket-ball through thigh.

When appointed Lieutenant Colonel of the Sixth New York Artillery, he found, upon joining the regiment, that the feelings of the officers were strongly enlisted in favor of the former incumbent of the office, and being convinced that he could not serve as efficiently, under the peculiar circumstances, as his rival, who was endeared by former association and acquaintance with the regiment, he waived his undoubted right and re-

The next Yonkers lawyer to Judge Scrugham, in order of coming, was Reuben W. Van Pelt, who came in 1848, whose name was identified with many notable cases of litigation, and whose legal learning and skill conducted the most difficult of these cases to almost unvarying success for his clients. During later years he gave his time largely to the management of one of the Yonkers industries. Mr. Van Pelt died during the present year (1886). Next to Mr. Van Pelt, in 1856, came the firm of Stedwell & Mann. The latter of these two men was not long in Yonkers. The former, as we have shown in our chapter on the Yonkers newspapers, was instrumental in starting *The Examiner*, afterwards, in 1863, united with the *Clarion* to form *The Yonkers Statesman*. Mr. Stedwell also soon left Yonkers. He died in Flushing, L. I., about two years ago. The next was William Romer, who practiced in Yonkers from 1862 to about 1866. And the next was James P. Sanders, who began to practice here in 1859, and continues in the full vigor of his work. Mr. Sanders, in June, 1874, was twice shot in the Yonkers City Court-room and severely wounded by an exasperated man against whom he had just been sustaining a client. Providentially the first ball merely grazed his shoulder, and the second one, though doing severe injury, so lodged as to be easy of excision. The healing was rapid and he was soon at his work again. Mr. Sanders has been noted for persevering industry and for a fearless spirit both in his professional career and in all local public matters which have enlisted his attention.

John M. Mason followed next in order of time—*i. e.*, as a Yonkers lawyer. He had, indeed, come to Yonkers to reside in 1853, but, belonging to the New York law-firm of Knox & Mason, had not practiced here. He retained his connection with the firm named till his death, which occurred February 18, 1878. From the war period he became identified with Yonkers business—first, for eight years, as a collector of internal revenue, appointed by President Lincoln, and subsequently by appointment, of July 1, 1873, as Counsel of the Yonkers Water Board. In our history of that board we have shown that he "had charge of all its legal proceedings, including the important and intricate duties belonging to the appropriation of lands for public use."

signed in his favor. The appreciation of this act at headquarters is attested by the following letter:

"WAR DEPARTMENT, WASHINGTON CITY,
February 28, 1863.

"LT. COL. RALPH PRIME, New York:
"Your resignation was received to-day by the department and accepted. To mark my approval of your course and estimate of your character and services, your name has been placed on the list of brigadier-generals to be nominated on Monday.

"EDWIN M. STANTON,
"Secretary of War."

The appointment failed to receive confirmation through some political jealousy in the Senate. After returning to civil life he engaged in his profession of the law at Yonkers, where he still remains enjoying a large and lucrative practice.

Mr. Mason was a son of John Lefferts Mason (formerly judge of the Supreme Court of the State) and Amelia Murray, daughter of Colonel John B. Murray, of New York City. His mother is still living at about eighty-eight years of age. His father, Judge John Lefferts Mason, was the oldest of seven children of that prince of American preachers, Rev. Dr. John M. Mason, of New York City, who died in 1829. Another of the seven children was Euphemia Prevost Mason (Mrs. Rev. John Knox, D.D.), one of whose sons, Mr. Isaac H. Knox, was one of the presidents of the village of Yonkers, but now resides in St. Louis, Mo. Mr. John M. Mason was born in New York November 8, 1821, and was graduated at Columbia College in 1840. He was distinguished for a master-mind, which he fairly inherited. No legal problem was too profound for him. He stood, intellectually, on a very high eminence before the people. During his life in Yonkers he held several positions of honor and trust. He belonged first to the Board of Education of Public School No. 2, and afterwards to the board of No. 6, of which he was long president. His last years were years of constantly failing health and suffering. From the coming of Mr. Mason the order of succession with which the Yonkers lawyers began practice, down to 1870, was as follows: Edward P. Baird, son of Rev. Dr. Robert Baird, born in Paris, but brought up in Yonkers, began practice in New York City in 1864, but became drawn into Yonkers business first through an appointment as counsel of the People's Savings-Bank. He was the last police justice of the village, and upon the incorporation of the city in 1872, was at once elected city judge. At the expiration of his term in 1876, he was re-elected, and served in all eight years, till 1880. In 1883, as before stated, he removed to Minneapolis, Minn., where he died October 26, 1885. H. H. Taylor entered upon practice in 1865, but died January 24, 1876. Matthew H. Ellis served through the late war with the One Hundred and Seventy-fifth New York Regiment of Infantry, which was mustered into service in September and October, 1862, and mustered out November 27, 1865. He entered the regiment at its formation as a private, was commissioned captain December 19th, to rank from November 19, 1862, and was breveted major for gallant conduct at the taking of Port Hudson, on the 14th of June, 1863. He began law practice in Yonkers in 1866; was corporation counsel from 1870 to 1876, and city judge from 1880 to 1884. Judge Ellis has held several positions of honor and trust. Among them was the presidency of the Board of Education of Public School No. 6. He is the author of the consolidated educational system of the city, having himself prepared and pushed to enactment the law under which it exists. He has won, by his mental force and professional skill, a leading place at the bar and as a public man. He has always been popular as a speaker on civil occasions calling for public addresses.

George B. Pentz entered on his career as a practicing lawyer in New York City in 1860, but, being a resident of Yonkers, became identified with its affairs in various ways, and was finally elected, in 1884, to the city judgeship, which he now holds. Theodore Fitch began practice here in 1867, and was city attorney from 1877-83, when he was succeeded by Joseph F. Daly, the present incumbent of the office. In 1867 also, William Riley, after seeing severe service in General Burnside's division for a year, and finally sacrificing an arm in the defense of his country at the battle of Antietam on the 17th of September, 1862, completed a course of law study, and took up practice here. He has been an active and industrious member of the Yonkers bar. From 1870 the number of Yonkers lawyers has greatly increased. We cannot follow the later comers, most of whose careers are but just opening before them. It is proper to say, however, that the Hon. Edwin R. Keyes, who did not take up law practice till 1879, has already attained distinction through election to and service in the New York State Assembly. Entering upon this profession in middle life, after having passed his earlier years in another, he brought to it the advantage of experience with men, and of previously-gained popularity as a speaker. He had also had an experience of six months during the late war as chaplain in the army. All these advantages gave him, from his start as a lawyer, a position, which, with his gifts and energy, he is abundantly able to hold. Among the younger lawyers, we note several who, we are sure, will some day take prominent places at the bar. The years and the field are before them all, in which to impress themselves and win their way according to their real merits, as they may yet be faithful to their trust and work.

Many members of the New York City bar reside or have resided in Yonkers, several of whom are men of wide reputation. Some of them have done more or less practice in Yonkers, but they have had no offices here and their practice was incidental only. We hope we omit no name of note in the following list of these gentlemen, the first half-dozen of whom we think we give in the order of their settlement here. Of the rest we do not know the exact order, but cannot be far out of the way. They were Frederick A. Coe (the first comer, now deceased), G. Hilton Scribner and Martin Van Buren Denslow (the former was Secretary of State during the term ending November, 1873; the latter is deceased), Francis N. Bangs (deceased November, 1885), Stephen H. Thayer, Sr., David Hawley, William Allen Butler, Duncan Smith, James B. Silkman, T. Astley Atkins, E. Y. Bell, Charles W. Seymour, J. Irving Burns, Oliver P. Buel, Thomas Ewing and John H. Hubbell. Upon this list, as upon the first, there are several younger lawyers, for whose names we have no room, but several of whom give promise of winning their way to prominence in their coming career.

PHYSICIANS.—Of the physicians of Yonkers, it must also be said that they began to multiply only from about 1860, with the rapid setting in of population. The oldest physicians of Yonkers were the brothers Amos W. and Horatio S. Gates, the latter of whom, after a few years, abandoned practice and went to California, where he died largely wealthy. The elder Dr. Gates, after a skillful and lucrative Yonkers practice of more than half a century, died about six or seven years ago. Dr. Levi W. Flagg, the next comer, was born in Hartford, Conn., in 1817; was graduated at Yale College in 1839 and from the New York College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1847. The same year he entered upon practice with Dr. A. W. Gates, with whom he continued in association for two years. At the time, these gentlemen were the only physicians in Yonkers. In 1849, Dr. Flagg becoming, from deep conviction, a homœopathist, changed his practice and held his position as an active physician in the school of his adoption till he was laid aside by illness, in 1883. He died May 15, 1884, after thirty-six years of most industrious and most successful practice, leaving behind him the memory not only of a thoroughly upright Christian life, but also of geniality as a physician that carried sunshine into every sick-room he ever entered, and did more than words can express to impart courage and hope to the sick. The next Yonkers physician, in order of settlement, was Dr. George B. Upham, a graduate of Bowdoin College, who came in June, 1853. Dr. Upham was at first, for a short time, an assistant to Dr. Amos W. Gates, but soon began an independent practice. He has long been the senior physician of Yonkers, and stands with the foremost, both as to professional skill and as to fidelity in his work. During our late war he was a member of the Board of Enrollment for the Ninth Congressional District, embracing Westchester, Putnam and Rockland Counties, and was an examining surgeon for drafted men. The board was stationed at Tarrytown for three years, and Dr. Upham was on duty there daily during the whole period. After the war was over he was further appointed by the government an examining surgeon for pensioners. Dr. Edmund S. F. Arnold and Dr. Maximilian Reinfelder, both educated abroad, came next,—the former in May and the latter in October, 1854. Both these men are professional scholars of distinction and eminent in rank as physicians. Dr. Arnold, however, retired from practice several years ago, and does not now reside in Yonkers. The beloved Dr. J. Foster Jenkins was at first, for a time, a practitioner in New York City, but settled in Yonkers in 1856. In October, 1882, after a quarter of a century of professional toil among us, he died, crowned with the honors of a pure Christian life and enshrined in the memories of all who knew him as a finished gentleman, an accomplished scholar, a faithful and successful physician and a genial and warm-hearted friend. During the last war Dr.

Jenkins freely gave up, for a considerable time, a Yonkers medical practice worth five thousand dollars a year, to assume the secretaryship of the United States Sanitary Commission, at a salary of two thousand dollars. The next comer was Dr. J. Henry Pooley, who settled in Yonkers about 1860,—a man of brilliant general and professional learning, and of extraordinary gifts as a public speaker, one who never could forget anything he had once read or heard, and who was able, at any time, to call up his reading or study and make it tell with marvelous effect, even in the most off-hand discussion or address. Dr. Pooley had had large experience in the public service as a surgeon during the late war, and his special professional forte lay in the department of surgery. He was a fertile writer on various professional specialties. He left Yonkers for a professorship in Starling Medical College, Columbus, Ohio, but is now professor of surgery in the Toledo Medical College, in the same State. To Dr. Galusha B. Balch, who, though a physician of age and experience, is one of Yonkers' later comers, not having located here till December, 1871, the city owes much, not only for important counsel and service rendered during his term as its health officer, but for skill and energy in philanthropic work. He is now president of the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children, and most faithful in his office in looking after the interests of the class it aims to protect. Dr. Balch entered the service of the country in October, 1861, as assistant surgeon, resigned in the fall of 1862 from impaired health, re-entered in December, 1863, and continued as surgeon till the end of the war. His first term was passed with the Ninety-eighth New York Volunteers, in the Peninsular campaign, and his last and longest was passed in the Second Veteran Cavalry New York Volunteers, in the Department of the Gulf. He was in many battles with his regiments, and under severest exposure throughout. Dr. Valentine Browne is the present efficient health officer of the city. Other physicians of older date, not now here, were Dr. James Harkness, a retired clergyman, who had given himself to the practice of medicine, and Dr. Isaac N. Swasey. The former died in 1878 and the latter is now in Brooklyn. Dr. Richard J. Southworth, a younger physician, while a medical student, after passing an examination before the Army Medical Board, received an appointment as acting assistant surgeon United States army, in June, 1864. He served in New Albany, Ind., at Chattanooga, Tenn., and in the Harewood Hospital at Washington. And Yonkers has now many young physicians, of whom several have already obtained a firm foothold. We do not know of any of them who do not appear to be finding their way into a practice that will reward them for whatever of devotion they may give to the interests devoted to their care. One of the most promising of the young physicians—Dr. William R. Upham, a son of Dr. George B. Upham—

after a very short professional career, died in the spring of 1882.

ACTORS AND HUMORISTS.—Yonkers was noted, from 1850 to 1855, as the home of Edwin Forrest, who built and occupied the castle famed under the name of "Fonthill," now part of the property owned by the Sisters of Charity of St. Vincent de Paul. His history is well known. It was also the home for a time of R. J. De Cordova, known as a humorous lecturer. It has long been and still is the home of the actress Clara Morris (Mrs. F. C. Harriot), who has a wide fame in her profession, which, however, she pursues against the trying disadvantage of feeble health. Her professional gifts are of a high order and have always insured for her representative audiences and eager attention. She is also highly respected in private life.

LEADING BUSINESS MEN.—We have not space for extended reference to the retail firms of Yonkers. Some have held place through at least three decades. But by *leading business men* here we refer to the men who have shaped our city through their large movements in real estate, or through the planting and developing of our great industries. We think of three of these men who have passed away, and who deserve more than a passing notice, viz.: Elisha G. Otis, Alexander Smith and Ethan Flagg, who died respectively in 1861, 1878 and 1884. Mr. Otis was the founder of our elevator-works, which are said to be the greatest in the world. We did not know him, but it was to his genius and spirit that this great industry in our city owed its start and the impulse that has given it success. Mr. Smith died before Mr. Flagg, but Mr. Flagg came to Yonkers many years before Mr. Smith. It was largely to his enterprise in real estate that the city is indebted for its early growth. He laid the foundations of his own fortune in real estate movements. The hatting business with which he was connected was not so much a creation of his own. He was drawn into it. Mr. Flagg was eminently a public and a public-spirited man. His name will be found running through most of the official rolls of the city, and again and again upon important commissions, as well as in the directorship of financial institutions. Every general interest marked him as a man of superior judgment, of cautious habit and of wise counsel. It is said to have been one of his gifts that he could forecast to a remarkable degree the effect a proposal would have upon men, and so knew almost to a certainty how to move so as to carry masses with him. He was needed and called for as a safe man in public works, in politics and in business. Everywhere he was looked up to and leaned upon. Mr. Smith had a business which needed and absorbed his mind and his time. He was laying the foundation of the carpet-works which have since his death grown to such gigantic proportions, and even yet appear as if destined to expand far beyond what they have already attained. It was in him to meet every drawback

with courage, to triumph over every obstacle and to push his plans to success in any event. Yet it was impossible for him not to be a public man. Both Mr. Flagg and Mr. Smith employed many operatives, and by their fairness to them so won their hearts as to be sure of their support. Mr. Smith, in 1878, was appealed to by his district to run as a candidate for Congress. He consented. During the campaign a disease, of which he had for some time been conscious, brought down his strength. As the day of election approached he was prostrated. It was on the very evening of election day, after the votes had been counted, just as his friends took in to him the news that he had been successful and he had told them to return thanks to those who had supported him, that he gave up a useful and an honored life. We know of no other men of like relations and prominence who have died in the city. The milling and manufacturing of Yonkers have enrolled the names of many men, the fruits of whose genius and toil remain as their monuments. And years to come will add to these names many more which, after their owners have done their work and passed away, will be as much a matter of pride with Yonkers people as are those which, in these annals, it has been our pleasure to recall and fix upon the record of our city's past industrial life.

Seaman Lowerre, who is descended from an old French family, was born in the city of New York, January, 1808, and entered into active business at an early age.

In 1829 he engaged in the hardware business, which was continued till 1880, when he retired from active labor. Mr. Lowerre became a resident of Yonkers, in 1855, at which time he leased the Herriot estate, and soon after built the mansion known as Chestnut Lake, and made this city his permanent residence.

He married Caroline, daughter of Dr. George Herriot, of New York, whose ancestry were famous in the annals of Scotland. Dr. Herriot was the owner of a large estate within the present limits of Yonkers, and a large portion of it is now in possession of his descendants. The children of this marriage were Abigail, James, George H., Matilda, wife of Lewis N. Morris (all of whom died young), George H., Randolph, Warren H. and Frank, all residents of Yonkers.

George H., the oldest surviving son, married Fannie E., daughter of Captain Edwin Van Sice, a well-known representative of an old Knickerbocker family, whose history dates back to the early period of the Dutch settlement.

Mr. Lowerre is a gentleman of the old school, very domestic and conservative in his habits. In politics, he has ever been a staunch Democrat, but seeking no political honors or preferment; while in religion he has long been connected with St. John's Episcopal Church of Trinity parish.

Mrs. Lowerre inherited from her father a portion of



Samuel Lowrie





James Stewart

the Herriot estate, and the buildings and improvements which are fast making it a prominent part of the city of Yonkers, are under the superintendence of Mr. Lowerre, who finds in this a labor which might well task the powers of a much younger man. His years weigh lightly on him and his strength and vigor are the natural result of a life of activity and temperance.

Among the many other men who are worthy of mention in the History of Yonkers, are James and George Stewart.

David Stewart and Marion Kay, both born in Perthshire, Scotland, the former May 13th, and the latter November 20, 1791, were married at Thornhill, by the Rev. John Summers, December 16, 1818. Their home from their marriage till they came to America was on a farm called Achensalt. All their children, nine in number, were born in Scotland. They were as follows: Jane and Margaret (twins) born November 29, 1819; Robert, October 10, 1821; William, October 12, 1823; James, November 13, 1825; David, Jr., June 20, 1828; John, April 10, 1830; George, December 11, 1832; Janet (known in the family as Jessie), April 24, 1835. Of these children Margaret died December 20, 1819. All the rest lived to become married. Jane married Mr. John Moffat, March 18, 1847, but died March 16, 1857. Mrs. Robert Stewart (Mary Dolan) is dead, but the husband is living in Yonkers. Mrs. William Stewart (Mary Elizabeth Doty) died in 1884, but Mr. Stewart is living at Clyde, N. Y. Mr. and Mrs. James Stewart (Mary Elizabeth Porter) and their children, nine in number, and four of them married, all live in Yonkers. Mr. and Mrs. David Stewart, Jr. (Olive Underwood) both died in Yonkers, the former in 1866, the latter in 1885. Mr. and Mrs. John Stewart (Maggie Moore) live in Yonkers, as do also Mr. and Mrs. George Stewart (Harriet Weeks) and their children, five in number, and two of them married. And lastly Mr. and Mrs. Samuel B. Stillwell (Janet or Jessie Stewart) live at New Paltz, Ulster County, N. Y.

Mr. David Stewart came from Scotland to America alone in December, 1835, arriving in New York just after the great conflagration of that month. He came to study the country with a view to make it his home.

His wife and his nine children, all born in Scotland, he left behind him till he could determine upon a location. A year passed before he sent for them, and during that year he was superintendent of the New York City Parks. At the end of that time Mrs. Stewart and the children were brought over, and the family remained one year longer in the city, Mr. Stewart retaining his position just named.

At the beginning of 1838 he removed to the vicinity of New City, Rockland County, and followed farming there for three years. About 1841 he first came into Yonkers, settling at Moshol, his home

being on the very site on which the residence of Mr. Hiram Barney now stands. After about two years of farming at Moshol, he leased for a time a farm of Mr. Edward F. Shonnard, on North Broadway, and subsequently a farm of Mr. Lemuel W. Wells. While on the latter he lived at the head of what is now called Wells Avenue. His house, with his name connected with it, is indicated on our map of 1847.

In 1848 he purchased the property at the corner of North Broadway and Ashburton Avenue, on which stood the school-house Mr. Lemuel Wells had built for Mr. John Hobbs about 1833. The house he turned about to front Broadway, enlarged, and used as a residence for many years. Its site has just been sold (1886) by his heirs to the Yonkers Club. Afterwards he built another house on another part of this property and in this house he lived till his death, which occurred December 8, 1867.

Mrs. Stewart also died in the same house July 26, 1877. Both Mr. and Mrs. Stewart, with comparatively brief exceptions, enjoyed excellent health during their lives. At about sixty years of age Mr. Stewart sustained an injury, which leaving him permanently lame, disabled him for further farming work. He had passed his life toil, however, when this occurred, and attained to circumstances which rendered his enforced leisure comfortable to the end.

Mr. and Mrs. David Stewart were trained in the Scottish Presbyterian Kirk, and represented in their intelligence of spiritual things and their firm religious character the legitimate results of their training. The Bible, the Sabbath, the Church were held by them in the most reverent regard, and they never compromised what they believed to be the strait gate and the narrow way to life. According to their strict conceptions, they trained their children and lived before the community. In the church they were pillars. In America, with a brief and early exception, they were members of the Reformed Church of Yonkers. Mr. Stewart had been an elder in the church for fourteen years, when he declined re-election on account of infirmity about a year before his death. He was a plain man, but as to character he was a shining light. Both Mr. and Mrs. Stewart were model Christians, and when death came to them at last, it found each of them in turn with the lamp trimmed and burning. The venerable pair were greatly respected, and left to their children the prestige of an honored name.

Three of their sons, James, David and George, learned the mason's trade, and have so impressed themselves by their work upon the city of Yonkers, that a notice of their firm and its doings is a necessity to its history. The firm of J. & D. (James and David, Jr.) Stewart, builders, was formed in 1851, and continued in existence till the death of Mr. David Stewart, Jr., of consumption, in January, 1866. For a considerable time before this death Mr. James Stewart had been in the oil regions, and his partner being in feeble health, a younger brother, Mr. George

Stewart, was mostly in charge of the business. After the death, Mr. James Stewart returning to Yonkers, the firm of J. & G. (James and George) Stewart was formed March 1, 1866, and this firm still exists without change. Mr. John Stewart, a third brother, three of the sons of Mr. James Stewart, and one of the sons of Mr. George Stewart, are employed in the operations of the firm.

The Stewart firm has at least three great elements of strength. First, it is thoroughly equipped for carrying out any contract, however large; secondly, it has an established and wide reputation for spotless integrity; and thirdly, its members are remarkable for liberality of spirit. These three features have made them universally respected and popular.

Under the union of J. & D. Stewart, ending in 1886, the firm built the factory of Mr. John T. Waring, on Elm Street; the factory on Vark Street (at first a pistol-factory), now occupied and owned by the same gentleman; a sugar refinery at Hastings (since burned), the rolling-mill at Spuyten Duyvil, Mr. Isaac G. Johnson's iron foundry, at the same place, and two great residences at Harlem,—that of the German Schwab, and that of Malio, at the time Belgian consul to the port of New York.

Under the union of J. & G. Stewart it has built the Warburton Avenue Baptist Church, the Mount St. Vincent Convent, the Jewish Home for the Aged and Infirm, Alexander Smith & Son's works along the Saw-Mill, Hepworth's Sugar Machinery Factory at Glenwood, the Municipal Gas-Works, the Warburton Building, the Otis Elevator-Works, D. Saunders' Sons' Works, No. 6 Public School, the Yonkers Savings-Bank and First National Bank buildings and many other public buildings. The following elegant private residences are specimens of their work, viz. those of Hon. Samuel J. Tilden, Jas. B. Colgate, John B. Trevor, William Allen Butler, Alexander Smith, David Hawley, Abijah Curtiss, Wm. F. Cochran, Ethan Flagg, Gilman Dudley, G. Hilton Scribner and many others. The Bangs buildings, on South Broadway, known as "The Crescent," are their work. To all these public buildings and fine private mansions, and many others not named, it is, of course, to be added that they have put up less prominent buildings in the city, almost without number.

There can be no doubt that of all the work in their line done in Yonkers during their firm-life, they have executed at least three-fourths. They have laid all the water-pipes in the city, making a continuous line of twenty-one miles. This may give some conception of the magnitude of their operations. They have now maintained themselves and carried on their work, against all depressions in business and through all financial strains, for nearly thirty-five years.

The older partner, Mr. James Stewart, is an experienced and able planner and manager, and the younger, Mr. George Stewart, is untiring in his sup-

ervision of the complicated details with which the business is attended. Each, in his specialty, is the very man required, and neither one fails at any point.

Mr. James Stewart, in his advancing years, notwithstanding his commanding presence and solid character, retains a remarkably youthful and buoyant spirit, being active and prominent in popular forms of life and sport. With many other Yonkers gentlemen of his nationality, he is a devotee to the Scottish game of curling, with which these gentlemen and their friends beguile much of the leisure of the winter season. He is president of the National Curling Club, and in this relation is widely known by lovers of the curling game. In June, 1863, Mr. Stewart went out as first lieutenant with Company H, Seventeenth Regiment, of which we speak in another place as "The Fourth Separate Company." The men were sent to Fort McHenry, and did duty during its thirty days in guarding the numerous prisoners at that time sent to the fort. It returned without taking part in any action.

Both these brothers have been elders in the Reformed Church of Yonkers for many years, and workers in its Sunday-schools, and both have rendered very important service to the church in different ways, but notably by their very large liberality, which has helped, with that of others, to carry the church at times through severe strains. To Mr. George Stewart is almost wholly due the existence of the church's Ludlow Street Chapel, which, with the deduction of less than one thousand dollars upon its cost, is wholly his gift to the church, for the benefit of the neighborhood in which he lives. He is the superintendent of the Sunday-school regularly held in it, as he has been for at least fifteen years superintendent of the infant class of the Sunday-school of the church itself.

Through these sons and their families, the venerable pair who came from Scotland in 1836, and lived, and finally, in a ripe old age, died in Yonkers, have impressed themselves upon our city. This tribute is gladly rendered by one who knew the parents well, and has known the children too, through the largest part of their business life.

The ancestors of Caleb Smith, who was for fifty years one of the most prominent men in the old town of Yonkers, were of English descent and tenants of a farm in the manor of Philipsburg for three generations before the Revolution. The first of the name was Caleb Smith, who was living here in 1747, and is mentioned as having a brother Matthew. His son Caleb was a tenant on the same farm in 1760, and his son Caleb (the third of the name) was his successor. The following is a copy of one of the receipts for rent:

"Received this 19th day of December, 1776, from Caleb Smith, one of the tenants on the Manor of Philipsburg the sum of 3 Pounds 18 Shillings, for one year's rent, due the day and date above, by me.

EDZABETH PHILIPSE."



George Stewart





Caleb Smith

After the Revolution the farm was sold to Caleb Smith by the commissioners of forfeiture, and it was left to his son, Caleb Smith, the subject of this sketch, who was born September 2, 1773, at the old homestead, which is still in the possession of his descendants. When a young man, he established a store in the village of Yonkers, on what is now the northeast corner of Warburton Avenue and Dock Street, there being at that time only one other in the town. His connection with public life began at an early age, and he held for many years the office of justice of the peace and town clerk, and was supervisor of the town of Yonkers for twenty-five years, a longer period than that of any other man. He was, during his whole life, the business man of the community, and was the typical "Squire" of the olden time,—the head man of the neighborhood—to whose judgment all paid deference, and whose authority none disputed.

Mr. Smith married Hannah, daughter of Jacobus Dyckman, January 26, 1804. She was born February 23, 1782. The children of this marriage were Maria (wife of John F. Underhill); William Dyckman, born May 8, 1806; Sarah Priscilla (now living in Yonkers); James F., born January 1, 1813, (who was adopted by his maternal grandfather and took the name of Isaac M. Dyckman¹); Caleb, born February 23, 1815; Hannah, born July 17, 1817, (married John S. Courter, June 2, 1841, and now living in Yonkers); Emiline, wife of Benjamin F. Crane; Isaac D. and Michael D., both of whom died young.

William Dyckman, the oldest son, married Jane Rebecca, daughter of John Vermilyea. He died August 27, 1882, and is buried in the old Dyckman burying-ground, on Manhattan Island, below King's Bridge. His wife died August 9, 1853. Their children are William D., Sarah and Jane, who are now living on the old homestead of their grandfather.

After a long life of usefulness and honor, Caleb Smith died in 1858, and was buried at the Episcopal Chapel of "St. John on the Hill," having completed his eighty-fifth year. The old Smith homestead was a farm of one hundred and thirty acres, and was sold to Caleb Smith by the commissioners of forfeiture, December 6, 1785. It was described as "Bounded North by Jacob Leut, South and West by Sprain and Grassy Sprain (brooks), East by John Odell and Eleazar Hunt, as possessed by said Caleb Smith." The old house stood on the west side of what is now Central Avenue, and on the south side of the road from Yonkers to Tuckahoe. It was torn down a few years since, and an elegant mansion erected on its site, is now owned by William D. Smith and his sisters, who are the sixth generation in actual occupancy.

Frederic Shonnard, the first of the name in America, came to New York about the year 1765. He was an officer in the famous body-guard of Frederick the Great, and was descended from the French family of

that name, who, by some, are believed to have been Huguenots. The immediate cause of his leaving home was an affair of the heart. Contrary to the bitter opposition of his family, who had other plans for him, he married the lady of his choice, and, finding that the hostility of his relatives interfered with his domestic happiness, he resigned his commission, and, taking his wife with him, set sail for New York. She was, however, taken seriously ill at sea, and died on shipboard, after the arrival of the vessel in the harbor of New York, leaving no issue.

He was possessed of means, the family record showing that he brought with him servants and kegs of silver coin. He invested largely in lands and houses in Nova Scotia, which became immensely valuable, and built a handsome residence in Cherry Street, a fashionable quarter of New York in that day. In an old city directory his name appears as a merchant. Later in life he married Miss Fairfield, of Fairfield, Conn. He appears to have been a man of great force of character, who, feeling keenly the hostility of his family in Prussia to his first marriage, vigorously repulsed all overtures on their part, looking to his return to the Fatherland, and indignantly declined to receive the costly presents which they sent to him.

He served in the English army during the French War, and, in reward for his services, on the 25th of January, 1773, he received a grant of land near Saratoga from the colonial Governor Tryon, which is still known as the Shonnard Manor. The original patent is now in the possession of the family.

Frederic Shonnard, his son by his second wife, married Miss Arcularius, of the old family of that name in Hesse-Cassel, a beautiful woman, remarkable for her intelligence and benevolence. They resided for many years in a large, old house, standing in charming grounds on the Bowery,—a name appropriate to the situation in those early days, before the growth of the city had destroyed its sylvan character and it had ceased to be desirable as a place of residence.

In the year 1820 Mr. Shonnard purchased the beautiful estate of two hundred and twenty acres in Yonkers, a large part of which is still held by his descendants, from Bernard Rhinelander, for the sum of twenty thousand dollars. Here he and his wife passed the remainder of their days in the charming old house on North Broadway, which stood, till about the year 1853, in grounds elaborately laid out in the old French style, the flower-gardens being a mazy labyrinth of carefully-kept walks, hedged with box, giving access to geometrically designed beds and masses of flowering shrubbery. Mr. and Mrs. Shonnard have always been spoken of by their contemporaries as most kindly and benevolent people, who seemed to find their greatest happiness in doing good to those about them. An old gentleman who died during the past year used to delight to speak of them, and was wont to say that if any one in the little village, which Yonkers

¹See sketch of Isaac M. Dyckman.

was in those days, was sick or in trouble, Mrs. Shonnard's carriage would be sure to be seen at the door. In religious belief they were Lutherans, and in Yonkers they were active members of the Methodist Church, as its teachings were the nearest in accord with their belief. Mr. Shonnard gave the ground to the congregation, upon which the present Methodist Church, on the corner of North Broadway and Ashburton Avenue, now stands.

Frederic Shonnard had eight sons, six of whom were named Frederic, and all died prior to the birth of Edward Frederic. The other son, Henry, who was a young man of great promise, died of the yellow fever in the West Indies. He also had five daughters, of whom Mrs. Sidney Blackwell is the only survivor. Frederic Shonnard died about the year 1844, having reached the age of eighty, and having outlived his wife by four years. Before his death the Yonkers estate was bestowed on the only surviving son, Edward Frederic, who, in the year 1838, married Sophia A. Seymour, daughter of the late Henry Seymour, of Utica, N. Y., and sister of ex-Governor Horatio Seymour of this State. The Seymours are descended from the family of that name whose ancestral seat is Berry Pomeroy, in Devonshire, England, from whom the present Duke of Somerset is descended. Richard

Seymour, as recorded in the family Bible at Berry Pomeroy, came to Hartford, in Connecticut, in the year 1640. Mrs. Edward F. Shonnard is a granddaughter, on the maternal side, of General Jonathan Forman, of Revolutionary fame, an officer who enjoyed the esteem and friendship of General Washington, and was a member of the Order of Cincinnati of New Jersey.

The Forman family were Scotch cavaliers, and received from King Charles the Second a coat-of-arms in recognition of their fidelity to Charles the First. She is also a great-grandniece of Colonel Ledyard, the heroic defender of Fort Trumbull, who was cruelly murdered by the British, after becoming a prisoner of war.

Mrs. Sophia A. Shonnard is now in advanced age (seventy-two years), yet is possessed of remarkable physical activity. Her mind, richly endowed by nature and highly cultivated by close reading of the

best literature, retains its full vigor. One is at once struck with the ease of manner, grace of carriage, fluency of speech and ripeness of thought which mark her presence and conversation. Her age is golden and mellow, and she presents a picture which realizes, in a marked degree, the ideal cultured lady of the old colonial time.

Edward F. Shonnard, like his father and grandfather, was a man of great vigor and of marked individuality of character; he was over six feet in height, his features were regular and strongly marked, his eyes keen and bright. He possessed a superbly developed physique, was erect, active and graceful in his movements and the very embodiment of all manly qualities. His manners were of the old school, courtly, dignified and refined. Possessed during his whole life of ample means for the gratification of his simple tastes, he was never tempted by a desire to increase his fortune to embark in any business enterprise. He contented himself with a wise economy of his inheritance,

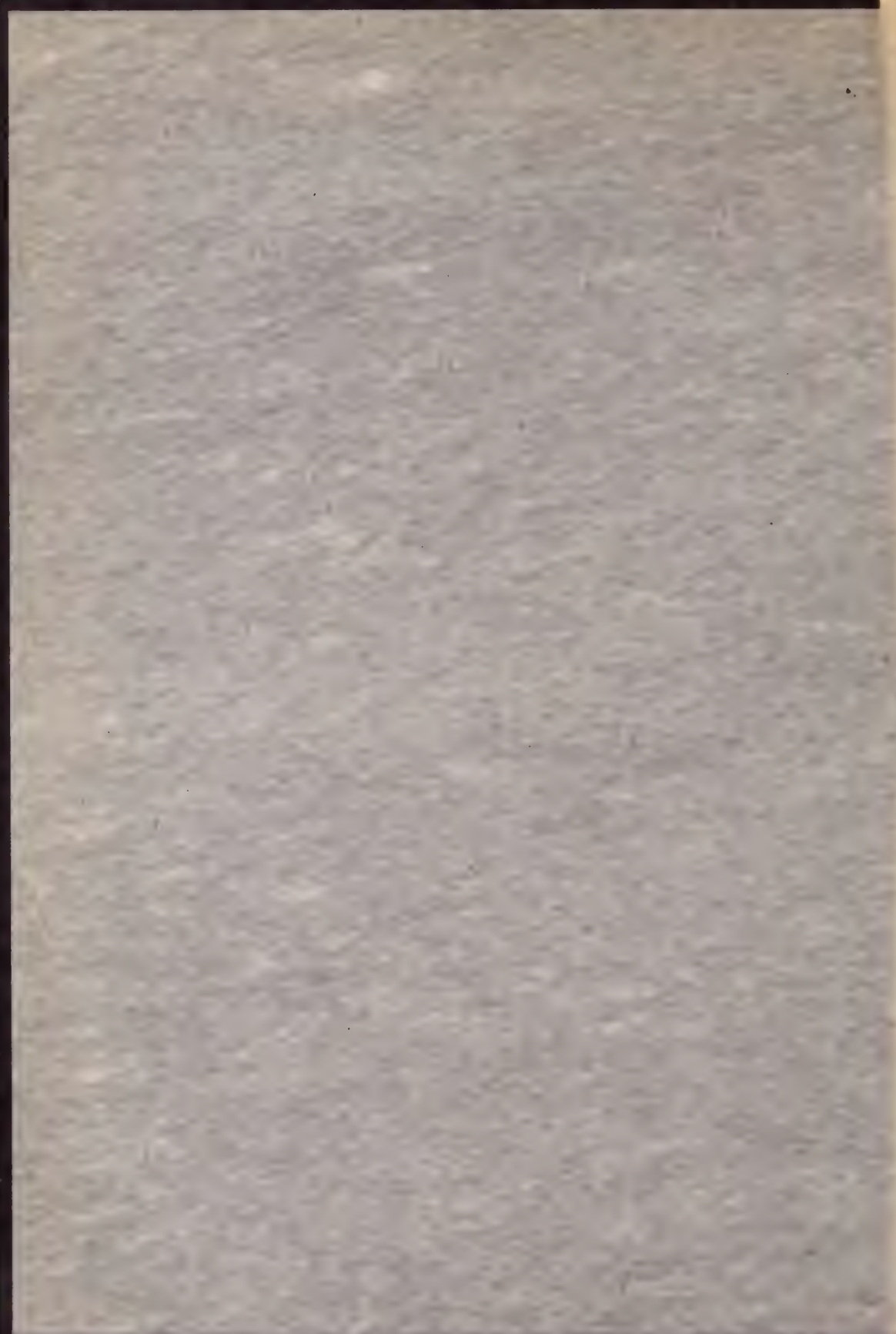
leading the life and dispensing the hospitalities of a country gentleman of the old school. He was fond of agricultural pursuits, and enjoyed the embellishment of the beautiful grounds about his home, taking great interest in the breeding of fine cattle. He was one of the first in this country to appreciate the qualities of the Alderney cows, and owned



MR. AND MRS. EDWARD F. SHONNARD.

a small but finely-bred herd when individuals of that variety were still rare in the United States. He took a great interest and excelled in all of the manly, out-door sports. In early life he was a famous cricketer, and was exceptionally skillful with the rod and gun, and later in life he never missed an opportunity to take part in the winter games of the Yonkers Curling Club, of which he was a member.

He was remarkable for his great local attachments. There was no place like Yonkers for him, and no place in Yonkers like his home. He never could be persuaded to absent himself for any great length of time. He never took any longer journey than to Washington, except when, a few years before his death, he went to the Rocky Mountains with his brother-in-law, Senator Roscoe Conkling, and a party of distinguished public officials. Although intensely interested in all that he saw on this excursion, none of the pleasures of the trip were equal in his mind to







Wm. H. Ransom

those which he experienced in getting back to the old homestead. He had been liberally educated, and was fond of reading and greatly interested in keeping himself informed of the progress of scientific research and discovery.

At first a strong Whig, and afterwards an earnest Republican in politics, he took a leading and influential position in the party affairs of the country, but never could be induced to accept any public office. He enjoyed the confidence and respect of the leaders in both the State and the nation. During the War for the Union he was an ardent and energetic supporter of the administration of President Lincoln, and was constantly consulted about matters affecting the interests of the State of New York. He was active in the raising of troops and in behalf of every measure which had for its end the restoration of the Union. In giving his consent to his only child Frederic to participate actively in the conflict as an officer in the Army of the Potomac he gave strong proof of his love of country. All of his aims in life were high and pure, and his methods were those of an independent, fearless mind, of spotless integrity. He died in 1875, from the effects of a paralytic stroke, at the age of sixty-five, leaving his widow and his only son and child, Frederic Shonnard, who was born at the homestead in the year 1841. By the terms of the will the Yonkers estate was divided between Mrs. Shonnard and her son, who, with his family, all reside together in the old home.

In 1868 the present Frederic Shonnard married Jesse Somerville Voss, of Baltimore, Md., a descendant of the Stuart and Knox families of Scotland, and of the Fitzhughs, of Virginia. She died in 1873, leaving one daughter, Sophia Seymour Shonnard. Death was to her a relief from years of suffering, patiently borne. The qualities of mind which she displayed endeared her to wide circles of friends, both in Yonkers and Baltimore.

In 1875 he married Eugenie Smyth, who was born in 1854 in Paris, France (where her parents resided for some years), the daughter of J. Kennedy Smyth, of New York, who is descended on his father's side from an old English family of that name, and on his mother's from the famous Douglas family of Scotland, of which an early English poet has said,—

"So many, so good as of Douglas blood have been,
Of one surname, in one Kingrick, never yet were seen."

Mrs. Frederic Shonnard's mother is Julia Gabriella Ogden, a daughter of Samuel Gouverneur Ogden, who was the great shipping merchant of New York in the early part of this century, and who, on her mother's side, is a great-granddaughter of Francis Lewis, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, and granddaughter of Morgan Lewis, the Governor of New York in 1804, and is related to the Ludlow, Livingston and Van Cortlandt families of this State.

The children of this marriage have been six in

number, of whom two have died, viz.: Frederic and Eugenie, the latter an infant. Frederic lived only six years, but in that short life, such was the manliness, intelligence and sweetness of his character, that he had strongly endeared himself to many in nowise related to him. The four living children are Horatio Seymour, Kennedy, Ludlow and Eugenia Frederica.

Nathaniel Radford, a native of Nova Scotia, came to the United States in the early part of the present century and settled in Poughkeepsie. His wife was Sarah Barton, of Dutchess County, and they were the parents of three sons, William, Lewis and Thomas; the latter was born in Poughkeepsie October 8, 1819. He remained in his native place till the age of fifteen, when he went to New York and entered the store of his brother Lewis, who was already established in business. There he remained for four years and then commenced business on his own account, and was very successful in his commercial transactions. In 1854, having accumulated a competence, he removed to Yonkers, where he passed the remainder of his life as a retired country gentleman, building the handsome residence on South Broadway, where his family now reside, and devoting his time and attention to the improvement of his estate, and making the comfort and enjoyment of his family his constant care.

Mr. Radford married Miss Adelia Antoinette, daughter of David B. Wood, of Newburg. Their family of ten children, who are all living, are Frances, wife of Oscar Waring; Huldah, wife of William Welsh; Adelaide W., wife of James H. Weller; Thomas W. (who married Eldora, daughter of Montgomery Davis); Antoinette, wife of Charles R. Crisfield; Emma, wife of Garrett F. Rose; Lizzie; Lewis (who married Lucy C. Berston); Walter and George B. Most of these are now residents of Yonkers.

William Radford, the elder brother of the subject of this sketch, was the first president of Yonkers, and was elected member of Congress. His brother Lewis is a successful business man of New York, where he now resides.

Mr. Thomas Radford was not attached to any political party, and shunned all offers of official honor. He was an attendant of the Reformed Church and his memory is cherished by his friends as a kind parent and a worthy citizen.

He died December 30, 1877, in the fifty-eighth year of his age.

S. Francis Quick, the story of whose life is so full of encouragement to the youth of energy and industry, was born at Rhinebeck, Dutchess County, April 7, 1830. When of suitable age for active labor he learned the carpenter's trade of Henry Latson, a skillful mechanic in his native place. At the end of his apprenticeship, in 1850, an accommodating neighbor loaned him twenty dollars to buy tools, and with these, and three dollars in his pocket (two of which he loaned to a fellow-workman) he came to Yonkers and commenced his labors with a cash capital of one dollar, but with an

amount of energy and perseverance that was worth a fortune. He first worked as a journeyman with Sylvanus Ferris, with whom he remained about three years, and at the conclusion of that time he formed a partnership with Nelson Ackert, and they bought out the business of their employer. This partnership continued for twenty years; they conducted a very thriving business, and soon gained an enviable reputation for skill and excellence in work, and honor in their business dealings. In 1869 a fire occurred, by which their buildings were destroyed, and caused a loss to the young partners of twenty-two thousand dollars. So well established was their reputation, that several gentlemen of means, among them Martin Bates, of Riverdale, and William Menzes, of New York, voluntarily called upon them and offered to supply the funds to enable them to commence business anew. Their shops were soon rebuilt and they entered upon a new career of prosperous activity. The rapid growth of the city of Yonkers and the adjoining villages made their business very extensive. Among the buildings erected by them may be mentioned the Baptist, the Unitarian and Episcopal Churches in Yonkers, and Christ Church, at Riverdale, the large buildings of the Catholic Institution of Mount St. Vincent, the foundry and machine-shops at Spuyten Duyvil, two-thirds of the factories in the city, besides a very large number of the finest private dwellings. Mr. Ackert, the junior partner, died in 1876, and Mr. Quick, who had a short time previously purchased his share of the business, has ever since conducted it in his own name. His buildings occupy seven lots on Atherton Street, and his shops are well supplied with machinery of the most improved kind, and furnish employment for fifty or seventy-five men. Mr. Quick, in politics, is connected with the Republican party, but has declined all offers of political preferment. He has for several years been one of the trustees of Yonkers Savings Bank. In religion, he is a member of the First Methodist Church, and has been one of the trustees for the past twenty years, and is well known as a liberal supporter of every benevolent enterprise. Mr. Quick is descended from an English family, who settled in Dutchess County at an early date, and his grandfather, Gerardus Quick, was living there during the Revolution. His father, Peters G. Quick, married, first, Rebecca, daughter of Daniel Ackert, and second, Lydia C., daughter of Sebastian Crapser. Their children were S. Francis, Charles W., Peter R., Edwin A., Catharine, wife of William Scoles, Annie, Cornelia, and Mary, wife of Elmore Rickert. Mr. S. Francis Quick (the subject of this article) married Susan Adams in 1854. Their children are Newton (who married Lucy Bryant, and has one son, Frederick), Arthur, Lucy, wife of Frank E. Wheeler, and Ella.

Edwin A. Quick, who is now associated with his brother, having charge of the architectural depart-

ment of his extensive business, married Martha Stapleton in 1862, and has three children, Elmer E. (who married Clarene, daughter of John Sherwood), Louise B. and Henry L. Mr. Quick left his native place when a boy, and began the study of architecture and practical carpentry, with the firm of Ackert & Quick. For many years he was superintendent for a prominent building firm in New York City, and during the last few years that he has been connected with his brother has designed some of the most prominent buildings in Yonkers and vicinity, the Warburton Building being perhaps one of his best efforts.

George H. Purser was born in 1810, in the parish of Christ Church, Surrey, on the banks of the Thames, and on the site of the ancient Paris Gardens, a celebrated place of recreation for the nobility in the reign of Queen Elizabeth.

His father was an architect and surveyor, but prematurely died before the birth of his son. The elder brother, William, who subsequently obtained reputation as an artist, neglected the business of his deceased parent, so that the family was reduced to comparative poverty, and the education of the younger son was neglected. He only remained at school for a few months, and was compelled to acquire the elements of learning wholly through personal efforts, and the opportunity afforded by associations. He entered the office of a lawyer named Charles Carus Wilson, then the tallest man in England. While in his service he became connected with the Mechanics' Institute, in Southampton Buildings, an institute founded by Dr. Birbeck.

Among his youthful associates were George Thompson, the Abolitionist and lecturer, who eventually became a member of Parliament. Mr. Thompson afterwards visited the United States, and his life was written by Lloyd Garrison, with whom he had formed a close intimacy. Richard Cull, who edited Ogilvie's dictionary, and subsequently became known as a linguist and antiquarian, and Joseph Jenkins, the artist, who recently died, were his companions. Out of their scanty earnings they sought instruction in elocution from John Thelwall, who, it may be remembered, in 1794 was tried for treason, with Horne Tooke and others, but was acquitted.

His eldest sister, occupied as a governess, offered to pay the expenses of his education at the college of Aberdeen, but the proffer was declined from the conviction that it would too severely tax her means, and that in England even learning could be made of little avail in any profession without personal influence and the lapse of many years. Under these convictions he concluded to make the United States his future home, and, if possible, to lay the foundation of his success in this country. Since his mother was an invalid, this resolution involved suffering. He took passage, in 1831, in the brig "Columbia," and, after a tempestuous voyage of nearly six weeks, landed at night, in the midst of winter, with the captain, in an open boat at



Francis Quirk







Geo. A. Purser

the foot of Cortlandt Street, with a scanty wardrobe and a capital of only five dollars. Being utterly friendless and without any available indorsement of character, in his simplest attire, he traversed the city asking employment, but not assuming intelligence. He temporarily found menial employment in chemical factories, and at night, for a small compensation, attended the book auctions conducted by Levy, on Broadway.

After a few months thus occupied he was engaged by a wholesale druggist, John M. Bradhurst, one of our most respected and wealthiest citizens. He here continued to discharge merely servile duties, until, when taking account of stock, the firm accidentally discovered that he could both read and write, when he was raised from post to post, until he became chief clerk in the establishment. It was during this period that he, unfortunately, entered into a public discussion with Dr. Sleigh, which resulted in procuring for him some reputation for ability, but gained him a notoriety which occasioned much regret. He conducted the debate with unvarying good temper, intimating that it was undertaken from no positive conviction that his skeptical views were correct, but rather from the desire of testing their accuracy, and arriving at a true conclusion. His opponent was a well-educated and fluent man, but not, it is believed, eminently respected for his personal character, and had assumed the undertaking to make money. Some of the most distinguished clergymen of the city presided and acted as moderators, and were invariably sincere and liberal men. When he insisted that the fees for admission should be divided, Sleigh was indignant, and paraded the fact in his opening speech, but was surprised and mortified to be informed with equal publicity by the presiding officer, that Mr. Purser had privately made arrangement with the moderators that his interest in the proceeds should pass into their hands to be, at their discretion, devoted to charitable purposes. At the end of ten days, the time stipulated, he withdrew from the controversy, refusing the urgent solicitations of Dr. Sleigh to continue the discussion, which had drawn some popular attention, and was decidedly profitable. The views and opinions then expressed he no longer entertains. Dr. Sleigh was anxious that the debate should be put in book-form, proposing to divide the pecuniary result, but this proposition was also declined.

He was a member of the old Volunteer Fire Department, having served his time with the Southwark Engine, No. 38. Thus occupied, he was at various times elected secretary and vice-president of the Fire Department, and discharged these offices for many years.

It was about this time that he became interested in politics, and was identified with the Loco Foco party, and eventually elected assistant alderman and alderman of the Fourth Ward, but on an independent ticket, and in opposition to the Tammany candidates. At that time the law providing for the protection of emigrants was very imperfect. The exclusive duty of caring for the sick and destitute devolved upon the ship-owners, who made bargains with unprincipled men to conduct establishments for that purpose, agreeing to pay to such speculators a certain sum per head for each passenger. This was merely nominal, since only a few had to be provided for. The result was the establishment of irresponsible hospitals, in which the inmates neither received medical nor moral care, the building being always crowded and decidedly unwholesome, and the food furnished insufficient and often offensive. To this subject he directed his earnest attention, and by visiting these shameless institutions was enabled to ascertain and expose these evils. The elaborate report which he prepared was published and was considered at a public meeting held at the Tabernacle. The report was embodied in a petition to the Legislature, and was thus the foundation of the existing system creating emigrant commissioners. The Legislature of New York subsequently re-published, in their proceedings, his report with commendations.

In 1848 he was appointed by the Supreme Court one of the commissioners to take and estimate land required in Westchester County for the construction of the Hudson River Railroad Company. Being the youngest member, he acted as secretary, and kept notes of their proceedings and of the evidence submitted. The owners very generally were hostile to the improvement, and claimed excessive damages. They insisted that the scheme would not only impair the beauty and value of the river-front, but would seriously interfere with the quiet and comfort of the residents. That they were mistaken wholly in these views is established by the fact that the property affected was enhanced in a few years more than a hundred per cent., and one of the owners in 1869 sold to Mr. Purser for five thousand dollars an acre, which, in 1840, had cost him almost nothing in comparison. In 1850 Mr. Purser assisted in drafting the act appointing tax commissioners in the city of New York, for the assessment of real and personal estate, on the understanding that the Whigs, then in ascendency, should select a non-partisan board. In consideration of this service, without personal solicitations, he was appointed one of the three commissioners.

Previous to this needed reform each ward of the city elected an assessor, and it may be readily imag-

ined that the valuations were frequently unequal and unjust.

Surrendering this office in 1854, he was appointed corporation attorney, a position which he occupied until 1860. With the exception of acting as clerk of street openings, under the direction of subsequent corporation counsels, he never sought or secured any political office, but was devoted to professional and journalistic pursuits.

In sympathy with sound public opinion, he, however, in 1869, vigorously opposed Messrs. Tweed, Connelly and the corrupt clique that controlled the municipal government, and favored the hostility of the Young Democracy. He prepared a draft of a city charter with the view of correcting existing abuses, and, after consulting with Samuel J. Tilden, Manton Marble and other respectable leaders, the document was approved, printed in the *World* office and submitted to the Legislature, where it was defeated only by political defection and the notorious use of money. It will be remembered that subsequently Tweed and his associates secured the passage of another charter, which confirmed and increased their corrupt power. Such opposition naturally increased the animosity of Tweed, and broke up on his part all political and personal relations with Mr. Purser.

It was at this time that the judiciary, by its action, forfeited public confidence by trampling upon private and corporate rights for personal ends. Among other projects a conspiracy was formed to embarrass the Mutual Life Insurance Company, and throw its property into the hands of a receiver. Such a proceeding would have seriously interfered with the interests of the insured. Mr. Winston, the president, with the concurrence of the directors, employed Mr. Purser to detect and, if possible, frustrate this secret design. He succeeded in discovering that a prominent judge of New York had arranged on *ex parte* proceedings to appoint such a receiver, and also ascertained the name of his political ally in this nefarious attempt. A few days before the proposed application to the court Mr. Purser personally communicated with the judge, threatening to make public the facts in his possession unless he abandoned the scheme. Under such apprehension he reluctantly yielded, to avoid exposure. This incident is referred to in a pamphlet written by Mr. Joseph Howard, in relation to the financial solvency and standing of the institution mentioned.

Though still continuing president of the *Daily News* Publishing Company, Mr. Purser has withdrawn substantially from all business occupations, finding entertainment in his library and in the collection of engravings and portraits for the illustration of historical and other literary work.

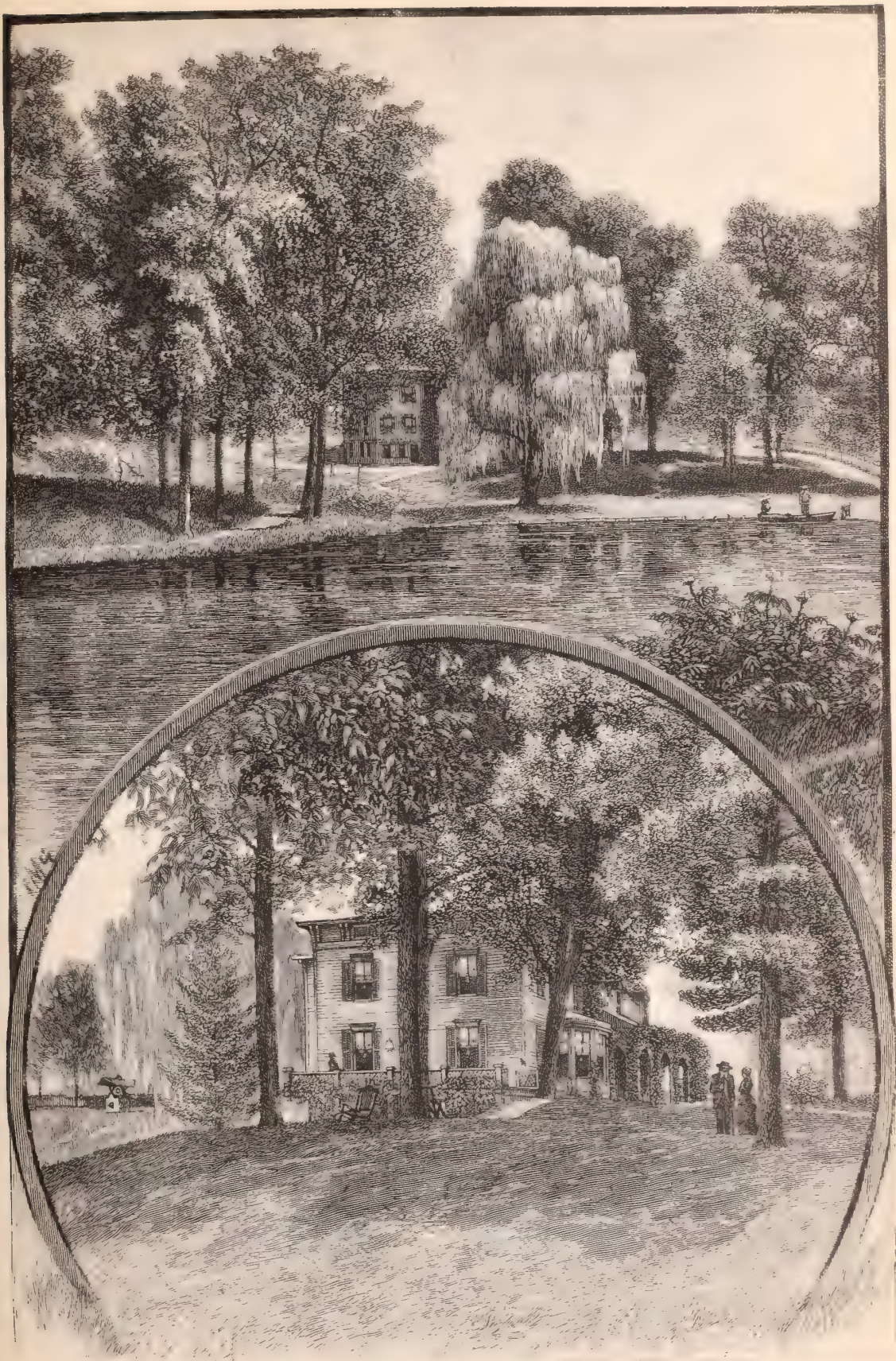
He married, in 1840, Priscilla S. Ditchett, and has a family of six daughters and one son—George H. Purser, Jr. Mr. Wm. Romer, of White Plains, Dr. F. C. Valentine and J. Henry Stegmann, of New York City, married into the family, but the latter died a few years ago.

And now we are led to wonder how many people are yet living who resided in the entire town of Yonkers thirty-one years ago, when our village was incorporated (1855). The population of the town in that year was seven thousand five hundred and fifty-four. In 1850, only five years before, it had been but four thousand one hundred and sixty. What could it have been in 1852?

We have before us the tax-list of this last year. It contains the names of four hundred and thirty resident tax-payers of the town. Careful examination of their names shows that thirty-three of these tax-payers are living, but have moved away, that three hundred and twenty-one of them are dead, and that seventy-six of them still live within what was, at that time, the town of Yonkers. The names of these seventy-six are as follows:

Anthony B. Archer, William H. Anderson, William Archibald, Peter Archer, William G. Ackerman, Hiram Barney, George Barker, Mrs. John Berrian (widow), William Brown, Alfred Burlington, Henry W. Bashford, Mrs. Esther A. Bashford (widow), Nelson Bailey, Isaac Barker, Mrs. Thomas Cahill, Albert Cole, John Copcutt, James Craft, Mrs. William Craft (widow), Thomas C. Cornell, William A. Cutbill, John B. Crisfield, George Crisfield, James Dusenberry, Michael Dearman, John Embree, George Ferris, George W. Francis, Statts Fowler, William C. Foote, George Fox, Robert P. Getty, John F. Garrison, Henry Gallina, Evert Gale, Joseph Godwin, John M. Houghin, Bailey Hobbs, John Hobbs, Peter Haines, Anson B. Hoyt, Noah B. Hoyt, John Henneberger, Alfred Jones, Ezra B. Keeler, John Kniffin, Jacob Kauffelt, Jacob F. Kolb, Pembroke Lawrence, William J. Majory, John Murtha, Joseph Moore, Charles Mercer, Dennis McGrath, Thomas O'Brien, Moses Odell, John Olmsted, Lawrence Post, Joseph Peene, Jacob Read, Samuel D. Rockwell, Levi P. Rose, Patrick Reynolds, Lewis Ritter, George Russell, Mary Samler, Odell Stephenson, John Thompson, Alfred Valentine, William A. Varian, John Henry Williams, Edward Weston, John T. Waring, Charles E. Waring, John Wheeler, James Youmans—seventy-six.

This shows that only about one in four of the resident tax-payers of 1852 are living in 1886, and that only about one in six are still living within what, in 1852, was the town of Yonkers. If this proportion (known to be correct) of the tax-payers be assumed to



"SHADY DELL."
RESIDENCE OF GEO. H. PURSER,
YONKERS, N. Y.



be correct of the entire population, it shows that in thirty-three years three-fourths of a population have died. We do not care to comment unnecessarily on this impressive reminder of the rapidity with which busy generations pass along, and come to be seen no more where they were once so much felt and so well known. It speaks for itself, and will carry its own lesson to thoughtful men.

As far as we know, no person now residing within the city of Yonkers has passed one hundred years of age. Mrs. Hannah Stillwagon, who lived at No. 30 Prospect Street, has died in 1886, at the great age of one hundred and three. Captain Isaac Denike, well known in our lower river towns as an old sloop-master on the Hudson, died in Yonkers November 2, 1880, aged one hundred and one years, one month and one day. And Mr. Thomas Marran, Sr., died in November, 1885, at the age of one hundred years and one month. We do not remember any other citizens of Yonkers who have really reached a century of age, though very many have come within a few months of it before passing away.

SECTION XXVI.

Conclusion.

WE reserve for this chapter a few statements respecting the origin, object and spirit of this history.

1. In the preparation of it we have drawn without reserve upon all persons and all sources within our reach from whom or which we could derive any information that would be of interest or service. Facts are not made by the historian, but simply collected. We were first put upon the collection of the annals of Yonkers in 1868, for use at the twenty-fifth anniversary of the organization of its Reformed Church, and a second time, in 1882, for use at the bicentennial of the founding of our Manor Hall. In our present history we have not only availed ourselves of the results of our earlier and more limited researches, but have pushed inquiry, as far as we possibly could, so as to take in every interest of Yonkers as a settlement, town, village and city from 1609 to the present time inclusive. We have not only covered all the manorial and colonial history of the place, but have shown the rise, progress and present condition of our general government and all its departments—judicial, health, excise, fire, water, police and educational. We have given full accounts of all our churches and missions, a very comprehensive history of our newspapers, industries, banks, charities, associations, unions, orders, clubs, hotels, boarding-houses, halls, means of transportation and cemeteries. We have even taken care to preserve against loss the detailed history of our Bi-Centennial celebration of 1882. And we have closed our history by glancing at the people who have made Yonkers what it is, and given it, humanly speaking, its character, value and power of attraction. We do not think we have omitted anything essential to a full understanding of the city. And what we

have collected we have recorded, not in the form of a succession of dry documents, but in a form flowing and readable. In collecting the facts of our later and present condition we have drawn upon the officers of our city government and the heads of its departments, upon pastors, editors, bank officers and proprietors of industries and largely upon our older citizens. It has given us pleasure to name at every point, as far as we could, all persons from whom we have gathered our facts or through whom papers have come to us. The work, however, of assorting, arranging and stating the facts that have been collected has been wholly our own. We say this, that if any censure shall be pronounced upon this history, it may fall wholly upon us and not upon any who have kindly helped us in the preparation of the work.

2. We have realized not only that it is *not* the business of the historian to make facts, but that it *is* his business to record accurately what has been and is. We have been compelled to put on record not only all conditions of our city that have our heartiest sympathy, but also, with equal fairness, its conditions with which we have no sympathy whatever. It has been our object to unveil the composition, habits, spirit and working of our people and of our city life. One must have an understanding of a place to adapt himself to it and it to himself, and especially to be useful in it. Yonkers is the most cosmopolitan city on the Hudson, and it derives an entirely unique character from its close involvement with the great metropolis so near at hand. It is an exceedingly curious study, whether for the man of pleasure, the man of business, the scholar, the teacher or the professional man. It is especially curious as a study for the minister of the gospel, and for all classes of Christian workers. Its opportunities are great and its dangers are proportionate. That it has a vast unfolding before it, to be involved in the unfolding of the great city of New York, is certain. How to keep back its evil and develop its good forces, how to repress the selfishness that breeds with such vigor at the great business centre of the Western Continent, and how to stimulate those better impulses that are our greatest hope—these are the problems that will growingly press upon all who may be called to share in the Christian and philanthropic work of the future. It was one of our great ends in undertaking this work to put into the hands of present and coming workers what they may need for the comprehension of our civil, social, industrial, educational and religious conditions, and we hope we have, at least to a good extent, accomplished what we set out to do.

3. We now hand over our work to the people of Yonkers, dedicating it to them as a labor of love. It reveals that we have had a history. The forest solitudes of Nepperhan, trailed back and forth by savages, have given way. Civilization has displaced barbarism. The same hills, stream, river and Palisades that Hudson saw are still here, but population and

labor have changed the scene to one of greater beauty and of busy life. The slope from the river up has become a succession of cultivated lawns, rising above each other in terraced grace, dotted with mansions and churches, and bowered within the shade of ornamental trees. All this we see. It is our glory. But is there anything we still need? We have thought much on this. Plainly, we need, first of all, to be grateful to the God of Providence both for our past history and our present condition. The outgrowth from what we have written ought to be a genuine patriotic spirit that will take up what the fathers have given us, and carry it to proportionately greater results. No doubt we need further material developments, improved sanitary conditions, the increasing adaptation of our river-front to the growing wants of business and travel, multiplied ways and means of communication with the metropolis, and expanded postal facilities. Possibly we need some political changes. Perhaps we ought to be a distinct county by ourselves. If not this, we must have at least our due weight in the County Board of Supervisors, and the means of conducting our legal business without going to White Plains. These things we need, and they will come. But we need more. We need an *esprit de corps* among ourselves as a people. Our proximity to the larger city subjects us to a drain upon our spirit. Against this we must guard. To make Yonkers a perfect success we need to concentrate our support upon our local interests and our own men. And the intellect and culture of Yonkers need to know and assert themselves. No city of our size, without a college or professional school in it, has a larger proportion of scholars and of minds trained and active in arts and science. These ought to know each other. True, each one has his own burdens, but the public good demands some concessions of time, and a breaking up of that intense self-hood which makes each scholar and thinker by himself an independent microcosm, related to others, not through rational and willing sympathy, but only through irresistible gravitation. It is true that the conditions of social life largely fix themselves, and no one can break them up. Yet there is a limit beyond which caste feeling cannot go without trampling upon the best instincts of the human soul and endangering the best elements of a community life. And, then, there is one more need that touches the very heart of all genuine prosperity and progress,—it is the determination on the part of our citizens that law shall be obeyed within our limits. It requires no long residence in Yonkers to discover that here, as well as elsewhere, law is defied by men who lie in wait for bodies and for souls day and night, Sabbaths and week-days, bent only on the money gain their wicked traffic brings. One of the greatest needs of Yonkers is strong assertion of moral principle and an irresistible expression of a popular will that all haunts of vice shall close, that our Sabbaths shall not be pro-

faned and that our avenues shall be kept healthful and safe. Topographic features may make a city beautiful, and geographic relations may give it advantage, but righteousness only can exalt a community, and sin is a reproach to any people. This, more than any other thing, our city needs to feel. We have a great future before us without doubt. What the character of that future is to be will depend, humanly speaking, upon ourselves and our fidelity to that stern principle which alone can make a people truly strong and truly great.

David Coley

CHAPTER II.

GREENBURGH.

BY REV. JOHN A. TODD, D.D.,

Pastor of the Second Reformed Church, Tarrytown.

THE township of Greenburgh, which had previously been a part of the Manor of Philipsburgh, was set off and established with its present name and boundaries in the year 1788. The name is of uncertain origin. Two etymologies may be given, neither of which seems improbable. Its inhabitants at the time were largely of Hollandish descent, and in the language familiar to them, the word *groen*, signifying *green*, and the words *graan* and *grein*, both signifying *grain*, might well, either the one or the other, have suggested the first syllable of the name, while the word *burg*, in the same language, signifying a *borough*, or an incorporated town or district of country, very evidently supplied the second. *Green-district* or *Grain-district* would thus express a prominent feature of the locality. The *burg* already belonged to it as part of its recognized title of *Philipsburgh*, and when the Philipse proprietor and his family became Tories during the Revolution, and their property was confiscated at its close, the name Philipse naturally dropped out, and the descriptive term *Green* took its place. The fact that it has always been known as *Green-burgh*, and never as *Grain-burgh*, seems to determine its true etymology.

The whole region, when it first became known to the Dutch, was inhabited by a powerful tribe of aborigines, whose name, derived from that of a particular place within its limits, though variously written by different early explorers and historians, may be given as *Weckquaesqueeks*. It is said to mean "the place of the bark kettle," and to have been corrupted by the English into "Wickers Creeks." The territory occupied by these Indians is described by De Vries, in 1640, as lying on the east bank of what is now the Hudson River, opposite to Tappaan, which lies on the west. The Indians belonged to the Mohi-

can branch, one of the sub-divisions of the great Algonquin race. From Lake Erie to the mouth of the Mohawk, on the Hudson, extended the territory of the Five Nations, to whom the French gave the name of the Iroquois. From Albany southward to Spuyten Duyvil Creek, on the east of the Hudson, and down to the lower slope of the Highlands on the west, stretched the dominion of the Mohicans. Of course, it included all of what now constitutes the county of Westchester. The Manhattan tribe occupied the island of Manhattan, which has since become the world-renowned city of New York, while the Tappans and Monseys dwelt on the west side of the Hudson, from the Dunderberg southward below the New Jersey line.

In regard to these Indian tribes, it is stated by the Rev. Dr. Cole, in his very able and carefully prepared Historical Discourse at the Bi-Centennial celebration of the city of Yonkers, October 18, 1882, that they "were all divided into families, and each family had one or more villages. From Poughkeepsie down the Mohicans had on this (the east) side of the river the Wappinger family above and in the Highlands, the Kitchawank family along the Croton, the Sintsinck family within our present Ossining, and the Weckquaesqueek family from the Sintsincks down to Spuyten Duyvil, and between the Hudson and the Bronx." The name Weckquaesqueek, he adds, "was applied not to the family only, but to a rivulet emptying into the Hudson at Dobbs Ferry, and also to a family village at the rivulet's mouth."

From 1614, when the commercial intercourse between the Dutch and the Indians had already commenced, down to 1693, when, by a royal charter from the English crown, the Manor of Philipsburgh, stretching from the Spuyten Duyvil Creek to the Croton, and from the Hudson to the Bronx, was erected, the mutual relations of the colonists and the savages were sometimes warlike and sometimes peaceful, though happily the latter condition for the most part prevailed. No grants nor charters were ever given by the Dutch that did not require the grantees to buy of the Indians whatever lands they appropriated, at a purchase, and by a payment, to which both parties agreed. Still, there were occasions of ill-feeling and sometimes of violence brought about by personal aggression from one side or the other, which resulted in mutual bloodshed and wrong.

The treaty of peace concluded between Director-General Kieft and the Indians represented by their chiefs on August 30, 1645, led to the re-establishment of a good understanding with the natives in what is now Westchester County, and was followed by renewed intercourse in trade and the purchase of several tracts of Indian lands. Two years after the treaty Governor Kieft was succeeded in office by the celebrated Peter Stuyvesant. In July, 1649, two years later still, we find Director-General Stuyvesant acting in behalf of the Dutch West India Company, pur-

chasing of the Indians a large "parcel of land, and all their oystering, fishing, etc.," "lying on the North River of New Netherland, on the east shore, called Wixquaeskeek." This purchase constituted a part at least of the present township of Greenburgh.

The property was seized, however, in 1665, when the rule of the Dutch was superseded by that of the English, and New Netherland passed over to the control of his Royal Highness, James, Duke of York. Thenceforward it continued under English domination, until that, in turn, was swept away by the Revolution in 1776.

There frequently were conflicting claims to title and jurisdiction, arising partly from the ignorant or careless way in which grants and patents were given by the governments across the ocean, and partly from the fact that the same territory seems to have been sold by the Indians at different times to two or three different purchasers. Thus the same property bought for the Dutch West India Company by Governor Stuyvesant, in July, 1649, was sold again to Connecticut by the Indians in 1662. Three years after that it was seized by the English as property of the Dutch West India Company, and later on—that is, from 1681 to 1684—it was sold again by the sachems of Weckquaesqueek to Frederick Philipse, by whom it was incorporated into his manorial estate. A similar instance is that connected with the case of Thomas Pell, who, in 1654, came over from Connecticut, and began a settlement near Vredeland, in Westchester, upon lands "which had long before been bought and paid for" by the Dutch. Governor Stuyvesant sent Cornelius Van Tienhoven, the fiscal, to forbid the English from settling there, but Pell, disregarding Governor Stuyvesant's mandate, soon afterward purchased from the Indian Sachem Wampage, or "Ann Hoock," as he called himself after the murder of Mrs. Ann Hutchinson at the Hoock, and from five others of his tribe, a large tract of land that had been sold to the Dutch already, including the present town of Pelham.

Among those who had come over to New Amsterdam from the old country at an early day, as early at least as 1653, was "the Honorable Frederick Philipse, of East Friesland, in Holland." The orthography of the name is given variously. There is a vane in shape of a banneret on the east end of the old Dutch Church of Sleepy Hollow, which was probably his own device, and put there by his own order, and into that is cut the monogram of the church's founder, in combination, representing in the Dutch orthography *Vreedryck Felypse* or *Felypsen*, while upon one of the two silver cups of the communion service given to the church by himself and his wife



there is graven the name *Fredryck Flypse*, and upon the other the name of his wife, *Catharina Van Cortlant*. His name alone with the same orthography is also graven upon the baptismal bowl.

On December 10, 1681, Frederick Philipse—for thus his name is given in the English documents and records—became the purchaser of a tract of land along the “Pekantico,” mainly in the present township of Greenburgh, but partly also in that of Mount Pleasant, the said tract “beginning on the north side of a creek called Bisightick (now known as Sunnyside Brook, running through lands of Edward S. Jaffray, Esq., and directly in front of the late residence of Washington Irving, where it empties into the Hudson River), and so ranging along said river northerly to the land of the said Frederick Philipse (previously purchased north of the present Greenburgh line in Mount Pleasant), and thence along the said land, northeast and by east until it comes to and meets with the creek called Neppiran,” etc.

For this tract Frederick Philipse gave a quantity of wampum and other goods enumerated in the deed of conveyance as follows: “10 fathom of duffils, 10 blankets, 8 guns, 7 shirts, 1 anker of rum, 25 lbs. of powder, 10 bars of lead, 2 iron pots, 5 earthen cans, 12 steels to strike fire, 2 cooper’s adz, 2 half vats of beere, 70 fathom of wampum, 7 pairs of stockings, 6 howes, 12 axes, 9 kettles, 40 knives, 6 brass tobacco boxes, 6 coates, 2 drawing knives.”

In the following spring, April 12, 1682, he made a second purchase of lands in Greenburgh, lying south of those included in the first purchase, “ranging along Hudson River southerly to a creek or fall called by the Indians Weghquegsike, and by the Christians called Lawrence’s plantation; and from the mouth of the said creek or fall upon a due east course to a creek called by the Indians Nippiran, and by the Christians Youncker’s Kill.” This purchase included what are now the villages of Tarrytown, Irvington and Dobbs Ferry. The consideration, as in the previous case, consisted of pots, kettles, wampum, shirts, stockings, blankets, “yearthen jugges,” rum, “beere,” guns, powder, lead, knives, “axis,” “cooper’s adz,” etc.

On September 6, 1682, five months later, Frederick Philipse made his third purchase of land in Greenburgh from the native Indians, “being on the east side of Hudson’s River, beginning on the north side of the land belonging to the Youncker’s Kill, or Nepperhaem, at a great rock, called by the Indians Sigghes, and from thence ranging into the wood eastwardly to a creek, called by the Indians Nepperha, and from thence along the said creek northerly till you come to the eastward of the head of a creek, called by the Indians Weghqueghe, being the utmost bounds of the lands formerly bought of the Indians.” This purchase included the yet unsold land lying north and west of the Nepperhan, extending thence up to the lower limit of the last purchase and across to the Hudson River. The consideration in this case, as before, was paid in blankets, shirts, guns, powder, lead, rum, etc.

On June 5, 1684, Frederick Philipse made his fourth and last purchase of the Indians in Greenburgh, and

the tract thus transferred includes the lands lying east of the Nepperhan (or Saw-Mill) River and west of the Bronx. The payment consisted of the usual quantity of clothing and other dry-goods, and of kitchen utensils, together with guns, powder and rum, to which were added “10 spoons and 2 rools of tobacco.”

By these successive conveyances, running through a period of nearly three years, with others previously made, and upon what now seems a very ridiculous consideration, Frederick Philipse became the proprietor of an immense landed estate within the limits of the present townships of Greenburgh and Mount Pleasant. He had already become the owner of other lands in addition to these, having made a joint purchase in Upper Yonkers with Thomas Delaval and Thomas Lewis on November 29, 1672, which seems to have been his first transaction of the kind in this neighborhood. He afterwards bought of white people, west of the Hudson River, the Tappaan salt-meadows, lying opposite to Irvington and Dobbs Ferry, on June 27, 1687, which was probably his last. These last-named purchases, however, lie outside of the territory whose history is here to be traced.

Although he completed his title as proprietor of all these lands in Greenburgh by his final purchase in 1684, it was not till 1693, nine years later, that Frederick Philipse received the royal charter from William and Mary, King and Queen of Great Britain, constituting him lord of the Manor of Philipsburgh, confirming his claims to the lands and defining their bounds.

The title to the possessions thus acquired and the rights and prerogatives conferred by the royal charter were transmitted by inheritance through a period of eighty-six years, until they were all extinguished in 1779 by the Legislature of New York, which declared Colonel Frederick Philipse, the great-grandson of the original lord of the manor, to be guilty of treason against his country by casting in his lot with her enemies during the War of the Revolution, and on that ground it confiscated all his property to the State. The Legislature went further and enacted a law providing for the appointment of Commissioners of Forfeitures to sell the lands thus confiscated. A supplementary act was passed on May 12, 1784, under which Isaac Stoutenburgh and General Philip Van Cortlandt were duly appointed as said commissioners, and in 1785 they accordingly sold the lands in fee to those largely who had been former tenants under the hereditary proprietor and lord. The deeds given by these commissioners were to operate as a warranty of the State against all future claims. The title to a large part of the land in Westchester County, and to all, in fact, in Greenburgh and Mount Pleasant, is traceable directly back to these commissioners’ deeds.

The Philipse family had a history that was marked by varied fortunes. Its origin was in Bohemia, where it is said to have ranked as noble. Being in active sympathy with John Huss and Jerome of Prague,



HORTICULTURAL BUILDING.
LORD & BURNHAM, PROPRIETORS



"REDWOOD COTTAGE,"
IRVINGTON, N. Y.
RESIDENCE OF FREDERIC A. LORD AND W. ADDISON BURNHAM.



those Reformers before the Reformation, some of its members became the subjects of persecution. They suffered severely, both in person and property, and were at length constrained to leave their native country and to seek for an asylum in Holland. In Friesland, on the northwestern shore, among a people—the Frisians—who are said to be the only Germanic tribe that has preserved its name since the time of Tacitus, and who were characterized as much by their physical force as by their courage and lofty independence, the head of the Philipse family made for himself a home in the little town of Bolsward. Here, about the close of the sixteenth century, the father of our American Philipse was born. The child having grown to man's estate, took for his wife Grietje or Margaretha Dacres. To them a son was born in Bolsward, about 1626, who was named Frederick, after his father and grandfather. Some years later, when that son and only child became a young man, the parents emigrated to New Amsterdam (now New York), in America. Being poor, the son had learned the trade of a carpenter in order to earn a living. He is said to have worked at his trade on the old Dutch Church in the fort, down near the present Battery. It is claimed, indeed, that the pulpit of that church was the work of his own hands. Having made his way by industry and thrift, he afterwards left his trade and engaged in mercantile business.

At length he married the rich widow of Peter Rudolphus de Vries, whose maiden-name was Margaretha Hardenbroek. She had an only daughter, Eva, whom he adopted as his own, and who is spoken of in the history of the times as Eva Philipse. After some years of continued prosperity, during which he amassed a large fortune, his wife died, not later probably than about 1690, and on November 30, 1692, he married a second time. The lady in this case was Catharina Van Cortlandt, daughter of Oloff Stephanus Van Cortlandt and widow of John Derval. She brought him a double fortune, first from her father and then from her late husband, who had left her with ample means. This is the Catharine Van Cortlandt and wife of Frederick Philipse, whose name is so intimately connected with Tarrytown, with the old

Dutch Church of Sleepy Hollow and with Castle Philipse, or the manor-house, on the Pocantico Creek. Frederick Philipse died in 1702, aged seventy-six years, and was buried under the old church. His widow, the Lady Philipse, survived him twenty-eight years and died in 1730, which is the date of her last will and testament.

The children of Frederick Philipse were: 1. Eva de Vries Philipse, who was really his step-daughter, but whom he adopted as his own child. She married Jacobus Van Cortlandt in 1691, the year before his own second marriage. 2. Adolphus. 3. Philip, who died in Barbadoes in 1700, two years before his father. He left an only child, Frederick, five years old. 4. Anna.

To his adopted daughter Eva and his own daughter Anna he left a large amount of property in New York City, New Jersey and elsewhere outside of



PHILIPSE MANOR HOUSE, PUTNAM COUNTY, N. Y.

the Philipsburgh Manor. But the manor itself he divided into two parts, and left one part to his son Adolphus, and the other to his grandson Frederick, whose father had died in Barbadoes. The part above Dobbs Ferry he left to his son Adolphus. The part below he left to his grandson Frederick. Thus the manor continued divided for forty-seven years, till 1749, when Adol-

phus died unmarried, and his nephew, Frederick, having inherited his uncle's estate, the two parts were reunited and became one. Having been born in Barbadoes and educated in Europe, Frederick was a stranger to the church of his grandfather, the Dutch Church, but was devoted to the Church of England. His wife was Joanna Brockholes, daughter of General Anthony Brockholes, whom he married in 1719. He died in New York City, July 26, 1751, aged fifty-seven years, leaving a widow and five children.

The oldest of these children was his son Frederick, born September 14, 1720, and he became the third and last lord of the Manor of Philipsburgh. He completed his education and graduated at King's College (now Columbia), in New York City. From the fact of his being colonel of the militia, he was most frequently spoken of as Colonel Philipse. His wife was the widow Elizabeth Rutgers and daughter

of Charles Williams, an English gentleman, connected with the custom-house. Colonel Philipse was a devoted adherent of the Church of England. Being a Tory in the Revolution, he was arrested by the American authorities after the battle of White Plains, or Chatterton's Hill, which took place on October 28, 1776. In 1777 he betook himself for refuge to the city of New York, which was then in the hands of the British. From thence he went to England, where he died in the city of Chester on April 30, 1785, aged sixty-five years. He was buried in the great cathedral church of that city, where a monument was erected to his memory. The following words, taken from the inscription upon it, give, probably, a truthful statement of his attitude and spirit during the Revolutionary War: "Firmly attached to his sovereign and the British constitution, he opposed, at the hazard of his life, the late Rebellion in North America: And for this faithful discharge of his duty to his King and country he was proscribed, and his estate, one of the largest in New York, was confiscated by the usurped Legislature of that Province. When the British troops were withdrawn from New York, in 1783, he quitted a province to which he had always been an ornament and benefactor, and came to England, leaving all his property behind him."

The British government indemnified him, however, for the losses he sustained by the confiscation of his estate.

By going back a few years in the chronological order, an idea may be gathered in regard to the population and to the religious condition of Westchester County, including Greenburgh and Mount Pleasant, in the year 1759, from a letter written to Archbishop Secker, then at the head of the Church of England as Archbishop of Canterbury, by the Rev. Samuel Johnson, D.D., the first president of King's (now Columbia) College, New York City. The letter, dated King's College, New York, July 25, 1759, was copied by the writer of this account from the New York Colonial Manuscripts (history), London Documents xxxv. vol. vii. p. 398, in the State Library at Albany. The Rev. Dr. Johnson writes: "The next thing is to give your Grace an account of those places where Missions are wanted. And here I beg leave first to mention a great part of this province. I mean all that tract on the East side of Hudson's River, from West Chester upwards quite as far as we have any settlements, abounding with people, but almost destitute of Ministers of any denomination, except two Dutch and two Germans, and many people have almost lost all sense of Christianity. Indeed, in the large County of Westchester there is only good Mr. Wetmore and two Dissenting Teachers that are capable of duty. Northward of that is Coll. Philips's Manour, on which are people enough for a large Congregation without any minister at all. The Coll. has himself built a neat small Church and set off a tract for a Glebe, which will be considerable in

time, and he and his tenants are very desirous of a Minister, but will need the Society's assistance."

With the exception of the preceding statements in regard to the Philipse family and their relations to the Manor of Philipsburgh, from which Greenburgh was taken and erected into a separate township in 1788, there is scarcely any information pointing to matters of historical interest connected with the locality for about three-quarters of a century,—that is, from 1700 to 1775. The land had been purchased from the Indians, and the influx of European immigration, together with the natural increase of the white population, soon established the ascendancy of civilization over barbarism. The whites increased; the Indians decreased and passed more and more out of sight. The whole of the township was occupied by a people engaged in agricultural and pastoral pursuits, and life with them was quiet and uneventful. The years came and went with but little or nothing to rouse them to deeds of conspicuous or public importance, or break the rural tranquillity of their homes. It is true, the old French and Indian War extended from 1754 to 1763, when, by the treaty of Paris, France surrendered to Great Britain all her possessions in North America, east of the Mississippi River, from its source to the river Iberville, and thence through Lakes Maurepas and Pontchartrain to the Gulf of Mexico. But the theatre of this great struggle was too remote from Westchester County to have called forth any special exertions from its people. There are, indeed, traditions of individuals in the county who bore a part in the military and other operations of the English and their colonies that tended to establish their supremacy, but those traditions are few and vague. There is said to be a general dearth of historical data for all parts of the county between 1700 and 1775. This is owing chiefly to the causes already referred to, but it may, in some degree, also be due to the alleged fact that a portion of the county records were consumed in Bedford when that village was burned by a party of British Light-Horse, under Lieutenant-Colonel Banastre Tarleton, on July 2, 1779. The county, it should be remembered, had been organized nearly a hundred years before—that is, on November 1, 1683.

There is lying before the writer at this moment, however, the original manuscript Minute-Book of the "Town Clark for the Manor of Philipsburgh" from "1742, the first tuesday In April" to "the 6th day of April, 1779, and in the Third Year of our Independency,"—that is, for a period of thirty-six years. One of the covers is torn off, the paper is stained and yellow and a considerable number of leaves are cut out nearly in the middle of the book. The records begin at each end of the volume and go on toward the middle. By reversing it, the bottom of the page at one end becomes the top at the other. The records relate almost entirely to three matters of public interest,—1. The names of town officers with the date of

their election, which seems to have occurred always in the spring. 2. The record of public roads, with the starting-point and terminus, and the general direction they took. 3. The "entering" of estray and unclaimed cattle that had pastured on the common, with a description of their ear-marks, etc., and what was finally done with them.

It may give some idea of the condition of things to reproduce here a few extracts from this venerable record, and that they may be the better appreciated they will be given word for word and letter for letter. The earliest record is written thus :

"1742—the first tuesday In April is chosen fore Eessors for the Mannor of philipsburg, Joseph geddenie and Gerret van Wert, Junr.

"fore Constable and Colector is chosen Joeghem Van Wert.

"pound master is Elbert Aerse.

"fence fucers (Fence Viewers), piet buys (Pete Boice) and tomas Storm and Jacop Willse and William hammond and Barrant duysen and John Colye and Charl Davids.

"fore overzeers for the King Roads : Jacop Concklin, for the Road from tomas storm to the mills, and John Martine, Junr., and Sybout Ecker, for the King Road from broniks Rever long by necklaas storm (Nicholas Storm) to Jacop van wert, and William bret, for the King Road from Broniksis Rever along by davids storm to the upper mill or breeges over the mill Creek or rune, and for the King Road from bronksis Rever to Saw Mill River, along by anthony vanekrie, william Anderson, and for the King Road from the upper Mill to Charl davids, Evert bruyen and Johannis van tiesxel (Van Texel or Van Tassel), the son of Jacop, to Croeteens Riever, and Jacop Gardinier for the Rood from Captien Leggit to the upper mill brigs, and John hiyitt for the King Road from tomas storm to the greet Rock, and for the ferry Rood, John abbelbe (Appleby) and Joseph Conklin, Junr."

It is not easy to identify at the present time all the roads here mentioned. Some of them have been changed and some probably closed up altogether. But there are some which it is not difficult to trace. For instance, "the road from Thomas Storm's to the mills" is the present Broadway, running north from the Storm homestead at Dobbs Ferry to the old mill on the Pocantico, while "the King Road from Thomas Storm to the great Rock" is Broadway running south from the Storm homestead at Dobbs Ferry to "the Graet Rock Stone Sigghes" below Hastings, which marks the dividing line between Greenburgh and Yonkers. "The ferry Rood," it is not unlikely, was one leading from the back country to Dobbs Ferry.

The next year there is another record, which reads thus :

"1743.—The first tuesday in april is Chosen att the town meeting for overseers of the highway from

tomas storm to the Great rock, William Dobbs; and from the upper mill to Crootens, tuenis Cosson and frensis besle; and from the upper mills to bronkses Riever, Abraham van wert, the son of garret van wert; and for the Road from Anthenie tamkin along to Harmme yureks is chosen over sier Henry storm; Culiess tamkins from the Spran to bronkis Riever; and from the Spran to Saw mill River, Joh Roessl; and from the upper mills to nonqeethen, William legget, Junr.; and Samwil watters long the said Rood to the bevermaddo; and Johnson baeker for the Roed to north Cassel; and for the Roed from bronkis Riever to Jacob van wert Moses hedde and Hannis Van tesxel?"

The Spran, or properly Spraine, here spoken of, is a stream which rises near the centre of the township, between the Bronx and the Nepperhan (or Saw-Mill) Rivers, and after flowing southeasterly for some distance is joined by the Grassy Spraine, and finally empties into the Bronx. At least, it did before its current was diverted to furnish a water supply for the city of Yonkers.

An example of the way in which the roads were laid out and described—and there were a good many of them, sometimes three or four in one year—may be seen in the following records :

"June 6th, 1757.—Then Laid out a Road to Martling's Landing, Begining at a Small Brook South of Martling, and marked a Chesnut Stadle at a pint of Rocks ye South Side, and Runing Down to a Chesnut tree marked on ye South Side to ye South of ye Elboe of ye path west ward down to High waters mark; then Running with high waters mark to a Small Brook that Comes out of ye medow, & Cov all under ye hill to be Road & Landing. the Road Excepting where Martling's house and stock yards stands, has been altered.

"April ye 29th, 1766.—then Laid out a Road, beginning at ye Post Road between Barrent Dutchers, and ye lots which was Laid out on ye flats at Martling Landing, beginning at ye Post Road by a Chesnut Stake marked on ye North Side of ye Road in ye Corner of Hendrick Martlings wheat field, So Runing Down to ye Landing between Barrent Dutchers house & barn marked on ye North Side of ye Road to where ye Road turns by Chesnut Stump, marked, & from thence Runing Northerly a Long ye River to Chenut oak marked on ye East Sid of ye Road, & So a Long between Jacob fogeles hous & River untill it meets ye other Road which Comes Down by Dykmans."

A matter that seems to have awakened considerable public interest and attention, in those peaceful times, was the management and disposition of the stray cattle that were marked by their owners and turned out to pasture on the commons. They were scrupulously reported to the pound-master, whose ingenuity in describing them and whose resources in knowing what to do with them seem sometimes to have been

sorely exercised. The following may be taken as specimens of the record :

“1752, December 13th.—Entred a blak three year old haffar, Marked with a halfpenny on the fore syd of the off Ear, and a halfpenny on the back syd of the same Ear, and a Slit in the Same Ear. Entred by Jacob Hileker.

“dito, December 28th.—Entred a dark Brindel haffar marked with a Crop of the ofe Ear and a halfpinni att the under syde of the same and a halfpinni att the upper Syde of the near Ear. Entered by Dirck van Tessel ; payde for Entrin.”

But perhaps one of the most serious matters of this sort was that referred to in the record under date of December 22, 1749, in which it appears that the owner of a “Straa brindel haffer” could not be found, and the animal had to be “Solld att publyk Vandue” in order to relieve the officers and the Manor of Philipsburgh of the responsibility. The transaction as recited with official solemnity, is given thus,—

“1749, the 2^d day of Desember.—the straa brindel haffer Solld att publyk vandue To the heighest bidder. the Said heffar—that by Abraham buys entred upon the town Book in the year 1748, the Seventh day of Desember—is Solld acording To the act of the Genrally asibly.

	£. s. d.
“Ditt, Johannis Dengser, Debt for the said haffer.....	1 16 6
Ditto, To Abraham buis for winteren the Said haffer.....	0 15 0
Ditto, for entredting Said haffer.....	0 00 9
Ditto, To Johannis Duyser for pasterrin the Said heffer one Summer.....	0 06 0
Ditto, for the twon Clark fuees entredting the Said haffer.....	0 06 6
Ditto, To the Carges of the Saell.....	0 10 0
Ditto, for To kept the a Count the Clark, fees for Adtisements for Saell.....	0 19 0
	£1 50 0

It thus appears that “the Said haffer” was successfully disposed of, being “Solld at publyk vandue” for £1 16s. 6d. The expenses of the sale and of one year’s provision and care amounted to £1 5s., which left in the public treasury a balance of 11s. 6d.

At the present day, with a larger development and broader views of public business and policy, these records may excite the reader’s smile, but they were matters of importance in the condition of society then existing, and they were the rude beginnings of a vigorous growth that has matured into this imperial State of New York.

As we come now to the delineation of the boundaries of Greenburgh, a name and a division known only since March 7, 1788, it is to be observed that the several tracts acquired by Frederick Philipse from the Indian tribes, either directly or otherwise, were consolidated into one, and erected into the

Manor of Philipsburg by royal letters patent dated June 12, 1693.

These parcels together covered an area of eighty-six square miles, and they comprise the territory east of the Hudson, from which, in March, 1788, about five years after the close of the Revolutionary War, were erected the townships of Yonkers, Greenburgh and Mount Pleasant. The present township of Ossining was originally a part of Mount Pleasant, but was set off by act of the Legislature May 2, 1845, as a separate township, under the name which it now bears.

The southern boundary of Greenburgh follows the dividing line of two of the original parcels as they were purchased by Philipse from the Indians. This line commences on the Hudson River at a small



GREENBURGH AND MT. PLEASANT.

stream above Dudley’s Grove, and about a mile south of the present Hudson River Railroad depot at Hastings. The stream was called by the Indians Mackakassin. The line runs from the Hudson River due east by a great rock stone which is called “Sigghes,” and by marked trees to the Bronx. The stone “Sigghes” stands on the Dyckman estate, not far east of the old Post road.

The eastern and western boundaries of the township are of course sufficiently plain, that on the east being the Bronx River and that on the west being the Hudson. The townships adjoining Greenburgh on the east, and having the Bronx River as a boundary in common with it, are three,—namely, Scarsdale on the south, White Plains in the middle and North Castle on the north.

The northern boundary of Greenburgh is the lower or southern limit of Mount Pleasant. The line of demarcation follows the centre line of the old White Plains road from the Bronx River westward to certain lands, lying on the hill northeast of Tarrytown, that were bought of the Commissioners of Forfeitures by William Davids, on December 6, 1785, but more recently owned and occupied as a farm by the late John R. Stephens, deceased. A part of these prem-

ises, some twenty-five years ago, became by purchase the property of Philo H. Perry, and the site of his fine stone mansion, but is now owned by the Kingsland estate. The line moves along the Davids or Stephens place, southwestward to the old Beekman farm, where it strikes the stream now called the Andre Brook (from the fact that Major Andre was captured on the Post road only a few steps south of it) and thence along the Beekman farm to the Hudson River. The farm followed the Andre Brook down as far as the present west line of the Rev. Pharellus Church, D.D., then diverged from the brook along the west line of Dr. Church to what is now Wildey Street, and thence, by a bold curve, it turned westward to the Hudson River.

The geographical centre of the township, as now constituted, lies probably about midway between the Hudson and the Bronx, on a line drawn from the Barney estate, below the village of Irvington, to the north side of the little hamlet of Hart's Corners on the east, and just north of the place designated on Bromley's town atlas as "Washington's Headquarters during the battle of White Plains."¹ It is on the public road leading from Ashford or (Ardsley), on the New York City and Northern Railroad, to Hart's Corners and the Bronx.

It is in this neighborhood that are still found, or at least were found a few years ago, the remnants of the baking ovens constructed by the French troops under the Count de Rochambeau during the time his forces were encamped here. In July, 1781, the allied armies, the American and the French, formed a junction near Dobbs Ferry, and occupied contiguous encampments. The American army was encamped in two lines to the west, with the right resting on the Hudson River, and the French in one line on the

hills to the east, extending as far as the Bronx River. The valley of the Nepperhan lay between them. It is to the latter army that Washington Irving refers, in his "Life of Washington," when he says: "The French encampments made a gallant display along the Greenburgh hills. Some of the officers took a pride in decorating their tents and forming little gardens in the vicinity."

In regard to the ruins of these baking-ovens, as to the existence of which some who might be expected to know have declared their ignorance, Ward Carpenter, Esq., so well known for his accuracy both as a surveyor and an observer of facts, has kindly furnished the following valuable statement:

"Bolton's History, 1st edition, vol. i. p. 243, says, —The house (then) occupied by Jackson Odell, son of the distinguished Colonel Odell, was, at one period of the war, used as headquarters by the French commander, Count de Rochambeau, General Washington having encamped on the west bank of the Sprain."²

"At a point about one thousand yards due south from the Odell house, above referred to, and on the Odell farm, in a corner, near the land of the late Benjamin T. Underhill and the land now or late of William H. Wright, situated on the easterly side of the Sprain Brook road, there were to be seen, a few years ago, the remains of seven (7) of the ovens used by Count De Rochambeau's men while encamped in this neighborhood.

"As will be seen upon the diagram accompanying this statement, the ovens were erected upon a knoll lying between two brooks, one of which has its origin in a valuable spring two hundred and fifty feet to the southeast and flowing westerly about four hundred and twenty feet, joining the second brook near the corner of the Odell farm, flowing thence southwesterly and emptying into the Sprain Brook. These remains of the French ovens were distinctly seen by the writer of this in the spring of 1855, while being engaged in some professional business in that neighborhood.

"The ovens were about six feet long and apparently about two feet six inches wide in the clear; they appear to have been built mostly underground; the



THE ODELL HOUSE, ROCHAMBEAU'S HEADQUARTERS.

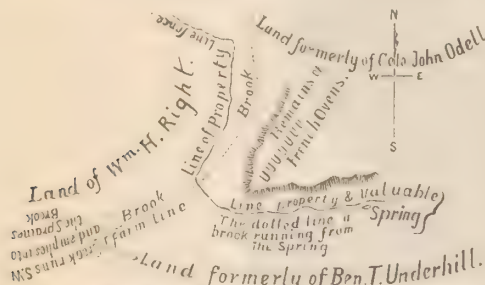
¹ There is little doubt that the tradition is correct, and that the place was once occupied by Washington as his headquarters; but it was not "during the battle of White Plains," for his headquarters at that time were evidently north of White Plains village. The time when he occupied the place here referred to, and when, from his going up on the hill-tops to obtain a better view of the situation around him, the elevation a little to the west of the headquarters mentioned on the map acquired the distinction of being designated as "Washington Hill," it is altogether probable, was during the northward march previous to the battle of Chatterton's Hill. The "line of detached and intrenched camps," spoken of by Ramsay, Sparks and others, ran directly through this region.

² The rising ground a little west being called "Washington Hill."

side-walls, together with one of the end walls of each, were laid with cobble-stones. The roof of the ovens appears to have been built of the same material, but was sunken down even with the surface."

An exceedingly interesting account of the encampment of the French army along the hills of Greenburgh, entitled "Our French Allies in Westchester County," was prepared a year or so ago by Josiah S. Mitchell, Esq., of White Plains, and read before a social club in that village. He has kindly granted permission to have it transferred to these pages, and it is as follows:

"Five long years of exhausting struggle had passed since the two signal lanterns in the steeple of the 'Old North Church' in Boston warned the people that the British Army had set out on its first march to subjugate the turbulent colonists of Massachusetts; and with ceaseless persistence the war then begun at Lexington and Concord was continued until the misfortunes of 1780, occasioned by the treason of Arnold, the loss of Charleston and the annihilation of the army by Cornwallis at Camden filled the people with



Diagram, showing the position of the French ovens, used by Count de Rochambeau, during his encampment near the "Col. John Odell house," which was used as the Count's headquarters. The remains of the ovens are situated about 1000 yards south of Col. Odell's house.

sad forebodings and proved that the Colonies were not strong enough to cope, unaided, with British power.

"At this critical moment the splendidly appointed French Army arrived; and thereafter every step was a step forward, and through this aid the war was brought to a successful close in two years.

"It is about this French Army—the admiration of Europe, perfect in equipment and discipline, and unsurpassed in magnificence, as it lay encamped in the summer of 1781 on the hills from White Plains to the Nepperhan—that I propose to speak, and briefly and imperfectly to describe the dress and appearance of the regiments and the distinguished officers in command, leaving you, at your leisure, to follow them through their subsequent career,—for they made history for Europe.

"The officers of this army, from Rochambeau to the youngest lieutenants, were of high birth and most of them of great experience, for whom destiny had in store, for some, a brilliant future, for others, a tragic end.

"The Count de Rochambeau, the chief in command,

was a hero who had won varied commissions on hard-fought battle-fields; he had distinguished himself at Weisbourg, at Fribourg, and as aid-de-camp to the Duke of Orleans at the siege of Namur; at Langfeldt, under the eyes of his king, he received wounds and glory. His skill and bravery in many battles marked the steps in his promotions until he reached the highest rank. At the close of our war he returned to France and became an active partisan in the French Revolution and a prisoner in the Bastille. When his name was called for execution it was found that the cart which transported the prisoners to the place of execution was already filled, and the officer in charge pushed him back, saying, 'Stand back, old fellow; your turn will come later!' but the head of the bloody Robespierre fell before his turn came.

"Next to Rochambeau came the old Baron Viomenil, who had been in service since 1740, and now commanded the ancient brigade of Bourbonnais, which lay on Nelson's Hill,—the ridge east of the Nepperhan,—the oldest regiment of France, whose morning reveille had greeted every rising sun for centuries.

"Next in command was the Chevalier de Chastelleux, a man of culture, who rendered great service to Rochambeau in his interviews with Washington.

"On the same ridge, east of Nelson's, were the Royal Deux Ponts and the old Soissonais, commanded by Count de Viomenil, a brother of the baron; and farther east lay the regiment of Saintonge, commanded by the Count de Custine, who had served in Prussia under Frederick the Great. On his return to France he took an active part in the Revolution and perished under the guillotine.

"The French left wing covered Chatterton's Hill and White Plains, and was composed of Lauzun's Legion, its commander distinguished for the elegance of his person and his courtly and fascinating manners. He was favored by fortune, courted by the nobility, the delight of the gay city of Paris, a special favorite of Washington and one of the bravest men in the army. He afterwards became engaged in the turmoils of the French Revolution, and, with de Custine, perished under the guillotine.

"The old Odell mansion, still standing, was the headquarters of General Rochambeau, and with him, as aid-de-camp, was young Berthier, who rose to distinction and high command under the great Napoleon. When he became Field Marshal of France and Prince of Wagram, some of the Greenburgh girls exultingly boasted that they had danced with him at Colonel Odell's. You all know his sad death.

"There, at the headquarters, was that chivalrous young Swede, the Count de Fersen, first aide-de-camp of Rochambeau. He was one of the heroes of Yorktown, and you will find his portrait in a group of officers in Trumbull's picture of the surrender of Cornwallis, in the rotunda of the capitol in Washington. Upon his return to France he became devoted to the Bourbons and commanded the famous Swiss

body-guard of Louis XVI. He was an especial favorite of Marie Antoinette, and, in the memorable flight to Varennes, de Fersen was the disguised coachman of the royal fugitives. He afterwards became the favorite of Charles XIII. of Sweden, and was finally tortured to death by a mob in Stockholm.

"Now, let us look a moment at the beautiful dress and elegant equipments of the French regiments. The old Bourbonnais, and all the infantry, wore long waistcoats and coats of white cloth with crimson lappels, white buttons and pink collars. The Soissonais wore sky-blue collars, yellow buttons and red lappels. The Royal Deux Ponts had a blue uniform, with yellow collars and lappels. Upon the buttons of each soldier was the number of his regiment. The uniform of the artillery was gray, with lappels of red velvet. The non-commissioned officers wore a cluster of white plumes. The chasseurs wore white and green, and the grenadiers red.

"These officers and regiments were intimately connected with three great eras of France,—the old Monarchy, the Revolutionary period, and the Empire. The object of their present junction with the American army in Westchester County was to capture New York; but General Clinton had, by addition to his forces, made it advisable to change the plans to a southern campaign.

"Immediately after the arrival of the French the days were spent in exchanging visits between the officers of the two armies,—our army, under Washington, occupying the high grounds between the Nepperhan and the Hudson. The Americans were charmed with the beautiful equipment of the French Allies, and the French surprised at the fine discipline of the Americans: and each had something to learn of the other. No jar or collision occurred between the officers of the two armies, although composed of men so different in race, habits and religion.

"It is amusing to find, in the diaries and letters of the officers of both armies, mention of incidents in the exchange of courtesies between them. Dr. Thacher speaks of a dinner given by some French officers to the officers of the regiment to which he was attached. They were received, he says, in an elegant marquee; the dinner, served in the French style, consisted of soups, roast beef, etc. The officers, he tells us, were accomplished gentlemen, free and affable in their manner. What else could be expected of the highest nobility of the most polite court in Europe?

"On the other hand, M. Blanchard, the French commissary, did not express so much pleasure with a dinner he took with Washington. 'The table,' he says, 'was served in the American style,—vegetables, beef, potatoes, lamb, chickens, salad, pudding and pies, all being put on at the same time. They gave us, on the same plate, beef, potatoes, lamb,' etc.

"There can be nothing more pleasing to an Ameri-

can, than the admiration with which Washington was regarded by the French; and I cannot close this branch of my sketch without giving you the impressions of the Marquis de Chastelleux in regard to Washington, as expressed in his account of his travels in America, written at that time.

"The Marquis had been invited by La Fayette to come and be presented to the commander-in-chief. As he approached, he found the headquarters in a large farm-house, with a spacious tent before it for the general, and smaller tents, in the adjoining fields, for his guards; and everything in perfect order. He writes, 'As I rode up, I observed La Fayette in front of the house, conversing with an officer, tall of stature, with a mild and noble countenance. It was Washington himself. I alighted and was presented by La Fayette and was invited into the house, where I met many prominent officers, and although dinner was over, a fresh dinner was prepared for me. A few glasses of wine accelerated the acquaintances I had to make, and I soon found myself at ease near the greatest and best of men. The goodness and benevolence that characterize him are evident from everything about him; but the confidence he gives birth to never occasions improper familiarity; for the sentiment he inspires is a profound esteem for his virtues and a high opinion of his talents. The continent of North America, from Boston to Charleston, is a great volume, every page of which presents his eulogium.'

"The object of Washington, in concentrating the forces in Westchester County, having failed by reason of the great accessions to the army of Sir Henry Clinton in New York, plans were formed for a southern expedition to crush Cornwallis; and the scene of gayety, at and around the old Odell homestead, terminated on the 19th of August, when the encampment was broken up, and Westchester County, from White Plains to Peekskill was alive with the tramp of troops, the gleam of arms in the summer sun and the lumbering of artillery and baggage-wagons along its roads. And the brilliant French army left the green hills of Westchester county, which had witnessed its brief and joyous sojourn."

The portion of Greenburgh, however, most densely populated is that lying along the Old Post road from New York to Albany, and between the Hudson and the valley of the Nepperhan. The successive villages directly on the Hudson River, moving northward from the southern line, are Hastings, Dobbs Ferry, Irvington and Tarrytown. In population, and as a centre of business and trade to the adjacent country, Tarrytown is by far the largest and most important, although it lies on the extreme northern limit of the township, with a considerable portion of it, formerly known as Beekmantown, and regarded as a suburb of Tarrytown proper, extending over into the adjoining township of Mount Pleasant, north of the Andre Brook. Tarrytown might be almost said to be equally divided between the two townships. While to

those from abroad it bears the one name of Tarrytown, it consists really of two distinct villages, each having its own post-office and its own incorporation, president and board of trustees. The name of Tarrytown belongs properly to the part lying in Greenburgh, while the name of North Tarrytown belongs to that lying in Mount Pleasant.

There are other villages or settlements in the township, such as Ardsley (formerly called Ashford), lying about a mile or a little over east of Dobbs Ferry, on the left bank of the Nepperhan, directly opposite to the Ardsley station, on the right bank and on the New York City and Northern Railroad (the station was formerly known as Ashford, but the name has lately been changed to Ardsley in compliment, it is said, to Cyrus W. Field, whose large landed estate, known as "Ardsley," is in the immediate neighborhood); East Irvington, lying about a mile and a half east of Irvington proper, nearly midway between the Hudson and the Nepperhan; Glenville, lying about a mile east of Tarrytown, on the stage road to White Plains; and Elmsford, formerly known by the name of Greenburgh and Hall's Corners, about three miles east of Tarrytown, where the White Plains road crosses the Nepperhan. The New York City and Northern Railroad runs through Elmsford, and it has there also a depot.

On the eastern side of the township, not far from the Bronx River and the Harlem Railroad, which in that vicinity runs for about two and a half miles through Greenburgh, are the hamlets, successively, moving from south to north, of Greenville, Hartsdale, Hart's Corners, and a part of the incorporated village of White Plains, the county-seat. The principal part of that village lies, however, on the opposite or east side of the Bronx River, in the township of White Plains. The extension of the corporate limits of the village over to the west side of the Bronx leaves the part thus included, as it was before, still within the limits of Greenburgh. The simple fact is that it is one village lying in two townships.

The population of Greenburgh by the census of 1875 was ten thousand nine hundred and forty-three. By the census of 1880 it was nine thousand eight hundred and sixty-one, thus showing a loss of population in five years of one thousand and eighty-two. This period of time succeeded the great financial and business depression in New York City, by which Westchester County was severely affected.

Notwithstanding this loss of population, however, there was a marked increase in the value of property. The assessed valuation, as corrected and published in the supervisor's report for August, 1884, shows the following result: Assessed valuation corrected for 1874, \$7,212,424; assessed valuation corrected for 1884, \$10,157,752; thus showing a gain in ten years of \$2,945,328. In 1874 the value of land per acre in the township of Greenburgh was \$413.98; the value

per acre in 1884 was \$583.04,—thus showing a gain in the value per acre in ten years of \$169.06.

THE VILLAGE OF HASTINGS.—Of the villages on the side of Greenburgh next to the Hudson River, the first one that is reached as the traveler moves northward is Hastings, eighteen and a quarter miles from the Grand Central Depot, New York, on the Hudson River Railroad. It is pleasantly situated on the elevated river-bank, and through it, at the bottom of a ravine or glen, there flows a small stream that empties into the Hudson. From many points the view of the river up and down, with its bold shores in the distance, and the Palisades immediately opposite, is very striking and impressive. Its present population is about one thousand.

The village and its environs contain many beautiful residences and country-seats. Among them are those of Mrs. A. M. Minturn (widow of the late Robert B. Minturn), of W. F. Christie, of E. S. Mills, of Dr. Daniel S. Draper (son of the late eminent Professor John W. Draper, whose home was here until he died, January 4, 1882, and here still on the Draper grounds is the telescope that was used by Professor Draper in taking those beautiful photographs of the moon, which awakened so deep an interest when they were given to the world), of Mrs. M. A. Hoppock, and also the handsome marble residences of the late Thomas Fraser and Dr. Gerscheidt, together with many others. Farther down toward the water-front is a large establishment for manufacturing artificial stone, and also a stone-yard, and the Composite Car-Wheel Company.

There are two Revolutionary incidents connected with the locality, although the name of Hastings, as applied to it, was then unknown. One was the crossing of the Hudson River at this point by Lord Cornwallis, with six thousand British troops, after the battle of White Plains and the fall of Fort Washington, both toward the end of 1776, when he was marching to attack Fort Lee, whose guns endangered the British communications by water up and down the river, and to pursue the retreating Americans under Washington through New Jersey. The other was the encounter said to have taken place in what was known as Edgar's Lane, in the early spring of 1777, between a troop of Colonel Sheldon's horse and a body of Hessian soldiers under Lieutenant Wurtz, who had come up on a marauding incursion in the neighborhood. Colonel Sheldon, having been apprised at New Castle of the enemy's intention, came quietly down under the guidance of Isaac Odell, and secreting himself and his troop in ambush among the trees along the lane through which the Hessians were to pass, awaited their coming. He did not have to wait very long. Misled by the answer to their inquiry given by Peter Post, a patriot yeoman, the Hessians went galloping down the lane with a feeling of calm security, when suddenly Colonel Sheldon and his troop burst upon them in a furious charge that

threw them into confusion and panic, so that they all fled, vainly hoping to escape their pursuers. Many of the Hessians were left dead or wounded along the lane, some were taken prisoners, and others attempting to escape by the river were drowned. Colonel Emmerick, at Yonkers, on hearing of the disaster from one who had succeeded in getting back to his quarters again, was greatly exasperated and sent a detachment to avenge the disgrace and loss. The unfortunate Peter Post, whose misleading answer was the occasion of their disaster, was a special object of their anger and rough attentions. They beat him unmercifully, and left him for dead. But his body, like his patriotism, was too vital to be thus extinguished, and he returned to life.

The history of Hastings, as connected with its present name and development, may be said to have commenced between forty and fifty years ago. A mill was erected not far from the spot where the Hudson River Railroad depot now stands, and by it the little stream was converted to a useful purpose as a water-power. Owing to the steep ascent of the hill, there was a difficulty in going to and fro between the river-shore and the country on the plateau behind it. But a roadway was at length graded down, which gave access to the water-front and led to the opening of transport communication on the river. Among the earliest to engage in business enterprise was a Mr. Sheckler, a German of large natural ability, who gave an impulse to trade by sailing a sloop to and from New York City. Unfortunately, however, Mr. Sheckler adopted some methods of making money which were not satisfactory to those who afterwards moved in. He set up a bone-factory, which tainted the air. He manufactured sulphur, which was not agreeable. He opened a distillery for the production of cheap spirits, which was detrimental in several ways. And yet, after all, it was to him very largely that the new life and activity were due.

A little later there came upon the scene a gentleman of fortune, Mr. Anthony Constant, who owned much of the land upon which the village was afterwards built. He was a resident during the time when the Croton Aqueduct and the Hudson River Railroad were in process of construction. Mr. Constant is remembered as a man of agreeable manners, with a charming domestic circle about him, and as having had a residence in the city as well as a country-seat on the Hudson. Owing to large expenses, it is said, he was induced to dispose of some of his real estate, and he accordingly laid out the village, and sold his land in small lots. One of the principal streets running north and south through the heart of the village is Constant Street, which was located upon his own property, and hence took its name from him. The village, in fact, then assumed the form which it still, for the most part, retains.

At that time, as well as before and after, a colony

of Italians constituted what has been described by a long-time resident as "a picturesque and pleasant element" in the community. Mr. Bagioli erected several houses, one of which he occupied with his family, and the others he either rented or sold. Mr. Ferrero, a member of the old Chambers Street Opera Company, purchased a residence, and Mr. Rapetti, a leader of the orchestra, built a large house. They attracted many of their countrymen to the neighborhood. Mr. Foresti, a friend of Silvio Pellico, Mr. Salvi, an eminent tenor, Benedetti, and, in fact, many others with the peculiar talent of Italians for amusing themselves, made the place lively and bright. They gradually fell away, however, from one cause or another, until now they are all gone.

After they had in a great measure disappeared, the place they filled was largely taken up by another nationality of adopted citizens, the Germans. They resorted to the place at first as a summer sojourn, but their growing interest led afterwards to their making homes, and to the erection of large sugar-factories, which at one time were very prosperous. The village seemed, indeed, at that period to be taking on distinctively manufacturing characteristics. A man of sterling virtue and noble impulses, a Mr. Saunders, had also, in this early history of the village, established a patent axle-factory, while an enormously large quarry of marble, out of which the custom-house at Charleston, S. C., was built, gave employment to a great number of hands.

But later experience showed that land which was exceedingly valuable for summer residences, when homes were costly, and which was detached from any large business centre, could not be made remunerative to the holder in a purely business form. Accordingly, almost every industry of that kind in the village has been now abandoned, a result which was probably hastened by the fire which, in 1872, laid the large sugar refinery in ashes. The present position of Hastings, therefore, is that of a country place on the river-bank, attractive for a residence or summer sojourn, and convenient of access from the city.

Hastings has three churches and a mission chapel. The churches are the Reformed, the Baptist and St. Matthew's Roman Catholic. The mission chapel is in connection with Zion Episcopal Church of Dobbs Ferry.

The oldest of them is the Reformed Church, which was organized October 29, 1850. Its brick edifice was erected mainly by the efforts and contributions of Mr. Albert Chrystie, whose memory is still gratefully cherished. His first intention was simply to erect a building, and allow it to be used by any clergyman of any denomination; but foreseeing the inconvenience likely to result from this management, he was afterwards induced to place it under the charge of the Reformed Dutch Church. Its cosmopolitan characteristic impressed upon it in the beginning still remains, for its worshippers are gathered not from one denomi-

nation only, but from several. There are about seventy families in the congregation and about one hundred and eleven communicants in the membership. The church was for a long time very prosperous, but it was much affected by the troubles that came on in all business departments, and by removals from the place.

Its first pastor was the Rev. Philip Phelps, Jr., afterwards Dr. Phelps, principal of Hope College, in Michigan. His term of service continued from 1850 to 1859. He was succeeded by the Rev. Daniel McL. Quackenbush, D.D., who served the church from 1859 to 1860. He was followed in 1861 by the Rev. Henry H. Johnson, who remained until 1865. The Rev. Thos. R. G. Peck was his successor in 1865, and continued as pastor until April, 1882. For a year the church was then without a pastor until, in May, 1883, the Rev. Mattoon M. Curtis accepted its call, and entered upon his pastoral duties. He remained until January 1, 1885. At the present time the pastor is the Rev. Wm. A. Dumont, lately graduated from the Union Theological Seminary, New York City, and ordained and installed as pastor July 21, 1885. The church property is valuable, and almost free of debt.

Out of respect to the memory and services of the late Albert Chrystie, the congregation some years ago erected a tablet in the church, on the east side of the pulpit, with the following inscription :

" A Memorial
of
ALBERT CHRYSSTIE,
who departed this life, in the city of New York,
April 23, 1856, aged 66 years, 5 months and 8 days.
To his instrumentality the origin and prosperity of this Church were,
under the Divine blessing, mainly owing :
In token of which, and of his Christian character, the congrega-
tion worshipping here have erected this tablet.
' Them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with Him.'
1 Thess. C. 4, V. 14.'"

It is fitting to notice here that Mrs. Frances Few Chrystie, the venerable widow of Albert Chrystie, just referred to above, died at her residence in Hastings, on Thursday morning, March 26, 1885, in the ninety-sixth year of her age. It was the privilege of the writer to converse with her in her own house with a view to obtaining information for this history, on March 19th, just one week before she died. Her funeral took place on March 29th, and the following notice of her herself and husband appeared the next morning in one of the daily papers of New York :

Funeral of Mrs. Chrystie at Hastings.

"Mrs. Frances Few Chrystie, of Hastings-on-the-Hudson, having lived to the ripe age of four-score and sixteen years, was buried yesterday. A special car on the 11.35 A. M. train from the city, carried many friends and relatives, who gathered in the old home-
stead, where the last fifty years of her life had been spent, and listened to the Rev. M. M. Curtis, as he read the funeral services. Mrs. Chrystie came of a

Revolutionary family, and held in personal recollection the faces of many of those who shaped the destinies of the Republic. Her father, Colonel William Few, led the sturdy yeomen of Georgia through many battles of the Revolution, and when the colony became a State he was sent as its representative to the convention which framed the Constitution ; he was afterward the first to sit for Georgia in the Senate. Washington was a frequent guest at his house, while among the treasured traditions of the family is that which tells of his dancing with Mrs. Chrystie's mother. Her two uncles, Major Chrystie and Lieutenant-Colonel John Chrystie, after whom Chrystie Street, in this city was named, were officers in the regular army, serving in the War of 1812. Her husband, Major Albert Chrystie, went through the Mexican War, and his father was also an officer of the Revolution. Mrs. Chrystie was a niece of Albert Gallatin, and, in her younger days, mingled much in the gay society of Washington."

The next church erected was the Baptist. Mr. C. W. Thomas, a retired gentleman of means, contributed the funds. His death, however, and the pecuniary losses that afterwards overtook his family, gave the church a blow from which it never recovered. It has now for some considerable time been closed.

The Roman Catholic Church, erected at a more recent date, is numerously attended and prosperous. It is under the charge of Father O'Connor, who is much respected, outside of his church, as well as in.

The mission chapel here of the Episcopal Church at Dobbs Ferry has been generously aided by the widow and family of the late Robert B. Minturn, whose benevolent efforts, during his life-time, were so well known.

DOBBS FERRY.—The next village north of Hastings, on the line of the New York Central and Hudson River Railroad, is Dobbs Ferry, nineteen and one-half miles distant from the Grand Central Depot, in New York City. In compliance with the writer's request, the Hon. D. Ogden Bradley, president of the Tarrytown National Bank, who has long been a resident of Dobbs Ferry, and for several years President of the village, has kindly furnished the following sketch of its history :

Dobbs Ferry is an incorporated village, lying on the east bank of the Hudson River, commencing two miles north of the northerly line of the city of Yonkers, and five miles north of the northerly line of the city of New York, as now established. It is nearly square in form, and its boundary lines are a trifle in excess of a mile in length on each of its four sides. It covers the ridge lying between a small creek, known as Saw-Mill River, and the Hudson, and its boundaries touch the waters of both streams. It has a population of two thousand five hundred inhabitants. It has no manufactories, and its only traffic is in the supply of the daily current wants of its people. Its property is assessed, for purposes of taxation, at one million



“MALVERN.”
RESIDENCE OF D. S. APPLETON,
DOBBS FERRY, N. Y.



four hundred and forty-five thousand one hundred and eighty dollars, which figures, in view of the low standard of valuation adopted by the assessors, show an actual valuation of quite three millions of dollars. It contains twenty-six country-seats, which are valued at over thirty thousand dollars each, some of which are estimated at a much higher figure. It has many beautiful cottages and homes of less pretension.

Its government springs out of four elections held every year, each of which is of importance. The election of president and trustees for the village takes place near the middle of March. The election for supervisor and justices of the peace for the town in which the village is located, and which has concurrent jurisdiction, follows one week afterwards. The election of a Board of Education, to which is given control and direction of the free schools, takes place in the latter part of August. The election for Representatives in Congress, and for members of the State Legislature, and for other county, State and national officers, takes place in November. So many elections exhaust the vigilance, and weary such citizens as are actively engaged in private business. They give dangerous prominence and force to a class of persons whose only quality lies in their power to vote.

The right to assess and to levy taxes on every piece of property is given to three distinct sets of officers, who perform their duties at fixed different times in every year. Ardsley, the country-seat of Cyrus W. Field, is a compact body of land, lying partly in the village of Dobbs Ferry, partly in the village of Irvington and partly outside of all village limits, in the town of Greenburgh. Its owner is compelled to pay taxes to one town, to two villages, and to four school collectors. Seven boards of assessors each year assess all or parts of this property. This system is so exceedingly crude, so annoying to property-owners and so liable to abuse that the fact that it ever existed is likely to be quoted in the future with surprise.

The name of Dobbs Ferry is derived from the fact that one Jeremiah Dobbs, a Swede, who was a fisherman, and lived at Willow Point, near the southern line of the present village, added to his meagre income, prior to and during the Revolution, by ferrying occasional travelers across the Hudson. He used a style of boat known, at that day, as a periauger. It was a canoe made by hollowing out a solid log, and was propelled by a single oar, kept in vigorous motion at the stern. A skiff ferry has been maintained ever since, for more than a century, and the business privilege is still deemed of value by the family which has exercised ownership of it for more than thirty years past.

The first white settlers found here a large population. A family of Indians were then living on the banks of the fresh-water brook which empties into the Hudson near the present northerly boundary line

of the village. These Indians were attracted to the spot by the fact that the gap in the ridge, which separates the Saw-Mill River Valley from the Hudson, enabled them to get to their hunting-grounds, in the interior of the country, over foot-paths of light and easy grades. They called the place "Weecquaesguck," and they came very naturally, in time, to be known by that name themselves. They were a part of the great Mohegan tribe, which became so distinguished for its cunning, skill, daring and undaunted bravery.

There are reasons for believing that the settlement had been maintained for centuries, and that many thousands of Indians had lived and died in it; yet not a vestige remains to bear testimony to their existence or history. It is true their wigwams were built of bark, and would naturally soon decay and perish; still, it is a singular fact that no monument, not even a grave, is found to perpetuate the memory of the brave and heroic race which lived and flourished here so long. It is a strange illustration of how easily entire races, like individuals, pass away and are forgotten.

The great abundance of shells, which still cover the knolls near the river, show, perhaps, that the Indians were fond of, and lived largely upon, oysters. Game was very plenty. Deer frequented the neighborhood, and wolves in packs found shelter in the rugged hill-tops. Enough of quail and woodcock, of squirrels, rabbits, raccoons and foxes, and of several kinds of snakes, still remain to show that, at the time of the first white settlements, the land must have supported a great variety of animal life.

The fact that Dobbs Ferry lies directly opposite the northerly end of the "Palisades" (which are on the opposite side of the Hudson River, and which are very precipitous and well-nigh insurmountable for twenty miles up to this point) gave it very considerable prominence during the Revolution. The "Palisades" were a troublesome barrier on the shortest available route of communication between the American forces, which were stationed above and around New York City, and the other forces of the same army, which were operating in New Jersey and Pennsylvania. The river made it necessary to change horses on both sides, as they could not be carried across in the rude contrivances then used for ferriage. Dobbs Ferry, or the "ferry," was therefore mentioned with much particularity many times in the instructions which were given to dispatch-bearers and to officers passing between different divisions of the army. It was as well known in those days by name as were any of the larger settlements in its vicinity.

The district was raided, tormented and plundered during the entire Revolutionary period by the "Cowboys" and the "Skinners," the bummers of both armies. Peaceful industry was made impossible and was driven out. Life and property were constantly in danger. Everybody who could flee, fled.

Earthworks were established at several points within the village. An embankment at the foot of Chestnut Street was leveled only a few years since. The outlines of a redoubt, in a perfect condition, are still preserved in the angles formed by the junction of Broadway and Livingston Avenue. The remains of a fort, a still more imposing earthwork, are carefully preserved on a knoll a few rods to the southeast of the redoubt.

The British army, on November 5, 1776, after the battle of White Plains, rendezvoused on the riverbank, and remained here eight days. It then returned to Kingsbridge, in New York City.

General Lincoln's division, of the American army, encamped here on January 29, 1777, and remained for a short time.

The colonial Postmaster-General, in the fall of 1777, ordered all mail matter for New York City to be sent

nies, and it was given, of course, to a Dobbs Ferry boy.

A break of nearly six years in the heat of the Revolution, in which there is no event of any considerable note recorded or recalled by the traditions of the neighborhood, shows that the constant raidings and the ever-present dangers from hostile armies must have reduced the population of the locality to a very small number.

General Washington, Sir Guy Carleton (who was then commander-in-chief of the British army) and Governor Clinton met on May 3, 1783, after the suspension of hostilities, in a house still standing on Broadway, in Dobbs Ferry, and now owned and occupied by Dr. Joseph Hasbrouck, to settle terms for the disbandment of the two armies. It was the only time that these distinguished gentlemen ever met. Great pomp and state were maintained during the conference, which lasted for a number of days. The building was carefully guarded by several companies of soldiers. So important were these negotiations deemed to be, that mounted messengers were dispatched hourly to both the Continental and the British camps. Here were signed the papers by which the American army gave up all claim upon the allegiance and control of the country. No more important acts could be performed. It was the grand climax of a long-continued, gigantic struggle, the glorious consummation of what had been through so many dark years so ardently hoped for. The papers there signed gave freedom to a nation, and initiated another grand test of republican institutions. The spot should ever be held in honored remembrance as the birth-place of the United States.



VAN BRUGH LIVINGSTON HOUSE,
Where the Revolution was concluded. The old part is shown in the rear.

to Dobbs Ferry. It is believed, however, that the post-office thus designated was then on the west side of the Hudson River, near Tappan, which was a military centre of great importance.

Three boys were overtaken by a lot of Tory Cow-boys, who were mounted on horses, in November, 1777, at a point on Ashford Avenue a few rods west of the easterly boundary line of the village. The boys taunted the horsemen on the meanness of their pursuits, until the latter completely lost their tempers and their self-control. Two of the boys (Smith and Lawrence) were so terribly mutilated that they survived only a few days; but the third boy (Vincent) partially recovered, although painfully crippled for life. The outrage was deemed cowardly and inhuman. It attracted widespread attention and produced a general feeling of indignation. Vincent was almost immediately pensioned by Congress. This was the first pension ever granted by the United Colo-

having formed part of the Manor of Philipsburgh, they were declared by the new government to be forfeited, in consequence of the defection of Frederick Philipse to the King during the Revolution, and all the subsequent titles were derived through the Commissioners of Forfeitures.

Most of the land in the western portion of the village, upon which nearly all the population is yet located, became the property of Peter Van Brugh Livingston in 1823. He was for many years an enterprising and conspicuous person in this locality. He caused a portion of his land to be surveyed in 1830 into small plots. He advertised an auction sale and invited population, but without much success. Persons are still living on tracts bought at that sale for less than five dollars, which would now sell readily for more than one thousand dollars.

The first general attention called to the beauties of the locality and its desirableness as a suburban resort

seems to have sprung out of an assertion of ultra-radical State rights doctrines, upon the part of the State of New York, so ridiculous that even after the lapse of these few years the story is almost incredible. The Legislature incorporated the Erie Railroad in 1832, and made it a condition of all of its loans, grants and privileges that the company should transact all of its business and receive and deliver all of its passengers within the State of New York. Every bill relating to the railroad which was passed for fifteen years subsequent to its incorporation was surcharged with jealous hostility to New Jersey and Pennsylvania. Every possible device and restriction was engrafted into the laws to prevent either of those neighboring States from receiving any advantage from the new traffic and the new sources of wealth which it was believed were being created. This was a counterpart of the Southern theory, which finally culminated in the Rebellion. It made the long and very expensive dock into the Hudson at Piermont a necessity. All the eastern business of the road, which was large, was necessarily transacted there. Some of it naturally found refuge on the east bank of the Hudson, directly opposite, and it was then for the first time that the great natural attractiveness of the section around Dobbs Ferry invited new settlements.

The Presbyterian Church at Dobbs Ferry was organized April 11, 1825. It erected a frame building in 1827 on Ashford Avenue, on a plot which is a few rods east of Broadway. The building was covered on its sides with shingles, which had been cleaved with an adze, instead of with clapboards, sawed by machinery, as is now the custom. It was a unique structure and stood, a conspicuous memento of the past, until 1880, when it was taken down upon the mistaken theory that it was an impairment to the beauty of the place.

Van Brugh Livingston was one of its first elders and one of its most generous supporters. A member, who kept a hotel and sold liquors, was elected one of its deacons in 1833. A bitter controversy followed. Mr. Livingston held stoutly that no man could be a reliable, good man and follow such an occupation. The result was that Mr. Livingston and several others withdrew from the church.

Up to the present time the church has had nine stated supplies and four regular pastors. The new stone building on Broadway, now occupied by the congregation, was completed in 1867. In that same year its present pastor, the Rev. Thornton M. Niven, Jr. (now Dr. Niven), was installed, and he has continuously occupied its pulpit ever since, with great acceptableness to the people.

Zion Church (Episcopal) was organized in 1833. Van Brugh Livingston was one of its first vestrymen, and he gave the land on which the stone building on Cedar Street, still occupied by the congregation, was subsequently erected. Henry Chauncey, Rollin Sanford, Robert B. Minturn, James A. Hamilton and

Washington Irving, all men who became widely known, have been enrolled among its vestrymen. The Rev. George B. Reese, who died in March, 1885, was for nearly twenty years previous to his death its rector. His neighbors showed their high appreciation of his pastorate when they closed every place of business in the village and gathered, in larger numbers than ever on any occasion before, to assist in the last sad rites over his remains. No history of this place would be complete without a recognition of this good and useful man's work. His successor, the present rector, is the Rev. Jacob Le Roy.

The Summerfield Methodist Episcopal Church, which occupies a brick building on Broadway, was organized June 19, 1852. For two years it was supplied by local preachers, until it received its first regular pastor in 1854. Before the close of his term the edifice was completed and the dedicatory services were conducted by the late Bishop Simpson. Two other churches have been organized largely from its former membership,—one at Ashford (now Ardsley), only a short distance outside of the village limits, and the other at Irvington. Its strength, of course, has been somewhat impaired by this fact; but the church is and has been an energetic and successful organization, performing a desirable work. Its present pastor is the Rev. L. S. Keyser.

The Church of the Sacred Heart (Roman Catholic), which occupies a frame building on Broadway, adjoining the Depot Hill, has been for twenty years past in charge of Father David O'Connor. It has probably the largest congregation of any church in the neighborhood, and is strongly felt in all local affairs. Its strength attests the earnest, long-continued and self-sacrificing work of its venerable priest.

Dobbs Ferry responded liberally to the country's call for soldiers in 1861. At least twenty of her citizens enlisted and went to the front. Some of them died while in the service, and their remains lie in the graveyard on Ashford Avenue. Their graves are strewn with flowers on each Decoration Day by their old neighbors, who recall with gratitude their patriotic sacrifices.

The name of Dobbs Ferry has always been a sore annoyance to many of its residents. They regard it as untasteful and incongruous as those names which are borne so patiently by some Western towns, such as Tombstone, Buzzard's Roost, etc. There have been frequent and continuous efforts put forth to make the village homes still more inviting by associating a pleasant name with a pleasant place. Van Brugh Livingston filed maps in the county clerk's office as early as the year 1830, and tried, without success, to re-christen the locality as Livingston's Landing. It is so described in all title-deeds dated within twenty years after that date.

The effort was actively revived in 1870. Public meetings were called and committees were appointed. It was determined, after much thought and delibera-

tion, to try to name the village after Paulding, one of the captors of the British spy, Andre. A final meeting was called in order to stifle all opposition. A general attendance and a free discussion were invited. The meeting was a very full one. The arguments for a change were carefully given. It was claimed that there is no sense in perpetuating the memory of such a man as Dobbs; that he had done nothing whatever to warrant it; that a double name is always in bad taste; that a "ferry" is, in the popular understanding, a place of low resort, and that the name of a place so full of historic incidents should be suggestive of some local patriotic event; hence, Paulding was recommended. The meeting was grave, dignified, deliberative, until just as it was about to close in seeming accord, when a gentleman, who had been a quiet listener, arose to speak. He said that he had been much interested; he was no worshipper of Dobbs; he disliked that his home should be identified with a ferry; double names were especially uncouth and undesirable; he had known Paulding personally, and could not brook him. Van Wart, who also had aided in the capture of Andre, had been a Christian gentleman; he, therefore, moved that this meeting strike off the "Van," and call the town "Wart-on-the-Hudson." This speech, deliberately made, in dead earnest, gave such a ridiculous turn to the affair that nothing further was attempted at that time.

The village was subsequently incorporated by a nearly unanimous vote of its citizens under the name of "Greenburgh," a name borrowed from the town in which it is located. It was a name reluctantly accepted as a compromise between the old settler element and the new-comers. It was never fairly satisfying to either, so that after a few years the name was, by an act of the Legislature of the State, changed back again without attracting much public attention. It is senseless injury to a most beautiful locality, and will some day be dropped forever.

The village was incorporated under the name of Greenburgh on July 5, 1873, at an election held in compliance with the law of the State. One hundred and forty-four votes were cast, all but seven of which were in favor of the incorporation. The village has had six presidents, one gentleman having been elected for two terms, one for three and another for four. The provision against fire consists of a Hook-and-Ladder Company, which was organized in 1882, and has been maintained with considerable energy and pride. There is also a good Union Free School, which is supported by public taxation. The pupils are not subject to any expense whatever for stationery, books or tuition. It employs a male principal and six female teachers, and has an average attendance of nearly two hundred and fifty children. The building is a commodious brick structure on Main Street, and is inviting in its appointments.

The school for young ladies, under the care of the Misses Masters, was established in 1877. It is now

held in two large buildings erected in 1883, at an expense of seventy-five thousand dollars, by Mr. McComb, of Dobbs Ferry. It has at the present time seventy-five pupils, of whom fifty are boarders and twenty-five day scholars. It engages the services of ten teachers in addition to the Misses Masters, whose oversight extends to all departments.

It is a matter of Revolutionary interest in connection with Dobbs Ferry that this place was agreed upon by Arnold, the traitor, and Major Andre, who was to co-operate with him in consummating his treason, as the scene of their first personal meeting. On receiving notice of Andre's intention to be there on September 11, 1780, twelve days before he was captured at Tarrytown, Arnold came down from West Point on the afternoon of September 10th, and having spent the night at the house of Joshua Hett Smith, near Haverstraw, he proceeded early on the morning of the 11th down the river in his barge to meet him. By some oversight the British gunboats in the stream fired upon Arnold's barge, and pursued him so closely that he was in danger of being killed or taken prisoner. Either Arnold did not appear with a flag of truce, or the British commander had not given orders in anticipation of his coming. Arnold, however, escaped to the ferry landing on the west side of the Hudson, opposite Dobbs Ferry, and having remained there till night, he returned up the river. Of course, the projected meeting did not take place, and it is not certainly known, in fact, whether or not Andre came up at that time from New York City.

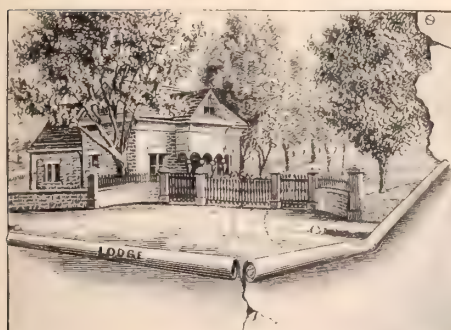
It was here, too, after Andre's trial and conviction at Tappan, that Lieutenant-General Robertson, who was sent with two others as a deputation from Sir Henry Clinton to prevent, if possible, the execution of Andre, met General Greene, whom Washington by request had deputed, as "a private gentleman," to receive his representations. The conference was held on October 1, 1780, but it was fruitless. The next day, October 2d, at twelve o'clock, Andre was hanged at Tappan.

Nearly a year later, in August, 1781, an encounter took place in the river, near Dobbs Ferry, between the British and American guard-boats. The statement concerning it, from General Heath's Memoirs, is as follows:

"On the night of the 3d of August, 1781, about eleven o'clock, the British and American guard-boats met in the river, near Dobbs Ferry, when a considerable firing ensued; the Americans had one man badly wounded, who died soon after. The damage sustained by the enemy was not known." "August 7, 1781, in the morning, about two o'clock, the American army was awakened by the firing of cannon at Dobbs Ferry. It appeared that two of the enemy's gunboats had come up as high as the ferry, probably to endeavor to seize some vessels or boats. On finding they were discovered, they fired four cannon, but to no effect. Four cannon were discharged at the



THE MISSES MASTERS' SCHOOL FOR YOUNG LADIES.
 DOBBS FERRY, ON-THE-HUDSON, N. Y.



"ESTHERWOOD."
 RESIDENCE OF J. J. McCOMB,
 DOBBS FERRY, ON-THE-HUDSON, N. Y.







RESIDENCE OF WILLIAM BARTON,
IRVINGTON-ON-HUDSON, N. Y.

boats from the battery, on which they went down the river."

IRVINGTON.—The next village above Dobbs Ferry on the north is Irvington. It is situated on the east bank of the Hudson, and directly on the line of the New York Central and Hudson River Railroad, twenty-one and one-half miles from the Grand Central Depot in New York City. Its population is about eighteen hundred.

The physical and topographical features of Irvington are very similar to those of the neighboring villages on the river. From the shore there is a continuous ascent eastward, but with natural irregularity, until the land reaches an elevation of several hundred feet, and forms east of Broadway a long ridge, running from north to south, upon which are built a succession of fine stone houses, large and commodious, with lawns and cultivated grounds attached, as residences for gentlemen of wealth, many of whom are connected with business establishments in the city. From the summit of the ridge thus formed there is a descent to the east again, which terminates in the valley of the Nepperhan or Saw-Mill River.

The village proper lies nearly midway between Dobbs Ferry and Tarrytown, and consists of the Main Street, running east from the river up the gradual ascent to Broadway, or the Old Post road from the Battery, in New York, to Albany, and seven shorter streets, named A, B, C, etc., from the letters of the alphabet, which cross the Main Street at right angles and extend some little distance each way north and south of it. The buildings in the village are chiefly either moderate-sized frame dwelling-houses or small stores and shops devoted to trade or to some mechanical business. A short distance south of the village there is a small brook, which, rising in the higher ground east of Broadway, descends in a westerly direction, crosses under that thoroughfare, and, passing through the Barney estate, empties into the Hudson.

As the land here formed a part of the Manor of Philipsburgh, it was confiscated after the Revolution and sold by the Commissioners of Forfeitures in many cases to those who had formerly leased it. Among the purchasers are said to have been Cox and Poris Stymus or Stymets, who together bought three hundred and forty acres, Jonathan Odell, John Jewel and a man named Purdy each bought, so the tradition says, three hundred and forty acres for himself, and William Dutcher bought two hundred and eighty acres. This aggregate of one thousand six hundred and forty acres afterwards became sub-divided by sale and transfer until the original outline was entirely lost.

In 1776, probably after the battle of White Plains, a part of the English army encamped on the south portion of the land leased by Captain Buckhout, and within a short distance of his house. Captain Buckhout had been a captain in the English colonial army during the old French War. Now he was

ninety-four years of age and very feeble. It was a time when the people were suffering greatly from the depredations of the Hessians, the Cowboys and the galley-men from the river, who stole everything that came within their reach. One day during this condition of things a galley-man entered the house of Captain Buckhout in search of plunder. On being discovered and remonstrated with, he stabbed the captain with his bayonet, wounding him severely. He was captured, placed in irons and imprisoned, and a sentinel was sent by the British officer in command to guard the home of Captain Buckhout from further spoliation.

John Jewel, of this place, a grandson of Captain Buckhout, was taken prisoner by the British, and incarcerated in the famous old Sugar-House Prison, in New York.

Jonathan Odell, living here, had a slave named Cæsar, who was hanged three times by the Hessians, because he refused to tell where his master had hidden away his hogs. But Cæsar managed to stand more hanging than most men of any color could, and finally came out alive after all. The last time they hanged him it would have put the finishing stroke to poor old Cæsar's career, had it not been for a neighbor's slave, who discovered him before it was too late. He delivered him from his terrible suspense and Cæsar resumed his place among the living.

Katrina Van Tassel lived in those days on the place now known as Washington Irving's. She was the happy possessor of a fine flock of geese that were led about under the guidance of a stalwart gander. She was very proud of them; but the Hessians encamped in the neighborhood viewed them with covetous eyes and in a different light, and several times attempted to steal them. Katrina's eye, however, was too watchful to permit their success. She warned off the marauders with a manacng wave of her hand and the expression of a chilling, prophetic hope that the old gander would eat grass from the grave of any Hessian who dared to touch one of them.

An amusing incident of those early times is handed down by a tradition in the family of the Jewels. Captain Buckhout's house, when the British were encamped there, stood a little east of the Hudson River Railroad, on the Barney place, and the house of Mrs. John D. Mairs, just below it, now stands upon the ground then occupied by the British encampment. There was a grave-yard for colored people on Captain Buckhout's premises, east of the house, and in the place where the orchard once was. Old Aunt Betty, a colored slave, was coming home one night, and had to pass by the grave-yard. While walking by it alone, some weird idea seized her, and she said aloud, "Rise, niggers, and come to judgment." She had no sooner spoken than a flock of sheep lying quietly there, arose, and put themselves in motion. Aunt Betty, not expecting such a prompt compliance, was frightened half to death. Without stopping to

investigate in the darkness, she took to her heels, and fleeing across the brook to her house, opened the upper half of the divided door, and sprang over into the room she hardly knew how, where she fell upon the floor fainting. Aunt Betty thought she had anticipated Gabriel's trumpet.

Later, in 1817, Justus Dearman, of New York, bought of William Dutcher one-half of his farm, and lived on it until 1848, when he sold it to Gustavo F. Sacchi, for twenty-six thousand dollars. During the same year it was sold to John Jay, who caused it to be laid out as the village of Dearman, and on Monday, April 25, 1850, at twelve o'clock noon, the lots were sold at public auction by Coles & Chilton, at the Merchants' Exchange, in New York. In 1848 a ferry-boat ran from Dearman to Piermont.

As there was no church of any kind in the new village, the Rev. William H. McVickar was, in the spring of 1852, appointed by Bishop Wainwright as a missionary to preach the gospel in Dearman. Services were accordingly held, and a congregation drawn together in connection with the Protestant Episcopal Church. In the same year, land having been given by John Jay for a church building, ground was broken on August 10, 1852. The first spadefuls of earth were turned up by young children. During the same month the corner-stone was laid by the Rev. William Creighton, D.D., of Tarrytown, and on May 29, 1853, the building was opened for public worship by the Rev. William H. McVickar. Some time after a rectory was built on land adjoining the church, which was given by the Rev. John McVickar, D.D. The parish was incorporated in August, 1858, under the title of "The Church of St. Barnabas, Irvington." The church prospered to such a degree that it became necessary to enlarge it. The work was completed in 1864, and on the Feast of St. Barnabas, June 11th, of that year it was consecrated by Dr. Horatio Potter, bishop of the diocese. Mr. McVickar remained as rector until the spring of 1867, when he resigned. The Rev. William H. Benjamin, of New York (now Dr. Benjamin), was called to succeed him, and entered upon his duties in August, 1867. The property is out of debt, and the income more than meets the current expenses.

In 1863 the Rev. Stephen H. Tyng, D.D., so widely known as the rector of St. George's Church, in New York City, bought the Stephen Coles place on C Street, Irvington, and after renovating the house gave it the name of "Cottage Home," and made it his summer residence. Upon retiring from the active rectorship of St. George's Church he lived here altogether, and here, on September 3, 1885, he died.

The Presbyterian Church traces its beginning to the winter of 1854. The first public meetings were held in a barn on Main Street, upon the premises now owned and occupied by Mrs. William Orton. In the course of a year a stone church edifice was erected on Broadway, and in 1854 the Rev. Charles

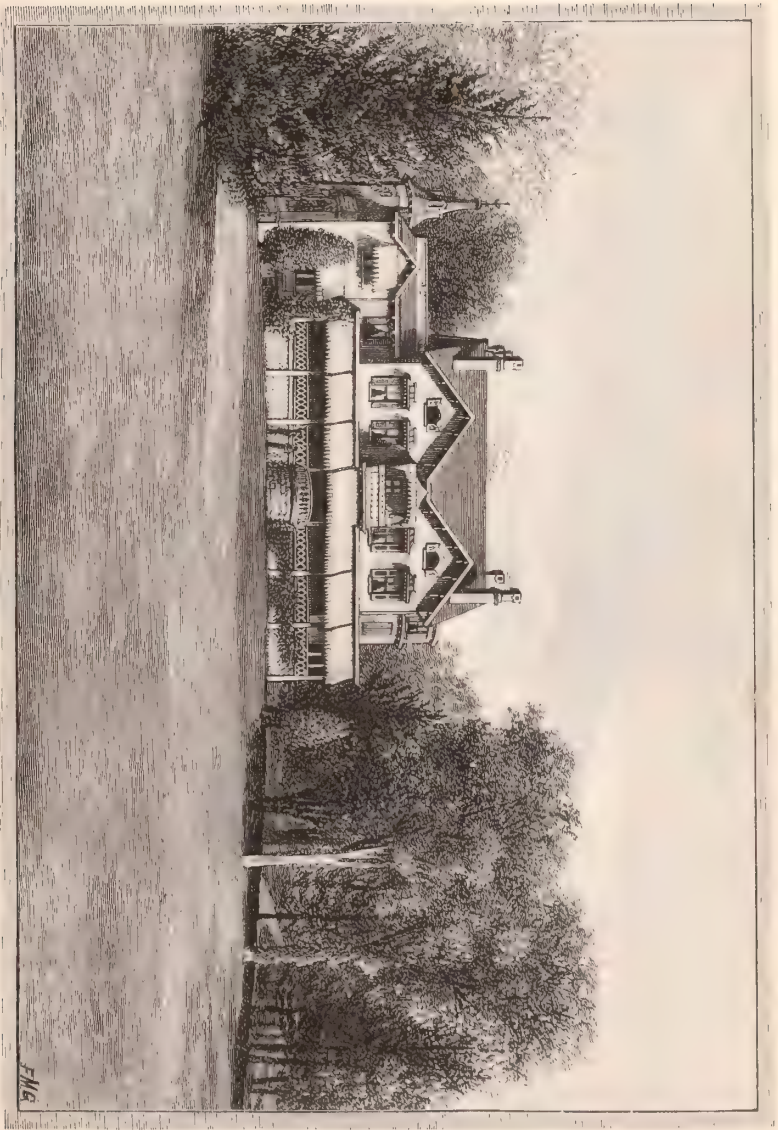
K. McHarg was called, though it was not till 1855 that he was installed as pastor. He resigned in 1864 and was succeeded by the Rev. John De Witt, now professor in Lane Theological Seminary, Cincinnati, Ohio. He entered upon his duties in 1865 and remained until 1869. He, in turn, was succeeded by the Rev. Rollin A. Sawyer, D.D., who remained from 1870 until 1879. The present pastor is the Rev. Washington Choate, who was called in 1880. The Presbyterian congregation, having erected a new and larger church edifice in 1868, sold the old one in 1872 to the Roman Catholics. The new church is built of stone and stands on the opposite or west side of Broadway, a little farther to the north. The church reports a membership of one hundred and six.

The Methodists took steps for the establishment of their church in 1871. They held their first meetings during that year under the care of the Rev. Judson Swift, in the old public-school building on Broadway. A commodious church edifice was erected on Main Street, which was finished and dedicated in the spring of 1872, under the title of "St. Paul's Methodist Episcopal Church of Irvington." In 1881 a convenient parsonage was erected adjacent to the church. The enterprise was largely indebted for its material success to the liberality and efforts of the Harpers, connected with the publishing house of Harper & Brothers, New York, and of the Wendels, of Irvington. The fluctuations of the population have not allowed a large membership, rarely exceeding forty, and about that number in the Sabbath-school. There have been eight successive pastors, most of whom have remained for but one year. The last regular pastor, appointed in 1884, was the Rev. Silas Fitch, A.M. He died suddenly, October 26, 1885, aged seventy-two years.

The Roman Catholics, in 1872, purchased the stone building left by the Presbyterians after the latter had completed their new church edifice, farther north on Broadway. The Rev. Father Patrick McGuire was appointed to the pastoral oversight. The church is reported to have a membership of fourteen hundred.

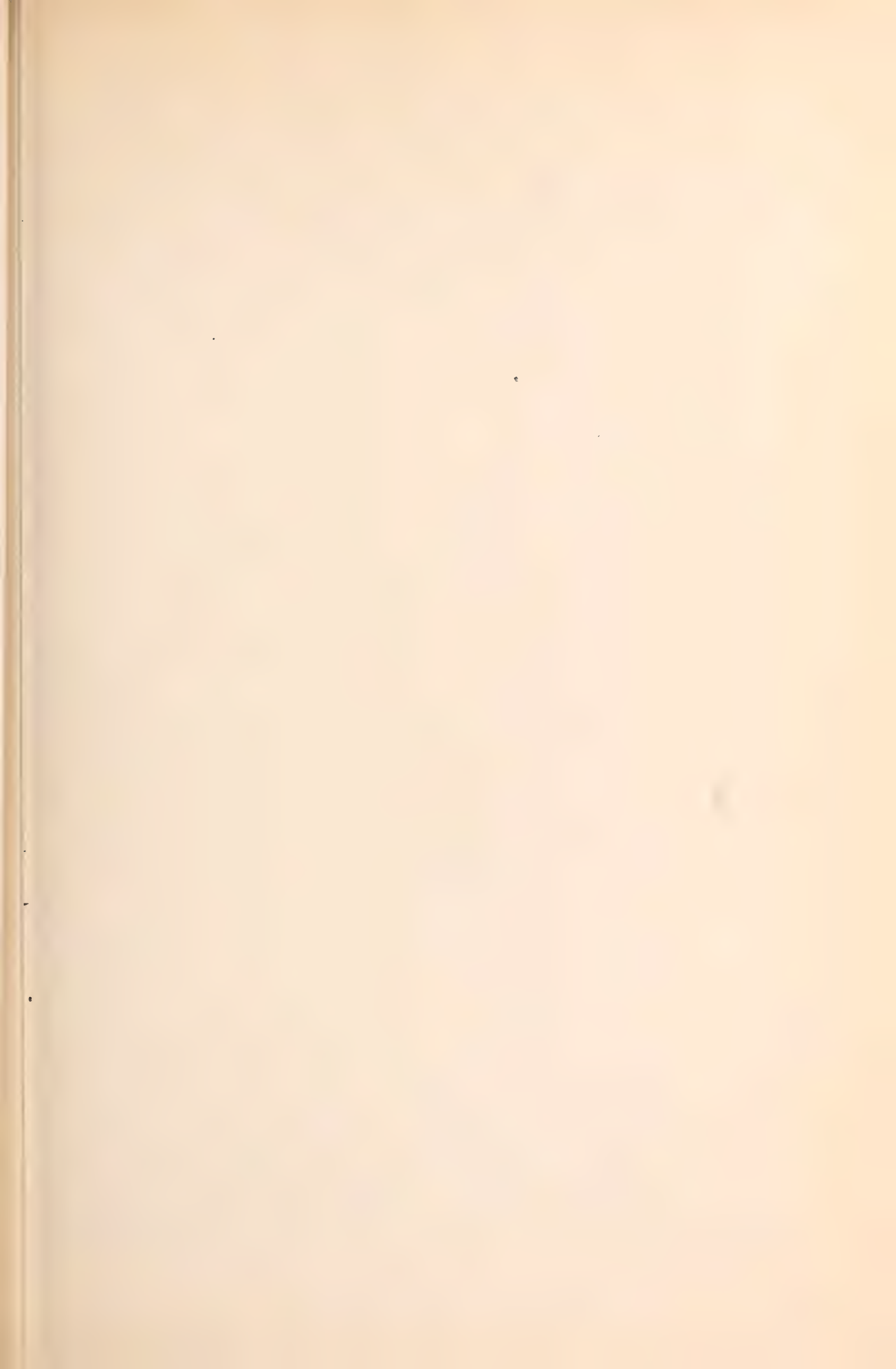
In 1854 the name of the village was changed from Dearman to Irvington. It was mainly due to the influence of Mr. George D. Morgan and the Hon. Moses H. Grinnell. The former requested the late Governor Morgan, who was then president of the Hudson River Railroad, to permit the name of the railroad station to be called Irvington, and to be so given on the time-table, and the latter requested the Postmaster-General to substitute Irvington, in place of Dearman, as the name of the post-office. It was, of course, gratifying to Mr. Irving in one way, although he expressed his regret that so good a neighbor as Mr. Dearman should be thus supplanted, and he wrote to Mr. George D. Morgan a modest letter, conveying at once his thanks and his regrets.

The village was incorporated under the name of Irvington in 1872.



"WOODCLIFF"
RESIDENCE OF GEORGE D. MORGAN,
IRVINGTON-ON-HUDSON.







"ARDSLEY."

RESIDENCE OF CYRUS W. FIELD,
IRVINGTON-ON-THE-HUDSON.

The "Irvington Free Library" was founded in the winter of 1865. Its present number of books is two thousand. It owes its origin to the efforts of Messrs. Frederic E. Phinney, George D. Morgan and John E. Williams.

A new and finely-appointed public-school edifice was erected on F Street in 1872, the land and building costing about forty thousand dollars. The school employs seven teachers.

The village is supplied with water by the Irvington Water-Works, completed May 1, 1884. The water is derived from an artesian well six hundred feet deep. The reservoir into which the water is pumped covers an area of almost an acre, and is twenty feet deep. The capacity of the reservoir is eight million gallons, equal to a supply for all the citizens of Irvington for two hundred days. It affords also the most effective protection against fire throughout the village. The amount expended upon the water-works up to May 1, 1885, was \$38,162.56.

Many beautiful houses have been erected in the village and around it, with grounds laid out at great expense. The well-kept lawns and gardens, the fine views up and down the Hudson River, and the charming drives, together with the good order maintained in the place and the generally excellent moral character and habits of the people, render Irvington a very attractive locality in which to find a home.

It would be impossible to describe in detail all the fine residences and estates for which the neighborhood of Irvington is remarkable. A few of them, however, may be mentioned in passing.

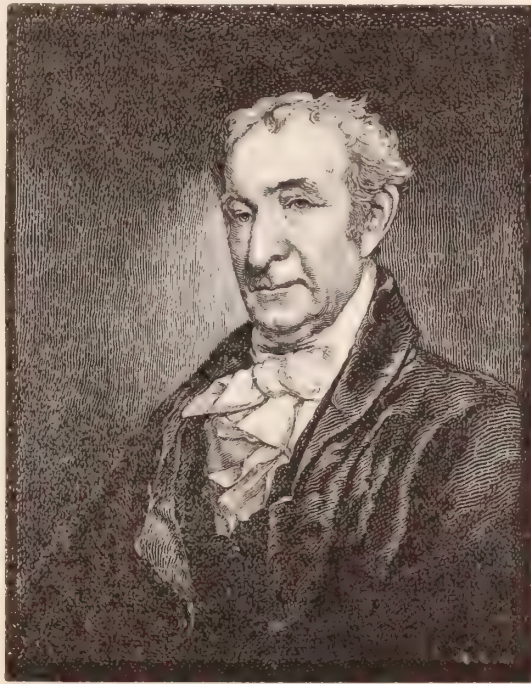
As one leaves the corporate limits of Dobbs Ferry and enters into those of Irvington, a mile and a half south of the village proper, the first large estate to attract the attention is that of Mr. Cyrus W. Field. The domains of this gentleman extend for a considerable distance northward on the east side of Broadway, and from that thoroughfare stretch upward to the east, passing over the high ridge already referred to and thence down the other side to the Saw-Mill River Valley. Near the entrance stand some half-dozen cottages, which are rented. Farther up the slope is the large frame house occupied by Mr. D. A. Lindley, the son-in-law of Mr. Field, while still above it is the immense ornate stone edifice erected by Mr.

Field as a residence for his eldest son. Northward of this mansion and below it is the house occupied as a country residence by Mr. Field himself. He is the proprietor here of about five hundred and fifty acres, of which all belong to the one general estate that bears the name of "Ardsley."

Opposite to "Ardsley," and on the west or river side of Broadway, is the estate named "Nuits," for a long time owned and occupied by the late Mr. F. Cottinet. The name is said to have been given by him in compliment to "Nuits," a small town of the Cote d'Or, in France, on the Paris and Lyons Railway, of which Mr. Cottinet was a native. This fine place is entered through a long avenue of maples. The house is situated near the river, and is a large structure of yellow stone, which is said to have

been brought from Nuits, in France, Mr. Cottinet's birth-place. The estate comprises about twenty acres, but owing to the absence of occupants for several years past, it is not now in such a condition as it was when the proprietor lived there.

Contiguous to "Nuits," on the north, are the shaded fields and the old family residence of Mr. Alexander Hamilton. This estate consists of about eighty-five acres and bears the name of "Nevis," now historic as the name of the British West India island, of only about twenty square miles altogether, upon which Alexander Hamilton, of Revolutionary renown, was born on January 11, 1757. The estate extends west from Broadway to the Hudson River, and is undoubtedly,



GILBERT STUART.

next to Sunnyside, rendered famous by Irving, the most interesting spot in this immediate vicinity. It was purchased from Stephen B. Tompkins about fifty years ago by the late Colonel James A. Hamilton, the son of General Alexander Hamilton, and the father of the present owner. The house is roomy and comfortable and contains various articles historically interesting, such as a picture of General Washington, said to have been painted by Gilbert Stuart, whose head of Washington has ever since been the accepted model. Washington himself presented the picture to his friend, General Hamilton, as a token of his regard. He also presented to him a silver wine cooler, which is still retained as a family heirloom in the Hamilton mansion.

A few hundred yards north of "Nevis" is the mas-

sive stone house built and occupied by Mr. David Dows as a country residence. It is a two-story edifice, and the stone used in erecting it was quarried in the immediate neighborhood, on the property of Mr. Harriman. The situation is exceedingly pleasant, being near the river, toward which the well-kept grounds gradually descend. To a spectator from without, the most remarkable feature about the house is its great solidity, combined with its great size. It was completed in the summer of 1870, and a short time after, the family moved in. The landed estate consists of about thirty acres, and the place is known as "Charlton Hall," a name given to it by Mr. Dows in honor of his birth-place, Charlton, Saratoga County, New York.

Adjoining the grounds of Mr. Dows, on the north, is the somewhat smaller but very attractive residence of Mrs. John D. Mairs. The house, as already mentioned, stands upon the site of the old British encampment in the Revolution. The name of the place is "Lynwood."

The Barney estate, adjoining Lynwood on the north, extends from Broadway to the Hudson River, and is a beautiful domain, with large meadows and lawns and fine trees. The house is of yellow stone, and is commodious and pleasant. There are several cottages, also, on the estate.

Passing north from the Main Street of the village, the first estate of prominence is known as Tiffany Park, the property of Mr. Charles L. Tiffany. The family residence is an ancient frame house, beautifully situated upon an eminence, from which there is an extensive and charming view of the Hudson River and the hills of Rockland County beyond. There are also several cottages on the premises.

Between this place, on the south, and Sunnyside, once the home of Washington Irving, and Willow Brook, the country-seat of Mr. Edward S. Jaffray, just north of Sunnyside Brook and road, the dividing line between Irvington and Tarrytown, is the estate now owned, either in whole or in part, by Mr. James C. Fargo. It was formerly the residence of the Rev. John McVickar, D.D., professor in Columbia College, New York. It is an attractive place, with fine shade-trees and an ample view of the river.

To the east of Broadway, and occupying elevated situations, there is a succession of beautiful homes that are suggestive of wealth and refinement. Among them may be mentioned Irving Cliff, so called from the fact that the cliff was a favorite resort of Washington Irving for the fine view it commanded. It is now the residence of Mr. Eliphalet Wood, whose stone dwelling-house here is one of large dimensions. The massive, castle-like house of Mr. A. C. Richards, north of it, and the fine residence of Mr. Frederic W. Guiteau, affording a noble view of the river, and also that of Mr. J. H. Whitehouse and of Mr. E. C. Gregory, on the south, and the tasteful residence of Mr. William Barton, farther up Broadway, once the

residence of the late Mr. John E. Williams, all deserve a larger notice than the limits of this history will allow.

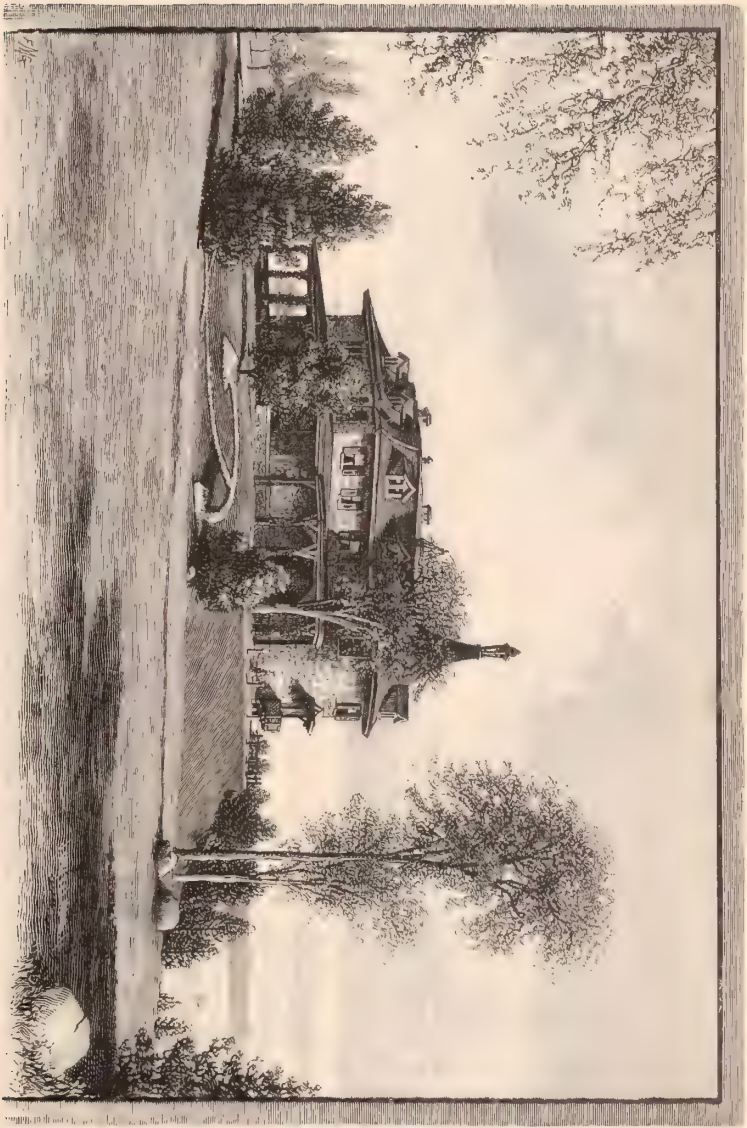
The enormous stone house erected by Mr. James Cunningham some years ago is a noticeable point of interest in this locality. Its situation is said to be the highest in Irvington, and the view from it is extremely grand. The house, however, is now, as it has been ever since its erection, entirely unoccupied.

Lying nearly between the two estates of the late Mr. Cunningham on the north and of the late Mr. Williams on the south are the fine grounds and residence of Mr. George D. Morgan, a relative of the late Governor Morgan and a long-time neighbor and friend of Washington Irving. Mr. Morgan, with his family, moved into the house he now occupies on April 29, 1853, and a day or two after, Mr. Irving called to give them a welcome to "Dearman," which was the name the village then bore. As already stated, it was largely due to Mr. Morgan's influence that the name of Irvington was substituted for it. The house and its surroundings are indicative at once of taste and comfort.

TARRYTOWN.—About three miles north of Irvington, and directly on the dividing line that separates the township of Greenburgh from that of Mount Pleasant, is the village of Tarrytown. It is distant from the Grand Central Depot of the New York Central and Hudson River Railroad, in New York City, twenty-four and seven-tenths miles, and on the New York City and Northern Railroad it is twenty-one miles from One Hundred and Fifty-fifth Street, New York. The Hudson River Railroad enters the village by the river-bank on the west, and the Northern Railroad enters it from the opposite side, beyond the high ridge to the east. Tarrytown proper has a population at the present time of about four thousand five hundred, though including North Tarrytown, considered, in fact, a part of it, and the population within the corporate limits, the total population would amount probably to about seven thousand.

The origin of the name is doubtful. Everybody knows the facetious etymology given by Washington Irving in "The Legend of Sleepy Hollow." In reference to the name "Tarry Town," he says: "This name was given, we are told, in former days, by the good housewives of the adjacent country, from the inveterate propensity of their husbands to linger about the village tavern on market-days. Be that as it may, I do not vouch for the fact, but merely advert to it, for the sake of being precise and authentic." He thus places this piece of "history" upon the same level with the other historical statements of "the late Diedrick Knickerbocker."

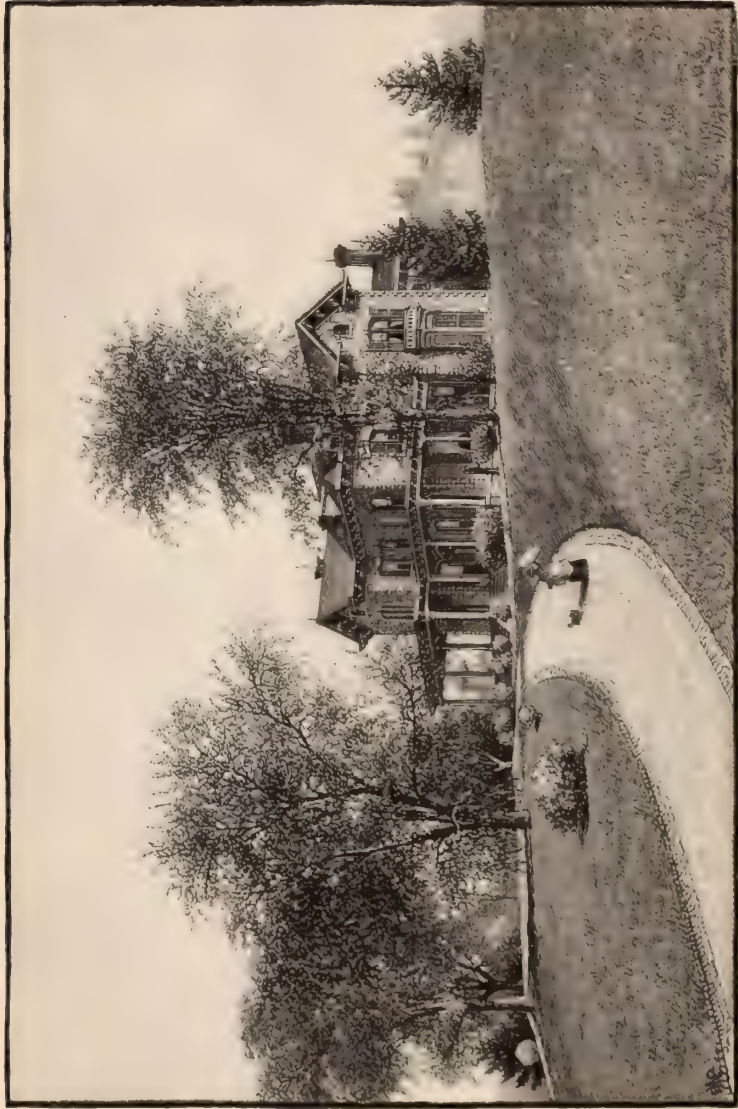
A well-authenticated tradition says that there was a kindred saying, but of even stronger import, current among the housewives of the adjacent country, to the effect that the place ought to be called "Tarry Town," because their husbands went down there on



“ RIDGEVIEW . . .
IRVINGTON-ON-HUDSON,
RESIDENCE OF MR. A. C. RICHARDS







RESIDENCE OF F. W. GUILTEAU,

IRVINGTON-ON-HUDSON, N. Y.

market-days, when the sloops sailed to New York, and stayed at the tavern till they got back. But this saying, as a matter of "history," has about the same value as the previous one just quoted.

Another etymology is given in Bolton's History, Volume I., page 294, where it is said: "Tarwetown, the old orthography of the Dutch word tarwe (wheat) 'the wheat town,' probably so called from the abundant culture of that grain in this vicinity." It is true, tarwe "is the old orthography of the Dutch word for wheat," and it is also the orthography at the present time. But there is no evidence that the place was ever famous or even remarkable for the culture of wheat, and it is very doubtful whether the name "Tarry Town" was given to it before the Dutch surrendered the colony to the English. The name seems to have been given to it at some time after 1754. For David Williams, one of the captors of Andre, only about seven months before his death, August 2, 1831, while dictating an account of his life, said: "I was born in Tarrytown, then called Philipse's Manor, Westchester County, New York, October 21, 1754." According to him, then, the place in 1754 was called Philipse's Manor, and the name "Tarry Town" was given to it at a later date. This statement of Mr. Williams agrees perfectly with the original manuscript minute-book of the "Town Clark for the Manor of Philipsburgh," from April, 1742, to April, 1779, in which there is no mention in the recorded minutes, from the beginning until 1778, of any such place as Tarrytown. In the record of "a town-meeting held as usual on the Manor the seventh day of April, 1778, and in the second year of our Independency," (for Independency), the name of Tarrytown occurs for the first time, but spelled with one *r*. In the list of officers elected is the following: "George Monson, Overseer of Road In Tary Town." The name occurs three times after this, and in each case spelled with two *r*'s, twice in 1779 and once in 1783. Elsewhere the place is always spoken of as Philipse's Manor or the Manor of Philipsburgh.

Perhaps there is a clue to the mystery of its origin in the fact that there is in the county clerk's office at White Plains the record of a deed conveying land at "Old Yonkers," adjoining "George's Point," from John Tarry to Jacobus Van Cortlandt in 1693. It is stated in the deed that John Tarry came from Long Island, and the records of the old Dutch Church of Sleepy Hollow show very decisively that there were intimate relations between the settlements at Tarrytown and along the Lower Hudson and those on Long Island, and also much moving to and fro and intercommunication with each other. In the record of marriages, for instance, beginning with October 30, 1698 there are on two pages no less than six cases where one or the other of the parties married had removed from Long Island. That the name Tarry was quite common on Long Island is sufficiently indicated by the fact that in the book of military re-

turns for the Revolution, published by the State of New York, Volume I., page 61, the following return is given for Suffolk County, Long Island:¹

"List of men in Captain Josiah Lupton's Company, [Associations, etc., 30: 178, 179.]

"Corporal, Isaiah Tarry.

John Tarry, at ye wading River.

John Tarry, at ye Bateing Hollow.

David Tarry, Jun.

Further on in the same volume, page 179, there is a return for the "Philipsburgh Companies," including one from "Terrytown," the name spelled with an *e*, and not with an *a*, a fact to be referred to hereafter. The same orthography occurs in the petition of Stephen Hogeboom to the "Honorable Convention of the State of New York," quoted on a later page, in which he says, "the navigation of the Hudson River was obstructed by two ships of war of the King of Great Britain sailing up as far as Terrytown." This substitution of the *e* for the *a* often occurs in old documents. The record stands thus:

Philipsburgh Companies.

[Military ret., 26: 140.]

"Sir, we send you a list of the officers chosen on the Manor of Philipsburgh in the County of West Chester, in the room of those who do decline:

"For Terry Town Company.	<i>East Company.</i>
Glood Requa, Captain.	Benjamin Vermilya, Captain.
Cornelius Vantassel, Second Lieut.	Gilbart Dean, First Lieut.
Sibourt Acker, Ensign.	William Fushie, Second Do.

Upper Company.

Jonas Arsor, Second Lieutenant.

"We have likewise returned you the commissions of those who do decline.

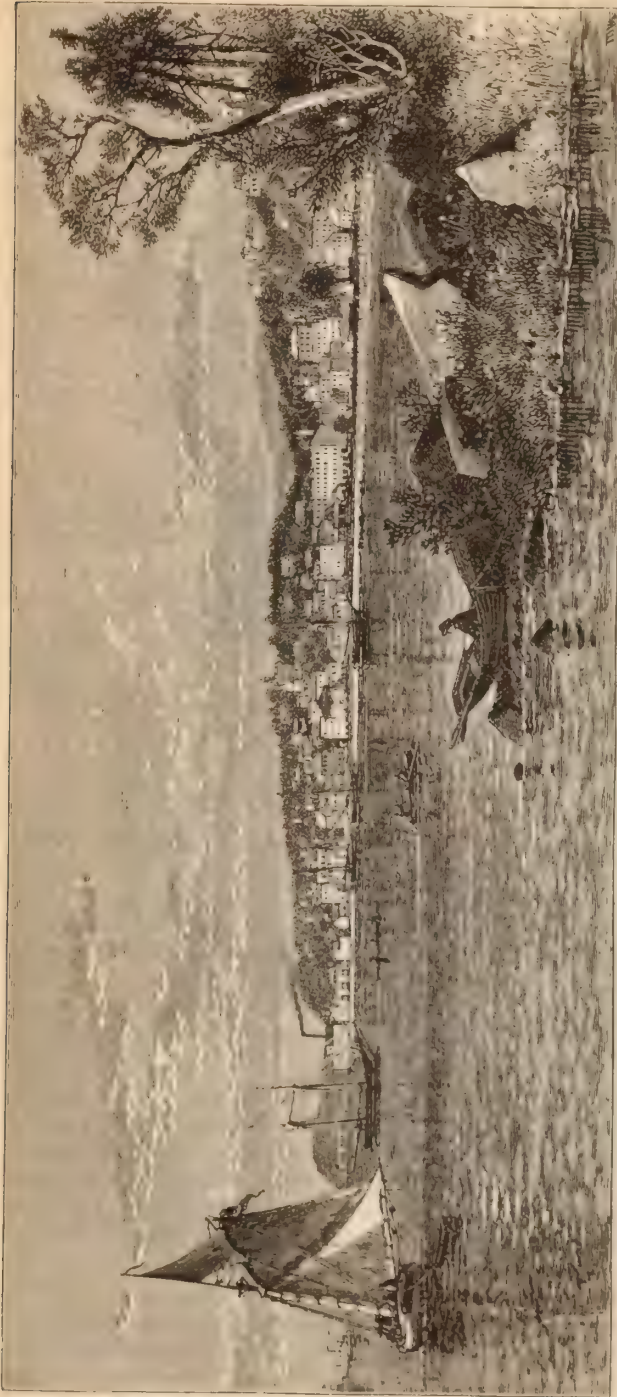
George Comb,
Joseph Young,
James Hammond.

"Philipsburgh, October 23, 1775."

It should be remembered here that in the orthography of those early days the *a* and the *e*, in both common and proper names, were very often interchanged. Thus, we have the same name spelled Van Wart, Van Waert, Van Weert and Van Wert. Sometimes a man's name is given as Acker and sometimes as Ecker. So we have to designate the same person Ackerman and Eckerman, See, Sie and Zie, Buys and Boyce, Juel and Jewel, Taller and Teller, Jurckse, Yerks and Yurkse. So, too, the name of the river is given as the Brunx and the Bronx. It is not surprising, then, to find a similar variation in the name of the place and to read at one time "Tarry Town," at another "Terry Town," as in the military return above. In the old town clerk's book of Mount Pleasant, about 1801 and later, occurs several times the name of George Terry, as overseer of the road, and as furnishing day's works on the road. It would not be strange if he were a descendant of the Tarrys or Terrys, from whom, by some connection that does not now lie upon the surface, the village of

¹The title of the two volumes containing these military returns is: "Calendar of Historical Manuscripts, relating to the War of the Revolution, in the office of the Secretary of State, Albany, N. Y. Vol. I. and II. Albany: Weed, Parsons, & Company, Printers. 1868."

Tarrytown took its name. Such an origin seems much more probable than that facetiously given by Mr. Irving or that more seriously offered in Bolton's history of the county.



The situation of Tarrytown, on the east side of the Hudson, and at the point of its greatest width, known

as Tappan Zee or Sea, combines in itself every thing to render it one of the most beautiful localities on the continent, or indeed in the world. The shore is here so indented as to form a sort of cove or bay. Near

the centre of the cove is a point, projecting westward toward the river channel, and commonly spoken of as Point Dock. South of this point the cove penetrates still farther eastward into the land, which, around its shores, rises quite abruptly to an elevation of probably from seventy-five to eighty feet above the river-level to a second plateau, and then still higher to the old Albany Post road, now locally known as Broadway. The narrow, level flat or border below the hill, which is only a few feet higher than the river itself, and now described on the map as Water Street, and the projecting point above mentioned, now known as Point Dock, on which the principal market dock was located years ago, were probably the earliest settled portions of the village. Houses and other buildings were no doubt first erected there, unless we except the Philipse Manor-House, across the Pocantico, in what is known at the present day as North Tarrytown. A large part of the land now occupied by streets and houses lay, some sixty years ago or less, as so much farm land, on which stood the very unpretentious farm-houses of the respective owners.

TARRYTOWN FROM THE HUDSON.¹

A few of the old houses of that period, perhaps seven or eight in number, and notably what still bears the name of the "Paulding House," in Water Street, which is known to have been built before the Revolution, are still standing on the dock and under the hill, although the latter are now cut off from the open river by the track of the Hudson River Railroad, which crosses the cove one hundred yards or more farther out. A Main Street from the Point Dock to the Albany Post road (now Broadway), was the public highway to the country "over back," as people called it, on the east. About fifty or sixty years ago a dozen houses in addition to those below the hill, which stood for the most part on the south side of Main Street, with some five or six others along Broadway, near the Main Street corner, constituted all there then was of Tarrytown.

Now the village has grown eastward away across the old Albany Post road (or Broadway), and northward up to the township line, where it joins and, in fact, blends with what is municipally known as North

¹ From Hudson River Illustrated. Copyright by D. Appleton & Co.

Tarrytown. The two villages are really one, as they should and ere long probably will be, both in corporate existence and in name. Thus connected, they stretch along the western slope of the high ridge that extends northward nearly parallel with the east shore of the Hudson River, in almost continuous succession from the upper end of New York Island. It may be said, in fact, that this ridge is only separated by the Spuyten Duyvil Creek from the continuation of it, which forms the whole upper part of New York. Besides the gap made by the Spuyten Duyvil, there is a smaller one a few miles north, where the Nepperhan or Saw-Mill River empties into the Hudson at Yonkers.

Just below Tarrytown the complete continuity of this ridge is somewhat modified, and several brooks, that go gurgling down the western slope toward the river, separate it into beautiful, picturesque and many-formed hills more or less detached from each other. It is this feature, affording magnificent views up and down the Hudson River, that gives to the locality one of its surpassing points of beauty.

Immediately opposite the Point Dock Landing the slope rises quite continuously toward the east by a succession of natural terraces, each above the other, thus affording sufficient space on each ascending elevation for houses, villas and country-seats. The higher localities overlooking those below, and all commanding the most picturesque and far-extended views of the river, up toward the Highlands on the north and down along the Palisades to the south, as well as of the distant mountains beyond the river on the west, is one but rarely equalled and never surpassed. The highest point opposite and eastward of the Tarrytown Landing, and within the corporate limits of the village, is not much more than a mile from the Hudson River, and the summit of the ridge is probably from three hundred to four hundred feet above the level of the tide. The eastern slope of the ridge is almost in the form of a horse-shoe, and not far from the Tarrytown Station, on the New York City and Northern Railroad, there rises a lateral tributary to the Nepperhan, which, flowing eastward for about a quarter of a mile or more, finally empties into that stream.

TARRYTOWN IN THE REVOLUTION.—Owing to its situation relatively to the American lines above and to the British lines below, during the military occupation of the place itself and of the country around it, Tarrytown became the scene of many deeply interesting events connected with the Revolutionary War. In the continual marchings and counter-marchings, the conflicts and struggles, not only of the regular forces engaged, but also of the partisan warfare that grew out of the divided feeling which produced the two parties of Patriot and Tory, and added a peculiar bitterness to the strife, the locality was ravaged and swept, now from one side and now from the other, resulting often in death from violence, and death

from exposure, fatigue and disease. It might have been said of the region then, while the actors were moving to and fro upon it, as Campbell said of Hohenlinden,

"And every turf beneath their feet
Shall be a soldier's sepulchre."

On July 24, 1776, Colonel Hammond, or Hamman, was tried before a committee of inquiry, "in respect to his behavior as an officer on the evening of the day (July 12, 1776) on which the enemy's ships came to anchor off Tarrytown, in this County, and as a buyer of Pork for this State." The testimony on the trial is a curious mixture of the serious and the amusing, in which patriotism and pork seem to be combined in nearly equal proportions. The official records are quoted from the "Calender of Historical Manuscripts relating to the War of the Revolution," already referred to:

*Report and evidence in the case of Col. Hamman.*¹

"The examination of the Evidences against Col. Hamman in respect to his behavior as an officer, on the evening of the Day on which the Enemy's ships came to anchor off Tarrytown, in this County—and as a buyer of Pork for this State.

"Lieut. Daniel Marlin being sworn, deposeth and saith, That upon seeing the fleet drawing nigh Tarrytown the 12th inst., ordered his Sergeant to warn the men; this was about 7 o'clock; That s^d Sergeant afterwards told the Deponent he had been with Col. Hamman to warn him, and that thereupon the s^d Col. mounted his horse and set out directly to warn Capt. Vermilie; That the s^d Col. and a brother of this Deponent had some words, as the Deponent heard from some of the men, but cannot recollect from whom, and that the said colonel arrived at Tarrytown between twelve and one o'clock the next morning, as his said brother informed him; and further this deponent saith not.

"Samuel Purly, Junr., being sworn, deposeth that Col. Hamman agreed with him for four bbls. of pork at 44 5/8; That afterwards the s^d Col. told him that Col. Drake was dissatisfy'd with the bargain, and asked him, the said Col. Hamman, if he did not think the people would take the pork again; That Hamman said he told the said Drake that he did not chuse to go about to countermand what he had done, for that he knew that some of the people wanted the money; That he would sooner take it himself than do so; That he, the deponent, after this delivered the said pork to the said Col. Hamman; and That either at that time or some time before, the said Col. told the deponent that the said Col. Drake had wrote to him, the said Hamman, for a number of prime bbls. of pork, which the deponent thinks he, the said Hamman, said were about eight in number; That the next day, after s^d Hamman had rec^d the s^d four bbls. of pork from the Deponent, he told the said deponent, it having been repacked, that he had made three bbls. of prime pork out of the four bbls. aforesaid, and that he did allow the deponent but four pounds for the remaining barrel; That the deponent heard others call the said repacker by the name of Thomas Hunt, and that he heard him say that he was authorized by the Congress to that employment. The deponent further saith that he was present when the said repacker was repacking the pork of James Requaw, and that he saw several peices of the s^d pork rejected by the s^d packer; and that afterwards, he, the deponent, saw the said Requaw carrying back several of the said rejected peices in his cart; and the deponent saith that he heard the said Col. Hamman say to the said Requaw that he would as soon see his pork repacked as any of his neighbors, if the repacker thought it would do.

"The deponent further saith that he saw several prime peices of pork taken by Joseph Leggett while the said Hunt was repacking pork which he said the said Leggett had sold the said Hamman, and that the deponent did not hear the said Leggett or any other person desire the said packer to put in any peices into the bbls but what he thought proper, nor did he know that any peices were taken out of any of the said barrels after having been repacked.

"Johnathan G. Tomkins, Esq., being sworn, deposeth and saith—that near nine o'clock on the evening of the 12th inst., he called at Col

¹ (Miscel. Pap. 34 : 549).

Hammonds, and found a man advising him to warn his men to muster, for the Enemy's ships were coming up the river. That rd Col. asked ye deponent whither the report was a matter of fact. The deponent told him it was, and desired rd Col. to warn his officers immediately—that the Col. turned to a certain Justice Dean and borrowed his horse and mounted him and set off directly with the deponent without so much as going into his own house first, to warn Capt. Vermilier, and he, the said Col., also desired the aforesaid man to warn all they came across and that they should influence others to do the same; that the rd Col. informed the deponent that he was under the necessity of ordering the people to meet at his house, as he had the ammunition there; that Capt. Requaw was sufficiently warned, being in a field from which he could see the vessels as they came up. That the deponent parted with the said Colonel about two miles from the river, where the road strikes off to Capt. Vermilier's. That the rd Col. went toward the rd Captains and the deponent to the River at Tarrytown. That about 10 o'clock the deponent returned to the rd Colonels and was told that he had not returned since he set out with the said deponent and that the deponent believes that the said Colonel was active in collecting his men, and further saith not. Captain Benjamin Vermilier, being sworn, deposeseth and saith that on the evening of the 12th inst. Col. Hamman came to his house early in the evening and gave him orders to warn the men as fast as he could. After the rd depon^t had warned his Corporal to acquaint the Sergeant to come down to Tarry town the deponent went to Mr. Vantassels and found the Col. there. That scarcely an hour after the depon^t with the Col. went down to the River, but the hour of the night he could not tell, as he had no watch. Peter Allair, clerk to Col. Hammon's regiment, being sworn, deposeseth and saith: That Col. Hamman's son-in-law about 9 o'clock warned him to turn out on the alarm. That he went to alarm some men, then returned to the Col. and charged all the guns there. That afterwards went to Vantassels and that the Col. was there before him, and the deponent believes that the rd Col. made no unnecessary delay in going down to Tarry town, the time of night he knew not.

"Lieut. Cornelius Vantassel, being sworn, deposeseth and saith that on the aforesaid evening he went to the house of Lieut. Marlin, where he found Col. Hammans about one or two o'clock, and found him doing his best to prepare and forward the men to the shore. That he and the Col. got the depon^t a hat full of cartridges for his men, who had before but 3 or 4 rounds a man, and that the rd Col. was busie in furnishing others with Cartridges also.

"Joseph Youngs, being sworn, deposeseth and saith that Will^m Paulding, Esq^r, told the Committee of this place, Westchester, that Col. Hammon had been warned at 10 o'clock on the evening the enemy appeared off Tarrytown, and did not go to Tarrytown till 10 o'clock the next day. But the depon^t going down to the said town found by the information of credible persons that Col. Hamman had been down at about one in the morning, and further saith not as to that matter. That he was pres^t when Jos. Drake asked Hamman if he could purchase him some pork. The Col. replied that he could. That Hamman bought some by Drake's orders, who told him he allowed him to give £4 and £4 5s pr barrel for prime pork. After he bought it Drake told Hamman the Congress would not allow so much, and asked him whether he could not return it to the people again. Hamman told him he could not, for that he would rather lose the 5 shillings. Youngs then advised Hammon to keep ye pork, for that he would not lose by it.

"Joseph Leggett doth affirm that he was present when Requaws pork was repacked by the afores^d Hunt, and told the Company, of which Col. Hamman and the repacker were two, that the pork was very much moulded, and that he saw the rd repacker put several peices to his nose and throw them aside, but did not see or learn that Col. Hamman gave the repacker any orders or instructions about the rd Pork. The affirmant farther saith that in his opinion the said Pork was not merchantable.

"That he, the affirmant, saw Col. Hamman cull one Barrel of Pork out of four or five, but that the remaining three were good and merchantable. Martinus Van Wart, being sworn, deposeseth and saith that he sold Col. Hamman five bbls. of Pork; that he was present at repacking the same; that the rd Col. Hamman, upon a door which he had laid down, took and laid the prime peices of rd five bbls.; that four bbls. were filled by there packer, Hunt, and that a bbl. was filled with part of the prime pork and marked by the repacker, the rem^r of the rd prime peices of Pork the deponent took back; and also that he, the deponent, heard the repacker commend whole of the rd pork as he was repacking it, and that he does not know whether Hamman took the said bbl. prime pork to himself or not. From the foregoing Evidences it appears to this Committee that the charges exhibited against Colonel Hamman, both in regard to the affair of the Pork and neglect of duty as an

officer, are entirely groundless, and that therefore the said Colonel ought to be acquitted from all further trouble on these accounts, and returned to his regiment immediately. July 24th, 1776.

"(Indorsed.) Report of a committe that Col^o Hamman is an honest man & a fighting Colonel. Confirmed."

The trial of Colonel Hammond was not the only trouble for which the coming of the British ships to Tarrytown furnished the occasion. It led also to the loss of a sloop belonging to Stephen Hogeboom, of Claverack, and in the following February, that is, in 1777, he petitioned "the Honorable Convention of the State of New York" for indemnity. In his petition it will be seen that he gives the name of the place as "Terrytown." It is quoted from the "Calendar of Historical Manuscripts."

*Petition of Stephen Hogeboom.*¹

"To the Honorable Convention of the State of New York :

"The Memorial of Stephen Hogeboom, of Claverack, in the County of Albany, in behalf of himself and Peter Hogeboom and Thomas Storm, of the same place, owners of the Sloop Middlesex, Humbly Sheweth. That your memorialist and the other owners of the said Sloop sent her down to the City of New York, in July last, laden with flour for the use of the Continental Army. That before her Loading was discharged the navigation up Hudson River was obstructed by two ships of War of the King of Great Britain, sailing up as far as Terrytown. That thereupon Peter Hogeboom, one of the said owners, after having discharged his Cargo carried the said Sloop up the Sound to Horseneck for safety. That in August following, your Memorialists hearing that the Ships of War were sailed out of Hudson River, brought his Sloop back to New York with a design to proceed with her to Claverack, but was prevented from proceeding by Coll. Wardsworth and Commissary Hughes, who ordered your Memorialists over with the Sloop to Long Island Ferry, where she was used to carry off the Troops and Stores, after the unfortunate retreat on the 28th of the said month. That your Memorialists seeing no prospect of bringing the said Sloop to a place of safety while she continued in the Continental Service, thereupon quitted her. That there said Sloop was afterwards carried up with stores of the Army thro' the Sound to King's Bridge, where she was used as a store Vessel by the Continental Army, until the Retreat from the Island, when she fell into the hands of the Enemy.

"That your Memorialists have lost the said Sloop by her being taken into the Continental Service, your Memorialist therefore prays that the House will take the premises into cons^{id} and grant unto your Memorialist such relief in the premises as shall appear reasonable.

"And your Memorialist, &c.

STEPHEN HOGEBOOM.

"FISHKILL, Feb. 24, 1777."

In regard to the unsettled condition of things at Tarrytown and in the whole region around it, during the War of the Revolution, the trial of Anthony Hill, on April 18, 1777, for "holding a treacherous correspondence with the enemy," and "being employed by them for the purpose of enlisting men into their service," affords an interesting glimpse. The record, taken from the "Calendar of Historical Manuscripts relating to the War of the Revolution," vol. ii, pp. 87-88, is as follows :

"Friday, April 18, 1777.

"Lt. Col. Weissenfels being indisposed & Capt. Bray being on command, Capts. Hallett & Pelton were sworn in their room.

"Anthony Hill was brought before the Court & charged with holding a treacherous Correspondence with the Enemy & being employed by them for the purpose of enlisting Men into their Service. The Prisoner on his Arraignment pleads not Guilty. Lieut. Gabriel Requaw being sworn, says that he lives about two Mile back of Tarry Town, that about a Week ago, as he was working by his House, he saw two Men crossing the Lots, that suspect them, he went into the House, took his Gun and

¹ Petitions, 33: 622.

followed them into the Woods, on halting them one Ran away, the Prisoner Stop'd, when he came up with him he asked him where he came from. The Prisoner answered from Kingsbridge, he then took him to his father's & there searched him in presence of his Brother—found about him Six Dollars & one Shilling in Silver and Some Coppers & two Silver Spoons, also a Warrant tore in Pieces, the same now produced.

"N. B.—The Warrant was produced in Court & appears to have been a Warrant empowering to raise Men to Augment the New York Companies under Major Grant to be enlisted for two years or during the present Rebellion, &c.—signed by Major Grant & directed to Auth—several pieces being lost. The Prisoner told the Evidence he took the Warrant to get out of York, & on the Evidences asking him why he did not deliver himself up, the Prisoner answered, he took advice of the Man who was with him & whose Name he said was Manuel Littlebeck.

"Joseph Requaw being sworn, says that he was at his Father's when his Brother brought in the Prisoner, that he asked him where he came from. He answered, from Long Island to New York & from thence. Said also that he belongs to Capt. Cain's Comp in the Enemy's service—that he had been in their Service four Months. On asking if he had any letters, he answered, no—but on the Evidences offering to search him, he pull'd out of his pocket a Warrant, the same as now produced, tore in pieces. The Evidence asked him how he came to get that Warrant. He said he took it to get out, for he could not get over the Bridge without it, said he took it solely to get out & never intended to go back or act in Consequence of it. The Evidence then asked him why he did not deliver himself up to the first Guard, the prisoner answered, he knew of no Guard—he also said he had put the Warrant under a stone intending to leave it, but that the Man who was with him persuaded him to take it with him. The Prisoner further said the other had a warrant also, & had a night or two before carried down Twenty-three Men—the Prisoner told him he came from Kingsbridge, the 10 April, about half an hour before Sun set—he was taken the 11th of April. The Prisoner in his Defence says that he was Drafted last Fall in Col. Swartwouts Regt, went to Kingsbridge with them, came home & was returning to join the Regt, when he met one Edw. Palmer, who lived in Cortlandt's manor, who told him if he went back he would be flogged, & advised him to go to Long Island with him. With some persuasion he went with Palmer to Cowneck & worked there with one Henry Sands—when he first came on the Island he was persuaded to enlist with the Enemy, but was not called on to Join his Company until about three weeks ago, when he was ordered to Join them at Fort Washington, which he did.

"The Company was then commanded by Capt. Cain, who received orders from Major Grant to procure some men acquainted in Dutchess County, to go out recruiting—and as Manuel Littlebeck had a night or two before brought in Twenty-three Men, he was again pitched upon to go, & as the Prisoner lived in Dutchess County he agreed to come with him. Accordingly, a warrant was given each of them. The Prisoner says he took the Warrant merely to get clear & never intended to return. Littlebeck proposed their traveling in the Night to prevent being taken up, to which the Prisoner objected, saying he was not afraid of being taken. They therefore slept that night & set off next Morning. On the Way the Prisoner took the Warrant & put it under a Stone intending to leave it, but that Littlebeck took it up again & told him to put it in his Pocket, threatening him to tell the Officers when he returned. The Prisoner accordingly put it in his pocket & proceeded. In Crossing the fields he saw the Evidence Lt. Requaw running after them, who, when he came within about Thirty Rods called to them to Stop, on which the Prisoner stopped, but Littlebeck ran away. Lieut. Requaw carried him to a House, and on the way he took out the Warrant and tore it in pieces for fear of its being found on him.

"The Court having considered the Evidence & Defence of the Prisoner, are of Opinion that he is Guilty of the charge and Do therefore Sentence him to be hanged by the Neck till he is Dead.

"BEN. WALKER, Judge Advocate. PHILIP CORTLANDT, *President.*"

An idea of the military movements may be gathered from the contemporary records. General Heath, for example, was ordered by Washington, in January, 1777, to move from Peekskill down the east bank of the Hudson, thus passing through Tarrytown toward New York, as if intending to attack the city. The battle had just been fought at Princeton, and by a demonstration upon New York City, Washington

aimed to compel the British to withdraw from New Jersey. General Heath, in his "Memoirs" pages 105 to 108, makes some interesting statements. When he uses the words "Our General" he means himself. The following is an extract:

"7th.—Our general received the following letter from Gen. Washington:

"PLUCKEMIN, Jan. 5, 1777.

"SIR:

"We have made a successful attack upon Princeton. General Howe advanced upon Trenton; we evacuated the town and lay at the other side of the Mill Creek until dark; then stole a march, and attacked Princeton about 9 o'clock in the morning.

"There were three regiments quartered there.

"The killed, wounded and prisoners taken amounted to about 500. The enemy are in great consternation; and as the present affords us a favorable opportunity to drive them out of the Jerseys, it has been determined in Council, that you should move down toward New York with a considerable force, as if you had a design upon the city; that being an object of great importance, the enemy will be reduced to the necessity of withdrawing a considerable part of their force from the Jerseys, if not the whole, to secure the city. I shall draw the force on this side the North River together at Morristown, where I shall watch the motions of the enemy, and avail myself of every circumstance. You will retain 4,000 of the militia, coming on from the New England Governments, for the expedition. You will act with great precaution, but avail yourself of every favorable opportunity of attacking the enemy, when you can do it to advantage.

"Gen. Lincoln must cross the North River and come on with the remainder of the militia to Morristown. Leave a sufficient guard at the Highlands.

"You will also have as many boats collected together, or in such a manner as you may always avail yourself of them, if it should be found expedient for your troops, or any part of them, to cross the North River at Dobbs Ferry, or any other of the landings.

"I am, &c.

"(Signed) GEO. WASHINGTON.

"Gen Heath."

"Preparations for the before-mentioned movement were immediately put in train. The militia and volunteers were coming in.

"8th.—Gen. Parsons went down to King-street.

"9th.—The remainder of Col. Sparhawk's and Col. Whitney's regiments passed over the river to join Gen. Washington.

"10th.—Colonel Frost's regiment marched to North-castle and Gen. Scott's militia to White Plains.

"11th.—A number of British officers, taken at Princeton, passed Peek's Kill, on their way to Connecticut. The same day it was learnt that, on the 8th, Gen. Maxwell, with the Jersey militia and some Continental troops, routed the enemy at Elizabeth-Town, where he took 50 Highlanders, a schooner loaded with baggage and fell in with a party of 30 Waldeckers, whom he also took prisoners.

"12th.—Gen. Moulton, from Massachusetts, and Col. Gilman, from New-Hampshire, came to camp. A number of British prisoners, taken in the Jerseys, passed Peeks Kill on their way to Connecticut.

"13th.—Our General moved to the Southward, and reached North-Castle just before the sun-set, where he found part of four regiments had arrived, and Gen. Scott's militia of New York had moved down to Wright's Mills.

"14th.—Our General moved to King-street, to Mr. Clap's—about 3,000 militia had arrived, and Gen. Lincoln's division marched to Tarrytown on this day. The Commander-in-Chief, in another letter, had intimated that Gen. Lincoln, instead of moving on to join him, should stay on the east side of the Hudson and join in the expedition.

"15th.—The Connecticut volunteers marched from King-street to New Rochelle, and Gen. Scott's brigade to Stephen Ward's. Plenty of provisions were arriving. A deserter came in from the enemy, and gave an account of their situation and numbers.

"17th.—At night the three divisions began to move towards Kings-bridge; Gen. Lincoln's, from Tarrytown, on the Albany road; Generals Wooster and Parsons, from New Rochelle and East Chester, and Gen. Scott's in the centre, from below White Plains."

(Jan. 1777, "Heath's Memoirs," page 113.)

"29th.—There was the appearance of a severe snow-storm coming on, when all the General Officers on the ground, viz., besides our General,

Lincoln, Wooster, Scott and Ten Broeck, were unanimously of opinion that the troops ought to move back before the storm came on, to places where they could be covered from the inclemency of the weather, as there was no artillery to batter the fort, and from first to last they were unanimously opposed to any idea of an assault or storm of the fort with the militia, and the principal object being now to secure and bring off, or destroy the forage, which could be as well done where the troops could have covering, as to harass them in the open fields by multiplying guards or their being constantly exposed in the scattered houses, to be surprised and cut off. For these several reasons, the troops were ordered, as soon as it grew dark, to move back, Gen. Lincoln's division to Dobbs Ferry and Tarrytown, Gen. Wooster's to New-Rochelle and Gen. Scott's to White Plains; the guards to remain at their posts and alert until the troops were all moved off, and then to form rear guards on the several roads, following the troops to whom they respectively belonged; all of which was performed in good order, in a very heavy fall of snow."

In March, 1777, Sir William Howe, in New York City, conceived the design of sending an expedition up the river to Peekskill to capture the cattle and military stores collected there, and, if possible, the small force of two hundred and fifty, under General McDougall, that had been left there to guard them. He attempted by stratagem to deceive General McDougall, as if his objective point was in another quarter. That officer, however, took the precaution to send away a part of his stores to Forts Clinton and Montgomery for safety, and had commenced the transportation, but before he could complete it ten sail of British vessels appeared off Tarrytown in Tappan Zee, and two went farther up the river. The next day they all anchored in the Peekskill Bay, and landed about one thousand men, with several pieces of cannon. General McDougall having only a small force, destroyed the remaining stores and withdrew. The British then occupied the village. A party of them, about two hundred strong, took possession of a height south of Van Cortlandt's. In the mean time Lieutenant-Colonel Willett, having reinforced McDougall with about eighty men, obtained permission to attack the enemy on the height. After the first collision the British fled in great precipitation, leaving three dead on the field, and the whole body, panic-stricken, betook themselves to their vessels and sailed down the river. Before they embarked, however, they gave it out as their intention to stop at Tarrytown on their way, and to destroy the American magazine of forage at Wright's Mills. On the enemy's departure, disappointed of their object, General McDougall resumed his former quarters.

In October, 1777, Sir Henry Clinton organized another expedition up the river, partly to destroy stores and partly to make a diversion in favor of General Burgoyne, who, with his force, was then in danger from the Americans at Saratoga. Sir Henry Clinton accordingly went up the Hudson with about five thousand men in flat-boats and transports and landed at Tarrytown. Colonel Luddington at that time was posted at Tarrytown with about five hundred militia. Clinton sent a flag and a peremptory summons demanding their surrender. A parley ensued, during which Luddington perceived the enemy was making

a movement to surround his little force, and he prudently ordered a retreat.

It was in November of this same year, 1777, that such inhuman cruelties were perpetrated by the British soldiery and the Tories upon the patriotic people on Philips Manor and in the neighborhood of Tarrytown, under the instigation of that vain and barbarous tyrant, Governor William Tryon, of New York, that Brigadier-General Samuel H. Parsons, of the Continental army, felt constrained to write him in indignant remonstrance. Tryon is described by Lossing as "haughty, innately cruel, fond of show, obsequious when wishing favors and tyrannical when independent." Exasperated by the obstinate patriotism of the Tarrytown people, he instigated an expedition to burn and plunder, and even gave orders that Tarrytown should be destroyed. It was of the Dutch people along the Hudson that the British General Howe said, in 1777, after his movement up the river, "I can do nothing with this Dutch population; I can neither buy them with money, nor conquer them with force." No more eloquent eulogium could have been pronounced upon them than that which their stubborn virtue thus wrung from a disappointed hostile commander. Brigadier-General Parsons, with special reference to the atrocities mentioned, wrote to Governor Tryon under date of "21 Nov., 1777," the following letter, which the writer copied from the "New York Colonial History, London Documents," vol. viii, p. 735, in the State Library at Albany:

"SIR:

"Adding to the natural horrors of war the most wretched destruction of private property are acts of cruelty unknown to civilized nations and unaccustomed in war, until the servants of the King of Great Britain have convinced the impartial world, no acts of inhumanity, no stretch of despotism, are too great for them to exercise towards those they are pleased to term Rebels.

"Had any apparent advantage been derived from burning the houses on Philips Manor last Monday night, there would have been some appearance of reason to justify the measure, but when no beneficial result from destroying those buildings, and stripping the women and children of necessary apparel to cover them from the severity of a cold night, and leading off the captivated heads of those families in triumph to your lines in a most ignominious manner, I cannot assign a justifiable cause for this act of cruelty, nor conceive a reason for your further order to destroy Tarry Town."

On July 15, 1779, occurred the storming of Stony Point by the Americans under General Wayne. In the account of it given in *The New York Packet and the American Advertiser*, of Fishkill, on July 22, 1779, the writer states,—

"Our men have destroyed the fort and brought off all the artillery and stores.

"The evening of the 20th inst. twenty-six of the enemy's ships fell down the river, and their troops, foot and horse, are returned as far as Tarry Town."

On the premises now owned by Mr. C. W. Smith, at whose gate Church Street comes to an abrupt termination, down toward the river-bank, just south-east of where the Hudson River Railroad begins to cross the cove toward the north, is a spot of historic

interest. Here was the site of the old Indian village of Alipkonk, or the Place of Elms, away back before 1630, and here, one hundred and fifty years later, in 1780, was the lunette, or military redoubt, from which the patriotic Water Guard, according to Bolton, cannonaded the British sloop-of-war "Vulture," which having been up the river in connection with Major Andre's interview with Arnold above Haverstraw, on her return trip to New York, got out of the channel and ran aground on the Tarrytown flats.

In the cemetery just south of the imposing Delavan monument is a similar lunette, or earth-work in shape of a half-moon, where the Americans during the Revolution planted a battery of cannon to sweep the road

from below, whenever the British might come up from Dobbs Ferry. Owing to this fact, the part of the cemetery here referred to is designated as "Battle Hill."

But the Revolutionary event of greatest moment, that must forever associate Tarrytown with the Providential rescue of the nation from its deadliest peril, was the capture, within its present corporate limits, and within the township of Greenburgh, of Major John Andre, adjutant-general of the British army, returning from a secret conclave to consummate the villany of General Benedict Arnold, the American traitor, and to secure the betrayal of West Point.¹



Benedict Arnold

¹ Benedict Arnold was born in Norwich, Conn., January 14, 1741. He early manifested a taste for military life and adventure. Having already been very well educated, he spent some time in the large drug-store of the Drs. Lathrop, in Norwich, relatives of his mother, but after coming of age, in 1762, he removed to New Haven, "where," says the Hon. Isaac N. Arnold, of Illinois, in his "Life of Benedict Arnold, His Patriotism and Treason," Chicago, 1880, p. 26, "aided by his former employers, he established himself as a druggist and bookseller. His business rapidly increased. He engaged in general trade and exchange, and his energy and enterprise enabled him rapidly to acquire considerable property. He embarked in the West India trade, and purchased and shipped to those Islands, horses, mules, beef cattle and other provisions. He sometimes sailed his own ships. He had quite a large business connection with Quebec, which he visited frequently, buying horses in Canada, and shipping them from there to the West Indies." He remained in business in New Haven for over ten years.

An autograph business letter of his, written during that time, has, by a singular accident, fallen into the hands of the writer. The original is the property of Miss May F. H. Delafield, of New York City. As the letter has never been published, she has kindly allowed a copy to be taken and printed as a curiosity in this work. It reads thus,—

"SIR,—The Cayene Bill Exchange For 3252 Livres 5 Sou 8 Deniers, which I sold Jeremiah Paniston, Esq., in St. Castatia Nov. 26, 1765,

The story has often been told, but it has never lost its interest, whether viewed in its influence upon the cause of national independence or in its tragic consequences to one of the chief actors in the nefarious plot. The capture was the uncovering of a secret conspiracy against the young nation's life, that had long been maturing between General Arnold, a traitor at heart ever since his humiliation under the reprimand for bad conduct, administered by his commander-in-chief, and Major Andre, who added to the character of a spy the worse character of a confederate in what he knew to be an infamous crime.²

[dated June 25th, 1765] & which Mr. Hadshon has sent you protested, should be glad you'd remit to Mr. Alexander Lane, Merchant in London, with Directions for him to Advise with Mr. William Stead, in regard to the Sale thereof, and when sold, to remit the proceeds to Mr. Hadshon, at Amsterdam, & I do hereby promise to Allow the Action for Damage, &c., to be Carried on as well as if the Bill was not sold, and you Allow-ing the proceeds of the Bill to be Indorsed on the [Judgment Obtained agt. me.]

"New Haven, 18th April, 1768.

"BENEDICT ARNOLD.

"TO JARED INGERSOLL, ESQ."

In the original letter the parts here enclosed in brackets were interlined.

Arnold finally betook himself to England, whither his treason followed him, like an avenging Nemesis, and brought upon him many humiliations. In 1798, when England was arming in expectation of a war with France, Arnold's military spirit impelled him to write to the Duke of York, the commander of the British forces, and to ask for a position in the service. But in vain. They did not want a man who had once betrayed his country. The victim of bitter disappointment, cares and embarrassments, his nervous system gave way under the pressure, sleep fled from him, and, on June 14, 1801, he died at his residence in London, aged sixty years.

While stationed in Philadelphia in command of the American army, Arnold maintained "a style of living of unprecedented extravagance." He occupied the house of Richard Penn, formerly the headquarters of General Howe, and afterwards the residence of Gen. Washington while President, where he lived in great state, maintaining a coach and four, and servants in livery, and giving magnificent entertainments. Having succeeded in ingratiating himself into the good-will of the Shippen family, he won the affection of Margaret (or "Peggy") Shippen, the young and accomplished daughter of Edward Shippen, afterwards Chief Justice of Pennsylvania, who became his second wife. Peggy Shippen was at this time one of the most beautiful women in society, and when the British occupied Philadelphia she was a standing toast with the English officers. She became acquainted with Andre in Philadelphia, and when Arnold's treason became known was ordered to leave the State within fourteen days, and not return during the continuance of the war. "Mount Pleasant," Arnold's magnificent estate, now a part of Philadelphia's beautiful park, was seized by the State of Pennsylvania, and confiscated on October 2, 1780. She died in London, on the 24th of August, 1804.

² Notwithstanding all the sympathy which the tragic fate of Andre awakened, not unnaturally, into expression, there are, to say the least, two sides to the question as to what his moral character was. His biographer, Winthrop Sargent, says that there were "some severe strictures on his character published after his death," and that in them "it was positively alleged that Andre took away with him (or, in other words, stole) some books, the *Encyclopedie*, which Franklin had given, or meant to give, to the Library Company of Philadelphia." Without assuming to say for certain what the facts were in this particular case, there is not the least room to doubt that when Andre and his comrades, who had occupied Dr. Franklin's house while the British held Philadelphia, finally left it, they committed some most disgraceful spoliations upon the pictures and other articles of value they found there. Dr. Franklin's daughter, Mrs. Bache, after her return to it, complained of this outrage, but said, however, it was no worse than she "had expected from the hands of such a rapacious crew." She mentioned Andre by name as one of the thieves. "A Captain Andre," she said, "also took with him the picture of you which hung in the dining-room."

There can be little doubt in regard to the justice of the estimate of Andre's conduct and character, as given by H. L. Barnum, in the book entitled, "The Spy Unmasked; or Memoirs of Enoch Crosby, *alias* Harvey Birch, the Hero of Mr. Cooper's Tale of the Neutral Ground;" being an Authentic Account of the Secret Service which he rendered his Country during the Revolutionary War. (Taken from his own lips in short-hand.) Comprising many interesting Facts and Anecdotes never before published. New York: J. & J. Harper, 82 Cliff Street, 1828." In the Appendix, pages 203-205, the author says:

"Andre has also been greatly extolled for his magnanimity in communicating to General Washington his real name and character, by the express which conveyed to the commander-in-chief the papers found upon him. But what else remained for him to do? His life was clearly forfeited, and in the character of John Anderson he must have suffered, 'unpitied and unwept,' the summary and ignominious death of a spy, or been detected as Major Andre, with a falsehood on his lips. His only chance of escape was to declare his real character and place himself



MRS. BENEDICT ARNOLD.

under the protection of the circumstances under which he alleges that he came within the American posts; or, perhaps, to interest the feelings or the fears of the American commander-in-chief in his behalf. His letter contains one passage which serves as a plain development of his motives in writing it. *It was to save his own life by exciting fear for that of others.* The passage alluded to is the following: 'I take the liberty to mention the condition of some gentlemen at Charleston, who, being either on parole or under protection, were engaged in a conspiracy against us though their situation is not similar, they are objects who may be sent in exchange for me, or persons whom the treatment I receive might affect.'

"It is truly astonishing that the ungenerous character of this paragraph has never been properly adverted upon. Who these 'gentlemen at Charleston' were is afterwards more explicitly declared in Arnold's letter to General Washington, of the 1st October: 'I have farther to observe that forty of the principal inhabitants of South Carolina have justly forfeited their lives, which have hitherto been spared by the clemency of his excellency, Sir Henry Clinton, who cannot in justice extend his mercy to them any longer if Major Andre suffers, which, in all probability, will open a scene of blood at which humanity will revolt.'

"Thus it appears that Andre's hint was greedily caught at by Arnold; and Sir Henry Clinton himself, in his communications, very plainly hints at the same thing.

"Yet nothing could have been more base and dishonorable than the

attempt to save his forfeited life by drawing down ruin upon a number of innocent men, who, after bravely resisting the enemy, had surrendered on terms that had been most dishonorably evaded. The assertion also contained in Andre's letter, that the prisoners alluded to had engaged in a conspiracy was absolutely destitute of truth, as it was well known that every individual of these prisoners had, from the first, courted and defied investigation, and there existed no cause for their confinement at St. Augustine, to which place they had been removed but the prevalence of an opinion that their influence kept others from accepting of the King's protection, the illiberal suggestions of some of the Loyalists who could not bear the reproachful looks of those whom they had deserted, and, above all, the convenience of retaining such respectable hostages to cover such men as Arnold and Andre.

"The introductory paragraph also to Andre's letter cannot be dismissed without a remark. It is in these words: 'What I have as yet said concerning myself was in the justifiable attempt to be extricated; I am too little accustomed to duplicity to have succeeded.' (That is to say, I have hitherto been doing what no man who sufficiently values the obligation of truth would do, or at least expose himself to the danger of being obliged to do, even for 'the justifiable attempt to be extricated.' I have hitherto dealt out nothing but falsehoods; and for want of practice my firmness fails me.)

"In the first place, this paragraph is uncandid, for if his disguise could any longer have availed him, he would have retained it; in the next place, there is no small cause to believe that this was not the first time in which Major Andre had played off the practical falsehood of assuming a disguise and acting the spy.

"It is believed by many that in the character of a spy he had been greatly instrumental in involving in captivity the very men whom he now wished to involve in the horrors of retaliation.

"Let political expediency disguise it as it may, still the character of a soldier cannot be blended with that of a spy without soiling the pure ermine of the former; and however his sovereign may applaud and reward the officer who tempts his enemy to treachery, there is something so foul in the constitution of the crime that we cannot look upon him who reduces another to the commission of it but as the instigator or propagator of crime. The breath of treachery gives a taint to the reputation of the man who holds converse with it.

"Indeed, there appears to have been a combined attack upon morals made by all the *particeps criminis* in this black transaction. One can hardly read with patience the letters of Clinton, Robertson and Arnold, boldly insisting that Andre was not punishable as a spy, because he came within the garrison under the sanction of a flag, or under the protection of the commander; although, in fact, with that commander he was concerting measures to get possession of the post where that officer commanded; that he was himself innocent, because he had prostituted the usual protection of innocent and honorable purposes to the perpetration of the basest treachery. And to complete the ridicule of the scene, the chief justice of the state is brought upon the carpet to support this holy doctrine."

It was not the first time that Major Andre had been engaged in undertakings connected with the war, which it is impossible for even charity to regard as ingenuous or honorable. In his letter to Washington after his capture at Tarrytown, dated "Salem, 24 September, 1780, Sunday," he said, "I am too little accustomed to duplicity to have succeeded," and he adds that his thus writing is not out of apprehension for his own safety, "but," said he, "it is to rescue myself from the imputation of having assumed a mean character for treacherous purposes or self-interest, a conduct incompatible with the principles that actuate me, as well as with my conduct in life. It is to vindicate my fame that I speak, and not to solicit security."

In the same way the idea of his having been a spy he emphatically repudiated in his conversation with Major Tallmadge while the latter was conducting him under guard from Haverstraw to Tappan on Thursday, September 28, 1780. In Major Tallmadge's narrative, quoted by Jared Sparks, in the "Life and

"Reason of Benedict Arnold," chapter xiv., p. 257, he says,—

"After we disembarked at King's Ferry, near Haverstraw, we took up our line of march with a fine body of horse, for Tappan. Before we reached the Clove, Major Andre became very inquisitive to know my opinion as to the result of his capture. In other words, he wished me to give him candidly my opinion as to the light in which he would be viewed by General Washington and a military tribunal, if one should be ordered. This was the most unpleasant question that had been propounded to me, and I endeavored to evade it, unwilling to give him a true answer. When I could no longer evade his importunity or put off a full reply, I remarked to him as follows: 'I had a much-loved classmate in Yale College by the name of Nathan Hale, who entered the army in the year 1775. Immediately after the battle of Long Island General Washington wanted information respecting the strength, position and probable movements of the enemy. Captain Hale tendered his services, went over to Brooklyn, and was taken just as he was passing the outposts of the enemy on his return.' Said I with emphasis, 'Do you remember the sequel of this story?' 'Yes,' said Andre, 'he was hanged as a spy. But you surely do not consider his case and mine alike?' I replied, 'Yes; precisely similar, and similar will be your fate.' He endeavored to answer my remarks, but it was manifest he was more troubled in spirit than I had ever seen him before."

All this, when placed alongside of his letter to Colonel Sheldon, dated "New York, 7 September, 1780," Thursday, and signed "John Anderson," the name he assumed in the conspiracy, at a time when he was plotting the clandestine interview with Arnold, that was to secure the betrayal of West Point,—not the "surrender," as Dean Stanley, by a fine euphemism, called it in his inscription for the monument at Tappan,—and the consequent ruin of the national cause, does not tend to inspire our confidence in his declaration to Washington that he was "too little accustomed to duplicity to have succeeded," and that he spurned the idea of "having assumed a mean character for treacherous purposes or self-interest," as "incompatible" with his "principles" and his "conduct in life." For nothing could have been more utterly false and treacherous than his own letter, as subsequent developments overwhelmingly proved, to Colonel Sheldon, requesting him to favor his effort, as a mere private transaction, that could not possibly be injurious to any public interest on either side. He said in that letter,—

"Let me entreat you, sir, to favour a matter so interesting to the parties concerned, and which is of so private a nature that the public on neither side can be injured by it.

"I shall be happy on my part of doing any act of kindness to you in a family or a property concern of a similar nature."

These are astounding sentences when read in the light of subsequent events. They need no comment as they admit of no excuse.

There can be but little, if any, doubt that Major Andre had performed the office of a spy on several occasions before. The Hon. Erastus Brooks, in his able address, entitled "Arnold the American Traitor, Andre the British Spy, Washington the Defender of Constitutional Liberty," etc., delivered before the Historical and Forestry Society of Rockland County, N. Y., on February 22, 1881, and re-delivered in New Haven by request of the New Haven Colony Historical Society, March 18, 1881, says,—

"Andre was not only a spy in September, 1780, but it is stated, and is

believed, that he was a successful spy in the disguise of a cattle driver, in the fall of Charleston (in May, 1780), one of the greatest disasters of the war, compelling as it did the surrender of General Lincoln with his army of nearly 7000 troops. The fact of Andre's presence disguised as a spy, in the South as well as the North, is upon the evidence of one of Clinton's own officers who so stated in 1822, and of one of Andre's intimate friends. . . . Andre accepted all this information from Arnold secretly, willingly, on our own soil, and for the direct purpose of destroying the country. . . . Well did the King of England say, 'the public never can be compensated for the vast advantages which must have followed from the success of his plan,' . . .

"Of Arnold's £30,000 of blood money, with pay and rank, which Clinton had promised him, I think I may say with Vattel, the great expositor on the laws of war, that such bribes for seduction are not in accord with the laws of a moral conscience. The best law says that 'seducing a subject to betray his country; . . . practising on the fidelity of a governor, enticing him, persuading him to deliver up a place, is



John Andre.

prompting such persons to commit detestable crimes,' and Vattel asks, 'Is it honest to incite our most inveterate enemy to be guilty of a crime?'"

These statements are amply warranted by the testimony gathered up and published in "The Life of Major John Andre," etc., by Winthrop Sargent, p. 228, Appleton's edition of 1871, which is as follows:

"After the fall of the city (Charleston) we are told that there was an opinion current in our army that Andre had been present in its lines during the siege as a spy, and in 1822 it was declared that two gentlemen of repute, still surviving at Charleston, affirmed at least the existence of the report in 1780. One of these had been an officer of Clinton's; the other a resident of the place through and after the siege. Another witness goes further. Edward Shrewsbury, a suspected Tory, but of good condition, was ill at his house in East Bay. His brother, a Whig, leaving the lines to visit him, found repeatedly there a young man clad in

homespun, to whom he was introduced as a Virginian belonging to the troops then in the city and as such he considered the stranger. After the capitulation, meeting the same person at the same place, he was again presented to him as Major Andre, and taxing his brother with the identity of the two characters, they were confessed to have been one and the same man. To another visitor his son records that the stranger in homespun had been represented as a back countryman, who had brought down cattle for the garrison to the opposite side of the river,—an assertion that passed unsuspected and unchallenged until months after, when Andre had been hanged, and the visitor who related the story was returned from confinement at St. Augustine's, when the Whig Shrewsbury informed him that the cattle driver he had seen with his brother was no other than Major Andre in disguise. These declarations coming from distinct and respectable sources seem to bear the marks of truth. . . . It is but just to add that, if this story of Andre's having been a spy at Charleston received credence in respectable quarters, it was afterwards questioned by gentlemen of equal character in our service."

But perhaps the most remarkable testimony in regard to Major Andre, in his character as a spy, is that contained in two separate articles, from different authors, apparently persons connected with the British forces in America, published in London, in a periodical called *The Political Magazine*, in its number for November, 1780, about a month after Andre's execution. Both writers represent Major Andre as a spy. One of them says, "The Major (Andre) had been more than once, before his disaster, in the rebel camp. Returning the third time in disguise, from Arnold to New York, he was met by some rebel soldiers, who stopped and searched him." The other says, "Major Andre had been twice to Arnold, had acted as his valet de chambre, and twice returned safe to New York," before the final visit which resulted in his detection and death.

The writer's attention was first called to this old record by Henry B. Dawson, Esq., one of the contributors to this work, and while prosecuting some investigations for this history in the office of the Secretary of State and the State Library at Albany, he inquired for *The Political Magazine*, stating at the same time the nature of the articles he sought for. Some doubt was expressed as to the existence of any such articles or statements, but by the kind assistance of Henry A. Homes, LL.D., the learned State Librarian, the magazine was finally discovered in a dusty old bound volume, and the articles found to be as described. The writer copied them off with his own hand, and, interesting and important as they are, so far as he knows, they have never before been published in this country. At least, they have not been given in any life of Major Andre, or book on the subject, that has fallen under his eye.

In the first article is the following:

"The business which led him (Major Andre) in disguise to the rebel Army was a plan entered into between Sir Henry Clinton and Major-General Arnold, of the rebel troops. Sir Henry, with the British Army, was to approach Washington, who was then lying near New York, and Arnold was to dispose the troops under his immediate command in such a manner as to give them up, or engage them to submit to the King's army. But this negotiation is said to have been continued too long, for the Major had been more than once, before his disaster, in the rebel camp. Returning the third time, in disguise, from Arnold to New York he was met by some rebel soldiers, who, after stopping him, let him proceed; but one, more suspicious than the rest, insisting on following and

stopping him again, they searched him and found a watch and money on him, which he advised them to keep and let him go; for if they carried him to their General they would lose their booty. He did not, as has often been said, offer them his watch and money when stopped. The men would not discharge him, but carried him to headquarters, where, on examining his clothes with the most exact scrutiny, some draughts of the rebel works were found. When interrogated by Washington, who urged him to a full confession to save his life, he only said he was a British officer, but would not reveal either his name or rank, positively refusing to give any other explanation than that he was a spy, and at their mercy. This was great firmness and generosity, for by owning himself a spy, and standing singly, he gave Arnold, and any other officers he had been negotiating with, a chance to escape discovery. Washington's spies were then called to look at him, when two of them, that had been at New York a long time under the character of loyal subjects, instantly recognized him." *The Political Magazine*, London, volume i., November, 1780, page 688, article "An account of the late Gallant and Unfortunate Major Andre, Aid-de-Camp to Sir Henry Clinton and Adjutant-General of the British Forces in America."

The other article is in the tone of a criticism upon the hesitation and delay of Sir Henry Clinton, which the author regarded as fatal to the success not only of this enterprise, but also of others. The extract is as follows:

"In regard to the unfortunate end of the gallant Major Andre, Governor Johnstone, it has been said, has received a letter from Sir George Brydges Rodney, in which that veteran and intrepid officer imputes the misarrangement of the plan, concerted with General Arnold, entirely to delay and want of decision; for Major Andre had been twice to Arnold, had acted as his valet de chambre, and twice returned safe to New York. Hence it must be observed that a plan, such as that which was carrying on with Arnold could only succeed in the hands of a man of the most firm and decided mind; it could hardly avoid failing when the person on whom the whole depended for success was of a wavering and inconstant spirit. Such a character generally keeps in a constant vibration between action and inaction, and continues to plot until every scheme, however well laid, becomes a mere cob-web, and until those determined men who act as the instruments, become a sacrifice ever to be lamented by their country." *The Political Magazine*, London, volume i., November, 1780, page 688, article on the "Character and Exploits of Sir Henry Clinton."

The active beginning of Arnold's treason goes back, according to Sparks ("Life of Arnold," p. 141), to a period eight months before his trial by the court-martial which commenced its sittings at Morristown, N. J., on Tuesday, December 20, 1779, and ended with his conviction in part—that is, upon two counts of the accusation against him—on Thursday, January 26, 1780. How long the secret purpose had been entertained in his own mind it is impossible to tell.¹

¹There is a suggestive and interesting statement in regard to this point in a foot-note to the "Travels in North America in the Years 1780, 1781 and 1782, by the Marquis de Chastellux, one of the Forty Members of the French Academy, and Major-General in the French Army, serving under the Comte de Rochambeau." Translated from the French by an English Gentleman, who resided in America at that period. With Notes by the Translator. London: 1787," volume i., pages 97 and 98. The note here added by the translator is as follows:

"There is every reason to believe that Arnold's treachery took its date from his connection with Lieutenant *Hobbs*, killed afterwards on board the 'Formidable' in the West Indies, and who was, undoubtedly, a very active and industrious spy at Philadelphia in the winter of 1778, whither he was sent for that purpose in a pretended flag of truce, which being wrecked in the Delaware, he was made prisoner by Congress, a subject of much discussion between them and the commander at New York. That the intended plot was known in England, and great hopes built upon it, long before it was to take place, is certain. General Matthews and other officers who returned in the autumn of 1780 being then heard to declare that it was all over with the rebels, that they were about to receive an irreparable blow, the news of which would soon arrive, etc., etc. Their silence from the moment in which they received

In his defense presented by himself before the court-martial, Arnold made a great parade of his devotion to his country, not without an oblique reflection upon the lukewarmness of others in contrast, when at that very time he had been for eight months in secret correspondence with the enemies of his country to betray it. Having been convicted, he was sentenced to be reprimanded by the commander-in-chief. General Washington performed that disagreeable duty with great delicacy and forbearance. The language he employed was preserved by the Count Barbe-Marbois, the secretary of legation, and afterwards consul-general of France to the new government, and given by him as follows: "Our profession," said Washington, addressing Arnold, "is the chastest of all. The shadow of a fault tarnishes our most brilliant actions. The least inadvertence may cause us to lose that public favor which is so hard to be gained. I reprimand you for having forgotten that, in proportion as you had rendered yourself formidable to our enemies, you should have shown moderation towards our citizens. Exhibit again those splendid qualities which have placed you in the rank of our most distinguished generals. As far as it shall be in my power, I will, myself, furnish you with opportunities for regaining the esteem which you have formerly enjoyed."

But kindness had no effect, and Arnold, madly bent upon his own ruin, proceeded with his guilty plans. On pretence of being disabled by his wound from active duty in the field, to which Washington, without suspicion, invited him, he persistently sought and finally obtained the command at West Point. His instructions from Washington to assume the responsibilities of the position assigned him were dated at Peekskill, on Thursday, August 3, 1780, and Arnold at once repaired to that post and set up his headquarters at Robinson's house, two or three miles below West Point, on the east side of the Hudson River. Twenty-seven days later, on Wednesday, August 30th, Arnold wrote to Andre, under the assumed name of 'Gustavus,' that he expected soon to have an inter-

view with him, to complete the arrangements for their "speculation."

On Sunday, September 10th, in the afternoon, Arnold went down the river to King's Ferry, near Stony Point, and stayed overnight at the house of Joshua Hett Smith, above Haverstraw, about two and a half miles from Stony Point.

The next morning (Monday), September 11th, he went down the west shore to a point opposite Dobbs Ferry, to meet there Andre and Beverly Robinson, the Tory, but they did not come. He stayed there till night, and then went up the river again, arriving at his quarters at the Robinson house before morning, on Tuesday, the 12th. Arnold had the impudence to write to Washington a letter representing this trip to Dobbs Ferry, to complete his treason, as an instance of his own vigilance to reconnoitre and thwart the enemy. But what was still more, he wrote to General Greene on that same day, Tuesday, September 12, 1780, when he had just returned from his trip to Dobbs Ferry to meet Andre and Beverly Robinson, the Tory, a letter which discloses, as scarcely anything else could have done, the bottomless depth of Arnold's hypocritical and infamous villany. The letter was never published until after the dedication of the monument at Tarrytown, October 7, 1853. It was there incorporated into his able address, and publicly read from the original manuscript by the Hon. Henry J. Raymond, and subsequently printed for the first time in the published report of the proceedings. In quoting this letter of Arnold, Mr. Raymond said,—

"On the 12th of September—the very day after that on which he had gone down to Dobbs Ferry for the purpose of settling, in a conference with Andre, the terms and details of his treason—Arnold wrote a letter to General Greene, full of patriotic devotion, and pervaded by a thorough zeal for the honor and success of the American cause. That letter, so far as I am aware, has never hitherto been published. I am indebted for it to my esteemed friend, Professor Greene, a direct descendent of the illustrious officer to whom it was addressed. As it throws still stronger light upon the character of Arnold,—places in still bolder relief the unmatched and unmatchable audacity of that hypocrisy in which he lived, and moved, and had his being,—perhaps you will permit me to read it from the original manuscript, which I hold in my hand. It bears date:

"Headquarters, Robinson House, }
September 12, 1780. }

"DEAR SIR:—Your favor of the 7th, conveying to me an account of our misfortunes to the southward, was delivered me on the 8th.

"I am happy to find that General Gates' information was so ill-founded. It is an unfortunate piece of business to that hero, and may possibly blot his escutcheon with indelible infamy. It may not be right to censure character at a distance, but I cannot avoid remarking that his conduct on this occasion has in no wise disappointed my expectations or predictions on frequent occasions; and notwithstanding the suggestions of his friends, that he had not retreated to the border of Virginia, he must have been at a great distance, and fully secure from danger, as he had no advices of the retreat of the Maryland troops for at least four days.

"Yours of the 8th, by Capt. Van der Horst and Lieut. McCall, were delivered me by those gentlemen on the 9th. I have endeavored to render their situation pleasing to them during their short stay with me, which respect I shall always be happy to pay any gentleman who entitles himself to your introduction and recommendation.

"It is a matter much to be lamented that our Army is permitted to starve in a land of plenty. There is a fault somewhere; it ought to be traced up to its authors, and if it was prepenal, they ought to be capi-

on account of the failure of the plot, and the discovery of the traitor, evidently pointed out the object of their allusions."

The author of the interesting and somewhat remarkable French work of one hundred and eighty-four pages, published in Paris, in 1816, entitled "Complot d'Arnold, et de Sir Henry Clinton Contre Les Etats-Unis l'Amerique, et contre le General Washington, Septembre, 1780," expresses the opinion that the purpose to betray his country entered into the heart of Arnold from the day he received his reprimand. All the circumstances, however, seem to indicate that the judgment of Sparks is nearer to the truth. The French writer referred to, after giving Washington's reprimand, in French, adds,—

"Arnold n'avoit osé interrompre ce discours; il se retira, et loin d'être touché des marques d'intérêt que son général venoit de lui donner, il se montra profondément blessé d'une condamnation qu'il prétendoit n'avoir aucunement méritée. Il quitta l'armée, et, *des ce jour, la haine de la cause qu'il avoit si glorieusement défendre entra dans son cœur.* Elle y éta bientôt de profondes racines, et sa trahison en fut le fruit. Perdu pour la vertu la première fois qu'il avoit balancé entre l'observation et l'infraction de ses devoirs, il fut perdu pour son pays, à l'instant où il put sans horreur avoir l'idée de le trahir."

tally punished: that is, in my opinion, the only means left to procure a regular supply to the Army in future.

"Where shall I procure paper for the garrison, as well as for my office? No returns can be made till a supply is sent. Col. Pickering, in a letter of the 25th informs me that he has not yet received the stores in his hands, or money to purchase any with.

"With sentiments of the most sincere regard and affection, I am, dear Sir,

"Your obedient and humble servant,

"MAJOR GENERAL GREENE.

B. ARNOLD."

"Consider," added Mr. Raymond, "that this epistle, burning with indignation at the apparent misconduct of Gates, cordial in the extreme in its personal courtesy toward General Greene, solicitous for the comfort of the army, resentful towards those whose misconduct had involved it in want—was written the day after his first attempt to hold a personal interview with Major Andre, upon the return to headquarters from the scene he had appointed for it, and in the midst of such thoughts as such incidents would naturally engender; think upon the impenetrable hypocrisy of the man, who, on the instant of returning baffled from such an errand, could coolly speak or dream of any esutcheon but his own being 'blotted with indelible infamy'; and you can judge how secure must have been his hold upon the confidence of Washington, and how thick was the dark doubt of all honor and all faith into which the apprehensive fears of that great leader must have plunged his mind, when the fact of Arnold's treason first broke upon his sight. '*Whom can we trust now?*' were the simple words he addressed to Lafayette; but they imply a dread distrust,—they signalize the beginning of a gloomy despair,—they point to the fate which imposed on him the supreme duty, from which there was no escape, of crushing by all the terrors of martial law whatever of vitality might still survive, in either army, of the portentous plot."

On Friday, September 15th, Arnold wrote to Andre again, appointing another conference, with a person upon whom reliance could be placed, at Dobbs Ferry, on Wednesday evening, September 20th. Before this letter was received and acted upon, Andre left New York early on Wednesday, September 20th, and came up to Dobbs Ferry. The "Vulture" at this time was lying in Haverstraw Bay, a little above Teller's Point. To avoid suspicion, Arnold had expressed a wish that the vessel should not move from where she lay. As the tide was favorable, Andre determined to push on from Dobbs Ferry to the ship, and that evening at seven o'clock he boarded the "Vulture" just above Teller's Point.

On Thursday morning, September 21st, Andre notified Arnold that he was then on board of the "Vulture." That evening at seven o'clock two boatmen started by Arnold's direction to bring Andre back with them in disguise to the shore. They landed him at the Long Clove, under the mountain south of Haverstraw, about six miles below Stony Point. Here Joshua Hett Smith brought Andre and Arnold together among the bushes, in the thick darkness, to plot against the nation's life. They were so long at it that, by Arnold's advice, Andre was taken to Smith's house, three or four miles from the Clove, where he arrived just as the day dawned on Friday, September 22d.

He had scarcely arrived when a cannonade was heard down the river, which proved to be directed from the Americans on the eastern shore against the "Vulture," which he had just left the evening before, and she was compelled to drop farther down, in order to get beyond the range of the shot.

On that same Friday morning, after breakfast, September 22d, at the house of Joshua Hett Smith, Arnold and Andre completed the treason. The plans for the execution of their conspiracy were all arranged, and the day was appointed. Before ten o'clock in the morning Arnold left Andre, and went up the river in his barge to his headquarters in the Robinson house. Friday is said to be an unlucky day. It was so emphatically to the conspirators here engaged.

Andre desired to be put on board the "Vulture," a name, too, of ill omen as connected with this affair; but as she had dropped down the river, and he found he could not be conveyed to her, he spent the day in solitude and concealment. The possibilities of his situation must have occurred to his mind in that lonely chamber, and awakened thoughts that were not conducive to repose.

Late in the afternoon of Friday, the 22d, a little before sunset, Smith started from his house with Andre in disguise, and with a negro servant, for King's Ferry. The distance was about two and a half miles to the north. Here they crossed to Verplanck's Point, arriving there in the dusk of the evening. Thence they traveled on together in a northeasterly direction until near Crompond, about eight miles from Verplanck's Point. There, between eight and nine o'clock in the evening, they were hailed by the sentinel of a patrolling party under Captain Boyd. The captain was disagreeably inquisitive, but after a good deal of trouble they were finally allowed to go on, or to go back a short distance to Andreas Miller's, and stay all night. They decided to do the latter, and on reaching the house late, Smith and Andre were both sent to sleep in the same bed. Smith afterwards said that Andre had a very restless night. He could not sleep himself, and his wakefulness and tossing about would not let Smith sleep. It was not strange!

On Saturday morning, September 23d, they took an early departure. Smith went with Andre to within a mile or two of Pine's Bridge across the Croton River. There he stopped to retrace his steps, and to let Andre go on alone. Before parting they breakfasted together at the house of Isaac Underhill at Yorktown, who gave them hasty pudding and milk, all his good wife had, as his house had been plundered the night before by a gang of marauding Tories. Smith went back to Peekskill, and so on up to Arnold's headquarters, where he reported to the traitor Andre's progress.

On parting at Pine's Bridge it was understood that Andre was to go on to White Plains; but a short distance below the bridge he turned off to the right, towards the Hudson River, and took what was called the Tarrytown road. Captain Boyd had told him and Smith the night before that the Lower, or British, party were thick on that road; but that was the very thing which Andre wanted. It was the consideration no doubt which induced him to change his course, thinking thereby to fall in with his own friends, and to secure his own safety.

It so happened that on this same Saturday morning, September 23d, when Andre crossed Pine's Bridge, there were seven young men, living in the neighborhood of Tarrytown, who had agreed to go out armed to watch the road, and to intercept any suspicious stragglers, or droves of cattle, that might be found passing south toward New York.

The names of the young men, as given long after by David Williams, were Isaac Van Wart, John Paulding, William Williams, John Yerkes, James Romer, and "the name of the sixth," added Mr. Williams, "I have forgotten." It has been said to have been Isaac See. But Lossing gives the name of John Dean, which seems to be correct, having been confirmed by the statement of a citizen of Tarrytown, who received it directly from Isaac Van Wart himself. John Dean was the father of the late Thomas Dean, long a well-known merchant of Tarrytown, on the corner of Main Street and Broadway. Thomas Dean is referred to in the "Life and Letters of Washington Irving." He died January 7, 1873, and was interred, as was his father before him, in the graveyard of the old Dutch Church. Of course, David Williams himself made the seventh. They left Salem, where they had come together at about one o'clock on Friday afternoon, September 22d, and after traveling fifteen miles that night, they slept in a hay barrack back of Buttermilk Hill, and the next morning crossed the hill and came down toward Tarrytown. While Andre, with Smith, was lying sleepless in Miller's bed, near Crompond, his captors were sleeping quietly in the hay barrack back of Buttermilk Hill. The roads they traveled were soon coming together. John Paulding stopped on the way at Isaac Reed's house, the next place to William David's, on the east, and borrowed a pack of cards, as he said, "to divert themselves with." They then came on as far as Davis' (or David's) Hill, part of the late John R. Stephens estate, where they separated, four remaining on the hill along the old County House road, and three—namely, John Paulding, David Williams and Isaac Van Wart,—coming about a mile or less farther on toward the Hudson River, and along the Tarrytown road. There they concealed themselves in the bushes west of the road, where the monument now stands. That this was the spot there can be no question. In the interview with the Rev. Alexander Van Wart, on June 15, 1885, referred to further on, he stated to the writer, as a fact of which he had knowledge, that his father, one of the captors, was, toward the latter part of his life, one day at the store of the late Nathaniel Bayles, where J. Benedict See now keeps store, and that Mr. Bayles, being much interested in all public affairs, made many inquiries as to the exact spot where the capture took place, and finally asked Mr. Van Wart to leave his horse tied in front of the store, and, as the distance was but short, to walk down there with him, and point it out. Mr. Van Wart complied with the request, and pointed out the

place where the monument now stands, stating, as a reason for their being on the west side, that the road makes a bend just there, and they wanted to keep watch up the road, which they could not have done on the east side, as the bend to the east just there would have hidden the road above from their view.¹

Major Andre is said to have come into the Tarrytown road near a small hamlet called Sparta, below Sing Sing. This road he pursued undisturbed until he was over the little stream which now flows westward through the premises of Mr. E. J. Blake, and crosses the public highway in its course to the river. This stream was destined to be the limit to his progress, and now bears, as it probably always will, the name of Andre Brook.

About one mile and a-half northeast of the Hudson River Railroad depot at Tarrytown, on the north side of the old road to White Plains, and only about half a mile from the Tarrytown depot on the Northern Railroad, there stands an old one-story-and-a-half house, fronting the south, with a more modern kitchen built on to the east end of it. Directly before the front door, which is divided horizontally into two parts, the upper and the lower, are two immense horse chestnut trees, that have stood there for over one hundred years. The house was what was known in Revolutionary times as "a guard-house,"—a sort of headquarters and rendezvous, where patriot militiamen met and consulted, and whence they sent out guards or watchers on any particular mission. This old house is famous in local history as the place to which Andre was first taken, along the old road over the hill, after his capture in Tarrytown. The house can be plainly seen from the car windows looking northward, as the trains on the Northern Railroad pass to and from the Tarrytown depot, along the south side of the "Tarrytown Loop." In the southeast corner of the old part, where it joins the kitchen, is a step, the lowest one of the curving stairway, which looks like a bench when the stairway door is shut. On this step Andre is known to have sat, and to have eaten a bowl of bread and milk to refresh his strength while waiting here for an hour or two before he started with his captors on the way to Colonel Jamieson's quarters, at North Castle. The house belonged, after

¹ . . . The memorable tulip-tree, at Greensburgh or Tarrytown, under which Major Andre was taken, was, on Saturday the 31st of July, 1801, struck with lightning. It was rent almost exactly in two, from the top to the bottom. Near the roof it was hollow, at which part it took fire, and blazed up for about 12 or 15 feet through the fissure for a few minutes, when the eastern half fell. The remainder, extending over the road, stood in so menacing an attitude as to render it necessary to cut it down. This remarkable tree measured 29 feet in circumference at the base, was 111 feet in height, and its branches extend 106 feet in diameter. It is rather a singular coincidence, that the news of Arnold's death arrived at Greensburgh the same day on which the lightning destroyed this tree. Its destruction has occasioned general regret through the surrounding country, and its fragments have been carefully collected and preserved by the inhabitants."—*American Citizen*, 1801 August 25th.

the Revolution, to a family named Reed. In 1824 it was bought, with one hundred and twenty-five acres of land, from the legal representatives of Archer Reed, by the late William Landrine. He made some improvements in the house, but always strictly forbade any alteration whatever in the old step upon which Andre sat and ate his bread and milk. The consequence is, that the step remains to this day. The writer of this, in company with Mr. William B. Landrine, a son of the former owner, walked over to the old house on the afternoon of April 19, 1886, and there sat upon the Andre step, while writing on his knee the memoranda from which this account is given. The present Mr. Landrine, as administrator of the estate, sold the place some years ago to Mr. Ambrose C. Kingsland, who sold it to the Tarrytown Heights Land Company, which, having failed, Mr. Kingsland was obliged to take it back. It now belongs to his estate. The house is occupied by Mr.

The best account of that momentous transaction in American history, the capture of Andre, is to be found in the official papers of the court of inquiry, by which Major Andre was tried and condemned,¹ and in the other contemporaneous and later papers that throw light upon this remarkably interesting subject. That the reader may have the satisfaction of perusing them for himself, without abridgment or alteration, they will here be incorporated into the record.

The following is a copy of the proceedings of the board of general officers to whom the subject was referred by General Washington. It is taken from an official copy in the Library of the New York Historical Society. The paper is entitled "Report of the Proceedings of a Board of General Officers, Held by Order of His Excellency, George Washington respecting Major John Andre, September 29, 1780."



OLD LANDRINE HOUSE.

To which Andre was taken after his capture, and where he sat on the step.

Michael Nolan, who farms, and boards some of the people connected with the construction of the New Croton aqueduct, which passes down a short distance toward the west. The locality is one of many natural attractions. The old house itself is an interesting relic of the past, and as the writer sat upon the step he could not but try to imagine what must have been the feelings of Andre as he sat upon that identical board, a prisoner, nearly one hundred and six years ago. Miss Mary Nolan, daughter of the present occupant, happened to have an excellent photograph of the house, which she kindly loaned for a time to the writer. In the picture her father stands, with his sleeves rolled up, directly in front of the place inside, where the Andre step is located. Before leaving, Mr. Landrine borrowed a tumbler, and leading the way east of the house, to a well-remembered spring, flowing from a rock, both visitors took a copious draught of cool, delicious water.

I.
LETTER FROM GENERAL WASHINGTON TO THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

*Robinson's House, in the Highlands,
26 September, 1780.*

SIR, -I have the honor to inform Congress, that I arrived here yesterday about twelve o'clock, on my return from Hartford. Some hours previous to my arrival Major General Arnold went from his quarters, which were this place, and, as it was supposed, over the river to the garrison at West Point, whither I proceeded myself, in order to visit the post. I found General Arnold had not been there during the day, and on my return to his quarters he was still absent. In the meantime, a packet had arrived from Lieut. Colonel Jameson, announcing the capture of a John Anderson, who was endeavoring to go to New York with several interesting and important papers, all in the handwriting of General Arnold. This was also accompanied with a letter from the prisoner, avowing himself to be major John Andre, Adjutant General to the British army, relating the manner of his capture, and endeavoring to show that

¹ Aubrey in his travels gives the following account of Andre's execution:

"By an officer just left Washington's camp we have received the melancholy account of the death of Major Andre, the Adjutant-General of the British Army, who was taken as spy in negotiating a business with General Arnold, which, if it had succeeded, would have been nearly the overthrow of the Americans. This officer was present at his execution, who said that he met his fate with that courage and manliness of behaviour that deeply affected every one present, and that his severe destiny was universally lamented. So much was he esteemed that General Washington shed tears when the rigorous sentence was put into execution. When he found that his fate was inevitably fixed and determined, and that all intercessions and every exertion of Sir Henry Clinton to save his life were in vain, he became perfectly resigned; so extremely composed was his mind that the night previous to his execution he drew the situation of the 'Vulture' sloop, as she lay in the North River, with a view of West Point, which he sent by his servant to a general officer at New York. The only thing that any way discomposed him or rattled his mind, and at which his feelings appeared hurt, was the refusal of General Washington to let him die a military death. In regard to this circumstance, the officer informed us that General Washington would have granted this request, but, on consulting the Board of General Officers who signed his condemnation, they deemed it necessary to put that sentence in force that was laid down by the maxims of war, at the same time evincing the sincerest grief that they were forced to comply with, and could not deviate from, the established customs in such cases."

he did not come under the description of a *spy*. From the several circumstances, and information that the General seemed to be thrown into some degree of agitation, on receiving a letter a little time before he went from his quarters, I was led to conclude immediately that he had heard of Major Andre's captivity, and that he would, if possible, escape to the enemy; and I accordingly took such measures as appeared the most probable to apprehend him. But he had embarked in a barge and proceeded down the river, under a flag, to the Vulture ship of war, which lay at some miles below Stony and Verplank's Points. After he got on board, he wrote to me a letter, of which I enclose a copy.

Major Andre is not arrived yet, but I hope he is secure, and that he will be here to-day. I have been and am taking precautions, which I trust will prove effectual to prevent the important consequences which this conduct, on the part of General Arnold, was intended to produce. I do not know the party that took Major Andre, but it is said that it consisted only of a few militia, who acted in such a manner upon the occasion, as does them the highest honor, and proves them to be men of great virtue. They were offered, I am informed, a large sum of money for his release, and as many goods as they would demand, but without any effect. Their conduct gives them a just claim to the thanks of their country, and I also hope they will be otherwise rewarded. As soon as I know their names I shall take pleasure in transmitting them to Congress. I have taken such measures, with respect to the gentlemen of General Arnold's family, as prudence dictated; but from every thing that has hitherto come to my knowledge, I have the greatest reason to believe they are perfectly innocent. I early secured Joshua H. Smith, the person mentioned in the close of General Arnold's letter, and find him to have had considerable share in this business. I have the honor to be, &c.

GEO. WASHINGTON

II.

LETTER FROM GENERAL WASHINGTON TO THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

PARMUS, 7, October, 1780.

SIR,—I have the honor to enclose to Congress a copy of the proceedings of a board of general officers in the case of Major Andre, adjutant-general to the British army. This officer was executed in pursuance of the opinion of the board, on Monday the 2d instant, at twelve o'clock, at our late camp at Tappan. He acted with great candor, from the time he avowed himself after his capture, until he was executed. Congress will perceive by a copy of a letter I received from him on the 1st instant, that it was his desire to be shot; but the practice and usage of war, circumstance as he was, were against the indulgence. At the bottom of the sixth page of the proceedings an explanatory note is added, to prevent any suspicions being entertained injurious to Colonel Sheldon, who, otherwise, from the letter addressed to him, might be supposed to have been privy to the measures between General Arnold and Major Andre. If it should be the pleasure of Congress to publish the case which, I would take the liberty to suggest, may not be improper, it will be necessary for the explanatory note to be annexed.

Besides these proceedings, I transmit copies of sundry letters respecting the matter, which are all that passed on the subject, not included in the proceedings. I would not suffer Mr. Elliot and Mr. Smith to land, who came up to Dobbs Ferry agreeably to Sir Henry Clinton's letter of the 3d September. General Robertson was permitted to come on shore, and was met by Major General Greene, and mentioned substantially what is contained in his letter of the 2d instant. It might not perhaps be improper to publish the letters, or part of them, as an appendix to the proceedings of the board of general officers.

I have now the pleasure to communicate the names of the three persons who captured Major Andre, and who refused to release him, notwithstanding the most earnest importunities and assurances of a liberal reward on his part. Their conduct merits our warmest esteem; and I beg leave to add, that I think the public will do well to make them a handsome gratuity. They have prevented in all probability our suffering one of the severest strokes that could have been meditated against us. Their names are John Paulling, David Williams and Isaac Van Wart.

For the present I have detached the Jersey, New York and New Hampshire brigades, with Stark's, to the Highland posts. They marched this morning from Orangetown, and will relieve the Pennsylvania line, which was thrown in at the moment General Arnold went to the enemy. Major General Greene has marched with these four

brigades, and will command at West Point and its dependencies till a further disposition. The main body of the army (the forage about Orangetown and the lower country being exhausted) also moved this morning and is now arrived here. We have had a cold, wet and tedious march, on account of the feeble state of our cattle, and have not a drop of rum to give the troops. My intention is to proceed with them to the country in the neighborhood of Passaic Falls. I have the honor to be, &c.

GEO. WASHINGTON

PROCEEDINGS OF A BOARD OF GENERAL OFFICERS.

Held by order of His Excellency General Washington, commander in chief of the army of the United States of America, respecting Major Andre, Adjutant-General of the British army, September the 29th, 1780, at Tappan, in the State of New York.

PRESENT:

Major-General Greene, President,	Brigadier-General Knox,
Major-General Lord Stirling,	Brigadier-General Glover,
Major-General St. Clair,	Brigadier-General Patterson,
Major-General Howe,	Brigadier-General Hund,
Major-General the Baron de Steuben,	Brigadier-General Huntington,
Brigadier-General Parsons,	Brigadier-General Starke,
Brigadier-General Clinton,	John Lawrence, Judge Advocate-General.

Major Andre, Adjutant-General of the British army, was brought before the Board, and the following letter from General Washington, to the Board, dated Head-quarters, Tappan, September 29th, 1780, was laid before them and read.

"Gentlemen,

"Major Andre, Adjutant-General of the British army, will be brought before you for your examination. He came within our lines in the night, on an interview with Major-General Arnold, and in an assumed character; and was taken within our lines, in a disguised habit, with a pass under a feigned name, and with the inclosed papers concealed upon him. After a careful examination you will be pleased as speedily as possible to report a precise state of his case, together with your opinion of the light in which he ought to be considered, and the punishment that ought to be inflicted. The Judge-Advocate will attend to assist in the examination, who has sundry other papers, relative to this matter, which he will lay before the Board.

"I bear the honor to be,

"Gentlemen,

"Your most obedient and humble servant,

G. WASHINGTON.

"The Board of General officers, convened at Tappan."

The names of the officers comprising the board were read to Major Andre, and on his being asked whether he confessed the matters contained in the letter from his Excellency General Washington, to the board, or denied them, he said in addition to his letter to General Washington, dated Salem, the 24th September, 1780 (which was read to the board and acknowledged by Major Andre, to have been written by him,) which letter is as follows:

SALLEM, Sept. 24, 1780.

"SIR:

"What I have as yet said concerning myself, was in a justifiable attempt to be extricated: I am too little accustomed to duplicity to have succeeded.

"I beg your Excellency will be persuaded that, no alteration in the temper of my mind, or apprehension for my safety, induces me to take the step of addressing you, but that it is to secure myself from an imputation of having assumed a mean character for treacherous purposes or self-interest. A conduct incompatible with the principles that actuated me, as well as with my condition in life.

"It is to vindicate my fame that I speak and not to solicit security.

"The person in your possession is Major John Andre, Adjutant-General to the British army.

"The influence of one commander in the army of his adversary is an advantage taken in war. A correspondence for this purpose I held; as confidential (in the present instance) with his Excellency Sir Henry Clinton.

"To favor it I agreed to meet upon ground not within posts of either army, a person who was to give me intelligence; I came up in the Vulture man of war for this effect and was fetched by a boat from the shore to the beach: Being there I was told that the approach of day would

¹These sentences are the additional inscription put upon the monument at Tarrytown, September, 1880.

prevent my return, and that I must be concealed until the next night I was in my regimentals, and had fairly risked my person.

"Against my stipulation, my intention and without my knowledge before hand, I was conducted within one of your posts. Your Excellency may conceive my sensation on this occasion and will imagine how much more I must have been affected, by a refusal to reconduct me back the next night as I had been brought. Thus become a prisoner I had to consent my escape. I quitted my uniform and was passed another way in the night without the American posts to neutral ground, and informed I was beyond all armed parties and left to press for New York. I was taken at Tarry Town by some volunteers.

"Thus as I have had the honor to relate was I betrayed (being adjutant-general of the British army) into the vile condition of an enemy in disguise within your posts.

"Having avowed myself a British officer I have nothing to reveal but what relates to myself, which is true, on the honor of an officer and a gentleman.

"The request I have to make your Excellency and I am conscious I address myself well, is, that in any rigor policy may dictate, a decency of conduct toward me may mark, that though unfortunate I am branded with nothing dishonourable, as no motive could be mine but the service of my king and as I was involuntarily an imposter.

"Another request is that I may be permitted to write an open letter to Sir Henry Clinton and another to a friend for cloaths and linen.

"I take the liberty to mention the condition of some gentlemen at Charles-Town, who being on parole or under protection were engaged in a conspiracy against us. Though their situation is not similar, they are objects who may be set in exchange for me, or are persons whom the treatment I receive might affect.

"It is no less Sir in a confidence in the generosity of your mind than on account of your superior station that I have chosen to importune you this letter.

*"I leave the honor to be, with great respect, Sir,
Your Excellency's most obedient
and most humble servant,*

JOHN ANDRE,
adjutant-general.

*"His Excellency,
General Washington,
etc., etc., etc."*

That he came on shore from the Vulture sloop of war in the night of the twenty first of September instant, somewhere under the Haverstraw Mountain. That the boat he came on shore in carried *no flag*, and that he had on a surtout coat over his regimentals, and that he wore his surtout coat when he was taken. That he met General Arnold on the shore and had an interview with him there. He also said that when he left the Vulture sloop of war it was understood he was to return that night; but it was then doubted, and if he could not return he was promised to be concealed on shore in a place of safety until the next night when he was to return in the same manner he came on shore, and when the next day came he was solicitous to get back, and made inquiries in the course of the day how he should return, when he was informed he could not return that way and he must take the route he did afterwards. He also said that the first notice he had of his being within any of our posts was being challenged by the sentry, which was the first night he was on shore. He also said that the evening of the twenty-second of September instant he passed King's Ferry between our posts of Staten and Verplanck's Points in the *less hours at present in and which he said was, and his associates*, and which dress he presumed after he landed from the Vulture, and when he was within our post, and that he was proceeding to New York, but was taken on his way, at Tarrytown, as he has mentioned in his letter, on Saturday, the twenty third of September instant, about nine o'clock in the morning.

The following papers were laid before the board and shown to Major Andre, who confessed to the board that they were found on him when he was taken, and said they were concealed in his boot, except the pass.

A pass from general Arnold to John Anderson which some major Andre acknowledged to be *several*.

Artillery orders, September 5, 1780.

Estimate of the force at West Point and its dependencies, September, 1780.

Estimate of men to man the works at West Point, &c.

Return of ordnance at West Point, September, 1780.

Remarks on works at West Point.

Copy of a state of matters laid before a council of war, by His Excellency General Washington, held the 6th of September, 1780.

A letter signed John Anderson, dated Sept. 7, 1780, to Colonel Sheldon, which was also laid before the board and shown to Major Andre, which he acknowledged to have been written by him, and is as follows:

"New York, the 7th Sept. 1780.

"SIR,

"I AM told *my name* is made known to you, and that I may hope your indulgence in permitting me to meet a friend near your out posts. I will endeavor to obtain permission to go out *with a flag* which will be sent to Dobb's Ferry on Monday next, the 11th, at twelve o'clock, when I shall be happy to meet Mr. G. — Should I not be allowed to go the officer who is to command the escort, between whom and myself no distinction need be made, can speak on the affair.

"Let me entreat you, Sir, to favor a matter so interesting to the parties concerned, and which is of so private a nature that the public on neither side can be injured by it.

"I shall be happy on my part in doing any act of kindness to you in a family or property concern of a familiar nature.

"I trust I shall not be detained, but should any old grudge be a cause for it, I shall rather risk that, than neglect the business in question, *or assume a mysterious character* to carry on an innocent affair, and as friends have advised, get to your lines by stealth. I am, Sir, with all regard,

Your most obedient humble servant,

"Col. SHELDON."

"JOHN ANDERSON."

Major Andre observed that this letter could be of no force in the case in question, as it was written in New York, when he was under the orders of General Clinton, but that it tended to prove that it was not his intention to come within our lines.

The Board having interrogated Major Andre about his conception of coming on shore under the sanction of a flag, he said, *That it was impossible for him to suppose he came on shore under that sanction* and added, *That if he came on shore under that sanction, he certainly would have returned under it.*

Major Andre having acknowledged the preceding facts, and being asked whether he had anything to say respecting them, answered, He left them to operate with the Board.

The examination of Major Andre being concluded, he was remanded into custody.

The following letters were laid before the Board, and read: Benedict Arnold's letter to General Washington, dated September 25, 1780; Colonel Robinson's letter to General Washington, dated the 25th September, 1780; and General Clinton's letter, dated the 26th September, 1780 (enclosing a letter of the same date from Benedict Arnold) to General Washington.

"On board the Vulture, Sept. 25, 1780.

"SIR,

"THE heart which is conscious of its own rectitude, cannot attempt to palliate a step which the world may censure as wrong; I have ever acted from a principle of love to my country, since the commencement of the present unhappy contest between Great-Britain and the Colonies; the same principle of love to my country actuates my present conduct, however it may appear inconsistent to the world, who very seldom judge right of any man's actions.

"I have no favor to ask for myself. I have too often experienced the ingratitude of my country to attempt it; but from the known humanity of your Excellency, I am induced to ask your protection for Mrs. Arnold, from every insult and injury that the mistaken vengeance of my country may expose her to. It ought to fall only on me; she is as good and as innocent as an angel, and is incapable of doing wrong. I beg she may

1. Last it be supposed that Colonel Sheldon, to whom the above letter is addressed, was privy to the plot carrying on by General Arnold, it is to be observed, that the letter was found among Arnold's papers, and had been transmitted by Colonel Sheldon, who, it appears from a letter of the 9th of September to Arnold, which enclosed it, had never heard of John Anderson before. Arnold in his answer on the 10th, acknowledged he had not communicated it to him, though he had informed him that he expected a person would come from New York for the purpose of bringing him intelligence.

2. It appears by the same letter that Arnold had written to Mr. Anderson, under the signature of Gustavus. His words are "I was obliged to write with great caution to let him, my letter was signed Gustavus to prevent any discovery in case it fell into the hands of the enemy."

be permitted to return to her friends in Philadelphia, or to come to me as she may choose; from your Excellency I have no fears on her account, but she may suffer from the mistaken fury of the country.

"I have to request that the inclosed letter may be delivered to Mrs. Arnold, and she permitted to write to me.

"I have also to ask that my cloaths and baggage, which are of little consequence, may be sent to me, if required their value shall be paid in money.

"I have the honour to be, with great regard and esteem, Your Excellency's
"most obedient and humble servant,

"His Excellency
"General WASHINGTON." "B. ARNOLD."

"N. B. In justice to the gentlemen of my family, Col. Varrick and Major Franks, I think myself in honor bound to declare that they, as well as Joshua Smith, Esq., (who I know is suspected) are totally ignorant of any transactions of mine, that they have reason to believe were injurious to the public."

"SIR, "Vulture, off Sinsink, Sept. 25, 1780.

"I AM this moment informed that Major Andre, Adjutant General of his Majesty's army in America, is detained as a prisoner, by the army under your command. It is therefore incumbent on me to inform you of the manner of his falling into your hands: He went up with a flag at the request of General Arnold, on public business with him, and had his permit to return by land to New York: Under these circumstances Major Andre cannot be detained by you, without the greatest violation of flags, and contrary to the custom and usage of all nations; and as I imagine you will see this matter in the same point of view as I do, I must desire you will order him to be set at liberty and allowed to return immediately: Every step Major Andre took was by the advice and direction of General Arnold, even that of taking a feigned name, and of course not liable to censure for it.

"I am, Sir, not forgetting our former acquaintance, Your very humble
"servant,

"His Excellency
"General WASHINGTON." "BEV. ROBINSON, Col.
"Loyl. Americ."

"SIR, "New York, Sept. 26, 1780.

"BEING informed that the King's Adjutant General in America has been stop'd, under Major General Arnold's passports, and is detained a prisoner in your Excellency's army, I have the honor to inform you, Sir, that I permitted Major Andre to go to Major General Arnold, at the particular request of that general officer. You will perceive, Sir, by the inclosed paper, that a flag of truce was sent to receive Major Andre, and passports granted for his return, I therefore can have no doubt but your Excellency will immediately direct, that this officer has permission to return to my orders at new York.

"I have the honor to be, your Excellency's
"most obedient and most humble servt.
"H. CLINTON.

"His Excellency General WASHINGTON." "New York, Sept. 26, 1780.

"SIR,

"IN answer to your Excellency's message, respecting your Adjutant General, Major Andre, and desiring my idea of the reasons why he is detained, being under my passports, I have the honour to inform you, Sir, that I apprehend a few hours must return Major Andre to your Excellency's orders, as that officer is assuredly under the protection of a flag of truce sent by me to him for the purpose of a conversation which I requested to hold with him relating to myself, and which I wished to communicate through that officer to your Excellency.

"I commanded at the time at West Point, had an undoubted right to send my flag of truce for Major Andre, who came to me under that protection, and having held my conversation with him, I delivered him confidential papers in my own hand writing, to deliver to your Excellency, thinking it much proper he should return by land, I directed him to make use of the feigned name of John Anderson, under which he had by my direction come on shore, and gave him my passports to go to the White Plains on his way to New York. This officer cannot therefore fail of being immediately sent to New York, as he was invited to a conversation with me, for which I sent him a flag of truce, and finally gave him passports for his safe return to your Excellency; all which I had then a right to do, being in the actual service of America, under the orders of General Washington, and commanding general at West Point and in its dependencies.

"I have the honour to be, your Excellency's
"most obedient and very humble servant,
"B. ARNOLD.

"His Excellency Sir HENRY CLINTON."

ii.—21

The Board having considered the letter from his Excellency General Washington respecting Major Andre Adjutant General to the British army, the confession of Major Andre, and the papers produced to them, REPORT to his Excellency, the Commander in Chief, the following facts, which appear to them relative to Major Andre.

First, That he came on shore from the Vulture sloop of war in the night of the twenty-first of September instant, on an interview with General Arnold, in a private and secret manner.

Secondly, That he changed his dress within our lines, and under a feigned name, and in a disguised habit passed our works at Stony and Verplack's Points, the evening of the twenty-second of September instant, and was taken the morning of the twenty-third of September instant, at Tarry Town, in a disguised habit, being then on his way to New York, and when taken, he had in his possession several papers, which contained intelligence for the enemy.

The Board having maturely considered these facts, DO ALSO REPORT to His Excellency General Washington, That Major Andre, Adjutant-General to the British army, ought to be considered as a Spy from the enemy, and that agreeable to the law and usage of nations, it is their opinion, he ought to suffer death.

NATH. GREENE, M. Genl. President.

Stirling, M. G.

Ar. St. Clair, M. G.

La Fayette, M. G.

R. Howe, M. G.

Stuben, M. G.

Saml. H. Parsons, B. Genl.

James Clinton, B. Genl.

H. Knox, Genl. Artillery.

Jno. Glover, B. Genl.

John Patterson, B. Genl.

Edwd. Hand, B. Genl.

J. Huntington, B. Genl.

John Starke, B. Genl.

JOHN LAWRENCE, J. A. Genl.

APPENDIX.

Copy of a Letter from Major Andre, Adjutant-General, to Sir Henry Clinton, K. B., &c., &c.

Tappan, Sept. 29, 1780.

SIR,

YOUR Excellency is doubtless already apprised of the manner in which I was taken, and possibly of the serious light in which my conduct is considered, and the rigorous determination that is impending.

Under these circumstances, I have obtained General Washington's permission to send you this letter; the object of which is, to remove from your breast any suspicion, that I could imagine I was bound by your Excellency's orders to expose myself to what has happened. The events of coming within an enemy's posts, and of changing my dress, which led me to my present situation were contrary to my own intentions, as they were to your orders; and the circuitous route, which I took to return, was imposed (perhaps unavoidably) without alternative upon me.

I am perfectly tranquil in mind, and prepared for any fate, to which an honest zeal for my King's service may have devoted me.

In addressing myself to your Excellency on this occasion, the force of all my obligations to you, and of the attachment and gratitude I bear you, recurs to me. With all the warmth of my heart, I give you thanks for your Excellency's profuse kindness to me; and I send you the most earnest wishes for your welfare, which a faithful, affectionate and respectful attendant can frame.

I have a mother and three sisters, to whom the value of my commission would be an object, as the loss of Grenada has much affected their income. It is needless to be more explicit on this subject; I am persuaded of your Excellency's goodness.

I receive the greatest attention from his Excellency General Washington, and from every person, under whose charge I happen to be placed.

I have the honor to be,

With the most affectionate attachment,
Your Excellency's most obedient
and most humble servant,

JOHN ANDRE.

Adjutant-General.

(Addressed)

His Excellency

General Sir Henry Clinton, K. B.

&c. &c. &c.

Copy of a letter from His Excellency General Washington, to His Excellency Sir Henry Clinton.

Head Quarters, Sept. 30, 1780.

SIR,

IN answer to your Excellency's letter of the 26th instant, which I had the honour to receive, I am to inform you, that Major Andre was taken under such circumstances as would have justified the most summary proceedings against him. I determined, however, to refer his case to the examination and decision of a Board of General Officers, who have reported, on his free and voluntary confession and letters,—"That he came on shore from the Vulture sloop of war in the night of "the twenty-first of September instant," &c. &c. as in the report of the Board of General Officers.

From these proceedings it is evident Major Andre was employed in the execution of measures very foreign to the objects of flags of truce, and such as they were never meant to authorise or countenance in the most distant degree; and this gentleman confessed, with the greatest candor, in the course of his examination, "That it was impossible for him to "suppose he came on shore, under the sanction of a flag."

I have the honour to be your Excellency's

Most obedient and most humble servant,

(Addressed)

G. WASHINGTON.

His Excellency Sir Henry Clinton.

In this letter, Major Andre's of the 29th of September to Sir Henry Clinton, was transmitted.

New York, 29 Sept. 1780.

SIR,

PERSUADED that you are inclined rather to promote than to prevent the civilities and acts of humanity, which the rules of war permit between civilized nations, I find no difficulty in representing to you, that several letters and messages sent from hence have been disregarded, are unanswered, and the flags of truce that carried them, detained. As I ever have treated all flags of truce with civility and respect, I have a right to hope, that you will order my complaint to be immediately redressed.

Major Andre, who visited an officer commanding in a district at his own desire, and acted in every circumstance agreeable to his direction, I find is detained a prisoner; my friendship for him leads me to fear he may suffer some inconvenience for want of necessaries; I wish to be allowed to send him a few, and shall take it as a favour if you will be pleased to permit his servant to deliver them. In Sir Henry Clinton's absence it becomes a part of my duty to make this representation and request.

I am, Sir, your Excellency's

Most obedient humble servant,

JAMES ROBERTSON.

His Excellency

Lt. General.

General Washington.

Tappan, Sept. 30, 1780.

SIR,

I HAVE just received your letter of the 29th. Any delay which may have attended your flags has proceeded from accident, and the peculiar circumstances of the occasion,—not from intentional neglect or violation. The letter that admitted of an answer, has received one as early as it could be given with propriety, transmitted by a flag this morning. As to messages, I am uninformed of any that have been sent.

The necessaries for Major Andre will be delivered to him, agreeable to your request.

I am, Sir,

Your most obedient humble servant,

G. WASHINGTON.

His Excellency

Lieut. General Robertson,

New York.

New York, Sept. 30, 1780.

SIR,

FROM your Excellency's letter of this date, I am persuaded the Board of General Officers, to whom you referred the case of Major Andre, can't have been rightly informed of all the circumstances on which a judgment ought to be formed. I think it of the highest moment to humanity, that your Excellency should be perfectly apprized of the state of this matter, before you proceed to put that judgment in execution.

For this reason, I shall send His Excellency Lieut. General Robertson, and two other gentlemen, to give you a true state of facts, and to declare to you my sentiments and resolutions. They will set out to-morrow as early as the wind and tide will permit, and will wait near Dobbs Ferry

for your permission and safe conduct, to meet your Excellency, or such persons as you may appoint, to converse with them on this subject.

I have the honour to be, your Excellency's

Most obedient and most humble servant,

H. CLINTON.

P. S. The Hon. Andrew Elliot, Esq., Lieut. Governor, and the Hon. William Smith, Chief justice of this province, will attend His Excellency Lieut. General Robertson.

H. C.

His Excellency General Washington.

Lieut. General Robertson, Mr. Elliot and Mr. Smith came up in a flag vessel to Dobbs Ferry, agreeable to the above letter. The two last were not suffered to land. General Robertson was permitted to come on shore, and was met by Major General Greene, who verbally reported that General Robertson mentioned to him in substance what is contained in his letter of the 2d of October to General Washington.

New York, Oct. 1, 1780.

SIR,

I TAKE this opportunity to inform your Excellency, that I consider myself no longer acting under the commission of Congress: Their last to me being among my papers at West Point, you, Sir, will make such use of it, as you think proper.

At the same time, I beg leave to assure your Excellency, that my attachment to the true interest of my country is invariable, and that I am actuated by the SAME PRINCIPLE which has ever been the GOVERNING RULE of my conduct, in this unhappy contest.

I have the honour to be, very respectfully,

Your Excellency's most obedient humble serv't,

B. ARNOLD.

His Excellency General Washington.

Greyhound Schooner, Flag of Truce.

Dobbs Ferry, October 2, 1780.

SIR,

A NOTE I have from General Greene, leaves me in doubt if his memory had served him to relate to you with exactness the substance of the conversation that had passed between him and myself, on the subject of Major Andre. In an affair of so much consequence to my friend, to the two armies, and humanity, I would leave no possibility of a misunderstanding, and therefore take the liberty to put in writing the substance of what I said to General Greene.

I offered to prove, by the evidence of Colonel Robinson and the officers of the Vulture, that Major Andre went on shore at General Arnold's desire, in a boat sent for him with a flag of truce: that he not only came ashore with the knowledge and under the protection of the General who commanded in the district, but that he took no step while on shore but by direction of General Arnold, as will appear from the enclosed letter from him to your Excellency.

Under these circumstances I could not and hoped that you would not, consider Major Andre as a spy, for any improper phrase in his letter to you.

The facts he relates correspond with the evidence I offer; but he admits a conclusion that does not follow. The change of cloaths and name was ordered by General Arnold, under whose direction he necessarily was, while within his command. As General Greene and I did not agree in opinion, I wished, that disinterested gentlemen of knowledge of the law of war and nations, might be asked their opinion on the subject; and I mentioned Monsieur Knyphausen and General Rechembault.

I related that a Captain Robinson had been delivered to Sir Henry Clinton as a spy, and undoubtedly was such; but that it being signified to him that you were desirous that this man should be exchanged, he had ordered him to be exchanged.

I wished that an intercourse of such civilities as the rules of war might admit of, might take off many of its horrors. I admitted that Major Andre had a great share of Sir Henry Clinton's esteem, and that he would be infinitely obliged by his liberation; and that if he was permitted to return with me, I would engage to have any person you would be pleased to name set at liberty.

I added, that Sir Henry Clinton had never put to death any person for a breach of the rules of war, though he had, and now has, many in his power. Under the present circumstances, much good might arise from humanity, much ill from want of it. If that could give any weight, I beg leave to add, that your favorable treatment of Major Andre, will be a favor I should ever be intent to return to any you hold dear.

My memory does not retain with the exactness I could wish, the words of the letter which General Greene showed me from Major Andre to

your Excellency. For Sir Henry Clinton's satisfaction, I beg you will order a copy of it to be sent to me at New York.

*I have the honour to be your Excellency's
Most obedient and most humble servant,*

JAMES ROBERTSON.

His Excellency, General Washington.

New-York, October 1, 1780.

SIR,

The polite attention shown by your Excellency and the Gentlemen of your family to Mrs. Arnold, when in distress, demand my grateful acknowledgment and thanks, which I beg leave to present.

From your Excellency's letter to Sir Henry Clinton, I find a Board of General Officers have given it as their opinion, that Major Andre comes under the description of a spy: My good opinion of the candor and justice of those Gentlemen leads me to believe that if they had been made fully acquainted with every circumstance respecting Major Andre, that they would by no means have considered him in the light of a spy, or even of a prisoner. In justice to him, I think it my duty to declare, that he came from on board the *Vulture* at my particular request, by a flag sent on purpose for him by Joshua Smith, Esq., who had permission to go to Dobb's Ferry to carry letters, and for other purposes not mentioned, and to return. This was done as a blind to the spy-boats: Mr. Smith at the same time had my private directions to go on board the *Vulture* and bring on shore Colonel Robinson, or Mr. John Anderson, which was the name I had requested Major Andre to assume: At the same time I desired Mr. Smith to inform him that he should have my protection, and a safe passport to return in the same boat, as soon as our business was completed. As several accidents intervened to prevent his being sent on board, I gave him my passport to return by land. Major Andre came on shore in his uniform (without disguise) which with much reluctance, at my particular and pressing instance, he exchanged for another coat. I furnished him with a horse and saddle, and pointed out the route by which he was to return. And as commanding officer in the department, I had an undoubted right to transact all these matters; which if wrong, Major Andre ought by no means to suffer for them.

But if, after this just and candid representation of Major Andre's case, the Board of General Officers adhere to their former opinion, I shall suppose it dictated by passion and resentment; and if that Gentleman should suffer the severity of their sentence, I shall think myself bound by every tie of duty and honour, to retaliate on such unhappy persons of your army as may fall within my power, that the respect due to flags, and to the law of nations, may be better understood and observed.

I have further to observe, that forty of the principal inhabitants of South Carolina have justly forfeited their lives, which have hitherto been spared by the clemency of His Excellency, Sir Henry Clinton, who cannot in justice extend his mercy to them any longer, if Major Andre suffers; which in all probability will open a scene of blood at which humanity will revolt.

Suffer me to entreat your Excellency, for your own and the honour of humanity, and the love you have of justice, that you suffer not an unjust sentence to touch the life of Major Andre.

But if this warning be disregarded, and he suffer, I call heaven and earth to witness, that your Excellency will be justly answerable for the torrent of blood that may be spilt in consequence.

*I have the Honour to be, with due respect,
Your Excellency's most obedient
and very humble servant,*

B. ARNOLD.

His Excellency, General Washington.

Tappan, October 1, 1780.

SIR,

BOYD above the terror of death by the consciousness of a life devoted to honorable pursuits, and stained with no action that can give me remorse, I trust that the request I make to your Excellency at this serious period, and which is to soften my last moments, will not be rejected.

Sympathy towards a soldier will surely induce your Excellency and a military tribunal to adapt the mode of my death to the feelings of a man of honour.

Let me hope, Sir, that if aught in my character impresses you with esteem towards me, if aught in my misfortune marks me as the victim of policy and not of resentment, I shall experience the operation of these

feelings in your breast, by being informed that I am not to die on a gibbet.

*I have the honour to be, your Excellency's
Most obedient and most humble servant,*

JOHN ANDRE,

Adj. Gen. to the British Army.

The time which elapsed between the capture of Major Andre, which was on the morning of the 23d of September, and his execution which did not take place till 12 o'clock on the 3d of October,—the mode of trying him, his letter to Sir Henry Clinton, K. B., on the 29th of September, in which he said, "I receive the greatest attention from his Excellency, General Washington, and from every person under whose charge I happen to be placed,"—not to mention many other acknowledgments, which he made of the good treatment he received,—must evince that the proceedings against him were not guided by passion or resentment. The practice and usage of war were against his request, and made the indulgence he solicited, circumstanced as he was, inadmissible.

Published by order of Congress,

CHARLES THOMSON, *Secretary.*

The following is the statement submitted by Major Andre himself to the board of general officers which tried him. It is referred to in the proceedings of that body, already given:

"On the twentieth of September I left New York, to get on board the *Vulture*, in order to meet General Arnold there in the night. No boat, however, came off; and I waited on board until the night of the twenty-first.

"During the day, a flag of truce was sent from the *Vulture* to complain of the violation of a military rule, in the instance of a boat having been decoyed on shore by a flag, and fired upon. The letter was addressed to General Arnold, signed by Captain Sutherland, but written in my hand, and countersigned 'J. ANDERSON, *Secretary.*' Its intent was to indicate my presence on board the *Vulture*.

"In the night of the twenty-first, a boat with Mr. [Joshua Hett Smith] and two hands came on board, in order to fetch Mr. Anderson on shore; and, if too late, to bring me back, to lodge me until the next night in a place of safety. I went into the boat, landed, and spoke with Arnold. I got on horseback with him to proceed to [Smith's] house, and in the way passed a guard I did not expect to see, having Sir Henry Clinton's directions not to go within an enemy's post, or to quit my own dress.

"In the morning A. [Arnold] quitted me, having himself made me put the papers I bore between my stockings and feet. Whilst he did it he expressed a wish, in case of any accident befalling me, that they should be destroyed, which I said, of course would be the case, as when I went into the boat I should have them tied about with a string and a stone. Before we parted, some mention had been made of my crossing the river and going by another route; but I objected much against it, and thought it was settled that in the way I came I was also to return.

"Mr. [Joshua Hett Smith] to my great mortification persisted in his determination of carrying me by the other route; and, at the decline of the sun I set out on horseback, passed King's Ferry and came to Crumpond, where a party of militia stopped us and advised we should remain. In the morning I came with [Smith] as far as within two miles and a half of Pine's Bridge, where he said he must part with me, as the Cowboys infested the road thenceforward. I was now near thirty miles from Kingsbridge, and left to the chance of passing that space undiscovered. I got to the neighborhood of Tarrytown, which was far beyond the points described as dangerous, when I was taken by three volunteers, who, not satisfied with my pass, rifled me, and, finding papers, made me a prisoner.

"I have omitted mentioning that, when I found myself within an enemy's posts, I changed my dress."

The following are military orders issued to the army in reference to the Arnold and Andre treason,—the first by General Greene, who commanded the main body of the army in the absence of General Washington, the remainder by the commander-in-chief himself. They were all copied, *verb. et lit. et punc.*, from the original manuscript Order Book of the army, now in possession of the New York Historical Society:

I.

[GENERAL ORDER ISSUED BY GENERAL GREENE, COMMANDING THE ARMY, ON THE DISCOVERY OF THE PLOT.]

GENERAL ORDERS

Head Quarters Orange Town 26 Sept
Parole—*Smallwood*—*Signs Gist*—*Maroon*
Watch Word *Intrepid*

For the day tomorrow	{	Brigadier - - - Glover
		Colo - - - Bradley
		Lieut. Colo - - - Olney
		Major - - - Wait
		B Major - - - S Smith

The Truly martial appearance, made by the Troops yesterday, the order and regularity, with which they made the different marches and the ease and facility, they performed the several *manœuvres*, does them the greatest credit, and affords the most flattering prospect, of Substantial Service, regulation, and military Glory: nothing can be more pleasing to the Officers, who feel for the honor of the Army, and the *Independence of America* than to see the rapid progress made by the Troops in military Discipline; the good conduct of all, the officers yesterday, gave the Genl. the highest satisfaction, and the particular Services of the *Inspector Genl.*, and those serving in that Line, deserve his particular thanks.

Treason of the Blackest Dye

was yesterday discovered—*Genl Arnold* who commanded at West point, lost to every Sentiment of honor, of private and public Obligation, was about to deliver up that important post into the hands of the Enemy; such an Event must have given the American cause, a deadly wound, if not a fatal stab; happily this treason has been timely discover'd, to prevent the fatal misfortune—The providential train of Circumstances which lead to it, affords the most convincing proof, that the Liberties of America, is the object of Divine protection—at the same time, tho' the Treason is to be regretted, the Genl cannot help congratulating the Army on the happy Discovery—Our Enemies, despairing of carrying their point by Force, are practising every base art, to effect by bribery and corruption, what they cannot accomplish in a manly way—great honor is due to the American Army, that this is the first Instance of the kind, where many were to be expected from the nature of the dispute, and nothing is so bright an Ornament in the Character of the American Soldiers, as their having been proof against all the Arts and Seductions of an Insidious Enemy. *Arnold* has made his Escape to the Enemy—but Mr. *Andre*, the Adjt Genl to the British Army, who came out as a Spy to negotiate the Business is our prisoner

His Excellency the Commander in Chief has arrived at Westpoint from Hartford: and is no doubt taking proper measures to unravel fully so *the Fish plot*

The Genl Court martial whereof Colo H. Jackson is president, will sit tomorrow 9 o'Clock Major Ball is appointed a member viz Major Talbot—a Captain from the Hampshire & 2d Connecticut Brigades, to attend on those from the Pennsylvania Line

II.

GENERAL ORDERS ISSUED BY GENERAL WASHINGTON, COMMANDING THE ARMY, APPROVING THE FINDING OF THE BOARD OF OFFICERS AND ORDERING THE EXECUTION OF THE SPY.

GENERAL ORDERS.

Headquarters Orange Town Oct 1st, 1780.

P C. S: W. W:	{	Brigr Glover
		Colo Cilley
		Li Colo Dearborn
		Maj Harwood
		B M Pettinall

The Board of General Officers appointed to examine into the case of Major *Andre* have reported,

First—That he came on shore from the *Vulture* Ship of War in the night of the 21st Sept last on an interview with General *Arnold* in a private and secret manner.

Secondly—That he changed his Dress within our Lines, and, under a feigned name and in a disguised habit, passed our Works at Stony and Verplanks points the Evening of the 22d Sept last, and was taken the morning of the 23d Sep at Tarry town in a disguised habit, being then on his way to New York, and when taken he had in his possession several papers which contained intel ligence for the Enemy.

The Board having maturely considered these facts do also report to his Excellency General Washington that Major *Andre*, Adjt General to the British Army, ought to be considered as a Spy from the enemy, and that agreeable to the law & usage of Nations it is their Opinion he ought to suffer Death.

The commander in chief directs the execution of the above sentence this afternoon at Five o'Clock precisely.

* * * * *

AFTER ORDERS.

The Execution of Major *Andre* is postponed until tomorrow.

EVENING ORDERS.

Major *Andre* is to be executed tomorrow at 12 o'Clock precisely. A Battalion of 80 files from each Wing to attend the Execution.

The following are carefully-prepared copies of the important papers which were found on the person of Major *Andre* at the time he was captured at Tarrytown. They were all, except the first—that is, the pass to John Anderson—concealed between his stockings and his feet, and it was no wonder, as Isaac Van Wart said, that when they were on the point of pulling off *Andre's* boots big drops of sweat stood upon his face like peas. With a single exception, all these papers are deposited in the State Library at Albany.¹

The arrangement of the copies here given conforms to that of the entry concerning them in the report of the proceedings of the board of general officers, to be found on the preceding pages.

I.

[PASS FOR THE USE OF *ANDRE*,
In *Arnold's* hand-writing.]

Head Quarters *Robinsons*)
House, Sept. 23d 1780.)

Permit Mr. John Anderson to pass the Guards to the White Plains, or below, if He Chuses, He being on Public Business by my Direction.

R. ARNOLD, M. Genl.

[Endorsed, *Arnold* to John Anderson—Pass. 22 Sept., 1780.

II.

[ARTILLERY ORDERS.

DISPOSITION OF THE GARRISON, AT WEST POINT, IN CASE OF AN ALARM
In *Arnold's* hand-writing.]

Wt. Point., Sept. 5th, 1780.

Artillery Orders.

The following Disposition of the corps is to take place in Case of an alarm:

Capt. *Damills* with his Compy at Fort Putnam, and to Detach an Officer with 12 men to *Wylly's* Redoubt, a non-commissioned Officer, with 3 men to *Webbs* Redoubt, and the like number to Redoubt No. 4.

Captain *Thomas* Company to repair to Fort *Arnold*.

Captain *Simmons* and Company to remain at the North and South Redoubts, at the East side of the river, until further Orders.

Lieut. *Barber*, with 20 men of Capt. *Jacksens* Company, will repair to Constitution Island; the remainder of the Company, with Lieut. *Masons*, will repair to *Arnold*

Capt. Lieut. *George* & Lieut. *Blake*, with 20 men of Capt. *Treadwill's* Company, will repair to Redoubt No. 1 & 2, the remainder of the Company, will be sent to Fort *Arnold*.

Late *Jones's* Compy, with Lieut. *Fisk*, to repair to the South Battery.

The Chain Battery, *Sherburn's* Redoubt and the Brass Field pieces will be manned from Fort *Arnold* as Occasion may require.

The Commissary and Conductor of Military stores will in turn wait upon the Commanding Officer of Artillery for Orders.

¹ Most of the papers here quoted are selected from a series of *Andre's* Papers of about sixty numbers, more or less, entitled "The Capture of Major *Andre*," and printed in the years 1805 and 1806 in *The Gazette*, of *Yonkers*, under the editorial supervision of *Henry B. Dawson, Esq.*

The Artificers in the Garrison (agreeable to former Orders) will repair to Fort Arnold, and there receive further Orders from the Command'g Officer of Artillery, J. Bauman Major Comd't Artillery.
[Endorsed, Artillery Orders, Sept. 5, 1780.]

III.

[ESTIMATE OF THE STRENGTH OF THE GARRISON, SEPT., 1780.
In Arnold's hand-writing.]

Estimate of the Forces at Wt. Point and its dependencies, Sept. 13th, 1780.

A brigade of Massachusetts Militia & two regiments of Rank & file New Hampshire Inclusive of 166 Batteaux Men at Verplanks and Stoney Points,	}	992
On command & Extra Service at Fish Kills, New Windsor, &c., &c, who may be called in occasionally.		
3 Regiments of Connecticut Militia under the Comd of Colonel Wells on the lines near No Castle,	}	488
A detachment of New York Levies on the lines,		
		115
		<hr/>
Militia		2447
Colonel Lambs Regiment		168
Colonel Livingston at Verplank & Stoney Pts,		80
		<hr/>
Continentl:		247
Colonel Sheldons Dragoons on the lines, about one half mounted.		142
Batteaux Men and Artificers		250
		<hr/>
Total,		3086

[Endorsed, Estimate of the Force at West Point and its dependencies, Sept., 1780.]

IV.

[ESTIMATE OF THE FORCE NECESSARY TO COMPLETELY MAN THE WORKS.
In Arnold's hand-writing.]

Estimate of the Number of Men necessary to Man the Works at W't Point & in the Vicinity

Fort Arnold	620
— Putnam	450
— Wyllys	140
— Webb	140

V.

RETURN OF ORDNANCE IN THE DIFFERENT FORTS, BATTERIES, ETC., AT WEST POINT AND ITS DEPENDENCIES, SEPTEMBER 5th, 1780.

Calibres	Metal.	Garrison Carriages	Garrison Carriages Travelling ditto	Garrison Carriages Stocked ditto	Garrison Carriages	Garrison Carriages Stocked ditto	Garrison Carriages Travelling ditto	Garrison Carriages	Garrison Carriages Travelling ditto	Garrison Carriages Travelling ditto	Mortars			Howitz.	Total			
											Inches	Inches	Inches					
		24	18	12	9	6	4	3	0	54	2	42-5	8					
Fort Arnold	Brass							1							} 23			
	Iron	1	6		1				3	5		1						
Fort Putnam	Brass														} 14			
	Iron		5	2					1			4						
Constitution Island	Iron		4	1		1	3								10			
South Battery	Iron		4	1											5			
Chain Battery	Iron			1	2										3			
Lantern Battery	Iron			1	2										2			
Webb's Redoubt	Iron			1				1							4			
Sherman's Redoubt	Iron					2	3								5			
Megg's Redoubt	Iron					1			1						2			
South Redoubt	Iron			1		4									6			
North Redoubt	Iron		3	3											6			
Wyllys's Redoubt	Iron					2			3						5			
Rocky Hill No. 4	Iron				2										2			
“ “ 1	Iron			1		4									2			
“ “ 2	Iron					2									2			
Verplank's and Stony Points	Brass											2	1		} 8			
	Iron		1	2										1				
Total		1	18	3	14	5	9	14	5	2	1	3	6	5	11	2	1	100.

N. B.—The following Ordnance not distributed:
No. 6 Iron 12 Pound.
4 do 9 do
1 do 6 do
1 do 4 do
2 do 3 do

3 Brass 24 Pounders.
7 do 12 do
1 do 8 inch howitz.

(Signed,)

S. BAUMAN, Major Comd't Artillery.

Redoubt No. 1	150
ditto 2	150
ditto 3	120
ditto 4	100
ditto 5	130
ditto 6	110
ditto 7	78
North Redoubt	120
South Redoubt	140

Total,

2438

Villepanche, Engineer.

N. B. The Artillery Men are not Included in the above Estimate.
[Endorsed, Estimate of Men to Man the Works at W't Point, &c. Sep'r, 1780.]

[See following table for No. V.]

VI.

[REMARKS ON WORKS AT WEST POINT, SEPT. 1780.

In Arnold's hand-writing.]

Sept. 1780.

Fort Arnold is built of Dry Fascines and Wood is in a ruinous condition, incompleat and subject to take Fire from Shells or Carcasses.

Fort Putnam stone wanting great repairs, the wall on the East side broke down, and rebuilding From the Foundation at the west and South side have been a Chevaux de-Frise on the West side broke in many Places. The East side open, two Bomb Proofs and Provision Magazine in the Fort, and slight Wooden Barrack.—A commanding piece of ground 500 yards West between the Fort and No. 4—or Rocky Hill.—

Fort Webb Built of Fascines and Wood, a slight Work very dry and liable to be set on fire as the approaches are very easy, without defences save a slight abattis.

Fort Wyllys built of stone 5 feet high the Work above plank filled with Earth, the stone work 15 feet, the Earth 9 feet thick.—No Bomb Proofs, the Batteries without the Fort.

Redoubt No. 1 On the south side wood 9 feet thick the Wt. North and East sides 4 feet thick, no cannon in the works, a slight and single Abattis, no ditch or picket. Cannon on two Batteries. No Bomb Proofs.

Redoubt No. 2 The same as No. 1. No Bomb Proofs.

Redoubt No. 3, a slight Wood Work 3 Feet thick very Dry no Bomb Proofs, a single Abattis, the work easily set on fire—no Cannon.

Redoubt No. 4, a Wooden work about 10 feet high and fore or five feet thick, the West side faced with a stone wall 8 feet high and four thick. No Bomb Proof, two six pounders, a slight Abattis, a Commanding piece of ground 500 yards Wt.

The North Redoubt on the East side built of stone 4 feet high, above the stone wood filled in with Earth, very dry, do ditch, a Bomb Proof, three Batteries without the Fort, a poor Abattis, a Rising piece of ground 500 yards So, the approaches Under Cover to within 20 yards.—The Work easily fired with Faggots dip'd in Pitch &c.

South Redoubt much the same as the North a Commanding piece of ground 500 yards due East—3 Batteries without the Fort.

[Endorsed, Remarks on Works at Wt. Point a copy to be transmitted to his Excellency General Washington.]

VII.

[COPY OF A STATE OF MATTERS LAID BEFORE A COUNCIL OF WAR, BY GENL. WASHINGTON, SEPT. 6, 1780.

In Arnold's hand-writing.]

At a Council of War, held in Camp Bergen County, Sept. 6th, 1780. Present—the Commander-in-Chief.

The Commander-in-Chief states to the Council, that since he had the honor of laying before the General Officers, at Morristown, the 6th of June last, a general view of our circumstances, several important events have occurred, which have materially changed the prospects of the campaign.

That the succors expected from France, instead of coming out in one body, and producing a Naval Superiority in these Seas, has been divided into two Divisions, the first of which only consisting of seven ships of the line, one forty-four and three smaller Frigates, with five thousand land Forces, had arrived at Rhode Island.

That a reinforcement of six ships of the line from England having reinforced the Enemy, had made their Naval Force in these seas amount to Nine Sail of the Line, Two-Fifties, two forty fours and a number of smaller Frigates, a Force completely superior to that of our Allies, and which has in consequence held them Blocked up in the harbor of Rhode Island till the 29th ult., at which period the British Fleet disappeared, and no advice of them has since been received.

That Accounts received by the Alliance Frigate, which left France in July, announces the Second Division to be Confined in Brest with several other Ships by a British Fleet of thirty-two Sail of the line, and a Fleet of the Allies of Thirty-six or thirty-eight Ships of the line ready to put to sea from Cadiz to relieve the Port of Brest.

The most of the States in their answers to the requisitions made of them, give the strongest assurances of doing every thing in their power to furnish the men and supplies required for the expected Co-operation. The effect of which, however, has been far short of our expectations, for not much above one-third of the Levies demanded for the Continental Battalions, nor above the Same proportion of Militia have been assembled, and the Supplies have been so inadequate that there was a necessity for dismissing all the Militia whose immediate service could be dispensed with to lessen our Consumption, notwithstanding which the Troops now in the Field are severely suffering for want of Provision.

That the army at this Post and in the vicinity in operating Force consists of 10,400 Continental Troops and about 400 Militia, besides which is a Regiment of Continental Troops of about 500 at Rhode Island, left there for the assistance of our Allies, against any attempt of the Enemy that way, and two Connecticut State Regiments amounting to 800 at North Castle.

That the Times for Service for which the Levies are Engaged will expire the first of January, which, if not replaced, allowing for the usual Casualties, will reduce the Continental Army to less than 6000 men.

That since the state for the Council above Referred to, the enemy have brought a detachment of about 3000 men from Charles Town to New York, which makes the present operating Force in this Quarter between Ten and Eleven Thousand men.

That the Enemies Force now in the Southern States has not been lately ascertained by any distinct accounts, but the general supposes it cannot be less than 7,000 (of which about 2,000 are at Savannah) in this estimate the Diminution by the Casualties of the Climate, is supposed to be equal to the increase of Force derived from the Disaffected.

That added to the loss of Charles Town and its Garrison accounts of a recent misfortune are just arrived from Major General Gates, giving advice of a general action which happened on the 16th of August, near Campden, in which the army under his Command met with a total defeat, and in all probability the whole of the Continental Troops, and a Considerable part of the Militia, would be cut off.

That the State of Virginia has been sometime exerting itself to raise a Body of 3000 Troops to serve till the end of December, 1781, but how far it has succeeded is not known.

That Maryland had resolved to raise 2000 Men, of which a sufficient number to compose one Battalion, was to have come to this army. The remainder to recruit the Maryland line—but, in consequence of the late advices, an order has been sent to march the whole Southward.

That the Enemies Force in Canada, Halifax, St. Augustine and at Penobscot remains much the same as stated in the preceding Council.

That there is still reason to believe the Court of France will prosecute its Original Intention of giving effectual succor to this Country, as soon as Circumstances will permit; and it is hoped the second Division will certainly arrive in the course of the fall.

That a Fleet greatly superior to that of the Enemy in the West Indies and a formidable land Force had sailed sometime since from Martinique to make a Combined attack upon the Island of Jamaica, that there is a possibility of a reinforcement from this quarter also, to the Fleet of our Ally at Rhode Island.

The Commander in Chief having thus given the Council a full view of our present Situation and future prospects, requests the Opinion of each Member in writing what plan it will be advisable to pursue, to what objects Our Attention ought to be directed in the course of this fall and winter, taking into consideration the alternative of having or not having a Naval Superiority, whether any offensive operations can be immediately undertaken and against what Point, what ought to be our immediate Preparations and dispositions, particularly whether we can afford or ought to send any Reinforcements from this Army to the Southern States, and to what amount, the General Requests to be favored with these opinions by the 10th instant at farthest.

[Endorsed, Copy of a Council of War, held Sept. 6th, 1780.]

The statements made at different times by the three captors of Major Andre not only throw light upon the transaction itself, but add greatly to the interest of the narrative by exhibiting to some extent the personal history and characteristics of the three men who figured so conspicuously in it. As these statements are not all easily accessible to the general reader, they are here given in connection with the other papers.

The following is the statement of David Williams, who died in Schoharie County on August 2, 1831, and to whose memory a splendid monument is erected near the Old Fort, in Schoharie village. The cornerstone was laid on September 23, 1876. The statement here quoted is in the nature of a biography, and originally appeared in the Albany *Daily Advertiser*, in January, 1831, about seven months before his death. It is incorporated into Simms' "History of Schoharie County," pp. 646-649, and also in "The Centennial Celebrations of the State of New York, Prepared Pursuant to a Concurrent Resolution of the Legislature of 1878, etc., by Allen C. Beach, Secretary of State," and published in Albany, 1879, p. 227.

STATEMENT OF DAVID WILLIAMS.

I was born in Tarrytown, then called Phillips' Manor, Westchester County, New York, October 21st, 1754. I entered the army in 1775, at the age of twenty-one; was under General Montgomery at the siege of Fort St. John's and afterwards on board the flat-bottomed boats to carry provisions, etc.; and served out my time which, was six months.

I then went and listed again in the spring of 1776; and continued in the service by different enlistments, as a New York militiaman, until 1779.

In 1778, when in Captain Aecker's company of New York militia at Tarrytown, I asked his permission to take a walk in company with William Van Wart, a boy sixteen or seventeen years old. We proceeded to the cross-roads on Tompkins's ridge; stood looking a few minutes; saw five men coming; they had arms. We jumped over a stone fence

and concealed ourselves in a corner of it: observed that they were armed with two muskets and three pistols. They came so nigh that we recognized two of them, viz.: William Underhill and William Mosher, who were Tories, and known to be of De Lancey's corps.

When they had come within proper distance, I said to my companion, "Billy, neck or no joint!" I then said aloud, as if speaking to a number, with the view of intimidating them, "Men, make ready!" They stopped immediately: I told them to ground their arms, which they did: I then said, "March away:" they did so: I then jumped over the fence, secured their arms, and made them march before us to our quarters.

I continued in the service until a week or ten days before the year 1780.

In December, 1779, Captain Daniel Williams, who was commander of our company, mounted us on horses and we went to Morrisania, Westchester County. We swept all Morrisania clean; took probably five thousand dollars' worth of property; returned to Tarrytown; and quartered at Young's house.

My feet being frozen, my uncle Martinus Van Wart took me to his house. I told Captain Williams that the enemy would soon be at Young's; and that if he remained there he would be on his way to Morrisania before morning. He paid no attention to any remarks: he did not believe me: but in the course of the night a woman came to my uncle's, crying "Uncle Martinus! Uncle Martinus!;" the truth was, the British had surrounded Young's house, made prisoners of all the company, except two; and burned the barn.

Having got well of my frozen feet, on the third of June, 1780, we were all driven from Tarrytown to the town of Salem, in the upper part of Westchester County. We belonged to no organized company at all; were under no command; and worked for our board or *johnny-cake*.

Isaac Van Wart, who was a cousin of mine,¹ Nicholas Storms, and myself went to Tarrytown on a visit; we carried muskets with us; and, on our way, took a Quaker who said he was going to New York after salt and other things. The Quaker was taken before the American authority and acquitted.

In July or August a number of persons of whom I was one, went on a visit to our friends in Tarrytown; and, while on the way, took ten head of cattle which some refugees were driving to New York; and on examination before the authority, the cattle were restored to their rightful owners, as they pleaded innocence, saying they were stolen from them. I then returned to Salem, and worked with a Mr. Benedict for my board until the twenty-second of September.

It was about one o'clock P. M., as I was standing in the door with Mr. Benedict's daughter (who was afterwards my wife), when I saw six men coming. She remarked, "They have guns." I jumped over a board fence and met them. "Boys," said I, "where are you going?" They answered, "We are going to Tarrytown." I then said, "if you will wait until I get my gun, I will go with you."

The names of the six persons were Isaac Van Wart, John Paulding, William Williams, John Yerks, and James Romer—the name of the sixth I have forgotten. We proceeded about fifteen miles that night, and slept in a hay barrack. In the morning we crossed Buttermilk Hill; and John Paulding proposed to go to Isaac Reed's, and get a pack of cards to divert ourselves with. After procuring them we went out to Davis's Hill, where we separated; leaving four on the Hill, and three, viz.: Van Wart, Paulding and myself, proceeded on the Tarrytown road, about one mile, and concealed ourselves in the bushes on the west side of the road, and commenced playing cards, three hand, that is each one for himself.

We had not been playing more than one hour, when we heard a horse galloping across a bridge but a few yards from us. Which of us spoke I do not remember; but one of us said, "There comes a trader, going to New York." We stepped out from our concealment and stopped him. "My lads," said he, "I hope you belong to our party." We asked him "What party?" He replied, "The lower party." We told him we did. He then said, "I am a British officer; have been up in the country on particular business; and would not wish to be detained a minute;" and as a token to convince us he was a gentleman, he pulled out and showed us his gold watch.²

¹The father of Williams and mother of Van Wart were brother and sister.

²The following article referring to Andre's watch appeared in the *New York Tribune*, of Friday, November 27, 1885:

"A RELIC OF MAJOR ANDRE.

"An opened-faced gold watch, with the inscription, 'John Andre,

The following is a statement of Isaac Van Wart, communicated to Mr. Browere, the artist, in the summer of 1826. In it he gives a touch of his personal history, and an interesting recital of the event, in which he bore an important part. This paper is not often found in works on the subject, and will probably be new to the mass of readers. Mr. Van Wart said,—

"I am the third son of Martinus Van Wart; he had nine children. I was born at Greenburg, Westchester County, but don't know on what day, but was christened on the twenty-fifth of October, 1748.

"When a division of the American Army was at North Castle, commanded by Colonel Jamison, I went on a scouting party, consisting of two besides myself, in order to way-lay the Cowboys or Refugees, who, we had notice, passed the North River post, daily, with Cattle, horses, sheep, &c.

"While at the encampment at North Castle, John Paulding came, one afternoon, to me, saying, 'Isaac, have you any objection to going with me on a scout, below?' 'No,' says I. We then started between three and four in the afternoon, with our English rifles on our shoulders, and proceeded southward. After walking a mile or so, we fell in with David Williams, and persuaded him to accompany us on our expedition. At night, we came to neighbor John Andrews' barn at Mt. Pleasant, and slept on the hay until daybreak. We next crossed the fields to the North River post-road; and about half-past seven o'clock, we came to the widow Read's house, got some milk and a pack of playing-cards. At nine we reached the field beside the road, now the property of Mr. Wiley, three-quarters of a mile from Tarrytown. Getting over the fence, we found it filled with thick bushes, underwood, &c., &c. We

1774,' engraved on the inner case, was sold at auction the other day at Bangs & Co.'s rooms. The watch is a curious piece of workmanship, and interesting from its historical associations. After Major Andre's execution it was sold for the benefit of his captors, Paulding, Van Wart and Williams. It was purchased by Colonel William S. Smith, of the Continental Army, for thirty guineas, and by him was committed to General Robertson, of the British Army, to be sent to Andre's family in England. For some reason it never left this country, but found its way into a pawnshop. Thence it passed into the possession of Mrs. Calkins, of Oshkosh, Wis., from whom it was purchased by Gabriel Freeman, of Brick Church, N. J. Accompanying the watch was a certified letter from Benson J. Lossing, the historian, to the effect that he had made investigations concerning the watch, and was convinced that it was the identical one taken from Andre after his execution."

We then told him we were Americans. "God bless my soul," said he, "a man must do anything these times to get along; and then showed Gen. Arnold's pass.

We told him it would not satisfy us without searching him. "My 'lads," said he, "you will bring yourselves into trouble." We answered, "We did not fear it;" and conducted him about seventy rods into the woods. My comrades appointed me to search him. Commencing with his hat, I searched his person effectually, but found nothing until I pulled off his boot, when we discovered that something was concealed in his stocking. Paulding caught hold of his foot and exclaimed, "By God! here it is." I pulled off his stocking, and inside of it, next to the sole of his foot, found three half-sheets of paper enclosed in another half-sheet which was endorsed, "West Point;" and on pulling off the other boot and stocking, I found three like papers, enclosed and endorsed as the others. On reading them, one of my companions said, "By God! he is a spy."

We then asked him where he got those papers. He told us "Of a man at Pine's Bridge, but," he said, "he did not know his name." He offered us his gold watch, his horse, saddle, bridle and a hundred guineas, if we would let him go. We told him, "No, unless he would inform us where he got the papers." He answered us as before, but increased his offer to a thousand guineas, his horse, etc. He then said, "Gentlemen! I will give you ten thousand guineas and some dry-goods as you will ask. Conceal me in any place of safety while you can send to New York with an order to Sir Henry Clinton from me, and the goods and money will be procured so that you can get them unmolested." "Not I, by God! if you would give us ten thousand guineas you should not stir a step; we are Americans, and above corruption, and go with us you must." We then took him about twelve miles to Colonel Jamieson's quarters at North-Castle."

cleared a spot, and Paulding, taking out the cards, said, 'Boys we will 'draw cuts—two can play, while the third stands sentry.' The cuts were made, and I was to stand sentinel.

"During fifteen or twenty minutes, several neighbors, whose political principles I well knew, passed the field where we were, without discovering us—Paulding and Williams keeping a perfect silence, and I laying down within the bushes, close to the fence. Shortly (say twenty or thirty minutes from the time of our arrival) I saw a horseman ride slowly along on a black horse, on the rising ground, directly opposite to where the Tarrytown academy now stands. I said to Paulding and Williams, 'Here's a horseman coming; we must stop him.' We got up, with our firelocks ready, and waited for him to advance.

"As soon as he (it was Major Andre) saw us standing by the fence, he reined in his horse, and riding straight up to us, said, 'God bless you, my dear friends, I hope you belong to our party!' We asked, 'What party?' Without hesitation, he smilingly replied, 'Why the lower party. I am a British officer; and to convince you that I am a gentleman, and aver the truth, see, here is my gold watch.' We told him he was wrong; for we neither belonged to his nor to the Lower party, but were Americans, and that he was our prisoner.

"He started, changed color, and fetching a deep sigh, said, 'God bless my soul! a body must do any thing to get along now-a-days.' Thereupon he showed us General Arnold's passport, and said: 'I have been in the country on particular business and hope you won't detain me a minute.' After we had read the passport, we ordered him to dismount and follow us. We then took down the fence and led him and his horse through into the thicket. Williams put up the fence as at first, that no suspicion or inquiry should arise from seeing it down. When Williams came up, Major Andre requested us again to release him, and said he would give us any sum of money we might ask, or any quantity of dry-goods. You know our answer. After searching his clothes, we ordered him to sit down, and pulling off his boot, we perceived that his silk stocking sagged a little. We took that off, and found in it three letters that were not sealed. On taking off his other boot and stocking, we found three more unsealed letters, which contained correct descriptions of the posts, redoubts, cannon, &c., of West Point and other places. After we had taken possession of these documents, he said, 'Now you have gotten all, lead on.' He put his stockings and boots on, and followed us to the road. Replacing the fence, we allowed him to remount his horse and go in advance.

"You never saw such an alteration in any man's face. Only a few minutes before, he was uncommonly gay in his looks; but after we had made him prisoner, you could read in his face that he thought it was all over with him. We felt for him; but that was all we could do, so long as we meant to be honest to our country.

"We made our way as quickly and silently as we could, to the encampment at North Castle. We never went into the main road, but kept in the by-ways, and never stopped except to give the prisoner a little milk or so, which we got from the country people. When we arrived at Sands Mills, which was ten miles from where we captured him, we surrendered the Major to the commanding officer, who was Colonel Jamison.

"I wish you to know, that after traveling one or two miles, Major Andre said, 'I would to God you had blown my brains out when you stopped me.' During this speech, and the whole of the journey, big drops of sweat kept continually falling from his face. He suffered much in mind, as was apparent from his great dejection; but he acted like a gentleman, candidly and politely. He never once attempted to escape."

The narrative of Col. Benjamin Tallmadge takes up the story of Andre's misfortunes from the time he was captured at Tarrytown until he was executed at Tappan. As Col. Tallmadge was in constant communication with him from his arrest to his death, and strongly attracted toward him, his recital gives the reader a circumstantial and highly interesting view. It is in these words,—

"After this I took my station again upon the line in the County of Westchester. After marching and counter-marching, skirmishing with the enemy, catching cow-boys, etc., etc, late in the month of September, viz.: on the evening of the twenty third, I returned from below to the regiment, then near North Castle. Soon after I had halted and disposed of my detachment, I was informed that a prisoner had been

brought in that day, by the name of John Anderson. On inquiry, I found that three men by the names of John Paulding, David Williams, and Isaac Van Wert, who had passed below our ordinary military patrols, on the road from Tarrytown to Kingsbridge, had fallen in with this John Anderson, on his way to New York. They had taken him aside for examination, and having discovered sundry papers upon him, which he had concealed in his boots, they had determined to detain him as a prisoner, notwithstanding Anderson's offers of pecuniary satisfaction, if they would permit him to proceed on his course. They had determined to bring him up to the headquarters of our regiment, then on the advanced post of our army and near North Castle. This they had effected on the forenoon of the twenty-third day of September, 1780, by delivering said Anderson to Lient. Col. John Jameson, of the Second Regiment Light Dragoons, then the commanding officer of said post. Col. Sheldon being at Old Salem, under arrest.

"His Excellency General Washington had made an appointment to meet the Count Rochambeau (who commanded the French army then at Newport, R. I.) at Hartford, in Connecticut, about the eighteenth or twentieth of September; and was on his return to the army at the time of Anderson's capture.

"When I reached Lieutenant-Colonel Jameson's quarters, late in the evening of the twenty-third, and learned the circumstances of the capture of the prisoner, I was very much surprised to find that he had been sent by Lieutenant Colonel Jameson to Arnold's Head-quarters at West Point, accompanied by a letter of information respecting his capture. At the same time he dispatched an express with the papers found on John Anderson, to meet General Washington, then on his way to West Point.

"I did not fail to state the glaring inconsistency of this conduct to Lieutenant-Colonel Jameson, in a private and most friendly manner. He appeared greatly agitated when I suggested to him a measure which I wished to adopt, offering to take the whole responsibility upon myself, and which he deemed too perilous to permit. I will not further disclose. I finally obtained his reluctant consent to have the prisoner brought back to our Head-quarters. When the order was about to be despatched to the officer to bring the prisoner back, strange as it may seem, Lieutenant-Colonel Jameson would persist in his purpose in letting his letter go on to General Arnold. The letter did go on, and the prisoner returned before the next morning.

"As soon as I saw Anderson, and especially after I saw him walk (as he did almost constantly) across the floor, I became impressed with the belief that he had been bred to arms. I communicated my suspicion to Lieutenant-Colonel Jameson, and requested him to notice his gait, especially when he turned on his heel to retrace his course across the room.

"It was deemed best to remove the prisoner to Salem; and I was to escort him. I was constantly in the room with him, and he soon became conversable and extremely interesting. It was very manifest that his agitation and anxiety were great. After dinner, on the twenty-fourth, perhaps by three o'clock P. M., he asked to be favored with a pen, and ink, and paper, which I readily granted, and he wrote the letter to General Washington, dated 'Salem, 24th September, 1780', which is recorded in most of the histories of this eventful period. In this letter he disclosed his true character to be 'Major John Andre, Adjutant General to the British Army.'

"When I received and read the letter (for he handed it to me as soon as he had written it) my agitation was extreme, and my emotions wholly indescribable. If the letter of information had not gone to Gen. Arnold, I should not have hesitated for a moment in my purpose, but I knew it must reach him before I could probably get to West Point.

"The express, sent with the papers found in Major Andre's boots, did not intercept General Washington on his return from Hartford, but passed him on the road and kept on to West Point. On the twenty-fifth while at breakfast with two of General Washington's aids, who had actually arrived at his quarters, General Arnold received the letter from Lieutenant-Colonel Jameson. Knowing that the Commander-in-chief would soon be there, he immediately rode down to his boat, and was rowed down the North River to the British sloop-of-war *Vulture*, which then lay in Tappan Bay, below King's Ferry. This was the same vessel that brought up Major Andre from New York.

"Not long after Arnold's abrupt and sudden departure from his quarters, at Robinson's house, on the east side of the Hudson, opposite to West Point, the express delivered the despatch to General Washington, who immediately repaired to Arnold's quarters. By this time the plot was all discovered, and the guilty traitor had escaped. I took on Major Andre, under a strong escort of cavalry, to West Point; and the next day, I proceeded down the Hudson to King's Ferry, and landed at Haverstraw, on the west side of the Hudson, where a large escort of

cavalry had been sent from the main army at Tappan, with which I escorted the prisoner to head-quarters.

"After we arrived at head-quarters, I reported myself to General Washington, who ordered a Court, consisting of fourteen general officers, to sit and hear the case of Major Andre. On the twenty-ninth of September, the President of the Court (General Greene) reported to the Commander-in-chief that it had come to the conclusion 'that Major Andre, Adjutant-General to the British army, ought to be considered as a spy from the enemy; and that, agreeably to the law and usage of nations, it is their opinion that he ought to suffer death.'

"On the thirtieth of September, the Commander-in-chief, in General Orders, approved the aforesaid opinion, and ordered that the execution should take place on the next day, at five o'clock P.M.

"On the first of October, 1780, a vast concourse of people assembled to witness the solemn and affecting scene, when the execution was postponed, in consequence of a flag having arrived from the enemy.

"General Greene was appointed to meet General Robertson at Dobbs' Ferry; but as no satisfactory proposals were received from General Robertson, General Greene returned to head-quarters, and reported to General Washington. The Commander-in-chief then ordered that the execution should take place on the second of October.

"Major Andre, having received his regimentals from New York, appeared in the complete uniform of a British officer; and, in truth, he was a most elegant and accomplished gentleman. After he was informed of his sentence, he showed no signs of perturbed emotions, but wrote a most touching and finished letter to General Washington, requesting that the mode of his death might be adapted to the feelings of a man of honor. The universal usage of nations having affixed to the crime of a spy, death by the gibbet, his request could not be granted. As I was with him most of the time from his capture and walked with him as he went to the place of execution, I never discovered any emotions of fear respecting his future destiny before I reached Tappan, nor of emotion when his sentence was made known to him. When he came within sight of the gibbet he appeared to be startled, and inquired with some emotion whether he was not to be shot. Being informed that the mode appointed for his death could not consistently be altered, he exclaimed, 'How hard is my fate!' but immediately added, 'It will be soon over.' I then shook hands with him under the gallows and retired.

"Major Andre was executed in his military uniform, in which, I think, he was laid in his coffin; but before he was interred, I feel satisfied that his servant took off his coat, and perhaps other outer garments.

"If it comported with the plan of these memoranda, and I could trust my feelings, I might enlarge greatly in anecdotes relating to this momentous event in our Revolutionary War, and especially those which relate to this most accomplished young man. Some things relating to the detention of Andre, after he had been sent on to General Arnold, are purposely omitted, and some confidential communications which took place, of a more private nature, serve rather to mark the ingenuous character of the man than require being noticed at this time. I will, however, remark that for the few days of intimate intercourse I had with him, which was from the time of his being brought back to our headquarters until the day of his execution, I became so deeply attached to Major Andre that I can remember no instance where my affections were so fully absorbed in any man. When I saw him swinging under the gibbet, it seemed for a time as if I could not support it. All the spectators seemed to be overwhelmed by the affecting spectacle and many were suffused in tears. There did not appear to be one hardened or indifferent spectator in all the multitude.

"The next day after the execution of Major Andre, on the third of October, 1780, I set out on my return to rejoin my detachment in the County of Westchester. There my duties became very arduous, the late events having excited much rage on the part of the enemy. *What with cow-boys, skimmers and refugees, we had as much as we could turn our hands to, to keep from being waylaid and fired upon from thickets and stony eminences, about Salem, North Castle and White Plains. Indeed, it was not an unusual thing to have our sentinels fired on from parties who would crawl up in the darkness of the night and then disappear.*"

Of equal interest, and in some respects, perhaps, even of greater, as having reference to the tragic scene that marked the close of Major Andre's career, is the narrative of Captain John Van Dyke, of Colonel Lamb's regiment, who was one of the four officers that walked with Andre, from his place of confinement at

Tappan to the top of the hill, on which he was hanged. Captain Van Dyke's statement is given in the following letter:

"JOHN PINTARD, Esq.,

"SIR: Agreeably to the request you made some time since I herewith communicate to you in writing, according to the best of my recollections, what I know and what I had seen and heard respecting Major Andre from the time he left the house where he was confined to the time of his execution.

"I was one of four officers that accompanied him to the fatal spot, and was so near to him that I could hear and see all that occurred during the time. A strong guard paraded before the dwelling-house where he was confined. He was attended in his room, night and day, by two American officers, and sentinels were placed around the house. There were six steps which led to the stoop of the house; on the right of these one American officer with myself were standing when Major Andre came out of the front door of the house, in regimentals, hooking his arms with the two American officers, his attendants, one on his right and one on his left.

"He ran down the steps of the stoop as quickly and as lively as though no execution was to take place; and immediately fell into the centre of the guards, the place assigned him.

"In this situation the commanding officer gave command: 'Forward March.' The whole marched off, the drums and fifes beating and playing lively tunes. Major Andre said, 'I am very much surprised to find your troops under so good discipline; and your music is excellent.'

"I had taken my station close on the left of Major Andre's left-hand officer; and continued in that station the whole march. The guard marched a short distance when it wheeled to the left, turning a corner of the road and marched a short distance, when they again wheeled to the left in order to pass through a fence. Having entered a field, they marched forward a short distance, wheeled to the right, and halted. The ground here was level; a little distance in front was a moderate ascending hill, on the top of which the gallows was erected. In the position where they halted Major Andre was, for the first time, in view of the gallows. Major Andre here said, 'Gentlemen, I am disappointed. I expected my request' (*which was to be shot*) 'would have been granted. No answer was given, and he continued with his arms locked with those of the two officers.

In a few minutes the guard marched off, ascended the hill, and halted. At this time Major Andre was about twenty feet from the gallows. He then bowed his head a little, viewed his feet, and so up until his head rose to its natural position, biting his under lip and shaking his head; at which time I discovered a small flush moving over his left cheek. I supposed at the time he looked at the gallows and viewed himself from the feet upwards, that he was reflecting upon the untimely end he had come to.

"In a few minutes the hangman led the wagon under the gallows; and the commanding officer then said, 'Major Andre, you will please to get on the wagon.' Major Andre advanced to the hinder part of the wagon, putting his hands upon it, made a motion as though intending to jump on; but faltering, he put his right knee on, and then raised himself up into the wagon, turned himself to the guard, placing his hands on his hips.

"The commanding officer who was on horseback, then said, 'Major Andre, if you have anything to say, you can speak, for you have but a short time to live.' Major Andre, standing with his hands on his hips, said, 'I have nothing more to say, Gentlemen, than this, you all bear me witness, that I meet my fate as a brave man.' The hangman then ascended into the wagon and stood at Major Andre's right hand; when in the act of opening the noose of the halter, Major Andre, with his right hand, made a moderate snatch; took the halter out of the hangman's hand, took off his hat, and put it down; then took off his white neckcloth and put it in his right-hand coat pocket; after which, with the forefinger of the right hand, he pushed down the collar of his shirt, and opening the knot of the halter, he put it over his head, and drew the knot close, on the right side of his neck. He then tied a white handkerchief over his eyes, with much apparent composure of mind. The hangman having secured the end of the halter to the top of the gallows, he descended from the wagon. The commanding officer directed the hangman to tie his arms slack behind him. Major Andre then taking a white handkerchief out of his right-hand coat pocket, gave it to the hangman, who tied his arms as directed—this was done that he should not raise his arms while hanging.

"The commanding officer then gave a signal, by the falling of his sword, for the hangman to drive off. The hangman then led the horses from under the gallows, and Major Andre swung off. He had not hung more than half a minute, neither had he as yet made any struggle, when the commanding officer ordered a soldier to bear down on his shoulders, that he might not be long in agony; and he immediately died. Neither did Major Andre struggle in the least, nor did he hang a quarter of the time usual in such cases. The commanding officer ordered two soldiers to bear him up, one on each side, with one arm under his shoulders and one under his thighs. The commanding officer then cut the halter, when the two soldiers bore him away from the gallows. He was not allowed to fall to the ground.

"Every attention and respect was paid to Major Andre that it was possible to pay to a man in his situation; neither did I discover anything in either officer or soldier but a deep sorrow for Major Andre, and a strong desire and wish that the traitor Arnold should have been executed in his stead. And although the talents of Major Andre as an officer, and his knowledge of the works at West Point would have been much against the American cause, had he been spared, still every officer and soldier in the army would have lifted both hands for the exchange of Andre for General Arnold. This exchange was offered by General Washington, but refused by General Clinton, the British Commander-in-chief. So the life of a traitor was saved; and Major Andre fell a sacrifice.

"When Major Andre was cut down and borne by the two soldiers to the coffin, a short distance off, I did not follow the corpse, but was repeatedly informed by different officers while I remained on the ground, that Major Andre's servant, who came from New York, was present, taking off his boots, coat and hat, for the purpose of conveying them to New York. This was the general report on the ground where he was executed; and was generally believed, then and afterwards.

"I presume it will not be amiss for me to state, that during the American Revolution, West Point was allowed to be a strong place, well fortified, and of great importance to the United States, and the key of communication between the Eastern and Southern States. Indeed, it was a common saying in New York, at the time, among the British officers and soldiers, that West Point was the young Gibraltar; being afraid to attempt taking it by force of arms, they made the attempt by bribery and corruption.

"JOHN VAN DYKE.

"Capt. Artillery, Amer. Rev.,

"Col. Lamb's Reg't, State of N. Y. Line.

"New York, Aug. 27th, 1821."

Dr. James Thacher, a surgeon in the army of the Revolution, was also a spectator of the execution, and in his *Military Journal*, p. 225, he gives the following account:

"October 1st.—I went this afternoon to witness the execution of Major Andre:—a large concourse of people had assembled, the gallows was erected, and the grave and coffin prepared to receive the remains of this celebrated but unfortunate officer; but a flag of truce arrived with a communication from Sir Henry Clinton, making another and further proposal for the release of Major Andre, in consequence of which the execution is postponed till to-morrow at twelve o'clock.

* * * * *

"October 2d.—Major Andre is no more among the living. I have just witnessed his exit. It was a tragical scene of the deepest interest. During his confinement and trial, he exhibited those proud and elevated sensibilities which designate greatness and dignity of mind. Not a murmur nor a sigh ever escaped him, and the civilities and attentions bestowed on him were politely acknowledged. Having left a mother and two sisters in England, he was heard to mention them in terms of the tenderest affection, and in his letter to Sir Henry Clinton, he recommended them to his particular attention.

"The principal guard officer, who was constantly in the room with the prisoner, relates that when the hour of his execution was announced to him, in the morning, he received it without emotion; and while all present were affected with silent gloom, he retained a firm countenance, with calmness and composure of mind. Observing his servant enter the room in tears, he exclaimed, 'Leave me till you can show yourself more manly.'

"His breakfast being sent to him from the table of General Washington, which had been done every day of his confinement, he partook of it as usual; and having shaved and dressed himself, he placed his hat on

the table and cheerfully said to the guard officers, 'I am ready at any moment, Gentlemen, to wait on you.' The fatal hour having arrived, a large detachment of troops was paraded, and an immense concourse of people assembled; almost all our General and Field officers, excepting His Excellency and his staff, were present on horseback; melancholy and gloom pervaded all ranks, and the scene was affectingly awful.

"I was so near, during the solemn march to the fatal spot, as to observe every movement, and participate in every emotion which the melancholy scene was calculated to produce.

"Major Andre walked from the stone house, in which he had been confined, between two of our subaltern officers, arm in arm; the eyes of the immense multitude were fixed on him, who, rising superior to the fear of death, appeared as if conscious of the dignified deportment which he displayed. He betrayed no want of fortitude, but retained a complacent smile on his countenance, and politely bowed to several gentlemen whom he knew, which was respectfully returned.

"It was his earnest desire to be shot, as being the mode of death most conformable to the feelings of a military man, and he had indulged the hope that his request would be granted. At the moment, therefore, when suddenly he came in view of the gallows, he involuntarily started backward, and made a pause. 'Why this emotion, Sir?' said an officer by his side. Instantly recovering his composure, he said, 'I am reconciled to my death, but I detest the mode.'

While waiting and standing near the gallows, I observed some degree of trepidation; placing his foot on a stone, and rolling it over, and choking in his throat, as if attempting to swallow. So soon, however, as he perceived that things were in readiness, he stepped quickly into the wagon; and at this moment he appeared to shrink, but instantly elevated his head with firmness, he said, 'It will be but a momentary pang,' and taking from his pocket two white handkerchiefs, the Provost Marshal with one, loosely pinioned his arms; and with the other, the victim, after taking off his hat and stock, bandaged his own eyes with perfect firmness, which melted the hearts and moistened the cheeks, not only of his servant, but of the throng of spectators. The rope being appended to the gallows, he slipped the noose over his head and adjusted it to his neck, without the assistance of the awkward executioner. Colonel Scammal now informed him that he had an opportunity to speak, if he desired it; he raised the handkerchief from his eyes, and said, 'I pray you to bear me witness that I meet my fate like a brave man.' The wagon being now removed from under him, he was suspended and instantly expired; it proved, indeed, 'but a momentary pang.' He was dressed in his royal regimentals and boots; and his remains, in the same dress, were placed in an ordinary coffin, and interred at the foot of the gallows; and the spot was consecrated by the tears of thousands.

"Thus died, in the bloom of life, the accomplished Major Andre, the pride of the royal army and the valued friend of Sir Henry Clinton. He was about twenty-nine years of age, in his person well proportioned, tall, genteel and graceful; his mien, respectable and dignified; his countenance, mild, expressive and prepossessing, indicative of an intelligent and amiable mind. His talents are said to have been of a superior caste; and being cultivated in early life, he had made very considerable proficiency in literary attainments. Colonel Hamilton, Aid de camp to General Washington, having had an interview with him, entertains an exalted opinion of his character. In the line of his profession, Major Andre was considered as a skillful, brave and enterprising officer; and he is reported to have been benevolent and humane to our people who have been prisoners in New York. Military glory was the main-spring of his actions, and the sole object of his pursuits; and he was advancing rapidly in the gratification of his ambitious views, till by a misguided zeal he became a devoted victim. He enjoyed the confidence and friendship of Sir Henry Clinton, being consulted in his counsels and admitted to the secrets of his cabinet. The heart of sensibility mourns when a life of so much worth is sacrificed on a gibbet."

* * * * *

General Washington having recommended the three captors to the favorable attention of Congress, in his letter dated, "Paramus, 7 October, 1780," that body took action on the 3d of November following, and, in a little more than a month after Andre's execution, they received from Congress the expression of its thanks and appreciation, in the ensuing preamble and resolution:

"IN CONGRESS, November 3, 1780.

"WHEREAS, Congress have received information that John Paulding, David Williams and Isaac van Wart, three young volunteer militia men of the State of New York, did, on the 23d day of September last, intercept Major John Andre, adjutant general of the British army, on his return from the American line in the character of a spy; and notwithstanding the large bribes offered them for his release, nobly disdaining to sacrifice their country for the sake of gold, secured and conveyed him to the commanding officer of the district, whereby the dangerous and traitorous conspiracy of Benedict Arnold was brought to light, the insidious designs of the enemy baffled, and the United States rescued from impending danger:

"Resolved, That Congress have a high sense of the virtuous and patriotic conduct of the said John Paulding, David Williams and Isaac van Wart. In testimony whereof, Ordered, that each of them receive annually out of the public treasury two hundred dollars in specie, or an equivalent in current money of these States, during life, and that the board of war procure for each of them a silver medal—one side of which shall be a shield with this inscription, 'Fidelity,' and on the other, the following motto, 'Vincit amor patriæ,' and forward them to the Commander-in-Chief, who is requested to present the same, with a copy of this resolution, and the thanks of Congress for their fidelity and the eminent service they have rendered their country."

The State also gave each a farm. The medals spoken of, as will be seen further on, were presented to the three patriots by Washington himself, while encamped at Verplanck's Point, and the three had the honor of dining with him on the same day.

There is now lying before the writer, as he traces these lines, the identical silver medal, attached to the identical ribbon and rosette, as, together, they were given by General Washington to Isaac Van Wart, over one hundred and five years ago. On the medal, all in italics (except the name "Andre," which is in Roman capitals), are inscribed, in addition to the legend designated in the resolution of Congress, the following words:

"Presented
by Congress
To

Isaac Van Wart
as one of the
Captors of
ANDRE."

The ribbon and rosette, of course, are faded, but they still retain a remnant of different colorings that look as if the original tints might have been red, white and blue.

The writer is indebted for his temporary use of the medal to his valued friend, Mr. Isaac F. Van Wart, of Greenburgh, a grandson of the captor, to whom, as bearing his grandfather's name of "Isaac," it descended by inheritance as a family heir-loom. He is also indebted to Mr. Van Wart, while compiling this history, for important assistance in other ways.

The accompanying engraving is a fac-simile of the medal:

There has been some difference of opinion as to whether Washington did not err on the side of rigor, and even of cruelty, in giving his consent to the execution of Major Andre; but the best judgment of the world, and even of Englishmen themselves, has come to recognize and justify the propriety and wisdom of

his action. The following is a collection of opinions from English sources, officers and writers of distinction, which will be read with interest in connection with the melancholy story:

I. REMARKS OF MR. WINTERBOTHAM, THE HISTORIAN.

[From *An Historical, Geographical and Philosophical View of the United States*, i. 556, 557.]

Major Andre was hanged at Tappan, in the Province of New York, on the 2d of October.

He met his fate with great firmness; but appeared somewhat hurt that he was not allowed a more military death, for which he had solicited. He was a gentleman of very amiable qualities, had a taste for literature and the fine arts, and possessed many accomplishments. His death, therefore, was regretted even by his enemies; and the severity of the determination concerning him was much exclaimed against in Great Britain. It was, HOWEVER, GENERALLY ACKNOWLEDGED BY IMPARTIAL PERSONS, THAT THERE WAS NOTHING IN THE EXECUTION OF THIS UNFORTUNATE GENTLEMAN BUT WHAT WAS PERFECTLY CONSONANT TO THE RULES OF WAR.



THE CAPTOR'S MEDAL.

II. REMARKS OF CHARLES LAMB.

[From his essay on "The Tombs in the Abbey,"—*Last Essays of Elia—Works*, Edit. Moxon. London: 1852, 447, 448.]

For forty years that I have known the Fabric, the only well-attested charge of violation adduced, has been a ridiculous dismemberment upon the effigy of that amiable Spy, Major Andre. And is it for this, the wanton mischief of some school-boy, fired perhaps with raw notions of Transatlantic Freedom, on the remote possibility of such a mischief occurring again, so easily to be prevented by stationing a constable within the walls, if the vergers are incompetent to the duty; is it upon such wretched pretences that the people of England are made to pay a new Peter's Pence, so long abrogated; or must content themselves with contemplating the ragged exterior of their Cathedral? The mischief was done about the time that you were a scholar there. Do you know anything about the unfortunate relic?

III. REMARKS OF COLONEL MAC KINNON, OF THE COLDSTREAM GUARDS.
[From *Origin and Services of the Coldstream Guards*. Edit. Loudon, 1833, ii. 9.]

During the autumn, the American General Arnold, who commanded a large force at West Point, on the North River, betrayed the confidence reposed in him by his party. The secret correspondence between Arnold and the British commander was carried on through the medium of Major Andre, an English officer, who was seized in disguise, when papers were found upon his person which clearly proved every particular of the transaction. He was tried by a Board of General officers, as a spy, and condemned to be hanged. The American General has been censured for directing this ignominious sentence to be carried into execution; but doubtless Major Andre was well aware, when he undertook the negotiation, of the fate that awaited him should he fall into the hands of the enemy. The laws of war award to spies the punishment of death. It would therefore be difficult to assign a reason why Major Andre should have been exempted from the fate to which all others are doomed under

similar circumstances, although the amiable qualities of the man rendered the individual case a subject of peculiar commiseration. The members of the court are said to have wept when they passed the sentence.

IV. REMARKS OF EARL MOIRA (LORD RAWDON).

[From his Letter to Major-general Henry Lee, dated "At sea, 24th June, 1813"—*Lee's Memoirs of the War in the Southern Department of the United States*. Ed. Washington, 1827, page 465.]

Such, Sir, are the real features of the case,¹ which you hold forth in unfavourable contrast with the tenderness of sentiment displayed in the proceedings against Major Andre!

It is not my wish to enter into a discussion of the latter case: and it would be most unfair to doubt the disposition of General Washington, or the irresistible pressure which rendered them abortive. Yet thus far I must remark. Had there been so much solicitude to save the unfortunate officer as you represent, this ostensible plea might have been advanced for him: That his entering in disguise within your fortress was by the direction and the invitation of your officer commanding there.

V. EXTRACT OF A LETTER FROM SIR SAMUEL ROMILLY TO REV. JOHN ROGET.

[From *Memoirs of Sir Samuel Romilly*, i. 140.]

The Congress, to justify their Generals in the severity exercised over Major Andre, who, as he was returning from concerting measures with Arnold, was taken and hanged, have published a very long account of that affair, with all the letters that passed between the Generals upon the occasion. Major Andre's case was laid before a Board consisting of fourteen field officers, and it was their unanimous opinion that he ought to suffer death; but they gave no other reasons for their sentence, than that it was conformable to the rules of war. The arguments used by Clinton and Arnold, in their letters to Washington, to prove that Andre could not be considered as a spy, are, First, that he had with him when he was taken, a protection of Arnold's, who was at that time acting under a commission of the Congress, and therefore competent to give protections. Certainly he was, to all strangers to his negotiation with Clinton, but not to Andre, who knew him to be at that time a traitor to the Congress; nay, more, whose protection was granted for no other purpose but to promote and give effect to his treachery. In the Second place, they say that, at the time he was taken, he was upon neutral ground; but, then, they do not deny that he had been within the American lines in disguise. The letters written by Andre himself, show a firm, cool intrepidity, worthy a more glorious end. Writing to General Clinton, he requests that his mother and sister may have the sale of his commission: as for himself, he says, he is "perfectly tranquil in mind, "and prepared for any fate to which an honest zeal for the King's service "may have devoted" him. There is another short note which he wrote to Washington, the day before his execution; it concludes with these words: "Let me hope, Sir, if aught in my character impresses you with "esteem towards me, if aught in my misfortunes marks me as the victim "of policy and not of resentment, I shall experience the operation of "these feelings in your breast by being informed that I am not to die "on a gibbet." "But," say the Congress, "the practice and usage of "war were against his request, and made the indulgence he solicited, "inadmissible." The fate of this unfortunate young man, and the manly style of his letters, have raised more compassion here than the loss of thousands in battle, and have excited a warmer indignation against the Americans than any former act of the Congress. When the passions of men are so deeply affected, you will not expect them to keep within the bounds of reason. Panegyrics on the gallant Andre are unbounded; they call him the English Mutius, and talk of erecting monuments to his memory; but his situation was by no means such as to admit of these exaggerated praises.

VI. EXTRACT FROM A LETTER FROM MISS ANNA SEWARD TO MR. SIMMONS.

[From the *Letters of Miss Anna Seward*, vi. 3-6.]

Litchfield, Jan. 20, 1802.

DEAR SIR: I am ashamed of not having sooner acknowledged your obliging attention in sending me a paper from the American press, which states a circumstance so remarkable. I do not, however, exactly perceive what poetic use could be made of it, or the coincidence of the fall of that tree with the tidings of the traitor's death, whose treachery to his country brought the amiable and gallant Major Andre into that dire snare, which drew upon his head the doom of a disgraceful and un-

¹The Earl was defending himself, in this letter, from the strictures of General Harry Lee, concerning the execution of Colonel Hayne of South Carolina.

soldierlike death. In the first paroxysm of anguish for the fate of my beloved friend, I wrote that *Monody*, under the belief that he was basely murdered rather than reluctantly sacrificed to the belligerent customs and laws. I have since understood the subject better. General Washington allowed his aide-de-camp to return to England after peace was established, and American independence acknowledged; and he commissioned him to see me, and request my attention to the papers he sent for my perusal; copies of his letters to Andre, and Andre's answers, in his own hand, were amongst them. Concern, esteem, and pity were avowed in those of the General, and warm entreaties that he would urge General Clinton to resign Arnold in exchange for himself, as the only means to avert that sacrifice, which the laws of war demanded. Mr. Andre's letters breathed a spirit of gratitude to General Washington for the interest he took in his preservation, but firmly declined the application to General Clinton. The other papers were minutes of the Court-martial, from which it appeared, that General Washington had labored to avert the sentence against Andre, and to soften the circumstances of disguised dress, and of those fatal drawings of the enemies' outworks and situation, which placed him in the character of a spy rather than that of a negotiator. The General's next fruitless endeavor was to have obtained the grant of poor Andre's petition, to die a less disgraceful death. His voice, though commander of the American army, counted but as one on the Court-martial. General Washington did me the honor to charge his aide-de-camp to assure me, that no circumstance of his life had given so much pain as the necessary sacrifice of Andre's life, and that next to that deplored event, the censure passed upon himself in a poem which he admired, and for which he loved the author; also to express his hope, that, whenever I reprinted the *Monody*, a note might be added, which should tend to acquit him of that imputed inexecutable and cruel severity which had doomed to ignominious death a gallant and amiable prisoner of war.²

With that just request I immediately complied, by a paper sewed to the copy of my poem, from which I meant the future edition should be printed, if I should live to collect my works and publish them in a miscellany. So many years has the design been deferred, through a dread of the fatigue and solicitude that must attend its execution, as to induce me to believe I shall never have resolution for the task.

From the hour I conversed with General Washington's officer, and perused these papers, I have regretted the injustice of which I had been guilty, without any consciousness that I was injurious.

Were I to take the fall of the tree, or I should rather say, its destruction, for the subject of another Ode, how must I speak of the fall of Andre, convinced, as I now am, that it was the inevitable consequence of those rash hazards to which he put his safety in the zeal of being useful to the English cause? Must I consider that the tree as supernaturally destroyed in token of the anger of Heaven against those who doomed the ever dear victim who was the first seized beneath its boughs? That would be to persist in sentiments which I have long known were erroneous, and unjust to the character of one of the wisest and best of men; the father and preserver of his country, her rescuer from oppression, the source of her independence and rising prosperity.

* * * * *

VII. REMARKS IN "THE LONDON DAILY NEWS."

[Quoted by Major Biddle, in the Notes to his paper on *The Case of Major Andre*.]

The social qualities and the letters of Andre, although they are always brought forward in his favor, *do not extenuate his crime*, as they show that, whatever his moral principles may have been, he had the education of an English gentleman. *If anything, his memory has been treated with too great leniency. If monuments are to be erected in Westminster Abbey to men of such lax morality, it is time for honesty to hide its head.*

VIII. REMARKS IN "THE CRITIC AND LITERARY JOURNAL." LONDON, AUGUST, 15, 1857.

[Quoted by Major Biddle, in his notes to his paper on *The Capture of Major Andre*.]

The Historical Society at Philadelphia, has lately been occupied by the consideration of a question of some interest to us, as Englishmen—namely, the execution of Major Andre as a spy during the great American War of Independence.

In the last volume of his *History of England*, Lord Mahon brought

²There is a grave doubt of the correctness of this story, *as few as General Washington is said to have participated in the transaction.*

against the memory of Washington a very grave charge, in connection with this melancholy event, terming it "the greatest blot" upon the career of Washington. * * * * * We are not, of course, surprised that these results are altogether favorable to the American hero, but we must in justice admit, that we think that the evidence produced by Major Biddle would be sufficient to bring an English jury to the same way of thinking. *There can be no doubt that Andre, "the amiable Spy," as Charles Lamb called him, was engaged, at the time of his capture, in a manner which subjected him to death upon the gallows, by the international rules of warfare, as practiced between all civilized nations. His enterprise, if successful, would have been fatal to the American cause; and he attempted to accomplish it by fraud and treachery. He had been in communication with the arch-traitor Arnold, and bore upon his disguised person the documents with which that Judas had supplied him, and which would have sealed the fate of the Americans. Finally, he was caught within the American lines, an enemy in disguise, spying into their weakness, and endeavoring to compass their destruction. These facts being proved, we do not see how any one can doubt for a moment, not only that he had JUSTLY incurred the penalty of being a spy, but that, under the circumstances, it was impossible for Washington to overlook the crime.* * *

* * * * * We have always considered that his life was sacrificed to save that of a knave. If every one had their due the traitor Arnold would have been given up, and then the Americans would have let Andre go free. As it was, however, Washington had no alternative. The prisoner was regularly tried before a proper tribunal, and received the fate which he had incurred. Lord Mahon owes to the memory of the great American patriot the reparation of an apology, or else he owes to his own fame as a historian, a refutation of the facts upon which the Americans rely.

IX. REMARKS OF JOHN HOWARD HINTON, THE HISTORIAN.

[From *History and Topography of the United States*, second edition, London, 1834, i. 396, note.]

The General officers who reported his case lamented the necessity they were under to advise that as a spy he should be hung; and the heart of General Washington was wrung with anguish when he signed his death warrant. *But the fatal wound that would have been inflicted on the country, had Arnold's treason succeeded, made the sacrifice necessary for the public safety.*

X. E. P. COKE, OF THE XLVTH REGT. FOOT.

[Quoted by Major Biddle, in *The Case of Major Andre*.]

I believe that the Americans, generally, sympathised in his fate; and that great efforts were made by Washington to capture Arnold, and thus save Andre. *Though it must be allowed that he suffered according to the rules of civilized warfare, yet, still, I am one of those who think, considering all the circumstances of the case, that Andre might have been well spared; and such an act of mercy would have added another ray to the lustre of Washington's name.*

XI. REMARKS OF "THE GENTLEMAN'S MAGAZINE."

[From a critic on Lord Mahon's *History of England*, in Vol. XLIII. New Series, 5-7. Edit. London, January, 1855.]

Andre's case was a most unfortunate one, but we cannot think that the Court of Inquiry was legally wrong in its adjudication, not that Washington's fame will suffer for having carried out the sentence. A spy is defined by writers on National Law as one who find means to obtain a knowledge of the enemy's affairs, and then gives intelligence thereof to his employers. He generally carries out his purpose through the treachery of some other person. Whether or not he is invited by that person to make his inquiries, or whether that person be a General or a civilian, matters not. A military man found within the enemy's lines in disguise, and with proofs upon his person that he has employed treachery in order to obtain information, may be treated—and this is the doctrine of those authorities to whom Lord Mahon alludes—as a spy. (pp. 6, 7.)

* * * * *

But it is thought that Washington should have interfered to give Andre the death of a soldier, and not that of a felon. Even that is far from clear. Andre was either a spy or he was a prisoner at war. Only in the former case could his life be taken. Any deviation from the usual mode of punishment inflicted upon a spy might have been thought to intimate a doubt as to the propriety of his sentence. They who are most shocked with the punishment as inflicted, would, in case Washington had altered the punishment, have inferred that he entertained doubts as to whether Andre was liable to be treated as a spy, and conse-

quently whether he ought to have been punished at all. *The moment Andre parted with his uniform he became, legally speaking, a spy, and amenable to death in that character. Upon this point jurists, we believe, are now agreed. Whether mercy should have been extended to him was a question of public policy. Washington no doubt considered the question solely with a view to what was best for the interests of America at the period of Arnold's defection, and we believe that future ages will confirm the propriety of his decision.*

To these opinions from British sources may be added, as representing the common idea of the American people, the summing up of the case as given by our illustrious poet and publicist, the late William Cullen Bryant, in his "History of the United States." In the fourth volume of that great work he gives his deliberate and judicial conviction in regard to Andre's character, conduct and execution in the following terms:

"Andre, after his capture, wrote at once to Washington, and announced his true name and condition. 'It is to vindicate my fame,' he said, 'that I speak, and not to solicit security.' Nevertheless, the letter was meant as a defence and a solicitation—an anticipation of a probable indictment and a possible verdict. As yet there had been no accusation; he was himself the first to put a construction upon the facts of the case. He had been betrayed, he said, 'into the vile condition of an enemy in disguise within your posts.' 'I was involuntarily an impostor.' Thus his standing before the court of public opinion, for that time, and for all time to come, was fixed by himself as an enemy in disguise—in a vile position—as an impostor. Was it true that this was his misfortune rather than a fault? that he was the victim of treachery, betrayed in spite of himself into a false position? The case is a remarkable instance of the value of the first word. . . .

"The court-martial decided that as a spy he deserved to suffer an ignominious death. The falsehood that he was betrayed against his will into that unhappy position had no weight with the court. Every step he had taken was taken, as we have shown, of his own free will. He left the *Vulture* with alacrity, against the advice of his friends; he made no effort to return to the ship that night, but went willingly to Smith's house with Arnold to conclude the arrangements for the nefarious business that had brought them together, and for the successful accomplishment of which he was to be made a Brigadier-General. That circumstances intervened which prevented his return to the ship the next day was a contingency of which he took the risk when he left her; he accepted a disguise; he hid upon his person the documents which would enable his commander to strike a terrible, if not a fatal blow at the enemy; all his acts were the acts of a spy; he assumed the responsibility they inevitably involved against the judgment of his friends, against the positive orders of his General, against even his own better sense of prudence when he was free to judge with coolness.

"Nevertheless, for a hundred years, that first statement of his—that he had been betrayed into a false position—has been accepted by multitudes of people as true, and in spite of its sophistry and falsehood has spread a deceptive light over the whole transaction. He was, indeed, the one victim of Arnold's abortive treachery to his country; but this was not treachery to him; his betrayal was self-betrayal. . . . That he was a gentleman, a man of culture and of many accomplishments, of an agreeable person and captivating manners, and that he talked much of his high sense of honor, should not, as it did not with his judges, cover up in the least the true character of the conduct that has made him famous rather than infamous. The sympathy that regrets the fate of one with many admirable qualities degenerates into mawkish sentimentality when it remembers only those qualities and forgets the crime which the possession of such qualities does not palliate, and ought to have prevented. His associates and superiors in the British army had no other plea to offer on his behalf than that he acted under a flag of truce. He acknowledged this was not true, and rested on the defence that he was treacherously dealt with. One plea was as false as the other. Had the great crime in which he was an accessory succeeded, the execrations which the world has always visited upon his principal would no doubt have fallen upon him in equal measure.

It is well-known that on January 13, 1817, the Hon. Benjamin Tallmadge, of Connecticut, a member of the United States House of Representatives, de-

livered before that body, a speech upon a bill to allow an additional pension to John Paulding, in which he made an ill-advised and unjust attack upon the integrity and patriotism of the three captors of Major Andre. Paulding was in needy circumstances, and an application had been made to Congress in his behalf. While the *résumé* of the debate in the ensuing extract from Niles' *Weekly Register*, published at the time, will afford a general idea of Colonel Tallmadge's charges, it will also show that his statements were received with incredulity and surprise, and were promptly rejected on the floor of the House. This is the *résumé*:

Monday, Jan. 13.—Mr. Chappel made a report unfavorable to the petition of John Paulding (one of the citizens who captured the British Adjutant-general Andre, during the late revolutionary war), who prays for an increase of the pension allowed to him by the government in consequence of that service.

A debate of no little interest arose on this question, the early part of which our reporter did not hear.

Mr. Wright moved to reverse the report of the committee, and to declare that the prayer of the petitioner ought to be granted.

The report was opposed by Messrs. Wright, Smith, of Md., Gold, Forsyth, Robertson and Sharp, on the ground of the importance of the services of this person and his companions, the magnitude of the virtue they displayed, and the justice of making such an addition to the pension allowed to them, as should keep pace with the depreciation of money since the amount of that pension was established. The report was supported by Messrs. Chappell, Jewitt, Tallmadge, and Pickering, on the injustice of legislating on a single case of pension for services, which were in fact, though important, but the common duty of every citizen, and in which no disability was incurred, whilst there were many survivors of the revolution, whom the favor of the government had not distinguished, and who are languishing in obscurity and want, to whom no relief had been or would be extended.

What gave interest principally to the debate, was the disclosure by Mr. Tallmadge of Connecticut (an officer at the time, and commanding the advance guard when major Andre was brought in), of his view of the merit of this transaction, with which history and the records of the country have made every man familiar. The value of the service he did not deny, but, on the authority of the declarations of Major Andre (made while in the custody of Col. Tallmadge), he gave it as his opinion that, if Major Andre could have given to these men the amount they demanded for his release, he never would have been hung for a spy, nor in captivity on that occasion. Mr. T.'s statement was minutely circumstantial, and given with expressions of his individual confidence in its correctness. Among other circumstances, he stated that when Major Andre's boots were taken off by them, it was to search for plunder, and not to detect treason. These persons indeed, he said, were of that class of people who passed between both armies, as often in one camp as the other, and whom, he said, if he had met with them, he should probably have as soon apprehended as Major Andre, as he had always made it a rule to do with these suspicious persons. The conclusion to be drawn from the whole of Mr. Tallmadge's statement, of which this is a brief abstract, was, that these persons had brought in Major Andre, only because they probably should get more for his apprehension than for his release.

This statement was received with surprise and incredulity, as to Major Andre's correctness, by gentlemen on the other side of this question. It was very extraordinary, it was said, that at a day so much nearer the transaction than at the present, there had existed no doubt on the subject, and Congress as a mark of public gratitude for their honorable conduct on this important occasion, settled on these persons pensions for life. The testimony was strongly stated by one of the gentlemen (Gen. Smith) to Major Andre's high character and honor, it was impossible, it was said, that the character and conduct of the men should have been as this day represented, yet so differently depicted. The statement of Major Andre, subject as it must have been to be discolored by misapprehensions of the character and motives of Americans, among whom patriotism pervades every rank in life, it was urged, ought to have no weight, indeed it ought not to have been mentioned in competition with facts on record and established by full investigation, during the

lifetime of General Washington, who certainly knew all the circumstances of the transaction.

Though this topic made a prominent figure in the debate, it is perhaps proper to say, that the question was decided on the ground taken in the report, and above stated as having been urged in debate in favor of it.

A motion was made by Mr. Forsyth (and lost) to postpone the report to give further time to examine the correctness of the extraordinary view of the subject, which had been presented by Mr. Tallmadge.

It was moved to amend the resolution, so as to direct the committee to report a bill for increasing the compensation of the other two of the captors of Major Andre, yet surviving, as well as of the petitioner, which motion was negatived.

The question on the reversing the report of the committee was decided in the negative, Ayes, 53; Nays, 81 or 90.

Mr. Little, having made an unsuccessful motion to postpone the further consideration of the report, in the hope that a full examination would be made of the question to-day as to the merits of these men, whom history described as pure and incorruptible patriots, and whom he fully believed to have been so—

The report was agreed to.

It is worthy of notice that Colonel Tallmadge based his charges "on the authority of the declarations of Major Andre, made while in the custody of Colonel Tallmadge." The best, if not the only, excuse for Colonel Tallmadge's singular attitude is, that having had the charge of Major Andre after his capture, and having been brought into close relations with him, he was not only touched with sympathy for his misfortunes, but was led to confide too implicitly in his representations, in spite of the formidable facts in Andre's own letters and life. He had listened to the story of Andre who naturally would have anything but love for the inflexible men who stopped him, and who refused every inducement to let him go, until his account of them as mere marauders in search of plunder made its impression upon Colonel Tallmadge's mind and permanently colored his opinions. So that Colonel Tallmadge's attack was at bottom only Major Andre's attack upon the integrity and patriotic devotion of his captors. It was, however, only a passing cloud, which the winds soon blew out of sight, leaving the heavens as clear as before.

In answer to this attack, Isaac Van Wart, one of the three captors, made his sworn statement on January 28, 1817, to which his neighbors added their own strong indorsement of his character and life. The sworn statement and the added testimony are as follows:

Isaac Van Wart, of the town of Mount Pleasant, in the county of Westchester, being duly sworn, doth depose and say, that he is one of the three persons who arrested Major Andre, during the American Revolutionary War, and conducted him to the American camp. That he, this Deponent together with David Williams and John Paulding, had secreted themselves at the side of the highway, for the purpose of detecting any persons coming from, or having unlawful intercourse with the enemy, being between the two armies, a service not uncommon in those times. That this Deponent and his companions were armed with muskets, and, upon seeing Major Andre approach the place where they were concealed, they arose and presented their muskets at him and required him to stop, which he did. He then asked them whether they belonged to his party? and then they asked him which was his party? to which he replied "The lower party;" upon which they, deeming a little stratagem, under such circumstances, not only justifiable, but necessary, gave him to understand that they were of his party; upon which he joyfully declared himself to be a British of

ficer, and told them that he had been out upon very particular business. Having ascertained thus much, this Deponent and his companions undeceived him as to their characters, declaring themselves Americans and that he must consider himself their prisoner. Upon this, with seeming unconcern, he said he had a pass from General Arnold, which he exhibited, and then insisted on their permitting him to proceed. But they told him that as he had confessed himself to be a British officer, they deemed it to be their duty to convey him to the American camp; and then took him into a wood, a short distance from the highway, in order to guard against being surprised by parties of the enemy, who were frequently reconnoitering in that neighborhood. That, when they had him in the wood, they proceeded to search him for the purpose of ascertaining who and what he was, and found inside of his stockings and boots, next to his bare feet, papers that satisfied them that he was a spy. Major Andre now showed them his gold watch, and remarked that it was evidence of his being a gentleman, and also promised to make them any reward they might name if they would but permit him to proceed, which they refused. He then told them that if they doubted the fulfillment of his promise, they might conceal him in some secret place and keep him there until they could send to New York and receive their reward. And this Deponent expressly declares, that every offer made by Major Andre to them was promptly and resolutely refused. And for himself he solemnly declares that he had not, and he does most sincerely believe that Paulding and Williams had not, any intention of plundering their prisoner; nor did they confer with each other, or even hesitate whether they should accept his promises, but on the contrary they were, in the opinion of this Deponent, governed, like himself, by a deep interest in the cause of the country and a strong sense of duty. And this Deponent further says, that he never visited the British camp, nor does he believe or suspect that either Paulding or Williams ever did, except that Paulding was once, before Andre's capture, and once afterwards, made a prisoner by the British, as this Deponent has been informed and believes. And this Deponent, for himself, expressly denies that he ever held any unlawful traffic or any intercourse whatever with the enemy; and, appealing solemnly to that Omniscient Being, at whose tribunal he must soon appear, he doth expressly declare that all accusations charging him therewith are utterly untrue.

ISAAC VAN WART.

Sworn before me, this

28th day of January, 1817.

JACOB RADCLIFFE, *Mayor*.

We, the subscribers, inhabitants of the county of Westchester, do certify that, during the Revolutionary War, we were well acquainted with Isaac Van Wart, David Williams and John Paulding, who arrested Major Andre; and that at no time during the Revolutionary War was any suspicion ever entertained by their neighbors or acquaintances that they or either of them held any undue intercourse with the enemy. On the contrary, they were universally esteemed, and taken to be ardent and faithful in the cause of the country. We further certify that the said Paulding and Williams are not now residents among us; but that Isaac Van Wart is a respectable freeholder of the town of Mount Pleasant; that we are well acquainted with him; and we do not hesitate to declare our belief that there is not an individual in the county of Westchester, acquainted with Isaac Van Wart, who would not hesitate to describe him as a man of sober, moral, industrious and religious life; as a man whose integrity is as unimpeachable as his veracity is undoubted. In these respects no man in the county of Westchester is his superior.

JONATHAN G. TOMPKINS, aged 81 years.

JACOB PURDY, aged 77 years.

JOHN ODELL, aged 60 years.

JOHN BOYCE, aged 72 years.

J. REQUA, aged 57 years.

WILLIAM PAULDING, aged 81 years.

JOHN REQUA, aged 54 years.

ARCHER READ, aged 64 years.

GEORGE COMB, aged 72 years.

GILBERT DEAN, aged 70 years.

JONATHAN ODELL, aged 87 years.

CORNELIUS VANTASSEL, aged 71 years.

THOMAS BOYCE, aged 71 years.

TUNIS LYNT, aged 71 years.

JACOBUS DYCKMAN, aged 68 years.

WILLIAM HAMMOND.

JOHN ROMER.

A little over three months later, on May 6, 1817, a similar statement was made and sworn to by John Paulding, another of the captors, of which the following is a copy:

John Paulding, of the County of Westchester, one of the persons who took Major Andre, being duly sworn, saith, that he was three times during the revolutionary war a prisoner, with the enemy:—the first time he was taken at the White Plains, when under the command of Captain Requa, and carried to New York, and confined in the Sugar House: the second time he was taken near Tarry Town, when under the command of Lieutenant Peacock, and confined in the North Dutch Church in New York: that both these times he escaped; and the last of them only four days before the capture of Andre: that the last time he was taken, he was wounded, and lay in the hospital in New York, and was discharged on the arrival of the news of peace there: that he and his companions, Van Wart and Williams, among other articles which they took from Major Andre, were his watch, horse, saddle and bridle, and which they retained as prize: that they delivered over Andre, with the papers found on him, to Colonel Jameson, who commanded on the lines: that shortly thereafter they were summoned to appear as witnesses at the headquarters of General Washington, at Tappan: that they were at Tappan some days, and examined as witnesses before the court martial on the trial of Smith, who brought Andre ashore from on board the sloop of war: that while there, Colonel William S. Smith redeemed the watch from them for thirty guineas; which, and the money received for the horse, saddle and bridle, they divided equally among themselves and four other persons, who belonged to their party, but when Andre was taken, were about half a mile off, keeping a lookout on a hill: that Andre had no gold or silver money with him, but only some continental bills, to the amount of about eighty dollars: that the medals given to him, and Van Wart, and Williams, by Congress, were presented to them by General Washington, when the army was encamped at Verplanck's Point, and that they on the occasion dined at his table: that Williams removed some years ago from Westchester County to the northern part of the State, but where, particularly, the deponent does not know. And the deponent, referring to the affidavit of Van Wart, taken on the 28th of January last, and which he has read, says that the same is in substance true.

JOHN PAULDING.

Sworn before me, this

6th day of May, 1817.

CHARLES G. VAN DYCK,

Master in Chancery.

It is an interesting fact, brought to light in this statement, that the medals given to Paulding, Williams and Van Wart, by Congress, "were presented to them by General Washington, when the army was encamped at Verplanck's Point, and that they on the occasion dined at his table."

In this connection it is interesting to read the personal reminiscence of Grant Thorburn, of New York, relating to his conversation with Isaac Van Wart at a funeral at Tarrytown, in 1800, and to his curious "desire to handle the skull" of Andre in 1821, after it had been exhumed, and was on board the British ship-of-war in the North River, awaiting the wind to sail for England.

EXTRACT OF A LETTER FROM GRANT THORBURN TO THE EDITOR OF THE KNICKERBOCKER MAGAZINE.

[From *The Knickerbocker*, November, 1840; Volume xvi. 459.]

"Mr. Editor:

"In your number for September, is a very interesting, beautiful, and correct history of the capture of Major Andre. Permit me to add my mite to that history.

"I think it was in the month of September, 1800, that I made one of a company that was following the corpse of a friend departed, to the house appointed for all living.

"It was at Tarrytown; and on our way to the grave, we paused on the spot where Andre was first hailed and stopped. My companion in

the line informed me of the fact, and added, 'Isaac Van Wart, one of 'his captives, is now in our company.'

"At the conclusion of the funeral service, I was introduced to Mr. Van Wart; and on our way back, I desired him to lead me to the spot among the trees and brush wood, at that time unaltered, where the search and important discovery were made. He very kindly complied; and while I pressed the ground where stood the feet of Andre, he related the story as your correspondent has done, with this small addition, viz.: That when Andre found he was discovered and a prisoner, he offered successively his gold watch and a purse of gold for his liberty. This being refused, he tendered an order on the British Commissary in New York, for any amount in goods and money which his captors might name; and for security of the payment,' he added, 'let one of you go to New York and receive the sum. I will remain here a hostage with the other two, until your comrade returns. If the contract is not fulfilled, I am still your prisoner.'

Here I interrupted Mr. Van Wart. I said, 'Sir, you were three *poor young men*; it was a great temptation. Did none of you hesitate?' 'Not one!' he answered. 'Each stood firm, as appeared in the 'sequel.' 'Now, Mr. Knickerbocker, in the days of Rome, an action like this would have been blazoned to posterity in letters of gold; it would have lived on the canvas of the painter and in the marble of the sculptor. But poor was the reward, and small the thanks which these brave and patriotic men received from their country. Four or five winters ago, if my memory serves me, an application was made to Congress from one of the surviving captors of Andre, for some sort of compensation. My impression is, that it was *refused*. Certain I am, it was warmly opposed; and especially by a member from our own State.

"They were branded as 'Cow-thieves,' etc. Perhaps they *were* cow-thieves; but, at that period, the most honorable men, both Whigs and Tories, living between the lines, were cow-thieves. The British soldiers and American Tories stole cows from the Whigs: the Whigs had no remedy but to steal them back again. It is very probable that the British and Tories had driven off the whole stock belonging to the widowed mothers of these *boys*; for if fame speaks true, neither of the three were of age; and according to the usages of war, they were justified in a recapture. It is evident they were not thieves for gain; 'else would they have taken the price which Andre offered for his ransom, which was more than would have sufficed to purchase the whole stock of cows, sheep, and oxen which belonged to Job, when he was in the land of Uz.

"In my humble opinion, Mr. Editor, (in which, as a native of Knickerbocker, I am sure you will join,) every New Yorker should be *proud* that he was born in the State which produced three such men; and the fact of their being boys, and poor boys, adds very much to the glory of the act. Had this been done by a Van Cortlandt, a Philips, a Van Rensselaer, or any three of the 'Lords of the Manor,' on the Hudson river, the act would have been engraven on the rocks with the point of a diamond. But it was done by three cow-herd-boys: and there is not a stone to mark the spot where this important event took place!

"In 1821, when the remains of Major Andre were placed on board the British sloop of war which had been sent to convey them to England, and while she lay in the North River awaiting a wind, I had an ardent desire to handle the skull that had once contained such mighty projects.

"I obtained an order from the British Consul, and repaired on board, taking with me a handsome myrtle plant, which I placed on the lid of the sarcophagus. This was carried to London in good condition; and many of the 'grandeos' obtained cuttings from it, which grew and multiplied under the name of 'Andre's Myrtle.' When I was in London, in 1833, I saw *several* of these myrtles.

"I remember that when I held Andre's skull in my hand, I observed that the root of a cedar tree had struck through the bone of the right side, and came out at the left, where it remained."

Andre's body was buried at Tappan, at the foot of the gallows on which he was hanged, and there it remained and mouldered back to dust until Friday, August 10, 1821, at eleven o'clock in the morning, when, at the depth of three feet from the surface, the spade of the grave-digger struck the coffin-lid that covered his bones. It was singular that as on Friday he had sought the covering of concealment and dark-

ness to complete the conspiracy with Arnold and to make good his escape, so now on Friday his poor remains should be brought forth again to the light. There was a rumor current in the neighborhood that the grave had been rifled many years before, but it was found to be incorrect. All that remained, however, were the bones of a perfect skeleton, a few locks of his hair, and the leather cord with which he had bound his queue. The hair and the cord were sent by the British consul to Andre's sisters, in England. It was a beautiful day, and many persons of both sexes were silent spectators of the solemn scene. Some of them probably had been present at his execution.

The bones were carefully laid in a mahogany sarcophagus, ornamented with gold and draped with black and crimson velvet, and having been conveyed to New York, the whole was put on board the British frigate "Phaeton," which bore them across the Atlantic to his native shores, where his remains found a resting-place and a monument in Westminster Abbey. On the 4th of July, 1880, the writer of these lines was a worshipper, together with a loved one now entered into the life immortal, at the afternoon service in Westminster Abbey. The auditorium was filled by a volunteer regiment of soldiers to whom Canon Frederick W. Farrar was going to preach. It was difficult to find entrance, but an official took us through a back-door into the Poet's Corner. There we listened to Canon Farrar's sermon, of which the subject was "The Lord Reigneth." It was a genuine Fourth of July oration, justifying the American Revolution and the Declaration of Independence through and through, and condemning in unsparing terms the blindness and folly of the British Government in driving the Americans to resistance. But out of all there came forth good in the existence of a new, colossal nation on these Western shores, as the exponent of free principles to the world. In this the preacher found the illustration of his text, "The Lord Reigneth." In going out, after the service, we walked directly under the monument of Major Andre, in the south aisle of the Abbey, and on discovering it we stopped and read this inscription: "Sacred to the memory of Major John Andre, who, raised by his merit, at an early period of life, to the rank of Adjutant-General of the British forces in America, and, employed in an important, but hazardous enterprise, fell a sacrifice to his zeal for his King and Country, on the 2d of October, 1780, aged twenty-nine, universally beloved and esteemed by the army in which he served, and lamented even by his foes. His gracious Sovereign, King George III., has caused this monument to be erected."

On the plinth are found also these words: "The remains of Major John Andre, were on the 10th of August, 1821, removed from Tappan by James Buchanan, Esq., his Majesty's consul at New York, under instructions from His Royal Highness the Duke of

¹ The desired monument has since been erected.

York, and with permission of the dean and chapter, finally deposited in a grave contiguous to this monument, on the 28th of November, 1821."

It was a striking illustration of the changes that are going on in the world, that residents of Tarrytown, where Andre was captured, should hear an English ecclesiastic in Westminster Abbey justifying the American Revolution to a body of English soldiers, and then, as they were passing out, should stop to read the inscription upon Andre's monument in the aisle.

MONUMENT AT TAPPAN.—On this side of the Atlantic a monument of gray granite, about seven feet high and about four feet in diameter, was erected, in 1880, by Mr. Cyrus W. Field, at the suggestion, it is said, of Dean Stanley, which he made while they were visiting the place together, to mark the spot where the execution occurred. There should be no objection to designating in a proper way any historic locality, and there probably would have been none here but for the unfortunate inscription prepared by Dean Stanley and graven upon the stone. As it falsified the admitted facts of history and impliedly censured the execution of Major Andre, the inscription gave great offense. It was in these words:

"Here died, October 2, 1780, Major John Andre, of the British Army, who entering the American lines on a secret mission to Benedict Arnold, for the surrender of West Point, was taken prisoner, tried and condemned as a spy. His death though according to the stern code of war, moved even his enemies to pity; and both armies mourned the fate of one so young and brave. In 1821 his remains were moved to Westminster Abbey. A hundred years after the execution this stone was placed above the spot where he lay, by a citizen of the United States against which he fought; not to perpetuate the record of strife, but in token of those better feelings which have since united two nations, one in race, in language, and one in religion, with the hope that this friendly union will never be broken."

Without stopping to inquire, Why say "Here died," instead of saying "Here was hanged," or "Here was executed?" although the word "execution" does occur below, it is noticeable that the inscription represents Andre as having gone on "a secret mission to Benedict Arnold, for the surrender of West Point." A "secret mission" may be a very honorable thing, and so may be a "surrender." But in this case the "mission" meant a dark conspiracy, and the proposed "surrender" one of the basest and guiltiest betrayals that could have been conceived. Had Andre's "mission" been no more than for a mere "surrender," as it is represented in the inscription, his execution by Washington could never have been justified, but must have left an indelible blot upon Washington's name, and upon the name of every one concerned in bringing it about. But if it had read

that he "entered the American lines in order to perfect a *secret conspiracy* with a *known traitor* for the *betrayal* of West Point," it would have stated the exact historic fact, and the stone would probably have remained uninjured to this day. But then it would not have answered the object for which the inscription was designed.

As it was, it led to repeated attempts either to deface the monument or to destroy it, a course which no law-abiding citizen can approve. On Wednesday night, February 22, 1882, Washington's birthday, the face of the monument and the inscription were badly hacked and mutilated, and an American flag was hung from a staff on the top of it, with some obnoxious verses pinned to its folds. As the verses themselves will give the best idea of the feeling that prompted the deed, they are here subjoined,—

"Too long hath stood the traitor's shaft,
A monument to shame,
Built up to praise a traitor's craft,
To sanctify ill-fame.
Are freedman bound to still forbear
And meekly still implore,
When conquered foes their altars rear
Within our very door?"

"This vulgar and insulting stone
Would honor for all time,
Not sneaking Andre's death alone,
But black Ben Arnold's crime.
And they who thus can glorify
The traitor and his deeds,
Themselves high treason would employ
If 'twould fulfill their needs.

"Americans! resolve, proclaim
That in our own dear land
Never, while the people reign,
Shall treason's statue stand!
And he who dares erect it next
On fair Columbia's breast,
With fulsome or with false pretext
Shall dangle from its crest."

But this was only the beginning. On Thursday, night, March 30, 1882, but little more than a month later, a terrific explosion startled the residents of Tappan and its neighborhood, and on rushing to the scene (for they at once divined the cause) they discovered that the foundation of the monument had been utterly shattered and ruined by the explosion of a cartridge of nitro-glycerine, though the shaft itself was only splintered in a few places. The simple-minded and cautious old gentleman who lived nearest to the monument, not over two hundred yards away, was convinced that he himself had a very narrow escape from absolute annihilation. On being asked if he was in the house and heard the explosion, his answer was: "Was I in the house? Well, I guess I was in the house. And did I hear the explosion? Well, I reckon I did. I got a shaking up, and a bad one, too. After I heard the hissing and the boom, and recovered from the shock, I thought of the monument, and I said to myself, 'I reckon they've fetched it this time,' and I guess I wasn't far out of the way either. I can't tell you what I thought when

I first heard the explosion. The shock just unnerved me. Why, it was so loud that it woke 'Lish Rockman, who owns a house away over there, and he thought it was an earthquake, and his house was coming down on his head. Ah," said the old gentleman with a sigh, "Tappan is a nice, healthy place, but outsiders are making it very unhealthy lately."

Mr. Field, with his accustomed liberality, had the monument re-set upon a massive foundation, and the work is said to have been completed only about the last of September or the first of October, 1885. About the last of October, 1885, he went over with his friend, Archdeacon Farrar, to see it. As there was a side of the monument without inscription, Archdeacon Farrar spoke of the propriety of placing some legend there. Mr. Field agreed that if Archdeacon Farrar would write one, he would have it put on as a companion piece to Dean Stanley's contribution.



OLD MONUMENT, ERECTED TO THE CAPTORS OF ANDRE, AT TARRYTOWN.

The Archdeacon accordingly wrote it in the following terms:

"Brave, gifted, young, he did and dared all at his country's bidding, and died for her sake a shameful death. Yet England buried him in Westminster Abbey. Washington mourned for his hard fate, and a generous son of America, which honors her own Nathan Hale, raises this monument on the spot where his gibbet stood and his body lay.

"FREDERICK W. FARRAR,

"Archdeacon of Westminster."

But the inscription was prepared too late. On Tuesday night, November 3, 1885, another earthquake explosion was heard in Tappan that rocked the buildings on their foundations and shook the panes of glass from the windows. This time it was dynamite, and the force of the explosion was terrific. The heavy granite base was blown into a hundred fragments, and blocks weighing several hundred pounds were carried to a distance of forty feet. The explosion did not move upward, but horizontally and outward, scattering rocks, iron railings and posts

as if they were pipe-stems. The bricks in the foundation were pulverized to dust and the immense granite shaft of the monument itself, weighing several tons, was lifted sheer from its foundation and thrown sidelong to the ground, with Dean Stanley's inscription buried in the mud. Whether the monument will be re-erected is not known.

The monument erected at Tarrytown, at once to mark the spot where Major Andre was captured and to honor the incorruptible patriotism of the three men who performed that vital service to the nation, has been attended with a happier fate than the one erected at his place of execution, at Tappan. The idea of having such a monument, and the desire to see it erected, can be traced back to a point earlier than the Presidency of Martin Van Buren, from 1837 to 1841. It had certainly been cherished by public-spirited citizens long before. But while Mr. Van Buren was President, he made a trip by land from New York City to Kinderhook, in order to visit his home in the latter place. On his journey thither he passed through Tarrytown, and made a short stop there, at the spot where Major Andre was captured. As the matter of erecting a monument, to mark it, had often been agitated among the people of the neighborhood, they thought that perhaps they might so far interest the President in the project as to secure through his influence an appropriation from Congress to meet the necessary expense. The expectation, however, was not realized. No one seems to have taken the matter in charge.

A decade and more passed away, and still nothing was done, until, in the winter of 1852 and 1853, a few young men—prominent among them were Mr. Amos R. Clark and the Hon. N. Holmes Odell, since then a Representative in the Forty-fourth Congress, from 1876 to 1878, from the Twelfth District, who both continue live in Tarrytown—determined to make an effort, at least, for the erection of the desired monument. It is but justice to state that to their energy and spirit the inauguration and final success of the enterprise were largely, if not chiefly, due. A meeting was held in the room over the store then kept by Messrs. Jacob and N. Holmes Odell, but now kept by the Messrs. Requa, on the southwest corner of Washington and Main Streets. The persons assembled organized themselves under the name of the "Monument Association to the Captors of Major Andre." Amos R. Clark was chosen president; N. Holmes Odell, vice-president; Moses H. Wilson, treasurer; Steuben P. Swartwout, secretary; and Dr. E. V. Rushmore, corresponding secretary.

They went to work, but the prospect was not encouraging. One after another, however, fell in with them, and helped the movement, among them the Rev. J. M. Ferris, (since Dr. Ferris, then pastor of the Second Reformed Dutch Church,) Allen Newman, (principal of the Tarrytown Institute), and Philip R. Paulding, who did good service in the cause. A public

meeting was called, to be held in the only hall of any size then in the village. It was known as Fowler's Hall, and was in a building that stood on the spot where now stands the Tarrytown National Bank. It was burned down some years ago in a fire that consumed all the buildings on the south side of Main Street, from Water Street nearly up to the present post-office. The meeting was accordingly held in Fowler's Hall, on Friday evening, May 6, 1853, and was presided over by Mr. Amos R. Clark as president of the association, assisted by the vice-president, Mr. N. Holmes Odell. The attendance was small, but those who were present were earnestly addressed by John Reynolds, Esq., a young lawyer of Sing-Sing, now residing in California, and by the Rev. J. M. Ferris, pastor of the Second Reformed Dutch Church, and by Dr. Fenelon Hasbrouck, a member of the same church, and a practicing physician in the village. Committees were appointed to carry out the plans of the organization, and to report. At the next meeting the committees did not appear, and no reports were made. The older and more influential citizens spoke rather disparagingly of the undertaking, and described it as a "boys' affair." But "the boys" had in them "the spirit of '76," and they resolved that the monument should rise. So they girded themselves for business and began. If the committees would not do the work, they would. And they did it. They drew up subscription papers, and presented them everywhere. Soon they saw the dawning of success.

General Henry Storms, a native of this county, then one of the inspectors of the State Prison at Sing Sing, a man of remarkable patriotism and public spirit, was approached, and he entered with characteristic heartiness into the movement. He stated that if the association would assume the cost of transporting the stone from Sing Sing, he would have them cut and prepared there by the workmen in the stone-yard of the prison. The offer was promptly accepted, and the plans for the monument, prepared by the architect, Mr. James W. Smith,—then owning and living on the property now owned by Mr. E. J. Blake, directly opposite the spot where the monument was to stand,—were passed over to General Storms. The spot where the capture was made, and of course the site of the monument, belonged to a colored man, named William Taylor, who had formerly been a slave in the South, but having obtained his freedom, he came to the North to live. He was a man of some property and not only intelligent, but also benevolent and public-spirited. He presented the ground for the monument to the association, and formally transferred it by deed. While the workmen at Sing Sing were preparing the base and the shaft, a foundation was put down and presented to the association by Mr. Seth Bird, in order to be ready for them when completed.

On July 4, 1853, the corner-stone was laid by Colonel James A. Hamilton, a son of Alexander Hamilton, of the Revolution, and the occasion was

celebrated by the largest procession ever seen in the village. Captain Jacob Storm, for so long a time one of the most conspicuous representatives of the old heroic type, was grand marshal, and rode at the head of the column with his peculiar grace. The Rev. J. M. Ferris, pastor of the Second Reformed Dutch Church, read the Declaration of Independence, and James T. Brady, Esq., an eminent advocate of New York City, delivered the oration. The whole was a great success. By this time the "boys' affair" had taken on manly proportions, and those who had previously held back or had been indifferent came forward and co-operated in the work. After this there was no further trouble.

The stone was cut, and made ready to be removed from the quarry, and the association contracted with Aaron Arnold—happily no relation to Benedict Arnold—to convey it to a vessel at Sing-Sing and thence bring it to the Tarrytown dock. It is singular that an Arnold should have aided in the erection of a monument to honor the men who defeated the treason of another Arnold, by capturing his confederate in crime. It shows that there are Arnolds and Arnolds, good as well as bad.

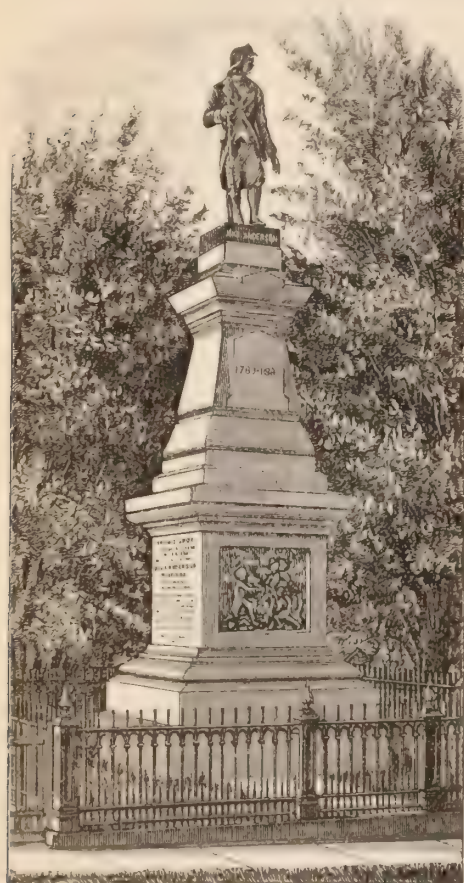
When the pieces of the monument reached Tarrytown, they were found to be so heavy as to render it very difficult to move them. There were no trucks large enough in the village, nor other means of transportation, and in this emergency they called in the farmers, from the country roundabout, with their oxen, to haul them from the vessel to the spot where the monument was to stand. The farmers responded willingly now, as they did in the Revolution, and having succeeded in getting the pieces out of the vessel,—the largest of them weighed about five tons,—and on a "stone boat" on the dock, they were hauled up to the ground by ten yoke of oxen in line.

The inscription on the monument was furnished by the Hon. James K. Paulding, a former Secretary of the Navy, under Van Buren's administration, from 1837 to 1841, and an intimate friend and associate of Washington Irving. The lettering was cut into the shaft after the stone had been placed.

The whole having been completed, the monument was dedicated with imposing ceremonies on Friday, October 7, 1853, and the multitude assembled on the occasion was far larger than that gathered at the laying of the corner-stone, on the preceding 4th of July. The weather was fine, and all the outward conditions auspicious. General Henry Storms was marshal of the day. The Hon. Horatio Seymour, Governor of the State of New York, was present with his staff, and opened the proceedings with an admirable address. He then introduced the Hon. Henry J. Raymond, editor of the *New York Times*, who delivered an address of great ability, which has taken a high place in the library of Andre literature.

In 1880, one hundred years after the capture, the monument was somewhat remodeled, and the side

bearing the inscription, that had previously fronted the road on the east, was turned towards the south. A bas-relief, by Theodore Baur, of Durand's celebrated picture, representing the scene of the capture, was provided for the pedestal on the side just turned from north to east toward the road, and a bronze statue of heroic size, intended to represent Paulding, was provided to surmount the top of the monument itself. The statue was the gift of Mr. John Anderson, a wealthy and patriotic citizen of Tarrytown. In the figure of Paulding, on the top, as explained by the artist, he holds close to his side, with his right



NEW MONUMENT, ERECTED TO THE CAPTORS OF ANDRE, AT TARRYTOWN.

hand, the barrel of his gun, with the butt resting on the ground. His left foot is well advanced, and he extends downward and outward his left hand, with both the forefinger and the little finger slightly curved and separated from the two others between them, in a position expressive of the tension of his nerves. He looks to the left of the road, the quarter from which Major Andre came toward them. In another moment he will have grasped his gun for action.

The well-built, active figure, is that of a young man, and the handsome, fearless face has much individuality. The pose is natural, the action well ex-

pressed, especially in the head and shoulders, and the modeling good. The dress is that of a civilian of the time, and the ruffled shirt and cuffs show that he was a youth of good position. The soft hat is turned up in front and worn slightly back on the head. On the figure's left side hangs the powder-horn. The statue is seen at its best in front, where the vigorously handled, life-like head is very telling.

It was a happy thought that suggested that the bronze statue should be moulded to represent Paulding, the acknowledged leader of the Patriots, and it has been well carried out by the artist. An original painting furnished the model, and so will his face and form be preserved in perpetual bronze."

The following are given as the dimensions of the monument, and it may be added that the inscription on the north side, quoted from Washington's letter to the President of Congress, dated "Paramus, 7th October, 1780," was cut into the stone in 1880, at the time when the monument was remodeled.

"The completed monument is of the following dimensions: Base 5 ft. 8, square; height, including moulding, 4 ft. 6. The plinth is 5 ft. square, and 4 ft. in height, crowned by a cornice 18 inches high with 9 inches projection. The second pedestal, which is new work, except that a portion of it is made from the old shaft, is 5 ft. square at the base, and height 8 ft. 8 inches. The total height of the stone-work is 18 ft. 8 inches. The statue, including base, is 8 ft., making the altitude of the monument complete 26 ft. 8 in. The old monument was about 20 feet high, but the apparent difference is greater, as the base of the new monument has been raised three feet to a level of the sidewalk. The base relief is 2 ft. 10 by 3 ft. 8, and is set into the east side of the plinth, the stone having been turned partly around so as to present the inscription on the old monument to the south."

INSCRIPTIONS ON THE MONUMENT.

[Inscription on the south side.]

On this Spot,
the 23d day of September, 1780, the Spy,
Major John Andre,

Adjutant General of the British Army, was captured by

John Paulding, David Williams and Isaac Van Wart
all natives of this County.

History has told the rest.

The People of Westchester County have erected this Monument, as well to commemorate a great event, as to testify their high estimation of that Integrity and Patriotism which, rejecting every temptation, rescued the United States from most imminent peril, by baffling the arts of a Spy, and the plots of a Traitor.

Dedicated October 7th, 1880.

[Inscription on the north side of the second pedestal.]

Their conduct merits our warmest esteem. They have prevented in all probability our suffering one of the severest strokes that could have been meditated against us. Washington.

[Inscription on the east, on base of statue.]

This statue,
the gift of John Anderson,
a citizen of Tarrytown,
was placed here Sept. 23d, 1880.
1780—1880.

The day chosen for unveiling the remodeled monument and presenting it to the public was Thursday, September 23, 1880, the one hundredth anniversary of the capture, which took place upon that spot. So immense a multitude of people gathered from all quarters, far and near, it is safe to say, had never

before assembled in Tarrytown, nor anywhere else in the county. It is estimated that fifty thousand persons were present, and some maintained it went as high as sixty thousand. It was a bright and beautiful day, and the sun shone forth from an almost cloudless sky. The morning was ushered in with the ringing of bells, and the firing of national salutes, in which the thunder of the guns from the United States war ship "Minnesota," lying off Tarrytown, in the Hudson River, responded to the thunder from the guns of Battery C, of the Third United States Artillery, firing from the hill-top, where they were encamped, above the village. Train after train and steamboat after steamboat came in with their freight of humanity, and it is said that the Hudson River Railroad alone furnished transportation for thirty thousand people. Nothing equal to the vast assembly and the imposing procession, in which were representatives from the United States army and navy, and from the military organizations of other States, was ever seen in this part of the State, outside of New York City. General James W. Husted was grand marshal, and under him the procession of military, firemen and citizens marched down Broadway, past the monument, saluting it as they passed, and thence on to the corner of Main Street, where they turned eastward up the ascent, and finally came to the grand pavilion, on the grounds of Mr. Edward Coles, since named Mount Andre, as being the spot where the public exercises took place. The Hon. Samuel J. Tilden, ex-Governor of the State, presided. After a brief introductory address by ex-Governor Tilden, an appropriate prayer was offered by the Rev. Alexander Van Wart, the only surviving son of Isaac Van Wart, the youngest of the captors. He was a specially honored guest of the occasion, and rode in the procession in a carriage assigned exclusively to himself. At the conclusion of the prayer, Orlando B. Potter, Esq., read a selection from the official papers relating to the capture and trial of Andre, after which ex-Governor Tilden introduced the orator of the day, the Hon. Chauncey M. Depew, who delivered an oration which was declared by those familiar with his best efforts, to have been one of the ablest, if not the very ablest, of his life. It has since been published, with other papers on the same subject, in the "Centennial Souvenir of the Monument Association of the Capture of Andre," prepared under the auspices of the association, by Nathaniel C. Husted, M.D., of Tarrytown, and printed in 1881.

ACTION AT TARRYTOWN.—In the "Diary of the American Revolution, from Newspapers and Original Documents, by Frank Moore," volume ii., page 459, an account is given of what is designated as an "Action at Tarrytown, New York," which took place on Sunday evening, July 15, 1781. The affair must have involved the greatest danger to the Americans concerned in it, but their effort was so courageous and successful as to obtain the special thanks and praise

of General Washington. The action is described in an article taken from the *New Jersey Gazette* of August 9, 1781, as follows:

"July 20.—On Sunday evening, the 15th instant, two sloops-of-war, two tenders and one galley, all British, came up Hudson River, with intention, as is supposed, to destroy the stores then moving from West Point to the army. There were at that time two sloops going down the river, laden with cannon and powder. As soon as they discovered the enemy, they stood about and put in for Tarrytown, where they run aground. The enemy having a fair wind and tide came up the river so fast that it was impossible to march infantry down in time to unload or protect the stores, as there were no troops in Tarrytown, except a sergeant's guard of French infantry. Colonel Sheldon (whose regiment lay at Dobbs Ferry) immediately marched his mounted dragoons to the place, where he ordered his men to dismount and assist to unload the stores, which was done with despatch. By this time the enemy having come to anchor off Tarrytown, began a heavy cannonade, under cover of which they sent two gunboats and four barges to destroy the vessels. Captain Hurlburt, of the second regiment of light dragoons, was stationed on board one of them with twelve men armed only with pistols and swords; he kept his men concealed till the enemy were alongside, when he gave them a fire, which they returned and killed one of his men. Captain Hurlburt finding himself surrounded, ordered his men to jump overboard and make for the shore, which they did, he following; the enemy immediately boarded and set fire to the vessels, but were obliged immediately to retire, owing to the severe fire that was kept up by the dragoons and French guard. Captain Hurlburt, Captain-Lieutenant Miles, Quartermaster Shaylor and others jumped into the river and made for the sloops, in order to extinguish the fire, which they did, and saved the vessels; while in the water, Captain Hurlburt received a musket-ball through the thigh, but is now in a fair way to do well. About daylight, General Howe arrived with a division of troops and some artillery; a battery was opened on the enemy, which obliged them to slip their cables and fall down the river about two miles, where they continued till Tuesday, about noon, when General Howe again opened a battery on them, and obliged them to make sail up the river. They continued near Teller's Point till near Thursday, during which they sent their gunboats on shore, and burnt the elegant house of Captain Robert, at Haverstraw. About noon, taking advantage of a fair wind and tide, they made sail and stood down the river. When coming near Dobbs Ferry (where the Americans had erected a battery of two eighteen-pounders, two French brass twelve, and seven half-inch howitzers) they (the Americans) commenced a heavy fire on them from the works, on both sides of the river; the British returned the fire, but did not the least damage. The largest of their ships sustained the greatest damage; many shots were fired through her, and one of our shells, bursting on board her, threw them in great confusion; eighteen or twenty of their men jumped overboard, three or four of them swam on shore, and the rest are supposed to be drowned."¹

An interesting account of this action, as well as of the French encampment in the neighborhood, and of the French co-operation generally with the Americans in Westchester County, is given in a historical work compiled from the journals and other writings of several French officers engaged in actual service on the spot, and published in Paris in 1872. It has seemed to the writer worth while to present, as illus-

¹ *New Jersey Gazette*, August 8th. General Washington, in the general orders of July 19th, notices this affair as follows:

"The commander-in chief is exceedingly pleased with the conduct of Major General Howe for marching with so much alacrity and rapidity to the defence of the stores at Tarrytown and repulsing the enemy from thence. He requests General Howe and all the officers and soldiers of the American and French Armies who were employed on the occasion to accept this public acknowledgment of their services.

"The gallant behavior and spirited exertions of Colonel Sheldon and Captain Hurlburt, of the 2nd regiment of dragoons; Captain-Lieutenant Miles, of the artillery, and Lieutenant Shaylor, of the 4th Connecticut regiment, previous to the arrival of the troops, in extinguishing the flames of the vessels which had been set on fire by the enemy, and preserving the whole of the ordnance and stores from destruction, entitle them to the most distinguished notice and applause of their general."

trating the heartiness of the French allies, some of the facts as they were seen through the eyes of those gallant and generous friends of our struggling country. The title of the book is "Les Français en Amérique pendant la Guerre de l'Indépendance des États-Unis 1777-1783. Par Thomas Balch, Paris, A. Sauton, Editeur, Rue de Bac 41, 1872." A translation is here given. The quotation is found on pages 138 to 145. The French writer says,—

"The 5th of July [1781] General Washington, upon his return from reconnoitring toward New York, proceeded to visit the French troops encamped at Northcastle; he conferred with M. de Rochambeau, and dined with him and his staff. He returned that same evening.

"The 6th of July the French Army, abandoning Northcastle marched seventeen miles from thence, in order to unite with the American army encamped at Phillipsburg. The road was sufficiently good, but the heat was so excessive as to become very distressing, more than four hundred soldiers giving out from fatigue, but by means of frequent halts and much care, they arrived safely.

"Two men belonging to the Deux Ponts regiment deserted.

"The right of the allied armies formed by the Americans was posted upon a rugged height overlooking the Hudson, called in that part Tappanee. Between the two armies, at the bottom of a ravine, there flowed down a rivulet; finally two brigades of the French army formed the left of the line, supported by the legion of Lauzun, which was encamped at a distance of four miles, at White Plains. All the approaches were guarded by pickets.

"On the 8th General Washington reviewed both armies. The American army, which he inspected first, was composed of four thousand five hundred men, at the utmost, among whom were some very young men and many negroes. They had no uniforms, and appeared poorly equipped. In this respect they contrasted greatly with the French army, with which General Washington seemed well pleased. The Rhode Island regiment alone appeared to the French officers to be well dressed.

"The American General wished to visit the tent that Dumas, Charles de Lameth and the two Berthiers had established near the headquarters of M. de Beville, in an exceedingly pleasant position among some rocks, and under several magnificent tulip trees. They had also constructed a pretty garden around their temporary habitation. Washington found upon the table of the young officers plans of Trenton, West Point and other principal actions of the war, in which Washington had distinguished himself.

"Upon the evening of the 10th of July, according to the orders of M. de Villebrune, the *Romulus* and three frigates set sail from Newport, and advanced in the sound as far as Huntington Bay. The guard-ship, which they estimated at forty-four guns, retired at their approach, and the other small vessels took refuge in the bay. The pilots, little accustomed to their business here, dared not enter by night, which obliged M. d'Angely, commander of the two hundred and fifty men on board, to delay until the following day the attack he intended to make upon Lloyd's Fort, at the head of Oyster Bay. But during the night the English had been able to make such dispositions as to render the attempt impracticable. The French landed, but the fort was garrisoned more strongly than they expected, and finding four hundred men there, M. d'Angely was compelled to retire, after a cannonade and a sharp fire of musketry, which wounded four men. He immediately re-embarked, and returned to Newport.

"The 11th General Washington visited the legion of Lauzun, encamped at Chatterton Hill, two miles to the left. The Americans were well pleased with its equipments.

"The 12th M. de Rochambeau, accompanied by an aide-de-camp,¹ desired to see the fortifications which the Americans had constructed at Dobbs Ferry, to defend the passage of the North River. He found a redoubt, and two batteries, in a very good position, under the direction of M. du Portail; then in going back, he surveyed the posts of both armies.

"The 14th, M. de Rochambeau, at the close of a dinner at the house of General Lincoln, at which General Washington, M. M. de Vioménil, de Chastelleux, de Lauzun and Cromot du Bourg were present, gave the

order to his troops to place themselves upon the march. The 1st brigade (Bourdonnais and Deux-Ponts) the heavy artillery and the legion of Lauzun prepared to depart. The weather was very unfavorable. The beating of the drum was to be the signal for the march; but at seven o'clock the order was countermanded, without any one being able to explain either the causes of this alarm or those of the countermand.

"The 15th, at nine o'clock in the evening, the firing of cannon was heard from the direction of Tarrytown, followed by a sharp fusillade. M. de marquis de Laval immediately caused the drums to be beaten, and the alarm-cannon to be twice discharged. In an instant the army was on foot, but M. de Rochambeau ordered the soldiers to return to camp.

"An hour afterward, Washington asked of him two hundred men, with six cannon and six howitzers, but at the moment in which this artillery should set out they received another countermand.

"The next morning at five o'clock there was a similar alarm, followed by a new demand for two twelve-pounders and two howitzers.

"This time G. de Deux Ponts set out in advance for Tarrytown, and Cromot du Bourg, who was in service near M. de Rochambeau, was charged with conducting the artillery. He performed this mission with ardor, for he went under fire for the first time. The cannon arrived at Tarrytown at eleven o'clock. The cause of all these alarms was two English frigates and three schooners, which had ascended the Hudson and endeavored to seize five sailing vessels, laden with flour, which they were transporting from the Jerseys to Tarrytown, for supplying the army. Another ship had already been taken during the night; it contained bread for four days, intended for the French. On account of this loss each soldier was reduced to four ounces of bread. They were given some rice, and besides some meat; they sustained these passing hardships with a gayety and firmness, of which their officers gave them an example.

"Upon the vessel seized by the English was some clothing for the Sheldon dragoons. The frigates had finally placed their crews in their long boats, in order to effect a landing, and to seize the remaining stores at Tarrytown, but a sergeant of Soissonais, who guarded that post with twelve men, kept up such a sharp and well-directed fire that the English continued to remain in their boats. A half hour after came the Americans, who lost a sergeant there and had an officer wounded. Happily in the meantime the four pieces of French artillery arrived; they placed them together in a battery and discharged one hundred shots, which compelled the frigates to retire. They remained in sight during the 17th and 18th. During this time M. de Rochambeau had commanded M. M. de Neuris and de Vertun, officers of artillery, to establish a small battery of two pieces of cannon and two howitzers at Dobbs Ferry, at the narrowest point of the river. The frigates had to pass before this post on the 19th, in order to return to Kings Bridge. They were received with energy. Two shells thrown on board, one of them set it on fire. A French prisoner who was on board, profited by it to escape, but fright soon drove seven of the sailors to throw themselves in the water. Some were drowned, three were taken prisoners and the others regained the frigate upon which the flames had been extinguished.

"During the night of the 17th, 18th M. de Northmann, an officer of the legion of Lauzun, in making a patrol with six hussars, was killed in an encounter with some of Delancy's dragoons. An alarm followed. The hussars responded quickly by some pistol shots, and the infantry advanced immediately to support them, when the dragoons disappeared under cover of the woods and of the night. A singular circumstance connected with this affair contributed to cause an alarm within the French camp. At the moment in which Mr. Northmann was killed, his horse went back alone at full speed to the camp of the legion of Lauzun. The hussar on duty, not knowing what had happened, called out three times 'Who goes there?' finally, receiving no answer, he discharged his gun, which stretched the unfortunate horse stiff in death.

"The 18th M. de Rochambeau employed Dumas, his aide-de-camp, to reconnoiter the ground and the approaches in front of the camp, toward New York: he ordered him to push his explorations as far as possible, even in sight of the first redoubt of the enemy. He gave him with this design, a detachment of lancers from the legion of Lauzun, which Lieutenant Killemaine commanded. Thanks to the courage and intelligence of this young officer, Dumas was enabled to perform his mission thoroughly. After having obliged some posts of Hessian chasseurs to retire, they arrived within musket range of the enemy's works, and at this point rejoined a detachment of American light infantry, which had explored, in like manner, the ground upon the right. The object of these explorations was to prepare for those which the generals-in-chief expected to make in a few days, with a large detachment in order to fix more especially the attention of General Clinton and to leave him in no doubt as to the intention of the allied generals.

¹Cromot du Bourg. It is from his journal that I have related the greater part of the events that occurred during the sojourn of the allied armies before New York. "Les Souvenirs de Dumas," "Mes Campagnes en Amérique de G. de Deux Ponts" and the Journal of Blanchard have above all served to control and complete these accounts.

"Upon the 21st, at 8 o'clock in the evening, they departed for this operation. The signal was given by drums, and they placed themselves upon the march in the order they had taken on the 14th. The first brigade, the grenadiers and the chassours, of the four regiments, with two twelve pounders and two four pounders marched in the centre under the command of M. de Chastelleux. The right commanded by General Heuth, was formed by a part of the division of General Lincoln. The legion of Lauzun protected the army upon the left. There were in all about five thousand men, with two field batteries. The head of the columns reached the ridge which commands Kings Bridge at 5 o'clock on the morning of the 22d. The roads were very bad, and the artillery had difficulty in following. Nevertheless, the two armies marched in perfect order, observing the strictest silence. An American regiment marched resolutely under a continuous fire to take a redoubt; one of its officers had his thigh shot away. During this time, M. de Rochambeau and General Washington went forward, in order to reconnoiter the forts. Then they crossed Harlem Creek and continued their explorations, all the while under fire from the enemy's posts and from the forts. Then recrossing the river, they returned by the route of the morning, and pushed forward along that island, as far as the height of New York. Some frigates stationed in the North River fired some shots toward them, doing, however, no harm. They then fell back upon Morrisania, where the fire of the enemy was yet more energetic. The Count de Damas had a horse killed under him. The generals finally re-entered their own lines, after having remained in the saddle twenty-four hours.

"During this time the aides-de-camp, each from their own side, made particular explorations. The legion of Lauzun forced the posts of the enemy to retire, and took quite a large number of prisoners.

"The 23d, at 5 o'clock in the morning, they re-mounted their horses to continue this work. They inspected first that part of Long Island which is separated from the main land by the Sound; afterwards, returning to Morrisania, they reviewed a part of the island of York that had not been thoroughly examined the night before; they then returned to their own troops.

"Upon this reconnoissance," says Rochambeau, "we tried the American method of causing horses to cross rivers by swimming, by collecting them in droves after the manner of wild horses. We had proceeded to an island, which was separated from the enemy posted on Long Island, by an arm of the sea, the width of which General Washington wished to have measured. While our engineers performed this geometrical operation, worn out by fatigue, we slept at the foot of a hedge, under fire from the cannon of the enemy's vessels, who wished to hinder the work. Awakening first, I called General Washington and remarked to him that we had forgotten the hour of the tide. We hastened to the causeway of the mill upon which we had crossed this little arm of the sea which separated us from the main land; it was covered with water. They brought us two little boats, in which we embarked, with the saddles and trappings of the horses; then they sent back two American dragoons, who drew by the bridle two horses, good swimmers. These were followed by all the rest, urged on by the lashes of some dragoons remaining on the other shore, and for whom we sent back the boats. This manoeuvre consumed less than an hour, but happily our embarrassment was unnoticed by the enemy.

"The army returned to the camp at Phillipsburg, on the 23d, at 11 o'clock in the morning,

"This reconnoissance was made with all the care imaginable. We had been exposed to six or seven hundred cannon shots, which cost the Americans two men. We had taken twenty or thirty prisoners from the English, and killed four or five men. Sixty horses had also been taken from them. I cannot repeat too often how greatly I have been surprised at the American army; it is inconceivable that troops almost naked, poorly paid and composed of old men, negroes and children, should march equally well on the road and under fire. I have shared this astonishment with M. de Rochambeau himself, who continued to speak of it to us on the return march. I hardly need to speak of the coolness of General Washington; it is known; but this great man is a thousand times greater and more noble at the head of his army than at any other time.

"From the 23d of July to the 14th of August, the army remained quietly in camp at Phillipsburg. The legion of Lauzun alone was in active and very difficult service.

"The celerity of the march of the French troops, and their discipline, had the best influence upon that of the Americans. The union of the allied armies produced all the effect that could be expected. It held General Clinton in New York, who had orders to embark with a corps of troops, in order to separate Washington from La Fayette and to compel the former to keep the left bank of the Hudson. It contributed to cause

Lord Cornwallis to retreat from the position he had taken in the interior of Virginia, in order to march to Chesapeake Bay to establish and fortify a permanent post there according to the same instructions. It was only a few days after the junction of the armies before Phillipsburg, that the French and American generals learned that Cornwallis had fallen back by the James River, upon Richmond, whither La Fayette had gone to besiege him."

Great changes have passed over the whole region within the last fifty or sixty years and they can probably be understood and appreciated in no way so fully as by setting in contrast the neighborhood as it now is, with what it was in the earlier years before it received its new impulse. With a view to do this, the writer has been kindly furnished with the subjoined statement prepared at his request by Mr. George E. Carpenter, surveyor and civil engineer, of the firm of Ward, Carpenter & Son. In the course of his professional pursuits Mr. Carpenter has become familiar with the history of all the land in this vicinity, and, as will be seen by his statement, beginning at Sunnyside Brook, the corporate limit of Tarrytown on the south, it moves northward along the Hudson River to the Andre Brook, the corporate limit on the north. Mr. Carpenter's statement is as follows:

TARRYTOWN AFTER THE REVOLUTION.

"1. JACOB VANTASSEL, 190 acres, conveyed Dec. 6, 1785. It may be remarked in passing that this is the date of a large number of the deeds herein cited, especially of the farms. The smaller parcels were conveyed during 1786, which last year witnessed the consummation of every sale with which we are now concerned, except that to the old Dutch Church in 1787. No. 1 is the land lying along the north side of the brook, now known as the Sunnyside brook. The Vantassel, or Van Texel house, is that rebuilt and occupied by the late Washington Irving.

"2. STEPHEN ACKER, 160 acres. With the preceding farm, with which it is now almost inextricably mixed, this extended back to land of Cornelius Vantassel. The two together comprised lands now or lately belonging to J. H. Banker, Roswell Skeel, H. R. Worthington, E. S. Jaffray, William Moller, Cronise, Bierstadt, Halstead, Mann, and others, taking in a large part of East Irvington, a very pretty and thriving settlement, which is fast outgrowing the old name of 'Dublin.'

"3. GLODE REQUA, 300 acres. Afterwards divided between two of his sons, William taking the south half, now owned intact by Jay Gould, and Glode taking the north half, of which the part west of Broadway now belongs to John T. Terry, and the part east by W. S. Gurnee and by Myer, the last named piece being the extreme east end. The old Requa house stood east of Broadway, near Jay Gould's spring, until within 8 or 10 years, and the house built after the division between the two sons, stands on Mr. Terry's land near another fine spring.

"4. DUTCH CHURCH, of Phillipse Manor, 100 acres, given to the old Church as glebe or farm land. It was occupied by George Hepworth. The old house is probably the one that stood 10 or 12 years ago east of Broadway about 25 rods north of Mr. Gurnee's upper gate. The part of this farm west of Broadway now forms the southern portion of the Deaf and Dumb Asylum Grounds, and the east part included the Robert Graves property and the land lying between the latter and Broadway. The farm was very long and narrow, its width being about 600 feet, and its length over a mile and a half. The tall tower or observatory seen from Broadway stands on this property near the south line, and not much more than half-way back to the rear line.

"5. JOHN VAN WART, 240 acres. Occupied under Phillipse by Geredit Van Wert, or Van Wart, who was the father of John. This farm covers nearly all of the north part of the Asylum Grounds, the south part of B. S. Clark's land, all of "Penny Bridge," the north part of W. S. Gurnee's land, the Embree, Snyder, Cromwell, and Hall premises, and that part of Jay Gould's extensive meadow and woodland that lies south of Sheldon Brook, back as far as the piece recently purchased by him of the Estate of Elisha Purdy, deceased. This meadow land, together with a similar piece lying north of the brook, once formed a vast swamp, almost impenetrable and fathomless. Mr. Gould, at great expense, has, within the last few years, thoroughly drained all

this tract, by excavating to a depth of 20 feet through the rock, and leading the waters through a capacious culvert of heavy masonry at that depth, thereby converting the unwholesome marsh into beautiful and fertile fields.

"The old Geredit Van Wart house was on the site of the Henry Sheldon cottage, now owned by the officials of the Deaf and Dumb Asylum. The brook here formed the southern boundary, while further east, as we have seen, it formed the northern. This stream was formerly of sufficient power to turn a mill wheel, and its old name was Mill Brook. Now its average flow is wholly insufficient, the diminution being appreciable even to the present generation, especially at the once beautiful falls, near its outlet into the Hudson, which are slowly but surely losing their charms.

"6. WILLIAM HUNT, 270 acres. Embraces the lots on both sides of Paulding and Van Wart Avenues, and the Robert Hoe property, west of Broadway, and, east of Broadway, the north half of B. S. Clark's place, and the strip of land between the White Plains Road and Sheldon's Brook, as far back as the William Jeffers, or McCormick farm, which strip now belongs to Jay Gould; also the lands north of the White Plains Road, now or lately belonging to Lewis Roberts, Dr. J. Barron, Frederick Sheldon, and all of Glenville, together with the southeast part of the late J. S. Mitchell property, and the five or six houses beyond Glenville. It comprised also about 40 acres of woodland, now belonging to the Estate of Jacob Storm, deceased, and running up behind the two parcels next to be described.

"The old farm house stood on the site of the present Robert Hoe mansion.

"7. WILLIAM AND JAMES VAN WERT, 230 acres. In 1850 it belonged to Stephen B. Tompkins. At that time it was laid out in large building plots, substantially as they now exist. The principal divisions are the Holmes (or Lewis) Dodge, Orr and Copcutt premises, west of Broadway, and on the east side, Meldrum (Beach), Cleveland, Pritchard, Bacon, Sewell, Schieffelin, Lewis (Crave), Crook, Redfield (Barron), Whitmore, Mildeberger, Albert, a large part of "Waldheim," Mr. Wm. H. Webb's place, and a swamp field, now a part of the Benedict tract.

"8. JAMES HAMDON and GEORGE COOMBS, 280 acres. Occupied under the manor by Thomas Wyde, who, it seems, also farmed the other Hammond farm, now the County lands adjoining on the east. Conveyed by Hammond and Coombs in 1790, to Roelof (or Ralph) Van Houter. Early in this century it was owned by an Englishman named Cumberford, who tried the experiment, on a large scale, of raising sheep, of course, without success. In 1826 it was owned by Barnardus Swartwout, who, in that year, conveyed it to the late General James Benedict. Formerly it extended as far south as Holmes's brook. The land lying between that brook and the present line of Benedict property was set off by Ralph Van Houter to the old Dutch church. Upon the separation of what is now known as the 2d Reformed church from the mother church, this property came into possession of the first-named, and was by it laid out into building lots, which are even to this day sometimes referred to as Middleton.

"Ralph Van Houter lived in the Swartwout house, on the northwest corner of Franklin and Washington Streets. The farm originally took in about half an acre on that side of the landing road, and that was then the only dwelling on the entire premises.

"9. TARRYTOWN LOTS.—The Benedict farm, like all those thus far described, extended back about 8000 feet from the River, or some distance beyond the ridge. We now come to some smaller divisions clustered around the Tarrytown Landing, which, up to the commencement of the 18th century, was in the vicinity of Requa's Dock, though much further inland. There were about twenty of these smaller parcels, of which twelve were regularly laid out and numbered, and known as the Tarrytown lots. These comprised the block between Franklin Street, the lower Road to the Landing, and Main Street, the Upper Road, which came together at Requa and Marling's Dock. The boundary on the east was the old Albany Post Road. What is now known as Washington Street ran north and south through the middle. The last-named street was laid out at the same time as the Lots, viz., in 1784.

The following will enable the reader to identify the location of these parcels.

"No. 1. George Coombs, Thomas Dean, corner Broadway and Main.

"No. 2. James Requa, Washburne place, formerly occupied by Rev. Thomas G. Smith.

"No. 3. Daniel Martlingh, S. E. corner of Main and Washington.

"No. 4. Mary Van Wert, S. W. corner Main and Washington.

"No. 5. Ann Couenhoven, Wendle Property, on Main Street.

"No. 6. William Hunt, the Leonard and White lots, on Main Street, and lots on White Street, which last was the old Landing Road.

"Nos. 7 to 12 fronted on Franklin Street and were much deeper than the Main Street tier. The rear line ran up the hill from Requa or Dock Street to the north end of John Street, and so on east to Broadway. Nos. 7, 8, 9 and 10 were sold to Glode Requa in 1786. They extended as far east as the rear line of the Lockwood, Requa and other lots on the east side of Washington Street.

"Nos. 11 and 12 extended thence east to Broadway. They went to David Storm, a deacon and at times an elder in the old Dutch church. Storm's purchase included also a much larger tract east of Broadway, there being in all as much as 25 acres. This is the John Archer Property. It extended up in a wedge shape into the Vantassel farm, next to be described, as far as Castle Avenue.

"Besides the twelve numbered lots referred to there were the following: Stephen Carpenter, where Thos. T. Boice lived at the time of his death; Peacock, next north, or the John De Revere lot; Isaac Martlingh, or the William De Revere lot; Daniel Martlingh, or the Ightman, Brundage and Requa lots; Abraham Martlingh or the Widow Child, or J. Q. Fowler property; Mordecai Hale, or the Meeker and Dammon lots, which used to adjoin the water, and Ann Couenhoven, wife of Edward Couenhoven, this tract being larger again, containing about 6 or 7 acres, known as the Martin Smith property. The Couenhoven (or Conover) house stood on the northwest corner of Broadway and Main, the present building there standing having been remodeled from it. There were also several pieces of salt-meadow along Andre brook, one piece at its mouth belonging to Ralph Van Houter, and another, further up, to William Hunt. West of Andre brook, which here ran south, was a piece that belonged to Couenhoven at the beginning of this century, and by him the Point Dock was built at about that time.

"10. JOHN VANTASSEL, 160 acres, lying east of the parcels included under No. 9, and north of the Hammond and Coombs Benedict farm. The latter was bought by Ralph Van Houter, Sr., and the Van Tassel farm adjoining by Ralph Van Houter, Jr. From the latter it was transferred to Austin, then to Jonathan Odell, who bought from the commissioners direct two large farms near Irvington; from Odell it went to Lamouroux, the father of Carney Lamouroux; from Lamouroux it came into possession of the Motts. From an early period it seems to have been in two divisions running east and west; the south half belonged to Jacob L. Mott, and the north half to Jacob Mott, his son, who still occupies the portion remaining unsold, living in the old Van Tassel house. This is said to be one of the oldest buildings remaining in the vicinity. It was built by Martlingh as early as 1712. During the Revolutionary war it was a noted tavern-stand, and it was here that a party of British refugees was surprised and captured by Major Hunt.

"11. MICHAEL MEKEEL, 330 acres, cut off from the river by Couenhoven, Hunt and Beekman. It extended back along the Van Tassel farm, both reaching as far as the John Hammond farm, this part of which lately belonged to Joseph Knapp. Its principal boundaries on the north were Andre Brook, which separated it from the Beekman farm, and the brook that runs eastward through a remarkable lateral extension of the Saw-Mill River. Narrow in front, this farm widened, out very considerably on the ridge, covering many fine villa residences, some of them being occupied or owned by Prof. Robert C. Flack, F. Brown, Wilson, W. Smith Brown, Grant and Kingsland. Andre Brook, which forms so conspicuous a boundary of this old farm, is also the dividing line between the towns of Greenburgh and Mount Pleasant, and between the villages of Tarrytown and its sister, North Tarrytown, so that we have now covered every foot of the Hudson River water-shed, within the corporate limits of Tarrytown, on the north and south, a section of territory that, for the value of the land, the beauty of the scenery, the wealth of the proprietors and the intelligence of the people, is surpassed by no other in the State or in the Union."

TARRYTOWN FROM 1835.—In the foregoing statement of facts, relating chiefly to the past, there is necessarily, for the purpose of identification, a passing glance at the present. But many of the places within the district referred to are worthy of mention with something more of detail.

Sunnyside, the farthest southern point within the corporate limits of Tarrytown, is of world-wide fame as the residence of Washington Irving. He, himself, describes the place in "Wolfert's Roost" as having first been the headquarters of a great chieftain, who



"GLENMARY."

RESIDENCE OF GEORGE LEWIS, JR.,

WASHINGTON, D. C.



"was not merely a great warrior, but a medicine-man, a prophet or a conjurer," and ruled the adjacent country "from Yonkers quite to Sleepy Hollow." The name of Sleepy Hollow, indeed, according to Mr. Irving, is owing to the wonderful effects of a medicine or charm by which this great wizard put the hostile sachem and warriors of Sing Sing to sleep among the rocks and recesses of the valley. He thus won an easy triumph, and he left his foes in a heavy slumber, which has not been broken until this day. Hence the name of Sleepy Hollow.

Later on this "seat of empire of the wizard sachem came into the possession of Wolfert Acker, one of the privy counsellors of Peter Stuyvesant." Afterwards it became "the keep or stronghold of Jacob Van Tassel, a valiant Dutchman of the old stock of Van Tassels, who abound in Westchester County." It was in his time, during the Revolutionary War, a rallying-place for the patriots "of Tarrytown, Petticoat Lane and Sleepy Hollow," who formed a brotherhood for mutual defense and safety. Jacob was a leader in all daring enterprises, and, as Mr. Irving says, was "ready to take a part in any scout or scrimmage by land or water." The portentous "bang" of his great goose gun carried terror to the heart of the marauding foe. Up to the time of the Revolution the place had formed a part of the old Manor of Philipsburgh, and was occupied by Jacob Van Tassel as a tenant under his feudal lord, Frederick Philipse, but when the latter went over to the King the land was forfeited to the State, and on December 6, 1785, the place was conveyed to Jacob in fee-simple by the Commissioners of Forfeitures. The following is a copy of the original deed, now the property of Benson Ferris, Esq., president of the Westchester County Savings-Bank:

THIS INDENTURE made the Sixth Day of December in the Tenth Year of the Independence of the State of New York, and in the year of our Lord One Thousand Seven Hundred and Eighty-Five, between *Isaac Stoutenburgh and Philip Van Cortlandt*, Esquires, Commissioners of Forfeitures for the Southern District of the said State, appointed in pursuance of an Act of the Legislature of the said State, entitled *An Act for the Speedy Sale of the confiscated Land forfeited Estates within this State, and for other purposes therein mentioned*, passed the Twelfth Day of May, One thousand Seven Hundred and Eighty-Four, of the one Part, and Jacob Van Tassel, of the County of West Chester, Farmer, of the other part, WITNESSETH, That the said *Isaac Stoutenburgh and Philip Van Cortlandt* Commissioners as aforesaid, by Virtue of the Power and authority to them in and by the said Act granted; and for and in consideration of the sum of Five Hundred Pounds, Lawful money of the said State, to them in hand paid by the said Jacob Van Tassel, the Receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged, have granted, bargained, sold, Enfeoffed and confirmed, and by these Presents DO Grant, Bargain, Sell, Enfeoff, and confirm unto the said Jacob Van Tassel and to his Heirs and Assigns, ALL that equal half part as the same is now in the possession of the said Jacob Vantassel, of That certain Farm of land situate, lying and being in the Manor of Philipsburgh and County of West Chester BOUNDED Northerly by Land now or late in the possession of Glode Requa, Easterly by land now or late in the possession of Cornelius Van Tassel, Southerly by Land now or late in the possession of Abraham Acker, and westerly by Hudson River, CONTAINING One hundred and eighty-five Acres More or less, FORFEITED to the people of the said State by the Attainder of Frederick Phillips, late of the said County, Esquire; And all and singular, the Estate, Right, Title and Interest, whether in Possession, Reversion, or Remainder of, in or to the said Premises, which, in Consequence of any Conviction or Attainder is become forfeited, or attached to, or vested in the People of the said State,

TO HAVE and to HOLD all and singular the said Premises hereby Granted, Bargained, Sold, Enfeoffed and Confirmed, with the Appurtenances, unto the said Jacob Van Tassel and to his Heirs and Assigns to the only proper Use, Benefit and Behoof of the said Jacob Van Tassel and his Heirs and Assigns forever. IN WITNESS WHEREOF the Parties to these Presents have hereunto interchangeably set their Hands and Seals, the Day and Year first above written.

Sealed and Delivered
in the Presence of us,

ISAAC STOUTENBURGH.

{ SEAL }

ISAAC STOUTENBURGH, JUNR. PH V CORTLANDT.

{ SEAL }

The place remained in Jacob Van Tassel's possession until March 31, 1802, when it was conveyed by deed, together with another parcel of land near by, to Oliver Ferris of Greenwich, Fairfield County, Connecticut, the whole containing one hundred and fifty acres of land, for the sum of five thousand dollars. Oliver Ferris was the father of the late Benson Ferris, at one time clerk of the Old Dutch Church of Sleepy Hollow, who assisted the dominie by reading the Scriptures and giving out the hymns in public worship, and who afterwards was for many years an honored elder in the Second Reformed Church of Tarrytown. Benson Ferris, Esq., president of the bank already referred to, is a son of Benson, and a grandson of Oliver Ferris. His mother, Maria Acker, was a lineal descendant of Wolfert Acker, the founder of Wolfert's Roost.

The first of the Acker family name concerning whom we have any definite knowledge was Abraham Acker (or, as he spelled the name, "Eckar"), who was living on the Phillipsburg Patent in 1742. His wife, Margaret, is supposed to have been a sister of John Harmense, who died about 1740, and in his will left his estate to his grandsons—John, Peter, Jacob and Harmse—who were sons of Harmse Montross. He also left small legacies to Rachel, wife of Jacob Bancker, and Margaret, wife of Abraham Eckar. Abraham Acker was the father of Abraham Acker (second), whose wife, Catharine, was sister of Jacob Van Tassel. He, in turn, had a son Abraham (third), who was born February 23, 1770, and died in 1825. He married Jemima Dutcher, who was born in 1766. Their children were Catharine, born 1790, died 1862, unmarried; James, born 1793, died 1869; Maria, born February 27, 1797, married Benson Ferris, and died March 14, 1881; Margaret, who married Sylvester Mandeville, died 1859; Letty, wife of Isaac Lent, born 1806, died 1849; and William D., born 1810, died, unmarried, 1838.

The old homestead of the Acker family was on the west side of the old Post road, at Irvington, and was the farm next south of the Van Tassel farm, of which "Sunnyside" is at the southwest corner. The old house was a noted tavern and stage-house after the Revolution. It stood a few feet south of the Lodge, at the entrance to the grounds of F. O. Mathieson, Esq., and many famous men found entertainment there. Among the papers of the Acker family is a deed, dated September 29, 1693, by which Cornelius

Claasen Cuiper (the ancestor of the Cooper family, of Rockland County) and his wife, Altie, sell to John Harmense one-sixteenth part of the Orangetown Patent, in what is now Rockland County. This, with his other property, was left to his grandsons—John, Jacob, Peter and Harmse Montross (as mentioned above); and John sold his share to his brother Peter January 10, 1742–43.

Captain Abraham Acker, who died in 1825, was a prominent man in the county and held many important positions. Commissions, granted to him by Gov-

Tarrytown and its neighborhood, was strongly attached to this locality along the Hudson, and as early as November, 1832, he wrote to his sister, Mrs. Paris: "I am more and more in the notion of having that little cottage below Oscar's¹ house, and wish you to tell him to endeavor to get it for me. I am willing to pay a little unreasonably for it, and should like to have it in time to make any alteration that may be advisable as early as possible in the spring."

The first mention of the purchase, as having actually been made, is in a letter to his brother, Peter



"SUNNYSIDE," THE HOME OF WASHINGTON IRVING.

ernor De Witt Clinton and Daniel D. Tompkins, are now in possession of Benson Ferris, his descendant.

Abraham Acker (second) also had two daughters—Margaret (wife of Benjamin Brower) and Catharine (wife of John Woolsey). Tombstone inscriptions in the Sleepy Hollow Cemetery state that Abraham Acker (second) died July 9, 1811, aged seventy-one years, ten months and nine days. His wife, Catharine, died April 11, 1806, aged seventy-three years, one month and twenty-one days.

Mr. Irving, having a great many associations with

Irving, then at Havre, France, under date of "New York, July 8, 1835," in which he says: "You have been told, no doubt, of a purchase I have made of ten acres,² lying at the foot of Oscar's farm, on the river-bank. It is a beautiful spot, capable of being

¹ Oscar Irving, third son of his brother William, who owned and occupied the adjoining house and lands on the east. It is the place now owned and occupied by Edward S. Jaffray, Esq.

² Mr. Irving most either have been mistaken as to the number of acres, or else have added to the original purchase, for the place is said at the present time to contain about fifteen acres.

made a little paradise. There is a small stone Dutch cottage on it, built about a century since, and inhabited by one of the Van Tassels. I have had an architect up there, and shall build upon the old mansion this summer. My idea is to make a little nookery somewhat in the Dutch style, quaint, but unpretending. It will be of stone. The cost will not be much." The purchase took place, in fact, as early as April, 1835, although the deed bears date on the 7th of June.

The changes to be made in the cottage, after the purchase, occupied a longer time, and cost more than Mr. Irving expected—a not uncommon experience. In June, 1836, he wrote to his nephew: "The cottage is slowly approaching to a finish, but will take a few weeks yet. For such a small edifice it has a prodigious swallow, and reminds one of those little fairy changelings called Killcrops, which eat and eat, and are never the fatter." The few weeks, however, ran on until they became months, and it was not until October, 1836, that he was able to move in and occupy the building. About a month later he received here a visit from John Jacob Astor, who landed at Tarrytown, and hired a vehicle which brought him down to the cottage door. He spent two days with Mr. Irving, and promised to repeat his visit as soon as there should be good sleighing. It was here, too, in the following spring—that is, of 1837,—that Prince Louis Napoleon, afterwards Napoleon III., Emperor of the French, made a visit to Mr. Irving, accompanied by a young French count, and escorted by Mr. Anthony Constant, of what was afterwards Hastings. Mr. Constant had previously announced to Mr. Irving his intention of bringing Louis Napoleon to breakfast. "Mr. Irving," says his nephew and biographer, "enjoyed the visit, and was much interested in the peculiar position of his somewhat quiet guest, though little anticipating the dazzling career that awaited him."

It was during this sojourn of Louis Napoleon at Mr. Constant's that he expressed a desire to visit the famous State Prison at Sing Sing, and Mr. Constant drove him up, with several others, in carriages to Sing Sing village.¹ The party passed, of course, through

¹ The following fuller account of Louis Napoleon's visit to Sing Sing prison was published in the *Christian Intelligencer*, in New York City, in April, 1885:

NAPOLÉON III. ONCE IN SING-SING PRISON.

(Authentic).

BY MRS. E. T. BARRETT.

No person in modern history experienced greater reverses in fortune, or passed through more checkered scenes than did Charles Louis Napoleon Bonaparte, third son of Louis Bonaparte, King of Holland, and his Queen Hortense, daughter of Josephine Beauharnais, the devoted wife of the first Emperor Napoleon.

Unlike the Queen of Scots, his misfortunes did not begin with his birth. On the contrary, that event, which took place in Paris, at the Palace of the Tuileries, April 20th, 1808, was celebrated with great rejoicings throughout France, as that of an heir born to the imperial throne. After the restoration of the Bourbons he went into exile with his mother and elder brother (who died in his early manhood), and devoted himself

Tarrytown, and it so happened that the late William A. Wildey was sitting on the stoop of his house, the old Wildey house, which stood where the house of the Rev. Edward C. Bull now stands, and was reading

to study. On the death of Napoleon II., Duke of Reichstadt, only son of the first emperor, which occurred July 22d, 1832, his ambitious hopes revived, and from that time forward his whole life, speculative and practical, was devoted to the realization of what now became his "fixed idea," that he would some day become the sovereign of France.

In 1836, believing that his time to strike had come, and relying upon the manifest attachment to his person and cause displayed by nearly all of the democratic party, but, more than all, trusting in the grandeur of those memories dear to the French nation that his name recalled, he, with a few associates, planned and made his famous attempt at a *coup d'état* at Strasbourg. It was a ludicrous failure and caused many people to doubt the judgment and talent of Louis Napoleon. He was taken prisoner under very humiliating circumstances and carried to Paris, but Louis Philippe, who was a coward, was afraid to bring a Bonaparte to trial because he could not rely upon the impartiality of a French jury; therefore the offender was shipped to America.

At that period (1836) the memory of the first emperor was comparatively fresh in the American mind, and the charm of his name was a passport sufficient to introduce the banished prince into the alluring circles of wealthy and cultured society. His varied accomplishments, with his superior attainments in literature and polished manners, made him a very agreeable guest, and to the few who formed his acquaintance, his presence was very welcome. In company with a dozen other gentlemen, he was one day invited to dine with Mr. Constant, whose residence was a few miles north of Yonkers. Being in the neighborhood of Sing Sing, Louis Napoleon expressed a wish to see the State Prison there. The hint was sufficient for his good-natured host; he proposed that the whole party should visit the great "Keep" on the Hudson. A ride of twelve miles along the American Rhine was delightful, and the party in gay spirits stepped from their carriages and entered the broad portal that forms the private entrance of the prison agent. That officer, whose name was H. P. Rowell, a very genial, urbane man, received them very courteously, and for their benefit cheerfully unfolded the ways and means that had been attended with the most successful and beneficial results in the government of the prison and the reform of its inmates. "By the way," he said, addressing Louis Napoleon, who was a very attentive listener, "we have a convict here, a Frenchman, that is an old soldier; he claims to have fought at Waterloo, and had been in several other battles under Napoleon, the first emperor." Louis Napoleon very naturally expressed a wish to see the veteran who had fought under his illustrious uncle.

The agent informed him that the convict was locked up in a dark cell for misconduct; that it was contrary to prison rule to take him out; but as the gentlemen were going to inspect the "Hall," he would open the door of the prisoner in question; his pretext, to show his visitors the appointments of the "dark cell."

This proposal satisfied all parties, and they followed Mr. Rowell down the *entree* stairs, across the key-room and narrow passage to the "Hall." He paused at the second cell on the right hand tier of the main galleries, unlocked and opened the door. Louis Napoleon stepped inside. The agent, with a merry twinkle in his eye, turned the key and locked him in; the opportunity was too good to be lost. The gentlemen were amused and brimming over with fun, when, after a momentary detention, the door was opened and the noble Frenchman joined them once more.

They all enjoyed the joke immensely, except the subject of it. His sallow countenance reddened perceptibly, but he suppressed every unpleasant emotion and joined in the laugh that was raised at his expense.

What did he think of the old soldier? Why, that he was a fraud, a liar and a vagabond; that he had never held a place in the ranks of the French army.

Mr. Rowell lived many years and filled many offices of public trust in Westchester County, but he never forgot this little episode at the prison. When Louis Napoleon, after many vicissitudes and failures, was finally placed upon the throne of France, the former, a genial old man, told the story with great *eclat*. He would surprise his friends with the almost incredible revelation that "he once had the Emperor of France locked up in a dark cell in the State Prison at Sing Sing."

SING SING, 1885.

a newspaper just as the carriage containing Louis Napoleon went by. The prince's attention was arrested by what seemed to him the remarkable spectacle, and he exclaimed, with evident surprise, in a tone so loud that Mr. Wildey distinctly heard him, "Why, there is a farmer reading a newspaper." However surprising this might have seemed in some parts of Europe, it was not viewed as at all surprising here. This incident was communicated to the writer by the late Hon. Theodore H. Benedict, who had it directly from Mr. Wildey himself.

The external appearance of the cottage at Sunnyside has been rendered familiar by the pictures of it so generally known, but the best description of it is that given by the owner himself. He describes it in "Wolfert's Roost" as "a little, old-fashioned stone mansion, all made up of gable-ends, and as full of angles and corners as an old cocked hat. It is said, in fact, to have been modeled after the cocked hat of Peter the Headstrong, as the Escorial was modeled after the gridiron of the blessed St. Lawrence. Though but of small dimensions, yet, like many small people, it is of mighty spirit, and values itself greatly on its antiquity, being one of the oldest edifices for its size in the whole country. It claims to be an ancient seat of empire, I may rather say an empire in itself, and like all empires, great and small, has had its grand historical epochs."

Over the south entrance to it is a tablet, wrought into the wall, upon which is the following inscription, prepared by Mr. Irving and placed there by his order:

GEO HARVEY
 anno 1756
 —————
 Verbetend door
 WILSON BLOOMING
 anno 1835
 —————
 Geo Harvey
 Boumeester

Translated it is,—

Erected
 in the year 1756
 Reconstructed by
 Washington Irving
 in the year 1835.
 Geo. Harvey,
 Architect.

¹ It will be noticed that in writing to his brother Peter, concerning the purchase, he says "the stone Dutch cottage was built about a century since." Afterwards he gave the date on the tablet as 1756. The

In regard to this tablet and his inscription, Mr. Irving wrote to his brother Ebenezer, in New York City, the following letter:

"TARRYTOWN, October 16, 1835.

"My dear Brother:

"The porch is carried up and the workmen are in want of the inscription stone, previous to removing the scaffold. I wish you would try to send it up by the Friday sloop or Saturday morning steamboat.

"The Dutch for architect is Boumeester. I presume it may be abbreviated Boum or engraved in smaller letters (Geo. Harvey, Boumeester), whichever will be the most convenient.

"Your affectionate brother,

"W. I."

There is still growing on the walls of the cottage, and near the tablet, the ivy propagated from a slip of ivy brought from Melrose, Scotland, by Mrs. Renwick, and planted with her own hand. Mrs. Renwick was the subject of Burns' song, "The Blue Eyed Lassie." She was the daughter of the Rev. Andrew Jeffrey, of Lochmaben, in Dumfriesshire, and had often met the Scottish poet at her father's house. She early removed to New York, where she spent the greater part of her life, and she lived to see the ivy she had planted at Sunnyside growing in rich luxuriance over its walls.

Mr. Irving was much disturbed in 1848 by the project of running a railroad directly by the side of his premises and near his house, on the eastern bank of the Hudson. It seemed an utter desecration of his quiet retreat, and he feared that the charm that had hitherto lingered about it would be forever destroyed. He hoped, for a while, that the project would fall through; but, when it was finally decided, he made up his mind to meet the inevitable, and to bear it with the best grace he could. Although the road did not actually cross his grounds, it was disagreeably near to his door. In due time it was completed and the trains began to run. For a while he bore the screeching and whistling with manful endurance; but after a severe fit of illness, and when he was just recovering, the frequent blasts of the locomotives as they passed were like the last straw that broke the camel's back. He could stand it no longer. Accordingly, he wrote a letter to his friend, Gouverneur Kemble, of Cold Spring (one of the directors of the road), which at this day, when everybody is so used to the screeching and screaming of locomotives as not to mind it, seems almost ludicrous for its vehement denunciations. He broke forth with a tremendous energy of utterance,

probability is that in the first case he wrote from a mere general impression, while in the second it was with better light obtained from a more careful investigation into a matter in which he now took a personal interest. The later statement would agree with "Brookhead's History," which represents permanent agricultural colonization to have been begun up the river as early as 1623. Not the same time the Walloons settled on Long Island. In 1626 the Dutch bought Manhattan of the Indians, though they had lived there for several years before. In 1639 the site of Yonkers was bought of the Indians. In 1650 Van Tienhoven describes Westchester as a fine region for agriculture. In 1641 the Dutch were all scattered about the country, and their cattle were running wild in the woods. This was De Vries' reason for not making war on the Wagonasque Indians from the fort in New York.

which, for him, was quite remarkable. This was his letter,—

"My dear Kemble :

"SUNNYSIDE, August 7, 1850.

"Excuse my not answering sooner your kind letter. I found me in a terrible state of shattered nerves, having been startled out of my first sleep at midnight, on Saturday night last, by the infernal alarm of your railroad steam trumpet. It left me in a deplorable state of nervous agitation for upward of an hour. I remained sleepless until daybreak and miserable all the following day. It seemed to me almost as if done on purpose, for the trains had ceased for several days to make their diabolical blasts opposite my house. They have not motested me in this way since, and have clearly shown, by the cautious and tempered management of their whistle, that these unearthly yells and howls and screams, indulged in for a mile on a stretch, and destructive to the quiet of whole neighborhoods, are carried to an unnecessary and unwarrantable excess. They form one of the greatest nuisances attending railroads, and I am surprised that, in the present state of mechanical art, some signal less coarse and brutal could not be devised.

"You will laugh at all this, but to have one's family disturbed all day, and startled from sleep at night, by such horrid sounds amounts to a constant calamity."

Orders, however, were given to the railroad officials, which put them on their good behavior, and Mr. Irving after that had no further reason to complain.

Here, in this cottage, Mr. Irving had his home for more than twenty-three years. Here he wrote his greatest work—the "Life of Washington"—which he left as his parting gift to his country and to the world. His blameless life and his long career of successful literary labor won for him not only the rewards of love and fame, but also brought him a substantial revenue, which placed him beyond all anxiety in regard to his temporal support. During his lifetime he realized from his writings the large sum of \$205,383.34, to say nothing of the revenue derived from them by his kindred and heirs subsequent to his decease (in 1859), which, down to September 30, 1863, amounted to \$34,237.03, the two sums added together thus making a grand total of \$239,620.37. Here, in this cottage, after a course of life so marked by purity and kindness of heart, and rendered so attractive by the gentle, Christian spirit that breathed through all his conduct, he suddenly fell asleep at half-past ten o'clock on Monday evening, November 28, 1859. His funeral took place from Christ Church, Tarrytown, on Thursday, December 1st. It was a beautiful day, and a large concourse of people, among whom were many of the most eminent in the land, came together to pay their tribute to his memory. His remains were laid to rest by the side of his beloved mother, in a plot in the Sleepy Hollow Cemetery, which he had some years before chosen for that purpose himself. His simple grave-stone, standing between that of his mother on the right, toward the west, and that of his brother Ebenezer, who died after him, on the left, toward the east, faces the south, looking down over the old Dutch Church-yard, and the old Dutch Church, itself, and bears this modest inscription,—

"Washington Irving,
Born
April 3, 1783,
Died
Nov. 28, 1859."

George D. Morgan, Esq., a neighbor of Mr. Irving's, who was present at the closing scene of his life, has furnished, at the request of the writer, some reminiscences of Mr. Irving which it will gratify every lover of his memory to read. He says,—

"Mr. Irving was a regular worshipper at Christ Church, Tarrytown, of which church the Rev. William Creighton, D.D., was rector, receiving only the thanks of his people for his services. Morning and afternoon, summer and winter, full services were held in the church, and sermons preached either by himself or his assistant. Mr. Irving rarely was absent from his pew at the morning service, and frequently in the afternoon I have walked with him the whole distance and back to attend the afternoon service. He was a devout and real believer. I had frequent conversations with him, and on two occasions very earnest talks. He accepted freely and gladly the great truths of the Bible, and guided his life by them. His gentle ways, his simplicity and kindness of manner, his courtesy to all, and his frequent mingling with the neighbors, who were made up of all sorts and conditions of men, women and children, made him very popular and much loved. He frequently attended children's parties, which were held at different houses in the afternoon of each week, for one winter. On one occasion, at the house of Mr. Henry Holdrege, after the little ones had danced themselves



THE IRVING FAMILY BURIAL PLOT IN THE OLD DUTCH CHURCH-YARD.

wear, Grace Wilson, then a sweet girl of but few summers, rushed up to him and said, 'Oh, Washington Irving, I am as tired as a dog's hind-leg!' which greatly amused Mr. Irving. The school-meeting at which he presided was the occasion of much funny comment and criticism. He was a prudent man, favoring economy and simplicity in living, and frequently spoke earnestly on this subject, an example to all in quiet, modest living and worthy doing. His consideration of the poor and their wants was a marked trait in his character.

"On the 29th November, 1859, at about 9 o'clock in the evening, I was suddenly called to Sunnyside by the announcement of his gardener that Mr. Irving was very ill. I instantly hurried there, with my gardener, Mr. Herman Harms. We found him on the floor of his bedroom, surrounded by his two nieces and his nephew, Mr. Pierre M. Irving, with whom he had passed the evening in his usual health and spirits. His life was extinct. Very soon all the members of the family left, bowed in the deepest grief. Mr. Harms, that night, prepared his body for the grave, and I, alone in his parlor, wrote to Mr. Bryant, of the *Evening Post*, of the circumstances of his departure and of the great loss the whole world had sustained. On the first day of winter, a day of wonderful beauty, warm, a cloudless sky, without anything to mar its heavenly aspect, amid crowds of his fellow-countrymen and the neighbors who loved him, he was laid in his quiet grave in Sleepy Hollow, and the tears and sobs of many hearts mingled with the deep grief of those who were his kindred and dearly loved members of his home."

There are many anecdotes and unpublished memoirs of Mr. Irving's life that throw a pleasant light upon his character and spirit, and show why it was that his presence was always so welcome wherever he went. A letter of his, never before printed, which has been kindly furnished by Mr. Morgan, may be taken as an example. It illustrates the genial play of his innocent humor and wit. The "Mr. Hoge" mentioned was the late William Hoge, the well-known banker, who then owned and occupied the place which was afterwards owned and occupied by the "New York Institution for the Instruction of the Deaf and Dumb." "The great sachem of Pokahoe" was General James Watson Webb, whose stone mansion was in the wood about a mile or less north of the Pocantico Bridge, between Broadway and the river. "Pokahoe" was the name he gave his place, after an old Indian word, formerly used to designate the locality. Bolton says the name was of Algonquin origin, and kindred to Pocantico and Pokohantes. The following is the letter :

" SUNNYSIDE, July 4, 1856.

" *Worthy and Dear Sir :*

" We live in portentous times, and everything is full of direful omen. I paid a visit yesterday to my neighbor, Mr. Hoge, and forthwith a formidable cudgel was presented to me, on the silver head of which was engraved *Fort Duquesne*, being fabricated from the ruins of the stronghold of former days. I came home, and lo ! another weapon of the kind is put into my hands from your castle of Woodcliff. What does all this mean ? are we preparing for the contest of the cudgel ? Is club-law to rule the land ? In the midst of all this a herald in hot haste has summoned me to a feast to be given by the great sachem of Pokahoe—doubtless a war-feast, in honor of the hero of the Rocky Mountains.

" Now, Sir, I am a peaceable man. I have declined the sachem's invitation to his feast. I accept the cane under condition that, if club-law is to be the order of the day, I be permitted to keep my cudgel quiet, and if I accompany you this morning to pay a visit to Colonel Fremont at the sachem's wigwam I shall certainly leave my cudgel at home.

" Yours truly, but pacifically,

" WASHINGTON IRVING.

" George D. Morgan, Esq."

The writer of these lines, while taking tea at Mr. Hoge's, had the pleasure to meet Mr. Irving there and now recalls the amusing conversation. Mrs. Hoge, a bright and genial lady, was rallying Mr. Irving on the subject of matrimony, " Oh, no, Mrs. Hoge," he replied, with mock gravity and determination, " they will never subdue me under petticoat government." The writer, turning to Mr. Irving, said, " Why, Mr. Irving, you must be a believer in Sam Slick's philosophy." " What is that ?" he inquired. The writer answered, " Sam Slick says ' the men hold the reins but the women tell 'em which way to drive.' " " Yes," said Mr. Irving, laughing and rubbing his hands, " That's it, that's it."

On another occasion the writer accompanied the Rev. John Forsyth, D.D., professor in the Military Academy at West Point, who was then his guest, and desired while here to call on Mr. Irving at Sunnyside. It happened that Professor Forsyth had been a fellow-passenger with Mr. Irving on the steamship, when the latter was returning from his post of service at Madrid, as Minister to Spain. The day before the steamer came into port a grand dinner was given on

board in honor of the American minister, and, according to the regulation on such occasions, Mr. Irving was expected to respond to a toast to himself. Professor Forsyth was one of the guests at the table. Just as the toast was about to be proposed he looked up to where Mr. Irving had sat, but to his surprise there was nobody there. Mr. Irving, with his settled aversion to speech-making, had suddenly vanished before the toast was given. As a prudent man, he foresaw the evil and hid himself. Professor Forsyth referred to the incident during his call, and he and Mr. Irving enjoyed a most hearty laugh over it, which was so contagious that the writer took a share himself.

On another occasion Mr. Irving, with his friend, the late Captain Jacob Storm, called on the writer at his home in the parsonage of the Second Reformed Church. He happened, however, to be out, and Mr. Irving asked the colored girl, who let them in, for a card on which to write his name. She was a very peculiar individual, endowed with a remarkable genius for blundering. So she went up to the study, and taking from the table there a new, clean, white oblong blotting pad, that had never been used, carried it down to Mr. Irving. He wrote his name, Washington Irving, with a pencil, in the centre of it, and left it as his card. One can readily imagine the look of fun that must have spread over his face as he did it. It is needless to add that Washington Irving's " card " is still preserved as a memento.

Mr. Irving sometimes laughed at the Irish wit of a domestic in the family of Captain Jacob Storm. He called there one day, and on being told by the girl that the captain was out, he said to her in his good-humored way, " Why, I thought you always had a storm here." As quick as a flash came the answer, " Indade we do, sir, but we niver have a timest."

There are many interesting references to Tarrytown and the localities surrounding it in the " Life and Letters of Mr. Irving," but of only one of them can further mention be made in our story. While in Madrid as American minister, he wrote a letter to his niece, at Sunnyside, in which he contrasts the happier lot of a Tarrytown maiden with the restraints and irksome responsibilities of " the poor little Queen " of Spain. It shows how vividly he retained the impression of home associations. The Tarrytown choir, Sleepy Hollow, and shopping at Tommy Dean's called up pleasant ideas to his mind. Mr. Thomas Dean, a highly-respected citizen, kept for many years the store in the long, low building on the southwest corner of Broadway and Main Street, now kept by Mr. Homer R. Frost. In Mr. Dean's day, however, there was nothing under the sun that could not be found in that store. No matter what any one wanted, it was sure to be there. Mr. Irving remembered it in Madrid, and so, in writing from that city to his juvenile niece, on November 15, 1842, he said,—

" You seem to pity the poor little Queen, shut up with her sister like two princesses in a fairy tale, in a great, grand, dreary palace, and 'wo-

der whether she would not like to change her situation for a nice little cottage on the Hudson.' Perhaps she would, Kate, if she knew anything of the gayeties of cottage life, if she had ever been with us at a picnic or driven out in the Shandry-dran with the two roans, and James, in his slipshod hat for a coachman or *potted* in the Dream, or sang in the Tarrytown choir, or shopped at Tommy Dean's; but, poor thing! she would not know how to set about enjoying herself. She would never think of appearing at Church without a whole train of the Miss ———s, and the Miss ———s, and the Miss ———s, as maids of honor, nor drive through Sleepy Hollow except in a coach and six with a cloud of dust and a troop of horsemen in glittering armor. So I think, Kate, we must be content with pitying her and leaving her in ignorance of the comparative desolateness of her situation.'

The centennial anniversary of Mr. Irving's birth was appropriately celebrated by the people of Tarrytown and vicinity, on April 3, 1883. A meeting, under the auspices of the Irving Club, was held in the evening, in the Second Reformed Church, and addresses were delivered by Donald G. Mitchell (Ike Marvel), and others.

East of the Irving estate, and north of the Sunnyside, or Irving Lane, within the corporate limits of Tarrytown, are the extensive grounds and country-seat of Edward S. Jaffray, Esq., one of the well-known merchant princes of the metropolis. The configuration of the grounds east of the mansion, and relatively to the Hudson River, is such as to afford from the summer-house, and from the points where the elevation begins to slope downward, the grandest of views over the wide Tappan Zee to the northwest, up toward the Highlands on the north and down toward the Palisades on the south. The grounds were laid out by an English landscape gardener, and, in the month of June especially, when nature is dressed in bloom and verdure, they present, in connection with river and sky, a scene of surpassing beauty.

The house was built about seventy years ago by an Irish gentleman of fortune and culture named Thomas Thornton. From him it was purchased by Captain Charles Pindar, a Russian sea-captain, who occupied it until Spain ceded Florida to the United States, in 1819, and gave full possession to the Americans in July, 1821. Captain Pindar was appointed the first Russian consul at Pensacola under the new régime, and, preparatory to his removing thither, he sold the place to Mr. Oscar Irving, who had been a midshipman in the United States navy. It was next bought by ex-Mayor Ambrose C. Kingsland, of New York City, who enlarged the house to double its previous size. Mr. Kingsland sold the place in 1854 to Mr. Jaffray. It is a large frame structure, very roomy and well adapted to the purposes of convenience and comfort. Mr. Jaffray, with his family, resides here during the summer months, and, together with his sons and sons-in-law, occupying places just around him, may almost be said, in fact, to form a settlement of his own. He is the owner of the elegant and fast-sailing steam-yacht "Stranger," which in summer takes him, and those of his family and friends who wish to go, down to the city in the morning and brings them back in the afternoon. A private dock, or landing-place, has been constructed at his own ex-

pense at the foot of Irving Lane, on the river, and here those going or coming by the "Stranger" embark or disembark. Sometimes in the warm weather he takes a vacation, and goes off on the yacht for a sea voyage to Nantucket or the coast of Maine.

Being the next-door neighbor of Mr. Irving, and the two families being on terms of close intimacy and friendship, Mr. Jaffray enjoyed peculiar opportunities of understanding that great man's life. In view of this fact, the writer begged that he would furnish for this history his reminiscences of the neighborhood since he came into it, and especially of Mr. Irving, his near neighbor and friend. He has kindly complied, and the reader will discover from his interesting pages that his literary style is as graceful as his enterprise is vigorous and broad. It will be seen that he has not only contributed his own recollections of Mr. Irving, but that he has also given a poem by Mr. Irving never before published, and a capital answer to it in the measure of Hiawatha, under the name of his little daughter, but which it is hardly revealing a secret to say is the production of his own pen. The following is his response to the request addressed to him:

"My Dear Dr. Todd:

"You ask me to give you a sketch of my residence at Willow Brook, with an account of the changes which have taken place, and especially of my recollections of Washington Irving.

"I will endeavor to comply with your request, but, as some twenty-five years have elapsed since the death of Mr. Irving, I may not be able to recall, very fully, the circumstances of my intercourse with him.

"I purchased my present country residence ('Willow Brook') thirty-one years since, from Ambrose C. Kingsland, and, soon after taking possession, Washington Irving called at my house and welcomed me and my family to the neighborhood. We found him a most genial and entertaining companion, and from that period until his death we saw him almost daily. He would frequently come up the lane to our house in the evening, sometimes alone, sometimes accompanied by one or more of his nieces, who made their home with him.

"He was very fond of music, and, as my family were musical in their tastes, we used to perform various glees and choruses, in which Mr. Irving took a lively interest.

"He took a great fancy to my little daughter Florence, who was then about five years old, and she returned his affection fully. They had many little games and talks together, and she was a frequent and always welcome visitor at Sunnyside.

"Soon after our settlement at our new home Mr. Irving sent the following poem to our little Florence, based upon my persevering but fruitless attempts to make use of the waters of the brook to supply my house.

"THE LAY OF THE SUNNYSIDE DUCKS.

"*Humbly Dedicated*
to

"Miss Florence Jaffray.

"By Sunnyside bower runs a little Indian brook,
As wild as wild can be;
It flows down from hills where Indians lived of old
To the mighty Tappan Sea.

"And this little brook supplies a goodly little pond
Where the Sunnyside ducks do play—
Snowy-white little ducks with top-knots¹ on their heads,
And merry little ducks are they.

"And high up the hill stands fair Jaffray Hall,
Where a mighty chief doth dwell,
And this little Indian brook flows through his lands
In its own little rugged dell.

¹ "When Fanchy had her ringlets 'tied up' on her head we all used to call her 'Mr. Irving's "top-knot" duck.'"

"And the laird of Jaffray arose in his might
And he said to his wife one day,—
'This little Indian brook is an idle little brook,
And no longer shall have its way.

"No longer shall it run down to Sunnyside pond
Nor e'en to the Tappan Sea.
I'll stop it with a dam, and pump it up hill with a ram,
And make it work for a living,' said he.

"It shall run in pipes about our garden and lawn,
Making jets and fountains clear;
It shall run up stairs and down stairs of Jaffray Hall
And into your bath-room, my dear.'

"Then the Sunnyside ducks they quacked with fear,
And dolefully they did cry,
'Oh! Laird of Jaffray spare our little brook
Or we shall be left high and dry.'

"But soon it appeared that this brave little brook
Defied the Laird of Jaffray's skill,
For though he dammed the little brook, and rammed the little
brook,
The little brook still ran down hill.

"Then the Sunnyside ducks again plucked up heart
And got over their quandary.
And the little brook still runs on to Sunnyside pond
And the mighty Tappan Sea."

"To this Florence (with some assistance, as you may suppose) returned the following answer:

"REPLY TO THE LAY OF THE SUNNYSIDE DUCKS.

"Much beloved Mr. Irving
I received your charming letter,
All about the Indian streamlet—
All about the top-knot ducklings—
How my Papa, very selfish,
Tried to dam up all the water,
Tried to keep more than he ought to;
But his efforts all were fruitless;
Nought could stop that knowing water,
On it would insist on going.
Who could blame it for its action;
Who resist such great attraction;
Was not 'Sunnyside' before it?
Was not 'Wolfert's Roost' inviting?
Was not he whom all look up to—
He whom all admire and cherish—
Drawing that sweet brooklet onward?
Not for top-knot ducks 'twas running,
Not for water-fowl or fishes,
Not to make sweet water-fallings,
Not to course through rustic windings,
Not to spite my dearest Papa,
But to get to you 'twas hastening—
You whom all the Dux are calling
Of the present age of writers—
You're the Dux, the people's leader,
And we all desire to follow,
And to go down hill to 'Wolfert's,'
Undismayed by any dammings.
Coming down by gentle moonlight,
Or in darkness, with a lantern.
Should you ask me how my Papa
Tried to stop the stream and couldn't,
I should answer— I should tell you,
In the drought of by gone summer
People came with carts and horses
Very early in the morning
And they stole away the water!
Our 'Ram,' which Papa calls 'Longfellow,'
(Author of the 'Higher-Wather'),
Heaved a sigh, and stopped his ramnings,
Much to all our consternation.

Papa said, with indignation,
'Send for "Tubbs" ¹ and send for "Chalmers," ²
I will build a wall and stop it.'
But without his best he reckoned.
Little did the streamlet tarry,
But through crack, and leak, and cranny,
Found its way, and ran on coolly,
Laughing in its sleeve at Chalmers—
Laughing loud at Tubbs' efforts,
Minn-ha! ha!—laughing water!—
Laughing at their foolish planning.
By the bye, that just reminds me,
That to visit me you promised,
And to go with me to 'Niblo's.'
Will you come to us on Friday?
Will you come and with us tarry?
With regards to your sweet nieces,
I'm your friend, the little

FLORENCE."

"Some three years after we took up our residence at 'Willow Brook' Mr. Irving began to show symptoms of the disease which was destined to end his days. He experienced a lassitude and shortness of breath when going up hill or up stairs, and he grew gradually more feeble as time went on.

"In the summer of 1859 I drove him around the Saw-Mill Valley and over the hill behind Tarrytown. When we came in view of the cemetery he asked me to stop, and then pointed out the spot where he was to be buried, which, though at a considerable distance, I could clearly perceive.

"After that drive he but seldom left his home. One day—I think it was on his birthday—Florence sent him a colored photograph of herself, accompanied by a letter of congratulation printed by herself with a pen and ink.

"He had been feeling very much depressed in spirits all the forenoon, and when the portrait and funny little letter accompanying it arrived it quite cheered him up.

"You are, of course, aware of all the incidents of his death, so that I need not dwell upon them. It was at the end of November—after I had moved into town for the winter—so that I was not present, and did not know of his dangerous illness until I saw the notice of his death in the papers.

"The funeral took place on the 1st of December in Dr. Creighton's Church, at Tarrytown. I of course attended; but when I reached the church I found it already quite full, so that I had to stand outside. It was a magnificent Indian summer day, which seemed to have been made expressly for the funeral of this distinguished and deeply regretted citizen.

"I followed him to the grave, and saw his remains deposited in the plot of the Irving family, which he had pointed out to me from the hill, on the occasion I have related.

"The death of Mr. Irving was an irreparable loss to the neighborhood where he had lived so long. It seemed to create a great blank—which still continues, though he has been gone so many years.

"You ask me to give you some account of the changes which have taken place in my neighborhood since I settled there in 1855. It is rather sad to look back and see how large a proportion of those who were neighbors during the early years of my residence have since passed away. Among the heads of families I may mention Mr. Coates, Mr. William E. Dodge, Mr. Jonas G. Dudley, Mr. William Hoge, Mr. Edmund Coffin, Professor McVickar, Mr. Washington Irving, Mr. Steele, Mr. Moses H. Grinnell, Mr. Henry Holdredge, Mr. E. I. Brown, Mr. John E. Williams, Mr. John Mann, Mr. John J. Forkel, Mr. Cunningham, Mr. Howland, Mr. Merritt and others.

"Of the remainder, some have moved away, so that with a few exceptions there is a new set of people now occupying the places around me. This admonishes me that I must be gradually becoming the 'oldest inhabitant,' and that my turn must soon come, to follow in the long procession.

"The whole region from Hastings to Tarrytown has been immensely improved during the time that I have lived there. In the year 1849 I hired a house at Nyack for the summer, and in the afternoons we used to sit on the piazza and look out on the river and the opposite shore, which was illuminated with the rays of the western sun. We used to remark how few county-seats there were, and how bare of trees the greatest part of the land was. The only prominent houses that we could see between Dobbs Ferry and Tarrytown were Henry Sheldon's, Mr.

¹ The mason.

² The plumber.

Paulding's fine marble dwelling (now belonging to Mr. Jay Gould), Sunnyside, Col. Hamilton's, Mr. Schuyler's and two or three more.

"A survey from the same point of view would now show perhaps a hundred fine houses, and a profusion of ornamental trees covering nearly the whole surface of the land. As a sample of the extensive tree-planting, I may mention that when Col. Hamilton built his house, in 1836, there was but one tree on the entire plot of ground, probably fifty acres in extent, and when the Colonel asked Mr. Irving what name he should give to this place, Mr. Irving suggested 'Single Tree Hall' as a suitable appellation. This place as you know, is now almost a forest.

"In the year 1849 the only means of communication between the city and the banks of the Hudson, was by steamboats, and of these, there were only three. The 'Columbus' went up the river every morning at seven, landing at all the villages on the east bank, and ending her route, I think, at Sing Sing, Peekskill.

"The 'Armenia' left New York at four P.M., and carried all the passengers and freight for the various places as far as Peekskill. There was also a small boat called the 'Warren,' which ran between Haverstraw and New York, taking the landings on the west side. I remember coming down in this last boat one morning in company with the late Archbishop Hughes and Hugh Maxwell, and enjoying their instructive and genial conversation on the way.

"Late in that year the Hudson River Railroad was opened as far as Peekskill, and, thenceforth, the means of communication were greatly increased, and the banks of the noble Hudson are now within such easy access from the great city that they have become the favorite summer residence for a large class of citizens.

"In reply to your enquiries as to who are now my near neighbors, I may mention a few names:

"Mr. Gurnee now owns the fine stone mansion on the hill built by Mr. Stebbins. Mr. Hoge's place was sold to the Deaf and Dumb Asylum. Mr. Skeel occupies the house formerly owned by Mr. Woodford. Mr. Henry Parish, one of the older settlers, still lives opposite my entrance. Mr. Barton has purchased the beautiful place of Mr. Williams. Mr. Cyrus W. Field bought the place of Mr. John A. Stewart many years ago, and has since purchased hundreds of acres, and built many beautiful houses making in the aggregate the Manor of Ardsley, which is one of the finest estates in the country.

"Immediately around me, I have my son Howard occupying the late Henry Holdredge's place just north of me. My son-in-law, Mr. Woodriff, occupying the estate of the late Prof. McVickar, just across Sunnyside Lane; and during the past summer my son-in-law, Mr. McVickar, occupied Mrs. Worthington's house, next to my premises on Broadway. Besides these, two other members of the family have occupied houses on the high road.

"You thus see that my family highly value Irvington as a place of residence, and I think with good reason, as, in addition to the great beauty of the scenery, the excellence of the roads and the advantages of the river, it is without exception the healthiest region within easy access from New York.

"I have spent thirty-one summers at my place, and my family have enjoyed excellent health all the time.

"This reminds me that I must have grown somewhat older since I settled in Irvington; I came there with a wife and five small children. I now have twenty-one grandchildren; who can say, after that, that Irvington is not a desirable place of residence?

"I am afraid that I have wearied you with these personal details, and if you intend to make any use of this communication in connection with your forthcoming 'History of Westchester County,' I advise that you cut off this paper when it begins to treat of my private matters.

"If I may extend my remarks a little farther up the river, I may mention that I hired Capt. Isaac Smith's house at Sing Sing for the summer of 1851, and I was highly pleased with my residence there. I and my wife attended Dr. Phraner's Church, and were present on the occasion of his first appearance in the pulpit there.

"What the text was, or what was the character of the discourse I have entirely forgotten, but I have no doubt that the sermon was an excellent one, as my friend Dr. Phraner preaches no other kind.

"I had the pleasure of hearing him preach the past summer in the old 'Sleepy Hollow' Church, at Tarrytown, and he recalled to my mind the fact that Mrs. Jaffray and I were present on the occasion of his first sermon in his church. That is now thirty-four years ago, and he has remained a faithful minister in the same church up to a recent period.

"Trusting that these imperfect recollections may be of some service to you.

"I am your sincere friend,

"EDWARD S. JAFFRAY.

Adjoining the place of Mr. Jaffray on the north is the estate of the late James H. Banker. The house was built by the Hon. Moses H. Grinnell about thirty-five years ago, and was occupied by him for many years as his home. It is a mansion presenting an appearance of great solidity, being built of cut stone, and remarkably handsome. Mr. Grinnell was of the celebrated firm of Grinnell & Minturn, and was in his day one of the most famous of the great merchants of New York. He represented New York City in the Twenty-sixth Congress, having for his associates Edward Curtis and Ogden Hoffman. In 1852 he was a member of the Whig National Convention, held in Baltimore, and strongly advocated the nomination of his intimate personal and political friend, Daniel Webster, for the Presidency of the United States. After his withdrawal from the firm of Grinnell & Minturn, he served for some years as president of the Sun Insurance Company. In 1869, President Grant appointed him collector of the port of New York. Mr. Grinnell married for his second wife Julia Irving, a daughter of William Irving, and a niece of Washington Irving. After his death, which occurred in New York, November 24, 1877,¹ the place passed into the hands of Mr. James H. Banker. After occupying it

¹ The following account of Mr. Grinnell, published a few days after his death, contains an interesting statement of the late Thurlow Weed, in regard to Mr. Irving's appointment as minister to Spain:

"The private life of the deceased gentleman was of the most charming character. Some of the best American authors were regular visitors at his house, and he delighted in their society. Washington Irving he loved, and he married the niece of that great writer, Miss Julia Irving. This lady died about six years ago in Genoa, Italy, and Mr. Grinnell's health was greatly affected by that event. Her body was brought to this country and interred at Sleepy Hollow, where her husband's body was also taken for burial. They had but three children, all of whom are alive,—Mrs. Thomas Cushing, of Boston; Mrs. Bowdoin, wife of Mr. George W. Bowdoin, of the banking firm of Morton, Bliss & Co.; and Mr. Irving Grinnell, named after Washington Irving.

"The political influence wielded quietly, but effectively, for many years by Mr. Grinnell is illustrated by the following account of the manner in which Washington Irving was appointed Minister to the Court of Madrid, an appointment to which the literary world owes the pleasure it derives from Irving's *History of Mahomet and His Successors*, as related by Thurlow Weed, who was an intimate friend of the deceased: While Mr. Webster was Secretary of State, I dined with him in Washington one night, Mr. Grinnell, Mr. R. M. Blatchford and Mr. Simeon Draper also being guests. At the dessert, Mr. Grinnell told Mr. Webster that Washington Irving, while writing his *History of Columbus*, found it necessary to have access to the archives of Madrid, and that his friends had concluded to ask for his appointment as Consul to that city. After a slight pause Mr. Webster said, 'Do I understand you, Mr. Grinnell, to say that you ask for Washington Irving's appointment as Consul to Madrid?' Mr. Grinnell responded affirmatively, when Mr. Webster, with great emphasis, asked, 'And why not Minister to Spain?' But little more was said. Mr. Grinnell returned to New York rejoicing in the appointment of his literary friend as Minister to Spain. Such a thing as this pleased Mr. Grinnell thoroughly.

"As is well known, Mr. Grinnell formerly had a beautiful country seat near and adjoining 'Sunnyside,' where he resided for several years. The remains of the deceased were brought to Sleepy Hollow Cemetery for interment. The following were the pall-bearers at the funeral: Thurlow Weed, Mr. Charles H. Russell, Gen. James Bowen, Mr. George L. Schuyler, Mr. John J. Astor, Mr. G. F. Talman, Mr. Robert S. Hone, Mr. Isaac Bell, Mr. Edward Minturn and Dr. J. C. Peters. These gentlemen were for many years the most intimate friends of Mr. Grinnell."

"New York, November 13th, 1855."

for several years he died, and the property now belongs to his estate.

In the same general inclosure with the Grinnell housestands, a little farther north, the former residence of the late Henry Holdredge, whose wife was a niece of Mr. Grinnell.

The next place, called "The Homestead," extending from the Croton Aqueduct on the west to Broadway on the east, was the residence of the late Henry R. Worthington, and is still occupied by his family. The house was built in 1835 by Benson Ferris, father of Benson Ferris, now president of the savings-bank, to provide for himself a home about the time he sold his place known as "Wolfert's Roost" to Washington Irving.

Lying contiguous to it on the north are the beautiful grounds of Mr. Roswell Skeel. The brick mansion, situated on an eminence somewhat in from Broadway, commands a fine view of the Hudson River. The house was built about thirty-five years ago by Mr. Oliver P. Woodford, who now resides at Newton, Sussex County, N. J.

Proceeding toward the north, the next place consists of the famous estates of Mr. Jay Gould, which bear the name of "Lydenhurst." The portion lying west of Broadway, and between that thoroughfare and the Hudson River, upon which the mansion stands, embraces an area of seventy-five acres, but the whole, including the portion lying on the east of the Broadway, as well as that on the west, contains about seven hundred acres.

In the year 1840, General William Paulding built a part of the mansion which is still standing, in connection with the additions that were afterwards made. The stone he used in constructing it was white and blue marble from the quarries of Hastings and Sing Sing.

General Paulding was a son of William Paulding, and a brother of James K. Paulding, the distinguished author and Secretary of the Navy under President Van Buren.

The old Paulding house, in Water Street, Tarrytown, now in a tumble-down condition, was for many years the family home. General William Paulding was a lawyer by profession, and he took an active part in political affairs. He was a Representative in the Twelfth Congress from New York City. In 1821 he was a member of the Constitutional Convention which framed the second Constitution adopted by the State of New York. He served as mayor of New York City from 1824 to 1826, and again from 1827 to 1829.

On the death of General Paulding the place came into the possession of his son, Mr. Philip R. Paulding, who, in 1864, sold it to Mr. George Merritt. Up to that time Mr. Merritt had been living on his fine place in the southern part of Tarrytown, but on making this new purchase, he sold the place he already had to Mr. Robert Hoe. In the following year Mr.

Merritt remodeled and enlarged the Paulding mansion to its present dimensions, thus making it one hundred and forty-two feet long from north to south parallel with the river, and forty-one feet deep from east to west. Mr. Merritt also built a tower one hundred feet high. The house at present contains forty-six rooms, with an ample provision of airy halls.

In 1865 Mr. Merritt turned his attention to the grounds. The greater part of the land lying east between the house and Broadway was composed of meadows, which, in many places, were swampy, and on which there had sprung up an undergrowth of briars and bushes, while the part on the west, between the house and the river, consisted of hills and ravines lying wild in a state of nature. A large force of men was employed by Mr. Merritt to drain these lands and to convert them into a park. In due time the work was accomplished, and the park now contains the finest and rarest varieties of deciduous trees, evergreens and shrubs, such as are adapted to stand the severity of our northern climate. Care was found to be necessary in making a selection, as there were at first many different kinds of shrubs and trees planted on the grounds, which died from the severe cold weather, and were never replaced. About twenty acres were laid out in lawns, and about an acre and a half was appropriated to a grape-arbor, and a considerable portion set apart to be used for the vegetable gardens. The borders of these gardens were planted with the choicest of pear and other fruit-trees, fine bearers and hardy enough to stand the climate.

While this work was in progress stables were also built upon the premises, to the southeast of the mansion, and on the south line of the place. They were two hundred feet long, from north to south, and seventy-four feet wide, from east to west, with a very large yard, and connected with sheds two hundred feet long and twenty-two feet wide, for vehicles.

There are five cottages on the place. Two of them are situated on Broadway, one southeast of the mansion, in the rear of the stables, and the two others west of the mansion, on the river-bank.

In 1870, Mr. Merritt purchased the remainder of the Paulding estate, that lay on the east side of Broadway, and thus made an addition to his place of one hundred and ten acres.

Previous to this, however, Mr. Merritt had begun to build his green-house on the north line of the park. It was only a little more than half the size of the greenhouse which now occupies the ground on which the old one then stood, for the reason that a considerable part of the first building, on the rear or north side, was used for a carpenter-shop, and rooms for seed, sleeping, reception, billiards, gymnasium and also a bowling alley.

The whole building was four hundred feet long, with two wings, each eighty feet long and thirty feet wide in the inside. The dome in the centre of the



Wm. L. Terry







"PINKSTONE,"
RESIDENCE OF JOHN T. TERRY,
TARRYTOWN, NEW YORK.

green-house was eighty feet long and forty-six feet wide from the main entrance on the south to the reception-room on the north. A tower also rose from the dome to the height altogether of one hundred feet, having at the top a glass cupola twenty-five feet in diameter, in order to afford the best view of the whole region round-about. The ground floor of the green-house, from the east wing to the west interior side of the dome, was appropriated to the cultivation of plants; from the west side of the dome to the end of the west wing, to the cultivation of grapes. Underneath the whole green-house was an immense cellar, four hundred feet long, a sort of cyclopean retreat used for boiler-rooms, coal rooms, mushroom cellar, water-tanks and various potting implements and materials.

North of the green-house was a range of low buildings two hundred and fifty feet long, principally used for cuttings and the like. The whole was well stocked and in excellent running order when, in the year 1873, Mr. Merritt died. The plants were soon after disposed of and the entire place was offered for sale.

The place lay in a comparatively neglected condition until the spring of 1880, when it was bought by Mr. Jay Gould, who renovated and restocked the green-house with the choicest collection of plants from all parts of the globe. The houses adjoining were all in like manner refitted, and everything was once more in the most perfect order. But just then, on the morning of December 11, 1880, the greenhouse was discovered to be in flames. Some beams had been built into the chimney within an inch of the interior surface, and these taking fire, the conflagration spread rapidly over the whole building, so that in a very short time the immense structure with its contents was laid in ruins. The range of low houses in the rear, however, was saved.

Nothing daunted by the calamity, Mr. Gould, in January, 1881, took vigorous measures to rebuild the green-house, and on a much larger scale. A strong force of men was set to work to clear away the ruins, and to prepare for the erection of the new building. Well on in the summer of 1881 it was completed, and stood on the old site, in dimensions about as large again as the old one, and ready to be occupied. Mr. Gould stocked the new structure with the choicest plants that could be obtained from Europe and America, and he continued his efforts until the collection was about three times as large as it had been before. The present green-house, which is all used for its proper purposes, is about four hundred feet long, with two wings, each eighty feet long, the whole resembling the capital letter E. Mr. Gould also built a brick structure in the rear of the green-house, on the north side, to furnish sleeping-rooms, potting-shed and seed-rooms. This structure is one hundred feet long and twelve feet wide, and adjoins the range of low houses saved from the fire.

In front of the green-house is a lawn laid out in all

descriptions of flower beds, which, in the summer months, afford a gorgeous exhibition of floral beauty. Near to these on the east are gardens especially devoted to flowering purposes and kindred uses.

Like his predecessor, Mr. Gould has also added a considerable tract of land to his original purchase, so that his place at present is over seven hundred acres in extent. He has done a good work for Tarrytown and its vicinity, not only by furnishing employment for large numbers of men, but by draining a large swamp on his estate lying east of Broadway. He has thus dried up a source of miasmatic influence to the neighborhood and reclaimed the land to a practical use.

The name Lydenhurst, or Lynden Forest, was given to Mr. Gould's place in consequence of the fact that there are upon it so many fine specimens of the linden tree.

The overseer of the estate, who has special charge of the green-house, is Mr. Ferdinand Mangold, a native of Germany, where he was trained to his occupation. All who know him will be ready to admit that, like Solomon, he is competent to "speak of trees, from the cedar tree that is in Lebanon even unto the hyssop that springeth out of the wall."

Mr. Gould, it is scarcely necessary to add, is the owner of the famous steam-yacht "Atalanta," which in summer conveys him to and from New York.

Adjoining Lydenhurst on the north is "Pink Stone," the name given to the fine grounds and palatial residence of John T. Terry, Esq. The grounds embrace about thirty-five acres, and extend from Broadway to the Hudson River. The mansion is a large square stone building, suggestive of stability and comfort. It was completed in 1859, and has ever since been occupied as a family residence. Mr. Terry, who is well known as an enterprising and most successful business man in New York City, was for a long time connected with the late ex-Senator and ex-Governor Edwin D. Morgan, who entertained for him a great regard, and appointed him an executor of his will.

Mr. Terry was born in Hartford, Connecticut, September 9, 1822. He is descended from Governor William Bradford, of the "Mayflower"; also from Mabel Harlekenden, who came to New England in 1635 to marry John Haynes, Governor-General of Connecticut, and who, as is well known, was descended from Edward III., through a long line of the sovereigns of England.

Mr. Terry came to New York City in December, 1841, where he entered the house of Ex-Gov. E. D. Morgan as a clerk. On January 1, 1844, he was admitted to a partnership, in which he continued during Mr. Morgan's term as Governor and Senator of the United States, and until his death, in 1883.

He married, July 22, 1846, Elizabeth R., daughter of Frederick T. Peet, of Brooklyn, N. Y. He is largely interested in financial institutions in New

York, being at present a director in one bank, vice-president of a Trust Company; director in two Trust Companies, also a director in the Western Union Telegraph Company, and in one Life Insurance Company, in four Railroad Companies, and in a number of benevolent institutions.

Mr. Terry is a thorough-going-business-man, and his advice is widely sought in financial circles in and about the county in which he lives and the country at large.

This place was a part of the old Requa farm, and the scene of a tragic event during the Revolution. In the summer of 1779 a strong detachment of British troops, under Colonel Emmerick, came up from below, and advanced so rapidly upon Tarrytown that the Continental guard, which was quartered at Requa's house, was taken completely by surprise. The house then known as Requa's is now Mr. Terry's gatehouse. Four Americans were killed, and the remainder, consisting of ten or twelve persons, were taken prisoners. It was here, as the tradition states, that Isaac Martlingh, a one-armed man, lost his life, and also Polly Buckhout, who was mistaken for a man, from the fact that she was wearing a man's hat.

Next to "Pink Stone," on the north, are the grounds and house formerly owned and occupied by the late William Hoge. The house was built by Mr. Henry Sheldon, who sold it to Mr. Hoge over thirty years ago. While occupied by Mr. Hoge and his noble wife it was the seat of an elegant and generous hospitality, which every one who went there felt it was a privilege to enjoy. The lawns and waterfalls and views from the west verandah up and down the river, were charming. Mr. Hoge was a prominent banker in New York City, a man of fine culture and of fortune, but the great fire in Chicago and the financial panic in New York caused him to suffer severe reverses, and, in order to meet the demands upon him, the place was given up. He was afterwards elected president of the St. Louis and Denver Railroad, and removed to St. Louis, where, on April 3, 1875, he died, deeply lamented.

In 1879 the place was bought by "The New York Institution for the Instruction of the Deaf and Dumb," and on Tuesday, October 14, 1879, the building was formally opened, with appropriate exercises, by the board of directors. After prayer by Dr. Thomas Galaudet, Dr. William Adams, president of the board, made a short address, and was followed, in an able discourse on the history and methods of instructing the deaf and dumb, by the Hon. Erastus Brooks. His paper was published in full in the sixty-first annual report of the institution. Finding it inexpedient to maintain an additional establishment here, after an institution for the deaf and dumb had been provided at Trenton, New Jersey, in 1883, which caused the pupils here from that State, numbering about seventy, to be withdrawn, thus leaving ample room in the institution proper for all its pupils, except about fifty

small boys, who are now taught in a building near the parent institution, it was decided to close up the Tarrytown branch and to remove the inmates to the asylum at One Hundred and Sixty-second Street, New York. This was accordingly done in June, 1883, the time of the annual vacation.

Mr. Theodore A. Strange, who occupies a delightful home in Greenburgh, and who has for many years been prominent in the commercial and mercantile life of New York City, is a son of the late Edwin B. Strange, the well-known silk importer, who was born in Gloucestershire, England, and came to this country in 1837. Before leaving England Mr. E. B. Strange had married Miss Josephine Louise Pernot, a Parisian lady, by whom he had seven children, Theodore A. being the fifth. He was born in New York City, August 15, 1843.

After a preparatory course under the celebrated private tutors Thayer and Parker, in New York, the young man, then in his sixteenth year, sailed for England, where he entered the Eltham Collegiate Institute, at Eltham, in Kent. It had been his original intention to pursue a further course at the University of Oxford, but upon consideration he gave up the idea and returned to this country. He entered the importing house of E. B. Strange & Brother, then consisting of his father and uncle, as a clerk, in 1860. Six years later, in 1866, he was admitted as a partner, the firm-name being changed to Strange & Brother, and the business continuing as formerly. In 1880 his father, whose death took place in the following year, withdrew from the business, leaving it in the hands of his brother, Mr. Albert B. Strange, who, together with Theodore A., conducted it till February, 1886, when Albert B. died. His son William then assumed his share in the concern, and the firm, at present consisting of William and Theodore A., still continues under the old name of Strange & Brother. The integrity of the house has, from the time of its foundation, been proverbial, and its credit stands as high as that of any like concern, either at home or abroad. Beside silk and ribbon importing, in which this firm at one time were more extensively engaged than any other house in this country, they formerly gave much attention to dealing in flowers and feathers, a branch of the trade which has lately been dropped. The factory represented by the firm of Strange & Brother is the largest concern of its kind in the country.

Mr. Strange was formerly connected with many social organizations in New York City, prominent among which was the New York Yacht Club, of which he is still a member. During his early membership of this club he was the owner of the famous sloop-yacht "Ariadne." He is at present a Mason of high standing and is connected with the following lodges: Ivanhoe Lodge No. 610; Jerusalem Chapter, No. 8; Adelphe Council, No. 7; and Cœur de Lion Commandery, No. 23, Knights Templar. He is also a member of the American Silk Association.



Theo A. Strange







'GRANITE LODGE.'

RESIDENCE OF THEO. A. STRANGE,

IRVINGTON-ON-HUDSON, N. Y.

In 1882 Mr. Strange removed from Ingleside, Dobbs Ferry, which had been his residence for nearly twenty-six years, to Irvington, where he purchased Granite Lodge, an elegant and spacious mansion, of which this volume furnishes a cut. He is well known and greatly esteemed throughout Westchester, especially in the western portion of the county, where he has long been prominent in social circles. Religiously, Mr. Strange is an Episcopalian and is an attendant of St. Barnabas' Church, Irvington.

In May, 1874, he married Miss Jennie Marks Taylor, daughter of Hon. H. J. Taylor, ex-mayor of Jersey City. There are three children—Edwin B., Laura T. and Josephine Louise—all living.

Beginning again on the north side of the village boundary line at Sunnyside Brook, but east of Broadway, and moving northward, the first place to attract attention is the house that was built about thirty-two years ago, and, for a time, occupied by Mr. Edmund Coffin. It subsequently came into the possession of Mr. Peter Moller, who for several years made it his home. It is a place of many attractions.

On the ridge above it, to the southeast, is a stone building, the property of Mr. Jacob N. Cronise. This also was built by Mr. Edward Coffin.

Just north of this are the ruins of the fine, classic stone mansion and studio built by the celebrated artist, Albert Bierstadt, in 1866. Here for several years he lived and exercised his genius, painting some of those pictures which are now famous throughout the world. On November 10, 1882, while Mr. Bierstadt was absent, the house was discovered by passers-by to be on fire. It was too late to save it, and in a short time nothing was left of it but the blackened and naked walls.

On the hill east of the Bierstadt ruins is the house built and still owned by Mr. William Halstead.

Some distance farther north, upon a commanding eminence, stands the stone house now owned and occupied as a summer residence by Mr. Walter S. Gurnee. The place is called "Greystone," and the prospect from it is very fine. The house was built about thirty-five years ago by Mr. David M. Stebbins.

On the immediate borders of Tarrytown, to the south and east, and sometimes quite within the village proper, are many elegant places of greater or less extent, but the limits of this work will not allow them to be spoken of in detail. Among them may be mentioned "Rockview," the charming country-seat of the late Robert Graves, which, in his life-time, he did so much to render beautiful and complete; that of Dr. John C. Barron, built by the late Henry Sheldon, and afterwards owned and occupied by Mr. J. H. Benedict; that of Mr. George Newton, built of stone about twenty-five years ago, by Mr. William H. Townsend, now of New York City, afterwards owned and occupied by Mr. Lewis Roberts, but now, after having been enlarged and improved, the elegant residence of Mr.

Newton; that of Mr. Frank Vincent, of Mr. B. S. Clark, of Mr. W. F. Hazelton, formerly occupied by the late Luther Redfield; that of the late Robert Hoe, the printing-press manufacturer; that of the late Hon. William E. Dodge, formerly owned by Mr. J. G. Dudley, but now owned by Mr. John D. Archbold; that of Mr. George Lewis, and on the heights, with magnificent views that sweep the valley of the Hudson, the beautiful country-seat of Mr. S. B. Schieffelin, and adjoining it on the north, "Ardmore," the summer home of the distinguished lawyer, Robert Sewell, Esq. Farther up on the east is the new and costly residence of Mr. James M. Sigafus, one of the most conspicuous objects in the landscape, and affording, probably, one of the finest views to be obtained of the Hudson River. Mr. Sigafus, after carrying a musket through the War of the Rebellion, went far West, where he amassed a fortune, and from thence came East in 1882. He bought the land he now owns of Alexander A. Meldrum, on April 8, 1882. The foundation of the house was laid the same year, and the whole was completed in March, 1884. In style the house is a French villa, with piazzas twelve feet wide around the entire building. It is constructed of pressed brick made at Glenn's Falls, New York, with terra-cotta trimmings, of which latter it took sixteen car-loads to finish the edifice. There is said to be more terra-cotta in this house than in any other in the United States. The granite columns are from the granite quarry at Quincy, Massachusetts.

Among the many magnificent residences on the borders of Tarrytown is that of Mr. William H. Webb, the famous ship-builder, on its commanding elevation, with delightful views and surroundings, the house erected and occupied by the late John S. Mitchell, and afterwards occupied by Mrs. Mitchell until she removed back to her native place at Waterbury, Connecticut.

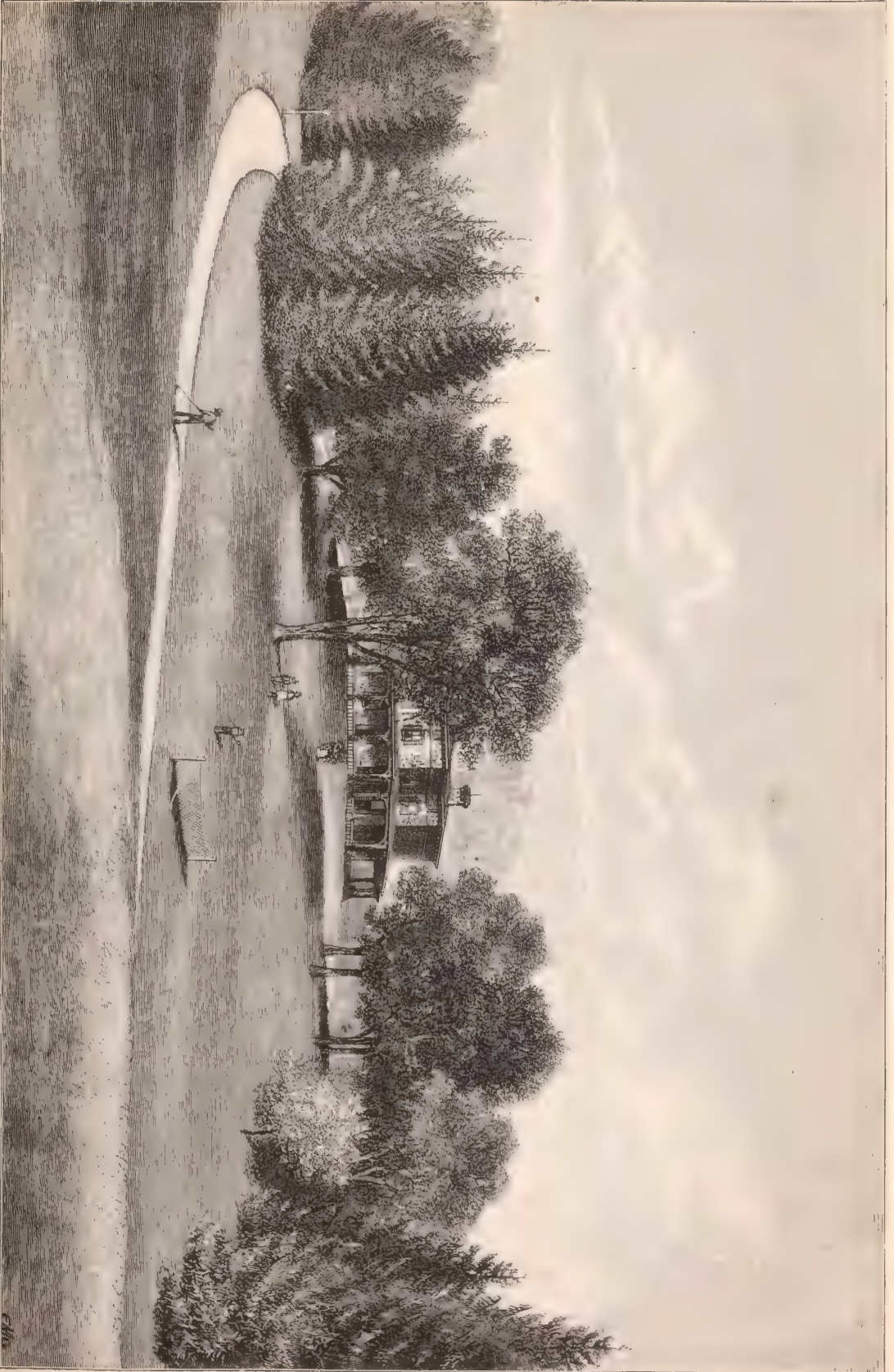
William H. Webb, the well-known ship-owner and ship-builder of New York, now retired, was born in that city June 19, 1816. His ancestors were English and settled in Connecticut in 1642. They intermarried with French Huguenots, from which race (mingled with the Scotch) his mother, whose ancestors settled in New York in colonial days was descended. Isaac Webb, his father, was one of the principal ship-builders of America. He was born in Stamford, Conn., toward the close of the last century and in boyhood removed with his parents to New York City, where he made his permanent home. In his youth he mastered the art of ship-building, and subsequently engaged in that business with a high degree of success. He became the head of the well known firm of Isaac Webb & Co., and later of the firm of Webb & Allan. He was also for several years associated as partner with the renowned ship-builder, Henry Eckford, who made a national reputation in his business during the war of 1812. The property on the East River front once

occupied by his extensive ship-yards is located at the foot of Stanton Street.

William Henry Webb received a good English education, which was begun under private tutors and finished at the Columbia College Grammar School in New York City. His forte in study was arithmetic, algebra and geometry, and it was early evident that he was a born mathematician. As a boy he played around his father's ship-yard, and at the age of twelve tried his hand successfully at the construction of a small skiff, which he built during his summer vacation. Before he was fifteen he had put together other small craft, among them a paddle-boat. His father, who had other views for him, was not at all pleased with this development of the boy's tastes, and sought to dissuade him from further effort in the boat-building direction. But this could not be. Greatly to the surprise and regret of his parents the lad became deeply interested in the plans of vessels, and quietly determined to learn marine architecture. To this determination he resolutely adhered, and although his school-teacher, parents and family friends discouraged him, he was allowed to continue in the moulding-room, where he was wont to spend much of his time, it being supposed that he would soon tire of his newly found pastime and resume his studies once more. This was the turning point in his career, and gave to America a ship-builder of whom any country might well be proud. He was not a robust boy, and from exposure in the ship-yard during cold weather he contracted a severe illness which nearly proved fatal. But even this did not "cure" him of his "fancy;" on the contrary, when he recovered he was as determined as ever, and was suffered to have his own way. When seventeen years old he began to realize that he had undertaken no easy task, and, boy-like, he wavered for a time and considered that it would be best to give up then and there. At this juncture pride came to his support, and counselled that it would be ignominious to fail where others had succeeded. The result was that he kept on, and for six years longer devoted himself with rare persistence, day and night, to study and experiment, indulging during the whole period in but a single week's vacation, and giving that over to a critical study of the new dry dock at the Boston navy yard—the first of the kind built in the United States. At the age of twenty, under a contract made with his father, he built the packet ship "Oxford," of the Black Ball Line between New York and Liverpool. Following this and under similar contracts, he built the Havre packet-ship "Duchesse d'Orleans," the Liverpool packet-ship "New York," and one or two smaller vessels. All these were completed before he was twenty-three years of age. The severe strain of this work upon his youthful system began to impair his health, and obliged to seek rest and restoration he made a voyage in the last-named vessel on her trial trip to Liverpool. This was his first experience of the

sea, and he was intensely practical. He availed himself of the opportunity to study closely the performance of a ship in its natural element. While abroad he made a brief tour of Great Britain and was paying a flying trip to the continent when news of his father's death reached him and caused his immediate return. In April, 1840, shortly after this event, he entered into partnership with Mr. Allen, who had been associated with his father, the style of the new firm remaining as before, i. e., Webb & Allen. In three years Mr. Allen retired, and the business fell wholly into the hands of Mr. Webb, whose success from that time forward forms one of the most remarkable pages in the history of ship-building. In 1872-73 he retired from active business, having built, up to that time, over one hundred and fifty vessels of all sizes including London, Liverpool and Havre packets, and steamships, and vessels of war of the largest tonnage, and in the aggregate much greater than that of any other constructor in this country. At this time he was one of the largest, if not the largest owner of tonnage in the United States, his interest covering in part or in whole about fifty vessels, both sail and steam, most of his own construction.

Mr. Webb never built ships on speculation, but always under contract. Having early given evidence of his ability in the modelling of steam vessels, he was engaged to construct the first steamship to run between New York and Savannah. He also built the first large steamer for the New Orleans trade, as well as the first steamer for the Pacific Mail Steamship Company, carrying the United States mail between Panama and San Francisco. He constructed nearly all the steamers subsequently built for that company. The first steamer—the "California"—that entered the Golden Gate, also the first three steamers selected to carry the United States mail from New York to China, via Aspinwall, Panama and San Francisco, were built by Mr. Webb. About 1850 he conceived the idea of building a model steam vessel of war for the United States Navy. Mr. Dobbin, Secretary of the Navy, to whom he submitted his project, received it favorably, stipulating that the vessel should be built in the government dock yards. This condition Mr. Webb could not accept owing to its great inconvenience and the jealous hostility manifested by the bureau of construction; and, greatly to the regret of Secretary Dobbin, the project was abandoned. A similar proposal was made to Napoleon III., who made known his disposition to accede to the proposal, but, owing to objections made by the marine department of France, that sovereign declined ordering a vessel to be built outside of the imperial dock-yards. In 1851 Mr. Webb sent a special agent to St. Petersburg to submit his proposals to the Russian government, but failed to obtain a definite reply. He sent the agent again in 1852, and being led by his report to believe that the Russian authorities might entertain the proposals if made by the principal presenting



"BARRON COURT."

FROM A PHOTOGRAPH BY P. H. BARRON, TAKEN AT TARRYTOWN, N. Y.

himself at the court of St. Petersburg he went thither in the summer of the same year. Mr. Bodisco, the Russian Minister at Washington, had previously decided adversely to the project, having had considerable trouble with parties who formerly had obtained contracts from his government. His opinions and report doubtless influenced the Emperor Nicholas' decision, which was against ordering a vessel to be built in America. Under such circumstances almost any other man would have acknowledged defeat and abandoned the project. But Mr. Webb felt that he had gone too far to suffer defeat, and with the same determination that had characterized him both as boy and man, he renewed his proposals, adding further inducements, and succeeded in enlisting the favorable attention of the Naval Committee. The influence of the Grand Duke Constantine, General Admiral of the Russian Navy, was next sought. After some delay—occasioned by the Grand Duke's absence—Mr. Webb was accorded an interview with him. Impressed by Mr. Webb's representations, the Grand Duke promised to bring the matter once more to the notice of the Emperor, having first persuaded Mr. Webb to agree to deliver the vessel when built at Cronstadt, a condition which entailed enormous risk and responsibility, but which was acceded to through necessity. The Naval Committee being made acquainted with the agreement now reported favorably to the Emperor, who was finally induced to rescind his previous orders. Six weeks after his arrival at the Russian Capitol Mr. Webb departed for New York, bearing with him an order for the construction of a large steam line-of-battle-ship after his proposed model and plans, and also other orders of considerable magnitude.

The construction of the first vessel was prosecuted under great disadvantages. Almost before the large quantity of material necessary for its construction could be collected Russia was at war with the allied powers of England France and Turkey. Notwithstanding that Mr. Webb had obtained the consent of the President (Mr. Pierce) to proceed—Mr. Pierce saying "he did not intend that the citizens of the United States should be interfered with in the prosecution of their legitimate business because England and France chose to quarrel with Russia;" backed by Mr. Marcy, Secretary of State, who said, "Go ahead and I will stand by you," and "that ship-builders in Great Britain were and still are allowed to fulfill contracts under like circumstances"—he arranged with the Russian government for a suspension of the contract till the restoration of peace, rather than entangle his own government in a question of neutrality law. After peace was declared work under the contract was resumed, but upon a different plan, and a new model designed and submitted by Mr. Webb, who originated them. These involved a less number of guns, though of larger calibre and mounted on fewer decks. So great are the advantages

presented by this method that it has since been adopted in the navies of all maritime countries. Although the Russian officers sent to this country to superintend the construction of this vessel (and who had remained here during the Crimean War) declined to approve of the change of plans, they were unsparing in their expressions of satisfaction when the vessel was actually tried at sea, because of her performances, especially in the matter of speed, and the promise made to the General Admiral when the contract was obtained. On the 21st of September, 1858, just one year after the laying of the keel, this screw-frigate of seventy-two guns, seven thousand tons displacement, and named the "General Admiral"—in honor of the Grand Duke Constantine—was launched from Mr. Webb's yard in the city of New York. She proved, it is said, the fastest vessel of war yet built (except the steam-ram "Dunderberg," since constructed by him), having made the passage from New York to Cherbourg, France, in the unprecedented time, for a war ship, of eleven days and eight hours, mostly under steam alone. Mr. Webb delivered this magnificent and most powerful steamer at the port of Cronstadt in person, in the summer of 1859. He received from the imperial Russian government very valuable testimonials, both written and pecuniary, of the satisfaction with which they received the vessel, as well as the high opinion entertained of his eminent integrity, and also of the manner in which all promises and the details of this and other contracts were executed. Among these testimonials was a manuscript letter from the Grand Duke Constantine, Grand Admiral of Russia, and head of the imperial Russian Navy, speaking of the promptness, eminent ability and perfect good faith with which the several contracts had with the government were carried out. Accompanying this letter was a gold box encircled with diamonds and mounted with other precious stones. The letter referred to is more highly esteemed by Mr. Webb than anything he ever received, on account of the very strong language in which it is couched.

The unexampled success of the frigate "General Admiral" soon became known to the naval authorities in Europe, and especially attracted the attention of the government of Spain, with which a contract of magnitude for naval vessels was fully negotiated at Madrid by Mr. Webb, in person, during the autumn of 1861, but was afterward withdrawn by that government on account of the breaking out of the Rebellion in this country, it being influenced by the rebel Preston, of Kentucky, then our Minister at Madrid. About this time, and while Mr. Webb was still in Europe, Count Cavour sent an invitation to New York for him to visit Turin. He went thither after leaving Madrid and entered into a contract with the Italian government to construct two iron-clad screw frigates, each of thirty-six heavy guns and six thousand tons displacement, afterward named the "Re

d'Italia" and "Re di Portogallo." In the construction of these vessels—the first iron-clads ever built in this country—Mr. Webb encountered many obstacles. Shortly after the contract was obtained the War of the Rebellion broke out, and prices for material and labor rose rapidly. But notwithstanding this and that he was also largely engaged in re-building and re-fitting, for war purposes, many steam vessels for the National Government and constructing several large ones for the merchant marine, Mr. Webb completed both successfully and delivered them safely to the Italian government in the time fixed in the contract.

The "Red' Italia," which was the first iron-clad steamer that crossed the Atlantic, was found to possess extraordinary sea-going qualities and speed, and made the passage in the winter season from New York to Naples, a distance of over five thousand miles, in eighteen days and twenty hours. The "Re di Portogallo" was no less a success in every particular. So eminently satisfactory to the Italian government did the literal and liberal fulfillment of these contracts prove that King Victor Emanuel, by royal decree dated January 31, 1876, conferred on Mr. Webb the order of Sts. Maurice and Lazarus—a most distinguished honor, as this order of knighthood is the oldest in Italy, and one of the oldest and most prized in Europe. While the frigates were in course of construction Mr. Webb accepted an order from our own government to build a screw-ram of large tonnage, expressly adapted for the heaviest armament, to possess unexampled speed and the best sea-going qualities—combined with others never before attained—the model and plans to be designed by himself. In a short time Mr Webb had both model and plan before the naval authorities at Washington. They were at once submitted to a board of naval experts, who reported adversely. Mr. Webb earnestly opposed the conclusions reached by this board, contending that they could not understand, and of course could not appreciate, the advantages of his plan, and at last obtained from the Secretary of the Navy (Mr. Welles) a contract for one of the most remarkable war vessels ever built. The craft, known at first as the "Dunderberg," but re-christened "Rochambeau" upon her entrance into the French navy, was constructed by Mr. Webb as a model entirely distinct from the turret or monitor system, and embodied many novelties, among them a ram of peculiar build and great power. The dimensions of the "Dunderberg"—three hundred and seventy-eight feet on deck, sixty-eight feet breadth of beam and twenty-two feet depth of hold, and its displacement of seven thousand two hundred tons—made it the largest iron-clad built up to that time. Two of its great advantages—a large amount of room for miscellaneous purposes and a lesser draught of water than any other large armored vessel—resulted from Mr. Webb's practical mastery of the subject of naval architecture. When this ship was put on trial her performances surpassed all ex-

pectation, far exceeding all promises made by its builder and all the requirements of the contract, and fairly astounded the world. Her record at sea, fully armed and in commission, fifteen and three-tenths knots an hour, it is said, has never been equaled by any vessel of war. This extraordinary speed, together with the immense weight of the broadside battery (four thousand and twenty-four pounds of solid shot) and the prow, made the "Dunderberg" what it has ever since remained, the most formidable vessel afloat. The termination of the Rebellion before the completion of the "Dunderberg" led Mr. Webb to propose to the Secretary of the Navy that he be allowed to sell her to a foreign power; and as that functionary agreed, Mr. Webb procured the passage of an act of Congress directing Mr. Welles to release him from his contract. Many prominent Americans opposed this proceeding, contending that such a terrible engine of destruction should not be allowed to pass out of our own possession. The vessel at last found a buyer in the Emperor Napoleon III. The terms of the purchase provided only for delivery in the port of New York. As such a vessel had never before crossed the ocean, the French Admiralty hesitated to undertake her delivery in France, and Mr. Webb was approached with an offer of contract to take her to Cherbourg.

Against the protests of his nautical friends, Mr. Webb accepted without hesitation this contract. When this matter was settled, the French admiral, sent with a crew to New York by his government expressly to take the ship to France, promised of his own volition, unsought and unexpected by Mr. Webb, the cross of the Legion of Honor if the ship was safely delivered. She was so delivered in fine order, with Mr. Webb on board, in the remarkably short passage of fourteen days, after unusually heavy weather, and greatly to the satisfaction of the Emperor Napoleon, by whose direction she had been purchased, against the wishes of the French Admiralty. Owing to this opposition of the French Marine, and the absence of the Emperor when the ship was delivered, and the necessary departure for home of Mr. Webb before the Emperor's return, the promised order of the Legion was not presented to him, although the archives of their Marine Department show the promise, but do not record its fulfillment.

In direct contrast to these gigantic vessels of war are the two floating palaces—the steamers "Bristol" and "Providence"—now running from New York in the route to Boston *via* Long Island Sound, both of which were built subsequently by Mr. Webb. These boats were constructed on models of his own, which were objected to at the time by experts as impracticable and unsafe. The success of the vessels themselves, which at their initial trial accomplished twenty miles an hour, surpassing in speed any steamers previously built, afforded another proof of Mr. Webb's profound mastery of naval architecture and com-



"WALDHEIM."

RESIDENCE OF W. H. WEBB, TARRYTOWN, N. Y.



pletely overthrew his would-be critics. Another of his notable achievements was the model steamer built by him in 1866 for the Pacific Mail Steamship Company, and afterward named the "China," to run between San Francisco and China. This vessel, one of the largest, strongest and fastest merchant steamships ever constructed in this country, has a capacity for carrying one thousand two hundred passengers and two thousand tons of freight. Although she has encountered several hurricanes in the Chinese and Japanese Seas, she has weathered them all and is still considered one of the staunchest vessels in the world. The limits of a biographical sketch do not permit of reference being made to the many other important vessels built by Mr. Webb, and but a few additional examples can be given in these pages. Prominent among them may be mentioned the "Guy Mannering," a Liverpool packet, the first full three-decked merchant vessel built in this country; and the ship "Ocean Monarch," possessing greater freight capacity than any previously constructed. The latter has taken on board over seven thousand bales of cotton at a single lading, drawing no more than eighteen and a half feet of water. The clipper-ships "Challenge," "Comet," "Invincible," "Young America" and "Black Hawk" also deserve especial mention as marvels of beauty and speed. All became celebrated, and the "Comet," under Captain Gardner, made the passage between San Francisco and New York in seventy-six days. The "Young America" was recently sold to Holland merchants, after a continuous service of over thirty years without serious accident, during which time she has made a record for very many of the most rapid passages in the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans and an average of passages far surpassing that of any vessel on record.

But though so extensively engaged in ship-building, Mr. Webb did not confine his activity to that department of usefulness. He originated or took part in other enterprises, several of them of great magnitude and importance. He established an independent line of steamers between New York and San Francisco, and previously assisted in the establishment of the Pacific Mail Steamship Company. He is now the only survivor of the original board of directors of that company. He contributed as much money as any other individual to the building of the Panama Railroad and was one of the largest stockholders in that enterprise till 1872, when he sold it at the highest price ever yet obtained for it, three hundred and sixteen dollars per share (par value one hundred dollars). In 1871 he made his first visit to San Francisco by rail. Referring to it, he said that on approaching the city, across the bay, while lighted by gas "he could hardly realize that the man was still living who built the first steamer that ever entered the Golden Gate." Soon after his arrival in San Francisco he was given a public reception by the citizens generally, more especially the earliest settlers, who, in their

speeches, complimented him as one of the chief promoters of important enterprises connected with the building up of their city. Mr. Webb's capital and enterprise established in 1868 a line of steamers in the European trade and kept it running a number of years, during a part of which time it was the only American line then engaged. He also sent the first American passenger steamer into the Baltic. Subsequently he established a line of mail steamers between San Francisco and Australia *via* Honolulu and different islands in the Pacific, embracing a distance of six thousand five hundred miles, the longest continuous mail route in operation in the world. It was found that this enterprise required government aid; but, notwithstanding the recommendations of President Grant and his Cabinet and of the Post-office Committee, of both Houses, Congress refused a subsidy, and Mr. Webb after maintaining the line two years at a pecuniary loss, abandoned it till a more propitious season or wiser legislation. As a ship-builder he has won world-wide fame. Probably no greater master of the science of naval architecture has ever been produced by this or any other country, for he not only built the clipper-ships, the steamships and the armored vessels of war, the magnitude and achievements of which have made him celebrated, but he also originated and designed the plans and models for them; and in their construction made a radical departure in many points from time-honored methods, and actually revolutionized our merchant and naval marine by his daring and successful innovations. In this work he developed a high order of genius, and, using a degree of judgment and skill never surpassed, has successfully solved problems which for centuries had been the despair of those similarly engaged. In all the vessels designed by him great speed is combined with extraordinary carrying capacity and the highest attainable strength. Vessels that he built more than a quarter of a century ago remain to this day marvels of strength, durability, celerity, capacity and elegance; and some of his more recent constructions have no equals of their kind. One who has written of Mr. Webb's achievements justly remarks: "Historians and biographers have ever been quick to discern and recognize the peculiarly worthy characteristics of men who have excelled in military achievements, statesmanship, literature, science and art, while men of greater genius, keener perceptions and superior executive ability, whose unparalleled success has been less conspicuous, yet far more important, have failed to secure a place on the rolls of fame. Men whose genius and capacity have originated measures, devised the instruments and executed the plans for furthering the interests of commerce and manufactures, for national defense and the protection of national power, are often too little known, by the public at large, to be appreciated." In this latter class of public benefactors Mr. Webb holds a leading place, for, as the writer above quoted adds: "The influence

of but few men giving direction to the maritime and marine interests of this and other nations has ever equaled that of Mr. William H. Webb." Since Mr. Webb's retirement, in 1872-73, from active business he has taken a deep interest in matters pertaining to the political welfare of the city of his birth. Without ever being prominent in politics or desirous of political preferment, Mr. Webb was offered the nomination for the mayoralty of New York City on three several occasions,—first by the Democrats before the Rebellion, and afterward by the Republicans, all of which he declined. For twelve years he has been president of a body of moneyed gentlemen, large tax-payers of the city of New York, actively and constantly engaged, at their own expense, in efforts to counteract the vicious and extravagant management of the municipal affairs of that city. This organization—to the work of which he has devoted himself with marked zeal—has had a powerful effect upon the Legislature of the State, and has succeeded in bringing about the enactment of many healthful and restrictive laws, and at different times two amendments to the Constitution of the State, the last at the election in the fall of 1884, limiting the taxation and expenditures of cities, thereby saving immense sums to property-owners, especially in the city of New York. Mr. Webb is connected as an officer or director with several other organizations and corporations and benevolent institutions, and in all of them he exerts a marked influence. Rich in this world's goods,—the legitimate fruit of years of close application, unremitting labor and brilliant enterprise,—he is richer still in the respect and esteem of thousands of his fellow-citizens. In personal appearance he is of medium height and has the earnest countenance and wiry frame indicating the brain-worker. Activity seems the need of his nature, and far from seeking the rest he has so well earned, he still by choice occupies himself in endeavoring to be of service to the general public and to the unfortunate of his native city. He has traveled extensively and has a rich fund of experience and reminiscence to draw from in general conversation. His acquaintance with public men is very

large, and among them he is known and respected as a gentleman of the highest character and most unselfish patriotism. On the 9th of November, 1843, he married, in the city of New York, Miss Henrietta Amelia, daughter of Enoch Hidden. He has two sons, William Edgar and Marshall, both born in that city.

Abram O. Willsea, another prominent citizen of Greenburgh, familiarly known as "Captain" Willsea, is a grandson of Daniel Willsea, who, shortly after the Revolutionary War, removed from Poughkeepsie to Dobbs Ferry, where he purchased four hundred acres of land, now included in the estates of Cyrus W. Field, James Wilds, Jr., and Cortland Palmer. A son of Daniel Willsea, Frederick B. Willsea, who for many years was

engaged in the transportation business between New York and Dobbs Ferry, and who also conducted a country store at the latter place, married Nancy Odell, daughter of Abram Odell, well known in Westchester County. Seven children were the result of this union, of which Abram O., born at Dobbs Ferry, July 21, 1821, was the eldest.

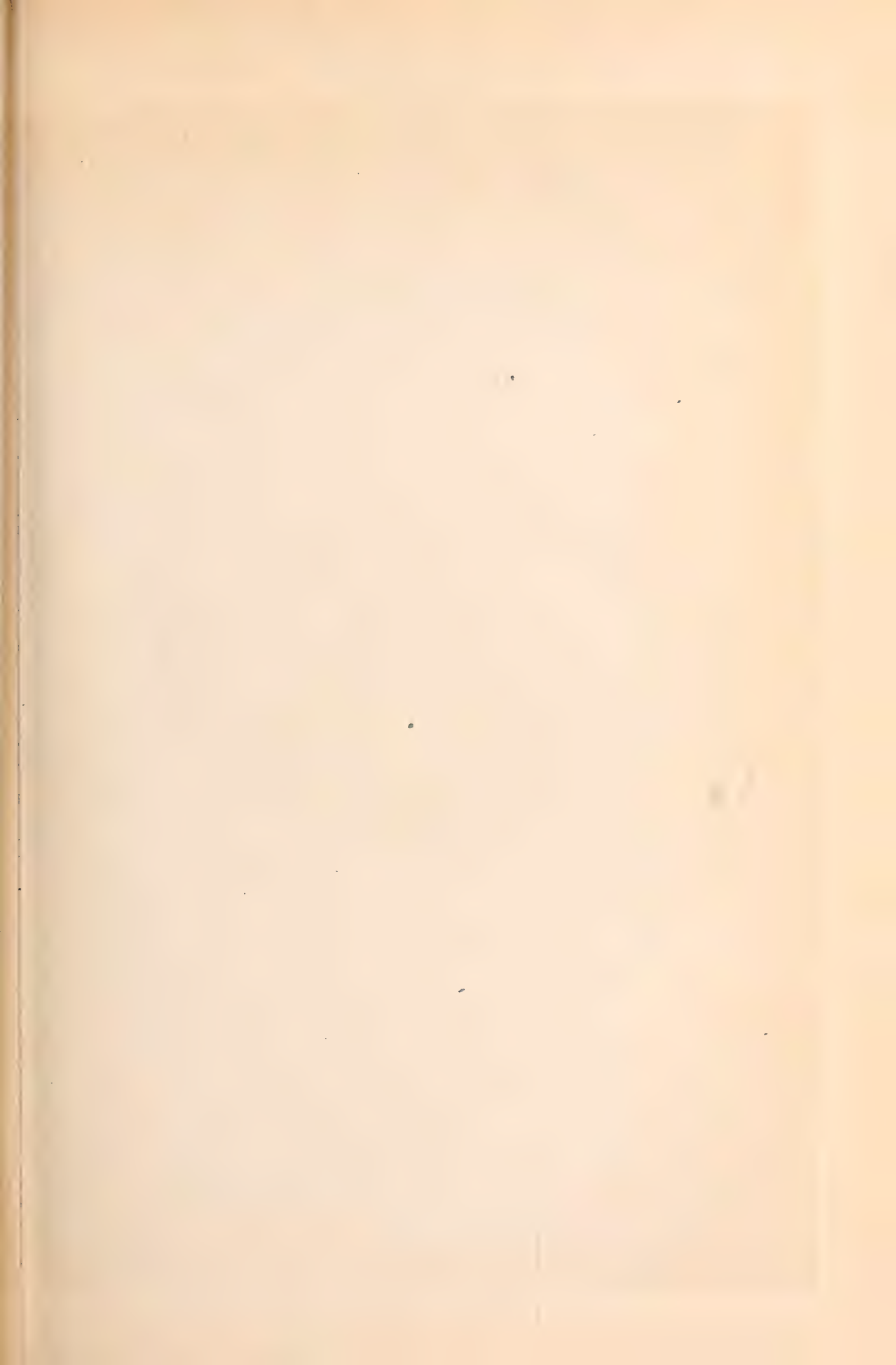
Captain Willsea spent his early days at the district school in his native place, which he left, when thirteen years of age, for the White Plains Academy, where he enjoyed the privilege of a two years' course under that thorough teacher Professor Swinburne. At fifteen he left the academy to enter his father's store, remaining for three years as a clerk, after which he

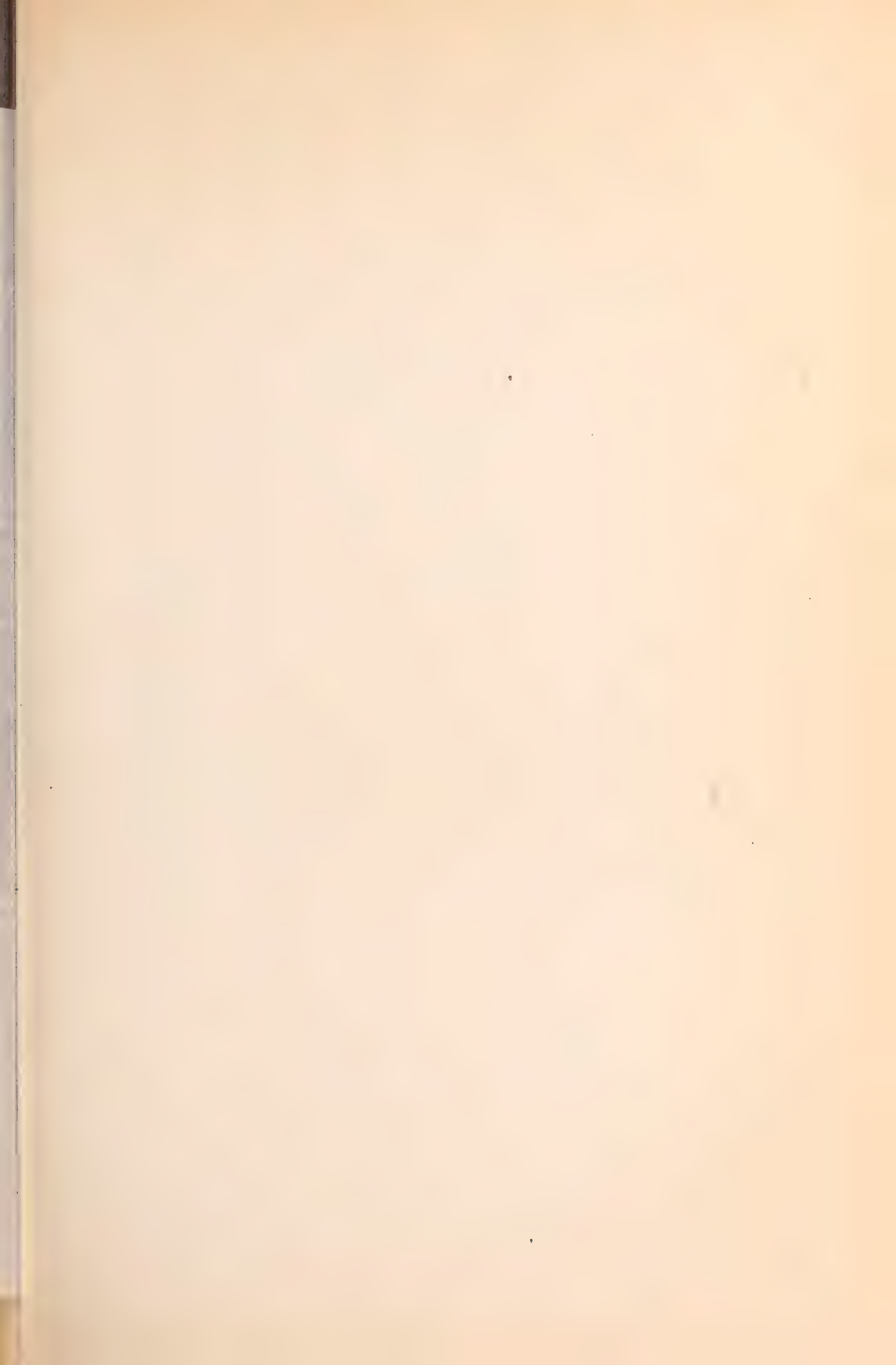
spent a short period in New York City. Returning to Dobbs Ferry, he entered his father's service, leaving it again, however, after four or five years, to identify himself with the interests of the Yonkers Freight Line, then under the control of Captain Garrison. He remained in Yonkers till 1846, when his father died, leaving the Dobbs Ferry freight business in his hands.

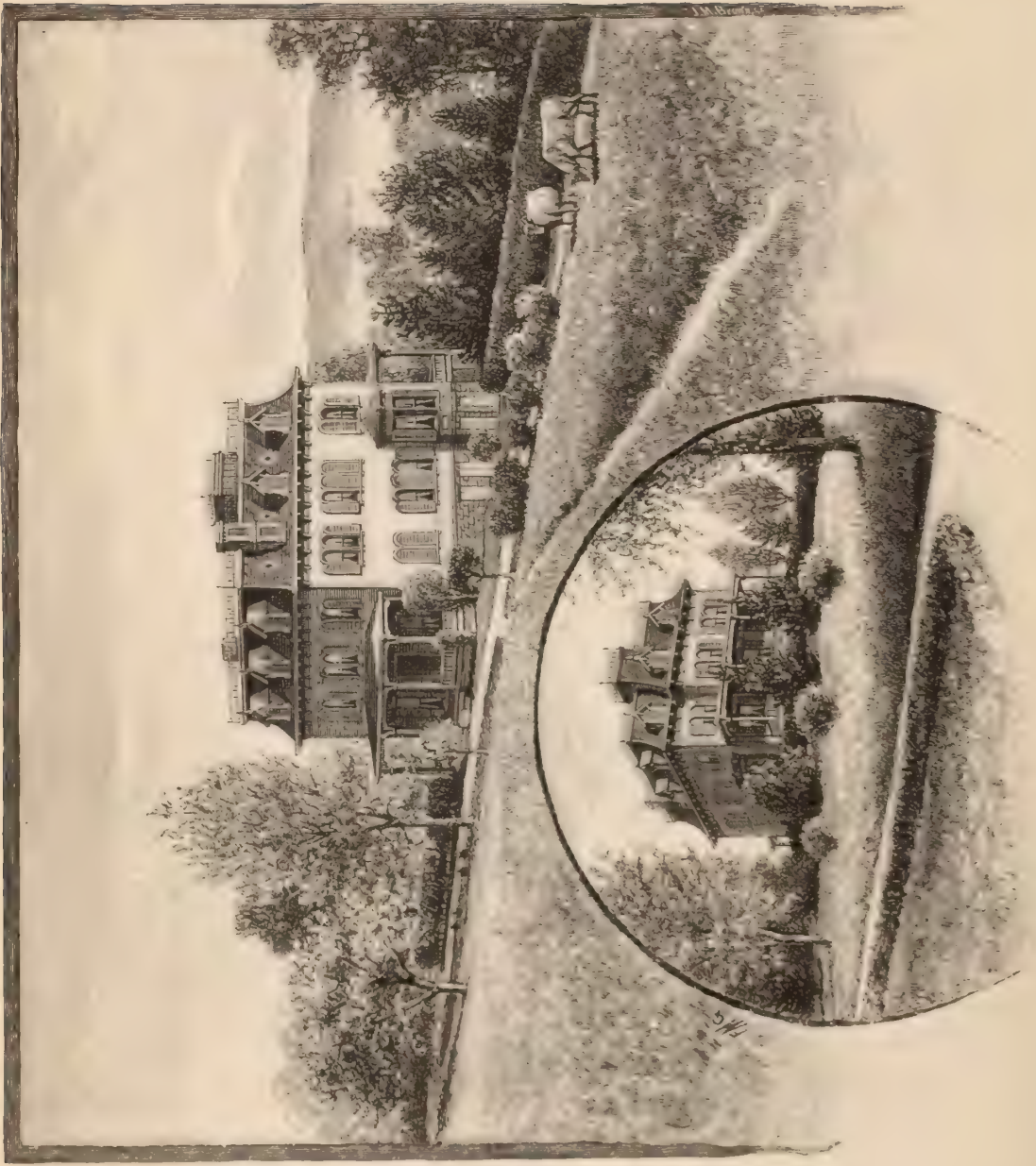
During sixteen years Captain Willsea continued to manage this enterprise, building up for himself, by a slow but sure process of honest dealing, both an ample fortune and a reputation for integrity and uprightness which may well be envied by many a richer man. That he has won for himself the entire confidence of his fellow-citizens is fully shown by the political hon-



A O Willsea







RESIDENCE OF GEORGE SILVER,

ors which have been constantly thrust upon him. In 1862, shortly after his retirement from active business, he was elected commissioner of highways for a term of three years; but, resigning at the end of the second year, was elected supervisor, which office he held for seventeen consecutive years, being three years chairman of the board. For three years he was also school trustee and president of the school board.

During the term of Governor Hoffman he was appointed port warden of the city of New York and he served as president of the board two years. He was also engaged for five years in the coal and lumber business at Dobbs Ferry, together with George B. Taylor, under the firm-name of Taylor, Willsea & Son.

For eight years Captain Willsea served as treasurer of the Greenburgh Savings-Bank, of which he was one of the founders. He was a charter member of Masonic Lodge, Diamond, No. 555, and was its first Master. He was formerly a trustee of the Methodist Church of Dobbs Ferry. He married, April 17, 1847, Miss Catherine Irving Odell, daughter of William Odell. He has four children, — Frederick W., Amanda, Ida May and Francis Eldorado.

Probably no gentleman in or about Dobbs Ferry has had more to do with its substantial progress or good government than has Captain Willsea.

Nearer the centre of the village of Tarrytown is the prominent place of Mr. Peter S. Hoe; on an elevation, farther east, the Italian villa of Mr. Charles Rockwell, the well-known astronomer; and west of Broadway is the grand old place, with its fine trees and prospects, formerly owned by General James Benedict, but now owned and occupied by his son-in-law, Captain Edward B. Cobb. It was here that General Benedict's son, the late Hon. Theodore H. Benedict, a gentleman of fine intellectual ability and cultivation, who had served in the State Legislature and won for himself the public confidence and respect, died June 15, 1885.

Farther up on the hill, to the northeast, is the splendid residence of Mr. A. S. Hatch, formerly president of the New York Stock Exchange, and well known at once for his large business relations and for his benevolent and philanthropic efforts. "The Castle" which he occupies was built of stone some thirty years ago by Mr. John J. Herrick, afterwards improved by successive owners, and now, standing on the height, presents a noble appearance to the beholder, and looks down over the village, and, indeed, over the whole region—north, west and south.

There are several pleasant places on the elevated land north of the Castle, among them that of James S. Millard, Esq., a prominent lawyer; and north of the Upper Main Street road, running east to the Northern Railroad Depot, the residence of Mr. John H. Hall; the late residence of Captain Jacob Storm, now occupied by Mount Hope Ladies' Seminary; the Sgobell place, on the east; Mr. Charles J. Gould's residence, on the west; the house of Mr. J.

Rice, who is now in California; and the houses of Messrs. William S. Wilson, the late Frances Brown, William Smith Brown, George Silver, H. A. Grant and the stone mansion built by Philo H. Perry, but now owned by the estate of the late Ambrose C. Kingsland. From nearly all these places there are fine views of the river. On the western slope of the ridge is the pleasantly-situated residence of the late Sanford Cobb, having south of it the recently-completed residence of Mr. John Rockwell, and a little to the north of it the delightful home of Mr. E. J. Blake, through whose grounds flows the Andre Brook, thus dividing his premises between Greenburgh and Mount Pleasant.

CHURCHES IN TARRYTOWN.

There are five churches in Tarrytown proper, which, following the dates of their origin, respectively, may be mentioned in the following order: 1. The Asbury Methodist Episcopal Church. 2. The Protestant Episcopal Church, known as "Christ Church." 3. The Second Reformed Church. 4. The First Baptist Church. 5. The African Methodist Episcopal Church.

ASBURY METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—It is said that as early as 1788 the Rev. Freeborn Garretson, an eminent Methodist minister, formed a circuit embracing the south and west sides of Westchester County and the towns along the river as far north as the counties of Putnam and Dutchess. In 1808 the appointment at Tarrytown had become so important as to require the erection of a church building to accommodate the growing society. Mrs. Dr. Beekman offered for the purpose a lot on Broadway, near Wildey Street; but, as most of the members lived under the hill, near the river, it was not viewed as a desirable place, and the offer was withdrawn. Mr. William Requa having then offered a lot of ground just west of where Dr. Linson now lives, south of Main Street and in Windle Park, as it is now called, the offer was accepted. On April 20, 1807, measures were taken to give the society a legal incorporation, and to erect the church building on the lot thus proposed.

In 1820 or 1821, the incorporation having lapsed by neglecting to choose trustees, the church was, in August, 1821, re-incorporated. The building that was erected on Main Street, and within Windle Park, is described as exceedingly unpretentious in appearance, but in harmony, no doubt, with the views of church architecture which were held by the Methodists at that day. In 1837 the church had so increased as to require a new and more suitable edifice. A lot was accordingly purchased from Dr. Scribner, in Washington Street, for the sum of five hundred dollars, and upon it the congregation proceeded to build the new church. The corner-stone was laid April 17, 1837, by the Rev. Marvin Richardson, presiding elder. The building was to be forty by sixty feet and the cost to be five thousand three hundred

and ninety-four dollars. The building committee were S. Swartwout, Pierre Wildey and Andrew D. Archer. At the completion of the church it was dedicated to the service of Almighty God by the Rev. Noah Levings, D.D., who also preached the sermon on Hebrews xi. 1. The Rev. J. Young and the Rev. D. Sutton were the preachers in charge. It was probably at this time that the church took the name of "the Asbury Methodist Episcopal Church," a name by which it had not been known before. A debt of two thousand dollars upon the edifice at the time of its completion was canceled two years later by subscription.

The parsonage, adjoining the church on the north, was built in 1854. It cost, together with the lot, the sum of forty-eight hundred dollars.

In 1857 the church was enlarged by an addition of twenty-five feet to its length, at a cost of thirty-eight hundred and fifty-seven dollars, of which amount Allan G. Newman gave one thousand dollars. In 1865 the entire indebtedness of the church, amounting to fifty-six hundred and twenty dollars, was happily cancelled. Since 1845 there has been a succession of twenty-one pastors, during whose terms of service there have been several, and in some cases powerful, revivals. The present pastor is the Rev. W. F. Hatfield, D.D.

CHRIST CHURCH (Episcopal).—Christ Church, Tarrytown, was organized as a parish in 1836, and the church erected the following year. The Rev. William Creighton, D.D., was the first rector, who was also the rector of Zion Church, Greenburgh, Dobbs Ferry and afterwards of St. Mary's, Beechwood, in the township of Ossining, just north of the Mount Pleasant line. On the death of the Rev. Dr. Creighton, in 1865, he was succeeded by the present rector, the Rev. J. Selden Spencer, who had been his assistant since 1853.

The church edifice has been twice enlarged and will seat about five hundred persons. It is especially interesting as having numbered among its members, from an early date, Washington Irving, who was for many years a warden of the church and a devout worshipper and communicant at its altar. Since his death, in 1859, Christ Church has been a kind of Mecca to the admirers of our great American author. His pew is still preserved, and a beautiful mural tablet, erected by the vestry, marks the tender appreciation in which he is held by the parish.

The following account of the tablet, together with a copy of the inscription upon it, as of other interesting memorials in the church, has been kindly furnished by the rector:

"In the centre is the Irving coat of arms—two royal supporters holding a shield emblazoned with holly leaves, having as a crest a hand holding a bunch of holly. The tradition is that when Robert Bruce, of Scotland, was a fugitive from King Edward, he, with William Irvine—the first Irving of whom we have any record—took refuge in a copse of holly and escaped detection. On coming out, Bruce plucked off the topmost branch of the holly, and adopted it as his own crest with the motto, *sub sole, sub umbra circue*—'thriving in sun or shade'—in prosperity or adversity. On ascending the throne, he knighted William de Irvine, his faithful friend in adversity, gave him the Castle of Drum, in Aberdeen,

and also this, his own coat of arms, in memory of his perilous escape. Holly leaves and berries are beautifully interwoven on the tablet.

"Underneath the coat of arms is the inscription—

Washington Irving
Born in the City of New York, April 3d 1783.
For many years a Communicant and Warden of this Church,
and
Repeatedly one of its Delegates to the Convention
of the Diocese.
Loved, Honored, Revered,
He fell asleep in Jesus,
November 28, 1859."

There are two tablets by the east doors of the church, which preserve the memory of two Christian women, who were among the earliest communicants of Christ Church. The inscriptions are,—

"In
memory of
Maria Phillips
(Relict of Frederick Phillips,
of Philipstown, Putnam Co., N. Y.
who departed this life the 13th day of
November A. D. 1839,
aged 68 years.
Her remains rest within the walls of
the tower of this church.
'The memory of the Just is blessed'—
Prov. x, 7."

"In
memory of
Catharine Kemble,
Born October, 1765,
and departed this life the 16th day of July
A. D. 1843.
Sister to Maria Phillips.
In death they
were not
Divided."

Monument in the Chancel to the memory of Dr. Creighton.

"In memory of
William Creighton, D. D.
Founder of this Parish, A. D. 1836.
Who as Rector from that time until his death
Devoted the faithful service of nearly 30 years
a free will offering, holy and acceptable unto God.
Born Feb. 22d, 1793.
Died April 23d, 1865.

Rector of St. Mark's Church, New York, 1816 to 1836.
Rector of Zion Church, Greenburgh, N. Y., 1836 to 1847.
Founder, 1850, and Minister of St. Mary's Church, Beechwood.
President of the Diocesan Convention 1845-1852 and 1854.
Elected to, and declined, the Episcopate of New York, 1851.
President of the House of Deputies in the General Convention, 1853-1856, 1859.

The Wardens and Vestry of Christ Church erect this monument in the Holy Place where their beloved Pastor broke the Bread of Life to the people of his charge, as a record of their love and veneration for one who, in a long and faithful ministry, and in the noblest exercise of the charities and duties of the Christian life, blessed this Parish and the neighborhood, and obtained the highest offices of trust in this Diocese, and in the church at large.

"Remember them that have the rule over you, who have spoken unto you the Word of God, whose faith follow, considering the end of their conversation."

Tablet in memory of Nathaniel B. Holmes. Inscription on a tablet as above

"In
Blessed
memory of
Nathaniel B. Holmes,
Lay-Founder
of this Parish,
1836-1881.
Entered into Rest, October 31st, 1881."

The parish of Christ Church numbers about one hundred families, five hundred souls and one hundred and fifty communicants. A very fine rectory, adjoining the church on the west, was built in 1875, and is now occupied by the rector and his family.

SECOND REFORMED CHURCH.—The Second Reformed Church of Tarrytown is somewhat peculiar, as having a church edifice that was built nearly fifteen years before the church ecclesiastical had an organized existence. The explanation lies in the fact that almost to the close of 1851 the Old Dutch Church of Sleepy Hollow, dating back to the latter part of the seventeenth century, while it consisted of a single church organization, had, from 1837 onward, really two church buildings, and, in a certain sense, two congregations. One building was known as the North Church, or the Old Church across the Pocantico Bridge, and the other as the South Church, on the east side of Broadway, fronting the river, not far above the intersection of Main Street. The South Church was built in 1837 upon land given for that purpose, together with a lot adjoining for the erection of a parsonage, which now stands upon it, by the late Abraham Storms and Julia Martling Hart, who after the decease of her first husband, William Hart, became the wife of Abraham Storms. Mr. and Mrs. Storms also gave the bell, upon which their names were cast. When this bell was replaced by a larger one, weighing one thousand two hundred and twenty-nine pounds, on December 4, 1873, that the striking of the town clock in the steeple might be heard all over the village, their names were re-cast upon it. They were always warm friends to the church. Mr. Storms died January 22, 1862, and Mrs. Storms, who continued to reside on the homestead nearly opposite the church, died May 25, 1878, in the eighty-fifth year of her age.

After the opening of the Hudson River Railroad, in 1850, there was an influx of people moving in from the city of New York, and it soon began to be evident that the increase in numbers and the variety of tastes and preferences would ultimately lead to the division of the Old Church into two bands. While many of the long-time residents clung tenaciously to the Old Church edifice on account of a thousand sacred associations, a large proportion of those who had lately come in from the city felt that it was too far from their homes and therefore too inconvenient. Instead of having a morning service in the Old North Church and an afternoon or evening service in the South Church, an arrangement was made to have simultaneous services in both churches, and the result was, finally, that instead of there being one organization there came to be two. (See the history of the Old Dutch Church of Sleepy Hollow, under the head of MOUNT PLEASANT.)

The formal separation took place in 1851. That part of the congregation that remained and continued to worship in the Old Church across the

Pocantico took the name of the First Reformed Dutch Church of Tarrytown, and the other part, that bought the South Church edifice, with its grounds and parsonage on Broadway, took the name of the Second Reformed Dutch Church of Tarrytown. The Second Church was duly organized on Monday, November 24, 1851, by a committee of the Classis of Westchester, consisting of the Rev. John L. See, of Unionville; the Rev. Philip Phelps, Jr., of Hastings; and the Elder William See, of the First Reformed Church. The sermon was preached at half-past two P.M., by the Rev. John L. See, on Isaiah 1x. 15: "A joy of many generations." After the usual religious services seventy-five members presented certificates of dismissal from the First Reformed Dutch Church of Tarrytown and were duly organized as the Second Reformed Dutch Church of Tarrytown. The male members present then elected the following officers by ballot:

Elders.—Abraham Storms, Jacob Storm, Sanford Cobb, Jr., and Andrew See.

Deacons.—William A. Wildey, Fenelon Hasbrouck, M.D., Charles F. Harrison, Andrew D. Archer.

They were ordained to their respective offices by the Rev. John Mason Ferris, on December 14, 1851.

The Rev. Mr. Ferris having resigned his position as pastor of the Old Church and having accepted the call of the Second Church, just organized, was installed as its first pastor on Sabbath evening, January 11, 1852. The sermon was preached by the Rev. Abel T. Stewart, of Greenville, afterwards pastor of the First Church. The charge was delivered to the pastor by the Rev. John L. See, of Unionville, and the charge to the congregation by the Rev. Abraham V. Wyckoff, then laboring at Greenburgh (now known as Elmsford). The congregation of the Second Church, after a few months, not only enlarged their house of worship, but erected a Sunday-school and lecture-room in the rear, and went on prosperously until late in the fall of 1854, when their pastor, the Rev. John Mason Ferris, resigned, in order to accept an appointment from the Board of Domestic Missions to labor as a domestic missionary in Chicago. During the comparatively brief period of his service there were sixteen added to the church on confession and, including the seventy-five received at the organization, one hundred and fourteen on certificate.

The sum of \$1356.46 was contributed to benevolent purposes.

After the removal of the late pastor to Chicago the church called the Rev. John A. Todd, of Griggstown, New Jersey, who accepted the call in 1855, and, having already entered upon his duties, was, about the 1st of May of that year, inducted into the pastoral office, in which he continues to serve. The sermon was preached by his former pastor, the Rev. Abraham Messler, D.D., of Somerville, New Jersey. The Second Reformed Church, as much as any other in the community, has shared the fluctuations of prosperity

and adversity that have passed over the place, but it has kept on the even tenor of its way. Beginning with the first report under the present pastorate, submitted in April, 1856, and including the last annual report in April, 1885, there have been received into the church three hundred and fifty-seven members on confession of faith and two hundred and ninety-three on certificate, making a total of six hundred and fifty. During the same period the church has contributed to various benevolent objects, outside of itself, the sum of \$41,145.05, and it has raised for its running expenses, repairs and incidental needs the sum of \$120,327.25. The church is happily out of debt.

About the beginning of 1865 the interior of the church was reconstructed by the removal of the front gallery, and very much beautified, and a large new organ provided and set up, which was used for the first time in public worship on Sabbath, March 19, 1865.

On December 26, 1866, it was resolved by a large majority, at a meeting of the congregation, to relieve the pastor and consistory of some of their burdens, by the election of seven trustees to take charge of the temporalities of the church. The persons chosen were Jacob Storm, Sanford Cobb, John S. Mitchell, William Hoge, John Butler, Jr., William B. Hatch and Charles T. Harvey. The necessary legal steps having been taken, the new board of trustees was duly organized on January 1, 1867, by the election of the following officers: President, Jacob Storm; Treasurer, Sanford Cobb; Secretary, Charles T. Harvey. The present board, in February, 1886, consists of Dr. John J. Linson, president; David A. Rowe, treasurer; Dowah D. Tallman, secretary; and Isaac B. Lovett, Edmund R. Vanderbilt and Lucius T. Yale as members. There is one vacancy.

In 1868 an addition was made to the lecture and Sunday-school rooms which afforded increased accommodations, and the parsonage adjoining was also improved by building on an extension toward the east. In 1875 the whole church edifice was renovated and put into a more attractive condition through the spirit and energy of the ladies of the congregation. At the same time a bequest left to the church by John S. Mitchell, a beloved member and trustee, who died on February 1, 1875, was appropriated to putting in ten beautiful stained-glass windows in place of the old ones. Upon the third window on each side of the church was inscribed, by direction of the committee, the monogram of the donor, "J. S. M.," with a text of Scripture under it; on the north side, "Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord," and on the south side, "Precious in the sight of the Lord is the death of his saints." In front of the pulpit, as a memorial of Sanford Cobb, an honored elder, stands a massive baptismal font of polished Vermont marble, presented by his widow. It bears around the bowl the inscription, "One Lord, one Faith, one Baptism," and around the shaft and base, "In memory of San-

ford Cobb, for 25 years an Elder of this Church." Mr. Cobb died on May 22, 1876.

On July 17, 1877, about half-past one o'clock in the afternoon, while a terrific thunder shower was passing over the village, the church steeple was struck by lightning, which scattered the broken fragments far and wide, and, in a curious manner, cut the letters "VII" out of the dial of the town clock as if done with the keenest knife. The lightning set fire to the steeple, which was soon wrapped in flames. Fortunately the rain was falling in torrents, which prevented the fire from spreading to the roof and to the parsonage near the church on the north. The firemen with great energy and effort finally extinguished the flames, but the church presented at the close a most doleful appearance with its steeple burned to the roof and everywhere covered with blackened cinders. The lately frescoed ceiling was deluged with water, and it became necessary to renovate the entire church, as well as to erect a new steeple. The fire occurred on Tuesday. By the following Sunday the *débris* had been somewhat cleared up, and the pastor preached to a large congregation on Exodus iii. 2, 3: "And the Angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a flame of fire out of the midst of a bush; and he looked, and, behold, the bush burned with fire, and the bush was not consumed. And Moses said, I will now turn aside, and see this great sight, why the bush is not burnt." A bank of white flowers, having in the centre the word "SAVED" wrought in flowers of scarlet color, was placed on the table in front of the pulpit by a lady who loved the church, Mrs. Edmund R. Vanderbilt, thus expressing her thankful feeling.

The consistory of the church at the present time consists of the following officers: Elders, John Vanderbilt, Ward Carpenter, Israel C. See, Isaac B. Lovett and George Silver; Deacons, James Martin, George Bailey Powell, James T. Trevillian, Lounsbury Finch and Harry W. Linson.

The consistory in 1885 reported on its church roll three hundred and thirty-six members.

In describing the church Bolton says: "This building is constructed of brick. The front presents a colonnade of the Ionic order, surmounted with a wooden tower and spire." Above the entrance is placed the following inscription engraven into a white marble tablet inserted into the front wall:

"Reformed Protestant Dutch Church. Erected A. D. 1837.

"In all places where I record my name I will come unto thee, and I will bless thee."—Exodus xx., 24."

There has been in connection with this church during its history, either as officers, members, pew-holders or attendants, a succession of men remarkable for character and ability in their several spheres. Among them may be mentioned Abraham Storms, Jacob Storm, Benson Ferris, Sanford Cobb, Charles Starr, Andrew D. Archer, Stiles P. York, Charles F. Harrison, William P. Lyon, Samuel Wood, John C.

Mallory, John Butler, Jr., Hon. Joshua M. Van Cott, Edward C. Delavan, John S. Mitchell, William Hoge, J. G. Dudley, William H. Townsend, Dr. Alexander N. Gunn, Dr. Horace Caruthers, Dr. Fenelon Hasbrouck, Dr. John J. Linson, Dr. Horace Hatch, Hon. L. E. Chittenden, William B. Hatch, Henry L. Clapp, A. S. Hatch, Frank Vincent, Captain Edward B. Cobb, Edward S. Jaffray, Henry L. Douglas, Hon. John W. Douglas, E. J. Blake, James S. Millard, Justice Elias Mann, L. T. Yale, Robert Sewell, Samuel B. Schieffelin, Ralph Wells, Professor Robert C. Flack, Robert M. Pease, Robert Warnock, Col. Latham C. Strong, the poet, Edward K. Mott, Captain Jacob B. Odell, Captain F. Frost, M. D. Raymond, editor, David H. Paige, Edward J. Peters, John B. Sardy, Col. Nicholas Smith, Ward Carpenter, Isaac B. Lovett, Professor David A. Rowe, S. J. Minasian, George Silver, General Alexander Hamilton.

A number of clergymen also have either been attendants upon its services or have entered the Christian ministry from it, among them Rev. Francis C. Woodworth, editor, and author of the "Snow-Bird Song," "So merrily singing his chick-a-dee-dee;" the Rev. Oliver E. Cobb, of Flushing, Long Island; the Rev. Henry N. Cobb, D.D., formerly missionary to Persia, but now corresponding secretary of the Board of Foreign Missions of the Reformed Church in America; the Rev. Sanford H. Cobb, of Grand Rapids, Michigan; the Rev. William J. Hill, the Rev. Henry H. Rice, of Sacramento, California; the Rev. Frederick J. Jackson, the Rev. and Professor John A. Paine, formerly of Robert College, Constantinople, and the Rev. George Rockwell.

THE FIRST BAPTIST CHURCH.—What is now "The First Baptist Church of Tarrytown" was organized under the name of "The Beekman Baptist Church of Tarrytown," by a council of delegates representing several Baptist Churches in New York City and in Westchester County, toward the latter part of November, 1843. The number of original members received on certificate from other churches was only twelve altogether. Its first place of worship was in a small building on the southeast corner of Cortlandt Street and College Avenue. Its first pastor was the Rev. Charles H. Underhill, of Carmel, Putnam County, New York. His salary consisted of two hundred dollars in money from the congregation, his fuel and a donation visit, and two hundred dollars promised him by the Hudson River Baptist Association.

It was a small beginning, but the church was united and energetic, and it went on increasing in membership every year. At the close of 1844 it had forty-two members, at the close of 1845 it had fifty-three, and at the close of 1846 it had sixty-three. At the last-mentioned date the church was notified that the building in which they worshipped would, on June 1, 1847, be required for another purpose, and that they would be obliged to move out. The trustees thereupon took measures to secure a desirable site for

the erection of a new church edifice, and, finally, purchased of the late Martin Smith a piece of land on the northwest corner of Main and Washington Streets, where the Wendle brick buildings now stand, for the sum of seven hundred and twenty dollars. This, together with the amount required to erect the new church edifice, was obtained principally through the efforts of the Rev. Mr. Underhill, the pastor. The building, however, was not ready to be occupied at the time the congregation had to leave the house in Cortlandt Street, and Mr. Allen Newman, a worthy Methodist brother, allowed the church to worship in his school-room, on College Avenue, just west of Broadway, and next to what is now St. Mark's Episcopal Church. The room was in the Academy building, which was afterwards transformed into the house in which the Misses Metcalfe now hold the Home Institute, a school for young ladies.

At the close of 1847 the church numbered fifty-nine members. The Rev. Mr. Underhill continued his labors until June, 1849, when he accepted a call to Peekskill. After leaving Tarrytown the Rev. Mr. Underhill died, but his remains were brought back for burial, and now lie in the Baptist Church plot in the Sleepy Hollow Cemetery.

The new church building having been completed south of the Andre Brook, in the township of Greenburgh, and in Tarrytown proper, a new registry was made out and recorded April 19, 1847. The original name of the Church, "The Beekman Baptist Church of Tarrytown," was then dropped, and the name of "The First Baptist Church of Tarrytown" was substituted for it, a name which it still retains. The cost of the new building was about five thousand dollars. The pulpit having become vacant by the resignation of the Rev. Mr. Underhill, a call was given to the Rev. Abel P. Buel, who accepted it, and entered upon his duties in 1849. He continued to serve the church until 1857, when he resigned, and was succeeded by the Rev. William H. Wines, of Boston, afterward Dr. Wines, who held the pastoral office until toward the close of 1866. He was an earnest and successful worker, and the church greatly prospered under his ministry. He was also a man of sterling patriotism, and during the War of the Rebellion he threw the whole weight of his influence, as did nearly all the ministers in the place, in favor of the great struggle for the Union. It is but justice to the pulpit of Tarrytown to say that its trumpet gave no uncertain sound in those dark days of trial and danger to the republic. While the Rev. Mr. Wines was pastor there was a religious awakening, especially in the southern part of the village, and the Asbury Methodist Episcopal Church, the Baptist Church and the Second Reformed Church all received large accessions to their membership and a new impulse in their work. The pastors and churches co-operated with great harmony in frequent Union Meetings, and in other ways, for the Christian cause.

During Mr. Wines' ministry the church building was enlarged at an expense of four thousand dollars, and the membership, when he resigned in October, 1866, to accept a call to Poughkeepsie, had risen to one hundred and fifty. The church called the Rev. T. Edwin Brown, of Brooklyn, at a salary of three thousand dollars, as the Rev. Mr. Wines' successor, but the call was declined. In November, 1867, a call was extended to the Rev. David M. Reeves, late of Alabama, at a salary of two thousand dollars and the parsonage, which he accepted, and continued in the pastoral office until the latter part of 1870, when he resigned. In consequence of imperfect health the Rev. Mr. Reeves was for some time obliged to be absent, and the pulpit was filled by the Rev. Halsey W. Knapp, of New York. His labors were very acceptable, and benefited the church. The Rev. Mr. Reeves afterwards left the Baptist denomination and entered the ministry of the Presbyterian Church. He is now the Rev. Dr. Reeves, pastor of the Presbyterian Church, Johnstown, New York. During his ministry at Tarrytown he was noted for scholarship and fluent eloquence in public speaking. At the time of his resignation the church had one hundred and seventy-seven members. His successor was the Rev. George O. Whitney, a recent graduate from Hamilton Seminary, who accepted the church's call toward the close of 1871. But in about a year after entering upon his duties he had a severe attack of typhus fever, from which he did not recover. His death, in the morning of his days, was deeply lamented. His dust lies in the plot of the Baptist Church in the Sleepy Hollow Cemetery. During his pastorate six were baptized and fifteen received by letter.

After his death several attempts were made to secure a pastor, but without success, until on November 9, 1873, a call was extended to the Rev. George M. Stone, D.D., who accepted it, and entered upon his duties in January, 1874. The church prospered under his earnest ministry, fifty-nine having been baptized and twenty-five added by letter up to about the middle of 1879, when he resigned to take charge of a church at Hartford, Connecticut. It was while Dr. Stone was pastor that the new church edifice on Broadway was begun, in the spring of 1875. The financial panic delayed the completion of the church, however, until June, 1881, when, happily, it was dedicated to the worship of Almighty God with its pecuniary obligations all paid. The church is a fine stone edifice, and an ornament to the town. It cost in the neighborhood of sixty thousand dollars, an amount which required a hard struggle to raise, but it was finally done.

Dr. Stone's successor was the Rev. George E. Horr, Jr., who was called in 1879, and continued as pastor until the early part of 1884, when he resigned in order to accept a call to the Baptist Church of Charlestown, Boston, in whose service he still remains. During his ministry in Tarrytown four-

teen were baptized and twenty-three added to the church by letter, and the new edifice, on the east side of Broadway, south of Main Street, was completed, paid for and solemnly set apart to the uses of public worship. It was largely due to the indefatigable exertions of the Rev. Dr. Stone and the Rev. Mr. Horr that this heavy undertaking was brought to so auspicious a conclusion.

A few months after the Rev. Mr. Horr's resignation, in 1884, the Rev. Malcom McGregor accepted the church's call, and became its pastor. He laid down its responsibilities, however, in July, 1885, within a year or less after he had assumed them. The church at present is without a pastor, but the pulpit is occupied by the Rev. Mr. Hanna, as a stated supply, until April 1, 1886. The church has for years been sustained through storm and sunshine by a band of earnest Christians, men and women, whose courage and devotion are worthy of the highest praise. Among them may be mentioned with special honor Deacon Cornelius Curtiss and wife, Deacon John Bell and the late Mrs. Elizabeth L. Freeland. The church has received also most generous contributions from Mr. Lewis Roberts and Mr. John H. Hall.

AFRICAN METHODIST EPISCOPAL ZION CHURCH.—The African Methodist Episcopal Zion Church is the youngest of all the churches in Tarrytown. It is situated on the south side of Wildey Street, between Orchard Street and Mechanics Avenue. The ecclesiastical body was organized in 1864. Previous to that time the colored Christians of the place had worshipped in one or the other of the churches in the village, as their preference or association determined. But the Rev. Jacob Thomas, Henry Foster, Amanda Foster and Harmond Jamerson met in the house of Henry Foster, Tarrytown, in 1864, and entered into an association, which was afterwards formally constituted and acknowledged by the higher church authorities as the African Methodist Episcopal Zion Church of Tarrytown, in connection with the African Methodist Episcopal Zion Church of the State of New York. This society engaged the room over Odell's store, on the southwest corner of Washington and Main Streets, as their place of public worship. The building is now occupied as a store by the Requa Brothers. The society began with three members, but it soon increased in numbers, and found its present accommodations too strait for it. Accordingly, in 1866, it removed to ampler quarters in the old Audre Brook Brewery building, now known as the shoe-factory of Messrs. G. & D. Silver. Its pastor at the time was the Rev. Henry Dumpson, acting under the supervision of the Rev. Jacob Thomas. The Rev. Henry Brown, a local preacher of the African Church, also rendered valuable service in sustaining the enterprise. He often walked from his house to Tarrytown, a distance of eighteen miles, and back in order to minister to the little flock and cheer

them in their effort. He afterwards removed to Tarrytown, where he became blind, and finally died on July 1, 1882. He was a zealous and warm-hearted Christian.

The idea of building a new house of worship seems to have originated in the mind of the late Henry Foster. Although he did not live to see it realized, he left it as a dying charge to his wife, who still survives, to do her utmost in order that his desire might be accomplished. Feeling the sacredness of the charge thus laid upon her, she engaged in the effort at great sacrifice, and at last had the happiness to see that the object was gained. The Rev. Jacob Thomas lent his assistance, and by their combined and persevering labors a site was secured in Wildey Street, and the work of building commenced.

The building committee was composed of some of the best citizens in the community, and, with the exception of the Rev. Jacob Thomas and Mrs. Amanda Foster, belonged to other churches,—three of them to the Second Reformed Church and one to the Asbury Methodist Episcopal. The committee were the Rev. Jacob Thomas, William Hoge, Hervey F. Lombard, Edward B. Cobb, J. O. Dorr and Mrs. Amanda Foster. The Rev. Mr. Thomas was chairman, Mrs. Foster was treasurer, William Hoge assistant treasurer and Edward B. Cobb secretary.

The corner-stone was laid on October 10, 1867, by Bishop William H. Bishop, since deceased, who also addressed the assembly present, and was followed in appropriate addresses by the Rev. Dr. Clark, of the Episcopal Church at Elizabeth, New Jersey, by the Hon. William E. Dodge, and by the Rev. J. A. Todd, pastor of the Second Reformed Church. The new edifice, built of brick, was completed in the latter part of 1867 at a cost of \$9125.85, and the congregation took possession of it with fervent gratitude and rejoicing. The church has at present about forty members, and there are about thirty-five scholars in the Sunday-school connected with it. The church has had a succession of eight pastors, including the present incumbent, the Rev. Thomas O. R. Williams. In its peculiar field of operations the church is exerting a wholesome influence and ought to be sustained.

YOUNG MEN'S LYCEUM.—The "Young Men's Lyceum" was organized on June 22, 1866, as a Reading-Room and Debating Club. The place in which the meeting was held was the next building north of Silver's Shoe-Factory, then used by the Rev. Mr. Guilbert as a school-house. Its original members were the Rev. Edmund Guilbert, who was also its first president, W. Parnell, J. O. Jones, E. W. Hawes, M. Purdy, W. F. Metcalfe, E. M. Purdy, J. Kingsland and G. Herringshaw. In May, 1869, the Lyceum was incorporated by act of the Legislature under the name and title of the "Young Men's Lyceum." After holding its meetings for several years in different buildings, as convenience

or necessity required, the organization at length obtained sufficient funds to purchase a lot, and to erect a suitable building of its own upon it, on the corner of Broadway and Central Avenue, directly opposite the Second Reformed Church. The Lyceum Association now owns this property, and in addition to it a well-selected library of fourteen hundred volumes. It was all acquired by donations and contributions from the people of Tarrytown and vicinity, and it belongs essentially to them. It has been a popular institution, and its influence for good has often been felt in the community.

The chief features of the Lyceum are its library, its public discussions of popular subjects and its occasional lectures.

In 1884-85 an effort was made to change the name of the institution, and in some degree its scope and aims, but it met with such decided disapproval from the friends of the Lyceum that the whole matter was quietly dropped.

PUBLIC HALLS.—Tarrytown is amply supplied with public halls. They are three in number. The first is Smith's Opera-House, built on the southeast corner of Washington and Wildey Streets, in 1884, and owned by Mr. Henry T. Smith, editor and proprietor of the *Tarrytown Herald*. The hall will accommodate an audience of from eight hundred to one thousand persons. The second is Masonic Hall, on the southeast corner of Central Avenue and Orchard Street, and extending through to Cottage Place. It was built by the Masonic fraternity, partly to meet their own wants, in 1885. Its corner-stone bears the inscription on the side toward Cottage Place, "A. D. 1885," and on the side toward Central Avenue, "A. L. 5885. Hishshahmer." The last word is Hebrew, and means, "Be thou cautious," or "Take thou heed." It will comfortably seat about six hundred. The third is Music Hall, on the north side of Main Street, one door west of Broadway. It was completed in 1886, and is owned by Mr. William L. Wallace. It is a magnificent hall, capable of comfortably seating in the galleries and on the floor an audience of twelve hundred, and will accommodate on an emergency fifteen hundred persons.

PUBLIC SCHOOL.

SCHOOLS IN TARRYTOWN.—There are three principal schools in Tarrytown proper, all of which are performing a useful service in their several spheres. The oldest, as it is the largest, is the public school known as "Union Free School, No. 1, Town of Greenburgh," and the two others are private boarding and day-schools for girls and young ladies.

The Union Free School, owes its existence to the liberality and public spirit of the late Captain Nathan Cobb. He having offered to give the land for the purpose, and to erect the school building at his own expense, a special school-meeting was held on March 16, 1850, at which it was resolved that "the offer of

Captain Nathan Cobb to erect a suitable school building and to donate the same, together with the lot on which it stands, to the district," be accepted.

Captain Cobb accordingly erected a two-story and basement brick building, thirty-two by forty-four feet, and furnished it with all the appliances necessary for conducting a school. The entire cost of this undertaking was four thousand dollars, without including the value of the lot.

The records of the school show that the whole number of pupils in attendance during the year ending February 1, 1852, was two hundred and thirty-two, while the average daily attendance for the same period was one hundred and twenty-five.

The school was reorganized and became a Union Free School December 30, 1854, having the following Board of Education: Gilbert T. Davis, Cornelius Curtiss, N. B. Holmes, J. Q. Fowler and Ward Carpenter.

In 1867 a brick addition, thirty-two by forty-four feet, consisting of two stories and basement, and costing six thousand two hundred dollars, was joined to the original building previously erected by Captain Cobb.

In 1882 the school-house was again enlarged a second time, by the erection, on the west side of the original building, of a brick structure, twenty-six by forty-two feet, and three stories high, at a cost of eight thousand two hundred and forty dollars.

As it is now arranged, the building has six fine, large class-rooms, an assembly-room, a library-room and two play-rooms, all properly heated, ventilated and furnished for the purposes intended. The public school library contains twenty-three hundred volumes. The corps of instruction consists of seven persons, one being the well-qualified principal, Mr. Homer A. Wilcox, who is assisted by six female teachers. The school can accommodate three hundred pupils, and has now an average daily attendance of two hundred and sixty. In respect to its equipment it ranks among the first schools in the county. The following-named gentlemen compose the present Board of Education: James S. Millard, William T. Lockwood, L. T. Yale, R. B. Coutant, M.D., and Nelson McCutchen.

MISS BULKLEY'S SEMINARY.—The next school in chronological order, following the date of its establishment, is the boarding and day-school for young ladies, known as Miss Bulkley's Seminary. It was first opened in the house now occupied by Mr. Theodore H. Mead, in Van Wart Street, opposite the grounds of Mr. Frank Vincent, by Miss Jane R. Bulkley and Miss H. L. Bulkley, in April, 1859. In 1870 it was removed into the large and commodious brick building on Broadway, nearly opposite the present Baptist Church, with pleasant grounds attached, and all the facilities for the successful prosecution of its work. Miss Jane R. Bulkley died on January 13, 1873, since which time the school

has been carried on by Miss H. L. Bulkley and Miss E. C. Plumley. Its history has been marked by great prosperity, and it has trained over thirteen hundred young ladies, and sent them out for usefulness in the world.

MOUNT HOPE SEMINARY.—The third and last school referred to is "Mount Hope Ladies' Seminary," under the care of Robert C. Flack, A.M., principal. It was established in its present fine location, commanding the most beautiful views of the Hudson, in 1877. Professor Flack is a graduate of Union College, and has been teaching since 1859, with the exception of a year which he spent in traveling through Europe. He is assisted by accomplished teachers in the several departments, and the instruction is faithfully given in them all. The local situation and the moral influence in the school are all that could be desired.

THE PRESS IN TARRYTOWN.—Notwithstanding the early settlement of Tarrytown, the history of newspapers in the village does not go back beyond 1846. It was near to New York and the press of that city met the demands of the public for news. The first attempts here were fitful, and never produced any permanent result. In answer to inquiry, it is stated, by the Rev. George Rockwell, who, as a student in the Irving Institute, had opportunity to know, that with the exception of one or two printed "broadsides," in the nature of lampoons, that were circulated in the village, there was no serious attempt to establish a paper until the summer of 1846. A prospectus was then issued inviting support. It was signed "Pocantico," and the paper was to be called the *Pocantico Gazette*. About September 1, 1846, this paper appeared. It was a sheet of eight small pages, dignified in tone—quite sufficiently so, to say the least—carefully gotten up, and contained several articles now of some value, as indicating the local condition of things at that time. There were also a list of churches and ministers, of teachers and business men in Tarrytown, and an account of the freighting and traveling facilities then possessed. It was printed in New York, and though the publisher's name was not given, it was generally understood that the originator of it was Mr. William P. Lyon, principal of the Irving Institute, a flourishing boarding-school on Beekman Avenue. It could not have been a pecuniary success, for only one number of it was ever published.

In November, 1846, however, a smaller paper was published from the Irving Institute, and bore the name of the *Irving Banner*. It was edited by the teachers, and as it was gotten up chiefly for the literary improvement of those in the school, it drew its support, for the most part, from its students, and from their parents living out of the place. It continued to be published monthly for a year, when the effort was abandoned altogether.

During the time of its publication some people outside of the school, actuated by jealousy, probably,

attempted to subject the *Banner* and its conductors to a little ridicule. A couple of burlesque papers were accordingly published at intervals, and circulated through the village. One was called *The Pocantico Gazette*, and *Sleepy Hollow Whole Hog Standard*, and the other *The Pocantico Gazette and Sleepy Hollow Ring Tail Roarer*. Both were evidently from the same source. At the head of the first column in the first number of *The Whole Hog Standard*, dated December, 1846, is this announcement,—

"The *Pocantico Gazette and Sleepy Hollow Whole Hog Standard* will be issued at our office, in the village of Tarrytown, on the first of every month, and served to subscribers at 6 cts. per number. Advertisements inserted on the most liberal terms. Marriages, births and deaths inserted gratis.
"SNAPP & FLASH, Editors."

The articles were very well written, and, as a specimen, a single paragraph may be given to illustrate the way in which the writer took off the *Irving Banner*. That paper had published an article on the "Wants of Tarrytown," such as a public hall, street improvements, etc., to which *The Whole Hog Standard* thus refers,—

"The wants of Tarrytown are like the wants of most other places. The people generally want to have everything their own way, and perhaps want more money. It is thought there are some who want office and some who want credit, some want employment and probably some want meat—the merchants and mechanics want more customers and better pay—the doctors want more patients, the people want less doctors, the lawyers want rich clients and more litigation, and those they already have want more common sense. There are some old bachelors who want spunk enough to get married, and it is whispered around that there are some young ladies who want husbands. We think this may be a mistake; if we should discover that it is we will correct it in our next number."

These attempts all died out, and were, at intervals, followed by others equally unsuccessful, until October 17, 1868, when the first number of *The Tarrytown Advertiser* was published by Mr. James H. Smith. His printing-office was first located on the north side of Main Street, west of the railroad, afterwards removed to Orchard Street, in the old Irving Hall (which burned down) and, finally, in the lower part of the building now occupied by the Tarrytown National Bank. After Mr. Smith had published his paper for about a year, he changed its name to *The Tarrytown Argus*, a name which it still bears. In the spring of 1875 he sold the paper and establishment to Mr. M. D. Raymond, of Clinton, New York. Mr. Raymond soon took charge of it, and issued the first number under his management on May 1, 1875. The paper has been a useful vehicle of intelligence to the community, and always loyal to good morals and public order. Mr. Smith, on selling the *Argus*, removed to the eastern side of the county and established the *New Rochelle Press*.

A number of other papers have appeared and disappeared in the meanwhile—the *Greenburgh Messenger*, the *Greenburgh Gazette*, the *Sunnyside Press*, the *Town Pump*, etc.

The other paper now published in the village is *The Tarrytown Herald*. It was established in 1883,

by Mr. Henry T. Smith as editor and proprietor. He consolidated with it the *Port Chester Leader*, which he had previously published, since 1878. Its attitude is always friendly to every good cause.

INCORPORATION OF TARRYTOWN.—On December 9, 1870, an election was held, pursuant to notice, at the office of Elias Mann, Esq., justice of the peace, for the purpose of ascertaining the wishes of the inhabitants in regard to the question of incorporation. The result showed two hundred and seventy-three votes in favor of incorporation, and eighty-five against it. The village was accordingly incorporated, and the following-named gentlemen were elected its first officers under the new system: President, Jacob Odell; Trustees, James Alexander, James W. Scribner, M.D., Nelson McCutchen; Treasurer, William I. Wood; Collector, John De Revere.

The Board of Water Commissioners, having charge of the water supply for the village, was organized May 6, 1875, with the following officers: President, Nelson McCutchen; Secretary, Gulian Verplanck; Treasurer, James W. Scribner, M.D.

The artesian well was ordered by the board of trustees, February 1, 1881, to be sunk and prepared in order to supply the village with water. The contract was awarded to Mr. D. Dull.

FIRE DEPARTMENT.—The first concerted and vigorous attempt toward securing an organization to protect the property of citizens against fire was made at a meeting in the brick building on the corner of Wildey and Washington Streets, February 29, 1860. The result was that, after a series of resolutions had been adopted, a company was organized under the name of "The Conqueror Hook and Ladder and Bucket Company," and officers were duly chosen. In the same year a lot was purchased and a building erected in Elizabeth Street, as a truck-house, where the truck and the fire-extinguishing apparatus were to be kept.

Another company, known as the "Rescue Engine Company," was organized April 6, 1860, with a membership of thirty-eight men. An engine was purchased and a building erected in the lower part of Wildey Street, near Orchard. The building was afterward sold and converted into a dwelling-house, which was owned and occupied by the late Samuel Wood. In 1861 the members of "Rescue Engine Company," almost in a body—the precise number was thirty-three—volunteered into the service of their country and enlisted in the Union army. In consequence of this fact the company was forced, in 1865, to disband.

At the present time there are within the corporation limits three hose companies and one hook-and-ladder company. With the system of hydrants now established, and with the great pressure of the water from the reservoir on the hill, these organizations, it is believed, are competent to cope with any ordinary fire within reaching distance of the line of water-pipes.

In addition to these active organizations, there is also an association styled "The Exempt Firemen's Association." It was formed rather for friendly and social intercourse among the members, and also to afford relief to the families of members in case of death.

BANKS IN TARRYTOWN.

There are two banking institutions in Tarrytown and they are both worthy of the local pride with which they are regarded.

WESTCHESTER COUNTY SAVINGS BANK.—The older of the two is the "Westchester County Savings-Bank," whose honorable history, at the writer's request, has been succinctly given by its present treasurer, William G. Weston, Esq., as follows:

"The Westchester County Savings-Bank is the oldest institution of the kind in the county. It was organized, August, 1853, under a special charter of the Legislature, passed in July of that year. The charter members were Nathaniel B. Holmes, John Thomas, Elijah Yerks, James W. Smith, Henry Sheldon, George H. Swords, Charles F. Harrison, James Watson Webb, Jacob Storm, Loyal S. Pond, Nathaniel Bayles, Bela S. Squire, Uriah Fields, Josiah Q. Fowler, Andrew D. Archer, Sanford Cobb, George D. Morgan, Washington Irving, Edmund Coffin, Shadrach Taylor, Cornelius W. Thomas, Elisha Horton and Samuel C. Nichols.

"The officers chosen at its organization were Nathaniel B. Holmes, president and treasurer; John Thomas and Elisha Horton, vice-presidents; Uriah Field, secretary; and Elijah Yerks, counsel. It was first opened for business September 10th, in the office of Elias Mann, on Main Street, but was removed the following week to the adjoining building on the west, which had in the mean time been rented for that purpose, where it remained until the purchase of its present location, corner of Broadway and Main Street, in 1864. For some years after its commencement the bank was opened only on Saturday of each week, from five to eight o'clock p.m. in summer, and from four to six o'clock in winter.

"In 1857, Nathaniel Bayles succeeded Mr. Holmes as president and treasurer, and held those positions until 1864, when the offices were separated, and Frank Vincent, who had succeeded Washington Irving as trustee in August, 1859, became president, while Mr. Bayles continued as treasurer until 1867, at which time William G. Weston was chosen his successor. Mr. Vincent remained president for fifteen years, conducting its affairs with great energy and success. He retired in 1879, and was succeeded by Benson Ferris, the present incumbent.

"The bank has been successful beyond the most sanguine expectations of its founders, for they never looked forward to its having over \$50,000 on deposit. It has, however, at this time about twenty-five hundred depositors, whose deposits aggregate more than \$800,000, and has also accumulated a surplus of over \$120,000."

The ancestors of Mr. Ferris, the president of the Tarrytown National Bank, were an old New England family who settled in Greenwich, Conn. His grandfather, Oliver Ferris, was an officer in the Revolution, and served under General Montgomery in the invasion of Canada and was present, in 1775, at the siege and capture of St. Johns. At that time he was quartermaster of his regiment, with the rank of lieutenant, but was afterwards promoted to a captaincy. In the spring of 1802 Oliver Ferris removed from Greenwich to Westchester County, and purchased from Major Jacob Van Tassel the farm on the banks of the Hudson which, through the genius of Washington Irving, has become famous as "Wolfert's Roost." Oliver Ferris married Abigail, daughter of John Lockwood, of Greenwich, Conn. Their children were Elizabeth, wife of Aaron

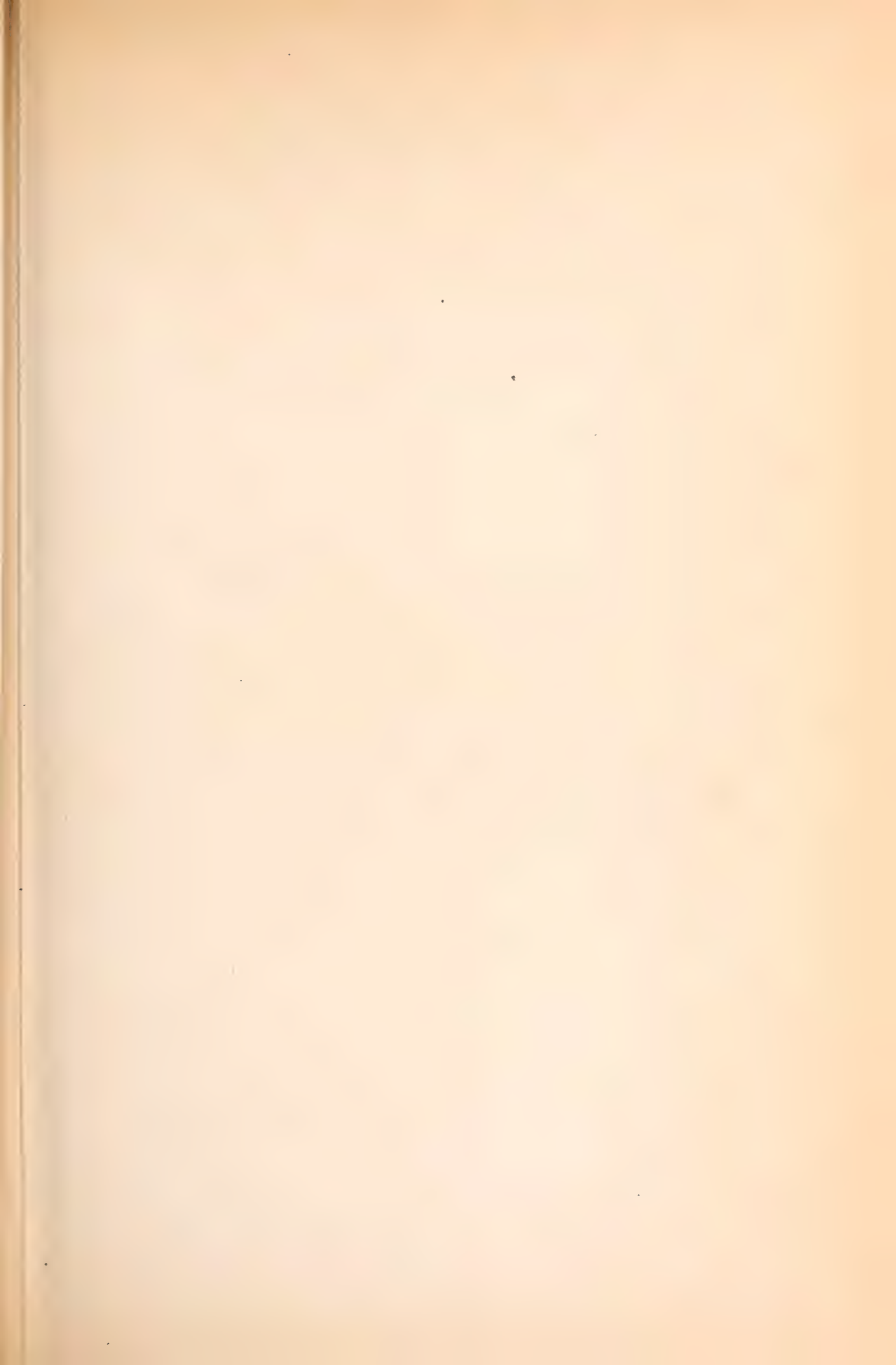
Close; Abigail, wife of Daniel Dutcher; Martha, wife of John Jewell; Letty, wife of Daniel Ackerman; Sarah, wife of Smith Scofield; Benson; and Mary, wife of Jacob Storms.

Benson Ferris was born March 21, 1794, and came with his father from his native town in Connecticut. He early acquired the rudiments of a good English education, and was for some years under the tuition of the Rev. Thomas Gibson Smith, pastor of the Old Dutch Church of Sleepy Hollow. Under him he commenced the study of Latin, in which he became proficient, and was especially fond of Virgil, to whose writings he frequently referred. On January 23, 1822, he married Maria, daughter of Captain Abraham Acker, and continued to live at the old homestead, "Wolfert's Roost," until 1835, when he sold the house and land adjoining to Washington Irving, who has given it an immortal fame. He then built a new house on the west side of Broadway, a little north of Sunnyside Lane. In 1856 he sold this place and removed to Tarrytown, where he died July 11, 1882. During his life he held nearly all the offices of the town of Greenburgh, and was for twenty years a justice of the peace, and in this office used all the weight of his influence to prevent rather than to promote litigation. He was a prominent member of the Old Dutch Church and of the Second Reformed Church, in which he was an elder for many years. He was universally esteemed in the community as a man of exemplary Christian life and distinguished usefulness. Mr. Ferris left four children—William A., Benson, Jemima and Oliver. Of these children, Benson, the second son, and the subject of this sketch, was born at the old homestead, July 16, 1825. His early education was obtained at the old school-house, a relic of the olden time, which stood on the road running east from Sunnyside Lane to the Saw-Mill River, about one hundred yards east of Broadway. He afterwards attended the Tarrytown Institute, which was then under the able care of Professor William G. Weston, A.M. After leaving this institution he was assistant for two years at the Paulding Institute, of which Professor Weston was also principal, and was for some time teacher in the old school-house which he first attended. He then started a store at Irvington, which was the first one opened at that place, then known as "Dearman." In 1856 he removed to Tarrytown, which has since been his home, and three years later became engaged in the hardware business, in which he continued till 1861. He has been, during the whole of his business life, closely connected with the public affairs of the town and county. While living at Irvington he was a member of the board of education, and has held the same position at Tarrytown. In 1866 he was appointed school commissioner for the second district of Westchester County by William H. Robertson, then county judge. In 1879 he was elected a trustee of the village of Tarrytown. In 1865 he was elected trustee of the Westchester County



Henson Ferris







D W Bradley

Savings-Bank, and has held the offices of secretary, vice-president and president, in which last position he still remains. He was one of the originators of the Tarrytown National Bank, and has been a director since its organization. In 1855 he was one of sixteen who organized the Republican Party in Westchester County, and was appointed, in 1858, one of the executive committee of the party, at a county convention presided over by Horace Greeley, who was his friend and confidant. This position he held for many years. Mr. Ferris married, in 1875, Mrs. Mary P. Dutcher, of Providence, R. I.

In 1879 he was elected a trustee of the village of Tarrytown. There are few men who have been more actively employed in promoting the public and social interests of Tarrytown. He was one of the original incorporators of the Young Men's Lyceum, in 1869, and has served as one of its directors until the present time. He became a director of the Tarrytown and Irvington Union Gas-Light Company in 1864, and has been secretary, vice-president and president. He is a member of the Westchester Historical Society.

In 1861 a committee was appointed by the citizens of Tarrytown to assist the families of soldiers who had volunteered for the war. Of this committee Mr. Ferris was an active member, and many thousands of dollars were raised and distributed under his direction and that of his associates.

TARRYTOWN NATIONAL BANK.—A request having been addressed to the Hon. D. Ogden Bradley, president of "The Tarrytown National Bank," for information in regard to the history of National Banks in Tarrytown, he has kindly furnished the following sketch, in the closing paragraph of which the facts relating to the present National Bank are given :

"The First National Bank of Tarrytown was organized March 9, 1864, with a capital of \$50,000, which was subsequently increased to \$100,000. John R. Bacon was its first president, and N. Holmes Odell its first cashier. George Merritt and Luther Redfield subsequently, in succession, became its presidents. The bank was closed and placed in liquidation by a vote of its stockholders at a meeting held March 22, 1878.

"The Tarrytown National Bank was organized February 8, 1882, with a cash capital of \$100,000. D. Ogden Bradley has been its president, and William D. Humphreys its cashier continuously since its organization. Its present board of directors are Cyrus W. Field, Benson Ferris, Seth Bird, Frederick W. Guiteau, Moses W. Taylor, George Silver, Lucius T. Yale, Nathaniel W. Lawrence and D. Ogden Bradley."

The family from which Mr. Bradley, the president of the Westchester County Savings Bank, is descended, were among the earliest settlers in New England, and resided at New Haven. A branch of the family moved to the State of New York in the earlier part of the last century, and his grandfather, Jabez Bradley, was judge of Cayuga County for many years. His father, Henry Bradley, who was candidate for Governor of the State of New York on the Abolition ticket in 1846, married Rhoda A., daughter of Captain David Ogden, of Cayuga County.

Mr. Bradley was born at Penn Yan, N. Y., April 5, 1827, and was educated at Hamilton College, from which he graduated in 1848, and afterwards was

honored with the degree of Master of Arts. He was admitted to practice as attorney-at-law in 1850. Taking an active interest in politics, he was early identified with the Republican party, and was a member of the Republican National Convention of 1868, and in 1872 received the nomination for member of Congress for the Westchester District. In the Presidential campaigns of 1876 and 1880 he was one of the Presidential electors on the Republican ticket. Mr. Bradley came to reside in Dobbs Ferry in 1865, was repeatedly elected president of the village, and has been for several years a member of its Board of Education. In 1879 he was elected a member of Assembly of this State, and re-elected in 1880. Taking an active part in all local affairs, he was chosen president of the association for the erection of the monument to the memory of the captors of Major Andre, which was intended to perpetuate to the latest generation the memory of the deed, and to identify, beyond dispute, the exact locality of the capture. The centennial celebration of 1880 was under his direction.

He is president of the Tarrytown National Bank, a position he has held ever since its organization. He married in early life, Elizabeth Neely, a sister of the Episcopal Bishop of Maine. After her death he married Cornelia, daughter of Abijah Fitch. His daughter, Elizabeth, the only child of his first marriage, after graduating at the Rockland Institute, commenced the study of medicine, which she has since pursued with unabating zeal, both in this country and in Europe. She has received four literary degrees from prominent institutions, more than were ever before conferred upon any woman, so far as is known. She is now in Europe, and is still pursuing her investigations. Mr. Bradley's children by his second marriage, are Lue, Emma, Jerome and Nelson, all of whom are living with their parents at Dobbs Ferry.

GAS COMPANY.—The following sketch, embracing the principal points in the history of the Tarrytown Gas-Light Company, has been furnished by Benson Ferris, Esq., who is president of this company, as well as of the Westchester County Savings-Bank :

"The Tarrytown and Irvington Union Gas-Light Company was incorporated in 1859, with a capital stock of \$70,000, which was increased to \$100,000 in 1867.

"The officers first chosen were Nathaniel B. Holmes, president ; Samuel M. Raisbeck, secretary, and Seth Bird, treasurer. The next year, 1860, James W. Smith became president, and the year following, William H. Townsend, who, in turn, was succeeded by William L. Schoener for two years, when William H. Townsend again served for one year. In 1865, George Merritt was chosen and filled the office until his death, in 1873. His successor was John E. Williams, who held it until 1875. Cornelius Curtiss followed for three years, and was succeeded in 1878 by Benson Ferris, who has remained president up to this time.

"In 1877 the Abbotsford Gas-Works, at Hastings, were purchased and consolidated with this company, which now furnishes gas to the villages of North Tarrytown, Tarrytown, Irvington, Dobbs Ferry and Hastings."

THE WATER SUPPLY.—In regard to the water supply for the village, Ward Carpenter, surveyor and civil engineer, has, by request, furnished the follow-

ing statements, in which the facts are given with his accustomed accuracy and clearness:

"The water supply for the village of Tarrytown is obtained from an artesian or deep well, located on the westerly side of Upper Main Street. This well was sunk in the spring of 1881 by Daniel Dull, of New York City. The depth is six hundred feet. A ten-inch iron pipe, or conductor, as it is called, was driven by repeated blows for a depth of fifty feet through the gravel and boulders that overlie the rock, and the rest of the way down the bore is eight inches in diameter. The tubing for the lower valve is six inches, and extends down two hundred feet from the surface of the ground. The elevation of the surface at the site of the well is two hundred and twenty feet above tide, giving a clear depth of three hundred and eighty feet below the high-water line, or two hundred and eighty feet below the bed of the river in the channel.

"The bulk of the water was obtained at four hundred feet depth, with a trifling increase at five hundred feet, after which the increase was not very great until a depth of five hundred and fifty feet was sunk. Between the latter depth and six hundred and four feet, the actual depth of the well, there was an increase of about twelve hundred gallons in twenty-four hours.

"The cost of the boring, counting from the surface, was, by contract, forty-eight hundred dollars.

"There is, in connection therewith, a good brick house, substantially built, for the protection of the boiler and deep well pump, to which there is attached a coal-shed.

"The quantity of water given at the time of sinking the well, at twenty strokes per minute, 1.84 gallons per revolution—fifty-two thousand nine hundred and ninety-nine gallons per twenty-four hours. At the writing of this (January 1, 1886), at about sixteen revolutions per minute, forty-two thousand three hundred and ninety-three gallons in twenty-four hours.

"The water is lifted two hundred feet and forced about one hundred feet into a reservoir, arched over, fifty feet long, forty feet wide and fifteen feet deep, holding about two hundred and twenty-five thousand gallons, and situated in Rose Hill Avenue, corner of Union Avenue, at an elevation of about three hundred and five feet above tide water.

"In quality, the water is clear, cool and moderately soft."

MANUFACTURES IN TARRYTOWN.—There are three manufacturing establishments in Tarrytown proper. The first in chronological order is the Messrs. G. & D. Silver's shoe-factory; the second is the Tarrytown Pottery, a manufactory of majolica and ivory-wares, and the third is the Couper Milling Company.

The G. & D. Silver Shoe Factory, on the west side of Washington Street, between Wildey Street and College Avenue, with the Andre Brook flowing down almost under it, but paying tax in the township of Greenburgh, stands the large boot and shoe factory of Messrs. George and David Silver. The business was commenced in New York City by Mr. George Silver alone in 1857, but several years later, the present firm of G. & D. Silver was organized, and in January, 1871, the manufactory was located in Tarrytown. It turns out what are classed as fine shoes, from child's to men's, and these are sold directly to the retail trade. The firm employs from one hundred men and boys when business is dull to one hundred and fifty when it is active, and from seventy-five to one hundred girls. Almost all the operatives work by the piece, except the smaller ones. Girls earn from two dollars to ten dollars per week; boys from two dollars when they commence to eight dollars when they become more capable; and men from ten dollars to twenty dollars. The firm pays out for wages from seventy-five thousand dollars to one hundred and twenty thousand dollars per annum, and the

manufactory produces from one hundred and twenty-five thousand to one hundred and eighty thousand pairs of shoes every year, the value of which amounts to from three hundred thousand dollars to five hundred thousand dollars. Mr. George Silver resides in Tarrytown, and Mr. David Silver in North Tarrytown.

David Silver, who has so long been identified with the manufacturing interests of Tarrytown, was born in Laurencekirk, Scotland, March 17, 1842, where he received the education usual to the children of mechanics in that country. In January, 1864, he came to New York city, and entered the employ of his elder brother, George, then, as now, a shoe manufacturer. Three years later he was admitted to a partnership, under the firm-name of George Silver & Co. This firm was dissolved in January, 1869, when he commenced a shoe manufacturing business on his own account, continuing but a short time, however, as the new firm of G. & D. Silver was then formed and the present factory at Tarrytown was built.

Mr. Silver has made the superintendence of the manufacturing department his special charge, and the success which has attended the business of the firm is largely due to his efforts. In the management of local affairs he has taken a prominent part. He was active and zealous in promoting the incorporation of the village of North Tarrytown, of which he has been twice trustee and once president. He has been twice trustee of the public schools and is at present treasurer of the board, in the important work of which he has been commendably active. He has also been a trustee of St. Paul's Methodist Episcopal Church since its organization, in 1873.

He married, in 1868, Miss Mary E. Crocker. They have five children—Belle M., Emma L., Jessie F., Maggie R. and David F.,—all of whom reside with their parents.

The part which Mr. Silver has taken in the life and activity of Tarrytown has been important and useful, and it is to be hoped that he will long be spared to continue his efforts in its behalf.

The Tarrytown Pottery.—On the north side of Lower Main Street, between the Hudson River Railroad and the Point Dock Landing, in the large brick building looking southward over Tappan Zee, is the Tarrytown Pottery. It was established in 1881 by the firm of Messrs. Odell & Booth Brothers, who purchased a lease of the building for a term of years from the pump factory, which had previously occupied it as tenants of the late Mr. Robert Graves. It is now held by lease from his estate. The business of the pottery, amounting to about forty thousand dollars per year, embraces the manufacture of Faience, Limoges and Barbatine wares, and also specialties in druggists' wares, such as mortars, pestles, etc., which are pronounced by experts to be equal to the best imported articles. The establishment employs about sixty hands, and its goods are sent to most of the principal cities in the Union, even as far as San Fran-

cisco. As yet it has been able to fill only about one-third of its orders, a fact which suggests a larger scale of operations in the near future.

The Couper Milling Company.—On the north side of Wildey Street, directly adjoining the Hudson River Railroad track on the east, and within the corporate limits of Tarrytown, is the establishment of the Couper Milling Company. The building is forty by sixty feet in dimensions, and rises to the height of seventy-five feet from the ground. It is a frame structure, having five floors, each from twelve to eighteen feet high, built, in all its timbers, of the best Georgia pine, and, including its complete plant of milling machinery, cost about sixty thousand dollars. The work of building was commenced in the fall of 1885, and finished in February, 1886, when the various processes of transforming wheat into flour were at once begun. The machinery is very extensive and complex, and quite in contrast with that of the old Philips mill, on the Pocantico, at the entrance to Sleepy Hollow. The Couper mill is capable of turning out three hundred barrels of flour per day.

The power for the whole mass of machinery is supplied by a Harris-Corliss engine, in the working of which a new condensing apparatus will soon be used, thus saving about one-fourth of the amount of fuel now consumed. The mill, into which all the latest and best improvements in the art of milling have been introduced, is in every detail one of the most modern and complete in the country. Its general machinery, together with all the special machines including roll and reels, was furnished by the well-known house of Edward P. Allis & Co., of Milwaukee, Wisconsin.

The first floor of the mill contains the main driving line of shafting, which extends through the whole length of the building. The wheat-cleaning machinery also, which is very elaborate in detail, is located on the first floor.

The second floor contains ten double sets of rolls, used for reducing the wheat and middlings to flour. The rolls are placed in two lines, and are driven by belt connected with pulleys attached to the main line

on the first floor. The three flour-packers, used to compress the flour in order to put the requisite quantity into each barrel, are also located on the second floor.

The third floor is used almost entirely for what is called spouting,—that is, conveying, by square pine box spouts to their proper destination, the many different streams of wheat, flour, middlings, bran, etc. There is a perfect forest of spouts in every direction, which, to an unpracticed eye, have an appearance of chaotic disorder. The diagram showing the movement of the wheat from the time it enters the mill until it reaches the flour-bin or barrel resembles, more than anything else, the seeming confusion of Egyptian hieroglyphics.



David Silver

The fourth floor contains a dozen short reels used for the primary reductions and separations of the wheat only from everything foreign. There are also eight ordinary reels, fourteen feet long, used for bolting the patent flours. On this floor, besides the foregoing, there are eight Gray centrifugal reels.

The fifth floor contains the purifiers, on which the middlings are treated. The purifiers consist simply of a horizontal reciprocating sieve with a current of air blowing upon the middlings as they travel slowly upon the sieve, which is covered with silk. The currents of air take out the bran impurities and the fluffy and woody fibre, while the clean white middlings drop through the opening in the silk and are conveyed to the

rolls to be ground.

The whole method has been used only a few years, and illustrates the progress of modern invention. The establishment employs from twenty to twenty-five hands.

Mr. J. R. Couper, residing near Dobbs Ferry, is president of the company, and Mr. A. G. Mowbray, of Tarrytown, is superintendent. After twenty years of milling experience in Minnesota, Mr. Mowbray is thoroughly master of his art, and is well known by all the great millers of the country. The reputation of his goods for their superior quality is almost worldwide.

SOLDIERS IN THE WAR FOR THE UNION.—It is

estimated by those most competent to judge, and upon the best information attainable, that the number of soldiers from Tarrytown and its vicinity, who served in the army during the War of the Rebellion, was not less than four hundred. Many of them went to New York City and other places to enlist, so that their names do not appear among those in the organized company that enlisted and went directly from Tarrytown village. As illustrating this statement, may be mentioned Mr. Charles Theodore Carpenter and Mr. George Price, who, on April 19, 1861, seven days after General Beauregard opened fire on Fort Sumter, hastened to New York City to march with the Seventy-first Regiment to the front, but being too late to join it, they were mustered into the Eighth Regiment New York State National Guards, Colonel Lyons commanding. They went on the 21st to Annapolis, thence to Washington, and on May 21st were at Arlington House, where Major Alexander Hamilton, now General Hamilton, of Tarrytown, was at that time in command. They were in the first battle of Bull Run, where Comrade Carpenter saved the flag of his regiment, and, afterwards, in 1862, at Fortress Monroe and up the Peninsula through the Seven Days' Fight.

Mr. B. Frank Davis, at the same date, April 19th, was mustered into the famous Seventh Regiment, Colonel Lefferts, and afterwards did good service in the One Hundred and Sixty-fifth Regiment Second Duryea Zouaves.

It is known, also, that General Adam Badeau, a member of General U. S. Grant's staff, and his private secretary, and historian of his campaigns, was a native of Tarrytown. So, likewise, was Horatio Wood, private secretary of Admiral Farragut, whose marvelous achievements have illuminated the naval history of the nation.

Among others who made Tarrytown their home was the late Brigadier-General James H. Hall, who, with his son, fought bravely in the great struggle for the Union.

Others also there were, as in the case of John C. L. Hamilton, who joined the Duryea Zouaves, and was in the battle of Big Bethel. He afterwards served through the whole war and attained to the rank of major. His brother, Edgar Hamilton, joined the Lincoln Cavalry, under Colonel Charles Cleveland Dodge, and after serving through the war was mustered out with the rank of lieutenant-colonel.

But all these are individual cases, and, like a vast number of others, find no mention in the records of the organized Tarrytown company.

That company was known as Company H, Thirty-second Regiment New York State Volunteers. It was mustered in by Colonel Roderick Mathison, then commanding, who, however, was soon succeeded in command by Lieutenant-Colonel Francis E. Pinto, promoted to the rank of colonel. This company was organized at Tarrytown by Captain William Chal-

mers, in April and May, 1861, and was mustered into service at New Dorp, Staten Island, May 31, 1861. Its period of service was for two years, unless sooner discharged. The engagements in which it participated were the following: First Bull Run, West Point, Gaines' Mill, White Oak Swamp, Savage's Station, Charles City Cross-Roads, Malvern Hill, Chantilly, Crampton's Gap, Antietam, first Fredericksburg, second Fredericksburg and St. Marie's Heights. It was at West Point, Virginia, that Corporal J. Oscar Jones now Captain Jones, of Tarrytown, for gallant and meritorious conduct in a desperate charge upon the enemy's position, was promoted to a lieutenantancy on the field of battle. At the organization of the company the command was held by Captain William Chalmers. He resigned July 21, 1862, and having entered the service again, was appointed colonel of the Ninth Regiment New York State Volunteers. William H. See, who had been first lieutenant under Captain Chalmers, succeeded him as captain. See, in turn, was succeeded as captain by J. Oscar Jones, who commanded until the company was mustered out. First Lieutenant Alfred Lawrence acted as captain during a short period after See's discharge, and before Captain Jones took the command. William Aitchison was for a time second lieutenant, but resigned August 8, 1861. The time of service having expired, the company was honorably mustered out in New York City on June 9, 1863.

The roster of Company H shows that the number of non-commissioned officers and privates in the company, as first organized, was eighty-seven men. While in the field eighteen men were added to their ranks, who served with this company until its term expired, when they were transferred to the One Hundred and Twenty-first Regiment New York State Volunteers.

When the company left for the front, in May, 1861, a large and spirited public meeting was held at the monument where Andre was captured, and the company, having marched upon the scene, was received and sent away with great enthusiasm and warm benedictions by the people. Stirring speeches were made and the occasion was enlivened with martial music and ringing cheers.

In 1863, when the company returned with decimated ranks and banners torn and begrimed with the shot and smoke of battle, business was suspended and the village turned out to give them a welcome. After being escorted through the streets by a grand procession, they were publicly received on Broadway, in front of Newman's Tarrytown Academy, the first house north of the Andre Brook. The writer of these lines, as he had had the honor to address them at the Andre Monument on their departure, so he had again, in connection with Major-General John E. Wool, the honor to deliver to them an address of welcome on their return.

After the war, in 1869, a Post of the Grand Army of the Republic was established in Tarrytown, under

the name of Post Acker, from a Tarrytown soldier, George Acker, who was the first to be killed in battle. Through the efforts of this organization the granite monument was erected, near the cemetery entrance, to the memory of the soldiers who fell or died. The cemetery company donated the plot for that purpose.

Post Acker having been disbanded in December, 1883, the Ward B. Burnet Post was organized in 1884, and it is now engaged in raising funds to complete the monument by placing the bronze statue of a soldier upon its crown.

The office of the provost marshal was located in Tarrytown during the war, and the place in consequence became the scene of many excitements and of some stirring events. Especially was this the case about the time of the draft riots, in July, 1863. So threatening was the condition of things just then that several companies of United States troops were encamped in the outskirts of the village, and two United States gun-boats lay in the river off the town. The writer remembers to have been surprised, on returning from New York by the boat one day, toward evening, to find a cannon drawn up in Lower Main Street, near the provost marshal's office, and a soldier pacing up and down just near it. Colonel James A. Hamilton, of "Nevis," was warmly interested in supporting the government, and having been himself personally concerned in plans to protect the provost marshal's office against the rioters, has given in his published "Reminiscences" some account of what took place.

On July 16, 1863, he wrote to the Hon. Edward M. Stanton, the great War Secretary under Lincoln, as follows :

"In my letter yesterday I informed you of the measures taken to resist the mob in the neighborhood (Tarrytown). At present, all is quiet, with threatening, however, at all the landing places along the River.

* * * * *

"Captain Leonard, Provost Marshal, has acted with great promptitude and efficiency. We, at the same time, want your assistance.

"First—We want four or five hundred soldiers. When the riots are put down in the city, the soldiers can be sent to us. (The rioters will certainly come here.)

"Second.—Whenever the draft is made, it should be done at the Court-House, White Plains (the County town). The building of massive stone can be made a fortress. It is in an open space, incapable of being burned. The town has not as large a foreign element as there is in Tarrytown, and, above all, if the building should be fired, private property would not be destroyed. We could in that building and the jail, close by the C. H., where there are very few tenants, provide for a large force.

* * * * *

"P. S. The enrollment papers of the districts are beyond the reach of rioters for the present."

Farther on, in the narrative part of his account, Colonel Hamilton adds:

"A body of rioters went on their way from the south part of the town, advancing to Tarrytown with music and a flag, endeavoring by threats to compel men in the fields to stop their work and go along with them; when in their course they learned from our scouts that we were prepared for them, they stopped by the road side and scattered.

On the ground near the Marshal's office we collected about fifty men, who were armed with such guns as could be obtained. The arrangement was that one-half of this force should be stationed in the building where the office was, and the residue in the second story of an opposite building. The orders were, to keep strict silence, and when the rioters made an attack on the door of the office-building, to fire a volley from the opposite side of the street in their midst and most effectively; and this would have been done. The force in the office-building was under the command of a young Lieutenant of the army, who stopped at the station."

That in the opposite building was under the direction of Colonel Hamilton himself.

OLD HOUSES.—There are several old houses in Tarrytown that have a history going back to the Revolutionary War, and some of them even far



OLD PAULDING AND REQUA HOUSES.

beyond it. The most famous of these probably is known as the Paulding house. It is a frame building, situated on Water Street, and almost within a stone's throw of the cove, which there sets in from the river. It is not more than three minutes walk from the Hudson River Railroad depot. The track of the road is quite near it, and the house is plainly visible from the car-windows. But it is now very much dilapidated,—in fact, in a half tumble-down condition, with the floors rotted away, the rooms damp and deserted, and green moss growing on the roof, which consists of three layers of shingles, the lowermost being of cedar, the one put on upon the top of the other, as, after long intervals, there was occasion to make repairs. No one would imagine, from looking at the house and its surroundings now, that it had ever been the seat of elegant culture and refinement, where distinguished men and lovely women met and enjoyed the pleasures of a brilliant social life. Yet here it was that James Kirke Paulding, so eminent in the ranks of early American authorship, the intimate friend and literary collaborator of Washington Irving, and Secretary of the Navy under President Van

Buren, lived from the close of the Revolution until the year 1800, when he removed to New York City. And from this house it was that Washington Irving, then a very young man, and a guest in the Paulding family, went out for half a day of boating on the river, and rowed down to Wolfert's Roost, where, going ashore, and loitering along the slopes and in the glen, the tranquil beauty and sweet attractiveness of the place so deeply impressed him that he then first conceived the idea, which he long afterwards carried out, of buying it as a home for himself. Mr. Irving made this statement in a conversation with the late Mrs. Benson Ferris, in the presence of her son, Mr. Benson Ferris, Jr., now president of the Westchester County Savings Bank, who distinctly remembers it, and communicated the fact to the writer. The garden and grounds around the Paulding house are said to have been always kept in the best of tasteful order, and the place altogether to have presented every feature of a bright and beautiful home. But it has had its day, and served its purpose, and all tokens now indicate that decay will soon lay the old mansion in the dust.

Just north of it, on the corner of the street leading down to the cove, is the old house owned and occupied in those early days by Judge Isaac Requa, long since passed away. That, too, was a place of home comfort and happiness, almost as well kept and as attractive as the Paulding place adjoining. But that also, like its long-time neighbor, must soon yield to the inevitable law.

It must have been near this point along the river bank, on the upper side of the cove, that the "first public slip," referred to as having been constructed by Gilbert Drake, at least prior to 1787, was located. Among the manuscript "Land Papers," filed in the office of the Secretary of State at Albany, are two caveats, both dated March 13, 1787. The first is the "Caveat of Mary Van Wort against granting the application of Isaac Requa and Gabriel Requa, for two thousand feet of land under water at Tarrytown landing, unless that there be twenty feet reserve for her from the south boundary of her house." (Vol. xliii, p. 162.) The second is the "Caveat of Gilbert Drake against granting to Mary Van Wort, or any other person, two thousand feet of the land under water, from high water mark, opposite Tarrytown landing." (Vol. xliii, p. 163.) The document proceeds to say that it was "By the particular request of Captain Frederick Philipse that an interval should be left between the store and dwelling-house of the said Gilbert Drake, and was to be appropriated to the use of a public slip, and the said Gilbert Drake was the first person that docked, or caused docks to be laid on each side of said slip, and is ready to attest to the boundaries thereof. The said slip has, since the period of the late war, been claimed and taken up by Captain Glode Requa's sons, and publication has been made by way of advertisement, that he intends to make application

to the Land-Office for a grant of land under water two thousand feet from the cove at Tarrytown."

Another house old, and apparently a great deal older, than the Paulding house, is the one now owned and occupied by Mr. Jacob Mott, up the hill, on the east side of Broadway, north of Main Street, and very near to the Second Reformed Church. It has undergone a number of changes, but the original walls, built of stone, still stand as they did one hundred and seventy-four years ago. The house is somewhat back from the road, embowered in trees, and with a pleasant yard around it. It is difficult to determine exactly when the house was built, but so far as the facts can be gathered it seems to have been about the year 1712. To Abraham Martlingh, belonging to a numerous family among the early Dutch settlers, is due the credit of its erection. It has had in succession quite a number of owners. It was sold to a Van Houten, then to an Austin about 1816, then in 1818 to Jonathan Odell, then to Andrew Lumoreux, then in 1826 to Jacob L. Mott, father of the present owner, and finally, in 1834, Jacob Mott bought it of his father, and has lived in the house ever since. At the time of the last purchase the place contained about eighty acres altogether, and the price paid by the son was three thousand eight hundred dollars. In 1838 Mr. Mott repaired the house, without changing it very much, however, as his former school-mate and friend, Washington Irving, came to see him while the work was going on, and urged him to preserve the original building so far as he possibly could. There are many things of interest connected with the old house. During the Revolution it is said to have been a house of public entertainment. A sick officer was quartered there, occupying the room which is now the parlor, and General Washington came to the house a number of times to see him. It is said that a cannon-ball fired from a British ship of war in the river passed through one of the parlor windows, and out through the door-post on the other side. Mr. Irving himself made the statement to Mr. Mott that this was the house in which Katrina Van Tassel lived, when she enslaved the susceptible heart of Ichabod Crane, as recounted in the Legend of Sleepy Hollow. The place at the present day is suggestive of rest and peace, and the gentle creed of its occupants, who belong to the Society of Friends, seems to have breathed its peculiar spirit upon them.

About two minutes' walk from the Jacob Mott house toward the south, on the same side of Broadway, below Main Street, and next door to the Westchester County Savings Bank, stands another old house, whose solid timbers were put together more than a hundred years ago. It is the house now owned and occupied, as it has been for about thirty years past, by Mr. Isaac B. Lovett. The frame is of the best hewed white oak, and has had a somewhat varied history. Erected in the closing quarter of the eighteenth century, it first comes to remembered no-

tice in the opening decade of the nineteenth, as the property of John Archer, long since deceased. In 1810 it stood a little farther south, directly opposite the pleasant antique dwelling now occupied by Mr. D. O. Archer, and having one of its gables toward Broadway. Mr. John Archer, being the owner of a good farm and a large apple orchard, followed the custom of his day, and made large quantities of cider. The frame of this house he used for the inclosure of his cider mill. Seventeen years later, in 1827, he converted the building into a hat factory, and combined the two lines of occupation, namely, working the farm and manufacturing hats. It was here and with him that Justice Elias Mann, then a sprightly and volatile lad, now a substantial and honored citizen, who has faithfully served the community as a magistrate, familiarized himself, in a practical way, with the last-mentioned branch of business. Later still, in 1836, Mr. Archer moved the old structure from where it then stood down the gradual slope to the spot where it now stands, and having converted it into a dwelling-house and store, he rented it, for that two-fold purpose, to the firm of Messrs. Beach & Wheeler. After four years, the firm was dissolved; but Mr. Beach remained until 1842, when the late Andrew D. Archer, as executor, sold the place to Mr. Elisha Wildey, who occupied it till 1847, when Dr. Fenelon Hasbrouck became the owner, and used the house for a dwelling and a doctor's office until 1854. It was then bought by Mr. George Ricard, of Brooklyn, but occupied by Mr. Cornelius Van Cott, who used the house for a dwelling and a glassware and lamp store till 1855, when, his wife having died, he gave it up, and Mr. Ricard sold it, December 9, 1856, to Mr. Isaac B. Lovett, who moved in on the day he bought it, and has lived there ever since. In 1873 the house was thoroughly reconstructed, and the shop adjoining on the south was converted into a dwelling-house and store. The staunch old timbers, that have done duty through so many changes for over a hundred years past, give promise that with their "hearts of oak," they will render good service for over a hundred years to come.

On the northwest corner of Main Street and Broadway stands the old Martin Smith house, that was famous as a stage-house on the New York and Albany post-road, and in all the region north and south, and "over back" from Tarrytown village. It is a frame structure, and originally it was only a story and a half high. The date of its erection is not known, but it is believed to have been long before the Revolution, and by some indeed it is claimed to be almost as old as the Jacob Mott house. Mrs. John Dean, the widow of John Dean, one of the young men who started out together with Paulding, Williams and Van Wart, on the morning of the day when Andre was captured, and the mother of the late Thomas Dean, stated distinctly that it was an old house when she first knew it. She, of course, lived in the time of the Revolution,

and was very familiar with the neighborhood. In the part of the house near the chimney was what might be called an auditory pipe, or square box, built up like the passage-way of a dumb-waiter, from the side of the fire-place to the upper floor, where a person could stand, and, having removed a piece of board that seemed on a cursory view but a part of the inclosure, could apply his ear to the opening and hear everything that was spoken around the fire-place below. In the uncertain days of the Revolution it is said to have been used for the purpose of obtaining information of military movements from persons who stopped at the tavern, and in the talk around the hearth chanced to drop some unguarded word. When first built, the house was small and squatty, being about twenty-five by thirty feet, and its door was in the south-east corner opening on Main Street; but afterwards, when it was owned by Jacob Couenhoven, about 1806, the door was so changed as to open on Broadway. Couenhoven, who was usually called Conover, is said, in fact, to have built all around the house, almost completely inclosing the original, and rendering the remodeled building much more roomy and convenient. The same variable orthography occurs in this name as in so many others. It is spelled Covenhoven, Couenhoven and Cowenhoven; but Jacob, in his autograph, wrote it Couenhoven.

In tracing the title, the place which previously belonged to the Philips Manor is found to have been conveyed by the Commissioners of Forfeitures, Isaac Stoutenburgh and Philip Van Cortlandt, to Ann Covenhoven, by deed dated December 6, 1785. On October 5, 1786, she mortgaged the place to George Clinton for one hundred pounds. The mortgage was cancelled October 26, 1802. The place passed successively to Jacob Couenhoven and Edward Couenhoven.¹ The last-named individual conveyed it to Martin Smith by deed dated May 3, 1821. Captain Martin Smith had previously lived in Tarrytown under the hill, and had sailed a sloop between New York and Albany. In his hands the house was a place of public entertainment, where the New York and Albany stages stopped, going and coming, to change horses and allow the passengers to refresh themselves or to dine. Many are the stories told of curious or amusing incidents that occurred there while he was the host. Mr. Smith was a man of marked energy and shrewdness, but of peculiarities that amounted sometimes almost to eccentricity. He accumulated a large estate, and gave up keeping a public-house some years before his death, which occurred on September 15, 1860, at the age of seventy-five. Among the incidents of his life as the keeper of a hotel was the "passage at arms" between himself and his son, Mr. Jacob B. Smith, as "party of the first part," and Mr. Freeman Hunt, founder of *Hunt's*

¹ It is claimed that Edward Couenhoven was the original projector of the Erie Canal.

Merchants' Magazine, as "party of the second part." Mr. Hunt, while making a land tour up the Hudson, had occasion to stop overnight at Mr. Smith's hotel. The son, who is still living in Tarrytown, alleges that Mr. Hunt misused some of the furniture of his sleeping apartment, and was not in all respects as tidy as a gentleman should be. The result was a personal disagreement and the utterance of a threat by the son that if he ever came there again he would pitch him out of doors. Mr. Hunt, deeming "discretion the better part of valor," shook off the dust of his feet, and, mounting to the stage-box, took his departure, like Adam from the gates of Paradise, never to return. He revenged himself, however, by publishing in the *American Traveler* some letters, which were afterwards republished in a book-form, in 1837, in which he gave an account of his journey, and attempted to get even with his quondam host. The following is his side of the story, and must be taken for what it is worth:

"On my arrival at Tarrytown, I put up at a place purporting to be a Hotel; but unlike anything I ever before visited; and God forbid that I should ever see the like again." It was towards sundown when I arrived. My small baggage I took to my lodgings, and coming down, I inquired of a young woman, a daughter of 'mine host,' the hour of tea. 'Oh,' said she, 'some time after dark, when the folks come in from picking apples.'

"This answer sounded rather queer and indefinite, but I let it pass. Appearances were much in favor of the house; it was neat—the beds were comfortable, and everything around had an air of cleanliness. The next morning after breakfast, 'mine host' was repeating a quarrel which took place between him and a lodger during the night. He said he would not entertain those d—d Yankees; he was rich enough to live without keeping a public-house, and those who stopped with him must behave themselves and do as he wished them, or he'd kick them out quicker than they came in. He was, however, very civil to me that day. In the evening, I called on a reverend gentleman, and returned about nine, when I found the house closed and barred, and not the glimmer of a light to mark the mansion of the living. A few gentle taps, however, brought 'mine host,' in the condition so delicately and so graphically described by Tom Cringle. The door opened, and the mouth of 'mine host' at about the same time, in tones of corresponding harmony—*creed and instrumental*—"What are you out so late for?" said he. I made no reply, but took the light from the 'impudent varlet's' hand, and made my way to bed. The next morning I arose at half-past seven, and seeing no indications of approaching breakfast, I sallied forth in pursuit of a barber, which not finding, I returned, and inquired if breakfast was ready. 'We have been to breakfast,' said the *hostess*. 'Been to breakfast! why didn't you call me, madam?' said I. 'We have other business to attend to without calling folks up to breakfast,' said she. 'Well then,' said I, 'you may attend to it, give me my bill, if you please, madam.'

"I paid my bill, two shilling and sixpence a meal, including boiled pork and cabbage, and *exclusive* of any thing else, save and except potatoes, turnips, and onions, in one miscellaneous dish of salmagundi.

"I related my sufferings to the good people of Tarrytown, and excited no little commiseration, and the most courteous and friendly proffers of kindness and hospitality; but as I intended leaving town that day, I declined the invitations. I found, however, that the host and his house were well known, and that scarce a traveller slept there without having some difficulty with the ignorant booby who pretends to keep a hotel. Indeed, many travellers go four or five miles out of the way to avoid stopping at this house. I have related these circumstances for the benefit of your numerous subscribers in this state, and those who may chance to pass through this place, and hear the name of Smith of the Tarrytown hotel. — *Letters about the Hudson*, pp. 30-32.

The Martin Smith house is now rented and used as the office and headquarters of Brown, Howard & Co., contractors to build an important section of the new Croton Aqueduct. The long iron bars, the kerosene

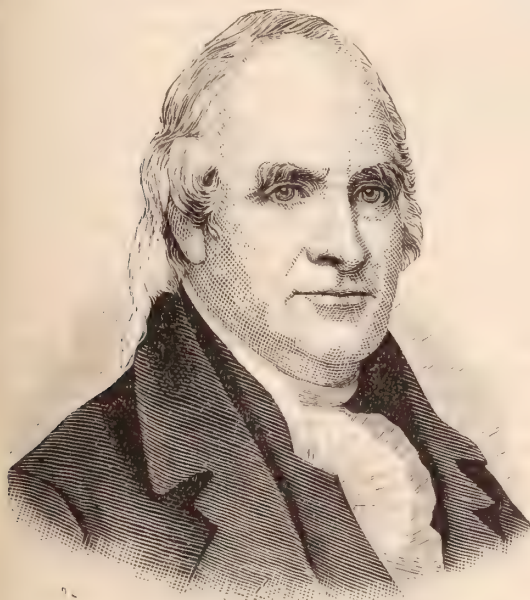
barrels, the fragments of machinery and the great four-horse wagons that are seen around the premises, to say nothing of the ragged and dirty Italian laborers standing by the doors, are anything but attractive to the passer-by. But these can be excused as a transient necessity which will soon be past.

After being in the Smith family for over sixty years, the house, with two and three-fourths acres of land, was sold under order of John H. Baxter, referee, by partition sale, to Mr. Frederick J. Kaldenberg, in November, 1882. Not long after, Mr. Kaldenberg sold what was formerly the Martin Smith garden to Mr. William L. Wallace, who erected upon it the imposing and commodious building now known as Music Hall. It was completed in 1886, and is the largest public hall in the village, being capable of seating twelve hundred persons.

There are other old houses having various points of interest in their history, but they can only be referred to here. They are such as the following: The Dean house, on the southwest corner of Main Street and Broadway, and directly opposite the Martin Smith house. John Dean, already mentioned in connection with those who captured Andre, occupied it in the early post-Revolutionary days as a public-house, but it was afterwards enlarged by successive additions and finally converted by his son, the late Thomas Dean, into a store and dwelling-house. It was here that he kept, for so many years, the store to which Washington Irving referred in one of his letters from Spain, and here, in the dwelling attached to it, he died on Sunday morning, January 7, 1873. The store is now kept by Mr. Homer R. Frost.

In this same class must be reckoned the Bayles house and place, on the north side of Main Street, at the brow of the hill. The half of the house west of the front-door was built about ninety years ago. The land was part of the premises owned by Jacob Couenhoven, and he conveyed it to Henry Couenhoven by a deed dated July 29, 1799, which specified "a plot of about two and three-fourths acres, with the absolute right, liberty and privilege to him, the said Henry Couenhoven, his heirs and assigns, to his and their families, workmen, servants, apprentices, or others whom he or they may authorize and appoint, to pass and repass the footpath leading from the above-described premises to the spring-well adjoining, and to bring from or use the water of the same forever hereafter." The same right, in regard to the spring, was guaranteed to two other property holders on the east, in common with Mr. Couenhoven, namely, to William Van Wart and to an old lady known as Grandmother Van Wart, though the two Van Wart families were not related. The spring which was then so highly valued was about in the middle of the lot, near an apple-tree, upon what are now the premises of Mr. Jacob B. Smith, and in the rear of his house on Washington Street. To a thirsty man a drink from that spring was once like a drink

of the water of the well of Bethlehem, "which is by the gate," to David; but now the spring is covered over and its deteriorated water is drawn forth for common uses by an insignificant little pump. The late Nathaniel Bayles bought the house and lot, on October 5, 1829, of John Beekman, of New York City, administrator of Abraham K. Fish, deceased. Mrs. Catherine B. Fish, widow of Mr. Fish, lived here with her two daughters for some time after her husband's death. In 1840 Mr. Bayles built on the whole of that part east of the present front-door. Previous to that time the door, which is now in the middle of the house, was on the extreme east end and opened into the wide hall, which still remains. Mr. Bayles was a great man to make improvements, and while thus engaged his men, in digging into the shallow earth by the ledge of rocks adjoining the Cliff House property, now owned by Mr. F. J. Kaldenberg, came upon the skeleton of a man, and along with his bones found the metal buttons usually worn by the militia in the Revolution. Abraham Mart-



HON. GEORGE CLINTON.

ling, father of the late Mrs. Julia Storms, then lived across the way, in the house now occupied by Dr. John J. Linson. Observing the workmen as they commenced, he went over and told Mr. Bayles that they would dig up there the skeleton of a man who was killed during the Revolution by a shot from a British ship of war lying in the river. It turned out as he had predicted. Familiar with the incidents of that stormy period, he recalled at once an event that had left its deep impression upon his mind. Mr. Bayles was not only fond of making improvements, but he took a great interest in all public affairs. His son, Mr. Theodore F. Bayles, who now

owns and occupies his father's house, has kindly allowed the writer to examine many manuscript papers of interest that belonged to his father's collection. Among them are autograph letters of Thomas Jefferson, George Clinton and Thomas Paine. The letter of the last-named notorious individual is interesting and peculiar, and, as it has never been published, it is here given entire, with the answer of Vice-President George Clinton, to whom it was addressed. It is as follows:

"NEW YORK, BROOME STREET, May 4th, 1807.

"Respected Friend:

"Elisha Ward and three or four other Tories, who lived within the British lines in the revolutionary war, got in to be inspectors of the election last year at New Rochelle. Ward was supervisor. These men refused my vote at the election, saying to me, 'You are not an American citizen; our minister at Paris, Gouverneur Morris, would not reclaim you when you were imprisoned in the Luxembourg at Paris, and General Washington refused to do it.' Upon my telling him that the two cases he stated were falsehoods, and that if he did me injustice I would prosecute him, he got up, and, calling for a constable, said to me, 'I will commit you to prison.' He chose, however, to sit down and go no further with it.

"I have written to Mr. Madison for an attested copy of Mr. Monroe's letter to the then Secretary of State, Randolph, in which Mr. Monroe gives the Government an account of his reclaiming me and my liberation in consequence of it; and also for an attested copy of Mr. Randolph's answer, in which he says: 'The president approves what you have done in the case of Mr. Paine.' The matter, I believe, is, that as I had not been guillotined, Washington thought best to say what he did. As to Gouverneur Morris, the case is that he did reclaim me; but his reclamation did me no good, and the probability is, he did not intend it should. Joel Barlow and other Americans in Paris had been in a body to reclaim me, but their application, being unofficial, was not regarded. I then applied to Morris. I shall subpoena Morris, and if I get attested copies from the secretary of State's office it will prove the lie on the inspectors.

"As it is a new generation that has risen up since the declaration of independence, they know nothing of what the political state of the country was at the time the pamphlet, 'Common Sense,' appeared; and besides this, there are but few of the old standers left, and none that I know of in this city.

"It may be proper at the trial to bring the mind of the court and the jury back to the times I am speaking of, and if you see no objection in your way, I wish you would write a letter to some person, stating, from your own knowledge, what the condition of those times were, and the effect which the work 'Common Sense,' and the several numbers of the 'Crisis' had upon the country. It would, I think, be best that the letter should begin directly on the subject in this manner: Being informed that Thomas Paine has been denied his rights of citizenship by certain persons acting as inspectors at an election at New Rochelle, &c.

"I have put the prosecution into the hands of Mr. Riker, district attorney, who can make use of the letter in his address to the Court and jury. Your handwriting can be sworn to by persons here, if necessary. Had you been upon the spot, I should have subpoenaed you, unless it had been too inconvenient to you to have attended.

"Yours in friendship,

"THOMAS PAINE

Addressed to

"GEORGE CLINTON,

"Vice-President,

"Washington City."

To this letter Vice-President Clinton replied as follows:

"CITY OF WASHINGTON, 12th May, 1807.

"Dear Sir:

"I had the pleasure to receive your letter of the 4th instant, yesterday; agreeably to your Request I have this Day written a letter to Richard Riker, Esquire, which he will show to you. I doubt much, however, whether the Court will admit to be read as evidence.

"I am indebted to you for a former Letter. I can make no other Apology for not acknowledging it before than inability to give you such

an answer as I could wish. I constantly keep the subject in mind, and should any favorable change take place in the sentiments of the Legislature, I will apprise you of it.

"I am with great Esteem,
"Your sincere Friend,
"GEORGE CLINTON."

INTERIOR OF THE TOWNSHIP.—There are two villages or hamlets already referred to in the interior of township, along the Nepperhan River, and on the line of the New York City and Northern Railroad. The first one reached as the traveler moves northward from the city of New York is now known as Ardsley, though until quite recently it bore the name of Ashford. It is fifteen miles from One Hundred and Fifty-fifth Street, the southern terminus of the Northern Railroad, and has a population of about two hundred and fifty. The Nepperhan River runs directly through the village, dividing it into two parts, with the larger part on the east bank, but the more growing part probably on the west, as the Ardsley Railroad Station is on that side. The village is pleasantly situated in the Nepperhan Valley, with the hills gradually ascending on either side. It has two grocery stores, four saloons, a post office and several mechanical shops. The only church in the place is the Methodist Episcopal Church. Its edifice was erected in 1855, and the society incorporated in 1860. The congregation now numbers about one hundred and fifty, with from seventy-five to eighty communicants. Recently the church building has been thoroughly renovated and improved and the church is in a healthful and growing condition. It has had eleven pastors and one supply since the church was organized. The present pastor is the Rev. Harvey C. Earl.

Ardsley was named as a compliment to the magnificent estate of Cyrus W. Field, which is in the immediate neighborhood.

As the claims of ancient magic are dwarfed into commonplace by the wonders of recognized science, so the might of the magician of former times is weakness when compared to that of the man whose power is felt alike under the sea, on the earth and in the air.

Cyrus W. Field, whose name is so closely associated with some of the greatest enterprises of modern times, was born at Stockbridge, Mass., November 30, 1819. Inheriting from his ancestry strong powers of mind and the tenacity of purpose which never abandons an undertaking while the slightest chance of success remains, he seemed early destined for the accomplishment of great aims. Leaving home at the age of fifteen, he entered a mercantile house in New York and a few years after founded a prosperous establishment of his own. Retiring from business in 1853, he traveled extensively in South America in company with Mr. Frederic E. Church, the artist.

At the time of his return, a company was engaged in the project of building a line of telegraph across Newfoundland, to connect with a line of fast steamers. Mr. Field boldly advanced the plan of extending the cable across the Atlantic, to thus bring the Old

World in close telegraphic connection with the New. This enterprise, which he believed possible, must ever rank him among the foremost men of modern times.

To lay a telegraphic cable across the Atlantic was a task that might well be considered impossible, even by the most enthusiastic believer in the power of science, assisted by all the facilities of modern art. Yet to this apparently hopeless project Mr. Field devoted all his time and talent, buoyed up, while all others were discouraged, with an inward assurance of ultimate success. To give the history of the laying of the Atlantic Telegraph Cable, with its disappointments and success, would be inappropriate in this place, as it has long been a part of the history of the world. It is enough to say that while this is universally considered the crowning triumph of American enterprise, the credit of its success is justly due to one man, and he is Mr. Field. The innumerable congratulations from all ranks of his fellow-citizens, the unanimous thanks of Congress, the gold medal, and other testimonials to what was recognized as one of the most remarkable achievements of the nineteenth century, were a well-deserved but inadequate reward for the benefit conferred upon the world and the ceaseless labor and anxiety of thirteen years. From that time to the present Mr. Field has been identified with efforts to extend the telegraphic system throughout the world, and while thus engaged he has not been idle in other directions. The immense growth of the city of New York brought the subject of rapid transit prominently before the minds of the people, and Mr. Field has devoted much of his thought and of his capital to the building of the system of elevated railroads, which have supplied a long-felt want and proved an inestimable blessing to the city. The dream of the present hour is that electricity will soon supply the place of steam as the motive-power on these roads. In the feasibility of this plan Mr. Field is an enthusiastic believer, and in view of what he has accomplished, who shall say that the dream may not prove a glad reality? It is superfluous to say that in all plans of a benevolent nature, and enterprises which call upon the public spirit of citizens to bestow their means to the accomplishment of good, none are more prompt to respond than Mr. Field. Of this a prominent instance is found in the fact that when President Garfield was struck down by the hand of an assassin, and the people called upon to mourn the loss of their chief magistrate, the sum of nearly four hundred thousand dollars was raised at his suggestion and securely invested in the bonds of the United States, which effectually placed the bereaved family of the late President in circumstances of comfort and security.

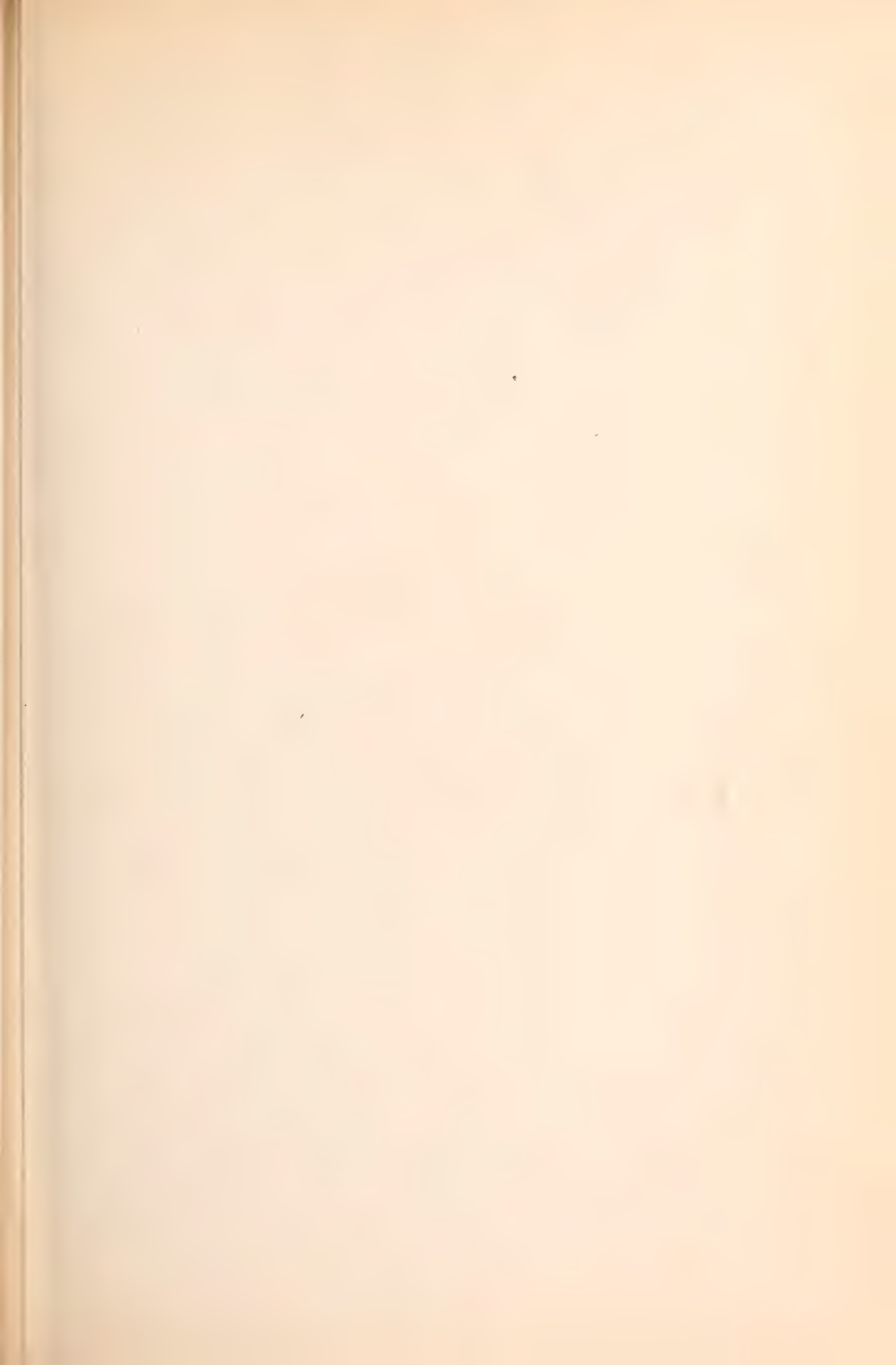
For many years Mr. Field has been an owner of extensive real estate in Westchester County, and Ardsley Park, his place of residence, is one of the finest estates in this portion of the country. Embracing more than five hundred acres, it comprises within its limits a great diversity of hill and dale, and the higher points



The Home Lee Hunt. No. 6. 1853.

Jones W. Sibley.







NO. 1 BROADWAY ERECTED IN 1742.



"THE WASHINGTON BUILDING,"

NOS. 1, 3 AND 5 BROADWAY.

NEW YORK.

command some of the finest views on the Hudson River. Here the hand of art has supplemented the power of nature, and both have combined to make this estate one of the loveliest features of the country round, and a pleasure alike to the owner and to the beholder who is blessed with a mind which can appreciate the picturesque and the beautiful.

The late John E. Williams, who was a highly honorable citizen of Greenburgh, was born in Newport, Rhode Island, April 28, 1804. He was early trained to the banking business, and after holding various positions in Newport, New Bedford, Tallahassee and Boston, he removed, in 1851, to New York, to take the position of cashier in the Metropolitan Bank. At that time country bank-notes circulated at a discount in New York, and the Metropolitan Bank had just been organized to effect the redemption of such notes at lower rates than those exacted by brokers.

Mr. Williams' previous experience in the Suffolk Bank in Boston, peculiarly fitted him to undertake this work, and for several years he waged persistent warfare against those who had been levying a heavy tax on the merchants, and against the banks which had been sending "wild-cat-bills" to New York.

In 1857 he became president of the bank and continued to fill that office till his death.

In the financial panic of 1857 he suggested the plan that the city banks should deposit with a committee a portion of their assets, and that certificates should be issued on the security of such assets guaranteed by the associate banks, which certificates should be receivable in the settlement of balances by the banks, until the panic was over. This plan, with some modifications, has been resorted to several times since to allay a panic, and always with satisfactory results. Under Mr. Williams' skillful management the Metropolitan Bank maintained a high rank among moneyed institutions and he was everywhere recognized as one of the leading bankers in the city. He published several pamphlets on financial topics which had a wide circulation, and were marked by much originality and vigor. At the beginning of the War of the Rebellion he strenuously urged the banks to make loans of money to the government, and at all times gave a hearty support to the war measures of Mr. Lincoln's administration. He was also widely known on account of his active interest in charitable and benevolent works, and especially through his long connection with the Children's Aid Society, of which he was treasurer during the last twenty-five years of his life. The love of giving amounted in him to a passion, and his enthusiastic generosity inspired others to follow his example. While he was treasurer of the Children's Aid Society, more than two million dollars passed through his hands. All the accounts were inspected by him and all expenditures were subject to his approval.

In his occasional visits to the many Industrial Schools belonging to the society, his genial presence

always carried sympathy and encouragement to the teachers.

Mr. Williams was an ardent believer in the doctrines of the Unitarian faith, and his active support was always given to that denomination. During his residence in New York he was a member of the Church of All Souls.

His connection with Westchester County began in 1857, when he married and removed to Irvington. His public spirit always prompted him to take an active part in local affairs, and his happy and hospitable home will long be remembered by the many friends he loved to collect under its roof. He died September 20, 1877, and his remains were interred in Sleepy Hollow Cemetery. In an address to the newsboys after the death of Mr. Williams, Mr. William Cullen Bryant said of him: "One virtue was his strict and scrupulous regard for truth. There was not a shadow of a promise that he failed to keep. Truth he held to be the basis of a noble and manly character. He was also strictly just, rendering to every man his proper due. . . . He was ever the friend of the friendless, the protector of the out-cast. But besides all this, he was a man who walked humbly with his God."

Three miles north of Ardsley is Elmsford, formerly known as Greenburgh and Hall's Corners. It is on the east bank of the Nepperhan River, and on the line of the New York City and Northern Railroad, eighteen miles from One Hundred and Fifty-fifth Street. It is rather a hamlet than a village, with a population such as is usually found in a well-settled country place. It has a post office, a hotel and a depot, at which all the trains stop in going to and from New York. It is the seat of one of the older churches of the county, which has a history of considerable interest. Its records have somehow been lost or destroyed, but from the best data attainable it seems to have been organized as far back as 1788, and to have been originally a Congregational Church. It afterwards became Presbyterian, and while in that relation the Rev. Thomas G. Smith, pastor of the Old Dutch Church of Sleepy Hollow, near Tarrytown, supplied the pulpit a part of the Sabbath from 1812 to 1820. It was not until 1850 that it formally entered into its present relation as a Reformed Dutch Church, though it had been that virtually for well-nigh forty years. Since that time it has had a succession of nine pastors, or stated supplies, sometimes jointly with the church at Hastings, at Unionville and at Greenville, and sometimes having the whole service of the incumbent to itself. The congregation is small, being composed of about twenty-two families, and having less than twenty members in its communion. Its present pastor is the Rev. William E. Turner, who assumed the duties of the office about May 1, 1879, but was not installed by the Classis of Westchester until May 20, 1885.

About thirty-five yards south of the church, across

the intervening space, between the building and the grave-yard, that used to form the bed of the old White Plains road, stands the monument erected nearly in the middle of the grave-yard, by the citizens of Westchester County, on June 11, 1829, to honor the memory of Isaac Van Wart. It was completed a little over a year after he died, and the occasion was celebrated by a large gathering of people near the spot, on the day just mentioned, to whom General Aaron Ward, of Sing Sing, delivered an eloquent address. It is correctly stated in Lossing's "Field-Book of the Revolution," that "Mr. Van Wart was an efficient officer of that church for many years, and acted as chorister up to the time of his death."

The monument is of marble, resting upon a granite base, consisting of three layers, or laminated flags, growing smaller toward the top, the lowest of which is about six feet square, and the shaft rising to the height altogether of about fifteen feet. It is inclosed within an iron railing about four feet high. The whole is plainly visible looking toward the east from the car-windows as the trains on the Northern Railroad pass by, and from the carriage-road, running still nearer, between the railroad and the grave-yard. There is an inscription on each of the four sides, of which the following is a copy, word for word and letter for letter, taken on the spot, June 15, 1885 :

(North Side.)

Here Repose
the mortal remains
of

ISAAC VAN WART,
an Elder of the Greenburgh Church,
WHO DIED
on the 23rd of May, 1828,
in the
60th Year of his Age.

Having lived the LIFE, he died the DEATH of a
CHRISTIAN.

(East Side.)

Vincit Amor Patriae.

Nearly half a Century
before this Monument was built,
The CONSCRIPT FATHERS of AMERICA
had in the Senate Chamber voted that
ISAAC VAN WART
was a Faithful Patriot, one in whom
the LOVE of COUNTRY was
INVINCIBLE,
and this tomb bears testimony that the
RECORD is TRUE.

(South Side.)

Fidelity.

On the 23rd of September, 1780,

ISAAC VAN WART,
accompanied by

JOHN PAULDING and DAVID WILLIAMS
all Farmers of the County of Westchester
intercepted MAJOR ANDRE, on his return
from the American Lines in the Character of a Spy,
and, notwithstanding the large bribes offered them
for his release, Nobly disdaining to sacrifice their
COUNTRY for GOLD,
secured and carried him to the commanding Officer
of the district, whereby the dangerous and traitorous
Conspiracy of ARNOUD was brought to light;
the insidious designs of the enemy baffled;

The AMERICAN ARMY Saved,
and our BELOVED COUNTRY now free
and Independent, rescued from most
IMMINENT PERIL.

(West Side.)

THE CITIZENS
of the

County of Westchester

ERECTED this TOMB

in testimony of the high sense

they entertain for the
VIRTUOUS AND PATRIOTIC CONDUCT
of their Fellow Citizen;
and as a Memorial Sacred to
PUBLIC GRATITUDE.

Mr. Van Wart's wife, with whom he lived happily for so many years, and whose maiden name was Rachel Storm, survived him nearly six years. She died of cancer, after a lingering illness, on March 4, 1834, and her mortal remains were laid to rest on the south side of the monument, within the inclosure of the iron railing. A locust-tree has sprung up, and is growing between the base of the husband's monument and the grave of the wife. The following is the inscription on her tombstone, an upright marble slab, with weeping willows carved upon it above the lettering :

" In

Memory of

RACHEL, wife of
Isaac Van Wart,
who died March 4, 1834,
aged 73 years & 9 mo.

Afflictions sore long time she bore,
Physicians' aid was vain
Till God was pleased to give her ease
And free her from her pain."

The neighborhood in which the church is located was the scene of some stirring events during the Revolutionary war.

On June 15, 1885, the writer of this narrative, in company with Isaac F. Van Wart, a grandson of Isaac Van Wart, one of the captors of Major Andre, spent the day with the Rev. Alexander Van Wart (born September 20, 1799), the only surviving son of the captor, at his home in Pleasantville, in the township of Mount Pleasant, Westchester County. The Rev. Mr. Van Wart was remarkably bright and communicative that day, which his daughter ascribed to his "having company that took an interest in matters that interested him." As the house in which his father was born and had lived in his early days was only a mile or so north of Elmsford, or Greenburgh and Hall's Corners, as it was often called, he was, of course, familiar with all the neighborhood, and all the traditions connected with it. During the day, both before and after dinner, we sat on the verandah, where he went over many of them in an extremely pleasant recital, which the writer took down in pencil resting his paper on the back of Benson's large Exposition of the Bible lying on his knee.

One of them was that a skirmish between a company of patriot militia on one side and a company of British soldiers, aided by a band of Tories, under



J. C. Williams



the leadership of "Jim Husted" on the other, took place "on the rising ground just east of the Reformed Dutch Church and parsonage at Hall's Corners." That was the name he gave to the place.

The conflict was brought on by the firing of "Jake Acker." He was famous in his day as a sharpshooter with musket or rifle, and being out probably hunting on the brushy and brambly elevation known as "the Island," between Saw-Mill River and the road east of it, in company with John Dean, he saw a squad of twenty-eight British soldiers marching carelessly down the road toward the site of the present tavern, near the bridge over which the White Plains road crosses the Saw-Mill River. "Jake" was an intense patriot, and considering every British soldier put out of the way as so much clear gain for the cause of independence, he drew a bead on the marching squad, and, as usual, he brought down his game. His ball struck one of the soldiers in the groin, and he fell. The others took up their wounded comrade and carried him some way up the rising ground, east of the road and north of the present tavern. His injury was mortal, and the poor fellow died.

But while they were thus occupied with him, and taking counsel together what to do, "Jake," who had reloaded his musket, crept stealthily through the bushes down to the eastern edge of the island, and, taking deliberate aim, sent another ball through the temples of a British soldier, who fell dead upon the spot. They were both afterwards buried on the island. "I saw," said Mr. Van Wart, "the graves of these two men on the island, with common field-stones for the head and the foot."

While this tragedy was being enacted just above the tavern, some American militiamen, who were lying on the grass just below, a little south of the present Reformed Church, and between the road and the Saw-Mill River, had their attention awakened by the firing of "Jake Acker's" musket, and they at once arose and gave three cheers. The White Plains road at that time—at least one of them, for there were three, the north, the centre and the south—ran from the Saw-Mill River to the east, directly between the Elmsford Reformed Church and the burying-ground adjacent to it on the south, and thence passed up the gradual ascent over the top of the hill. The American militiamen immediately started at a brisk pace for the high ground east of the church, where the old south road to White Plains bent a little to the south-east in its crooked course. Just below the point where this old road now diverges from the present straight road to White Plains, west of the old Gabriel Tompkins house, lately owned by I. H. Cheever, and now owned by the Elmsford Land Company, and west of the present diverging road, the American militiamen and the British soldiers, with the Tories, came into collision. The British broke through the line of the militiamen, "but our people," said the Rev. Mr. Van Wart, "pursued and captured almost, if not all of

them, except 'Jim Husted,' who hid in the currant-bushes in the garden."

Another interesting statement of the Rev. Mr. Van Wart was in relation to his father's being wounded. As he had often heard the story from his father's own lips, there can be no doubt in regard to its correctness. Isaac Van Wart, the captor, in company with John Dean, who figured with "Jake Acker" in the episode on the island, and a colored man named Lun, was out one night on the watch for men who came up from below to steal cattle, and everything else, in fact, they could put their hands on. The three were lying behind a stone fence along the east side of the road running north and south, just above the point where it is now entered by the road running west from the place of Isaac F. Van Wart, a grandson of the captor, and not far from a house on the opposite side belonging to the estate of H. G. Sniffen. As they lay there in the darkness waiting for whatever might happen, "they heard hogs and cattle making a noise," and perceived that they were coming toward them. At once they arose to their feet and in a loud tone of voice their leader gave the order "stand!" With that the men driving the cattle fired. Just at that moment Isaac Van Wart had one leg over the fence with a view to his getting into the road, and immediately he and his friends fired in return. The enemy fled and made good their escape in the woods. Although he felt a momentary stinging sensation in his heel while his foot was hanging over the fence, Mr. Van Wart did not know he was hurt until a few moments afterwards, when, as he expressed it, "he felt something squash in his shoe." On examination, it was found that a buckshot had gone through the fleshy part of his heel. John Dean and Lun, the colored man, took him between them, with one of his arms over the shoulder of each, and carried him to a neighboring hay barrack, where they all slept till the next morning. "How they got him home," said the Rev. Mr. Van Wart, "I don't know, but it was not more than three weeks before he was back again and lively as ever."

About three-fourths of a mile south of the Elmsford Railroad Station, on the right side of the carriage road leading from Elmsford to Ardsley, at a point where the road makes a curve toward the west, stands a house, which, on Chambers' Map of Greenburgh, published in 1857, is set down as belonging to the "heirs of J. Romer." Here, on this spot, but not in this house, lived, during the Revolutionary War, Cornelius Van Texal, or Van Tassel, as it was variously spelled, a whole-souled patriotic man of Holland blood, who suffered great losses for his country. He became father-in-law of John Romer, known everywhere as "Captain John Romer," which explains why it was that the place finally came into Romer's possession. Van Texal had an only son of twenty or twenty-one, a fine, athletic fellow, who shared the sentiments of his father. The British and Tories

looked upon them both with an evil eye, and were especially desirous to catch the latter, as he was brave and efficient in many ways to their annoyance. One night, late in November, 1777, a gang of them came up from below to burn and plunder. They set fire to the house, and young Van Texal, having run up to the roof with the idea that he could make his escape there, found it impracticable and was compelled to return down the stairway. He managed, however, in the obscurity and confusion to slip out of the back-door, and, being very swift of foot, he made his way safely, though fired at, to the Nepperhan River, which was a little to the west of the house. In attempting to cross on the ice, it gave way, and he fell into the water. He got out and through the briar and thorn bushes he arrived, wet, scratched and bleeding, at the house of Hendrick Romer, a cousin of "Captain John," west of the river, and under the hill that rises there to quite a height. He was warmed, clothed and cared for, but he took a terrible cold, which threw him into a hasty consumption, so that before the year was out he died.

The British and Tories, after burning the house, drove off the horses and cattle, and they took Cornelius Van Texal prisoner, and conducted him to New York, where he was confined in the old Sugar-House prison for eleven months and eleven days. It is a singular fact that one of the horses, a dark-colored animal, that was driven away to New York, returned a few nights later, bringing a gray horse with him to the old place. The sound of horses' hoofs in the night frightened Mrs. Van Texal, who was hiding in an earth cellar, as she thought the British and Tories were coming again. But hearing a horse whinny, she recognized the sound, and, running out, found there in the moonlight the favorite horse she had given up for lost. In her delight she threw her arms around his neck and kissed him.

Lossing refers to this marauding expedition in his "Field-Book of the Revolution," vol. i. p. 762, footnote, and gives an account of the retaliation it provoked under the guidance of that sturdy Tarrytown patriot, Abraham Martlingh. He says,—

"There were a number of the Van Tassels living in the vicinity of the Greenburgh Church. In November, 1777, a party of Chasseurs, under Captain Emerick, went up from Kingsbridge, surprised the Van Tassels, burned their houses, stripped the women and children of their clothing, and carried off Peter and Cornelius Van Tassel prisoners. In retaliation for the outrage, the patriots fitted out an expedition at Tarrytown under the command of Abraham Martlingh, which proceeded down the river in boats, passed the water-guards of the enemy in safety, landed a little below Spuyten Devil Creek, set fire to General Oliver de Lancey's house and returned without losing a man. General De Lancey was a most active and bitter Loyalist."

Christiana Romer, better known as "Tiny Romer," was the wife of Hendrick Romer, in whose house young Van Texal found refuge. She was the heroine of a local history, which says that she was in the habit of baking bread for the hungry American soldiers and militiamen, and hiding it, where she knew

they would find it, in the rocks. She was the daughter of Peter Van Wermer, a patriot also of Holland blood. She died on part of the premises owned by her father and her husband, August 31, 1856, aged one hundred and four years. The late Rev. A. T. Stewart, then pastor of the First Reformed Church of Tarrytown, who knew her well, wrote an account of her life and death, which was published in the *Westchester Herald*, at Sing Sing. The following is an extract from it:

"Mrs. Romer was seventeen years of age at the time of her marriage with Hendrick Romer, of the same town, and twenty-four at the Declaration of Independence, and one hundred and four years old in July last.

"Her husband enlisted in the Continental Army, leaving her, with only a young brother and slave, in charge of the farm. Through all the war she cherished a strong love for her country. In conversation on the scenes of that period she would become exceedingly animated, too much so to express herself in the English language, and she would leave it and take up the Dutch, which was familiar to her, and pour forth her sentiments in approbation of her countrymen, and in detestation of some things done by the enemy, until you would be sensibly moved by her manner, and would catch a stronger idea of the spirit of those times, and the men and women who struggled through them to victory, than you have ever gained from seeing them in print.

"I never shall forget her manner when stating, at the age of 100 years, her baking operations for the enemy. (NOTE.—She did the baking unwillingly. Being under compulsion, she had no choice.) On one of these occasions she had concealed several Americans not far from the house, and while feeding the enemy she remembered her friends. She rose up, suffused with tears, and yet in laughter, as she said,—

"While the hungry dogs were eating I would now and then catch a loaf up under my short gown and run round and throw it in to my men under the rocks."

"Mrs. Romer's health was good almost to the last. She kept her own apartments and table, and boiled her own kettle. Until six years past she would walk a mile or a mile and a half to buy her groceries. She was very companionable, especially with any who would speak the Dutch language. The Dutch Bible was ever near her, and she seemed to know its great truths as she did her alphabet.

"Mrs. Romer was united with the old North Dutch Church, near Tarrytown, under the ministry of Mr. Jackson. She ripened under the preaching of Thomas G. Smith, and for the last few years of her life she worshipped mainly in the Church of Greenburgh.

"No one is living who remembers her confession of Christianity, but all who have known her, and yet live to speak of her, bear the highest testimony to her Christian character.

"The funeral services were conducted in the Church of Greenburgh, and her remains borne to the old burial-ground of the North Church, near Tarrytown, and interred by the side of her husband."

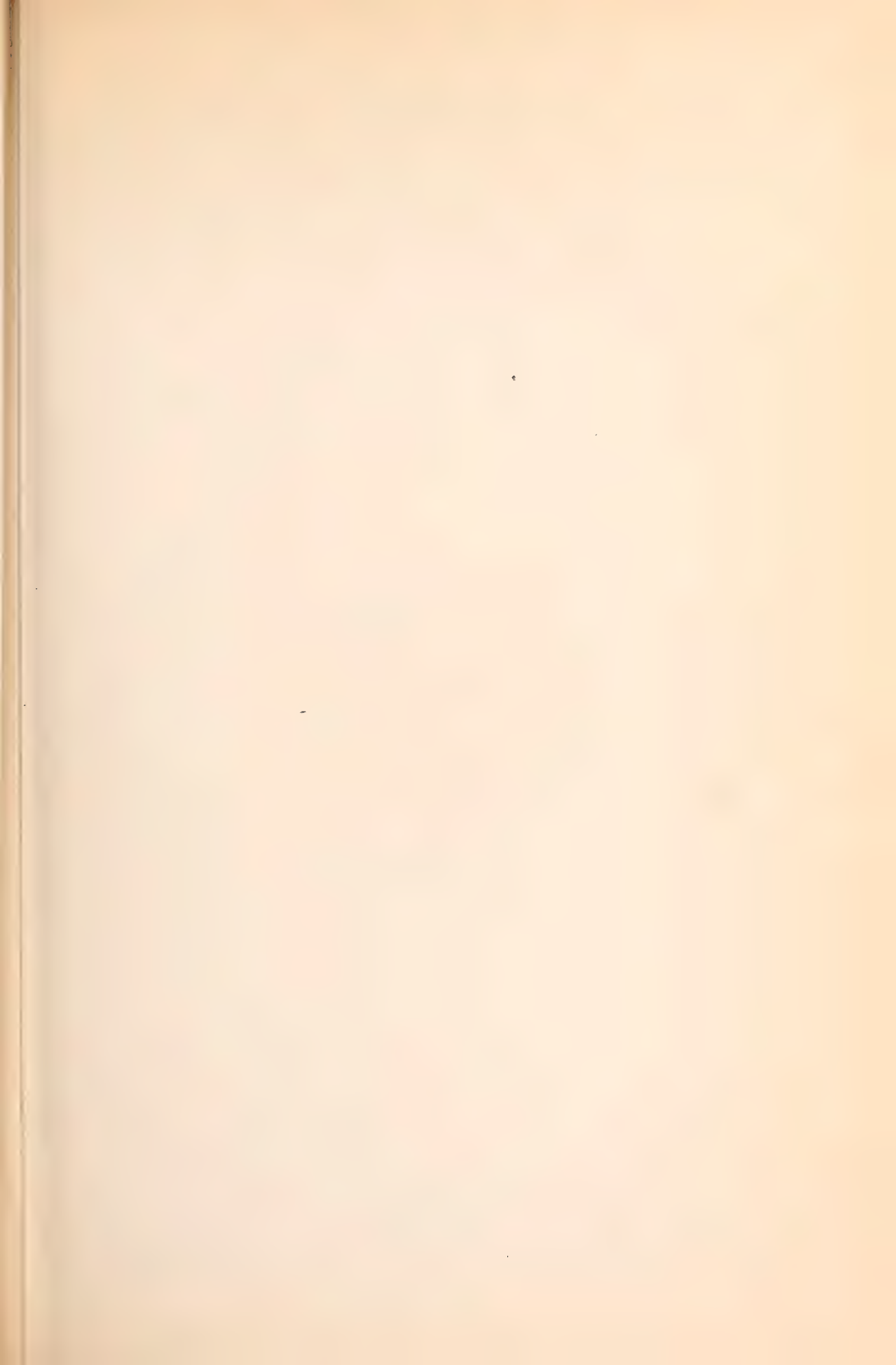
Just one mile below the station at Elmsford, on the east side of the same road, stands an Episcopal house of worship known as "St. Paul's Mission Chapel of Saw-Mill River Valley." The mission was organized on Easter day, 1870, with four members, including Mr. John Drisler, who was then to serve as a lay reader. After laboring for about two years in that capacity, Mr. Drisler was ordained as a deacon by Bishop Horatio Potter, on July 4, 1872. The chapel was built in 1870, but was enlarged in 1872, thus becoming forty feet long by twenty feet wide. It is situated on an elevation nearly midway between Elmsford and Ardsley, and fronts the west, looking down upon the river, and over to the wooded hills beyond it. The mission numbers about twenty-five families and twenty communicants.

About a quarter of a mile to the east of this stands the Worthington Memorial Chapel, a fine stone building erected in 1883 as a memorial to the late Henry



Henry R. Worthington







"THE HOMESTEAD."
RESIDENCE OF HENRY R. WORTHINGTON,

Rossiter Worthington by his widowed wife. It is built on a portion of the somewhat extensive landed property which Mr. Worthington owned there at the time of his decease. His mortal remains lie in a vault under the chancel, and it is understood that the chapel is to remain closed during Mrs. Worthington's life-time. As yet no public religious service has ever been held in it, as none was held at the laying of the corner-stone. The edifice, of course, has never been consecrated, and is not under the control of the diocese. It is a tasteful structure, and is said to have cost altogether about twenty thousand dollars. The building itself, and the grounds adjoining, together with the inclosure, are kept in excellent order, which must involve, in addition, a considerable expense.

The following tribute to the memory of Mr. Worthington is from the *Transactions of the American Society of Mechanical Engineers* for the year 1881:

In Memoriam,

Henry Rossiter Worthington, late vice-president American Society of Mechanical Engineers.

The wide and profound expressions of regret at the sudden decease of Mr. Worthington among his professional acquaintances and in the great circles of his friends were first and largely an expression of personal bereavement. He had earned a high place as an ingenious inventor and a successful engineer and his work will leave an indelible impression upon professional practice, but the influence and the traditions of him as a man and a friend will outlive generations of engineers.

The foundation of this mingled esteem and affection was his intense and abiding love of the truth. The foundation was built upon by scientific methods and the structure was adorned by personal graces and accomplishments. The love of truth that came from a high-minded ancestry was nurtured by his professional pursuits, for his profession, unlike some other professions—and this is their misfortune, not their fault—has an inevitable criterion, and that is the truth. This sentiment—for it grew in him from a conviction to a sentiment—not only controlled his professional and private conduct, but it stimulated in him an honest skepticism regarding those beliefs in general which have come down to us with no higher authority than that they are an inheritance. He was a willing and valiant assailant of "humbag" in every form, and nobler than this, he was the patient iconoclast who dispelled the phantoms in the mind of many an inventor and who saved many a plodding experimenter—not in applied science only—from impending disaster. He was also endowed with a grand humanity which practice perfected. Nor were his friends so called the sole beneficiaries; only a long and intimate fellowship with him has discovered many of his private charities and half of them will probably never be known.

These attributes found apt and eloquent expression

in his scholarly culture and brilliancy in his spontaneous and perennial wit. As the patient, but not generally unimpassioned, advocate of truth or as the exposé of a fallacy or an imposture by analysis, by analogy, by ridicule, he had few equals.

And to crown all was his overflowing good-fellowship,—with all his serious thoughts and moods, his love of humor and mirth, of intimate talks with groups of friends, rambling from grave to gay, when all his true and kind, and withal fantastic, inspirations would grow into bloom. It was an education to hear him talk when the subject was large enough to move him.

The time is not ripe to analyze Mr. Worthington's contributions to the engineering specialty, in which he did not claim, but in which he was assigned, by general consent, the highest place. Mr. Worthington was undoubtedly the first proposer and constructor of the direct steam pump. The duplex system in pumping-engines—one engine actuating the steam-valves



THE WORTHINGTON MEMORIAL CHAPEL.

of the other, causing a pause of the pistons at the end of the stroke, so that the water-valves can seat themselves quietly and preserve a uniform water pressure, this being a vast improvement on the Cornish engine—is generally admitted to be one of the most ingenious and effective, and certainly one of the most largely applied advances in modern engineering.

Mr. Worthington was chiefly known as a hydraulic engineer, but apart from this specialty, his experimental and practical contributions to other departments of engineering, such as canal steam navigation, compound engines, instruments of precision and machinery tools, would entitle him to a high position in the profession.

Mr. Worthington was born December 17, 1817, and died December 17, 1880. His ancestors in America were sprung from Sir Nicholas Worthington, of Worthington, England, who died at Naseby, for King Charles, and they came to America in 1649.

It would be interesting to trace the history of this family, especially the grand old father, Asa Worthington. A minute review of the life of Henry Rossiter Worthington, with its multitudinous benefactions of invention, of counsel, of entertainment, would also be pleasing and instructive, but this is not the time nor the place.

His mortal remains lie on the edge of the old rocks which geologists call the primal continent, and every following cycle furnishes some stone to lay on his grave. So his immortal remains illustrate every phase of progress, from silurian instinct—to live—to the last formula of civilization—to let live.

Mr. Worthington was born in the city of New York, but his parents soon after removed to Brooklyn, where they continued to reside for many years. His father, Asa Worthington, at one period held the position of consul at Lima, South America, which appointment he retained for a number of years. He was at the time connected with the business firm of Wetmore, Chauncey, Cryder & Co., who had an established house in Lima.

Mr. Worthington's wife was Miss Newton, daughter of the late Commodore John T. Newton, United States Navy. She with four children survive him, —Amelia Stuart (wife of T. Whiteside Rae, civil engineer, formerly connected with the United States navy), Henry Fraser, Sarah Newton (wife of William Lanman Bull, a banker in Wall Street), and Charles Campbell (who succeeds his father as an hydraulic engineer in the business which he founded).

The mortal remains of Mr. Worthington were laid to rest in the Memorial Chapel built by his widow at Nepperhan Valley, near Irvington.

Another of the old families of Greenburgh, who have always been prominent in its history, is that of the Odells.

The progenitor of the Odell family in America was Mr. William Odell, who, with his wife and family, came to Concord, Mass., about 1639. He afterwards removed to Fairfield, Conn., where he died, and his will, dated June 6, 1676, was proved by his son, John

Odell, and his son-in-law, Samuel Moorehouse. Another son of the emigrant was William Odell, Jr., of Rye, N. Y., who married a daughter of Richard Vowles, of Rye, and had three children, one of whom was John Odell, of Fordham, N. Y., who married Hannah —, and had, among other children, a son, John Odell, Jr., of Fordham, who married Hannah Vermilyea, and died leaving a will dated September 25, 1735 (N. Y. Liber. 13, p. 183), in which he mentions his "honored father, John Odell," his wife, Hannah, and his children—John, Isaac, Jonathan, Abraham, Hannah and Altien.

Jonathan Odell, of Greenburgh, N. Y., the third son, married Margaret Dyckman, and died September 23d, 1818, aged eighty-seven; his wife died March 20, 1783, aged fifty-one.

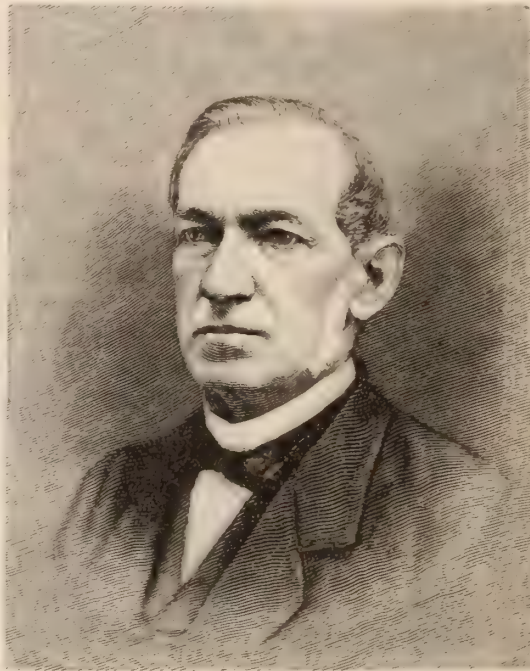
They had nine children, one of whom was Colonel John Odell, of the Continental Army. Colonel Odell was descended in the line of William, 1, of Fairfield; William, 2, Jr., of Rye; John, 3, of Fordham; John, 4, Jr., of Fordham; and Jonathan; 5, of Greenburgh, and that he was the great-great-grandson of William, of Rye.¹

Isaac Odell was born in the town of Greenburgh October 16, 1820, on the old family homestead, which had been the dwelling-place of his grandfather, Joseph Odell, and his ancestors before him. His father, Joshua Odell, married Jane, daughter of Jacob Lent, and Mr. Odell remained with his parents till he reached the age of twenty-two, when he started to seek his fortune, and

went to New York, where he first obtained employment in a grocery store.

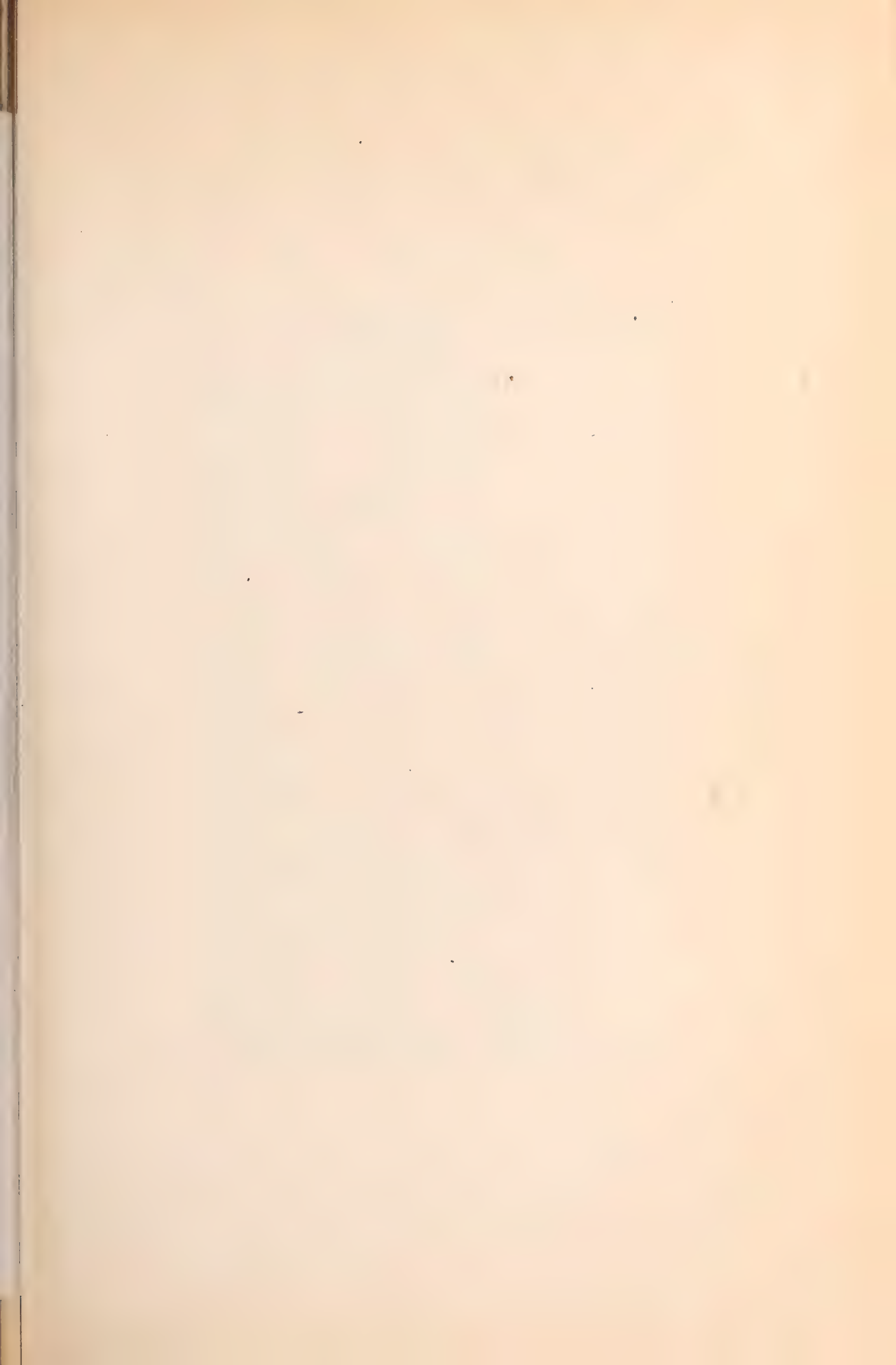
A year later he began the business on his own account, and continued it for twenty years. In 1862 he established a sugar refinery, which he conducted till 1874, when he became president of the Irving National Bank, having been connected with it as director since 1857.

From 1875 to 1882 he was president of the Mercantile Bank. Owing to declining health he resigned this position and retired from active business, spend-



Isaac Odell

¹ Rufus King, in Magazine of American History, vol. iv. p. 389.





"LAKESIDE."
RESIDENCE OF JOSEPH STAPLES, JR.,
HARTSDALE, WESTCHESTER COUNTY, N. Y.

ing a large portion of his time upon his farm in Greenburgh.

This farm, which was the early home of his wife, has an historical interest as being the place where Washington encamped his troops after the battle of White Plains, and still bears the name of "Washington Hill," and is on the north side of the old road from Dobbs Ferry to White Plains.

The old homestead of the Odell family stood on the east side of the Saw-Mill road, on the north side of Jackson Avenue; and four acres at the corner of those roads, which are now in the possession of Mr. Odell, include the site of the ancient mansion, which was destroyed about 1830. It was built long before the Revolution.

Mr. Odell married Elizabeth, daughter of Samuel Hopkins. Their children are Charles M., Emma E., Arthur L., William I. and Isaac Herbert. Mr. Odell has long been connected with the Methodist Episcopal Church and for many years was a trustee of the old church in Duane Street, and at the present time is president of the board of trustees of the Central Methodist Episcopal Church, on Seventh Avenue New York City. He is known as one of the old citizens of New York, and has been a witness of its rapid growth, and there are few who are better acquainted with its business interests. He has long been one of the trustees of the Northern Dispensary of New York, and takes a deep interest in its work of usefulness.

Of the villages or hamlets on the eastern borders of the township, and on or near to the Bronx River, the one farthest to the south is Greenville. It is situated on the Boulevard, or the Westchester continuation of the Central Park, or Eighth Avenue, about nineteen miles north from the Grand Central Depot in New York City, and about a mile and a half northwest from the Scarsdale depot, just across the Bronx, on the New York and Harlem Railroad. It has a population probably of about one hundred, or perhaps a little over. The only church in the place is the Reformed Dutch Church, whose beginnings date back to 1840, though it was not actually organized as a church until 1842, under the pastoral care of the Rev. Victor M. Hulbert, of Yonkers. It has had since then a succession of ten pastors. The present pastor is the Rev. James E. Graham, who was installed on May 14, 1885. The consistory reports a congregation consisting of about eighteen families, and a membership in full communion of fifty-one.

About two miles to the north of Greenville, along the same Boulevard, or Central Avenue extension, are the almost connected villages or hamlets of Hart's Corners and Hartsdale. The former lies more toward the west, the latter toward the east, on a road crossing the Boulevard, and running southeast to the Bronx River. The depot of the New York and Harlem Railroad is at Hartsdale, directly on the west, or Greenburgh, bank of the Bronx, a trifle over twenty

and one-half miles from the Grand Central Depot in New York City. The two places, if two they can be called, are pleasantly situated in a region of hills and valleys, and together have probably a population of about one hundred and fifty or two hundred. There is but one post-office, which is at Hartsdale. There are two stores, a carpenter, a wheelwright and a blacksmith-shop, and three saloons at the depot. There is only one church, the Methodist Episcopal, which was organized and the church built "in 1832, during the first cholera season." The little church at the Rocks of Scilly, north of it, was absorbed into this, and the present edifice, in which the worship is now held, was erected in 1872. The church has a membership of probably not more than sixty altogether. The Rev. D. W. C. Van Gaasbeck is its present pastor.

It was not far from Hart's Corners and Hartsdale, but across the Bronx, that occurred one of the preliminary collisions between the British and the American troops a few hours before the battle on Chatterton's Hill. Referring to the British advance northward, up the east bank of the Bronx toward White Plains, and toward Chatterton's Hill, in Greenburgh, it is stated in the "Battles of the United States," by Henry B. Dawson, Esq., vol. i. p. 178, that

"The light infantry and chasseurs drove before them the pickets and advance parties from the American camp until a party of two thousand Eastern troops, under General Spencer, which had been sent out to check the enemy's progress, were encountered, near the present village of Hart's Corners, a little more than a mile south of the lines. This party was advantageously posted on the old York road, and gave the advancing Hessians a full discharge of musketry, which threw them into disorder; yet they themselves appear to have been terror-stricken at what they had done, and retired from their position, passing through the Bronx at the 'ford,' a short distance below the railroad bridge, between White Plains and Hart's Corners, and, seeking refuge in the hills of Greenburgh, closely pursued by a brigade of Hessians, commanded by Count Rahl, who afterwards abandoned the chase, and took a position on a hill, south from Chatterton's Hill, on the western margin of the Harlem Railroad."

The distance is not over a mile and a half, or two miles at the farthest, up the Boulevard from Hart's Corners and Hartsdale northward to the almost triangular extension of the village of White Plains, which here projects itself across the Bronx River into the township of Greenburgh. On the south side of this extension stands Chatterton's Hill, famous in history as the spot upon which was fought the chief part of the battle often spoken of as the battle of White Plains, but in reality the battle of Chatterton's Hill, in the township of Greenburgh, on Monday, October 28, 1776.

Sir William Howe, not deeming it prudent to attack the fortified camp of the Americans on New York Island, made a movement to cut off Washington's communications with the Eastern States by landing troops on the north shore of Long Island Sound, to penetrate up the country, and, at the same time, October 9, 1776, sent three frigates, under Captain Hyde Parker, up the Hudson River to Tarrytown, partly to embarrass the communication with the west shore of the Hudson, and partly to excite an uprising of the

Westchester Tories. Captain Parker at that time visited the Philips' Manor-House in Sleepy Hollow, but although its proprietor had no sympathy with the colonies struggling for their independence, his mission, owing to different causes, was not attended with success.

Washington, however, saw through the designs of General Howe, and having withdrawn from the city of New York, moved his army slowly up the western bank of the Bronx River, but keeping his front to the east, toward the British, who were moving up on the opposite bank. In this way he proceeded toward White Plains, in the heart of Westchester County, taking care, however, that his left was always in advance of the British right.

"General Washington," says Ramsay, in his "History of the American Revolution," page 309, "while retreating from New York Island, was careful to make a front towards the British, from East Chester almost to White Plains, in order to secure the march of those who were behind, and to defend the removal of the sick, the cannon and stores of his army. In this manner his troops made a line of small detached and intrenched camps on the several heights and strong grounds¹ from Valentine's Hill on the right (down near the southeast corner of the old township of Yonkers) to the vicinity of the White Plains on the left."

It was in the execution of this movement that the two hostile armies came together, and the battle was fought on Chatterton's Hill. As the general Revolutionary History of Westchester County has been assigned to an eminent historian, who is *facile princeps* in this department, there is no occasion here for going into detail, and the reader is referred for a fuller account to his interesting paper in another part of this work.

The mere outline will here suffice. General Washington having strongly intrenched himself north of White Plains village, in anticipation of a British attack, sent, on October 27, 1776, two militia regiments southwestward across the Bronx, to throw up intrenchments on Chatterton's Hill. The next morning, the 28th, he ordered Colonel Haslet, with his Delaware regiment, with a battalion of Maryland troops and others, for the most part militia, numbering about sixteen hundred, to join those already on the hill. The whole force was under the command of General McDougall.

While the enemy were moving northward, up the east bank of the Bronx, as if to attack the intrenched position above the village, it was observed by Colonel Haslet that they suddenly halted. The British officers held a council of war on horseback in a wheat-

field south of the village, and immediately afterwards their forces, instead of moving northward as before, began to move westward toward the Bronx, intending evidently to dislodge the Americans on Chatterton's Hill. They placed some dozen cannon or more on the high ground opposite, and east of the hill and the river, and opened a furious fire on McDougall and his forces. Meanwhile, under cover of the fire, the British constructed a temporary bridge over the Bronx and prepared to cross.

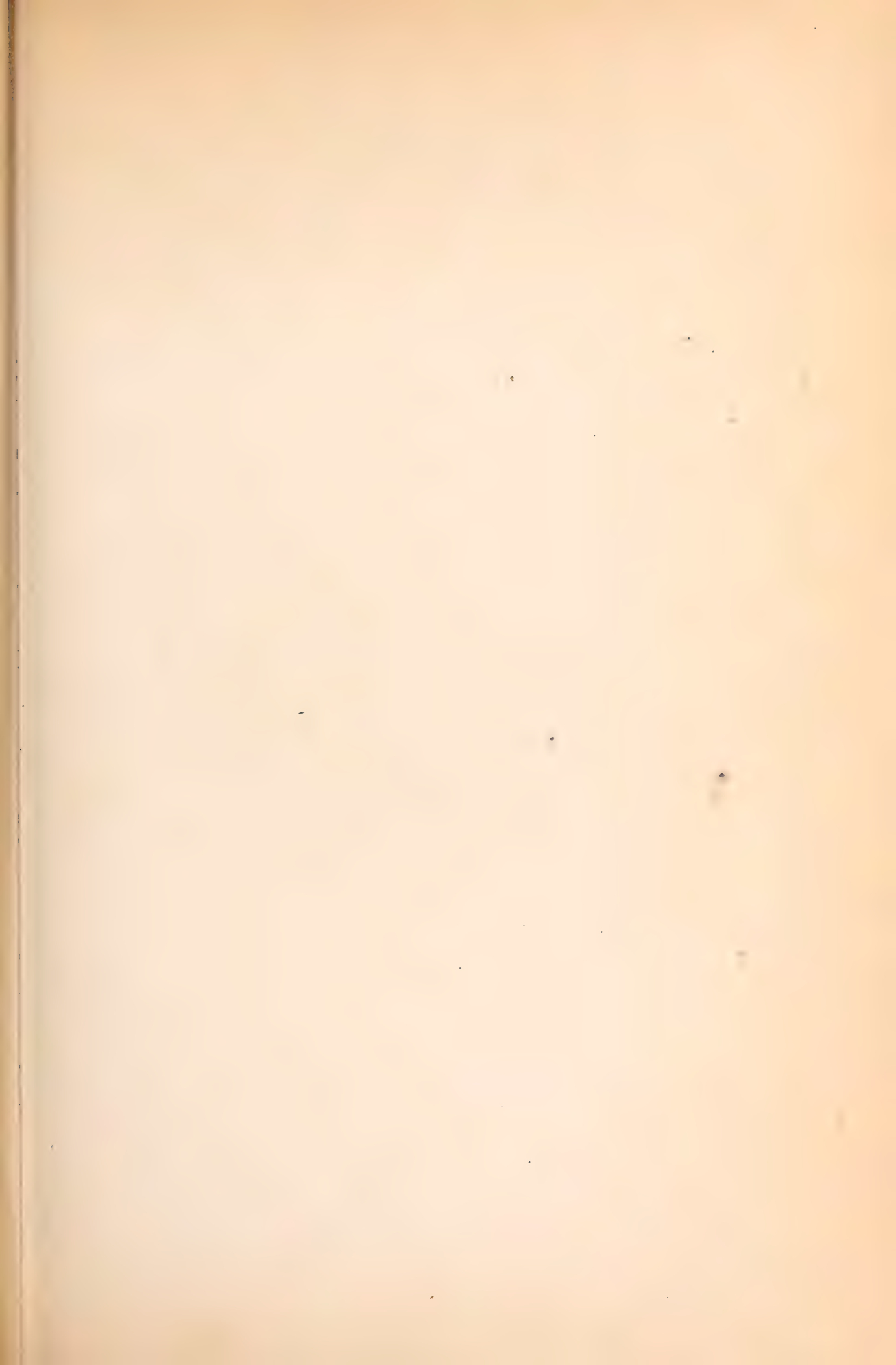
To receive them, McDougall placed two cannon on the rocky ledge fronting the river, which did fearful execution among his assailants. Captain Alexander Hamilton, who afterwards performed so important a part in his country's history, was then a young officer of artillery, and had the two cannon in charge. Many years afterwards, standing on the spot, and describing the battle to a friend at his side, he said, "For three successive discharges the advancing column of British troops was swept from hill-top to river." Finding it impracticable to scale the rocky ascent, the enemy moved southward down the river, and joined the force under Colonel Rahl, who had already crossed over to the western bank, a quarter of a mile below.

By this movement General McDougall, being subjected to an attack upon his right flank, was obliged to fall back. Although he disputed every foot of the ground to the summit of the hill, the British cavalry finally gained the top, and made a charge upon the militia, before which they were compelled to give way. The Delaware regiment and a part of McDougall's brigade made a last stand behind a fence on the hill, but to no purpose. The Americans effected an orderly retreat back to the intrenched position above the village, and east of the Bronx, and the British did not attempt to follow up their advantage. The British commander seemed at one time to contemplate an attack upon Washington's main position, but he finally gave it up as an unpromising attempt and moved off, foiled of his intention, first to Dobbs Ferry, and then to King's Bridge, where he encamped on the 13th of November. The Americans lost about eighty prisoners and one hundred killed and wounded, and the British lost about two hundred and twenty-nine.

In regard to the battle at Chatterton's Hill and to the forces engaged in it, the following recent statements are given in a volume published by Harper & Brothers, New York, 1884, entitled, "The Hessians and other German Auxiliaries of Great Britain in the Revolutionary War. By Edward J. Lowell, with Maps and Plans," on pages 76 to 78.

¹It was probably during this northward march through Greenburgh that Washington had his headquarters at the place, heretofore referred to, known as "Washington Hill," a name given to the neighboring elevation on the west, from the circumstance that he sometimes resorted to it to make a reconnaissance.

"On the 28th of October Sir William Howe found Washington's army advantageously posted behind the village of White Plains. It numbered somewhat more than thirteen thousand men, of whom about fifteen hundred occupied Chatterton Hill, on the extreme right of the American position, and were separated from the main body by the river Bronx. Sir William determined to attack this right wing. One English and two Hessian regiments, supported by the Hessian grenadiers, forced the





Lewis Roberts

Bronx and scaled the steep and rocky sides of the hill. The regiment Von Lossburg was obliged to charge through a burning wood and to face the heaviest American fire. Its loss in killed and wounded was not far from fifty men. The result of the contest might have been doubtful had not Colonel Rahl, commanding his own regiment and that named after Knyphausen, also forded the Bronx, outflanked the Americans, and assisted the troops which were making the attack in front. The river was deep, and the Hessian soldiers hesitated to enter it. Lieutenants Wiederhold and Briede dashed in first to set them an example. We shall hear more of the former of these officers. The second fell a few days later at the taking of Fort Washington.

"Some of the Americans fought fairly well on this occasion against much superior numbers. They had an undoubted advantage of position, and made good use of it, inflicting a loss of about two hundred and eighty killed and wounded on their enemy. Howe mentions in his dispatches the good service done by the English and Hessian artillery. Heister's adjutant-general says that the Hessian field-pieces made such a 'thunder-storm' that one could neither see nor hear. The Americans had but three small cannon on the hill.

"The American army at this time was largely composed of militiamen, sent by the various States for short periods of service. These militiamen were in great measure ill-armed and in rags, undisciplined and commanded by officers who had but a few months before left the desk or the plough. While some of these improvised officers were persons of character and talent, others possessed no merit but their ability to raise men. The men thus raised would consider and treat such an officer as an equal, 'and in the character of an officer,' says Washington, 'regard him no more than a broomstick.' Some of the Americans had distinguished themselves by deeds of valor, but, like all raw recruits, they were subject to panics, often entirely unreasonable. These facts must constantly be borne in mind, or the story of the Revolution becomes incomprehensible. Sir William Howe, on the other hand, commanded a regular, disciplined soldiery, scarcely to be surpassed in Europe, and provided with everything desirable for the conduct of a war.

"For three days after the engagement at Chatterton Hill the armies stood facing each other and strengthened their fortifications. On the night of the 31st of October Washington retreated to a strong position above White Plains, and Howe on the morrow, after harassing the American rear-guard, turned his attention to a new scheme."

It was at this battle on Chatterton's Hill that Joseph Gedney,¹ a notorious Westchester Tory, put a brand of infamy upon his name and memory that time has never yet, after the lapse of over a hundred years, been able to efface. A thorough-paced opponent of the patriot cause to the end of the war, the national triumph made the country too warm to hold him, and so, leaving his country for his country's good, he emigrated to Nova Scotia. At the battle of Chatterton's Hill, after the failure of the enemy's attempt to reach the top of the hill by ascending its steep and rugged face toward the east, he volunteered as guide to the Hessians, and led them half a mile or so to the south, where the ascent is comparatively easy. The attack was made from that direction, and, thus taking our forces in the flank, it finally proved successful. He earned his reward with those to whom he afterwards went, but he earned for himself also a place within the scope of Moore's fiery malediction upon all traitors:

"Oh for a tongue to curse the slave
Whose treason, like a deadly blight,

¹ Lorenzo Sabine, in the first volume of his "Biographical Sketches of Loyalists of the American Revolution," Boston, 1864, p. 468, gives the orthography of his name as Gidney, and says "He was the owner of the land on which the battle of White Plains was fought, and conducted the British Army thither." This matter of orthography and ownership are both doubtful. He went first to Shelburne, Nova Scotia, and afterward removed to Digby Neck, where he died, at Bridgetown, in 1811.

Comes o'er the councils of the brave,
And blasts them in their hour of might!"

A centennial celebration of the battle was arranged for, under the auspices of the Westchester County Historical Society, to be held on Chatterton's Hill, in Greenburgh, on Saturday, October 28, 1876. A platform had been erected there for the purpose, but the day proved stormy and disagreeable, and it rained so persistently that the large number of persons who came to attend it could not be expected to stand during the exercises under the open sky. After the laying of the corner-stone for a monument to mark the spot, it was deemed necessary to adjourn from the battle-ground to the village of White Plains, on the other side of the river, where the remainder of the proceedings were held in the Court-House. There the address was delivered by the Hon. Clarkson N. Potter, Representative in Congress from the district. The lower part of the pedestal for the monument was intended to be twelve feet square, and to have a cannon at each corner. During its previous session, Congress had donated three cannon for that purpose. The front of the monument was designed to have the inscription: "Battle of White Plains, October 28, 1776," and the rear the inscription: "Erected by the People of Westchester County, October 28, 1876."

Mr. Lewis Roberts, widely known throughout social, religious and business circles in Westchester County, is of Welsh descent. His great-grandfather, who was a relative of De Witt Clinton, came with the ancestor of that gentleman, Charles Clinton, to this country in 1729, and settled in Orange County, N. Y. His son became a merchant and manufacturer at Salisbury Mills, also in that county, where his grandson, George Talmadge Roberts, father of Lewis Roberts, was born September 7, 1790.

George T. Roberts was a professional gentleman of much learning and ability, and for many years was connected with the public schools in Ontario County, N. Y., where at one time he conducted a school of his own. Mr. Roberts married Miss Anna Fisk, who was born at Springfield, Mass. She was of English descent, her ancestors having been residents of New England for upwards of two hundred years. This lady, who had the misfortune to lose her parents in early life, was brought up under the guardianship of her uncle, the eminent Baptist clergyman, Rev. John Leland, the influence of whose example and teachings was reflected through her whole life, she being distinguished for her strength of character and purity of life. Mrs. Roberts died in the western part of the State of New York in 1858.

Her husband, after relinquishing his profession, retired to a farm which he had purchased in York, Livingston County, N. Y. There Lewis Roberts, the fifth of eight children, was born June 6, 1826. When about six years of age his father removed to Parma Centre, Monroe County, N. Y., where the young man

remained till the commencement of his business career. Between the ages of twelve and sixteen he attended a small private school taught by a Congregational clergyman, Rev. Mr. Carver, an eminent Christian scholar and enthusiastic teacher, whose character and example left their impress on the mind of his pupil. He next entered the Brockport Collegiate Institute, where he pursued a two years' course, finally closing his school-days at that institution at the age of eighteen. He then began business as a clerk in the wholesale dry-goods establishment of W. H. Greenough, in Rochester. Here he remained for two years, when, in connection with his brother, Charles Roberts, he opened a general store at Parma Centre. In the spring of 1849 he sold his interest and became a partner in a large Rochester flouring-mill, where he continued till the spring of 1851, when he moved to New York City. He established the produce commission-house of L. Roberts & Co., which, for a quarter of a century, conducted a large and successful business, receiving flour and grain from more than sixteen States of the Union.

Mr. Roberts finally retired from the produce business to engage in the construction of railways, several roads, East and West, being the result of his efforts. He was also occupied extensively in the building of telegraph lines. He was at one time vice-president of the United States Telegraph Company, and, in connection with D. N. Barney, Colonel E. B. Morgan and his brother Henry, of Aurora, N. Y., constructed the line owned by that company from Chicago to San Francisco. The magnitude of this enterprise will hardly be realized unless it is remembered that this line was built previous to the construction of any railroad west of the Mississippi River. Many of the poles used in its erection were hauled by four-horse and eight-ox teams for days across boundless prairies and over high mountains before reaching their final destination. This work was under a contract with Brigham Young, secured by Mr. Roberts, to whom the honor of making the erection of the line possible is largely due. The United States Telegraph Company finally shared the fate of all opposition lines, and was sold to the Western Union. While engaged in telegraph construction Mr. Roberts was instrumental in the erection of more than twenty thousand miles of poles, which, if stretched in one direction, would support a line of wire almost sufficient to girdle the earth.

One of the most noteworthy features of Mr. Roberts' career is the prominent part which he took in the organization and promotion of the Mercantile Library Association of Brooklyn, now known as the Brooklyn Library. He was the first president of this association, and it was largely through his public-spirited efforts that the institution became the success that it now is. He devoted much time and labor to it, and was associated with many of the most prominent men in Brooklyn. Among those who, directly or indi-

rectly, contributed to the result, and co-operated with Mr. Roberts and the directors of the library, were Rev. R. L. Storrs, D.D., Rev. George W. Bethune, D.D., John H. Raymond, LL.D., Rev. Henry Ward Beecher, Rev. Dr. Farley, James P. Wallace, A. A. Low, L. B. Chittenden, J. I. T. Stranahan, Esq.

Since 1883 Mr. Roberts has been a member of the New York Stock Exchange and is now engaged in the banking business at No. 18 Wall Street. For some time past he has been deeply interested in and has given much attention to the development of natural gas for fuel throughout the western part of this State and in Pennsylvania.

In 1861 he moved his residence to Tarrytown and in 1871 began the purchase of land at Tarrytown Heights, where he owns now about six hundred acres. His handsome residence is within these grounds. This tract is one offering peculiar attractions to the lovers of natural scenery, to whom it proffers an unsurpassed river view of more than twenty miles, and an extensive prospect of the lower range of the Catskill Mountains, as well as a noble outlook of vale and hill to the east and south.

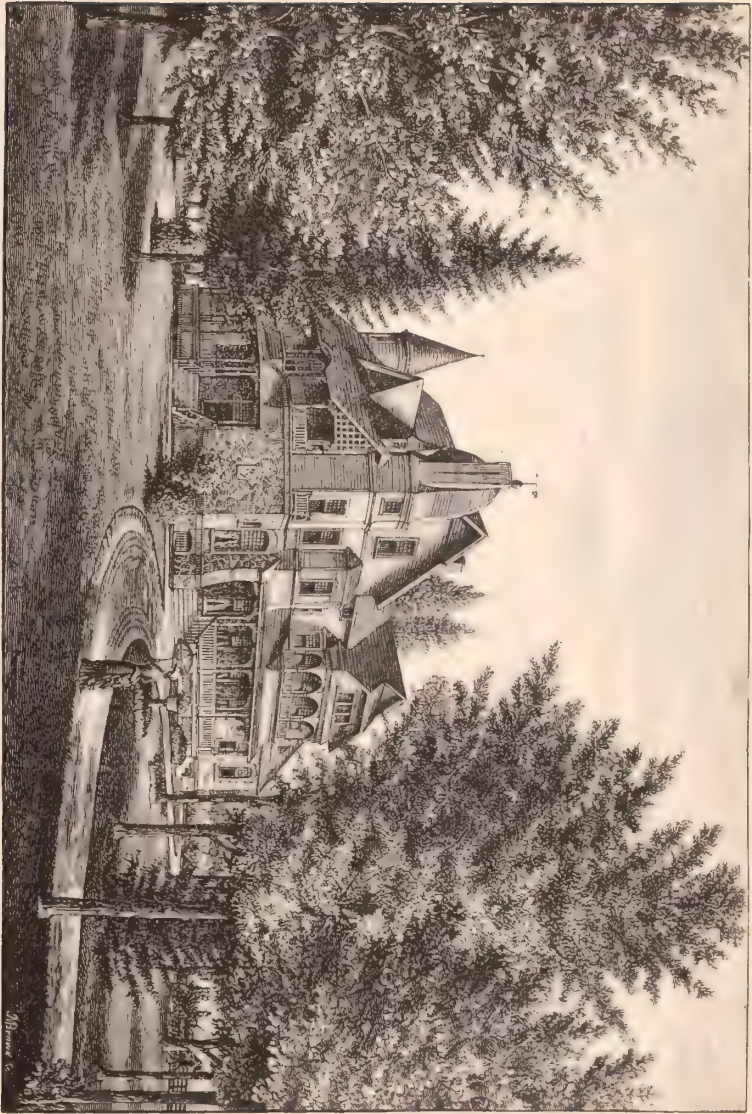
The recent and final opening of the New York City and Northern Railroad, built by Mr. Roberts, and which has a station within his grounds, it is safe to say, would not have occurred if it had not been for his energy and far-sighted policy. It has already been of great advantage to Westchester County.

In a time of great business depression, after the former projectors of the enterprise had failed and portions of the rights of way had reverted to their original owners, Mr. Roberts undertook the entire work, obtained the rights of way, built the bridges, stations, rolling stock, and, in fact, constructed the road, taking his pay wholly in the securities of the company, which had, and could have no value till the capital invested through his efforts made the enterprise a success.

The end fully justified his judgment and he may well be rewarded with praise for venturing upon what many of his friends thought at the time an extremely hazardous undertaking.

Mr. Roberts was formerly connected with many literary, social and business organizations and corporations, among which were the Union League Club and the Home Life Insurance Company, of which he was an incorporator. He is at present a trustee of the University of Rochester, and is also a member of the New York Chamber of Commerce, of the Downtown Club, and of the Exchange Club of New York City, recently organized.

He is a Republican and during the Civil War was an ardent supporter of the government, sacrificing his whole Southern trade, which was large, for the purpose of maintaining the principles which he so warmly espoused. He is a member and a trustee of the first Baptist Church of Tarrytown, in the Sabbath-school of which he has been actively engaged



"THE ORCHARDS."
RESIDENCE OF LEWIS ROBERTS,
TARRYTOWN HEIGHTS, N. Y.



for years, and the handsome building at present in the possession of the congregation is in a large measure due to his liberality.

Mr. Roberts married, June 7, 1849, Miss Harriet G. Burbank, of Rochester. He has four daughters and three sons.

REMINISCENCES OF TARRYTOWN AND WESTCHESTER.—In response to a request for his recollections of Westchester County, and especially of Tarrytown and its neighborhood, General Alexander Hamilton, now living in Tarrytown, a grandson of General Alexander Hamilton, of the Revolution, has kindly furnished the following pages. They touch upon many topics of interest, and will be read with avidity by those familiar with the names and localities mentioned.

“TARRYTOWN-ON-HUDSON, November 15, 1885.

“Rev. Dr. John A. Todd, Tarrytown :

“Rev. & Dear Sir :—In reply to your flattering request I will state that my earliest recollections of Westchester County are when a child, residing with my grandmother, Mrs. General Alexander Hamilton, at her country-seat, ‘The Grange,’ near Manhattanville, New York Island, now in New York City, bounded by 7th and 10th Avenues and 140th and 145th Streets, a place of great natural beauties, with extensive views, commanding the Hudson River, Harlem River, Long Island Sound and its beautiful shores, selected by General Hamilton that he might be a neighbor to his friend, Hon. Gouverneur Morris. This property is now owned by the family of De Forests, who preserve it in its original state, the house having been very substantially built on a liberal, elegant plan.

“In company with my Grandmother, I frequently visited the neighbors, all of the old regime. Among them, the family of the celebrated Gouverneur Morris, the steadfast supporter of General Washington and intimate friend of my grandfather, Alexander Hamilton. He was with him in his last hours after being shot by Colonel Aaron Burr, and delivered the funeral oration, rarely equaled in pathos and eloquence.

“His widow and her son, Gouverneur, were residing on his estate, which contained upwards of 2000 acres, bounded by Harlem River on the South, East River on the East and running North many miles, and West to the Manor of Fordham.

“Mrs. Morris was the sister of the famous John Randolph, of Roanoke, a gentleman whom I was privileged to know well in my early youth. He was very fond of children. Taught me, when a boy of but 10 years of age, at Congress Hall, Saratoga Springs, to cut with pen-knife chains of wood and to make Feather Fans, the plumes plucked from numerous flocks of Geese, which then wandered through those valleys, now dotted with palatial residences.

“While this work was going on, he regaled me with rare stories of boyish adventures and exploits, not forgetting the romance of his ancestress the princess Pocahontas and her times.

“When the present Gouverneur Morris, their son, was born, in the advanced age of his parents, and a name discussed, his uncle, John Randolph exclaimed, ‘Oh call him ‘Kutusoff,’ after a famous Russian General of that day, as the new-comer was ‘cutting off’ many expectant heirs in collateral branches.

“The young Morris inherited much of the talent of his father and maternal uncle, but with the traits belonging to his family and all great natures, he could not believe in the broad charges made in the will of his Grandfather against the sons of Connecticut as recorded in N. York City, 1762, in words as follows :

“‘It is my will and desire that every son of Gouverneur Morris may have the best education that is to be had in England or America. But my express will and directions are, that he be never sent for that purpose to the Colony of Connecticut, lest he should imbibe in his youth that low craft and cunning, so incident to the people of that Country, which is so interwoven with their constitution that all their art cannot disguise it from the world, though many of them, under the sanctified garb of Religion, have endeavored to impose themselves upon the world as honest men.’

“Not observing these injunctions, though his mother had been scrupulously careful in his education and the intimates he made, the only son of Gouverneur Morris, in his confidence, had his vast fortune seriously

impaired by the arts and machinations of some New England Brokers in Wall Street, who were the first to ‘water’ Rail Road Stocks, namely, the New Haven Rail Road. This ‘fashion,’ so prevalent in our day, was then held to be a Criminal offense, the perpetrators being compelled to flee the Country.

“While at the Grange I frequently visited the Hon. Robert Morris, of the Manor of Fordham, his wife, sister of Major Popham, of Scarsdale, an Aide to General Washington ; one daughter, Mary, the wife of my uncle, Colonel James A. Hamilton, of Nevis, Dobbs Ferry, Greensburg, Westchester County, N. Y.

“To his son, Colonel Lewis G. Morris, the manager of his estate, a prosperous gentleman, who married Miss Lorillard, I was indebted for many happy hours and valuable Counsels.

“Mr. Robert Morris, his Father, told me that the day General Alexander Hamilton was shot by Burr, Mr. Mathew L. Davis, Biographer of Burr, stopped him at the Tontine Building, Wall St. and Water St., New York City, and said, “Robert, Hamilton is a dead man to-day. He and Col. Burr went to fight a duel at Weehawken Heights this morning and Burr will kill him.” This proved too true. Burr and his friends were determined to get Hamilton out of their way.

“Mr. Robert Morris was a gentleman of the old School, of fine Stature, commanding presence, very stately and dignified, of large experience in the affairs of the Country and the County of Westchester, very high-toned, loud-spoken against the follies of the European Capitals and those of his Countrymen who aped them, universally respected and beloved, as were all his children. One son, Robert, was Mayor of the City of New York, a high honor in those days, an exemplary Magistrate. One James, a distinguished officer of our Navy. One Richard, an influential citizen of New Jersey, his home near Newton, in Sussex Co.

“Lewis G., the youngest mentioned above, was always at the front in the advancement of Fordham and the material interests of Westchester County.

“His daughter Julia was wife of William Ludlow, of Claverack, Columbia County, a public-spirited citizen ; Mary married Colonel James A. Hamilton my uncle ; Fanny, the youngest, was wife of Thomas W. Ludlow, at one time President of New York Life and Trust Company, New York City. All famous for their personal beauty, proudly sustaining the heritage of their great names, and universally beloved for their amiable qualities.

“When I was a boy, my uncle, James A. Hamilton, my God Father, not only in name but in deed, bought about 300 acres of land at Dobbs Ferry. The site was Commanding with beautiful views of the noble Hudson up and down the river, but no Trees, except ‘One Old Chestnut’ still standing.

“Mr. Washington Irving had his home near by—‘Wolfert’s Roost’ now ‘Sunny Side’—and was a frequent visitor. A nan for this new home was now discussed. ‘Oh,’ said Mr. Irving, in his peculiar jocosé way, his face wreathed in smiles, ‘call it ‘Single Tree Hall.’ The joke passed around and it was decided to call it ‘Nevis’ after the Island in the West Indies, the birth-place of Col. Hamilton’s Father. Here he erected what was then considered a fine house, and where, with liberal heart and hand, he entertained ‘troops of friends,’ among them the great men of the day, both of our own and foreign lands, while his intimate neighbors were the Cottinets, Sinclair, Constants, Danforths, Shonnard, Creighton and others. His was always a bright, a happy home ; my Aunt, his wife, and his lovely daughters, by their rare personal and mental attractions and accomplishments, making every one at ease, and with their father’s generous, genial nature, made all visits too short.

“He was a very effective speaker, sought for on all public occasions, and an authority in Westchester. His only son Alexander, a few weeks my junior, and my life-long Companion, in the War of the Rebellion Colonel and aide-de-camp to Major-General Wool, has rebuilt his paternal home, now surrounded by a beautiful grove set out by his father’s hand, encasing it in brick, with extensive additions, making it a fitting Depository for the Treasures of our Grandire. Here may be seen a full length portrait of General Washington by Stuart, and a large solid Silver Tankard, both presented by General Washington to General Hamilton ; the Library of General Hamilton, Portraits of his wife, our Grandmother, Miss Elizabeth Schuyler, fit consort for such a mind, a lady eminent for her charities and Chief Founder of the New York Orphan Asylum ; many Portraits of her Father’s (Major-General Philip Schuyler) family and mementoes presented him and his Son, Colonel James A. Hamilton, who was especially distinguished by General Andrew Jackson, when President, to whom, when he was first elected, he acted as Secretary of State, until Martin Van Buren, then Governor of State of New York, could arrange his affairs to assume the office.

“Colonel Hamilton was then appointed United States District Attor-

ney for the Southern District of New York, which was held for many years.

"When he subsequently visited France, he told me upon his return, that he was consulted while in Paris as to the Constitution of United States and points of Law of interest to the new régime of France.

"Colonel Hamilton lived to a great age, upwards of 90, and was interred in his Family Burial Plot in Sleepy Hollow Cemetery, where lie the earthly remains of his wife, three daughters, two sisters and his son-in-law, Col. George R. J. Bowdoin, once aide-de-camp to General Scott, and several Grandchildren.

"A few years before, his eldest brother, Alexander, had attained about the same great age, and subsequently his junior brother, Colonel John Church Hamilton, my Father. He was selected by his mother and brothers as author of the life of Alexander Hamilton. He also wrote the History of the Republic and other works of historical value to our Country, and was employed by a Committee of Congress to edit the Works of Hamilton, the Manuscripts of which had been purchased by Congress from his mother at the time they purchased Washington's, Madison's and others.

"My Father was the valued friend and Counsellor of Lincoln, Chase, Seward, Lt.-Gen. Scott and General Grant during and after the great War of the Rebellion.

"He, with our dear Mother, sent three sons to the field, all attaining high rank, all severely wounded, while the fourth, a skillful Engineer, built the monitor 'Keokuk,' &c., for our Country's service.

"The youngest brother Laurens, Assistant Treasurer of Saint Luke's Hospital, in July, 1858, lost his life at Richmond, Virginia, by an accident, when a member of the 7th Regiment, escorting President Monroe's remains to their last home. My Father also died within three weeks of his Ninetieth Year, July 23, 1882, just nine years after our dear Mother, the light and comfort of our lives, was called to her higher service.

"The last and youngest brother, Philip, died in June, 1884, aged 82 years—the result of a fall. His vigorous health had promised him his 90th year. He was an able Lawyer, much sought Counsel in cases of Admiralty, frequently consulted in Washington by the authorities during the Rebellion, where I constantly met him when I was on duty there, particularly at the time, May, 1861, when the Union Army crossed over into Virginia, and I, a volunteer Aide to Major General Charles W. Sanford, commanding army of occupation, was ordered by Lt.-General Scott to the command of Arlington House, with 8th Regiment N. Y. S. N. Guard, under Colonel Lyons, and Captain Varian's Battery of Light Artillery, where I remained until relieved by Major-General McDowell, who, when appointed to command the Army of Virginia, made Arlington House his headquarters. 'Uncle Phil' was a great favorite with all who knew him, with my brother-in-law, Major General Halleck, general-in-chief, and other distinguished officers of the Army and Navy. He was active with Captain Worden, at Brooklyn Navy Yard, in getting the 'Monitor' to sea in March, 1862, and advancing the country's interests. He married the daughter of Hon. Louis McLane, Secretary of Treasury under Gen. Jackson, and he and Aunt Rebecca, who most worthily bore this name, lived to mourn the loss of their eldest son, Captain Louis McLane Hamilton, who, after serving through the whole war of the Rebellion in the Regular Army, lost his life in the Indian War under General Custer. Dr. Allan McLane Hamilton, the distinguished specialist in insanity, is their only surviving Son.

"While a boy, with my grandmother at the Grange, only 8 miles from the city, usually from Saturday night until Monday morning, the journey being made in an old-fashioned stage which started from the corner of Bayard Street and the Bowery, she frequently told me anecdotes of her early days.

"Of her distinguished Father, Major-General Philip Schuyler, who never had justice done him, who, in fact, won the Battle of Saratoga by his masterly engineering feat, destroying and obstructing the roads from Lake Champlain to Schuylerville, thus depleting and exhausting Burgoyne's Army. When Burgoyne, surrendered and paroled, asked General Schuyler to recommend him to some quiet family in Albany where he could find a comfortable home, General Schuyler called up an Aide-de-Camp and told him to escort General Burgoyne to a Mrs. Van Rensselaer's. The aide did so and a few days after General Schuyler rode down and welcomed General Burgoyne, though he had destroyed his mills and property, as his guest, entertaining him liberally. His wife being a Miss Van Rensselaer, had taken the hint.

"I visited this Schuyler mansion in August, 1885, the day of General Grant's obsequies, in Albany—a grand old house in fair preservation, palatial in its proportions, magnificent hall and rooms, with lofty ceilings, richly wainscoted, and a singularly rich stair-case and rails.

"General Schuyler was an able engineer, a firm, decided soldier, proverbial for his integrity and expected every man to do his duty. A strict disciplinarian, he was not popular with the New English soldiers, who recoiled against restraint, as in the War of the Rebellion. It was long before our men submitted to control, our army being an army of minds, not mere machines.

"On one occasion, after breakfast at a tavern, the hostess complained to General Schuyler that she had lost some silver tea-spoons. The general told her to give herself no anxiety, that he would find them. He ordered all who had breakfasted to return and take their seats at the table. He sent for some straw, cut it in pieces, one for each man present, and said, 'Now, gentlemen, this lady has lost some spoons; take each a straw, and he who has the longest will prove to have the spoons. I shall keep one myself.' Each took a straw. The general walked around the table and measured each by his, and, coming to one shorter, he exclaimed, 'You have the spoons; you have bitten off your straw; they were all of the same length.' The culprit, dismayed, surrendered the spoons and was dismissed the service.

"On another occasion his household slaves were guilty of theft. So he had a white rooster blackened with charcoal placed in a cellar, and he ordered each slave to descend singly, saying that when the guilty one went down the rooster would crow. At length, after several had gone down and returned, a scuffle and fluttering was heard; the rooster crowed and Mr. Darkey, with blackened hands, came up and owned the theft, he having caught the rooster to prevent his crowing.

"General Schuyler had his many trials, but lightened his heavy hours by his jokes, as did our Lincoln, he who, at all times, declared God's Holy Word the Rock on which he founded what he did, leaving a monumental name that shall endure unto eternity.

"On many occasions I visited Mr. Washington Irving. I never shall forget the smiles that illumed his genial face as he told amusing anecdotes. He delighted in having young people about him, and, as the life-long friend of my mother, he and the poet, Fitzgreene Halleck, his intimate friend, being among her beaux, he always welcomed me. He told me of her bright and sparkling ways, so full of grace and life. He used to delight in walks with her to the Battery, then, and until quite in my manhood, the fashionable resort of New York citizens; for, until 1850, the dwellings about Bowling Green and those facing the beautiful harbor were the residences of New York's first families. He told me how he used to walk with mother to the 'Kissing Bridge,' then Broadway and Canal Street, the famous trysting-place of New York's belles and beaux, and gathered wild-flowers in those green fields upon the banks of the stream, or watched the tiny fish darting about as they throw their crumbs, delighting to resort to those pleasures in which his pure nature dwelt even until his last hours.

"He told me once, when sitting by his side at 'Wolfert's Rest,' that when he was in London, Forrest, the tragedian, first made his appearance there; that the people flocked to the theatre to see the great wonder; his magnificent appearance and his stentorian lungs were something new. That they went to see him in crowds as they would a 'Grand Animal.' Forrest, a poor boy, was a protégé of my uncle, Colonel James A. Hamilton, who, with Mr. Samuel Gouverneur and Mr. Price, at one time postmasters in New York, and other gentlemen, erected the Bowery Theatre.

"On one occasion, my uncle and his family being in Europe, I went up on the steamboat 'Telegraph,' Captain Odell, to look after 'Nevis,' and on board of the boat were Mr. John Jacob Astor and his servant sailing up to visit Mr. Irving. There being no carriage for him at the Dobbs Ferry Landing, I conveyed him to Mr. Irving's, where a most hearty welcome greeted Mr. Astor and a kindly invitation detained me. Mr. Astor was much attached to Mr. Irving and made him a substantial remembrance in his will, and with Mr. Irving's counsel founded and endowed 'The Astor Library.'

"A day or two after this I took a tandem drive with my uncle's horses trained to this manner of driving. From long rest they were very spirited, and driving out without attendant towards Tarrytown, Mr. Irving and his niece drove out of their lane with his favorite white horse, just as I approached. He checked me as I came by him, he cracked his whip in thoughtless glee. My horses started and I had all I could do to guide them; to check them in their speed I found was beyond my strength. At length, as I approached the blacksmith shop opposite Squire See's store, at the junction of Whiteplains, Sleepy Hollow and Albany Post Road, where they were accustomed to be shod, they slackened their speed and I drove them into the shop. Harry and Bob recovered from their excitement at Mr. Irving's joke. He soon after rode up, anxious lest his movement had injured me, though he so often he feared I was endangered, he saw I retained my self-possession.

"A very aged gentleman, a Mr. Lyons, then residing on Bedford Road, near 'Mile Square,' now Armonck, told me, many years since, that when a boy, Andre, just before his capture by Paulding, Williams and Van Wart, stopped at a Mr. See's, on Sleepy Hollow Road, and asked for a drink. That Andre dismounted, and he took his horse to water, a Sorrel Roan, with burs in its mane and tail, Andre having 'made a swap' in the field, leaving his weary horse and taking this one. 'All is fair in love and war,' but fatal to a spy.

"Washington's pen has left his record of the captors' great service to their country.

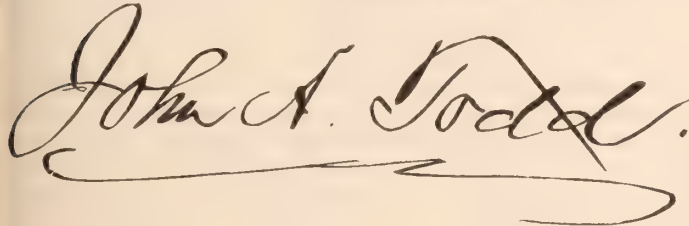
"Only the grateful hearts of their countrymen and posterity and all lovers of freedom can fill the measure of their fame.

"Not long after this, through the encouragement of my dear mother and cousin Eliza, eldest daughter of Colonel James A. Hamilton, a lady of remarkable attractions, mentally and socially, one of the originators of the Mt. Vernon Association, which preserved to our country the home and burial-place of our Washington, wife of Colonel George L. Schuyler, Aide de camp to General Wool in the War of the Rebellion, a gentleman of rare kindness of heart and generous nature, I was induced to compose several "Dramas." One, the tragedy of "Thomas A. Becket," met the approval of the poets Fitz Green Halleck, General George P. Morris, of the *New York Mirror and Home Journal*, and Lewis Gaylord Clark, of the *Knickerbocker Magazine*, for which I wrote some trifling pieces.

Here in Tarrytown, the home of so many of my early days, I find, among kind friends of my youth, a repose after an anxious and eventful life, guided and guarded through all by a Merciful Providence.

"Respectfully,

"ALEXANDER HAMILTON."



CHAPTER III.

MOUNT PLEASANT.

BY REV. JOHN A. TODD, D.D.,

Pastor of the Second Reformed Church, Tarrytown.

THE township of Mount Pleasant is a division of Westchester County, fronting for about three miles upon the Hudson River from Tarrytown toward the north, but widening out into much ampler dimensions as it leaves the river and extends into the interior of the county. Its southwestern point, at Tarrytown, is about twenty-five miles by the Hudson River Railroad from the Grand Central Depot in New York City. As its name would indicate, it is a hilly region of variegated aspect, characterized by woodland, cultivated valley farms, and small fertile plains in pleasant contiguity and proportion.

It was erected into a township by the Legislature of the State on March 7, 1788, but its territorial limits were somewhat abridged when the Legislature erected its northwestern portion, along the Hudson River, into the new and separate township of Ossining, on May 2, 1845. As now constituted, it is bounded on the west by the Hudson River and the township of Ossining, on the north by Ossining, New Castle and North Castle, on the east by North Castle, and on the south by Greenburgh. It was embraced

among the several purchases made from the Indians by Frederick Philipse, beginning in 1680, and it comprised a part of the original Manor of Philipsburgh, established by royal letters patent, issued to Frederick Philipse under date of June 12, 1693.¹

In the early part of the year 1680, the Indian Sachem Ghoharius, in connection with his brother Weskora, sold to Frederick Philipse a tract of land lying on each side of the Pocantico River, extending along its entire course from its source to the Hudson River, and upon each side of the Pocantico a distance of four hundred rods. The royal charter gives as the date of this transaction October 24, 1680, but it is shown to have occurred in the early part of the year by the fact that the transfer was ratified at Fort James, in New York City, by Sir Edmund Andros, the Governor of the province, on April 1, 1680. The Governor's ratification was given in the following terms:

"Sir Edmund Andros, Knight, &c. Whereas Frederick Philipse, of this city, merchant, hath made application unto me for a grant of a certain creek or a river, called by the Indians Pocantico (whereon to set a mill), with a proportion of land on each side adjoining thereunto; the same lying within the bounds of the Indians' land at Wicker's Creek (the English corruption of the Indian name Weckquaesqueek) on the east side of Hudson's River; and, by my leave and approbation, hath made purchase thereof from the native Indian proprietors, the which they have acknowledged before me as likewise to have received full satisfaction for the same from said Frederick Philipse. The said land adjoining to the creek or river aforesaid, lying on each side thereof, north and south 1600 treads or steps, which, at

twelve feet to the rod makes 400 rods, and runs up into the country as far as the said creek or river goeth, provided always that if the said creek or river, called by the Indians Neppera, and, by the Christians the Yonkers Creek or kill, shall come within that space of land of 400 rods on the south side of the aforesaid creek or river; that it shall extend no further than the said creek or river of Neppera, but the rest to be so far up in the country on each side as the said creek or river called Pocantico runs, being about north east. Know YE that by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given under His Royal Highness, I have given and granted and by these presents do hereby give, ratify, confirm and grant unto said Frederick Philipse, his heirs and assigns, the afore-recited creek or river parcels of lands and premises herein before expressed and set forth, together with all the woodlands, meadows, pastures, marshes, fishing, hawking, hunting and fowling, as also the privilege of erecting and building a mill, making a dam, or whatsoever else shall be necessary and requisite thereunto, with all profits, commodities and emoluments unto the said creek, river and land belonging, or in any wise appertaining, to have and to hold the said creek or river and land, with their and every of their appurtenances, to the said Frederick Philipse, his heirs and assignees forever, he making improvement thereon according to law, and yielding and paying therefor yearly and every year unto his Royal Highness a quit rent, one bushel of winter wheat in New York unto such officer or officers as shall be empowered to receive the same. Given under my hand and sealed with the seal of the Province, in New York, the first day of April, in the thirty-second year of his Majesty's reign, Anno Domini, 1680."

This purchase was followed by a series of purchases from the Indians, at later dates: namely, on April 23, 1681, April 8, 1682, September 6, 1682, May 7, 1684, etc. The parcels of land thus successively purchased from the Indians were all in the vicinity of the first purchase, made in 1680, and, together with that and other lands, comprised all the territory now con-

¹ See History of Greenburgh.

stituting the township of Mount Pleasant. The latter purchases were confirmed, on December 23, 1684, by Colonel Thomas Dongan, the new Governor of the province, who succeeded Sir Edmund Andros in 1683.

The last purchase mentioned above, namely that of May 7, 1684 (elsewhere given as June 5, 1684), extended the territorial boundary of Frederick Philipse's estate from the Nepperhan River eastward to the Bronx. The grantors, or party of the first part, consisted of nine male Indians and one Squaw, among the former being Ghoharius, whose name is here given as Ghoharim, and the famous, "Ann Hook," the murderer of Mrs. Ann Hutchinson, whose assumed name is here spelled "Enhoak." This purchase included "All that tract or parcel of land situate, lying and being to the eastward of the land of Frederick Philipse, between the creek called Neppierha, or the Yonker's Kill and Bronck's River, beginning on the south side at the northerly bounds of the Yonker's land; and from thence along the aforesaid creek Nippierha, however it runs, till you come to the most northerly bounds of the said Frederick Philipse's land, and from thence northeast into the woods unto Bronck's river, so as it runs southerly to the eastward of the Yonker's land aforesaid, and from thence, with a westerly line, to the aforesaid Yonker's Kill or Nippierha." The payment was made, as usual, in various articles that seemed to be in great demand among the Indians, of which the following is a list: "130 fathoms of white Wampum, 12 Guns, 14 Fathoms of Duffels, 12 Blankets, 8 Coats, 6 Kettles, 6 Fathoms of Stroudwater, 16 Shirts, 25 lbs. of Powder, 20 Bars of Lead, 10 Spoons, 2 Knives, 12 Pair of Stockings, 15 Hatchets, 10 Hoes, 10 Earthen Jugs, 10 Iron Pots, 4½ Vats of Beer, 2 Ankers of Rum, 2 Rolls of Tobacco."

Frederick Philipse being thus vested in the fee-simple, the whole territory, comprising, in addition to the land situated in what subsequently became the township of Mount Pleasant, the land also for several miles adjacent, was by royal charter erected into the lordship or Manor of Philipsburgh, to be "holden of the King in free and common socage," its lord "yielding, rendering and paying therefore yearly and every year on the Feast Day of the Annunciation of the blessed Virgin Mary, at the Fort in New York, the annual rent of £4 12s." This is the charter referred to under the heading of "Greenburgh," as dated June 12, 1693.

When Fredericke Philipse, the first proprietor and lord of the manor, died, in 1702, he left a will devising to his second son, Adolphus or Adolphe Philipse, all that portion of the manor lying north of Dobbs Ferry, which included within its limits the present township of Mount Pleasant. But Adolph Philipse having died without issue in 1749, the whole Manor of Philipsburgh became vested in his nephew, the Hon. Frederick Philipse, as the nearest male heir of his

grandfather Frederick, the first proprietor. The Hon. Frederick Philipse died in 1751, and left surviving him two sons, Frederick and Philip, and three daughters, Susanna, Mary and Margaret. The oldest son, Frederick, being heir of his father, became devisee in tail male of the Manor of Philipsburgh, and tenant for life under his father's will, with remainder in tail male. The Upper Highland Patent of Philips-town, in Putnam County, passed to the second son, Philip, among whose descendants it yet remains.

In 1779 all the lands lying in the township of Mount Pleasant, together with all the other lands belonging to the Manor of Philipsburgh, in consequence of the attainder of Colonel Frederick Philipse for treason to his country during the Revolutionary War, became vested in the State of New York. The act was passed October 22, 1779.

On May 12, 1784, the Legislature passed a further act by which it appointed Isaac Stoutenburgh and Philip Van Cortlandt Commissioners of Forfeitures for the Southern District of the State, to sell and to dispose of all the real estate in that district that had been forfeited to the State under the above-mentioned act of October 22, 1779.

As the township was originally organized on March 7, 1788, Mount Pleasant comprised all that part of the Manor of Philipsburgh lying north of Greenburgh, the north line of which has already been described under the head of "Greenburgh." The north line of the manor and of the original township of Mount Pleasant commenced at a point on the south shore of the Croton River, two miles above its mouth, and ran thence by "a direct east line" to the head-waters of the Bronx. In this case, however, a "direct east" line does not mean a "due east" line. The Van Cortlandt patent starts at the same point on the Croton River, and runs "due east," whereas the Philipse Manor line bears about southeast, or S. 48° E., by the magnetic needle, in this present year, 1885.

The wedge-shaped piece of territory, with the sharp end touching the Croton River, which thus lies between the Van Cortlandt Manor on the north, and the Philipse Manor on the south, belonged to what was known as the West Patent of North Castle, which, on February 14, 1701, was granted under the signature of John Nanfan, Lieutenant-Governor, and under the great seal of the province of New York, to Robert Walters, Cornelius Depeyster, Caleb Heathcote and seven others associated with them, the whole embracing, "by estimation, about five thousand acres of profitable land, besides wastes and woodlands." This territory was first organized into the township of North Castle, but was afterwards set off on March 18, 1791, into a separate township under the name of New Castle.¹

The starting-point of the Mount Pleasant line on

¹ See map of Greenburgh and Mount Pleasant, ante p. 178.

the Croton River, as well as of the present Cortlandt township line, is an oak-tree by a rock opposite the north end of Deer Island, this having been adjudged by the Commissioners of Forfeitures to be "two miles from the mouth of the Croton River."

The new township of Ossining having been taken out of Mount Pleasant in 1845, the boundary of Mount Pleasant along the old manor line was, of course, materially shortened, the new northwest corner being where the Pocantico River crosses the old manor line. With this corner as a new starting-point, Mount Pleasant runs southerly along the Pocantico River as far as Buckhout's Bridge, and over it. The line then strikes directly westward to the Hudson River, at the point where the dividing line of property between the land of the late Rev. William Creighton, D.D., and the land of the late Abraham Leggett comes to its western terminus by meeting the waters of the Hudson.

This line was newly run out in August, 1884, by Messrs. Ward Carpenter & Son, surveyors and civil engineers, so well known in Westchester County for their painstaking accuracy, with a view to determine what part of the new aqueduct, now in process of construction, lay within the township of Mount Pleasant, and what in Ossining. It was found, on making the survey, that St. Mary's Church, Beechwood, which had previously been supposed to be within the limits of Mount Pleasant, was really in the township of Ossining. The dividing line as run out in 1884, in accordance with the statute of 1845, passes a little north of the parsonage occupied by the late Rev. Edward N. Mead, D.D., which is situated about two hundred feet south of St. Mary's Church.

Thus we have all the northern and part of the western boundary of Mount Pleasant. The Hudson completes the western boundary, Greenburgh forms the southern limit, and the Bronx River the eastern. The northwest corner of North Castle is fixed by statute at the northeast corner of Mount Pleasant, which point is described as "the head-waters of the Bronx." This does not necessarily mean the source, but the point where two or more brooklets unite to form the main stream. As a matter of fact, the Bronx, and also the Pocantico and the Nepperhan or Saw-Mill River, all rise in the high grounds of New Castle.

The geographical centre of Mount Pleasant lies probably in the little hamlet of Unionville, not far from where the Harlem Railroad crosses the main carriage road from Bedford to Tarrytown. The principal settlements in the township are the two villages of North Tarrytown, in the southwest, and of Pleasantville, in the north. The only other settlements that seem to call for particular mention are the village or hamlet of Unionville, just referred to as nearly in the centre of the township, and the newly-laid-out village of Tarrytown Heights, about a mile

and a half to the northeast of Tarrytown proper, on the New York City and Northern Railroad.

POPULATION AND TAXABLE VALUE.—The population of Mount Pleasant, by the census of 1875, was 5411; by the census of 1880, it was 5450, thus showing a gain of population in five years of 39. This was a gain in spite of the financial and business depression.

There was also a gain in the value of property. The assessed valuation, as corrected and published in the supervisor's report for August, 1884, shows the following result: Assessed valuation, corrected for 1874, \$2,149,934; assessed valuation, corrected for 1884, \$2,482,141, thus showing a gain in ten years of \$332,207. In 1874 the value of land per acre in the township of Mount Pleasant was \$130.26; the value per acre in 1884 was \$150.39, thus showing a gain in the value per acre in ten years of \$20.13.

Moving from south to north up the east bank of the Hudson, the first village to be noticed in Mount Pleasant is North Tarrytown. As shown under the head of Greenburgh, it is really a part of Tarrytown, though technically separated from it by the Andre Brook, as the dividing line between the two townships.

North Tarrytown, an incorporated village of two thousand six hundred and eighty-four inhabitants by the census of 1880, and situated on the Hudson River twenty-five miles north from the Grand Central Depot, New York City, by the Hudson River Railroad, or twenty-one miles north from One Hundred and Fifty-fifth Street, by the New York City and Northern Railroad, is built upon the southern limit of the tract of land formerly belonging to the old Manor of Philipsburgh, including the site of the old manor-house, still standing, but after the Revolution conveyed by the Commissioners of Forfeitures, Isaac Stoutenburgh and Philip Van Cortlandt, to Gerard G. Beekman "for and in consideration of the sum of Nine thousand and forty pounds lawful money," by an indenture made on May 23, 1785, "in the ninth year of the Independence of the State of New York." The two parcels included in this Beekman deed, though put down as consisting of seven hundred and fifty acres by the survey of 1847, are said to have embraced really an area of nearly nine hundred acres. They extended from the Andre Brook northward to within thirty rods of where the Croton Aqueduct spans the post road with its arch between Tarrytown and Sing Sing, and from the Hudson River eastward across the Pocantico River, well on, at the southeast angle, to the crest of the line of hills beyond it.

The Beekman family, into whose hands the property thus fell after the Revolution, were descended from some of the early settlers of New Amsterdam or New York. William Beekman, the founder of the family in this State, came over from Holland in the same ship with Peter Stuyvesant, in 1647. He married Catherine Van Bough, daughter of a well-

known trader, and at one time owned and resided at Corlaer's Hook now that part of New York City at the bend of the East River, just below Grand Street, and opposite the Brooklyn Navy Yard. It is at present occupied by machine shops and storage warehouses, and is anything but desirable as a place of residence. Governor Stuyvesant appointed him vice-director of the Dutch colony at the South River, or mouth of the Delaware; but after serving for a time, he removed to Esopus, up the Hudson, and subsequently returned to New York City, in 1670. There he purchased the farm upon which the present Beekman Street was laid out. He owned also "Beekman's Swamp," still known as "the Swamp," and the centre of the hide and leather business, lying between the City Hall Park and Franklin Square. Its pungent odor of salted hides and fresh sole leather is always perceptible to the stranger passing through it. William Beekman died in 1707 at the age of eighty-five, leaving one daughter and three sons, Henry, Gerard



MRS. CORNELIA BEEKMAN.

and Johannes. Gerard G. Beekman, the purchaser of the property here referred to, was a grandson of William Beekman. About the year 1769 he married that remarkable woman, Miss Cornelia Van Cortlandt, second daughter of Pierre Van Cortlandt, proprietor of the Van Cortlandt manor and manor-house still standing and occupied by the Van Cortlandt family, north of the Croton River. Her father was Lieutenant-Governor of the State of New York under George Clinton from 1777 to 1795, and was distinguished for his vigorous support of the cause of independence during the Revolutionary War. On her marriage with Gerard G. Beekman, at the age of seventeen, she removed, with her husband, to New York City, and resided while there in the street bearing his family name. When the storm of war burst upon the city, she removed again to the scenes of her childhood in the country, first at Croton, and then at Peekskill, where she remained until the restoration of peace. An interesting account of her

high character and noble patriotic devotion during that long struggle is given, together with an engraved likeness, in the work entitled "The Women of the Revolution," by Mrs. Elizabeth F. Ellet, published in two volumes by Baker & Scribner, New York, in 1848.

An incident or two from the second volume will give an idea of her courageous spirit and will, and shows that while she was personally lovely, she was also heroically brave. The story of the way in which she overawed the enemy under Colonels Bayard and Fanning is gathered from one of her own letters, written in 1777:

"A party of royalists, commanded by these two Colonels, paid a visit to her house, demeaning themselves with the arrogance and insolence she was accustomed to witness. One of them insultingly said to her: 'Are you not the daughter of that old rebel, Pierre Van Cortlandt?' She replied with dignity: 'I am the daughter of Pierre Van Cortlandt—but it becomes not such as you to call my father a rebel!' The tory raised his moustek, when she, with perfect calmness, reproved him for his insolence and bade him begone. He finally turned away abashed."

Mrs. Beekman's agency in the detection and capture of Major Andre was of great service to her country, though at the time she little knew how important was the bearing of her resolute conduct upon the public cause. The incident is thus related in the sketch of her life,—

"John Webb, familiarly known as 'Lieutenant Jack,' who occasionally served as an acting aid in the staff of the Commander-in-chief, was much at her house, as well as the other officers, during the operations of the army on the banks of the Hudson. On one occasion, passing through Peekskill, he rode up and requested her to oblige him by taking charge of his valise, which contained his new suit of uniform and a quantity of gold. He added, 'I will send for it whenever I want it; but do not deliver it without a written order from me or brother Sam.' He threw in the valise at the door, from the horse, and rode on to the tavern at Peekskill, where he stopped to dine. A fortnight or so after his departure, Mrs. Beekman saw an acquaintance—Smith—whose fidelity to the Whig cause had been suspected, ride rapidly up to the house. She heard him ask her husband for 'Lieutenant Jack's' valise, which he directed a servant to bring and hand to Smith. Mrs. Beekman called out to ask if the messenger had a written order from either of the brothers. Smith replied that he had no written order, the officer having had no time to write one; but added, 'You know me very well, Mrs. Beekman, and when I assure you that "Lieutenant Jack" sent me for the valise you will not refuse to deliver it to me, as he is greatly in want of his uniform.' Mrs. Beekman often said she had an instinctive antipathy to Smith, and, by an intuition for which it is difficult to account, felt convinced that he had not been authorized to call for the article she had in trust. She answered, 'I do know you very well—too well to give up the valise without a written order from the owner or the Colonel.' Smith was angry at her doubts and appealed to her husband, urging that the fact of his knowing the valise was there, and that it contained 'Lieutenant Jack's' uniform, should be sufficient evidence that he came by authority; but his representations had no effect upon her resolution. Although even her husband was displeased at this treatment of the messenger, she remained firm in her denial, and the disappointed horseman rode away as rapidly as he came. The result proved that he had no authority to make the application; and it was subsequently ascertained that at the very time of this attempt Major Andre was in Smith's house. How he knew that the uniform had been left at Mrs. Beekman's was a matter of uncertainty; but another account of the incident—given by the accomplished lady who furnished these anecdotes of Mrs. Beekman—states that Lieutenant Webb, dining at the tavern the same day, had mentioned that she had taken charge of his valise and what were its contents. He thanked Mrs. Beekman, on his return, for the prudence that had saved his property, and had also prevented an occurrence which might have caused a train of disasters. He and Major Andre were of the same stature and form; and beyond all doubt,' says one who heard the particulars from the parties interested, 'had Smith obtained possession of the

uniform, Andre would have made his escape through the American lines.' The experience that teaches in every page of the world's history what vast results depend on things apparently trivial, favors the supposition, in dwelling on this simple incident, that under the Providence that disposes all human events, the fate of a nation may have been suspended upon a woman's judgment."

The Smith here spoken of was the notorious Joshua Hett Smith, who acted as a go-between in the negotiations of Arnold and Andre. He was afterwards tried as *particeps criminis* with Arnold, but managed to escape punishment in consequence of contradictory or insufficient testimony. It was at his house, a square, two-storied stone house, still standing on the Haverstraw road, two and a half miles south of Stony Point, that Andre lodged while in the American lines. The intention evidently was that Andre should disguise himself in the uniform of an American officer and thus make his escape back to the British lines. Twice before he had been at General Arnold's headquarters in the disguise of a *valet de chambre*, as he had been in the American lines at Charleston, South Carolina, during the previous month of May, disguised as a back countryman who had brought down cattle. So at least it is stated on apparently good authority. The refusal of Mrs. Beekman to give up the uniform that was sought for him brought his hitherto successful career as a spy to a fatal and inglorious close.

After the Revolution the lands in the Manor of Philipsburgh were parceled out and sold, Frederick Philipse having been attainted of high treason, and his property confiscated to the State of New York. Gerard G. Beekman purchased the tract on which the old manor-house then stood, as it does now, and thither he removed with his family in 1785. There he died in 1822, at the age of seventy-six years, and there, twenty-five years later, on March 14, 1847, his wife, Cornelia Van Cortlandt Beekman, gently fell asleep in the ninety-fifth year of her age.

Beekmantown, the original name of the village, for which the name of North Tarrytown was finally substituted in the legal incorporation in 1874, was first laid out in lots by George W. Cartwright, a surveyor, about the year 1835. The Rev. George Rockwell, who was familiar with the locality at that period, says in regard to it: "I remember how surprised I was to find people willing to pay one hundred dollars for a little building lot, for that was about the price at first. It was a barren sand-bed, with but little besides wild onions and a few scrubby bushes, even down to the Andre Brook, which was then, as it is now, the township line. I think the Wood brothers had a house or two just over the line, where the Hudson River Railroad now is, but am not sure when they were built." He adds in another place that over to the east, at the junction of Broadway and the Bedford road, "a store had been kept where J. Benedict See's store now stands, as one always has been kept there ever since, and a blacksmith-shop was at the angle near where St. Paul's Methodist Episcopal Church now is. Be-

sides these, I do not remember any buildings on Broadway, except an old academy building just north of the Andre Brook."

Amos R. Clark, Esq., states that "About 1835 Mrs. Cornelia Beekman laid out new roads, and sold all the land south of Beekman Avenue, in building lots. At that time there were only twelve houses west of the Croton Aqueduct. Beekman Avenue being in many places four rods wide, it contained no less than three distinct wagon roads, or tracks, from Broadway to the river. At that time, also, and for many years afterwards, there were from three to five sloops sailing to and from New York every week, from the Upper Dock at the foot of Beekman Avenue. They carried the produce of the farmers from far back in the country, and returned with the various articles then in demand. Immense quantities of potatoes, of apples and of hogs were raised for the New York market, and as there were then no railroad facilities, such as are now found on the Harlem and Hudson River lines, all had to be shipped by boats. In apple years, from three to six thousand barrels of apples and potatoes were shipped weekly. Late in the fall from two hundred to three hundred hogs were carried per week, and all the supplies for country stores, as far back as Cross River, were thus brought from New York."

Previous to 1835, there was not even the nucleus of a village where North Tarrytown now stands. By 1840, however, it had made quite a little beginning, though its growth was exceedingly slow. But about the time when the Hudson River Railroad was completed to Tarrytown, in 1850, thus opening a new and more rapid communication with New York City, North Tarrytown received a marked impulse, and thenceforward continued to grow. The Rev. George Rockwell, already quoted, in referring to this period, says: "Mrs. Beekman died about that time, and her extensive farm, stretching along the Hudson River for nearly two miles, I think, and perhaps a mile wide at some points, was put into market and sold in parcels. The old farmers generally, and I know my father thought the land brought a price far beyond its value. But they did not foresee how near New York was to come to Tarrytown in a few years."

In this present year, 1886, North Tarrytown has a population probably of nearly three thousand souls. It had a population of two thousand six hundred and eighty-four by the last census, six years ago, and it has had since then a manifest increase, which gives promise of continuing in the future.

INCORPORATION OF NORTH TARRYTOWN.—A public meeting of the citizens of North Tarrytown was held on May 6, 1873, at which it was decided by a large majority that measures should be taken to incorporate the village. A committee, consisting of seven gentlemen, was appointed to carry out the wishes of the people. An election was ordered to be held on May 20, 1874, with a view to ascertain the public sentiment and preference in regard to the corporate limits

proposed. Before that date arrived, however, an injunction was issued by the Supreme Court, the effect of which was to prevent the election from taking place at the time appointed. This injunction, after argument, was at length dissolved, and the causes of delay having been removed, the election was finally held on December 17, 1874. The result was overwhelmingly in favor of the plan prepared, the vote standing three hundred and four in favor of incorporation and ninety-two against it. On March 16, 1875, Josiah F. Kendall, Esq., was elected the first president of North Tarrytown.

FIRE DEPARTMENT.—On July 17, 1876, a petition was presented to the board of trustees, asking that a fire patrol be organized for the village. The president having been authorized by the board, proceeded on August 7, 1876, to appoint twenty men to act as a fire patrol for North Tarrytown. This company having taken the necessary steps, were duly organized as a fire patrol on September 13, 1876, with J. Oscar Jones as captain.

For further protection in case of fire, the board of trustees, on September 23, 1878, resolved that a hook-and-ladder company be organized and equipped for service. The "Pocantico Hook-and-Ladder Company, No. 1," was accordingly formed on September 30, 1878, and the requisite number of officers were chosen. Matthew Glenn was elected foreman.

THE CHURCHES.—There are six church edifices within the corporate limits, though one of them is not often used. It is the famous old Dutch Church of Sleepy Hollow, which is preserved as a relic and memorial of the past. Its history is full of interest, and deserves a larger commemoration than the limits appointed for this record will allow.

It is much to be regretted that there are no data which enable us to fix the exact year either when the church edifice was built or when the ecclesiastical body was organized. In the old minutes of the church, which, however, do not go back beyond November 3, 1715, translated from Dutch into English by Jacob Brinkerhoff, in 1876, there is a reference to Margaretta Hardenbroek Philipse, the first wife of Frederick Philipse, as a benefactress of the church and congregation, and thanks are expressed for what she had done in their behalf. The precise date of her death is not known, but two things are quite certain: She was alive in 1679,¹ and Frederick Philipse married his second wife, Catherine Van Cortlandt in 1692. The first wife, Margaretta, must have died therefore, between these two dates, probably not later than 1690. As the service for which the congregation expressed its gratitude must have been rendered by her before that time, it is clear that the congregation itself must also have previously existed.

The church record further says. "To show in what manner these first Christians seemed to have lived

there in heathenism or among heathen, as true Christians, they "thought it very necessary to meet together on the Lord's day at a convenient place to pray to God with the whole heart, and to praise and bless him with psalms and hymns." This state of things, without a minister, seems to have continued till 1697, when the congregation, already having some organized existence, obtained the services of the Rev. Guillaume Bartholf three or four times a year. It is stated distinctly in the record that he agreed to come "in accordance with the prayer of the inhabitants and congregation of Philipsburgh, A.D. 1697." This shows the congregation to have existed as such before 1697, though without a regular minister, and lends some probability to the local tradition that the church was erected in the same year in which the bell was ordered and cast in Amsterdam,—that is, in 1685; for on the bell are cast the words: "Amsterdam, 1685, 'Si Deus pro nobis quis contra nos?'" "If God be for us, who can be against us?" The inscription was peculiarly appropriate to the condition of the church and congregation at that time. Living "in the midst of that heathenism," as they expressed it, it was just the motto they might have been expected to adopt. If the prospect was discouraging when they looked toward man, it was hopeful when they looked toward God. The very motto on the bell therefore tends to confirm the unvarying tradition that the bell was cast to order, and so must have been ordered before 1685.

In his historical discourse delivered in 1866, the Rev. Abel T. Stewart (afterwards Dr. Stewart), for fourteen years pastor of the church, who had made himself familiar with all its history and traditions, said: "The bell that still rings out so shrill was cast according to order in Holland in 1685." Bolton says, in the new edition of his history, volume i. page 527: "The bell of this church was cast to order in Holland and presented by Frederick Philipse." This is the one uniform statement. But how could it have been "cast according to order in 1685," unless the building of the church had either been commenced or had been contemplated at or before that date? It is incredible that the bell should have been cast "according to order in 1685," and that the church should never have been built until fourteen years afterwards, in 1699. As Frederick Philipse received from the King his royal grant to buy and to hold land from the Indians in 1680, it would have given him a period of five years in which to prepare the way for the building of the church. It is a question, however, whether he did not have a foothold in the place, as many other settlers certainly had, living or trading among the Indians a good while before the date of his actual purchase under the grant of the King. Washington Irving gave as the date of the erection of "Wolfert's Roost," 1656. Brodhead says in his history that permanent agricultural colonization was begun along the Hudson River as early

¹ See Bolton i. 512.

as 1623. The site of Yonkers was bought from the Indians in 1639, and De Vries in 1641 was opposed to making war on the Wequaesqueek Indians, who owned and inhabited the country around Tarrytown, because the Dutch settlers were all scattered among them and their cattle were running wild in the woods.¹

As may be seen in the account of the Old Dutch Church-yard furnished by the careful and painstaking superintendent of the Sleepy Hollow Cemetery, who now has that yard in charge, it is believed, judging from the best data that can be obtained, that the interments in the Old Dutch Church-yard began between 1645 and 1655. This would agree with the date which Mr. Irving assigned to the erection of "Wolfert's Roost" in 1656. How long was the grave-yard set apart to its purpose before the erection of the church? If we say that the church was not built until 1699, it would lengthen out the period on this computation to about fifty years or more. But even taking the statement that Frederick Philipse did not begin to purchase from the Indians under the royal grant until 1680, and assuming that the church was not built until 1699, it involves the astonishing and almost incredible consequence that nineteen years passed away after his first purchase before he built the church. This can hardly be reconciled with the vote of thanks adopted by the church and congregation and recorded on their minutes to the "Hon. Lord" Philipse, in connection with his first wife, Margaretta, who must have died before 1692 (when he married for his second wife Catharine Van Cortlandt), for the many blessings enjoyed by the church through their instrumentality.

On several occasions, one of which is referred to by the Rev. Dr. Stewart in his Historical Discourse, it has been found necessary to take up the church floor in order to make repairs. At such times an opportunity has been afforded to look into the crypt below, and it is said that there are, or were, coffins there bearing dates as far back as between 1650 and 1660. In answer to his inquiry, the writer has been favored with a statement by Mrs. Pierre Van Cortlandt, mistress of the Van Cortlandt Manor-House at Croton Landing, which is of peculiar interest in connection with this inquiry. Referring to a statement made by

General Van Cortlandt, father of her late husband, Col. Van Cortlandt, she says: "When General Pierre Van Cortlandt was living, he told me that there were several coffins under the church bearing old dates, and, as near as I can recall it, one which he saw of a child, covered with green cloth or baize, and the date in brass-headed nails, somewhere among the fifties,"—that is, between 1650 and 1660. This fact, about which there can be no question, lends support to the idea of earlier dates generally than those so often accepted without examination, and even without thought.

It is true, the stone tablet built into the wall on what is now the front, or west end of the church, mentions 1699 as the date of its erection, but that tablet is known to have been put there at a comparatively recent date, probably not earlier than 1837, when the



OLD DUTCH CHURCH, SLEEPY HOLLOW.

building was renovated and the entrance changed from the south side to the west end toward the road. After diligent inquiry, no one has yet been found who remembers to have seen it over or near the old door on the south side. It has long been thought to be erroneous.

Two facts go to show its recent origin. The first fact is that the inscription is in plain modern English and in English letters. But the old Dutch settlers were very tenacious of the Dutch language. If there was anything in the world that was sacred, it was that. They talked and wrote and read and sang in Dutch. The minister preached in Dutch, and the church records down at least to April 28, 1777, were all kept in Dutch. As far down as September 25, 1785, the ordinances were all administered in Dutch. On that day the Rev. Stephen Van Voorhees baptized

¹ See account of Wolfert's Roost under Greenburgh.

the little girl, Lovine Hauws, in *English*, and it raised a small tempest in the congregation. The people were deeply offended, and they hardly considered the child baptized at all. The Rev. Mr. Van Voorhees was a good man and a good preacher, yet he remained here only three years. It is not unlikely that his too decided disposition to substitute the English for the Dutch language had a good deal to do with his early removal. With such a tenacious spirit among the people, it is morally certain they would never have tolerated such a thing as an inscription in English. Everything else was Dutch, and that would have been Dutch also.

The second fact is that the red bricks around the door on the west end of the church belong evidently to the same mould and set of bricks as those with which the tablet above it is masoned into the wall, and as those with which the old door on the south side, having been closed up, was converted into a window. No one who examines them can doubt it. But the old south door was closed up and the new west door was opened in 1837. The indications and the probabilities growing out of the current traditions all point to that date as the time when the tablet was put up. Every one knows how easy it is for a mistake to occur in such inscriptions, especially when written long after the event. The writer when in Dublin went to visit the birth-place of Thomas Moore, the Irish poet. Knowing that Moore was born in 1779, he was surprised to read on the white marble tablet, inserted into the front brick wall of the building, this inscription: "In this house, on the 28th of May, 1778, the poet Thomas Moore was born." He thereupon went into the house, and asked the proprietor how they happened to make that mistake. He said that it was not a mistake, that the inscription was correct, and, in response to the inquiry for a "Life of Thomas Moore," he took down the volume and proceeded to prove it. The volume stated that Thomas Moore was born May 28, 1779! The proprietor frankly owned up, and declared that he could not account for it. He was amazed that he had never noticed the mistake himself. Many similar illustrations of the fallibility of tablets might easily be given. We are all familiar with the story of the church building committee, who, desiring to put over the church entrance the inscription, "My house shall be called the house of prayer," referred the stone-cutter, for the sake of exactness, to Matthew xxi: 13, where the passage occurred. They were horrified to find over the door, when the work was done, the inscription, "My house shall be called the house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves."

But the date is not the only doubtful point in the inscription, which altogether reads thus: "Erected and Built by Frederick Philips and Catharine Van Cortlandt his wife, in 1699." Some considerations have already been adduced to show that the church was probably built a number of years before Catha-

rine Van Cortlandt became the second wife of Frederick Philipse, and that excellent lady herself, in her last will and testament, seems to confirm the opinion. In her will, dated 7th January, 1730, she bequeaths the beaker and table-cloth—these are her words copied from the original manuscript will—"in trust to and for the congregation of the Dutch Church, erected at Philipsburgh, by my late husband, Fred'k Philipse, dec'd, according to the discipline of the Synod of Dort." According to her, then, it was erected *by him*, and not by *him and her*. The phraseology seems to indicate that she had nothing to do with its erection, and there is no record nor documentary evidence of any kind to show that she had. Bolton gives a story, it is true, about her riding up from New York with her brother on "moonlight nights" to superintend the erection, but on what authority no one knows. It was a pretty long ride to be taken at night, and why she came up on "moonlight nights" to superintend the work, rather than in the day-time, as one would suppose she would, is not stated. The whole story is very doubtful, to say the least. The second Lady Philipse was evidently a noble Christian woman, who did a great deal for the church and the cause of religion after she became the mistress of the manor. She may have aided very largely in completing the church, or in rendering it more comfortable and attractive, but that she, jointly with her husband, *erected the church*, the facts, so far as we have them, do not show. Her own testimony on that point seems decisive.

The preface to the church minute-book is itself a valuable contribution to the history of the church and of those early times, and as it has never been published in full, it is here given in Mr. Brinkerhoff's translation from the Dutch. It breathes a reverential, pious spirit, such as might be expected from real Christians. But its tone of extreme deference toward the lords and ladies of the Philipse family is specially noteworthy, as indicating the grandeur of the feudal lord, and the respectful homage of his tenants and retainers. Both the language and the spirit take us back for three or four hundred years into the past, and stand in the broadest contrast with the self-reliant individualism and independence of our American citizenship at the present time.

In reading the preface it must be remembered that the church, then called "The Christian Church of the Manor of Philipsburgh," had never kept any records of its ecclesiastical affairs up to 1715. It was then determined to supply this deficiency, so far as the facts could be "discovered really and truly," and Abraham De Røviere was chosen to perform the task.

The summary statement just preceding the preface, and the preface itself, were probably written by Abraham De Røviere, and adopted by the church authorities as correct and proper to be entered upon the records. They are the following, as given in Mr. Brinkerhoff's translation

"The Minute-Book of the Christian Church of the Manor of Philipsburgh, comprised in Eight particular books, the last being a summary recapitulation of the preceding Seven Books, with pages noted for the convenience of the gracious reader.

"Book 1. Contains the stated observance of the Word of God and the Holy Sacraments. Also, the compensation for each service, with the year and date.

"Book 2. Contains the names of the Members of Jesus Christ, who, after a Christian examination, united with the Church and were admitted to the table of the Lord.

"Book 3. Contains the names, from year to year, of the Elders and Deacons who have been approved and ordained, as also the year and date, together with the names of the retiring Elders and Deacons after having served two years.

"Book 4. Contains the names of the baptized Children, with their respective Parents and Sponsors or witnesses, and also the year and day when baptized.

"Book 5. Contains the names of those who, in the sight of God and his Church (after being published three times), were united in honorable wedlock, and also the year and day.

"Book 6. In this is noted the expense account, and Receipts of the Deacons, according to a former Resolution, to show the balance in their hands.

"Book 7. In which is (are) noted the receipts and expenses of the Poor fund; also, to whom and for what expended.

"Book 8. Is the conclusion or Recapitulation of all the preceding books.

PREFACE to lay before the Gracious reader *why* and *when* this Church Record or particular Minute has been made according to the order of the Christian Church and to the satisfaction of all, to wit:

"First. Since in behalf of his Royal Majesty of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, Defender of the faith, it has pleased him, about the year of our Lord Jesus Christ 1680, to grant, by prerogative, consent and license, to the Hon. Frederick Philips to freely buy, in a certain sale of estate, a certain tract of Land and Valley situate in the County of Westchester, in America, *Beginning* at Spuyten Duyvels Kill, going North along the River to and on the Kill of Kitchawong, as in the license and patent contained, called Philipsburgh.

"And, further, to show in what manner these first Christians seemed to have lived there in heathenism, or among heathen, as true Christians.

"First. Having thought it very necessary to meet together on the Lord's day at a convenient place, to pray to God with the whole heart, and to praise and bless him with Psalms and Hymns, &c.

"Secondly. It was thought necessary to find a Reformed Minister of the Gospel who would come three or four times a year to preach and administer the Holy Sacraments, that thus the Church of God may be the better made partakers of the grace of God and the Covenants of the Holy Sacraments according to the Christian Religion of the True Ref. Church. And since the Hon. Servants of the Church find that until this time (being the third day of Nov., A.D. 1715) no minutes have been kept of any Ecclesiastical doings, it was deemed necessary by us to record what has been done, as far as we can discover really and truly; and continue to note down in a book kept for that purpose by some one of our Members, a servant of Jesus Christ whom we may deem competent and of sufficient knowledge, to note down continually and truly whatever may come to our notice as matter worthy of record according to truth.

"And, in conclusion, it has also seemed good to your servants to take in hand and complete this small, yet necessary, Resolution, as far as possible, thus to show thankfulness for the many mercies received by your servants (our Parents of blessed memory), but especially to us, your present servants, and our wives, as from time to time conferred by your Hon. Lord and Father of blessed memory; as also from your Hon. Mother of like blessed memory, Lady Margaretta; as also by your Lord Father's last wedded wife, Lady Catherina; as also by your right Hon. and noble, very wise and provident, our Lordship, Lord Adolphus Philips, for the many benefits done to us, your faithful servants and women servants by various favorable means and good instruction, we therefore pray with all reverence that your Honorable Lordship will receive and accept these our humble thanks according to our small desert, and we, your honorable, obedient servants, will remain obligated, and will ever be your honorable and very obedient humble servants."

Mr. Brinkerhoff adds,—

"Here follows a very brief recapitulation of the design of the several books, as we have already noted on Page 3, with only a single additional fact in these words, viz.:

"The very learned and pious Rev. Guiliam Bartholf, Minister of the Gospel at Hackensack and Aquackenonk, N. J., has accepted our invitation to Minister to us four times a year.

"Book 1. Of Church Minutes. We find in this book a minute of Mr. Abraham D. Reviere that the learned, pious Rev. Guiliam Bartholf has consented, in accordance with the prayer of the first inhabitants and Congregation of Philipsburgh (A.D. 1697), to come here three or four times a year to preach the Holy Word of God, to teach and to administer the Holy Sacraments, which, by the especial grace of God, have been continued among us to this present date, the 24th of Nov., 1715. And we have paid the afore-mentioned Minister his Salary, to the satisfaction of both parties, as in duty bound. We have also paid Mr. Tennis Van Houten for his services in bringing and returning said Minister to and from Hackensack that which was his just due. And we hope that it may please the Almighty and merciful God to grant him a continuance with us for many years.

"In continuation, A.D. 1716. On the 18th and 19th April the Rev. G. Bartholf again performed religious service in this Christian Church, for which both he and Teunis Van Houten, who conveyed him to and fro were both paid satisfactorily according to mutual agreement. And for all this we are bound to show special thankfulness for the usual liberality of the very provident Lady Madame Catherina Philips.

"Book 2. Of Church Minutes. We here note that it has been Resolved by common consent between the Inhabitants of Philipsburgh on the one part, and the respective Inhabitants of the Manor of Mr. Van Cortlandt, that the afore-mentioned Church shall be bound, without moving any exception against it, to pay and deliver over a just fourth part yearly for the religious service in the Church at Philipsburgh, in order that the Rev. Minister of the Holy Gospel may receive his reward to his entire satisfaction for his faithfully performed services. And, on the other part, the Church of Philipsburgh shall be bound for the other three parts, whereby fully to satisfy the aforesaid Minister for his services. And they shall henceforth blend together as members of one and same Christian Church, and it shall be so noted down in the Church 'Book of Minutes,' as is right and proper.

"In this 2^d Book of Church Minutes, Anno 1697, on the Manor of Philipsburgh are noted down the names of all persons respectively, who, after Christian examination and admonition, have been received as members of the Church of Jesus Christ, and allowed to appear at the table of the Lord and partake of the Holy Sacrament. *First*, and before all, the Right Hon., pious, very wise, provident Lady Catherina Philips, widow of Lord Frederick Philips, who very praiseworthy did here advance the cause of Religion."

"The Kill of Kitchawong," mentioned near the beginning of the preface, is the stream now known as Croton River.

The first record in the list of church members is dated 1697, and runs thus: "1. The Right Hon., pious, very wise, provident Lady Catharina Philips, widow of Lord Frederick Philips, who very praiseworthy did here advance the cause of Religion. 2. Abraham De Reviere. 3. Isaac Sie (Sen); and 4. Esther, his wife, &c.

The first record in the list of elders and deacons is dated 1697, and runs thus: "1. Elder Abraham de Revier, Deacon Jan Ecker. 2. 1698, Elder Ryck Abramse, Deacon Wolfert Ecker." The two deacons here mentioned both afterwards became elders,—Jan Ecker in 1704 and Wolfert Ecker in 1706. The one last-named is the person referred to in Washington Irving's story of "Wolfert's Roost."

It was required in those days to publish the banns of marriage, and prefixed to the list of those thus united is this preamble: "And First we find accordingly that on the 30th Octo., Anno 1698 (after three distinct proclamations of the *Bans* previously made in the Church, the following persons were *Confirmed* in Marriage in the presence of God and his Church),

viz.: 1. Octo. 30, 1698, Abm de Revier and Rachel Van Weert." He was "Born in Holland, on the Island of Cadsand," and she "on Long Island (Middle Bush)." 2. "Same date. Jan Van Dyck and Geesje de Groot." Both born "on Long Island, in Brooklyn."

The first record in the list of baptisms is dated April 21, 1697, and was that of Rebecca, child of Jan Heyert and Maria, his wife. The witnesses were "Ryck Abrams and Tryntie," his wife.

Among other things in explanation, the translator of the old Dutch records says: "On a fragmentary part of a detached and mutilated leaf the following appears, as near as it can be deciphered:

"Peter Buys and Jan Van Weert have made an order concerning the *Pall* for funerals, that the charge for its use, for an Adult shall be *four* Guilders, and for a Minor *two* Guilders, and that Pieter Foesnur be chosen for undertaker and bell-ringer, or sexton, and that Jan Ecker (in the absence of a Minister) be the one to conduct the services in a Christian manner, and that he walk before the procession to the grave."

The translator states that he found much difficulty in understanding the precise value of the currency spoken of in the record. He says: "In commencing the following pages I was at a loss to know what kind of money the figures were intended to denote, as the manuscript has no characters prefixed to the several sums collected and paid, to show whether it was dollars and cents or pounds, shillings and pence, but I took it to denote the latter, as *that* was the prevailing method of keeping accounts in my youthful days. Accordingly I so denoted *the first page*, until I came to the items of £30 for wine, £13 for bread for the Communion! I thought this incredible, and resolved thenceforth to put down the naked figures, leaving the reader to denominate them for himself. But finally I discovered it to mean so many *Gilders and Stivers*. These are Dutch coins. A Gilder is a Gold coin of 20 Stivers in value, and a Stiver is nearly 2 cents our money. So that a Gilder is worth about 38 cents in American coin.

"It will be seen on page 354 that after A. D. 1745 the Gilders were discontinued, and thenceforth pounds, shillings and pence prevailed."

The last record in the Dutch language is entered upon the minutes under date of April 28, 1777. What remains is in English. Oddly enough, the last is a Dutch minute, whose correctness is certified to in Latin by Dominie Ritzema, in these words: "Quod attestor, J. Ritzema, V. D. M." "Which I attest or certify to be correct, J. Ritzema, Minister of the Word of God."

It is an interesting curiosity and the translation is thus given entire:

"As Minister, I have subscribed with Hendriens Storm as Elder, and Jacob Van Waert and Petrus Sic as deacons, at the house of Jan Hammond, where we opened the *Church Chest*, and put therein the following Collections

1. from the Widow of Jan Storm what she had saved from what her Husband had collected while a Deacon	42	68	61	10
2. from Pieter Hick	2	15	10	

3. from Jacob Borekhout	3	7	4
4. A residue of old Coppers, which we exchanged at the rate of 12 for a shilling	0	4	31
	ES	14	0

"After this the *Chest* was delivered over to Petrus Sic, with the keys given to Hendriens Storm.

"Quod Attestor,
"J. RITZEMA, V. D. M.

The task of making a complete translation of the old Dutch records involved a herculean labor, but it fell into good hands and it was admirably done. The respected translator, who has now entered into the Heavenly rest, wrote to the authorities of the First Reformed Church, to which the record properly belongs, from Brooklyn, under date of August 28, 1876, in the following terms:

"*Dear Friends:* I have just completed the Records of the venerable Old Dutch Church in your locality. When you presented me the original in its mutilated condition for inspection, I had no hesitancy as to my competency for the undertaking, but the cursory examination then made, gave a very inadequate conception of its magnitude, as you will see in the sequel. Since the day I left you at Tarrytown some two months since, I have been diligently engaged from 5 A.M. till 6 P.M. (taking off two hours for meals) in the prosecution of the work. While the New Book was being made (in which to copy the record) I translated the reading matter into good English on detached sheets of paper for Revision, so as to avoid the necessity of making a single interpolation. But in recording nearly 20,000 names of a *peculiar* order, especially those of the feminine gender, a few erasures were to be expected, since no one but a person like myself, to whom those unpronounceable names of Holland orthodoxy were as familiar as household words, could have succeeded in preserving their originality. In many instances the name of the same person is differently spelled, according to the predilection of the several writers, so as to make almost another name. . . .

"And now I will give you some idea of what the Book contains. There are 2,450 Baptisms, about 400 Church members, and about 400 Marriages, besides all the Elders and Deacons during the existence of the Church, being elected every two years, when their predecessors would retire after presenting their accounts for settlement.

"Approximate number of names to be found in the New Book:

" Church Members	400
Put in the Index in Alphabetical Recapitulation order	400
Marriages, 400 pair	800
Baptisms, 2,450 of 5 names, the Child, 2 Parents and 2 Sponsors	12,250
Again 2 names of each; Index, The Father and Child	4,900
All the several changes of Elders and Deacons, with other incidental names	250
	19,800"

The church, whose beginnings are chronicled in these ancient records, was destined to have a long and vigorous life. While it was in a sense the mother of many other churches in the county, it preserved its own unity unimpaired for almost one hundred and sixty years, or down to 1851, when the original body, by the organization of the Second Reformed Church of Tarrytown became two bands. Under the Dutch regime, under the English, during the Revolution, through the period of the confederation, and after the adoption of the National Constitution, the church lived on, and is living still. Its pulpit in all that time has been filled by a succession of thirteen ministers, either as pastors or stated supplies. Their names are the following:

1. Rev. Guillian Bartholf, from 1697 to 1724.
2. Rev. Frederick Mutzelius, from 1726 to 1750.
3. Rev. Johannes Ritzema, from 1744 to 1776.

4. Rev. Stephen Van Voorhees, from 1785 to 1788.
5. Rev. John F. Jackson, from 1791 to 1806.
6. Rev. Thomas G. Smith, from 1808 to 1837.
7. Rev. George Du Bois, from 1838 to 1844.
8. Rev. Joseph Wilson, from 1845 to 1849.
9. Rev. John Mason Ferris, from 1849 to 1851.
10. Rev. John W. Schenck, from 1849 to 1851.
11. Rev. Abel T. Stewart, from 1852 to 1866.
12. Rev. John B. Thompson, from 1866 to 1869.
13. Rev. John Knox Allen, from 1870.

It was the Rev. John F. Jackson, the fifth in this list, of whom the tradition is still repeated that when he was about to leave the church, on account of some trouble that grew out of the too free use of his tongue by a member of the consistory, the dominie, in his last public service, gave out to be sung Watts' paraphrase of the 120th Psalm. He read all the six stanzas with great force of elocution, but when he came to the fifth he entered into the spirit of it with peculiar interest, and, turning around, he looked significantly down upon the consistory man whose unruly member had caused the trouble, while he pronounced the words in sonorous tones,—

"Now passions still their souls engage,
And keep their malice strong :
What shall be done to curb thy rage,
O thou devouring tongue !"

The Rev. John W. Schenck, the tenth in the list above as serving the church between 1849 and 1851, was, in some sense, a colleague of the Rev. John M. Ferris. The edifice of what is now the Second Reformed Church having been built in 1837 to meet the growing demand of the village people, who found the old church too remote and inconvenient, there were two church buildings belonging to one and the same organization. As there was but one pastor, the Rev. Mr. Schenck was invited to act as an assistant to the Rev. J. M. Ferris, and to preach in one church while he preached in the other. Mr. Schenck was not installed.

It was during the ministry of the Rev. Abel T. Stewart that the erection of a new church edifice in the village was undertaken by the First Reformed Church, and happily completed. The division of the old church into two organizations took place in November, 1851. The Rev. Mr. Stewart accepted the call of the First Church, the new name which it took at that date, in July, 1852. In the following October a committee was appointed to find and report a proper site for a new church edifice. In December the congregation unanimously resolved to build. In due time the work was completed, and on May 24, 1854, the church was solemnly dedicated to the worship of Almighty God, the religious service being chiefly rendered by the Rev. George W. Bethune, D.D. In this new edifice the congregation has worshipped ever since. The church is out of debt and reports a membership of two hundred and forty-seven communicants.

The close connection of this church with the old burying-ground, which originally lay on the four

sides of the old edifice, and still lies on three,—namely, the north, east and south,—renders it proper that some account of that ancient sleeping-place of the dead should here be given. Application having been made to Mr. Benjamin F. Cornell, the very intelligent and capable superintendent of Sleepy Hollow Cemetery, who now has the old burying-ground in charge, he kindly responded by furnishing the following statements, not only in regard to the old burying-ground itself, but also in regard to the Sleepy Hollow Cemetery, which adjoins it, and which may be said, in a sense, to have grown out of it:

"OLD SLEEPY HOLLOW CHURCH AND YARD.

"As to the question of the Old Congregation of the Reformed Dutch Church of the Manor of Philipsburgh having worshipped in a log house for a time prior to the erection of the stone Church still standing, which the tablet states to have been erected in 1639, I can only say, for myself, that I know that Washington Irving, a careful and competent searcher of all traditions among which any facts bearing upon the case would likely be found, believed it to be true.

"And I have heard from him, and I think from others, but cannot now distinctly remember from whom, that some casual reference to it exists in one or more letters not long since extant, written before the erection of the old church still standing, the authors or recipients of which were of or connected with the Van Cortlandts.

"Nevertheless, it may be possible, but not likely, that the central or Manor-House, which had early existence, may have been opened by the first occupant for such purpose. It was originally built of logs, and as I have always understood is still, at least in part, of that material.

"The Old Dutch Church, as we now call it, though simple and unpretentious, almost rude in its architecture, doubtless well-befitted the day of its erection. It fronted the south upon a sloping green between the Manor-House and the road, with a shed for teams at its west end, and extending northerly along where the west line of Broadway now is, with a burying-ground for slaves behind it to the west, and one for their masters in the rear of the Church on the north, which acquired the name of yard when partially enclosed at a later day. But rude as the structure was, tradition if not history holds that recourse was had to the mother country for some of the appliances required for its completion, among other things the pulpit and the communion table that so long excited the pride of the simple tenants of the Manor; which treasures of veneration, if not of art, were allowed to be taken away, it is said to New York, at one of the several invasions of modern improvement.

"Of the Old Yard, so long handled by successive generations of the De Reveres, as sextons, it may be doubted if Gray had a more fitting prompter to his beautiful Elegy, but its real history, who and how many are sleeping there, is left even more to tradition than that of the Church itself. In latter years, even reaching past the time when the advent of the railway had brought on the invasion from New York, it was much neglected and rank with bushes and briars, but Irving loved it even as it was, often loitering and musing of a summer's day beneath the shade of large trees, a spot selected for his own resting-place in the cemetery, from whence the view of the Old Yard was clear.

"Passing by an unsuccessful attempt in 1868, the Old Yard was put in charge of Sleepy Hollow Cemetery by contract with the First Reformed Dutch Church in the spring of 1874, and so remains. Upon occasion of devising a plan for a New Register that should contain a record of all interments thereafter made in like manner as in the cemetery, an estimate was attempted of the whole number of interments from between 1645 and 1655, assumed as the probable time of their beginning, from such data of information as could be reached, and guided by a careful and laborious examination of the subject in all its bearings, it resulted in placing the figures at about 3193 down to the present time, that is, January 26, 1885, which is believed to be near the mark."

The following is the tabulated statement referred to, and kindly furnished, by Mr. Cornell:

OLD DUTCH CHURCH YARD.

The beginning in from 1645 to 1655. An estimate from the best data attainable, two hundred and thirty-four years to 1885, by semi-decades.

Dates.	Interments.	Dates.	Interments.	Date.	Year.	Interments.	Date.	Year.	Interments.
1650	3— 3	1770	69—	1850. 1	101—	1868. 19	172—		
1655	4—	1775	74— 869	1851. 2	81—	1869. 20	171—2202		
1660	7—	1780	74—	1852. 3	103— 861	1870. 21	145—		
1665	9—	1785	76—	1853. 4	94—	1871. 22	123—		
1670	13—	1790	79—	1854. 5	107— 186	1872. 23	142— 851		
1675	17— 50	1795	80—	1855. 6	103—	1873. 24	188—		
1680	21—	1800	84—1253	1856. 7	85—	1874. 25	197—2097		
1685	23—	1805	87—	1857. 8	97— 201	1875. 26	241—		
1690	25—	1810	91—	1858. 9	83—	1876. 27	291—		
1695	27—	1815	94—	1859. 10	89— 947	1877. 28	222—		
1700	31— 180	1820	97—	1860. 11	93—	1878. 29	236—		
1705	33—	1825	99—1721	1861. 12	107—	1879. 30	270—4251		
1710	35—	1830	104—	1862. 13	97— 921	1880. 31	220—		
1715	37—	1835	109—	1863. 14	113—	1881. 32	258—		
1720	40—	1840	111—	1864. 15	149—1502	1882. 33	287—		
1725	43— 368	1845	113—	1865. 16	122—	1883. 34	237—		
1730	46—	1850	107—2265	1866. 17	115—	1884. 35	222—5475		
1735	48—	1855	105—	1867. 18	120— 831				
1740	51—	1860	103—						
1745	53—	1865	104—						
1750	55— 531	1870	114—						
1755	59—	1875	183—2824						
1760	62—	1880	159—						
1765	65—	1885	210—3193						

Interred by the church in two hundred and twenty-two years . . . 2704
 By the cemetery in about twelve years 489

Total interments in two hundred and thirty-four years . . . 3193

B. F. CORNELL, Superintendent.

May 15, 1885.

The inscriptions on page 295 were copied *literatim et verbatim* from tombstones in the old church-yard, and also the following :

“Here lies the body of

JAMES BARNARD.

He died March 4, 1768,

in the 48th year of his age.

Tho' boisterous winds and Neptune's waves
 Have tost me too & fro'
 By God's decree you plainly see
 I'm harbored here below.”

“T. M.

In memory of MR. ISAAC MARTLINGH,

who was inhumanly
 slain by

Nathaniel Underhill, May 26,

A. D. 1779,

In the 39th year

of his age.”

This was the person referred to in Bolton's History, vol. i. p. 347, in the following paragraph :

“In the summer of 1779 a strong detachment under the command of Colonel Enmerick advanced upon Tarrytown so rapidly that the Continental guard, quartered at Requa's house, were completely taken by surprise; four of them were killed upon the spot, and the remainder, consisting of ten or twelve, were taken prisoners. On this occasion Isaac Martlingh, a non-armed man, and Polly Buckhout, were also killed; the latter, supposed accidentally, from the circumstance of her wearing a man's hat.”

The following is a corresponding statement in regard to Sleepy Hollow Cemetery, also furnished by Mr. Cornell.

SLEEPY HOLLOW CEMETERY.

From its foundation, October 30th, 1849, to the end of its 35th Year, Jan'y. 31st, 1885, With Notes.

By Register	5475
In Machpelah ²	1254
Private Lots	4221

The above is correct by the Chronology of the Register, but it is notable, as indicated by careful search, that there may be about 366 more. If so, say 5871.—Add Old Dutch Church Yard by Sleepy Hollow Cemetery 489, making 6360. By Old Dutch Church in Yard 2704, making 9064, in 222 Years.

B. F. C., Supt., May 15th, 1885.

The writer having addressed to Mr. Cornell a written request to be informed upon what grounds it was assumed that the first interments in the old church yard were made as far back as from 1645 to 1655, he received the following answer, which, it is proper to say, coincides fully with the tendency of his own investigations.

SLEEPY HOLLOW CEMETERY, NOV. 12, 1885.

Rev. John A. Todd, D.D.:

Dear Sir: In response to your inquiry, “Why it is assumed that the first interments in what is now the Old Dutch Church-Yard at Sleepy Hollow were made as early as 1645 to 1655,” I can only say that its probabilities seem to me to rest upon a variety of collated circumstances, some of them well-known facts, and others resting in traditions more or less colored as they have been handled by the *genius loci*, constituting a lore, the study of which is somewhat archaeological. In a number of interviews with the late Washington Irving, at the cemetery in question and at Sunny Side, beginning as early as 1852, I learned that he believed the first interment to have been made about the middle of the seventeenth century; and that a few habitations had been planted along the shore of the lower Hudson but a short time subsequent to the settlement of New Amsterdam, on Manhattan Island, in 1617.

And that a rendezvous for divine worship was early provided near to the mouth of the Pocantico Brook, even some little time before the manor of Phillipse had confirmed practical existence, or manorial habitation.

Basing this belief in part upon letters and other writings then extant, of which he might then have been custodian—but as to that, I do not remember that he spoke—it was natural that he should have diligently searched all sources of information in his time available, for the purpose of a portion of the work he had in hand; his competency for the task cannot be doubted and should have great weight.

And great probability attends the conclusion to which he came when we consider the persistent thriftiness of the Hollanders of that day.

What more natural than that ports for trade should be pushed forward, and adventurous delvers in the soil and fisherman in the waters gather around them? That assumption agrees with what is known of the time taken for an out-put of scattered inhabitants to an

¹ May be short, *cc.* too low the number indicated, making a total of 366.

² Machpelah means public ground set apart for single graves.

Hier Leyt Het Lighaam
Van Abr.^m Martlenghs
Geboren. Den. 3: Sept. 1693:
Ende is Overleeden
Den: 22: April 1761.
Out zynde 67: Jaeren
7: Maenden En
17 Dagen.

Hier Leyt. Begraven Her
Lichaam Van Hendrik Van
Tessel Gebooren den 7
August 1704 Overleeden
Den 9 Maarr: 1771: our
Zynde 66 Jaeren. 7 Maanden
En 2: Daagen.

Hier Leid Begraven
Sara Focher Huisvrouw Van
John Enrers Geboren Den. 20:
October 1717 Gestorven Den. 26:
December 1769: Verwagende
Ein
Zalige OPstandinge Door
Jezus Christus ten Jongsten
Dage

Hier Leyt Begraaven Het
Lichaem Van Nicholas Storm
Gebooren den: 20: May 1755
Overleeden den: 12: July 1774
Out Zynde 19 Jaer. 1 Maent
En. 23: Dagen.

In Memory of Cap.
JOHN BUCKHOUT, who
Departed this life
April the 10th 1785 Aged
103 Years and left behind
him when he died 240 Chil^r
and Grand Children also
MARY the wife of John Buc^t
died August 1755 Aged
73 Years.



In Memory of ANN
the widow & relict of
Edward Covenhoven
She died Nov; 6 1797.
Aged 63 Years 8 Months
and 6 Days

My cares are past
my bones at rest
God took my life
when he thought best

equal distance from the initial points of settlement on the coast of New England, where the natives were friendly as the Manhattos were here.

The same thing was true around Philadelphia and elsewhere in America.

In addition to which a careful study of all that is readily accessible of a statistical nature concerning the growth of population points to the same conclusion.

That there exists so little direct documentary evidence to sustain the assumption will not be thought strange when we consider the characteristic traits of the race chiefly engaged in the transaction, bearing in mind the fact that they have left absolutely nothing inconsistent with it.

I have thus briefly glanced at the answer to your question. A fuller examination of the case, such as a long habit of historical research enables, is omitted for want of time.

Respectfully Yours, &c.

B. F. CORNELL,

Superintendent Sleepy Hollow Cemetery.

SLEEPY HOLLOW CEMETERY.—Sleepy Hollow Cemetery, already referred to, which adjoins the Old Dutch Church burying-ground on the north, well deserves its fame as one of the most picturesque of all the cities of the dead in this country. It consists of about thirty-two and one-half acres, extending northward from the upper line of the old church-yard, and lying between Broadway on the west and the beautiful Pocantico Brook on the east, which takes a southerly course through the deep valley or glen so widely known as Sleepy Hollow. The stream flows over a ledge of rocks that lie across its channel at the northeast corner of the cemetery grounds, and, after falling in a foamy cascade into the pool below, its waters go on in murmuring ripples down past the rear of the Old Dutch Church and past Castle Philipse, the old Manor-House, and the old mill, until they finally empty into the Hudson. The ground in the cemetery is a yellow loam, slightly sandy, into which a grave can be cut as smoothly and silently as one cuts down through a mass of closely packed flour. From the central elevation, sloping down both to the east and to the west, the spectator has a singularly lovely view of Sleepy Hollow and the western slope of Prospect Hill on one side and of the majestic Hudson on the other.

The cemetery organization owes its beginning mainly to the late Captain Jacob Storm, but in an important degree also to his friend, the late Washington Irving. In 1849, while removing the remains of some of his family in the old church-yard, Captain Storm's strong emotional nature was stirred by the spade's displacement of human bones, in regard to which, with characteristic neglect, the Dutch settlers had left no memorial nor record.

His friend, Washington Irving, was present, and in speaking to him about it, the idea was struck out of forming here a rural cemetery, where better care should be taken, and more accurate records be preserved.

This incident, and the project that grew out of it, were much talked of, and many were found favorably disposed to the undertaking. A meeting was accordingly held in "the long room," over what is now Requa's store, on the southwest corner of Washington

and Main Streets, on October 27, 1849. Patterson R. Hunt, was called to the chair, and James S. See was appointed secretary. There were twenty-five gentlemen who subscribed the roll of charter members, and a charter having been prepared in conformity with the general act for the incorporation of rural cemetery associations, passed by the Legislature in 1847, it was, on the next day, October 28, 1849, duly executed and recorded. It contained the names of Peter Van Antwerp, William P. Lyon, John K. Clapp, Pierre Wildey, Jacob Odell, William Wood, Washington Irving, Jacob Storm and J. Wesley Dixon as the nine charter trustees, classified for one, two and three years. Of these, two died in office, two left by resignation, and two remain, but William Wood is the only one who has held office continuously to this time. Pierre Wildey was elected president; Peter Van Antwerp, vice-president; Jacob Storm, treasurer and superintendent; and Harvey Farrington, secretary.

Thus equipped, the organization began its work. The corporate name was originally "The Tarrytown Cemetery," but at the annual meeting, on February 9, 1865, steps were taken to change it to "Sleepy Hollow Cemetery," the name which Mr. Irving had always desired.¹

The want of a gate-house or a lodge, at the entrance near the bell tower on Broadway, was not supplied until February 11, 1858, when the present building was reported as having been completed at a cost of \$1,928.94.

Only a step or two east of the entrance and the gate-house, in full view, is the large plot donated in

¹ In explanation of the change of name from the "Tarrytown Cemetery" to the "Sleepy Hollow Cemetery," the following statements from the preface to the pamphlet history and regulations of the cemetery, published in 1866, including a letter on the subject from Mr. Irving himself, will be read with peculiar interest:

"This cemetery was incorporated as the 'Tarrytown Cemetery,' but the republication of the following letter, in 1864, suggested to the trustees that it would be a most fitting memorial of the distinguished author of it to conform to his wishes, even at that late day. They accordingly applied to the Legislature of the State for authority to change the title, which was most readily and unanimously granted, and thenceforth it became the 'Sleepy Hollow Cemetery.'

"The letter was addressed to Lewis Gaylord Clark, then editor of the *Knight's Book Magazine*—

"*My Dear Clark:*

"I send you herewith a plan of a rural cemetery projected by some of the worthies of Tarrytown, on the woolly hills adjacent to the Sleepy Hollow Church. I have no pecuniary interest in it, yet I hope it may succeed, as it will keep that beautiful and umbrageous neighborhood sacred from the anti-poetical and all-leveling axe. Besides, I trust that I shall one day lay my bones there. The projectors are plain, matter-of-fact men, but are already, I believe, aware of the blunder which they have committed in naming it the 'Tarrytown,' instead of the 'Sleepy Hollow Cemetery.'

"The latter name would have been enough of itself to secure the patronage of all desirous of sleeping quietly in their graves.

"I beg you to correct this oversight, should you, as I trust you will, notice this sepulchral enterprise.

"I hope as the spring opens you will accompany me in one of my brief visits to Sunnyside, when we will make another trip to Sleepy Hollow, and (thunder and lightning permitting) have a colloquy among the tombs.

"Yours, very truly,

"WASHINGTON IRVING."

"New York, April 27, 1849."

1863 to the honorably discharged soldiers of Tarrytown and its vicinity, as a burial-place for those of their comrades who were killed in battle, or died in their country's service during the War of the Rebellion. On February 6, 1886, the transfer was formally completed, and the plot delivered to trustees appointed by the soldiers to receive and hold it in their name. The mortal remains of nineteen who fought for Union and liberty in the great struggle now rest beneath the shadow of the unfinished monument that marks the spot. When completed, as it ought to be without delay, it will be a tasteful and imposing memorial of the patriotism and valor of those who loved their country more than their lives. Its base, of native granite, is five and one-half feet square, and the shaft, of polished Connecticut granite, so far as completed, is five and one-half feet high from the base on which it rests, or twelve feet from the ground and three feet two inches in breadth each way at the bottom. It bears this inscription :

(On the West, fronting the entrance.)

PATRIA CARIOR QUAM VITA

OUR

UNION SOLDIERS.

While Freedom's name is understood,
They shall delight the wise and good;
They dared to set their country free,
And gave her laws equality.

(On the South.)

JAS. COUTANT, Sergt. Co. D, 25th Regt., N. Y. S. V. Cav.

(On the East.)

CHAS. H. BARKER, 2d Lieut. Co. B, 83d Regt., N. Y. S. V.

(On the North.)

GEO. ACKER, Musician Co. H., 32d Regt., N. Y. S. V.

The design probably is that the names of all the dead soldiers found here, or in this vicinity, shall be cut in the same manner into the polished granite; apparently the space is left for that purpose.

The cemetery had from the first, under the influence of Captain Storm, its chief founder, prompted by his strong religious feeling, been extremely liberal to the clergy. He carried out this generous disposition with great munificence from his own private interest in the lands he had acquired.

Having applied to Mr. Cornell, the superintendent, for a selection from the list of those interred in the cemetery, the writer has received the following account, in which are many well known names, and some of them of world-wide fame.

ROLL OF NOTABLE PERSONS INTERRED IN THE OLD DUTCH CHURCH-YARD, AND IN SLEEPY HOLLOW CEMETERY.

An attempt to comply with your request for a roll of notables, I find to be no easy task. No two persons form the same judgment of any one of their fellow-men who may be equally known to them, if indeed that could be possible, because of the unequal cast of their own natures, which constitutes their respective personalities, and of the impossibility of ob-

taining the same point of view, — the common difficulty in the way of all biographers who would be just.

Besides, a biographical writing that may be published presupposes readers more or less opinionated, a knowledge of which fact of necessity influences the writer to compromise his judgment somewhat. The present condition of society, with its existing environments, makes it extremely hard to designate persons by any intelligible classification since the saying of our fathers, — "let the cobbler stick to his last!" has come to embody the expression of an obsolete idea.

But I will try and do the best I can, and with these preliminary observations introduce the following names as not wholly unworthy of mention.

Literature, Fine Arts and Painting.

Washington Irving, romance and history; Robert Havell, ornithology, painting and engraving; Evert A. Duyckinck, literature and history.

Mechanics, and in Mechanical Lines of Business, etc.

John B. Copchüt, veneers, etc.; Charles Lester, carriage-axles; William McBeth, stone-mason; Odell Lawrence, forger of iron; James McBean, steam engineer; James Wood, coal dust in brick; Columbus Ryan, contractor; William Landrine, millwright.

Mariners, Boat and Helmsmen.

Nathan Cobb, seal fishery; Andrew F. Fletcher, Liverpool packets; Luther Bassett, yachtsman; Henry Holden, Liverpool packets.

Clergymen and Religious Teachers.

George DuBois, Old Dutch Church; Thomas G. Smith, Old Dutch Church; Stephen Martindale, Methodist Episcopal Church; Jacob Mott, Friends' Meeting; Charles Burd, Independent; Frederick J. Jackson, Reformed Church.

Philanthropists.

Abn. Onderdonk, charity; Arnold Inman, works of charity.

Physicians, Scientists, etc.

James W. Scribner, surgeon; James Law, practice of medicine; William H. Mapes, chemistry; Ann Lohman, obstetrics.

Soldiers, Military Chiefs.

Daniel Delavan, general; James Benedict, general; Henry Storms, general; John S. Gilbert, general, removed to Glens Falls, N. Y.; James A. Hamilton, colonel.

Merchants and Shop-Keepers, etc.

Philip J. Bonesteel, grocer; Stephen D. Gardner, lumber; Moses H. Grinnell, shipping; Oliver B. Hinman, furnishing, etc.; Moses A. Hoppock, personality; William A. Hall, shoes, etc.; Owen Jones, fancy dry-goods; Theodore Martine, grocer; Frances Nicholson, personality; Anson G. Phelps, Jr., metals; Henry Sheldon, silks, etc.; Thomas Smull, leather; Silas Olmsted, grocer; Russel W. Robinson, drugs; John F. Marshall, personality.

Financiers, Bankers, Brokers and Operators of General Business.

George Merritt, rubbersprings; John E. Williams, Metropolitan Bank; Sanford Cobb, president of fire insurance; James Cunningham, Col. operator; William Orton, Western Union Telegraph; James McMillan, brokerage, cotton, coal, etc.; Jesse A. Marshall, street railroads. David A. Paige, railroads; Gustavo A. Sacchi, lands; Stephen B. Tompkins, speculator; Pierson Halsted, personality; William S. Latham, ex-Governor, removed to Col.; Woodbury Langdon, Astor estate; Herman Leroy, D. Webster's father-in-law.

Publicans, etc.

Martin Smith, Tarrytown; Joseph H. Hall, Elmsford.

Persons more or less noted for Qualities or Attending Circumstances beyond the Average.

John Storm, fertility, resource and persistence; Bernard J. Meserole, politician; William A. Walker, scholar; Steven Archer, spiritualist; Robert H. Coles, surrogate; Stephen Bushel, tactician; Wm. P. Lyon, teacher; Jotham M. Knowlton, descendant of Colonel Knowlton; Daniel Delavan, hardware, colonel of militia; Pierre Wildey, versatile personality; Andrew Thompson, personality; Henry Foster, personality; George W. Lent, Knickerbocker; John De Revere, constable, etc.; Stephen Crosby, descendant of Cooper's Harvey Birch, the spy; Hobart Berrian, personality; Gerard G. Beekman, personality; Isaac Martling, patriot murdered by Tories; Jonathan Baylis, farmer; Stephen D. Beekman, personality; John Hutchinson, woven iron; Nathaniel B. Holmes, personality; Steuben Swartwout, personality; Thomas Dean, personality; Peter See (the

stayer), twenty-three children; Catharine Acker, personality; Cornelia Beekman (granny), personality; Maria Paulding, personality; Delorah C. Benedict, personality; Julia Storms, personality; Phebe Miller, longevity—one hundred and three years.

The foregoing list of ninety-four names is the best that I can do; doubtless there are others as worthy of mention, and some of these perhaps are misjudged.

The number will not seem so small when it is considered that fully one-half of the number of interments are females, and that but few could become distinguished before the approach of middle age. And, again, it should be borne in mind that the tendency of civilization in our modern society is to fetter and cramp the growth of personality into the well-worn rut of mediocrity, assailing with the mad-dog cry of "crank!" every soul that chafes under conformity to its meretricious show of style, and thinly-veiled hypocrisy, marshaled by cant.

B. F. CORNELL,

Superintendent of Sleepy Hollow Cemetery.

Tarrytown, June 30, 1885.

Having thus given some history of the Old Dutch Church of Sleepy Hollow, and its connection with the old burying-ground, and later with the Sleepy Hollow Cemetery, it will lend completeness to the narrative to add a descriptive account of the Old Dutch Church and congregation, within and without, as presented in an interesting lecture, under the title of "The Legendary History of the Old Dutch Church of Sleepy Hollow," delivered in the First Reformed Church in the village by the present pastor, the Rev. John K. Allen, in November, 1884. The lecture presents some phases of the subject not touched upon elsewhere. The following is an extract from it:

"To the urgent religious spirit of the Hollanders we may trace the erection of the little old church, in what was then the wilderness and among the people who from the new-comers called the heathen. Its familiar appearance needs no description, yet Irving's sketch of it in his 'Legend of Sleepy Hollow' never grows wearisome.—'It stands on a knoll surrounded by locust-trees and lofty elms, from among which its decent white-washed walls shine modestly forth like Christian purity beaming through the shades of retirement. A gentle slope descends from it to a silvery sheet of water, bordered by high trees, between which peeps may be caught at the blue hills of the Hudson. To look upon its grass-grown yard, where the sunbeams seem to sleep so quietly, one would think that there at least the dead might rest in peace.'

"It has sometimes been proposed to restore the church and make it as it originally was, to which it is to be said that no man knows how it originally was. The church, which was altered in 1837, was not in its first condition. After the American Revolution its interior was changed and repaired; no doubt the improvements, as they were thought to be, were very decided. The exterior has always been pretty much as we now see it. The tradition is that it was begun at least as early as the year 1694, when the church was organized. Every one is familiar with the story that Lord Philipse, aided by his wife Catherine Van Cortlandt, who appears to have been the much more zealous of the two, began to build the church two or three years before he finished it. He laid the foundation and then began his mill-dam. The dam being built, a freshet came one night and carried it away; whereupon he built a better, stronger dam, and a freshet washed it away. In his great distress he was approached by his old slave, Harry, who said he had had a dream repeated for several nights. It was that God was displeased with his master for stopping work on the church in order to build his dam. Let him finish the church, and then the dam and it would stand. The lord of the manor was much impressed by the dream, completed the church and then the dam, probably taking care to build it a little more securely than its predecessors; anyway it stood, and in its standing seemed to bear sign that the Lord approved of his building the church first.

"The bricks which were used in the construction of the church were brought from Holland; they were small and thin and yellow in color, and were artistically set over the arch of the door and around the casements of the windows. A few of these bricks still remain in the structure and may be seen underneath the southwest window, where the door once was. It is said that the sloop which brought these bricks from Holland, and which carried them up the Pocantico, which was

then navigable as far as the Old Mill, was never able to get out again, as it grounded and could not be gotten off. Men now living affirm they have seen fragments of the wreck. In excavating in the bank by the Old Mill some of the bricks which were lost in unloading the vessel, are still dug up.

"The vane upon the eastern end of the church, bearing the monogram 'VF' is believed to be the same one which was originally placed there by the builder of the church, Vredryck Flypse. It is certain that he had recorded this as a brand-mark for himself and all his plantation in the county of Westchester, at an early date. I do not know whether the vane at the western end is of equal antiquity or not. Mr. Irving, with his gentle humor, cannot resist making the quiet, not ill-natured remark that these two vanes, like most ecclesiastical vanes, usually point in contrary directions. The bell, which swings in the belfry-still, was cast to order in Holland. It is richly ornamented and bears the following inscription: 'Si Deus pro nobis quis contra nos, 1685.' The communion table and silver service were ordered from Holland at the same time. The table, which is an extension table, is of massive oak inlaid with ebony, and the beakers are of solid silver. This table and service are still in use by the First Reformed Church. The baptismal bowl used to be placed in a socket or bracket which extended out from the pulpit. It may be added that the one beaker bearing the name of Catherine Van Cortlandt, the baptismal bowl, the communion table and a damask cloth of specified dimensions were given by will of Mrs. Philipse, in 1730, to her son-in-law, Adolph Philipse, 'in trust to and for the congregation of the Dutch Church, erected at Philipsburgh, by my husband, deceased, according to the Synod of Dort.'

"There are only two or three things that give us any idea how the original church, the church which was altered after the Revolutionary War, looked on the inside. It is quite plain that the original seats had no backs to them. In the gallery may still be seen two or three of these seats. They are of heavy oak, and in the bottom are holes which show how the stanchions which supported them were mortised into them. The sturdy Dutchmen of the good old times disdained any support for the back as he listened with the greatest edification to a sound doctrinal sermon one or two hours long. After the Revolution, with the advent of a feebler generation, there appeared the symptoms of an enervating luxury, and these hard oak seats were exchanged for narrow soft pine ones, without any cushion, and with high straight backs. In the year 1837, these were replaced by the present seats in which a man was supposed to sink down into the lap of luxury, but which some in these degenerate days think are only fit for a church that is militant, and that means to be militant and through suffering to become triumphant.

"It is evident that the pulpit always was where it is now, for on either side of it were what were called the thrones. These were seats elevated a little above the level of the others and covered with a rich curtain, and were meant for the especial use of the family of the Lord of the Manor. It is said that Lord Philipse occupied the one, and his wife the other. We can imagine the scene on any Sunday before the Revolutionary War, when the descendants of the first Lord of the Manor sat up on their thrones regarded with deference by the Dominie in the pulpit, and with awe by the humble, hardy men and women who sat down below on the hard seats which had no backs. After the war the minds of the people had undergone a change; they felt more the equality of all, and the thrones and rich awnings were rudely torn down, and seats were made in their place for the good elders and deacons.

"Two other things I think we are sure of concerning the manner of construction of the original church—that is, the windows and door. It is probable that when the alterations were made, in 1837, these were as they were in the beginning. The windows were not Gothic as now, but were square, small in size, and with small panes of glass. Their sills must have been at least seven feet from the floor, and the men were accustomed to put their hats on these sills for safe-keeping during the services. The windows were guarded by heavy iron cross-bars, which protected the people from the Indians or other enemies. The door was originally, as has already been said, where the southwest window now is, as is proved by the little yellow bricks which now remain in the structure, running down from the present window. Over the door was a little roof or canopy.

"I do not know that there is anywhere a description of the church as it was in 1837, and as it had been from the time of the Revolution. For the benefit of those who are to come after, I give it as I have received it from those who were very familiar with its appearance. Captain Odell, our fellow-citizen, now over ninety years old, says he has heard that the road once ran to the east,—that is, in the rear

of the church. This gets some color of probability from the fact that the Hollanders had a great love of putting the gable end of a building toward the street, and, also, from the fact that in the cemetery near the Delavan monument there are the remains of a redoubt which once commanded the valley of the Pocantico and which very possibly was on or near the old road. At a later time the road crossed the stream, not where it now does, but some distance to the east of the present bridge. The abutments of this old bridge may still be seen, and it was over this bridge that Ichabod Crane and the Headless Horseman took their fearful ride. Then the road bent to the left, and came by the south side of the church at some little distance from it. At a point where now the sidewalk begins to rise, the people left the road and came into the yard to the door at the southwest corner of the building. There were two galleries in the building, one on the west and the other on the north side, connected with each other. That on the north side came up to the first window from the pulpit. It was two seats deep, and here the choir were accustomed to sit and sing. From the small size of the church one imagines that this north gallery and the high pulpit must have been very near neighbors. In 1837 this gallery was removed. Let me turn aside for a moment to introduce what Irving says about the singing of Ichabod Crane. He was the leader of the choir, but according to the story did not occupy the north gallery.

"It was a matter of no little vanity to him, on Sundays, to take his station in front of the church-gallery, with a band of chosen singers; where, in his own mind, he completely carried away the palm from the parson. Certain it is his voice resounded above all the rest of the congregation; and there are peculiar quavers still to be heard in that church, and which may even be heard half a mile off, quite to the opposite side of the mill-pond, on a still Sunday morning, which are said to be legitimately descended from the nose of Ichabod Crane.' It may not be known to every one that Ichabod Crane was a real character. The man who stood for this portrait was Jesse Merwin, a friend of Irving's, and whom he used to visit when he was a pedagogue in the village of Kinderhook. (Bolton's Hist., vol. i. p. 533.)

"But now let us go on with the description of the church. The gallery at the west end was not at the beginning so deep as at present, and the entrance to this and the other gallery was made in this way. There was no hall or stairs or door in the west end, as now, but from the middle of the interior of the church, a little in front of the gallery, steps rose to a platform against the western wall under the gallery, where the door now is and where a window then was. This platform was not high enough from the floor for one to stand under. From this the steps turned sharply around and descended to the level of the gallery; from the top of the stairs one could go off into the connecting north gallery.

"The first pulpit was about the height of the present one. It was an octagon in shape, was doubtless brought from Holland, and was large enough to accommodate only one man. It was set upon a standard, about nine inches across, and approached by a stairs from the North side. We could well have endured most of the changes, if only this old pulpit had been left untouched. It is affirmed by eye witnesses that the sounding-board was about five feet above the pulpit; was a hexagon in shape and was made of white-oak. The pulpit was set against the rear wall, and at the back of it, a little above the minister's head, was a peg, upon which he was accustomed to hang his hat; but as it was a mere man's hat, or a man's mere hat, it was of no consequence, and probably the worship of the most frivolous girl was not disturbed by its fashion. When the church was altered, the pulpit was bought by Mr. Peter Augustus See, who had a small book-case made from the mahogany wood there was in it.

"The ceiling of the church was of boards, painted white, and tradition tells how Dominic Dubois took a heavy cold the first Sunday he preached in the church, because some of the boards over the Southwest window had been allowed to get loose and fall off. Two solid oak beams, a foot square, ran across the inside of the building, North and South, and resting right on the top of the stone walls. One was between the second and third windows and the other right above the pulpit. To this latter the sounding-board was hung. The rod by which this sounding-board was suspended is still to be seen in one of the closets of the old Church.

"The pheebe birds used to build their nests on these transverse beams, and Mrs. Eliza Ann See, who died recently in her ninety-third year, has told me that they sometimes kept up a great chattering during the service, and that she has seen one of them perch itself on the edge of the sounding-board, cock its head to one side and look down at Dominic Smith, while he was preaching, as if it wondered what under the canopy that man was doing down there. Such a spectacle must have been highly entertaining to the children. Something like this the Psalmist

had seen beneath the eaves or by the smoking altars of the stately temple in Jerusalem when he wrote, 'The sparrow hath found an house, and the swallow a nest for herself, where she may lay her young, even thine altars, O Lord of hosts.'

"There was no chimney in the church until the alterations were made, about fifty years ago. Before that time the pipe went from a long stove, just outside the railing, in front of the pulpit, North and South, through a pane of glass in either side-window. The smoke was something dreadful, an incense painful to eyes and lungs, and which could not have been endured by congregations less devout than were those of the good days of old. Men now living have told me how Capt. Abraham Storms rose one Sunday and said he had sold the old stove for twelve shillings and had bought a new one for six dollars, and it would be necessary to take a collection to make the difference. This religious exercise was repeated for two or three Sundays before the necessary amount was raised. Farmers came with foot-stoves and with bricks, which last they heated before service. If the bricks became cold before the service was concluded, which might easily be, for the minister was never brief, they went right up to the stove, in the middle of the sermon, and heated them again. It is said that the people, especially in the summer-time, remained seated on benches without until the minister came, when they rose and followed him into the church like a flock of sheep. It was his custom when he came into the church to stand for a moment at the foot of the pulpit-stairs, one hand holding his hat, while the other was raised in silent prayer, before he ascended the pulpit. When seated there he selected the passage of scripture which was to be read, and then handed the Bible down to the clerk, who read the chapter to the people. I believe this clerk was also the preacher. On communion Sundays the table was drawn out to its full length, within the railing, and the people sat down around it in successive companies. The minister made an address to each table-full. As they came to the table the people would lift the edges of the cloth and deposit under it the six-pence or other sum, which was to be used only for the purchase of bread and wine for the sacrament. At noon there was an hour's intermission between the services. During this hour the people ate their lunch, and, possibly, if they were not very good, they gossiped a little. Old Caesar, a colored man, came from the Saw-Mill River valley and sold cakes and home-made beer in this intermission. This was in Dominic Jackson's time, at the beginning of this century. There was more excuse for this than there would be now, for some of the people came from long distances, from Kensico and Unionville and White Plains. A great many young men and young women came on horse-back to church. There was a grove of half an acre or an acre of locust-trees down on the shores of the mill pond, where the horses were tied, and here the rustic swains exhibited their dexterity and gallantry in assisting the buxom, rosy-cheeked Dutch girls in dismounting. Who can tell what innocent flirting and love-making went on in that grove at this noon-tide hour of the summers of long ago; what thoughts took possession of young bosoms, which were not prompted by the Dominic's solemn sermon in the morning about the vanity of all things here below,—thoughts which effectually prevented them from hearing a single word of the eloquent afternoon sermon delivered in resounding Hollandish? Who can tell how often the services of the Dominic were demanded to complete the work begun on those Sunday noons? Gone are the locust-trees, gone are the young men and maidens, gone, too, are the Dominies, but that touch of nature makes us all akin. Only once more must I quote Irving, as he pictures his hero Ichabod, in this hour between services. 'Our man of letters was peculiarly happy in the smiles of all the country damsels. How he would figure among them in the church-yard, between services, on Sundays! gathering grapes for them from the wild vines that overrun the surrounding trees, reciting for their amusement all the epitaphs on the tombstones, or sauntering, with a whole bevy of them, along the banks of the adjacent mill-pond, while the more bashful country lumpkins hung sheepishly back, envying his superior elegance and address.'

"The many references to Mrs. Catharina Philips show how thoroughly she was interested in the church. There is special reference to the fact that she frequently defrayed the expenses of bringing the minister, when he came several times a year, for about twenty years, from his home in Hackensack to officiate in the old church. When she died she was buried in a vault under the floor of the church. The story runs that when, some years ago, the floor was torn up for repairs, two antiquarians appeared in the neighborhood and were exceedingly anxious to see the final resting-place of this woman. A suspicion was aroused that they were more anxious to see the silver plate upon her coffin. Before night set in the workmen had arranged that as much of the weight of the floor as possible should rest forever on her tomb.

"The first time that English words were used in administering the

rite of baptism was on the 25th of September, 1785. The child baptized was Lovine, daughter of Solomon Hauws and Lovine Hammon, and the officiating clergyman was the Rev. Stephen Van Voorhees. The use of the English words gave great offense, and all the people cried out against the innovation. Hardly anything contributed more to stunt the growth of the Dutch church in this country than its clinging so tenaciously to the Dutch language when all the world around was using English.

"There was long a tradition that a hole had been made in the ball above the belfry by a British musket-ball. A sexton connected with this church went up one day to examine. He found the hole, but it faced the Southeast, away from the road as it now runs. So, with much labor, he screwed the ball around in order that the hole might face the present road, ignorant of the fact that the road once ran south and east of the church. He was not the first man who has twisted his facts to make them conform to his theory of history.

"The stories which are aloft and which have never been recorded concerning the peculiarities or traits of the different ministers cannot, of course, go back much beyond the present century. Some of them are of small importance and are only entertaining as gossip.

"The Rev. Thomas G. Smith was the pastor for thirty years. In manners and dress he was the precise opposite of his predecessor, the Rev. John F. Jackson. He has been described as covered with snuff from head to foot. He had a great affliction in a termagant wife, who sometimes locked him in the house when it was time for him to go to church, and the waiting flock wondered why the shepherd did not appear. Sometimes, while he was preaching, she would enjoy herself by driving up and down the road. When she came to church she always carried a pillow. And she was loud and unceasing in her complaints to the church and its officers of the faults and shortcomings of her husband. This good-humored, able-bodied man, with his slovenly dress, for which she was perhaps in part responsible, seemed to bear it all with a good deal of equanimity. He was very popular and crowds came to hear him preach. He was a Scotchman, with a Scotchman's love of humor. Sometimes he preached at the house of a Mr. Odell, who lived in Abbottsford, below Irvington, and in giving out the notice of his intention to preach in this place, he would designate the man as 'Mr. Odell, the father of all the Odells.' His tomb is in the rear of the old church."

After the Old Dutch Church of Sleepy Hollow, and its continuation in the First Reformed Church of Tarrytown, whose history has already been sketched in the preceding pages, the next oldest church now within the corporate limits of North Tarrytown is the Methodist Protestant Church, whose present house of worship is on Beekman Avenue.

THE METHODIST PROTESTANT CHURCH was organized as early at least as 1834. Unfortunately, there are no records attainable, and it is difficult to ascertain the date with certainty, but it is learned from some old printed minutes of the conference that a pastor, the Rev. John S. Ambler, was appointed in 1834, which implies, of course, that the church was already in existence. The first church building occupied for public worship stood west of the railroad track on Lower Main Street, leading to the Point Dock, and near the hotel now known as Democratic Hall. The congregation afterwards removed to a small building on the southeast corner of Cortlandt Street and College Avenue. Later still they removed to the building on the south side of Cedar Street, west of Cortlandt; and finally, when St. Mark's Episcopal Church removed into its new edifice on Broadway in 1868, the Methodist Protestant congregation purchased their church building on Beekman Avenue, and soon after removed into it, where they have worshipped ever since. The church has a membership of one hundred and twenty-five, with one hundred

scholars in the Sabbath-school. Its present pastor is the Rev. R. S. Hulsart.

ST. TERESA'S ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH.—The construction of the Hudson River Railroad first brought a sufficient number of Roman Catholic immigrants to Tarrytown to warrant the Rev. Father Ryan, of Yonkers, in 1850, in erecting the place into a mission. He celebrated the first Mass, it is believed, at the residence of Patrick Fitz-Patrick, in Cedar Street, North Tarrytown. In 1850 and 1851, Father Leguais, S. J., came up from St. John's College at Fordham, then recently established, to attend to this new Catholic mission. He gathered his congregation in a not very spacious room in the house of Mrs. Cain, in "Brick-Yard Row." Afterwards the little flock worshipped in the residence of Patrick Donohoe, father of Mrs. Thomas Doyle, Jr., on Beekman Avenue, nearly opposite the district school. One room afforded ample space for all the worshippers.

Toward the end of 1851 the Rev. Thomas S. Preston, who had "gone over to Rome" with Cardinal Newman, the late Archbishop Bayley and others, and who is now Monsignor Preston, vicar-general of the archdiocese, became pastor of the Catholic Church at Yonkers, and by him an effort was made to erect a mission church for the Tarrytown portion of his flock. Like all beginnings, the effort met opposition. Washington Irving headed the list of subscribers with one hundred dollars. Father Preston's zeal, however, overcame the obstacles, and late in 1851 he purchased a piece of ground, one hundred by one hundred and twenty-five feet, on De Peyster Street, near Cortlandt, on which St. Teresa's Church now stands. In 1852 an imposing edifice, as the few parishioners then considered it, of fifty by thirty feet was erected. Hitherto Mass had been celebrated only once a month, and the rest of the time the congregation attended at Sing Sing, but in 1852 Father Preston celebrated Mass twice a month.

The first resident pastor was the Rev. John Hackett who took charge in 1858. He died, however, in 1863, and was succeeded the same year by Father Mark Murphy, a fine scholar, who served only fourteen months. During his pastorate the brick residence was purchased adjoining the church.

The present pastor is the Rev. Patrick Egan, who assumed the charge in August, 1864, and has served continuously ever since. Under his good management the large debt on the property has been cancelled, and it was through his efforts that the mission at Irvington was begun.

In 1868 it was found necessary to enlarge St. Teresa's Church edifice, but being unable to secure the lot in the rear, the space was economized and large transepts were built, one hundred by thirty-five feet, which more than doubled the size of the building.

Up to 1874 Mass had been celebrated only once on Sunday, but on Easter Sunday, 1874, two masses began to be celebrated every Sunday.

During the summer of 1874 the property on Beekman Avenue was purchased, one hundred and fifty by one hundred and twenty-five feet, making the entire church premises one hundred and fifty by two hundred and fifty feet. The "old part" of the church was raised two feet, and the whole much improved in its appointments. A beautiful new altar was presented by Carolan O'Brian Bryant, in memory of his late wife, a daughter of Mr. John Anderson, and Mr. Anderson himself presented a beautiful oil painting of the Crucifixion.

In May, 1875, the Rev. Joseph P. Egan was appointed assistant pastor by Cardinal McCloskey, the first clerical appointment, it is believed, that the cardinal made after his own elevation to the office.

The rectory on Beekman Avenue was built in the summer of 1876, at the personal expense of Father Egan, the pastor, and will remain a monument of his affection for his people.

St. Teresa's Total Abstinence Society was formed August 15, 1869, and has always labored for the extirpation of intemperance. It has about sixty members. In all there are about two hundred pledged members in the Total Abstinence Societies belonging to the church.

ST. MARK'S EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—In 1857, by the agency of the Rev. William Creighton, D.D., then rector of Christ Church, Tarrytown, a mission was established north of the Andre Brook, in what was then called Beekmantown, but which, since the date of its incorporation, in 1874, has been known as North Tarrytown. After a few years of prosperity, under the care of the Rev. Franklin Babbitt, the mission was temporarily suspended, owing, it is believed, to a complication of misunderstandings. Not more than six months had elapsed, however, before the Rev. Edmund Guilbert was appointed to take charge of the enterprise, and under his energetic management it again revived and prospered. His ministry began August 1, 1861, and on December 14, 1863, the mission was incorporated as a separate organization, under the name of St. Mark's Episcopal Church, with the Rev. Mr. Guilbert as its rector.

On February 6, 1864, the church building previously erected on Beekman Avenue, now owned and occupied by the Methodist Protestant Church, was purchased by the new organization from the rector, wardens and vestry of Christ Church, Tarrytown. The structure, however, after more than a year's trial, was found to be unsuited to the wants of the congregation, and it was resolved on May 2, 1865, that a new edifice be erected in a desirable location, and that the name of the church should be "The Memorial Church of Washington Irving."

On July 6, 1865, a lot was purchased on the northwest corner of Broadway and College Avenue, at a cost of thirty-four hundred dollars. Mr. James Renwick was selected as architect, and, on March 1, 1866,

the work of building was commenced. On July 5, 1866, the corner-stone was laid by the Right Rev. Horatio Potter, D.D., bishop of the diocese, and a spirited and impressive address was delivered by the Rev. Stephen H. Tyng, D.D., rector of St. George's Church, in New York City. On February 3, 1868, the church was so far completed as to admit of its being used for public worship, and on that day the congregation moved in and the first service was held. The total cost of the church was about eighty thousand dollars, and now, happily, after a long struggle, it is all paid.

The church has had a succession of four rectors, as follows: Rev. Edmund Guilbert, in charge from August 1, 1861, until December 14, 1863, during which time the enterprise was a mission under the auspices of Christ Church, Tarrytown; and from December 14, 1863, as rector, until July 1, 1876. Rev. Mytton Maury, D.D., until October 7, 1878. Rev. John F. Herrlich, until October 1, 1883. Rev. J. B. Jennings, who was called to the rectorship October 19, 1883, and resigned in October, 1885. The present rector is the Rev. Martin K. Schermerhorn, who entered upon his duties early in March, 1886.

ST. PAUL'S METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—St. Paul's Methodist Episcopal Church, of North Tarrytown, was organized May 19, 1873, by the election of John S. McLean, Charles Smith, David Silver, T. J. Lawrence and Edward T. Lovatt as its first board of trustees.

The late Rev. George N. Pratt was its first pastor, and this was his first charge. The congregation began to worship in what was then known as "Birdsall's Hall," on the southeast corner of Beekman Avenue and Washington Street. The lot on which the church edifice now stands was presented to the congregation by the late Mr. John Anderson.

On June 9, 1874, the corner-stone of the new building was laid by Bishop Edmund S. Janes, D.D., with appropriate religious services. Addresses were delivered by Bishops Simpson and Janes, and also by Dr. Deems, of New York City, and others.

On June 20, 1875, the lecture-room, on the ground-floor, was dedicated by Bishop Janes, assisted by the Rev. W. P. Abbott, D.D.

On June 3, 1878, the church itself was dedicated. It was an occasion of great interest, and the beauty of a June Sabbath added much to the general enjoyment. Bishop Matthew Simpson, D.D., who officiated, preached in the morning and dedicated the church. The Rev. Dr. Crawford, presiding elder, preached in the afternoon, and the Rev. C. H. Fowler, D.D., since bishop, preached in the evening.

The church has had five pastors, including the one now in charge, viz.: Rev. George N. Pratt, Rev. George Crook, D.D. (now professor in the Drew Theological Seminary, at Madison, New Jersey), Rev. Gideon Draper, D.D., Rev. George H. Cary, D.D., and Rev. J. Y. Bates.

The cost of the church edifice, exclusive of the lot and the church furniture, was \$32,488.80, on which there remains an indebtedness of four thousand dollars. Recently the trustees have purchased a parsonage opposite the church. The present membership is one hundred and thirty.

EDUCATION.—There are three private boarding and day-schools in North Tarrytown,—two for boys and young men and one for girls and young ladies. There is besides a large public school on Beekman Avenue, under the care of a principal, Mr. Nathan H. Du Mond, assisted by seven teachers,—two male and five female,—in which tuition is given at public expense to about five hundred and fifty children.

The private boarding and day-school for boys and young men, that has been for nearly half a century the most prominent and successful of its class, is the "Irving Institute." It was established in the spring of 1838 as a classical and commercial boarding-school. Its name is due to the interest manifested in the enterprise by Washington Irving. There is still in its archives a report of a committee of which Mr. Irving was chairman, testifying to its efficiency and value as a place for the education of the young. Its founder was the late William P. Lyon, under whose care it was conducted for fifteen years until 1853, when the charge of it was assumed by David S. Rowe, A.M., who had been one of the earlier principals of the Massachusetts State Normal School, at Westfield. After eighteen years of successful labor as principal, Mr. Rowe transferred the school in 1871 to the charge of Rev. A. Armagnac, Ph.D., and David A. Rowe, A.M., under whose management, as joint principals, it is now conducted. It has had more than two thousand students since it was established, many of whom afterwards graduated from some one or another of the principal colleges of the country, and entered the learned professions. Several have attained to eminence as professors in New York, Princeton and other seats of learning. A large number have become successful merchants, and some have won distinction in public life. The school occupies two commodious buildings in a delightful situation on elevated grounds, with Pocantico Street on the west and Howard Street on the north, and presents many desirable features in addition to the facilities it affords for acquiring a good education.

The other boarding and day-school for boys and young men occupies the large building on Beekman Avenue, near Broadway, known as the Archer Van Tassel house, and bears the name of "Starr's Military Institute of Tarrytown." It was first established in Yonkers, in April, 1854, as the "Yonkers Commercial and Collegiate Institute," by Nathaniel Winthrop Starr, a graduate of Yale College. The military system was introduced in 1857, since which time it has been known as "Starr's Military Institute." It was removed in 1874 to Port Chester, in charge of Oliver Winthrop Starr, son of its

founder, who had been connected with it from the time of its beginning in Yonkers. It was again removed in 1883 to Tarrytown, first into the large building in Windle Park, south of Main Street, and afterwards into the building where it now is, in the midst of ample grounds, on Beekman Avenue. Oliver Winthrop Starr is still its principal, with the advantage of having his father's co-operation as counselor and adviser. Its aim has been, like that of all kindred institutions, to prepare the young for the varied positions and activities of life, and the efforts put forth have been attended with a gratifying success. Its teachers and pupils worship in the Episcopal Church, though it was never designed to be a sectarian school.

Another school, which for over eleven years was prominent and did a good work for the cause of education in the community, was the Jackson Military Institute, held in the large building on Beekman Avenue, directly opposite the head of Cortlandt Street. It is the same building, enlarged and improved, that was occupied by the Irving Institute at the beginning of its career. The Jackson Military Institute was founded in Danbury, Conn., in 1857, by the Rev. Frederick J. Jackson, A.M., who removed it to North Tarrytown in April, 1869. Here, as in Danbury, it continued to flourish under his experienced management until June, 1880, when, owing to the death of his estimable wife and to the impaired health of himself and some of his family, he felt constrained to close it. A large number of young men were trained in this school for business and professional life. Of those who had been under its tuition at least ten were in the Union Army during the War of the Rebellion, and three of them lost their lives. Frank Brush was killed at Fort Fisher, Isaac Knapp fell in the Wilderness, and Leander Root was killed, though it is not known where. Commander Francis W. Dickens, of the United States Navy, was prepared in this school for the Naval Academy at Annapolis.

The Rev. Mr. Jackson died at the house opposite the Wayside Chapel, between Nyack and Piermont, on the west side of the Hudson River, on Saturday, December 26, 1885. Funeral services were held in the Second Reformed Church of Tarrytown, on Tuesday, the 29th, after which his remains were borne, by those who had formerly been his pupils, to their resting place in Sleepy Hollow Cemetery, to be laid beside those of his beloved wife, Hannah Maria Gleason, who died on Monday, October 28, 1878.

HOME INSTITUTE.—The only boarding and day school in North Tarrytown for girls and young ladies is known as the "Home Institute." It is under the care of the Misses Metcalf, by whom it was established in 1867. The school building is situated on College Avenue, immediately west of St. Mark's Episcopal Church, and it has facilities for the accommodation of eighteen boarders and twenty day scholars. The course of study is that usually adopted in schools

of the kind. There is, however, a special course for those intending to enter Vassar or any other collegiate institution of that grade.

The public School of North Tarrytown, known as "Union Free School District No. 1," occupies the large brick building on the northeast corner of Pocantico Street and Beekman Avenue. It was organized as a Union Free School, July 14, 1856, with the following board of education: Rev. Abel T. Stewart, Amos R. Clark, Simon Shindler, Joseph H. Vail, Rev. Charles Burd and Wm. E. Van Tassel. The Rev. Mr. Burd having removed from the place, David S. Rowe, A.M., principal of the Irving Institute, was chosen to fill the vacancy. On April 21, 1859, it was resolved to purchase the present school site for the sum of fifteen hundred dollars, and the sum of four thousand dollars in addition was appropriated to the building of a new school house. The edifice having been completed, it was opened on January 3, 1860, with appropriate public exercises, in which several neighboring clergymen and prominent citizens took a part.

On November 14, 1876, the sum of seven thousand dollars was appropriated to building an addition to the school-house, to be thirty by seventy feet. The building now affords a seating capacity for five hundred and fifty pupils, and the room is all occupied.

On November 28, 1876, the school was placed under the visitation of the Regents of the University, and in June, 1877, the advanced pupils were examined in the Regents' questions by a committee acting in their name. Before the opening of the new building in 1860 it had a succession of four principals. Since then it has had a succession of twelve principals, the last of whom is Mr. Nathan H. Du Mond, who was appointed March 1, 1876, and still occupies the position. There are at present, in addition, seven teachers—two male and five female.

THE GENERAL STORMS MANSION—INTERESTING RELICS.—In Cortlandt Street, North Tarrytown, with its seven huge pillars supporting the roof of the piazza fronting the south, is the residence of the late Brigadier-General Henry Storms, so long connected with the military affairs of the State, and so untiring in his efforts to gather up and to preserve all memorials of American patriotism that might tend to foster the love of country, especially in the young. General Storms was born, of Huguenot extraction, in the city of New York on June 4, 1795, and died in North Tarrytown April 11, 1874. So early were his military tendencies developed that in the war of 1812, when he was only seventeen, his father had great difficulty in restraining him, an only son, from entering the ranks and marching to the defense of his country. Later on he held a succession of public trusts, among them that of assistant alderman from the Twelfth Ward of New York City from 1826 to 1827, commissary-general of the State from 1842 to 1848, and inspector of State prisons from 1849 to 1852.

It was while in the last-named position that he rendered important aid toward the erection of the monument on the spot where Andre was captured. (See under the head of Greenburgh.)

During Lafayette's visit to America, in 1824, General Storms, then captain of the First Horse Artillery, escorted the nation's honored guest a considerable distance on his way from New York to Boston. Among the relics which he warmly cherished was the flag borne by the military escort he commanded on that occasion. He had also three swords which he valued for their associations. One was a sword worn by Marshal Massena, so renowned, in the wars of Napoleon. Another was that worn by General Scott at the battle of Lundy's Lane. The third was found on the field after the battle of Plattsburgh. Many cannon, guns and Revolutionary trophies were secured for public collection through his instrumentality. Among the curiosities in his late home is a chair, still in good preservation, which was part of the first cargo from Buffalo that ever came through the Erie Canal, after it was formally opened on October 26, 1825, with celebrations and the firing of cannon along the route on the passage of the boat "Seneca Chief," bearing Governor De Witt Clinton and his suite from Buffalo to Albany.

But the most interesting of all the relics gathered by General Storms is an autograph letter of Washington, in excellent condition, which has never yet been printed so far as the writer is aware. It is not in Sparks' collection, nor in any other he has been able to find. It is written on a large unruled sheet of the size of foolscap, and occupies the first and second pages. The third was originally left blank, but on it is now indorsed the statement—

"This original letter of General Washington, presented by Hon. Frederick A. Tallmadge, Recorder of the City of New York, to Brigadier-General Henry Storms, on the 25th day of November, 1845, (Evacuation Day) on the occasion of the Dedication of the new Trophy Building at the Arsenal New York City.

"HENRY STORMS, *Brigadier-General.*"

The fourth page is blank, except the direction and the endorsement, apparently of the person who received it. When folded up in letter form, the address on the back evidently in Washington's hand writing, reads thus:

"MAJOR TALLMADGE, at Ridgfield.

"Go, Washington."

It is endorsed on the fourth page,—

"Genl Washington's Letter, July 25, 1779, recd July 28, 1779."

General Storms had the letter spread out and framed in mahogany between two plates of glass, with a silk border of red, white and blue, so that both sides of the leaf could be easily read and examined. The letter is now the property of General Storms' daughter, Miss Eliza M. Storms, who has kindly allowed a copy to be taken and published in this history. The following is an exact transcript of the letter:

WEST POINT, JULY 25, 1779.

Sir, All the white Ink I now have—indeed all that there is any prospect of getting soon—is sent in phial No. 1, by Col. Webb. The liquid in No. 2 is the counterpart, and brings to light what is wrote by the first, by wetting [the Paper] with a fine hair brush. These you will send to C—, just as soon as possible, & I beg that no mention may ever be made of your having received such liquids from me, or any one else. In all cases & at all times, this prudence & circumspection is necessary, but it is indispensably so now, as I am informed that Governor Tryon has a preparation of the same kind, or something similar to it, which may lead to a detection if it is ever known that a matter of the sort has passed through my hands.

I beg that you will use every possible exertion through C—and other channels, to ascertain with a degree of precision the enemy's Corps, and how they are disposed of. I wish to know where every Regiment lies, in order [that I may] regulate my own movements with more propriety. To learn with certainty what Corps are on Staten Island—Long Island, and on what part of it. The City of York. Between the City & the bridge—at Philips' or Mile square, &c., would be extremely useful to me at all times, but more so at this.

I am informed that in the afternoon of the 21st, 40 Sail of Vessels passed Eastward by Norwalk. I have also received advice that a number of Troops embarked at Dobbs' Ferry, & fell down the River on the 22nd. In short, that General Clinton & Sir George Collier were with this Fleet. But these things not being delivered with certainty, rather perplexes than informs the judgment. I have heard nothing further of either of these Fleets—nor do I know whether the one in the Sound had Troops on board or not. Let me hear from you soon on the subject of this letter.

"I am Sir,

"Ye most obed^t Serv.,

"G. Washington.

"Majr Talmadge, 2nd Regt. L. Dragoons."

The passages in brackets are interlined in the original letter.

Who was C. referred to as a "channel" of information? Could it have been Enoch Crosby the Westchester spy, of whom Cooper has written under the name of Harvey Birch? The initial would answer for him, certainly.

MANUFACTORIES.

There are three manufactories in North Tarrytown, which following the order of the time when they were established, are: 1. "The Pocantico Tool and Machine Works;" 2. "The George W. Cross Blank Book Association, Limited;" and 3. "The Rand Drill Company."

THE POCANTICO TOOL AND MACHINE WORKS.—The proprietor of the Pocantico Tool and Machine Works is Mr. Charles Brombacher. The oldest of the two or three buildings connected with his establishment was used in 1858 as a bone factory for the preparation of fertilizers, but in 1868 Mr. Brombacher bought the place of Mr. Walter Lister, who, up to that time, had for a number of years been its owner. The works are situated directly north of Messrs. S. J. Sackett & Co.'s marble yard, about one-eighth of a mile up the Pocantico from the bridge, below the old Dutch Church of Sleepy Hollow. Mr. Brombacher's residence is in a romantic spot, east of the stream, where the valley of the Pocantico widens out a little, with high bluffs on either side, and abundance of trees, very near to where the old Ichabod Crane Bridge originally stood, and where the old Revolutionary road crossed the Pocantico river. On the

west side, toward the cemetery, a little farther north, are the two large brick shops where the tools and machinery are manufactured. They are reached by a rural, shaded bridge, which at this point spans the narrow river.

The articles produced here consist of all kinds of tools and machinery that are used in making tin and sheet metal goods of every variety. They are sent all over the United States, Mexico, South America, and almost all over the world. There are said to be only two establishments of the kind, besides this, in the country. This employs about thirty men, who are rendered equal to about one hundred by the perfection of the machinery. The employees are principally German and French. For about ten months in the year the machinery is driven by water, equal to sixty horsepower, and for two months, especially in the dry season, by steam. The capital invested is about seventy-five thousand dollars, and the business amounts to about one hundred thousand dollars per year.

THE GEORGE W. CROSS BLANK BOOK ASSOCIATION.—The George W. Cross Blank Book Association, Limited, is situated on the east side of Washington Street, between Chestnut Street and Beekman Avenue. The building is forty-five by two hundred feet in dimensions, and two stories high. The establishment began its operations in June, 1885, making a specialty of blank books. It has a trade extending to every State in the Union, and even to South America. It employs about forty hands, for the most part girls, and its business amounts in value to about sixty thousand dollars per year. The works are owned and operated under the direction of a stock company. The manager in charge is Mr. George W. Cross, and the treasurer, Mr. Warren Chapin.

THE RAND DRILL COMPANY.—The works of the Rand Drill Company are situated within the corporate limits of North Tarrytown, on the south shore of the cove or bay formed where the Pocantico empties into the Hudson, and directly on the river bank. The headquarters and principal manufactory have hitherto been in Forty-seventh Street, New York City, with a branch office in Thirty-fourth Street, but it is now contemplated to remove the establishment to North Tarrytown. The company began to build in April, 1885, and at the present time (in April, 1886) has a large building completed, of the dimensions of two hundred by sixty feet, with temporary buildings near it for boilers, machinery, etc.

The Rand Drill Company make what is called the Percussion Rock Drill. The machine that does the drilling, and thus supersedes the old-fashioned drilling by hand, is run by steam if the work is on the open surface, and by compressed air if in a mine or any other subterranean excavation. The Rand drill differs from the Diamond Drill in the respect that while the Rand Drill is used for blasting and drills a hole only ten or twelve feet deep for a charge of powder or other explosives, the Diamond Drill is

used in prospecting for mines, and not only drills to a far greater depth, but brings up with it, for examination as to its quality, the rock, earth and sand into which it penetrates. It is said that about sixty per cent. of the drills used in constructing the new Croton Aqueduct are of the Rand pattern.

The Rand Works belong to a stock company, of which Mr. Addison C. Rand is president, Mr. J. R. Rand secretary and treasurer, and Mr. N. W. Horton superintendent. A short railroad track has been laid through the sand-hill, southwestward from the Hudson River Railroad, to facilitate the transportation of freight by the cars to and from the manufactory.

TARRYTOWN HEIGHTS.—Tarrytown Heights is the name of a hamlet in the township of Mount Pleasant, on the old Bedford road, and of a station on the New York City and Northern Railroad, about two miles north of the Tarrytown Station and twenty-three miles from One Hundred and Fifty-fifth Street, New York City. Streets have been laid out and a few buildings erected near the station, forming the nucleus of a village. There is also a commodious and pleasant summer hotel about half a mile from the railroad. The place is well-situated upon the western slope of the ridge known as Buttermilk Hill, which just there forms a small plateau, with higher ground around it. Up to 1860 it was almost entirely a farming district, sometimes spoken of as "the Kaakout neighborhood." But, between 1860 and 1870, several farms were sold for high prices, and there seemed a tendency, among wealthy people from the city, to purchase here and to make for themselves homes. The late James E. Mallory (afterwards killed in a terrible railroad accident while going to Long Branch) may be said to have given the first impulse to the development of the place. Mr. Louis Roberts also was prominent and enterprising in the effort. The Tarrytown Land Company was formed to advance the undertaking, but the financial collapse in business circles, and the heavy fall in the market value of land, defeated its aims and the company failed. The locality has many attractions as a summer resort to those who desire the quiet of the country and at the same time wish to have facilities for easy communication with the city. The population at present is small, not over one hundred and fifty altogether; but it is not unlikely, judging from all indications, that in a few years it will be much increased.

When the railroad was first constructed (then called the New York and Montreal Railroad) the plan was to approach the Heights over a somewhat long trestle-work, about eighty feet high; and the lateral valley, setting in westward from the Nepperhan or Saw-Mill River toward the eastern border of Tarrytown, was actually bridged over at great cost and a railroad track prepared. But it was a frightful-looking structure, more suggestive of broken bones than of safety, and, the railroad having passed into other

hands, the company so changed the direction of its track as to make it sweep westward around the southern side of the basin toward Tarrytown, and then gradually to ascend the extreme western and northern sides by a comparatively easy grade to Tarrytown Heights. The high trestle-bridge, which had for some time stood as a *tete noir* or *monstrum horrendum* to all spectators, was then torn down.

The trains on the New York City and Northern Railroad began to run over what is called the "Tarrytown Loop," in November, 1881, and stages were soon provided to convey all passengers between the station and Tarrytown village, either going or coming, free of charge.

The higher elevations around Tarrytown Heights are said to be about five hundred feet above the level of the Hudson. Already a number of fine residences are found in the neighborhood, among which may be mentioned that of Chief Justice Noah Davis, Grosvenor P. Lowery, Esq., a prominent lawyer, who bought the old Andrew See place; Colonel Church, of the *Army and Navy Gazette*; Mr. Lewis Roberts, Colonel Charles Stone, and that of the late John B. Sardy.

Further on toward Tarrytown, on the Bedford Road, are the attractive places of Mr. J. H. Diggle, and of George W. Parsons, Esq., and Stephen D. Law, Esq., the two latter well-known lawyers, having their offices in New York.

Mr. Parsons bought the old Abraham D. Stephens place in the summer of 1866, and has improved the house and premises at large cost and with excellent taste. His grounds are quite extensive, and the view from the elevation on which the house is built is particularly fine. Within the enclosure of the grounds belonging to Mr. W. B. Wadsworth, south of Mr. Parsons' house and between the two railroad stations of Tarrytown Heights and of Tarrytown, is the striking well-known eminence that received from the old Dutch settlers the name of "*Kijkuit*," but which afterward became corrupted into "*Kaakout*." The name was derived from the Hollandish noun "*Kijk*, look or peep," related to the verb "*Kijken*, to look or to peep," and the preposition "*Uit*, out of or from," the whole meaning "*Lookout*," a name similar to that of Lookout Mountain, in Tennessee, where Hooker fought his battle above the clouds, or to that of "Cape Lookout," the high point one hundred feet above the sea, on the coast of North Carolina. Kaakout is said to be by measurement four hundred and ninety-eight feet above the level of the Hudson River, and next to the highest hill in the county. It was used by those engaged in the United States Coast Survey in making their observations. The pilots of the Lower Hudson are also said to have been accustomed to steer their course in to the Tarrytown dock by keeping Kaakout as a landmark in their eye. The view from this hill is magnificent.

Mr. Laws' place, known as "Glen Loch," is on the

opposite side of the Bedford Road in a northwest direction from Mr. Parsons'. His grounds also are quite large, extending about one thousand one hundred feet along the Bedford Road, and thence down to the old Sleepy Hollow road, along which they extend about one thousand seven hundred feet. They command many fine views up and down the Valley of the Hudson. Mr. Law purchased his place of Mr. John W. Patterson, of New York, in 1869. The house was an old one when he took it, but he has made great improvements in it, that have added vastly to the convenience and comfort of its occupants. It is believed that the old school house, in

premises from the west. Mrs. See said the house was built into the bank behind it, the earth forming the back or rear wall, so to speak, of the building, and the sides and front being constructed of logs. Mrs. See spoke from a personal knowledge of the situation, for, as she stated, she attended school in that old school house herself.

West of the Sleepy Hollow road is the high hill, known as Prospect Hill, which rises abruptly from the vale, having its eastern sides adorned with a profusion of small but singularly regular and plume-like cedars.

This hill extends as a high ridge between Sleepy Hollow and the Pocantico Brook, or River. It is one



SLEEPY HOLLOW BRIDGE.¹

which Ichabod Crane, of "Headless Horseman" memory, taught the youngsters of his day, was situated on the western limit of this place, along the Sleepy Hollow Road, which bounds it. Mrs. Eliza Ann See, mother of the late James S. See, Esq., who died November 15, 1883, at the advanced age of 92 years, frequently stated, in giving reminiscences of former days, that the old school house stood on the east side of the Sleepy Hollow Road, just north of where is now the gate of entrance to Mr. Law's

of the highest points indeed within the corporate limits of North Tarrytown and reaches, by measurement, an elevation of three hundred and thirty-seven feet above the level of the river. The summit of the hill is nearly in the centre of lands, amounting to about forty acres, belonging to the beautiful country-seat of Henry L. Douglas, Esq., which bears the name of "Long View." From many points, but especially from the observatory erected on the top of the hill southeast of the mansion, the view of the Hudson River and the whole adjacent country, including Sleepy Hollow on the east, and the Pocantico on the west, are superb. Mr. Douglas has taken great pains to render his home and its surroundings in every way pleasant and attractive.

The land here, like all the rest in this region, belonged to the old manor of Philipsburgh, which was forfeited to the State when its proprietor, Frederick

¹ From *Hudson River Illustrated*, copyright, 1875, by D. Appleton & Co.

Philipse, went over to the enemy during the Revolution. While the war was going on, this hill, now called Prospect Hill, was much resorted to as a point of observation, and Washington himself frequently repaired to it to make reconnoissances of the British ships of war as they moved up and down the river. There are indications, also, that the Indians had used it for some similar purpose long prior to the settlement of the Dutch.

Adjoining Mr. Douglas's premises on the north, are the lands of George S. Rice, Esq., of New York City. His estate, comprising something more than one hundred acres altogether, were formerly the property of the late James Bayles, of Thomas H. Purdy, of John W. Patterson and of Isaac R. and Gabriel Mead, and passed into the possession of Mr. Rice by purchase from 1866 to 1872. The place is situated in a scene of great rural beauty.

Touching the premises of Mr. Rice at its eastern end, is the high stone viaduct erected to make a way for the old Croton Aqueduct across the Pocantico River. The building of this viaduct is connected with an amusing anecdote concerning the late George Law and Washington Irving. During the progress of the work, under Mr. Law's supervision as contractor, Mr. Irving was a frequent visitor, and seemed to watch its successive advances with great interest. In this way he had frequent and prolonged conversations with Mr. Law as manager. Each found the other a very intelligent and agreeable person, but neither one knew who the other was.

One day they happened to be on the steamboat together coming up from New York to Tarrytown, and had another talk on the Pocantico viaduct, and on other topics that arose. While they were passing by Sunnyside at full speed, the steamer's bell began to ring. Mr. Law, jumping up, hastened to the captain and inquired what the bell was ringing for there. The captain answered it was to let Mr. Irving's coachman know that Mr. Irving was on board so that he might drive up in the carriage to meet him at the Tarrytown landing, and carry him to his home.

Mr. Law immediately said, "I wish you would point out Mr. Irving to me. I have a great admiration for him and his writings, and have always had a desire to see him." "Why, what do you mean?" said the captain. "I saw you sitting there and talking with Mr. Irving nearly all the way up the river."

Then for the first time, Mr. Law discovered that his agreeable and intelligent companion on the aqueduct was Washington Irving, whose delightful descriptions of Sleepy Hollow and the Pocantico have made this region famous and classical for all time.

On the southern slope of Prospect Hill is the pleasant home of Mr. Stephen H. Thayer, who has lately given to the world a volume of poems entitled "Songs of Sleepy Hollow, and other Poems," and also that of Mr. H. Andrews. Farther down, but west of Jones Avenue, is "Anderson Park," with its fine brick mansion



CROTON AQUEDUCT BRIDGE ACROSS THE POCANTICO.

and well-kept grounds. The house was built and, for a time, occupied by the late John Anderson, "the millionaire tobacconist." He was a great friend of Garibaldi, the Italian patriot and commander, and did much to assist and encourage him. He also gave Penikese Island to Professor Louis Agassiz for his School of Natural History, and fifty thousand dollars to endow it.

It is one of the privileges and duties of the historian to keep in remembrance and to transmit to later generations the names of those who have been the benefactors of their race and have deserved the praise of their fellow-men; and as a self-made man, as an example to the youth of our country who have lofty

aims, as a friend of human freedom and a willing and efficient helper to the noble men who risked both life and liberty in its cause, and as an enlightened supporter of the higher education which seeks to penetrate the deeper mysteries of nature and her works—in all of these John Anderson was a man worthy alike of praise and emulation.

William Anderson, his father, came from England under the auspices of Robert Fulton. In the second war with Great Britain he took an active part as an officer, and fell in battle in the year 1812. His son, who was born shortly after the father's death, was thus deprived of paternal care, and early in life began the career which soon led to fortune and gave him an honorable name among the merchants and manufacturers of the country. He was doubly blessed, not only in the increase of his pecuniary resources, but in being endowed with that frame of mind which willingly employs wealth in the interests of patriotism, science, art and humanity. The year 1860, which was for our nation ushered in by clouds which were destined to bring forth the storm of war, is noted also as the era that brought to modern Italy a freedom and a glory worthy of ancient Rome in her palmy days. The future liberator of Italy had been the acquaintance and the friend of Mr. Anderson while an exile from his native land and earning his daily bread by his daily labor. The news of the grand uprising was music to the ears of Garibaldi, and he was quickly upon the ocean on his voyage to the land which he hoped to free. His fellow-patriot, Avezzana, compelled by want of means and the "hostages to fortune," in the shape of his wife and children, to remain in this, to him, a foreign land, was, through the liberal aid of Mr. Anderson, enabled to join his chief, and with him to fight and win in the great struggle for Italian freedom. The sympathy of our nation was freely shown by the immense meeting of our citizens; and an address to the people of Italy, which was prepared under the direct supervision of the friend of Garibaldi and Avezzana, sent a thrill through the hearts of the lovers of freedom throughout the known world.

The heart that could so willingly contribute to the cause of liberty in a foreign land would not be likely to be unmindful of the call of his native country, when armed rebellion raised its hand to destroy the Union, for which his father fought and died. In the early days of the war, when it was believed that this State lacked the legal authority to raise a bonded fund for the support of the families of drafted men, it was Mr. Anderson who headed the subscription for a special loan of half a million; the influence of his example was instantly felt, and the loan was speedily raised. And when Jersey City could not legally provide for putting its contingent into the field, a gift of sixty thousand dollars, forwarded to the mayor, sent them on their way. In 1870, Mr. Anderson, relieved from business cares, resolved on foreign travel with

his wife, the ever active sympathizer with his plans. Together they trod the shores of Italy, now made free, visited Avezzana in Florence, and were the guests of Garibaldi in his island home.

After his return to his native land he purchased a tract of land at Tarrytown, and commenced the erection of the splendid mansion which was to become his home. It was at this time that the event occurred which must ever link his name with that of one of the greatest natural philosophers of modern times. In 1873 Prof. Louis Agassiz asked the Legislature of Massachusetts for aid in establishing a school for the instruction of teachers in natural history. The appeal was in vain. When the daily papers brought the news Mr. Anderson resolved at once to give the aid which the State refused to grant. The beautiful island of Penikese, with a sum of fifty thousand dollars as an endowment, was placed at the service of the great philosopher, and the institution was established which justly bore the name of the "Anderson School of Natural History."

In the fall of 1880 he resolved to go once more to Europe and visit his old friend, the liberator of Italy. Shortly after his arrival in Paris he was seized with a sudden illness, which terminated his useful life on the 22d of November. His remains were brought home to his native land, and laid to rest in his family tomb at Greenwood.

Mr. Anderson was twice married. By the first marriage there were six children—John C.; Fannie, wife of Judge George G. Barnard; Mary, wife of — Carr; Amanda, wife of C. O'Brian; and Laura, wife of — Appleton.

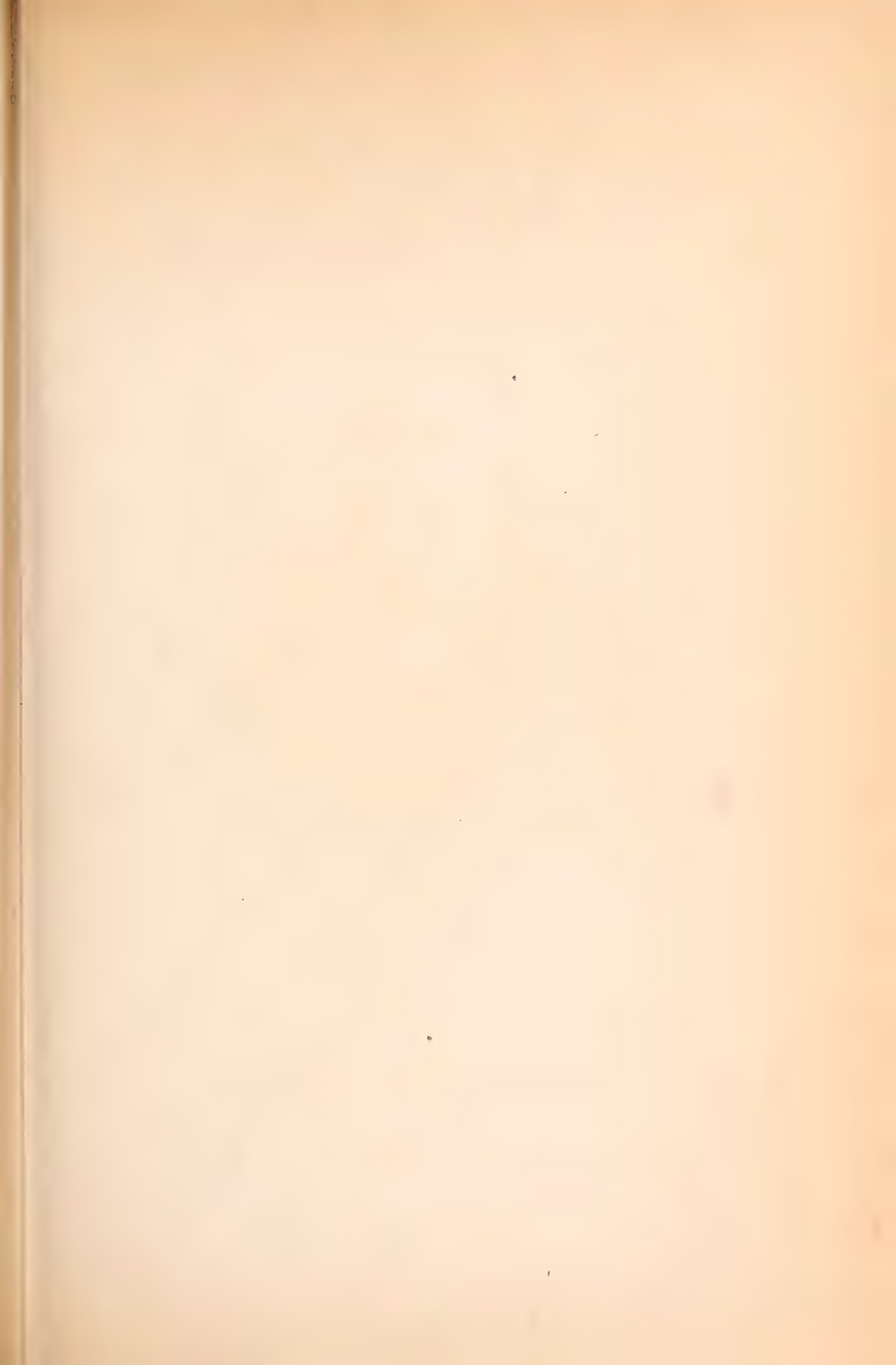
Mrs. Kate Anderson, his second wife, was the widow of James Conner, Esq., and daughter of Henry T. Irving, of Boston, a descendant of the same family as the famed author, Washington Irving, and on her mother's side is related to many of the noble families of Europe. Mrs. Anderson, by her former marriage, has one son, Stanley Conner, a sculptor of rising fame, and now in Europe devoted to his art.

Mr. Anderson had his peculiarities, but with them were connected many chivalric and generous dispositions. His benefactions to the Roman Catholic Church and to the Methodist Episcopal Church, both of North Tarrytown, are alluded to elsewhere. The writer had occasion to know something of these traits himself. One day when he was passing Mr. Anderson's place, on the way to a house where a poor man had just died,—leaving his wife and child literally penniless,—in order to arrange for the funeral, he met Mr. Anderson standing at his gate. In the brief conversation that ensued, he invited the writer into his house, but he excused himself as being in some haste, and, in reply to Mr. Anderson's inquiry, explained the reason. The errand, and the need of help to bury the dead man, were thus incidentally disclosed. Mr. Anderson at once, without waiting to be asked, said, "I will give something toward that," and, draw-



John Anderson







Andrew C. Thompson

ing from his vest pocket a roll of bills, he placed in the writer's hand the sum of twenty-five dollars.

"Anderson Park" is now owned and occupied by John Webber, Esq., who was Mr. Anderson's friend and executor.

On the west of the Pocantico River, from "Anderson Park" and the places above it, and also on the north from the Ichabod Crane Bridge, the point where the river turns toward the Hudson, but east of the old Post Road, now known as Broadway, stands the Old Dutch Church of Sleepy Hollow, with the burying ground adjacent. North of it, on the same side of the road, is the Sleepy Hollow cemetery, and beyond that, "Pocantico Grove," the summer residence of the late G. F. Sacchi. Still farther north, on the same side, are lands owned by Mrs. Anson G. Phelps, and the estate of the late William H. Aspinwall, the latter extending well up to where the old Croton Aqueduct crosses the road.

But between Broadway and the Hudson River on the west, there is the old Philipse Manor house, with the old mill just across the Pocantico, and thence northward there is a succession of fine residences with ample grounds around them, extending up to the dividing line, between the townships of Mount Pleasant and Ossining. The old Manor house is a relic of the past. No one knows exactly when it was built, probably between 1665 and 1685, but the man who built it evidently put it there to stay. Mr. William F. Minnerly, well known in Tarrytown as a builder, states that in 1864 he was employed to make some alterations in the old Manor-House. One was in taking down the chimney, which was very large. In the second story he found that a room about four feet square had been built in the chimney, to be used as a smoke-house for smoking meat. The number of bricks in this chimney was a marvel. They had all been brought from Holland, and landed on the north shore of the Pocantico, very near the old mill, one of the prominent objects on the manor. The portion of the chimney taken down was relaid with the bricks, five feet breast, sixteen inches deep, to the same height as before, and a new partition built, fifteen feet long and nine feet high. The remainder of the bricks that came out of the chimney—for, strange to say, there was a remainder, and a large one, too—Mr. Minnerly bought, and with them he filled in a new house twenty-two feet front, by twenty-eight feet deep and two stories high, and found them amply sufficient for the purpose. The bricks were so hard that when the masons who did the work wished to cut them, they were obliged to use a hatchet. In size each brick was an inch and a quarter thick, three and one half inches wide, and seven inches long.

The Manor-House and the grounds adjacent on the north and west, toward the Hudson River, as well as two other attractive houses on the premises, one of which is occupied in summer by Mr. Albert Kingsland, a son of the former owner, all belong to the

estate of Mr. A. C. Kingsland. His fine stone residence on the point or peninsula which here extends into the river, was built by Mr. Kingsland after he sold his place near Sunnyside to Mr. Edward S. Jaffray, in 1854. In this delightful retreat, surrounded by tall trees, between whose straight shafts one can sit upon the piazza and look off over the wide expanse of the Hudson with its miniature waves breaking just before him, Mr. Kingsland usually spent his summers, until he died, October 13, 1878.

Among the many able and distinguished gentlemen who have held high positions in the city of New York the name of no one is more identified with its growth and progress than that of Ambrose C. Kingsland. His father, Cornelius Kingsland, was a native of Passaic, N. J., but removed to New York shortly before the birth of his son, which occurred in 1804. At a very early age the death of his father deprived him of paternal care, and at the age of seventeen he began business with his brother, the firm bearing the name of D. & A. Kingsland. Their business as wholesale grocers was exceedingly prosperous, and to it they added the sperm oil trade. In this enterprise they were led to establish a line of ships to Liverpool, which was continued till Mr. Kingsland's death. His great foresight and business capacity led him to anticipate the future extension of the city, and he made large purchases of real estate, the rapid increase in the value of which proved that his faith in the future of the metropolis was not misplaced. In political matters he always took a deep interest, and joined the Old-Line Whig party in 1851. In that year he received the nomination for the office of mayor of New York, his opponent being the well-known Fernando Wood. So great was the public confidence in the wisdom and integrity of Mr. Kingsland that he was elected by a majority of nearly four thousand. During his term of office it devolved upon him, as the chief magistrate of the city, to welcome the renowned exile Louis Kossuth; and while the latter was in the city he enjoyed the hospitality of Mr. Kingsland's mansion. Mr. Kingsland was an ardent friend of Henry Clay, and the intimate acquaintance of many of the famous men of the country.

He purchased the tract of land above described, known as Beekman's Point, and erected the country-seat which he made his home during a large portion of the year. While making a temporary visit to New York he was seized with a sudden illness, which terminated his life Sunday, October 13, 1878, at the age of seventy-five, and his remains were laid to rest in Greenwood Cemetery.

He married Mary, daughter of George Lovett. Their children are George L.; Ambrose C.; Augusta, wife of Herman Le Roy Jones; Mary, wife of Wm. W. Tompkins; Cornelius F.; Albert A.; and Walter F.

Mr. Kingsland was a man of wonderful success in business, and in his official duties was faithful to the

last degree. As a man and a citizen he received the respect of all, and his family, as a token of respect, offer this tribute to his memory.

Just north of the road which leads to Mr. Ambrose C. Kingsland's late beautiful residence, and directly east of the Hudson River Railroad track, on an abrupt rocky height, stands a small tower with a castellated appearance, erected probably as an adornment to the landscape. North of the east and west road, beginning nearly opposite the cemetery gate, are several pieces of land without houses, which are owned by the estates of Manning & Ingleson, of A. C. Kingsland, and of the celebrated philanthropist, George Peabody, extending up to the Haventje, as the old Dutch settlers called it, meaning Little Haven or Harbor, and to the south line of Pokahoe, the name given by General James Watson Webb to the large stone house and premises where he lived from 1848 until 1861, when he went as the American minister to Brazil. In 1846 General Webb bought the place, containing about sixty acres of finely-wooded land, from the estate of Gerard G. Beekman, and built the large stone mansion upon it in 1848. On the south side he afterwards sold off a portion of his original purchase to Mr. George Peabody. There are two entrances to Pokahoe from Broadway or the post road, one from the north, the other from the south, with iron gates swung upon stone pillars. On the top of the two pillars at the north entrance are two bomb-shells that have a history. While walking over the place one day, in conversation with General Webb, he stated, in reply to the writer's inquiry, that they were fired from the castle of San Juan d'Ulloa, at Vera Cruz, on March 9, 1847, when Commodore Perry landed the American army, under General Scott, on the beach south of the city of Vera Cruz, preparatory to what proved to be their victorious march upon the Mexican capital. For some reason the fuse went out, and the shells did not explode. Commodore Perry picked them up, and brought them with him to his home. When General Webb built his house, and prepared the entrances, Commodore Perry gave him the two bomb-shells to ornament the tops of the two stone pillars at the northern gate. General Webb finally sold his place to General John C. Fremont, who lived here a few years, and then, in turn, sold it to Mr. Kingsland, by whose estate it is still owned.

Adjoining Pokahoe on the north is the beautiful country residence of Mrs. Jane G. Phelps, widow of that generous Christian philanthropist, Anson G. Phelps, whose death in the city of New York, May 18, 1858, in the early meridian of his days, was deeply lamented as a public loss. Mr. Phelps bought his place from the estate of Gerard G. Beekman, in 1849, when there was no building upon it, and at once took measures for the erection of his mansion and the laying out of his grounds. General Webb was at that time living in his house, then recently completed,

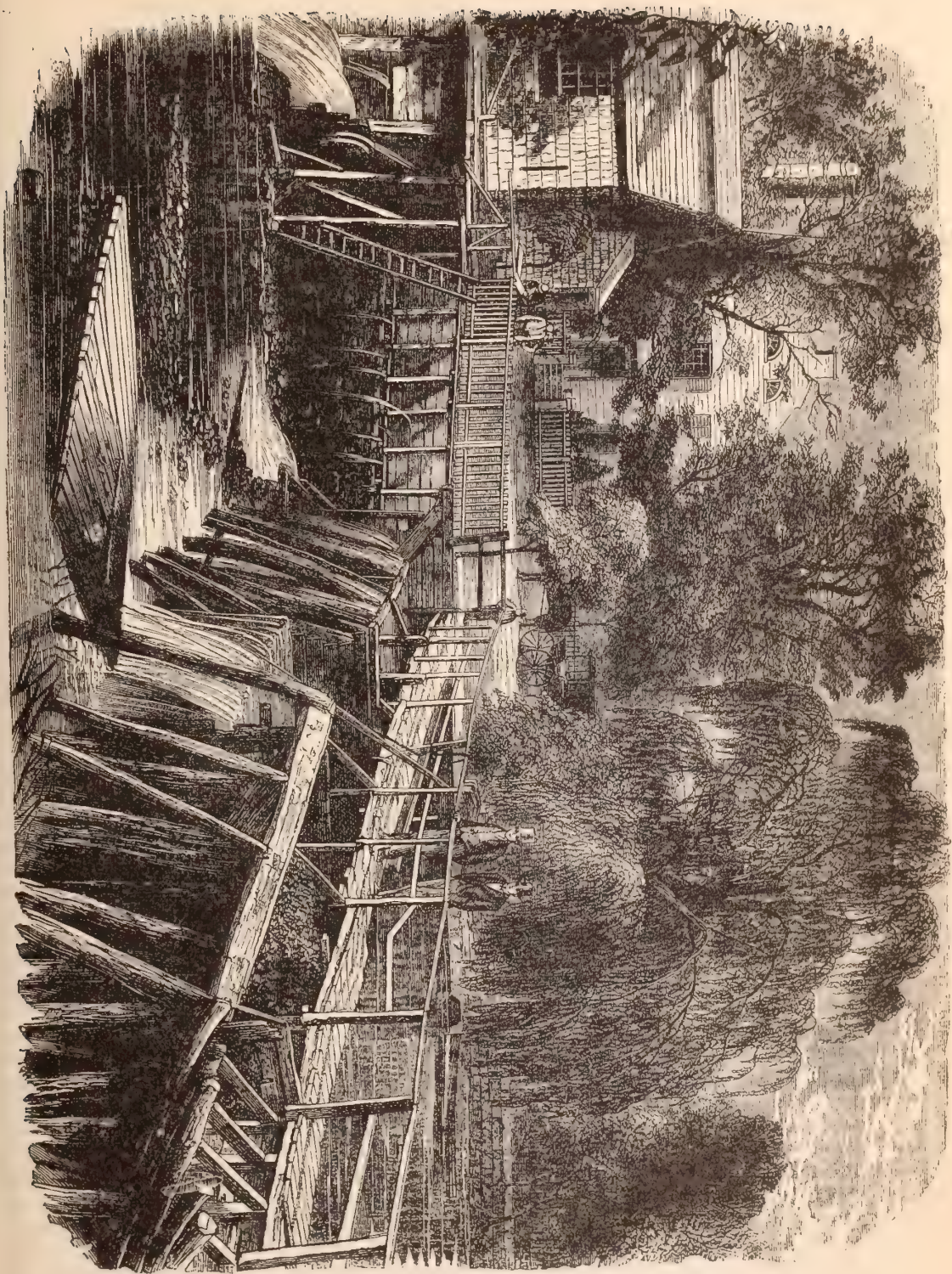
toward the south, and toward the north Mr. and Mrs. Bartlett, the lady to whom Washington Irving presented the pen with which he finished the *Life of Washington*, were living in a farm-house not far from the site of the elegant home which they built, and for a number of years occupied. It was afterwards sold to Mr. William H. Aspinwall, the great shipping merchant, who resided there in summer until he died on Monday, January 18, 1875.¹ The farm-house first occupied by Mr. and Mrs. Bartlett had previously been

¹ The following account of Mr. Aspinwall, published in the *New York Times* of Tuesday, January 19, 1875, is interesting, as showing his important connection with the opening of communication with Asia by way of the Panama Railroad and the Pacific Ocean, and also with an incident in the war for the preservation of the Union:

“WILLIAM H. ASPINWALL.

“Mr. William H. Aspinwall, the well-known merchant, died yesterday evening at his residence, No. 33 University Place, in the sixty-seventh year of his age. He was born in this city in 1807, and was descended from a family which came to this country among the earliest settlers of New England. His father, Mr. John Aspinwall, was one of the old firm of Gilbert and John Aspinwall, who were engaged in the dry-goods trade in Queen (now Pearl) Street for many years. After having acquired a substantial education, William H. Aspinwall, the deceased, entered the house of G. G. & S. S. Howland as a clerk, which position he occupied until 1832, when he was taken into partnership by the firm, with the understanding that he should receive one-fourth of the profits of the commission business of the house, which then amounted to about sixty thousand dollars a year. Here it was that the foundation of the splendid fortune he acquired in after-years was laid. In 1836 or 1837 the senior partners of the house went out of business, each leaving a cash capital of one hundred thousand dollars in the concern. William E. Howland, son of the senior partner, and William H. Aspinwall then took charge, under the firm-name of Howland & Aspinwall, which has remained unchanged to this day. As the business of the house on the Pacific coast was largely increased by the discovery of gold in California, Mr. Aspinwall directed his attention to the establishment of steam communication with San Francisco, and, in 1848, he retired from active connection with the firm and devoted himself wholly to this enterprise, and associated with it the building of the Panama Railroad. The Pacific Mail Steamship Company was successfully organized through his efforts, and the success of the Panama Railroad was also due, in a great measure, to his energetic advocacy of the plan and his untiring attention to the details. The eastern terminus of the road, formerly known as Colon, was named after him in honor of the zeal and ability he had displayed in surmounting the difficulties encountered in the accomplishment of the work, and it is gratifying to know that he lived to see the full value of what he had helped to bring to a successful termination. And this was not a little. The way was opened to direct communication between Asia and America and Oceania and Australasia, besides an immense coast line extending from Panama to Behring's Straits. Few, if any, among the many enterprising Americans who have obtained a world-wide reputation in commercial affairs can rival that gained by William H. Aspinwall. Thoroughly convinced of the feasibility of the plan, and alive to the advantages which would accrue from its realization, he boldly devoted his capital and his labor to the completion of the great work which was crowned with such triumphant success. Few men have had the satisfaction to see so brilliant a result obtained within a lifetime.

“During the War of the Rebellion Mr. Aspinwall was sent by the government, in company with Mr. John M. Forbes, of Boston, on a secret mission to England to obtain that country's interference in the building and outfitting of iron-clads then in course of construction by Messrs. Laird. The action taken by England in the matter is too well known for reference here, and it is sufficient to say that what was done by Mr. Aspinwall merited the full approbation of his government. Beyond this he never held any office, as he never sought for political position, and devoted himself wholly to his business affairs. Socially, he was a modest, retiring, liberal gentleman, and was respected and admired by all who knew him, and, as a merchant, his reputation for probity and honor was accorded to none in the business community. His death will be universally regretted.”



PHILIPSE MANOR HOUSE AND SLEEPY HOLLOW MILL.

the residence of the celebrated naval officer and literary man, Commander Alexander Slidell Mackenzie, from 1840 until he died, on September 13, 1848. This house, after Mr. Bartlett had completed his castle, was torn down. Commander Slidell Mackenzie, whose father's name was Slidell and whose mother's name was Mackenzie, added her name to that of his father's at the request of a maternal uncle. He will be remembered as commanding the United States brig "Somers," on which a mutinous plot was discovered in 1842, while sailing from the coast of Africa, and three of the ringleaders, including a son of the Hon. John C. Spencer, then Secretary of War under President Tyler, were hanged to the yard-arm at sea, on December 1, 1842.

Still farther north, toward the old aqueduct arch over the Sing Sing road, was the home of Commodore Matthew Calbraith Perry, from 1848 until March, 1852, when he was appointed to take command of the important expedition to Japan, which resulted in opening that long-secluded nation to the world. Commodore Perry sold the place to Mr. George Swords, and he, in turn, sold it to Mr. Boker, whose daughter Mary Ann became famous by her elopement and marriage to her father's coachman, John Dean. Later, the house was occupied by General Lloyd Aspinwall, who, after his father's decease, came into possession of his former home, and moved into it, where he still resides.

The Rev. William Creighton, D.D., formerly rector of Christ Church, Tarrytown, lived over the Ossining line, and the little Church of St. Mary's, Beechwood, which he built in 1850 and long sustained, is also over the line in the same township. As stated elsewhere, it was formerly thought to be in Mount Pleasant, but a recent survey has shown it to be in Ossining.

THE COUNTY HOUSE.—At East Tarrytown, formerly called Knapp's Corners, a short distance north of the Northern Railroad, which here bends to the west, and north of the Greenburgh line, within the township of Mount Pleasant, between the Unionville road on the west and the Nepperhan, or Saw-Mill River on the east, stands the "County House," where the poor of Westchester County are provided for at the public expense. Adjacent to the buildings, but chiefly along the river to the north, lies the fertile farm of one hundred and seventeen acres, which furnishes a considerable part of the needed supplies. Previous to 1828 the poor were taken care of by the separate townships to which they happened to belong, but on August 1, 1828, with Isaac Coutant as its first keeper on a salary of three hundred dollars, the "County House" was opened in its present location, and the township poor-houses were given up. There are now (in February, 1886) about two hundred and forty inmates in the "County House," the number being usually larger during the winter months. The average for the year is about one hundred and sixty.

The annual appropriation to support the establishment is about fifteen thousand dollars. The present keeper of the house is Mr. Charles Fisher. Some changes have taken place in the management within a few years past, but no further changes are now contemplated.

AFFAIR AT YOUNG'S HOUSE.—About four miles east of Tarrytown, and nearly the same distance northwest of White Plains, a little to the north of what used to be called "the upper road" to White Plains, but is now most frequently mentioned as "the County House Road," is the scene of what the chroniclers of the Revolution have designated as "The Affair at Young's House," on February 3, 1780. At that point the upper road from Tarrytown, running from west to east, is crossed at right angles by the road from Unionville, running from north to south. It is an elevated region, nearly midway between the Hudson River and the Bronx, and from the intersection here of the two roads it received long ago the name of "The Four Corners." The east and west road is the dividing line between the two townships of Greenburgh and Mount Pleasant, so that that part of the Unionville road north of it is in Mount Pleasant, while the part south of it is in Greenburgh. At the present time Mr. Robert Bonner's stock farm is on the Mount Pleasant side of "the upper road," and a little to the east of the farm, but a short distance to the north, on the west side of the Unionville road, stands the house of Mr. J. Romaine Brown, formerly a member of the firm of Kip & Brown, proprietors of the old Broadway stages. Just in front of Mr. Brown's house, looking eastward, and within the inclosure of his premises, is the yet discoverable site of the famous house of Joseph Young, where the fight took place on February 3, 1780. The house which then stood there was burnt down by the British, Hessians and Tories together, and the place was known as "the Burnt House" until after the war was over, and Isaac Van Wart, one of the captors of Andre, having concluded to leave the farm given him by Congress, in Putnam County, as he desired to live in the old neighborhood, sold it and bought the Young property, from which fact the house afterwards built took the name of "The Van Wart House."

The Young house of the Revolution was within what was called "the American lines," by which was meant that it was within that part of Westchester County which was mainly controlled by the Americans. Its elevated position, together with the number of buildings attached and around it, rendered it a convenient stopping-place for the Continental troops that were designed to guard that portion of the county that lay between Bedford and the Hudson, on the east and west, and between the Croton and the lines, on the north and south. These troops were ordered to be kept in motion, partly to protect the country and partly to elude the vigilance of the enemy and prevent them from planning an attack,

so that generally they remained but a short time in any one place. At the time here referred to, however,—that is, about the beginning of the year 1780,—they for some reason remained at Young's house longer than usual. The Tories in the neighborhood soon conveyed intelligence of the fact to the British headquarters in New York, and an expedition was soon organized and dispatched from Fort Knyphausen to attack them. That fort was formerly known as Fort Washington, but after its capture by General Knyp-hausen, on November 16, 1776, the name was changed in honor of that successful Alsatian soldier. The place afterwards, however, resumed its previous name, and is still known as Fort Washington.

The Continental troops at Young's house in January, 1780, numbered about two hundred and fifty men, chiefly from Massachusetts, and all commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Thompson, of that State. The larger part were at the house, but detachments were posted westward extending nearly two miles toward the Hudson River, and eastward about three miles toward the Bronx. Pickets were also stationed in front of the entire line, and every precaution was taken to prevent a surprise.

On Wednesday evening, between ten and eleven o'clock, February 2, 1780, a force of between four and five hundred infantry and one hundred horsemen, composed of British, Germans and Colonel De Lancey's Tories, set out from Fort Knyphausen, south of Souyten Duyvel Creek, to attack and capture the Americans posted at Young's house. The whole expedition was under the command of Colonel Nelson, of the Guards. The weather was cold and a deep snow was on the ground. Sleighs had been secretly provided to convey the infantry, and an attempt was made to use them for that purpose, but the troops had not gone far before they were compelled to give it up and to send back the sleighs, together with two light field-pieces, as the snow was found to be altogether too deep to admit of that mode of conveyance. The cavalry kept the main road going north from Yonkers up the valley of the Nepperhan, or Saw-Mill River, but the infantry were obliged to get along the best way they could, sometimes in the road, and sometimes out of it in the fields on one side or the other. It was a march of about twenty miles by the shortest route, and they did not reach the vicinity of Young's house until nearly nine o'clock on Thursday morning, February 3d.

The account of this affair, written by General William Heath, in his book entitled "Memoirs of Major-General Heath; Containing Anecdotes, Details of Skirmishes, Battles and other Military Events during the American War; written by himself; published according to Act of Congress; printed at Boston, August, 1798," gives, substantially, all the facts in regard to it, and his statements agree, in the main, with those given in Thacher's "Military Journal of the American Revolution" and in *Rivington's Royal Ga-*

zette, published in New York City February 9, 1780. General Heath was the last surviving major-general of the Revolutionary army, and he died at Roxbury, Massachusetts, his birth-place, on January 24, 1814. The following is his account:

"On the morning of the 3^d about 9 o'clock, the enemy made an attack on Lieut. Col. Thomson, who commanded the troops on the lines; the Colonel's force consisted of 250 men, in five companies, properly officered; they were instructed to move between Croton River and the White Plains, Hudson's River and Bedford; never to remain long at any one place, that the enemy might not be able to learn their manner of doing duty, or form a plan for striking them in any particular situation. The Colonel had for some days taken post himself at Young's, not far from the White Plains. Capt. Watson, with his company, was with the Lieut. Colonel; Capt. Roberts and Capt. Stoddard, with their companies, were on the right; Capt. Lieut. Farley and Capt. Cooper on the left. The force of the enemy consisted of the four flank companies of the first and second British regiments of the guards—detachments from two Hessian battalions—some mounted rangers, and mounted refugees, the whole under the command of Col. Norton, of the guards. The roads were so filled with snow that the enemy advanced but slowly, and were obliged to leave their field-pieces behind on the road. They were discovered at a distance by Mr. Campbell, one of our guides, who, from the goodness of his horse, reconnoitred them pretty near. He gave the Lieutenant-Colonel notice of their advancing, and that their force was considerable and advised him to take a stronger position a little in his rear. But the Lieutenant-Colonel was very confident that the enemy were only a body of horse, and that he could easily disperse them, and would not quit his ground. The enemy first attacked a small advance-guard, consisting of a Sergeant and 8 men, who behaved well, and meant to reach the main body in season; but were prevented by the horse, and all taken prisoners. The enemy's horse soon appeared in sight of the Americans, and discharged their rifles at long shot and waited the coming up of the infantry, when a warm action commenced; the enemy scattered, taking the advantage of the ground and trees in the orchard, and closing up on all sides. The companies of the detachment, which had joined, fought well. After about 15 minutes' sharp conflict, our troops broke; some took into the house and others made off; the enemy's horse rushing on at the same instant and the whole shouting. At this time the two flank companies came up, but finding how matters stood, judged it best to retreat, Capt. Stoddard's company giving a fire or two at long shot, Capt. Cooper's, from their distance, not firing at all. Some who were engaged effected their escape, others were overtaken by the horse. The enemy collected what prisoners they could, set Mr. Young's house and buildings on fire, and returned. Of the Americans 13 were killed dead on the spot, and Capt. Roberts, who was mortally wounded, lived but a few minutes. Seventeen others were wounded, several of whom died. Lieut. Col. Thomson of Marshall's, Capt. Watson of Greaton's, Capt. Lieut. Farley of Wesson's, Lieut. Burley of Tupper's, Lieut. Maynard of Greaton's, Ensign Fowler of Nixon's, Ensign Bradley of Bigelow's, with 89 others, were taken prisoners. The enemy left three men dead on the field, and a Captain of grenadiers was wounded in the hip and a Lieutenant of infantry in the thigh. The British, in their account of the action, acknowledged that they had 5 men killed and 18 wounded. Lieut.-Col. Badlam, with the relief for the lines, was at the time of action far advanced on his march, but not within reach of those engaged.

"One Mayhew, a pedler well-known in Massachusetts, was of this detachment; he made off up the road, but finding the horse rushing on, he struck off into the snow almost up to his hips. Two of the enemy's horse turned into his track after him and gaining fast upon him, he asked them if they would give him quarter, they replied 'Yes, you dog, we will quarter you.' This was twice repeated, when Mayhew, finding them inflexible, determined to give them one shot before he was quartered; and, turning round, discharged his piece at the first horseman, who cried out, 'The rascal has broke my leg,' when both of them turned their horses round and went off, leaving Mayhew at liberty to tread back his path to the road and come off."—*Pp.* 229-232.

An account of this same affair at Young's house is given by Thacher in a single paragraph of his "Military Journal" as follows:

"February (1780).—Lieutenant-Colonel Thompson had the command of about two hundred and fifty men as an advanced party on our lines.

He was instructed to be constantly alert and in motion, that the enemy might not be able to take advantage and form a plan for his destruction. It happened, however, that a detachment of British, Hessians and mounted refugees were discovered advancing towards him, but, on account of a very deep snow obstructing the road, they marched slowly, and Colonel Thompson resolved to defend his ground. The enemy's horse first advanced and commenced skirmishing till their infantry approached, when a sharp conflict ensued, which continued about fifteen minutes; some of our troops manifested symptoms of cowardice and gave way. The enemy secured the advantage and rushed on with a general shout which soon decided the contest. The Americans lost thirteen men killed and Captain Roberts, being mortally wounded, soon expired. Seventeen others were wounded. Lieutenant-Colonel Thompson and six other officers, with eighty-nine rank and file, were made prisoners. Of the enemy, two officers and eighteen men were wounded and five men killed. One of our men, by the name of Mayhew, of Massachusetts, was pursued by two of the enemy's horse, the snow being almost up to his hips; they gained fast on him; he inquired if they would give him quarter; they replied, 'Yes, you dog, we will quarter you,' and this was again repeated. Mayhew, in despair, resolving to give them a shot before he submitted to his fate, turned and fired at the first horseman, who cried out, 'The rascal has broken my leg,' when both of them wheeled round and rode off, leaving Mayhew to rejoice at his fortunate escape."—*Pp.* 189-190.

There is a little difference in the orthography of General Heath and Dr. Thacher, the latter giving the name "Thompson" with a *p*, and the former "Thomson" without it, but it is deemed best to give the extracts just as they stand in the printed volumes.

The charge of cowardice, insinuated against some of the Continental troops by Thacher, does not seem to be sustained by the facts. The truth appears to have been quite the contrary, when less than one hundred and fifty Continentals, for a considerable portion of their two hundred and fifty men were posted too far away to engage in the conflict, dared to resist nearly six hundred disciplined troops, and thus held them in check for any length of time at all, it indicated not cowardice, surely, but rather courage even to the verge of rashness. Dr. James Thacher, who wrote the "Military Journal," was not a soldier, but an army surgeon, who rendered excellent service through the war, and made in his book a very valuable contribution to its history. He was born at Barnstable, Massachusetts, February 14, 1754, and died at Plymouth, in the same State, May 26, 1844, a little over ninety years of age. It is noticeable, however, that General Heath, who was a soldier, says nothing to countenance the insinuation of cowardice, which, probably, had its origin among the Westchester Tories, and was taken up by Thacher without being carefully weighed.

It is said that while a portion of the American army was encamped in the neighborhood, Brigadier-General Thaddeus Kosciusko had his headquarters at the Four Corners, and also that the duel fought "a few days" before September 6, 1778, of which Thacher makes mention, p. 147, took place near a blacksmith shop, east of the Four Corners, on the White Plains road, between General Gates and Colonel Wilkins. Thacher's account of the duel is given thus:

"6th.—A duel was fought a few days since between General G. and Colonel W. Two shots were exchanged without bloodshed, and a

reconciliation was effected. The gentlemen, it is said, displayed a firmness and bravery becoming their rank and character, and have established their claim as gentlemen of honor. As their courage has never been called in question, the present rencontre was unnecessary, unless it be to evince that they possess malice enough in their hearts to commit a murderous deed. The example of superior officers will have great influence with those of inferior rank, whether contending with the dogs of war, or in adjusting the minor points of honor."

In the interview with the Rev. Alexander Van Wart, in his home at Pleasantville on June 15, 1885 (see under GREENBURGH), he gave to the writer, among other recitals, the following:

His mother's maiden-name was Rachel Storms, and her house was just down the hill from the Four Corners toward the west, on the Tarrytown road. His maternal uncle, Nicholas Storms, lived there at the same time. Looking up toward the east one day he saw a military company manœuvring at the Four Corners, on the top of the hill, near Young's house, and, supposing them to be Americans, he mounted his horse, and rode up to learn the news. He did not discover until he was right in front of them that they were British troops out on a scouting and foraging expedition. It was too late to retreat, for they saw him, and so, putting on a bold face, he rode up and inquired of them what was the news. They ordered him to dismount, took him prisoner and kept his horse. His sister, Rachel Storms, afterwards the wife of Isaac Van Wart, one of the captors of Andre, was sent to beg for her brother's release. She did so, and to such good purpose, that one of the soldiers said to the others, "Oh, she must be his sweetheart. Let's give him up." And they did. She was sent back a second time to beg for a cow they had taken, and then, too, she gained her request.

The Rev. Mr. Van Wart, after speaking of the fact that his father had sold the farm given to him by Congress in Putnam County, and had purchased the Young place, at the Four Corners, described the somewhat elevated sandy field just north of the Corners, on the east side of the Unionville road, as the place where some thirteen American and three British soldiers, who fell in the fight at Young's house, were buried, "and," he added, "I have ploughed many a furrow over the graves of those who were there killed."

It was here, too, at the Four Corners, that James Fenimore Cooper, in his novel entitled "The Spy: A Tale of the Neutral Ground," published in 1821, located, in the Sixteenth Chapter, and thence on to the end, the "house of entertainment for man and beast," known, by its old sign, written in red chalk, on a rough board suspended from its gallows-looking posts, as "Elizabeth Flanagan, her hotel." The house was a rendezvous for the American soldiers, and particularly, according to Cooper, for the Virginia Dragoons, under "Major Dunwoodie" and "Captain Lawton." It was at one of their convivial meetings at the "Hotel Flanagan" that "Captain Lawton" is represented to have sung his song "to a well-known bacchanalian

air, several of his comrades helping him through the chorus with a fervor that shook the crazy edifice they were in." And this, as Cooper gives it, was the song :

"Now push the mug, my jolly boys,
And live, while live we can ;
To-morrow's sun may end your joys,
For brief's the hour of man.
And he who bravely meets the foe,
His lease of life can never know.

Old mother Flanagan,
Come and fill the can again ;
For you can fill, and we can will,
Good Betty Flanagan.

"If love of life pervades your breast,
Or love of ease your frame ;
Quit honor's path for peaceful rest,
And bear a coward's name .
For soon and late we danger know,
And fearless on the saddle go.

Old mother, &c.

"When foreign foes invade the land,
And wives and sweethearts call ;
In freedom's cause we'll bravely stand,
Or will as bravely fall ;
In this fair home the fates have given,
We'll live as lords, or live in heaven.

Old mother," &c.

Cooper adds, "At each appeal made to herself by the united voices of the choir, Betty invariably advanced and complied literally with the request contained in the chorus, to the infinite delight of the singers, and with no small participation in the satisfaction on her own account."

"Betty Flanagan," who kept the hotel, is said in *The Spy* to have been the inventor of the American drink, whatever it is, that has since been known as a "cocktail." Cooper says: "Betty had the merit of being the inventor of that beverage which is so well known at the present hour to all the patriots who make a winter's march between the commercial and political capitals of this great State, and which is distinguished by the name of 'cocktail.'"

Some idea of the condition of things in Westchester County during that stormy period may be gathered from a letter written by Judge Samuel Young to R. V. Morris, member of Assembly, under date of "Mount Pleasant, January 25, 1814," and published in the *Historical Magazine* for June, 1871. Judge Young wrote,—

"I resided in the lines from the commencement of the Revolution until the winter of 1777, when my father's house was burned by order of the British General. The county of Westchester, very soon after the commencement of hostilities, became, on account of its exposed situation, a scene of the deepest distress. From the Croton to Kingsbridge every species of rapine and lawlessness prevailed. No one went to his bed but under the apprehension of having his house plundered or burnt, or himself or family massacred before morning. Some under the character of

Whigs plundered the Tories, while others of the latter description plundered the Whigs. Parties of marauders assuming either character, or none, as suited their convenience, indiscriminately assailed both Whigs and Tories. So little vigilance was used on our part that the emissaries and spies of the enemy passed and repassed without interruption. These calamities continued undiminished until the arrival of Colonel Burr, in the autumn of the year 1778." Mr. Young then attached himself to Colonel Burr's corps of aids and confidential helpers as a volunteer, but without pay.

As a companion picture of the times and the region given in this letter of Judge Young, it is interesting to read the statements of General William Hull, himself an army officer on duty in Westchester County during the period referred to. In the book entitled "Revolutionary Services and Civil Life of General William Hull; prepared from his Manuscripts by his Daughter, Mrs. Maria Campbell; together with the History of the Campaign of 1812 and Surrender of the Post of Detroit, by his Grandson, James Freeman Clarke, New York; D. Appleton & Co., 1848," the writer gives also, in connection with the following account, some curious explanations of the method of conveying information in those days:

"The Cowboys and Skinners ravaged the whole region. The first, called Refugees, ranked themselves on the British side. They were employed in plundering cattle and driving them to the city; their name is derived from their occupation. The latter, called Skinners, while professing attachment to the American cause, were devoted to indiscriminate robbery, murder and every species of the most brutal outrage. They seemed, like the savage, to have learned to enjoy the sight of the sufferings they inflicted. Oftentimes they left their wretched victims, from whom they had plundered their all, hung up by their arms, and sometimes by their thumbs, on barn-doors, enduring the agony of the wounds that had been inflicted to wrest from them their property. These miserable beings were frequently relieved by our patrols, who, every night scoured the country from river to river. But, unhappily, the military force was too small to render the succor so much needed; although by its vigilance and the infliction of severe punishment on the offenders, it kept in check, to a certain extent, this lawless race of men. The command on the lines covered an extensive section of country, and there were many roads leading from Kingsbridge to the different stations which were occupied by the detachment. It was, therefore, necessary to avail of the friendly inhabitants to obtain intelligence of the first movement of the enemy. Those who resided below the lines, being entirely in the power of the British, were obliged to feign an attachment they did not feel.

"Major Hull selected a certain number of families on whose fidelity he could rely, and formed a line of them, extending from Kingsbridge to his most advanced guards. He requested these persons to come to him at night, that he might communicate to them his plan of securing information, which he said would depend on their good faith, alertness and secrecy. He told the man who lived nearest Kingsbridge, that whenever he perceived any extraordinary movement, or whenever the enemy passed the bridge, to take a mug or pitcher in his hand, and in a careless manner go to his neighbour who composed one of the line for some cider, beer, or milk, and give him notice, and then immediately return home. His neighbor was to do the same, and so on, until the information reached the station of Major Hull. Every individual thus employed was faithful to the trust reposed in him.

"The enemy could make no movement, without the detachment being informed and prepared to meet or avoid them. Major Hull rewarded, as he was authorized, these good people, who could not, in their situation, perform a duty of this nature without much personal risk. Yet they ceased not to exhibit the virtues of patriotism and constancy, by a faithful devotion to their country's interests, while exposed to imminent danger and surrounded by hardships and privation."—*Pp.* 147-149.

These representations are all in perfect harmony with the statements given to the writer by the Rev. Alexander Van Wart, in his recital of what he had often heard from his father. "The British and Tories came up so often," said he, "that people did not dare to sleep in their houses. My father then lived just north of Mine Brook, a little stream so called from the supposition that there was a gold mine in its rising banks, because streaks of something like gold were found in the rocks that were taken from them. The old house was west of the road, which there bends and runs down to Elmsford, just a little in front of the new or later house now occupied by Mr. Frank Decker, and near to the Mine Brook, which there flows westward across the road. In the glen or ravine east of the road my father's family made a little house of straw, and often five or six would go up there to spend the night. After getting into it, they would stop up the hole or entrance with sheaves of straw, so that altogether it appeared from the outside to be a simple straw stack. In this way they were able to sleep undisturbed. On one occasion a British cavalry company came up, and charged on the old house across the road. The dog outside set up a great barking, which notified the inmates of their danger. My father, Isaac Van Wart, and my uncle, Nicholas Storm, made their escape out of the back-door, but a man named Moses Harris and some others were captured."

UNIONVILLE.—Unionville is a quiet little hamlet in the midst of a productive farming region, situated on the east side of the Neperan or Saw-Mill River, and on the line of the Harlem Railroad, twenty-eight and a half miles from the Grand Central Depot in New York City. It is nearly in the centre of the township of Mount Pleasant, about four and a half miles northeast of Tarrytown, and between six and seven miles north of White Plains. Though the place is known as Unionville, the post-office has always retained the name of Neperan, which it derived from the fact that that stream runs through the western border of the hamlet. The population is small, not over two hundred at the utmost, and probably less. The places of business are a grocery and dry-goods store, a freight, express and passenger depot connected with the Harlem Railroad, a pickle-factory, a blacksmith-shop and a saw and grist-mill. There are also about twenty-five or thirty dwellings in the neighborhood. Just back of the place, on the west, rises a high hill or mountain, known to some as Mount Pleasant and Mount Zion, but usually spoken of as Buttermilk Hill. The view from the top of it is very extensive and striking. New York City and the East River are said to be distinctly visible, and also the region lying upon the shores of Long Island Sound. To the spectator on the summit the inequalities of the surface seem to be lost, and the whole country below presents the appearance of a level plain. The locality is said to be

one of more than ordinary healthfulness, as indicated by the fact that the monuments in the Old Reformed Church burial-ground show that the people there have frequently lived to a very advanced age, some of them to over one hundred years, and many to different points in the nineties.

The Reformed Church is the only religious society in the place. The church edifice was built in 1818, under the care of the Rev. Thomas G. Smith, pastor of the old Dutch Church of Sleepy Hollow, who devoted a part of his time to this new enterprise. The Reformed Dutch Churches in Westchester County were then connected with the Classis of New York, and the records of that body show that the Rev. Mr. Smith was appointed to effect the organization, and that he afterwards reported, at a meeting of Classis held October 17, 1820, that the work assigned him had been performed. Being regarded as a branch of the Old Dutch Church of Sleepy Hollow, all its records were kept in the books of that church, so that the church of Unionville never had any separate record of its own membership until the year 1840, when they were copied from the records of the old church, and for the first time in its history the church of Unionville had a record of its own.

The first pastor of the church was the Rev. Thomas G. Smith. A document drawn up by him, and still preserved in his own clear handwriting by the consistory, gives an account of a peculiar complication in which the church was involved, by having undertaken to transact business in a too careless way before it had a legal corporate existence, and at the same time gives some important dates and facts bearing upon the history of the church. The document, which will explain itself, is as follows:

"May 16, 1827.

"The Consistory of the Reformed Dutch Church at Unionville, to the heirs of Mrs. Cornelius Ray, deceased, sendeth greeting.

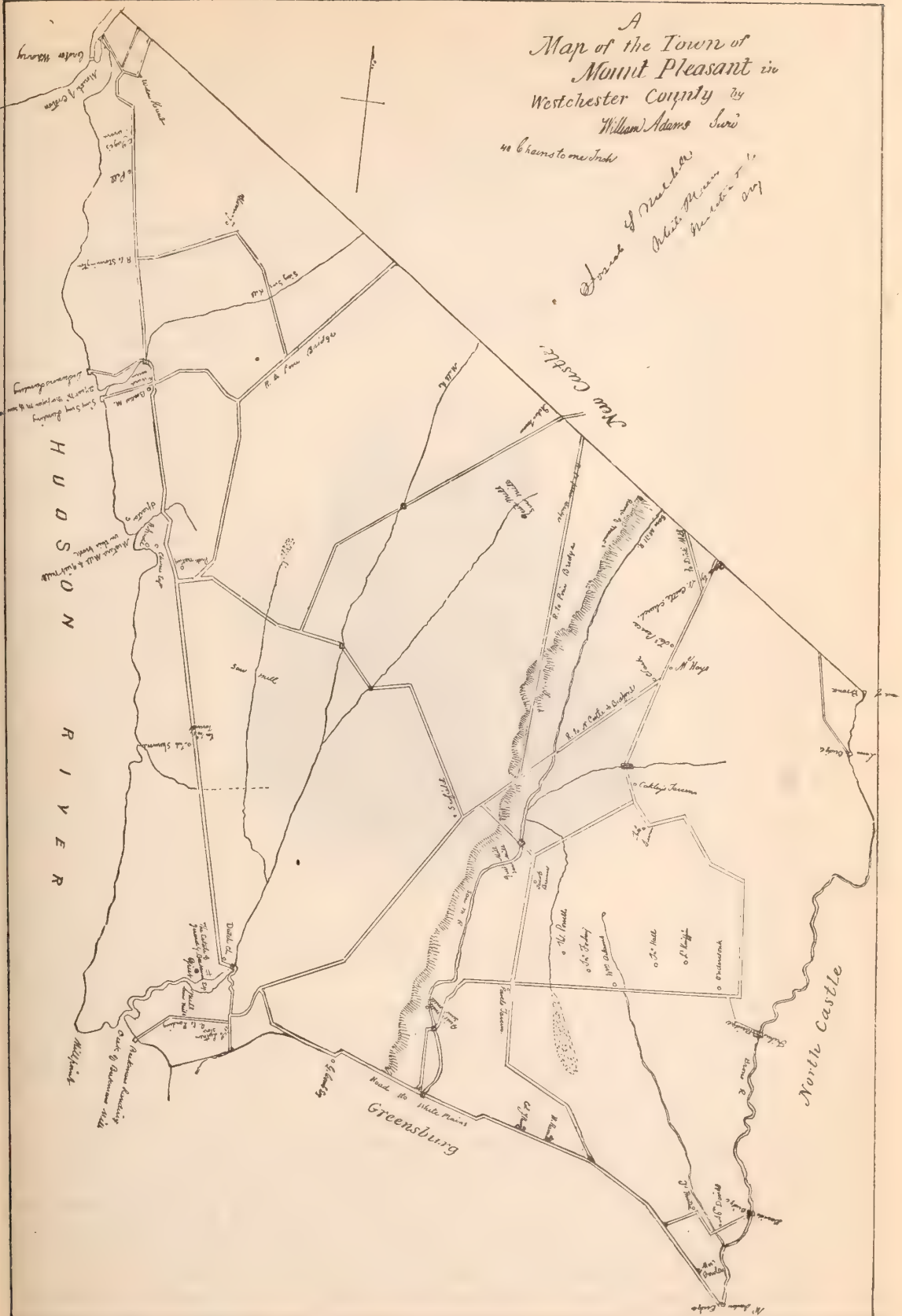
"Gentlemen,—Whereas, the Inhabitants of that section of country, known and distinguished by the name of Union Ville, in the town of Mt. Pleasant, County of West Chester, and State of New York, did, in the year 1818, build a house for the public worship of God, which for that purpose hath been occupied ever since.

"The ground for this house and Grave-yard, containing one Acre, was got of Thomas Hammond, since deceased, which cost them fifty-nine dollars. But as this was a new Congregation not yet Organized, and without a Consistory, it was agreed upon by the people that the Rev^d Thomas G. Smith should take a Deed of said Hammond, and that as soon as the people could be organized into a Church, that the said Thomas G. Smith should give the Consistory of said Church a deed for said land similar to the deed which he received of said Thomas Hammond. All this was done. But be it remembered, That before the executing of said Deed by the said Hammond to the said Smith, that he, the said Thomas Hammond, was questioned and examined by numbers belonging to said Congregation, Whether there was any Incumbrances upon said Land by Mortgages, Judgments, &c., who always answered, that there were none except one mortgage of About Eight hundred, in favor of Lawyer Mitchel, of White plains. That there were no Incumbrances upon said Land, either by Mortgages or otherwise, the said Thomas Hammond repeatedly declared. It is true, we might have searched the Records, but as Thomas Hammond was a Member in full Communion in the Church, and as it would have betrayed a want of confidence in the man, We confined in his declaration, which hath proven a source of much trouble and vexation to us. It was about 4 or 5 years after the building of said church that we found there was a Mortgage in favor of Mr. Cornelius Ray. The above is a plain and simple state-

A
 Map of the Town of
 Mount Pleasant in
 Westchester County by
 William Adams Lewis

40 Chains to one Inch

James of Newber
 White Plains
 June 10th 1791



ment of facts, for the truth of which we are ready to give you the most clear, ample and satisfactory Testimony. We would likewise state to you that your Venerable Father, Cornelius Ray, who we humbly hope is now enjoying the smiles of his God in a happy Eternity, repeatedly told us that we should not be hurt. And, but a very short time before his death, He said that it was his determination to exonerate the Consistory and Congregation from said Mortgage and from all trouble Arising therefrom. Of this declaration of your Venerable father we are ready to give you ample satisfaction. It is now our province to give you a description of the house and grave-yard. The House is a wooden building, in dimensions, 40 feet by 36, all finished but the seats. The Grave-yard contains about one Acre, perhaps something less. In said Grave-yard there are interred about the number of 60 or 70 persons, and a number of Marble monuments are erected to perpetuate their memory. The Church and grave-yard adjoining thereto make both a solemn and respectable appearance. Now, Gentlemen, to you, the heirs of Mr. Cornelius Ray, we apply 'that you would exonerate and acquit us from said Mortgage.' We indeed find the Church and Grave-yard comprehended in the Advertizement for the sale of your other property; but we cannot believe but that you will give Orders to your Agent to exempt said House and Yard from sale. We think, that if it should be your pleasure to Grant the prayer of our petition that it would redound to your honor, and to your temporal and eternal interest, and even the people of Union Ville, as well as the world at large, wherever this should be published would praise you for your generous Conduct, and for the respect and esteem that you have shown for the memory of the dead, and the Worship and Temple of the living God.

"And we appoint Doctor Isaac G. Graham and Mr. Benjamin Brown to present our petition.

"Signed THOMAS G. SMITH, Pastor.

"Benjamin Brown.

"Abraham Onderdunk.

"John Newman.

"Jonathan Newman.

"William W. Yerks.

"Isaac G. Graham, Jr."

Including its first pastor, the Rev. Thomas G. Smith, the church of Unionville has had ten pastors since its organization and one stated supply. Its last pastor, who is still in office, is the Rev. Peter A. Wes-sels, who assumed its responsibilities May 1, 1884. His predecessor, the Rev. Howard Harris, resigned the charge in January, 1884, in order to become a missionary to Japan, where he is now laboring under the care of the Foreign Missionary Board of the Reformed Church. The church reports a membership of ninety-eight.

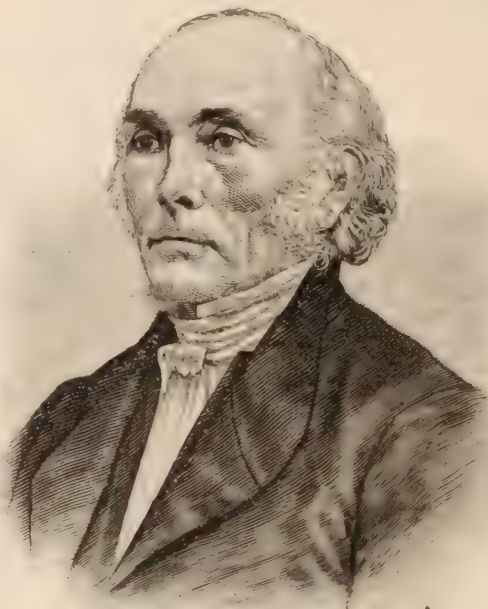
The country around Unionville was involved in great uncertainties and dangers during the Revolutionary War. The site of the old farm-house, now owned by Mr. Alvah Newman, is said to have been the scene of a bloody tragedy in those perilous times. Two Continental soldiers, on their way home after having been honorably discharged, stopped at the old house, which was then used as a tavern. They had not been there long when a British trooper rode up

and fired two pistols through the window. Then, dismounting, he rushed into the house and killed both the unoffending soldiers with his sword before they could make effectual resistance. Mr. Newman still has in his possession an old musket that belonged to his father. It has a deep sabre-cut in the stock that was made by a British trooper in a cavalry charge, in which he was himself killed by Mr. Newman's father.

On the ridge east of the Harlem Railroad are two earthworks, or temporary forts, that were thrown up during the Revolution. They were once at the outposts of the American army, and are even yet in a good state of preservation. The Flykill Brook, running through Unionville, and in front of the old forts,

was dammed up in order to throw back the water, and thus retard the march of the British troops. The dam is even now quite discernible, and is to the present day known as "the Yankee Dam."

PLEASANTVILLE.—The most northerly village in the township of Mount Pleasant is Pleasantville, on the line of the Harlem Railroad, about two and a half miles north of Unionville, and thirty-one miles from the Grand Central Depot, in New York City. The place was formerly known as "Clark's Corners." It is about equidistant from Bedford, White Plains and Tarrytown, being about eight miles from each. The situation is desirable, and the village, which is surrounded by a pleasant agricultural district, has a population of



Moses Pierce

not far from sixteen hundred. The village contains some of the oldest and most prominent citizens in the county. Among these was Moses Pierce whose ancestry dated back over one hundred years.

Mr. Pierce was born March 9, 1816, on the Pierce homestead, just north of Pleasantville. The farm on which he was born has been in the family for more than one hundred years, and is at present occupied by the fifth generation of the name. It formed a part of the Philipse Manor, and was rented early in the last century by James Pierce, who was born in 1700, and with Elizabeth Coek, his wife, came from Long Island, settling upon and occupying it for many years. One of their numerous children, James Pierce, who

married Martha Leggett, of Mount Pleasant, continued to rent it until after the Revolutionary War, when it fell into the family possession by purchase.

A son of the last-named couple, Joseph, married Hannah Sutton, of New Castle, and, in turn, settled upon the homestead. Their son, Moses, who married Esther Carpenter, of New Rochelle, is the subject of this sketch. Early in life he achieved for himself the reputation of a fearless upholder of just and right principles, even though those principles were unpopular and their championship fraught with danger both to life and property. Fifty years ago he was secretary of the first temperance organization formed in his neighborhood, and continued to earnestly support that cause till his death. He was also violently opposed to the system of human slavery formerly existing in the South.

Early convinced, with his entire family, of the injustice and wrong of slave-holding, he cheerfully met the odium and danger attendant upon such a course at the time, and, together with his son, he speeded many fugitive slaves along the mythical track of the "Underground Railroad" to the next station, at the Jay homestead, *en route* for Canada. In later years the subject of peace, and the settlement of all civil and domestic difficulties by arbitration, interested Mr. Pierce deeply.

In the religious meeting—that of the Society of

Friends, held at the old meeting-house at Chappaqua, in his neighborhood—he held high positions by right, for he was thoughtful, public-spirited and warm-hearted. Full of kind attentions for the aged, good counsel for the young and an open hand for the needy, a patron of education to the extent of his means, and himself inclined by taste to intellectual things, such a man must ever be a great loss to family, church and county. He died, universally respected and beloved, April 30, 1886.

Pleasantville is a place of considerable business activity, and has four shoe-factories, one shirt-factory, and a marble quarry and lime-works a little out of the village.

Of the shoe-factories, Mr. Slagle's is probably the

largest, doing a business of about thirty thousand dollars per year, employing about seventy-five hands, and turning out at times one thousand pairs of infants' shoes per week, besides other varieties.

Mr. Wm. Bell, with a plant of five thousand dollars, employs seventy hands, male and female. The product consists of children's, misses' and women's shoes.

Messrs. Israel & Zarr do a business not very different in amount, but consisting, for the most part, of hand-made work of good quality.

Mr. Rufus Hadley also does probably a higher class of work, manufacturing superior goods, but less in quantity. The amount of capital invested in the shoe manufactory is from twenty-five thousand to thirty thousand dollars per year, and the number of hands employed is from two hundred and fifty to three hundred.

The shirt-factory owned by Mr. Charles Quimby, represents a capital of about five thousand dollars, and from it there are put out every week about three hundred dozen shirts. This establishment provides work for a large number of persons, either in the factory itself or at their homes.

From the extensive marble quarry, near the village, many prominent buildings in New York City have received, either for walls or trimmings, their glistening "snow-flake marble." Improved modern machinery and methods are used for getting out and dressing the marble for monumental, ornamental and general building purposes.

The Snow-Flake Lime-Works, in the same neighborhood, were established about 1865, by A. Wild & Son, who manufactured lime in an old-fashioned kiln. For several years past patent perpetual kilns have been used, in which the fires are kept burning continually, and the stone is put in at the top of the kilns as fast as the lime is drawn out at the bottom. The stone used for this purpose is an almost absolutely pure and white dolomite, its analysis showing:

Carbonate of Lime	54.62
" " Magnesia	45.04
" " Iron . . . . .	.16
Alumina . . . . .	.07
Silica . . . . .	.10

99.99 per cent.



Stephen Palmer

The quarry is about two hundred feet north of the works, and apparently contains sufficient stone for many years. The drilling is done by a steam rock drill, and the broken stone is elevated to the top of the kiln by steam-power. The works are now owned and operated by Mr. S. Wood Cornell, of Pleasantville. The capacity of the works is upward of fifty thousand bushels per year, the manufacture of which consumes about three thousand cords of wood.

Mr. Cornell is also proprietor of the lumber and coal-yard at this place, formerly owned by R. S. Haviland & Co., of which firm he was a member for thirteen years previous to his purchase of the business on January 1, 1886.

Pleasantville contains a number of stores, and also various mechanic shops. There are persons residing here who do business in New York City, going down by the Harlem Railroad in the morning and returning at night.

There are four churches in the village, the Methodist, the Presbyterian, the Episcopal and the Roman Catholic.

The origin of the Methodist Episcopal Church dates back at least to 1818, when Henry Clark and Rachel Clark, his wife, conveyed by deed to the trustees of the church, James Fish, Harvey Palmer and Henry Clark, land for the erection of a church. The pastor at the time was the Rev. Samuel Bushnell. The membership at the beginning was very small, but now numbers two hundred and forty. The present pastor is the Rev. William Colden.

The ancestors of the Palmer family in America were three brothers, of whom Abijah was the great-grandfather of Stephen Palmer. Mr. Palmer's grandfather was Stephen Palmer, who owned and occupied a portion of the Philipse Manor, and his father was Harvey Palmer, who also inherited this ground and occupied it through life, leaving it to his son John, in whose possession it still remains. Stephen Palmer was born on the old homestead, near Pleasantville, March 4, 1825. He spent his early days in the district school of his neighborhood, and afterward became engaged in farming, which he has since conducted.

He is active in the religious circles of Pleasantville, is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and has been since his eighteenth year. He has from time to time held the office of steward and trustee in that

body, and is greatly respected by his brethren for his consistent Christian life. He married, November 15, 1848, Miss Sarah Hobby, daughter of Wright Hobby. He has four children—Ambrose E., Jennie L., Henry H. C. and Wright H.

The Presbyterian Church is of more recent date, having been organized with thirteen members on January 19, 1880. The present house of worship was built the first year after the organization. The corner-stone was laid November 2, 1880, and the edifice was first used for public worship on July 17, 1881, although it was not dedicated until November 21, 1882. It has received forty members since its organization, so that it now numbers in full communion fifty-three. The church has before it an important and promising field, and is doing its work with encouraging success. Its first and only pastor is the Rev. Manfred P. Welcher.

The public schools of Pleasantville are large and flourishing. There are three practicing physicians in the place, Drs. Fowler, Swift and DeHart.

The village is distinguished as being the residence of the Rev. Alexander Van Wart, the only surviving son of Isaac Van Wart, one of the captors of Major Andre.

He is the youngest of five children, and was born September 28, 1799, at Mount Pleasant, on a farm which was purchased from the proceeds of the sale of the property conferred upon his father by the State, in consideration of the valuable services

which he had rendered the country. He received his education in the district school in Mount Pleasant, leaving it for the activities of farm-life, in which he continued during his business career. He has always been an active Christian. He first connected himself with the Methodist Episcopal Church at White Plains, in which he remained about sixty years, when he removed to Pleasantville and became a member of the church there. He has served as a local preacher for many years, and has been exceedingly active in religious work. He married Esther Fowler, daughter of Moses Fowler, of Mount Pleasant, and has three children—Fannie M., Esther and Hannah E. His great age and his consistent Christian example render his residence in Mount Pleasant a continual agency for good.

It was at Pleasantville, or near it, that "The West-



ALEXANDER VAN WART.

chester Temporary Home for Destitute Children" first established itself, and commenced its beneficent career. The institution was organized mainly through the indefatigable and self-sacrificing labors of that remarkable woman, the late Mrs. Helen M. Vincent, wife of Frank Vincent, Esq., of Tarrytown, on February 12, 1880, incorporated on February 28, 1880, and re-incorporated on June 29, 1883. The Home was soon secured and provided at Pleasantville, and the practical working of the organization was commenced. The object of it is best expressed by a clause in the certificate of incorporation, which says:

"The object of this society is to receive all such children as may be legally committed to its charge or care, in a temporary home, in which such children may be maintained, nursed and taken care of, and receive instruction, training and discipline, and be taught to labor in such useful manner as may be most instructive and conducive to the future usefulness of such children, until they shall be, under the care and direction of the society, placed in proper and suitable families and homes, as may be deemed most advisable, or be otherwise disposed of according to law. And it is the further object of this society to look after and exercise such friendly and parental guardianship over such children as they may be able and by law entitled to do until they arrive at the age of majority."

The growth of this benevolent enterprise will be indicated by a few simple facts in its history. On April 1, 1880, there were thirty-one children in the Home. On March 31, 1885, there were eighty-two. But during this time the whole number admitted was four hundred and nineteen, and the whole number discharged was three hundred and thirty-three. Of those thus discharged, one hundred and fifty-two were returned to their parents or friends, one hundred and seventy were placed in good homes, one was adopted, ten were sent to other institutions, and three died.

In the management of the institution it was found that more room and better facilities were required in order to secure the best results, and it was seen to be desirable, besides, that the house should be located at some more central point in the county. The want thus felt was generously provided for, and by voluntary contributions the society was enabled to purchase and to remove into its new quarters on North Street, in the village of White Plains, in the latter part of March, 1885.

To the great grief of her fellow-workers, and to that, indeed, of the whole community, in which her noble qualities caused her to be so loved and honored, Mrs. Vincent suddenly died, on November 10, 1883. But the work, that owed so much to her broad philanthropy and her remarkable executive

force, has since been carried on by a band of generous-hearted women, who are every way worthy of the honor and the responsibility devolved upon them.

John A. Todd.

CHAPTER IV.

OSSINING.¹

BY GEORGE JACKSON FISHER, M.D.,
Of Sing Sing, N. Y.

THE township of Ossining is in the form of an irregular rhomb, being about five miles in length (from north to south) and about two miles broad. Its area is not far from ten square miles. It is bounded on the north, and partly on the east, by the town of New Castle; on the east and south by the town of Mount Pleasant; and on the west by the Hudson River and the mouth of the Croton River. It lies thirty miles north of New York City and nearly ten miles east of the City Hall.

¹The only history of the town of Ossining which has been written and published previous to this, is that by Robert Bolton, Jr., in his "History of the County of Westchester," vol. i. pages 488-512, New York, 1848; and the same, with slight alterations and additions, in vol. ii. of the second and last edition, pages 1 to 26, New York, 1881. In both editions only twenty-five octavo pages are devoted to this town, several of which are filled with inscriptions from the tombstones in our cemeteries.

There have been published in years past a number of maps of the town of Ossining and of the village of Sing Sing. In 1862 Clark & Wagner, of Philadelphia, published a very accurate "Map of the Townships of Ossining and Mount Pleasant, Westchester County, N. Y., from Recent and Actual Survey." The scale was three inches to a mile. At one side was a map of the village of Sing Sing. The borders of this large map were illustrated with a number of engravings of prominent residences, including one of the quaint old "Lockadian Gardens," a spot which will long be remembered by the older citizens of the village. It was the place now occupied by Mr. Charles Klunder, the distinguished florist and floral decorator.

In 1881 G. W. and Walter S. Bromley, of New York City, published a quarto "Atlas of Westchester County, N. Y." The town of Ossining is represented in a map on a scale of two thousand feet to an inch; Sing Sing on a scale of three hundred and thirty feet to an inch.

In 1884 L. R. Burleigh, of Troy, N. Y., published a lithographic birds-eye view of Sing Sing, twenty by thirty inches square.

As an evidence of the extreme degree to which the speculative spirit of 1836 was carried in the matter of growth in cities and villages, we find registered in the county hall of records "a map of three hundred building-lots, eligibly situated in the village of Sing Sing, August, 1836, by Samuel S. Doughty, of New York City, surveyor." This map is of the farm of fifty-two acres, now owned by Mr. John Kane. It was laid out in plots lying on six parallel streets running north and south, which were crossed by one at right-angles, put down as Hudson Avenue. Other sections have been mapped out in village lots in a similar manner, and with equally negative results.

The town of Ossining was organized May 2, 1845.¹ It was formerly included in the town of Mount Pleasant.

The names "Ossin-ing" and "Sing Sing" are of unquestionable Indian origin. The meaning of the term "Ossining" and its derivation were given by Mr. Henry M. Schoolcraft, in 1844, at the request of General Aaron Ward, member of Congress from this district at that time. We are told that the word *Ossin*, in the Chippeway language, signifies "a stone;" that *Ossinee*, or *Ossineen*, is the plural for "stones."² This etymology was accepted, and, in May, 1845, when our town was taken from Mount Pleasant, it received the name of "Ossin-sing." In March, 1846, it was changed (by dropping the third *s*) and made to read "Ossin-ing," and still later the hyphen was omitted.

The name of the village has a more ancient origin and use. In the early part of the seventeenth century this locality was occupied by a tribe of the Mo-



THE CROTON AQUEDUCT ARCH AT SING SING.

hegan Indians, known as "Sint Sincks." They owned the territory as far north as the Croton River, then called the "Kitchewan," the tribe inhabiting above this stream being the "Kitchawongs." An Indian village occupied the present site of Sing Sing, and bore the name "Sink Sink." The Kill-brook was called "Sint-Sinck," or, at least, it is so written on a map which bears the date of 1609.

In or about the year 1680 a patent was granted by the British crown to one Vredryck Flypsen, or, as afterward written, "Frederick Philipse," permitting him "to freely buy" the district of country extending from Spuyten Duyvel Creek northward to the Croton River. In the course of five or six years he secured the whole region specified. The last purchase of land from the Indians was made August 24,

1685, being the "tract or parcel of land commonly called Sinck Sinck." Frederick Philipse first spelled the name as two words "Cinque Singte" and afterwards as one word, with the same letters, but without the second capital. Thus it is seen the stream, the tribe and their original village, all were called by a name the sound of which is expressed in the various renderings above cited, and which the present name perpetuates. It will be found variously written on old maps and in ancient documents—Cinque Singte, Cinquesingte, Sink Sink, Sinck Sinck, Sin Sinck, Sint Sinck and Sin-sing. Ours is the only village in the world that bears this musical name.

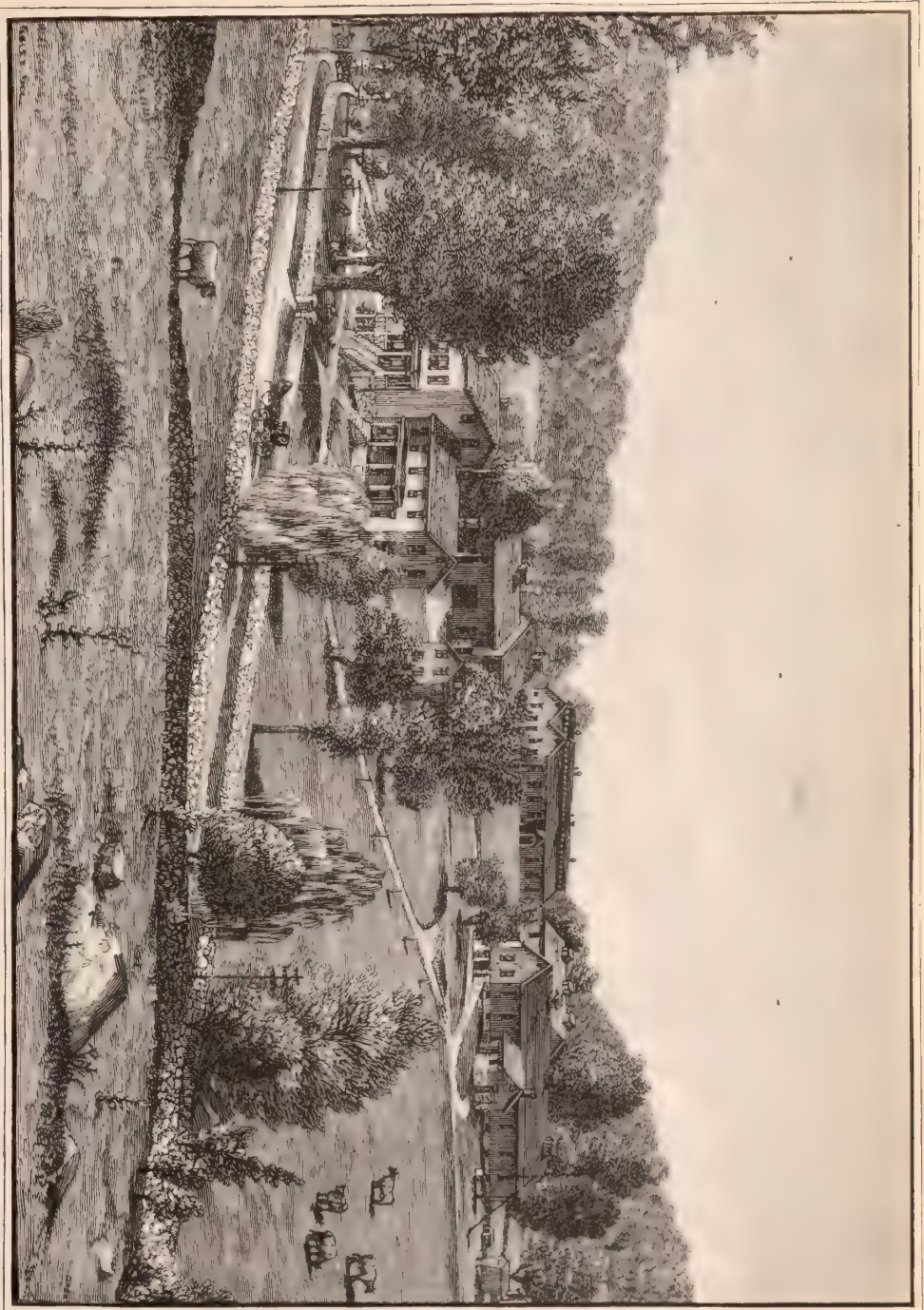
TOPOGRAPHY.—The town lies on the eastern slope of the Hudson, the rock and land rising more or less abruptly from the river margin, until, at a distance of half a mile back, it reaches an altitude of three hundred feet; and still farther from the river the hills are from five hundred to nearly one thousand feet above tide-water. There is but very little level land in the whole township. At different elevations there are beautiful terraces, or small plateaus, which afford delightful sites for building. It contains no lakes or ponds worthy of mention. It is quite free from swamps and marshes. There are no very large streams in the town, though there are several fine brooks, which vary greatly in size at different seasons of the year. The town is separated at the eastern border from Mount Pleasant by the Pocantico River, which is a fine stream of water. The northern extremity of the town, above the railroad, is washed by the Croton River for a distance of over a mile. The Croton Aqueduct traverses the entire length of the town, crossing the Kill-brook, at Sing Sing, by means of a magnificent granite arch, of eighty-eight feet span, and at an elevation above the brook of over one hundred feet. "The Croton Arch" is a very striking feature of our village. The new aqueduct, now in course of construction, will pass subterraneously through the whole length of the eastern border of the township.

The prevailing rocks are an imperfect granite, and a gneiss varying much in stratification and solidity. Many boulders are everywhere to be found, some of which are of great size. Most of them are fragments of our own rock-beds, while many are of foreign material, having found their way here during the drift period, of which they are not the only remaining evidence. The surface of most of our rocks are well polished and furrowed by the same agency.

There are several places in the town where the dolomitic limestone, which exists in several localities in Westchester County, crops out; but it is only quarried to any considerable extent on the New York State Prison grounds. It is a species of marble, and bears the name of the locality from which it is taken, as the Sing Sing, or Pleasantville, or Eastchester marble. It differs from common marble in being a bibasic mineral. Ordinary marble is a simple car-

¹ Session Laws, 1845, Chap. 30, Sec. 5.

² N. Y. Hist. Soc. Proc., 1844, p. 101. Trans. Am. Antiq. Soc., vol. ii. p. 70.



"BRIARCLIFF FARM."
PROPERTY OF JAMES STILLMAN,
SING SING, N. Y.



bonate of lime, while this is a carbonate of lime and a carbonate of magnesium. It is, for the most part, granular and readily disintegrates by exposure to atmospheric influences. It is this quality that renders it unsuitable as a building stone for permanent structures. Much of this marble, however, is very compact, crystalline and solid, making an excellent building material, and has heretofore been largely employed for this purpose.

The extensive buildings erected by the State, for the prisons and shops at Sing Sing, including the large Doric structure formerly used as a prison for female convicts, were all made from these quarries. Grace Church on Broadway, the United States Sub-Treasury building in Wall Street, New York, formerly the United States Custom-House, were also built of Sing Sing marble. To these can be added the city hall and the hall of records in the city of Albany, two very substantial and noble structures. Some of the finest residences of Sing Sing were also built of this material. The "Robinson Mansion," the "Ward Mansion" (now the residence of Mrs. Henry J. Baker), the "Smull Mansion" (the present residence of Mr. Francis Larkin) and the residence of Mr. L. M. Cobb. The Mount Pleasant Academy and the First National Bank of Sing Sing are also built from the same material from these quarries. There are many beautiful walls, in front of private grounds, "stepping-blocks," hitching-posts, etc., which adorn our village, all of this white marble. Nearly all of these blocks have been quarried and hewn by convict labor.

The marble has also been put to two other important uses. It has been extensively shipped as a flux for the reduction of iron-ore; and thousands of tons have been burned in kilns, on the prison grounds, in the manufacture of builders' lime, of which it is said to be an excellent article. Thus the quarries are seen to constitute an important industry at this State institution. It was with a view of developing and utilizing this marble that the State convicts were transferred to Sing Sing in the year 1825.

The result of sixty years of convict labor has been to leave the grounds back of the prison in a very rough and unsightly condition, with great excavations and enormous heaps of *débris*.

The treatises of Prof. Dana and others, who have written on mineralogy, attribute many interesting minerals to this locality. The writer of this chapter has resided a third of a century at this place, and, notwithstanding the fact of his personal interest in the subject and his frequent excursions to the quarries, he has failed to find more than a moiety of the minerals credited to this place. If they formerly existed here, the locality is now exhausted. Fine specimens are still found of fibrous and radiated tremolite, cubical and octahedral crystals of iron pyrite, asbestos, calcite and poor specimens of malachite and azurite.

There are two very interesting dykes of granite to be seen in these quarries; one of them is from two to eight feet broad, with sharp, well-defined margins.

THE SILVER AND COPPER-MINES OF SING SING AND SPARTA.—There are several perpendicular and horizontal shafts in and about Sing Sing, which deserve a fuller description than has been given in Bolton's "History of the County of Westchester." Less than half a page is devoted to them.¹ At page 509 he incidentally mentions Colonel James, "director of the silver-mines in this place," as having command of a regiment, in the year 1774, which was stationed at Sing Sing, which, upon the breaking out of hostilities, was ordered to Boston.

"The silver-mine" is located within a few yards of the north wall of the prison. The shaft remained open until within a few years of the present time, when it was covered by a branch track of the railroad which passes into the prison-yard. This shaft was about one hundred and twenty feet in extent. The mine was first worked by an English company, as we are told, with considerable success. A smelting furnace was erected near the outlet of the Sing Sing Kill. There the ore was reduced and the silver made into ingots for exportation to England. The operations of this mining company were suddenly terminated by the breaking out of the Revolutionary War, never again to be resumed. There are two references to these mines in the office of the Secretary of State, at Albany, the first of which is as follows: "No. 54. Stephen Lyon, Westchester County, town of Mount Pleasant, about 100 rods south of the discoverer's dock, and about 80 rods south of the farmers' dock at Sing Sing landing, upon lands of John F. Marsh, (gold and silver). Nov. 14, 1820. 41. 204."

The second entry reads—"No. 57. Stephen Lyon, Westchester County, town of Mount Pleasant, additional vein south of the mine, which is now on file, extending one mile south of said mine (gold and silver). Jan. 30, 1824. 41. 296."

This last entry probably has connection with the formation of a company, chiefly composed of residents of Sing Sing, which was organized under the superintendence of the late Mr. George W. Cartwright, a civil engineer, in the year 1824, by whom the mine was re-opened. In order to inspire increased confidence in the minds of investors in the silver-mining stocks, and to show the people that the precious metal had formerly existed in these mines, having been worked successfully, and only abandoned on account of the Revolutionary War, which had terminated so disastrously to the British arms, that English capitalists would not dare to resume their lucrative operations, the following certificates were published by the American, or, more locally speaking, the Sing Sing Mining Company.

¹ P. 504 of vol. i., 1st ed., 1848; p. 20, vol. ii., 2d ed., 1881, repeated *verbatim*.

"SING SING, March 3, 1824.

"This is to certify that at the commencement of the opening of the old silver-mine I was occasionally employed at and about the silver mine, as it was called in Sing Sing, for two or three years. I never went into the shaft to examine the veins, which I was informed were four in number, and resembled, in their direction, the branches of a tree, the largest of which I understood was about twelve inches over. I have seen, at a time, not far from thirty kegs of the ore in the storehouse. One of the miners extracted from what I judged to be about a pound of ore, nine shillings of pure silver. According to the best of my recollection, there were twenty-five persons constantly employed about the mine, sixteen of whom were considered the first-rate miners from Europe, all concurring in the opinion that the mine was very rich. The mine was worked day and night to the last with great eagerness.

"JAMES M'CORD."

"SING SING, March 4, 1824.

"I do hereby certify that I well recollect the old silver-mine in Sing-Sing was worked day and night by Colonel James (a British officer) until the battle of Bunker's Hill. The miners were considered first-rate judges, and all, with one accord, pronounced the mine very rich.

"DAVID HITCHCOCK."

"SING-SING, March 5, 1824.

"I do hereby certify that I was personally acquainted with Albert Auser, of the town of Mount Pleasant, deceased, and believe him to have been a man of truth and respectability. I have heard him speak frequently of the Sing Sing mine. He informed me he was the first person who discovered it. He found a piece of silver on the top of a rock, which he had cut out with a chisel. The mine was worked for some years under the superintendence of Colonel James and he considered it as very valuable.

"JOSEPH HUNT."

Notwithstanding the flattering opinions given in these documents of the silver-mine, the Sing Sing Company was never able to reap any profit from their new explorations. After penetrating for some distance, they found that the character of the rocks suddenly changed, and the silver vein was entirely lost. They then gave up the search.

Still another attempt was made to open up the old mine. A company known as "The Sing Sing Silver-Mining Company" was formed, which was incorporated April 16, 1857, Dr. Benjamin Brandreth, General Aaron Ward and the Hon. John T. Hoffman being the charter members. The capital of the company was one hundred thousand dollars, with authority to increase it to one million dollars. They drew the water out of the mine, and then, seeming to think that the appearances were not sufficiently promising, they stopped operations.

A gentleman who resided in Yonkers, named Samson Simpson, is said to have owned a set of silver spoons made of ore extracted from this mine, and another gentleman, residing in New Jersey, is said to have possessed a silver pitcher also of the silver mined in Sing Sing.

THE COPPER-MINE IN SPARTA.—A vein of copper-ore was discovered by accident, in the year 1820, on the high marble cliff in Sparta about eighty feet above tide-water, three hundred feet east of the Hudson River and about one hundred rods south of the State Prison. The appearances seemed so favorable for the existence of copper in paying quantities, that a company was formed to mine for the metal. It was incorporated on the 12th of April, 1824, with a capital of fifty thousand dollars, Edward Kemeys, Henry Waller,

Aaron Ward, George W. Cartwright and Amos Dunning being the charter members. In the year 1827 they sunk a shaft in the cliff to a depth of about thirty feet, from which, probably, three tons of ore were taken up. From a series of assays it appeared that the specimens yielded from twenty-five to seventy-four per cent. of pure copper. In the fall of 1827 an adit was opened by the company at the level of the river at high-water, for about four hundred feet into the cliff, where it met the perpendicular shaft, which was now sunk to the depth of eighty feet in order to effect the junction. Afterwards the company made other excavations, the whole amounting to five hundred and thirty feet. Beyond the "pocket" which they struck near the top of the ground, they found nothing to reward their search. The company's money, which was not very ample at the start, gave out at this point. An appeal to the public to invest in the enterprise met with no satisfactory response and the work was abandoned.

In the circular issued by the company to attract investors, it was claimed that the indications were unmistakable, that there was an abundance of copper-ore in the immediate location of their mine, and they mentioned, as a proof, the assertion that oysters and clams along the margin of the cliff were so strongly impregnated with copper as to be unfit for use. But the most certain and satisfactory evidence, they claimed, was the existence of large, regular, well-defined lodes or veins, found in the locality, which were traceable for miles, and, in particular, a lode within thirty feet of, and nearly parallel to, that which they were working. These two veins were converging and would, they thought, have united within thirty or forty feet below their excavations; and, in that event, they expected to find large mineral treasures at the conjunction.

The operations of the company were conducted under the direction of Joseph Tregaskis, an experienced miner of Cornwall, England. The company had a lease of the ground for forty years.

About twenty-five years ago Mr. Kemeys had the perpendicular shaft cleared of the rubbish which had been pitched into it from time to time. He soon became discouraged, and abandoned the "copper-mine," the working of which will probably never again be undertaken. There are one or two tunnels to be seen in Spring Valley, about two and one-half miles northeast of the village of Sing Sing, one of which is in a ridge of the same dolomitic limestone as that of the prison quarries, excepting that it is more sandy and crumbling. Tradition tells us that they were made by the same prospecting explorers that opened the shafts near the river, already described.

EARLY HISTORY OF SING SING.—At the time of the sales of the lands in this vicinity by the Commissioners of Forfeitures, in 1785, just a century ago, there were but three dwelling-houses in Sing Sing. We have already seen that it was, not long before, a mere





Henry D. McCord

Indian village. A stone "mansion," probably only one story high, then stood where the Croton Aqueduct meets Main Street, which not only served Moses Ward as a dwelling, but also as a fortress for defense against the Indians. While writing this sketch, I have been informed by Mr. Daniel Delevan Mangam that he well remembers hearing his grandmother relate her personal knowledge of the Indians—of their going forth in their canoes in the mornings from the Kill-brook to the Hudson, and of their return in the evenings, after the day's fishing and hunting was over, to rest in the valley or to sleep in the great cave of the Kill, which the writer well remembers thirty-odd years ago to have been of considerable capacity, but which has rapidly crumbled, filled and almost vanished during this period of time.

The rude little diagrammatic map here presented exhibits the relative positions and number of acres of the farms purchased by the early settlers at the time of the manor sales, when Sing Sing was a mere name for the locality where, in time, a village was to grow. The proportions are not drawn with accuracy. The corporation boundary and the location of the prison are traced to make the map more readily understood. The word "do" beneath a name signifies that the person who bought the land from the Commissioners of Forfeitures had previously been its tenant. When such was not the case, the name of the tenant is put below that of the purchaser and inclosed in parentheses.

Besides the names on this map, among the other early settlers were the Ackers, Millers, Storms, Bayles, McCords, Ryders, Yale and others. The descendants of almost all of these families are still quite numerous in our community.

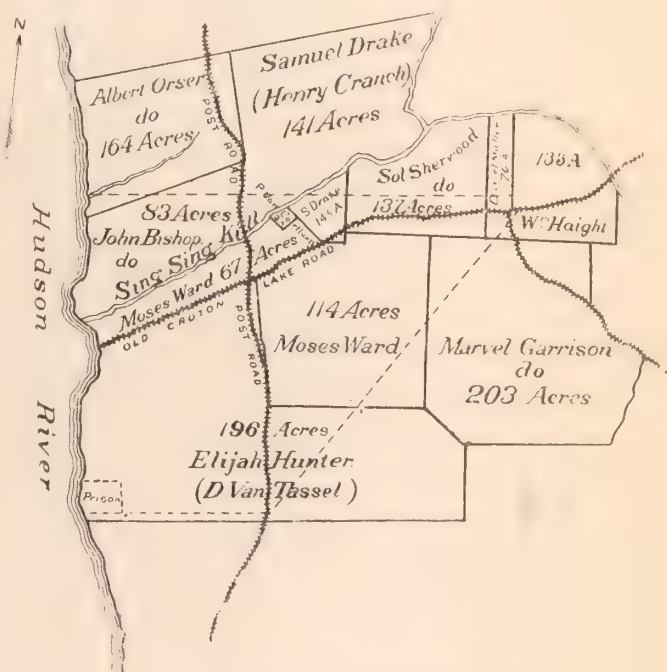
The sources of information for the above statements are the two editions of Bolton's history of the county and a "Historical Sketch," by Rev. Alex. Watson, published in a pamphlet (8vo., pp. 46, printed at Scarborough in 1876), entitled "Centennial Anniversary of American Independence, at Sing Sing, N. Y., July 4th, 1876, etc."

The McCord family, which has long been known in Westchester County, is of Scotch origin, and the numerous representatives of it are the descendants of four brothers, who came to this country prior to the Revolution. Of these brothers, one, Benjamin, was the father of Jordan McCord, whose son Lewis was the father of the subject of this sketch.

Henry D. McCord was born at Sing Sing, September 15, 1836. In his boyhood he attended the public school of his native village, but having lost his mother at the early age of twelve years, he was thrown upon his own resources, and first found employment

as a clerk in a grocery store, receiving two dollars a month and his board. After remaining at this place for eight years, he entered the establishment of William D. Mangam, 92 Broad Street, New York, and remained there till the death of Mr. Mangam in 1870. He then went into business on his own account at the same locality, and has continued it till the present time with energy and success.

In 1875 Mr. McCord purchased an estate near the south limits of the village of Sing Sing, which has since been his residence. He is also largely interested in real estate in various parts of the village. Independent in politics, Mr. McCord has never sought for official honors, and has declined to accept nominations when their acceptance would have been equivalent to election. A close attention to his busi-



EARLY FARM MAP OF SING SING.

ness has rendered it both extensive and profitable, and his house holds a good position among the mercantile firms of the city. He is known as one who enters upon any enterprise with energy and perseverance, and is a good representative of the thorough-going and active business man.

Mr. McCord married Esther E., daughter of Richard Noe. They are the parents of four children, Harry W., William M., Minnie E. and Clara B.¹

A member of the David B. Moses family writes: "The question is often asked, why this branch of the Moses family are not Jews, as that race has generally claimed to own all of that name since the time when Moses led the Israelites through the wilderness. Al-

¹ This sketch of the McCord family was contributed by the Editor.

though long since separated from the Hebrews, they may yet possess some of their peculiar qualities, such as the love of money and the absence of intemperance. Who ever saw a Jew that was a drunkard or a pauper?" The tradition of the family is that about 1620 a young Jewish gentleman married a young lady of the Gentiles, whose influence induced him to change his religion, and thus caused him to be expelled from the synagogue, and this made it necessary for him to labor like other Gentiles, so he chose to be a blacksmith, joined the Pilgrims and came to America in 1630. He settled at Dorchester, Mass., and it is said that the anvil which he brought from the old world is still in possession of some of his descendants with its history marked upon it. He is probably the John Moses who is mentioned in the town records of Simsbury, Conn., as having left England in 1630 and settled at Dorchester, Mass., and came to Simsbury in 1667. Mark Moses, who died at Epsom, N. H., October 2, 1789, aged eighty-six, was the father of Aaron Moses, whose son William was the father of David B. Moses. William Moses married Susan, daughter of David Boynton, who was one of the first settlers of Laconia, N. H., and whose genealogy traces back to Bartholomew De Boynton, who lived in England about 1067. His descendants, William and John Boynton, were among the first to establish a colony at Rowley, Mass., by shipping to this country several lots of live-stock and farming implements, in 1637, and came themselves in 1638. One of the family, Sir Matthew Boynton, was one of the company with Oliver Cromwell and John Hampden, who started for America in 1637, but were stopped by an order of Council, and thus changed the course of England's history. William and Susan Moses were the parents of seven sons, Charles, Nathaniel, Aaron, David B., John M., Hiram W. and William. Of these, Charles, the eldest son, died in 1866, leaving two children, Charles H. and Lizzie W. Aaron lived in Hackensack, N. J., where he died in 1883; his children, John M. and Susan F., died before him. John M. died at his residence, Flemington, N. J., 1877. Nathaniel is now living in Compton, N. H. Hiram W. resides at Loudon, in the same State, and William is now in business in New York.

David B. Moses, was born at Gilmanton, N. H. September 29, 1809. After spending his youth in the way that farmers' boys generally do, by working on the farm and improving every opportunity to get an education, he went to Boston, where he spent a few years, principally in the employ of the old book publishing firm of Wells & Lilly. From Boston he went to New York in 1834, and with his brother William, started in the provision trade under the firm name of D. B. & W. Moses, which he prosecuted with good success till 1864, when, having acquired a fair competency, he retired from active business. This firm began in a small way, but it soon became very extensive, as it formed connections with the various points in the west where the packing-business was principally

done. While at that early age of the provision trade no one thought of selling bacon for export, they made the first sale of twenty thousand pounds to the wine-merchants, Messrs. Bokers, to ship to Bremen. They also made about the first shipment of a few thousand pounds to England, which at that time was thought a very hazardous thing to do. At the present time it is no uncommon sight to see a steamer clearing for Liverpool, with over half a million pounds on board. This contrast shows the great progress made in that business since they commenced. Mr. Moses was one of the gentlemen who started the Irving National Bank, the Irving Insurance Company, and the Irving Savings Bank, and took a very active and earnest interest in their management for some twenty-five years, and was also one of the original organizers of the New York Produce Exchange.

Five of the seven brothers were engaged at one time in the same business in New York, and two as farmers in New Hampshire. In 1848 two of the brothers, Charles and Aaron, commenced business under the firm name of C. & A. Moses, and so continued till 1860, when Charles retired and Aaron took as partner John M. Moses, another brother, with the firm name of A. & J. M. Moses. These firms have all left an honorable record as business men, of which their families may justly feel proud.

Some twenty-five years ago Mr. Moses purchased a place in Westchester County, near the village of Sing Sing, which he has added to from time to time. This is a part of the farm in the Manor of Phillipsburg, which was sold by the commissioners of forfeiture to James McCord in 1784. In 1868 to 1870 he built a very fine residence of white marble, taken from the prison quarries, which he now occupies as a summer residence. In 1871 and 1872 he travelled with his family through pretty much all the places of interest in the old world, and while at Rome, he was presented to Pope Pius the Ninth, "whom he took to be a very fine and amiable old gentleman." While at Naples he ascended Mount Vesuvius, and also made one of a party of about one hundred Americans who joined in an excursion to the ruins of Pompeii, in company with General Sherman, Colonel Audenreid, and Colonel Grant. While at the ruins they witnessed the excavation of a building by order of the Italian Government for their entertainment. All relics of any note found in the building were carefully preserved by the Italian Government authorities, who were present. This excursion was planned in honor of General Sherman and his associates. While in London, Mr. Moses obtained from the College of Heraldry, the old coat-of-arms of the Boynton and Moses families. He was married in 1840 to Miss Jeannet A. Campbell, who died in 1877. Her mother was a Kingsland, and a descendant of the Kingslands, of Lodi, N. J., whose ancestors first located the tract of land extending from the Hackensack to the Passaic Rivers. He has had five children, four of whom died



David B. Moses

very young; the one now living is a daughter, Isabel.

She was married in 1871 to Du Plesses M. Helm, a lawyer who is now engaged in a very successful practice in the city of New York. They have three children, David B., Jeanette I. and Florence A.¹

FARMS OCCUPYING GROUND WHERE SING SING NOW STANDS.—The ground upon which the corporation of Sing Sing now stands was, after the sale of the Phillipse estate by the Commissioners of Forfeitures, occupied chiefly by the farms of John Bishop, Moses Ward and Elijah Hunter. Moses Ward's land consisted of two farms, one containing sixty-seven acres and the other one hundred and fourteen. The first-mentioned farm was a long, narrow strip of land, having the Sing Sing Kill for its northern boundary, and a line which would have been nearly coincident with Main Street for its southern boundary. It extended from the Hudson River on the west to a point some distance beyond the Highland turnpike on the east.

The second farm of Moses Ward was almost in the shape of a square, with its northwestern corner, where it touched his smaller farm, cut off. Its western line extended along the Highland turnpike about as far as Broad Avenue, and then ran due east until it joined the farm of Marvel Garrison, the greater part of which is now the property of Henry J. Baker. The line then ran due north about as far as to Clinton Avenue of the present day, and from that point ran west, in a line not deviating much from the above-mentioned avenue, until it struck his own smaller farm,

On the north side of the Sing Sing Kill, with the Kill as its southern boundary, was the farm of John Bishop, containing eighty-three acres. Its eastern boundary followed the Post-road to a point a short distance south of St. Augustine's Roman Catholic Church. From that point the line ran a little south of west to the Hudson River, which was the western boundary. This farm embraced the greater part of the district known as Strangtown, and extended only a short distance beyond the present northern boundary of the village. Located to the north of the Bishop place was the farm of Albert Orser, containing one hundred and sixty-four acres. The village boundary takes in a small tract of land situated in the southwestern corner of this farm.

The farm of Elijah Hunter was of very irregular shape. It contained one hundred and ninety-six acres. Main Street, from the Hudson River to the Post-road, where Moses Ward's larger farm commenced, was nearly coincident with its northern boundary. The line then ran south almost coincident with the Post-road, until it had proceeded as far as the southwestern corner of Aaron Ward's farm, when it ran east along the southern boundary of Ward's farm, terminating with his southeastern corner. It

then took a general direction southeast for a short distance. The southern boundary ran due west a very short distance beyond the southern line of the village, and the Hudson River formed the western boundary.

The corporation line would also have taken in portions of the following farms: The southwestern corner of the one hundred and forty-one acre tract of Samuel Drake, lying north of the Kill and east of the Post-road; a tract of fourteen and one-half acres, also belonging to Samuel Drake, lying on the south side of the Kill, adjoining the eastern boundary of Aaron Ward's smaller farm; the southern part of the one hundred and thirty-seven acres of Solomon Sherwood, located south of the Kill, and east of Drake's smaller tract; the southern part of the seventy acres of Daniel Miller, lying east of Solomon Sherwood's land, and extending from the Kill as their northern boundary almost to the Croton road as their southern boundary; a very small portion of the farm of one hundred and thirty-three acres of William Haight, in which the junction of the road from Pleasantville with the Croton turnpike was located; and the western portion of the two hundred and three acres of Marvel Garrison, which lay east of Moses Ward's and Elijah Hunter's land, and which is now owned almost in its entirety by Henry J. Baker.

A small piece of land containing two acres, belonging to Pierre Van Cortlandt, was situated on the south bank of the Kill, between the farm of Moses Ward and the small tract of Samuel Drake.

The little map is intended to show the relative position of these early farms.

Among the well known citizens who have made their summer residence in Westchester County, while their business life is identified with New York City, a prominent place must be given to Orlando B. Potter, late representative of the eleventh congressional district, in the Congress of the United States. Descended from the purest line of New England ancestry, he is a lineal descendant of John Potter, one of the settlers of New Haven in 1639 and one of the signers of the New Haven covenant. His grandfather, Abel Potter, was a native of Hamden and afterwards resident of Northford, New Haven County, Conn. His father, Samuel Potter, was born at Hamden and lived at Northford and upon arriving at manhood removed to Charlemont, Franklin County, Mass., in 1819, carrying his effects with two teams of oxen. He married Sophia, daughter of Samuel Rice and great-granddaughter of Moses Rice, the first settler of Charlemont, who was killed by the Indians, June 11, 1755, near a fort which he had erected to protect the settlement. The young couple made their home on a hillside farm, which overlooked the valley of the Deerfield. In this, their remote town, they passed their lives, and the hundred miles that separated them from Boston, was, in those early times,

¹ This sketch of David B. Moses was contributed by the Editor.

almost as great a distance as now separates the most distant portions of our country. Here they reared a family of ten children, eight of whom lived to mature years. The father of this family died at the age of eighty-six and the mother at the age of seventy-two.

Orlando B. Potter was the second son and third child, and was born in Charlemont, March 10, 1823. His older brother being absent at school or college, Orlando was the oldest child at home when he was from ten to sixteen years of age. As his father was often absent from home, engaged upon public business, the care of the stock and farm devolved upon the young man, who took the lead in growing and harvesting the crops and in the winter leading his younger brothers and sisters to school, assisting them in their lessons while learning his own. To these early responsibilities may be attributed the habits of self-reliance and control which have distinguished him in later years. At the age of sixteen he obtained permission from his parents to prepare himself for college, and he resolved to do this by his own exertions without adding to their burdens. By working upon the farm in summer and attending school during the winter months he completed his preparation and entered Williams College in August, 1841. He maintained a high standing in his class, but his health failed on account of the great change from active outdoor life to confinement and close application to study. He left college in his sophomore year, and, after a fishing trip at sea, obtained employment in teaching school at Dennis, Cape Cod, where he remained until the spring of 1845. Having resolved upon entering Dane Law School at Cambridge in the coming August, he engaged to teach a class of young ladies, and added to his slender means by hiring three acres of ground which he cultivated as a garden. Upon the 1st of August, having marketed the products of his garden and closed his school, he found himself with fifty barrels of potatoes for which there was no market in Dennis.

These he took upon a fishing schooner to Provincetown, at the extreme end of the Cape, and disposed of them by peddling from house to house. He entered the law school of Harvard College September, 1845, and continued his law studies at Cambridge and in the office of the late Charles D. Thomas, of Boston, till April, 1848, during which time he taught two terms of three months each, one at Dennis and one at the academy in his native town, at which he prepared for college. He was admitted to the bar in Boston, February 12, 1848. Shortly after he opened an office in Court Square, and to make the most of his time he took board and opened an office also at South Reading, Middlesex County, at which he did business in the evening each day after his return from Boston. The business placed in his hands was conducted with such active energy that his practice rapidly increased both in city and country. The result of the first year was an income of three thousand dollars, and he con-

tinued his practice until May 1, 1853, at which time he had accumulated ten thousand dollars, besides having assisted his two sisters and a younger brother to attend school, and repaid with interest the small amount which his father had been able to advance towards his education. October 28, 1850, he married Martha G. Wiley, daughter of Benjamin B. Wiley, Esq., of South Reading, and to her wisdom and prudence, devotion and support, he attributes his subsequent success not less than to his own efforts.

In 1851 he became connected with a lawsuit involving a contract for manufacture of a newly invented sewing-machine. This proved to be one of the most important events of his business life. His clients, seeing his interest in their invention and success, proposed to admit him as a partner with an equal interest upon most favorable terms.

Accepting the proposition, he embarked all his savings in the manufacture of this machine in Boston, while he continued to work at his profession. This manufacturing and consequent commercial business developed so rapidly that he removed to New York, to direct it from that centre, where he has resided since 1853. The sewing-machine business was soon afterward incorporated as a stock company, and Mr. Potter became its president and has remained so to the present time. His unshaken faith in the progress and future development of New York City caused him to invest largely in real estate, and there have been few seasons when his workmen have not been adding to the taxable property, beauty and business capacity of the city. He is now engaged in completing one of the largest and finest structures in the city, eleven stories high and entirely fire-proof, at the corner of Park Row and Beekman Street, which furnishes over two hundred separate offices above the first story. To it the public have, by common consent, given his own name.

In 1869 he purchased a large farm upon the Hudson, near Sing Sing. Here he established his summer residence and has indulged, to the fullest extent, his love for agriculture and its advancement. His farm occupies nearly five hundred acres, upon which he keeps two hundred cows and a large herd of young stock of his own raising. In summer he personally directs and participates in the work of the farm and the care of the stock, while coming daily to the city to attend to his business interests.

In political life Mr. Potter was originally connected with the Whig party and voted with it till 1860, when he cast his vote with Mr. Lincoln. In 1861 he attached himself to the Democratic party, and since that time has been its staunch supporter. Upon the 14th of August, 1861, he laid before the Secretary of the Treasury (Chase) a plan which must ever rank him among the benefactors of the country. This plan was for the establishment of our national banking system and a national currency, and its wisdom and importance are fully recognized at the present



U. S. Potter

time, when, instead of a fluctuating and uncertain State currency, we find the notes of the National Banks secured beyond the possibility of failure, and circulating with equal value from Maine to California and from Oregon to Texas.

How clearly Mr. Potter comprehended this system and its results, an extract from his letter to Secretary Chase, written August 14, 1861, urging its adoption may show. In that communication he said: "The objects which will be secured by this plan are: *First*. It is obvious that the bills thus secured will have, in whatever state issued, a national circulation, and be worth the same in all parts of the country; nay, these bills would be worth *their face* wherever American commerce is known. A ready medium of exchange would be always at hand throughout the country and between all parts of it, and all fluctuations and trouble in this respect would be forever ended.

"*Second*.—The fact that in this way banks and bankers could obtain a national circulation for their bills would make United States stocks eagerly sought after by them, and their price would be *always maintained at or above par*, though they bore only a low rate of interest. Four per cents could never fall below par after this system is fairly understood and at work.

"*Third*.—This will enable capitalists in the older States, by investing in United States stocks, to engage in banking and furnish a currency to the younger States which will be equally serviceable to them as if issued in their own States. A bill thus secured issued in Boston will circulate as well in Oregon as if issued in Oregon, and probably better."

Mr. Potter is an earnest advocate of the right and duty of local self-government for municipalities, subject only to the Constitution and General Laws of the State. He has devoted much time and effort to secure this to the city of New York. He took a leading part in securing the passage of laws under which the city debt is being refunded at a low rate of interest and put upon a course of extinguishment. It was largely owing to his influence that the law for the destruction of the Forty-second Street Reservoir was declared unconstitutional by the court and repealed by the Legislature and the reservoir saved for the city.

His name is intimately connected with the charitable institutions of New York. He has besides a Home for Poor Children upon his own farm, and supplied from his garden and dairy, under his personal care. Perhaps the secret of his success may be found in the fact that he has the complete mastery and control of all the details of his business. The cultivation of his fields and the construction of his warehouses and buildings are alike under his supervision, while in the many important law cases which have come under his care he has proved himself to be foremost among his equals, and his persevering industry and undaunted courage have made the humble farmer's

boy the man of wealth, high social standing and political honor.

Mr. Potter's wife, Martha G. Wiley, died February, 1879, leaving one son, Frederick, who is a member of the New York bar, and three daughters, Martha, Mary (wife of Walter Greer, Esq.), and Blanche.

Mr. Potter was married a second time, April 13, 1880, to Miss Mary Kate Linsly, daughter of Dr. Jared Linsly, of New York, who, like Mr. Potter's father, was a native of Northford, Conn.

The election of Mr. Potter to represent the eleventh congressional district was a worthy recognition of the professional and business eminence to which he had attained by long years of active industry and energy. From the day when he took his seat in the halls of national legislation, the weight of his influence and the power of his reasoning and eloquence were devoted to the advancement of the business interests of the nation. Possessing much oratorical power, his speeches never failed to attract attention and command respect. With his thorough knowledge of monetary affairs it is not strange that his principal efforts were directed to the consideration of the national financial system, and one of his ablest speeches was delivered in the House of Representatives January 15, 1885, on "Refunding the Bonded Debt of the United States." He was also influential in extending the free-delivery system, thus adding greatly to the usefulness and efficiency of the postal service; and in short it may be justly said that during the whole of his congressional career he was the worthy representative of the class to which he belongs, the eminent and successful business men of the great metropolis.

The scenery at Sing Sing, indeed, from the hills and terraces of every portion of the town of Ossining, is extremely beautiful. There is no portion of the valley of the Hudson River more picturesque than this. The broad expanse of the Tappan Zee, and of the Haverstraw Bay, divided by the long and narrow peninsula known to the world as "Teller's Point," of Revolutionary fame; the Palisades, far to the south; the triple-headed mountain, known as the "High Taun," rising eight hundred and fifty feet above the river level, in the northwest; with the distant domes of the rugged Highlands far to the northward, embraces a stretch of over thirty miles, with flourishing villages and hamlets here and there, all in full view; the bosom of the noble river is whitened with the sails of a multitude of craft of every sort, from the delicately modeled private yacht, the fishing smack, the plain, old-fashioned market sloop or schooner, to the more pretentious coasting brig, and sometimes the old ships-of-the-line, on their way to West Point, or on their return; to these must be added the ever-moving steam craft, tugs, ferry-boats, propellers, and the floating palaces, for which our river is famous. These are some of the elements, ever-varying, which combine to make a scene of indescribable and unsurpassed loveliness, which gives an attractiveness to

the homes in Sing Sing, unknown to the dwellers of most portions of our beautiful country. It is not surprising that M. De Tocqueville, when standing on the eastern heights of Sing Sing, gazing upon this scene, burst forth in the following strain, "I must except the view of the Bay of Naples, out of deference to the opinion of the civilized world, but with that exception, the world has not such scenery."

There are few things that show to a greater extent the rapid increase of wealth in the country and the elevation of popular taste than the immense amounts expended for floral decorations, which are used alike to adorn the festive board, the social gathering, the public banquet and to decorate the resting-places of the dead.

Charles Frederick William Klunder, who at the present time is the acknowledged leader in the business of florist and decorator, is a native of Prussia and was born in the village of Jingst, on the island of Rugen, January 3, 1838. He early developed a passionate love of flowers and was accustomed when a boy to decorate the humble home with the wild flowers which grew in the vicinity. He soon entered the employ of a florist in his native country and gained a thorough knowledge of the business. Being naturally of an ambitious disposition, he resolved to seek a home in the New World and landed in New York on the 16th of April, 1866. The first thing he did after obtaining lodgings was to advertise for a situation as assistant gardener and he shortly obtained a position as gardener with Mr. Edward Ridley, of the well known firm of dry goods merchants. The skill and taste which he exhibited in preparing some bouquets for a church festival, so pleased Mr. Ridley that he made him a present of twenty dollars, the first money he ever received in the business, in which he has since become famous.

Anxious to find a wider sphere, he became acquainted with Mr. Pilat, who at that time held a prominent position in connection with Central Park. Mr. Pilat had recently become the possessor of a place at Sing Sing formerly owned by Mr. Locke, who had expended so much money in beautifying the premises that they had acquired the name of the "Lockadian Gardens." It was proposed that Mr. Klunder should lease this place and engage largely in the business of raising flowers for the New York market. It was thus taken for a year and the work of transforming it into an extensive floral establishment at once commenced. At the end of the year, Mr. Klunder purchased the property and has since made this his home. In 1875, the premises were enlarged by the purchase of adjoining land, and the whole is now occupied with an extensive series of green houses covering an area of more than sixty thousand square feet. Mr. Klunder first opened a store of his own in New York, October 11, 1869, in what was known as the "Hecksler House" on Broadway between Twentieth and Twenty-first Streets, but afterwards removed to his

present store directly opposite. Here is exhibited the finest display of cut flowers to be found in the city, offering a spectacle which never fails to attract the attention and excite the admiration of all observers. The trade is of immense proportions; more than one hundred and fifty thousand dollars in value of flowers have been sold annually and ten thousand dollars worth was supplied for a fancy dress ball upon one occasion. In addition to his establishment at Sing Sing, Mr. Klunder has also extensive green-houses in New Jersey, with ample facilities for producing the choicest flowers in the greatest profusion. The residence at Sing Sing commands a very extensive view of the river and the villages on its banks for miles in either direction, while the grounds under his skillful care have become miracles of beauty. Mr. Klunder not only leads in the quantity and excellence of his roses and other flowers, but likewise makes a specialty of rare and ornamental plants procured at great expense and requiring the greatest care.

Besides the private orders for flowers which are very extensive, Mr. Klunder does a wholesale trade all over the United States, sending large quantities to florists in various cities and towns.

The whole business, which has been built up from a small beginning, has been the outgrowth of constant activity and enterprise, and his acknowledged success is the result that naturally follows when a man of talent gives his whole time and thought to one particular thing.

Mr. Klunder married Mary Broseman, who is like himself a native of Germany. They are the parents of four children, Abna, Meta, Henry and Charles.¹

Sing Sing is a location of remarkable salubrity, and has always enjoyed an extraordinary exemption from infectious and malarial diseases. In the year 1869 the writer had occasion to refer to the salubrity of this township in his official report, as sanitary inspector, under the Metropolitan Board of Health, from whose published volume for that year² the following extract is taken, and what was then written is applicable and quite true to-day.

"From the facts above stated, it would naturally be presumed that the people of the town of Ossining would enjoy a remarkable immunity from diseases of all kinds, excepting such as are due to general epidemic influences, or to the vicissitudes of season, or other meteorological conditions not subject to sanitary control. Its freedom from swamps, marshes, ponds and stagnant water; the universal prevalence of springs of clear pure water, and hence of living streams; the elevation and inclination of the surface; the absence of shops and factories in which occupations are carried on dangerous to life or deleterious to the surrounding air or adjacent water; the general prosperity and intelligence of the people, which find

¹ This sketch of Mr. Klunder was contributed by the Editor.

² Fourth Annual Report of the Metropolitan Board of Health of the State of New York, 1869, p. 165-166.



C. F. Munday



expression in the neatness and beauty of their houses and grounds; to all of which may be added the extreme loveliness of the scenery, which all can enjoy, combine to furnish the elements and conditions most favorable to health, happiness and longevity.

"Corresponding with these facts, we find that the inhabitants of this town have enjoyed a high degree of health for many years past, and that this locality has an exalted, yet merited reputation for salubrity and healthfulness; and, accordingly, large numbers of the city population seek it for summer residence."

The two most important desiderata for Sing Sing, at the present time, are a good system of sewerage and an ample supply of wholesome water. Then should follow the absolute abolishment of cesspools, and soil-vaults, which are the most dangerous and abhorrent of all human devices ever permitted to exist in an intelligent and compact community.

The deep gulch, known as the Sing Sing Kill, affords by far the most direct and complete outlet for the main sewer of our village. It possesses depth, proper descent, and the additional advantage of water for the frequent flushing of the sewer, which can be made of large iron pipe, of tile or of brick masonry. Another sewer would be required to find its outlet through Cedar Glen, and thus the place could be effectually relieved of the accumulating sewage, which is our present chief source of danger to the public health.

CHOLERA VISITATIONS AT SING SING.—This place, in common with most towns in the United States, was visited in 1832 with the Asiatic cholera. It first made its appearance on the 17th of July, on which day it attacked five of the convicts at the State's Prison. The disease continued until about the beginning of September, during which time there were three hundred and seventy-six cases, one hundred and three of which proved fatal. Many of the prison officials were taken with the disease, but none died of it. There were but two fatal cases in the village, both of whom were dissipated characters who had come here from New York City. The health of the village was exceptionally good, with the exception of a considerable number of mild cases of diarrhœa, believed to be of a choleraic type.

In 1849 the disease returned to this place, but took the reverse course from what it had taken in 1832. The village suffered on this occasion, and the inmates of the prison entirely escaped. The first case of cholera appeared near the docks; it was fatal, the victim being an Irish woman of intemperate habits, who was found dead in her bed on the 22d of August. The disease continued here for about a month, being chiefly confined to the laborers who lived near to where the disease began. The precise number of victims is not known; it is said to have killed fifty or sixty, one-third of whom were children. During the prevalence of the pestilence a pest-house was erected

on the ridge, west of Havel Avenue, on the grounds above Dr. Parson's place, where a number of cases were taken for treatment.

On the 17th of July, 1854, a genuine case of Asiatic cholera occurred at the male department of the State's Prison, in this place. It was fatal. In the course of a month over forty additional cases occurred, of which eleven proved fatal. There were many cases of milder cholera, or choleraic diarrhœa. The writer was at that time the physician and surgeon of the male and female departments of the prison. There were no cases among the one hundred female convicts. There were several cases in the village, some of which were fatal. It will be observed that the cholera began at the prison in 1832 and in 1854, in both years on the 17th of July.

GROWTH AND POPULATION OF SING SING AND THE TOWN OF OSSINING.—Soon after the close of the Revolutionary War a grist-mill was built and put in operation, near to the present position of the Arcade File Works. About this time there was one or more stores at the upper dock, Mark Yale being the best remembered merchant of that day, and here it was that most of the business of the town was transacted. At this period Sparta was engaged in an active competition with Sing Sing, and for a time it was nip and tuck, as the former place threatened to outstrip the latter in growth and prosperity. The scale was finally turned, and Sing Sing gained the ascendancy, and attracted business and population, especially after the construction of Highland turnpike, or Albany Post Road. The people to this day speak of the "Albany Post Road," and now and then, between here and New York City, one of the old brown milestones is to be seen by the road-side like a lonely tomb-stone, which it much resembles, in mourning for the days of yore.

In after-years there was also constructed the "Bedford Pike," sometimes called the Croton turnpike, a stage route run by Hachaliah Bailey, of Somers, from Danbury to New York in winter, and in summer connecting with the steamboat "John Jay," at the Sing Sing landing. Captain Bailey owned and commanded the "Jay." "The Danbury Stage Road" ended where the First National Bank now stands, which spot was then occupied by the modest residence of Esquire Charles Yoe, an upright, sterling man, who for many years was the only justice of the peace in this section of the county. The writer well remembers, when a boy, to have paid "toll" at the "toll-gate" then swinging across "the pike," near the entrance to Mr. John V. Cockcroft's grounds.

The earliest statistics of the population of Sing Sing which I have been able to obtain are from the Rev. Mr. Watson's historical sketch, which I have found a useful paper, which shows that about the years 1828-30, the population of this village and its immediate vicinity amounted to eleven hundred inhabitants. It is now over seven thousand; that of

the township, including the inmates of the prison, reaches about ten thousand.

In consequence of the numerous and extensive fires, an account of which will be found in another place, as well as from the rapid transit afforded by the railroad, and many other causes, this village has made a good degree of progress, growth and improvement during the past third of a century. The writer took up his residence in this place as long ago as that, and has had a personal knowledge of every change which this period of time has brought about. When he came to Sing Sing the entire amount of sidewalks, which consisted of little patches in a few places, if aggregated, would not measure five hundred feet in all. We walked along Main Street on sidewalks of mud or ashes, and near where the Croton Aqueduct crosses this street were rude steps of boards and pegs. The long and handsome line of stores and neat sidewalks now to be seen is in striking contrast with the wretched little shops and tenements which then made up our Main Street. And everywhere the improvement and growth has kept pace with this. Many streets and hundreds of pleasant cottages now occupy what were then the pasture fields for stray village cows and migratory goats. Should the place continue to improve and grow at the same rate in the next third of a century as in the past, it will be a place of beauty and of much importance. What the village particularly needs is a number of factories to furnish work for our laboring people. Our village is not noted for the wealth of its citizens; on the contrary, for the most part, our families are in very moderate circumstances, and dependent upon their occupations for their support. The place is in good order, and abounds in neat, commodious and pleasant homes, and is but slightly marred by unsightly tenements and squalid hovels.

The population of the town of Ossining at the time of its organization, in 1845, was three thousand three hundred and twelve. In 1855 it was five thousand seven hundred and fifty-eight.

ASSESSMENTS AND TAXES.—The total valuation of the real estate of the town of Ossining, as returned by the assessors for the year 1884, was nearly three millions of dollars—accurately, two millions eight hundred and eighty-four thousand two hundred and twenty-eight dollars. On this amount a tax of sixty-seven thousand dollars was levied and paid.

THE OFFICERS OF THE TOWN OF OSSINING are elected annually. The following is a list of the first set of officers, elected immediately on the organization of the town, in 1845: Supervisor, George Sherwood; Justices of the Peace, Charles Yoe, Henry Harris, Thomas Cotteral, William Pugsley (Mr. Pugsley declined to serve, and was succeeded by David McBeth); Superintendent of Common Schools, Nichols J. Greene; Assessors, Caleb Smith, William Orser, Stephen Marshall; Commissioners of Highways, Edward

J. Bayles, David C. Coddington, John Ryder; Overseers of the Poor, Willet Holmes, William Mangam; Collector, Abraham Miller.

THE CHARTER AND OFFICERS OF THE VILLAGE OF SING SING.—The act incorporating the village of Sing Sing was passed April 2, 1813. It provided that on the first Tuesday of May, following, the freeholders and inhabitants who were qualified to vote should "meet at some place to be appointed by any justice or justices of the peace, within the said village, who should notify the inhabitants thereof, at least one week previous to the said first Tuesday of May, and then and there proceed to elect seven discreet freeholders, residents within the said village, to be trustees thereof." The trustees were to serve for one year. The limits of the corporation were fixed, substantially, as they are at the present time.

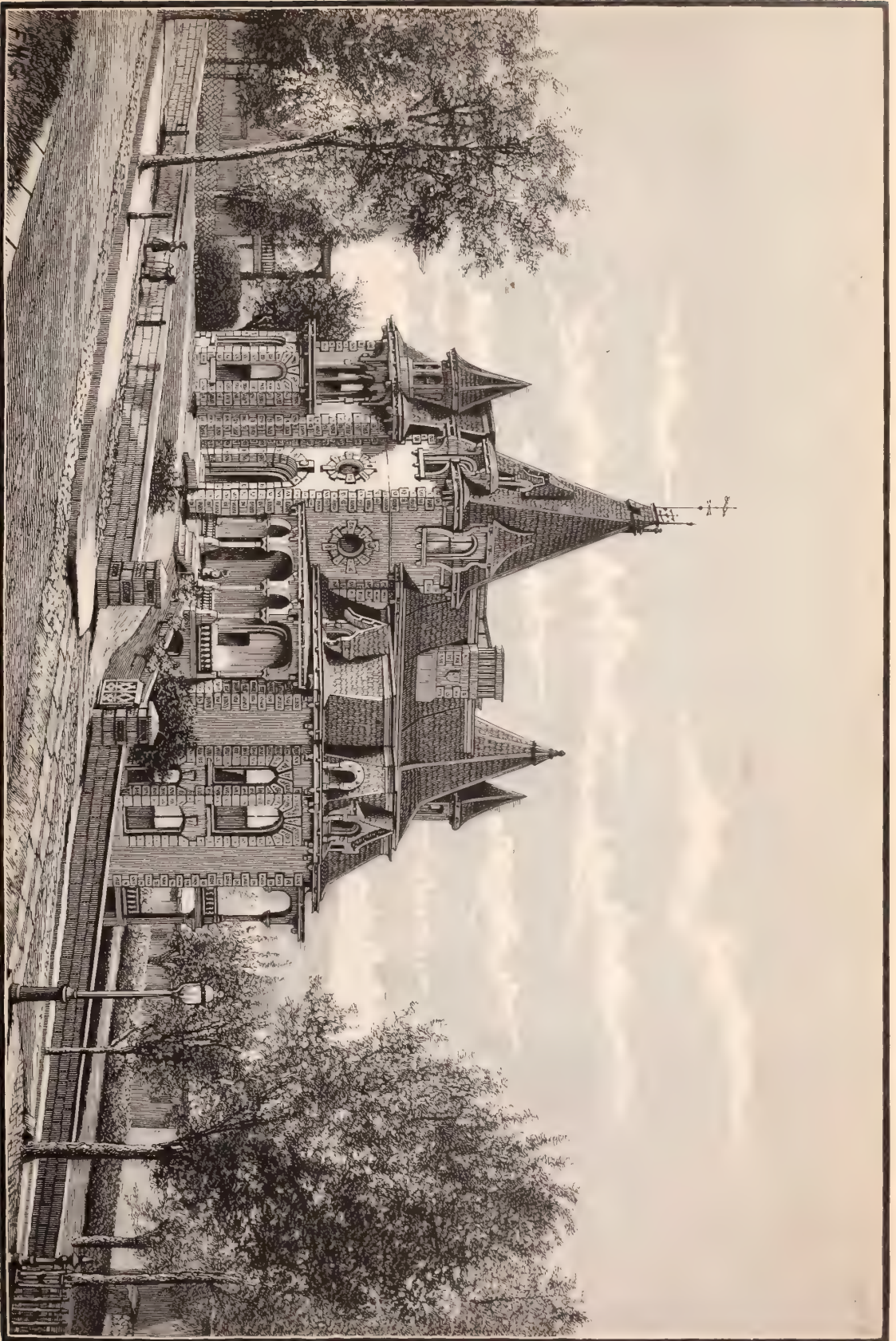
A curious provision, or blue-law, was contained in the fifth section of the charter, which read as follows:

"And be it further enacted, That it shall and may be lawful for the trustees of said village of Sing Sing, or the major part of them and their successors, at any time after the first Tuesday in May next, to make, ordain, constitute and publish a by-law prohibiting any baker or other person within the aforesaid limits from selling any bread at any higher price or rate than bread of like quality at the time of such sale shall be assessed in and for the city of New York by the corporation of said city, under the penalty of one dollar for every offence, to be recovered by the said trustees before any justice of the peace in the said village or the county of Westchester in an action of debt, with costs of the suit for the use of said corporation."

This enactment was directed against the rapacity of bakers, who were likely to take advantage of the high price of breadstuffs, which resulted from the war with England.

The charter and ordinances by which the village is governed were printed at Sing Sing in the year 1872. The pamphlet is an octavo of fifty-eight pages (twenty-two pages of charter and thirty-six of ordinances). There are some very grave defects in these documents. The most important relates to the public health. By the present charter the trustees have no power to order or enforce the construction of a sewer in any part of the corporation, unless the same is requested by a petition of one half of the property holders along the line of the proposed improvement. Hence any unwillingness on the part of the tax-payers of a street or avenue may interfere with or completely block any attempt to make an improvement, however necessary the same should be to the public welfare in the way of salubrity.

The establishment of an efficient Board of Health is also rendered impossible by the present weak and miserable charter. The theory of making a Board of Health of the president and trustees of the village is



“HIGHLAND COTTAGE.”

RESIDENCE OF ANDREW DICKEY, SING SING, N. Y.



a sorry farce, and has always resulted in inefficiency and absolute neglect of all sanitary authority and action. This ideal Board of Health has always ignored the town Board of Health, and thus deprived the villagers of any benefit that would otherwise have been bestowed by this organization. A further discussion of this subject is not admissible in this place.

The village records were destroyed by fire in 1871, and hence it is not possible to mention any of the early officers. The following is a list of the presidents of the village since 1837; James W. Robinson, 1838; Aaron Ward, 1839; Dr. Adrian K. Hoffman, 1840, 1842, 1852, 1857, 1858, 1861; Robert K. Foster, 1841; Dr. Benjamin Brandreth, 1843, 1845, 1846; George Sherwood, 1847; Samuel Taylor, 1848; John Russell, 1851; Guardiner Van Wyck, 1854; William O. Mills, 1855; Dr. George J. Fisher, 1856; Warren J. Wixson, 1859; Francis Larkin, 1860; Abram Kipp, 1862, 1863, 1864; Azariah Carpenter, 1865; James McCord, 1866; Stephen G. Howe, 1867, 1881; Isaac B. Noxon, 1868, 1869, 1870, 1871, 1872; George W. Cartwright, 1873, 1876, 1877; Robert M. Lawrence, 1874, 1884; B. Gedney Tompkins, 1875; Henry C. Symonds, 1878, 1879, 1883; Thomas Leary, 1880, 1882; E. G. Blakslee, 1885.

THE POLICE FORCE OF THE VILLAGE OF SING SING is composed of a chief, with a salary of five hundred dollars; an assistant, whose salary is one hundred dollars; and nine policemen, each having a salary of fifty dollars per annum.

THE FIRE DEPARTMENT OF SING SING was first organized May 4, 1812. It is said the primary motive in this early organization was to make a loophole through which to escape enlistment into the army, then being recruited for service in the War of Independence. Firemen were exempt from military duty. The original members of the first company were as follows: Samuel C. Mott, Solomon Underhill, Edward Kemeys, Jeremiah D. Fowler, Richard Austin, Gardner Ackerly, Samuel Trobridge, Robert K. Foster, John Clapp, Andrew Graham, Moses Stanton, David Delaney, Edward Priestly, Samuel Rhodes and Thomas Agate.

The certificates were written on slips of paper after the following formula:

"These are to certify that (name of member) is, pursuant to law, nominated and appointed one of the firemen of the Village of Sing Sing, May 4th, 1812.

"EDWARD KEMEYS, Clerk."

The company purchased a hand-engine in New York City, which had been used by the firemen there, and was known as No. 11. She is said to have been stationed near the Washington Market. The engine-box was ornamented with a picture of General Washington crossing the Delaware, and it was most probably from this fact that the company took to itself the title of Washington Fire Engine Company, No. 1. The engine was housed in a little frame shanty that

stood a very short distance northeast of where the soldiers' monument stands at present, and which was afterwards removed to make way for Main Street.

A second hand-engine was purchased subsequent to 1825, which was called the Hudson, No. 2, and was stationed on the middle dock. A third engine was purchased some time about the year 1836, and stationed in Spring Street, in the northeast corner of the lot of the Mount Pleasant Academy, to operate which Protection Company, No. 3, was formed.

The last-mentioned two engines were of a kind calculated to give the firemen plenty of exercise, as the water had to be lifted into their tanks in buckets. Washington Engine, No. 1, was provided with suction apparatus. All three were of the kind known as "goose necks," the attachment for the hose on the engine being of that shape, and capable of being turned in any direction.

As the village of Sing Sing increased in size the public sentiment with regard to fire matters became so exacting that goose-neck engines failed to satisfy it. Accordingly, in the year 1856 the sum of two thousand dollars was raised by subscriptions of the citizens for the purpose of purchasing a new hand-engine and a hose-carriage. A company of thirty members was formed on the 8th of September, 1856, to operate the latter, and took the name of the Ossining Hose Company. George W. Crofut was chosen foreman, David O. Miller assistant foreman, Powles D. Palmer secretary and Townsend Young treasurer. On Monday, December 15, 1856, a few days after a disastrous fire, which consumed the office of the *Westchester Herald* and several other buildings on Main Street, the new fire apparatus arrived. The hand-engine was turned over to the Washington Engine Company, No. 1, and the Ossining Hose Company took possession of the hose-carriage. Both were stored in a room in the old Eagle Hotel, which was located at the intersection of Main Street and the Post Road, overlooking Pleasant Square.

Hudson Company, No. 2, had by this time gone out of existence, leaving no trace behind. Some years previous to the purchase of the Washington Company's new engine an engine company, composed of Dr. Benjamin Brandreth, William Codington and a number of the more wealthy citizens of the place had been formed, but it soon passed out of existence. Officially the company was known as No. 4, but their common designation was "The Silk Stockings," from the belief that they had organized chiefly to secure the exemption from various public duties which were granted to firemen. The "Silk Stockings" engine-house was located on Spring Street, almost opposite the Methodist Church, and adjoining the grounds of the Mount Pleasant Academy.

In January, 1857, the citizens of Sing Sing sent a petition to the Legislature, setting forth that much property had been saved to the State by the attendance of the Sing Sing firemen at the numerous fires at the

prison, and that one fire-engine and apparatus had been nearly worn out in that service. They therefore requested that the State should purchase for the village a first-class fire-engine and other apparatus to be used in combating fires both in the village and at the prison. An appropriation of two thousand dollars was passed by the Legislature in answer to this petition, and with that sum a hand-engine, a hook-and-ladder truck and a large quantity of hose were purchased. The hand-engine was turned over to Protection Company, No. 3, of which James C. Smith was at that time foreman and Charles Raymond assistant foreman.

The Senate Hook-and-Ladder Company, No. 1, was organized May 21, 1857, with twelve members, and with George R. Birge as foreman, Richard Lusk, assistant foreman; Andrew Finegan, secretary; and Samuel S. Smith, treasurer. The newly-formed company adopted the name "Senate" in honor of the State Fathers, to whose liberal appropriation they owed their existence. The new engine and hook-and-ladder truck arrived from New York in Sing Sing on the 30th of September, 1857, and were received with a great procession, in which all the Sing Sing companies participated, as well as companies from White Plains and Yonkers.

The Protection Hose Company was organized in the same year, with Gilbert E. Babcock as foreman. An appropriation from the State was received by them at a later period, with which they paid for their present hose-carriage.

A neat and commodious frame building was erected on Waller Avenue for the accommodation of the new companies, and is occupied by them at present.

The original hand-engine, after being relinquished by Washington Engine Company, No. 1, was painted a brilliant red and denominated the "Red Rover." A company of Strangtown boys was formed to take charge of the veteran, which was styled Red Rover Company, No. 2, and had their headquarters on Mott Street. Shortly after the new engine of Washington Company, No. 1, arrived, a public trial of the capabilities of the two engines was given, in which it was thought the Red Rover showed herself superior to her more modern competitor.

During the War of the Rebellion the Washington Engine Company fell into a state of disorganization, owing to the departure of many of its members to the scene of conflict, and Red Rover Company surrendered their old engine and were installed by the trustees as successors of the Washington Engine Company, under the title of the latter. This company, about the year 1873, were disbanded by the trustees, owing to their disorderly actions. A new company, also composed of Strangtown parties, was formed in 1874, who removed the engine and hose-carriage from the place they had so long occupied in Pleasant Square to North Sing Sing, where, in 1875, they took possession of their present brick house on North Mal-

colm Street, which had been erected for them at a cost of about three thousand dollars.

The Silsby Manufacturing Company exhibited one of their rotary steam fire-engines to the populace of Sing Sing in the early part of 1876, but without turning the hearts of the village fathers to purchase it. While the question of its purchase was being held under consideration a fire broke out on Main Street, which was assuming threatening proportions, when the Silsby Company's engine was brought out and made to play upon the fire. The flames were quickly subdued. This event carried the day in favor of the purchase of the engine. A company of sixty members was formed to take charge of it, in June, 1876, with Isaac B. Noxon as foreman; S. M. Sherwood, first assistant foreman; J. H. Couch, second assistant foreman; George Lockwood, secretary; A. Kipp, Jr., engineer; and W. H. Dooley, fireman. This company became known by the name of Sing Sing Steamer Company, No. 1, and is at present stationed on Main Street, in a fine brick building, well adapted for the purpose.

The Fire Department was incorporated by an act of the Legislature, passed in April, 1883, the object being to accumulate a fund for the relief of indigent firemen of the department, disabled while actually doing duty as firemen, and their families, and to purchase a firemen's burial-lot. The chief engineer and assistant engineers of the department are *ex-officio* trustees of this corporation, and annually each company elects one trustee for a term of two years.

A Fire Patrol was formed in May, 1884, to save and protect goods in burning dwellings. They are to receive from foreign insurance companies, for their services, two per cent. of the amounts obtained by them from the premiums on insurances placed in Sing Sing. The amount realized is to go to make up a fund for the relief of needy firemen.

The report of the chief engineer of the Fire Department of Sing Sing, made May 1, 1884, states that the department consists of seven companies,—namely, 1st, Sing Sing Steamer Company, with thirty-five men. 2d, Protection Engine Company, No. 3, with forty-four men. 3d, Washington Company, No. 1, with twenty-five men. 4th, Senate Hook-and-Ladder Company, with thirty-four men. 5th, Ossining Hose Company, with twenty-eight men. 6th, Protection Hose Company, with twenty-eight men. 7th, Sing Sing Fire Patrol, with eighteen men. Total, two hundred and twelve members.

In 1860 Daniel D. Mangam purchased a residence on Highland Avenue, Sing Sing, and since that time he has been prominently connected with the public affairs of the town. For several terms he was trustee and treasurer of the town and chief engineer of the fire department in which he took great interest. He has also been long connected with the National Bank, of Sing Sing, as director, and is one of the trustees of the Savings Bank. His ancestor Daniel Mangam,



J. Mangum
11/11



who came to this country from Scotland, was a soldier in the War of the Revolution, and present at the battle of White Plains. He left a family of seven children, William, Isaac, John, Stephen, Daniel, Sarah, wife of Robert Tompkins, and Elizabeth, wife of Pierre Decevier.

Of these children, William, who married Elizabeth Leggett, died about 1865, at the age of eighty-three, leaving eight children, Mary, wife of A. B. Royce; Eliza, wife of William Lewis; Esther, wife of William Colyer; Nancy, wife of Lewis McCord; Rebecca, wife of Andrew L. Purdy; Gertrude, wife of Levi Wilson; William L., who died at the age of twenty-two, and Daniel D.

The last named was born, at Sing Sing, May 1, 1828. In his early youth he was a student at Mount Pleasant Academy, but left home and school at the age of fourteen, and found a position as clerk in a grocery store. He remained here for three years, and then entered a dry goods store, but two years later he commenced business on his own account, by opening a store at Sing Sing. Shortly after he sold out, and removed to New York, where he had an interest in the mills of William D. Mangam, son of his uncle Stephen, who was the founder of one of the oldest Produce and Grain Commission Houses now doing business in the city. William D. Mangam died in 1866, and Mr. Mangam succeeded to the entire business, which he has carried on at the old stand till the present time. The following statement from the *Commercial World* shows the extent of the business. It is proper to state that since its publication, Mr. Mangam has become the lessee of half of Pier No. 6, North River, and two floating elevators.

"The city business of the house is transacted at 92 Broad Street, New York, but the mills and warehouses are located at the foot of Degraw Street, Brooklyn. Here there are spacious premises occupying a space of about one hundred and fifty by two hundred feet, the ground floor being used for milling purposes and offices, the floor above containing bins, many of them forty feet high. From twenty-five to thirty hands are constantly employed in operating the steam elevator—which hoists all the grain and corn from vessels in the river—and the four 'run' of mills; the latter have a capacity of about fifty bags an hour, and grind on an average some six hundred bags per day.

"As a dealer Mr. Mangam handles vast quantities of corn, oats, feed and hay for the home market; in the export market he deals chiefly in white and yellow corn, making a specialty of fine hay, grown for the most part in New York States. This export trade is mainly with the West Indies, the Southern States and South America."

Mr. Mangam, like his father before him, is an active member of the Baptist Church and has labored without ceasing for its advancement and welfare. He united with this church as a member at the early

age of fourteen, and for fifty years has been connected with the Sunday-school, and has been the superintendent for the last thirty-eight years. At the time of the building of the present church edifice Mr. Mangam had the plans prepared and was one of the building committee, and it is largely owing to the efforts of himself and a few others that the society is established on a firm foundation.

Mr. Mangam married Deborah, daughter of Thomas Horton, of Mount Pleasant. Their children are Ella E., wife of Louis W. Williams, William L. (who is now engaged in business with his father), Susan J., Daniel D., a graduate of Yale College, and Deborah L., who is now a student at Packer Institute.¹

LARGE FIRES IN SING-SING.—Every stranger who visits this village for the first time is struck with surprise at the number and beauty of our stores, which reach along Main Street from near the top of the lower dock hill to the corner of Mill Street. They are chiefly substantial and attractive brick buildings, with store fronts of large plate glass. The writer of this historical sketch well remembers the antiquated dwellings that lined our Main Street a third of a century ago, some of which had been already metamorphosed into dingy little shops, while others still had narrow door-yards, flowering shrubs and fruit-trees, picket fences and gates swinging into the street, to the annoyance of pedestrians. This great change has not been brought about by mere enterprise. It is almost wholly due to a succession of fires, and the compensating policy of good insurance.

The first fire which is mentioned by the old inhabitants is that which consumed a large paper-mill that stood near to where Terwilliger's lumber-yard now stands. This fire occurred August 7, 1832, and is said to have been the result of a flood in the Kill-brook, which occasioned the slaking of a quantity of lime contained in the basement of the building.

On Saturday night, at ten o'clock, on the 6th day of December, 1856, a fire broke out in the dry-goods store of E. J. Edmunds, at what is now No. 120 Main Street, which destroyed the building of Mr. Caleb Roscoe, that of Mr. William Lawrence and one of Mr. Stephen Ayles. The pecuniary loss was not less than fifteen thousand dollars. The most serious part of the loss was the destruction of a large and valuable collection of historical documents, pamphlets and newspapers, which Mr. Roscoe had been accumulating for many years, and which he designed to put into the library of the Mt. Pleasant Academy for public use.

The next great fire occurred near the lower dock. It began about two o'clock Sunday morning, September 9, 1866. This resulted in the destruction of eighteen dwelling-houses, the National Hotel, the large Van Arden File Works, the extensive lumber-yards of Reuben Kipp & Co., several stables and other build-

¹ Contributed by the Editor.

ings. The loss was not less than one hundred and seventy-five thousand dollars. Forty families were rendered homeless. It is said that some men were playing at cards in a stable, that they upset a lamp, and this calamity was the result.

On Thursday, the 23d of September, 1869, the iron foundry of E. G. Blakslee & Co., on Water Street, middle dock, was burned, with a loss of not less than four thousand dollars.

Tuesday morning, March 28, 1871, a fire broke out on the corner of Main and Mill Streets. This fire destroyed the hardware store of Reynold & Young, the store and residence of Benjamin Tunstall and the drug store of Jones Brothers. The basement of Reynold & Young's building was occupied by the village corporation. The fire destroyed all the archives of the village. The entire loss by this fire was not less than seventy thousand dollars.

On Monday, February 26, 1872, a portion of the Brandreth factories was destroyed by fire. Loss said to be sixty-five thousand dollars.

During the year 1872 this village was threatened with entire destruction from fires, which were set by a "fire-bug," or pyromaniac, by the name of Caleb Frisbie. After making numerous attempts to fire buildings, he was at last caught, and sentenced to prison for fourteen years. He served part of his time in prison, but was afterwards transferred to an asylum for the insane.

On Wednesday night, October 9, 1872, one of the most destructive fires occurred which this village has ever suffered from. It swept all the buildings from the corner of Main Street and Central Avenue to the place where the Steamer and Corporation building now stands; also, all the buildings on the opposite side of Main Street. The stores on the corner, now occupied by L. Fisher, clothier, were destroyed. In round numbers the loss amounted to one hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars. Twenty families were deprived of homes, and twenty-seven business places were destroyed.

The 17th day of February, 1874, the village passed through another fiery ordeal. The fire originated in Olive Hall, which was completely destroyed, with its stores, *Republican* printing office, etc., some frame buildings in Leonard Street, Leander Fisher's clothing store, Elias Washburn's drug store (now Hart's), and the two buildings above were consumed. Vance's Hall, the building where Mead's bakery now stands, also Schneider's and Dean's buildings, were destroyed. Considerable other damage was done. In all the loss amounted to one hundred and thirty-five thousand dollars. Peekskill, Tarrytown and Yonkers all responded promptly, with men and apparatus, to aid in extinguishing the conflagration. All the buildings destroyed were soon replaced by others which are far better in character and appearance.

A fire occurred April 28, 1875, on the lower dock, which destroyed the livery stables of Bloom & Foster,

the Empire Hotel, the Mansion House and stables and the Nelson House. Total loss, twenty-eight thousand dollars.

On Saturday, March 4, 1876, a fire occurred on Main Street, which destroyed all the buildings which stood upon the ground now occupied by the Palmer Building, Mr. Terhune's and Mr. Grant's stores. The loss was estimated at thirty thousand dollars. The present handsome buildings are an immense improvement on the former rather shabby structures destroyed by the fire.

The so-called "California House," erected by Mr. Willett McCord, on Croton Avenue, in 1856, as a private mansion, was occupied about ten years by Miss Sarah Van Vleck, who had established there the admirable school for young ladies known as the "Ossining Institute." Two weeks after the removal of the institute to the present situation the "California House" was reduced to ashes. This event occurred Sunday morning, June 30, 1877. The loss was about twenty thousand dollars. This spot seems to have been doomed by the fire demon, as two buildings, erected at different times afterwards, were also destroyed by fire. In all the cases it was believed to have been the work of an incendiary.

August 13, 1879, the machine-shop of Abram Kipp & Co., and the cotton-gin and saw-factory of Mr. J. T. Turner, and a dwelling near by were destroyed by fire, the loss amounting to ten thousand dollars.

The State's Prison in Sing Sing has produced many fierce fires, with the destruction of a vast amount of property. It would be tedious to give the details of all of them. The latest one was on Thursday, July 3, 1879, when the south stove-foundry of Perry & Co., which covered a space two hundred by two hundred and fifty feet, was entirely destroyed, causing a loss of thirty thousand dollars to the contractors and eight thousand dollars to the State.

FLOODS IN THE KILL-BROOK.—Our innocent-looking little Kill-brook occasionally develops into a furious torrent, sweeping everything in its course. A flood occurred by an unusual rise of the waters of this brook in the night of August 7, 1832, which destroyed many thousands of dollars' worth of property. Higbie's Paper Mill, which stood near the mouth of the Kill, was destroyed by fire at that time, in consequence of the heat generated by the slacking of a large quantity of lime, which was stored in the cellar of this building.

A second flood occurred June 18, 1867, which carried away several buildings, shops, pig-pens, etc., as well as the "Westchester Bridge," the road bridge and also the railroad bridge at the dock. The damage amounted to several thousands of dollars.

The third and most destructive flood of all occurred on Wednesday night and Thursday morning, September 4 and 5, 1878. The damage was estimated at not less than fifteen thousand dollars. A boy, standing at the time on "Westchester Bridge," was swept

away by the torrent and drowned, in consequence of a portion of this brick structure having been undermined by the current.

FACILITIES FOR TRAVELING.—The New York Central and Hudson River Railroad is the chief route by which the people of the town of Ossining go out to the world, and by which the world comes into the town. Regular commuters are taken to or from New York City for the small sum of twenty-five cents; while the casual traveler is required to pay sixty cents. The total number of tickets to and from New York City which were sold at our station during the past year, from May 1, 1884, to April 30, 1885, was 70,295. These do not include the books of commuters, nor the tickets from New York to Sing Sing, which were sold at the Grand Central Depot, during the same time. Besides the above, many thousands of tickets are sold annually at our station for places along the whole line of the road, and elsewhere. Thus it is seen that our place ought to be well-known beyond its immediate limits, and yet one of the flattest and stalest of jokes which is continually perpetrated on our citizens by outsiders is to say, when one of our people is seen away from our village, "Ah! you have escaped, or been released from State's Prison, have you?" The New York papers will probably never cease to say that such and such villains, burglars, or murderers, have been sentenced to live in Sing Sing; never distinguishing between the prison and the village; even the existence of the latter they seem to be totally ignorant of. The trains are frequent and very satisfactory. The residents of the eastern portion of the town are accommodated by the New York and Northern Railroad. In summer, steamboats and propellers afford a pleasant means of going to and from the city.

Sing Sing is supplied with most of the modern improvements,—telegraphs, telephones, skating-rink, canoeing club, ice-boating fleet, good postal arrangements, McAdamized roads, street gas lamps, etc. What it stands sadly in need of is an extensive and efficient system of sewerage, an ample supply of pure water and the total abolishment of cesspools.

THE PRESBYTERIAN BURYING-GROUND AT SPARTA is located between the old Albany turnpike and the present direct road from Sing Sing to Tarrytown. It contains about two acres of land. It was originally allotted to the Presbyterian Church by Frederick Philips, lord of the Philips Manor. This manor having been confiscated at the close of the Revolution, the Sparta Cemetery was excepted from sale by the Commissioners of Forfeitures. On the 14th day of March, 1808, the Legislature passed an act granting "all the right, title and interest" of these grounds to the trustees of the Presbyterian Church of Mount Pleasant, forever. For a more detailed history of the above, the reader is referred to the historical sketch of the Presbyterian Church of Sing Sing, by the Rev. Dr. Phraner. It was for a long time sadly neglected,

and became overgrown with briars and tangle-wood, but of late, through the laudable efforts of Mr. John V. Cockroft and others of the Presbyterian Church, it has been put in very good condition.

These old grounds contain many interesting memorials of the old town folk of this neighborhood. Space will not admit of quoting from any of the antique brown-stone slabs, except the following of the Ledew family, beginning with the head-stone at the south side of the brick inclosure. There is a hole in the head-stone over Abraham Ledew's grave, which tradition tells us, was made by a cannon-ball fired from the "Vulture," while at anchor in the bay waiting for Major Andre.

In Memory of
Mary Ledew Was Born
In the Year of Our Lord
1695 And Departed this
Life May the 10, 1773,
Aged 78 Years.

In memory of
David Ledew, Was Born
In the Year of our Lord
1694. And Departed this
Life Novr. the 15
1772 Aged 78 years.

Here Lyes the Body of
Sarah Ledew Born in the
Year 1759 April 26 Who
Departed this Life August
15, 1764, Aged 5 Years 7
Months & 11 Days
Daughter of Abraham Ledew
and Ann Ledew.

To the Memory of Abraham Ladew, Son
of Abraham and Ann Ladew Was Born A. D.
September the 28th 1767, and Departed
This Life Oct. the 21st 1774 aged 7 years.
Here stop awhile; let pity draw
The sympathising tear. If old thou art prepared to die
If young—thyself in virtue train.
Here lies a son, and only son and heir;
He lived admired and while he lived
Him good and just we hoped to see,
But death our hopes deceived
Here all our joy and comfort lies.
Here lies our only darling son,—
He fell to death a sacrifice
Scarce had his glass begun to run:
His soul is flown to mansions of the just—
To that great God in whom we weep and trust.

In Memory of
Anna Ladew, wife of
Abraham Ladew who
Departed this Life Dec. 25, 1795,
Aged 68 Years 10 Months 25 Days
Also Abraham Ladew
Husband of Anna Ladew
who departed this Life June 12, 17
Aged—Years 4 Mos & 15 Days.

(A number of lines of poetry then follow.)

DALE CEMETERY is located just outside of the northern portion of the village of Sing Sing, and embraces about thirty acres of land. The Dale Cemetery Association was organized in January, 1851, by the election of twelve trustees,—Gen. Aaron Ward

president; Mr. Marlborough Churchill, Vice President; Gen. Munson I. Lockwood, treasurer; and Mr. Geo. E. Stanton, secretary. The cemetery, at the time of its dedication, October 29, 1851, contained about forty acres, but was subsequently, through legal complications with Gen. Lockwood, reduced to its present size.

The location is delightful. The surface is very uneven, forming beautiful rounded knolls, terraced hillsides and winding valleys, with shady groves and babbling brook; it is sufficiently conspicuous and sequestered in its various parts to please the tastes of all classes of persons. The grand entrance on the western side is through a pair of round, lofty, massive marble columns, surmounted by globular heads. These pillars were quarried and hewn at the prison, for the old French Church in New York City, but for some cause were not taken away. Just within this entrance stands a shaft of red granite, erected to the memory of George W. and Bartow W. Powell, Jr., the brothers in whose honor Post Powell, No. 117, G. A. R., of Sing Sing, was named.

The usual entrance to the cemetery is by way of Dale Avenue, on the eastern side. The first interment in these grounds was the bones of Lieutenant Samuel Young, who was born December 4, 1760, and died September 12, 1837. He served in the American army in the War of the Revolution, was subsequently a member of the State Legislature and surrogate of Westchester County. His remains were brought to Dale Cemetery from their original resting-place in the grounds of the "Old Dutch Church," where they should have been permitted to remain unmolested. Samuel Young is said to have been the actual "Ichabod Crane" of Irving's "Legend of Sleepy Hollow."

Dale Cemetery, though but a little more than thirty years established, is beautified by many handsome and costly tombs and monuments. The roads and grounds are fairly well kept, and the place is creditable to an enlightened community.

SPARTA.—In the earliest times farmers brought their produce for shipment to a dock which stood in the cove a short distance north of Scarborough station. The road which came down to the dock ran past a store-house not far from the water's edge. A short distance north of the dock, near the mouth of Sparta Brook, on the southern bank of the stream, was a grist-mill, which was run by the water-power furnished by the brook. Of this old dock—the primitive dock of the town of Ossining—there remains at present only one large log, which lies on the shore of the cove.

The village of Sparta, situated about a mile south of Pleasant Square, in Sing Sing, was settled by an English colony about the year 1790. James Drowley, an English merchant of New York and an importer of dry-goods, purchased from the patent of Peter Davids a tract of twenty-nine acres of land, located

on the northern side of the lower course of the brook now known as Sparta Brook, and divided it into plots of three hundred feet square. Afterwards he brought over in his vessels from County Kent, England, a number of his former neighbors, with whom he began the settlement of his village. Thomas Agate became the storekeeper of the little community, Edward Agate was the brickmaker, Richard Hillier was the physician and the Rev. John Burgess was the clergyman. There were besides the Rhodes, the Priestlys and others, whose names are perpetuated in Sparta, where some of their descendants still live. Why this little place should have received so classical a name is not at present known. It now contains only about a score of dwellings, one store and a very nice school-house. Sing Sing has crept quite down to the borders of Sparta, making a continuous village from Mr. Benjamin Moore's residence on the north to Mr. George Arthur's on the south, a distance of over two miles. There was once a time when Sparta threatened to be the principal village, and it certainly had some important advantages over its rival, Sing Sing, in being less hilly, and having deeper water near its shores.

THE BAPTIST CHURCH IN SING SING owes its early establishment largely to the efforts of Captain Elijah Hunter, who was born at this place in the year 1749. He was a Revolutionary soldier and was present at the battle of White Plains. He suffered much on account of his adhesion to the cause of liberty. The British finally burned his home at Bedford. About the year 1783 he came to reside in Sing Sing, and at once opened his own house for public worship. He invited the Rev. Ebenezer Ferris, pastor of the Baptist Church at Stamford, of which Captain Hunter was a member, to conduct the services. Elder Ferris began his work on the 20th of August, 1786, at which time he baptized three persons, who became members of the Stamford Church. These, uniting with a few others, were recognized as a branch of that church. Elder Ferris met with them once a month and added many members. In 1788 thirty-three of their number organized the Baptist Church of Yorktown, with the Rev. Reuben Garrison as pastor.

On the 12th of November, 1790, the Baptist Church of Sing Sing was formally organized as an independent body. James Requa, Elijah Hunter and Richard Garrison were elected deacons. The church commenced with thirty members. It soon received considerable accessions to its numbers, not a few of whom were the slaves of the members. Captain Hunter's house was located not far from where the Robinson or Jones mansion now stands, and what is now Broad Avenue was then Hunter's lane, which led from his house to the Post road. Here it was that the meetings were held until the first church was built. The ground upon which a small frame building was erected is the same that the present church now stands upon, and was deeded to the so-

ciety as a free gift, in perpetuity, by Captain Hunter, whose name is still associated with portions of this village. It is only a few years since a small cemetery existed in State Street, being the chief portion of Mr. Mullholland's grounds, known as "Hunter's Burying-Ground," and there is a street running from Main Street to the prison now bearing the name of this liberal and distinguished citizen of that early day.

In the year 1792, the year after the New York Association of Baptist Churches was formed, some of the brethren of the Sing Sing Church suggested the establishment of an academy in this vicinity for the education of young men for the ministry. The design was cordially approved. This was probably the first effort made to establish a Baptist Theological Seminary in this country. In 1797 the association commended the academy to the churches. In 1798 they drew up a constitution for it, and appointed a board of thirteen trustees. The academy was not a success. In 1801 the Rev. Stephen S. Nelson bought it and conducted it with great satisfaction to all. Francis Wayland was one of the most distinguished pupils. In 1795 or 1796 the Rev. John Kitchen, an Englishman, was called to take charge of the church. In 1799 Rev. Elijah Wheeler, of Oyster Bay, supplied the church. The Rev. Thomas Stephens followed in 1801. In December of the same year Rev. Stephen S. Nelson, already referred to as having purchased the old academy, became the pastor of the church, and retained the position for not less than a dozen years. The church prospered under his care, as he was a man of sterling qualities and of unusual culture, being a graduate of Brown University in 1794. He left Sing Sing in 1813, and died at Amherst, Mass., in 1852, aged eighty-two years.

In May, 1814, the Rev. Jacob H. Brouner, then in his twenty-third year, became the pastor of this church. Under his charge the membership was increased from fifty-five to seventy-five. In 1823 the Rev. P. L. Platt accepted the pastorate. He distinguished himself by his efforts to suppress the sale of intoxicating liquors on Sunday by the members of the church. The Rev. John Putress (Bolton has the name Pubies) was chosen pastor in 1833. He was succeeded in 1835 by Rev. C. C. Williams, who, within one year, was the means of converting twenty persons who were added to the church. In 1839 the Rev. Wm. M. Doolittle was called to minister to this church. His labors were greatly blessed, the membership was raised from sixty-four to one hundred and thirty-one. Next came the Rev. Sydney A. Corey. Love, unity and charity had not always filled the hearts of the Baptist brethren, as all the above changes would intimate, and the chronicler goes on to state that he, too, "fell upon like evil times, and the feeling ran so high that an effort was made to shut the house of worship against the pastor and a portion of his flock. The discord arose from differences of opinion on doctrinal points." Hence Mr.

Corey's stay was also brief. After a temporary supply by Rev. M. J. Kelly, in 1843, the Rev. Wm. C. Locke took charge for a few months. In 1844 the Rev. B. C. Morse followed, under whose ministration, we are told, the church was more peaceful and harmonious than in many years before. Mr. Morse was succeeded in 1848 by Rev. Alonzo Wheelock, who was followed in 1850 by Rev. Wm. S. Mikels. He was a plain, earnest, sterling man. His six years of labor were crowned by the addition of many members, raising the list from one hundred and twenty-eight to two hundred and seven. A parsonage was also built during his charge.

The Rev. R. J. W. Buckland became the pastor in January, 1857, and held the position until March, 1864. He was a man of scholarly accomplishments and of eminent ability, to which were joined all the Christian graces. He went from Sing Sing to New York City to take charge of the Calvary Baptist Church; from this position he was called to fill the chair of ecclesiastical history in the Theological Seminary at Rochester N. Y., where he remained until the time of his death. He was deservedly honored with the title of Doctor of Divinity.

The Rev. L. J. Mattison next became the pastor of this church of many pastors. He entered upon his duties in October, 1864, and remained until November, 1868. He was a graduate of Madison University. He was a man of ability, of kindly disposition and of devotion to his work. From this place he went to Vermont, and thence to Cortland County, N. Y., where he was settled over a church, and where he prematurely died. In March 1869, the Rev. James Boxer took charge of the church, and remained until June, 1874. In 1871 the subject of erecting a new church edifice engaged the attention of pastor and people. Messrs. D. D. Mangam, I. B. Noxon and William A. Pentz were appointed the building committee. The pleasant little white wooden church building, which for generations had stood embowered in a beautiful grove of locust-trees, with here and there a lofty giant sycamore, was torn down, the trees destroyed, the bones of "the rude forefathers of the hamlet were dug from their narrow cells, and where lay the turf in many a mouldering heap" it was leveled to a smooth lawn, and all so changed that no old resident would be able to recognize the spot. While all this was going on the congregation convened in Olive Hall for a period of two years. At the end of this time, that is, in June, 1873, the chapel forming the transept of the new church edifice was ready for occupancy. In the following year the entire building was completed, and dedicated June, 3, 1874. The Baptist Church is a handsome brick structure, with roof of slate and beautiful stained-glass windows, most of which are memorials of former patrons of the church, one being in memory of Captain Hunter, the founder of the organization. It was a fitting and a gracious act to keep the recollec-

tion of so good and generous a man in fresh remembrance. The church was built with a handsome lofty spire, which kept its place until the first furious wind-storm came, and then it humbled itself in the dust, never to rise again. The grounds are surrounded with a neat, substantial wrought-iron rail and good stone walks. A large fine organ, rich carving and good painting make the interior very pleasing.

The cost of all this was, in round numbers, sixty thousand dollars.

The pastorate of Mr. Boxer was not characterized by unalloyed sweetness and harmony. He possessed no little talent and not a few eccentricities.

His successor, the Rev. A. D. Gillette, D.D., was a gentleman of refinement and scholastic culture. He entered upon his duties in December, 1874, and closed his labors here in December, 1878. He was born in 1807. He had filled several important pulpits in New York, Brooklyn, Philadelphia and in Washington before he came to Sing Sing, and enjoyed an exalted reputation as a scholar and an eloquent preacher. He was sixty-four years of age when he began his work in this village, and at the end of four years his powers declined, and he retired from his labors, never again to resume them.

Now we come to the end of this long line of Baptist clergymen. The present pastor, the Rev. N. Reed Everts, assumed charge of this church in December, 1878. He brought the reputation of an earnest Christian scholar and an eloquent and fluent preacher, all of which he has fully sustained during his seven years of pastoral work in Sing Sing.

The church has a membership of nearly three hundred, and the present roll of its Sabbath-school contains the names of no less than two hundred and fifty officers, teachers and scholars.

THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.—At a meeting of the Dutchess County Presbytery, held at Bedford, June 28, 1763, a petition, signed by a number of the inhabitants of Sing Sing, was laid before that body, requesting Presbytery to supply them with the stated and regular preaching of the Gospel, whereupon Presbytery appointed Rev. Mr. Smith to supply them on the first Sabbaths of August and October, and Rev. Mr. Peck to supply them on the first Sabbath of September.

Such is the first minute on record as to the origin and early history of this church. At various times, onward until the year 1768, we find the people of Sing Sing making application to the Presbytery above named to provide them with religious services, until at a meeting of Presbytery held at Salem, Westchester County, on the 30th day of August, 1768, we find an application from a joint committee appointed by the congregations of White Plains and Sing Sing, asking advice from Presbytery as to the proper person to preach alternately at the above-named places, "with a view to settling among them in the Gospel ministry."

This is the first reference which we can find of a congregation being gathered in Sing Sing, or of the people acting together in their united capacity as such, and hence we date from this period the organization of the church in this place. This was August 30, 1768. At that date Rev. Ichabod Lewis became the successor of Rev. John Smith in the churches of White Plains and Sing Sing. (*Gillett's History, vol. i. p. 379.*)

At or near this time the first church edifice was erected, having for its site what is now known as the "old burying-ground" at Sparta, about one and a half miles to the south of the village of Sing Sing.

The land upon which the church was built was originally given by Colonel Phillips, the proprietor of the manor extending from Kingsbridge to the Croton River.

Abraham de Rievère, the historian of the church of Phillipsburgh, *i. e.*, the Dutch Church of Tarrytown—makes this reference to the history of the grant, viz.: "That in 1680 it pleased his royal majesty of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, defender of the faith, to grant by prerogative, consent and license to the Honorable Vredryck Flypse, to freely buy to or in a sale of estate in the County of Westchester in America, beginning at the place of Spuyten Duyvel Kill and running north along the river to and on the Kill of Kitch-a-Wong (now Croton River, etc.), as in the license and patent contained, which is called Phillipsburg, and that Lord Flypse contract to let any one settle on said land free, for certain stipulated years, in order that it may as soon as possible be cultivated and settled."

The site upon which the church was originally built, comprising about three acres, was set apart and donated by Colonel Phillips for the use of a church, and when, after the War of the Revolution, the whole manor property was confiscated and sold by a committee, appointed by the Legislature, consisting of General Van Courtlandt, Isaac Stoutenburgh and one other person, the land held and occupied for church and burial purposes was explicitly reserved from sale, and the claim of the church thereto fully recognized and confirmed.

The following is the copy of an act passed March 18, 1808, confirming the title of the church to the property above named, and which had been occupied for church purposes previous to the war of the Revolution: "Be it enacted by the people of the State of New York, represented in Senate and Assembly, that all the right, title and interest of the people of this State in and to a certain lot of ground heretofore allotted by Frederick Phillips, to the Trustees of the Presbyterian Church and congregation of the Town of Mount Pleasant, in the county of Westchester, be and the same is hereby vested in said Trustees and their successors for the use of said church and congregation forever."

The church edifice, which had been much injured

during the war, was repaired in 1788, and continued to be occupied as a place of worship until A. D. 1800, at which time it was deemed expedient to remove the church to this village.

In 1798 Colonel Moses Ward had offered a lot on Pleasant Square, upon condition that the church should be removed to Sing Sing. After earnest discussion the church and congregation resolved to accept the offer of Colonel Ward, and in the year 1800 a church edifice was built upon the lot which had been given by him for that purpose.

In the edifice then built the congregation continued to worship until the year 1834, at which time the building still standing on Pleasant Square, and occupied by Trinity Church, was erected under the supervision of a building committee, composed of Messrs. Samuel Trowbridge, Clark Runyon, Russel Barnum, Henry Harris and William Jennison.

In the year 1868, necessity being felt for larger and better accommodations for religious worship, the congregation entered upon the work of erecting the edifice which it now occupies on Highland Avenue. As early as the beginning of the year 1866 the trustees of the church had been authorized by the congregation to purchase a suitable site for a new church edifice, and also to procure plans and approximate estimates of the cost of an edifice of sufficient size to meet the needs of the congregation. As the result of this action, the site of the present building, corner of Highland Avenue and Mott Street, was purchased, and at a meeting of the congregation subsequently held the following persons were appointed a committee to superintend the erection of a new church edifice, viz.: Messrs. Peter Rennie, Charles F. Maurice, Edward D. Truesdell, Russel Barnum, Stephen Todd and Jesse H. Platt. To these, who were the trustees of the church, the following persons were added from the congregation, viz.: Messrs. Gaylord B. Hubbell, Stephen G. Howe and Theodore Mace, together with the pastor. Mr. Mace having removed from the town before the building was completed, Mr. George Douglass was elected to fill his place, and Mr. Rennie having been removed by death, Mr. Sumner R. Stone was chosen as trustee of the church and a member of the building committee. Dr. George J. Fisher was also elected to fill a vacancy which occurred in the board of trustees, and so became a member of the building committee.

The contract for the building was taken by Mr. Peter H. Terhune, of Binghamton, N. Y., according to plans drawn by Mr. I. G. Perry, of New York, and the whole building was completed at a cost of about ninety-five thousand dollars.

The corner-stone was laid by the pastor, November 5, 1868, and the building was consecrated to the worship of Almighty God, May 24, 1870.

Rev. Dr. Joseph T. Duryea and Dr. Morris Sutphin, together with the pastor delivered addresses at the laying of the corner-stone.

Rev. Dr. John Hall, of New York, preached the sermon and the pastor offered up the prayer of dedication, setting apart the building to the worship and service of Almighty God.

Ecclesiastical Relations.—The ecclesiastical connections of this church, so far as they can be traced, are as follows: The church was organized by the Dutchess County Presbytery, in connection with which it continued until the formation of the Westchester Associate Presbytery in 1792, when this church united with it—cf. "Gillett's History," vol. 1, p. 215.

In this relation it remained until A. D. 1814, when upon the settlement of Rev. Thomas Jackson as pastor, we find the following record:



THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, SING SING.

"The church and congregation being convened, a letter was presented accepting of our call by Mr. Jackson on condition that the church shall unite with and put itself under the care of the Presbytery of New York." This condition was acceded to and in these relations the church continued until 1820, at which time it resumed its connection with the Westchester Associate Presbytery.

In the beginning of 1826 we find it styled an "Independent Church," but during the ministry of Rev. Jonathan Dickerson, it returned to its connection with the Presbytery of New York.

In 1833, under the ministry of Rev. James V. Henry it united with the Presbytery of Bedford, in which connection it continued until 1848, when it

again changed its ecclesiastical relations and united with the Second Presbytery of New York.

In 1870, upon the reunion of the Presbyterian Church, this congregation came into relations with the Presbytery of Westchester.

Ministers.—The early records of this church are unfortunately lost, so that the successive pastors previous to 1800 are not certainly known. We find however, in the minutes of the Dutchess County and of the Westchester Associate Presbyteries, the names of Rev. Messrs. Smith, Constant, Blair and Hickcox, appointed to fill the pulpits of this church, the one at White Plains and the one at Peekskill.

The following is a correct list of the ministers and pastors who served this church since the time of its removal to the village of Sing Sing. From the year 1800 and previously to 1814 the following named persons served either as settled pastor or stated supplies, viz.: Rev. Messrs. Kitchen, Colton, Henderson and Rose.

From 1814 to 1818 Rev. Thomas Jackson was pastor. He was succeeded, in 1819, by Rev. Asa Lyman. Rev. George Bourne was pastor from 1820 to 1822. In 1823 Rev. R. W. Knight served as stated supply. Rev. Mr. Johnson occupied the pulpit during 1824 and 1825. From 1826 to 1829 Rev. Jonathan Dickerson was pastor. From 1829 to 1832, a period of four years, Rev. Nathaniel Prime served as stated supply.

In November, 1832, the Rev. James V. Henry, entered upon his labors as pastor, and continued in this relation until October 1, 1841, a period of nearly nine years. In March, 1842, Rev. David Teese was installed, and continued the pastor of the church until July 1, 1847. During the year 1848 Rev. Conard Bittinger supplied the pulpit, and was followed by Rev. John P. Lundy, who was installed pastor in February, 1849, and remained until March, in the year 1851.

On the first Sabbath in August, 1851, Rev. Wilson Phraner, the present pastor, entered upon his work, and is now closing the thirty-fourth year of his ministry in this congregation.¹

Officers of the Church, April, 1885: Pastor, Rev. Wilson Phraner, D.D.; Elders—Charles F. Maurice, Stanton Cady, Dr. D. E. Provost, John F. Miller, Rev. David A. Holbrook; Deacons—Rodney S. Lockwood, Charles H. Cummings; Trustees—Sumner R. Stone (president), Jesse H. Platt (clerk), John V. Cockroft (treasurer), S. F. Washburn, Andrew Dickey, Jay Champlain, J. Howe Allen, John E. Johnson, R. S. Van Wyck.

Rev. Wilson Phraner, D.D., pastor of the Presbyterian Church of Sing Sing, was born at Jamaica, L. I., August 29, 1822. His father, Gasper Phraner, who was of German descent, was born at Elizabeth, N. J., from which place, at the age of twenty years, he removed to Jamaica, where he married Ruth,

daughter of Jacob Carpenter, of an old Long Island family. Dr. Phraner remained at home till the age of twelve, when he engaged as clerk in the store of James Ryder, where he continued for three years. After this, he occupied a position in the dry-goods establishment of Richards, Bassett & Aborn, in New York City, where he also remained three years. Embracing religion at an early age, he united with the Presbyterian Church of Jamaica, on the first Sabbath of June, 1839. This church enjoys the distinction of being the first organized and the oldest Presbyterian Church in the country. Resolving to devote himself to the Christian ministry, he prepared for a collegiate course at the University Grammar School, and entered the University of the city of New York, in June, 1843, and graduated in 1847, with one of the honors of his class, the Greek Oration. He also gained two of the mathematical prizes. His theological studies were pursued at the Union Theological Seminary of New York, graduating with the class of 1850.

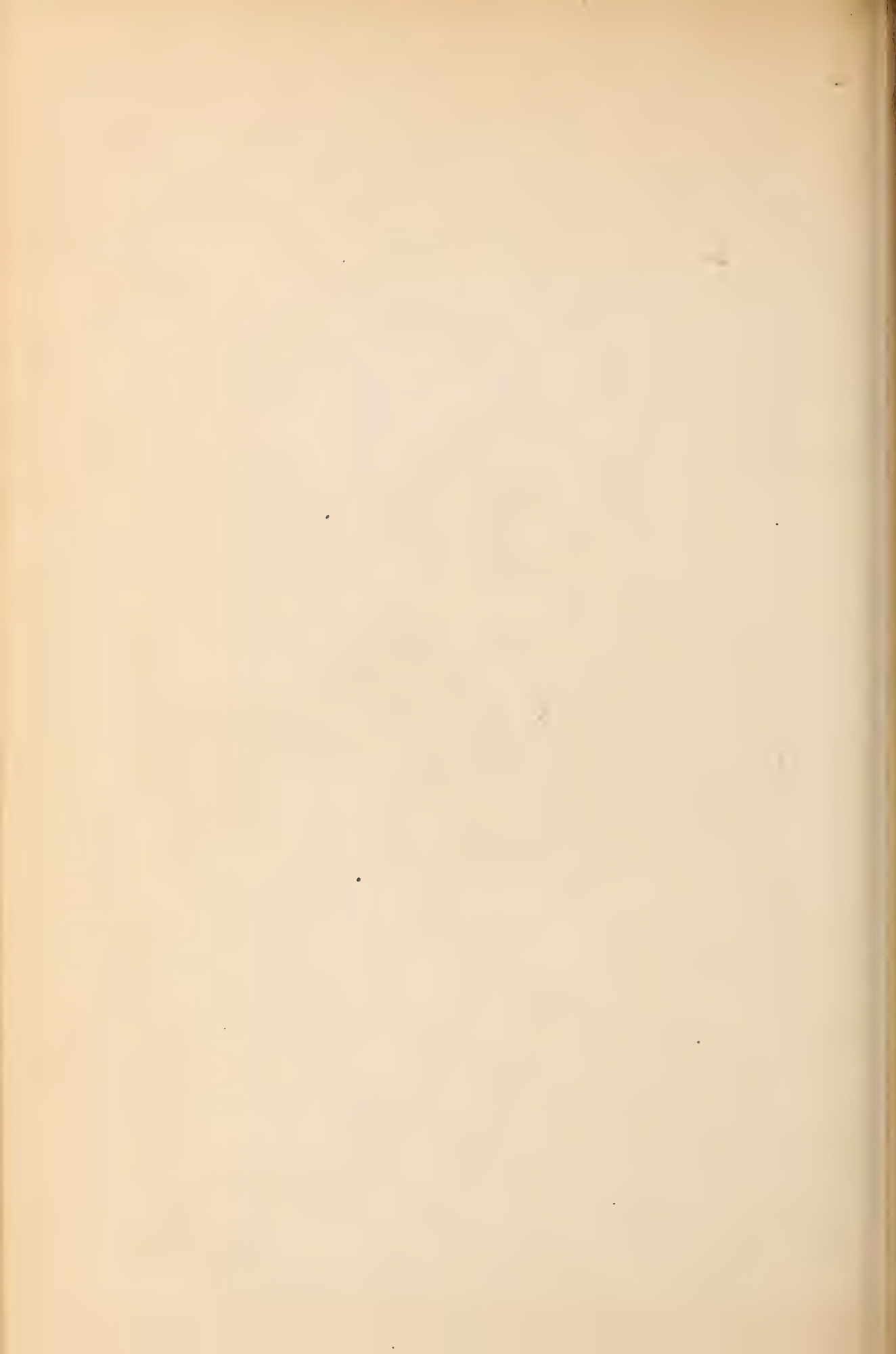
In 1849 Dr. Phraner made a trip to Europe, and attended a course of lectures in the United Presbyterian Seminary of Edinburgh, Scotland, after which he traveled for several months in England and upon the Continent. Upon his return he resumed his studies in the seminary and graduated with his class in May, 1850. During the year which immediately followed he was engaged in teaching, and at the same time, for three months, in serving the Presbyterian Church at Piermont, N. Y.; and then as stated supply for seven months, during the illness of the pastor, he occupied the pulpit of the First Presbyterian Church of Jersey City. While engaged in this field of labor he received a call from the Presbyterian Church of Sing Sing, N. Y., and on the first Sabbath of August, 1851, he commenced a labor which has not yet ended. From that time to the present all his talent and energies have been wholly devoted to the task of building up the church over which he presides and advancing the cause of Christ in the community. His labors in this field have been arduous and constant, and have been crowned with well merited success. The church, which at the commencement of his pastorate, was feeble, consisting of only eighty members, has now a membership of about four hundred, and the humble church building is replaced by one of the finest edifices on the Hudson River. During his long pastorate a new generation has grown up under his care and instruction and his unwearied labor, unceasing zeal and wide-spread influence are fully recognized by his ministerial brethren and the entire community. In 1876 the University of the City of New York conferred upon him the degree of doctor of divinity. For many years he has been a member of the Board of Home Missions of the Presbyterian Church, and also a member of the school committee of the board, giving much time and labor to these important interests.

Dr. Phraner has been conscientious and faithful in

¹Since the above was written by the Rev. Dr. Phraner he has resigned, and has been succeeded by the Rev. Franklin B. Dwight, who was recently installed.



Wilson Phares



the discharge of his duties as a Presbyter, never having been known to fail in an appointed duty, except under the most imperative necessity. As a member of Synod, and frequently of the General Assembly of the Church, he has for many years taken an earnest and active part in the counsels and deliberations which concern the welfare of the church and of the kingdom of Christ. So occupied has he been in his work as a pastor, and so unintermitted were his labors, that during the whole of the earlier part of his ministry, he refused to avail himself of the usual vacations so generally allowed to ministers. But the failure of his health in 1872 compelled him to rest for a time, and to seek restoration of health in foreign travel. In this pursuit, he again visited the countries of the old world, extending his journey to Egypt and Palestine, where he enjoyed the opportunity of observing the progress of the missionary work, and of having much pleasant fellowship with his missionary brethren, and especially with his old friend and classmate, Rev. William W. Eddy, D.D., of Sidon, now Professor of Theology in the Theological Seminary of Beyrout, Syria.

For a number of years, Dr. Phraner was Secretary of the Westchester County Bible Society, and Stated Clerk of the Second Presbytery of New York for twelve years. In addition to his pastoral labors, he is a frequent contributor to various religious periodicals, furnishing not only interesting notes of travel, but articles of profound thought upon the moral questions of the day.

In the summer of 1884, he visited Alaska and the Pacific coast for the purpose of rest and of observation upon the missionary work in those portions of the country.

Dr. Phraner married Blandina, daughter of Stephen Smith, of New York City, August 28, 1850. Their children are Wilson S., of the firm of Hough & Phraner, New York, Francis S., Stanley K., and Blandina S., wife of Frank D. Arthur, of Scarborough, Westchester County. One son, Halsey Dunning, died in early infancy, August 26, 1869.

Dr. Phraner is justly considered as one of the leaders of the Presbyterian ministry in this section of the country, and his influence as a preacher, a pastor, and a writer, are well known and fully recognized by his brethren and by the church at large.

ST. PAUL'S PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL CHURCH is located in Liberty Street, the edifice being a handsome Gothic structure of Sing Sing marble. The cornerstone of this church was laid by Bishop B. T. Onderdonk, November 6, 1834, and it was consecrated July 6, 1836.

The first Episcopal sermon preached in Sing Sing was by a minister from the city of Philadelphia, the exact date of which we cannot ascertain. The first regular Episcopal services were conducted by the Rev. John A. Clarke, during the summer of 1831 or

1832, while at Sing Sing on a vacation. These services were held on Wednesday evenings, in the Methodist church. This gentleman was rector of Grace Church, in New York City. He built the house on the corner of Highland and Broad Avenues, long occupied by the Cartwright family. The church records contain the following entry, under date of October 3, 1833: "A meeting of Episcopalians residing in this village and vicinity, was held at the house of Mr. Caleb Bacon, who resolved to form themselves into a society for the purpose, under Divine favor and assistance, of forming a church in said village; and that we will communicate with our Episcopal friends and neighbors on the subject, and urge, by our best efforts, for their co-operation in the good work." This is signed by George W. Cartwright, William Dargue, John Barlow, C. Bacon and John Strang.

A careful computation of those who were in sympathy with this enterprise showed that no less than twenty-four heads of families, representing one hundred and thirty-six souls, were to be found in and about the village. Previous to this new organization services were held at the house of Caleb Bacon, by Rev. A. H. Crosby, of Yonkers. November 11, 1833, the parish was legally organized and the first election took place, which resulted in the choice of the following officers: Wardens, Caleb Bacon, George W. Cartwright; Vestry, Robert Wiltse, Joseph Hunt, John Strang, J. C. Arthur, Peter R. Maison, John Barlow, William Dargue, John Smith.

The services of the Rev. Robert H. Harris, of White Plains, were temporarily secured. He came Sunday evenings, after his duties were over in his own church.

December 4th and 5th, 1833, "it was resolved to memorialize the rector, church-wardens and vestry of Trinity Church, New York, for aid by funds in the erection of a church edifice." In this memorial, the petitioners state, "That some years past an old Episcopal church in this neighborhood, at New Castle, (St. George's Church, built of wood), falling to decay, its congregation broken up and some of the descendants of its members have become Quakers, notwithstanding portions of them have until lately adhered to the forms of the Episcopal Church; and your memorialists entertain a hope that, with the blessing of Divine Providence, by the means of the establishment of a church at Sing Sing, many of the descendants of this ancient congregation may be brought back to our church, etc."

Trinity Church responded by an appropriation of two thousand dollars.

August 6, 1834, Rev. Edward N. Mead was called to the rectorship; he accepted the 29th of the same month and was installed as rector July 7, 1836, the day following the consecration of the church. November 14th he tendered his resignation, which was accepted. He was succeeded by Rev. Charles Henry Halsey, who was called December 16, 1839, from the

position of assistant minister of St. Thomas' Church, in New York City. He began his duties in May, 1840.

June 28, 1841, the vestry purchased of Mr. Bleeker the house in State Street, now occupied by Z. C. Insee, for three thousand one hundred and fifty dollars, as a rectory. Rev. Mr. Halsey resigned November 1, 1846. The Rev. Charles Tomes, of Knoxville, Tenn., became rector October 16, 1846. He remained only about one year, to be succeeded December 20, 1847, by the Rev. William F. Halsey, a presbyter of the diocese of Mississippi. November 4, 1856, Mr. Halsey resigned, to be succeeded March 8, 1857, by the Rev. J. Henry Black. In August, 1863, he was succeeded by the Rev. James I. Helm, of Philadelphia, who entered upon his duties November 1, 1863. Rev. Dr. Helm departed this life October 16, 1880. The next clergyman of this church was the Rev. James O. Drumm, whose stay was very brief, from December, 1880, until the following Easter. The present incumbent, the Rev. ^{Albin} Barlow Jennings, of Easton, Conn., became the rector of St. Paul's Church August 1, 1881.

In the autumn of 1859 the church was enlarged and beautified at a cost of nearly three thousand dollars. The writer well remembers the old-fashioned box-stalls with high partitions, each occupied by a family, as they existed in this church over thirty years ago. By the removal of these, and other alterations and enlargements, the seating capacity of the house was increased about one-third. In 1870 the church was again much improved and a handsome spire erected, the entire work costing about four thousand dollars. The tower contains a large bell of lovely tone, cast by A. Meneely, of West Troy, N. Y., in 1835.

Early in the year 1864, the buildings of the old Franklin Academy were removed from the spacious grounds opposite the church, and were replaced by a substantial and commodious brick cottage, to be used as a rectory. It was completed and ready for occupancy by the Rev. Dr. Helm on the first of May, 1865. The cost of this rectory was about eleven thousand dollars. In the annual report of the Diocese of New York for 1883, the number of families attending service at St. Paul's Church is stated to be one hundred and five, and the number of communicants as two hundred.

TRINITY EPISCOPAL CHURCH is an offshoot of St. Paul's Episcopal Church, and was organized on the 27th of January, 1868. The first officers of the church were as follows: Wardens—John Strang, John Barlow. Vestrymen—Benjamin Moore, Marlborough Churchill, N. O'Brien, Jr., G. J. Barlow, Daniel P. Bacon, W. W. Benjamin, W. H. Barlow, W. H. Grant. The congregation obtained possession of the church on the east side of Main Street, at Pleasant Square, where they worship at present.

The Rev. Clarence Buel, the first rector, entered

upon his duties May 1, 1868, and resigned December 12, 1871. He was at one time a lawyer, and had relinquished the pursuit of that profession to enter the army during the Rebellion. He attained the rank of colonel, and was afterwards badly wounded. He then studied for the Episcopal ministry in New York City, and while in deacon's orders, was stationed in Northern New York. He then came to Sing Sing, where he was ordained to the priesthood.

The Rev. George Wilson Ferguson was called to the rectorship December 27, 1871, and entered upon his duties at the beginning of the season of Lent in the following year. Mr. Ferguson is a native of New York City and a graduate of Columbia College. He studied Theology at the General Seminary in New York City, and was ordained to deacon's orders in 1866, and to priest's orders in 1867. He became pastor of Emanuel Episcopal Church in Otego, Otego County, New York, and from there he went to Waterford, New York, where he remained until coming to his present charge.

The number of communicants in 1868 was ninety-one; in 1884, two hundred and thirty. The Sunday-school in 1884 contained about one hundred and fifty scholars. William H. Barlow was superintendent. The present officers are as follows: Wardens—Benjamin Moore, George D. Arthur. Vestrymen—Wm. H. Barlow, Thos. J. Hand, Robt. G. Mead, B. Stuyvesant Gibson, Clement C. Moore, James H. Coleman, Edwin G. McAlpin and Ralph Brandreth.

THE SPRING STREET METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—The early history of this church is enveloped in considerable obscurity. The facts which are given below were obtained from some of the older inhabitants, and are, for the most part, traditional; and yet it is believed they are quite correct and trustworthy. It would appear that the Methodist faith was first propagated in this place about the year 1792, by an Irish divine, whose name was David Brown. He was an earnest and devoted Christian, and was one of several itinerant preachers whose circuit embraced several counties besides Westchester. He preached his first sermon in a cider-mill belonging to Jacob Rider. He afterward held his meetings in a barn, not far from where the village now stands. We are told that, in 1793, he preached in this barn, a box serving as his pulpit, boards for seats and hay-mows for galleries. Jacob Rider and Caleb Smith were the great workers in the promotion of the Methodist religion in those early days. The latter, about the year 1800, having offered his own house as a place for public worship, the cider-mill and barn were abandoned, the circuit preacher visiting the place, with considerable regularity, once in four weeks. The house of Caleb Smith was located near the junction of Dale with Croton Avenue. The room in which the meetings were held for almost twenty years would accommodate about sixty persons. Bishop Asbury is known to have visited this place

again and again. Space will not admit of giving the names of the early preachers who held services here. After the removal of Caleb Smith to the neighborhood of the present camp-meeting grove, services were held at different private houses for several years. The original Caleb Smith, of whom we have been speaking, had two sons, Caleb and Isaac, who were converted in the Methodist faith, and who became earnest workers in the cause. In 1823, and possibly earlier, meetings were held in the Franklin Academy, which stood on the grounds now occupied as the Episcopal rectory in Spring Street. Here the preachers were Horace Bartlett, Peter C. Oakley (1823-24), — Remington (1825-26), Marvin Richardson (1827-28) and Henry Hatfield (1829-30).

The year 1831 marks an epoch in the history of Methodism in Sing Sing. During the almost forty previous years the church had made but little progress; its membership was small—rarely over twenty-five or thirty—and sometimes less. To Captain Isaac Smith is particularly due the credit of having infused new life into the church. He was converted at the age of twenty-four years; he possessed an ardent nature, great energy and an iron will. He was active in business, a ship-builder by trade, having in his time built no less than one hundred vessels, including steamboats, sloops, schooners, etc. He exercised his active, positive and sanguine powers as a church trustee for a full half century. In the year 1831 Captain Isaac Smith, Daniel Barnes and Daniel Tompkins set at work in earnest to build a church. Mr. James Smith, a lawyer of New York City, gave a piece of land, a portion of his orchard, for a church lot, which is the same now occupied by the Methodist Church in Spring Street. With much personal effort these earnest men pushed forward the work, and finally completed an edifice at a cost of three thousand dollars. This building still stands at the rear of the present edifice, where it was moved when the latter was to be built. It is now a tenement house, filled with the sons and daughters of Erin. This building was scarcely paid for when the new one was commenced.‡

About the time of which we are writing the Rev. Henry Hatfield and the Rev. N. W. Thomas brought about a great revival, memorable in the annals of the church. Among its most distinguished converts were J. B. Wakely, subsequently a famous Methodist Doctor of Divinity, David Codrington and William McCord (the two latter are still living), Joseph and John Orser, William Lawrence (who died in the year, 1885) and Elizabeth and Anna McCord. The Rev. Theodocius Clark was the first pastor who occupied a parsonage in this town.

In 1850 the Rev. J. N. Shaffer made strenuous efforts to build a new church. It was completed in 1852, at a cost of twelve thousand dollars. It was dedicated by Bishop Janes, assisted by Rev. Dr. Foster (now a bishop), Rev. Dr. Peck, Rev. Dr. Mc-

Clintock and Rev. Dr. J. B. Wakeley. Whoever is curious to know the succession of clergymen that has served the church from its commencement in this village may consult the church records with satisfaction. The church now has about six hundred members on its rolls. The Sunday-school, which was organized in 1830 with ten scholars, now boasts of having three hundred and fifty scholars and teachers. The present pastor is the learned and eloquent George S. Hare, D.D. The superintendent is the faithful Mr. Benjamin Jenks.

In 1875 a strong effort was made to build a new church edifice which should far exceed that in Spring Street both in size and in magnificence. A lot was purchased on Highland Avenue at a cost of twelve thousand five hundred dollars. A building committee was appointed, consisting of Henry J. Baker, Samuel E. Tompkins, L. P. Bostwick, Barney Foshay and Alexander McLean. Subscriptions to the amount of thirty thousand dollars were obtained, satisfactory plans were drawn by Mr. Roberts, architect, of New York City, and the work commenced. It was to be built of crystalline white marble, from the quarries at Pleasantville. Hundreds of loads of beautiful blocks were brought over the six long miles of rough country roads and chiseled on the building grounds. The work in a short time was stopped for want of funds, and up to this date has never been resumed. Great expectations from certain persons failed to be realized, and the laudable, though perhaps rather ambitious, enterprise has been doomed to a humiliating and still uncertain postponement.¹

THE NORTH SING SING METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH was established largely through the wisdom and liberality of the late Henry Young, Esq., a wealthy citizen who resided in Claremont, a little community in the northeastern vicinity of Sing Sing. Seeing the necessity of a church in North Sing Sing, and believing that it would be most congenial to its citizens to have it under the charge of the Methodists, though a Presbyterian himself, he generously offered to bear one-fourth of the expense of purchasing a suitable lot and of erecting a proper church edifice, providing the remainder should be subscribed by the people. The church is a neat and commodious wooden structure, with tile roof and plain stained-glass windows. It was completed and dedicated December 27, 1870. Bishop E. S. Janes conducted the services in the morning and the Rev. Cyrus D. Foss in the evening. The entire cost of the church and grounds was over eight thousand dollars, one-half of which was subscribed on the day of the dedication, Mr. Young donating the remainder.

The Rev. Henry Lounsberry was the first pastor and occupied the pulpit in 1871. He was succeeded by the Rev. Alonzo C. Morehouse in 1872. Then followed the Rev. John F. Richmond, 1873-75; Rev.

¹ Since the above was written renewed efforts have been made with very hopeful prospects of success.

Alexander McLean, 1876; Rev. James H. Hawxhurst, 1877-78; Rev. Nehemiah O. Lent, 1879-81; and, last of all, the Rev. William D. Fero, 1882-85.

In addition to the original cost of the church, subsequent alterations and the building of a parsonage involved an expenditure of several thousand dollars more. The church in January, 1871, reported to the Conference seventeen members and twenty-seven probationers. In April, 1884, there were eighty-seven members. The Sabbath-school connected with this church has one hundred scholars and twenty officers.

ST. AUGUSTINE'S ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH.—During the building of the Croton Aqueduct through Sing Sing religious services were conducted for the laborers, who were mostly Irish Roman Catholics, by a priest. A plot of ground was purchased on the Post road, and a rude frame building, resembling a barn, was hastily erected, and used as a house of worship. It was situated where now is the lawn of Daniel D. Mangam. It was entirely inadequate to contain the large numbers who attended upon the services, and the sight of the brawny laborers kneeling on the grass outside of the house was one which some of Sing Sing's old residents still remember. It was the intention of the Catholics to establish a cemetery on the ground about the church, and a couple of bodies were actually interred there, but the trustees of the village refused to allow any further burials inside the corporation limits. The property afterwards passed out of the hands of the Catholics, and for several years thereafter there was no meeting place in the town for persons of the Catholic faith.

About the year 1844 Father Cummsky, of Philadelphia, was in Sing Sing and its neighborhood for about six months and held several services. The next priest to enter the field in Sing Sing was the Rev. John Hacket, the pastor of the Roman Catholic Church at Verplanck's Point. The first place of meeting under his auspices was in the house of John O'Brien, located in the angle formed by the junction of Cedar Lane with the Post road. This was about the year 1845 or 1846. Removals were then made successively to a little building on the Post road, located where the foundations of the new Methodist Church have been laid, and formerly used as a Dutch Reformed Church, the Rev. John Alburtes being the minister, to the old Franklin Academy building, located where the parsonage of St. Paul's Protestant Episcopal Church now stands, to Vance's Hall, on Spring street, near the corner of Main, and to a building on the dock owned by Dr. Benjamin Brandreth, which is at present used by the Porous Plaster Company as a store-house. In 1853 Father Hacket bought the lot on which the present Catholic Church stands. He was shortly afterwards settled over a Catholic Church in Tarrytown, in which village he died in June, 1863. His body was interred on Ver-

planck's Point, beside the church which had witnessed so much of his labors.

The successor to his work in Sing Sing was the Rev. Patrick Phalen, by whom, in 1856, the front portion of the present church was built. Father Phalen was an Irishman by birth, and came to Sing Sing from the Bermuda Islands. He was a delicate man, and died while on a trip to the South for the benefit of his health, by taking, it is said, a strong medicine by mistake.

He was succeeded by the Rev. Edward McGean, who was pastor for five years, and died March 18, 1861, in the thirty-eighth year of his age. Father McGean was born in Downpatrick, County Down, Ireland, and worked for some time as a mechanic before becoming a priest. He was ordained in America. His death was very sudden, being occasioned by heart-disease. During his time the vestry-room and chancel were added to the church.

Father McGean was succeeded by the Rev. William McClellan, who was born in Scotland, May 9, 1816, and was the son of a Presbyterian minister. He was converted to the Catholic faith when sixteen years of age, and three years later entered St. John's College to study for the Roman Catholic ministry. He was professor of Greek in that institution for four years, and afterwards upon his ordination to the priesthood was placed in charge of the Church of the Transfiguration in New York City. St. Augustine's Church in Sing Sing was the next church presided over by him. He died suddenly, of apoplexy, on the 9th of May, 1871. His theological library, which contained about four thousand well-selected volumes, was rich in fine editions of the classics, and the early fathers of the church, passed into the possession of St. Joseph's Provincial Roman Catholic Seminary, in Troy, N. Y. During his incumbency the parsonage, located in the lot adjoining the church on the south, was built. Father McClellan was a man of superior intellectual attainments and was much beloved.

He was succeeded by Rev. James Hasson, a native of Londonderry, Ireland, who was born February 15, 1821. He received his education in All Hallow's College, Dublin, and was ordained in that country at the age of twenty-five years. Coming to the United States, he served as a brigade chaplain in the War of the Rebellion. After the war he was priest, successively, in St. Stephen's Roman Catholic Church in New York, in the Roman Catholic Churches at Verplanck's Point and Peekskill, in the Church of the Transfiguration on Mott Street, New York, and in St. Augustine's Roman Catholic Church of Sing Sing. He died in Brooklyn, May 28, 1880, having gone to the residence of his niece, Mrs. John McCormick, after a vain endeavor to recruit his health at the seashore. The primary cause of his death was bronchitis, contracted during the war.

He was succeeded on the 25th of June, 1880, by the present pastor, the Rev. Patrick W. Tandy, an

Irishman by birth. Father Tandy was educated in this country, finishing his studies in Fordham. He was the first priest in charge of St. Joseph's Provincial Seminary, in Troy, New York, where he entered upon the discharge of his duties in November, 1864. After remaining in charge for two years he became an assistant in the Church of the Transfiguration in New York City, and subsequently took charge of a parish in Amenia. From this last place he came to Sing Sing. In 1884 he was assisted by the Rev. James P. Byrnes, a native of Ireland, and educated at Seton Hall, New Jersey. He came to Sing Sing from the Church of the Immaculate Conception, on Fourteenth Street, New York City.

In 1884 St. Augustine's Church had approximately fourteen hundred members and a Sunday-school which was attended by about four hundred scholars. A Young Men's Literary Union was organized in 1880 by Father Tandy, for the literary and social culture of its members, which is in a flourishing condition. There are three sodalities, also established by Father Tandy, the object of which is to promote church work and social intercourse. They are as follows: The Sodality of the Sacred Heart, composed of the young and old of both sexes; the Sodality of the Children of Mary, composed of young ladies; and a sodality of boys under eighteen years of age, who are not old enough to become efficient members of the Young Men's Literary Union.

St. Augustine's Church is a modest structure. In the rear of the lot occupied by it is a public school, which was started by Rev. Father William McClellan as a parochial school, but afterwards, by arrangement with the school trustees, was converted into a public school. It is attended by about one hundred and twenty-five children.

ALL SAINTS' P. E. CHURCH.—The following facts concerning the history of All Saints' Church were furnished by the Rev. A. F. Tenney, rector in 1884:

All Saints' Church, in Briar Cliff, in the town of Ossining, near the village of Sing Sing.

The late John D. Ogilby, D.D., a minister of Trinity Parish, New York City, and professor of ecclesiastical history in the General Theological Seminary in New York, bought and occupied, during the summer months, the property now owned by Charles W. Woolsey, Esq.

He began the construction of a chapel to provide services for the neighboring people, but died before he had completed the edifice. The work was finished by Henry McFarlan, Esq., aided by his brother, Mr. Francis McFarlan, and the opening services were held on the 13th of December, 1854.

The following clergymen took part on this occasion: The Rev. Dr. Morton, of Philadelphia; the Rev. Dr. Higbee, of New York; the Rev. W. H. Williams, of Ridgefield, Connecticut; the Rev. W. F. Halsey, rector of St. Paul's Church in Sing Sing; the Rev. A. B. Carter, of Yonkers; and the Rev. Mr.

Johnson, of New Jersey. The Rev. Frederick Ogilby preached the sermon.

The Holy Communion was administered by the Rev. Dr. Creighton, of Tarrytown. At this service the building was entirely furnished. It was built of stone, in Gothic architecture, after a design furnished by an architect of New York, and was a copy of an English chapel.

The interior was finished in pine, oiled and varnished. All of the windows were of stained glass. A. Beresford Hope, Esq., of England, a friend of Dr. John Ogilby, gave the chancel windows in memory of the founder. The font was given by a lady friend; the communion service by a family of St. James' Church, in Philadelphia, through the Rev. Dr. Morton. Sir Robert Ogilby gave a sum of money for all the windows, excepting those in the chancel.

The Bible for the desk was given by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts. The prayer-books, the altar linen, and the surplice were also contributed by friends; also the carpets and the alms-basin. Afterwards a bell was given by friends of Mr. Mulholland, a silver paten by the Brinckerhoff family, a silver chalice by Rev. Dr. Creighton, of Tarrytown, and a lectern by Mrs. Adrian Knowles, also of the Brinckerhoff family.

Other parts of the interior fittings of the church, except the pews and altar, have been from time to time supplied or renewed by members of the Brinckerhoff family.

From 1854 until the present time continuous services have been held in the church, and there never has been any debt incurred by the parish. The building and the work connected with it were offered at one time to St. Paul's parish, in Sing Sing, but the offer was declined. The work was sustained from its beginning until 1874 chiefly by the efforts of the Brinckerhoff family and their relatives. Since that date it has been supported by different individuals who have given the larger contributions, and by the regular offerings at the morning service on Sundays. The seats have always been free. Various clergymen were ministers in charge until 1869, among whom were the Rev. A. H. Gesner, Rev. Dr. Stocking, Rev. Reuben Howes, Rev. Mr. Grannis and Rev. Dr. Post.

In 1869 the parish was incorporated under the title of "The Rector, Wardens and Vestrymen of All Saints' Church, in the town of Ossining, County of Westchester, New York."

The rectors since the incorporation have been the Rev. Dr. J. B. Gibson, for many years rector of St. John's School in Sing Sing, the Rev. A. H. Gesner and Rev. A. F. Tenney, the present incumbent. The vestry consists of the rector, the wardens and five vestrymen, whose names are now, 1884, as follows: Rector, the Rev. A. F. Tenney; Senior Warden, C. C. Clarke, Esq., first vice-president of the New York Central and Hudson River Railroad; Junior Warden, Mr. Charles F. Ogilby, of New Brunswick, N. J., a son

of the founder. The number of communicants is about forty. The Sunday-school has thirty children.

In the winter of 1884 a Sunday-school, long sustained at the Scarborough school-house, by the Rogers family, became a mission of this parish, thus adding about twenty children to the care of the rector.

In 1866 an old farm-house was purchased, altered and repaired by Miss Harriet McFarlan, with the help of friends, and by her presented to the parish for a rectory. This house was sold in 1882.

Robert Oliver, in 1859, gave to the parish a lot of two acres, east of the church, to be used as a site for a rectory. A house was built upon this property in 1882, at an expense of nearly four thousand dollars, of wood and stone. The largest contributors to the building fund were C. C. Clarke, Esq., the Brinckerhoff family, President Morton, of Stevens Institute, Hoboken, Miss Patterson, and Mrs. Churchill.

Mr. Charles W. Woolsey, at the same time, besides superintending the construction of the rectory, gave a fund of one thousand dollars, the interest of which is to be used for the care of the rectory.

Mr. Henry W. Brinckerhoff, who died in 1880, also left a legacy of one thousand dollars, to be used as the vestry should determine. In 1882 a stained-glass window was added to the church, on the south side, in memory of Miss Harriet McFarlan, and a handsome oak door to the porch, in memory of Mr. Henry McFarlan. In 1884 the church was repaired in its interior, and furnished with handsome lamps. The chancel is lighted by a beautiful antique bronze hanging lamp, the gift of Mr. Woolsey, in 1882. It may be said that this little edifice, seating only about one hundred, has always been a great attraction to the people in its vicinity, and to many of the village of Sing Sing, and the work which has been connected with it bids fair to be the nucleus of as fine a rural parish as may be found about the metropolis. It has been planted and fostered by earnest and pious people, who have been characterized from the first by sound churchmanship. It has also afforded a place of worship for the humbler people, who were too far from the village to attend service there. It has drawn from all denominations, and has maintained a liberal and catholic spirit, consistent with its peculiar mission.

THE CAMP-MEETING GROUNDS NEAR SING SING.
—One of the special attractions for many past years, which this town has presented to a certain class of persons, is the Camp-Meeting Grove, situated about a mile east of the centre of our village. Under an act of incorporation passed by the Legislature of the State of New York, a meeting was called on the camp-ground, Monday, April 21, 1834, at which time an organization was formed under the title of "The Incorporation of the Mount Pleasant Methodist Episcopal Camp-Meeting Society." Robert Knowlton and Margaret, his wife, on May 1, 1834, deeded eight acres of ground to the trustees, for a consideration of one

thousand two hundred dollars. Some years afterwards David McCord, Jr., and William McCord deeded to the trustees the ground, on which there is a very fine spring of pure water, from which it is said that General Washington was fond of drinking at the time his army was encamped in the valley near by.

April 19, 1867, a second act of incorporation was passed by the Legislature, the society being styled "The Camp-Meeting Association of the M. E. Church of the City of New York." This association now owns the grounds, buildings and all the appurtenances belonging to the Sing Sing Camp. It was authorized to hold and sell real estate, but not to hold property at any time of more than three hundred thousand dollars in value, and restricting the annual income to a sum not exceeding fifty thousand dollars. The grounds are now nicely fitted up with gravel walks, regular streets and avenues, abundant seats, comfortable cottages and a preachers' house, the front of which is the rostrum or pulpit, from which the preaching is done. When the camp-meeting is in full working order, hundreds of family tents are erected, great prayer-meeting pavilions are opened, boarding or hotel tents are lined with tables; grocery, bakery, butchery and barber tents are resplendent with useful and ornamental garniture. The camp occupies a beautiful grove, which is cheerfully lighted at night, and order and decorum is preserved by an efficient police. The camp-meetings of to-day are mild, and tame almost to dullness, compared with those which the writer attended here a third of a century ago. Then they were extensively advertised by placards in New York City, several extra steam-boats ran morning and evening trips to bring thousands of all sorts and kinds of men, women and children—good, bad, very bad and indifferent. Hundreds of vehicles, of every kind, four and six-horse coaches, whirled through our streets, while songs and hymns were sung, and shouts were fairly howled, to a degree only limited by the utmost powers of the human voice. The roadsides were crowded with the surging multitude, and Bedlam and Pandemonium were outdone in noise and confusion. The country for many miles around poured in its throngs; lads and lassies, bachelors and spinsters, the old and infirm helped to swell the vast caravan. It was indeed a gala-day. Acres of neighboring fields and all adjoining fences were required to tether the countless teams. Peddlers and grog-shops were not wanting to make up the show. The bodies, if not the souls of men, were spiritually revived.

THE WOMAN'S CHRISTIAN TEMPERANCE UNION has an active branch in this village, with a membership of one hundred. The ladies of the Union have made the most strenuous and persistent efforts to suppress the sale of intoxicating beverages and in reclaiming the victims of intemperance. They now maintain a free reading-room and a sewing-school,

which has on its rolls not less than sixty scholars. The Union has about seventy-five members, who have been the means of accomplishing much good.

THE OSSINING BRANCH OF THE AMERICAN SOCIETY FOR THE PREVENTION OF CRUELTY TO ANIMALS was organized in this town in the year 1872. It began work with seventeen members. The Branch was chartered March 12, 1883, in order that it could accept any bequests that should be made to it by its friends. The society maintains an agent, and is quite active in carrying out its humane intentions.

THE STATE'S PRISONS AT SING SING.—An act of the Legislature, passed March 7, 1824, authorized the building of a new State Prison in the First and Second Senatorial Districts, and appointed commissioners to superintend the same. The present site was selected chiefly on account of its marble-beds, its accessibility by water and its salubrity. On the 14th of May, 1825, one hundred convicts from the Auburn Prison, under the supervision of Captain Elam Lynds, were landed on the grounds from a canal boat in which they were brought. Operations were at once commenced, and in May, 1828, the prison buildings were completed. The main structure, which was built of hewn stone from the marble-quarries, contained six hundred cells. Before the roof was fairly finished it was ascertained that the accommodations were entirely inadequate, and therefore a fourth story was added, which increased the number of cells to eight hundred. In after-years two additions were built, each of one story, so that at the present time there are six stories, and an aggregate of twelve hundred cells. These cells are seven feet in depth, seven in height, and forty-two inches wide, which gives but one hundred and seventy-one cubic feet of space for each convict. In several hundred of these little cells two convicts are made to share this restricted space. I have known about sixteen hundred convicts to occupy twelve hundred cells.

At the time the prison was built there were but two State Prisons, one at Auburn and one in New York City, the latter being known as the "Newgate." In 1828 all the convicts who were in the "Newgate Prison" were removed to the "Mount Pleasant State Prison," which was the official name of what is even now improperly styled the Sing Sing Prison. "The Newgate" was from this date abandoned, and, though still standing, has been turned to a variety of uses.

The usual number of convicts in the prison at this place is fifteen hundred. The much-boasted reform in the financial management of the State Prison at this place, by which it is claimed that from the institution having been conducted at a very considerable loss to the State under former management, it has been made a source of revenue to the State, though the present policy, is, to a great degree, a matter of mere plausibility.

At the time the prison was under the charge of three "inspectors" it fell far short of paying the cost

of its maintenance, in consequence of several circumstances which no longer exist. Then there was no inclosing wall—a need that had long been felt, and a thing which had been asked for again and again, but refused. The wall done away with a large number of guards which stood at sentinel stations all over the prison grounds. The removal of the female convicts in 1877, and the dismissal of the whole corps of matrons, was an immense item in the reduction of expenses. To these must be added the difficulty of finding employment for the male convicts. Hundreds of them were kept in idleness, or at employments by the State that would not pay for their support. There are many other causes which could be easily pointed out, that would explain the difference between then and now. I believe, however, the prison is well managed now; but that it will be a sorry day for the State, and a sad day for the welfare of the unfortunate convicts, when the "contract system" shall be abolished, and the convicts prevented from learning valuable trades, and earning enough to pay the cost of their maintenance.

The prison for female State convicts was built and ready for occupancy in the year 1840. It is an imposing marble structure, after the model of a Greek temple, with massive columns, and stands in a conspicuous place behind, but above all the other prison buildings. The number of female convicts seldom amounted to more than two hundred. They were removed in two companies, May 21, and December 16, 1877, from Sing Sing to the Crow Hill Penitentiary, which is back of the city of Brooklyn.

SING SING AUTHORS AND THEIR WORKS.—This place is not specially noted for its literary productions. The Rev. Mr. J. Luckey, formerly resident Chaplain of the State Prisons, wrote and published a book on prison-life at Sing Sing. The Rev. Alexander Watson, one of our oldest and most highly esteemed citizens, is the author of "The American Home Garden; being principles and rules for the culture of vegetables, fruit, flowers and shrubbery. To which are added brief notes of farm crops, with a table of their average products and chemical constituents." New York, Harper & Brothers, 1859, pp. 531, 8vo. three hundred and sixteen figures. The author states in his preface, that "for most of the illustrative drawings, which form an important feature of the work, he is indebted to his wife, and has pleasure in acknowledging the obligation."

This work was favorably received and regarded as one of considerable merit.

General Aaron Ward made a journey to Europe, Egypt and the Holy Land, in the years 1859 and 1860, and on his return wrote a book with the following title: "Around the Pyramids: being a tour in the Holy Land, and, incidentally, through several European countries and portions of Africa, during the years 1859-'60." The preface is dated "Sing Sing, N. Y., January, 1863." The fourth edition was published by

Carleton, New York, 1865, in a duodecimo of three hundred and nine pages.

The late Rev. James Boxer, former pastor of the Baptist Church of Sing Sing, was the author of a very clever book, written while residing in this place, entitled, "Sacred Dramas. I. Naaman the Syrian; II. The Finding of Moses; III. Jephtha's Daughter." Crown octavo, pp. 174. Boston: Lee and Shepard, 1875.

The four books above mentioned are all the contributions to literature of which our village can boast. The author of this sketch has written a number of medical essays, which, in the aggregate, amount to over one thousand octavo pages, none of which have been reprinted in book form.

COURSES OF POPULAR LECTURES.—In the year 1857, through the influence and exertions of the late Mr. James T. Colyer and others, a lecture association was organized, and for a number of succeeding years it supplied the people of Sing Sing with excellent winter courses of lectures. The best talent of the land was procured, including such persons as the Rev. T. Starr King, Revs. Dr. Vinton, Bethune, Henry Ward Beecher, Hon. Thomas Francis Meagher, Cassius M. Clay, Mr. Whipple, John B. Gough, the poet John G. Saxe, Mr. Wendell Phillips, Professor Youmans and many others.

In 1875, the Baptist Church having incurred a heavy indebtedness by the erection of a new house of worship, the plan of increasing their funds by the profits of winter courses of popular lectures was inaugurated, with general satisfaction to the public and considerable accessions of funds to the exchequer of the church. These courses have averaged an annual profit of about five hundred dollars. The large audiences have thus been treated to the eloquence of most of the best orators of our country.

Sing Sing has been long celebrated for its schools. The healthfulness and beauty of the location, its accessibility, its nearness to the city of New York, all conspire to make it a desirable place for the establishment of educational institutions. Its schools enjoy a national reputation, having a patronage from almost every State and Territory in the Union. The many hundreds of gentlemen and ladies who have received their academical education in our village, and who are scattered throughout our land, will look back to old Sing Sing with pleasant remembrances, and will continue to replenish its schools with their own sons and daughters, as they already have done in many instances. A brief notice of each of these schools will now be given.

THE PUBLIC OR FREE-SCHOOLS.—Before the year 1857, the two public-school buildings then in use in Sing Sing, were wretched little houses, each containing two small rooms, one for males the other for females. One house was located in Spring Street, where G. W. & S. C. Kipp's furniture store-house now stands; the other, built about the year 1840,

was on Water Street, opposite, and a little north of Blakeslee's foundry. In 1857 the main portion of the commodious brick edifice on Broadway was erected, and in 1875 a large extension was added to it, thus making it one of the finest public-school buildings in the county. January 12, 1880, a branch school was opened in Broad Avenue, which accommodates about two hundred scholars, under the care of two teachers. Telephonic communication is kept up between the two schools, and both are under the superintendance of Mr. James Irving Gorton, who has had the general charge of the public schools of Sing Sing, since January, 1866. The attendance in 1884 was a little over one thousand pupils, carefully graded and instructed by an efficient corps of twenty lady teachers. Most of these teachers are graduates of our public school. The policy of training our own teachers has proven to be efficient, wise and just, as well as a source of satisfaction to our citizens. The Union Free-School District No. 1, has a library, which now contains eleven hundred and thirty-eight volumes. In 1866 an alphabetical catalogue of about nine hundred volumes was published by the trustees of the district (pp. 28, 8vo). The total cost of maintaining the public free-schools of Sing Sing, for the year ending August, 1884, was eleven thousand two hundred dollars.

Besides those above mentioned, the town contains five other school districts and school-houses, as follows: No. 2 school-house is located near to camp-meeting grounds; No. 3, is at Whitson's Corners; No. 4, is at Sparta; No. 5 district has two school-houses, one being in the rear of the Roman Catholic Church, is known as "St. Augustine's School;" the other is on the Croton road, over two miles north of Sing Sing.

The school-house in the rear of the Roman Catholic Church was erected by the Rev. William McClellan, priest of the St. Augustine parish, as a parochial school. An arrangement was subsequently entered into with the trustees of district No. 5, by which it was converted into a public school. It accommodates about one hundred and twenty-five pupils, who are instructed by a male principal and two female assistants. The school-house of district No. 6, is at Scarborough or Loseeville, which like most of the other country schools, is conducted by a single teacher.

According to the official certificate of the school commissioners, September 30, 1884, the number of children between the ages of five and twenty-one years, in each district was as follows: No. 1, 1666; No. 2, 141; No. 3, 187; No. 4, 133; No. 5, 458; No. 6, 76; total 2661.

MT. PLEASANT ACADEMY.—This institution was founded in 1814, through the liberality of the citizens of the town; it was incorporated in 1820, and soon after chartered by the Board of Regents.

The present main building—a large marble edifice, was erected in 1830–32, at a cost of eighteen thousand dollars, under the supervision of Rev. N. S. Prime,

the principal of the academy. In 1864 a three-story brick building, 75x45, was built and connected with the stone structure by a covered passage-way.

A well-selected circulating library, organized near the beginning of the present century, became the property of the academy, and with the additions made from time to time, embraced in 1878 some two thousand volumes. At this time the trustees purchased the library of the late Mr. E. Porter Belden, containing about ten thousand volumes; so that the two combined make a large and valuable library. A beautiful brick building, forty-eight feet by thirty-six has been erected, to contain the books, and the three academy buildings standing in the midst of a handsome park of four acres, present a fine appearance. The school is conducted as a boarding and day-school, and has an average of about eighty pupils.

Rev. N. S. Prime, Rev. Calvin Colton, Mr. C. F. Maurice, Z. S. Phelps, Major W. W. Benjamin and J. Howe Allen have been the principals during the last sixty years.

There is also in the possession of the academy, a valuable chemical and philosophical apparatus, together with a complete outfit as a military organization including stands of Springfield rifles and a park of four pieces of artillery. The reputation of this long-established institution of learning, with the influence of its hundreds of alumni, in every section of our broad country, needs no additional commendation.

ST. JOHN'S SCHOOL, was established by its present rector, the Rev. J. Breckenridge Gibson, S. T. D., in the year 1869. The fine brick buildings which are occupied by this school, were originally erected as a school for girls, about the year 1835 or 1836, having been opened as such by Mrs. Romeyn. This venture failing to be profitable, it was turned into a hotel; which, under the name of the Mountain House, was conducted for a time by Mr. Levi Peck, a noted landlord of that day. This enterprise having also proven not to be a financial success, in 1845 the property was leased and subsequently sold to Mr. Marlborough Churchill, who established a school for boys, which became very famous under the name of "Mr. Churchill's School at Sing Sing." Mr. Churchill was a graduate of the West Point Military Academy, and already had an experience of three years, as principal of the Mt. Pleasant Academy, in this village. He was the first to introduce a military discipline and army tactics in any school in the place. Mr. Churchill having carried on this school with great success, in every point of view, for a quarter of a century, he sold the property to Dr. Gibson, in 1869, who changed the name to that of St. John's School. Many fine officers of the Union armies, in the War of the Rebellion, were furnished from the former pupils of Mr. Churchill's school, among whom General Alexander Webb can be mentioned with pride.

Rev. Dr. Gibson, has made extensive improvements and additions to the school buildings, by which he

has been enabled to accommodate eighty cadets, instead of fifty, which was the maximum number under Mr. Churchill's management. The location is admirable, not only on account of its unsurpassed scenery, and perfect salubrity, but in possessing six acres of nearly level land, for lawns, parade, ball, and other gaming grounds. An extensive brick gymnasium and drill-hall has been erected on the grounds, and furnished with the most approved apparatus for physical training.

The rector is assisted by a corps of ten teachers, who give instructions in all the branches of an ample academic curriculum, fitting its graduates for entrance into our best colleges, our national military or naval academies, or to enter into business life. The school enjoys the patronage of the Bishop of the Episcopal Church.

For more than a third of a century Dr. Gibson has been engaged in Christian education, which is, to use his own words "the whole work of fitting body, mind, and soul, for the duties of this life, and for the happiness of that which is to come."

DR. HOLBROOK'S MILITARY AND CLASSICAL SCHOOL is situated on an eminence about one-half a mile southeast of the village of Sing Sing, from whence one of the most extensive and beautiful panoramas of our lovely scenery can be had. It includes a landscape of not less than thirty miles extent along the Hudson, and to the west nearly the same distance. The original building was erected by a Mr. Roux for the purpose of establishing a seminary for young ladies, to be conducted by his wife. Madame Roux failed to receive the patronage she had hoped to obtain and gave up the enterprise, and returned soon after to her native country, France. Mr. Milton Tracy leased the premises and opened a boys' school, which he continued until the Rev. D. A. Holbrook, A.M., Ph.D., secured the property in 1866. Under the new management the buildings have been enlarged to three times their former size, many improvements introduced, such as gas-light and steam-heating, etc. A large brick gymnasium and drill-room, with complete equipments, have been recently added to its other attractions. The grounds contain ten acres, in which are included a fine parade and sporting field. Dr. Holbrook was formerly associated with Dr. B. W. Dwight in the management of a school in Brooklyn, and, subsequently, he had a school at Clinton, N. Y., from whence he came to Sing Sing. This is a boarding-school, with ample accommodations for fifty-four boys. Dr. H. is assisted by seven teachers. Instruction is given in all the English branches, Latin, Greek, French and German, also in chemistry, natural philosophy, music and military tactics.

VIREUN, a school for boys, was established in 1870 on its present site by the present proprietor, H. C. Symonds, who was graduated from the United States Military Academy in 1853, and served in the army until November, 1865. He was an assistant professor in

the department of English studies at West Point from 1857 to 1861, and left there as an officer of the historical West Point Battery, which was on duty in Washington at the inauguration of President Lincoln. The higher standard for admission to West Point and Annapolis, which had been imposed during and subsequent to the war of secession, seemed to open a field for a private school, which should maintain as severe a curriculum in elementary English studies as was held in the best public schools of the country. This has been accomplished, and the distinguishing feature of this school for especial excellence in the English studies is shown in the fact that in the Westchester Congressional District of New York its pupils have in every instance since its establishment carried off the prizes in the competitive examinations for West Point. Many of its pupils have achieved the same results in their competitions in other States.

More than two hundred and fifty of its pupils have here been so well prepared for the severe examinations at West Point and Annapolis as to pass their examinations for admission most satisfactorily. The course of study is not limited to such preparation, but this is the solid foundation on which all who enter here must rest their preparation for colleges or the scientific schools, and the studies for these higher examinations are subsequent to such elementary preparation, and are pursued on the general plan of thoroughness in all respects.

The discipline of the school is maintained by suitable modifications of the general principles governing the military academy.

ODELL'S BUSINESS COLLEGE was established in the year 1875. It is located in Spring Street, is well attended, and has given a business education to a considerable number of the young men of our village. Prof. Charles E. Odell is an experienced educator, and an extremely facile penman.

THE OSSING INSTITUTE FOR YOUNG LADIES was established in 1867 by Miss Sarah M. Van Vleck, a lady of extraordinary ability and of the highest culture, in the building known as the "California House," on Croton Avenue. The school was removed to its present location on the east side of the same avenue about a fortnight before the California House was destroyed by fire. In 1878 Miss Van Vleck sold her interest in the institute to Messrs. Rice and Jewett, who are still its proprietors. These gentlemen, who were already experienced educators, are aided by an efficient corps of nine teachers. The institute includes a primary, English and classical department; ancient and modern languages, the natural sciences, music, drawing and painting, are all taught in regular courses. The building is large and well adapted for its purposes, occupies a slightly and salubrious position, and is surrounded by ample grounds. The number of scholars during the past year was seventy-four.

HIGHLAND SEMINARY, SING SING, N. Y., was sit-

uated on Highland Avenue. The house stood on a high ridge overlooking the Hudson and was surrounded by an extensive and well-shaded lawn. This school was established by Mrs. E. A. Pentz in September 1878. The following year Miss Bazley became associated with her. A full course in Latin, mathematics, the natural sciences and belles-lettres was given. The modern languages, music, drawing, and painting were also taught. Average number of pupils forty.

THE WESTCHESTER HERALD AND FARMERS' REGISTER, was the first newspaper established in Sing Sing. Stephen Addington was its editor, and issued it every Tuesday morning. The first number appeared the 13th day of January 1818. About the year 1820 it passed into the hands of Mr. Stephen Marshall, who had printed it for Mr. Addington. Mr. Marshall edited the paper for five years. In 1825 Mr. Caleb Roscoe became the editor. Under his control it was issued as the *Westchester Herald*, but at what date the latter part of the original name was dropped off, I am unable to state.

Mr. Roscoe was a man of sterling qualities and possessed of unusual ability. He advocated the principles of the Whig party as long as that party survived, but when it was broken up he unfurled the Democratic banner, which never ceased to wave at the head of his paper. He was both printer and editor. It was a common practice of his, to compose his editorials which were always keen and telling, and set them up in type without having been written even in outline. This I have seen him do again and again, when, in some instances the editorial was a column in length. Mr. Roscoe was an antiquarian, and a true historian. The files of his paper abound in interesting facts, which he had rescued from oblivion, relating to early events in Westchester County. On the 6th, of December, 1856, Mr. Roscoe's dwelling and printing office, and the mass of rich historical material he had collected in his life-time, were all consumed by fire. In January following this misfortune, the *Herald* closed its useful career, which had extended through four decades.

The following rather quaint and sarcastic marriage notices appeared in the *Herald* in February 1818.

MARRIED.—On Wednesday evening, the fourth instant, by the Rev^d T. Smith, Gabriel L. Dean to the amiable Miss Tritone Fisher, both of this town.

On the same evening by Elder C. Montrose, Master Thomas Lambert, aged sixteen, to the blooming Miss Nancy Israels, aged thirty-nine, both of this place.

"Sure it's a happy change of life
To get at once a mother and a wife."

Caleb Roscoe, the editor of the *Herald*, was born in the town of Harrison November 30, 1800. His father, Luke Roscoe, a native of England, came to America in the latter part of the last century. Caleb Roscoe's early youth was passed in his native village, where he attended a school taught by a Quaker lady, Miss Abigail Pierce. At the age of twelve he went to New York and found a posi-

tion in a drug store with the intention of studying medicine. His employer's establishment was destroyed by fire, and this was the occasion of his changing his occupation for that of printing. He first entered the office of James Oram, who was the publisher of a weekly paper called the *Ladies' Museum*, and he was subsequently engaged on the *Commercial Advertiser*. In 1825 he removed to Sing Sing and purchased the *Westchester Herald*, previously published by Stephen Marshall.

In the publication of this paper Mr. Roscoe was very successful, and it obtained a wide circulation. It was at first neutral in politics, but was afterwards published in the interests of the Democratic party and exerted a wide influence. He continued the publication until 1856, when his establishment was destroyed by a fire so disastrous as to preclude a further prosecution of the business.

In all public matters he took an active part, being for several years a trustee of the village and prominently connected with the school department of the place. It was largely through his influence that the first fire-engine was purchased for the village of Sing Sing.

He was one of the original board of directors of the Westchester Mutual Insurance Company, which was incorporated in 1837, and served as a director for many years. He was also one of the first board of trustees of Mount Pleasant Academy, and was the last surviving member of the original board. In everything that tended to the moral welfare of the community he was deeply interested, and was prominently connected with the Sunday-school and temperance cause, but his thoughts were most earnestly employed in promoting the advancement of the Westchester County Bible Society, of which he was treasurer for thirty-four years and its vice-president for several terms, and upon his death resolutions of respect were unanimously adopted by the society at its annual meeting.

He married Hannah S., daughter of Dr. Jacob Tisdale. She died July 23, 1837. Their son, Henry Hinsdale, a youth of great ability and promise, died at the early age of fourteen. Their two surviving daughters are Harriet R., wife of A. S. Edgett, and Helen M.

Mr. Roscoe was in early life a member of the Presbyterian Church, but in later years united with the Reformed Church of Tarrytown, a connection which continued until the time of his death, which occurred April 23, 1877. He left behind him the reputation of a sincere and worthy man, a useful and public-spirited citizen and a kind and devoted father. While exercising in business affairs a strict economy, his hand was ever open to the alleviation of human suffering and he was ever ready for every good work.¹

The *Hudson River Chronicle* was established in June, 1876, by General James B. Swain, who was at one time the editor of the original *Hudson River Chronicle*, as stated in the sketch of the *Democratic Register*. This paper was for several years printed at Scarborough

by the "Sunnyside Press," and afterwards in Sing-Sing. The *Chronicle* is a four-page paper, entirely made up in its own office, ignoring both "patent inside and outside." The editor was for a long time the Albany correspondent of the *New York Times*, under the *nom-de-plume* of "Leo," the peculiar characteristics of which animal he still retains. Unlike the British lion, he prefers to defend Republicanism rather than Royalty.

The *Sing Sing Republican* made its first appearance in this town in the year 1857. It was not an original venture, but a mere transfer of a paper which had been published at Peekskill since the year 1830, Samuel P. Marks being its first proprietor. He was followed in succession by George W. Lyman, William Richards, Col. Joseph J. Chambers (in

1852), Matt. F. Rowe (in 1853), and Col. Chambers again in 1856. In January, 1857, *The Westchester Herald* ceased to exist, and Sing Sing was left with one paper only,—*The Hudson River Chronicle*. Mr. J. Holly Platt, who had been associated with the publication of the *Herald*, induced Colonel Chambers to bring his paper to this place, which he did in 1857. He associated himself with Mr. G. Ten Eyck Sheldon, in 1862, and this gentleman continued the publication of the paper after the death of General Chambers, in 1864.

After the year 1875 Swartfager & Maynard, F. H. Pierson and H. B. Curtis succeeded each other, and



Caleb Roscoe

¹This sketch of Caleb Roscoe was contributed by the Editor.

in January, 1882, the present editor and proprietor took charge of the paper.

The Republican, as its name implies, has always advocated the interests of the Republican party since this party had an existence, having previously been an equally staunch Whig partizan sheet. It is an eight-page paper, and is issued on every succeeding Thursday.

The next paper established in Sing Sing after the *Westchester Herald* was the *Hudson River Chronicle*, the issue of which was begun in the year 1837, by Alexander H. Wells. On his being appointed, two or three years later, to the position of surrogate of the county, he was succeeded by Edmund G. Sutherland.

From Mr. Sutherland's possession the paper passed into the hands of James B. Swain, afterwards city editor of the *New York Tribune*, and the "Leo" of the *New York Times*. He was followed in the position of owner and editor by Abraham G. Levy, who, in 1851, gave way to William C. Howe. Mr. Howe continued to conduct the paper till 1860, when it fell into the hands of Caspar C. Childs, who changed its name to *The Democrat*. Mr. Childs' successor was Nelson Baldwin, who changed the name of the paper again to its present designation, *The Democratic Register*. Mr. Baldwin sold the paper in 1872 to Caspar C. Childs, who in turn parted with it November 15, 1877, to Michael Moran, who is the present publisher. Mr. Howe has retained the position of editor continuously since the year 1851.

The Democratic Register was a Whig paper when that party was in existence, and afterwards for some time advocated the principles of the American, or Know-Nothing party, as it was nicknamed. The decrease of this party caused the *Register* to join the Democratic ranks, where it has remained continuously ever since.

It is an eight-page paper, and is published every Saturday.

THE ANCIENT AND HONORABLE ORDER OF FREE AND ACCEPTED MASONS established their first lodge in Sing Sing, about the year 1812. This lodge had a very brief existence. Its meetings were held in a hall in the upper part of the old Union Hotel, the dilapidated building which still stands on the corner of Highland Avenue and Church Street, once the old Stage Line Hotel, that numbered among its distinguished guests Napoleon III., late Emperor of France.

A lodge, known as the *Zaradotha Lodge of Masons*, was instituted in 1846, with "Dolph" Beckman as Worshipful Master. Its meetings were held in the old Franklin Academy, at that time also occupied by Oberlin Tent, of the Independent Order of Rechabites. About the year 1850 this lodge was discontinued, as the *Westchester Lodge*, No. 180, had already been organized October 5th of that year. The first Worshipful Master of Lodge No. 180 was the late Dr.

Benjamin Brandreth. It began with twelve members and now has one hundred and nineteen.

Buckingham Chapter, No. 174, *Royal Arch Masons* was organized October 2, 1860, with the Rev. J. H. Black as High Priest. It now has seventy-seven members.

Sing Sing Council, No. 64, *Royal and Select Masters* was instituted December 4, 1872, with Isaac B. Noxon Thrice Illustrious Master. This council has thirty-six members.

Westchester Commandery, No. 42, Knights Templar was organized at White Plains, March 2, 1868. As a majority of its members lived in and near Sing Sing it was removed to this place April 14, 1871. Its first officer was the late Colonel John P. Jenkins, Eminent Commander. It now has over seventy members.

INDEPENDENT ORDER OF ODD-FELLOWS.—The first lodge of Odd-Fellows in Sing Sing was organized in November, 1843, under the name of Ossining Lodge, No. 97, I. O. O. F., subsequently No. 12. It had but twelve members. Captain Edward Van Wart was the N. G. and Chas. Southworth, of Peekskill, the V. G. The meetings were held in the Mountain House (now St. John's School). This lodge terminated its existence in 1858.

Vulcan Lodge was organized chiefly through the influence of John Russell, superintendent of the Arcade file-works. Its membership was largely made up of file-workers. It had a short existence.

Sunnyside Lodge, No. 289, I. O. O. F., was instituted August 24, 1871. James C. Mead, N. G., Stephen Ayles, V. G.

Tappan Lodge, No. 166, A. O. U. W., was instituted May 16, 1883. It has at present about twenty-five members.

SECTION NO. 71 OF THE HILDESE BUND, a German society for the insurance of the lives of members and for the payment of stated sums during sickness, was organized in Sing Sing, in October, 1869, and at one time contained about eighty members. The name of the association was afterward altered to "The Prudential League," but the Sing Sing branch still retained its former number and is consequently now known as "Section No. 71, of the Prudential League."

THE TOWN OF OSSINING DURING THE CIVIL WAR.—Our town during the War of the Rebellion was intensely loyal. Almost immediately after the fall of Fort Sumter, a company of ninety men was organized, and placed under the command of Captain Franklin J. Davis. Most of the men were residents of Sing Sing, a few were from North Salem, and other places in the county. This company was incorporated into the Seventeenth Regiment of New York State Volunteers as Company F., and went to Washington in June, 1861. Soon after the first battle of Bull Run, Captain Davis resigned, and was succeeded by Captain John Vickers, a resident of Port Chester,

who was a veteran of the Mexican War, and a brave and efficient officer. He held his position until the company was disbanded. Captain Davis joined the cavalry regiment, known as Scott's Nine-Hundred; he died some years after from the effects of his service while in the army. The Seventeenth Regiment New York Volunteers was subsequently attached to General Butterfield's Brigade, in General Fitz John Porter's Division, afterwards the Fifth Corps of the Army of the Potomac. It went with General McClellan to Fortress Monroe, and participated in the siege of Yorktown, and the battle of Hanover Court House. The night before the battle of Mechanicsville, the regiment was ordered to leave the Fifth Corps, and proceed, under General Stoneman, to resist the advance of General Stonewall Jackson, down the valley. They were defeated by the Confederate General, and compelled to take boat down the Chickahominy River. Rejoining the Army of the Potomac at Harrison's Landing, after the Seven Days Battle had been fought, they vacated the Peninsula. They were engaged in the second battle at Bull Run, under the command of General Fitz John Porter, and lost one hundred and twenty men out of their regiment. They then were taken to Washington to aid in the defense of the capital, afterwards went to Sharpsburg, and took part in the battle of Antietam, and were present in the battles of Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville. The company had enlisted for two years, and their time had expired previous to the battle of Chancellorsville, but they took part in that great engagement at their own request.

The company arrived in Sing Sing on the 21st of May, 1863, and were received with the greatest honors, being escorted from the boat on which they arrived from New York City by a procession of citizens.

In the fall of the year 1862 the One Hundred and Thirty-fifth Regiment New York State Volunteers was raised, being composed mainly of soldiers from Westchester County. Company "I" of this regiment was formed in Sing Sing, and a large proportion of its members were residents of the town of Ossining. The officers of the company were as follows: Captain, Clark Peck; First Lieutenant, Charles C. Hyatt; Second Lieutenant, J. H. Ashton. The period of their enlistment was three years. The regiment left Yonkers September 2, 1862. In October following, the title of the regiment was changed, and it became the Sixth New York Heavy Artillery. It was attached to the Army of the Potomac, and participated in the battles fought with the Second, Third, Fifth and Sixth Corps of that army. In August, 1864, the regiment was ordered to Washington for garrison duty, and were stationed there five weeks, this being the only duty of the kind in which they were engaged during the war. They were then placed under General Sheridan's command, and participated in the fierce fights of the Shenandoah Valley campaign.

Company "I" was mustered out with the rest of the regiment June 27, 1865, and arrived in Sing Sing July 3, 1865. The following day being the celebration of American Independence, a procession and formal welcome to the veterans constituted an interesting and important portion of the proceedings of the day.

During the summer of 1864 nine residents of Sing Sing entered the naval service and were stationed on the gunboat "Nyack." They were Dennis Norton, G. W. Romaine, Curtis Delaney, Charles E. Lewis, Daniel G. Clark, Sylvester Flewellyn, Samuel Patten, Robert McCaskey and W. A. McKain. They were honorably discharged from the service May 29, 1865. W. A. McKain died at Wilmington, N. C. The party were in engagements on board the "Nyack" at Fort Fisher, Fort Anderson and one or two other places.

The names of our forty-two officers and soldiers who lost their lives to sustain the Union are inscribed on the Soldiers' Monument, and will be found in the section of this sketch which is devoted to that memento of the War of the Rebellion. Several other soldiers of our town have since died, from the effects of diseases which were contracted during the war.

A "LADIES' UNION RELIEF ASSOCIATION" was formed in Sing Sing almost as soon as the war began. Mrs. C. F. Maurice was elected first directress; Mrs. William A. Pentz, second directress; and Mrs. C. E. Van Cortlandt, secretary. This association did a large amount of very excellent and valuable work during the whole period of the war. It was an auxiliary branch of that great national benevolent and humane organization, the United States Sanitary Commission.

GRAND ARMY OF THE REPUBLIC.—A Post of the Grand Army of the Republic was instituted at Sing Sing in the year 1866, under the designation of Powell Post, No. 51. The name was selected in honor of the two brothers, Bartow W. Powell, Jr., and George W. Powell, both former residents of this village. Bartow, who enlisted in Company C, Fifth New York Volunteers, was killed at the second battle of Bull Run; and George, who had enlisted in the Sixth New York Heavy Artillery, died miserably in the Andersonville Prison. They were both privates. This Post was dissolved in 1868, and was succeeded by an independent Veteran Association, which formed a Monumental Dramatic Association, in 1872, through the instrumentality of which the Soldiers' Monument, in Main Street, was erected. The present Post, known as Powell Post, No. 117, Grand Army of the Republic, was organized as a provisional Post, September 5, 1879, with Gilbert H. Dearing as Commander. In 1884 it had sixty-five active members.

Morell Post, No. 144, Grand Army of the Republic is an offshoot from Powell Post, and was organized December 18, 1883, with Joseph B. Eaton as Com-

mander. It was named in honor of our distinguished citizen of Scarborough, the late Major-General George W. Morell, who commanded the Fifth Corps, under General Fitz-John Porter. The Post had but seventeen members at the time of its organization.

Powell Post, No. 24, Sons of Veterans was organized, December 15, 1883, with Joseph R. Swain as Commander. It began with eleven members; within six months it increased to twenty-five.

THE SOLDIERS' MONUMENT.—Shortly after the close of the War of the Rebellion a Ladies' Monument Association was formed by a number of the ladies of Sing Sing, for the purpose of erecting a monument to the memory of the soldiers who had gone forth from the village and fallen in the struggle. About \$350 were raised by solicitation. The cornerstone of the monument was laid with great ceremony on the Fourth of July, 1872. The sum obtained not being sufficient to erect a suitable monument, a meeting of veterans of the war was called in the year 1872, and the Monumental Dramatic Association was formed, for the purpose of raising funds for the completion of the monument. The first entertainment was the performance of a play called "The Scout of Tennessee; or, the Battle of Chattanooga," and was received with much favor. Although the society met with a check by the burning of their scenery and stage paraphernalia in Olive Hall, in 1874, which occasioned a loss of about \$400, they still prosecuted their plan, and by 1879 had accumulated about \$1200.

The monument was completed in that year, its cost being about \$1550, which sum was entirely made up from the funds of the Ladies' Monument Association and the Monumental Dramatic Association. The monument was dedicated on Decoration Day, 1879, with imposing ceremonies. There was a procession, in which the veterans of the war, the militia company, the police, the firemen and the Mt. Pleasant Cadets participated. Speeches were delivered from a grand stand, which had been erected opposite the monument, by Gilbert H. Dearing, Commander of Powell Post 51, G. A. R., of Sing Sing and Hon. Benj. A. Willis, after which the Free-Masons took charge of the ceremonies, and M. W. Ellwood E. Thorne, Past Grand Master of Masons of the State of New York, made an address. The monument was then unveiled amid great applause.

The Soldiers' Monument stands in a conspicuous position on Main Street, in the centre of the village, and forms an ornament to the place. It is built in three sections, which stand on a base of two massive blocks of granite, and are surmounted by the figure of a kneeling angel. The superstructure is cast in white bronze. On the north panels are a group of flags, drums, cannons and balls, and a medallion of Lincoln, with the well-known lines below, "With malice toward none, with charity for all." Below are the words, "One country, one flag, one destiny."

On the west side is a bas-relief portrait of an Amer-

ican soldier, with the following inscription below: "They died for their country."

On the east side is a bas-relief of a stack of arms. Beneath are inscribed the following names:

OFFICERS.

1st Lieut. F. J. Davis, Scott's 900, U. S. Cav.
Master's Mate Chas. S. Livingston, U. S. gunboat "Richmond."
Lieut. William Mattocks, Co. F, 17th N. Y. Vols.
Sergt. Leonard Cronk, Co. F, 17th N. Y. Vols.
Sergt. Ward B. Hyatt, 6th N. Y. H. Art.
Sergt. Elijah Lamareaux, Co. F, 17th N. Y. Vols.

PRIVATEES.

John Acker, Co. I, 95th N. Y. Vols.
John Baxter, musician, Duryea's Zouaves.
Cassius Bishop, 7th N. Y. H. Art.
Oscar Chapman, Co. C, 6th N. Y. H. Art.
Henry Crofut, Co. F, 17th N. Y. Vols.
Eugene Cypher, Morrison's Battery.
John W. Dunne, 17th N. Y. Vols.
William A. Frisbie, 6th N. Y. H. Art.
Ezra M. Griffin, Co. H, 32d N. Y. Vols.
Richard Hale, Co. F, 17th N. Y. Vols.
Robert Herrick, 4th U. S. Art.
Martin Hyland, Co. A, 51st N. Y. Vols.
Jonathan Knight, 6th N. Y. H. Art.
James W. Leut, 6th N. Y. H. Art.
James McGinn, 6th N. Y. H. Art.

Beneath the names is the inscription: "Erected A. D. 1879."

On the south side are the same emblems as on the east, and underneath the following names:

PRIVATEES.

Charles McCord, 6th N. Y. H. Art.
Eugene Marshall, 6th N. Y. H. Art.
Joseph McCormick, 63d N. Y. Vols.
Jesse A. Many, Co. I, 65th N. Y. Vols.
William A. McKain, U. S. gunboat "Nyack."
James Mulkern, Co. F, 17th N. Y. Vols.
Harvey Nuskey, 6th N. Y. H. Art.
Andrew J. Orser, Co. E, 51st N. Y. Vols.
Bartow W. Powell, Jr., Co. C, 5th N. Y. Vols.
George Powell, 6th N. Y. H. Art.
Thomas Reily, Co. B, 40th N. Y. Vols.
Lewis B. Reynolds, Co. F, 17th N. Y. Vols.
Augustus M. Schaffer, Co. F, 1st N. Y. Vols.
John Scully, 6th N. Y. H. Art.
James E. Slater, Co. C, 6th N. Y. H. Art.
William Thorne, Co. F, 17th N. Y. Vols.
Harvey J. Weeks, Co. F, 11th Ct. Vols.
Robert Westcott, Co. C, 32d N. Y. Vols.
Sanford Williams, 121st N. Y. Vols.
Michael Williamson, Co. E, 6th N. Y. Vols.

Beneath these names is the inscription, "In Memory of our Brave Soldiers."

BANKS OF SING SING.—The first banking institution in this village was organized under the old State banking laws, at a meeting of citizens, held December 4, 1852. It was styled "The Bank of Sing Sing." It had a nominal capital of one hundred thousand dollars, and was presided over by the late Dr. Benjamin Brandreth. After an existence of eight years, it made a disastrous failure; its affairs are not yet entirely settled.

A private banking-house was started in February, 1860, under the title of "Banking Office of C. F. Maurice & Co." This was continued prosperously





James B. Norton

until April, 1864, when it was transferred into the "First National Bank of Sing Sing."

"The First National Bank" was organized, at the time above stated, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars, under the presidency of Mr. Charles F. Maurice. This gentleman held the office of president for many years, after which he resigned, to be succeeded by Major W. W. Benjamin, who in less than two years was removed by death, the position having been since held by the Hon. Henry C. Nelson. The bank, in addition to its capital stock of one hundred thousand dollars, now has a surplus of thirty-five thousand dollars, and deposits amounting to about one-third of a million of dollars. It owns and occupies a fine marble building, which stands in a conspicuous position at the angle made by Highland and Croton Avenues.

Isaac B. Noxon, the cashier of the First National Bank, is descended from Dutch ancestry, who settled in Dutchess County, N. Y., at an early date; his father, James Noxon, who resided in the town of Le Grange, married Ann, daughter of Elijah Farrington, and their son, Isaac B., was born June 24, 1837. At the age of seven years he removed with his parents to Tompkins County, and remained with them on a farm, and when seventeen he attended for several terms the Cortlandtville Academy, with the intention of preparing for college. He taught a district school a portion of the time and for a while had charge of the primary department of the academy. Circumstances compelling him to relinquish the intention of attending college, he removed to Sing Sing and entered the old Bank of Sing Sing as book-keeper. After the failure of that institution he entered the banking office of C. F. Maurice & Co., and remained four years; this company was, in 1864, merged into the First National Bank, of which he has been cashier up to the present time. For twenty years he has been the secretary of the Sing Sing Savings Bank, and its acting cashier.

When Mr. Noxon first became connected with this institution the deposits were only about fifty thousand dollars; the amount now exceeds one million two hundred thousand dollars. Since being a resident of the village he has been closely identified with its various public improvements, and has been treasurer of the village for four years, president for six successive years and trustee for several terms. Interested in the mental and moral welfare of the place, he has been influential in organizing courses of lectures which for many years have been of great advantage to the community, and many of the most celebrated lecturers of the day have been engaged in them.

Mr. Noxon is a prominent member of the Masonic order and has been Master of the Westchester Lodge, District Deputy Grand Master of the Ninth Masonic District of this State, High Priest of Buckingham Chapter of R. A. M., Eminent Commander of Westchester Commandery of Knights Templar, Thrice Il-

lustrious Master of Sing Sing Council of Royal and Select Masters. He has been for some years treasurer of the public school of the village and is one of the incorporators and officers of the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals. In politics he has always been connected with the Democratic party, but has never been a seeker for official honors and has confined himself closely to business and the local affairs of the village, and there are few improvements of a local nature with which he has not been closely identified. He married Estelle, daughter of Herbert Hall, of New York, and has one child, Grace P.

Mr. Noxon is a member of the Baptist Church, an active supporter of that denomination and was one of the building committee who erected the church edifice.¹

The Sing Sing Savings' Bank was incorporated in March, 1854, with Dr. Benjamin Brandreth as president. The business of this bank is transacted separately, though in the same building with the First National Bank. In 1860 its deposits amounted to only \$45,000; by the last report its deposits by three thousand depositors, reached the very respectable sum of \$1,184,979.97. James Williamson is now the president of this institution.

THE DEVICES RESORTED TO IN TIMES OF WAR TO MAKE SUBSTITUTES FOR FRACTIONAL CURRENCY.—During and subsequent to the War of Independence, as was the case at the time of the War of the Rebellion, and for many years afterwards, specie payments were suspended. Merchants and trades-people, as well as corporations, were obliged to resort to various devices to furnish substitutes for gold, silver and even copper currency. Hence, an endless number of "shinplasters" and private bills, for fractional parts of a dollar were put in circulation. The writer has in his collection small bills of this kind which were issued by "the corporation of the city of Albany," payable to the bearer on demand, for three, six, and nine cents, dated January 10, 1815. Also similar bills of the corporation of "the Stanford Manufacturing Company," of Dutchess County, N. Y., dated "2d mo. 4th, 1815." He has also a series of bills, four and one-quarter inches long by two inches in width, of three, twelve and one-half, twenty-five, and fifty cents, which were issued "by order of the corporation of Sing Sing, Westchester County," which promised to pay to the bearer, on demand, the sums specified, in current bank-notes, January 20, 1816; signed George Karr. They were printed by "J. A. Cameron, print., Sing Sing," on one side only.

During the War of the Rebellion several of our business men issued small bills for five, ten, twenty-five, and fifty cents, which were made payable at the banking office of C. F. Maurice & Co. The collection referred to contains series of these handsomely engraved bills of various dates in July, 1862, signed by

¹ This sketch of Mr. Noxon was contributed by the Editor.

F. C. Burrhus, others by William E. Ryder, and some by Barlow Brothers. These were all five by two and three-quarter inches, printed on one side only. The banking office of C. F. Maurice & Co. issued a series of the same denominations, September 30, 1862, which were signed by I. B. Noxon; size, three and one-quarter by two inches. None of the copper tokens, medals or other substitutes for coins, which were at the same time used as advertising cards, so common during the Civil War, and so universally made in all parts of the country, were ever issued by any of our merchants.

INDUSTRIES OF SING SING.

In addition to the several industries which are mentioned more in detail below, there are three sash, blind and door factories, one machine works, one pickle house, a manufactory of patent wrenches, six carriage factories, a shirt factory, a grist mill, a soda-water and bottling factory and a marble yard. At the State Prison there is a large shoe manufactory, an extensive laundry and an immense stove foundry, all of which are operated by convict labor on the contract system.

THE MANUFACTURE OF FILES.—The oldest existing file manufactory in the country is the famous Arcade File Works, situated on Mill Street. The factory takes its name from the large arch of the Croton Aqueduct, which is situated near it. It was started in 1848. It has passed through numerous changes of proprietors and is at present operated by a stock company. The Arcade Works consume over two hundred and fifty tons of steel per annum, chiefly of American make.

THE CROTON FILE COMPANY, composed of James Horner & Co., with offices at 25 Cliff Street, New York, started a file works on Quimby Street, facing the railroad, in 1854. John Russell was superintendent. Charles Spruce, who had started a file works beside it, on Quimby Street, in 1860, became possessor of the Croton File Company's building in 1862. In 1863 the Van Anden File Company succeeded this company. It was a stock company, and was organized to manufacture files under a method of cutting invented by a Mr. Van Anden, of Poughkeepsie. The enterprise was not successful, and the building passed into the hands of the firm manufacturing cotton-gins, by whom it is utilized as a store-house.

Charles Spruce has continued to manufacture files on Quimby Street since 1860. Thomas Leary was a partner from 1862 to 1882. It is operated under the name of Charles Spruce & Co. A number of years ago files of all sorts were made in large quantities, by convict labor, at the State Prison in this place. Now none are made there.

THE E. G. BLAKSLEE MANUFACTURING COMPANY was organized in 1882. The foundry known as the Monitor Iron Works had been carried on under

different firm-names since 1863, at the place on Water Street, which, many years ago, was the Vredenburg Stove Works. This company makes a specialty of the manufacture of plumbers' castings of all kinds,—plain, galvanized and enameled; also sinks and movable Waterback ranges, street lamp-posts, etc. It runs two furnaces, melts twenty-four tons of iron daily and employs about one hundred and fifty men.

Ebenezer G. Blakslee, whose name is so intimately connected with the iron manufacturing interests of the county, is descended from an English family who settled at Waterbury, Conn. His grandfather, Asa Blakslee, was in the royal service during the Revolution, and at the close of the war removed with his regiment to New Brunswick, British America, and remained there during his life.

His son Asa, who succeeded him, died in 1879, at the advanced age of ninety years, leaving among other children a son, Ebenezer G. Blakslee, who was born at St. Johns, June 28, 1820. His early life was spent in his native place, and for a few years he was connected with a gentlemen's furnishing store.

In 1843 he went to Scotland, and again in 1845, and traveled extensively in that country, visiting many of the famous iron-works. In 1849 he came to this country and remained for a while at Albany and subsequently went to Newark, N. J., where he was for some time book-keeper in a stove store; from that place he removed to New York and from there to Port Chester, where he became book-keeper in the iron foundry of Abendroth Bros.

In 1863 he removed to Sing Sing and established the foundries and manufactory of iron castings and plumbers' goods with which he has been connected to the present time. In 1864 Charles Bunting became a partner in the firm, and the business, which was commenced on a small scale and employing a few men, has ever been constantly increasing until it reached its present proportions.

Mr. Bunting died in 1880, and in 1882 a stock company was formed, of which Mr. Blakslee is president and superintendent, the firm-name being "The E. G. Blakslee Manufacturing Co." In September, 1869, the foundry and buildings then in use were destroyed by fire. Mr. Blakslee immediately leased a foundry and by this prompt energy the work was recommenced within ten days.

New buildings were at once erected from plans made by Mr. Blakslee and under his direct supervision, and the new works furnished largely increased facilities for business. The buildings now cover a lot of ninety by two hundred and four feet, and in the two cupola furnaces attached twenty-two tons of iron are daily melted.

In addition to the foundries at Sing Sing the firm has extensive warehouses at 80 Centre Street, New York City. From this establishment plumbers' goods of every description are shipped to all parts of the United States and Canada.



B. Brandreth





By a careful selection of materials and the use of the most improved methods of manufacture, the goods made in this establishment have gained a high and well-deserved reputation, and the works furnish constant employment for one hundred and forty men.

Mr. Blakslee has the satisfaction of seeing the business which he founded yearly increasing in extent, and the success which has attended it is the result of the most constant care and assiduous attention.

Mr. Blakslee married Mary Annie Brayley, and they are the parents of six children — Annie S. Amanda (wife of Hiram H. Post, of St. Louis), Bertha, Theodore, William A. and Edith M. Theodore, the elder son, is book-keeper and assistant superintendent of the manufactory, while a nephew, Fred. M. Barnes, is shipping clerk.

Without taking an active part in politics, Mr. Blakslee is a supporter of the Republican party and was for several years one of the trustees of Sing Sing, of which he was elected president April, 1885. He feels a lively interest in all public improvements, and has done much to increase the prosperity of the place.

His business is one of the most important enterprises of the village and he is justly numbered among its foremost citizens.

HALL IMPROVED SELF-FEEDING COTTON-GIN MANUFACTURING CO. was com-

menced by Hall, Washburne & Co., in 1869, Mr. Hall, Isaac T. Washburne and Samuel E. Tompkins composing the firm. Mr. Tompkins afterwards withdrew. In 1873 the Hall Self-Feeding Cotton-Gin Company was incorporated. Isaac T. Washburne is president; P. L. Washburne, vice-president; Oscar Washburne, secretary; and I. T. Washburne, treasurer.

The company manufacture, as their name implies, an improved self-feeding cotton-gin, and, in connection with it, produce an improved feeder and condenser. They also make a Huller Gin, which they claim will gin as fast and make as smooth a sample from dirty, trashy and hully cotton as any other gin in the market. The works of the company are located on the middle dock, between the railroad and the river, and are in a brick building three stories in

height, and about one hundred and fifty by seventy-five feet in extent.

The manufacture of cotton gin saws was started in Sing Sing by Jonathan T. Turner, who came to the village from New London, Conn. Only the very finest Sheffield steel is used in these saws. The manufactory is located a short distance east of the railroad station.

John T. Turner, a son of Jonathan T. Turner, invented a machine for dressing or truing the surface of grinding-stones, which was patented July 10, 1873, and is said to do very effective work.

In 1881 a pickle house was started by Alart & McGuire, of New York, a short distance northeast of the station. The same firm has another establishment at Dobbs Ferry.

THE SING SING GAS MANUFACTURING COMPANY was organized July 1, 1855, with Thos. Small as president, Marlborough Churchill treasurer and Geo. E. Stanton secretary. The present secretary, Mr. C. F. Maurice, has filled this office since 1856. The capital stock is twenty-five thousand dollars. The company, in addition to supplying the private wants of the people, lights the streets and also the State Prison. The annual consumption of gas amounts to about ten million cubic feet, which is supplied through ten

miles of mains.

The writer of this article very



Ebenezer G. Blakslee

well remembers casting his vote in the affirmative, as president of the village, in 1855, when the question of lighting the place by gas was before the board of trustees which had voted four yeas and four nays.

One of the important industries which is carried on in Sing Sing is the manufacture of Brandreth's pills and Alcock's porous plasters. The pill-factory was established in this place about the year 1837. The porous plasters have been made exclusively in this place. The quantity manufactured annually reaches the enormous number of five millions. Of the pills, one million two hundred thousand boxes are annually made and sold. Since 1864 the government has received from this establishment, for revenue or proprietary stamps, the sum of about one mil-

lion of dollars. The printing bills of the company average about fifty thousand dollars per annum. Both the pills and plasters are manufactured by the one concern, "The Porous Plaster Company."

Benjamin Brandreth, the inventor of the proprietary medicines, the sales of which have reached such enormous proportions, was born in England in 1809. His maternal grandfather was a skillful physician, and enjoyed a large practice near Liverpool, and at an early age his grandson was employed under his direction in compounding pills for gratuitous distribution among the poor. After the death of his grandfather he resolved to seek a larger field, and came to America in 1835 with his wife and three children. A house was rented in Hudson Street, New York, and this was not only the residence of his family, but his entire business establishment. The attic was used as his laboratory, where he prepared his pills, his wife pasted the labels on the boxes, and his eldest son, George, was just large enough to count the number of pills for each box. After paying rent and advertising bills, he had remaining of the money which he brought from England the sum of thirty dollars, the entire cash capital of a business which afterwards rose to millions. His sales so rapidly increased that it was necessary to hire the adjoining house, which he filled with his assistants, and during the second year four hundred thousand boxes of pills were sold. In 1837 he removed his business to Sing Sing, and purchased land to such an extent that he was able to build his various factories at such distance apart as to prevent any chance of total destruction in case of fire. In 1848 Dr. Brandreth purchased an interest in "Alcock's Porous Plasters," and in 1857 became the sole proprietor, and added this to his already immense business. The career of Dr. Brandreth is the most important episode in the history of advertising. During his life he expended for that purpose alone the enormous sum of three million dollars, and the various ways by which his medicines were brought to the attention of the public were almost numberless. The appreciation by the people of his great energy and business capacity was manifested by his election to the State Senate in 1850, and he was again elected to that position in 1858. In 1854 he purchased land in New York and built the Brandreth House, at the corner of Broadway and Canal Street, a very valuable piece of property.

Dr. Brandreth was twice married. His first wife was Harriet Smallpage, whom he wedded in England. By this union he had three children—George A., Charles, and Ellen, wife of Henry Bacon, of Goshen, Orange County. Mrs. Brandreth died in 1836, and he was married a second time to Virginia Graham. They were the parents of ten children—Beatrice, wife of Colonel Henry C. Symonds; William, Henry, Franklin, Annie, wife of Edwin McAlpin; Gertrude, wife of Frank B. Robinson; Florence, wife of Lieutenant Herbert J. Slocum; Kate, wife of Lieutenant

Henry L. Green, United States Navy; Ralph and Isabella. Dr. Brandreth was for many years president of the village of Sing Sing, and died February 19, 1880. His business which had grown to vast proportions, was left to his sons, of whom Henry is the general agent in England, while the others conduct the manufacture in this country. The annual productions by the firm are two million boxes of pills, and five million of Alcock's Porous Plasters. The history of the country affords few instances of a larger result arising from a smaller beginning.

William Brandreth, son of Dr. Benjamin Brandreth, was born at Sing Sing, October 22, 1842. His early education was obtained at Mount Pleasant Academy, and when sixteen years of age, he went to New York, where he gained a thorough knowledge of his business as a pharmacist and druggist, and subsequently became connected with the wholesale drug trade, in the Spanish firm of Palanca & Escalante. At the age of twenty-one, he went to South America, and traveled extensively, remaining for some time in Venezuela, and afterwards passed a year in the British, Dutch and Danish West Indies. From thence he went to California by way of the Isthmus of Panama, and remained there four years. During a portion of this time, he was engaged in introducing and extending the sale of medicines, but afterwards established a life insurance agency, in which he founded a very extensive business, and enjoyed a high degree of success.

In 1868, he returned to Sing Sing, where he became interested in insurance and real estate transactions, in which he was very successful, and two years later established the firm of Howland & Brandreth, which for years carried on a very extensive and profitable business.

In 1876 he disposed of his interest in the firm, and removed to New York, where he opened an office for the purpose of dealing in mines and mineral lands, and in the prosecution of this business, he had ample opportunities of becoming acquainted with the mineral resources of various portions of the country, and acquired a practical knowledge of metallurgy. While thus engaged, he became acquainted with W. W. Chipman, who had discovered a method of manufacturing iron and steel from the ore by the direct action of flame, and at a cost which is less than half that of the ordinary methods of production. Experiments conducted by Dr. Charles J. Emes, Ph.D., have demonstrated its entire practicability and give promise of a new era in American manufacture. The companies which are at present engaged in the enterprise are the "Graphite Steel and Iron Company," and the "Carbon Iron Company," in both of which Mr. Brandreth has extensive investments; and he is also largely interested in mineral lands in North Carolina, containing mines of iron, copper and mica, which are as yet undeveloped.



William Brewster







Thomas H. Spring

As a citizen there are few who have taken a more active part in local improvements. The introduction of steam fire-engines and reservoirs in the village of Sing Sing was largely owing to his efforts, and it is generally admitted that in the business of insurance, his knowledge of all the details is unsurpassed, and his reputation as a thorough-going man of business, and a public-spirited citizen, is fully sustained. Active and energetic in his nature, he sometimes allows his enthusiasm to get the better of his judgment, but no advice that can affect the interests of others is ever given by him, unless based upon the most careful and dispassionate examination, and a knowledge of this fact renders his opinion worthy of the respect which it seldom fails to receive.

Mr. Brandreth is a prominent member of the Masonic order, with which he has been connected for twenty-one years, and in addition to his membership in the Lodges in Sing Sing, he is also connected with the St. George's Society of New York.

In 1868, he married Sarah Louise, daughter of the late George B. Flint. They are the parents of three children—Sarah Bertha, Louise and Delia.

In whatever business Mr. Brandreth has engaged, it has been his constant practice to leave no means untried to gain a thorough knowledge of all its details. And in this pursuit, no amount of toil can turn him from his purpose, and no labor, however arduous, can cause discouragement. He is also a director and owner in the Porous Plaster Company of the village of Sing Sing, which company is the successor of his father's business, manufacturing Brandreth's Pills and Allcock's Porous Plasters. Mr. Brandreth takes great pride in being the pill-maker of the family, his brothers paying more attention to the manufacturing of porous plasters.

Townsend Young who is also largely identified with the business interests of Sing Sing, is the representative of a family that has long been known in this county; the family homestead, which is located near Chappaqua, having been in the possession of his ancestors for several generations. His father, John Young, married Phebe, daughter of Elisha Moseman, and their son, Townsend, was born May 8, 1831. His early life was passed on the farm with his parents, and at the age of twenty he removed to Sing Sing, and began business on his own account. After being employed as clerk in a dry goods store for some time, he commenced a partnership with Mr. William E. Ryder, and was afterwards in partnership with James McCord. In 1861, the firm being dissolved, he established a clothing and gentlemen's furnishing store in his own name, and has continued the business till the present time. In 1878 he established a branch of the business at Peekskill and another at Tarrytown in 1882. During the time that Mr. Young has been thus engaged, he has seen the village of Sing Sing increase from a small town to its present proportions, and there are few among its citizens who

have been more actively connected with its progress. For several years he has served as trustee of the village, and was for three terms elected treasurer. During the administration of Governor John T. Hoffmann, Mr. Young was appointed one of the Loan Commissioners of the county, and performed the duties of that office to the satisfaction of the community. With a deep interest in the cause of education he has long been connected with Mount Pleasant Academy as trustee, and the institution has a widely extended reputation. He is also trustee of the Savings Bank and of the Dale Cemetery Association. In politics he sides with the Democratic party, but, although taking a deep interest in political affairs, he has been no seeker after official honors. He has long been a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and an active supporter of the denomination, and one of the officials of the church.

Mr. Young married Maria, daughter of John Lawrence, Esq., a well-known citizen of the county, and has two children—Cyrus Townsend and Annie F. He is emphatically a self-made man, and his exertions and perseverance have met with well-merited success. He has been especially identified with the growth of the village of Sing Sing, and has been actively interested in the advance of its business and population.

PUBLIC HALLS.—The first hall for public use was known as Foster's Hall. It was a small affair, located over the owner's store. Sherwood's Hall, in Spring Street, also over a store, was larger, and served very well, in its day, for lectures, balls, entertainments, etc. Taylor's Hall, Mott's Hall and Vance's Hall were all rather insignificant places, and yet served their purpose tolerably well at the time they were in use.

In 1861 Tallcott's Hall was built. This hall occupied the third floor of the large brick building adjoining the American Hotel. After being used for all sorts of public purposes for which a hall can be occupied, for a period of twelve years, it was leased to the Masons, and is at present known as Masonic Hall.

In 1868 Hugh Herringshaw erected a fine brick building on the corner of Central Avenue and Leonard Street, which contained a spacious room called Olive Hall. This hall soon became very popular. The building was destroyed by the great fire of February 17, 1874. It was immediately rebuilt and opened to the public on the 27th day of October, 1874. It is now known as the Olive Opera House. This is the only public hall in the village. It is commodious, neat and quite satisfactory.

THE HOTELS OF SING SING.—The first hotel in Sing Sing, of which we can obtain any knowledge, stood on what is now called Pleasant Square, over the "Town Pump." The building had but four rooms on each of its two stories. It was "Ward's Tavern" in Revolutionary times, and is one of the many places

claimed to have been Washington's headquarters. It was managed by its owner, Major Moses Ward, the father of the late Major-General Aaron Ward, and after his death, by his wife, "Nancy," who was the well-known hostess for many subsequent years. About the year 1830 it was purchased from General Ward by Mr. Samuel Trowbridge, who moved it back about thirty feet, to its present position, No. 134 Main Street. By this means the square was produced and Main Street much straightened. It was raised in 1841 by David McCord, for store purposes, has undergone changes since, and yet stands a monument of former days. The writer of this sketch of the history of the town of Ossining occupied this famous old house as a dwelling and office a third of a century ago. The death of one son in this house and the birth of another, not long since deceased, gives him a profoundly melancholy interest in the old Ward Tavern.

The next hotel in Sing Sing was known as the Union Hotel, and is still standing on the corner of Highland Avenue and Church Street. It was built about the year 1800 by a man named Holmes. It has had many proprietors in its day. Enoch Crosby, who was the "landlord" in 1830, was the son of the original of J. Fenimore Cooper's character, "The Spy," in his novel of the same name. The "Union Hotel" was for many years the village Stage House, of the New York and Albany Turnpike Stage Company, which was then the grand trunk, rapid-transit passenger transportation line from the metropolis to the State capital. On extraordinary occasions, when the Legislature was in session, as many as four stage-coaches, each drawn by four horses, fetched up daily at the old hotel, with a grand flourish of trumpets, and here the passengers, being less in number than half a modern car-load, regaled themselves on chicken pot-pie, doughnuts and apple-sauce. Among the distinguished guests that have been entertained at this hotel was the late Emperor Napoleon III., who dined at this place on a number of occasions, while in exile in this country, as he traveled by stage from Bedford to Sing Sing, to take the steamboat for New York City. Simeon M. Tompkins who was then the proprietor of the Union Hotel, has frequently told me the conversations he had held with his distinguished guest. Napoleon III. was long ago buried with imperial honors; alas! "Sim," the genial host, was planted beneath the sods of our county poor-house grounds, and the old hotel, still standing in shabby grandeur, is now filled with a motley mass of impecunious tenants.

The American Hotel was built about the beginning of this century by Colonel Joseph Hunt, who was for a time its proprietor. This hotel was also a Stage House for several years.

Not long after the erection of the American Hotel the St. Cloud was built by Mr. Andrew Graham. It was once called the Ossining House, but I have not been able to learn its original name.

Unfortunately, our village is very poorly supplied with hotels. Such as we have are chiefly interesting from an antiquarian point of view. The town needs at least one large, modern, first-class hotel, to correspond with its size, location and general attractiveness as a summer resort for city families.

RIVER TRANSPORTATION.—The first vessel which was sailed from Sing Sing was a small two-masted periauger, owned by Captain Hagstaff. He was a resident of this place, and landed his boat in the Kill Brook, as we are told, about as far up as the present location of the gas works. He is said to have carried on his business as far back as the Revolutionary period, and probably even earlier. It may seem strange to most persons at this time that Captain Hagstaff could have landed his vessel so far up the brook, but it does not to the writer and many older residents, who have observed the gradual filling up of our river border within quite recent times.

The lower dock was known in the early days of Sing Sing as the Farmers' Dock. Then the river border came up to the present line of Water Street, and in some places still farther inland. Between these lines and the present river margin the ground has been made by filling in, and by the accumulation of fluvial deposits.

Captain Hagstaff has had many successors. One of the earliest was Captain Stephen Lyon, who ran a "passenger packet" between Sing Sing and New York as far back as 1812. He landed at his own, "Lyon's Dock," now the "Middle Dock."

James Delaney, in 1817, was sailing the packet "Victory." In 1819 he was succeeded in command by Captain Richard T. Mattocks. In 1836 or '37, Captain Peter B. Lynch ran a sloop, the "Charles Lynch," named after his son. About the year 1845 he bought the steamboat "Croton," which he ran in place of his sloop. This was a sluggish craft and soon ended its career. From 1812 to 1832 a considerable number of steamboats ran from New York to Sing Sing and places above. Among these were the "Mountain Mouse," the "Ariel," the "General Jackson," the "Cinderella," the "Water Witch" and the "Westchester."

Captain Haff, of Scarborough, built and ran a horse ferry-boat from Sing Sing to Rockland and Haverstraw over sixty years ago.

A succession of market sloops have done the traffic of this vicinity since 1839, at which time the "General Washington" was run by Captain Isaac Woolsey, and the "Amelia" by Captain Solomon Acker. About the same time Captain William Buckhout ran the "Volunteer" four years. Captain Isaac C. Smith sailed the "Volunteer" for twenty-three years. Captain J. W. Jenks began his transportation business in 1837 or 1838, with the market sloop "Fannie." He afterwards ran the sloop "Sea Gull" and the propeller "Ora." He died in 1862, and was succeeded by his three sons, who have kept up a propeller line

to the present time, having owned the "Eureka" and the "Leader," until succeeded by the "Sarah Jenks."

The transportation business was about equally divided between Sparta and Sing Sing near the year 1820, at which time Captain Stephen Orser and Captain John Leggett sailed sloops from Sparta. Through some difference in the rental of docks, Captain Leggett changed his sailing-place to Sing Sing, and this little circumstance turned the tide of business to the latter place. This is not the only example which history furnishes of a narrow and short-sighted policy, resulting in the ruin of one town and the building up of another.

The river-transportation of a half-century ago was vastly more important than it is at present. That was before the days of railroads. Then the produce of the entire agricultural district extending to the Connecticut State line, including the towns of North and South Salem, Bedford and even portions of Putnam County, a distance of thirty miles, was shipped to New York City from this port, and the supplies of groceries and merchandise received through the same channels.

The numerous railroads which traverse our county, and the increase of population and growth of villages, which have furnished a home market for farm produce, has resulted in an almost entire destruction of river transportation.

The saddest of all the incidents connected with our river navigation was the explosion of the passenger steamboat "Magenta," which occurred March 23, 1878. This ill-fated vessel had just left the dock at Sing Sing, and had scarcely reached the prison when an explosion took place that resulted in the death of seven persons. The coroner's inquest brought out the disgraceful fact that the steam boilers were so far worn out that their thickness at the point of bursting was only one-sixteenth of an inch (!), and yet she carried a recent certificate of a government boiler examiner, to assure her passengers that she was safe and sound! From all such officials as this examiner may the good Lord deliver us.

Among those largely interested in the dock and

river front business of Sing Sing is Mr. S. Ferris Washburn, who was born in the town of Newcastle, Westchester County, to which place his grandfather, John Washburn, is said to have removed from Jamaica, Long Island, just before the Revolution. His father, Solomon Washburn, was a farmer, and the early life of Mr. Washburn was spent with his parents on the farm, and his education was obtained at the village school. In 1849 he left home to enter into business on his own account, and came to Sing Sing, where he opened a grocery store, and carried on the business till 1853, when he purchased the lumber yard and dock property formerly owned and occupied by Thomas Bailey, and taking Mr. Secor as a partner,

began an extensive business. In 1856 they purchased the whole of the river front property known as the Farmers' Dock, which they greatly enlarged and improved, and established the coal business, which has since been carried on with great success in connection with the lumber yard. In 1878 the north part of the dock property was sold to Jinks Brothers, as the firm did not require so extensive a river front, their remaining wharf having been enlarged sufficiently to accommodate their business.

Mr. Washburn married, in 1858, Maria, daughter of Reuben Kip, of Somers. Their children are

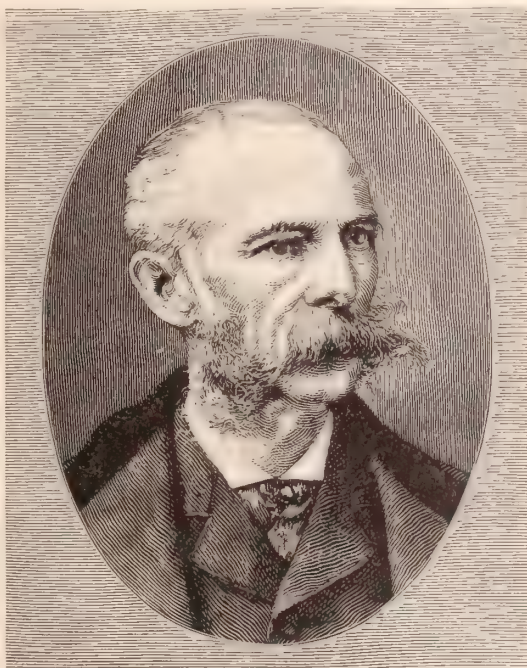
Florence C.
(wife of Edwin L. Todd),
Helen and
Louis F.

Mr. Wash-

burn has ever declined taking any active part in politics, devoting his time and attention almost exclusively to his business. For many years he has been one of the trustees of the Presbyterian Church of Sing Sing, with which his family is connected.

The firm of Secor & Washburn are now doing a business which is very extensive, and supply the large local demand of the surrounding country.

THOMAS COLLYER AND SHIP-BUILDING IN SING SING.—Fifty years ago, and since that time, Sing Sing numbered among its most important industries ship-building, or more correctly speaking sloop and schooner building. Captain Moses Stanton had a "ship yard" here, and in 1855-56 Captain Isaac Smith also had



S Ferris Washburn

one at the upper dock. The latter built a very beautiful brig, which was launched in 1856, if I remember correctly. Captain Smith was a famous steamboat builder. But the most distinguished ship-builder who ever resided in Sing Sing was the late Thomas Collyer, whose remains repose in a fine stone vault in Dale Cemetery. Mr. Collyer was so celebrated in his profession that I have inserted the following sketch of his labors, prepared by his kinsman, James T. Collyer, and recently published in the *Chronicle*. It can but prove interesting to our citizens, by many of whom he was well known.

Thomas Collyer was born in the village of Sing Sing in the year 1818, and in early boyhood showed great fondness for boats and employed his leisure in carving them out, which even then gave evidence of genius in that line. At the early age of fourteen years he commenced working for his brother William, who died some time ago. His brother at that time had a ship yard in this village and built several sloops and also showed much skill in that line, having modeled and built a sloop when only nineteen years old, which was named "First Effort." In early times this place was made quite famous as a place for boat-building.

Moses Stanton was quite celebrated in his day in that line and carried on an extensive business in building sloops, schooners and also larger vessels for the coasting and West India trade. Thomas, after working a few years with his brother, commenced modeling and building vessels on his own account at this place; among the first was the sloop "Katrina Van Tassel," which was launched in the year 1838; this was followed by one or two others, when he removed to West Troy, where he built quite a number of vessels of different kinds and his first steamboat, which was named the "Trojan," and he soon after built steamers to run on Lake Champlain, two of which were named the "Francis Saltus" and "America," which added much to his reputation as a builder, as they were considered fine models, combined with great speed, and in that day were well patronized, as much pleasure and Canada travel took that route.

In the year 1844 he removed to New York, and, in company with his brother William, commenced business, which was considered at that time rather a bold and hazardous undertaking for men so young to enter in competition with such old established builders as Jabez Williams, Brown & Bell and other well known firms; but untiring industry combined with skill soon brought them orders for work. They built several vessels; among the number were the steamers "Santa Claus" and "Niagara," which at that time attracted much notice. The brothers continued together to the year 1847, when they dissolved partnership and Thomas once more commenced on his own account. His reputation had become so well established that orders began to come

in rapidly, which kept him fully employed in building vessels of all descriptions. About this time he built the steamer "Armenia," which was admitted by steamboat men to be a great success and a great advance in point of speed; even now she has few superiors and still continues a favorite with the traveling public. About 1852 he built a steamer named "Confucius," modeled after our river steamers, to run on the China rivers. This was the first steamboat ever built in this country for that trade, which proved a perfect success, being much faster and better adapted for that business than those in use which had been built in England. Soon more orders were received for other boats to be used in the same trade. His business having now become very extensive, he was kept fully employed in modeling and constructing steamships, barks, and clipper ships, and among the latter was the celebrated clipper "Panama," which is said to have made the quickest trip from Shanghai to New York ever made by any sailing vessel to that time.

Among the last steamboats built by him was the "Daniel Drew," which he built and run on his own account, and is admitted to be one of the handsomest models and fastest boats now running, and is a great favorite on the Hudson. The "Drew" was specially chartered to convey the Prince of Wales and suite from West Point to Albany, and while on the passage she called forth the warmest praise from the Prince and the Duke of New Castle and others of their suite, as being nearer perfection in point of speed and elegance of design than any boat they ever saw, which is an admission seldom made by Englishmen in any department of mechanism; and after their return to England they spoke in such high terms of our river steamers that a celebrated builder made a special request of Mr. Collyer to furnish him with her draft, which he very politely declined doing. Prince Napoleon and suite several times took passage on the "Daniel Drew," expressing their admiration very warmly of her, and sent Mr. Collyer a very complimentary and flattering letter as the builder of such a boat.

The following brief summary shows in part the number and class of vessels built by him while he was in business: Three sloops, twenty-six barges, four propellers, twelve schooners, three barks, two ships, five steamships, thirty-seven steamboats and two yachts.

DISTINGUISHED RESIDENTS OF THE TOWN.—One of the most celebrated personages who ever resided within the limits of our little town was Robert Matthews, better known as the religious fanatic and impostor *Matthias*. The scene of his extraordinary proceedings was at Sparta, where Mr. and Mrs. Benjamin H. Folger lived, and where Mr. Elijah Pierson died. Matthias resided there in the years 1833 and 1834, which was the time that made "Zion Hill" famous, or, more correctly speaking, infamous. "Zion

Hill," as Matthias called his headquarters, is now the residence of Mr. Charles T. Titus, better known as the Remsen place. The whole of this strange story is related in detail in a little volume of three hundred and forty-seven pages, written by William L. Stone, and published by Harper & Brothers, in 1835. Not less than three editions were issued in that year, being mere reprints of the first, without addition or alteration. The title of the book is "Matthias and his Impostures; or, the Progress of Fanaticism. Illustrated in the extraordinary case of Robert Matthews, and some of his forerunners and disciples." Space will not admit of even an abstract of his history. The curious reader must seek for the book and peruse it himself.

The next person to be mentioned is one of whom we have reason to be justly proud. Mr. A. T. Agate, of Sparta, was an artist of true merit. His beautiful work may be seen in numerous extremely fine illustrations in the several volumes of Wilkes' "United States Exploring Expedition, 1838-42." Mr. Agate and Mr. Drayton were the artists accompanying the expedition.

Sparta can also boast of being the birth-place of Admiral Worden, who performed the gallant service of sinking the "Merrimac."

"The 'Monitor' went whack into the 'Merrimac,'
And as she went, played 'Yankee Doodle Dandy O!'"

Worden was born in the house a little below, and to the east, of the Sparta burying-ground. Some persons labor under the false impression that this is the place that was afterwards "Zion Hill," of Matthias fame.

Some of our villagers take pride in the fact that Sing Sing is the birth-place of Governor John T. Hoffman, who is the son of the late Dr. A. K. Hoffman, who spent most of his days in this place as a practitioner of medicine.

David Ogden Mills, the Californian millionaire, was a resident of Sing Sing when a poor young man, and up to the time of his departure for that Eldorado where he sought and found his fortune.

General Robert Anderson, the hero of Fort Sumter, resided in Sing Sing for some length of time after the close of the Civil War. The writer can recall many interesting conversations with him, while the general was riding about with him on his professional rounds, concerning his perilous situation in Fort Sumter.

CHAPTER V.

CORTLANDT.

BY REV. WILLIAM J. CUMMING,

Secretary of the Westchester County Historical Society, Yorktown.

THE town of Cortlandt is located in the extreme northwestern corner of Westchester County. It is bounded on the north by Putnam County, on the east by Yorktown, on the south by the Croton River and the town of New Castle and on the west by the Hudson River. Its extreme length from the top of Croton Point north to the Putnam County line is twelve and a quarter miles, and its greatest breadth nine miles. Its area is approximately fifty square miles. The Croton River passes through the southeastern corner, and in the northeastern corner the Sprout Brook. Canopus Creek and the Peekskill Hollow Brook empty their waters into Annsville Creek. Between these two extremities are a number of smaller streams. Lying, as it does, on the edge of the Highlands, the surface of the town is very hilly. The greatest elevation is attained at Anthony's Nose, in the northwestern corner, which rises to an altitude of twelve hundred and twenty-eight feet above the Hudson River.

The scenery is full of the varied and striking beauty which has gained the Hudson River and its surroundings a fame throughout the world. The name of the town is derived from Van Cortlandt, of whose manor it once formed a part.

The Indians along the east bank of the Hudson were sub-divisions of the great Mohegan tribe. Those north of the Kitchewan or Croton River were the Kitchewonks, and they occupied the whole of the towns of Cortlandt and Yorktown. South of the Croton River were the Sint Sinks and the Tankitekes. North of Anthony's Nose and among the mountains were the Nochpeens and north of them the Wappingers. Across the Hudson were the Haverstraws, a branch of the Minsi, belonging to the Delaware nation. The Kitchewonks had two important villages,—one where Peekskill now stands, called Sack-hoes, and the other upon Van Cortlandt's Neck, connecting Senasqua or Croton Point with the main land. Here they had a strongly-built stockade which overlooked the waters of Haverstraw Bay, and guarded important oyster-beds there.¹

Different portions of the town bore different names. West of John Peake's Creek (Annsville Creek) was Wishqua. The present Peekskill was called Sachus or Sackhoes. To the south of it came Wenehees and farther south (the boundaries given in the deed to Van Cortlandt, 1683, are not easily determined) lay

George Jackson Fisher, M.D.

¹ James Wood, Mt. Kisco

Appamaghogh.¹ Verplanck's Point was then Meahagh, Croton Point Senasqua, and the lower portions of the towns of Cortlandt, Yorktown and Somers extending as far northward as the Mohansie Lakes, Kitchewonk or Kitchawan.²

The first white men ever to behold the shores of the town of Cortlandt were Hendrick Hudson and his crew, on their exploring expedition in 1609. Off Verplanck's Point, on October 1st of that year, his vessel, the "Half Moon," was anchored.³ Here he was visited by some of the Highland Indians, who were struck with wonder at the superiority of his craft to their own canoes, and marveled at the peculiar weapons of the strangers. One of the Indians lingered in a canoe beside the vessel with evidently thievish intent, and, although warned away, watched his opportunity, and climbing up the rudder into the cabin window, stole a pillow and a few articles of wearing apparel. He was discovered by the mate with his plunder and shot down. The other Indians fled in alarm, some of them in their terror leaping into the river. The ship's boat was sent out to recover the stolen articles, when one of the Indians in the water seized hold of it with the intention, as was believed, of overturning it. A stroke from the sword of the cook cut off his hands and he was drowned. This was the first Indian blood shed during the voyage. After this terrible punishment for so slight an injury the boat returned to the ship, which weighed anchor near Teller's Point.

When Hudson passed Verplanck's Point, and saw the high hills to the north apparently blocking his way, he considered his voyage ended. On searching for a passage, however, he discovered the continuation of the river. He sailed to a place opposite West Point and there anchored for the night.⁴

On the 3d of June, 1682, according to a deed preserved in the county records,⁵ "that neck or parcel of land, with the marsh, meadow ground, or valley there-to adjoining and belonging, situate, lying, or being, on the east side of the North or Hudson's River, over against the Verdrida Hooke, commonly called and known by the name of Slauper's Haven, and by the Indians Navish, the meadow being by the Indians called Senasqua, being bounded by the said river and a certain creek called or known to the Indians by the name of Tanracken and Sepperack, and divided from the mainland by certain trees marked by said Indians," etc., was sold to Cornelius Van Burgum.

At a very early period William and Sarah Teller occupied the peninsula, which became known from them as Teller's Point. It was also called Sarah's Point, from Mrs. Sarah Teller, who survived her hus-

band. The Tellers were descendants of a Dutch clergyman of some distinction, and one of the family, Andrea Teller, in 1671, married Sophia, daughter of the Right Honorable Oloff Stevenson Van Cortlandt.

The Teller heirs consisted of eight brothers and sisters, the children of Pierre Teller and Margaret Haines, his wife, whose names were as follows: Eunice and Miriam, who were twins, James, Solomon, Isaac, Daniel, Mary and Pierre. Eunice, as previously noticed, was the wife of Robert McCord and had one son, Pierre, who lives near Croton Landing. The Tice family, at Croton Landing, are descendants of Miriam Teller. Clarence Teller, of Croton Landing, is the only descendant of Pierre Teller. Solomon Teller has one son at Sing Sing; the rest moved farther west in New York, most of them settling in Cayuga County.

On August 24, 1683, the Honorable Stephenus Van Cortlandt obtained from the Indians a deed to the territory of Meahagh (Verplanck's Point), and the lands lying east thereof, called Appamaghogh, and subsequently, by further acquisition, swelled his possessions to a total of eighty-six thousand two hundred and thirteen acres.

This tract was included in the following boundaries: South, a line running along the north side of the Philipse Manor, from the south side of Kightawanck Creek (Croton River), twenty miles due east to the Connecticut line; west, the Hudson River; north, a line extending from the north side of Anthony's Nose, twenty miles due east; east, the Connecticut line. He was confirmed in the possession of all this territory by a royal charter granted June 17, 1697. The history of this land, known as the Van Cortlandt Manor, is given elsewhere.

With the exception of two tracts of land containing, together, two thousand one hundred acres, the whole of the town of Cortlandt was included in this manor. The larger of these two tracts constituted a portion of the land on which the village of Peekskill is built. License was given for its purchase by Governor Dongan, of the province of New York, as follows:

"BY THE GOVERNOR.

"WHEREAS, Thomas Dekey, Richard Abramson, Jacob Abram, Sylvout Harche, Jacob Harche and Samuell Dekey have desired liberty to purchase, each of them, three hundred acres of land of the Indians, lying and being in the Highlands, by the north of Stephen Van Cortlandt's land, which is called by the Indians 'Wenebees,' lying between two creeks, against the Thunder Hill (Dunderburg), on the east-side of the river, not yet taken up or purchased from the Indians, which may be suitable and convenient for each of them to settle thereon to make speedy improvement.

"THESE may certify that the said Thomas Dekey, Richard Abramson, Jacob Abrams, Sylvout Harche and Samuell Dekey have hereby liberty and license to purchase from the Indians, each of them, all of three hundred acres of land, etc.

"Dated the 6th day of March, 1684, and signed by

"THOMAS DONGAN."

In accordance with the license thus obtained, the six persons mentioned in the foregoing instrument, on the 21st of April, 1685, obtained a deed from Sirham,

¹ Bolton makes this district extend to Yorktown; this conclusion is not warranted by the deeds he gives.

² Names taken from Indian conveyances cited by Bolton, "History of County of Westchester," vol. 1.

³ Moulton and Yates, "History of New York," p. 271.

⁴ Yates and Moulton's "History of New York," p. 238 and 239.

⁵ Co. Records, Lib. A, p. 182.

Sachem of Sachus, Pannskapham, Charrish, Aske-waen, Pewineien and Sickham Indians "for all that tract or parcel of land situate, lying and being on Hudson's River, at a certain place called by the Indians Sachus, and stretching by the north side of Mr. Stephenus Van Cortlandt's land to the said river to another creek, and so running up said creek in several courses to a certain tree marked with 'R,' and from the said marked tree southerly by marked trees all along to another marked tree marked 'R,' west, up to the aforesaid creek which lies by said Stephenus Van Cortlandt's land." These boundaries embraced eight-hundred acres.

The royal patent confirming this purchase was issued December 23, 1685. It is commonly known as "Ryck's Patent," a contraction of "Ryck Abramson's Patent," by which latter title, derived from the name of one of the patentees, it is referred to in a document bearing date of April 20, 1715.

December 29, 1729, a deed between Hercules Lent, son of Ryck Abramson Lent (the Richard Abramson of the Ryck's patent), and Jacob Lent, of the first part, Sybout Harche Kranckhyte, of the second part and Hercules Johnse Kranckhyte and Jacobus Kranckhyte, of the third part, recites that whereas the said parties are jointly seized of the land at a place called by the Indians Sachus, containing eighteen hundred acres, and think it meet and convenient, and have agreed that partition should be made between them of such lands, so that they may enjoy the same in severalty, they covenant, grant and agree that the said Hercules Lent shall thereafter in severalty, in satisfaction of his moiety of the said lands (acquired by purchases of the interest of others at various times), have, hold, occupy, possess and enjoy the just quantity of nine hundred acres, part of which is in his actual possession, and is ascertained by several marked trees, and is the southernmost part of said tract.

Also they grant to Sybout Harche Kranckhyte one-sixth of the said lands—three hundred acres—which is in his possession, and is ascertained by several marked trees, it being about the middle of the whole tract of land.

Also they grant to Hercules Johnse Kranckhyte and Jacobus Kranckhyte, in severalty, their third part of such lands—six hundred acres—in their actual possession, ascertained by several marked trees and in the northernmost of said whole tract of land.

Hercules Lent, by a deed dated February 27, 1733, for the sum of one hundred pounds, purchased from Hercules Sybout Kranckhyte, one-half of the tract of three hundred acres, which had been granted in severalty to Sybout Harche Kranckhyte or one hundred and fifty acres, and thus became the possessor of ten hundred and fifty acres of the lands held under "Ryck's Patent." Upon his death, in 1766, he bequeathed three hundred and fifty acres of this land to each of his three sons, Jacob, Hendrick and Abraham. To his grandchildren, Abram Lamb, Jane Lamb, Ira

Lamb, Rachel Lamb and to Rachel, wife of James Lamb (the father and mother of the children), he bequeathed lands in Orange, (now Rockland) County, known by the name of Stony Point, and to his daughter, Catharine, wife of Frederick de Ronde, lands at Stony Point.

A deed was given by Sirham, Sachem of Sachus and other Indians, April 25, 1685, to Jacobus Dekay, etc., "of all that tract or parcel of land, situate and being on the east side of Hudson's River, commonly called and known by the name of Wishqua, beginning at the great creek called by the Christians, John Peake's Creek, it being in the mouth of the west side of the said creek, and so running up along the said river to another small creek and fall, including all fresh and salt meadows, together with all, &c., &c., for the value of four hundred guilder, seawant."¹ This tract contained three hundred acres. It was shortly afterwards in the possession of John Krankheyt. A portion of this land has lately been purchased for the State Camp of Military Instruction.

The descendants of Hercules Lent are at present numerous in Peekskill and vicinity. The Lents and Krankhytes "were of common origin in Germany and located at a very remote period in Lower Saxony, where they enjoyed a state of allodial independence, at that day regarded as constituting nobility. They were possessed of the state or manor of Rycken, from which they took their name, then written Von Rycken, indicating its territorial derivation." Hans Von Rycken, lord of the manor, and his cousin Melchior, of Holland, headed eight hundred Crusaders in the First Crusade, under Walter the Penniless, in 1096, and Hans perished. "In the Spanish war, Captain Jacob Simons de Rycke, a wealthy corn merchant of Amsterdam, and a warm partisan of the Prince of Orange, distinguished himself by his military services." He was the father of Jacob de Rycke, who is supposed to have been the father of Abraham de Rycke, who emigrated to this country in 1638. Abraham de Rycke died in 1689, having had by his wife Girtie, daughter of Hendrick Hermenson, nine children, among whom were Rycke Abramsen, of Cortlandt Manor, who adopted the name of Lent; Jacob, born in 1643, who assisted Ryck Abramsen in the purchase of Ryck's patent; Mary, born 1649, married to Sibout H. Krankheyt, of Cortlandt Manor; and Aletta, born 1653, who married Captain John Harmense, of the Manor of Cortlandt.

"Ryck Abramsen Lent, eldest son of Abraham Rycken, married Catrina, daughter of Harek Siboutsen, and in 1685, with others, purchased of the Indians an extensive tract of land, north of Cortlandt, called Sachus. He settled upon this tract, which thence took the name of Ryck's Patent. He served as an elder in the Sleepy Hollow Church, was much respected, and died at a good old age. His children

¹Alb. Book of Pat., vol. v.

were Elizabeth (who married Thomas Heyert), Abraham Ryck, Harek (Hercules), Mayant (married to Thomas Benson) and Catharine (married to Thomas Jones)."¹

REVOLUTIONARY WAR.—The importance of Peekskill as a military post—the key, as it were, to the lower gateway of the Highlands—had been recognized from the very beginning of the contest. As early as May, 1776, in the report of the commissioners sent to examine the fortifications of the Highlands, its position was remarked on as being in the near vicinity of the King's Ferry (then the principal means of communication between the Eastern and Southern States), and also as having a most excellent road leading from it into Connecticut. Henry Wisner stated to the New York Convention that there was a hill to the north of Peekskill so situated, with the road winding along the side of it, that ten men on top, by rolling down stones, could prevent as many thousand from passing. "I believe," added Wisner, "that nothing more need be done than to keep great quantities of stones at the different places where the troops must pass, if they attempt penetrating the mountains."

The place to which he alluded was probably in the neighborhood of Gallows Hill, about three miles above the village, a high eminence looking down on all the surrounding country, and over the side of which the post-road crosses. Near the northern declivity of this hill Continental Village, as will be seen, was destroyed by Tryon in October, 1777.

Hugh Gaine's *Gazette* of the 9th of February, 1778, says: "Major-General Tryon, who was sent to destroy the rebel settlement called the Continental Village, has just returned, and reports that he has burned the barracks for 1500 men, several store-houses and loaded wagons." He did his work thoroughly. No vestige of the little hamlet now remains.²

The disastrous campaign of 1776 brings what is now the town of Cortlandt into prominence, because at Verplanck's Point was the eastern terminus of King's Ferry, and at the northern extremity was the pass to the Highlands. Washington appreciated the importance of both of these points—the former as the most southern, and, therefore, the shortest route from States east of the Hudson and those west. At no point farther south could the river be safely crossed. Early in November Washington ordered the Maryland and Virginia troops under Lord Stirling to New Jersey, *via* Peekskill and King's Ferry. Heath followed with Connecticut and Massachusetts regiments to secure the passes to the Highlands. By sunset of November 10, 1776, when Washington arrived here on his way to New Jersey, Stirling's troops were over the Hudson and Heath's at Peekskill. November 11th and a portion of the 12th were spent by Washington in inspecting the posts of the Highlands, and

on the latter, with Heath, he selected, near Robinson's Bridge, about two miles from Peekskill, a place where troops were to be stationed to cover the southern entrance to the Highlands. Here was established the military depot which was called Continental Village.³ Heath was placed in command of the defenses to the Highlands. Immediately he sent troops to the west of the Hudson, and stationed "Prescott's, Ward's and Wyllis's regiments of Parson's brigade to the south entrance of the Highlands beyond Robinson's Bridge," and General George Clinton's brigade to the heights above Peekskill Landing.⁴ Heath was now in the fortieth year of his age. He describes himself to be of middling stature, light complexion, very corpulent and bald-headed, so that the French officers who served in America compared him in person to the Marquis of Granby. Such was the officer intrusted with the command of the Highland passes, and encamped at Peekskill, their portal. We shall find him faithful to his trust, scrupulous in obeying the letter of his instructions, but sturdy and punctilious in resisting any undue assumption of authority.⁵ General Charles Lee, after repeated requests and positive orders, reaches Peekskill November 30th, on his way to New Jersey to assist Washington. Here occurred an incident worthy of record. Lee, though not in command of this department, as the senior in rank of Heath, took it upon himself, notwithstanding positive commands from Washington to the contrary, to order over the Hudson with his own troops two of the best regiments at Continental Village. Heath declined to give such an order. "Then," exclaimed Lee, "I will order them myself." "That makes a wide difference," rejoined Heath. "You are my senior, but I have received positive written instructions from him who is superior to us both, and I will not myself break those orders." In proof of his words, Heath produced the recent letter received from Washington, repeating his former orders that no troops should be removed from that post. Lee glanced over the letter. "The commander-in-chief is now at a distance, and does not know what is necessary here so well as I do." He asked a sight of the return-book of the division. It was brought by Major Huntington, the deputy adjutant-general. Lee ran his eye over it and chose two regiments (those of Prescott and Wyllis, then at Continental Village). "You will order them to march early to-morrow morning to join me," said he to the

¹ Heath's "Memoirs," page 83, and Irving's "Life of Washington," vol. ii.

² Continental Village was just over the line in what was then Dutchess (not Putnam) County.

³ Heath's "Memoirs," page 85.

⁴ Peekskill Landing, according to tradition, was the Boland farm, near Cortlandtville. There was no landing near the present village during the Revolution. It must be borne in mind that there were two villages during the Revolutionary War, one at Cortlandtville, and the other, consisting of twenty houses, at the site of the present village. See map by an English officer in Botton's History (new edition).

⁵ Irving's "Life of Washington," vol. ii.

¹ "Annals of Newtown," by James Riker, Jr.

² Charles A. Campbell, in "Magazine of American History" for May, 1882.

major. Heath, ruffling with the pride of military law, turned to the major, with an air of authority. "Issue such orders at your peril," exclaimed he. Then, addressing Lee, "Sir," said he, "if you come to this post and mean to issue orders here which will break the positive ones I have received, I pray you to do it completely yourself and through your own deputy adjutant-general, who is present, and not draw me or any of my family in as partners in the guilt." "It is right," said Lee. "Col. Scammel, do you issue the order." It was done accordingly, but Heath's punctilious scruples were not yet satisfied. "I have one more request to make, sir," said he to Lee, "and that is that you will be pleased to give me a certificate that you exercise command at this post and order from it these regiments." Lee hesitated to comply; but George Clinton, who was present, told him he could not refuse a request so reasonable. He accordingly wrote, "For the satisfaction of Gen'l Heath, and at his request, I do certify that I am commanding officer at this present writing in this post, and that I have in that capacity ordered Prescott's and Wyllis' regiments to march."¹ The regiments marched from their cantonments towards Peekskill, but before they arrived the erratic Lee concluded to countermand the order. On the 2d and 3d of December Lee's troops were crossing the ferry, and by the 4th both Heath and Westchester County were well rid of him. December 9th Heath was ordered to proceed to New Jersey with Parson's brigade, and, in conjunction with the troops in his command on the west side of the river, advanced as far as Hackensack. On the 18th, at the earnest request of the Provincial Convention, he was ordered back, and reached Peekskill on the 23d. In January, 1777, we find him away to the southern part of the county with General Lincoln, harassing the British outposts. Heath proved himself to be a very vigilant commander, always on the alert against either the red-coat or the Tory. He always evinced both sound judgment and tact in the duties assigned him. March 14th, while absent at his home in Roxbury, Mass., he received orders to take command of the Eastern Department, with headquarters at Boston.

After Heath's transfer, Brigadier-General McDougall assumed command at Peekskill, which was a depot for the military stores of the American army. Howe, in March, 1777, determined on their destruction. He accordingly sent a force against what he denominates "the port of that rough and mountainous tract called the Manor of Courtlandt." McDougall having learned of the proposed expedition, and having with him only two hundred and fifty men, removed as much of the stores as possible to the forts in the Highlands. On the 23d, five hundred British troops, with four light field-pieces landed at Len's Cove, about one

mile south of the present village. Unable with his meagre force to protect the place, McDougall set fire to the barracks and store-houses, and retreated two miles to a point² commanding both the entrance to the Highlands and the road to Continental Village, and sent to Lieutenant-Colonel Marinus Willet, at Fort Constitution,³ for assistance. Not able to carry away the stores, the enemy destroyed what was left. On the following day a skirmish took place not far from the Van Cortlandt mansion, near Cortlandtville. The enemy having possessed the village of Peekskill, a party of them, numbering about two hundred, the next day took position on a height a little south of the house, where the advance guard of the Americans was posted. General McDougall having received a reinforcement from Colonel Gansevoort's regiment, of about eighty men, under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Willet, permitted them to attempt to dispossess the enemy from the eminence. Colonel Willet having accordingly made the necessary disposition, advanced with his small party with the greatest firmness and resolution and made the attack; the enemy instantly fled with the greatest precipitation, leaving three men dead on the field; and the whole body, panic-stricken, betook themselves to their shipping, embarking under cover of the night.⁴ General McDougall then took possession of his former quarters. The enemy were not able to carry off any of the stores left behind in Peekskill, and were only supplied with about forty sheep and eight or ten head of cattle by the Tories. They burnt some houses and plundered the inhabitants of what could be conveniently carried away. Irving says that "9 of the marauders were killed" and "four more slain on the banks of Canopus Creek as they were setting fire to the boats."

On Hillside Avenue, a little to the north of its junction with Highland Avenue, in the village of Peekskill, and almost hidden from view beneath a wall, is the spring known as the "Soldier's Spring." According to an article which appeared in the *Westchester and Putnam Republican*, of Peekskill, in August, 1838, the name was derived from the following incident: A body of British made a descent upon Peekskill (probably the one which occurred in March, 1777), and after driving out the American troops, occupied Drum Hill, and commenced to cannonade them on their retreat with two small field-pieces. A soldier who stopped for a moment to drink from the spring was struck by a ball and his thigh shattered. He lay bleeding until picked up by a passing wagon, and was taken to Fishkill, where he died. Another version of the story is to the effect that he

² Probably Gallows Hill. The location of the barracks and store-houses is not definitely known. In 1781 they were located at the old village; the latter had been but recently constructed. (See description from "Blanchard's Journal," given elsewhere.)

³ Irving's "Life of Washington," vol. ii. Heath's "Memoirs," p. 116.

⁴ *Connecticut Journal* of April 2, 1777, quoted in Bolton's "History of Westchester County," vol. i. p. 156 (new ed.).

¹ Irving's "Life of Washington," vol. ii., and Heath's "Memoirs," pages 94-96.

was killed at the spot and buried in the immediate vicinity. Shortly before the beginning of the Civil War a human skeleton was discovered in a sand-bank which was being removed from the premises of Harrison Smith, with a cannon-ball lying beside it, which was declared by the old residents to be the body of this luckless soldier. Tradition says his name was Nathan Brown.

The destruction of these stores, called "the unhappy affair at Peekskill," opened the eyes of the military authorities to the possibilities of the case. Knox and Greene, with McDougall, George Clinton and Anthony Wayne, made an inspection of the defenses of the Highlands. They recommended the obstruction of the navigation of the river with a boom or heavy iron chain stretched from Fort Montgomery to Anthony's Nose, with batteries to cover it. These were Fort Montgomery and Clinton, on the west banks of the river, and Fort Independence,¹ on the east side. The latter stood on a gravel bank, immediately in front of which the hotel was afterwards built. The gravel banks have been removed in recent years. May, 1777,² Major-General Putnam, whose courage was superior to his judgment, was placed in command, and his first duty was to complete these defenses. The chain especially gave him congenial occupation. During the entire period that he was in command he had in mind an attack on New York. Washington himself suggested it. So tenacious was Putnam of his plan that Hamilton called it Putnam's "hobby-horse." In October, 1777, Sir Henry Clinton gave the old patriot plenty to do. Prior to Burgoyne's surrender he attempted to break through the American lines and effect a junction with that hard-pressed general. October 5th he landed at Verplanck's Point with three thousand British soldiers, no doubt as a feint; and on the 6th, during a fog, crossed two thousand of these troops to Stony Point, leaving one thousand behind. Putnam was out-maneuvered, supposing that the intended points of attack were Peekskill and Fort Independence. Forts Montgomery and Clinton were captured, and Fort Independence evacuated.³ A detachment under Major-General Tryon was sent to destroy Continental Village; they "burned the barrack for 1500 men, several store-houses and loaded wagons."⁴

In about a week Putnam with six thousand men was again in possession of Peekskill. About November 1st he is again riding his "hobby-horse" and moves as far south as New Rochelle. This calls forth the indignation of Hamilton, alluded to

¹ Southwest of Cortlandville, about one mile distant, on a high hill, was located Fort Lookout. Its location is now marked by a cluster of trees, which are much higher than any surrounding them. There is still a circular earth-work here one hundred feet in diameter. On the southern slope of the hill, north of Peekskill, were located two redoubts. ² Peabody's "Life of Israel Putnam." Sparks' "American Biography."

³ Peabody's "Life of Israel Putnam."

⁴ Bolton's "History of Westchester County," vol. i. p. 91 (old ed.).

above, who issues positive orders in General Washington's name for the sending of a much-needed reinforcement to the commander-in-chief and also a reprimand from headquarters. December, 1777, the troops went into winter-quarters in the Highlands. February 13, 1778, in a letter to Washington, he tells of the sufferings of his troops:—"Dubois' regiment is unfit to be ordered on duty, there being not one blanket in the regiment. Very few have either a shoe or a shirt, and most of them have neither stockings, breeches or overalls."⁵

During ten months that he was in command he hung two spies.

At a little distance from the site of the old headquarters, in the grounds of the Peekskill Academy on "Oak Hill," stands the huge oak tree from which the hill is named, and on which Daniel Strang, the spy, was hung. Strang, it appears from a short notice of him in Thacher, was found lurking about the army at Peekskill, and arrested on suspicion of being a spy. On being searched, a paper was found on him, written by Colonel Robert Rogers, who then commanded the Queen's Rangers, dated at Valentine's Hill, 30th December, 1776, authorizing him or any other person to bring in recruits for His Majesty's service, and stating the terms and rewards that were to be offered. Strang, who made no defense, was tried by court-martial, and condemned to death as a spy. Washington approving the sentence, he was executed accordingly.⁶ When the eastern wing of the academy was being constructed some years ago, human bones were disinterred not far from the tree, which were thought to be the remains of Strang. They were coffined by Mr. Wells, the principal, and buried.

The following extract is taken from a letter dated Peekskill, January 19, 1777:

"General Howe has discharged all the privates who were prisoners in New York; one-half he sent to the world of spirits for want of food. The other he hath sent to warn their countrymen of the danger of falling into his hands, and so convince them, by ocular demonstration, that it is infinitely better to be slain in battle than to be taken prisoners by British brutes, whose tender mercies are cruelty. But it is not the prisoners alone who felt the effects of British humanity. Every part of the country thro' which they have march'd has been plundered and ravaged. No discrimination has been made with respect to whig or tory, but all alike have been involv'd in one common fate. Their march thro' New Jersey has been marked with savage barbarity. But *Westchester* witnesseth more terrible things. The repositories of the dead have ever been held sacred by the most barbarous and savage nations. But here, not being able to accomplish their accursed purposes upon the

⁵ Peabody's "Life of Putnam."

⁶ Charles A. Campbell, in "Magazine of American History" for May 1882

living, they wreaked their vengeance on the dead. In many places, the graves in the church-yards were opened, and the bodies of the dead exposed upon the ground for several days. At *Morrissania* the family vault was opened, the coffins broken and the bones scattered abroad. At *Delancey's* farm, the body of a beautiful young lady, which had been buried for two years, was taken out of the ground and exposed for five days in a most indecent manner; many more instances could be mentioned, but my heart sickens at the recollection of such inhumanity. Some persons try to believe that it is only the Hessians who perpetrate these things, but I have good authority to say that the British vie with, and even exceed the auxiliary troops in licentiousness. After such treatment, can it be possible for any persons seriously to wish for a reconciliation with Great Britain?"¹

March 16, 1778, Putnam was relieved from command by General Washington, and succeeded by General McDougall, "on account of the prejudices of the people," who complained of his ill success in preventing the incursions of the enemy and of his lenity to the Tories. Doubtless the latter were very active and troublesome in this section during 1777 and 1778.²

After the fall of Forts Clinton and Montgomery it was determined to re-fortify the Highlands, the principal defenses being constructed at West Point and Constitution Island, with chain between to obstruct navigation. In addition to these, two forts were built, Fort Lafayette, at Verplanck's, and the other at Stony Point opposite, as outposts to the works in the Highlands and as a defense to the ferry. May 30, 1779, Sir Henry Clinton made his second visit in person to this section. He was accompanied by five thousand troops and a fleet under Sir George Collier. Next morning General Vaughan landed seven or eight miles north of Verplanck's, on the east side of the river. Clinton himself at Haverstraw, on the opposite side, three miles below Stony Point. The fort at the latter place was abandoned on the approach of the enemy by its garrison of twenty men. On the following morning Fort Lafayette was cannonaded and surrendered by its feeble garrison of only seventy men. Washington left the main army at Smith's Cove, in the rear of Haverstraw and established his headquarters at New Windsor in order to push forward the works of defense in the Highlands. McDougall was placed in command of West Point and Heath summoned from Massachusetts. June 23d the latter took command of all the troops on the east side of the Hudson, a post which he held until the end of the war, with the exception of the few months in 1780 that he was in Rhode Island with Rochambeau. Clinton gave up the attempt on the Highlands and sent General Tryon to Connecticut to scourge its

inhabitants into submission. Heath was ordered thither with two Connecticut brigades to prevent the carrying out of his plan. On the night of July 15th, Wayne took Stony Point at the point of the bayonet; this was to have been followed by an attempt on Fort Lafayette. This task was committed to Major-General Howe with two brigades and some twelve-pounders. This movement recalled the British forces, which were then on the march down the Hudson. To prevent Clinton cutting off Howe, Heath was summoned from Connecticut to his assistance. He returned by forced marches. On the 18th, when at Drake's, at or near where Alfred Todd lives, on the Crompond road, he received word from Howe that Clinton was above the Croton River, pushing north, and ordered General Huntington's brigade with two field-pieces to hasten to the heights south of Peekskill³ and take position there so as to command the road to Verplanck's and New Bridge. A regiment was sent to secure the pass over the hills between Drake's and Peekskill. Heath was ordered by Washington to move into the Highlands; the night was passed on Bald Hill.⁴ On the 19th Parson's brigade was at Robinson's, Huntington's and Patterson's at Nelson's; and Nixon's at the gorge. The British moved back to Dobbs Ferry on the 20th. The presence of the enemy at Verplanck's made lively times for the Manor of Cortlandt. The Tories doubtless were jubilant and active; frequent incursions were made. In June the parsonage of the Presbyterian Church at Crompond was burned, and ten days later Tarleton and Simcoe burned the church and took thirty prisoners to the Sugar-house at New York.⁵ Heath was kept busy looking after the enemy. Major-General Howe, with his division of the American army, was six weeks in the vicinity of Clinton, finding that Washington could not be enticed from the Highlands, and unwilling to attack him there, evacuated Verplanck's and Stony Points October 21st, and on the 24th, Heath, by Washington's orders, encamped at Peekskill.⁶

Enoch Crosby, the hero of Cooper's best novel, "The Spy," the scene of which is laid in Westchester County, performed a characteristic trick in the vicinity of Teller's Point. Seeing a British vessel anchored off the Point, he caused one of a party of six men who were with him to display himself in Lafayette's uniform, so conspicuously as to draw the attention of the crew, while he and the other five secreted themselves in ambush. The ruse succeeded. A boat put out from the vessel manned by eleven men, under command of a lieutenant, to capture the lone Yankee. On their approach he fled into the woods, and was hotly pursued by the crew.

³ See chapter on Yorktown.

⁴ See Erskine's map.

⁵ Either Campfield, where the reservoir is situated, or Gallows Hill. See Revolutionary History of Yorktown.

⁶ Irving's "Life of Washington," vol. iii, and Heath's Memoirs. Campfield or Drum Hill?

¹ From Henry B. Dawson's "Historical Magazine" for December, 1870, p. 370, 371.

² Peabody's "Life of Putnam."

When they had reached the point of ambush Crosby and his men sprang up with wild yells, making a great rustling in the bushes, and creating all the noise possible. Believing themselves encompassed by a superior force, the British surrendered without resistance. They were next day marched to Fishkill and there confined.

October 14, 1799, according to General Heath's Memoirs, Captain Hallet's company of New York militia, in the neighborhood of Teller's Point, took prisoners fourteen seamen in the British service.

The winter of 1779-80 was an exceedingly cold one. The snow in this section of country was four feet deep. The Bay of New York was frozen so solid that an army with the heaviest artillery could have crossed on ice. The ships-of-war were fast at the anchorage. The American army here suffered for want of proper clothing.

In July, 1780, the French army arrived at Newport. Clinton had planned a descent on the French quarters at Rhode Island with six thousand men. To prevent this and, if possible, strike a blow at New York, Washington had crossed at King's Ferry to Peekskill, July 13th. While on horseback, watching the crossing of the last division, he was approached by Arnold with a request for a command. He was offered that of the left wing, but expressed a desire for garrison duty on account of his wounded leg, and mentioned West Point as a post at which he could be useful. Washington, though somewhat surprised at his request, granted it, and he received command of the Highland defenses.¹

Shortly after Washington returned to the west side of the Hudson. Heath was at this time with Rochambeau, at Newport. It will not be necessary to go into the details of Arnold's treason, except so much of them as transpired in this town, or on the Hudson River adjacent to it. September 18th, Washington crossed at King's Ferry, in Arnold's barge, on his way to Hartford to meet Rochambeau. He probably took the shortest route *via* Crompond and Salem. His absence was Arnold's opportunity. Just after midnight of September 20, 1780, Andre left the "Vulture" in a boat sent for him by Arnold to arrange for the surrender of West Point. Shortly after dawn they were at the house of Joshua Hett Smith, at Haverstraw, haggling over the price to be paid for the treason. A boat put out from the "Vulture," filled with armed men, which headed towards Teller's Point. It was seen by George Sherwood and John or "Jack" Peterson, the latter a colored man, who armed themselves and hurried to the shore, resolved that a landing should not be effected without opposition. From behind the stones Peterson fired at the approaching crew, and an oar fell from the hands of one of the men, and general confusion was observed amongst them. A second shot from Sherwood con-

vinced them that the shores of the Point were too inhospitable for them, and they returned to the vessel under protection of a heavy fire directed from it towards the point where the two men lay concealed. The sound of this cannonading had the effect of drawing the attention of the inhabitants to the vessel. Colonel Livingston, the commander of Fort Lafayette, at Verplanck's Point, having received intelligence of its presence, despatched a party of men with a four-pound cannon (having been refused a larger one by Arnold), who opened from the point so well-directed a fire that the "Vulture" was compelled to drop farther down the river. Andre at Haverstraw observed the whole scene with deep anxiety, but when the firing ceased resumed his usual composure. The timid Smith, however, refused to row him back to the vessel and he was thus compelled to make the trip overland, which resulted in his capture and the defeat of the conspiracy. On the evening of September 22, 1780, Major Andre, accompanied by Joshua Hett Smith and a negro boy, landed at Green's Cove. William Van Wart was the ferryman, and on the trial of Major Andre testified that "Smith seemed to hurry them a good deal." Andre then probably rode up the King's Ferry road to the New York and Albany turnpike, maybe noting with a laugh the quaint sign at the corner, "Dishe his de Roode toe de Kehings Farry," and then proceeded on his way *via* Cortlandtville and Crompond. Next day he was captured at Tarrytown.

Washington's unexpected return and Andre's capture prevented the consummation of Arnold's treachery. On learning of his flight, Washington despatched Hamilton with all speed to intercept him at Verplanck's Point, and ordered that Andre be conducted "by some upper road rather than by the route by Crompond."²

After Andre's capture in Tarrytown, he was taken as a prisoner by Captain Hoogland and a troop of horse to Peekskill. The party halted for a few moments at a house which was standing a short time since above Peekskill, at the junction of the Albany post-road, and a highway branching eastward. North of the house rises Gallows Hill, where Palmer, the spy, was hung. From this point the party proceeded on their way to West Point, from whence Andre was conveyed by water to King's Ferry, and then to Tappan, the headquarters of General Washington.

The "Vulture" lay in her last position until the morning of the 24th of September, when a boat was observed coming swiftly down the river, the oarsmen bending themselves to unusual exertions. On this boat was Benedict Arnold, whom a letter, received as he was taking breakfast at West Point, had informed of the failure of the plot and the discovery of his villany, and who had departed with all possible haste. "His guilty soul peopling every turn of the river with

¹ Irving's "Life of Washington," Vol. iii., p. 85

² Washington's order to Colonel Jameson.

avenging pursuit, he sailed through the Highlands, waving his handkerchief as a flag to his forts, redoubts and patrols, astonishing the vigilant Livingston at Verplanck's with the spectacle of his commander making straight for a British sloop-of-war, and draws his first free breath of relief as he steps on board of the 'Vulture.'"¹

Once on board of the ship Arnold offered his men rewards if they would join the British. They refused, and he commanded them to be made prisoners. When the sloop arrived in New York, General Sir Henry Clinton, despising the meanness of this action, set them all at liberty.

On the farm lately occupied by Jacob Strang, three miles east of Peekskill, on Crompond road, lived for a number of years John Paulding, one of the captors of Major Andre. His descendants are numerous in the town of Cortlandt.

inence. Owing to a peculiarity of the Dutch language, his name was corrupted into Paulding, though he himself always wrote it as Pawling.

Some of his descendants remained in Ulster County; one of them removed to Dutchess County, where he settled the township of Pawlings, and Joseph Paulding, another of the family, in 1683, settled in New York City. His household is referred to in the census of 1703 as consisting of one male, one female, four children, one negro slave and one negress.

One of the children of Joseph Paulding was Joseph, born in 1706, who became the lessee of a large tract of land about four miles east of Tarrytown, in Westchester County, upon which he remained until his death, in 1786. He had four sons,—Joseph, William, Peter and John,—all of whom bore a somewhat conspicuous part on the American side in the struggles which took place in the county during the Revolu-



HOUSE NEAR PEEKSKILL WHERE CAPTAIN HOOGLAND HAVING ANDRE IN CHARGE STOPPED.

The Pauldings are descendants of Henry Pawling, an English soldier, who came to America with Colonel Richard Nichols on his expedition against the New Netherlands in 1664. The conquest of this territory having been accomplished without bloodshed, Colonel Nichols took measures to bring the several counties under the English form of government. Henry Pawling was sent to Ulster County, where he became high sheriff. He was at the time a young man, and before long married Heiltje Roosa, daughter of a Dutch farmer. He became the owner of a large tract of fertile land on Esopus Creek, about five miles west of Kingston, and was considered a man of prom-

tion. Joseph, the oldest son, cultivated a farm about a mile to the north of the homestead, and was never in more than moderate circumstances. He was the first supervisor of the town of Greenburgh, elected under the State laws in 1788.

William acquired wealth at a seafaring life, and a short time prior to the Revolution erected and occupied a mansion in Tarrytown. He was one of the first members of the Provincial Congress, and during the war occupied the position of commissary-general of the New York levies. Peter and John, the remaining brothers, resided on the homestead with their father. After the war, and upon the confiscation of the Philipse Manor, the two brothers purchased the fee of the farm. John died a bachelor, and Peter's descendants became owners of the farm.

John Paulding, the subject of this sketch, to whose lot it fell to render such an important service to his

¹ From a history of John Paulding, prepared by his grandson, John Paulding, a son of George Paulding, a lawyer of New York City. The manuscript prepared by Mr. Paulding, from which these extracts are taken, is in the possession of his brother, William H. Paulding, of Peekskill.

country, was born October 16, 1758, in the mansion of his grandfather, near Tarrytown. His father was Joseph, the eldest of the four brothers just referred to. John received a common-school education, and was about eighteen years of age when Westchester County began to suffer from the ravages of war. He grew to be over six feet tall, and was well proportioned. He excelled in feats of strength. He worked on his father's farm until the family were compelled to leave it, and then at different times labored at various places as a farm-hand. It was while working for a farmer, near the village of Somers, named Teed, that he became acquainted and fell in love with Miss Sarah Teed, daughter of his employer, and experienced the truth of the proverb that "the course of true love never did run smoothly," although, in this case, it traversed the rough obstacles in its path, and eventually arrived at a happy destination. He was frequently a member of parties of young men who took part in the border warfare to which the county was subjected.

One of John's earliest adventures was as follows: The house of his father was plundered by a party of ruffians attached to the British cause, and his mother was compelled to submit to a number of indignities. John was not at home at the time, but returning shortly after, and learning of what had happened, he seized his gun, and, although it was broad daylight, hurried towards the camp of the enemy, intent upon revenge. His approach was detected, and a dozen horsemen sprang to their saddles to capture him. He waited to fire his rifle and then ran, and though hotly pursued, managed to escape by running into a swamp.

On one of his visits to his sweetheart, Miss Teed, John was set upon by a number of rangers, among whom was young Teed, brother of Sarah, an ensign in Delancey's cavalry. John ran into a barn, whence he fired on his assailants, without, in turn, receiving any injury. Galled by their wounds, the attacking party desired to kill him, but young Teed dissuaded them from their intention. A parley was held with Paulding, and he surrendered himself a prisoner. He was taken to the Sugar-House, on Liberty Street, New York, and there confined. He managed to escape by scaling the fence around the Sugar-House, and with the connivance of a negress, who gave him the coat of a German yager, he was enabled to pass through the British lines without detection. He wore the same coat a few days later, when he captured Major Andre, and it is thought to have been this fact that caused Andre to suppose him a British soldier, and make the imprudent admission that he himself was a member of the British army.

Notwithstanding his previous unfortunate experience while seeking Miss Teed's company, Paulding at once, after his escape, wended his way back to her vicinity at North Salem. The night after his arrival a party of Cowboys, headed by a Tory named Smith,

made a raid into Poundridge, stole a considerable amount of property and brutally murdered an aged and inoffensive farmer named Pelham. It was to avenge this inroad (according to the statement of David Williams,) that a scouting party of seven young men, among whom were John Paulding, David Williams, and Isaac Van Wart, was organized, who set out the next morning for Tarrytown, in order, if possible, to intercept the marauders. The details of this eventful trip, resulting in the capture of Andre and the frustration of the nefarious scheme for the surrender of West Point to the British, have been given elsewhere.

After the capture of Andre, Paulding returned to his former mode of life, and was again taken prisoner by D. lancey's rangers. He was taken to New York, and confined in the North Dutch Church, on William Street, which was then used as a prison by the British. His condition there was so unusually forlorn as to attract the attention of a British officer, who inquired of the jailor why he was subjected to such treatment. On being informed that the prisoner was one of the captors of Andre, the officer ordered the irons to be removed from him. It is believed that the British officers, in a spirit of admiration over Paulding's patriotism, gave him an opportunity to escape. A few days after the occurrence just noted, while the sentinels were being changed, one of them is said to have motioned quietly to Paulding to pass out, which he promptly did. He made his way to the North River, where he found a boat on which he crossed to the New Jersey side, and soon was safe in the American camp. He was furnished with means by Lafayette, and returned to Westchester County.

Each of the captors of Andre was awarded a silver medal and a pension of two hundred dollars yearly during life. By the State of New York each one was presented with a farm worth five hundred pounds. The farm given to Paulding was located in the town of Cortlandt and consisted of one hundred and sixty-eight acres and sixteen rods of the best land in the town. It had been the property of Peter Huggefurd, M.D., a native of England, and a physician of high reputation, who practiced his profession in Rye as early as 1753, and later removed to this farm. He was probably the first regular physician in the north-western portion of the country. He was a Royalist and his property was confiscated. The farm is the one which was lately occupied by Jacob Strang and now belongs to his son. Paulding resided on the farm for a number of years, and then, having disposed of it, made his residence upon a farm near Lake Mohegan until his death, on February 18, 1818. His remains are interred in the cemetery surrounding St. Peter's Episcopal Church, at Cortlandtville. The ceremonies in connection with the erection of a monument over his grave by the corporation of New York have been noticed in the description elsewhere given of the cemetery.

In politics, in which he took an active interest, Paulding was opposed to the Federalist party. Shortly before his death he said to his physician, Dr. Fountain: "Doctor, please tell all those who seek after me that I die a true Republican." Although he never held any military office, he was familiarly known as major.

Paulding was three times married and was the father of nineteen children. His first wife was the Sarah Teed, in courting whom he so narrowly escaped death. He was married to her April 20, 1781, and on October 25, 1789, she died, aged twenty-two years, six months and eighteen days, having had three children, Nancy, Elizabeth and George Washington. The latter two died young.

By his second wife, Esther Ward, whom he married November 18, 1790, and who died March 6, 1804, Paulding had nine children, and by his third wife seven.

Hiram Paulding, the fourth son of Paulding and his second wife, attained distinction. He entered the navy as midshipman in 1811, was present at the battle of Lake Champlain, under Commodore McDonough, and for his services on that occasion was presented with a sword by Congress. In 1857 the squadron under his command broke up the filibustering expedition of Walker against Nicaragua, though it was charged that he had exceeded his authority in so doing. July, 1862, he was made a rear admiral of the United States navy. From 1862 to 1866 he was in command of the New York Navy Yard. He died in 1878.

By letter of September 26th, Heath was ordered to join Washington, who placed him once more in command of the defenses of the Highlands, a position held by him to the end of the war.¹ From this time until the summer of 1781 he was kept busy by the raids of the enemy and in "grand forages" which he frequently made for stores and provender.

In the summer of 1781 plans were matured by Washington and Rochambeau for concerted action on the part of the American and French armies. During the winter of 1780-81 the American forces had been in various cantonments in New York and New Jersey; the headquarters were at New Windsor. In the latter half of the month of June the troops assembled at Peekskill to the number of five thousand effective men, for the purpose of effecting a junction with Rochambeau's army. On the 26th Washington established his headquarters at the Van Cortlandt house, north of Peekskill, as the following extract from the journal of Claude Blanchard, commissary-general of the French army shows: "I set out [from Crompond] very early on the 26th and reached the American Army. I stopped at Peekskill, a small village. I could hardly find a room in the inn, which was occupied by Mr. Pearson, one of the American

Generals. Peekskill [present village] is situated on the North River, which is very broad; it is almost an arm of the sea, which vessels of war ascend. . . . I went to speak to General Pearson, who gave me an aide-de-camp to conduct me to General Washington, whose headquarters were at a distance of two miles. . . . I passed [on his way north] through another Peekskill [old village],² where the Americans have their magazines and their arsenals. Here are large wooden barracks, built recently, situated between two ranges of mountains. This other Peekskill is on the bank of the river; it is there they are building our ovens."

On his return from Poughkeepsie he reached Peekskill on the 28th. "I passed by General Washington's quarters, but as he had changed them I did not see him and I proceeded directly to the inn at which I had previously dismounted at Peekskill." He speaks of seeing children twelve and thirteen years old in the army. On the 28th General Washington invited him to dine at his quarters [Birdsall house].³ "I repaired thither; there were twenty-five covers used by some of the officers of the army, and a lady to whom the house belonged in which the General lodged. He dined under the tent. I was placed alongside of the General. One of his aides-de-camp did the honors. The table was served in American style and pretty abundantly: vegetables, roast-beef, lamb, chickens, salad dressed with nothing but vinegar, green peas, pudding and some pie, a kind of tart, greatly in use in England and among the Americans, all this being put on the table at the same time. They gave us on the same plate beef, green peas, lamb, etc. At the end of the dinner the cloth was removed and some Madeira wine was brought, which was passed around whilst drinking the health to the King of France, the French army, etc." We find also the following extract worthy of note: "On the 16th [Aug., 1781], having gone to Peekskill to see our magazines and *two churches*⁴ which I was fitting up to serve as hospitals for us in case of need," etc.

July 1st Washington sent Lincoln with eight hundred men to attempt the surprise of Fort George, on Manhattan Island, while Lauzan's legion were to make an attack on De Lancey's corps at Morrisania. At 3 A.M. on the 2nd Washington left Peekskill with the main army. In August the commanders of the allied armies deemed it expedient to change their plans and

² Peekskill originally was at what is now Cortlandtville.

³ In present village. The Birdsall House, Washington's headquarters at Peekskill, has been gone for many years. It stood on the southwest corner of Main and Division Streets, a frame building, erected by Daniel Birdsall shortly after the founding of the present village, in 1764. After his death, which took place October 29, 1800, it was occupied by his son for more than half a century, during which time the interior arrangements of the house remained unchanged. After his death the house was torn down. It was here, in November, 1776, that Charles Lee came after the failure of his brilliant scheme to entrap Rogers, the renegade, and here he had the difficulty with General Heath, told of by the latter in his memoirs.

⁴ St. Peter's and Baptist Churches in the old village.

¹ Heath's "Memoirs."

to endeavor to capture Cornwallis' army in Virginia. The American army, August 19th, began to retrace its steps to King's Ferry by way of Sing Sing and the French to march to the same point *via* North Castle and Crompond. By the 26th both armies were west of the Hudson. Heath, who was to be left in command here, followed the French; was at Crompond on the night of the 22d, and on the following day took up a strong position at Peekskill.¹ September 11th the army moved from its encampment at Peekskill to Bald Hill, while Huntington was sent toward the Sound on account of the descent of Arnold into Connecticut. He went as far as Bedford and returned on the 13th.

August 22, 1782, the American troops began to assemble from points at Verplanck's Point for the proper reception of the French army, then approaching the Hudson River from its winter cantonment in Virginia.²

"29th. An order of encampment and battle for the American army was published. The army was to encamp in one line, with a reserve; the New Jersey and New York troops were to form a division, under command of Major-General St. Clair; the Connecticut troops, a division under Major-General McDougall, these two divisions to form the right wing, under Major-General Gates; the New Hampshire brigade and 1st Brigade of Massachusetts to form a division, under the command of Major-General Lord Stirling; the 2d and 3d Massachusetts Brigades, a division under the command of Major-General Heath; the 2d Connecticut and 3d Massachusetts Brigades to form the reserve; and where the ground would admit, form at two hundred paces in the rear of the army. . . .

"31st. As many of the army as could be carried in the boats, embarked at their respective brigade landings; and the whole of the boats being formed in order, fell down the river to Verplanck's Point, where the troops disembarked and encamped. They made a most beautiful appearance when in the boats and when in motion. The remainder of the army marched down by land.² The army was much better clad than formerly, clothing having been secured from France and captured with Cornwallis' army. On the 14th of September Rochambeau arrived, and was received by the American army, drawn in two lines extending from the ferry to headquarters. He was met by a troop of horse, who conducted him through the double line to Washington's headquarters, where the army passed in review before them. Rochambeau said, in compliment to their improved appearance and discipline, "You have formed an alliance with the King of Prussia. These troops are Prussians."³ By the 18th the entire French army was across the river and in camp south of Peekskill. On the 20th they were reviewed by General Washington, and on the 21st the Ameri-

cans manœuvred in the presence of the French. Rochambeau marched on the 24th with his troops to Crompond, where they remained until October 22d. During the march there was an exchange of civilities between the officers. The old inhabitants of two generations back used to tell of seeing Washington and staff passing back and forth. Cold weather setting in, the American army returned to West Point and New Windsor, October 26th and 27th, where they spent the winter.

THE CIVIL WAR.—The town of Cortlandt lays claim to having provided more color-bearers for the United States service during the Civil War than any other town along the Hudson River. The quotas assigned to it under the various calls for troops were filled promptly. There were, however, numbers of those persons who were opposed to the war in the town, and between them and those of the opposite opinions the feeling was bitter to a degree that was probably not surpassed elsewhere in the country.

The number of men furnished by the town of Cortlandt under the call of the President of the United States, on April 15, 1861, for seventy-five thousand militia, and the act of Congress of July 22, 1861, calling out five hundred thousand men, can only be estimated, as the quota of the State was a little more than filled by eager volunteers, without its being necessary to apportion quotas to each town. The towns, however, did not supply many more or less men than they did in filling their quotas under subsequent calls for nearly the same number of soldiers. A fair estimate, then, of the number of volunteers under these first calls from the town of Cortlandt would be about three hundred men.

Within a few days after the call of the President, on April 15, 1861, for seventy-five thousand volunteers, a number of young men left Peekskill and joined regiments forming in New York City, of which Hawkins' Zouaves was one. On the 27th of April a body of sixteen men, under the leadership of William A. Bleakley, of Verplanck's Point, left for White Plains and joined a company there, which afterwards became Company A of the Twenty-seventh Regiment. This was the first body of men to leave the town of Cortlandt for the war.

The first regularly organized company in the town of Cortlandt was gathered together in Peekskill, and left for New York City May 2, 1861, under command of Benjamin R. Simpkins. It contained sixty-six men. It was attached to the First Regiment of Sickles' brigade (the Seventieth New York Volunteers) and was stationed at Camp Scott, Staten Island. Owing to trouble with the lieutenant-colonel, who was acting colonel of the regiment, and who, it was claimed, in consequence of being in danger of losing his position, was careless about providing food for the soldiers and otherwise abused his office, the men became dissatisfied, and not being at that time mustered in, they came

¹ Campfield or Drum Hill.

² Heath's "Memoirs."

³ Thatcher's "Military Journal."

over to New York and disbanded. Some of them returned to Peekskill, twenty-six entered the Twenty-ninth Regiment, fifteen the regiment commanded by Colonel Beecher, a goodly number entered Hawkins' Zouaves, and others enlisted with Duryea's Zouaves, Anderson's Zouaves and other regiments. Of those who returned to Peekskill, a few afterwards joined Sickles' brigade under other auspices.

April 30, 1861, a meeting of the ladies of the village was held at Simpson's Hall, and a Soldiers' Relief Association was organized. Mrs. Daniel Jones was chosen president, Miss Amelia B. Mills secretary and Miss Sarah Taylor treasurer, and Mrs. John B. Mills, Mrs. Conrad Quin, Mrs. Edward Wells, Mrs. Joseph H. Mason, Miss Amanda Wright and Miss Augusta Taylor were chosen a committee to raise means for carrying out the objects of the Association. Meetings of the Association were held weekly throughout the war, and large supplies of lint, bandages, clothing and other articles were prepared and sent away by them.

May 8, 1861, a company of twenty volunteers, under command of Benjamin B. Finch, a young man residing in Peekskill, left the village for New York. This company became disintegrated in the city, and its members joined various regiments.

During a portion of the year 1861, and early in 1862, James Hart Purdy, of Yorktown, enlisted in Peekskill a number of volunteers for the Fifty-ninth Regiment, and in the early part of 1862, James L. Paulding, of Peekskill, a descendant of John Paulding of Revolutionary fame, and afterwards interested in the Peekskill Plow Works, raised a full company for the same regiment, which became known as Company I.

Under the calls of the President, in 1862, for 600,000 soldiers, half to serve for three years and a half to serve for nine months, the quota of the town of Cortlandt was 311 men. A subscription was started for the purpose of giving a bounty of \$25 to each volunteer. The sum of \$2114.50 was collected, and ninety-four volunteers were obtained. As it was apparent that greater efforts must be put forth in order to secure the rest of the quota, it was resolved, at a meeting of the inhabitants of the town, held August 26, 1862, to tax the town to the extent of \$20,000 to provide a bounty of \$100 to each volunteer enlisting therefrom. Under this arrangement 160 volunteers were received, which, with the 94 previously enlisted and 70 who enlisted away from the town and were credited to it in consequence of being residents, made the total number raised by the town 324. The sum paid out by the town was \$16,795.

Of these volunteers, 159 enlisted in the One Hundred and Thirty-fifth Regiment New York State Volunteers, afterwards the Sixth New York Heavy Artillery; 32 enlisted in Harris' Light Cavalry; 52 in the Nineteenth Militia (afterwards the One Hundred and Sixty-eighth Regiment New York State

Volunteers); 12 in the Excelsior Regiment, Sickles' brigade, and others in the Fifty-third Regiment, the Thirteenth Regiment of New Jersey, Swain's Cavalry, the Ironside Regiment, the New York City Regiment and other regiments.

October 17, 1863, a call was issued by the President for 300,000 men. The quota assigned to the town of Cortlandt was 116 men. The town expended \$14,000 in procuring volunteers, and a committee appointed for the purpose assessed upon individuals drafted such additional sum as they thought each one able to pay, to assist in procuring substitutes. The cost of filling the quota was thus considerably in excess of \$14,000. The bounty paid to each volunteer was \$300.

February 1, 1864, a call for 500,000 men was issued, but the former call for 300,000 men of October 17, 1863, was included in it, and the actual number of new men required was 200,000. The additional quota of the town of Cortlandt was 73 men. The town raised \$35,000, for which it issued its bonds, and paid a bounty of \$300 to each volunteer. The whole amount was consumed.

Another call for two hundred thousand men was made March 14, 1864. The quota of the town of Cortlandt was seventy-two, but as the two former quotas had been too large by twenty-three, the number required to be furnished under this call was only forty-nine. The cost of procuring these forty-nine men was \$24,017, of which \$5600 was paid by persons drafted and obtaining substitutes. The bonds of the town were issued to the extent of \$20,000 to meet the expense of filling the quota. The average bounty to each of the forty-nine men enlisting was \$532.

July 18, 1864, the President called for five hundred thousand men. The quota of the town of Cortlandt was two hundred and nineteen men. The different towns of the county were now no longer able to float their bonds to pay bounties, and the county came to their relief by issuing its bonds for that purpose, and apportioning the proceeds of their sale among the various towns, according to the size of the quotas to be filled by them, and their necessities.

The money thus advanced was to be repaid by the towns. The town of Cortlandt received \$107,800. All of this sum was paid out, and \$15,375 in town bonds were given to bounty brokers. The town procured substitutes for a large number of the persons drafted, and received from assessments upon them \$10,595 to help pay therefor. One hundred and nine persons drafted preferred to receive from the town the average price contributed by it towards furnishing substitutes, and then to obtain their own substitutes at whatever price they were able. The estimated amount expended by them over and above what they received from the town was \$30,175. The sum of \$555 on hand in possession of the town was also expended. The total cost, therefore, of filling this quota was \$164,500.

December 19, 1864, came a call for three hundred thousand more men. An enrollment of the town was made, from which the provost-marshal figured out its quota to be the enormous number of one hundred and ninety men. By dint of great persuasion he was induced to lower the quota to one hundred and thirty-seven men. Finally, as the war appeared to be drawing to a close, it was decided that three-quarters of the quota, or one hundred and two men, would be all that it would be necessary to furnish. Ninety-nine volunteers were obtained with the greatest difficulty, and one Quaker paid commutation, making an equivalent of one hundred volunteers, which was accepted as sufficient. The total cost to the town was \$60,930. As neither the counties nor towns throughout the State had been able to float their bonds, a law had been enacted by which the State assumed the payment of bounties. The State law estimated bounties after a manner of its own, and in accordance with it the town of Cortlandt received the sum of \$68,550, or \$7620 in excess of the amount actually expended.

The number of volunteers from the town of Cortlandt previous to the middle of 1862, as before stated, was about three hundred, and the number of enlistments subsequently eight hundred and eighty, or a total of eleven hundred and eighty, which is, without doubt, very nearly the number of men sent out by the town. As the population of the town in 1860 was only ten thousand and seventy-four, the heaviness of the draft upon it will be apparent.

A report of the supervisor of the town of Cortlandt, made in November, 1864, just previous to the last call for troops, showed the expenses of the town for the war to have been as follows: Bonded indebtedness, including \$107,800 due the county, \$192,776; tax collected in 1862, \$17,000; paid by individuals towards procuring substitutes, \$52,500; expended in relieving families of soldiers, \$5700—total, \$267,976. On the last call the sum expended was \$60,930, making the total expenditure \$328,906. The State gave to the town to pay the expenses of the last call, \$68,550, which being deducted from the previous amount, leaves \$260,356, which was the actual cost of the war to the town.

In the following regiments were companies composed wholly or to a considerable extent of men who enlisted from the town of Cortlandt: The Twenty-seventh Regiment New York State Volunteers, the Ninth New York Volunteers (Hawkins' Zouaves), the Forty-eighth New York Volunteers, the Fifty-ninth New York Volunteers, the Ninety-fifth New York Volunteers, the Sixth New York Heavy Artillery and Harris Light Cavalry. There were numbers of other regiments containing soldiers from the town of Cortlandt in smaller numbers, the names of the chief of which have been mentioned in previous portions of the article.

As has been stated before, the first body of men to

leave the town of Cortlandt for the war departed from Peekskill on the 27th of April, 1861, being sixteen in number, and joined a company at White Plains, which became Company "A" of the Twenty-seventh Regiment. This regiment was organized at Elmira, N. Y., to serve for two years, and it was while it was stationed there that Jeremiah Murden, one of the Peekskill members of Company "A," was brutally murdered. He was the first soldier from the town of Cortlandt who was killed. This event happened June 26, 1861. Murden was one of a company of five sent out to seek deserters from the regiment. He saw one of the men he was looking for in a saloon on Railroad Street, and entering, laid his hand upon him and informed him he was under arrest. A companion of the deserter instantly whipped out a knife and stabbed Murden so savagely in the breast that he died almost immediately. He was only nineteen years of age and bore a good character. His remains were brought to Peekskill and escorted to their last resting-place by the fire companies of the village in procession.

The first captain of the company was Joseph J. Chambers, editor of the *Sing Sing Republican*, whose term of office extended from April 30, 1861, to June 20, 1861, when he was promoted to be lieutenant-colonel. William M. Bleakley, of Verplanck's Point, was then captain until February 8, 1862, and after him came Edwin D. Comstock, of Binghamton, N. Y., who retained the office until the regiment was mustered out, May 21, 1863. The company participated with the regiment in the following battles: Bull Run, Gaines' Mill, Seven Days' Battle, Second Bull Run, South Mountain, Antietam, Fredericksburg and Marye's Heights.

The first persons to join Hawkins' Zouaves from the town of Cortlandt, and very probably the first to leave Peekskill to join any regiment, were George E. Craft and John Hughes, who departed for New York City April 16, 1861. The whole number of persons from the town of Cortlandt who at different times joined this regiment was forty-two, of whom eight were in the band, about twenty-four or twenty-six in Company F and the rest in Companies H and D. Company F was nicknamed "The Skillers," from the number of Peekskillers it contained. William W. Hammell, of New York City, was captain of Company F throughout its whole existence. The company participated with the regiment in the following battles: Newport News, Va., July 5, 1861; Hatteras, N. C., August 28-29, 1861; Roanoke Island, N. C., February 28, 1861; Winton, N. C., February 20, 1862; Camden, N. C., April 19, 1862; Rainbow Banks, N. C., July 9, 1862; Plymouth, N. C., August 30, 1862; South Mountain, Md., September 13, 1862; Sharpsburg, Md., September 17, 1862; and Antietam, Md., September 18, 1862.

A number of Peekskillers (probably not more than fifteen or twenty, but exactly how many cannot be

ascertained) enlisted in the Third Regiment of the Eagle Brigade, which afterwards became consolidated with the Ninety-fifth Regiment. They formed a portion of Company K. The regiment was mustered into service (from November, 1861, to March, 1862) to serve for three years. The first captain of Company K was William F. Bailey, of Carmel, Putnam County, who held the position from February 13, 1862, till September 2, 1862. His successors were Edward W. Andrews (until March 12, 1863), Frank H. Cowdry (until April 20, 1864) and George H. Everett, of Peekskill (who was mustered out at the expiration of his term of service, December 24, 1864). The company was engaged with the regiment in battles at Gainesville, Second Bull Run, South Mountain, Antietam, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Mine Run, Wilderness, Spottsylvania, North Anna, Tolopotomoy, Bethesda Church, Petersburg, Weldon Railroad and Hatcher's Run.

The Fifty-ninth Regiment was enlisted for three years, and was mustered into the service of the United States from July 4 to December 31, 1861. Company I was recruited for this regiment in Peekskill, by James L. Paulding, who became captain. In January, 1862, Company I contained one hundred and one men, who were mostly residents of the town of Cortlandt, except twenty-seven men from Carmel, Putnam County, raised by Adam W. Mattice. James L. Paulding was succeeded as captain by Adam W. Mattice May 2, 1862; James H. Birdsall, October 11, 1862; and Edwin F. Richards, November 19, 1863.

Company F, of the Fifty-ninth Regiment, was raised by James Hart Purdy, of Yorktown, and contained probably no more than twenty residents of the town of Cortlandt. James Hart Purdy was the first captain. He was promoted to be major March 23, 1863, and William D. Paulding, of Peekskill, became his successor. George H. Crawford was then captain from December 20, 1863, until discharged (July 23, 1864) at the expiration of the period of enlistment.

These companies participated with the regiment in the battles at Malvern Hill (second engagement), Second Bull Run, Antietam, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Bristow Station, Mine Run, Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Petersburg, Strawberry Plains, Deep Bottom, Ream's Station and Boydton Plank Road.

Company A, of the Sixth New York Heavy Artillery, contained one hundred and fifty-nine men, enlisted in the town of Cortlandt, when it entered into active service, of whom about one hundred were residents thereof, and recruits were received from the town subsequently.

Absalom A. Crookston, of Peekskill, was captain from August 26, 1862, until promoted to be major, October 22, 1862. He was followed by George W. Smith, of Peekskill, from October 3, 1862, till December 14, 1863; by Samuel Bassett (not mustered as captain) and by Effingham Donaldson, of New York City, from

April 25, 1864, until mustered out with the regiment, August 24, 1865. Of this regiment, J. Howard Kitching, of Peekskill, was for some time colonel, and Edmund R. Travis, of Peekskill, from March 19, 1864, until July 21, 1864, lieutenant-colonel. This was not only the first company raised for this regiment, but also furnished more commissioned officers than any other company in it.

The company participated with the regiment in the following battles: Wapping Heights, Va., July 23, 1863; Laurel Hill (Wilderness), Va., May 6, 1864; Todd's Tavern (Wilderness), Va., May 7, 1864; Po River, Va., May 12, 1864; Salient, Va., May 12, 1864; Harris Farm (Spottsylvania), May 19, 1864; North Anna, Va., May 24, 1864; Bethesda Church, Va., May 30, 1864; Cold Harbor, June 1 to June 3, 1864; Petersburg, Va., June 18 and July 30, 1864; and Cedar Creek, October 19, 1864.

J. Howard Kitching, colonel of the Sixth New York Heavy Artillery, was born in New York City July 16, 1838, but was, for several years before the breaking out of the war, a resident of Peekskill, and enlisted for service therefrom. He was a man of sterling character and fine abilities. Upon the breaking out of the war he entered the Second New York Light Artillery, in which he received a captain's commission. After remaining with this company for several months on garrison duty he became impatient for active service, and joined a battery under command of Captain (afterwards General) Upton, and served in the Peninsular Campaign of the Army of the Potomac. He became seriously ill from exposure and returned home. As soon as his strength was sufficiently recovered he joined the One Hundred and Thirty-fifth Infantry (afterwards the Sixth New York Heavy Artillery) as lieutenant-colonel. Colonel William H. Morris, of the regiment, having been promoted, Lieutenant-Colonel Kitching succeeded, on April 11, 1863, to the position. He was then but twenty-five years of age. His bravery, his capacity and his earnest Christian character made him very much beloved by his soldiers. He was wounded in the foot at the battle of Cedar Creek, Va., October 19, 1864, and died from the effects on the 10th of January, 1865, at Yonkers.

Harris Light Cavalry (Second Regiment New York Volunteers) was mustered into the United States service from August 9, 1861, to October 8, 1861. The original members were mustered out September 10, 1864, but the regiment remained in service till June 5, 1865. Charles and Thomas McCutchen, brothers, and Allen M. Seymour enlisted in this company, in 1861, from Peekskill. In August, 1862, Charles McCutchen, then a sergeant, enlisted thirty-two men at Peekskill for the Harris Light Cavalry, who entered Company F. At subsequent periods during the war some eight or ten more men were obtained from the town. Allen M. Seymour was the first captain of this company, and held the position from August 1, 1861, until February 11, 1863. His successors were

Charles Hasty, of Indiana, who assumed the rank in February, 1863, and Oliver B. Carpenter, of Ulster County, N. Y., who was captain from December 1, 1864, until the regiment was mustered out, June 5, 1865.

The regiment participated in eighty-nine engagements, in almost all of which, but about a dozen at the first, the Peekskillers enlisted in August, 1862, were present. They were for a time under the command of Colonel, (afterwards General) Judson Kilpatrick, and participated with him in his bold raid to Richmond in March, 1864. They were in every battle of importance in which the Army of the Potomac was engaged, until sent, under General Sheridan, in 1864, to the Shenandoah Valley, where they saw very active service. Their last battle was at Clover Hill, Va., near Appomattox Court-House, on April 9, 1865, the day upon which Lee surrendered.

The Nineteenth Regiment of Militia of the State of New York was ordered out for three months from May until August, 1862, and was accompanied by a number of Peekskillers. It was mustered into the service of the United States at Newburgh, from January 23, 1863, to February 11, 1863, as the One Hundred and Sixty-eighth Regiment New York Volunteers, to take the field for nine months. The first company for this regiment was raised in the town of Cortlandt, and contained sixty-six members, sixty-three of whom were residents of the town. It became Company "A." Its officers were as follows: Captain, Bennett Gilbert; First Lieutenant, James H. Searles; Second Lieutenant, Andrew J. Gilbert; Sergeants—Orderly, Wright Gilbert; Second, Robert S. Hancock; Third, Anson L. Gilbert; Fourth, James Sparks, John Q. A. Hubbell, Charles W. Coleman and John Pentreath. The regiment was attached to the Army of the Potomac. The company participated in but one engagement, which took place at Walkerton, Va., June 5, 1863, and resulted in the capture of Elias G. McChain and Pierre L. Paulding, who were subsequently exchanged. The regiment was then ordered to reinforce General Rosecrans in the West, and arrived at Bridgeport, Ala., within a few days of the battle of Chattanooga, in which they did not participate. Their time of enlistment having expired a few days later, they returned home.

Company "A" lay in Newburgh about three months before it was mustered into service, and some of the soldiers, under the impression that this three months should be counted into their term of service of nine months, deserted the regiment three months before it was mustered out. Being arrested as deserters, they proved they had left the regiment with the knowledge and approval of the captain, who was punished for his error by imprisonment.

On the 3d of July, 1864, the Eighteenth Regiment of Militia were ordered out for thirty days, to aid in resisting Lee's advance into Pennsylvania. Company "F" of this regiment was raised in Peekskill, and

consisted of those members of the Jefferson Guards and Bleakley Rifles who had not already gone to the war. James Ryder, who lived near Croton Falls, was colonel, but John H. Hyatt, of Peekskill, the lieutenant-colonel, was actually in command. The company were not in any battle, but spent most of their time in garrison duty at Fort Marshall, at Baltimore, Md. They were mustered out at Yonkers August 17, 1863, having been in service forty-five days.

THE NAVAL SERVICE.—John McLuckey, Austin Fink, Pierre L. Paulding, Cornelius Bodine, Henry Helliker, Francis Smith and Robert S. Hancock, residents of the town of Cortlandt, enlisted for the naval service August 12, 1864, and were placed on the "Isomnia," under command of Captain Edward Simpson, afterwards rear admiral. He was succeeded by a volunteer captain. This vessel was not in any engagement, but was chiefly employed in chasing blockade-runners.

In August, 1864, thirty-two men from Peekskill, mostly soldiers who had served out their time in the army, enlisted for the navy. After remaining for some time in the receiving-ship "Vermont" at New York, they were taken to Hampton Roads, Va., and distributed among various vessels, the "Santiago de Cuba" receiving six, and the "Red Rover," the "Wabash," and other vessels receiving the remainder.

In the same year twenty-one men from the town of Cortlandt, among whom were William Cables, Charles Wessels, John Hancock, Henry S. Free and William Gardineer, entered the naval service on board the United States steamer "Vanderbilt." The men were not discharged from service until about the middle of 1865. This vessel was in the battles at Fort Fisher, N. C., but was chiefly employed in chasing blockade-runners.

The following names of soldiers who were killed or died in the service of the United States are taken from the roll of honor in possession of the Grand Army of the Republic Post in Peekskill.

Second New York Volunteers, Heavy Light Cavalry

Company F, Sergeant Thomas McCutchen, killed in action at Culpeper, Va., in 1863.

Company F, private George Archer, died in hospital, Virginia.

Company F, private Delancey Cole, died in rebel prison, Boll Island, Va.

Company F, private William Humes, killed in action at Brandy Station, Va.

Seeth Regiment New York Volunteers Heavy Artillery

Colonel J. Howard Kitching, wounded at the battle of Cedar Creek and died in the service.

Company A, First Lieutenant Richard Montgomery Gillet, died in the service while home on a sick leave.

Company A, Sergeant William H. Lent, wounded in front of Petersburg and died next day.

Company A, private P. Corne Cruger, wounded at Cedar Creek and died at Winchester, Va.

Company A, private David A. Lent, wounded at Cedar Creek and died in hospital.

Company A, Corporal Henry M. Gillett, killed in action at Cedar Creek, October 13, 1864.

Company A, Corporal Theodore Garrison, died in hospital at Foxe's Ford, Va.

Company A, private William Fitzgerald, killed in action at Cedar Creek, Va.

Company A, private James Moriarity, killed in front of Petersburg, Va.

Company A, private Frederick Young, killed in action at Spottsylvania, May 19, 1864.

Company A, private John Conklin, died in hospital at Baltimore, Md.

Company A, private Alexander Soper, killed in action in front of Petersburg, June 18, 1864.

Company A, private John Terbush, died at home, on furlough, from disease contracted in the army.

Company A, private John Dobson, died in rebel prison, Salisbury, N. C.

Company A, private William B. Dyckman, died in rebel prison, Salisbury, N. C.

Company A, private, Peter Munsh, died in rebel prison, Salisbury, N. C.

Company A, Abram A. Wood, killed in battle at Spottsylvania, Va.

Company A, Barney Kelley, killed at Bethesda Church.

Company B, private Frank Bleakley, died in hospital, Harper's Ferry, Va., 1863.

Company C, private James Christian, killed in front of Petersburg, Va.

Company C, private Charles Conklin, killed at Po River, May 12, 1864.

Company D, private John Henry Lent, died at Point-of-Rocks, Md.

Company F, private Abram Lent, died in hospital at Harper's Ferry, Va.

Company F, private George Bradley, killed at Petersburg, June 19, 1864.

Company F, private Jarvis Lent, died since returning home.

Company F, Thomas M. Lounsbury, died at home, November 9, 1871.

Company F, Nehemiah Oakley, killed in action.

Company G, private James Williamson, killed in action at Bethesda Church.

Company H, private Washington Van Scoy, killed in action at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.

Company I, private John Foley, killed in action at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.

Ninth Regiment New York Volunteers, Hawkins' Zouaves.

Company F, Color-Sergeant William Patterson, killed in action with his colors in his hands at the battle of Antietam, Md., September 17, 1862.

Company F, private William Van Houten, died at Hatteras.

Company F, private Rosler Garrison, died at Plymouth, N. C.

Company F, private John Bennett, died at Newport News, in hospital.

Company F, private George W. Wilcox, died since returning home, from effects of wounds received at battle of South Mills, N. C.

Nineteenth Regiment New York Volunteers.

Company E, private George Dyckman, died at home, November 3, 1863.

James Free, died in the service.

Jefferson Lent, died in the service.

Scott's Rifles, Sickles' Brigade.

Private Herman Dunning, died in hospital.

Company A, private Edwin Williams, died at Fairfax Court-House, Va.

Twenty-second Regiment New York Volunteers.

Private Samuel Casells, died in hospital.

Twenty-seventh Regiment New York Volunteers.

Company A, private Thomas Hawkins, killed at Fort Lyon, Va.

Company A, private Charles Gardner, died in hospital.

Company A, Jeremiah Murden, murdered at Elmira, N. Y., in June, 1861, while attempting to arrest a deserter.

Sickles' Brigade.

Company A, private Anthony Gardner, died in hospital.

Forty-fourth Regiment New York Volunteers, Ellsworth Avengers.

Company A, private Thomas Wildey, killed in action at Hanover Court-House, Va.

Forty-eighth Regiment New York Volunteers.

Captain Lewis Lent, killed in action

Fifty-first Regiment New York Volunteers.

Company H, Color-Sergeant George W. Fisher, killed at Petersburg, Va., July 29, 1864.

Company H, private James D. Odell, killed at Roanoke Island.

Fifty-ninth Regiment New York Volunteers.

Company D, private George Austin, died in Salisbury Prison, N. C.

Company I, private Edgar Sutton, killed in action at Antietam, Md.

Company I, private Pierre Miller, killed in action at Antietam, Md.

Company I, private John Fitch, died in Andersonville Prison.

Company I, private George Fowler, died in hospital after being paroled at Annapolis, Md.

Company I, Benjamin Gaudineer, died in Andersonville Prison.

Seventieth Regiment New York Volunteers.

Company D, private Joseph Davenport, died May 30, 1863, from wounds received in action.

Company I, private James Cummings, died in hospital at Fortress Monroe, Va.

Ninety-first Regiment New York Volunteers.

William Stoker, died in hospital.

Ninety-fifth Regiment New York Volunteers.

Lieutenant Edwin B. Lent, died since returning home from effect of wounds,

Private Lewis Latham, killed in front of Petersburg, Va.

Thirty-eighth Regiment.

Company, Charles A. Turner, wounded at the battle of Fredericksburg; taken prisoner, and died at home October 12, 1863.

Thirty-ninth Regiment.

Company, Calvin W. Lounsbury, taken prisoner in Virginia and never returned.

One Hundred and Forty-fourth Regiment New York Volunteers.

Sergeant David F. Ferris, killed at the battle of Fair Oaks, Va.

One Hundred and Thirty-third Regiment New York Volunteers.

Company C, private Henry R. Forman, died in the service at Baton Rouge, La.

One Hundred and Sixty-eighth Regiment New York Volunteers.

Company E, George Tice, died in hospital at Yorktown, Va., March, 1863.

Company E, private Jesse Seymour, died at hospital in Washington, D. C., July, 1863.

Company E, corporal Isaac Broadie, died in service.

Sailors.

Benjamin Finch, died in hospital.

Colored Infantry.

Joseph Henry Hals'ead, private Company B, Thirtieth New York Infantry, killed in action at Deep Bottom, Va.

John W. Knapp, private Company B, Twenty-ninth Connecticut Volunteers, died in the service.

Missing.

Martin Dyckman, missing in action.

David Dyckman, missing in action.

Robert Gobey, missing in action.

Miscellaneous.

John P. Romer, private Company —, Connecticut Volunteers, wounded in battle and died in Lincoln Hospital, Washington, D. C.

John Williams, private Company F, Eighty-first New York Volunteers, died in hospital from wounds received at the battle of Gettysburg.

John Bodine, Company F, Seventeenth New York Volunteers, died since returning home.

Henry Hamilton, private Company D, One Hundred and Thirty-second New York Volunteers, taken prisoner at Bachelor's Creek, N. C., and died at Andersonville Prison.

Private Jefferson Head, died in service.

Private Benjamin Van Tassel, died in service.

Private George Lent, killed in action.

Private Patrick O'Neill, killed in action.

Private Leander Dusenbury, killed in action.

Private Bartlett G. Pollard, died in service.

Private John Valentine, killed in action.

Private Joseph Conklin, killed in action.
 Private John Boice, killed in action.
 Private James Cummings, died in service.

ANTHONY'S NOSE.—Located in the extreme north-western corner of the town is the promontory known as Anthony's Nose, which is over one thousand feet high, and is the most elevated point in Westchester County. Its name was given to it before the Revolution, doubtless from its fancied resemblance to a human nose, and in honor of St. Anthony. In Revolutionary times a boom and chain was extended across the Hudson River from the Nose to Fort Montgomery, by the Americans, with the design of preventing the passage of British ships up the river. The manufacture and placing in position of this chain cost seventy thousand pounds sterling, and are said to have exhausted the Continental treasury. Absolutely no benefit was derived from it. Twice it broke from its own weight, and, at the time of the capture of Forts Clinton and Montgomery, by the British, in October, 1777, it broke like a pipe-stem when struck by the foremost vessel of the English fleet. Two redoubts were erected on the summit of the mountain, at a short distance from each other, to assist in preventing the passage up the river of the enemy's vessels. A tunnel has been constructed through the base of the mountain by the Hudson River Railroad.

A hum-drum reason for the name of Anthony's Nose has been given above. According to the veracious historian, Diedrich Knickerbocker, however, the name was given in memory of a very startling and wonderful occurrence. The story, given in his own inimitable style, is as follows:

"And now I am going to tell a fact, which I doubt much my readers will hesitate to believe; but if they do, they are welcome not to believe a word in this whole history, for nothing which it contains is more true. It must be known then that the nose of Antony the Trumpeter was of a very lusty size, strutting boldly from his countenance like a mountain of Golconda; being sumptuously bedecked with rubies and other precious stones,—the true regalia of a king of good fellows, which jolly Bacchus grants to all who bouse it heartily at the flagon. Now thus it happened, that bright and early in the morning, the good Antony, having washed his burly visage, was leaning over the quarter railing of the galley, contemplating it in the glassy wave below. Just at this moment the illustrious sun, breaking in all its splendor from behind a high bluff of the Highlands, did dart one of his most potent beams full upon the refulgent nose of the sounder of brass—the reflection of which shot straight-way down, hissing-hot, into the water, and killed a mighty sturgeon that was sporting beside the vessel. This huge monster, being with infinite labor hoisted on board, furnished a luxurious repast to all the crew, being accounted of excellent flavor, excepting about the wound, where it smacked a little of brimstone;

and this, on my veracity, was the first time that ever sturgeon was eaten in these parts by Christian people.

"When this astonishing miracle came to be known to Peter Stuyvesant, and that he tasted of the unknown fish, he, as may well be supposed, marveled exceedingly; and as a monument thereof, he gave the name of *Anthony's Nose* to a stout promontory in the neighborhood; and it has continued to be called Anthony's Nose ever since that time."

ROA HOOK.—On the opposite side of Annsville Creek at the point known as Roa or Roay and formerly Roya Hook, stood the old Revolutionary Fort Independence. In 1846 and for about three years subsequently some of the larger boats used to stop at this point. A large hotel had been built there about the same time by Pierre Van Cortlandt, known as the Fort Independence Hotel, and access to the village was furnished by a wooden bridge across the mouth of the creek, fourteen hundred and ninety-six feet long. The bridge has long since rotted and been carried away.

The hotel and the old fort have both disappeared, owing to the taking away of a great portion of the valuable gravel of which the hook is composed. The gravel is of a superior quality, and has been used for a top dressing for the walks in Central Park, New York, and has been taken to other places.

THE STATE MILITARY CAMP.—In the spring of 1882 a committee of officers of the National Guards of the State of New York were sent out by Governor Alonzo B. Cornell to select a site for a State military encampment, in pursuance of a plan adopted by Adjutant-General Frederick Townsend. After several sites along the Hudson River had been inspected, the plateau on the northern side of the mouth of Annsville Creek was brought to the notice of the committee, mainly through the efforts of James T. Sutton, and was decided upon as the locality best suited for the camp. The land thus chosen consisted of ninety-seven acres belonging to the estate of John McCoy. It was leased for one year, with the privilege of renewing for two and of purchasing at the end of that time for thirteen thousand dollars. Improvements were then made at very considerable expense. The Twenty-third Regiment was the first to encamp on the property, which it did from July 1 to 8, 1882. The camp was found to work well, and having been repeated for a couple of years with like success, the purchase of the property has been made to the terms of the lease. A tract of land adjoining was rented in 1882, to be used as a rifle range, and its acquisition has also been recommended.

The camp-grounds are elevated about one hundred feet above the river and afford a view to the south which has been declared by Adjutant-General Townsend to be hardly surpassed by any on the Hudson. A neighboring brook has been dammed to make a reservoir, and the water distributed over the

grounds in pipes. Arrangements have also been made on a large scale for cooking the victuals for the troops. Other improvements have been added at various times, until the camp is well provided with conveniences.

CORTLANDTVILLE.—About two miles north of Peekskill is located a hamlet containing about one hundred inhabitants, known indifferently as Cortlandtville or Van Cortlandtville. This was the original Peekskill. Within it are located the old and historic Episcopal Church and burying-ground, the Cortlandt Cemetery, the house formerly owned by the Van Cortlandts, a school and a Methodist Church. On the corner of the old Post road and the road leading past the Episcopal Church is a small frame house, now the property of Gardner Hollman, which in Revolutionary times was an inn where the New York and Albany stages halted. In this house is still shown a room in which Major Andre, then a prisoner on his way to West Point, stopped for a short time. The room at that time contained a bar. Andre was offered some refreshment, but refused it. He walked back and forth, and was observed to shed tears.

GALLOWS HILL.—In the northern part of Cortlandtown is Gallows Hill, so named from the execution there of Edmund Palmer by General Israel Putnam, on the 17th of August, 1777. Palmer was a Tory of Yorktown, where he had a wife and family, and was well connected. He was captured, as the story is still told in Yorktown, by a party of his neighbors, who were attached to the American cause, headed by Captain Henry Strang. He was charged with robbery and plundering the inhabitants, frightening the women and children and also with being a spy.¹ He was tried by a court-martial and sentenced to be hung.

The British general was anxious to secure the safety of Palmer, and sent a note to Putnam demanding the release of the prisoner, and threatening reprisal in case of refusal. Putnam returned the following laconic reply.

“HEADQUARTERS, 7th August 1777.

“**SIR:** Edmund Palmer, an officer in the enemies service, was taken as a spy lurking within the American lines. He has been tried as a spy, condemned as a spy, and shall be executed as a spy; and the flag is ordered to depart immediately.

“**ISRAEL PUTNAM.**

“**P. S.** He has been accordingly executed.”

The tree which was called into service in carrying out the sentence against Palmer stood for a long time afterwards, but eventually rotted away. It is said Palmer met his fate with great fortitude, in the presence of a large number of people who had assembled from far and near to witness the spectacle.

To the region of the hill the American forces retreated when Peekskill was sacked and burnt by the British, our advanced guard being stationed at the

Van Cortlandt house, in the valley below. This old mansion, in which General Pierre Van Cortlandt resided until his death, stands back at a little distance from the road, on the west side, among tall locusts. The house, which has been greatly altered in appearance of late years, is of brick, and was built by the Hon. Pierre Van Cortlandt in 1773. This gentleman was, at the outbreak of the Revolution, the principal representative of this old and very distinguished family. President of the Committee of Safety, member of the First Congress, and one of the framers of the Constitution of the State of York, he, from the commencement of the troubles, was foremost among those who sought to throw off the British yoke. In 1774 Governor Tryon visited him at his old manor-house on the banks of the Croton, and made him large offers from the government to abandon the American cause; but the proposition was rejected by Mr. Van Cortlandt, although Lord Gage was his cousin, and he was beset on all sides by the solicitations of Tory relatives. His eldest son, Philip, accepted a commission in the Continental army in June, 1775, and the family, in consequence, became at once marked objects of persecution by the crown. Their broad lands were laid waste, and they themselves were forced to fly from their ancient abode, in which they had dwelt peacefully since the days of William of Orange, from whom they derived their charter of manorial rule. Through all the long, dark years of the conflict they remained true, although, unlike many of the actors in the strife, they had nothing personally to gain by its success, while its failure would have been their utter ruin. This mansion served as a place of refuge for the family amid the surrounding devastation, and here for a while Washington dwelt with them.

The house was occasionally subject to attack. In the spring of 1777 the British posted themselves on a height a little south of the place; but they were quickly dislodged, and departed, leaving three of their dead on the field.

At another time a band of Tories, under Colonel Fanning, came to the house. “We are looking for the old rebel,” said one of them to Mrs. Beekman. “I am Pierre Van Cortlandt’s daughter,” answered she, “and it becomes not such as you to call my father a rebel.” She bade them begone.

The Honorable Pierre Van Cortlandt died in May, 1814, at the age of ninety-four. From him the house passed into the possession of his son, Major-General Pierre Van Cortlandt, who, as has already been said, resided in it till his death, in 1848, after which it was sold.

In the entrance hall of the manor-house at Croton now hang three curious full-length portraits, which were formerly in the Peekskill mansion. The pictures represent Pierre (afterwards the Lieutenant-Governor) and his brothers, John and Abraham, as children, habited in the costume of the early part of the last

¹ Journal of the Provincial Committee of Safety.

century. John (who died in 1747) is dressed in a long blue coat, knee breeches, scarlet stockings and high-heeled shoes; Abraham, in a russet brown coat and red stockings; and Pierre himself, in a scarlet coat and white stockings, with a greyhound by his side, and his right hand resting on a stag. The horns of this animal, one of those that once ran wild in Westchester County, hang beside the picture.

The grounds surrounding are handsomely laid out. In a field to the northeast of the house stands a large, finely-formed oak tree, which is said to have been used as a military whipping-post during Revolutionary times.

A few rods above the Van Cortlandt mansion the road splits into two branches, that to the left going over Gallows Hill and the one to the right passing the old church. At the junction of these roads stands the Hallman house, a very old wooden building, once occupied as a tavern, the period of whose erection must long antedate the Revolution. Some little interest is attached to this house. At midnight on the 25th of September, 1780, a wild storm of wind and rain sweeping down through the Highland passes, Major Andre was brought from his place of confinement at South Salem, and, galloping fast through the night, the party having him in charge arrived here early in the morning, where they halted for a while before proceeding to West Point.

Hard by, on the summit of a knoll overlooking the road, stands the little Episcopal Church of St. Peter's, a mere barn-like structure of wood, erected in 1767, and now, in spite of repairs, fast going to decay. The centenary anniversary of the building of this church was celebrated on the 9th of August, 1867. From a little pamphlet published on the occasion, containing extracts from the parish register, it appears that the Revolution makes a gap in the records of the church, the last vestry meeting prior to that event being held September 18, 1775, and the next on April 5, 1790, nearly eight years after the close of the war.

This silence of the records during that long period tells, more forcibly than any entries in them could have told, of the troubles of those gloomy times. The sufferings of the poor inhabitants of the country around, the almost utter disorganization that society itself had fallen into, left little time to attend to the affairs of the church. Beverly Robinson endowed the united parishes of St. Philip's in the Highlands and St. Peter's in the Manor of Cortlandt with a farm of two hundred acres. This property was afterwards sold under an order of the Court of Chancery, and divided equally between the two churches. The large Bible belonging to the church bears an inscription on a fly-leaf, stating that it was the gift of Susannah Philipse, wife of Beverly Robinson.

In the western part of the church-yard stands the monument marking the grave of John Paulding, the captor of Major Andre, which is mentioned further on.

The landscape of this quiet and secluded valley has undergone but little change since the Revolutionary days. Standing at twilight in the old church-yard, and looking across at the purple hills, it requires but little exertion of fancy to imagine them covered, as they once were, with gleaming rows of Continental tents. The ploughman on their slopes still occasionally turns up some warlike relic, some mute yet eloquent memorial of the days that are gone, reminding us, too, of what was the favorite project of the British government throughout the Revolution, namely, the possession of the Highlands, as the master-key by which they could control the navigation of the Hudson.¹

CHURCHES IN CORTLANDT TOWN.

THE REFORMED CHURCH.—Previous to the establishment of a church of their own, the early Dutch settlers of Verplanck's Point and vicinity seem to have worshipped with the congregation of the Reformed Dutch Church at Philipsburg, or Sleepy Hollow. According to an entry upon the second church book at Sleepy Hollow, it appears that the inhabitants of the Manor of Mr. Cortlandt were "holden to pay and to deliver a legal fourth part yearly, for divine service in the church here at Philipsburgh," the people of Philipsburgh paying the other three-fourths. A list of communicants made shortly after, under the date of April 21, 1717, is as follows: "A continuation of the persons, members, living in the manor of Cortlandt and patent of Captain Dekay and Ryck Abrahamson; first, Sybout Herriksen Krankheyt and Geertje his wife, Jan Corne Van Texel and Annetj his wife, Francoy de Paw, Mathys Brower and Marretye his wife, Nathan Beesly and Esther his wife, Catharine Van Texel, wife of Hendrick Lent and Cornelia his wife, William Van Texel and Irynje his wife, Annetje Sybout, wife of Jan Beesly, Maria de Paw, wife of Abram Lent, Aeltje Brower, wife of Jeurisen Wall, Theunis Kranckhyt and Sophye his wife, William Teller and Marietje his wife, Jeremy Genuyss and Annetje his wife, Marietje Blauvelt, wife of Ryck Lent, and Elizabeth, the wife of Cornelis Michgrelzen."

The original Reformed Dutch Church of Cortlandt-town was located on Montrose Point, on the land which at present belongs to Frederick W. Seward. It was erected about the year 1729 or 1730. The first baptism recorded in the church register is that of Teunis, the son of Hendrick Brouwer and Jannetje Crankheit, which is entered under date of June 3, 1729. Surrounding the church was a farm of one hundred and seventy-two acres, which was held by the consistory of the church simply by permission or lease from James Van Cortlandt, great-grandson of De Herr Stephanus Van Cortlandt, but which, after a long period of peaceable possession, the church

¹Charles A. Campbell, in "Magazine of American History" for May, 1882.

came to own according to the law of limitation. In 1835 or 1836 an order was issued by the Court of Chancery giving the consistory the right to sell this tract of land, and it was subsequently disposed of to Stephen Lent for two thousand seven hundred and fifty dollars. Through him it came into the possession of various owners.

In 1792 a Rev. Mr. Jackson, who had been sent out by the New York Classis to visit the church at Cortlandtown and report on its condition, stated that he had found that the congregation had lost their church, were diminished in numbers and were greatly scattered. The church was destroyed by fire about the time of Mr. Jackson's visit, and it is probable that it is to that event he refers in speaking of the loss of the church. To Mr. Jackson, is due the credit of having done much towards re-establishing the congregation.

On the 31st of March, 1795, James Cockroft, of the city of New York, presented the elders and deacons of the Reformed Dutch Church of the town of Cortlandt with a warranty deed for one acre and a half of land on which to erect a new church building. The present church, a neat frame edifice, was put up on this piece of ground some time between the years 1795 and 1799. The deed was signed only by James Cockroft. His widow, Lydia Cockroft, who afterwards married Charles White, gave a quit-claim deed to the property December 26, 1799, in order that no claim of dower might arise thereafter. The elders and deacons of the church mentioned in this instrument were Hercules Lent, Peter Goetchius, Abraham Lent, Martin Post, Richard Schiggel, Samuel Vessels, John H. Lent and Abraham Montross.

Stephanus Hunt, a son of Josiah Hunt, of Flushing, Long Island, became possessor of seven hundred acres of land surrounding the church by purchase from Mrs. White. He was long a prominent member. His son Elias conveyed to the church sixteen acres, inclusive of the one and a half acres already possessed, which they own at present. A cemetery was established in this ground.

The congregation had various pastors to supply them until, in April, 1800, the Rev. William Manly was installed. The succession of pastors since that time have been as follows :

Installed.	Vacated by
April, 1800.—Rev. Wm. Manly	Death.
March 27, 1810.—Rev. Abraham Hoffman	Resig'n.
October 21, 1831.—Robert Kirkwood	"
October 3, 1836.—Rev. Cornelius Westbrook	"
September, 1850.—Rev. Samuel Lockwood	"
August, 1853.—Rev. John B. Steele	"
August, 1859.—Rev. John St. John	"
August, 1867.—Rev. Polhemus Van Wyck	"
August, 1870.—Rev. John C. Garretson	"
August, 1874.—Rev. John B. Thompson	"
May 25, 1875.—Rev. Joseph Alexander Harper	present pastor.

In 1831 the Congregational Church at Peekskill became united to the Reformed Church of Cortlandt—
ii.—35

town, and so continued until 1850, when it became a separate congregation.

A mission was begun at Verplanck's Point by the Rev. John A. Harper in 1876, and for two years services were held in the old school building on the corner of Sixth Street and Broadway. In the year 1878 a little frame building was erected at a cost of two thousand five hundred dollars, which is used at present. In 1883, the last dollar of indebtedness upon it having been paid, it was dedicated. It is known as "The Free Reformed Church at Verplanck's."

In 1884 the number of families in both congregation was eighty, and the number of communicants eighty-five. There were two Sabbath-schools, with a total membership of one hundred and twenty-five.

ST. PETER'S EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—The first knowledge possessed of the endeavor to propagate the Episcopal faith in the town of Cortlandt is derived from the report of the English Society, known as "The Venerable Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts." From them it is learned that as early as 1744 the Rev. James Wetmore, of Rye, conducted divine service according to the Episcopal form in the old village of Peekskill. In 1746 Mr. Wetmore wrote that, "as there are great numbers of people in the wilderness northward of Bedford and Westchester who have very little knowledge or sense of religion, Mr. Lamson's labors will be employed to good purpose among them." (Who Mr. Lamson was is not clear.) Mr. Dibble, of Stamford, Conn., officiated in 1761, probably at some private house. He says in a letter, which has been preserved, that he found "no settled teacher of any denomination here, but met several heads of families professors of the Church of England, and many others well disposed toward it."

In 1750, Andrew Johnson, a resident of Perth Amboy, N. J., son-in-law of Stephanus Van Cortlandt, for the sum of five pounds, conveyed to Caleb Hall, Joseph Travis and Pelatiah Hawes six acres of land lying at a place called Peekskill, on the north side of the Crompond road, to be used as a site for a school-house, burying-ground, and a meeting-house or meeting-houses for the religious (under the protection of His Majesty) such as the adherents of the Church of England, the Presbyterians, Independents, Baptists, or Congregationalists, etc., but for no other purpose. Sixteen years afterwards, in 1766, a church was begun, and on the 9th of August, 1767, it was opened and consecrated by the Rev. John Ogilvie, D.D., of New York. Dr. Ogilvie gave the church the name of "St. Peter's Church." This was the same building which is standing at present.

The congregation of St. Peter's Church, fearing that the expense of the erection and maintenance of a house of worship would be too great for them to bear, had "entered into an agreement with the people in the lower end of Philipse's upper patent, in the

county of Dutchess, to join in the building of St. Peter's Church, and in the subscription for the support of a minister." St. Peter's Church in return, when it should obtain a missionary, was to have him settled for both places, so as to make one congregation of the whole, and the minister was to preach every other Sunday in the house of John Mandeville, in Philipse's patent, about eight miles distant. On the 18th of August, 1770, the people of both places were incorporated as one body by Lieutenant-Governor Cadwallader Colden, of the province of New York, and confirmed in possession of the church, the ground whereon the same was built, and the cemetery belonging to the same. Beverly Robinson and Charles Moore were constituted wardens of the church and Jeremiah Drake, Caleb Ward, John Johnson, Joshua Nelson, Thomas Davenport and Henry Davenport, vestrymen.

John Doty, a son of Joseph Doty, of New York, and a graduate of King's now (Columbia) College, performed divine service as a lay-reader in the church during the summer of 1770, he being then a student for the ministry. His services were so acceptable that it was resolved to call him to the position of pastor as soon as he should be authorized to perform the office of minister. In 1771, this requirement having been fulfilled, he was made rector. In the same year a special charter was granted by Governor Tryon, in virtue of which the church was enabled to hold a glebe of about two hundred acres, presented by Beverly Robinson. This glebe was bounded on the south by the line between Westchester and Putnam (then Dutchess) Counties, and on the other sides by irregular lines. The legal title to this property, however, remained in the hands of Beverly Robinson, and it was confiscated with his other lands on account of his adherence to the British cause during the Revolution. The two churches presented a memorial to the Legislature reciting that Beverly Robinson had set apart this property to be their glebe prior to the Revolution, and praying that it might be restored to them. The Legislature thereupon passed an act vesting the title in the churches.

In 1773, Mr. Doty resigned, after a pastorate of about two years, and went to Schenectady, N. Y., his conduct in doing so calling from the Venerable Society a reprimand as showing ingratitude. His career in Schenectady was brief and troublous, and in the fall of 1777 he thought it best to obtain liberty to go to Canada. He became chaplain to His Majesty's Royal Regiment in New York, and on the conclusion of the Revolution went to England. He returned to America in 1784 and was until 1791 engaged in missionary work in Canada and received the commendation of the Venerable Society. After a brief incumbency as rector of St. Anne's Church in Brooklyn, and subsequent missionary work in Canada, he finally, in 1803, resigned his mission, and severed his connection with the society.

His successor was the Rev. Bennet (Bolton thinks it should be Bernard) Page, who left in a very short time, owing probably to the outbreak of the Revolutionary War. From September 18, 1775, until April 5, 1790, there were no meetings of the vestrymen, and it is probable the church was closed most of the time. General Washington is said to have worshipped there while conducting military operations in the vicinity. April 26, 1791, the church was incorporated for the first time after the Revolution as "The Corporation of St. Peter's Church, Peekskill, and St. Philip's Chapel in the Highlands." August 7, 1792, the Rev. Andrew Fowler became pastor, and from that time forward the pulpit was generally kept filled. There was a break, however, from 1798 to 1806, and another from 1829 to 1832. For a few years subsequent to 1809 the Episcopal Church at Fishkill was under the same rector as St. Peter's and St. Philip's Churches.

About 1788 it is recorded that the Presbyterians tried to obtain possession of the church and glebe by force. "They called the church by a new name, 'Union Church,' and in order to carry out their scheme they chose half of the trustees, as they said, out of the church. The truth was, they had once professed themselves Episcopalians, but most of them have since proved rank Dissenters." So wrote the Rev. Andrew Fowler in 1792. The attempt was unsuccessful.

In 1838 the Rev. Edward C. Bull is said to have officiated at St. Philip's Church, and in April of the same year the Rev. William C. Cooley became rector of St. Peter's. The two churches were not formally separated until April 18, 1840, when an act of the Legislature was passed for that purpose.

October 20, 1838, the glebe was sold to David McCoy for the sum of five thousand dollars, which was equally divided between the two churches. With the sum thus realized, and a donation of one thousand dollars from Trinity Church, New York, St. Peter's Chapel, on Division Street, Peekskill, was built in the same year. The Rev. Dr. Cooley, after the opening of the chapel, conducted most of the services there. Meetings continued to be held in the old building at gradually increasing intervals, and finally were abandoned altogether.

The successive pastors from the time of the Rev. John Doty to the establishment of the chapel in Peekskill have been as follows:

<i>Installed.</i>	<i>Rectors.</i>
July 16, 1771.....	Rev. John Doty.
September 18, 1775.....	Rev. Bernard Page.
August 7, 1792.....	Rev. Andrew Fowler.
December 15, 1794.....	Rev. Samuel Haskell.
April 7, 1806.....	Rev. Joseph Warren.
April 17, 1811.....	Rev. John Urquhart.
June 11, 1817.....	Rev. Petrus S. Ten Broeck.
May 29, 1826.....	Rev. Edward J. Ives.
December, 1832.....	Rev. James Sunderland.
April, 1838.....	Rev. William C. Cooley.

The old church, an unpainted and weather-beaten frame structure with two large doors on the southern

side, forming the entrance, still exists in a good state of preservation. It is surrounded by a cemetery, which is full of graves, arranged in a confused manner, and bearing a sadly neglected appearance. The first interment seems to have been that of Mary, wife of John Ward, who died September 15, 1765, in the sixty-ninth year of her age.

On the southern side of the graveyard is the monument of John Paulding, one of the captors of Andre. It was erected by Messrs. Francis and James Kain, in pursuance of a resolution passed by the Common Council of the city of New York, December 4, 1826, directing a monument to be erected to the memory of John Paulding. The design of the monument is simple. It consists of a plain marble cone, resting on a pedestal, the whole rising to the height of thirteen feet. The base of the monument is seven feet square, and it is surrounded by an iron railing two feet seven inches distant, and four feet high, which is inserted in a marble coping. The whole area comprehended is a square of twelve feet two inches.

On one side of the monument is a fac-simile of the medal voted by Congress to each of the captors of Andre, and on the other of its obverse. The southern side contains the following inscription :

" Here Rest the remains of
John Paulding,
who died on the 18th day of February, 1818,
in the 60th year of his age.

On the morning of the 23d of September, 1780,
Accompanied by two young Farmers of the County of Westchester,
(Whose names will one day be recorded,
On their own deserved monuments,)
He intercepted the British spy, Andre.

Poor Himself
He disdained to acquire wealth by the sacrifice of
HIS COUNTRY
Rejecting the temptation of great rewards
He conveyed his prisoner to the American camp ;
And
By this act of noble self-denial,
The treason of Arnold was detected,
The designs of the enemy baffled ;
West Point and the American army saved ;
And these United States,
Now, by the grace of God, Free and Independent,
Rescued from most imminent peril."

On the north side is the following inscription :

" THE CORPORATION
Of the City of New York,
Erected this Tomb,
As memorial sacred to
PUBLIC GRATITUDE."

This monument, with the exception of the placing of the cone on the pedestal, was completed November 22, 1827, and at one o'clock in the afternoon of the same day the officers of the corporation of New York City arrived in Peekskill by the steamboat "Sandusky," to see it finished, and hold exercises appropriate to the occasion. They were received in Peekskill by a committee of arrangements consisting of General Pierre Van Cortlandt, General Philip Van Cortlandt, Daniel W. Birdsall, St. John Constant, Ward

B. Howard, Benjamin Dyckman, Dr. Peter Goetchius, James Mandeville and Dr. Samuel Strang, and, together with a large concourse of the people of the town, they advanced in procession to the cemetery, about two miles and a half distant. The column was lowered to its place on the pedestal, and an address was made by William Paulding, mayor of the city of New York, after which the assembly separated, "deeply impressed with the ceremony and the occasion." Among those present was Paulding's companion in the capture, Isaac Van Wart.

Within this cemetery lie also the remains of Major-General Seth Pomeroy, but his grave was not marked by any headstone, and its present location is unknown. He had a most dramatic history, which has been given by a recent writer as follows :¹

"Seth Pomeroy was born in 1706 in the little village of Northampton. He grew up a resolute, God-fearing man, and very daring. Honors and public trusts were showered upon him. He exemplified all the virtues of an honest man and a Christian soldier. For thirty years he warred against the Indians and the French, and always with conspicuous bravery and distinguished success. A specimen of the original Puritan, he counted obstacles in his way but as trials to his faith, and bravely surmounted them. At the siege of Louisburg he received a letter from his wife saying that the whole town was daily praying for him, and for his command. He read the letter to his men and said, 'Fight, my brave boys, for the whole town is moved with concern, and our fathers and mothers are holding prayer-meetings every night. Fight, for the Lord is on our side. Who shall be against us?' And to him, more than to any other, is due the fall of that great fortress. At the conclusion of the French war the old soldier hung up his sword and cultivated the arts of peace; but the fires of religious patriotism and martial ardor burned as brightly as in the days of his youth. He, with two others, were appointed generals of the American armies at their organization prior to the breaking out of actual hostilities, and Washington taking command. When news came of the battle of Lexington, though past seventy years of age, he stopped neither on account of business nor infirmities, but rode directly to the front. Worn out with labors, he returned in a few days to his farm, in Connecticut. He had barely reached his door when a courier told him that the battle of Bunker Hill was soon to be fought. Never pausing for a moment, he turned about and dashed away for the scene. As one horse gave out he procured another and another, and reached Charlestown Neck in the midst of the fray. Handing his horse to a friend, because it was too valuable to be shot, he runs on foot across the Neck, then swept by the guns of the enemy's shipping, and up the hill, and leaps into the trench on the heights. Putnam

¹ Oration by Chauncey M. Depew, entitled "Incidents in the History of Peekskill and Vicinity," delivered in Peekskill, July 4, 1767.

wrings his hand and says: 'Pomeroy, you here! God! I believe a cannon would wake you if you slept in the grave.' He offers him the command, but he refuses, and takes his place with the Connecticut troops. Pitcairn, who commanded at Lexington, leads the British column. He points him out to two sharpshooters, and Pitcairn falls mortally wounded. The ammunition giving out, the soldiers begin to retreat. Pomeroy leaps upon the rampart, waving over his head a gun made by himself and shouts, 'Don't run, boys, don't run. Club them with your muskets as I do. No enemy shall ever say he saw the back of Seth Pomeroy.' Worn out after the battle, he returned to his home, but when the danger came in this vicinity he could no longer remain, and at the earnest solicitation of Washington he took the command here, and here he died on the 15th of February, 1777. A long procession of muffled drums and reversed arms marched over the road to the old graveyard at the old church, which so many similar processions have followed since, and within this sacred inclosure lie the bones of the first commander of the American army, with no stone to mark their last resting-place."

Many citizens of Peekskill and vicinity are buried in this graveyard, and headstones and monuments exist to the memory of the Penoyers, Wards, Drakes, Ferrises and many others.

CORTLANDTVILLE METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH AND SUNDAY-SCHOOL.—The Methodist Episcopal Church in Cortlandtville was erected in 1853 and 1854, at a cost of about twenty-six hundred dollars. The principal contributors were Messrs. James Robertson, Stephen Curry and James D. Sherwood. It was dedicated on the 11th day of March, 1854, Rev. R. S. Foster (now a bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church) preaching the sermon. Services were held regularly until about the year 1866. Rev. F. S. Barnum, now pastor of a church at Thompsonville, Conn., was the only pastor settled here. The pulpit was filled during other years by clergymen from Peekskill and other places. Revival meetings were held with marked success. At one time the membership of the church numbered about sixty.

Simultaneously with the opening of the church a Sabbath-school was organized. Mr. Andrew C. Wheeler (said to have been the first superintendent of a Methodist Sunday-school in the city of New York—the Allen Street Church) was elected superintendent. A short time after Mr. James Robertson became superintendent, and continued as such for many years. Among the faithful ones who entered heartily into the Sunday-school work during this time, two have risen to places of great honor and usefulness in their respective denominations,—Charles Robertson, now bishop of Missouri, and Miss Amelia Robertson (now Mrs. Bishop Foss), of the Methodist Church.

Between the years 1866 and 1877 a school was in operation for a short time under the direction of Rev.

Mr. Rose. In April, 1871, the present school was organized with Henry Lent as superintendent. In April, 1872, Mr. Lent having removed, Mr. C. A. Pugsley became his successor. He was followed in 1882 by Frank Hood, and he by Charles Booth, the present superintendent. The number of officers and teachers is (1884) eleven and scholars fifty-eight.

The Rev. J. D. Spriggs was pastor of this church in 1881, 1882 and 1883, and the Rev. Herman Conns in 1883. The church was then on a circuit which included, besides, Annsville and Continental Village. At present there is no pastor.

THE CORTLANDT CEMETERY ASSOCIATION.—After the cemetery in the grounds surrounding the old Episcopal Church became filled, lots were bought and interments made in the private property adjoining. In order that Peekskill and the vicinity might have a burial-place which should be kept in a neat and orderly condition, the Cortlandt Cemetery Association was formed; their certificate of organization being dated January 16, 1884. They purchased forty acres of land adjoining St. Peter's Cemetery on the north and including those graves which had been made on private ground. The officers chosen were as follows: President, George W. Robertson; Vice-President, John N. Tilden; Secretary and Treasurer, Sanford R. Knapp; and Trustees, George W. Robertson, Stephen D. Horton, Sanford R. Knapp, John Halsted, Stephen Lent, Wm. D. Southard, James T. Sutton, John N. Tilden and Isaac T. Montross. These officers hold the same positions at present.

THE VILLAGE OF PEEKSKILL

is situated on the expanse of the Hudson River known as Peekskill Bay, and in the midst of scenery which has been compared by Irving to that of the Lake of Como. Directly across the river rises the majestic Dunderberg, in full view to the northwest is the still loftier Bear Mountain, otherwise known as the Bread Tray, from the resemblance of its summit to an inverted vessel of that description. On the south Verplanck's Point is seen jutting out into the river. Numerous elevated points throughout the village and its vicinity afford fine views of the scenery.

Upon the ground occupied by Peekskill, or in its immediate vicinity, stood the Indian village of Sachoes. The name of Magrigraries Brook, which flows through the middle of the village, is of Indian derivation, but has been very generally corrupted into McGregory's, or McGregor's, Brook.

The name of the village is due to Jans Peek, an early Dutch navigator, who, in following the track of Hendrick Hudson, mistook the broad estuary at Roa Hook for the proper passage to the north. Here, it is said, he built a house and remained during the winter. To the creek was given the name of Jans Peek's Creek, or Peek's Kill, and from the name of the creek the village received its designation. In a deed given by the Indians to Jacobus Dekay and

others, June 25, 1685, the creek is referred to as being known to the Indians as John Peake's Creek.

As appears clearly from early military maps of the town of Cortlandt, as well as from reference in a number of old writings, and from positive tradition, the village of Peekskill in early times stood about a mile north of the centre of the present village, where the road from Pemart's Dock met the New York and Albany Post road, and where the property of Calvin Frost, Boland Darm and Harrison Smith is at present located. At Pemart's Dock was the port of the village. For many years subsequent to the settling of the village further south along Magregaries Brook, this upper settlement continued to be the more important of the two.

According to Bolton's history of the county,¹

other charter was obtained April 5, 1839, and amendments have since been made.

The trustees of the village since 1827 have been as follows:

1827.	1828.
Samuel Strang, president, John Halstead, Philip Clapp, James Birdsall, Ezra Marshall, secretary, Stephen Brown, treasurer.	St. John Constant, Stephen Brown, Zopher Jones, Reuben R. Finch, James Hawes, Stephen Brown, treasurer.
1829.	1830.
Samuel Marks, president, Stephen Brown, Niles Frost, James Hawes, Reuben R. Finch, secretary, Stephen Brown, treasurer.	Samuel Marks, president. Stephen Brown, Niles Frost, James Hawes, Reuben R. Finch, secretary. Stephen Brown, treasurer.



PEEKSKILL, FROM THE POINT OF LAND BELOW, ON THE HUDSON.²

the settlement of the village of Peekskill was begun in the year 1764 by Daniel Birdsall, Nathaniel Brown, Joseph Travis and Captain Isaac Conklin. The reference is evidently to the lower village, where the Birdsall mansion was located. The first store was erected by Nathaniel Birdsall, near the middle dock.

Claude Blanchard describes it (meaning the present, for he speaks also of the old one) as a village of about twenty houses quite close to each other. He was there in July and August, 1781.

April, 17, 1816, an act was passed by the Legislature incorporating the village of Peekskill. No record exists, however, of any election of officers under this charter. Another charter was granted April 9, 1827, and the first known trustees were elected. Samuel Strang was chosen by the trustees from their own body as the first president of the corporation. An-

1831.	1832.
St. John Constant, president. James Brown, Nathaniel Bedle, John C. Roake, Seth Hoyt, secretary, James Brown, treasurer.	St. John Constant, president, Philetus Raymond, Nathaniel Brown, John C. Roake, James Brown, secretary, Philetus Brown, treasurer.
1833.	1834.
St. John Constant, president, Philetus Raymond, James Hawes, John C. Roake, James B. Brown, secretary, Philetus Raymond, treasurer.	Samuel Marks, president, Philetus Raymond, James Wright, William Denike, James Brown, secretary, Philetus Raymond, treasurer.
1835.	1836.
Samuel Marks, president, Philetus Raymond, James Wright, William Denike, James Brown, secretary, Philetus Raymond, treasurer.	Samuel Marks, president, James Taylor, Philip Clapp, William Denike, James Brown, secretary, James Brown, treasurer.

²From "Hudson River Illustrated." Copyright, 1875, by D. Appleton & Co.

¹Page 113, vol. i., new edition.

1837.
Samuel Marks, president,
Philip Clapp,
William Denike,
James Taylor,
James Brown, secretary,
James Brown, treasurer.

1839.
Fred'k W. Requa, president,
James Taylor,
William Denike,
Morris Depew,
Frost Horton,
William Briggs, clerk,
Andrew Hanford, treasurer.

1841.
Ezra Marshall, president,
William Denike,
Frost Horton,
Jacob Oakley,
Benjamin Odell,
William H. Briggs, clerk,
Andrew Hanford, treasurer.

1843.
Ezra Marshall, president,
Frost Horton,
Jacob Oakley,
William Denike,
George P. Halstead,
Henry W. Depew, clerk,
Andrew Hanford, treasurer.

1845.
Ezra Marshall, president,
William B. Ferris,
George P. Halsted,
Gilbert B. Hart,
William Durrin,
Henry W. Depew, clerk,
John Mead, treasurer.

1847.
Ward B. Howard, president,
Ezra Marshall,
George P. Halsted,
Samuel W. Hurd,
Samuel S. Wood,
Henry W. Depew, clerk,
John Mead, treasurer.

1849.
Ward B. Howard, president,
Jacob L. Post,
Tillinghast Bennett,
Ezra Marshall,
Jarvis Washburn,
Thomas A. Whitney, clerk,
Henry W. Depew, treasurer.

1851.
Tillinghast Bennett, president,
Cortlandt Baxter,
Lewis Jessup,
James Hawes,
John H. Hyatt,
William H. Briggs, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1853.
Frost Horton, president,
Lewis Jessup,
Haines Charlock,
Nehemiah S. Jacobs,
Ward B. Howard,
Thomas A. Whitney, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer,

1838.
Daniel D. Smith, president,
William Denike,
Ezra Hopkins,
James Brown,
James Brown, secretary,
James Brown, treasurer.

1840.
Ezra Marshall, president,
Frost Horton,
Daniel D. Smith,
William Denike,
Benjamin Odell,
W. H. Briggs, clerk,
Andrew Hanford, treasurer.

1842.
Ezra Marshall, president,
Jacob Oakley,
Frost Horton,
George P. Halsted,
William Denike,
Wm. H. Briggs, clerk,
Andrew Hanford, treasurer.

1844.
Ezra Marshall, president,
Samuel S. Wood,
George P. Halsted,
Gilbert B. Hart,
John H. Hyatt,
Henry W. Depew, clerk,
John Mead, treasurer.

1846.
Ezra Marshall, president,
Ward B. Howard,
George P. Halsted,
Samuel S. Wood,
Samuel W. Hurd,
Henry W. Depew, clerk,
John Mead, treasurer.

1848.
Judson H. Gilbert, president,
Jarvis Washburn,
E. D. Fuller,
D. F. Clapp,
Ezra Marshall,
William H. Briggs, clerk,
Isaac Seymour, treasurer.

1850.
Ezra Marshall, president,
James L. Smith,
Jarvis Washburn,
Ward B. Howard,
Jacob L. Post,
Thomas A. Whitney, clerk,
Henry W. Depew, treasurer.

1852.
Ward B. Howard, president,
Cortlandt Baxter,
Haines Charlock,
Samuel H. Mabie,
Andreas Elmers,
William H. Briggs, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1854.
Frost Horton, president,
Haines Charlock,
Samuel H. Mabie,
Lorenzo D. Curry,
Daniel M. Hyatt,
Francis P. Clark, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1855.
Haines Charlock, president,
Henry W. Hunt,
Samuel H. Mabie,
David Mandeville,
Lorenzo D. Curry,
Francis P. Clark, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1857.
George W. Depew,
Isaac S. Mandeville,
Lewis Jessup,
John Halsted,
Hiram Mabie,
Francis P. Clark, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1859.
Cyrus Townsend, president,
Cortlandt Baxter,
Hiram Mabie,
P. D. Smith,
L. D. Curry,
Francis P. Clark, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1861.
John Ombony, president,
James L. Gregory,
Daniel J. Haight,
Uriah Hill, Jr.,
Lorenzo D. Curry,
Hachaliah B. Strang, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1863.
Thos. A. Whitney, president,
John Ombony,
Samuel J. Jacobus,
I. S. Mandeville,
James L. Smith,
Edgar D. Bassett, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1865.
Samuel J. Jacobus, president,
Geo. P. Marshall,
John Halsted,
Jacob R. Decatur,
Jas. L. Smith,
Stephen Lent, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1867.
Geo. P. Marshall, president,
Robert S. Armstrong,
John Halsted,
Ebenezer F. Bedell,
James L. Paulding,
Stephen Lent, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1869.
Geo. P. Marshall, president,
Ebenezer F. Bedell,
Robert D. Nelson,
St. John Croft,
John Halsted,
Samuel J. Jacobus, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1871.
Robert D. Nelson, president,
John W. Hait,
St. John Croft,
E. F. Bedell,
Wm. S. Tompkins,
Samuel J. Jacobus, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1856.
Thomas Southard, president,
Gilbert B. Hart,
Isaac S. Mandeville,
Robert A. Depew,
Abram N. Griffin,
William H. Briggs, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1858.
C. A. G. Depew, president.
Hiram Mabie,
Uriah Hill, Jr.,
James L. Gregory,
I. S. Mandeville,
Francis P. Clark, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1860.
Cyrus Townsend, president,
Cortlandt Baxter,
P. D. Smith,
James L. Gregory,
L. D. Curry,
Francis P. Clark, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1862.
Uriah Hill, Jr., president,
John Ombony,
James L. Gregory,
I. S. Mandeville,
Lorenzo D. Curry,
Hachaliah B. Strang, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1864.
Samuel J. Jacobus, president,
George P. Marshall,
Isaac S. Mandeville,
P. D. Smith,
James L. Smith,
Edgar D. Bassett, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1866.
Geo. P. Marshall, president,
Robt. S. Armstrong,
John Halsted,
J. R. Decatur,
James L. Paulding,
Stephen Lent, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1868.
Geo. P. Marshall, president,
John Halsted,
St. John Croft,
R. S. Armstrong,
J. L. Paulding,
Thos. A. Whitney, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1870.
John Halsted, president,
James D. Sherwood,
St. John Croft,
Robert D. Nelson,
Ebenezer F. Bedell,
William E. Borden, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1872.
Wm. S. Tompkins, president,
Andrew Ukers,
David Mandeville,
St. John Croft,
John W. Hait,
Samuel J. Jacobus, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1873.

Joseph H. Mason, president,
David Mandeville,
Wm. S. Tompkins,
Fred. Sherwood,
Stephen D. Horton,
Andrew Ukers,
Wm. D. Southard,
Stephen Lent, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1875.

Stephen D. Horton, president,
Andrew Ukers,
Wm. D. Southard,
John Tompkins,
Fred. Sherwood,
Ebenezer F. Bedell,
Warren Jordan,
S. Lent, clerk (to June 17th),
F. Couch, clerk (balance of year),
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1877.

Stephen D. Horton, president,
Andrew Ukers,
Wm. D. Southard,
Wm. H. Hunter,
James H. Robertson,
John Kingsbury,
E. F. Bedell,
Stephen Lent, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1879.

Stephen D. Horton, president,
George D. Sanford,
Benjamin McCabe,
James F. Martin,
David S. Mandeville,
Henry H. Lane,
W. S. Tompkins,
Franklin Couch, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1881.

Jas. H. Robertson, president,
James H. Phyfe,
Paul Wessells,
Benjamin McCabe,
Henry H. Lane,
George D. Sanford,
Matthew Clune,
Franklin Couch, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1883.

Wm. D. Southard, president,
Matthew Clune,
Ebenezer F. Bedell,
George W. Smith,
Leonard J. Tompkins,
John Halsted,
Warren Jordan,
Leverett F. Crumb, clerk,
Dorlin F. Clapp, treasurer.

1874.

Joseph H. Mason, president,
David Mandeville,
Fred. Sherwood,
Stephen D. Horton,
John Tompkins,
Andrew Ukers,
Wm. D. Southard,
Stephen Lent, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1876.

Stephen D. Horton, president,
Andrew Ukers,
Wm. D. Southard,
Warren Jordan,
Frederick Sherwood,
Ebenezer F. Bedell,
James H. Robertson,
Franklin Couch, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1878.

W. D. Southard, president,
George D. Sanford,
Benj. McCabe,
Wm. H. Hunter,
James F. Martin,
John W. Mabie (died),
Wm. Mabie (to fill vacancy),
Ebenezer F. Bedell,
Stephen Lent, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1880.

Cornelius C. Lent, president,
George D. Sanford,
Wm. S. Tompkins,
David Mandeville,
Henry H. Lane,
James H. Phyfe,
Benjamin McCabe,
Franklin Couch, clerk,
D. F. Clapp, treasurer.

1882-'3.

George D. Sanford, president,
Henry H. Lane,
Paul Wessells,
Matthew Clune,
George W. Smith,
Leonard J. Tompkins,
Ebenezer F. Bedell,
Franklin Couch, clerk,
Dorlin F. Clapp, treasurer.

1884.

Wm. D. Southard, president,
John Halsted,
Matthew Clune,
George W. Lockwood,
David G. Montross,
Wm. Brotherton,
Warren Jordan,
Leverett Crumb, clerk,
Dorlin F. Clapp, treasurer.

On the northern side of Main Street, between Union and Hadden Streets, and on the property of John Cokalet, is located a little one-story building which is supposed to date back to about 1760. The same door gives admittance to the building as over one hundred years ago, and a square patch marks the place of the old loophole from which a gun could be brought to bear on an enemy. It is known as the "Washington House."

A little farther westward, on the opposite side of the street, is another small one-story building; which is also supposed to date back to Revolutionary days.

On the south side of Main Street, near Division Street, stood the old Birdsall mansion. This old building projected into the middle of the street, and was removed many years ago. The sleeping apartments in it occupied by General Washington and his companion-in-arms Lafayette were long pointed out to visitors, and the furniture was kept in very near the same position as on those memorable occasions. The Rev. George Whitefield is said to have preached in one of the parlors. The date of this occurrence was probably in 1770, as the very last entry made in Whitefield's memorandum book, a short time before his death in that year, states that in the month of July he preached to very large, attentive and affected congregations, particularly at Peeke's Hill.

On South Street, overlooking the Hudson River, are the handsome residences of Owen T. Coffin, surrogate of Westchester County, and General James W. Husted, who has gained a reputation in politics, and been a number of times Speaker of the Assembly of New York.

About a mile and a quarter east of the village, out Main Street, with their grounds adjoining each other, are the elegant mansions of Henry Ward Beecher, the noted clergyman of Brooklyn, and of Moses S. Beach, son of the founder of the *New York Sun* and at one time its principal owner. Near by are the handsome residences of Benjamin Kittredge, a dealer in fire-arms in New York City and Cincinnati, of John B. Hobby, for many years a successful flour dealer in New York, and of Lyman B. Carhart, an official in the Custom-House in New York City.

The father of Peter Cooper, the eminent New York manufacturer and philanthropist, moved to Peekskill from New York about the beginning of the century and established a hat factory and country store on or very near the site now occupied by the Peekskill Savings Bank. Peter was at that time three years old. It is related that the father's sojourn in the village was full of trouble. The farmers bought from him on credit and then forgot to pay. He was visited frequently by the traveling Methodist preachers, who tarried long at his hospitable board, but made little or no pecuniary return. It is said he was the builder of the Methodist Church on South Street. He finally grew discouraged with his business and engaged in brewing ale, which young Peter delivered in kegs to

POINTS OF INTEREST IN PEEKSKILL AND VICINITY.—Peekskill in 1884 is a village of over seven thousand people. The streets are broad and well paved and lead into excellent roads. There are numerous fine residences throughout the village. Division Street north of Main Street, Main Street east of Division Street, and Paulding Street are all very handsome streets.

customers. He succeeded no better and finally moved to Catskill with his family and there tried hat and brick-making, but with the same poor results as had attended his labors in Peekskill.

Drum Hill, on which is located one of the public schools of the village, derives its name from the curious fact that the ground, when trodden or stamped upon in certain places, gives forth a sound as if it were hollow, and resembling the subdued roaring of a large drum. No satisfactory explanation has been given of the phenomenon. The same thing, however, can be noticed in various parts of the town of Cortlandt, though generally not so distinctly as at Drum Hill.

On the eminence just north of Main Street, and at about equal distances east and west of St. Gabriel's church, are the remains of two forts. A number of stones collected together into a low wall on the top of a knoll indicate the position of the easterly fort. The fort on the west was an earth-works, and was on the brow of the hill overlooking the river. Both were evidently intended only for lookout stations. The remains of barracks about midway between the forts were formerly noticeable, but have been cleared away.

CHURCHES OF PEEKSKILL.

In Peekskill are located thirteen churches, which are distributed among the different denominations as follows: Presbyterian, two; Methodist Episcopal, two; African Methodist Episcopal, one; Protestant Episcopal, one; Reformed Dutch, one; Baptist, one; Wesleyan Methodist, one; Christian Disciples, one; Society of Friends, two; Roman Catholic, one. Histories of each of them are appended.

FIRST PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.—The early history of Presbyterianism in the town of Cortlandt is involved in a good deal of uncertainty. Probably the first Presbyterian minister to hold services within it was the Rev. Samuel Sacket, who was sent out by the Presbytery of New Brunswick to preach in Westchester County, the special field of labor assigned to him being Cortlandt Manor, embracing Yorktown, Cortlandtown, North Salem and Somers. His ministry lasted from 1742 to 1784, and little doubt is felt but that during that time he preached occasionally in Peekskill. Most of his labors, however, were carried on in Yorktown and Bedford, and at the time of his death, which occurred June 5, 1784, at the age of seventy-two years, he was pastor of the church at the former place.

The development of the Presbyterian Church in the town of Cortlandt did not begin in good earnest until the year 1799. At that date a church edifice was erected on the site of the present house of worship, upon land donated by Nathaniel Brown, a Friend, "to the Presbyterians of the belief of Dr. Rogers, of New York." The church was built at a cost of £371 8s. 1d., and chiefly through the liberality of Stephen

Brown and his mother-in-law, Hannah Brewer. The trustees were James Diven, John Oppie and Stephen Brown. This was the first sanctuary opened in Peekskill. Services were conducted in the church from time to time, but there appears to have been no regular organization.

The Presbyterian Church at Yorktown was the mother-church of many of the organizations of that faith in its vicinity, and the church in Peekskill was in a degree dependent on it. In the year 1806 a division arose in the Yorktown Church, then under the pastoral care of the Rev. Silas Constant, and the trouble was felt in Peekskill to such an extent as to give rise to an Independent Church. This Independent Presbyterian congregation was incorporated on September 29, 1813, with John Lent, John Constant and Samuel Strang as trustees. They worshipped in a building on Diven Street, next to the residence at present occupied by Dr. J. M. Tilden. This meeting-house was commonly referred to as "the church on the hill," and was a familiar object until about the year 1844, when it was taken down. The original building after this secession was used only for occasional services, and was probably closed most of the time.

In May, 1816, a congregation of seventy-five members was formed in the church on the hill by the Rev. Abner Brundage, a native of New Jersey, who had come to Peekskill about a year previous. Deacon John Lent and Ezra Lockwood were the officers. When Mr. Brundage resigned, in 1819; the congregation contained about one hundred members. Mr. Brundage afterwards had charges in Carmel, Putnam County, and Brookfield, Connecticut. He was not engaged in pastoral work for about thirty years previous to the close of his life, and died at Montclair, N. J., in October, 1877.

Some years after Mr. Brundage's departure the influence of a large Congregational element from Connecticut in the church gave dissatisfaction to some who preferred the faith and government of the Presbyterian Church, and in 1826 a division took place. The members remaining in the church on the hill eventually became merged into the Reformed Dutch Church. The seceding members formed the First Presbyterian Church. They organized June 25, 1826, and were sixteen in number, as follows: Benjamin Illingworth, a former elder of Yorktown, Daniel Merritt, Nancy Conklin, Elizabeth Oakley, Elizabeth Campbell, Ann Conklin, Caroline Strang, Mahala Gilbert, Rebecca Hawes, Maria Jones, Jemima Brown, Sarah Dusenberry, Mary Oakley, Rachel Buskirk, Ann Budd and Susan Shaw. Benjamin Illingworth and Daniel Merritt were elected elders.

The church, in October of the same year, became connected with the Presbytery of New York, and extended a call to the Rev. John H. Leggett, then a member of the Second Presbytery of New York. Mr. Leggett accepted the call, and was installed Decem-

ber 14, 1826. At the time of his departure, three years later, the number of members was twenty-four. Mr. Leggett died at Chester, N. Y., May 31, 1873.

The Rev. William Marshall, a native of Scotland, shortly after his arrival in America, was made pastor of the church. The church during his ministry was transferred to the Second Presbytery of New York. His pastorate lasted until the fall of 1843. The number of members at that time was thirty-four. During his ministry unfortunate dissensions occurred which resulted, in 1841, in the withdrawal of nine members, and the establishment of the Second Presbyterian Church of Peekskill. Mr. Marshall died near Delhi, New York, in October, 1865.

The Rev. D. M. Halliday left a flourishing church at Danville, Pennsylvania, to become Mr. Marshall's successor. He was installed in his new position November 1, 1843. In 1846, owing to the increase of the congregation the original edifice was removed to make way for another twice its size. In 1858 another enlargement was made by an extension of thirty feet, which included a lecture-room. The number of members at the close of Dr. Halliday's pastorate, October 20, 1867, was one hundred and sixty-four. Dr. Halliday in 1884 was making his home with Dr. Gregory, president of the Lake Forest University, at Lake Forest, Illinois.

The Rev. John N. Freeman, a student in Princeton Theological Seminary, received and accepted a call to the pastorate, and was installed May 14, 1868. In 1870 a parsonage was completed immediately opposite the church at a cost, for lot and buildings of thirteen thousand five hundred and fifty dollars. It is considered one of the handsomest and most convenient manses along the river. On the 21st of June, 1870, the Presbytery of Westchester, consisting of the churches of Westchester and Putnam Counties (except the church at Cold Spring) and in the State of Connecticut, was constituted. The Presbyterian Churches of Peekskill have since remained under its jurisdiction. Mr. Freeman resigned his pastorate on account of ill health, and on January 23, 1876, the pulpit was declared vacant. The number of members in the church at that time was two hundred and thirty-nine. Mr. Freeman was afterwards pastor of the church in Lockport, N. Y., and removed thence to assume the charge of Emanuel Presbyterian Church, in Milwaukee, Wis., where he was preaching in 1884.

The Rev. J. Ritchie Smith, a native of Baltimore and a graduate of Princeton Theological Seminary, became pastor June 26, 1876, and still (1884) holds the office. The number of members is two hundred and seventy-four.

A Sabbath-school (the first in the village) was started in the old church on the hill by the Rev. Abner Brundage, which continued till the organization of the church, in 1826. The scholars, for some time after that date, met in the old district school-house on Main Street, on the west side of Mill Street. James

Birdsall was the first superintendent. There were from six to eight teachers and from fifty to sixty scholars. The number of officers and teachers in 1884 was thirty-three, and of scholars two hundred and twenty-one. The superintendent was Dwight S. Herrick.

The elders in 1884 were as follows: Uriah Hill, Jr., Francis Briggs, Sanford R. Knapp, Seth H. Mead, Isaac Varian and Cornelius A. Pugsley. The trustees were Lyman B. Carhart, Sanford R. Knapp, William Mabie, William H. Paulding and James B. Swift.

The church is a neat frame structure and is located on the south side of South Street.

THE SECOND PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, situated corner of South and Union Streets, was organized on the 17th day of November, 1841, by a committee from the Presbytery of North River. This Presbytery was in ecclesiastical connection with that branch of the Presbyterian Church of the United States then known as "New School."

Eleven persons constituted the first membership of the church, viz.: David L. Seymour, Delia A. Seymour, Philander Stewart, M.D., Miranda Stewart, Anna Ranney, Gilbert T. Sutton, Letitia T. Sutton, Moses Cragin, Christina Cragin, Mary Huntington, Jane Huntington. Of these, the first nine presented letters from the First Presbyterian Church of Peekskill (O. S.) and the last two from the Second Congregational Church of New London, Conn.

At this time Gilbert T. Sutton, Philander Stewart, M.D., and Moses Cragin were ordained and installed as the first ruling elders of the church

Public worship was commenced in the Old Methodist Church, on South Street, on Sabbath, November 21, 1841, the Rev. Daniel Brown being the officiating clergyman. Mr. Brown continued his ministrations from that time, and, on the 30th of March, 1842, was called to the pastorate of the church and was installed on May 4th of the same year.

The congregation erected a church edifice at the southeast corner of South and Union Streets, which was dedicated April 9, 1845. The building was remodeled and enlarged in 1870.

The successive pastors, with their terms of office, have been as follows:

March 30, 1842, to November 30, 1846	Rev. Daniel Brown.
May 25, 1848, to November, 1851	Rev. Joseph McKee
June 29, 1852, to August, 1852 ¹	Rev. Daniel Bond
November 10, 1852, to February 6, 1856	Rev. George F. Wisewel
September 7, 1857, to 1860	Rev. Silas Hawley, never installed
June 20, 1860, to November 12, 1866	Rev. Elisha G. Cobb
April 30, 1867, to July 15, 1869	Rev. Charles H. Baldwin
June 14, 1870, to July 2, 1872	Rev. Nelson Millard
October 22, 1872, to August 1, 1874	Rev. James Demarest
October 4, 1874, to May, 1875	Rev. John Rutherford, as stated supply
1875 to October 8, 1879	Rev. Roderic Terry
January 1, 1880, to September 4, 1881	Rev. J. Le Moynes Dauner, as stated supply.
May 2, 1882	Rev. David Murdock, present pastor

¹ Pastorate terminated by death.

The Rev. Livingston Brown was called to the pastorate April 15, 1847, and supplied the church for several months, but was never installed.

The number of members in 1884 was one hundred and fifty-six, and of Sunday-school pupils one hundred and forty-eight.

THE FIRST METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.¹—George Whitefield, a Calvinistic Methodist, who died in 1770, is said to have preached in the parlors of the Birdsall mansion, on Main Street, and was probably the first Methodist preacher ever heard in the village. During the Revolutionary War the Methodist itinerants, on account of the advice of neutrality given by Wesley, were looked upon by the people with dislike and suspicion, and in Peekskill, as in other places, the society made no advance. Thomas Ware, who was appointed to Long Island, in 1786, as a Methodist preacher, is the first person who is known positively to have attempted the promulgation of the



Whitefield

Methodist faith in Peekskill. He did not confine himself to this large field, but, as he states in his autobiography, crossed the Sound, and extended his labors from New Rochelle to Peekskill. At this time he says, "there was not a Methodist on the east side of the Hudson above New York." He was kindly treated in the town of Cortlandt, and makes special mention of the courtesy of Lieutenant-Governor Van Cortlandt, at Croton.

Bishop Asbury followed not long after. In his journal occurs the following entry: "Friday, June 15, 1787, I preached to a listening multitude at Peekskill, and was alarming and close on 'by grace ye are saved through faith.' I thought there were no people here of spiritual understanding but I was informed, to my comfort, that a number of simple-hearted people had formed themselves into a society

for prayer." Most probably these few were the result of Ware's preaching the year before.

In May, 1788, Bishop Asbury requested Rev. Freeborn Garretson to take charge of the northern district, along the Hudson River, and superintend the work of a band of nine young itinerants. On going up the river, Garretson preached at Peekskill. His extensive district was divided into four circuits, one of which, the New Rochelle Circuit, extended from New York City to Fishkill, and included Peekskill. Out of the band of nine itinerants, Peter Moriarty and Albert Van Nostrand were placed on this circuit. Their labors were very successful, as at the close of the year they were able to report in their circuit seven hundred and thirty-one members.

During this year, if not before, a class was formed in Peekskill with six members, who were as follows: Bethuel Washburn, Thomas Clark, Jonathan Ferris and wife, Phebe Ward and Elizabeth Lent, who afterwards became the wife of Captain Justin Taylor. Jonathan Ferris was the leader, and the meetings were held at his house, which is now the cottage on the property of Henry Ward Beecher. An old record shows that Rachel Baden joined the class in 1788, Catharine Osborne in 1790, Catharine Start in 1791 and Mary Banker in 1792.

June 16, 1789, Freeborn Garretson again preached in Peekskill, and "found much freedom in preaching the word of truth." He stopped overnight with General Van Cortlandt, whose hospitality received his warm praise.

An indenture was made February 26, 1795, between John Drake, of Fishkill Town, and Catharine, his wife, and William Helleck, Thomas Clarke, William Weeks, Absalom Travis and Stephen Weeks, managers of the Methodist Society at Peekskill, conveying to the latter parties for the sum of fifty pounds (two hundred and forty-two dollars) three-quarters of an acre of land in Peekskill. This land included most of the present site of the church, and some ground to the eastward. Upon it was a blacksmith shop, sixteen by thirty feet in extent and ten feet high, which was converted into a meeting-house, and so used until 1812. In that year a larger meeting-house, located just west of the present church, took the place of this humble structure. August 1, 1808, the Methodist Church at Peekskill was incorporated.

In 1836 a third house of worship was erected at a cost of three thousand five hundred and fifty dollars. It was forty-five feet front, sixty-five feet deep and twenty-two feet high, and contained a basement underneath the whole. It was repaired and enlarged in 1854 and in 1876. The cost upon the latter occasion was over nine thousand dollars.

April 14, 1858, a lot thirty by one hundred and fifty feet in extent, located on Smith Street, and containing a building, was purchased for one thousand seven hundred dollars, and the house as a parsonage. Another small lot was added some time afterwards, and

¹ From an historical sketch prepared in January, 1884, by Rev. D. H. Handburgh, pastor.

the building was remodeled and enlarged. It is now valued at three thousand dollars, and the valuation of the church is twelve thousand dollars.

There have been many revivals of religion in this church, the greatest of which in their visible results occurred in the years 1857 and 1858, under the ministry of the Rev. D. L. Marks. In the first year there were sixty conversions, and in the following year six hundred. Of the latter number, four hundred joined the Methodist Episcopal Church.

In 1864 St. Paul's Methodist Episcopal Church, an offshoot of this church, was established.

Peekskill was on a circuit until the year 1843, when a pastor was stationed at the church. The successive pastors have been as follows :

1843	John M. Pease.
1844-45.	Salmon C. Perry.
1846-47.	Fitch Reed.
1848-49.	Richard A. Chalker.
1850-51.	George Coles.
1852-53.	Paul R. Brown.
1854-55.	M. D. C. Crawford.
1856-57.	D. L. Marks.
1858	Wm. Bloomer.
1859	Wm. Bloomer and D. S. Barnum.
1860-61.	Thomas Lodge.
1862-63.	J. P. Hermance.
1864-66.	Wm. C. Smith.
1867-69.	Sanford I. Ferguson.
1870-71.	Elias S. Osbon.
1872-73.	T. W. Chadwick.
1874-76.	B. H. Burch.
1877-79.	H. H. Birkius.
1880-82.	B. H. Burch.
1883-85.	D. H. Hanaburgh.

In 1832 the Methodists had no Sunday-school of their own in Peekskill, but a number of members of the denomination entered the Presbyterian Sunday-school as teachers, bringing scholars with them.

In 1833 the Methodist portion withdrew to their own church, and were under the leadership of Mrs. Augustus Taylor. In March, 1834, the school was properly organized with James Taylor as superintendent, and Elizabeth Taylor (afterwards Mrs. Hart) female superintendent. The number of officers and teachers in 1884 was fifty-two, and of scholars enrolled three hundred and fifty-two. Amos C. Requa was superintendent.

A Ladies' Aid Society was organized in 1848, and has been an important factor in the financial, social and benevolent work of the church. In 1884 Mrs. J. R. Sears was first directress.

The number of members of the church in January, 1884, was five hundred and ten, with thirty-seven probationers. The stewards in 1884 were as follows: James M. Beale, John Towart, Henry Judd, William E. Borden, William H. Griffin, James H. Haight, Matthias Croft, Byron Calkins and John S. Jones. The trustees were William H. Roe, Charles T. Smith, John A. Beale, H. L. Armstrong, John Mabie, Frank Anderson, Asbury Barker, W. F. Wessells and William H. Griffin.

ST. PAUL'S METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—This church was organized in 1864 by Rev. J. P. Hermance, and was an outgrowth of the First Methodist Episcopal Church, the first board of trustees being elected March 10th of that year. They were as follows: Daniel J. Haight, Charles H. Frost, E. A. Wessells, James Robertson, John Ogden, James L. Seabury and John Halstead. The first sermon was preached in Simpson's Hall, at the northwest corner of Main and Division Streets, on the 24th of April following. A Sunday-school was organized April 12, 1864, and was attended the first day by fifty-three scholars. E. A. Wessells was superintendent. A handsome brick church was erected on Main Street, between Division and James Streets, and was dedicated February 22, 1866. The cost of lot and building was sixty thousand dollars. The congregation removed from Simpson's Hall to their new place of worship July 16th following, and have occupied it ever since.

The pastors of the church have been as follows: 1864-65, James Y. Bates; April, 1866, George F. Kettell; September, 1866-68, Jesse T. Peck; 1869-70, Milton S. Terry; 1871, E. L. Prentiss; 1872, John Miley; 1873-75, Charles S. Harrower; 1876, Charles R. North; 1877-78, C. W. Millard; 1879-80, George R. Crooks; 1881, W. McKendree Darwood; 1882-83, M. D. C. Crawford; about six months to April, 1884, John E. Gorse; April, 1884, Fletcher Hamlin.

The church was originally known as the Main Street Methodist Episcopal Church, but the name was afterwards changed to the present title. The number of members has increased from forty-three, as it was at the time of organization, to two hundred and eighty-two members and thirty-four probationers in 1884. The number of Sunday-school pupils in 1884 was two hundred and sixty-five, with thirty-nine officers and teachers. George W. Robertson was superintendent.

The board of trustees in 1884 was constituted as follows: William A. Hunt, Isaac Kipp, Isaac J. Baxter, S. D. Horton, George W. Bagley, George W. Robertson, W. Jordan, G. W. Denike. The stewards were William Beattys, Joshua R. Purdy, William H. Lent, Andrew R. Soper, J. Frank Secor, Robert Mackellar, James Robertson, Thomas N. Avery and Joseph Sparrow.

THE WESLEYAN METHODIST CHURCH.—The sittings of the First Methodist Church of Peekskill were free until 1839, at which time the practice of renting them was begun. In consequence of dissatisfaction at this innovation twelve members withdrew and organized a society. John Lyon was the leader of the movement and became the preacher. They were not recognized by the New York Conference, and attached themselves to the Wesleyan Methodist Church, commonly known as the Primitive Methodists. They built a small chapel in the year 1839 on

Broad Street, between Park and Brown. The church has had numerous pastors, but at present (1884) is without any. The number of members does not exceed twenty-five.

The church is popularly referred to as the "Pond-Lily Church," from the fact of its being located in a lot which formerly flourished with pond-lilies.

THE PROTESTANT METHODISTS AND THE CHRISTIAN DISCIPLES.—In 1827 a society of Protestant Methodists was organized in Peekskill, and November 23, 1836, was incorporated, John Spock, William R. Steel and Thomas Blackney being trustees. Their meeting-house, a small frame building, has been located on Park Street for many years. The congregation fell into decline, and in 1880 sold their meeting-house to a congregation of Christian Disciples, otherwise known as Campbellites, and passed out of existence.

The Disciples began to hold their meetings in 1872 in the house of R. Harrison, a potter doing business on Broad Street, north of Main. December 13, 1873, they were organized as a congregation by Elder Dexter Moody, of Troy, N. Y. The number of their originators was three, but in 1882 the church had over fifty adherents. In that year a split occurred, owing to the teaching by one party of doctrines held by the other to be unscriptural, such as the theory of evolution, the impersonality of the devil, etc., and the portion calling themselves the orthodox party withdrew, leaving the congregation considerably reduced in size.

THE FIRST BAPTIST CHURCH.—A society of Baptists existed in the town of Cortlandt at a very early date, as would appear from a document bearing date of December 17, 1772, in which Caleb Hall, Sr., Isaac Horton, Sr., Daniel Hall, Richard Williams, Nathan Elliott, John Poun, Joshua Horton, Caleb Hall, Jr., Nathan Brown and Oliver Yeomans obligate themselves each to contribute one-tenth part of a sum of money necessary to pay off the debt remaining on a church recently erected by "the society of people called Baptists."¹ This church, according to Bolton, was located on the six acres of land at Cortlandtville given for church and school purposes, and directly on the site of the present school-house. An entry in the books of the Baptist Church in Yorktown is to the effect that on the 14th of October, 1823, a request was received from the Baptist Church at Peekskill (undoubtedly the one mentioned above), asking that they dismiss a number of their members to revive the congregation there. Reuben Garretson and four others were dismissed to the Peekskill Church in accordance with this request, but the society passed out of existence, nevertheless, at a period probably not much later.

The church known at present as the First Baptist

Church of Peekskill was organized by a council that met in the Reformed Dutch Church October 4, 1843. The number of original members was ten.

The congregation first met in a room hired of Aaron Travis, corner of South and Division Streets, and afterward in an upper room in a house on Division Street, hired of James Brown. The site of the present church was bought of James Brewer May 1, 1844, and a house of worship was begun, which was finished and occupied in April, 1846. The next year the church was dedicated. In 1871 the present church was built at a cost of ten thousand dollars. The pastors of the church have been as follows:

October, 1843	Rev. Edward Conover
November, 1844	Rev. C. C. Williams
September, 1846	Rev. A. P. Buel
May, 1849	Rev. C. H. Underhill
	Rev. J. E. Reynolds
June, 1852	Rev. N. W. Minor
July, 1855	Rev. George Silver
August, 1857	Rev. George G. Ferguson
May, 1859	Rev. Hinton S. Lloyd
November, 1860	Rev. H. C. Townly
November, 1865	Rev. J. W. Taylor
June, 1866	Rev. C. W. Palmer
September, 1867	Rev. H. W. Webber
May, 1870	Rev. C. J. Page
November, 1875	Rev. V. Osterhout
August, 1877	Rev. J. B. Smith, D.D.
March, 1882	Rev. Charles Coleman
February 1, 1883	Rev. William D. Hedden

THE SOCIETY OF FRIENDS.—An organization of the Society of Friends was effected in Peekskill in 1804, the principal members being Nathaniel Browne, James Merritt and Joshua Weeks. The society at first worshipped in a stone building on the rear of the property on South Street now owned by William Tompkins, and later in a meeting-house built in 1811 on property given for the purpose by Nathaniel Browne. It is a small frame structure with shingled sides, and is located on South Street, west of Washington.

In 1828, owing to the division of the society throughout the country into the Hicksite branch and the branch calling themselves the Orthodox Friends, the latter party in Peekskill withdrew from the old meeting-house, leaving the Hicksites in possession. Two or three years after the separation the Orthodox party began meeting in a building almost opposite the present location of the post-office, and in 1857 purchased a lot on Crompond Street, where the present church was erected.

The principal members of the Hicksite party at the time of division were Joshua Weeks, Zopher Jones, Stephanus Hunt, Gilbert Dickinson, James H. Conklin and John C. Conklin. Prominent among the Orthodox Friends were James Brown, Stephen Brown and Nathaniel Bedell. The strength of the society when united was about sixty members. Both congregations have greatly diminished in numbers and rarely hold meetings at present.

ST. PETER'S EPISCOPAL CHURCH OF PEEKSKILL.—

¹ Blanchard speaks of two churches at the old village fitted up as hospitals. One was St. Peter's, and the other the Baptist church.

A congregation of Episcopalians was formed in Peekskill as early as 1823, under the name of St. Paul's Church. In 1838 the glebe owned jointly by St. Peter's Church, at Cortlandtville, and St. Philip's Church, of Putnam County, having been sold for five thousand dollars, the proceeds were divided equally and the twenty-five hundred dollars belonging to St. Peter's Church, together with a donation of one thousand dollars from Trinity Church, of New York City, were used the same year to erect a chapel for the Episcopalians in Peekskill. Owing to its more central situation it became at once of more importance than the parent church, and finally, as narrated in the history of the latter, superseded it entirely. By an act of incorporation passed in 1840, it received the title of "St. Peter's Church, Cortlandt, in the Village of Peekskill." The church is a frame structure, built in the Gothic style.

The successive rectors have been as follows :

Install d.

April, 1838	Rev. William C. Cooley
March 3, 1841	Rev. Moses Marcus
June 7, 1843	Rev. William Barlow
April 25, 1848	Rev. George S. Gordon
October 12, 1854	Rev. Edmund Roberts
December 5, 1863	Rev. John Rutherford Matthews
October 1, 1865	Rev. Erskine M. Rodman
February 10, 1869	Rev. Francis Harison
September 16, 1873	Rev. William Fisher Lewis
September, 1881	Rev. N. F. Putnam
June, 1883	Rev. George McClellan Fiske

The Rev. Mr. Lewis resigned to accept the rectorship of Emmanuel Church, at La Grange, Illinois, and the Rev. Mr. Putnam, after his resignation in October, 1882, became assistant rector of St. Mark's Cathedral, Salt Lake City, Utah. The present rector comes from Philadelphia.

During the last two rectorships a fund has been started for the erection of a new house of worship. In 1844 the number of families and parts of families in connection with the church was one hundred and thirty-eight, and the number of individuals six hundred. The number of communicants was two hundred and twenty-nine; of Sunday school teachers, twenty; and of scholars, two hundred. The contributions for the year amounted to three thousand three hundred dollars. Every Sunday there are three public services, and the church is open for morning and evening prayer daily.

From 1876 to 1884 the Rev. Henry M. Torbert was assistant minister of the parish. The present officers of the church are as follows: Wardens, Hon. Owen T. Coffin and Calvin Frost; Vestrymen, Thomas Snowden, M.D., James H. Robertson, Jr., Colonel Charles J. Wright, Valentine Hanf, Philip Hoffman, Hon. James W. Husted, J. Van Ness Smith and Charles F. Southard; William T. Aisthorpe is superintendent of the Sunday-school; F. R. Manser is choir-master; and Mrs. Julia Depew, organist.

THE REFORMED DUTCH CHURCH.—In the history of the First Presbyterian Church of Peekskill has

been given an account of the formation, in 1813, of an Independent Presbyterian congregation, which met in "the church on the hill," on Diven Street. After the withdrawal of the Presbyterian element therefrom, the church became Congregational in character. It fell into a state of weakness, however, and in the year 1831 made overtures for a union with the Reformed Dutch Church at Verplanck's Point, then the only church of that faith in the town. These proposals were favorably entertained, the property and debt of the Peekskill congregation were assumed and the members were received under the title of "the Reformed Dutch Church of Cortlandtown." The number of members at the time was eleven, six of whom were women. Under the terms of the consolidation, the pastor of the Verplanck's Church was to preach in the village church part of the time, but all the baptisms, marriages and the names of communicants were to be registered at Verplanck's. Under the ministry of Dr. Cornelius D. Westbrook, and owing chiefly to his energetic efforts, the old "church on the hill" and the land surrounding it were sold and a new and more centrally located church was built on the south side of Main Street about two hundred feet east of Division Street. The corner-stone of this structure was laid April 29, 1839, and it was finished the same year. It was a frame building.

The church was incorporated January 3, 1843, and called the Van Nest Reformed Dutch Church, the title being given in respect to Abraham Van Nest, of New York, a friend of Dr. Westbrook, and a benefactor of the church. The first board of trustees were as follows: James Goetchius, William Leavins, John P. Cruger, Washington S. Whitney, J. Henry Ferris, Thomas Nelson, Hercules Lent, Charles A. G. Depew and Nehemiah S. Jacobs.

September 1, 1850, the Van Nest Reformed Dutch Church became a distinct organization. January 7, 1864, the corner-stone of the present house of worship, at the corner of James and Main Streets, was laid, and December 28, 1864, the building was occupied by the congregation. The old church was sold and the proceeds were used to purchase the lot on which its successor was built. The present church is a handsome brick structure, built in Gothic style, on a lot forty-six by one hundred feet in extent. The tower is eighty-five feet high.

The pastors of the church have been as follows :

Rev. Robert Kirkwood, installed October 21, 1831.
Rev. Cornelius Depew Westbrook, installed October 3, 1836.
Rev. Charles Duryee Buck, installed May 14, 1851; resigned November 1, 1870.
Rev. Jeremiah Searle, installed May 31, 1871; resigned March, 1873.
Rev. John B. Thompson, installed July 23, 1873; resigned July 1, 1874.
Rev. Isaac L. Kip, installed May 25, 1875; resigned August 1, 1879.
Rev. A. Messler Quick, installed February, 1883; resigned September 1, 1883.
Rev. Henry De Vries, installed March 25, 1884; present pastor.

For eleven months subsequent to October 31, 1879, Rev. William H. Miller preached as supply.

The number of members in the year 1884 was eighty-four, and of scholars enrolled in the Sunday-school sixty-seven. Dr. J. B. Gregory is superintendent. The elders are Dr. J. B. Gregory, Samuel Pugsley, Benson Dyckman and William Birdsall. The deacons are H. B. Strang, E. M. Powell, Isaac Pugsley and Melvin Cronk.

ROMAN CATHOLIC—**THE CHURCH OF THE ASSUMPTION**.¹—The Catholics of Peekskill attended church at Verplanck's Point until the year 1858. In that year, at the time of the Feast of the Nativity, Peekskill was established as a mission, under the charge of Rev. Nicholas O'Donnell, of Verplanck's, and afterwards attended from that place.

A hall was procured in Division Street, between Centre and South Streets, where divine services were held.

Father P. L. Madden was appointed pastor August, 1863, and through his exertions and the zeal of the leading Catholics, the present church was erected in 1865.

He was succeeded by Rev. James Hasson, whose pastorate extended from July, 1866, until 1871.

Rev. Dr. Patrick McSweeney became next pastor, and remained until February, 1872, when he was succeeded by Rev. J. Griffin. Father Griffin remained in charge until 1873, when Rev. Wm. P. Flannelly was appointed pastor. He continued to exercise the office until 1879, when Rev. Michael Callaghan was appointed pastor, with Rev. T. A. McCabe as assistant.

The church is a modest and pretty brick building of the Gothic style of architecture, situated on Union Street, and is capable of seating about five hundred people. The number of members is about thirteen hundred. The lay members of the board of trustees in 1884 were James Oates and Peter McGovern.

About one and a half miles from the centre of Peekskill, on Mt. Florence, on the Furnace Woods road, on the property formerly owned by D. H. Craig, is an institution belonging to the Order of Sisters of the Good Shepherd. It was purchased by them eight or nine years ago for the purpose of establishing a Novitiate of their order. The design of the Novitiate is to train Sisters for the work of caring for and reforming those of their own sex who have fallen from virtue.

Near Cortlandville is the Boland Farm² of two hundred and forty acres of land, purchased from James Sherwood by the managers of the Roman Catholic Orphan Asylum of New York about 1871, out of a fund bequeathed for the purpose by a sea-captain named Boland, which, with the accumulated interest, amounted at the time of the purchase to fifty thousand dollars. In 1875 a four-story brick building, forty by one hundred feet in extent, was erected, containing accommodations for one hun-

dred and thirty persons. The large boys from the Roman Catholic Orphan Asylum on Fifth Avenue, New York, are sent thither and instructed in farming or other useful work, and in the elementary branches of study. They are not retained on the farm after reaching the age of sixteen years, but homes are obtained for them in well-regulated families. The farm has been, since September, 1876, under the charge of the Brothers of the Christian Schools, a society numbering about twelve thousand members and three hundred novitiates, and having for their object the Christian education of youth. The number of orphan boys on the farm in 1884 was about one hundred.

ZION AFRICAN METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH was organized in 1878, and was presided over for the first three years of its existence by the Rev. George E. Smith. His successors were as follows, in order: Rev. George E. Jackson for one year, Rev. Joseph P. Smith for one year, Rev. Thomas C. Johnson for one year, and Rev. Andrew V. Dickson, the present pastor, who assumed charge in June, 1882.

During the time of the Rev. George E. Smith the congregation built for themselves a house of worship on Highland Avenue, near Orchard Street. They were unable to pay for it, and it was sold under foreclosure after a few years. They were still allowed to hold their meetings there, however, and in 1884 the sum of twelve hundred and fifty dollars had been collected towards buying back the church, which is valued at twenty-five hundred dollars. The number of members in 1884 was only six, but the average attendance each Sunday was forty or fifty. A flourishing Sunday-school in addition was attended by forty scholars. William Crumb is its superintendent. The trustees of the church are as follows: Charles E. States, Henry Tunson, Abram Jackson, David Jackson and George Hutchison.

EDUCATION.

DISTRICT SCHOOLS OF PEEKSKILL.—The village of Peekskill is embraced in School Districts Nos. 7 and 8, which are the most populous in the town. Each contains a large and handsome school-house. The histories of these districts are as follows:

The first school-house in District No. 7, and indeed of the village of Peek-kill, was situated on the brow of the hill, on the north side of South Street, about half-way from Division Street to the foot of the hill. It was burnt, as a map of "the village as it was in 1800" records, about the beginning of the century. Its successor was "the old yellow school-house," which probably stood in the same place, and was just opposite the present residence of William Amos.

About the year 1849 a new and large school-house was erected on a lot on the north side of South Street, some hundred feet or more east of the old one, and just opposite the foot of Smith Street. The school becoming too small, an effort was made to combine with District No. 8 in constructing one large school,

¹ By the pastor, Rev. Michael Callaghan.

² On this farm was the first landing for boats at Peekskill.

which resulted in a junction that was dissolved in a few months. In 1859 three and a half acres of ground were purchased on Drum Hill for fifteen hundred dollars, and a school-house was erected the same year for about seven thousand dollars. In the year 1860 the district was organized under the general Union Free-School District Law, and Messrs. Philander Stewart, Sanford R. Knapp, George W. Raymond, Owen T. Coffin and John R. Benedict were chosen the first Board of Education. The building was enlarged in 1881. In 1884 Mr. George F. Cole was principal, and had ten assistants.

The records of Union Free-School District No. 8, at Peekskill, are very meagre until the year 1844, but it is known that the district was in existence some time previous to 1829. The first school-house in the district was probably a little building which stood on Mill Street, and which was at one time taught by Coffin S. Brown. Districts No. 8 and No. 7 were joined by resolution of the commissioners of schools passed February 5, 1840, but this action was not popular, and the resolution was rescinded on June 24th following.

A meeting of the inhabitants of the district held October 8, 1844, authorized the purchase of a lot on the corner of James and Howard Streets for five hundred and seventy-one dollars, for the erection of a new school-house. The school-house was completed the next year at a cost, for the structure itself, the lot, the fences and improvements on the lot, of \$2085.55. December 22, 1858, the district became a Union Free-School District. William Nelson, John Ombony and Ephraim D. Fuller were the first Board of Education.

From the year 1869, an agitation was carried on for the purchase of a new site and the erection of a new school building, but it was only on March 17, 1882, that the present site was selected. The corner-stone of a new school-house was laid June 28, 1882, and the building was dedicated September 17, 1884.

The school is a very handsome brick building which stands in a large lot bounded by Abbey Street on the south, Hadden Street on the west, Paulding Street on the north and Decatur Street on the east. The cost of the lot was six thousand dollars, and of the building, complete, thirty-four thousand dollars, making the total cost forty thousand dollars.

The school opened with Mr. J. D. Sherman as principal and with eight assistant teachers.

ACADEMIES.

In Peekskill are located four academies, which are well attended and possessed of high reputations. They are the Peekskill Military Academy, the Westchester County Institute, St. Gabriel's School for Young Ladies and the Academy of Our Lady of Angels.

THE PEEKSKILL MILITARY ACADEMY.—The Peekskill Military Academy is the oldest and best

known of Peekskill's educational institutions. The original building was a square frame structure, which is still standing, and was built in the year 1834 by a capital of five thousand dollars, which was subscribed in five-dollar shares by the citizens of Peekskill. William Nelson, Tyler Fountain and Frederick W. Requa were the first trustees, and William Nelson was an especially generous subscriber to the erection fund.

The cost of the original building was five thousand one hundred and twenty-seven dollars. The first principal was Lyman Thompson. The institution was opened, in the fall of 1837, with forty-seven students. May 20, 1841, Andrew Huntington succeeded Mr. Thompson as principal. He remained until April, 1843, when he resigned. He was followed in May, 1843, by Albert Wells, who held the position until July 15, 1873. Colonel Charles J. Wright and Robert Donald then became principals; but, on the dissolution of the partnership, on January 28, 1880, the whole management of the institution fell into the hands of Colonel Wright, who has remained at the head of affairs ever since. The number of scholars during the school-year 1883-84 was one hundred and thirty-two, some of whom had come from South America, the West Indies and other foreign places.

The academy has frequently been enlarged, as the number of the scholars increased, and the buildings at present are quite extensive. The property is valued at about seventy-five thousand dollars. The academy is situated in a lot of about six acres, on an eminence known as Oak Hill. On the grounds stands the spreading oak tree on which the spy, Daniel Strang, was executed during the Revolution. The view from the building is very fine.

In addition to rooms for the classes of the various departments, the academy contains a laboratory well supplied with apparatus for practical work in chemistry and physics, a drawing-room, a music-room and an observatory supplied with an excellent seven-foot telescope. There is a fine gymnasium, a library containing one thousand volumes and a reading-room, which is supplied with a number of periodicals.

There are four courses of study which may be pursued: the Classical, four years in length, which is designed to prepare the student to enter the most advanced college; the Modern Language course of four years, which substitutes French and German for the Latin and Greek of the classical course; the English course, of four years; the Engineering course, of four years, and the Commercial course, of one year.

The academy is under the control of the Board of Regents of the State of New York. The Board of Trustees contains twelve members, who in 1884 were as follows: Hon. Owen T. Coffin, president; Sanford R. Knapp, secretary; Nathaniel Dain, treasurer, and Edward Wells, Coffin S. Brown, William P. Raymond, Uriah Hill, Jr., Jacob M. Shipley, D. F. Clapp,

William Mabie, D. S. Herrick and Frederick R. Fields.

Among the graduates who have attained distinction may be mentioned General James M. Husted, Chauncey M. Depew and Theodore Hyatt, the president of the Pennsylvania Military Academy.

Colonel Charles J. Wright, whose name has been closely identified with the successful progress of Peekskill Military Academy during the last twelve years, was born at St. Johnsbury, Vt., October 21, 1839. After obtaining a preparatory education in the public schools of Boston, he entered Hobart College, Geneva, N. Y., where he graduated in June, 1861. Foremost among the sons of New England to aid in the preservation of the Union, he enlisted in the army as a private of Company G, Sixteenth Regiment New Hampshire Volunteers, and served with that command under Butler and Banks, at New Orleans, as sergeant, sergeant-major and lieutenant, having been promoted for the daring displayed in conveying dispatches from Commodore Farragut to General Banks at Port Hudson, through the enemy's country, for which duty he was selected from among many volunteers on account of his peculiar fitness. In 1864 he was promoted to lieutenant-colonel, and on July 30th of the same year was severely wounded at Petersburg. After the capture of Fort Fisher, in January, 1865, Colonel Wright was sent forward to reconnoitre. In making notes of the position of the enemy he observed a company of Confederates firing at the Union forces, and being armed with a repeating rifle, he opened fire upon them in return. His movements attracted the attention of a Confederate sharpshooter concealed in the branches of a neighboring tree, and a well-directed shot inflicted upon Colonel Wright a dangerous and almost fatal wound. When the government resolved to enlist freedmen in the military service, he was actively employed in organizing and drilling the colored troops, and was at different times in command of the Twenty-seventh and Thirty-ninth Regiments of United States Colored Infantry. At the close of the war he was in command at Boonville, N. C., and was unceasing in his efforts to restore order in that section of the country.

Receiving an honorable discharge from the army in December, 1865, he returned to the North, and was shortly after appointed principal of the academy at Milton, Pa. In this position he remained till the school buildings were destroyed by fire in 1868, when he removed to Yonkers, and was for five years vice-principal of School No. 6. In 1873 he was appointed principal of the Military Academy in Peekskill, a position which he still retains. During his term of service the prosperity and the influence of this school have increased to a remarkable degree. Extensive additions have doubled the capacity of the school buildings, while the number of scholars has increased in equal proportion, and the name and fame of the institution are known not only to the State,

but throughout the country and in foreign lands. Under the care of its present principal its usefulness and excellence are not exceeded by any similar institution in the Empire State. Advanced courses of study have made it superior to anything in its past career; and as a natural consequence, the number of applications far exceed the means of accommodation; and schools in other localities, under teachers who have graduated from this institution, have attained a high position of usefulness and success.

THE WESTCHESTER COUNTY INSTITUTE, located on Fremont Street, was started about 1869 by Mr. Z. S. Searle, a graduate of West Point, under the name of the New York Scientific School. In 1877, after Mr. Searle's death, the school was taken by Charles Unterreiner and Elias Glenn, who conducted it together until 1880, when Prof. Unterreiner became sole owner. Prof. Unterreiner is a graduate of the University of Strasburg, and was a teacher in Alsace until the Franco-Prussian War, after which he came to America. The school prepares pupils of both sexes for business, higher scientific schools and colleges. The number of students in the school year 1883-84 was fifty.

ST. GABRIEL'S SCHOOL, under the charge of the Sisters of St. Mary, was opened for the instruction of young ladies in 1872. It is situated in the midst of a tract of about thirty acres, and commands a fine view of the village and the surrounding country. The Sisterhood of St. Mary is an incorporated society belonging to the Protestant Episcopal Church, whose members devote themselves to the education of young ladies. They have additional schools at No. 8 East Forty-sixth Street, New York, in Memphis, Tenn., and in Kenosha, Wisconsin. Only part of the teaching in St. Gabriel's School is done by the Sisters, experienced teachers from outside being provided to instruct in the German and French languages and in the English department. During the summer the place becomes a retreat for such of the members of the order as can be spared from their work in the city. The number of Sisters in Peekskill accordingly varies from twenty to thirty. During the school year of 1883-84 St. Gabriel's School was attended by fifty-four young ladies.

ACADEMY OF OUR LADY OF ANGELS.— A convent of the Missionary Sisters of the Order of St. Francis, was established in Peekskill, on the hill southeast of the railroad depot, in the early part of 1869, and the Academy of Our Lady of Angels was opened by them for the instruction of young ladies in April of the same year. There are about seventy-five Sisters of this order in the United States, of whom about forty are stationed in Peekskill. In 1884 the number of scholars attending the academy was about thirty.

A Home for poor children was established in 1879. The number of children intrusted to the care of the Sisters became so great that in 1882 a four-story brick



J. Wright



building, forty by ninety feet, was erected for their accommodation. The children in the Home in 1884 numbered over four hundred. The buildings are situated in a tract of about fourteen acres. The property is valued at one hundred thousand dollars.

MANUFACTORIES OF PEEKSKILL.

The manufacture and working of iron has from early days been the chief industry of Peekskill, and more than any other thing has caused the growth and importance of the place. Chief among the articles of manufacture produced are stoves, furnaces and ranges. In 1884 eight stove-works were in operation in the village, employing over seven hundred men, and there were in addition the machine-shop of Anderson Brothers, the works of the old Peekskill Manufacturing Co., an emory manufactory, two shirt-factories and a manufactory of lamp fixtures.

The iron business in Peekskill was begun in the year 1820 by Stephen Gregory, a man of very considerable mechanical ability. He commenced the manufacture of plowshares in a little shop about fifteen by eighteen feet in extent, located opposite the point where Kipp's livery stable now stands, on Main Street, and about one hundred feet north of the street. From there he moved across to the south side of Main Street into a new and somewhat larger foundry which he built on the lot where the Reformed Dutch Church afterwards stood. At first the manufacture was carried on in an exceedingly primitive style. The fire which melted the iron was brought to the proper degree of heat by an ordinary blacksmith's bellows, which was at first operated by his wife, and then, as the business expanded, by a horse. Pig iron was too large to be melted by his simple apparatus and he used old stove-plates and old plow castings instead. The cupola which he used to contain the melted iron could be carried around by two men, and the melted fluid was poured from it into the moulds over a lip shaped like that of a pitcher. He used coke and charcoal in melting his iron, and prepared his own coke in a little oven which stood in the rear of his second foundry.

Gregory afterwards moved to Bridgeport, Conn., and started another foundry. He subsequently operated a foundry in Port Chester, and from that place came to Tarrytown, where he was not engaged in business. From Tarrytown he returned to Peekskill, where he died in 1847, aged fifty-seven years.

The foundry was bought by Gregory's brother and lay idle until purchased, about 1825 by James Wiley. About 1828 James Wiley died, and his brother, Bernard and Eber Conklin succeeded him, under the firm-name of Wiley & Conklin, James H. Conklin being probably a silent partner. The paper-mill of Gross & Ritter, at Annsville, having burned down, Wiley & Conklin built a foundry on its site, and moved thither about 1831. February 1, 1834, James H. Conklin and James Taylor were admitted as partners, the firm becoming Wiley, Conklin & Co. In 1835

they moved back to Peekskill and occupied a building on the east side of Division Street, about fifty feet south of the present National Bank. In the same year Reuben R. Finch, who had formerly kept a dry-goods store in Peekskill, became a partner. Up to this time the firm had devoted their attention to the manufacture of plowshares and other agricultural implements, but through Mr. Finch's influence they now began the manufacture of stoves also. In 1837 Bernard Wiley and the Conklins withdrew from the business, and Finch, Taylor & Co. became their successors, Eihu E. Baker being the company. In 1840 Messrs. Finch and Baker went out, taking the machinery and apparatus, and leaving Mr. Taylor the real estate. Two years later Mr. Taylor associated Mr. Flagler with him, and the two operated the foundry for seven or eight years, when they failed. Stores have now taken the place of their building.

Messrs. Finch & Baker, after withdrawing from the foundry, on Division Street, purchased a building on Centre Street (now Central Avenue), and started a foundry where they manufactured articles of husbandry, caldrons, plows, machinery and, to a limited extent, stoves. It was not until about 1856 that the foundry became devoted entirely to the manufacture of stoves. After various changes in the proprietorship, in 1867 "The Union Stove-Works" was incorporated, Uriah Hill, son-in-law of Reuben R. Finch, being president; Reuben R. Finch, Jr., vice-president; Nathan L. Finch, his brother, secretary; and Peter B. Acker, son-in-law of Reuben R. Finch, treasurer. On the death of Nathan L. Finch, in 1869, Mr. Acker became both secretary and treasurer, and no further change in the company has occurred since. The company claim for Mr. Acker the credit of having originated the nickel-plating of stoves, which gives them so handsome an appearance. They employ about one hundred moulders and about eighty other hands in various capacities.

Reuben R. Finch, who has been closely identified with the manufacturing interests of Peekskill, is descended from Joseph Finch, who was born in 1640. In March, 1664, Joseph Finch settled in Greenwich, Fairfield County, Conn., where he married Elizabeth, only daughter of John Austin, November 23d of the same year. Until his death he was one of the most influential and wealthy men of the town. He served as one of the selectmen, was captain of the town company and four times honored by his fellow-townsmen by election to the office of constable, a post at that time of high importance and honor. He died in the early part of the year 1714, leaving children,—Joseph, Samuel, Jonathan, Benjamin, Elizabeth, Sarah and two other daughters whose names are not known.

Jonathan, the third son, was born at Greenwich, Conn. The first account of him is dated March 18, 1708, when he, with a number of others, signed the

protest against the Rev. Mr. Morgan's running a mill "while he continued in ye work of ye ministry." His wife was Abigail, and he left children,—Nathan and Abigail, and also a daughter whose name is unknown, who married Charles Green.

Nathan Finch, their first child, was born in Greenwich, Conn., in 1718. He died in 1803, leaving five children,—Jonathan, Nathan, Lydia, Abigail and Deborah.

Jonathan Finch was born in 1750, died April 25, 1836, "Aged eighty-five years, four months and twenty-six days." His first wife, Deborah Lockwood, died May 2, 1817, at the age of sixty-three. His second wife, Rhoda Potts, died October 16, 1866, aged eighty-six years.

Reuben Finch, his only child was born in Stanwich, Fairfield County, Conn., July 19, 1773. He married Abigail Reynolds, who was born in Stanwich, November 13, 1774, and died June 6, 1861. They were married October 5, 1794. Their children were Reuben R., Deborah, Amos, Nathan, Lockwood, Mary, Jonathan, Hannah, Julia E. and George.

Reuben Reynolds Finch was born in Stamford, Conn., September 24, 1795. In 1826 he removed to Peekskill and engaged for a short time in mercantile pursuits.

At this time the merchants of Peekskill carried on an extensive trade with the farmers in the surrounding country, extending as far as Patterson, in Dutchess County, and Danbury, Conn., and the produce of all that region was brought to Peekskill to be forwarded to New York, thus creating a large local trade in the village. The business of pork-packing was largely carried on, and Mr. Finch was extensively engaged in that industry. He was also deeply interested in manufacturing shoes, and employed many men in the village and the surrounding country and in the prison at Sing Sing. In 1830 he established a stove manufactory in Peekskill, and thus became the pioneer in one of the most important business enterprises in the county. He entered into a partnership with James Taylor, the firm-name being Taylor & Finch, and established the business on Division Street. They soon after took into partnership Elihu E. Baker, and the firm-name became Finch, Taylor & Co. This firm was dissolved, and he and his partner, Elihu E. Baker, continued the business, the firm being R. R. Finch & Co., and opened a salesroom in New York. Subsequently he admitted to partnership his son, Edward B. Finch, and William Boardman, and his son-in-law, Uriah Hill, Jr. Mr. Boardman disposed of his interest to Mr. Finch, who, a few years later, sold the entire business to his son, Edward B. Finch, and his son-in-law, Joel W. Frost, who, at the time of the California excitement, resold the establishment to Mr. Finch, to engage in business in San Francisco, and Mr. Finch continued it, taking as partners his sons Reuben R., Jr., and Nathan, and his son-in-law, Uriah Hill, Jr., who, having acquired the

whole interest in the business, upon the retirement of Mr. Finch, in 1862, had it incorporated under the name of the "Union Stove Works." This name was given to the business by Edward B. Finch and Joel W. Frost when they were the owners, and about this time the extensive buildings in Centre Street were erected.

Mr. Finch married Deborah, daughter of Benjamin Brush, of an old Long Island family. Their children were Alethea, wife of Uriah Hill, Jr., of Peekskill; Edward B., of New York; Mary, wife of James Merritt, of Plainfield, N. J.; Sarah, who died unmarried; Reuben R., of Peekskill; Delia, wife of Joel W. Frost, after whose decease she married Benjamin F. Depew; Nathan, deceased; Angeline, wife of Peter B. Acker, of Orange, N. J.; Benjamin, who died unmarried, and Emily, wife of John D. Hutchinson, of Peekskill.

After suffering for some years from feeble health Mr. Finch died in September, 1865.

To his energy Peekskill is indebted for no small part of its prosperity. He was active in procuring the charter of the now Westchester County National Bank, and was one of the first board of directors, and one of the commissioners for apportioning the stock among the subscribers. He was one of the original stockholders of the Peekskill Academy, and was energetic in projecting and sustaining this educational institution. He erected the Eagle Hotel on Main Street and owned it until his death. The extensive buildings of the "Union Stove Works" are among the first objects that meet the eye of a traveler as he lands in the village, and their productions are sent to all parts of the world.

At the time of his death Mr. Finch had been for nearly forty years a resident of the village, and during all that time had been closely identified with its interests and advancement. The business he established is continued with increased facilities by his descendants, and is justly reckoned among the most extensive manufacturing enterprises of the county. In 1882 his grandson, James W. Finch, started a new foundry in Peekskill, and thus assists to continue the business which was founded by his grandfather.

The old Gregory foundry on Main Street was refitted in 1834, and occupied by Henry Robinson and James Hawes, under the firm-name of Hawes & Robinson, who manufactured plows and grate-frames for Ward & Goadby, of New York. After about two years they failed. Then Hawes and Abraham N. Griffin, his son-in-law, bought the foundry, and had it removed to the lower dock, where they carried on business under the firm-name of Hawes & Griffin. It was afterwards owned by Hawes, Roake & Co., in 1841 by Roake & Clements (John C. Roake and Peter Q. Clements), and in 1845 or 1846 by Judson H. Gilbert & Son. The fixtures were subsequently sold and taken to Stuyvesant, up the river, to fit up the foundry of Backus & Co. The old building was for some time

afterwards occupied by Niles Frost, Jr., in the manufacture of stove brick, and was then torn down to make way for the foundry of the Mutual Stove Company.

In 1841 Thomas Southard, a former furniture dealer and cabinet-maker of Peekskill, and John H. Hyatt started a stove foundry a few rods north of the old Reformed Dutch Church, on the south side of Main Street. In less than a year Mr. Hyatt withdrew, and, with the exception of another year, when Samuel Utter, of New York, was a partner, Mr. Southard conducted the business alone until January 1, 1857, when Charles H. Frost became associated with him. Mr. Southard died in November, 1859, and his son, William D. Southard, succeeded him. After various further changes, the firm, in 1884, was Southard, Robertson & Co., William D. Southard, George W. Robertson and William Corry being the partners. The manufactory is known as "The People's Stove Works." The number of moulders employed averages seventy-five, and of other employes about sixty.

Judson H. Gilbert started the erection of a stove works on Central Avenue, west of the manufactory of Reuben R. Finch, in 1844, but was not able to complete it, and was bought out by Washington S. Whitney and Coffin S. Brown. James De La Montanya succeeded Mr. Brown, and Watson Sanford succeeded Mr. De La Montanya. After a number of changes a stock company, known as "The National Stove Company," was organized in 1865 to run the works, with Watson Sanford as president and John Truslow as vice-president. In 1881, after several further changes, the "Sanford National Stove Works" was incorporated, with George D. Sanford as president, and no other officers. The number of moulders employed averages about fifty, with about thirty-five other hands.

THE PEEKSKILL STOVE WORKS was established in 1853, by John H. Hyatt, on Water Street. It was managed successively by Montross, Lent & Co., and by a Stock Company. In 1879 the property came into the possession of Isaac J. Baxter, who has since operated there the I. J. Baxter Iron-Works. This manufactory employs an average of thirty hands.

MONTROSS, LENT & Co. purchased the Peekskill Stove-Works from John H. Hyatt, August 12, 1865, the firm being composed of Isaac T. Montross, C. C. Lent, A. B. Pollock and P. B. States. In 1870 Mr. States withdrew; in 1872 they moved to their present establishment on the lower dock. Mr. Pollock died in 1878, and the firm became Montross & Lent, as it is at present. This manufactory retains the name of "The Peekskill Stove Works." The number of hands employed averages about ninety.

THE AMERICAN STOVE COMPANY was incorporated October 20, 1867, with a capital of twenty-five thousand dollars, and with D. J. Haight as president and Isaac J. Baxter as superintendent. Their works were

located on the upper dock. After some years operation this company failed. In 1881 Ely & Ramsay, a firm established in Troy in 1868, took the works, and continue the manufacture of stoves at present. The firm is composed of Nathan L. Ely & D. S. Ramsay. The number of hands employed averages one hundred and twenty-five.

THE MUTUAL STOVE COMPANY was a co-operative concern, born of a moulders' strike, and was organized in June, 1870, with a capital of fifteen thousand dollars, which was afterwards increased to twenty-five thousand dollars. James W. Husted was its first president. It failed, and the real-estate became the property of Morris H. Clinton, a lumberman, the plant going elsewhere. It is at present occupied by the National Stove Company, a New York City concern, with J. B. Thomas, president. They have the plant of the old "National Stove Company." The number of men employed averages fifty.

The firm of Finch & Co., composed of James W. Finch and Charles W. McCutchen, began business at the corner of Elizabeth and Brown Streets, January 1, 1882. They manufacture a general line of medium priced stoves and ranges and employ about thirty-five men.

THE OLD PEEKSKILL PLOW WORKS.—In the winter of 1826—27, Seth Hoyt erected a building on Main Street, and began the manufacture of plows and plow-castings. Upon his death a few years later his former superintendent, Truman Minor, carried on the business for a time. In 1835, he and Frost Horton formed a partnership, the firm name being Minor & Horton. In 1839, George W. Depew, one of the first two apprentices in the iron business in the village, (Colonel John H. Hyatt having been the other) was admitted to the firm, which then became Minor, Horton & Co. Mr. Minor sold his interest in 1855 to Edward B. Finch, and in the following year Mr. Finch's interest was bought by the other partners. The sons of the partners, George W. Depew, Jr., and Stephen D. Horton, were granted the interest purchased from Mr. Finch, and the firm-name became Horton, Depew & Sons. In 1864 Mr. Depew, Sr., sold his interest to James B. Brown, who shortly after acquired the interests of Frost Horton and Stephen D. Horton. Mr. Brown then formed a stock company to operate the plow works, which was called the Peekskill Plow Company. About 1870 the company moved their establishment to Newark, N. J., inflicting thereby a severe blow to Peekskill's prosperity. In 1878, having been burned out at Newark, they established their works at Yonkers, where, under the name of the New York Plow Company, they do an extensive business at present.

THE CENTRE DOCK FOUNDRY was established in 1835 on the Centre Dock by Judson H. Gilbert, Alexander Fairley, and Dr. James Fountain, under the firm name of Gilbert, Fairley & Co. For many years it was operated by David L. Seymour & Sons,

who, under the name of the Peekskill Manufacturing Company, carried on the manufacture of sugar-mills and brick machinery, and executed general jobbing work. A short time after Mr. Seymour's death, which occurred about 1880, the concern passed into the possession of the Mutual Life Insurance Company of New York, and in 1884 was being operated to a limited extent by S. Fletcher Allen.

A wire works, established at Annsville in the year 1835, by Stoutenburgh, Marroll & Co., under the superintendency of Thomas Wallace, who died not many years ago, the owner of an extensive wire mill at Ansonia, Conn., was an industry which assumed great importance. In 1878 the mills became the property of R. H. Wolff & Co., of 93 John Street, New York, who enlarged them very considerably. They employed from three hundred to three hundred and fifty hands, and their weekly pay-roll amounted to about three thousand dollars. These mills were burned on the 25th of August, 1883, with a loss of \$180,000, upon which there was an insurance of \$131,840. The proprietors decided not to rebuild at Annsville, but moved their business to Bridgeport, Conn. The burning of these mills was the largest and most destructive fire that ever occurred at Peekskill, and their removal was felt as a great blow to the prosperity of the place.

THE PEEKSKILL BLAST-FURNACE, located at the mouth of Annsville Creek, was built in 1853 by the Peekskill Iron Company, a corporation of which the principal members were Warren and Uriah A. Murdoch, of New York, and Seth Allen of Peekskill, the last named gentleman being the agent and manager. The furnace was operated a number of years successfully, and manufactured a superior quality of pig-iron. It was connected by a narrow-gauge railroad, about six miles in length, belonging to the company, with the Croft Iron Mine in Putnam County, and from ore from this mine and other mines belonging to the company in Dutchess County and at Lake Champlain, the iron was manufactured. The present owners of the furnace are the estates of T. J. F. Flint and Luther Clark, both of whom were New Yorkers. Owing to the decline in the price of iron the furnace has not been running for about five or six years, although but recently before that time enlarged and remodeled. The furnace is seventy feet high and sixteen feet wide across the boshes.

In 1831 Samuel H. Hurd started a pottery on Water Street, where the works of I. J. Baxter are now located. Abraham H. Lord succeeded him, and converted the pottery into a fire-brick works. This was about the year 1850. He moved his business directly across the street. About 1860 Ardenus R. Free became the owner, and in 1867 Stephen D. Horton and William Mabie succeeded him under the firm name of Horton & Mabie. They are the present proprietors. Their manufactures include all shapes of fire-bricks, stove and range linings, cupola

brick, and the like. They employ about fourteen men.

Stephen D. Horton, the senior member of the firm of Horton & Mabie, is also the sheriff of Westchester County. He was born in Peekskill, February 17, 1837, his ancestry being among the oldest in the country, dating back to the times of the Pilgrims. He is the eighth in the line of descent from Barnabas Horton, one of the founders of the town of Southold, Long Island, in 1640. The line of ancestry is as follows: 1. Barnabas; 2. Joseph; 3. David; 4. Daniel; 5. Stephen; 6. Wright; 7. Frost; 8. Stephen D. His father, Hon. Frost Horton, a prominent citizen of this county, was born September 15, 1806, and represented his district in the Legislature in 1858. He also held many village offices, and was extensively engaged in business in Peekskill. He married Phebe Tompkins, a connection of Governor Daniel B. Tompkins. They were the parents of three children—Stephen D. and Cornelia twins, (the latter died at the age of fifteen), and William James, who is the present supervisor of the town of Yorktown. Frost Horton died, much lamented by the community, November 11, 1880, and the village lost a useful and worthy citizen. His son, Stephen D., obtained his early education at the well-known Peekskill Academy, and at the age of fifteen commenced business in the foundry of the plough manufactory in which his father was a partner. When he reached the age of nineteen he became a partner. The firm was at first Horton & Depew, afterwards changed to Horton, Depew & Sons. The extensive trade which this firm had with the South was destroyed by the war, and in 1864 he disposed of his interest in the business. He next engaged in the manufacture of mowing-machines as a member of the firm of Horton & Mabie, afterwards the "Peekskill Manufacturing Company." The business was sold to David L. Seymour, and, in company with Mr. Mabie, Mr. Horton engaged in the business of making stove-lining and fire-bricks having bought the establishment of A. R. Free, and in this business he still continues. He has been a life-long member of the Democratic party, is a man of great influence in political matters, and has been trustee of the village of Peekskill for several terms, and four times elected president.

In 1882 he was elected sheriff of Westchester County by a majority of four thousand four hundred and twenty-seven, the largest ever given for a county officer when there were two tickets in the field, which is the best possible proof of his popularity as a citizen.

He is a member of the Masonic fraternity and Westchester Commandery. He is a trustee of the Cortlandt Cemetery Association, and one of the stockholders of the Westchester County National Bank, of which his father was one of the original founders. He is a member of St. Paul's Methodist Episcopal Church, and one of the trustees of the society.



Stephen D. Horton







Geo. Robertson.

He married Emma C., daughter of Joshua Horton, of the town of Cortlandt. They have one son, Stephen F., now a student in the Medical Department of the University of the City of New York.

Mr. Horton's mother is yet living at the age of eighty-two. Her sister, Mrs. Katie Purdy, is also living at the advanced age of ninety-four.

A factory was built on the eastern end of Main Street a number of years ago by George Dayton, to make lamp brackets and lamp fixtures. It belongs at present to Finch & Co., owners of the stove works on Brown Street, but has not been operated for about a year.

THE PLASTER MILL of Robert Mackellar, located on Central Avenue, just above the Union Stove Works, is on the site of an old flouring mill, which was built probably only a short time subsequent to the Revolution. Sloops were at that time able to run up the estuary of Magrigraries Brook, nearly to this point, and receive cargoes of flour for New York.

THE NEW YORK EMORY COMPANY occupy a stone building on the upper dock, erected by Paulding & Brown for a plow works. The company came there in January, 1881, for the purpose of utilizing the emory which is mined back in the country. They did not find it of very good quality, and finally began to use imported emory instead. The emory is crushed into powder of different degrees of fineness. Alfred C. Post, of New York, is president of the company; W. H. B. Post is secretary, and A. G. Sinclair, superintendent. The number of hands employed varies from twelve to sixteen.

THE MACHINE WORKS of Anderson Brothers, at present located on Hudson Avenue, near South Street, was established by H. & E. Anderson, the present proprietors, in 1867. They manufacture steam engines and general machinery, and employ about half a dozen men.

THE SHIRT MANUFACTORY of T. J. Maxwell, on the corner of Division and Paulding Streets, was established a number of years ago by Bloomer, King & Co., and came into the possession of its present proprietor in 1882. It affords employment to about twenty persons, mostly women, at the building, and a considerable number outside. R. H. Macy & Co., of New York, manufacture ladies' underwear in the portion of the building on Main Street, located above the corporation rooms.

Among the manufacturers of Westchester County there are few who have achieved a more honorable record than George W. Robertson. He was born in New York, October 19, 1838. His early education was obtained in the public schools, and at the Mechanics' Institute, subsequently at the Peekskill Academy, then under the able care of Albert Wells, and in 1856 he was a student at Charlottesville University. Upon leaving school he resolved to learn the carpenter's trade, and served a three years' apprenticeship.

The outbreak of the Civil War occurred when he had reached early manhood, and he was among the first to enlist from Peekskill. Joining the Seventy-first New York Regiment, he participated in all its engagements, and at the battle of Bull Run was slightly wounded. In this engagement he personally secured from capture the flag of the Newburgh Howitzer Company, and returned it to Captain Ellis on his return to the Washington Navy Yard. He distinguished himself as a scout in 1861, and in 1862, as lieutenant of Company "B," Seventy-first Regiment, he acted as adjutant of the left wing, under Lieutenant-Colonel Cole. From 1863 to 1868 he was superintendent and manager of the Cincinnati Elevator Company, of Cincinnati, Ohio. In 1868 he returned to Peekskill, and succeeded Charles H. Frost in the foundry business, and has ever since been an active member of the firm of Southard, Robertson & Company, of Water Street and Peck Slip, New York City. The foundry, which is located in the village of Peekskill, is of great extent, and the firm is among the largest stove manufacturers in the State. During his entire business life he has been among the foremost of the public citizens of Peekskill. In 1872 he was elected to the office of water commissioner, and twice re-elected, and was for a portion of the time president of the board. The village is indebted to him in no small degree for its present very efficient system of water-works. It was in just recognition of his distinguished merit that he received from the Republican party the nomination for member of Assembly in 1881, a nomination which was ratified by his election. While in the Legislature he served on the Committee on manufactures, and Commerce and Navigation, and was known as a faithful representative of the district which did an honor to itself by electing him. Pressing business engagements caused him to decline renomination. Through his active instrumentality the "Cortlandt Cemetery Association" was organized in January, 1884, and of this association he is president.

In 1868 he became connected with St. Paul's Methodist Episcopal Church, and from thence onward he has been one of its leading members, and unsparing both of his labor and his means to advance its welfare and increase its usefulness. For nine years he has been the superintendent of the Sunday-school, and is the present president of the board of trustees, and the financial plan proposed by him has, through the perfection of its working, been one of the efficient causes of the well-known prosperity of the church.

Mr. Robertson is descended from an honorable ancestry. His father, James Robertson, was a very prominent business man of New York, and is noted as the inventor of the stop-cock and the hydrants used in connection with the Croton water-works, and was alderman for the Seventeenth Ward in 1847-48. He came to Peekskill in 1850, and purchased of Philip Van Cortlandt the old Van Cortlandt homestead, a

place of great historic interest. On that place he is now passing the evening of his days in calm retirement. He married Mary A., daughter of Albert Canfield. Their ten children are Charles F., Episcopal Bishop of Missouri; James H., of the firm of Sax & Robertson, New York; Elizabeth, wife of Joseph Dixon, of St. Louis; Amelia, wife of Bishop Cyrus D. Foss, of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and now residing in Minneapolis; Emily R., wife of William D. Southard; Mary, wife of Robert Wilson, of St. Louis; Frederick, now living with his parents on the Van Cortlandt homestead; Augusta, wife of Arthur Morse, deceased; Albert, who died in New Orleans in 1868; and George W., who married Ella, daughter of Marine Ruffner, of Cincinnati. They have two children now living, Carrie and Pearl. Three of their offspring, Susie, Minnie and Ella, died in early childhood, the last two in 1877, and an addition to St. Paul's Methodist Episcopal Church in Peekskill was erected by Mr. Robertson as a memorial of them.

In 1878 Mr. Robertson was the organizer of Vosburg Post, G. A. R., and for three years its commander. This Post is a flourishing organization, and numbers more than one hundred members at present.

THE RIVER TRAFFIC.—The earliest commerce of the town and vicinity was conducted at a dock located on what is now called the Boland Farm. Later it was transferred to Pemart's dock, at the mouth of the Peekskill Creek, where the blast furnace is now located. To a certain Captain Swim, who sailed a market-sloop from this dock in the year 1773, is said to belong the honor of having been the first skipper to run a boat between Peekskill and New York. The water at the mouth of Annsville Creek was formerly much deeper than now, and the landing facilities were excellent. The growth of the village at a point further down the river caused the landing place of vessels to be transferred thither, and Pemart's dock lost its importance. Before the construction of the railroads Peekskill was the depot from which Westchester County for miles around, from a large portion of Putnam County, and even from Connecticut, shipped their produce to New York City. Apples and other fruit, butter, potatoes, cattle, sheep, calves, live pigs and dressed pork were the principal articles of shipment, and were received in such quantities as to give employment at one time, when this commerce was at its height, to six market-sloops, while three passenger steamboats also shared in the business.

Among the captains of the market-sloops were Thomas Brown, Charles A. Depew, Frederick W. Flanagan, Barnet Requa, B. F. Sherwood, Ambrose Cock, Isaac Conkling, Isaac Depew, Solomon Rundle, James B. Travis, John L. Travis, Frederick W. Requa, William H. Lyon and Edward Lyon. The building of the Harlem and the Hudson River Railroads, and the adoption of quicker methods of river

travel, were a death blow to the traffic of these sloops.

The early days on the river, when it furnished almost the only avenue of commerce, were full of life and bustle. Cornelius Vanderbilt for some years run a boat between Peekskill and New York, and had quite a struggle for the mastery of the route. In 1832 he began operations with the steamboat "Westchester," having, as he avers in a card to the public some time later, no interest in any other boat in the North River. He met with a rival in the "Water-Witch," a steamboat which was owned by an association of the people all along the river, and farmers back in the country, and which was designed to enable them to resist the extravagant charges of steamboat-owners. The rivalry between the "Water-Witch" and the Commodore's craft waxed so hot, that the former finally began to charge only one shilling (twelve and a half cents) for passage from New York to Peekskill. The losses occasioned by the cutting of rates resulted in some of the stockholders in the "Water-Witch" losing courage, and the wily Commodore was enabled to buy a controlling interest in her. After that the rivalry ceased. The "Water-Witch" was but one of several boats owned at different times by similar associations, all of which brought loss to the stockholders.

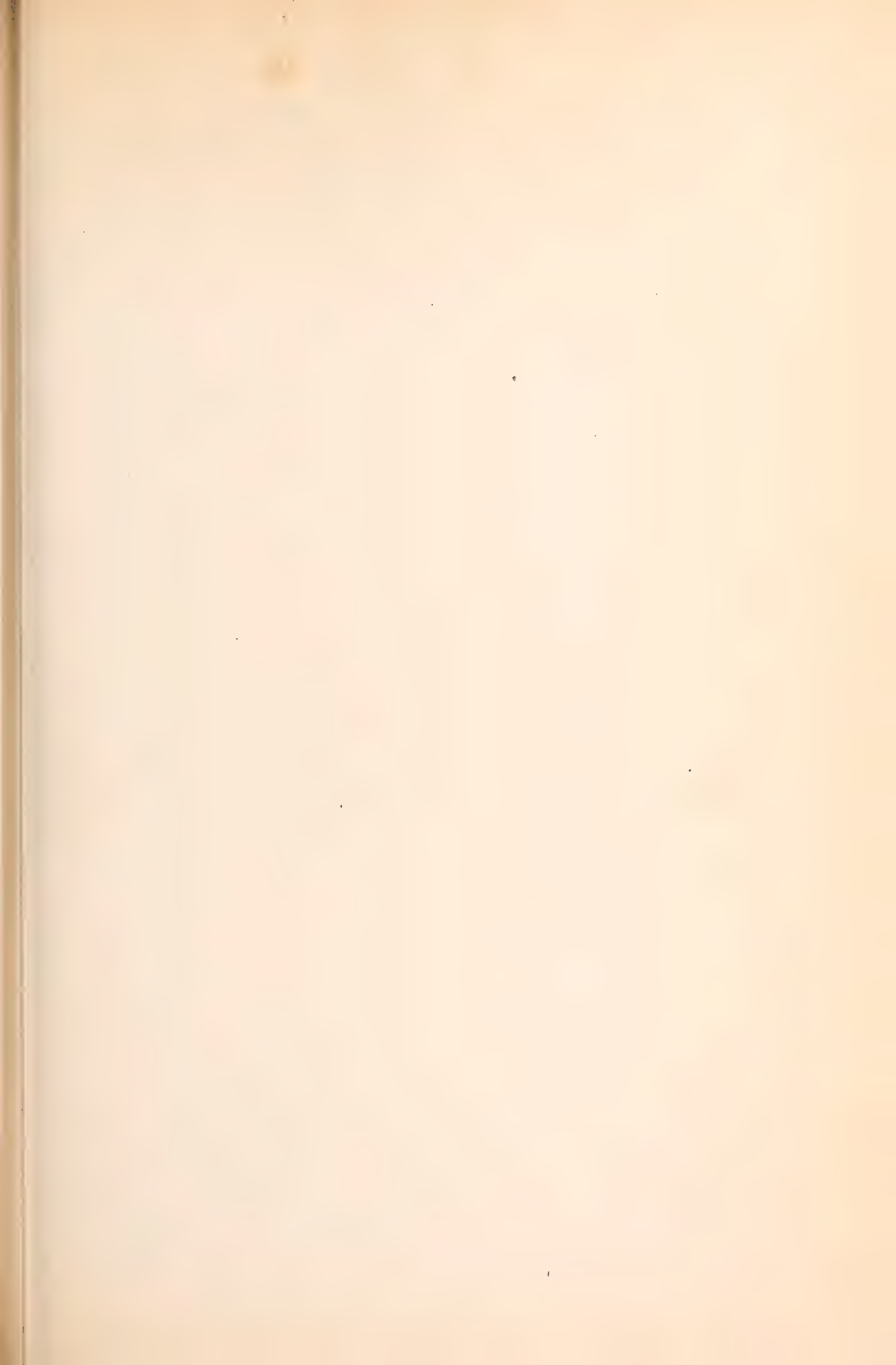
June 6, 1831, the "General Jackson," plying between Peekskill and New York, exploded on her down trip off Grassy Point, and all the front portion of the cabin was torn away. Three persons were killed outright,—the fireman, a little girl of twelve years of age who had just tripped on board laughing and talking gaily, and William Mitchell, a resident of Peekskill. Beverly Rathbone, of Peekskill, was injured so severely that he died some time after the accident. Jacob Vanderbilt, brother of Cornelius, was captain of the boat, and escaped without injury. The date of the explosion of the "General Jackson" was indicated in almanacs for years after.

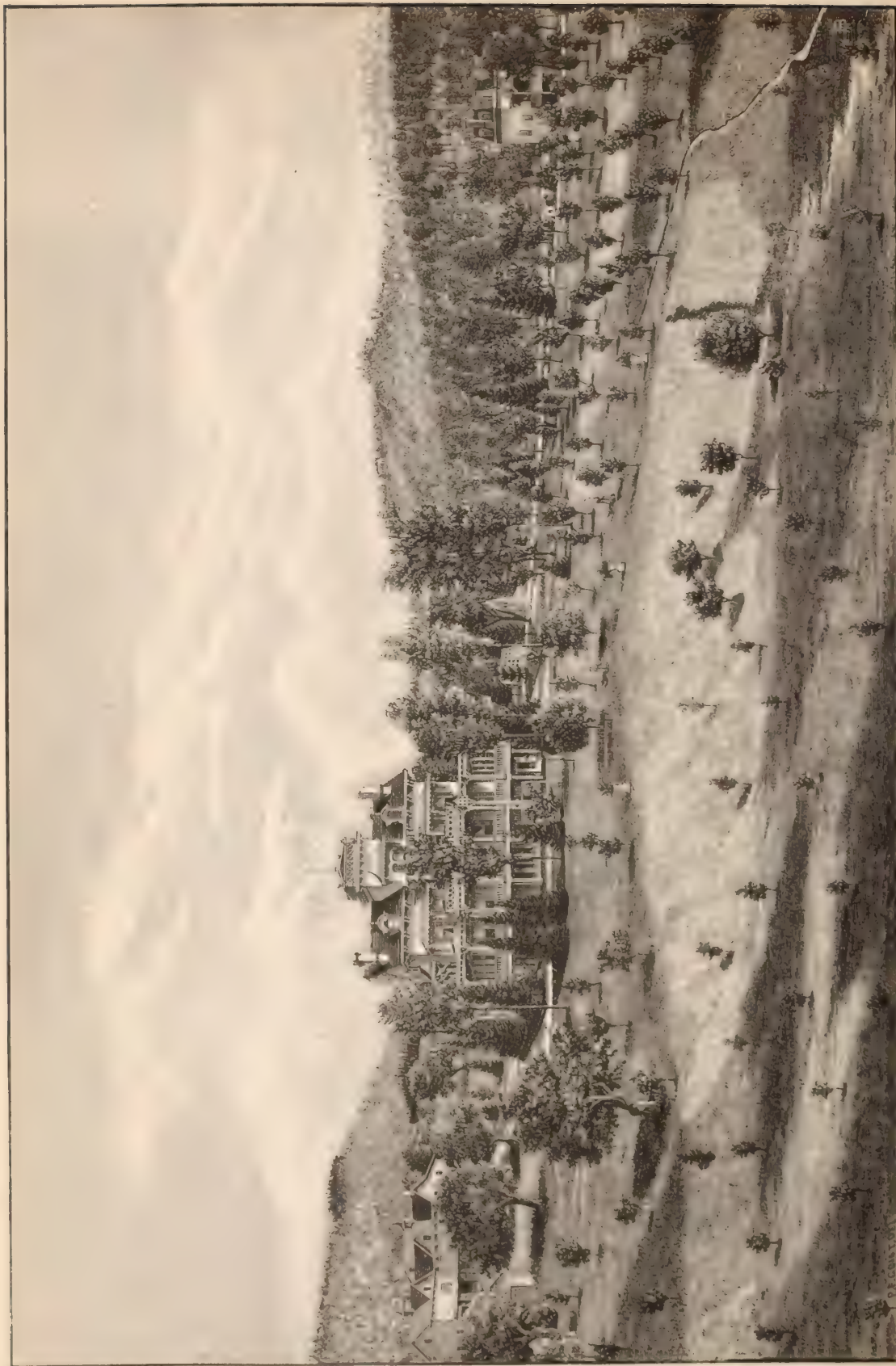
In 1841 occurred a great contest between two morning steamboats, the "Telegraph" and the "Kosciusko," which divided the people of Peekskill into two parties, each favoring a different boat. In their haste to outstrip each other, these boats more than once carried passengers beyond their stopping places, and one morning, each being anxious to have the first chance of securing passengers at the towns below, they drew out of their landing-place, at Peekskill, an hour before the appointed time, leaving fifty disappointed passengers behind. Like the gallant warrior from whom it received its name, the "Kosciusko," was compelled to acknowledge defeat, and left the "Telegraph" in possession of the route. The "Telegraph" ran between Peekskill and New York for many years after.

In the year 1845 a bridge was built by Colonel Pierre Van Cortlandt across the wide estuary of Annsville Creek, a short distance east of the present



H. P. Farrington





RESIDENCE OF HARVEY P. FARRINGTON.

P. C. CHASE, N.Y.

railroad bridge. A dock and hotel were also built by him at Roa Hook.

Some of the large steamboats which could not land at Peekskill on account of the shallowness of the water, made Van Cortlandt's dock a stopping place, and the people of Peekskill traveled to or from them by way of the bridge. This condition of affairs continued for several years, when the passage of the railroad along the river in 1849 rendered the landing of steamboats there unnecessary. The bridge was allowed to go uncared for, and the moving of ice and the stress of wind and weather soon accomplished its destruction. The hotel was taken down owing to the removal of the valuable gravel on which it was built.

Harvey P. Farrington, who from early life has been connected with the transportation business on the Hudson and other waters adjacent to New York, was born in the town of Harrison, Westchester County, July 21, 1820. His father was also engaged in the same business for many years. At first Mr. Farrington ran several sloops, but subsequently used steam vessels and barges for transporting freight. At a later period he became connected with the Knickerbocker Ice Company, Irving Savings Bank and Irving National Bank, being a director in the two last-named institutions. He is also interested in the Broadway Insurance Company, and is one of its present directors.

His home in Westchester County is situated at Croton-on-Hudson, and commands a beautiful view of the river. He married Martha J., daughter of William D. Wells, of Westerly, R. I. Their children are Harvey, Florence, Elizabeth and Jane L. Mr. Farrington's father, David Farrington, died in August, 1876. His mother, Mrs. Elizabeth, is now living with her son at Croton, at the advanced age of eighty-nine.

After the opening of the railroad, steamboating became less profitable, and during the Civil War there was a short interval in which no steamboat—at least none of importance,—was running from Peekskill. The rates for freight and passage on the Hudson River Railroad, which had at first been moderate, during the war became excessively high. In order to rid Peekskill of the incubus of these heavy charges and establish competition against the railroad, a committee of citizens waited on Messrs. D. and T. Smith, of Nyack, and requested them to run one of their steamboats between Peekskill and New York. They agreed to do so in case they should be guaranteed proper support. This was promised, and in the year 1865, they began running a steamboat as requested. In 1866 they built the "Chrystenah," and placed her on the route. In 1879 she became the property of Alexander M. C. Smith, and now (1884) belongs to his estate.

In addition to the "Chrystenah" there were running in 1884 from Peekskill the propeller "Sarah

A. Brown," owned by William S. Tompkins and William L. Dyckman, and the propeller "Pierre C. Van Wyck," owned and commanded by George Morton and started in 1881.

For many years a ferry was run between Peekskill and Caldwell's Landing to connect with the New York and Albany boats. It was begun by Ward Hunter with a periauger. Then, as business grew more brisk, he obtained a boat which was operated by horses working a tread-mill. Another stride in advance was made by the building of the "Jack Downing," a steam craft, which was owned by Ward Hunter and Samuel Bard, of Caldwell's Landing. They afterwards ran another boat, called the "Drew," but the building of a dock at Row Hook and the passage of the railroad along the river eventually destroyed their business.

BANKS.—Peekskill contains one national and one savings bank. The former is the older. It was organized under the old State banking laws, May 27, 1833, by the election of the following board of directors: General Pierre Van Cortlandt, Reuben R. Finch, Philip Clapp, James B. Travis, Ebenezer Frost, John Garrison, Aaron Ward, John Owen, Aaron Vork, Joshua Hyatt, Jonathan Morehouse and Joseph H. Anderson. General Pierre Van Cortlandt was chosen president and Isaac Seymour cashier. Its capital was two hundred thousand dollars. It was opened for business, near the northeast corner of Main and Division Streets, in September, 1833, and at its present location, at the southeast corner of the same streets, May 1, 1834. This was probably the first bank instituted in Westchester County, and, during its earlier years, the greater part of the banking business of Westchester and Putnam Counties was transacted there and a good deal of business was received from Rockland County, also. July 11, 1865, it became a national bank, under its present title of the "Westchester County National Bank." The total dividends paid to stockholders since that time have amounted to two hundred and forty-two thousand five hundred dollars. The bank has also paid back one hundred thousand dollars of its capital to stockholders. June 20, 1884, the statement of the bank showed the capital to be one hundred thousand dollars, the surplus fund seven thousand five hundred dollars, undivided profits nine thousand eight hundred and fifty-six dollars and deposits, two hundred and six thousand four hundred and fifty-four dollars. The successive presidents have been General Pierre Van Cortlandt (elected 1833), Isaac Seymour (elected June 26, 1848), Charles A. G. Depew (elected April 7, 1851) and D. F. Clapp (elected January 8, 1878). The cashiers have been Isaac Seymour (elected 1833), D. F. Clapp (elected June 26, 1848) and C. A. Pugsler (elected January 14, 1879).

Dorlin F. Clapp, president of the Westchester National Bank, was born in Peekskill November 9, 1820. His grandfather, Elias Clapp, was a resident of Dutchess County, where he married Mary Dorlin,

and was the son of Henry Clapp, whose ancestry is very fully traced in a history of the family by Ebenezer Clapp, of Boston. Philip Clapp, son of Elias, married Emily E., daughter of James Ferris, of New Castle. Their children were Delia, wife of Stephen D. Horton, of a well-known family in this county (and after his decease she married Walter Robinson), and Dorlin F.

The younger days of Mr. Clapp were passed in his native village, and when of suitable age he was sent to a boarding-school in North Salem. When thirteen years old he entered the Peekskill Bank as messenger boy, and with this institution he has been continuously connected, having been first advanced to the position of book-keeper and teller, elected cashier in 1848 and president in 1875, in which last position he remains.

The confidence which is reposed in him by his fellow-citizens, is shown by the fact that he has been chosen by both political parties to fill the office of treasurer of the village since 1852, and the duties of this responsible position have been performed to the entire satisfaction of the public. There are few who are more thoroughly acquainted with the business affairs of this portion of the county.

He married Fannie, daughter of David Hart, of Peekskill. They were the parents of three children—Phillip, who died December, 1884, at the age of thirty-eight; Dorlin, who died in early childhood; and Fannie, wife of Frank H. McGavie, now living with her father in Peekskill. Mrs. Clapp died July 1, 1876, and rests with her children in the cemetery of the Baptist Church in Yorktown. Mr. Clapp's father and grandfather were laid to rest in the burying-ground at the Friends' Church in Peekskill, and his mother's grave is at the church at Kirby's Pond, Mount Kisco, New Castle. Mr. Clapp passes the evening of his days in his native village, and by a life of honorable integrity has justly won the respect of the entire community.

The ancestor of the family is believed to have been Sir Ralph Clapp, of Eduardston, in the county of Suffolk, England, and the coat-of-arms granted to him is in the possession of his descendants.

The country-seat and summer residence of Mr. Clapp, at Lake Mohegan, is a place of much rural beauty.

The first movement towards the establishment of a savings bank in Peekskill was made February 3, 1859, at which time a meeting of citizens discussed the subject. April 18, 1859, a charter was obtained for "The Peekskill Savings Bank." Thomas Southard was chosen president; George Dayton and Uriah Hill, vice-presidents; Chauncey M. Depew, secretary; George Dayton, treasurer; and William H. Briggs, cashier. Twelve deposits were received June 14, 1859, the opening day, amounting to two hundred and seventeen dollars. The headquarters of the bank were at first in the Westchester County National

Bank building, and were afterwards moved to the corner of Centre and Division Streets. April 21, 1869, the bank was moved to its present location on South Street. In 1884 the assets of the bank were \$1,445,904.19. Uriah Hill, Jr., was president; Nehemiah S. Jacobs and Jacob M. Shipley, vice-presidents; Coffin S. Brown, treasurer; Sanford R. Knapp, secretary.

THE PEEKSKILL WATER WORKS was completed and put into operation in the year 1875. Most of the work of its construction was performed under the direction of a board of water commissioners, consisting of Reuben R. Finch, president; George W. Robertson, secretary; C. F. Southard, treasurer and William S. Tompkins and Gilbert T. Sutton. On a point occupied during the Revolutionary War by an encampment of American soldiers and hence known as "The Campfield," is located the reservoir. It is three hundred and seventy-six feet above tide water, is five acres in extent and has a capacity of thirty-one million gallons. The water is pumped from the Peekskill Hollow Brook by means of turbine wheels. The cost of the work, up to the time of its being put into operation, was one hundred and forty-one thousand dollars, the length of the street mains laid was thirty-eight thousand and seventy-five feet and the number of fire hydrants set seventy-six.

The water is of great purity and on evaporating leaves no deposit. The pressure in the pipes varies from one hundred pounds to the square inch in the highest parts of the village to one hundred and sixty-three pounds to the square inch at the docks. In the business portion the pressure is one hundred and ten pounds, which is sufficient to throw a stream from an inch nozzle to the height of one hundred and fifty feet. At the docks a stream can be thrown one hundred and eighty feet high.

THE PEEKSKILL FIRE DEPARTMENT.—There are (1884) in Peekskill five fire companies. Two are engine companies, two hose companies and one is a hook-and-ladder company. Owing to the strength of the pressure in the water mains the engines have not once been called into requisition since the construction of the water works. Each of the engine companies has a hose carriage.

Columbian Engine Company, No. 1, is the first company which was organized in Peekskill and dates its existence from the 8th of June, 1826. In 1827, when the village government was organized, it came under the control of the trustees. The number of members then allowed was twenty-five. William B. Birdsall was the first foreman and the members were the foremost citizens of the place. The first engine was of the kind known as "goose-neck." It was replaced in 1848 by the "piano-engine," which is owned at present. In 1884 *Columbian Engine Company* had forty-nine members. William P. Marshall was foreman, Frank Marshall, secretary and Andrew Ukers, treasurer. The engine house is situated in Park Street.



Chas. H. Hopp



Cortlandt Hook and Ladder Company, No. 1 was organized at a meeting of the trustees held May 29, 1833, when Frost Horton, Nathaniel Finch, Judson H. Gilbert and nine other members were appointed. At first it was known as the Peekskill Hook and Ladder Company. The company has fifty-three members. Charles R. Swain is foreman; S. Allen Mead, secretary; and J. Jacob Rembe, treasurer. The house is located on Park Street.

Washington Engine Company, No. 2 was organized September 2, 1840, with George P. Halstead as foreman. It has fifty-five members. Hiram Blanchard is foreman; Charles McDade, secretary; and John L. Paulding, treasurer. The engine house is located on Union Street, between Central Avenue and Main Street.

Columbian Hose Company, No. 1 was organized about 1848, but the exact date is not obtainable. It has twenty-nine members. John Dwyer is foreman; John Rushforth, secretary; and Robert S. Likely, treasurer. The house is located on Park Street.

The Centennial Hose Company was organized January 7, 1876, with John Smith, Jr., as foreman, Lewis J. Armstrong as secretary and Homer Anderson as treasurer. The number of members is twenty-eight. Odell Dyckman is foreman; James Gain, secretary; and Michael Cleme, treasurer. The house is located on Water Street. The chief engineer (1884) is Charles Walker.

THE POST-OFFICE.—Nothing is known about the post-office previous to 1816. At that time the Hon. William Nelson was postmaster and R. Crumbie assistant postmaster. The office was located in the building on Main Street now owned by Mrs. Ruth Hubbell. Mr. Nelson's successors in order were Daniel Birdsall, his son William Birdsall, Hon. William H. Briggs, William Royce, Ward B. Howard, Hackaliah B. Strang, Charles McCutchen (1864-68), Joseph Hudson (1868-82) and A. D. Dunbar. The location of the office has been changed very frequently and is now at the corner of South and Division Streets.

INTRODUCTION OF THE TELEGRAPH, THE RAILROAD AND GAS.—In 1848 consent was given by the village authorities for the erection of telegraph poles in the village, "provided the company skinned the bark from the poles and painted them."

On Saturday, September 15, 1849, the first locomotive ran to Peekskill, over the Hudson River Railroad.

"It came up from Sing Sing," says the *Peekskill Republican*, "a distance of 12 miles, in 18 minutes and a half—faster than we should desire to ride over a new track for the first time."

July 18, 1855, an agreement was made with a gas company to lay pipes through the streets, on the condition, however, that the streets should be lighted before December 1, 1866.

THE NEWSPAPERS OF PEEKSKILL.—*The Westchester and Putnam Sentinel*, in its salutatory given April

22, 1830, refers to the fact that several journals had been started previously in Peekskill, which had expired by reason of the lack of public support, and expresses the hope that it may meet a different fate. One of these unfortunate papers, and doubtless the first of them, was the *Westchester and Putnam Gazette*, of which nothing is known save that it was started on Saturday, January 6, 1816, was nineteen by twelve inches in size, was edited by R. Crumbie, assistant postmaster at the time, and met the untoward fate above alluded to.

The Westchester and Putnam Sentinel, as previously stated, made its bow to the public of Peekskill, and uttered its modest wish for subscribers, on the 22d of April, 1830. Samuel Marks & Son, who were printers, booksellers, bookbinders and stationers, of Peekskill, were the proprietors. June 26, 1832, Samuel Huestis and James Brewer became publishers, the former proprietors moving to New York City. October 23d following, James Brewer became sole publisher, and on February 5, 1833, Samuel Huestis succeeded him in that position. The paper finally died of the old complaint—lack of public support. The *Sentinel* was a Whig journal.

Samuel Marks & Son, having returned from New York City, started a new paper in Peekskill, on Tuesday, February 26, 1833, which they called the *Westchester and Putnam Republican*. On the death of his son, Samuel Marks became sole editor. On February 27, 1834, the paper passed into the possession of William Richards, a former school-teacher in Peekskill, and a Henry Clay Whig. December 7, 1852, Mr. Richards handed the paper over to General Joseph J. Chambers. For a time subsequently, Matthew F. Rowe was editor, but was again succeeded by General Chambers. The *Westchester Herald*, of Sing Sing, having ceased publication in January, 1857, leaving only the *Hudson River Chronicle* to occupy the field, General Chambers removed his paper thither the same year. Its name was changed to *The Sing Sing Republican*, and under that title it is published at present.

The first number of *The Highland Democrat* was issued March 9, 1839. It was owned by a company of which Hon. John Hunter was the principal member. Benjamin Bailey was the first editor, but held the position only two years. He was born near Lake Mahopac, about 1812, and was for some time a lawyer at Carmel, Putnam County, where he established for himself a reputation for eloquence. In 1845 and for two terms subsequently, he was a member of the State Legislature, but made a record not altogether free from suspicion. He died in New York City, July 13, 1872. After Benjamin Bailey, Samuel G. Arnold became editor. He was succeeded in 1842 by G. K. Lyman, who was editor until September, 1846, when the newspaper suspended publication.

The *Highland Eagle* was established in September, 1851, by Ezra J. Horton. Its name was changed

to *The Highland Democrat*, and its number and volume were dated from the establishment of the former journal of the same name. Mr. Horton was succeeded in 1855 by J. N. Spaight, and he in May of the same year by Dr. Fenelon Hasbrouck. May 14, 1863, after several changes in the editorship owing to Dr. Hasbrouck's long illness and final death, Ezra J. Horton again became editor. In September, 1871, he sold the paper to Nelson G. and J. Thomas Foshay, who, under the title of Foshay Bros., conduct its publication at present. The *Democrat* is published every Saturday, and, as its name would indicate, is Democratic in its politics.

The *Peekskill Messenger* was started on Thursday, May 2, 1861, by a number of gentlemen who were dissatisfied by the policy advocated by the *Highland Democrat* during the war. William Richards, the former editor of the *Peekskill Republican*, became editor of the new paper. About 1869 Anderson & Bullock became editors and publishers and changed its name to the *Peekskill Advertiser*. The *Advertiser* was sold from them in 1871, and was then conducted for about six months by Milton Frost. On his retirement in January, 1872, Mr. Richards again assumed the management of the paper, and changed its name back to the original title. Mr. A. D. Dunbar became editor in 1873, and was succeeded on September 14, 1882, by James Everingham, the present proprietor. The paper has always been Republican in politics.

The *Peekskill Blade* was established by its present proprietor, W. H. Brown, in January, 1878. The paper for a time advocated Greenbackism, but is now strongly Republican in its politics. Its office is on Main Street.

SOCIETIES OF THE TOWN OF CORTLANDT.

The principal societies of the town of Cortlandt are located in Peekskill. Their histories are as follows:

MASONS.—The first secret order known to have been established in the town of Cortlandt was Cortlandt Lodge No. 34, F. and A. M., which was organized under the dispensation of the Grand Lodge of the State of New York, in 1793. It met at one time in the old City Hall, at the corner of Spring and Main Streets, which was burnt down about 1867 or 1868, but previous to the fire was meeting in the wooden building on Main Street, a short distance east of Union Street, now known as the Continental Hotel. This lodge went out of existence at the time of the anti-Masonic excitement in politics.

There was no Masonic organization in the town of Cortlandt after the demise of this lodge until 1859, when, upon the petition of James W. Husted, Benjamin F. Depew, George W. Depew, George F. Harwood, Wolff Cohen, James M. Frear, John G. Martin, Charles Southworth and Solomon Clason, a dispensation was received from the Grand Lodge of the

State of New York. The lodge was chartered June 27, 1859, as Cortlandt Lodge, No. 189, F. and A. M. The meetings of the lodge during its first year were held part of the time in rooms over Ueker's meat market, on Main Street, and part of the time in the rooms of the Cortlandt Lodge of Odd Fellows. April 1st, 1869, the lodge occupied its present rooms in the building of the Peekskill Savings Bank. In 1883, at the desire of the lodge, their number was changed from 189 to 34, which was the number of the original lodge. The number of members in January, 1884, was 114. The officers were: W. M., A. D. Dunbar; S. W., Clarence L. Gardiner; J. W., Albert G. Sinclair; Treas., David Griffin; Sec., S. Irving Pugsley; S. D., Bruce Scribner; J. D., Nicholas Carlough; S. M. C., George W. Richmond; J. M. C., John H. Baxter; Chaplain, Evert A. Wessells; Marshall, John Mabie; Tiler, George I. Brown.

MOHEGAN CHAPTER, NO. 221, ROYAL ARCH MASONS, was organized on the evening of March 4, 1868, by a dispensation naming John Ombony Most Excellent High Priest; James W. Husted, Excellent King; Orlando W. Davis, Excellent Scribe; David W. Travis, Secretary; and George W. Sykes, Robert Brown, James B. Gregory, Basil J. Gray and William Holmes, charter members. The first annual report showed a membership of thirty-six. For eight years in succession John Ombony served as High Priest, during which time the chapter was one of the best working in the State. His successors have been Thomas J. Hodgkins, 1876-82; Robert J. Post, 1882-84; and William Mabie, the present incumbent, elected in 1884. George W. Robertson is (1884) Excellent King; Edward Bates, Excellent Scribe; and Thomas J. Hodgkins, Secretary. The number of members is about sixty.

PEEKSKILL COUNCIL, NO. 55, ROYAL AND SELECT MASTERS, was organized on the evening of November 27, 1871. The council began its existence with twenty-nine members and with John Ombony, Master; Robert J. Post, Deputy Master; Rev. Jeremiah Searle, Principal Conductor of the Work; Edward D. Bates, Treasurer; and Rev. Elias S. Osbon, Recorder. John Ombony was Master from 1871 till 1877; David Griffin, from 1877 till 1880; and John Ombony again, until his death, on January 31, 1881, when John Halsted was chosen to fill the vacancy. Valentine Hanf was elected Master in 1882. George D. Sanford is the present master; John Hancock, Deputy Master; and Thomas J. Hodgkins, Recorder. The membership is composed of forty persons.

THE KNIGHTS TEMPLAR ASSOCIATION OF PEEKSKILL, composed principally of members of Westchester Commandery, No. 42, of Sing Sing, who are located in Peekskill, was organized March 10, 1880, for the purpose of affording instruction and drill to members, and to more effectually promote the interests of the parent commandery by unity of purpose and action. The association is composed of twenty-two members,

thirteen active and nine dormant,—the latter to fill vacancies which must sooner or later occur. Thomas J. Hodgkins is the present Commander; John Hancock, Generalissimo; Wm. Mabie, Captain-General, and George Sykes, Secretary and Treasurer.

Excursions to the ocean have been given yearly, under the auspices of the association, which have become very popular with the citizens, and a source of considerable revenue to the organizers.

THE INDEPENDENT ORDER OF ODD FELLOWS.—The first lodge of Odd Fellows in Peekskill was Cortlandt Lodge, No. 55, the charter for which was granted August 18, 1841. The names of the petitioners were John C. Hitchcock, Caleb H. Bosworth, James L. Seabury and James M. Frear.

Its first meeting-place was in the building on Main Street, adjoining the old plow-works on the east, and the next in the building on the northeast corner of Main and Union Streets. In 1848, while in this locality, the trouble in the order occurred, which resulted in the formation of a Northern and a Southern Grand Lodge in the State. Cortlandt Lodge was divided into two parties, the minority of which, numbering about forty persons, adhered to the Southern Grand Lodge, while the majority, numbering about sixty persons, owed allegiance to the Northern Grand Lodge. The minority party held the funds and the charter, but the majority removed the furniture of the lodge-room to a building on Division Street, adjoining the bank on the south, where they held their meetings. The minority finally went out of existence, and the majority were rechartered as Cortlandt Lodge, No. 6, I. O. O. F. After several changes the lodge occupied its present rooms on Main Street.

The lodge in 1884 contained approximately one hundred and sixty members. The officers were John L. Pierce, N. G.; David D. Montross, V. G.; Hiram Blanchard, recording secretary; Henry Free, financial secretary, and Gilbert L. Tompkins, treasurer.

CRYPTIC LODGE, No. 75, I. O. O. F., was chartered November 2d, 1842. The petitioners for its institution were Joseph L. Cook, Ephraim D. Fuller, C. W. Rodgers, William Travis, W. Gorden, James R. Ferris, James Summerbell, Isaac Hadden, John McCoord and E. D. Hinsdale. During the division of the order in the State in 1848 the majority party of Cryptic Lodge belonged to the Southern Grand Lodge, and the minority adhered to the Northern Grand Lodge and went out of existence. The number of members in 1884 was about one hundred. The meeting-place was on the north side of Main Street, above the corporation rooms. The officers for 1884 were Isaac J. Baxter, Jr., N. G.; George Gorden, V. G.; David S. Godden, secretary; Edwin Briggs, — secretary; Isaac C. Pierce, treasurer; James Calhoun, chaplain; John Ames, warden; William T. Aisthorpe, conductor.

MT. ARARAT ENCAMPMENT, No. 9, was chartered August 22, 1867. It meets in Cryptic Lodge rooms. The number of members in 1884 was about sixty.

The officers at the same time were Robert Harris, C. P.; William J. Charlton, H. P.; John L. Pierce, S. W.; Abraham Sparrow, J. W.; Halsted Maynard, R. S.; Max Salomon, financial scribe, and Gilbert L. Tompkins, treasurer.

HARMONY LODGE, No. 138, KNIGHTS OF PYTHIAS, was organized in August, 1874, with sixteen charter members, and Herman Meyer as chancellor, Jacob Vogt as vice-chancellor, August Fulmer as prelate and Frederick Kahlkof as secretary. They have from the start held their meetings in the room of Cryptic Lodge of Odd-Fellows. The number of members in 1884 was about one hundred. The officers were Joseph S. Paulding, C. C.; Eugene Quatt, vice-chancellor; William H. Hughes, K. of R. & S.; Emmet Searles, M. of E.; Mark Jacobus, M. of T. John B. Steele, M. of X.; and William A. Constantine, prelate.

EUROPEAN COUNCIL, No. 80, ORDER OF UNITED FRIENDS was organized in the summer of 1883, with Valentine Hanf as chief councilor; Andrew Thompson as vice-councilor; Alexander Peterson, secretary; Alexander Lamont, financial secretary; C. G. Harstrom, treasurer; and Wilbert Ellis, prelate. The number of members in 1884 was about forty. The meeting place is in the room of Cortlandt Lodge of Odd-Fellows. The officers for 1884 were, Chief Councilor, Andrew Thompson; Vice-Councilor, Herbert F. Pierce; Recording Secretary, Charles M. Hanf; Treasurer, Simon Wright; Financial Secretary, Valentine Hanf; and Prelate, William G. Pointer.

ABRAHAM VOSBURGH POST, No. 95, G. A. R., was organized July 25, 1884, by the election of the following officers: Post Commander, George W. Robertson; Senior Vice-Commander, John Smith, Jr.; Junior Vice-Commander, Abraham G. Conklin; Officer of the Day, W. A. Sipperly; Officer of the Guard, Samuel Tate; Surgeon, Charles McCutchen; Chaplain, W. H. Griffin; Quartermaster, Thomas Flockton; Adjutant, W. J. Charlton. The number of members in 1884 was seventy. The officers were, Commander, William A. Sipperly; Senior Vice-Commander, William J. Charlton; Junior Vice-Commander, Thomas Flockton; Surgeon, Samuel Tate; Officer of the Day, R. S. Hancock; Chaplain, Rev. J. W. Crumb; Quartermaster, William H. Griffin; Officer of the Guard, Joseph L. Mason. Abraham Vosburgh, from whom the Post was named, was colonel of Seventy-first Regiment New York Volunteers. The meeting place of the Post was in a room in the Fuller building on Main Street.

A branch of the Irish National League of America was organized in 1881, and had, in 1884, about seventy-five members. Robert Fox was secretary.

DUNDERBERG LODGE No. 156, A. O. U. W. was organized May 27, 1878, with thirty-one members, and the following officers: P. M. W., E. B. Travis; M. W., S. D. Horton; G. F., John Smith, Jr.; O., John Halsted;

Recorder, J. W. Little; Financier, F. E. Clark; Receiver, D. S. Godden; Guide, Marion R. Smith; I. W., Cyrus Travis; O. N., C. G. Harstrom; Medical Examiner, A. O. Snowden, M. D. The lodge has at present forty-seven members. It meets in the rooms of Cortlandt Lodge, I. O. O. F. Its present officers are Wesley Wyatt, P. M. W.; Solomon Cohn, M. W.; C. G. Harstrom, G. F.; John Halstead, O.; Robert Harris, Recorder; Charles Ballcuff, Financier; William H. Lent, Receiver.

PEEKSKILL IRON MOULDERS' UNION No. 6, was instituted January 29, 1859. In 1884 it contained two hundred members. John Posey was president, John Seal, vice-president, George A. Kreig recording secretary, Charles E. Ackerman financial secretary, Smith A. Barker treasurer, and Hiram Blanchard corresponding secretary. The meetings are held in the room of Cortlandt Lodge of Odd-Fellows, on the first and third Mondays of each month.

THE YOUNG MEN'S CHRISTIAN ASSOCIATION of Peekskill, was organized April 3, 1883, its originators being Nicholas Mansfield, Jr., Willis O. Shaw and A. L. Jaycox. Previous to that time, two attempts had been made to maintain a Christian association, the second of which was for a time quite successful, but the result in both cases was eventually a failure.

The first permanent officers of the association were elected May 3, 1883, and were as follows: John D. Prince, president, C. W. Underwood, vice-president, Horace Johnson, secretary, W. Wibberly, assistant secretary and William D. Phyfe, treasurer. The association occupies two stories of the building on the northwest corner of Main and Division Streets. Religious meetings are held only on Sunday afternoons. At the time of the annual report on April 3, 1884, the number of members was sixty-four, of whom thirty-five were active members and twenty-nine associate.

THE PEEKSKILL DORCAS SOCIETY was organized in the spring of 1862, to assist the poor of the village with supplies of groceries, coal and clothing. Mrs. Elizabeth Hart was chosen first directress, Eliza W. Clark secretary and Mrs. Edward Wells treasurer. The society has continued in active operation ever since, and has accomplished much good work. In 1884 it had about twenty-four active members and expended for the relief of destitute villagers \$341.67. Mrs. Elizabeth Hart was president, Mrs. G. N. Knapp secretary and Miss Emily Southard treasurer.

A WOMAN'S CHRISTIAN TEMPERANCE UNION was organized in Peekskill in January, 1875, Mrs. Cortlandt Baxter being chosen the first president and Mrs. A. M. Stewart secretary. The society met for some time in Simpson's Hall, but have no rooms at present. In 1884 Mrs. A. M. Stewart was president, Mrs. Dr. Wygant secretary and Mrs. B. O. Lent treasurer. The number of members is about twenty-five.

HOTELS OF PEEKSKILL.—The first hotel in Peekskill was probably a house within the northwest corner of Main and Division Streets, which was owned

by James Diven, and was standing there as far back as 1800. It was the stopping place for the New York and Albany stages.

Another house is noted on the map of "Peekskill as it was in 1800," as standing within the northeast corner of Main and Division Streets. It is designated as "the old hotel kept by David Stanley and afterwards by Henry Mandeville."

A small hotel for many years previous to 1836 stood in the angle formed by the junction of Hillside and Highland Avenues. Joseph C. Vought was the host. It was moved over to the western side of the street, and is at present part of a dwelling-house which is the property of Mrs. Harrison T. Smith. In 1836 the Franklin House was erected in the forks of the road, on the site vacated by Vought's hotel, and was managed for a few years by Sylvester W. Mandeville. This building still exists in the same situation, and is used as a dwelling-house.

The Eagle Hotel, at present the principal hotel of Peekskill, was originally a small house which stood on the site of the Westchester County National Bank, and was moved about one hundred feet eastwardly on Main Street to make room for the building of the bank in 1834. Very shortly afterwards, Colonel John Williams, who was previously proprietor of the old hotel at Yonkers, converted the building into the Eagle Hotel. He remained proprietor until the early part of 1861. Since 1877, C. C. Clearwater, a native of Orange County, New York, and for a long time proprietor of the Smalley House at Carmel, Putnam County, has had the management of the hotel, Mr. Frank Fry being at first associated with him. The hotel has been enlarged by him from ten rooms to forty-eight. It is a large frame edifice, and is three stories in height. In 1839 a grand reception was given at this hotel to President Martin Van Buren.

PUBLIC HALLS.—The first public hall in Peekskill was known as Simpson's Hall, and is still in use. It dates back to about 1850. It was of small dimensions. At present it is occupied by the Young Men's Christian Association. It is located on the northwestern corner of Main and Division streets.

Dramatic Hall was its successor. It was built about 1869 by John Karst, passed into the hands of Daniel J. Haight, in 1878, and in 1880 became the property of Durrin Brothers, the present owners. It is used for lectures, dramatic entertainments and other public assemblages. It has seats for five hundred people. It is located on Main street.

There are besides Military Hall, on Park street, and Central Hall, on Central Avenue, near Division street, neither of which is as large nor as much used as Dramatic Hall.

THE JEFFERSON GUARDS AND THE BLEARLEY RIFLES.—The war begun in 1812 against England resulted in the organization, in Peekskill, in the year 1814, of a company for the service of the United States, who were known as the Jefferson Guards. On

the 12th of October, 1814, the company were stationed at Fort Gansevoort, New York City. The number of men who went into service was twenty-five, but there were besides three who were off on a furlough. The officers were, Justus Hyatt, captain; Medad Raymond, first lieutenant; Andrew Hanford, orderly sergeant; Moses H. Belknap, sergeant; Lewis Constant and Pierre Briggs, corporals. Silas C. Hyatt was drummer. The company was attached to the Thirteenth Regiment of the New York State Artillery, under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Boream, and belonged to the battalion commanded by Major J. W. Forbes. The company were not engaged in any battle, and their only experience of the horrors of war was when a report was brought in that a British fleet were coming into New York Bay, and the cannon-balls were made red hot, in order to give them a warm reception. The report, however, proved false.

Upon returning to the vocation of peace, the members maintained an organization. Justus Hyatt, who organized the Guards and was the first captain, was followed in his position successively by James Wiley, Thomas Bleakley, William B. Birdsall and Alexander Fairley. After the time of the last-named gentleman the company led a very languid existence. It was reorganized, however, in 1836, with John C. Hawes as captain. John H. Hyatt, son of Justus Hyatt, was his successor, and after him came Abraham H. Lord, John Halstead, George Depew, Jr., and Bennett Gilbert. Gilbert was captain at the time of the outbreak of the Civil War, but joined the One Hundred and Sixty-eighth Regiment, as captain of Company A. Other members enlisted in various regiments, and the ranks of the old company were very much depleted. In 1863 the remnants of the Jefferson Guards and the Bleakley Rifles were formed into Company F, of the Eighteenth Regiment of militia, of which John H. Hyatt, their former captain, was acting Colonel, and ordered out for thirty days. They participated in no engagement.

After the war the Jefferson Guards were reorganized, and William H. Smith elected captain, March 9, 1865. In 1868, while under his command, the number of the State Guards was diminished and they were disbanded.

The Bleakley Rifles were organized in 1854, with E. M. Hyatt as captain. James M. Frear succeeded Captain Hyatt. During the war this company was broken up and was never reorganized.

PLEASANTSIDE PRESBYTERIAN CHAPEL.—About a mile and a half from Peekskill, on the Furnace Woods Road, is located the *Pleasantide Presbyterian Chapel*. It is the result of a Sunday-school started in the neighborhood in 1879 by Edward B. Finch, a member of the Second Presbyterian Church in Peekskill, which was continued for one or two years with such success that finally subscriptions were obtained by him and others, and the chapel was erected in

1881, at a cost of seven or eight hundred dollars. Articles of incorporation were procured in the same year, William Lounsberry, Samuel D. Peterson, Edward B. Finch and Edward Wells being named the trustees. Business calling Mr. Finch to New York, Edward Wells became the superintendent of the school in his place, and so continues to the present time. The average attendance of scholars is about fifty each Sunday. There are a secretary and a treasurer, and two or three teachers. Most of the scholars belong to a large Bible class which is taught by Mr. Wells. Occasional services are held in the chapel by pastors of Peekskill.

FURNACE WOODS METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—Still further on the Furnace Woods Road is the *Furnace Woods Methodist Episcopal Church*, built on a lot forty by eighty feet in area, sold to John Forgie and others in trust for the Methodist Church, March 4, 1845. The church, a frame structure, twenty by thirty feet in extent, was built in the winter of 1854-55. The first trustees were Benjamin Chase, Henry Lent and William Beatys, and Henry Tice was leader. It was at first attached to the Croton circuit, but is now in a circuit with the churches at Centreville and Boscobel. The number of members (1884) is about twenty-five. The trustees are James A. Ferris, William N. Wood and James Gardineer.

LENT'S COVE AND CENTREVILLE.—About one mile south of the centre of Peekskill is Lent's Cove, where are located the brick-yards of Charles Southard, employing about fifty men, and of John Pierce, employing about twenty-five men. From this point south to the Croton River, the manufacture of bricks forms the leading industry. Within these limits are twenty-four brick yards, giving employment to not far from nine hundred men, and manufacturing about one hundred million bricks yearly. This industry was probably begun by one of the Lents, at Lent's Cove, not far from the beginning of the present century.

About two miles south of Peekskill is located the little village commonly known by the name of Centreville, in and around which are about forty houses, representing a population of about two hundred people. A station of the Hudson River Railroad was formerly located there, which was known as Verplanck's, but about 1862 another station was built by Stephanus Hunt a short distance to the south, which took its place. The present title of the village is derived from the name of a tavern located there, which is called by its proprietor the Centreville House.

In Centreville are located the oil cloth works of Buchanan & Co., which were started by Alexander F. Buchanan in the year 1874. The number of men employed is about fifty.

A small Methodist Church is also situated in the village. It is located in a lot sixty feet front by one hundred feet deep, which was presented by John Henry, of Verplanck's Point, to Joseph Travis, John

Broadie and Horace Haight, trustees of "The Saint's Delight Methodist Episcopal Church," by a deed given in November, 1850. The church, however, had been standing for some time previously. At present it is a part of a circuit embracing in addition the Boscobel and Furnace Woods Methodist Episcopal Churches. The number of members (1884) is about seven. Philetus R. Sloat, John H. Tuttle, Edwin Wainwright, Abraham Cammett and Daniel Conklin are trustees. The church is familiarly known as the "Turkey Roost church," from the fact that the numerous turkeys of a neighboring farmer were accustomed to roost in the cedar trees formerly surrounding it.

MONTROSE STATION.—Below Centreville a short distance is Montrose station, which, as mentioned before, was built by Stephanus Hunt about 1862. It was at first known as New Haverstraw, but the name proving unpopular, it was abandoned, and after one or two further changes, the present title was adopted.

The summer residence of Professor William G. T. Shedd, a noted Presbyterian divine, Professor in the Union Theological Seminary of New York, and the author of several standard religious works, is located on a high point near Montrose Station. It is a plain square mansion of brick. The view from the top of the house is one of the most beautiful and sweeping in the town of Cortlandt. A short distance from this station is located the Reformed Dutch Church.

VERPLANCK'S POINT,—for which Montrose is the station, is located about three miles south of Peekskill, and about a mile west of the station. By the Indians it was called Meahagh. It was bounded on the east by the lands of Appamaghpogh and the creek Meanagh, on the south by the same creek, on the west by the Hudson River, and on the north by the creek Tamoesis. This territory was sold in 1683 to Stephanus Van Cortlandt by the native Indian proprietors, the names of Pewemend, Oskewans, Siecham, Isighers, Prackises, Turham and Querewighnit appearing in the deed in behalf of the Indians. It was the first property purchased by Stephanus Van Cortlandt in his manor.

By the will of Stephanus Van Cortlandt, made and published in 1700, this land was bequeathed (after the decease of his wife,) to his eldest son Johannes. The property afterwards became the possession of Philip Verplanck, who married Gertrude, the only daughter of Johannes Van Cortlandt, and from him the Point received its name. In 1734, Philip Verplanck leased the land containing one thousand acres, to John Lent, who was to pay therefor "the yearly rent of one pepper-corn on the feast-day of St. Michael, the Archangel."

Philip Verplanck was the son of Gulian Verplanck, who in 1683, was a wealthy merchant of New Amsterdam. Gulian was a descendant of Abraham Jacobsen Verplanck, of New Amsterdam.

Verplanck's Point remained for a long time in the possession of the Verplanck family. In 1836 Allen W. Hardy formed a company of ten persons, of whom John Henry was the principal, and purchased the property from Philip Verplanck for about three hundred thousand dollars. Henry was a native of Philadelphia, and had acquired wealth as a rope maker at Williamsburg, L. I. Philip Verplanck moved to New Windsor after the sale, where descendants of his still reside.

The object of the company was to establish on the Point a village which should rival or displace Peekskill. The point possesses the advantage of very deep water along the river front, which would afford easy landing to the largest vessels traversing the river, and was besides comparatively level and very pretty. Before the point was cut up by the excavation of clay and sand for the brickyards, it was much handsomer than at present, and, indeed, is said by some to have been the most beautiful locality along the Hudson. There is a story to the effect that Jerome Bonaparte, while in this country, was so much charmed with the scenery and location that he desired to buy the point, with the design, as is thought, of establishing there a French colony, but could not conclude a bargain.

The company laid out the ground with streets and avenues, reserving certain portions for parks. The scheme, however, was not successful, and after spending a large sum of money in improvements to attract purchasers, they failed within a year or two of their organization. Mr. Henry then purchased the whole property from Mr. Verplanck. In 1842 or 1843, he started the first brick-yard on the Point where the yard of Adam Fisher is now located. He sold off portions of his property subsequently, and about 1866 disposed of a considerable amount of land to the Hudson River Brick Manufacturing Company. They lease out their land to various brick makers, but do not engage in the manufacture of bricks themselves.

William Bleakley, who was for many years a prominent citizen of Verplanck's Point, was born in the Third Ward of the city of New York, May 12, 1808. His father, Andrew Bleakley, was a well-known bookseller in the city, and the business was continued by his son. Soon after the establishment of the village of Verplanck's Point, Mr. Bleakley came to that place, purchased a store near the wharf and began business as a merchant. This he continued for several years and then purchased real estate of Mr. Henry and began the manufacture of brick and lime, which he conducted up to his death.

He was a man of more than ordinary intelligence, kept himself well informed upon all subjects of importance, both at home and abroad, and was the possessor of a large and excellent library containing many rare and valuable works. He was attached to the Whig party while it had an existence, but at the formation of the Republican party joined its ranks and continued to support its principles during life.

He was twice supervisor of the town of Cortlandt, and in 1858 was elected sheriff of Westchester County by a large majority.

A strong defender of the Union and firm in his opposition to human slavery, there were few men who gave a more willing support to the government in the hour of its need. He fitted out at his own expense Company A, of the Twenty-seventh Regiment New York State Volunteers, and several of his sons took an active part in the war.

He was the last survivor of the company that purchased Verplanck's Point, and was a sharer in the successes and losses of that enterprise. After a life of influence and usefulness, he died November 18, 1869, and the community mourned the loss of a respected and honored citizen.

Resolutions of respect were passed by the White Plains Lodge of Free-Masons, of which he was a valued member. At a meeting of the Board of Supervisors of Westchester County, resolutions introduced by Hon. William H. Robertson, and ably seconded by Hon. William Cauldwell, testifying their respect for the memory of Mr. Bleakley as a former member of the board, were passed unanimously.

His former residence is situated on a high elevation overlooking the Hudson River and commanding a very extended view of romantic scenery. This elegant mansion was built in 1840 by Sylvester H.

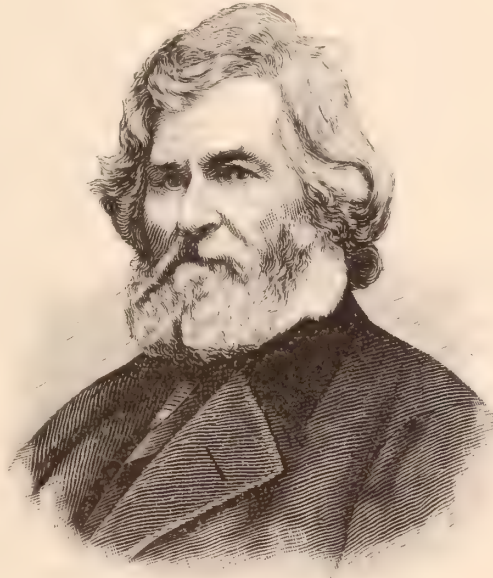
Mills, a man of excellent character, but unfortunately one of the victims of the notorious impostor Matthias, whose career is one of the most curious episodes in the history of the county. This imposition was the cause of the untimely death of Mr. Mills, and the place was purchased by Mr. Bleakley in 1850, and is at present occupied as the residence of his family.

Mr. Bleakley married Rosalie A., daughter of Lewis H. Lautant. Their children were William M.; Amelia, wife of Dr. James Goetchius, of Poughkeepsie; Rosalie A.; Lewis H.; Albert; Josephine, wife of Clarence J. Conover, a prominent lawyer of Freehold, N. J.; Frank, deceased; Clarence L.; and Angelo. Most of the sons are now in business at Verplanck's Point, and several of them have a very honorable record as soldiers in the late war. William M. was captain of Company A, Twenty-seventh Regiment

New York Volunteers, of which General Slocum was the former colonel; Lewis H. was second lieutenant of Company L and M, Sixth Regiment New York Artillery; Albert was first sergeant of Company A, Twenty-seventh Regiment; and Frank was a private soldier in the same regiment and died at Harper's Ferry, Va.

Mr. Bleakley had three brothers,—James T. N., Andrew and John L.,—all of whom were well-known citizens of New York, and held many prominent positions.

At present (1884) there are on Verplanck's Point ten brick-yards, which employ about four hundred and twenty-five men, and manufacture about four hundred thousand bricks daily during a season of one hundred and thirty or one hundred and forty days. Three yards are leased from Mrs. Rosalie A. Bleakley, and are operated by Frank Timoney. They employ about one hundred and fifty men. Patrick King operates three yards, one of which is leased from Thomas Avery, and the other two from the Hudson River Brick Manufacturing Company. The number of men employed is about one hundred and twenty-five. Adam Fisher, with one yard, employing about fifty men, Thomas Vaughey, with one yard employing about twenty-five men, and also John Morton with two yards, employing about seventy-five men, all lease



WILLIAM BLEAKLEY.

their premises from the Hudson River Brick Manufacturing Company. One brick-yard, belonging to John Morton, manufactures the Croton front brick, and the others common brick. The price for the former variety, is from ten to twelve dollars per thousand, and for the latter about six dollars a thousand.

The stores of sand and clay with which the bricks are manufactured are very extensive. The proportions used are about two-thirds clay and one-third sand. The sand lies over the clay in masses from ten to thirty feet deep, and the clay varies in depth in a like manner.

A quarry of blue limestone on the north side of the Point furnishes stone which is crushed into various sizes, and used for macadamizing and covering roads and for making concrete pavements. Further northeast is a quarry from which flux for blast furnaces is

obtained. Both are the property of Clarence L. Bleakley, by whom these industries were but lately begun. The number of hands employed is about forty.

As a consequence of the establishment of these brick industries a village, containing a population of about fourteen hundred people, mostly laborers, has grown up on the Point. Within it are a school-house, employing four teachers and attended by an average of one hundred and sixty-two scholars, the chapels of the Reformed Dutch Church and the Episcopal Church (whose histories are given in connection with their parent churches) and St. Patrick's Roman Catholic Church.

On the east side of the village is located the pretty artificial lake known as Lake Meahagh, a designation derived from the Indian name of the Point. It was once a malarious swamp through which a small creek, (the Meanagh of the Indians) pursued a tortuous course. About the year 1872 the mouth of the stream was dammed, with the result that it overspread the marsh and formed a fresh-water lake, about ninety-seven acres in extent. The credit of this transformation is due chiefly to James A. Whitbeck, who was the first owner of the lake. It was sold by him, for fifteen thousand dollars, to the Knickerbocker Ice Co., who reap from it valuable harvests of ice nearly every winter. The ice-house of the company is located directly across the road which passes between the lake and the Hudson River, and is two hundred by three hundred feet in extent.

The average crop each year is forty-five thousand tons of ice, and the number of men employed during the season about three hundred. The lake has not only proven a source of financial profit, but has very much benefited the health of the neighborhood, which is now free from malarial troubles to a rather remarkable extent.

St. Patrick's Roman Catholic Church.—St. Patrick's Roman Catholic Church at Verplanck's, was founded about 1845. The Rev. John Hackett appears to have been the first priest. He ceased to be pastor in 1853. During his incumbency in the pastorate he carried on missionary work at Sing Sing, which resulted in the formation there of St. Augustine's Roman Catholic Church. He died at Tarrytown June 11, 1863, being at that time priest of St. Teresa's Roman Catholic Church.

The succession of pastors appears to have been as follows :

Commenced		
1845	.....	Rev. John Hackett.
1852	.....	Rev. Michael Mamahan.
1856	.....	Rev. Patrick Egan.
1857	.....	Rev. Edward McGonn.
1858	.....	Rev. Nicholas O'Donnell.
1863	.....	Rev. Patrick Mahoney.
1864	.....	Rev. P. L. Madden.
1866	.....	Rev. James Husson.
1868	.....	Rev. Henry Coyle.
1882	.....	Rev. Patrick Mee.

The present pastor is a native of Ireland, and came to St. Patrick's Church from Rhinebeck.

The number of members is about eight hundred. The church is a handsome brick edifice with seats for five hundred people. The residence of the priest adjoins it. There is also a cemetery in a lot attached to the church.

GREEN'S COVE.—Between Verplanck's Point and Montrose Point is located Green's Cove, so named from Isaac Green, a Vermonter, who in 1833 or 1834, began the manufacture of bricks there on land leased from Joshua T. Jones. At this place according to an almost unquestioned tradition, was the terminus of the King's Ferry, though no marks of the landing place are now visible. Bolton places the location of the ferry on the southwest side of Verplanck's Point. The King's Ferry road, however, did not pass over to Verplanck's Point for many years subsequent to the Revolution, on account of the existence of the marsh, (lately obliterated by the construction of Lake Meahagh) in which the mud was almost bottomless, and the only mode of passage to and from the Point was over the northern end. The King's Ferry road, now the principal avenue to the Point, was until about 1837 a private way, with bars and gates across it, but at that date was opened by Mr. Henry. The road across to the Point was constructed by dumping in earth and stones upon the marsh, to a depth, as is supposed, of about forty feet, and when it was completed, the displaced mud stood up for a time like a little island outside.

At Green's Cove are located the brickyards of Cyrus Travis, and O'Brien & McConnell, leased from Oliver P. Jones, and employing about fifty men each.

MONTROSE POINT, situated beyond Green's Cove, directly south of Verplanck's Point, takes its name from the Montrose family, who formerly occupied the place. During the Revolution it was called Parson's Point, from the fact that the farm of the pastor or "parson" of the Reformed Dutch Church was located there. Upon this point is located the brick yard of James D. Avery, employing about thirty men. A little further south are two brickyards owned and operated by Orrin Frost, employing about one hundred men. At George's Island, just below, are three brickyards, leased from Mrs. Mary Bellefeuille, employing about one hundred and thirty men. Two of them are operated by Tompkins & Bellefeuille, and the third by Edward Bellefeuille.

Episcopal Church at Montrose Point.—Services were held on alternate Sundays at Cruger's and Croton by the Rev. A. Valiete Clarkson, the present rector of St. Augustine's Episcopal Church, at Croton, from 1853 until 1858, and in 1854 a small chapel was built at Cruger's. In 1869 the end of the parish lying about Crugers and Montrose Point was separated from Croton Parish, and under the name of the "Parish of the Divine Love" was placed under the charge of Rev. Gouverneur Cruger. In 1870, a handsome brick





Mr. Cuba

church was built at Montrose Point, capable of seating two hundred persons. With the rectory adjoining, the property is valued at twenty thousand dollars. A cemetery of about three-fourths of an acre adjoins the church, and contains about a dozen graves, among them being those of Mrs. Anna Maria Scriba, mother of United States Bank Examiner Augustus M. Scriba, and Nicholas Cruger and Eliza Kortright, his wife, parents of the rector. A chapel was built at Verplanck's Point in 1879, and is valued at two thousand dollars. It has seats for about one hundred persons. The parish was formed with a membership of twelve, which has increased to seventy-one. The Sunday-school has one hundred and forty members. The bell in the church tower weighs eleven hundred pounds and is claimed to be the finest toned in the country.

On Montrose Point is located the handsome residence of Mr. Frederick P. Seward, in the midst of about thirty acres of land which formerly belonged to the "Parson's farm." Mr. Seward is the son of Lincoln's famous Secretary of State and has himself attained to political honors, having been assistant Secretary of State under his father, Hamilton Fish, and William M. Evarts. He has made his residence on Montrose Point since 1868. The grounds are dotted by handsome little lakes, set in beds which were made by excavating clay for the brick-yards.

Almost adjoining Mr. Seward's place are the grounds of Mr. Augustus M. Scriba, the present National Bank Examiner for the district including New York City, Brooklyn and Jersey City. Mr. Scriba's home is a neat frame building, which is situated on the highest land on the whole Point, the elevation being one hundred and sixty-six feet.

The family of Scriba is of Italian origin, and the present generation is the twentieth in the line of descent from Otto Bonus Scriba, who was magistrate of the Republic of Genoa, A.D. 1191, and wrote the annals of his country from 1174 to 1197. They were natives of Genoa until the birth of Marcus Nicolaus Scriba, at Venice, in 1400. He removed to Frankfort, in Germany, where he married Catharine Von Hohenegge, in 1428, and became the ancestor of the German branch of the family, which, among the earliest to espouse the cause of Luther, have filled many of the highest dignities in the German Church, while each generation has been well represented in the army and councils of state. Of his descendants, two brothers, Frederick Gustav Reinhard Scriba, and George Ludwig Christian Scriba, came to America. The former was born at Vohl, Germany, December 4, 1755, and emigrated to this country about 1780, his brother having preceded him. Being a person of considerable means, he entered as a partner the banking firm of Scriba & Co., afterwards Scriba, Schroepfel & Starman, having branches in Philadelphia and Baltimore. He married Anna Dundas, daughter of James Dundas, Esq., of Scotland, April 24, 1793, and died in 1796. A plain tombstone on the south side of Trinity Church-

yard bearing the simple inscription, "Scriba, 1796," marks his last resting-place. His firm was doubtless the first German-Dutch commercial house in New York City. Their place of business was at 17 Queen (now Pearl) Street. The widow of Mr. Scriba died in 1840, at the age of seventy-five, and was buried at Jamaica, L. I. He left one son, George Scriba, Jr., who married Anna, daughter of Samuel Wilcox, and great-granddaughter of Rev. Archibald Stobo, a clergyman of the Church of Scotland, who settled in Charleston, S. C., in 1700, and was one of the earliest Presbyterian ministers in that city. His descendants are allied to many of the oldest families in that State. Their children were Frederick Gustavus, born April 5, 1822, died May 3, 1875 (who left two children, Robert Doremus, of Texas, and Julia Eleanor, now a member of an Episcopal Sisterhood), and Augustus Moser. Mr. Scriba was noted as a public-spirited citizen, and was a prominent and active member of the Masonic order in New York. He was one of the founders of Adelphi Lodge, and trustee of the old Masonic Temple and Gothic Hall, on Broadway. Of him, one of the oldest merchants of New York made the remark, "George Scriba was one of the noblest men I ever knew." He died, much lamented, in 1834.

His son, Augustus Moses Scriba, was born at Rotterdam (now Constantia), Oswego County, N. Y., March 10, 1833. When an infant he removed with his parents to New York, and at the age of sixteen was employed at the Metropolitan Bank, working his way up from one position to another till he was made superintendent of the uncurrent money department, in which he remained until the State bank currency was superseded by the national banking system. His thorough knowledge of all branches of the banking business was widely known, and in 1872 he was appointed assistant national bank examiner, upon the unanimous recommendation of the New York Clearing-House Committee, which office he held until, in 1883, he was appointed national bank examiner for the city of New York, at the unanimous request of the New York Clearing-House Association. The duties of this responsible position have been faithfully performed to the satisfaction of the government and the commercial public. His prompt action in the spring of 1884 largely contributed to avert a widespread panic, and won for him the commendation of the comptroller of the currency and the business community generally. He is justly considered an authority upon all subjects pertaining to the business of banking. He has been a resident of Westchester County for a quarter of a century. He has one son, George Dundas Scriba, born September 23, 1863.

"Montrose Point," the country-seat of Mr. Scriba, commands one of the finest views on the Hudson River. The eye takes in at a glance the rugged mountains of the Highlands, the village of Haverstraw, the lofty heights that border the western shore, above Nyack, and the precipitous Palisades, extending far

beyond the New Jersey line, while the wide expanse of Haverstraw Bay stretches out like an inland sea.

George Ludwig Christian Scriba, was born at Vohl, Germany, April 27, 1753, and came to this country shortly before his brother. With abundant means at his command, he was the principal member of the banking firm of Scriba, Schroepfel & Starman. He organized and equipped at his own expense a military company, known as the German Grenadiers, and was present as their commander at the inauguration of Washington as the first President of the United States. He was one of the founders of the Bank of New York in 1784, held two shares in the noted old "Tontine Association," and became a member of the Chamber of Commerce in 1786. He had then accumulated a fortune of a million and a half dollars, and was one of the wealthiest men of his day. In 1790 he purchased half a million acres, comprising fourteen townships in Oswego County, and four in Oneida County, the whole tract being known as "Scriba's Patent." In 1794 he caused a settlement to be made on Oneida Lake, which he called Rotterdam (now Constantia), and in 1795 he began another town on the shore of Lake Ontario, which he called Vera Cruz, and which bid fair to be a formidable rival of Oswego. One of his enterprises was the making of a highway twenty-four miles long between Rotterdam and Vera Cruz, and in 1804, more merchandise was sold at the latter place than at Oswego or Utica. Although his enterprises opened a wide field for future settlers, yet they proved unprofitable for himself. In the endeavor to promote the welfare of the infant settlements on his wide domain his fortune was swallowed up, and he died at Constantia, Aug. 14, 1836, a poor man. The town of Scriba, in Oswego County, was named in his honor.

Mr. Scriba was twice married. His first wife was Sarah Dundas, sister of Anna, who married his brother, Frederick G. Scriba. After her death, he married her sister, Maria, who was the widow of his partner, Frederick W. Starman. He left one son, Frederick William Scriba, who died in Constantia, 10th of May, 1857.

James Dundas, mentioned above, was a representative of the ancient family of that name so famous in Scottish history, and his ancestor came to America after the battle of Culloden. Besides the daughters who married the brothers Scriba, another married Henry Pratt, a wealthy merchant of Philadelphia, whose country-seat was famous for elegance and hospitality. Their nephew, James Dundas, was president of the Commercial Bank of Philadelphia, and lost a baronetcy and the manor in Scotland because his father sided with the Americans during the Revolution. There are few families who can boast of a more ancient origin, and the castle of Dundas, in Scotland, has been in their possession for a period of seven hundred years. Their earliest ancestor, Cospatrik, Earl of Northumberland, was a descendant of the Saxon Kings of England, and after the conquest by the Normans, A. D. 1066, retired into Scotland, where he was received

with great honor, and created Earl of Dunbar and March by Malcolm Canmore, King of Scotland, the successor of Macbeth and son of the murdered Duncan.

The Boscobel House.—Near Cruger's Station stands Boscobel House named after the old Boscobel House in England, which received its designation on account of the fine oak trees which surrounded it, and which was once resembled in this respect by the mansion at Crugers. The house is built in the French style. From it can be obtained one of those striking views with which the whole town abounds. The house was formerly the residence of Staats Morris Dyckman, who was the fifth son of Jacob Dyckman of Philipsburgh, and the protegee of General Staats Morris. He was also for many years private secretary for Sir William Erskine, Commissary General of the British army, and when the latter died in 1795, received a large and valuable amount of property by bequest from him. Shortly after this occurrence he came to this place and erected the mansion. The present occupant of the house is Col. John P. Cruger, who married Elizabeth, grand-daughter of the original owner.

The house abounds in curious articles. There are numbers of old and rare books, a picture by Stuart of James Ogilvie, Earl of Findlater, a teacher of elocution in New York city, and formerly a frequent visitor at the Boscobel House, a miniature of the Holy Family by Michael Angelo, a picture of the Holy Family by Raphael (brought from England by Staats Morris Dyckman), a miniature in ivory of George III. and Queen Charlotte,—the work of English prisoners in India,—and many other valuable works of art. The flute used by Major André is preserved at this house, and there is also a gold enameled snuff-box made of the Boscobel oak in which Charles II. concealed himself in 1665, containing a medallion of that monarch.

Cruger's Station and the Cruger Family.—Cruger's Station, in the vicinity of the Boscobel House, derives its name from the Cruger family, who have long owned land in the vicinity. The family is an old one. The first of the line in this country was John Cruger, who came from Germany in 1700, and became a prominent merchant of New York city. He was Mayor of the city from 1739 until his death, on Aug. 13, 1744.

The second of his three sons was Henry, who was sent by his father to Bristol, England, to enter a counting-house. He was successful in business. In 1744 he and Edmund Burke were nominated for Parliament from Bristol and elected. After obtaining further political honors in Bristol, he came back about 1790 to New York city. He again entered political life, and in 1792 was elected a State Senator. He died at his residence, at 382 Greenwich Street, New York, April 24, 1827, at the age of eighty-eight.

His eldest son by his second wife was Henry H. Cruger. Henry H. Cruger's third son was John Cruger, who was the father of Henry Cruger, the Hon. Nicholas Cruger and Col. John P. Cruger, present owner of Boscobel House, at Cruger Station.





John W. Frost

At Cruger's Station are two brick-yards, owned by John P. Cruger, one of which is leased by Adam Fisher. Both yards employ about seventy men.

Boscobel Methodist Episcopal Church.—The hamlet of Boscobel, consisting of about eight houses, is located about a mile east of Cruger's Station. It contains a small church, known as the Boscobel Methodist Episcopal Church. The lot was purchased August 14, 1868, and the building was erected on it but a short time after. The church is now on a circuit including also the Furnace Woods and Centerville Methodist Episcopal Churches. At the present time (1884) it does not have a single male member.

OSCAWANNA ISLAND AND FURNACE BROOK.—A short distance south of Cruger's Station is Oscawanna Island, a great place of resort for picnic parties. It was purchased in 1883 from Henry P. DeGraff, the president of the Bowery Bank in New York City, by John Keyes, who is the present owner. On the hill to the east is the handsome residence of Mr. De Graff. Oscawanna Station is less than a mile below.

Near this station the Furnace Brook pours its waters into the Hudson. Formerly it was known by the pretty name of Jamawissa Creek, which was of Indian derivation. Upon it were located the flour-mills of the Van Cortlandt manor,¹ which must have existed there from a very remote period, as the brook in the partition map of the manor, made in 1734, is referred to as "The old mill stream." On the property of Mr. Samuel F. Phelps is located a flour-mill, which was built about the close of the Revolutionary war. Its frame is constructed of enormous white oak logs, as solid as when they were first put there, some of which are fourteen inches square and thirty feet long. The mill has not been operated since 1875.

A few feet distant is the site upon which formerly stood an old furnace for blasting iron. From it the brook received its present name, as did also a tract of forest known as the Furnace Woods, consisting of about one thousand five hundred acres, which surrounds it.

The company which operated the furnace was established in England in 1760, and employed Germans in the work of running and smelting the iron. The result of the running operations was not satisfactory, and iron-ore is said to have been subsequently brought to the place from the Queensburg Mine, in Rockland County, by way of the King's Ferry. This was too expensive, and the furnace was abandoned previous to the Revolution. Numerous lumps of iron are still found in the vicinity of the old furnace, but the structure itself has long since gone to pieces. The iron-ore which exists in this neighborhood has been mined more than once since, but has been found to be so largely mixed with sulphur as to prevent the manufacture of first-class metal.

Beside the mill on Mr. Phelps' property stands a

very old residence, which is constructed of bricks imported from Holland, and which is probably about one hundred and fifty years of age. In a field not far distant is a family burial-place, which contains a number of graves, over one of which is a tombstone bearing the date 1741.

MOUNT AIRY.—A short distance south of Furnace Woods is the small cluster of houses to which, from their elevated and breezy situation, has been given the name of Mount Airy. A small church located at Mount Airy was erected, according to the most reliable information, in 1841, by the efforts of the Protestant Methodists, a small number of whom lived in the locality at the time. There was an understanding, however, that the church was to be open to the ministers of all evangelical denominations. The ground was donated by Caleb McCord. There are no Protestant Methodists at present about Mount Airy, but services are held once a month by the pastor of the Methodist Episcopal Church at Croton. A small, but flourishing Sunday-school meets at the church every Sunday afternoon. The present trustees (1884) are Daniel Haines and Jacob Wright.

CROTON.—The village of Croton is situated about a mile and a half north of the southern boundary of the town, and in 1880 contained eight hundred and eighty inhabitants. It contains two brick-yards, the northerly and smaller one being operated by Schuyler Hamilton of Sing Sing, and employing about thirty men, and the lower by George D. Arthur & Co., (Francis Larkin and Marcus L. Cobb of Sing Sing, being the company), employing about fifty hands. The latter yard was started about 1830 by John W. Frost, the father of Cyrus and Orrin Frost.

John W. Frost was born in the town of Somers, Westchester County, N. Y., on June 23, 1792, and was one of a family long identified with the history and public interests of the county and State.

About the year 1730 there came from England and settled near Reading, Mass., two brothers Frost, one of whom removed thence to Long Island; the other, after leaving Massachusetts, resided near Putnam's Corner (now Carmel), Putnam County, N. Y., and subsequently enlisted in the French War, was stationed a long time at Montreal, served under General Wolfe at the taking of Quebec in the year 1759, and died about the year 1800.

John Frost, son of the above-named first settler, and grandfather of the subject of this memoir, was a man of great piety and patriotism. He left Reading, Mass., in his youth, and is known to have resided subsequently south of Putnam's Corner. At about the age of eighteen he was at Fort Montgomery, in the Highlands of the Hudson, when that fort was taken by the British.

At the assault, when the enemy were pressing the patriot ranks, and bayoneting the men in almost regular succession, as they approached, Hewson, a neighbor of Frost, and in the ranks with him, noticing that

¹ Bolton's "History of Westchester County," vol. i., p. 183, new edition.

the latter was in imminent peril, leaped between his friend and the hostile bayonet that was threatening to impale him, exclaiming, "You shan't bayonet him; he is my brother." Being a large, heavy man, he succeeded in thrusting aside the gun, and thus saved the life of his friend, who, however, was taken prisoner. During the war he married Miss Huldey Munsen, a former resident of Reading, Mass.

Hon. Joel Frost, son of John and father of John W. Frost, married Martha Wright. He represented the Westchester and Putnam District, as Whig member of the Eighteenth Congress, from 1823 to 1825. He was the first surrogate of Putnam County, and held that office for many years. He was also Assemblyman in the State Legislature in 1806 and in 1808.

He was also judge of the Court of Common Pleas, and a member of the convention that revised the Constitution of the State of New York in 1821.

Judge Joel Frost had died poor in fortune, but rich in honor, and his son John W. started out to make his own way in the world. Though quiet and reserved in manner, he possessed great tenderness and delicacy of character. He was earnest and energetic in business affairs, and had a remarkable memory.

For many years he carried on a mercantile business at Croton, in the town of Cortlandt, and was also a pioneer in the manufacture of bricks on the Hudson. He was ingenious in contrivances for facilitating the process, and the success of that business on the Hudson owes much to his skill and judgment.

He was in the War of 1812, for a long time a director in the Westchester County National Bank, and supervisor of the town of Cortlandt for twelve years. In 1831 he was elected, as his father had been before him, Assemblyman in the State Legislature from Westchester County. He was a member of the Whig party until its dissolution, and after that, the staunchest of Republicans.

More than thirty years ago he retired to the home that he had built near Croton, upon the spot where he had long before desired to live. After retiring thither from active life, he devoted himself to his favorite agricultural and horticultural pursuits.

Mr. Frost was the last of the old settlers of this region. After a short illness, with his family around him, on September 7, 1882, in the ninety-first year of his age, he passed away as peacefully and calmly as one falling into a gentle slumber. He left the example of a long life of an eminently good citizen, a kind, faithful and indulgent husband and father.

For strength, sweetness and integrity of character, he was always a bright example, and his keen intelligence and thirst for information never left him till the last. His was the serious, yet serene and cheerful mind, that is the source of every virtue, and the only character that does honor to humanity. He inherited and transmitted those sterling qualities of the early settlers of New England, that are yet the potent though silent influence in giving form and character

to communities all over our land, even to the remotest frontier. Blessed be their memory.

John W. Frost married Miss Phebe Cocks, daughter of Adonijah Cocks, of Croton, a woman of rare and unassuming merit, and in her maturity an acceptable counselor and exhorter in the Society of Friends.

Their sons are *Cyrus*, who, for forty years or more, continued the mercantile business established by his father in Croton; was for many years director and then president of Westchester County National Bank; always an earnest and consistent Whig and Republican, he was a very tower of strength to his party in all political contests, and he now enjoys an enviable weight of character and social influence, the reward of an upright life.

Orrin, who has continued the brick business successfully, employing about one hundred men, and whose solid worth as a business man, an employer and a citizen, is recognized by all.

Eugene, who was a merchant for many years in Croton, served a long turn as harbor-master of New York City, and then retired to his farm on the Hudson, where he erected extensive green-houses, that he might indulge his taste for the culture of flowers and horticultural pursuits. He married Mrs. Harriet Carrigan.

Milton, a graduate of Yale, a licentiate in law, for many years occupying a position in the United States Internal Revenue Service, superintendent of schools in Westchester County, N. Y., and faithful to every trust. He married Julia Montgomery Wells, daughter of Albert Wells (the honored principal of Peekskill Military Academy for more than thirty years), a woman richly endowed with accomplishments of heart and mind. They have a family of four children.

The daughters of John W. Frost were Harriet, Ann and Armenia, of whom the first only is living, and of them it is praise enough to say, that they have proved worthy scions of a worthy ancestry.

Seldom does it fall to the happy lot of parents to see every member of their large family pursuing lives that reflect lustre upon the family name. Seldom do children enjoy the blessing, in so eminent a degree, of a parentage so worthy of imitation, so much an honor and a moral support to them in life. Not far from the railroad station of Croton is the manufactory of brick machinery of W. E. Tallcot & Co., established in 1879, and employing an average of five hands.

On the top of the hill is the district school, a two-story brick building, in which (in 1883) the average number of pupils in attendance, daily, was seventy-two and the number of teachers employed two.

The house of Miss Susan McCord, a short distance south of the school-house, on the opposite side of the street, was formerly an inn and the stopping-place of the New York and Albany stages.

North of the village is located Hessian Hill, so called from the fact that a Hessian encampment was located there in Revolutionary times.



"ULMENHEIM."
GIRLS' BOARDING AND DAY SCHOOL.
CROTON-ON-HUDSON, N. Y.

The Croton Military Institute is a large building in the southern part of the village. The number of students in 1884 was twenty-eight. Frank S. Roberts has been principal since September, 1880. He is assisted by a corps of five teachers. The institute has a classical course of four years, which educates scholars for college, a "liberal course" of four years furnishing instruction in the English branches, the natural sciences, etc., and a commercial course of one year.

There are in the village five churches,—two Methodist Episcopal (one unused), one Protestant Episcopal, one of the Society of Friends and one Catholic. Their histories are appended.

*Methodist Episcopal Church.*¹—The history of Methodism at Croton and its neighborhood dates back beyond one hundred years. The old Van Cortlandt manor-house, at the mouth of the Croton River, was long a stopping place for the early Methodist preachers, where they were treated with generous hospitality. Among the visitors at this house were the Rev. George Whitefield (who preached from the veranda), Bishop Asbury and Freeborn Garretson.

More than a century ago Governor Pierre Van Cortlandt gave land for a meeting-house and cemetery. No deed was given, however, until 1831, when General Philip Van Cortlandt, his son and successor, gave a written title for the property to the Methodist Society. About the year 1780 a church building was erected on this ground, upon a commanding eminence, which afforded a magnificent view of the Hudson. The old church yet stands. There are no means of determining who were the early officials of the society, as no records can be found.

A new and handsome brick edifice was erected for a place of worship, upon a location nearer the centre of the village, and dedicated in 1883. The old church is still standing.

The number of members (1884) is seventy-five. The board of trustees are Augustus Dyckman, Thomas J. Acker, M.D., William Emeny, Nathaniel Tuttle and C. B. Byington, M.D. The present pastor is the Rev. S. F. White.

The Society of Friends at Croton have had an organization and a place of worship for a long time. The lot of one and one-half acres, in which the building is situated, was purchased from John Conklin the eleventh month and eighth day of the year 1797, by Robert Underhill, Joseph Wheeler, Jesse Fields and Henry Matthews, as trustees of the society, for the sum of twenty-two pounds ten shillings, and the meeting-house was, doubtless, erected but a short time afterwards. Robert Underhill and Phebe Fields were the first ministers. At one time the society was so numerous that the meeting-house had to be enlarged. The same building is still occupied. In the rear of it is a grave-yard about one acre in extent.

The church has a seating capacity for about one hundred and twenty-five persons. The number of members in 1844 was twenty-five, and three other persons belonging to another meeting attended regularly. Meetings are held twice a week, on the Lord's day and Thursday mornings. The Croton Society attend the monthly meeting at Yorktown.

The Church of St. Augustine.—Episcopal services were held at Croton in 1756, by the Rev. James Wetmore, a missionary at Rye, of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts. In 1761 services were performed by the Rev. Ebenezer Diblee, a missionary of the society at Stamford, Conn. In 1763 the Rev. Mr. Punderson, another missionary of the society, stationed at Rye, held a service at Croton. There is no record of further ministrations by Episcopal clergymen in the village until 1842, in which year the Rev. Charles H. Halsey officiated occasionally. About the year 1847 some services were held by the Rev. Edward Bowens. In the summer of 1852 more constant services were performed by the Rev. John Henry Hopkins, and in the autumn of the same year, the Rev. Minot M. Wells received a regular appointment as missionary at Croton. In 1853 the Rev. A. Vallete Clarkson, of New York City, became minister in charge by appointment of the bishop of the diocese. At first services were held at Croton and Cruger's, in alternation, which continued to be the case until 1858. The organization of the parish at Croton was effected in 1855, under the title of "The Church of St. Augustine." In 1857 the corner-stone of a house of worship was laid, on a lot deeded for the purpose, by Philip G. Van Wyck. The building was completed in October of the same year. In 1868 the northern portion of the parish was separated to become the charge of the Rev. Gouverneur Cruger. In 1882 two buildings were erected adjoining the church at Croton to serve as school and class-room. In the same year the church was consecrated. The Rev. A. Vallete Clarkson has remained rector up to the present time.

*The Church of the Holy Name of Mary.*²—Forty years ago there were probably not ten Catholics at Croton. Now (1884) there are about two hundred. Mission work in this field was commenced from Verplanck's Point, and for many years religious services were held on Sundays at the residence of Patrick White, the pastor of the church at Verplanck's Point officiating.

The Church of the Holy Name of Mary, a neat brick edifice, was built in 1869, and was attended by the clergy of St. Augustine's Church, Sing Sing. They officiated on Sundays, sometimes once and sometimes twice a month.

In July, 1877, the Rev. Patrick McGovern became the first resident priest, by appointment of Cardinal

¹ By the pastor, Rev. S. F. White.

² Facts communicated by the Rev. Patrick McGovern, pastor.

McCloskey, and since that time mass has been said every Sunday, the sacraments have been administered and religious instruction imparted. A Sunday-school has also been organized.

CROTON POINT is a peninsula which projects about two and one-half miles into the Hudson River, and divides the Tappan Zee on the south from Haverstraw Bay on the north. About the middle, the land is submerged to a slight depth, and the space is filled with tall water-plants. A narrow road connects the two portions of the peninsula. The outer portion is triangular in shape and is about one and one-fourth miles long, and one-half mile wide in its greatest extent. It contains about two hundred acres.

At the base of the peninsula, according to tradition, stood the Indian castle or fort of Kitchawan, occupying a position which gave it many advantages in case of attack. It was said to have been erected by the sachem, Croton, to secure himself and his tribe in the possession of these rich fishing and hunting-grounds. The Indian burying-ground was located a short distance east of the fort. Many weapons of war have been obtained in the vicinity of this fort.

Twelve acres on the tip of the point were not included in the purchases made by Robert Underhill, and were afterwards bought by his son, Dr. Richard T. Underhill, a practicing physician of New York City, who erected thereon a handsome Italian villa. Upon the death of Robert Underhill the point became the property of his two sons, William A. and Dr. Richard T. Underhill, and on the death of the latter, on February 1, 1871, without children, his possessions, amounting to about eighty-five acres, were purchased by William A. Underhill for one hundred thousand dollars. William Underhill died a few years ago and the whole property now belongs to his estate.

The land belonging to this estate is that portion of the point lying outside of the salt meadows, the neck adjoining the mainland being the property of the Van Cortlandts. Of the two hundred acres which compose the estate, seventy-five are devoted to the cultivation of the grape. There are besides extensive apple orchards and hot-houses for the cultivation of roses. The manufacture of bricks was begun on the point by William A. Underhill, in 1837.

There are now two brickyards which make sixty-four thousand Croton front brick per day, and one manufactory of enameled bricks, for tiling, wainscoting, etc., erected in 1883. The supply of clay is of the best quality and practically inexhaustible. Shad-fishing also forms an important industry.

On the north or right bank of the Croton River, and not far from Croton Point, stands the ancient manor-house of the Van Cortlandts. It is sheltered from the cold north winds by a wooded hill, faces the south and commands a fine view of the river. At one side of the main entrance is the date of its erection, 1687, and it must, therefore, have been built by Colonel Stephanus Van Cortlandt, the first lord of the manor.

It is a frame building with basement and one story and a half, flanked at both sides by wings. From the roof project dormer windows. It contains many family portraits and souvenirs and autographs of distinguished men. Many whose names are well known were entertained at this house by its hospitable proprietors. Among these are found Franklin and the great preacher and evangelist, Whitfield. General Tryon in 1774, was an unexpected visitor. He plied Pierre Van Cortlandt (afterward First Lieutenant-Governor of this State), its then proprietor, with the arguments of self-interest and hope of royal favors if he would only cease his opposition to the arbitrary exactions of the English government. His visit was fruitless of good to the royal cause.¹

The first election of officers for the town of Cortlandt took place April 1, 1788. Philip Van Cortlandt was elected supervisor; Joseph Travis, town clerk; Daniel Birdsall, Nathaniel Brown and Pierre Van Cortlandt, poor-masters; David Ferris, constable; John Paulding, collector, and other officers were also chosen. The names of the supervisors and town clerks from that day to the present are as follows:

SUPERVISORS OF THE TOWN OF CORTLANDT

April 1, 1788-89.	Philip Van Cortlandt
1790-1802.	Pierre Van Cortlandt, Jr.
1803.	Joel Frost.
1804-11.	Pierre Van Cortlandt, Jr.
1812-15.	John Jones.
1816.	Philip Van Cortlandt
1817.	Jonathan Ferris.
1818.	Philip Van Cortlandt
1819-20.	James Wiley.
1821-22.	Daniel W. Birdsall
1823-25.	John W. Frost
1827.	Ward B. Howard
1828-31.	John W. Frost
1832.	Joseph W. Straug.
1833.	St. John Constant.
1834-35.	Nicholas Cruger.
1836.	Daniel Carpenter.
1837-39.	Nicholas Cruger.
1841.	Henry M. Depew
1842.	Nicholas Cruger.
1843-44.	William Boyce
1845.	Gilbert B. Hart.
1846-47.	James B. Travis
1848.	Isaac Seymour.
1849.	Mead Bamore
1850.	Thomas A. Whitney
1851.	William Bleakley
1852.	Enoch Orne.
1853.	Thomas A. Whitney
1854.	Caleb L. Ferris
1855-58.	Frost Horton.
1859.	Owen T. Coffin.
1860.	Frost Horton
1861-64.	Coffin S. Brown.
1865-67.	Uriah Hill, Jr.
1868-69.	Coffin S. Brown.
1870.	William N. Anderson
1871-77.	Coffin S. Brown
1878-79.	David W. Travis.
1880-82.	William Mabre.
1883.	Coffin S. Brown.
1884.	Cyrus Travis.

¹ "Diary of Brigadier-General Philip Van Cortlandt," quoted by Bolton, Vol. II., p. iii., (old edition).



RESIDENCE OF LOUIS ETTLINGER,
CROTON FALLS, N. Y.

F.M.G.



TOWN CLERKS.

April 1, 1788-92.	Joseph Travis.
1793-95.	Solomon Hawes.
1796-98.	Joseph Travis.
1799-1802.	Joel Frost.
1803-04.	David Stanley.
1805-08.	David M. Hyatt.
1809-11.	John Cooper, Jr.
1812.	William Nelson.
1813-15.	Solomon Hawes.
1816-20.	Daniel W. Birdsall.
1821.	John Cooper, Jr.
1822-27.	William D. Everson.
1828-32.	Judson H. Gilbert.
1833-39.	William D. Everson. ¹
1840-41.	Thomas Southard.
1842.	William Royce.
1843.	Thomas Southard.
1844.	Edwin Mabie.
1845.	Jahiel Owen. ²
1846-49.	Thomas A. Whitney.
1850.	Samuel Bard.
1851.	George P. Marshall.
1852.	William H. Briggs.
1853.	William H. Russell.
1854-55.	Francis P. Clark.
1856.	William H. Briggs.
1857-60.	Francis P. Clark.
1861-62.	Hackaliah B. Strang.
1863-64.	Edgar D. Bassett.
1865-66.	Henry Abbott.
1867.	Edmund R. Travis.
1868-72.	George E. Craft.
1873-75.	Charles R. Swain.
1876.	Carlton B. Jordan.
1877.	John McCord.
1878-79.	James McLuckey.
1880-82.	John S. Jones.
1883.	Cyrus W. Horton.

CENSUS—CORTLANDT.

1712.— 91. ³	1850.— 7,758.
1782.— 798. ⁴	1855.— 8,468.
1790.— 1,932.	1860.— 10,074.
1825.— 3,385.	1865.— 9,393.
1830.— 3,840.	1870.— 11,694.
1835.— 3,994.	1875.— 11,928.
1840.— 5,592.	1880.— 12,664.
1845.— 6,738.	

M. J. Cumming

THE VAN CORTLANDT FAMILY.

BY MRS. PIERRE E. VAN CORTLANDT.⁵

Of the Manor House, Croton.

This family has been for over two centuries identified with the history of Westchester County. The great manor of Cortlandt comprehended within its boundaries, the towns of Cortlandt, North Salem, Somers and

¹ Died in 1839, and succeeded for the rest of his term by William H. Briggs.

² Succeeded during his term, on account of sickness, by Thomas A. Whitney.

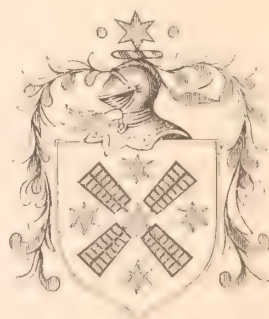
³ Manor of Cortlandt.

⁴ West Ward of Manor of Cortlandt and Ryck's Patent.

⁵ Copyrighted by Mrs. Pierre E. Van Cortlandt, 1886.

Yorktown with a large part of the town of Lewisboro'. Its northern boundary began on the Hudson River at the dividing line between the present counties of Westchester and Putnam, running twenty miles east to the boundary of the colony of Connecticut. Before proceeding to the history of the family, when resident on their manor, a brief sketch of their early settlement in this county will not be out of place.

Olaf Stevense Van Cortlandt, the first of the name who came here from Holland, was from Wyk bij Durnstede,⁶ a village in the Netherlands thirteen miles southeast of Utrecht, and was the son of Stevan and Catharine Van Cortlandt. The latter, according to the date on the portrait her son brought with him, was born in 1566 and died in 1630.⁷ Stevan, his father, was living in South Holland in 1610. A branch of the Van Cortlandts came to Holland from Courland and entered into the military service.⁸ Their coat-armor is recorded in the Hall of Records at Amsterdam, and was brought by them to this country in 1636.⁹ Oloff or Olaf Van Cortlandt was a soldier in the service of the West India Company and came to America in the "Haring" accompanying William Kieft, director-general of the company's North American Provinces.



THE VAN CORTLANDT ARMS.¹⁰

They reached New Amsterdam in 1638, having wintered at Bermuda. He continued in the service of the company until 1648, and the next year he was chosen one of "The Nine Men," and was one of the signers of the remonstrance sent to the company complaining of

⁶ Wyk by Durnstede Fortress, the Batavodurum of the Romans, was in the time of Charlemagne a city of important commerce. Baedeker's "Belgique et Hollande." Its present population is not over three thousand.

⁷ The portrait, painted on panel, is in the possession of the Jay family, at Rye. It was taken there from one of the Van Cortlandt residences in New York, and has always been supposed to be the portrait of Catharine Van Cortlandt.

⁸ The order of Sword Bearers, in 1186, united with the Teutonic Knights, and dissolved in 1561. The grandmaster, Gothard De Kettler, was created Duke of Courland." "Military Religious Orders," by F. C. Woodhouse, London.

⁹ Burke's "Landed Gentry," vol. 4, p. 291 See also "Reitstap's Armored General," Holland. Only fifty copies of this work were printed. There is in it a description of the arms of Van Cortlandt. Dr. O'Callaghan presented the writer with two seals taken from documents signed by Oloff Stevense in 1661, and Stephanus Van Cortlandt 1664, both bearing the family arms. The use of the arms on official documents, thus publicly made, shows the unquestionable and undisputed right of the Van Cortlandts to bear them.

¹⁰ Arms of Van Cortlandt: Argent, four wings of niell, sable and gules (forming St. Andrew's Cross), five estoiles gules.

Crest: Over an esquire's helmet, a wreath argent and gules, surmounted by an estoile gules.

Motto: Virtus sibi munus.

Kieft and Stuyvesant and boldly insisting upon reforms. Their petition being unheeded, they renewed a demand "for a good and wholesome government," and the company found it needful to defend its course, but steadfastly opposed the spirit of liberty shown by their Dutch colonists. Van Cortlandt was chosen Schepen in 1654, with a salary of two hundred and fifty guilders, and was sent to confer with the Indians at Esopus, who had risen and slaughtered the settlers in that region, and a treaty was made with them.

In 1663 he was one of the commissioners appointed to treat with the authorities of Connecticut to decide on the disputed boundary line, but the conference ended without coming to any decision, and the same year he, with several others, was sent to Jamaica, L. I., to meet Scott, an Englishman, who was striving to secure Long Island for England. Some agreement was reached, but Scott left for home, threatening that ere long the Duke of York would possess the country. The end was near and an English squadron appeared in the Narrows summoning the town "on the Island-of-Manhattoes to surrender." The Director-General Stuyvesant was furious, but the citizens urged the uselessness of resistance, and six prominent men, among them "Old Burgomaster Van Cortlandt," met in conference with Colonel Nicolls, and the town capitulated. All magistrates kept their places, old Burgomaster Van Cortlandt with the rest, and things went on quietly. Charles II., at the instance of Stuyvesant, who had returned to Holland, licensed several ships to be sent from that country to New York, and Van Cortlandt went over to attend to their lading. Soon after his return the Dutch regained possession of New York, Colve assuming the government, while Lovelace was ordered to leave; his affairs being found unsettled Van Cortlandt was commissioned to investigate them.

The treaty of Westminster placed New York once more in English hands; Sir Edmund Andros was made governor, and he selected Van Cortlandt as one of his council. In the tax list of this year (1674) Van Cortlandt's property was estimated at forty-five thousand guilders, and he owned a large amount of real estate, beside his residence in Brouwer Straat. He had married, in 1642, Annetje Loockermans, of Turnhout, a town in Belgium, twenty-five miles east of Antwerp. She was the sister of Govert Loockermans, who had come out with Van Twiller.¹ Their married life seems to have been a happy one; he was "a worthy citizen and most liberal in his charities."

¹ Loockermans sailed from Holland in the "Santberg," with Van Twiller. On the voyage they captured the "Saint Martin," a Spanish canoe, bringing it safely into New Amsterdam. In common with all his associates in the sailing of the "Vertoght," he came under the ban of Tienhoven, who speaks of him disrespectfully, but as Hermaus calls Tienhoven "that infernal sycophant," and his reputation was not of the fairest, it is quite probable that Tienhoven was biased. Certainly he was wrong in the statement that Loockermans came from Holland in the "Saint Martin."

Six children gladdened their home—Stephanus, Maria (Mrs. Van Rensselaer), Sophia (Mrs. Teller), Catharine (Mrs. Derval, afterwards Mrs. Frederick Philipse), Cornelia (Mrs. Schuyler), and Jacobus. The latter married the step-daughter of the Herr Frederick Philipse, and was the ancestor of the Yonkers branch of the Van Cortlandt family. Beside owning the Yonkers estate he was a large landed proprietor in the town of Bedford, Westchester County. He was an eminent merchant, and filled many offices in New York, holding that of Mayor from 1710 to 1719. His son, Frederick, succeeded to the Yonkers estate, dying in 1749. By the will of Jacobus the estate devolved to his grand-son, James, a man held in the highest respect for his many good qualities and for the help generously extended during the troublous days of the Revolution, to his suffering neighbors. Dying childless in 1781, the estate reverted to his brother Augustus, at whose death, in 1823, the property went into the female line, the descendants taking the name of Van Cortlandt, and the present representative is Augustus Van Cortlandt.

Of Madame Olaf Van Cortlandt, Valentine writes:² "Every one will recognize the Goet Vrow of the famous Burgomaster of Nieuw Amsterdam, and the mother of his family. Little is known of her personal history, save that she lived on the Brouwer Straat, in a good old double stone house with little windows, immense fire places and a steeple roof. We know that it was a noisy household, for the burgomaster had never less than a dozen negroes lounging round his establishment,³ and madame must have been a patient lady." The good man went to his rest sometime previous to 1683, full of years and of honours. His widow died May 14, 1684, and good Dominic Selyns, whose muse was always ready with poetical effusions for fonts, bells, marriages or funerals, wrote her epitaph.⁴

Stephanus Van Cortlandt, the eldest son of Olaf, was born in New Amsterdam in 1643; he was

² Manual of the Common Council.

³ Among them was no doubt Christopher, taken from the ship "St. Anthony," Silvester Perez, skipper, by the privateer "Raven," commanded by Captain Sebastian Raeff, near Cape Morante. The cargo of the "St. Anthony" was a valuable one, consisting of sixty negroes, manufactured silverware, strings of large pearls, etc. The slaves were disposed of in various ways, *John and Madelon*, the property of the pilot, Juan Galhardo Ferraria, being bought by Govert Loockermans; *Christopher*, also the property of the pilot, by *Olaf Stevens*—Holland Documents, vol. II, p. 31.

⁴ TRANSLATION. Epitaph by Rev. Henriens Selyns for Madame Anna Loockermans, widow of Olaf Stephenson Van Cortlandt, Esq., deceased, May 14, 1684.—

"Here rests who after Cortlandt's death no rest possessed
And sought no other rest, than soon to rest beside him
He died. She lived and died. Both now in Abram rest.
And there, where Jesus is, true rest and joys abide in.
God's will did Anna serve, God's aid did Hannah pray.
In this alone alike that both have passed away."

⁵ 1 Luke ii., 36.

⁶ 2d Samuel i., 10, 11.

From H. C. Murphy's *Anthology of New Netherland* (Bradford Club, No. 4), New York, 1865.

carefully educated under a learned tutor from Europe, and very early entered into public life, his first appointment being to the Court of Assizes. At the age of thirty-four he was chosen mayor, being the first American born mayor of New York. In 1685 Nicholas Bayard was made mayor, and with Van Cortlandt, drafted the famous Dongan charter under which New York became a city. He was also in military life, rising from the rank of ensign, in 1668, to that of Colonel in 1693. At that date he commanded the King's County militia.¹ In 1677 he was appointed the first judge in Admiralty by Governor Edmund Andros, who held him in high esteem and in his letters home represents him to be "an eminent man and well deserving to be one of the Royal Councils." In 1686 and 1688 he was again named one of the council by James II., and the colonial documents bear ample testimony to his worth and ability. Andros was his fast friend and stood as godfather for the little Mary Van Cortlandt (Mrs. Van Rensselaer). It is hardly probable that the wise, well-balanced Van Cortlandt would admit to intimate relations a man who possessed no good qualities.² Van Cortlandt received from Edmund Randolph the appointment of deputy secretary and register of the Province of New York, bearing date "New-Yorke, ye 23d day of October, 1688."³ Not only was he Judge in Admiralty, but associate judge in the Colonial Court, holding also the offices at one time of deputy auditor, receiver-general, secretary of the province and surrogate. In 1696 he was chosen chancellor, then collector of the-revenue and lastly chief-justice of the Supreme Court.

Van Cortlandt's place of business was on the northeast corner of Pearl and Broad Streets, and here this busy merchant found time to serve the interests of church and state. He was made senior warden of Trinity Church and was a member of the council and board of trade. In 1671 he married Gertrude, the daughter of Philip Pieterse Schuyler, of Albany, a woman of strong character, who proved a true helpmeet. Soon a large family of children gathered in the old house, and all went well with him. The colonial documents evince the feeling of trust in his worth held by all, and the clergy in an elaborate Latin testimonial give evidence of their opinion, closing with the hope that the two good men (Van Cortlandt and Bayard) may be spared many years, "for the greater propagation of truth and the increase of Christ's kingdom."⁴ Like all his family, Van

¹ Governor Fletcher ordered Van Cortlandt to hold a "court martial" to investigate "Several disorders and misdemeanors" committed by the militia of this county, bearing date June 8, 1692. (Original in Van Cortlandt papers).

² Brodhead defends Andros from the charges made against him by New England historians and asserts that he did his duty faithfully and fearlessly, "his only fault being that he administered his government too loyally to his sovereign and too much like a brave soldier."

³ Original in Van Cortlandt papers.

⁴ Documents relating to the Colonial History, New York, vol. iii. page 588.

Cortlandt was an enthusiastic politician, and when the tidings arrived that a son was born to James II., he became so excited that he threw his hat in the air and sent his peruke to follow it; and this loyal burst of patriotism was afterwards brought up against him, when, says Brodhead, "the remembrance was very inconvenient." He was now called upon to inquire into the trial of the Maqua Indians—Roman Catholic converts taken in arms while aiding the French in Canada—and gave much time to the investigation of the evidence.

Troubles were now coming thick and fast to the royal council, but space forbids any lengthy account of the doings of Leisler and Milborne and of the insults offered to those in office. J. Romeyn Brodhead and Mrs. Martha J. Lamb, the two best authorities on these matters, detail at length the trials and discomforts to which Van Cortlandt, Philipse and Bayard were subjected during the usurpation of their powers. Van Cortlandt managed to escape, but the other councillors were treated with the utmost indignity, and Madame, "the mayoress," was grossly insulted by the creatures of Leisler, when they came to demand from her the mayor's seal of office and the municipal papers left in her charge by her husband when he was obliged to seek safety in flight. She was equal to the occasion and spite of threats, faithful to her charge.⁵ In 1691 Slaughter came over; Leisler and Milborne were brought to trial, condemned and executed. William III. named royal councillors for New York, and as among the number were Philipse, Van Cortlandts and Bayard, it was manifest *their* course was approved.

For a long time Van Cortlandt had been advancing moneys to the government and had supplied the forts in New York and Albany with necessaries, and the debt was constantly increasing. He had purchased large tracts of land from the Indians, some under an order from Andros in 1677,⁶ laying out much money in improvements. Tenants settled upon these tracts, houses were built, orchards set out, gardens made and

⁵ See letter of Van Cortlandt to Sir Edmund Andros, detailing the insults offered to his wife and the sufferings of his family.—Documents relating to the Colonial History, New York, vol. iii., page 714.

⁶ Original Order (Van Cortlandt papers).

⁷ By the Governor.

⁸ Whereas, Application hath been made unto mee by divers persons for lands at Wijkers necke or adjacent parts on the East side of Hudson's River the which have not as yet been purchased of the Indian Proprietors & These are to authorize to appoint you Col^l Stephanus Van Cortland, Mayor of this City, if fitting opportunity shall present to treat with and agree for any part of the said Land for w^{ch} there may be present Occaseon of settlement or for the whole with the Indian Sachems or Proprietors. The payment whereof to bee made publickely at the Fort or City Hall. Given under my hand in New-Yorke this 16th day of Novemb^r 1677.

"ANDROS.

⁹ Recorded for the Province of New York in Lib. No. 27 Page 228, 229 this 17th day of July 1686.

¹⁰ Recorded in the County Register for the County of Westchester in the Province of New-Yorke in Lib. No. A in folio 128.

"JOSPH LEE, Regist^r

"May 24th 1687"

ferries established, while he seems to have been on amicable terms with the former owners. In 1683 he purchased lands and meadows of the Sachems of Haverstraw and that neighborhood.¹ Colonel Dongan, the Governor of the province under James II., had, in 1686, made purchases from the Indians of lands adjacent to those bought by Van Cortlandt.

These grants Dongan now sold to Van Cortlandt, who received a further confirmation of these rights from the Indian owners, and set himself to the task of fixing the boundaries of his estates. Tradition tells that he set out in his *Periagua* from New York, leisurely surveying the shores from the little craft until he reached a point, now the dividing line between the counties of Westchester and Putnam. Here he disembarked, sending his Indians "a day's journey into the wilderness." This was just twenty miles, and terminated at the colony of Connecticut. This Indian track, in an exact straight line, is to-day the accepted boundary of the Manor of Cortlandt, and the northern boundary of the county. He now applied for a royal charter, with the varied rights appertaining thereto. His request was granted, and the territory was erected into a Lordship and Manor, containing eighty-three thousand acres, the fees amounting "to three hundred pieces of eight."² The charter provides for the holding of Court Leet and Court Baron,³ and gives all advowsons and rights of patronage over all churches that may be built on the manor, appointing also the Lord of the Manor sole and only Ranger, with all the rights that belong unto a Ranger, as in "Our realm of England." It provides in the fullest manner for all the fishing and hunting rights in the manor, and winds up by giving the "Lords of Cortlandt the extraordinary privilege of sending a representative to the Provincial Assembly."⁴ By the feudal tenures under which this Manor was held, a rental

¹Original Indian deed, signed by Sachems, witnessed by *frederick Stappenen Guilian Verplanke and others*, endorsed "Indian deed for the Land & Meadows opposite Anthony's Noos in ye highlands."

²Bolton's "History of Westchester," vol. i., page 94.

³These manorial jurisdictions have descended from a time previous to the accession of Edward the Confessor. A tradition has come down in Maryland that the courts were held occasionally by members of the proprietary families owning manors. It seems probable that in the early period of the existence of the colony manorial courts were not uncommon.—"Old Maryland Manors," by John Johnston, A.B.

⁴There is a record of a Court Baron held at St. Gabriel's Manor in 1654 by the steward of Mistress Mary Brent. There is also extant the original record of Court-Baron and Court-Leet held at St. Clement's Manor between the years 1659 and 1672. It is reasonable to suppose that on other manors, also, these courts were held, and the fact that these records were kept on the manors themselves and not with the public records at St. Mary's sufficiently accounts for their disappearance.—Scharf's "History of Maryland."

No records have been found of any proceedings of the holding of these courts on the Manor of Cortlandt, probably for the above reasons.

The Manor of Cortlandt sent its first Representative, Philip Van Plank, to the Twentieth Colonial Assembly July 23, 1728. He served until the close of the Twenty-ninth Assembly, February 6, 1768. That year Pierre Van Cortlandt was chosen a Representative, the certificate of his election being signed by Jeremiah Travis, Richard Currey, Abner Purdy, Moses Travis, Isaac Hatfield (constable), Hachaliah Brown and Jeremiah Drake.

was paid to the Crown of forty shillings on "the feast day of the Annunciation of our Blessed Virgin Mary." This royal charter, with the great seal of England attached, and headed by the grim visage of William III., is among the heirlooms preserved in the old Manor-house on the Croton River.

The Hon. *De Heer* Stephanus Van Cortlandt (for by this title he is named in all the old papers) now took formal possession of his manor. It is more than probable that as soon as he had purchased of the Indians and *before* he received the royal charter, he had built the present Manor-house and also the Ferry-house; certainly the charter distinctly states that he built *houses*. The Manor-house was obviously built for defense, and when the Indians held their annual feasts and Kintekoyes,⁵ the tenants with their families took refuge here for shelter and safety. The walls are pierced at intervals of two feet with loopholes for musketry, and a row of these apertures extends along the present flooring of the second story, reached no doubt in those days by platforms or lad-



CORTLANDT MANOR HOUSE, CROTON.

ders from within. The size of the house shows the fact of its purpose, as it is only forty by thirty-three feet, and had it originally been intended for a dwelling-house it would have been more spacious and the comfort of its prospective inmates better consulted.

The old Ferry-house is quite a different structure. It is apparently as old as the Manor-house; its roof slopes steeply from the front, and originally a long room was prepared for the waiting travellers, with a large fire-place set corner-wise at either end. Here they awaited the convenience of the phlegmatic ferryman, a Dutchman, no doubt, who slowly and carefully propelled a large scow across the Croton River by ropes. This ferry-house is built of brick and timber, while the Manor-house, or fort, was of solid red freestone, brought from Nyack in the useful *Periagua*. Over each window (when windows and doors were inserted) were small Holland bricks, presumably put

⁵Kintekoye, an Indian dance; as the Indians were liberal in the use of "fire-water," they became at these dances ferocious and dangerous.

in as ornaments. *De Heer* Stephanus Van Cortlandt now began to give much attention to his Manor, although it would not seem that he remained on it for any length of time. Family tradition has it that Governor Dongan often came to the fort to pursue his favorite sport of hunting and fishing. The broad bay of the Croton, extending to the tidewater of the Hudson, was the haunt of numberless ducks, including the famous Canvas-Back, and abounded in fish of many kinds. The large *Croton*, or Striped Bass, and many smaller species, gave him ample sport and employment.¹

Van Cortlandt had purchased of the Indians, previous to his receiving the charter, the territory known as Meanagh (Verplanck's Point) and lands lying to the eastward, called Appamagnpogh. These were now all gathered into the manor and the boundary lines ascertained. He still continued his active life in New York, and, although not bred to the law, he held the office of Justice of the Supreme Court in 1693, and was chosen as first judge of the Common Pleas, in Kings County. He would never have attained to such positions had not great trust been placed in his integrity and executive ability. The Earl of Bellomont in 1699 writes that Col. Cortlandt, the collector, sends sheriffs to collect the rents,² and in writing to the Lords of the Treasury of the revenue and accounts of "this Province during Col. Fletcher's government" says, "had it not been for the credits kept by the collector I could never have come to any knowledge in the accounts." In his letter to the Board of Trade, Bellomont narrates the services rendered by Col. Schuyler and Robert Livingston in keeping the Five Nations quiet, and states that they had disbursed from their own estates not less than seven thousand pounds "besides what Col. Cortlandt has disbursed at York (New) for the companies there, which I believe is £3000 by this time."

The succeeding year Bellomont "writes to the Board of Trade that Col. Cortlandt has become very infirm, but that he gives a just account of all the monies that come in his hands, although he has made no seizures since he became Collector." Although Lord Bellomont wrote in these laudatory terms of Van Cortlandt, he was none the less desirous of breaking the large land grants made to him and to others, and his letters home teem with complaints of the great acquisition made by these landholders. He proposed to the Lords of Trade that an act should be framed in England to prevent the giving of any grant of lands exceeding one thousand acres. The Lords of Trade took no action on his proposal to break these grants, to his great chagrin.

The letter from Bellomont speaking of Van Cortlandt's infirm state of health was written only one month previous to his death, which took place in

1700, at the age of fifty-seven. He left eleven children to the guardianship of his widow Gertrude, his brother Jacobus, his brother-in-law Brant Schuyler and his cousin William Nicolls. He divided his property between his children, giving to each one "a lot of ground within the City of New York for the building of a convenient dwelling-house" and apportioned the rest of the estate among them, giving to John, his eldest son (now second Lord of the Manor), Meanagh. John died without male issue. Gertrude, his only child, married Philip Verplanck, from whom this property received its present name of Verplanck's Point. In 1706 Oliver, one of the sons of Stephanus, died, leaving his share of the manor to his surviving brothers and sisters. The division was not agreed upon until 1730; in 1733 a division was made of lands north of Croton River, and in 1734 a final partition was made as follows:

Lot No. 1, to Philip Van Cortlandt.

Lot No. 2, to Philip Verplanck, who married the only child of John Van Cortlandt.

Lot No. 3, to William Skinner, who married Elizabeth Van Cortlandt.³

Lot No. 4, to Stephen Van Cortlandt.

Lot No. 5, to John Miln, who was the second husband of Maria (Van Cortlandt) Van Rensselaer.⁴

Lot No. 6, to Stephen de Lancey, who married Anne Van Cortlandt.

Lot No. 7, to Margaret V. C., widow of Samuel Bayard.

Lot No. 8, to Col. John Schuyler, who married Cornelia Van Cortlandt.

Lot No. 9, to Andrew Johnson,⁵ who married Catharine Van Cortlandt.

Lot No. 10, to Gertrude, who married Col. Henry Beekman; her portion was the Highlands north of Peekskill Creek, and the Peekskill estate.

Mrs. Van Cortlandt survived her husband for some years, dying in 1723. In her position, as executrix, she had much to contend with. Bellomont, in the most offensive manner, contested the accounts of Van Cortlandt. He demanded a settlement immediately after the funeral and refused to accept copies of the accounts. Those that were of an official nature had been kept in common with his other papers, and the widow refused to give them up. She went with her son to the Council Chamber, asking that they should be examined. Bellomont refused to consent, and the matter was postponed. Then a day was named, and the books were brought by the Van Cortlandts, and seized by the sheriff, under the order from Bellomont, whose death, a few days after, prevented a settlement for some time. This was in 1700.

¹ His real name was Mac Gregor. He was rector of Perth Amboy and belonged to the clan Mac Gregor proscribed after the Rebellion of 1715.—Bolton, *Hist. Westchester*, vol. i., p. 107.

² The god-daughter of Sir Edmund Andros.

³ Andrew Johnson was descended from Sir John de Johnson Knf, one of the guardians of the West Marches, 1371.

¹ Dongan brought to the orchard an apple that is still known as "the Dongan apple."

² *Doc. and Col. Hist.*, vol. 4.

In 1702 an order was given to Tho. Noell, Mayor John Barberie and Robert Lurting to examine the accounts. They did so, and reported that the books had not yet been returned, although Captain Jacobus Van Cortlandt had offered security to the value of ten thousand pounds, promising "to imploy men to copy ye Books out of hand, or pay any they should appoint to copy them;" and adding "they should have either the copies or Originals whic^b they pleased; all w^{ch} was refused." The meeting of the committee to examine the accounts at which the *Sheriffe* acted in so high-handed a manner, was held "at ye house of Francis Chappel ye sign of ye Salutation, and was attended by Abram^b. De Peyster, Sam^a. Staats, Rob^t. Walters and Th^o. Weaver. It is not known when a final settlement was made. The widow sent in a later petition in 1708. Mrs. Lamb states that she resided a part of the time at the Manor House. It is evident that her friendship for the wife of Bellomont was not unimpaired, as after the death of her husband, Lady Bellomont "received the constant attention of Mrs. Abraham De Peyster and Mrs. Stephanus Van Cortlandt—*Lady Van Cortlandt* as she was then styled. The coach of the latter, with its outriders wearing badges of mourning, made frequent trips between the Manor House and the city, although the ladies were much oftener seen wending their way through the woods on horseback."¹

"The Widow Van Cortlandt" died honored and respected. Nearly five hundred of the best-known people in the Province followed in her funeral train. Among them were the clergy, the officers from the ships and fort, and all the prominent physicians, lawyers and merchants.²

By the death of John and Oliver, Philip, the eldest surviving son, became the head of the family. He was born in 1683, and in 1710 married Catharine, the daughter of Abraham De Peyster.³ He was, says

¹ History City of New York, by Mrs. Martha J. Lamb, vol. i., p. 446.

² "Begraaf lyst van moeder Getruyvet Van Cortlandt, overleede Primo November, Anno 1733." Van Cortlandt papers.

Abraham De Peyster, Mayor of New York in 1691, was "a native of the city and was personally popular. He was about thirty-four years of age, with a frank, winning face, fine presence and great polish and elegance of manners. His character was irreproachable and his political judgment sound. He had married, seven years before in Holland, his cousin, Catharine De Peyster."

He "built a palatial mansion in Queen Street, opposite Pine. It was fifty-nine by eighty feet and three stories high, with a balcony with double-arched windows. This broad balcony was for nearly a century the favorite resort of the governors of New York when they wished to hold military reviews. In this large and costly house the De Peysters "indulged in elegant hospitalities and costly entertainments; the best people of the province and stately visitors from the old world were often grouped together under this roof. The silverware in daily use was estimated to worth about eight thousand five hundred dollars, and the most of it was of exquisite workmanship. The finest cut glass and finest china adorned the massive sideboard, and the walls were hung with paintings from the old masters. They had sixteen house-servants, nine of whom were negro slaves. De Peyster owned a tract of land on the north of Wall Street, east of Broadway to William Street, thence to the river, called 'the great garden of Colonel De Peyster,' which was divided among his children." Hist. City of New York, by Mrs. M. J. Lamb, vol. i., p. 420.

Governor Montgomerie, in a letter to the Lords of Trade, June, 1729, "an eminent merchant, in possession of a good estate," and recommends that he be placed on the list of His Majesty's Council, in place of James (Lewis?) Morris, Jr. He received the appointment in 1730, and took his seat the following year. The colonial manuscripts commend his regular attendance at the meeting of the Council, adding, "he resides in the city." In 1740 he accompanied Governor Clark, Judge Horsmanden and Philip Livingston to Albany to meet a deputation from the Six Nations. No wonder that they chronicled "a voyage to Albany," for in those days men made their wills and arranged their earthly affairs before starting on so perilous a journey. It appears from several memoranda that Philip Van Cortlandt made frequent visits to the Manor estate. Mills were built, flour sold to the tenants and shipped to convenient markets, the sloop, or *Periagua* plying constantly between the city and "Croton's River."

The five sons,—Stephen, Abram, Philip, John and Pierre,⁴—came and went at their pleasure, finding at their country home constant occupation; fish were abundant and deer were still to be found in the forest. John, the fourth son, in 1730, when twelve years of age, tamed the deer upon whose head his hand rests in the quaint old picture hanging in the hall of the Manor House, where hang also its horns, long ago preserved by the loving care of his brother Pierre.⁵ John died at an early age. He served as coroner in New York, and from the brief journal left by him seems to have been an earnest, devoted Christian man. Abram and Philip both died young. Stephen, the elder brother, married Mary Walton, the daughter of William Ricketts, of Jamaica, W. I., and died in 1756, aged forty-six, leaving three children, Philip, William Ricketts and Catharine. The latter died young. Philip married Catharine Ogden and took an active part in the Revolutionary struggle, enlisting on the side of England, and was frequently engaged against the Americans in the field.⁶ At the termination of the war he went to England to reside, and died at Hailsham⁷ in 1814. He had twenty-three children, twelve of whom reached maturity, the sons all attaining high rank in the British Army and the daughters marrying into the best English and Scotch families. The present Lord Elphinstone, one of the Queen's Lords in waiting, is a great-grandson of Colonel Van Cortlandt. Of the English branch, no male descendant of the name is living, but *Cortlandt*, used as a Christian name, is transmitted from genera-

⁴ Named after his maternal uncle, Pierre Guillaume De Peyster, who married, in 1733, Catharine, daughter of *Lord Searle*.

⁵ Memorandum written by Pierre, nephew of John Van Cortlandt. — *Van Cortlandt Papers*.

⁶ Burke's Landed Gentry.

⁷ "On the north wall of the church, I was struck with a tablet to the memory of Colonel Philip Van Cortlandt, a retired Royalist officer of the American War, died at Hailsham May, 1814, aged 74." "Fields, Paths and Green Lanes," by Louis J. Jennings, p. 58.

tion to generation in the female line, and in many ways they have evinced a strong attachment for the old home. One son of Colonel Van Cortlandt was killed in Spain in 1811, one died in Madras and one in Afghanistan. Their graves

"Were severed far and wide,
By mount, stream and sea!"

William Ricketts, the second son of Stephen, married and left descendants still living in Westchester County.

The only daughter of Philip and Catharine De Peyster Van Cortlandt, Catharine, was killed in 1736—she was just eleven years of age—while walking with her nurse on the north end of the battery. The gunners were preparing to fire a salute on the south end on the occasion of the King's birthday, when a cannon exploded and a piece striking the little one caused instant death. Philip Van Cortlandt died in 1747,² and by his will gave the estates to his four sons. Abraham and John died unmarried, Stephen and Pierre succeeded to their rights. He devised to his son Pierre, "all that my house and farm or lott of land described on the map or survey of the Manor of Cortlandt, known by the name of South lott (No. 1), being the east town lott from Teller's Point extending all along Croton River, together with the Ferry House and ferry thereunto belonging." "And that all and every of my said four sons, Stephen, Abram, John and Pierre, and the heirs male of their respective Bodys, shall and may from time to time and at all times, hereafter at all fitting seasons in the year, have full and free liberty, leave and lysesense to Hunt, Fish and Fowl near, about, in and upon Croton River when and often as they shall think fitting."³ It is probable that Pierre now resided a part of his time at the Manor House, making it permanently his abode on the 1st of September, 1749. He had married Joanna, the daughter of Gilbert Livingston, and the grandchild of Robert, the first Lord of the Manor of Livingston. She was her husband's second cousin, De Heer Stephanus Van Cortlandt and Robert Liv-

ingston⁴ having married sisters, daughters of Philip Pieterse Schuyler, of Albany. With their eldest born, Philip Van Cortlandt, they left New York for Croton River, and here all the succeeding children were born. For a time all passed peacefully, Pierre pursuing the avocations of a country gentleman of that day, busying himself with his farm and his mills.

He did not forget the claims of hospitality; the massive half-door with its huge brazen knocker was always open to his guests. In 1753 Cadwallader Colden writes to his wife in Orange County: "I have had a very pleasant ride from Fishkill to Van Cortlandt's, where I lodged, passing easily through the mountains. I baited my horse at Duryees, a tenant of Hercules Lent, near Peekskill, and arrived at the Manor House at dusk. Young Pierre and his charming wife keep up the hospitality of the house equal to his late father."

To brighten and enliven the household came a group of little ones, four sons and three daughters, for whose use a small school-house was built about half a mile from the Manor House. The education received here was probably of an elementary character, and the eldest son, Philip, was sent to the Coldenham Academy at the age of fifteen, while the younger children pursued their studies at the home school. But few facts can be gleaned of the history of the quiet years that passed between the coming of Pierre Van Cortlandt to reside in the old Manor House and the opening of the Revolutionary struggle.⁵ Assisted by his son Philip, who had turned his attention to practical surveying, he took charge of most of the Manor lands for the heirs of Stephanus, and the large account books still exist, their pages headed by the pious *Laus Deo*, setting forth payments made to Colonel Oliver De Lancey, Sir Peter Warren, the Skinners and other heirs. Van Cortlandt was also busied in settling up the large estates of Mrs. Ann De Peyster and Mrs. Colonel Beekman, and serving as executor to many relatives, his high ideas of integrity and promptness also causing him to be chosen as arbiter in many vexed questions touching landed estates. He represented the Manor of Cortlandt in the Colonial Assembly from October, 1768, to April, 1775, watching carefully and with painful apprehension the encroachments of the Crown upon the liberties of the Colonies. He was drawn by so many ties of blood and alliance to the officials of the Province and to many noble families in the mother country that it seemed highly probable that his lot would be cast in with those who espoused

¹ Mrs. Hughes, who had the portraits of the ancestors, Philip and Catharine De Peyster Van Cortlandt, with her daughter's assent gave them to the lieutenant-governor with the expressed condition that they were to belong to the old Manor House. He was then living at Peekskill, being, as he writes, "busied in repairing what the British and others have destroyed here, which is the reason that I am obliged to stay at Peekskill for the present. * * My daughter Caty will take charge of them." This daughter, Mrs. Van Wyck, was at the Manor House with her brother, General Van Cortlandt, and the old gentleman, loyal to the wish of his kinswoman, had them hung where the giver desired they should be, a desire in accordance with his own. By some forced construction of their being furniture they have for fifty years been absent from their proper places.

² Bolton's "History of Westchester," vol. i., page 109, states that he died in 1746, but the manuscript journal of John Van Cortlandt, under date September 27, 1747, says, "Came away from Croton's River in our own boat with father, and arrived home (New York) next morning, break of day, being the 21st of September, 1747."

³ This will was proved November 17, 1748, in New York. The fishing rights of the Van Cortlandt's are said to have extended 2 miles to the marked rock at Sing Sing.—Bolton, vol. i., page 109.

⁴ These brother-in-laws were on the most affectionate terms, their letters to each other evince this, and in the society of each other their mode of address is always "Brother Cortlandt" and "Brother Livingston."

⁵ Record for the Manor of Cortlandt and Yorktown.

"At a town-meeting, held for ye Manor of Cortlandt, on the first Tuesday in April in the year of our Lord 1760, to choose town officers for ye said Manor for the ensuing year and the respective names and offices of those chosen.

"PIERRE VAN CORTLANDT, Supervisor."

Bolton's "History of Westchester," vol. ii., page 706.

the royal cause. His brothers had both chosen their course; his nephew, Philip, before alluded to, had openly come out on the side of the king.

In 1774, Governor Tryon came to Croton, ostensibly on a visit of courtesy, bringing with him his wife, Miss Watts, a daughter of the Hon. John Watts (a kinsman of the Van Cortlandts), and Colonel Fanning, his secretary; they remained for a night at the Manor House and the next morning Governor Tryon proposed a walk. They all proceeded to one of the highest points on the estate, and pausing, Tryon announced to the listening Van Cortlandt the great favors that would be granted to him if he would espouse the royal cause and give his adhesion to king and parliament. Large grants of land would be added to his estates, and Tryon hinted that a title might be bestowed. Van Cortlandt answered that "he was chosen a representative by unanimous approbation of a people who placed confidence in his integrity to use all his ability for their benefit and the



LIEUT.-GOV. PIERRE VAN CORTLANDT.

good of his country as a true patriot, which line of conduct he was determined to pursue." Tryon finding persuasion and bribes vain turned to Colonel Fanning with the brief remark, "I find our business here must terminate, for nothing can be effected in this place, so we will return," and after hasty farewells, they embarked on their sloop and returned to New York.

From his quiet home and congenial pursuits Van Cortlandt was called by the storm rapidly gathering over his country and was chosen a deputy from Westchester County to the Second Provincial Congress, November, 1775. He served also in the Third and Fourth Congresses to May, 1777, and was then elected President of the Council of Safety. This body was appointed on the 3d of May, 1777, after the formation of the State Constitution as a temporary form of government, until a governor should be elected and the Legislature meet. It consisted of fifteen members, and sat from the 14th of May until the 10th of September, 1777.

During this year, Mrs. Gertrude Beekman, one of the original heirs of the first Lord of the Manor, died, leaving what was known as the "Peekskill estate," to her great nephew Gilbert L. Van Cortlandt. It comprised that part of the manor lying on the river from the line of Putnam County, embracing Anthony's Nose, Roa Hook, Aunsville and the large estate, on which, in later years, was the residence of Pierre Van Cortlandt, the younger, whose spacious mansion was probably built about 1769. The old Manor House had meantime become an uncomfortable home. Prowling bands of Tories had gathered and were "very busy riding about and combining to provide arms, and the Tories from the eastward were coming continually down, to the number of two or three hundred, who all assembled at N. Merritt's and A. Cronk's with fife and drum." They were dispersed by the minute-men and "parts of Colonel Thomas' regiment, and the troops of horse of Captain N. Treadwell, were ordered to scour Rye Neck. I hear the intent of the Tories was, at Peekskill, to have taken the committee and sent them on board of the 'Asia.' I go to-morrow to New York to the Congress—Thursday night were here to supper and breakfast of Colonel Hammond's Regiment, about three hundred men. They said they drank two Hogsheads¹ of cider." These were stirring times, and to the old house came many distinguished visitors. Franklin tarried here on his way back from Canada, in 1776; here, too, came La Fayette, De Rochambeau, Steuben and the Duke de Lauzun. Washington was here many times while the army lay on the shores of the Hudson, and along the heights of the Croton. In more peaceful days the great Whitefield had preached, standing on the broad verandah, to spell-bound crowds on the lawn, who had been summoned from miles around by horsemen sent out by Van Cortlandt. Here Bishop Asbury also preached.

Directly in front of the house was the Continental Bridge, where Washington halted for awhile, July 2, 1781, and wrote in his diary of "the new bridge over Croton, about nine miles from Peekskill." Until this bridge was built, the ferry was the only means of transit, and the old ferry house offered shelter to many soldiers of the Revolution. During most of this time the family of Pierre Van Cortlandt were absent from their home. They rented a farm from their kinsfolk, the Livingstons, at Rhinebeck, removing there in 1777. A curious old journal tells of their exodus, and the catalogue of the flocks and herds, man-servants and maid-servants that were sent to Rhinebeck, reads like a biblical story of the journeyings of the Patriarchs. Cornelia Van Cortlandt, the oldest daughter and wife of Gerard G. Beekman, had left New York for the Peekskill mansion, but this was too near the neutral ground to be a safe refuge for her

¹ Manuscript letter of Pierre Van Cortlandt to his son Philip, dated "Manor of Cortlandt, Nov. 13, 1775."

father, and it behooved that ardent patriot to keep out of reach of his enemies, many of whom were his own tenantry, now ranged against their country. When it was judged safe to do so, Mrs. Beekman visited the Manor House. She writes to her father from Peekskill, in 1777, of the taking away of the slaves and of the hiding of a faithful few in the garret; when the "row galley-men" came for them and they heard from their hiding-place of the plot to burn the old house, a design probably frustrated by the "galley-men" hearing the news that Mrs. Beekman tells in the postscript of her letter: "I hear General Greene and General Knox are arrived here to reconnoitre."

Stephen, a promising young man, had died in 1775 from an attack of sore throat. This great loss, with the uncertainty that hung over the prospects of the country, and the continued absence of the husband and father, cast a gloom over the household. There was never an hour's cessation of the labors of Van Cortlandt, and his services were not to end until peace should come. Most of his journeys were made on horseback. "The Provincial Congress met at White Plains, going on horseback, led by Pierre Van Cortlandt, and as often as the express of the Commander-in-chief overtook them, calling for immediate action upon some urgent matter of supplying men, arms and material of war, they wheeled their horses together and enacted the requisite legislation."¹ When the news came to the Provincial Congress of the Declaration of Independence they were in session at White Plains, and, gathering in front of the courthouse, they read aloud the "immortal document," and solemnly pledged themselves to abide by it to the end. Well might Van Cortlandt write to his soldier-son in camp, his hope, "That the Lord will be with you all, and that you may quit yourselves like men in your country's cause."

One of the most important events in which he had engaged in 1777 was going in company with George Clinton, John Jay and some members of the Legislature to select a new site for a fort. After consultation with General Washington, West Point was determined upon, and early in January the embankments were commenced. Van Cortlandt was now chosen Lieutenant-Governor, and as George Clinton, the Governor, was constantly in the field, the labors of both offices fell upon him, and they were not light. He served as Lieutenant-Governor from 1777 to 1795, "filling the office with great dignity."² He was the president of the convention that established the Constitution.³ In 1783 he saw the desire of his heart

granted, when he entered once more the city of his birth at the head of a train of exiles, who, for seven years, had been strangers to their homes and hearths, and he thus transcribes a brief record of this entry into New York: "I went from Peekskill Tuesday, the 18th of November, in company with His Excellency, Governor Clinton, Coll. Benson and Coll. Campbell, lodged that night with Genl. Cortlandt at Croton River, proceeded and lodged Wednesday night at Ewd. Cowenhoven's, where we met His Excellency General Washington and his aids. The next night lodged with Mr. Fredk. V. Cortlandt at the Yonkers, after having dined with Gen. Lewis Morris. Friday morning, in company with the Commander-in-Chief, as far as the Widow Day's at Harlem, where we held a Council. Saturday I rode down to Mr. Stuyvesant's,⁴ stayed there until Tuesday, then rode triumphant into the City with the Commander-in-Chief."

In 1778 he was one of the commissioners appointed to extinguish the Indian titles of the State and the manuscript journal of these proceedings was presented by his grandson, Pierre Van Cortlandt, to the Albany Institute and was printed by that learned society. Van Cortlandt always retained a most devoted attachment to Washington, and was constantly a guest at the dinners given by his Excellency, when the latter was in New York.

At the close of the war, Van Cortlandt returned to the Peekskill House and resided here for several years. This house, occupied during the struggle by Gerard G. Beekman and his wife (Cornelia Van Cortlandt) was for a time the American headquarters. Washington nominally stayed at Peekskill, but every evening mounted his horse and attended by his orderly rode off to this mansion.⁵ Mrs. Beekman allowed no hands but her own to make his bed and arrange his room, which for fear of surprise was a secluded one. This lady's life had been full of adventures—her braving Colonels Fanning and Bayard, her spirited replies to the insults heaped upon her husband—her threatened capture by Tryon, the stealing of her "riding beast," the brave demand for its return, which secured its restoration, are all graphically told in the sketch of her life by Mrs. Ellet,⁶ and form a part of the Van Cortlandt family history.

After some years Pierre Van Cortlandt and his wife returned to their old home, the Manor House. Freeborn Garretson, who had married a cousin of both, was an ardent Methodist, and became a constant visitor, bringing with him Asbury and many other great preachers of that denomination. Mrs. Van Cortlandt, whom Asbury calls "a Shunanite, indeed," had always a prophet's chamber in readiness for the welcome

¹ Address of Hon. Chauncey H. Depew, at Sing Sing, July 4th.

² W. Irving's "Life of Washington," vol. ii., page 192.

³ "In the Senate he presided with dignity and propriety, nor ever offered his opinion to be known until called upon constitutionally to decide, and his vote was then given with promptness, uninfluenced by party feelings and evidencing the conditions of a sound and honest mind."—*Gazette*, 1814.

⁴ Mr. Stuyvesant married the sister of Mr. Van Cortlandt.

⁵ See Original Documents, Sir Henry Clinton's Secret Record, from Captain Beckwith's report July 1, 1781. *Magazine American History* text and note May, 1884, page 438.

⁶ "The Women of the American Revolution," by Mrs. Ellet, vol. 2, page 191.

guests. The site of the Methodist Church at Croton, and its extended burial-ground, was Van Cortlandt's gift, and he largely aided in the erection of the church. In 1808 his wife entered into rest at the age of eighty-seven. Many years before her death, she selected a spot in sight of her window to lay a beloved little daughter; here, too, were buried Stephen and Gilbert, (who had died in New York,) in 1786, and here the mother was laid to rest. She "was a model wife, a model mother and a model Christian; she made the Manor House an earthly paradise."¹

On the 1st day of May, 1814, her husband followed her at the age of ninety-four. "A man of exemplary practical virtues, kind as a neighbor, fond and indulgent as a parent, and forever the friend of the poor. He lived an honest man, respected, cherished and beloved. The simplicity of his life was that of an ancient Patriarch. He has descended to the grave, full of years, covered with honor and grateful for his country's happiness. He retained his recollection to the last, calling upon his Saviour to take him to himself."² His personal appearance was very striking; he was of large stature, and the portrait by Jarvis shows a massive head. "An honest face, mild eyes and a benignant countenance, a face one loves to look upon and never weary."³

Five children survived him,—Philip, the brave soldier; Pierre, Catharine, (the widow of Abram Van Wyck, who, since her widowhood, lived at the Manor House) Cornelia, (Mrs. Beekman, whose home was at Castle Phillipse, her husband having purchased a large amount of land in the forfeited Phillipse Manor) and Ann, who resided in Albany, having married the only brother of the Patroon, Philip S. Van Rensselaer, long the Mayor of Albany. Mrs. Van Wyck died in 1829, aged seventy-eight; Mrs. Beekman in 1847, aged ninety-four, and Mrs. Van Rensselaer, the last of her generation, died in Albany in 1855 in her eighty-ninth year.

Philip, the eldest son, now succeeded to the entail. He had been a member of the Provincial Congress in 1775, from Westchester, and finding a crisis fast approaching, he threw the commission given by Tryon in the fire, and on the 18th of June, 1775, received a commission as lieutenant-colonel in the Fourth Battalion of the New York troops, under command of General Montgomery, signed by John Hancock, President of Congress. This acceptance involved many sacrifices; his store, mills and other property were totally lost. The young soldier met, too, with many discouragements. At Newtown his enlisted men, not receiving the clothing promised, marched off, only returning when Van Cortlandt agreed to supply all deficiencies from his own purse. At Albany he was obliged to borrow funds to pay his men, a mutiny having

broken out, in the midst of which, harassed and discouraged, there came to him the heavy tidings of the death of his favorite brother Stephen. Spent with fatigue and distress, after quelling the mutiny, he followed the troops to Ticonderoga, where he lay at the point of death for weeks from a nervous fever. As soon as practicable, General Philip Schuyler, his father's cousin, brought him to his own house, in Albany, to be nursed and cared for, until he could reach his home. In 1776 he returned to Ticonderoga, when Gates took command, and was sent to Skenesborough in place of Colonel Wynkoop, who was ill. "I remained sufficient time to discover the vile conduct of Arnold, in procuring goods from the merchants of Montreal, and appropriating them, I believe, to his benefit; he would have been arrested, but escaped by procuring an order from General Gates to send me the morning after the court had adjourned, to Skenesborough, by which means the court was dissolved, Hazen released from arrest,⁴ and Arnold escaped the censure which he ought to have had."⁵ A return of fever sent Van Cortlandt south, and he joined Washington at King's Bridge, near the residence of the Yonkers Van Cortlandts, and acted for a few days as aid to Washington. Shortly afterwards the battle of White Plains was fought, and Colonel Ritzema having displayed disaffection or fear, absconded to New York, and Washington filled up one of the blank commissions furnished him by Hancock with the name of Van Cortlandt, appointing him Colonel of the Second New York Regiment, in November, 1776. He joined the regiment immediately after the battle of Princeton, recruiting and disciplining it, and in 1777 they were sent to Peekskill to join the Fourth Regiment under the command of Colonel Henry B. Livingston, as a number of British ships and transports had appeared in the Hudson. "No one shewed more zeal at this time of alarm than Colonel Van Cortlandt, of an old colonial family, which held its manorial residence at the mouth of the Croton. With his regiment he kept a dragon watch along the eastern shore of Tappan Sea and Haverstraw Bay."⁶ From Peekskill he was sent to Bergen, and after a skirmish there with the enemy took command at White Plains. His duty here was exceedingly severe, being surrounded by a force treble in number to his own, but he kept them at bay, and effectually guarded the neutral ground. The army left for Philadelphia, and Colonel Van Cortlandt, in command of the Second and Fourth New York Regiments, was ordered to relieve Fort Stanwix, now besieged by St. Leger, aided by an Indian force under Brant.

The fort, commanded by General Peter Gansevoort, was invested, but a sally was made, resulting in the battle of Oriskany and Colonel Willett putting the

¹ Sketch of Pierre Van Cortlandt, by the Rev. J. B. Wakely, D. D., Ladies' Repository, December, 1860.

² Obituary notice.

³ Sketch by Dr. Wakely.

⁴ Colonel Hazen had been arrested by Arnold, for disobedience to orders.

⁵ Manuscript journal of Philip Van Cortlandt, published in "American Magazine of History," May, 1878.

⁶ "History of Washington," by W. Irving, vol. ii.

enemy to flight. A relief party had been sent by Arnold and the enemy withdrew to Canada. Colonel Van Cortlandt now rejoined the brigade of General Poor, encamped at Stillwater, and on the 17th of September a severe engagement came off. Van Cortlandt's regiment was engaged first against the Hessians and next against a troop of light infantry. "This was one of the longest, warmest and most obdurate battles fought in America."¹ "The theatre of action was such that although the combatants changed ground a dozen times in the course of the day, the contest terminated on the spot where it began. It was truly a gallant conflict in which death by familiarity lost its terrors."² The hostile armies lay opposite each other until the 7th of October. At the battle of Saratoga, where Burgoyne surrendered on the 17th of October, the Second Regiment under Van Cortlandt, attached to Poor's Brigade, bore themselves with the greatest gallantry.³ In the memoirs of Wilkinson, he states that after the surrender he was so ill that he had to be placed on a bed in a wagon with Colonel Van Cortlandt, who was in similar case, and both were conveyed to Albany. After his recovery Van Cortlandt joined the main army huddled at Valley Forge.

General Clinton applied for the Second Regiment to guard the frontier, where Brant and his Indians were ravaging and destroying, and he was on this duty during the winter of 1778-79. The ensuing spring Van Cortlandt set off with two hundred and fifty men to surprise Brant on the Delaware, but received orders to join Sullivan in Pennsylvania. While preparing to do so, news was brought that the Indians were at hand, and with Colonel Cantine and the Ulster militia, they set off and the Indians retired. During the skirmish, as Colonel Van Cortlandt was leaning against a tree, waiting for his men to close up, Brant ordered one of his Indians to pick him off, but the ball passed three inches above his head.⁴

¹ Colonel Philip Van Cortlandt and New York Continentals," by Mrs. Helen Beck Parmelee. New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, July, 1874.

² Memoirs of General James Wilkinson.

³ "No men did more efficient service on this memorable occasion than the Sons of New York, led by Colonel Van Cortlandt and other gallant officers, who, in disputing the pathway to their own broad acres, were contending for a continent. They resented the removal of Schuyler from the chief command and declared that an able general might have utterly routed Burgoyne."—*History of New York*, by Mrs. M. J. Lamb.

⁴ The conclusion of this story is characteristic of both men. Some years after the war was ended, General Van Cortlandt was seated in church. As the general was near the window he saw a stranger passing through the adjoining grave-yard, and who, as he went by, glanced in at the window. The face was a striking and familiar one. Where had he seen it? A few minutes meditation solved the question. When Brant visited England in 1776 he was received at court with marked distinction, and Romney painted his picture in full war costume. From this likeness some fine engravings had been published, and the general (for he was breveted a general after the war) had at the manor-house a framed copy of this portrait, still in the possession of one of the family. The moment that the conviction "this is Brant" crossed his mind, he rose and quietly left the church, and, walking after the stranger, accosted him by name. Brant replied politely, but expressed surprise that he should be recognized in that neighborhood. The general introduced himself, and,

After the retreat of the Indian force Colonel Van Cortlandt joined Sullivan, who ordered him to construct a road to Wilkesbarre, a duty for which his early training as a surveyor fitted him. Here he awaited the arrival of Sullivan, who marched over the road with Maxwell's and Poor's brigades, and at Newtown, (now Elmira), they joined the main body under General James Clinton. There Butler and Brant had made a stand.

"I requested General Clinton to permit me to charge with bayonet as soon as I gained the heights on the flank of the Indians; he consented, and I ordered the charge to be made, he leading the First Regiment and I the Second, which ended the battle in five minutes. They ran and left their dead behind them, which they seldom do unless obliged to."⁵ The troops proceeded to the Genesee Flats and the Indians retreated to Niagara, their confederacy broken. The Second Regiment returned to Morristown, erecting there log huts for their use. Colonel Van Cortlandt was ordered to Philadelphia to a court-martial on Arnold. The members agreed with one accord to cashier him; but they were overruled and the sentence changed to a reprimand from the commander-in-chief, "a fatal lenity, as events subsequently proved." In 1780 the regiment marched to Northern New York. The colonel was sent to West Point to command a regiment of infantry under Lafayette, who had two brigades under his command and was stationed at Tappan. Lafayette went from there to Virginia, and the five New York regiments were consolidated under the command of Colonel Van Cortlandt, who was ordered to Fort Schuyler (now Utica) to relieve Colonel Cochrane. He went on and removed the cannon, etc., to Fort Herkimer, where a new fort was commenced. From here he was sent to Albany, and thence to West Point, receiving secret orders when here (from Washington) to proceed through New Jersey to Yorktown. On his arrival "Van Cortlandt was ordered out with a strong picket guard to relieve Colonel Schammil, who had invested the town; but this officer, unfortunately mistaking a British patrol of horse for our own men, had been surrounded, and was mortally wounded.

falling into conversation, they walked back to the tavern, where they dined together and talked over their various adventures during the war. In the course of their interview the skirmish near Laghawack was spoken of, and Brant related his orders to shoot down the commanding officer, but the man's sight was deceived by the fluttering of the leaves or some such cause, and he sighted an inch or more too high. "Had I fired myself," continued Brant, "I should not have had the pleasure of meeting you to day." "Indeed," replied the general, smiling, "I am very happy that you did not." "And I, sir," said Brant, bowing—for with all his native ferocity, he was a polished gentleman—"And I, sir, am also extremely happy I did not."

From "Colonel Philip Van Cortlandt and the New York Continentals"—Mrs. Parmelee.—N. Y. Bio. and Gen. Record.

In the manor-house hangs the original portrait of Brant, painted for James Caldwell, the grandfather of Mr. Pierre Van Cortlandt, and copied for Stone's "Life of Brant;" also for the Indian Gallery at Washington by permission of William Caldwell.

⁵ Manuscript journal of Philip Van Cortlandt published in *Am. Mag. of History*.

The commander-in-chief and other officers came to the redoubt, and were fired on by the enemy, but without effect. General Washington then directed Colonel Van Cortlandt to keep his men as they were at present disposed, out of sight of the battery, and at night to surround the town to the right with sentinels all the way to York River, whilst the French pickets would do the same to the left, and the next morning the enemy saw themselves surrounded by a line of vigilant troops, who threw up an intrenchment and planted cannon, to which Washington himself applied the first match. The ball crashed through the town, and struck a house where some British officers were at dinner, killing the one at the head of the table. The enemy had two redoubts about 350 yards in advance of the line, and batteries which surrounded the town, and it was determined to storm them. General Lafayette's light infantry was sent to one, the French grenadiers, under the Baron de Viomenil, to the other. The light infantry, under Colonel Hamilton, Major N. Fish and other officers, took the one near the river in a few minutes. When General Lafayette sent word to the French baron, he returned answer that his battery was not taken, but would be in five minutes, 'which,' says Colonel Van Cortlandt, 'I believe he did.' Both the above were brilliant exploits, and crown the assailants with everlasting honor, particularly as they extended mercy to every one who solicited it after entering the works, which was not the case when Dayton's horse was surprised. 'After the redoubts were taken,' continues the colonel, 'we advanced our lines in their range, and the next morning I advanced the New York Brigade, which I then commanded, with drums and colors flying, and carried arms up to the redoubt which Baron Viomenil had taken; which insulting movement drew on us the resentment of our enemies, who fired an incessant shower of shells, without doing any injury, only killing a French grenadier in my front, and a Virginian retiring on my left. One of the shots, as I entered the entrenchment, cut its upper part, and almost covered me and the Baron Steuben, who was meeting me, when he directed me to stop my music, when the firing ceased. When I came to the redoubt, it was necessary to cut away a part to get a mortar to play on the enemy. One of Captain Vandenburg's fatigue party was killed the first stroke he struck by a nine-pound ball, which carried off his thigh close to his body. On seeing this, a volunteer was called for, as the case was desperate, when a soldier who had been disgraced, as he told me, without a cause, took the place and performed the work, although during its execution three balls were fired at him, all of which came within six inches, and one almost covered his head with sand. His name was Peter Christian Vought and his brother is my neighbor at Peekskill. One night, the enemy, I suppose to save appearances, made a sortie on a French battery by surprise, killed some, and spiked the

guns, but were soon obliged to retire with some loss."¹

On the 19th of October, 1781, the British army surrendered. The prisoners were sent to the interior, and as both General Clinton and Colonel Dayton were ill, Colonel Van Cortlandt took command of the New York Division and the New Jersey troops, and marched seven hundred Hessian and British prisoners to Fredericksburg, delivering them to the Virginia militia.

Silver in those war times seems to have been a rarity in the Old Dominion, for the colonel remarks: "I was asked at Hanover Court House five dollars for a bowl of apple-toddy, but was satisfied by paying one silver dollar." After delivering up the prisoners, he continued his march through Alexandria, Georgetown, Bladensburg, Baltimore, and Philadelphia, to Trenton, where the New Jersey troops left, and the New York brigade marched to Pompton, and commenced huts for their winter accommodation, which, after all, appears to have been of a miserable sort. They were scant of clothing and provisions, and obliged to labor hard to keep their huts warm.²

While in their huts they were visited by Steuben, and also by Washington and his wife, who remained in Van Cortlandt's quarters from Saturday until Monday. The succeeding year the regiment was sent to Verplanck's Point, where they were joined by the New Jersey and New England troops. The French army, under Rochambeau, halted there on their way to Peekskill, where they were reviewed by the Commander-in-chief. In the autumn they huted at New Windsor, and while there, Colonel Van Cortlandt attended the meeting called by Washington to consider the disaffection that had arisen from the fear entertained lest the army should be returned penniless to their homes. The meeting resulted in a unanimous resolution to patiently await the doings of Congress, and trust that their faithful services would meet a due reward. Soon after the army was disbanded, and the musical instruments of the band of the Second New York and the colors of the two regiments were presented by Colonel Van Cortlandt to George Clinton at Poughkeepsie.

In 1783 Congress conferred on Philip Van Cortlandt the rank of Brigadier-General for gallant conduct at Yorktown. He returned to the Manor House, but his activity of mind and body prevented him from leading a quiet life. He was one of the Commissioners of Forfeitures, and was sent by the district in which he resided, for sixteen years as its representative in Congress. He filled many local offices in his own town of Cortlandt, acting as supervisor, school commissioner and road master, scrupulously discharging the duties of each office with the same zeal and activity he had displayed when heading his regiment in

¹Sketch by Mrs. Parmelee. New York Genealogical and Biographical Record.

²Ibid.

the field. He had been one of the original members and founders of the Cincinnati Society, established at the cantonment of the army on the banks of the Hudson in 1783, and was on most intimate terms with all the foreign officers belonging to this Society. In 1824 Lafayette, his old comrade in arms, visited this country. An express notifying General Van Cortlandt, reached Croton at midnight, and at daylight he set off to the city, where "he had the inexpressible satisfaction of embracing his old compatriot, and felt it one of the happiest moments of his life." He accompanied Lafayette on the greater part of his extended tour through the country. He died at his home November 21, 1831, in the eighty-second year of his age, and is interred near the graves of his parents.

The Manor House, with its surrounding estate, now became the property of Pierre Van Cortlandt; by his will the General bequeathed portions to his three sisters, and the residue to his nephew, Philip G. Van Wyck, who had always resided with him.

Pierre Van Cortlandt was born in 1762, and his early education was received at the school on the estate. He entered Rutgers (then Queen's) College at an early age. While pursuing his studies there, an attack was made on New Brunswick by the British, and the small body of students sallied out with the towns-people. Shots were exchanged, and one of the enemy was killed, but the honor of firing the fatal shot was disclaimed by the lads, all dreading the consequences. During his college sojourn the brave Captain Voorhees was murdered by the British, being literally hacked to pieces near New Brunswick. Van Cortlandt knew him well, and vividly described the occurrence in after years. The degree of LL.D., was conferred upon him by his Alma-Mater in his old age. On one of his visits to his home at Peekskill, made on horseback, from his college, he met on the road a carriage in which was a lady apparently in distress. Near the carriage rode his acquaintance, Lieutenant Franks, to whom he addressed some inquiries, to which the latter answered briefly, "That is Mrs. Arnold; there is treason; you will hear all about it when you get home." He found on reaching Peekskill that Andre had been taken to a small house at the fork of the roads, two miles north of Peekskill and a short distance from the Van Cortlandt mansion. Ann Van Cortlandt (afterwards Mrs. Van Rensselaer,) accompanied her brother Pierre on a visit to Andre.

In 1788, on the occasion of "the Doctor's Mob," in New York, being mistaken for a medical student, he was in serious peril and very roughly handled until recognised by some of the crowd. After finishing his collegiate course he commenced the study of law, entering the office of Alexander Hamilton, who had married the daughter of his kinsman, General Philip Schuyler. He often spoke in after years of the kindness shown him by Mrs. Hamilton. In 1801 he mar-

ried Catharine, the eldest child of George Clinton. She was the widow of Captain John Taylor, B.A., who died soon after their marriage, at Falmouth, England. They took up their abode in the Mansion House at Peekskill. Pierre, like his brother Philip, served his own town in many ways, acting as school commissioner, supervisor and road-master. Mrs. Van Cortlandt was energetic and vivacious and the old house was gay and cheerful. In 1811 she died, after a short illness.

Van Cortlandt was sent by his district to Congress in 1811-12. During his time of service his father-in-law, George Clinton, the vice-president, died in Washington, attended with unremitting devotion by his son-in-law. The tie between them had been a strong one and the letters of Clinton show that he loved him as his own child. In 1813 Pierre Van Cortlandt married at Albany, Ann, daughter of John Stevenson, an eminent merchant. Her mother, Magdalen Douw, was the daughter of Volcker Peter Douw, vice-president of the Provincial Congress, an associate of Philip Schuyler as Indian commissioner and the first judge of Albany County. Mrs. Van Cortlandt was a lineal descendant of David Pieterse Schuyler, the elder brother of Philip Pieterse Schuyler, from whom her husband was fifth in descent. Their winters were spent in Albany and in summer they returned to Peekskill. In 1815 their only child, Pierre, was born in Albany and there Mrs. Van Cortlandt died, in 1821.

In 1800 Van Cortlandt was a Jeffersonian elector, in 1840 a Harrisonian elector, in 1844 a candidate as a Clay elector. He served as major-general in the militia of his district, James Fenimore Cooper at one time acting as his aid. From 1833 to 1848 he was President of the Westchester County Bank. When the States Prison was removed to Sing Sing, he was made one of the board of inspectors and faithfully and carefully performed the duties of this office, serving most of the time as president of the board. He was warden of the Episcopal Church at Peekskill and one of its most liberal benefactors. His loss was deeply felt when in July, 1848, after a very brief illness, he died in the eighty-sixth year of his age. He, too, was laid to rest beside his parents in the old burial-ground.

His only child, Pierre, succeeded to the inheritance of his ancestors. In 1836 he married Catharine E., the daughter of T. Romeyn Beck, M.D., of Albany,¹ and of Harriet, the daughter of James Caldwell. His youth was spent at Peekskill and for this home he never lost his affection.

At the death of General Philip Van Cortlandt, his brother succeeding to the inheritance of the Manor House, he gave it to his son Pierre for his residence,

¹ Known over the civilized world as the author and founder of medical jurisprudence, a science which he substantially created. He ranks, wherever law and justice are administered, with Blackstone and Bacon, Grotius and D'Aguesseau. — Hon. A. W. Bradford.

and here, for forty-eight years, he lived, and here, on the 11th of July, 1884, he died. He filled no offices, and, save as one of the staff of Major-General Ward, rarely appeared in public life. He was a domestic man, delighting in the quiet of home and country pursuits. In his youth he was remarkably handsome and was most stately and distinguished in his later years. Four sons preceded him to the grave,—Romeyn Beck and Philip, in their infancy, and Pierre and Theodric Romeyn, in their manhood. He was laid to rest in the old family burial-ground, the last bearing the name of Pierre, a name that had existed in the family for one hundred and sixty-three years. His widow and three children survive him,—Catharine T. R., married to the Rev. John Rutherford Mathews, Chaplain United States Navy, James Stevenson and Anne Stevenson.

James Stevenson Van Cortlandt, at the age of eighteen, in 1862, was made aid-de-camp to General Corcoran, and served on his staff until that general's



PIERRE VAN CORTLANDT.

sudden death. He then returned to the regiment (the One Hundred and Fifty-fifth New York) in which he had been mustered, remaining in it for two years, during all the terrible battles of the Wilderness and in front of Petersburg, until 1864, when he was promoted and joined the Twenty-second New York Cavalry, being with that regiment during Sheridan's campaigns. He was mustered out in August, 1865, at the end of the war, with the full rank of captain, returning to his home at the Manor.

Colonel Van Cortlandt was a member of the Cincinnati Society, serving on the standing committee for many years. His death brought many proofs of the esteem in which he was held by neighbors and friends, and it was well and truly said of him, "residing during all his years, from boyhood to old age,

in this town which bears his name, he died without an enemy."

The Van Cortlandts have always been a loyal and patriotic family, and to few have been granted so honorable a record.

Catharine E Van Cortlandt

CHAPTER VI.

YORKTOWN.

BY REV. WILLIAM J. CUMMING,

YORKTOWN is the second of the northern tier of towns of Westchester, beginning at the Hudson River and going eastward. It is bounded on the north by Putnam County, on the east by Somers and New Castle, on the south by New Castle and on the west by Cortlandt. The distance from White Plains to the centre of the town is about eighteen miles, and from New York by rail thirty-eight miles. It is rectangular in shape, the greatest dimension being from north to south. Its length is about ten miles, its width about four miles, and its area consequently about forty square miles. The surface is rolling, the ridges extending north and south. Several points attain a height of from six hundred to one thousand feet above tide-water. The town contains five lakes, four natural and one artificial. In the north-west corner is Lake Mohegan, with an area of about two hundred acres. It was once called Crooked Lake. Osceola Lake, near the north-eastern corner, is a pretty sheet of water covering about one hundred acres. It has borne, prior to its present name, the designations Round,¹ Hollow and Jefferson. In the centre are the two lakes now called Mohansic. In a deed² bearing date of March 20, 1686, conveying a tract of land called "Kechtawong," extending from the mouth of the Croton River, north along the Hudson River to the land already owned by Van Cortlandt, thence eastward to these lakes, thence along their outlet to the Croton and so on to its mouth, the name given is the Indian one "Keakates," written also Keakatis. Later on the map of "The Manor of Cortlandt," bearing the date of 1734 they are called "Cedar Pond," from the cedar trees that abounded there. This name gave way to the Dutch one of "Crompond," which was the designation during the Revolutionary War, and later, though why so-called it is difficult to explain, as they are not specially crooked, while Lake Mohegan was in early times well so-named from its shape. Croton Lake, in the southern portion of the town, is artificial, being formed by a dam constructed

¹ MSS. Survey by Robert Eskine, F. R. S. 1779.

² Deed quoted by Bolton, "History of Westchester County," Vol. 1, p. 44 (old ed.).

across the river of that name. It is about five miles long and extends into the town of Somers. It was constructed in 1841 for the water supply of New York City. The drainage of the northern portion of the town reaches the Hudson through Annsville Creek, that of the centre through the Muscoot and Croton Rivers, and that of the lower through the latter. These rivers bear their present names on the manor-map of 1734. Previous to that time the Croton seems to have borne several names or, more probably, one spelled differently—Kitchawan, Kechtawong and Kighleivank.¹

The original inhabitants of this town were the Indian, the deer and the wild turkey. The Indians, on the east bank of the Hudson, were sub-divisions of the great Mohegan Tribe.

In Yorktown, north of the Kitchewan (Croton River) were the Kitchewanks, while south of it were the Sints-Sinks and Tankitekes. The Kitchewanks had a village, with a burial-ground, located at Lake Keakatis, if tradition be correct, at what was called Cedar Point, and the tract of land south of the Mothansic Lakes to the Croton, was called by their name, Kitchewan. The remainder of the town to the north, has by some been included in what the Indians called Appamagh-pogh, since, possibly, as Bolton thinks, corrupted into Amawalk, the name of the eastern-central district.

Against this supposition apparently are boundaries given in an Indian conveyance. The last Indian encampment was on what was called Indian Hill, just north of Osceola Lake.

The ownership of the land passed out of Indian hands into those of Stephanus Van Cortlandt, merchant of the city of New York. The earliest grant bears the date of August 24, 1683, covering certain districts in the town of Cortlandt. June 17, 1697, William III. of England, conferred on Stephanus Van Cortlandt what are really feudal rights and made him feudal lord over the district comprising, it is said, more than eighty thousand acres, composing what has been called the Manor of Cortlandt. It began on the north line of the Manor of Phillipsburg, ran due

east twenty miles to the Connecticut line, thence on that line north ten miles and then west twenty miles to the Hudson River at Anthony's Nose. He was given authority to hold "one court-leet and one court baron," the patronage over all churches established or to be established, authority to levy taxes, and after twenty years to send one representative to the Assembly of the province. Mines of silver and gold alone were assured to the crown. For these privileges he was to pay a yearly rental of forty shillings current money of the province. August 8, 1699, he secured a grant from the Indians of the same tract as nearly as water boundaries could designate it. The Manor included about what are now the towns of Cortlandt, Yorktown, Somers, North Salem and a portion of Lewisboro.³

The town, as early as 1760, seems to have borne the name of Hanover, one undoubtedly derived from the reigning house of England, but by whom given can not be ascertained. It appears in the ancient hog-skin record of the Presbyterian Church and was also found in the old town record (now lost) as quoted by Bolton in his history of the county. So far as the civil law was concerned, it was known simply as the Manor of Cortlandt. By an Act of the Legislature, date of March 7, 1788, the present town was erected and called Yorktown. The principal occupation of its inhabitants is agricul-

ture and the products are wheat, rye, oats, corn, (largely for home consumption) potatoes, apples, milk and butter.

The partition of the manor of Cortlandt among the heirs took place in 1734, for which purpose the map of "The Mannor of Cortlandt" was prepared. This town passed into the possession of Andrew Miller, Gertruyde Beeksmann, John Schuyler, Margaret Bayard, Philip Verplanck and others. It was after this date that sales of land were made. There were few, if any, white inhabitants by 1712, for the population of the entire manor was only ninety-one, most of whom, doubtless, resided near the Hudson River.



Stephanus Van Cortlandt

² See sketch on the following page.

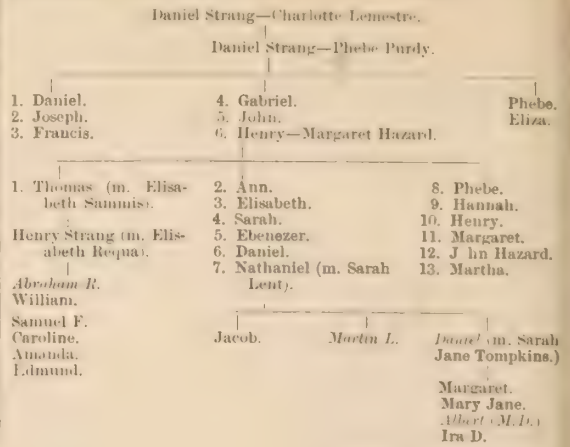
³ The boundaries as given here are taken from conveyances as quoted by Bolton, "History of County of Westchester," vol. i., (old edition).

¹ Possibly only the designation of the mouth of the river. "The map of the Manor of Cortlandt" (1734).

The tide of immigration, when it did set in, came from Connecticut, and the lower portions of the county, especially from White Plains and Rye. The earliest settlers of whom we have any knowledge are the Mekeels, Strangs and Hortons. Uriah Mekeel came to New York from Amsterdam about 1690. He married Mary Tiebout, an English girl, and found his way to Pine's Bridge subsequently to 1718, at which date his son Michael was born at Yonkers. The latter in 1765 purchased a farm of 231 acres, on which he had lived for a few years previous, from one of the heirs of the Van Cortlandts. He died in 1822 at the advanced age of one hundred and four years. His great-grandson, Jacob Mekeel, occupies a portion of the homestead situated half a mile east of Yorktown station.

The Strang family of Yorktown came of Huguenot stock. Daniel Strang, or, as he wrote his name, Streing, was born at Orleans, France. He was educated at least in part, at the Academy of Geneva, where in the matriculation book is found the signature "Daniel String Genabensis." He entered there as a student of philosophy July 29, 1772. His wife's name was Charlotte Lemestre (Records of French Church, New York), and she was probably of the Le Maistre family of Orleans. They were residents of Paris prior to the revocation of the Edict of Nantes. He fled from Paris to England, leaving his wife in possession of the property, and became lieutenant in the guards of James II. Friendless and destitute she attempted to escape to England, and succeeded only by leaving her two-year-old child as security for her return. She reached London and was recognized on the street by friends of her husband and brought to him March 21, 1688. They were naturalized in England and the same year came to this country and settled on North Street, New Rochelle. Their son Daniel first settled at White Plains, and probably removed to Yorktown in company with Daniel Horton about 1728, locating on the farm now owned and occupied by James Knapp. Mr.

Horton occupied the one next on the north, now owned by Hickson Covert. The following is the genealogy of the branch of the family to which the subjects of the sketches given below belong:



Albert Strang

Abraham Requa Strang, son of Henry and Elizabeth Requa (daughter of Abraham Requa and Bethiah Hopkins), was born in Yorktown in what is now the tenant house of Daniel Strang, November 21, 1812. He received his education in the district school and North Salem Academy. In his early manhood he lived one and a half years in Cayuga County, New York. With this exception he has resided in Yorktown, on Crompond Street, on the place belonging to the estate of the late Dr. Colgan, and on the farm now owned and occupied by himself. The name of his first wife was Julia Pardee, daughter of Joseph Pardee and the date of the marriage December 8, 1834. She lived only about eighteen months. December 8, 1846, he married Elisabeth, daughter of John and Elisabeth Hyatt, of Putnam Valley, Putnam Co., N. Y. There are no children by either marriage. Mr. Strang represented his town in the Board of Supervisors in 1852-1853. He was member of assembly for what was then the First District of Westchester Co., in 1856. From 1860-1872 he was county superintendent of the poor.



Daniel C. McHenry



Martin Luther Strang was born in Yorktown, January 1, 1807. His parents were Nathaniel and Sarah Lent Strang. He was educated in the district school and at the North Salem Academy. He has been twice married. The name of the first wife was Eliza Conklin, daughter of John and Ann Conklin of Shrub Oak and the date of the marriage January 31, 1833. November 17, 1845, he married Elizabeth Lent, daughter of David D. and Hester C. Lent of Cortlandt. The children by the first marriage are Sarah Ann (now Mrs. George Horton of Somers); Nathaniel C. of Yorktown; John M. of Yorktown; by the second, Ami K. of Yorktown; Louise E. (now Mrs. Ida D Crane of Carmel, New York), and Mary H. Mr. Strang's occupation is that of a farmer and his residence Crompond Street.

Daniel Strang was born on the farm now owned and occupied by his son, Albert Strang, M. D., March 13, 1810. The house stood to the east of the present one and across the road. His parents were Nathaniel and Sarah Lent Strang (daughter of Jacob and Philena Lent, of Somers.) His education, as that of many of his contemporaries, was received in the district school and at the North Salem Academy. His early life was spent on his father's farm. Later he purchased the place on Crompond Street which he now occupies. December 20, 1837, he was united in marriage to Sarah Jane, daughter of Daniel B. and Deborah Hoag Tompkins, of Yorktown. The names of the children are,—Margaret

(died in infancy); Mary Jane (wife of Ebenezer Wood, Jr., of South Salem); Albert Strang, M. D., of Yorktown; Ira D. Strang, of Yorktown.

Mr. Strang was a member of the Board of Supervisors for Yorktown in 1857.

Albert Strang, M. D., was born in Yorktown, October 13, 1843. He was the oldest son of Daniel and Sarah Jane Strang. His English education was derived from the district school and College Hill, Poughkeepsie, N. Y. October, 1864, he entered Bellevue Hospital Medical College and began his professional studies under the preceptorship of Stephen Smith, M. D., professor of anatomy in that institution. He graduated with the degree of M. D.

in 1867. He was junior assistant in Bellevue Hospital in 1866; senior assistant, October, 1867; house surgeon, 1867-68; assistant to the Chair of Descriptive and Surgical Anatomy in Bellevue Hospital Medical College, 1868-70; health inspector in the Health Department of New York City, 1869-71. From 1864-71 Dr. Strang resided in the city. Since 1872 he has practiced medicine with success in Yorktown. September 2, 1868, he married Kate Depew, daughter of Isaac and Martha M. Depew, of Peekskill, and sister of Hon. C. M. Depew. The issue of the marriage are Martha Depew, Elise Hageman and Mary Jane.

The Hortons were from White Plains or vicinity. Daniel Horton and Esther his wife settled here on the farm now owned and occupied by Hickson Covert, just south of Florenceville, not long after the Strangs. As their farms adjoined and they were from White Plains they may have come here together. Their children numbered eight. It was Daniel, the second child, who was captured by the cow-boys and released by Elijah Lee and his friends. Most, if not all the Hortons here, the late Harry Horton, Elias Q. Horton and the latter's brothers and sisters are lineal descendants.

Elias Q. Horton is a son of Henry and Jane Q. Horton, who resided at Yorktown. He was born at that place September 14, 1823, being the sixth of twelve children, seven of whom still survive. He divided his early years between the farm and district school, leaving school at the age of twenty to



Martin L Strang

pursue the avocation of a farmer.

He has taken an active part in local politics and is widely known and respected throughout Westchester County. He early connected himself with the Democratic party, and was elected in April, 1865, commissioner of highways for three years. In 1866, while still commissioner, he was elected to fill the office of justice of the peace, which he still holds. In 1868 he was elected supervisor and was re-elected the following year.

He is a stockholder in the Peekskill National Bank and largely acquainted in business circles in and about that place. He married, March 1, 1848, Mary F. Tompkins, daughter of Samuel Tompkins. They

have three children—Henry S., Ferdinand (formerly town clerk) and Annie A.

William James Horton, son of Hon. Frost Horton and Phebe Tompkins, and at present supervisor of the town of Yorktown, was born there December 10, 1828. Soon after his birth he accompanied the family to the adjoining town of Peekskill, where he attended the public school and also enjoyed a short term in the Peekskill Academy. In the spring of 1845 he entered the Drury Academy, at North Adams, Massachusetts, where he remained for three years, finishing his studies in 1848. He then entered as a clerk the carpet establishment of Benjamin Clinton, in New York City, remaining with the house till its failure, two years later, when he returned to Peekskill and was employed by his father in the manufacture of plows in his factory. Here he continued till 1851, in which year he married Miss Leah B. Carpenter, daughter of William Carpenter, and removed to a farm which he had purchased at Yorktown. He has since resided there, attending to the duties of a farmer's life. He has interested himself deeply in local politics. He is a staunch supporter of the Democratic party, and has served it with such efficiency as to reflect credit upon himself. He was elected in 1860 commissioner of highways, and was re-elected for three terms, serving altogether twelve years. In 1875 he was elected assessor of Yorktown, which office he retained for six years.

In 1881 he was elected supervisor.

Mr. Horton is possessed of a genial disposition and has made for himself many warm friendships in the political and social life of the county. He has three children—Wright, Thomas V. and Georgine H.

In 1738 there was sufficient population in what is now Yorktown and vicinity to call for the erection of a Presbyterian church at Crompond "by sundry inhabitants and neighbors." Joseph Lane then occupied a farm of two hundred acres leased from Henry Beekman and Gertrude, his wife, of which the present church property forms part, and the deed thereof contains the names of John Hyatt, John Haight and David Travis as grantees in trust. The date of their

coming and locations of the Hyatts and Haight's are not known.

David Travis settled south of Lake Mohanic. The only persons bearing the name are James C. and John, of Gomers Street. These persons evidently came from the lower part of the county. Between 1850 and 1860 there seems to have been a large influx of settlers. Perhaps the ancestors of most of the present inhabitants came in that decade. By 1760 we find on the church record the familiar names of Knapp, Lee, Forman, Whitney, Fowler, Bedell, Carman and Conklin. Three brothers, Joseph, John and Thomas Lee came to Cortlandt Manor about 1750, from Amboy, New Jersey. They were sons of Joseph Lee, of Long Island, whose father, William, came from Nottingham, England, in 1675. The elder settled on the Hyatt place, now in the possession of David F. Lee, of Crompond. The second, John, located first on the Jacob Strang farm three miles to the west, in the town of Cortlandt, while Thomas occupied the farm adjoining on the east. John afterwards purchased the farm now possessed by his grandson, R. M. Lee. Thomas returned to New Jersey. Joseph Lee had ten children, and among them the Hon. Elijah Lee (who held the offices of member of the Assembly, Judge of the Court of Common Pleas and Supervisor), Joseph and Enos, David F. Lee, Enos Lee. Mrs. Abijah Lee, with their children, residing near Crompond, are descendants of Joseph.



E. J. Horton

Enos Lee was born at Yorktown, on the farm where he now resides, February 1, 1817. He is second son of Stephen Lee and Hannah Fowler. About 1750, Joseph and John Lee, grandsons of William Lee, who came from Nottingham, England, in 1675 and settled on the east end of Long Island, came to the Manor of Cortlandt, and the former settled at Crompond Corner.

JOSEPH LEE:

- | | |
|-----------------|---|
| 1. William | 6. Anne, wife of Samuel Haight. |
| 2. Joseph. | 7. Hannah, wife of Jas. Brewer, M.D. |
| 3. Abijah. | 8. Phebe, wife of Daniel Horton. |
| 4. Hon. Elijah. | 9. Elisabeth, wife of Joseph Ingersoll. |
| 5. Enos | 10. Sarah. |
-
- | | | |
|------------|---------------|---------------------------------|
| 1. Stephen | 2. Elisabeth. | 3. Fanny (wife of Jas. Toller). |
|------------|---------------|---------------------------------|
-
- | | | |
|------------------|--------------|--------------------------------------|
| 1. David F. Lee. | 2. Enos Lee. | 3. Jane C. Lee (wife of Abijah Lee). |
|------------------|--------------|--------------------------------------|

¹ See sketch on preceding page.

Hannah Fowler, wife of Stephen Lee and mother of Enos, was the daughter of Jesse Fowler and Jane Covert, and granddaughter of Joseph Fowler, who came to Yorktown from North Castle about 1760.

Mr. Lee received his education in the district school and the North Salem Academy. With the exception of about three and a half years spent in New York City, his entire life has been passed upon the farm which he owns. February 4, 1852, he was united in marriage to Julian Frances Wildey. The issue of the marriage are Albert, of Yorktown; Phebe, wife of Rev. A. S. Enemous, of Morrisville, Madison County, N. Y.; Hannah, wife of John L. Strang, of Yorktown; and Frederick. For some years Mr. Lee served as president of the Yorktown Agricultural Society.

John Lee had the same number of children, ten. The one best known here was Robert Perine Lee, who was District-Attorney of the county in 1818. The latter left a large family, of whom Elijah, Randolph M. and their sisters reside one-half mile east of the Presbyterian church. About this time the Whitneys came from Ridgefield. They were descendants of Henry, who settled at Southhold, L. I., in 1649, but returned later to Norwalk, Connecticut. Nathan, Seth, and Jeremiah were the first of the name in this section. Nathan and Seth settled on land between Hallock's Mills and Yorktown station. Those here now bearing the name are descendants of the latter. North of

Mohansic Lake about the same date located Ephraim Bedell on a farm of three hundred acres. Edmund Bedell (recently deceased) a grand-son, occupied a portion of the old homestead. Joseph Fowler settled on two farms to the west. The original house was built on the site of the present owned and occupied by George B. Fowler, a great-grandson, on what was called the "tenement-farm, (probably at first a leasehold from the heirs of Van Cortlandt). Among the children of Joseph were Joseph and Jesse. All of the Fowlers of this section are descended from these two brothers. Not far from 1752 Abraham Purdy, a son-in-law of Daniel Strang mentioned above, and no doubt a relative of Mrs. Strang, who was by birth a Purdy, occupied a

farm opposite the Presbyterian church. He belonged to the Purdys of White Plains and Rye, whose ancestors were among the early settlers of Fairfield, Connecticut. Abraham left several children. The Purdys at Crompond are descended from Alvan, who was a lieutenant in the militia during the Revolutionary War. The Purdys south of Mohansic Lake are descendants of a Joshua Purdy, who, during the Revolution resided on Croton River. A Joseph Purdy, who died June 15, 1777, resided in this vicinity. The Carmans lived on Carman Hill, one-fourth of a mile west of the Presbyterian church. About 1760 Moses Knapp took up a farm above Jefferson Valley, in Putnam Co., then Dutchess, at present occupied by Erastus Knapp. He was the son of a Moses

Knapp who was born in England in 1655, and died in the lower part of the county in 1756, aged one hundred and one years. He probably was the Moses Knapp named among the trustees in the royal charter of White Plains, bearing date of March 13, 1721. Moses who settled here was at White Plains in 1738. David, his son, married Phoebe Horton in 1762, and 1765 purchased a farm on Stony Street, a portion of which is now occupied by his great-grandson, Daniel H. Knapp. From him are descended Stephen, James, Daniel H. and the children of the late David W. Knapp, who reside near the old homestead. The Knapps of the northern portion of the town, Robert L. and Benjamin,



W. James Horton

etc., are collateral branches of the family. Isaac Underhill must have settled here not far from 1756. He is the progenitor of all of that name in this town. His father was Abraham, of White Plains, and Abraham was a lineal descendant of John, an English officer, who settled at Oyster Bay, in 1632. The home of Isaac was the older portion of the house now occupied by his great-grandson, Charles Underhill, half a mile south of the station. He was the father of eleven children. The representatives of the family now are Edward B. Underhill, and the descendants of the late R. Mott Underhill.

Gilbert Drake purchased a farm in Great South, lot No. 4, farm No. 2, near Mohansic Lakes, April 1, 1767, and Samuel Drake, afterwards colonel in the militia and

member of the Assembly located on farm No. 2, north lot No. 1 west of Lake Mohegan, June 23, 1768. The Drakes were from Eastchester.

About this time Dr. Ebenezer White began to practice here as a physician. His first residence was where William L. Mead lives on the road from Crompond to Yorktown Station. Prior to 1779¹ he purchased the Sacket farm, where Elijah Lee now resides. He was the seventh son of Rev. Sylvanus White, of Southampton, Long Island. He married Helena Bartow, daughter of Theophilus Bartow, of New Rochelle, and he began life in the Manor of Cortlandt where he ended it.² He practised medicine here for more than a half century until his death in 1827. In 1794-95 he was a member of the Assembly from this county, and later was a presidential elector. He left seven children, one daughter and six sons. Of the latter, three became physicians—Bartow, who resided at Fishkill, represented his district in Congress, Ebenezer, of Somers, was a member of the Assembly, and Henry of Yorktown, who filled the office of surrogate. Those bearing the name in Yorktown at the present time are Constant, son of Lewis, and Henry and Josephus L., sons of Theodosius (youngest son of Dr. Ebenezer, Sr.). Theodosius died July 27, 1885, in his ninety-sixth year.

Three brothers, named Frost, came from England in 1746 to Oyster Bay. Later in 1760 two of them Wright and Samuel found their way to Cortlandt Manor. Wright settled in what is now Somers; Samuel on two hundred acres, of which the farm of his descendant Jordan C. Frost is a part, situated about one mile southeast of Yorktown Station.

Jordan C. Frost is of English and French descent. His paternal ancestors settled on Long Island at an early period in this country's history. Samuel Frost, grandfather of Jordan C., removed some time previous to the Revolutionary War to Yorktown, where he purchased a farm, which is still in possession of the family. His son, Prior Frost, married, at Yorktown, Abigail Loder, daughter of Jonathan Loder, who served with distinction in the French and English

War and during the entire Revolution, and was a cousin of Benjamin Loder, the successful constructor of the Erie Railroad. Prior Frost had nine children, of whom Jordan C., the youngest, was born at Yorktown, March 30, 1813.

He attended the district school at Yorktown, which he left at the age of sixteen for the farm. He has since remained thus occupied, building up for himself an ample fortune and a comfortable home. He married in 1836, Miss Francis Jane Ryder, who died in June, 1873. In February, 1879, he married for his second wife Miss Deborah Cock, daughter of Robert Cock, of North Castle.

He is a member of the Society of Friends, and has been known for many years as a consistent and useful citizen in and about his home.

With the Frosts came a family, Cox by name, who settled near Hallock's Mills. W. H. Flewellen is the present proprietor. John Tompkins (born at Greenburgh in 1739) must have settled on the farm now in the possession of Elias Q. Horton overlooking the Croton River not far from the same date (1760). The Tompkins are of Welsh origin, and the name bears out the statement. We find them first at Concord, Mass., from whence they came to Eastchester *via* Fairfield, Ct. John, of Croton River, Isaac and Absalom, of Somers,

were sons of Isaac, who resided on Chatterton Hill, in Greenburgh, west of White Plains, who came from Long Island, to which his father had migrated

from Wales. The hill upon which John, Sr., settled, after his sons grew up and started out in life, looked scarcely upon anything else but land owned by Tompkins. Elias Q. is grand-son and John B. Tompkins is great-grandson.

The Griffens, represented by Daniel, Henry, John R. and their children, who reside about two miles south of Yorktown Station, came here prior to the Revolution, from the lower part of the county in the person of John Griffen, and settled on the farm now occupied by Henry Griffen. There is a tradition in the family that they were of Welsh origin, and came over to this country with some of the earliest settlers of Long Island.⁴



Elijah Lee

¹ Eskine's Map, 1779.

² See Rev. History.

³ See sketch on page 440.

⁴ See Rev. History of Yorktown.

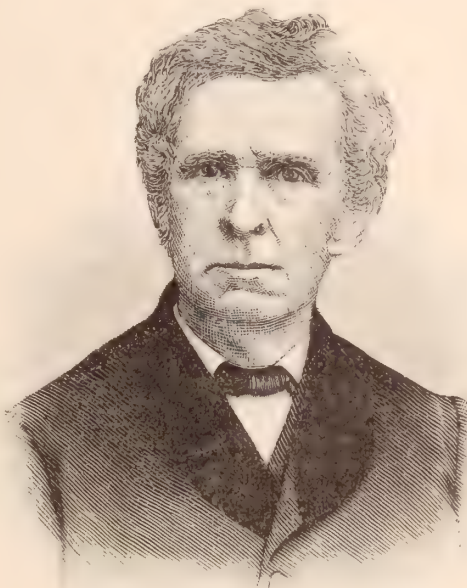
The common ancestor of the Hallock family was Peter Hallock who came with the Rev. John Young to New Haven in 1640. Thence he went to Southhold, L. I. Jesse Hallock removed to Greenwich Ct., in 1765, and in 1777 purchased a farm at Hallock's Mills. The house he lived in is now owned by William H. Flewellen. Richard, his brother, removed to Yorktown from Stony Brook, L. I. about 1784 and purchased land and a half interest in the mill from his brother. Jesse's descendants in this town are Wright and James B. Joseph T. Hallock is grandson of Richard. He resides on the homestead.

The Requas are of Huguenot origin. A family of that name started for America. The parents died on the voyage, but the children Gabriel and Jane survived and settled at New Rochelle. Some of Gabriel's descendants settled at Tarrytown. Daniel, during the Revolutionary War, was taken prisoner and incarcerated in the sugar-house in New York. Abraham entered the American army, while the remainder of the family were removed to Dutchess County for safety. About 1796 he settled in Yorktown. Amos C., of Peekskill, Edmund, of Yorktown, and the late Isaac Requa are grandsons.

Among the names distinguished for benevolence and public spirit, and worthy to be held in reverence as benefactors of their race, few are deserving of loftier mention than Benjamin Hazard Field. The history of the family of which he is so distinguished a representative

can be traced far back to the Middle Ages. Their ancestor, Hubartus de la Feld, is said to have been one of that warlike race who came to England with William the Conqueror. He was the holder of lands in the county of Lancaster. During the reign of Henry I. his descendant, John de la Feld, appears as the owner of lands in the same county. In after years the prefix *de la* was discontinued, and, by the various changes so familiar to the genealogist and historian, the name became fixed in its present form. In 1840 the family appear to have had their seat at "Horton in Bradford," which was the residence of William Feld, and letters of administration were granted to his widow, Katherine, in that

year, while John Feilde, who is supposed to have been his grandson, was also residing there at a later date, and was evidently a man of importance in the neighborhood. His son Thomas resided in Shipley, in the parish of Bradford. He left one daughter, and the greater part of his estate descended to Robert, George and Edward, the children of his brother William. William Field died in May, 1599, and his son, who inherited his name, married, in 1591, Susan, daughter of John Midgely, the representative of an ancient family. He died in 1619, and his youngest son, Robert, who was baptized at Halifax, March 9, 1605-06, married for his second wife Elizabeth Taylor. Their home was at North Ouram, near the seat of the illustrious family of Saltonstall. The two families were not only neighbors, but connected by marriage, and it is not strange that when Sir Richard Saltonstall organized a company in 1630, and sought a home in the New World, foremost in the organization was his friend and companion, Robert Feild. Upon his arrival in America he settled at Watertown, Mass., where he remained for several years, and afterwards removed to Newport, R. I., his name appearing in the list of inhabitants in 1638, and was made a freeman of the colony in 1639. On October 10, 1645, Robert Feild, with several others, through their agent, Rev. Francis Doughty, obtained a tract of land at Flushing and Hempstead, on



Jordan C. Frost

Long Island. That he held a high position may be learned from the fact that he was one of the committee chosen by the General Court at Newport "for matters that concern Long Island, and in the case concerning the Dutch." Robert Feild died about 1666, leaving three sons,—Robert, Anthony and Benjamin. His Long Island residence was at Bayside, now a flourishing village.

Anthony Feild, the second son, who is named in the patents of the town of Flushing in 1666 and 1685, took the oath of allegiance to the English in 1673, and died previous to 1691. By his wife Susannah, who survived him, he had several children. Of these, Benjamin, the youngest son, married Hannah, daughter of John Bowne, of Flushing, November 30, 1691, and they were the parents of a large family. Their

fourth son, Anthony, was born at Flushing July 28, 1698, and married, August 13, 1730, Hannah, daughter of William Burling, who was also a resident of Flushing. He removed from Long Island to Harrison's Purchase, in Westchester County, but subsequently made his home in Yorktown, in the same county, where he died, leaving a family of seven sons and two daughters. His third son, John Feild, was born at Yorktown, and married, June 8, 1763, Lydia, daughter of William and Phoebe Hazard, who was the fifth in the line of descent from Thomas Hazard, of Lyme Regis, Dorsetshire, England, who came to New England as early as 1636. John and Lydia Field were the parents of sixteen children, of whom Hazard Field was the eldest. He was born at Yorktown November 11, 1764, and died at the family homestead February 5, 1845. He was twice married. By his first wife he had a son, Wright, and three daughters. His second wife was Mary Bailey, who was born January 6, 1780, and died February 22, 1832. By this second marriage he had five daughters and two sons—Benjamin Hazard and Joseph Bailey. The latter died without issue.

Benjamin Hazard Field was born at the family seat in Yorktown May 2, 1814. His early education was received under the parental roof, and his studies finished at the North Salem Academy, under the tuition of the Rev. Hiram Jelliff, a distinguished Episcopalian clergyman. Resolved upon a mercantile career, he entered the office of his uncle, Hickson W. Field, who was born October 4, 1779, and was at that time foremost among the business men of New York, and justly noted not only for his great success and business capacity, but for his active philanthropy and wide-extending benevolence, which made him the friend of the homeless and afflicted. In 1832 he became a partner, and in 1838, upon the retirement of his uncle, the whole of the immense business of the firm devolved upon him. From that time to the present Mr. Field has been justly ranked among the most prominent citizens of the great metropolis. Commencing a business career under the most favorable circumstances, he rapidly gained both fortune and fame. But to him the earning of a fortune was simply a means to enable him to accomplish his ends—to show by a bright example the good that can be done by men possessed of wealth and actuated by the spirit that seeks the welfare of their race. In all efforts of a benevolent character no one has taken a more active part, and it is safe to say that there is scarcely an association or institution, having for its object the amelioration of the condition of the poor and suffering, with which his name is not connected, and of which he has not been a liberal supporter.

With the social institutions of the city he has been long and intimately identified. A prominent member of the St. Nicholas Society, he was chosen to many of its offices, and in 1870 elected president.

He was also one of the founders of the St. Nicholas Club, incorporated in 1875, and has long been a member of the board of trustees. With a deep interest in historical research, he became, in 1844, a life member of the New York Historical Society, and for twenty years was its treasurer, and after having served as vice-president, was elected president in 1885. It was largely owing to his earnest efforts that the fire-proof building of the society was erected, and his liberality has contributed greatly to free it from debt. In 1859 he was elected a Life Fellow of the American Geographical Society. His positions in the various business institutions of New York are exceedingly numerous. He long held the office of director of the Old Fulton Bank, and held the same position after it was reorganized as a national bank. As director of the Bank for Savings, and its first vice-president, trustee of the American Museum of Natural History, and of the New York Dispensary, and also of Greenwood Cemetery, director of the New York Institution for the Instruction of the Deaf and Dumb, president of the New York Eye and Ear Infirmary, and trustee of the Sheltering Arms of the Children's Fold, trustee in Roosevelt Hospital and director of the Atlantic Mutual Insurance Company,—in all of these his influence is fully recognized. But of all institutions of a charitable nature there is none with which his name is more inseparably connected than the Home for Incurables, at Fordham, which is justly considered as one of the noblest charities of the city. Toward the establishment of this charity he has been an earnest laborer, and has served as president from the time of its organization, in 1866. In connection with Mrs. Field, he is erecting at their joint expense an Episcopal Church, to seat about two hundred and fifty, as a free gift to the Home. In the cause of education he has expended nearly one hundred thousand dollars, and a school well equipped with all the modern appliances for learning shows his interest in the welfare of the children of his native place. It was through his influence that the statues of Farragut, in Madison Square, and of the Poet Halleck, in Central Park, were added to the memorials of the famous sons of New York. Of a literary turn of mind, it is not strange that he should find congenial company among the men of letters who form the Century Club, nor that his name as an encourager of literature, and a contributor to it, should be well known among the lights of the literary world.

Mr. Field married, June 19, 1838, Catharine M. Van Cortlandt de Peyster, daughter of Frederic de Peyster, Sr., of the city of New York, a lady who is connected with many of the ancient families, as the Livingstons, the Beekmans, Van Cortlandts, Van Rensselaers and others whose names are a part of the history of and an honor to the Empire State. He has two children—Cortlandt de Peyster, born Decem-



Ben. H. Field

ber 28, 1839, and Florence Van Cortlandt, born March 30, 1851, who married David Wolfe Bishop. The son graduated at Columbia College in 1859, went at once into his father's office, succeeded to his business upon his retirement, in 1865, and has since conducted it with ability and success. Inheriting from his father a benevolent disposition, he has been a worthy follower in his footsteps, and in the cause of education has expended nearly thirty thousand dollars. An earnest member of the Episcopal Church, his labors for its advancement have been unceasing, making the Church of St. Mary's, at Lake Mohegan, the subject of his peculiar care. Here, as lay leader, he has conducted services for many years, and through his systematic efforts the church is free from debt, and is exerting a wide-spread influence for good.

Mr. Cortlandt de Peyster Field married Virginia, daughter of John W. Hamersly, a lady in whose veins runs the blood of some of the oldest families of this State and also of the "Old Dominion," which was the home of her grandmother. Her father is widely known from the literary circle that meets at his house at stated times, and embraces the choicest names of the men of letters of New York. Like her husband, Mrs. Field takes an active interest in all that pertains to the moral good of the community, and in his religious work she is an earnest and willing aid.

The old homestead of the family in Yorktown still remains in their possession, and in late years a portion has been transferred to the Field Farm Company, of which Mr. Benjamin H. Field is president, and his son is the secretary and treasurer. It is conducted in accordance with certain benevolent plans of its owners.

Mr. B. H. Field passes the evening of his life in the possession of all that can make life happy, and is especially blessed in the full enjoyment of the greatest of all luxuries—the luxury of doing good. He has always refused to accept any political office, although in early life frequently urged by his Democratic friends to be a candidate for Congress and the State Legislature.

REVOLUTIONARY HISTORY.—The Revolutionary history of this town is easily explained. Through it led the routes from King's Ferry to the eastern states, via Crompond and Salem, and to the southern portions of the county and New York City, via Crompond and Pine's Bridge. King's Ferry was of the greatest importance to the American cause as a means of communication between the east and the routes west of the Hudson. Consequently the American forces often passed through Yorktown, and on occasions the French army under Rochambeau was here. From 1776 to 1782 out-posts of the army which held possession of the Highlands were maintained at Crompond and at Pine's Bridge. Though battles were not fought, it was the place for raids and the consequent skirmishes. In war, when no great movements are

taking place, the time is whiled away in harassing the out-posts of the enemy, and there is no better field for cowboys and skimmers than neutral ground, such as extended from Croton River to Spuyten Duyvel Creek and the contiguous country. There they can plunder and murder with impunity. Westchester County abounded in Tories, and Yorktown, while they were in the minority, furnished its share. There is no human passion more exacting and relentless in its revenge or more zealous for the cause espoused than a new-born enmity. If absent from their homes they were not disposed to be forgotten by their former neighbors. Yorktown was a very undesirable place of residence for those who loved peace and quietness, and a very unsafe place for both life and property. Prior to the appearance of Howe at Sandy Hook, it seemed wise on the part of both Washington and the Provincial Congress to look after the Tories. They had as yet committed no overt act, but they were supposed to be plotting and making every preparation for a rising as soon as the forces of the enemy should appear. Arrests were made and many suspects were in jail. At the session of the Fourth Provincial Congress, held at White Plains, August 20, 1776, a petition was presented from fifteen persons confined "as dangerous to the safety of the state" asking to be released on certain conditions. In the list we find such familiar names as Purdy, Bailey, Fowler, Horton, Brown and Caleb Morgan;¹ the latter afterwards acted as guide to the British troops in their raids into this town.² When the British fleet with Howe's army appeared before New York, Washington urged upon the Fourth Provincial Congress the removal of "all persons of known disaffection and enmity to the cause of America."³ Some were sent to Litchfield, Conn. Shortly after came a long series of disasters, beginning with the battle of Long Island. Washington's army was in retreat. October 29, 1776, Washington sent General Reall with Maryland regiment to seize and hold Pine's Bridge over the Croton, in order to maintain communication to the north and with New Jersey, via King's Ferry. The main army was in the rocky hills of North Castle on the 31st, with an out-post near White Plains. Lord Stirling's command of Maryland and Virginia troops were ordered to the west side of the Hudson, and on November 8th, Heath with his Massachusetts regiments marched to Peekskill to secure the passes through the Highlands. Without doubt both of these divisions took the direct route via Pine's Bridge and Crompond. November 10th the latter division passed through this town and reached its destination in the afternoon. General Washington with staff and escort followed a few hours later. General Charles Lee was left at

¹ Journal of the Provincial Congress, vol. I., pp. 581 and 582.

² Report No. 492, House of Rep., 31st Congress, 1st session—aff. of Morgan.

³ Irving's Life of Washington, vol. II., pp. 284 and 285.

North Castle with the recommendation that he fall back on Pine's Bridge, or at least by way of precaution remove his stores thither.¹ After repeated recommendations and positive orders, he managed to get his troops by the same route through this town to Peekskill.² From this time forth, until 1782, this section answers to the description given of it by Claude Blanchard, commissary-general of the French army, in his Journal, under date of June 25, 1781: "Crompond and its environs are not considered a very safe country; it is peopled by Tories and, besides, is at no great distance from New York, where the English have their principal forces at present."³ So dangerous for the reasons just given that Washington, April, 1777, a few months after his retreat, sent orders to Heath to send troops to Peekskill, by way of Kinderhook; and in the year 1780, under date of September 26th, just after Arnold's treachery, he advises him for his own safety to join the army by route via Litchfield and Fishkill.⁴ Putnam was relieved from command of the department March 16, 1778, through his failure to prevent these incursions.⁵ From this time onward Toryism was rampant and enlistments⁶ were made for De Lancey's Tory Legion, which became the scourge of the country. The people here to a certain extent were obliged for defense to rely upon their own resources.⁷ The commanders of this department did establish out-posts at Crompond and near Pine's Bridge, at least during a portion of these six years. Whenever there was any probability of raids, bodies of troops were sent to protect the inhabitants. There was, too, a regiment of militia, commanded by Colonel Samuel Drake, among the officers of which we find the names of Captains Henry Strang and Ebenezer Boyd and Lieutenant Alvan Purdy. No doubt the utmost was done that the resources of the army and of the community would permit. It was not always possible to prevent the raids of regulars, and certainly no adequate protection could be provided against small bodies of cowboys and skimmers bent on plunder and murder.⁸

The American army periodically made what Heath called "grand" forages in quest of forage and provisions, and the enemy returned the compliment in kind, taking everything in the food line, including live cattle, bedding, etc., that they could lay hands on. There was probably not a house that was not visited, nor a patriot who was not threatened. Cattle were concealed—in one instance a cow was driven nightly into the cellar—valuables were buried. Neither

property nor life were safe. Some found it necessary to keep a horse always saddled, that they might have ready a means of escape. Against the cowboys the neighbors would gather for mutual protection with the most convenient weapon, whether it were a pitchfork or a gun.

During the winter of 1776-1777 six hundred Connecticut troops were engaged, with Zephaniah Platt, in disarming the Tories of Cortlandt Manor.⁹ At the parsonage of the Presbyterian Church the Committee of Safety (probably a local body) met for the trial of disaffected persons.¹⁰

January, 1777, Heath passed through here on his way to the South for the purpose of harassing the British outposts, and penetrated as far south as Spuyten Duyval Creek.

In August, 1777, a party of militia three in number, headed by Captain Henry Strang, among them Elijah Lee, afterwards Judge Lee, captured Edmund Palmer, a Lieutenant in the Tory Legion of De Lancey, while he was on a visit to his wife who lived in this section, and handed him over to General Putnam, who tried him as a spy. He was found guilty and executed on Gallows Hill, north of Peekskill, August 7, 1777.

During the Revolution, the parsonage of the Presbyterian Church, Crompond, was used as a place of meeting for the Committee of Safety, and as a place of trial for disaffected persons. Bolton says it was called by Colonel Robertson the d-d committee house.¹¹ Here, too, commissions were distributed by a committee of the Provincial Congress to the officers of the militia. In the month of June, 1779, the parsonage of the church and a storehouse attached were taken possession of and occupied by a regiment of American militia, under command of Colonel Samuel Drake, as a barracks and storehouse. Captain Henry Strang commanded the troops in the parsonage, and was at that time acting Lieutenant-Colonel of the regiment.

Clinton was now in possession of Verplanck's Point.¹² A detachment of about one hundred and thirty men, under the command of Colonel Abercrombie, was sent to what is now Yorktown (then Manor of Cortlandt) under the guidance of Caleb Morgan, a Tory of Yorktown, and others, to attack the militia at Crompond. They succeeded in burning the parsonage and storehouse, and then retired without injuring any other buildings. The militia then took possession of the meeting-house, and used it as their barracks.

On the morning of the 24th of June following, two squadrons of Tarleton's and Simcoe's British Light Horse, about two hundred in number, who had probably come from White Plains by way of Pine's Bridge,

¹ Irving's Life of Wash., vol. II., pp. 424 and 433. Heath's Memoirs.

² Irving's Life of Wash., vol. II., p. 435.

³ Journal of Claude Blanchard, pp. 112 and 113.

⁴ Heath's Memoirs.

⁵ Peabody's Life of Israel Putnam, Sparks' Amer. Biography.

⁶ Heath's Memoirs.

⁷ See extract from Thatcher's Military Journal below.

⁸ Number of Refugees from Cortlandt Manor in 1782, 864.

⁹ Bolton's History of the County of Westchester, vol. II., p. 382 (old edition).

¹⁰ Report No. 492 House of Representatives, Thirty-first Congress, First Session.—Aff. of Thomas Strang.

¹¹ Bolton, vol. II., p. 382 (old edition).

¹² See Chapter on Cortlandt.

fell suddenly upon the militia at Crompond, as they were at breakfast in the houses of the village, and killed and captured about thirty of them. The prisoners were incarcerated in the New York Sugar House, a prison of ill-repute to the patriots. The rest of the militia sought safety in flight. Among them was Bob Lent, who fled down King Street with two British horsemen in hot pursuit. Lent ran into the woods and his pursuers, after following him some distance, gave up the chase. He then turned and fired upon the party. His shot took effect, as the horsemen were afterwards noticed helping along one of their number who was covered with blood. It is said that the wounded soldier died at Pine's Bridge. Major Joseph Strang fled up what is now called Crompond Street to the descent of the hill this side of the house of A. R. Strang, when, being hard pressed, he threw himself from his horse and escaped to a swamp thicket. His horse was captured. He was accompanied by Mrs. De Lancey, who was overtaken and brutally treated, the soldiers attempting to take the silver buckles from her shoes. Upon learning her name they immediately desisted.¹

As the British soldiers were returning from this foray, they met at the distance of about a quarter of a mile from the church a colored boy belonging to Abraham Purdy, and commonly called "Broad Toes" from his possession of the unusual number of six on each foot, who was driving a herd of thirteen cows. The troopers charged on the lad, swearing they would cut him to pieces; but he departed with such alacrity as to save them the trouble. The cows were driven to the British camp and doubtless not long afterwards converted into British muscle.²

On the raid from Verplanck's the British soldiers entered the house of Joseph Fowler, situated where the house now stands, on the farm of his great-grandson, George B. Fowler, about a quarter of a mile west of Mohansic Lake. Jesse Fowler, son of Joseph, was sitting at the loom in the cellar under which money was buried. The soldiers thrust their bayonets through the cider-barrels and filled their canteens with cider, and stripped the house of food and the beds of bedding.

"On the morning of the 25th, the enemy's light horse and about one thousand infantry were at Pine's Bridge. Our General [Heath] ordered two hundred light infantry, under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Grovenor, to march to Robinson's stores near Marpoach [Mahopac] Pond to cover that quarter."²

July, 1779, while Sir Henry Clinton was engaged in an attempt on the defenses of the Highlands, General Tryon was sent to Connecticut to scourge the people into submission. He began his work at New Haven and burned both Fairfield and Norwalk. "July 10th, 6 P. M., Heath received orders from General Washington to march with two Connecticut

brigades, by way of Crompond, toward Bedford." A storm detained them until the 12th, when this little army marched to Amawalk, which they reached about sunset. The enemy were reported as being at Pine's Bridge. Heath moved from point to point near the Connecticut line, apparently checking Tryon. On the 17th he was ordered back to take command in a proposed attack on Verplanck's Point, and returned by a forced march, reaching there on the 18th.³

During September and October, 1779, by Heath's orders, General Howe, with Glover's and Nixon's brigades, were stationed near Pine's Bridge and vicinity to protect the inhabitants from raids.⁴

September, 1780, Arnold proved recreant to his trust and deserted to the enemy.

About eight or nine o'clock at night, on Friday, September 22, 1780, Major John Andre, disguised in civilian's clothes, and Joshua Hett Smith were riding along the Crompond road, after the interview with Arnold, when they were stopped near Crompond by Captain Boyd of Sheldon's Regiment of Light Dragoons, who, it is said, although shown their pass from Arnold, suspected them, and recommended them to stop at the tavern of Andreas Miller in such significant tones, that they did not dare to refuse. In this tavern, tradition says, they passed a very restless night, and having been permitted to continue their journey started away just before dawn. They passed through Crompond, and, as elsewhere narrated, took breakfast about a mile south of Yorktown station. Smith's story of his trip with Andre does not accord with the statement given above. He said that five or six miles below Verplanck's Point they met a patrol, and were challenged by Captain Bull. By his advice they returned several miles to a tavern kept by a man named McKoy. The former account agrees more generally with tradition, however, and judged in the light of their subsequent movements, seems the more probable.

The tavern has been torn down. It stood near the spot upon which is located a blacksmith shop at present, about two miles west of Crompond on the main road to Peekskill.

About a mile south of the village of Yorktown, on the road to Pine's Bridge, is located a little old house, the eaves of which, on the northern side, are only five or six feet above the ground. At this place, on the morning of the 23d of September, 1780, Major John Andre, in company with Joshua Hett Smith, while on his way to the British lines, stopped to take breakfast. The house was then occupied by Isaac Underhill and Sarah, his wife, and their family. After breakfast Smith left his companion, directing him to take the road to White Plains, while he himself rode northward to Fishkill, where his family

¹ Anecdotes of the Revolution, collected by the late Alvan Purdy.

² Heath's Mem., p. 206.

³ Heath's Memoirs, pp. 209, 210.

⁴ Heath's Memoirs.

were staying, thus another link was forged in the chain of circumstances which led Andre to his doom, as, if this separation had not taken place, the knowledge of the country possessed by Smith, and the pass from Arnold would have almost certainly brought them safe into the British camp. Andre, however, trusting to his own judgment, took the road through Sing Sing to the river, and the famous episode of his capture occurred, in consequence, about eleven o'clock the same morning at Tarrytown, as elsewhere stated in the history of Greenburgh.

"Oct. 21st, 1780.—Intelligence was received that the enemy was meditating an excursion as far as Crompond and its vicinity to sweep off the cattle. [Heath] immediately ordered Col. Hazen with a detachment of 500 men to move to Pine's Bridge, and Lieut.-Col. Jameson with the 2nd Light Dragoons to move from Bedford towards Col. Hazen. The detach-



THE UNDERHILL HOUSE, WHERE ANDRE TOOK BREAKFAST.

ment arrived at Pine's Bridge about 10 o'clock same evening, and Col. Jameson with the dragoons about 2 o'clock next morning. The evening of the 23rd Col. Hazen returned with the detachment, the enemy did not come out.¹

"Dec. 20th, 1780.—Further intelligence having been received that Col. de Lancey intended to visit our troops on the lines, 150 men were ordered from the New Hampshire line to march to Crompond."²

In the vicinity of Crompond, on the farm now owned and occupied by Elijah Lee, lived Dr. Ebenezer White. His capture was attempted by a band of Cowboys, either with the design of exchanging him for a British surgeon, not long before captured by the Americans, or because the British were in need of medical and surgical service. A Tory friend warned Dr. White of his peril; several nights

he had spent in the neighboring wood, west of his house, on horseback. Thinking that the attempt had been given up, he continued his precautions on the night of November 19, 1780, only at the urgent request of his wife. That evening the Cowboys came, but failed to find him. The raiders, however, found Dr. James Brewer visiting a patient in Jefferson Valley. He was placed on a horse with one of the band—the notorious freebooter, Joshua Hueson—and was taken down Hog Lane. They were fired upon by a party of Americans, and Dr. Brewer, thinking it a good time to escape, leaped from the horse and was shot and mortally wounded by Hueson.³ He expired next morning in the arms of Dr. White,⁴ and was buried in the yard of the Presbyterian Church at Crompond, where a stone marks his last resting-place. His age as given on it is thirty-nine years, four months and seven days. Dr. Brewer was a native of

Massachusetts and was the father of seven children, one of whom was Dr. James Brewer, who died in Peekskill in 1867. Mrs. Coffin S. Brown, of Peekskill, is a grand-daughter.

Hueson was at one time tried as a Tory by the Committee of Safety and sent to jail. He was a notorious marauder and made himself the terror of the neighborhood. In attempting to enter the house of Seth Whitney, by a rear window which he had smashed in with a large stone, he was stabbed with a bayonet fastened upon a stick in the hands of the owner, the only weapon left him in their frequent robberies. "The rascal has killed me," he exclaimed as he fell. The gang seized Mr. Whitney, dragged him from his horse, terribly disfigured his face by blows upon the head with their heavy horse-pistols, and left him for dead. This summary and cruel method of disposing of their

antagonist was adopted for fear of arousing the militia by the reports of their fire-arms. Hueson received a mortal wound, while Mr. Whitney lived many years and carried his honorable scars to the grave. The house is situated a short distance north of Yorktown Station and belongs to the estate of the late General Bernardus Montross.

Dr. Thacher, writing in his "Military Journal," refers to Crompond as follows:⁵

"The advanced guard of our army, consisting of about two hundred men, is posted at Crompond, about twenty miles below West Point, and is relieved every two or three weeks. A surgeon constantly attends, and I am now ordered to repair to that post to relieve Dr. Thomas."

¹ Heath's Memoirs, p. 260.

² Heath's Memoirs.

³ Statement of Dr. Brewer's death has been taken from a narrative written by his daughter-in-law, Hannah Brewer, wife of Joseph.

⁴ Bolton, "History of County of Westchester," vol. ii. pp. 384 and 385.

⁵ Thacher's "Military Journal," pp. 248-249.

"Crompond, March, 1781.—I have taken my quarters at Crompond, in a house with Major Trescott, who commands at this post. This vicinity is constantly harassed by small parties of volunteers on our side, and parties of royalists and tories on the other, who are making every effort to effect mutual destruction, seeking every opportunity to beat up each other's quarters, and to kill or capture all who are found in arms. Major Trescott is an excellent disciplinarian, an active, vigilant officer, and well acquainted with his duty. A party of volunteers collected here on horseback for a secret expedition, and by their earnest request, Major Trescott marched in the night with a party to cover their retreat, and to take any advantage which might offer. The party returned next day with six Tory prisoners, three of whom were wounded with the broad-sword. One of our volunteers, named Hunt, received a dangerous wound through his shoulder and lungs, the air escaping from the wound at every breath. Dr. Eustus came to the lines, and dilated the wound in the breast, and as the patient is athletic and had not sustained a very copious loss of blood, he recommended repeated and liberal blood-letting, observing that, in order to cure a wound through the lungs, you must bleed your patient to *death*. He eventually recovered, which is to be ascribed to the free use of the lancet and such abstemious living as to reduce him to the greatest extremity. A considerable number of wounded prisoners receive my daily attention."

About a mile and a half south of Yorktown Station, on a lane leading from the Pine's Bridge road, is a house occupied at the time of the Revolution by Richardson Davenport as a sort of public house. At this place, on the 14th of May, 1781, occurred a bloody fight which resulted in the death of Colonel Greene, who had repulsed the Hessians at Fort Mercer, Red Bank, on the Delaware, 1777, Major Flagg and others. The story of the event is as follows.¹

Lieutenant-Colonel Christopher Greene, an officer of a Rhode Island regiment, and a brave and intrepid soldier, was stationed to guard the ford of the Croton River, lying some distance west of the present Pine's Bridge, in order to prevent marauding excursions by the British. He was in the habit of guarding his post very carefully during the night, but took off the guards in the morning, never anticipating that a passage would be attempted by the enemy in daylight. The headquarters of himself and Major Flagg were at Davenport's house, and the troops were distributed among the different farm-houses in order the better to procure subsistence.

A person by the name of Gilbert Totten, who had been angered by being made the subject of military discipline, is said to have informed Colonel De Lancey

of Colonel Greene's method of stationing his guards, out of a spirit of revenge. Colonel De Lancey, who was smarting under an attack made upon him in his quarters not long before, by the Americans, at once fitted out a force of one hundred dragoons and two hundred foot, which left Morrisania four P.M. 13th, and during the night advanced by way of White Plains, where was the only opening through the line of American sentinels stretched across the country, past Daniel Underhill's at Chappaqua, and then by the westerly road till they arrived in the vicinity of the ford of the Croton, guarded by Colonel Greene's pickets. As soon as the guards were drawn off, De Lancey despatched a portion of his troops across the river to make the attack, while he remained behind, with the idea of covering the retreat of his forces, if necessary.

Unperceived in the early dawn, the enemy, under Captain Kipp, of the horse, and Lieutenant Totten, of the rangers, took the Americans completely by surprise. Colonel Greene and Major Flagg were awakened by the noise of their approach, and attempted to defend themselves. Flagg fired his pistol, and then fell mortally wounded with a bullet through his head. Colonel Greene received his opponents as they burst into his room, with his drawn sword, and stretched several of them on the floor. At length, overpowered by numbers and weakened with the loss of blood, he fell. "His right arm was almost cut off in two places, his left in one, a severe cut was received on the left shoulder, a sword thrust through the abdomen, a bayonet thrust in the right side, several sword cuts in the head, and many in different parts of the body." His body was found the next day by Major Joseph and Captain Henry Strang near the residence of Mr. Sutton.²

Besides these two officers, two subalterns and twenty seven men were killed, and several others were wounded.

"At the same time Captain Knapp, of the horse, with a detachment under his command, attacked the house of widow Griffin, about half a mile distant from the above, where he took one ensign and twenty privates and killed eight men."³

Lieutenant-Colonel Greene was murdered in the meridian of life, being only forty-four years old. He married, in 1758, Miss Ann Lippitt, a daughter of Mr. J. Lippitt, of Warwick, whom he left a widow with three sons and four daughters. He was stout and strong in person, about five feet ten inches high, with a broad, round chest, his aspect manly and demeanor pleasing. Enjoying always a high state of health, its bloom irradiated a countenance which significantly expressed the fortitude and mildness invariably displayed throughout his life.

¹ From Heath's Memoirs, 288-289, and Colonel H. Lee's "History of the Southern War," and Bolton, "History of Westchester County," pp. 391 to 395, vol. ii., (old edition) and Moore's Diary of "American Revolution."

² Bolton's "History of County of Westchester," vol. ii. p. 394, note (old edition).

³ *Gaine's Mercury*, May 21, 1781, quoted by Moore in "Diary of American Revolution," etc.

His death is said to have given great grief to General Washington. His remains and those of Major Flagg were interred with military honors, and repose in the cemetery adjoining the Presbyterian Church at Crompond. There is no gravestone to mark their last resting-place.

The marks of the bullets are still visible in the old house in which Colonel Greene and Major Flagg slept. The house is at present occupied by George J. Griffen.

The following anecdotes have come down from Revolutionary times: Captain Henry Strang, of the militia, was captured and carried off by the Cowboys, who pricked him with their bayonets in the legs until the blood ran down. He determined to escape, if possible. Reaching a wooded portion of the road from Yorktown Station to Pine's Bridge, a short distance south of the residence of the late E. M. Underhill, near where is now a large boulder, he had almost freed his hands and was about to carry into execution his purpose, when the rustling of the leaves so frightened his captors that they fled, leaving him at liberty.

A bold ruse that was devised and carried out successfully by a number of residents of Crompond and vicinity, upon another occasion, may not be unworthy of notice. A party of twenty-six Cowboys made a raid in the night into Yorktown from the southern border, and on their way north kidnapped a highly respectable citizen of the town by the name of Daniel Horton. Mr. Horton was hurried away without his hat, and asked to be allowed to get it. The leader of the band replied that they would give him a cap when they returned to Croton River, a figure of speech which meant that they would hang him. The news of his capture having spread, Elijah Lee, Enos Lee, Josiah Ingersoll (brother-in-law of Mr. Horton) and one other man, all of whom lived at or near Crompond, resolved to attempt his rescue. The following morning early they posted themselves in ambush at a narrow pass a little to the south of the present Baptist Church, where they knew the party of marauders would have to pass on their return. The Cowboys presently appeared, with Mr. Horton among them, and a number of cows, the fruits of their industry during the night, in the centre. When opposite the ambush the four men suddenly sprang to their feet, firing off their guns and making as much noise as possible. Elijah Lee shouted, "Now, my boys, surround them!" Without waiting to ascertain the ability of their enemies to execute the manœuvre, the frightened Cowboys galloped off as fast as possible, leaving Mr. Horton and their plunder behind. The leader of the raiders afterwards, to his great mortification, heard of the size of the party that had routed his band, and swore a round oath to cut Mr. Lee into pieces when he had the chance. He never had it.¹

Mr. Horton lived on the farm now owned and oc-

cupied by Hickson Covert, situated on the west side of the road from Florenceville to the Yorktown Baptist Church.

THE FRENCH ENCAMPMENTS IN YORKTOWN.—The French army was twice encamped in the neighborhood of Crompond. The army consisted of about five thousand men, under the command of Jean Baptiste Donatien de Vimeur, Comte de Rochambeau. The army had originally consisted of six regiments, but only four were engaged in the expedition which occasioned their passage through Yorktown. They were the regiments of Bourbonnois, Soissonois, Saintonge and the Royal Deux-Ponts (of Alsace), and there were besides the independent legion of cavalry, commanded by the Duc de Lauzun, and five hundred artillerymen. The French army had arrived at Newport, R. I., in July, 1780, but remained inactive until about the middle of 1781. On the 18th of June they commenced their march westward. July 6th the French and American armies joined at White Plains, Washington being then desirous of investing New York. Afterwards the course of events led him to resolve to attempt the capture of Cornwallis, at Yorktown, Va. On the 19th of August the Americans commenced their march through Sing Sing to King's Ferry, and the French marched north to North Castle, a part of the present village of Mt. Kisco, and, August 21st, started on the march through what is now the town of Yorktown.

In the diary of a French officer occurs the following entry with reference to this portion of their journey: "Aug. 21st—We left North Castle very early in the morning to march to Hun's (Hunt's tavern); at this place there are four or five houses at the head of Crompond. . . . The troops encamped in the evening at Hun's tavern, at a place more convenient than military. They marched very well, and the trains arrived in good season, although many of the wagons again broke down on the way. The roads are quite good, except on leaving Pen's (Pine's) Bridge, where there is quite a high mountain." The length of their march to Hun's tavern had been nine miles.

"Aug. 22d—We left Hun's tavern to march to King's Ferry. Nine miles from Hun's tavern is Peskill (Peekskill), a village of about twenty houses, quite close to each other."²

A deed bearing date of February 15, 1802, given by "Solomon Hunt, of the City and State of New York, gentleman, and Mary, his wife, to Henry Strang, of Yorktown, in the county of Westchester," conveys to the latter forty acres, more or less, "all of which became forfeited to the people of this State by the conviction of Caleb Frost." This property is now in the possession of Benjamin Flewellen. The tavern was most probably at the junction of the roads from Pine's Bridge and Katonah to Peekskill, where tradition has

¹ Anecdotes collected by Alvan Purdy.

² "Magazine of American History," May, 1880, p. 306.

it that a tavern was kept by a Mr. Brewer, and where a public house is set down on the American military maps of the region. The army lay encamped about it, probably for the most part to the south at each side of the road.

On the 26th of August the French army crossed the Hudson at King's Ferry and started with the American forces on their march to Yorktown, Va. A portion of the American army was left behind under the command of General Heath. He makes the following entry in his diary: "Aug. 22d—The army [Americans under himself] marched from North Castle and encamped at Crompond. . . . 23d—The army [American] marched from Crompond and took a strong position at Peekskill."

After the capture of Cornwallis the French army did not return northward for many months, and it was not until the 14th of September, 1782, that they began to recross the Hudson to Verplanck's Point. On the 18th they were all on the east side of the Hudson, and on the 24th they moved to Crompond, where they remained till October 22d. The first division left at the latter date, on their march eastward, and were followed the next day by the second division. They afterwards embarked from Boston under command of Baron de Viomenil for the West Indies. Rochambeau sailed from Annapolis shortly afterwards for France. The legion of Lauzun and the heavy artillery remained near Crompond until October 27th, because of a lack of transports after which they left for Wilmington, Del., and went into winter-quarters. March 11, 1783, they sailed for France.

In a recent history of the French in America¹ the following reference is made to the encampment at Crompond: "The American army remained in camp at King's Ferry with its vanguard at the mouth of the Croton, on the Hudson River. The French army took a strong position on the hills in front of Crompond. The corps of Lauzun was in advance guard on the heights which skirt the Croton, and from this position the two armies could in one day's march reach New York and Staten Island." Between the French and American officers there was constant intercourse.

The main army was encamped in two divisions. The northernmost limit of its encampment was not farther south than the present Fair Ground. It extended in a southerly direction nearly to the Little Pond, beside Mohansic Lake, then southeasterly to the foot of French Hill; eastwardly it stretched over at least a portion of the farm now owned by Colonel Nicholas E. Paine, where cannon-balls and other relics of a military character have been found and as far as Flewellen Ridge, now owned by W. H. Flewellen. A redoubt was visible on French Hill, southeast of Mohansic Lake, until a few years ago. This locality was probably occupied by the cavalry Legion of

Lauzun, as such a supposition would agree with the statement of Balch, before quoted, that Lauzun was encamped on a hill skirting the Croton. The headquarters of the Count de Rochambeau are said to have been at the residence of Captain Henry Strang, which was near the present Fair Grounds, and several hundred feet east of the residence of the late J. Hazard Strang.

Ovens constructed by the French for baking bread are still to be seen on the Flewellen farm, and a number of military buttons have been found there.

While the feeling between the French and Americans was generally friendly, there were some lawless spirits on both sides who inflicted injuries or insults on their allies. Such offenses were generally severely punished by the officers of both armies. It is related that a French trooper during the time of this encampment came to the house of Lieutenant Alvan Purdy, who resided opposite the Presbyterian Church, at Crompond, and, without provocation, deliberately tramped on his foot. Being shoved away by Mr. Purdy, he tried to strike him with his broadsword, and being foiled in that attempt, he went to his horse as if to get his pistols. Mr. Purdy thought it prudent to withdraw out of reach, and did so. The incident was related to one of the French officers, who told Mr. Purdy that his assailant, if identified, should be flogged. The man was pointed out, but on Mr. Purdy's request, the punishment was remitted.

Another incident may be mentioned as an illustration of this desire of the French officers to maintain their friendly relations with the Americans. A French soldier dug from the field of Mr. Isaac Underhill, without permission or the knowledge of the owner, about a peck of potatoes. His offense was discovered and he was tried and condemned to death. Mr. Underhill interceded with the Count de Rochambeau for the soldier's life, but his request was refused, Rochambeau insisting that a regard for the discipline of the army required that the sentence should be carried out.

A third occurrence, which took place during the stay of the French in Yorktown, may be best narrated as Rochambeau has told it,—²

"On the departure from Crompond of the French corps to proceed to Boston to embark, a captain of the American militia, at whose house I had been quartered, conducted himself towards us in a manner which strikingly characterizes republican liberty. The day before our departure, he called on me to demand payment of fifteen thousand francs for the wood that the brigade of the Soissonnois had burned for fuel in their camp. I thought this demand rather exorbitant, and referred him to Villemanzy, the commissary appointed to settle, in concert with the arbiters of the country, all claims for provisions consumed by the army in its respective encampments.

¹ "Les Français en Amérique pendant la Guerre de l'Indépendance des États Unis, 1777-1783," par Thomas Balch, Paris, 1872.

² *Memoirs of Marshal Count de Rochambeau.*

On the moment of departure, just as the drums had beaten to arms and the troops were drawn up in marching order, a man respectfully walked up to me, and addressing me, stated that he was aware of the eminent services I had rendered the country, that he respected me greatly, but that, at the same time he was obliged to do his duty. He then presented a paper to me, and tapping me slightly on the shoulder, told me that he constituted me his prisoner. 'Very well, sir,' I replied, jocosely, 'but take me, if you can.' 'No, please your Excellency,' replied the sheriff's officer, 'but I beg you will allow me, after the performance of my duty to withdraw unmolested.' As I continued on the march, I sent the Commissary Villemanzuy to the house of the American, whom he found surrounded by his fellow-citizens, who were all upbraiding him loudly for such conduct towards a French officer. The commissary made his way through them, and made the captain put his signature to a paper by which he consented to compromise the matter by referring it to the decision of an arbitration. The latter reduced the demand to two thousand francs, and cast on the plaintiff the whole of the costs." De Segur, who was with the French army at the time, states that this incident was impressively referred to afterwards on the floor of the First National Assembly in France.

Blanchard writes that his name was Delavan and that he was of French descent.

YORKTOWN DURING THE CIVIL WAR.—The town of Yorktown was more prompt in its responses to the calls of the President of the United States for troops during the late Civil War than most of its neighbors, and was one of the few towns that reimbursed all individual expenses to its residents in connection with the procuring of substitutes.

The number of men furnished by the town of Yorktown under the call of the President of April 15, 1861, for seventy-five thousand militia, and the act of Congress of July 22, 1861, calling out five hundred thousand men, can only be estimated, as all the soldiers required were obtained without each town being assigned a quota. Estimating the number of volunteers under these calls, however, as equal to the number assigned to the town as its quota under subsequent calls for the same number of troops, the number of men furnished was about sixty.

Under the calls of the President on July 2, 1862, for three hundred thousand men to serve for three years, and on August 9, 1862, for three hundred thousand men to serve for nine months, the quota of Yorktown was sixty-seven. The adjutant-general of the State of New York, in his report for the year, states that the number of soldiers furnished by the town was seventy-two, an excess of five over the number actually required. In order to secure volunteers, it had become necessary to pay bounties. The sum of five thousand dollars was raised by tax on the town and consumed in the payment of bounties varying

from forty dollars to one hundred and ten dollars, and in incidental expenses.

A call was made by the President October 17, 1863, for three hundred thousand men, which was, however, merged into and considered a part of a call issued February 1, 1864, for five hundred thousand men. In accordance with a resolution adopted at a town-meeting, held on September 23, 1863, a system of mutual insurance, as it were, against draft, was established, which provided, that every person enrolled as liable to military service, who should pay into a common fund the sum of thirty dollars, should be entitled, if drafted, to receive from the town the sum of three hundred dollars to procure a substitute or pay the government for his exemption. In accordance with further resolutions passed 'at town-meetings, the sum of fourteen thousand four hundred dollars was raised by the town authorities, for which the bonds of the town were issued. It was sufficient to pay all the expenses incurred in procuring the fifty-five volunteers necessary to fill the quota of the town, and the contributors of thirty dollars to the "mutual insurance" fund above described were all reimbursed.

A call was issued March 14, 1864, for two hundred thousand more men. Yorktown supplied twenty-two men as her quota, paying three hundred and sixty dollars bounty to each man. To meet this expense the bonds of the town were issued to the extent of eight thousand dollars.

July 18, 1864, a call was issued for five hundred thousand men. To assist the towns in filling their quotas, the county had decided to issue its bonds and apportion the proceeds among the towns, according to their population. The allotment of Yorktown was nineteen thousand five hundred dollars. Her quota was forty-seven men. (?) The town afterwards paid out from funds raised both by taxation on the property of the town and by the issuing of bonds, fourteen thousand six hundred and forty-five dollars to reimburse persons who had been compelled to pay out money for substitutes in addition to the help which they received from the town. The sum of forty-nine hundred dollars was also raised to reimburse those persons who had contributed thirty dollars each to the "mutual insurance" fund against a draft. The total expense, therefore, of this quota was thirty-nine thousand and forty-five dollars.

A last call was made December 19, 1864, for three hundred thousand men. As the war was fast drawing to a close, the quotas assigned to the different towns were not usually filled. The number of men furnished by Yorktown was probably about twenty-five. The payment of bounties to volunteers under this call was entirely assumed by the State, which paid to Yorktown twenty-one thousand three hundred dollars.

The total sum expended in Yorktown for volunteers was therefore eighty-seven thousand seven

hundred and forty-five dollars, and by the town itself, exclusive of the help received by the State under the last call, sixty-six thousand four hundred and forty-five dollars.

The number of men furnished by the town cannot be exactly obtained, but adding together the number furnished under each call, when the number is known, and the estimated number as previously given, when it is not known, it would appear that Yorktown sent out approximately two hundred and eighty-one soldiers. The population of the town in 1860 was two thousand two hundred and thirty-one people. Of course, many of these volunteers were substitutes, who were obtained by bounty brokers. A list of names of residents of the town who entered the army, compiled at the time by John B. Tompkins, supervisor of Yorktown in 1861 and 1862, which has been added to somewhat by further inquiry contains one hundred and thirty-three names, which is doubtless very close to the correct number. They were distributed in the different regiments as follows: Sixth New York Heavy Artillery, 56; One Hundred and Thirty-fifth Regiment New York Volunteers, 14; One Hundred and Sixty-eighth Regiment New York Volunteers, 13; Ninety-fifth New York Volunteers, 9; Fifty-ninth New York Volunteers, 6; Harris Light Cavalry, 5; Fourth New York Artillery, 6; Seventeenth Regiment New York Volunteers, 7; Fifty-seventh New York Volunteers, 3; Monitors (the One Hundred and Twenty-seventh New York Volunteers), 2; and one each in the Twelfth New York, the Sixty-ninth New York, the Fifty-first New York, the Forty-eighth New York, the Nineteenth New York, the Eighty-seventh New York, the Seventieth New York (Excelsior Brigade), the Ninth New York and the First New Jersey Cavalry. The regiments to which the remainder were attached were not ascertained.

The following volunteers from Yorktown fell in battle or died in the military service of the United States.

- John H. Boyce, Sixth New York Heavy Artillery.
 Lieutenant Elias Fountain, Sixth New York Heavy Artillery, died from effects of a wound received at Cedar Creek, Va., 1864.
 John Valentine, Sixth New York Heavy Artillery, killed at Cedar Creek, 1864.
 George Guinea, Sixth New York Heavy Artillery, died at Maryland Heights.
 Harvey L. Sarles, Sixth New York Heavy Artillery.
 Lewis M. Sarles, Sixth New York Heavy Artillery.
 Obadiah Oakley, Sixth New York Heavy Artillery.
 Thomas Jefferson Head, Sixth New York Heavy Artillery.
 George Powers, Fifty-Ninth New York State Volunteers.
 Eugene M. Wright, Fifty-Ninth New York State Volunteers.
 Joshua B. Young, Fifty-Ninth New York State Volunteers.
 Thomas Harvey, Cavalry.
 John Jones, Fourth New York Artillery.
 Peter J. Ames, Twelfth New York State Volunteers, killed at battle of Fair Oaks, Va., 1861.
 William Sarles, Fifty-Seventh New York State Volunteers.
 Elias Sarles, Eighty-Seventh New York State Volunteers..
 William Sheppard, Eighty-Seventh New York State Volunteers.
 William Sherwood, died in hospital, 1861.
 Cyrus H. Brown, killed at South Petersburg, Va.

MOHEGAN LAKE AND SURROUNDINGS.—In the northwestern corner of the town, five miles from Peekskill, nestled in the midst of a well-cultivated and attractive country, is Lake Mohegan, covering about two hundred acres.

MOHEGAN LAKE SCHOOL is located at the northern end of the lake. The main building was originally a hotel, and was purchased for a school about 1865 by Prof. Charles D. Morris, who conducted it with eminent success for about ten years, when he left to assume a professorship at Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore. Prof. Morris is a grandson of Mrs. Col. Morris, who, as Mary Philipse, is said to have captivated the heart of George Washington.

In 1880, after the building had lain idle for about five years, it was re-occupied by the present school, of which Wallace C. Willcox is principal. This school was founded at Stamford, Conn., in 1850.

Students are educated in the English and commercial branches, and prepared for college. Military drill forms a feature. The number of scholars for the year ending in June, 1884, was thirty-three.

Adjoining the grounds of the school is the residence of Henry S. Billinge, a tea merchant of New York City.

The vicinity of the lake forms a pleasant place of resort during the summer, and two hotels near the shores are well filled during the season. They are the St. Nicholas Hotel, erected on the western bank about 1872, managed by Frank Frye, and capable of accommodating about one hundred guests, and the Mount Pleasant House, on the hill arising on the other side of the lake, built about 1859, and owned and managed by Walter R. Jones. It has also accommodations for about one hundred guests. Other houses in the vicinity take boarders.

A mansion erected on the eastern side of the lake, near the Mt. Pleasant House, by Guillaume Merle, a former merchant of New York City, is now occupied by his son-in-law, John Darrow. Mr. Merle's brother was Merle D'Aubigne, the distinguished author of the "History of the Reformation."

The dwelling of William J. Horton, at present supervisor of the town, is located on the western shore of the lake, not far from the St. Nicholas Hotel.

Between Mohegan Lake and Shrub Oak is the Swiss cottage of Mr. Thomas Jones.

ST. MARY'S EPISCOPAL CHURCH, situated on the border of Mohegan Lake, was erected in 1868. It has never had any regular rector, but services have been conducted quite regularly by lay readers, or Episcopal clergymen who happened to be in the neighborhood. On one side of the church is an ivy vine which has been brought from Sir Walter Scott's home at Abbotsford, in Scotland.

SHRUB OAK.—In the northern portion of the town, about one mile east of Lake Mohegan, is located the village of Shrub Oak, containing about one hundred and sixty people. It is situated on the road leading

to Peekskill, and six miles from that place. It is in the midst of an extensive plain, divided up into fine farms. Immediately to the north rise the Highlands of Putnam County.

A number of dwellings are located in the village and its neighborhood, some of them being the residences of New Yorkers. Mr. J. C. Nichols, a landscape artist, and a prominent member of the Water-Color Association, has his summer residence in the western portion of the village. A handsome dwelling is that of Mrs. John C. Hart, whose husband was formerly a wholesale druggist in New York City.

John Coleridge Hart was of English descent. He was born at Shrub Oak, Westchester County, June 22, 1822, and attended the district school at that place which he left, at the age of sixteen, for New York City.

Here he engaged as clerk in a retail drug store, afterward becoming a partner in the concern, the firm name being Wheeler & Hart. Mr. Hart finally purchased Mr. Wheeler's interest and continued in the business for many years at No. 20 Beekman Street. About four years before his death, which took place in New York City, May 3, 1872, he sold out the business and retired to private life.

Mr. Hart was prominent in business circles. He was a director of the East River Savings Bank. He was an attendant of the Shrub Oak Methodist Church, and was largely instrumental in the building of the handsome edifice at present in possession of the congregation.

Mr. Hart married Miss Mary A. Allen, daughter of Stephen Allen, formerly mayor of New York City. He spent his latter days mostly in Shrub Oak, where he purchased, some twenty years before his death, the pleasant residence at present in the hands of his daughter, Mrs. Dresser.

Mr. Hart was a quiet, unostentatious man, fond of his country-place and domestic in his habits. His death took from the quiet village where he had lived so long a useful citizen and a kind neighbor.

Among the oldest and most prominent residents of

Shrub Oak is John Wilson Carpenter, who was born January 7, 1817. The names of his parents are Walter Carpenter and Ann Summerbell. His paternal ancestors were from the north of England, while his maternal were Scotch. He received a common-school education. Much of his active life has been spent on his farm at Shrub Oak. He is also proprietor of the Carpenter House, Lake Mahopac, where he spends the summer months. During the years 1877, '78, '79, '80 he represented his town in the Board of Supervisors. November 22, 1850, he married Eliza Horton, daughter of Ebenezer Horton. They have three children,—Charles W., Walter and Jennie.

SHRUB OAK METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.¹

—According to a record made by Peter Badeau, who was born in 1776 at Mahopac Falls, the first service by a Methodist preacher near Shrub Oak was held in the house of his grandfather, also named Peter Badeau. The latter was a strict Presbyterian, and a descendant of the Huguenots. He moved in 1775 from New Rochelle to Mahopac Falls, then Red Mills, and took up his abode in a dwelling since remodeled and now occupied by his great-grandson, Isaac Badeau Pierce. "In 1788," says the record above alluded to, "the Rev. Thos. Ware, Methodist preach-

er came along inquiring for a place to preach in: my grandfather opened his house for

that purpose, and my father invited him, after preaching, home with him to stay all night.

He was one of the first Methodists I ever saw. He left an appointment for preaching there again in two weeks, which was filled by Rev. Cornelius Cook, who passed on to the north, and left an appointment for another preacher two weeks later. Two or three preachers followed him in succession, but I do not remember their names. Then the deacons of the church got alarmed, declaring that the Methodists were preaching false doctrine, and advised my grandfather to shut his door against them, which he did. But my



John W. Carpenter

¹ From an article prepared in 1883 by Amos C. Roqua, of Peekskill.



J. Hart



uncle, Jacob Badeau, believed the doctrines they taught, and got them another place, at Mr. Thomas Kirkham's, about a half-mile off,⁶ where they preached many years, till the old man died, and a society was raised up and built a meeting-house at Shrub Oak Plains. Some years after they built another at the head of Lake Mahopac."

The statement in the preceding quotation that Thomas Ware visited the locality in 1788 is doubtless somewhat erroneous, as he went south in 1787 and did not return till 1792. He records himself that he made a tour of Westchester in December, 1786, and it is probable that it was on this occasion that he made the visit above narrated.

The date of the building of the first church at Shrub Oak is somewhat uncertain. Both Asbury and Garrettson preached at a church in Shrub Oak in 1789. Bishop Asbury made the following entry in his journal: "Thursday, June 11, 1789, I came on to Crompond, and expected to have preached at Oakley's church, but my appointment was at P——s, where I had but few. Returned to F——s. We had a comfortable time at Oakley's church at 7 o'clock." Mr. Garrettson was present five days later and made the following note:

"Both at the Stony Street church on the morning of the 16th, and at the English church in the evening at Peekskill. I found much freedom in preaching the word of truth." From these records it is inferred that there was a Methodist Church at Shrub Oak as early as 1788.

In 1788 Freeborn Garrettson was appointed a presiding elder, to extend the borders of the Methodist Episcopal Church up the Hudson. He was assisted in this work by twelve young preachers. His labors extended as far as Lake Champlain, and into Eastern New York, Western Connecticut, and Vermont. Be-

sides these places he traveled extensively throughout the States of Maryland, Virginia, North and South Carolina, Pennsylvania, Delaware, and New Jersey. He was severely persecuted during the Revolutionary War and his life frequently threatened.

In his journeys through Westchester County and New York, Mr. Garrettson came to Poughkeepsie, and was invited to preach at Rhinebeck. He was invited to make his home at Mr. Tillotson's, whose wife was a sister of Miss Catharine Livingston, a daughter of Judge Robert R. Livingston, who had inherited a large estate in the Livingston Manor, on the Hudson

River. Her mother was the daughter of Colonel Beekman, a descendant of William Beekman, who was governor of what is now the State of Delaware, under a commission of Beekman. Her brother, Robt. Livingston, was one of the committee who framed the Declaration of Independence, and was first Chancellor of the State of New York, administering the oath to Washington when first inaugurated as President.

Miss Livingston became deeply impressed with the preaching of Mr. Garrettson, and as soon as a class was formed she joined it. In 1793 she married Mr. Garrettson

and six years after a place was purchased on the Hudson, and a house built, in which she resided until her death. Her husband was born, August 15, 1752, in Maryland, and died in New York city, September 26, 1827, in the seventy-sixth year of his age, and in the fifty-second year of his itinerancy.

The first legal incorporation of church trustees was made April 14, 1792. At that date "The male persons of full age belonging to the Methodist Episcopal Church in Yorktown were duly convened at the said church, the place where they stately attend for divine worship, and did elect Timothy Oakley, John Oakley, Solomon Fowler, Joseph Hadden, Thomas Kirkham and Jacob Badeau as trustees."

April 13, 1796, Pierre Van Cortlandt, for the sum of five shillings, deeded one and a quarter acres, upon



CHANCELLOR ROBERT R. LIVINGSTON.

¹ Towards Jefferson Valley. The barn of David Valentine stands on the foundation of Kirkham's house.

which the Methodist Episcopal Church had been built, to certain persons as trustees. June 13, 1827, three-quarters of an acre adjoining on the north was purchased for a burial-ground, and April 1, 1853, six acres, with the house thereon, lying on the east side of the road and directly opposite to the then church property, from Hiam Mabie.

On the 25th of June, 1867, the corner-stone of the present handsome church edifice was laid in a plot of six acres. The church was completed in December, 1870, and dedicated December 13th. Its cost was twenty-five thousand dollars, and much gratuitous work was done by the society.

The church was attached to New Rochelle Circuit from 1787 to 1792, to New Rochelle and Croton Circuit from 1792 to 1803, to Croton circuit from 1803 to 1809, to Cortlandt Circuit from 1809 to 1833, to Peekskill Circuit from 1833 to 1842. In 1842-43 Peekskill and Shrub Oak were ministered to by Daniel De Vinne. In 1843 Shrub Oak became a station, having then one hundred and ninety-one members. The pastors since that time have been as follows :

1843.	Rev. W. F. Collins.
1844-45.	Rev. P. Chamberlain.
1846-47.	Rev. Lorin Clark.
1848-49.	Rev. Thomas Sparks.
1850-51.	Rev. A. N. Molyneux.
1852-53.	Rev. L. B. Andrus.
1854-55.	Rev. M. Van Dusen.
1856-57.	Rev. Wm. M. Chipp.
1858.	Rev. E. R. Keys.
1859-60.	Rev. O. V. Amerman.
1861-62.	Rev. B. M. Genung.
1863.	Rev. W. C. Smith.
1864-66.	Rev. Peter C. Oakley.
1867-69.	Rev. James W. Smith.
1870-71.	Rev. F. S. Barnum.
1872-74.	Rev. Silas Fitch.
1875-77.	Rev. D. D. Gillespie.
1878-79.	Rev. David Buck.
1880-81.	Rev. A. M. Osbon.
1882-84.	Rev. Aaron Coons.

The number of members in 1884 was three hundred and six, of probationers forty-one, and of Sunday-school pupils seventy-five.

The board of stewards at the same time were John Hart, Hickson Covert, Richard Horn, Robert Embree, N. C. Strang, David Travis, Alfred Dingee, Smith Forman and Jared E. Mead. The board of trustees were A. C. Requa, J. Roake Hart, John Hart, Wm. Lee, N. C. Strang, Smith Forman and A. Dingee.

ST. JOHN THE EVANGELIST'S CATHOLIC CHURCH.—Meetings of Catholics were held at the residence of Mrs. Thomas Jones, a short distance west of Shrub Oak, as far back as 1872 or 1873. The number of worshippers was generally only about eight or ten, and the services were conducted by priests from Peekskill. The old Methodist Church building was then rented for a time, and, in July, 1880, a building which had been used as a store was purchased and altered into the present house of worship. Services are held every Sunday by priests from Peekskill. The number of members is about one hundred and fifty.

JEFFERSON VALLEY.—In the northeastern portion of the town, about one mile east of Shrub Oak, on the northern shore of Osceola Lake, and at the foot of a high hill, is the village of Jefferson Valley, containing about one hundred inhabitants. Osceola Lake is a beautiful little body of water, nearly elliptical in shape and about one hundred acres in area. Within the village is the Osceola House (no longer open for boarders, but occupied by the post-office). The former residence of Dr. James Fountain, an old-time physician of Yorktown, was located in this village. A son, Dr. Hosea Fountain, practiced medicine, until laid aside by ill health, in the neighborhood of Yorktown Station.

THE VILLAGE OF CROMPOND.—On the road from Peekskill to Somers is the village of Crompond, situated in the midst of a fine farming country, and containing a store and post-office, a Presbyterian Church and parsonage and about eight private buildings. The village derives its designation from the lakes situated about half a mile to the south, which were called the Crom Ponds during the Revolutionary period, meaning the "crooked ponds." The post-office originally bore the name of the village. Forty or more years ago it received that of Yorktown, and still retains it. The locality, however, is almost universally designated by its old Revolutionary appellation, which appears in the historical documents and records of that time, and on the maps prepared for Washington and Rochambeau, the former by Erskine, and the latter, probably by Berthier, who, later, became a Marshal of Napoleon I.

THE YORKTOWN PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.²—The Presbyterian Church, situated on the highest ground in the village of Crompond, is a handsome frame building, with columns in front and surmounted by a small tower.

A society of Presbyterians is said to have been organized in Yorktown in 1730. Probably in 1737 or 1738 a house of worship was erected where the present church is located, and on January 2, 1739, a lot of three acres surrounding it was deeded by Joseph Lane, who had leased a farm of two hundred and twenty acres containing the plot, and Henry Beekman and Gertrude, his wife, the owners, to John Hyatt, John Haight and David Travis, yeomen, "for a Presbyterian congregation, . . . exercising their religion and public worship of God Almighty after and according to the form of worship used and exercised by the now established Presbyterian Church government in that part of Great Britain called Scotland, and for no other purpose or intent whatsoever." The parcel

¹ It has been stated that the lakes received the name Crom Ponds from a man named Crom, who resided near them, and that his name appears in some of the old deeds. The proof of this statement is not at hand. It furnishes, however, the best explanation yet advanced. In Peekskill, to-day, reside people, the pronunciation of whose name is the same as that of the lakes, though the spelling is different.

² From an historical sermon delivered by the pastor, Rev. W. J. Cumming, August 6, 1876.

of land thus deeded includes all the property which the church now owns about the present building, with the exception of that upon which the parsonage stands.

This church was the pioneer church in the region. There was no meeting-house of any denomination to Hudson River on the west, and the Bedford Church was the nearest neighbor on the east. The parish embraced Cortlandt, Yorktown, Somers and the lower portion of Putnam County.

The first recorded meeting of the church, as a civil corporation, was held August 7, 1760, when the Knapps, Lees, Purdys, Strangs, Hyatts, Whitneys, Fowlers, Bedells and Travises were all represented. The descendants of many then in attendance are members at present.

The first regular pastor of the church of whom there is any record was the Rev. Samuel Sacket (said to be the son of the Rev. Richard Sacket, one of the early ministers of Greenwich, Conn.), who was born at Newtown, Long Island, and was for a long time engaged in mercantile pursuits in the county. He was licensed to preach by the Presbytery of New Brunswick, and ordained to the ministry October 13, 1742. The field of labor assigned to him was Cortlandt Manor, embracing Cortlandtown, Yorktown, Somers and North Salem. In the latter part of 1743 he became pastor of the church at Bedford. From May 19, 1747, to December 6, 1749, he devoted one-quarter of his time to labor in Yorktown. October 24, 1761, the church at Yorktown extended a call to Mr. Sacket, which was accepted. His salary was sixty-five pounds, parsonage and twenty-five cords of wood.

The Revolutionary War took place during his ministry, and, on account of his outspoken patriotism, he was compelled to flee to Sharon, Conn. The burning of the parsonage on the 10th or 12th of June, 1779, and of the church itself on the 24th of the same month, has been recited elsewhere. The value of these three buildings was estimated at three thousand five hundred dollars.

As soon as he could safely do so, Mr. Sacket resumed his ministerial labors and continued to be the pastor of the church until his death, at the age of seventy-two years, on June 5, 1784. His remains are interred in the cemetery beside the church, and his tombstone bears the inscription—"He was a judicious, faithful and laborious minister of the Gospel."

A new house of worship was built in 1785, at an expense of somewhat over one hundred pounds.

The Rev. Silas Constant was the successor of Mr. Sacket. He was the posthumous son of Col. Joseph Constant, an officer of the French army, who perished while on his way to France from this country to settle up some business affairs. Silas Constant was born at Waterbury, Conn., January 15, 1750. Some time after his thirtieth year he relinquished his occupation of farmer and became a minister of the gospel. His first charges were at Blooming Grove and Smith's

Clove (now Monroe), Orange County, N. Y. November 8, 1786, the church at Yorktown invited him to become their pastor and he was soon afterwards installed.

In addition to his labors at Yorktown, Mr. Constant preached every two or three weeks at Peekskill, probably stately at Red Mill, and occasionally elsewhere. In the latter part of 1790 the church at Red Mill was constituted a separate organization.

Mr. Constant was a member of and in sympathy with Morris County (New Jersey) Presbytery, which was Presbyterian only in name, Congregational in everything else, and for twenty years quietly and persistently labored to bring his congregation to the same belief. The result was a division of the church, and, on March 4, 1806, seventeen members, being about one-third of the whole number, led by Judge Elijah Lee, were incorporated as a separate church. March 5, 1806, Mr. Constant and his party were incorporated. The title adopted by both churches was the same,— "The First Presbyterian Church of Yorktown, settled upon the plan of the Church of Scotland." A lawsuit which followed, for the possession of the church property in the Circuit Court, Chief Justice Kent presiding, resulted in a victory for Judge Lee and his party. Mr. Constant and his friends then built a house of worship about half a mile east, on the road to Somerstown Plains. A cemetery marks its location at present. Their church was known as the Congregational or Independent Church. David Hyatt and Henry Miller were the first elders in the Independent Church and Alvan Purdy and Daniel Horton of the other.

Mr. Constant was pastor of the Independent Church until his death, in the seventy-sixth year of his age, on the 22d of March, 1825. With the exception of the trouble which resulted in the division above described, his pastorate was one of the most prosperous periods in the early history of the church.

The following persons served the church as pastors or stated supplies:

1806-25.	Rev. Silas Constant.
1825-28.	Rev. Daniel Jones.
1828-32.	Rev. Griffith H. Griffith.
1833-38.	Rev. Wm. Albert Hyde.
1838-41.	Rev. J. B. Loring.
1842-43.	Rev. Samuel White.
1844-46(?).	Rev. J. B. Stoddard.
1846 (?)-49	Rev. J. B. Loring.
1849-54.	Rev. J. H. Thomas.
1855-56.	Rev. Amzi Benedict.
1857-64.	Rev. G. W. McMillan.

August 5, 1865, the Independent Church having sold their property, reunited with the Presbyterian Church.

The party given possession of the old church property appear to have been without a pastor until 1808. The following is a complete list of pastors:

1761-84.	Rev. Samuel Sacket.
1786-1806.	Rev. Silas Constant.
1808-14.	Rev. Andrew Thompson.

1822-27.	Rev. Asahel Bronson.
1827-34.	Rev. Richard Wynkoop.
1836-46.	Rev. Robt. G. Thompson.
1847-52.	Rev. Matthew T. Adam.
1853-65.	Rev. Sam'l. D. Westervelt.
1866-75.	Rev. James W. Johnston.
1876.	Rev. W. J. Cumming.

The present church edifice was erected during the pastorate of Rev. Robert G. Thompson and dedicated January 9, 1840.

The number of members on the register, April 1, 1884, was one hundred and seventy-seven and the number of Sunday-school members, including officers and teachers, one hundred and four. Mr. Enos Lee is superintendent. The present elders are Enos Lee, Elijah Lee, Henry White, Daniel H. Knapp and William L. Mead, and the trustees, David F. Lee, Henry Strang and Robert L. Knapp.

SOCIETY OF AGRICULTURE AND HORTICULTURE.—A short distance southeast of Crompond are the grounds of the Society of Agriculture and Horticulture, of Yorktown, consisting of twelve or fifteen acres leased from Alexander Titus. The society was incorporated in 1866, but was organized about ten years previous. It owed its origin to the dissatisfaction felt with the methods of the County Agricultural Society, which paid almost all its premiums to winners of horse-races. The Yorktown society gave no horse-races, but awarded its prizes for the best cattle, horses, hogs, sheep, poultry, fruit, grain and vegetables, dairy and culinary products, preserves, flowers, needle-work and domestic manufactures and farming implements. The exhibitions have been very successful, but the society of late has not been as active as formerly. The officers for 1884 are Constant White, president; Jas. V. Irish, first vice president; J. B. F. Hawkins, second vice-president; Dr. Albert Strang, corresponding secretary; Albert Lee, recording secretary; and T. F. Tompkins, treasurer.

MEETING-HOUSE OF FRIENDS AT AMAWALK.—At Amawalk, in the east central portion of the town, is located the meeting-house of the members of the branch of the religious Society of Friends commonly known as the Hicksites. Upon the same ground stood the first meeting-house of the Society of Friends in Yorktown.

From the records of meetings of Friends elsewhere in the county, it would appear that a society existed in Yorktown as far back as 1760. Steps were taken towards building a meeting-house in 1772. It was built in 1773 and a separate meeting constituted in 1774. October 10, 1774, a deed was given by John Clapp, of Greenwich, Connecticut, and Joseph Walters, of Cortlandt Manor, to John Griffen and John Cromwell, of Westchester County, and John Cornell, Uriah Field and Thomas Clapp, of Greenwich, Connecticut, conveying to them a tract of two acres of land at "Ammerwalk," in Cortlandt's Manor, and another parcel of land eight by ten rods in extent, "the aforesaid lands . . . being the same tract or parcel

of land on which stands the meeting-house in which the people usually called Quakers meet." The land mentioned in this deed, together with one and one-quarter acres subsequently purchased, constitutes the lot around the present meeting-house. The Amawalk Meeting at this time was subordinate to the meeting of the town of Harrison.

From the book of records of births and deaths kept by the society in Yorktown, are taken the following names of early members: Richard Hallock, born 1724; Isaac Underhill, born 1726; James Cock, born 1731; John Griffin, born 1733; Zadock Birdsall, born 1733; Thomas Underhill, born 1738; Joshua Halstead, born 1739; Wright Frost, born 1748; Isaac Mekeel, born 1756. A division occurred in the Society of Friends in the year 1828, resulting from a doctrinal controversy that had disturbed the society for several years. Prominent among the ministers of the branch that retained possession of this property was one Elias Hicks, of Jericho, Long Island. This gave origin to the name "Hicksite."

The other branch, constituting about one-quarter of the whole number, called Orthodox Friends, withdrew and erected their present meeting-house at Yorktown Station. Hicks preached frequently in Yorktown.

The present meeting-house at Amawalk was erected in 1831. Two previous meeting-houses had been burned down.

At present four meetings are represented at the Monthly Meetings at Amawalk, namely: Amawalk, Peach Pond, Salem and Peekskill.

The elders are (1884) Sarah S. Weeks, Jane Hallock, Amy W. Griffen, James H. Conklin, Joseph T. Hallock, Edmund P. Hallock and Jesse H. Griffen. The number of members is one hundred and seven, of whom thirty-one reside within the limits of other meetings.

YORKTOWN STATION.—About half-way between the northern and southern boundaries of the town is located the village known as Yorktown Station. It has grown up almost entirely since the building of the New York City and Northern Railroad was begun. The first store was opened by Aaron M. Clark, August 27, 1877, about twenty rods south of the present station-house, in a building erected by Colonel Nicholas E. Paine a few years before, and at first used as a blacksmith and wheelwright shop. Mr. Clark became the first postmaster, his commission bearing date of October 11, 1881. The name of the post-office is Underhill. At present the village contains five stores, about a dozen dwelling-houses, a school-house, one hotel, a station-house, two blacksmith and a wheelwright shop, the meeting-house of the Orthodox Friends and a Methodist Episcopal Church.

THE ORTHODOX FRIENDS.—When the division occurred in the Society of Friends in 1828, about one-fourth of its members at Amawalk withdrew and formed a congregation of Orthodox Friends, which meets at present at Yorktown Station. The meeting-



Edw and B. Birchall







"FLORAL VILLA."
RESIDENCE OF EDWARD B. UNDERHILL.

P. C. G. ST.

house was erected at its present situation in 1832, on one acre of land, conveyed November 9, 1832, by George Mekeel to Daniel Smith, Aaron Underhill, Edward B. Underhill and Isaac Mekeel. The number of members at present (1884) is twenty-one, and of Sunday-school pupils eighty. The elders of the church are Jacob Mekeel, Mrs. Jacob Mekeel, Susan Shipley and Daniel Smith. The Monthly Meetings of the church at Peekskill (now almost gone out of existence) and of the church at Croton are held at this meeting house.

THE MOHANSIC METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—This society was incorporated April 3, 1876, and John Vail, John B. Tompkins and Henry C. Kear were elected trustees. Meetings were held for some time at School-House No. 3, at Yorktown Station, and are now conducted in the upper room of a stable in the rear of the Whitney House. A beautiful house of worship has since been completed. The number of members is twenty-one, and there is a Sunday-school having about sixty pupils. The church is connected with the Mount Zion Circuit and has had the following: 1876, Rev. N. O. Lent; 1877, Rev. E. Ashton; 1878–80, Rev. Uriah Symonds; 1881–83, Rev. Thomas S. Lent; 1884–85, Rev. R. L. Shurter, the present pastor.

THE WHITNEY HOUSE was built by Ezekiel Palmer and opened June 8, 1882, with Mr. Palmer as proprietor. It is named after Mr. Silas Whitney, a farmer residing in the neighborhood of the village, and owner of most of the land on which it is built. It is a square frame building, three stories in height.

Within the village is located the residence of Colonel Nicholas E. Paine, who was mayor of the city of Rochester, N. Y., in 1851, and later postmaster, and is the owner of large amounts of real estate in that city, in Vermont and elsewhere. Colonel Paine purchased his present residence from Mr. George Mekeel about 1872.

About half a mile east of Yorktown Station is the residence of Jacob Mekeel. The Mekeels are descended from Uriah Mekeel, who emigrated from Holland and settled in New Amsterdam about 1690, and later removed to Pine's Bridge. One of his three sons, Michael, purchased and settled on three hundred acres near Hallock's Mills, and died one hundred and four years old. Jacob Mekeel is a grandson of Michael.

On the western side of the village is the fine residence of Edward B. Underhill, son of Abraham I. Underhill, who was the second son of Isaac Underhill, fourth in descent from the noted John Underhill, of Oyster Bay, L. I. It was at the house of Isaac Underhill, as elsewhere narrated, that Major Andre breakfasted September 23, 1780.

There are few names more prominent in the early history of Long Island and New England than that of Captain John Underhill, the redoubtable champion who fought alike on the side of the Puritans and the Dutch, and whose famous battle with the Long Island

Indians freed that portion of the province of New York from all further danger from savage foes.

He was descended from a noble ancestry, and born in England in 1600. He came to America in 1638, and soon obtained a prominence in the new colonies, which continued up to his death, which occurred July 21, 1672. The story of his life and adventures has been so often told that it would be superfluous to repeat it here. It is sufficient to state that he has left a line of very numerous and distinguished descendants.

John Underhill, eldest son of the captain, was the ancestor of the family of that name on Long Island, while the families in Westchester County are descended from his second son, Nathaniel, whose son Abraham was the father of Isaac Underhill, who was born in 1726 and died in 1814. He married Sarah Field, and they were the parents of several children. Robert was the oldest son, and the ancestor of the Underhills of Teller's (or Croton) Point.

Abraham I. Underhill, the second son, was born June 27, 1763. He married Rebecca Field, who was descended from a family well known in this county, and a lady of many excellencies and virtues. Her portraits show that she possessed no small share of personal beauty. Their only child was Edward B. Underhill. Abraham I. Underhill was for many years one of the lessees of mill privileges on the Croton River near its mouth, which were leased from the Van Cortlandts, and here Mr. Underhill erected extensive mills and supplied large quantities of flour to the New York market. After the expiration of the lease Mr. Underhill removed to his farm in Yorktown, where he passed the remainder of his days, and died May 6, 1841. The settlement of disputes which arose after the termination of the lease of the mill-seat gave rise to a very protracted lawsuit, which is quite an important episode in the history of that part of the county. A full account may be found in Chancery reports.

Edward B. Underhill was born at the house occupied by his father when proprietor of the mills on Croton River. His early education, so far as schools were concerned, was exceedingly limited, but he was a constant reader of useful books, and his retentive memory enabled him to acquire an extensive amount of general information.

His father was largely interested in the purchase of lands in what was in the early part of the century called the "western country," now the central portion of the State of New York, and also had large tracts of land in the State of Pennsylvania, which were afterwards of great value. The extensive farm in Yorktown, which came into the possession of Mr. Underhill on the death of his parents, was for a great part in all the wildness of nature. He began a system of improvement which he has continued to the present time, and the removal of rocks, deepening of soil, draining of swamps and wet land and the erection

of costly and elegant buildings has entirely changed the whole appearance of the estate. His father was one of the early importers of merino sheep and the first man to introduce the iron plow into Westchester County, and his son has followed in the same line of forethought and intelligent action.

Although for a large portion of his life he has suffered much from ill health and has been for the last ten years deprived of sight, yet he has never failed to manage with success the details of a very extensive business. During his whole life he has been identified with local improvements, and it is but just to say that he has done more than any other man to establish good school, in his neighborhood where they did not exist before. He has also done much to improve the old roads and to open new ones in the vicinity. The cause of temperance has always found in him an active supporter both by example and precept, but he is a believer in the power of moral suasion rather than prohibitory laws.

Mr. Underhill's ancestors were members of the Society of Friends, as were many of the early families of Westchester County. For many years the study of medicine has interested him and he has acquired an extensive knowledge of that profession and of some other branches of science. A few years ago he received from Amherst College an honorary degree of Master of Arts.

His present residence was completed in 1881. A part was built in 1828. It is situated a short distance west of the New York City and Northern Railroad, on the old road to Croton. The farm which surrounds it is well known as one of the best cultivated in the town, if not in the county, and is well stocked with horses and cattle of the finest grades.

The ancient homestead of the family, and the place where his grandfather, Isaac Underhill, resided during the Revolution, is still standing on the west side of the road from Crompond to Pine's Bridge, and one mile south of Yorktown Station. It has an historic interest as the place where Major John Andre and Joshua Hett Smith stopped for breakfast on the morning of the 23d of September, 1780. It was here that they separated, Smith to return to his home in Haverstraw, by way of King's Ferry, and Andre to continue his journey to Pine's Bridge and thence to the old Albany Post road, where he was captured, and when they met again it was under very different circumstances.

Isaac Underhill came here to reside shortly before the Revolution, and at his death it passed to his son Abraham, who sold it to Richard M. Underhill, and it is now owned by Charles W. Underhill, Jr. A part of it as it now stands is a well-preserved specimen of the house of the olden time and is highly prized by the family as a relic of Revolutionary days.

Just west of Mr. Underhill's residence is the residence of John B. Tompkins.

John Bailey Tompkins was born near the dug-way

in the town of Yorktown, September 20, 1821. The house where he was born was wrecked and partially carried away by the breaking of the Croton Dam, January 8, 1841. He is the son of Gilbert Tompkins and Perlina Griffen. The Tompkiuses are of Welsh origin. They came to America, settling first in Concord, Mass. From thence they removed to Fairfield, Conn. Their descendants came to Eastchester, in this county.

John Tompkins, of Croton River—Sarah Barker.

John Tompkins—Catherine Gerow.

Gilbert Tompkins—Perlina Griffen.

John B. Tompkins.

Mr. Tompkins' education was obtained from the common schools of the town and the Peekskill Academy. By occupation he is a farmer, though for some years he conducted the slating business. November 4, 1846, he married Susan P. Gerow, of Somers, and has three children—Marietta (now Mrs. Bailey Jordan); Theodore F., of Yorktown; Josephine.

He held the office of town clerk during 1852, '53, '54, '56, and that of supervisor in 1861, '62, '73, '74, '75, serving in the board as chairman of committees on roads and bridges, census enumerators and justices, and was member of those on equalization of assessments, judiciary, surrogate, schools, etc. He was one of the first incorporators and a member of the first board of directors of the New York City and Northern Railroad, or, as it was then known, the New York and Boston Railroad Company, running through Westchester County, New York. He has always taken a deep interest in agriculture and horticulture, having served six years as president of the town society and many years in other positions. April 2, 1840, he removed with his parents to the farm upon which he now resides, near Yorktown Station, on the New York City and Northern Railroad.

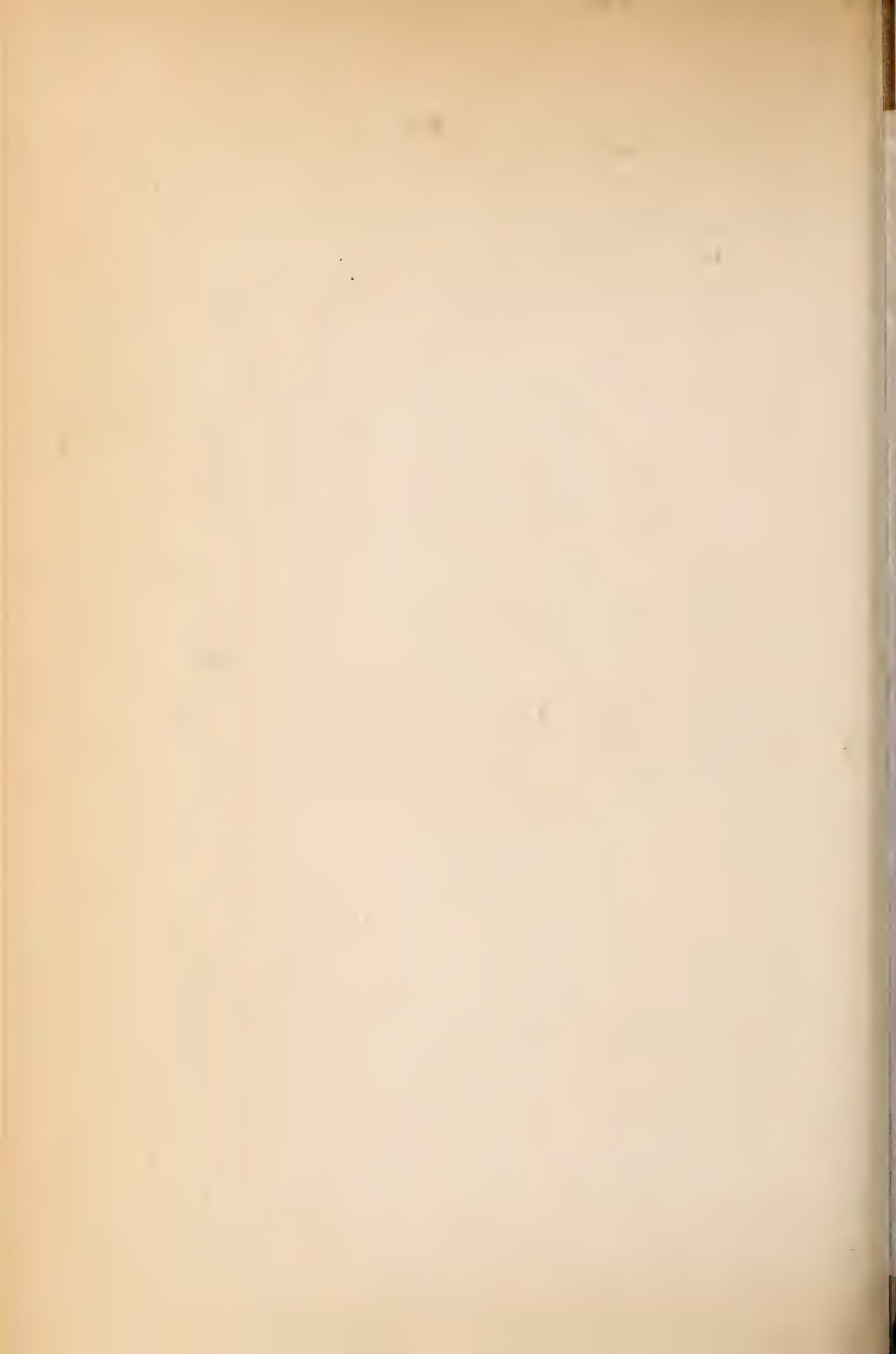
YORKTOWN BAPTIST CHURCH.¹—Near the western line of the town, three miles southwest of Yorktown Station, and about midway between its northern and southern boundaries, is located the Baptist Church of Yorktown. It is a white frame building, with two large columns in the front, and is surrounded by a cemetery probably a little less than a couple of acres in extent. A parsonage close by the church is of a value of eight hundred or a thousand dollars.

The Baptist Church was originally a branch of the church at Stamford, Conn. The first pastor, ordained by the advice and with the assistance of the church at Stamford, was Reuben Garretson. His ordination took place at Yorktown July 10, 1788. October 15 of the same year the society was constituted the Baptist Church of Yorktown, Cortlandt Manor. The number

¹From a sketch prepared from the records by Elias Q. Tompkins, one of the deacons of the church.



Nathaniel Cornell



of members was forty. The meetings were held in private houses.

Elder Reuben Garretson, the first pastor, was licensed to preach by the Baptist Church of Fishkill. He owned and cultivated a farm of two hundred acres or more, not far from the present meeting-place in Yorktown, of which the farm now owned by William P. Wilson was a part.

June 3, 1792, the first recorded election of trustees occurred, Cornelius Ryder, Gamaliel Fairbanks and Elias Quereau being chosen to the office. John Tompkins and Amos Lane were deacons at the time.

In 1795 difficulties arose in the church, and a number of members joined the Baptist Church near Peekskill. April 14, 1798, they were constituted a separate organization, under the pastotal care of Isaac Rhodes, the number of members being thirty. There were thus at this time two Baptist congregations in Yorktown. August 7, 1802, they were reunited, with Isaac Rhodes as pastor, and in the same year a house of worship was built where the present edifice stands.

The successive pastors have been as follows:

- 1788-1792 . Reuben Garretson.
- 1798-1809 . Isaac Rhodes.
- 1810-21 . Reuben Garretson.
- 1821-40 . Ezra Fountain, of Bedford, occasional supply.
- 1829 . . . Neh'ah Sherwood, of Yorktown.
- 1835 . . . Abraham Talman, of N. Y. City.
- 1837 . . . Charles Underhill.
- 1839-41 . Wm. Bowen, of Reading, Conn
- 1841-43 . John Warren.
- 1844-46 . Wm. Bowen.
- 1847-54 . Phil. Roberts.
- 1860-73 . Edw. S. Yocum.
- 1875-77 . Wm. B. Harris.
- 1879-82. George F. Hendrickson.
- 1882-85. J. G. Shrives, of Yonkers, supply.

September, 1821, the church became a member of the Union Association, in which it still remains. The present meeting-house was built in 1849.

The number of members at the close of the year 1883 was fifty-three. The deacons were William Wright and Elias Q. Tompkins, and the trustees William Wright, Edmund L. Clements, Wellington Lounsberry, John H. Teller and Charles W. Conklin.

Nathaniel Cornell, who is prominently identified with the business interests of Yorktown, is of English descent. His father, Oliver Cornell, removed to

Yorktown from New Castle and purchased the farm at present in the ownership of his son. Oliver Cornell married, at New Castle, Mary Dickinson. He had two children, of whom Nathaniel, the youngest, was born at that town, January 17, 1815.

Mr. Cornell spent his early days at the district school in Yorktown, which he left at the age of sixteen for the farm, in the management of which he has been more than successful. During the past fifty-five years he has interested himself deeply in agricultural matters and has from time to time added to the productive property in his possession till he has now four hundred acres, a portion of which lies in Yorktown and the rest in Newcastle. He has also been extensively engaged in the manufacture of cider vinegar, for which he has a reputation second to none in the State.

He was formerly very active in political affairs. For many years he held the positions of school trustee and road-master in Yorktown, serving one term also as supervisor of the town. He married, October 8, 1876, Miss Margaret Orsor. His long residence in Yorktown, together with his genial disposition and business habits, have made him a power of good in the community.

CROTON LAKE AND SURROUNDINGS.—In the southeastern portion of the town, and extending into the town of Somers, lies Croton Lake, the source of the

water supply of New York City, which is formed by the damming of the waters of the Croton River. It is about five miles in length, and covers an area of four hundred acres. The dam is fifty feet or a little more in height above the natural bed of the river. Just below the southern end of the dam is the pretty stone gate-house, through which the water is admitted to the aqueduct, and started on its mission of usefulness to the city. A short distance below is the house of the superintendent of the dam, surrounded by well-kept grounds. The lake and aqueduct form one of



John B. Tompkins

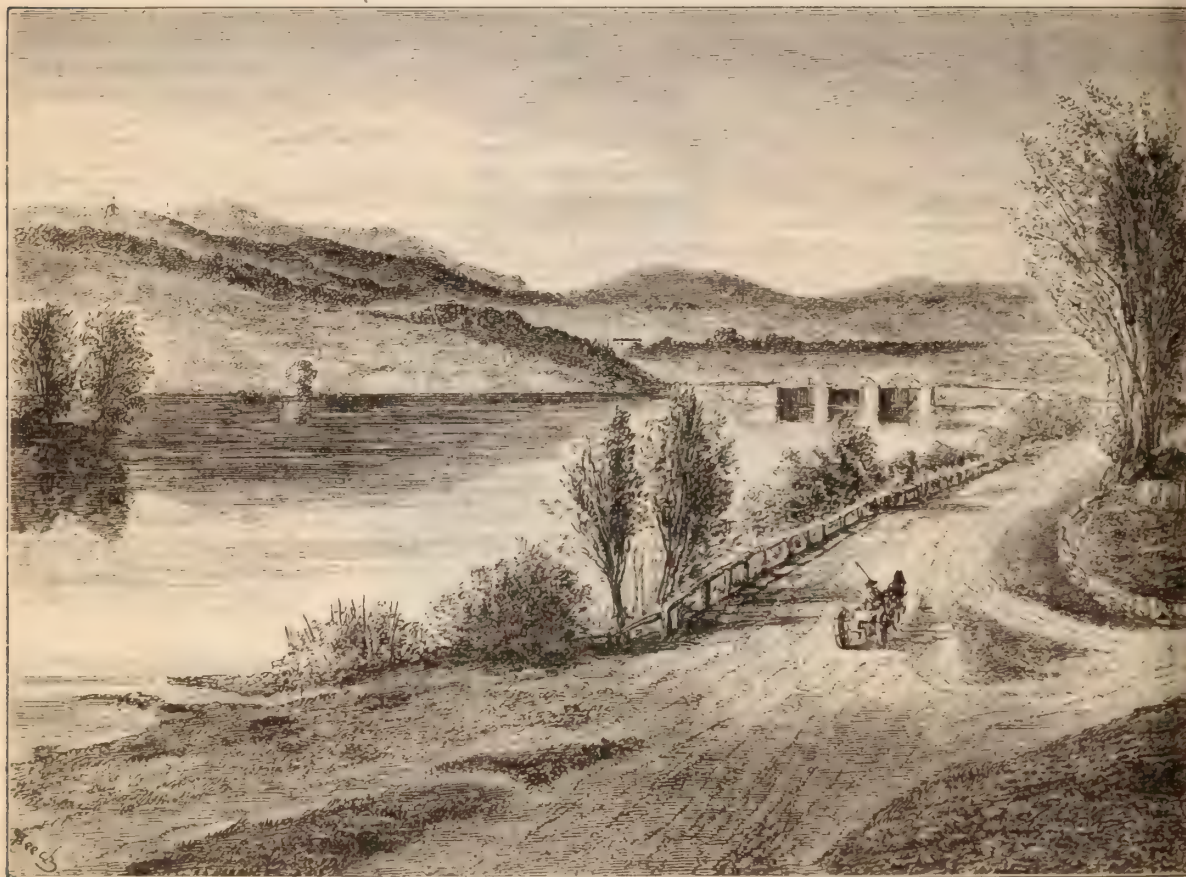
¹ Most of this sketch is taken from an article entitled, "The Water Supply of New York City, Past and Present, 1658 to 1883," by Fernando Wood, of Croton Dam.

the most stupendous and remarkable pieces of public work in the country.

Previous to the introduction of the waters of the Croton River into New York, the city was compelled to obtain its supply from the the pond known as the Collect, which extended from Canal Street to Pearl Street, from the Tea Water Spring, situated near the present junction of Chatham and Roosevelt Streets, and later from wells sunk in various parts of the city, the water being at first distributed through bored wooden logs. In 1829 iron pipes were laid for the first time. As the city grew, the inadequacy

the falls at Paterson, N. J., across the Hudson River by iron pipes laid in the bottom of the stream.

In 1833 five commissioners were appointed by the Legislature "to examine and consider all matters relative to supplying the City of New York with a supply of pure and wholesome water." Surveys made under the direction of these commissioners in the same year, resulted in the firm conclusion that the Croton should be the source of supply. In 1834 the same commissioners were re-appointed, and again decided that the Croton River offered the only adequate source of supply. A report of the committee embodying this



CROTON LAKE.

of these means of supply became apparent, and various plans for overcoming the difficulty were suggested, that of bringing the waters of the Bronx River to the city early claiming favorable attention. The Croton River appears to have been first suggested on May 17, 1830, by Francis B. Phelps, who presented a memorial to the Council, proposing three different sources of supply,—first, to bring the waters of Rye Pond the whole distance through in twenty-eight inch iron pipes; second, to bring the Croton River by open canal or iron pipes; and third, to bring the water of the Passaic River, taken above

conclusion was submitted to the people of the city in April, 1835, and adopted by a vote of 17,330 in favor, and 5963 against. In April, 1837, work was commenced in constructing the dam across the Croton River about five miles above its mouth, and in building the aqueduct. John B. Jervis was chief engineer.

On the 7th of January, 1841, a great freshet occurred on Croton River, which carried away the earth embankment forming a portion of the newly constructed dam, and caused the destruction of a great amount of property and the loss of three lives. On

the 6th of that month the snow lay on the hills surrounding the valley of the Croton to the depth of twelve or fifteen inches. In the evening the weather began to moderate, and a thick, heavy rain fell which must have melted the snow and ice more rapidly than the rise of the temperature. As the flood rose, and the waters began to rush furiously on their way to the Hudson, many of the inhabitants of the valley began to fear some disaster. They accordingly took some measures for the safety of their dwellings, which, as the event proved, were entirely unavailing.

The river above the dam rose with great rapidity, and shortly after midnight tore away Pine's Bridge, and swept it swiftly towards the dam. The accumulated waters created too great a pressure for the dam to resist, and it at last gave way. The roar of the waters as they broke from their confines could be heard miles away, and in their resistless progress they carried away all the barns, stables, farm-houses and valuable property of other descriptions within their reach.

The greatest and most lamentable loss happened at the iron and wire-mills of the Messrs. Bailey, near the western border of the town. Partaking of the general alarm, three of the proprietors of this mill had been engaged with forty laborers in throwing up an embankment to preserve their property from the rising waters. They were so far satisfied with their labors that about three o'clock in the morning they dismissed their hands, and retired to their homes. Just then they heard an alarm given by the sounding of horns from the opposite side of the river, and William Evans, an old hand, rushed in to say that the dam had broken, and the waters were coming. The time was too brief to allow even the awakening of those who had gone to rest, and in an exceedingly brief space the waters were upon the little settlement, and some fifty or sixty human beings were thrown into the flood, while their possessions were swept away. The women and children clung to the trees, and all were saved. Mrs. Acray and her infant, Miss Mitchell, Mrs. Batson and a little girl, Mrs. Millen and child, William Mitchell, Joseph Bailey, Gerry Hale, John Cheesay, Robert Chester, James Bream Cornelius Colton, Andrew Miller, James Hutchinson and Henry Corney were all taken from trees by means of rafts.

Two stout men were less fortunate than the women and children. William Evans, sometimes called "Uncle John," and Robert Smith sought refuge in a tree which was swept away, and were drowned. Only one of the laborers on the dam lost his life. His name was Patrick Burke, and he was said to have gone to bed intoxicated, and from that reason been unable to save himself. Mr. Bailey waded breast deep in water carrying his father and a box of gold, and almost by miracle reached a place of safety with his burdens.

The pecuniary loss from the flood was estimated as follows :

The embankment of dam	\$30,000
Damage to masonry of dam	25,000
Pine's Bridge	6,000
Quaker's Bridge	10,000
Bridge near the dam	6,000
Three or four bridges above the dam	5,000
Bailey's Mill's, dwelling-house and farm	20,500
Stock of iron, etc	5,000
Furniture	2,500
Money, clothes and papers	20,000
Store and village buildings	20,000
Agricultural stock and implements	2,000
Tompkins' farm	20,000
Damage to the surrounding lands, houses, buildings, etc.	50,000

Total \$672,500

June 22, 1842, the water was let into Croton Aqueduct for the first time, and on the following day was received into the reservoir at Eighty-sixth Street, in New York.

On the 4th of July, 1842, the waters of the Croton gushed up for the first time into the distributing reservoir at Murray Hill, "and wandered about its bottom as if to examine the magnificent structure, or to find a resting-place in the temple towards which they had made a pilgrimage." Many citizens visited the reservoir, and demonstrations of joy were frequent over the consummation of the great work. October 14th the citizens gave vent to their feelings of satisfaction by an imposing parade, in which over twenty thousand persons took part. The water was on that day for the first time distributed through the pipes to the houses.

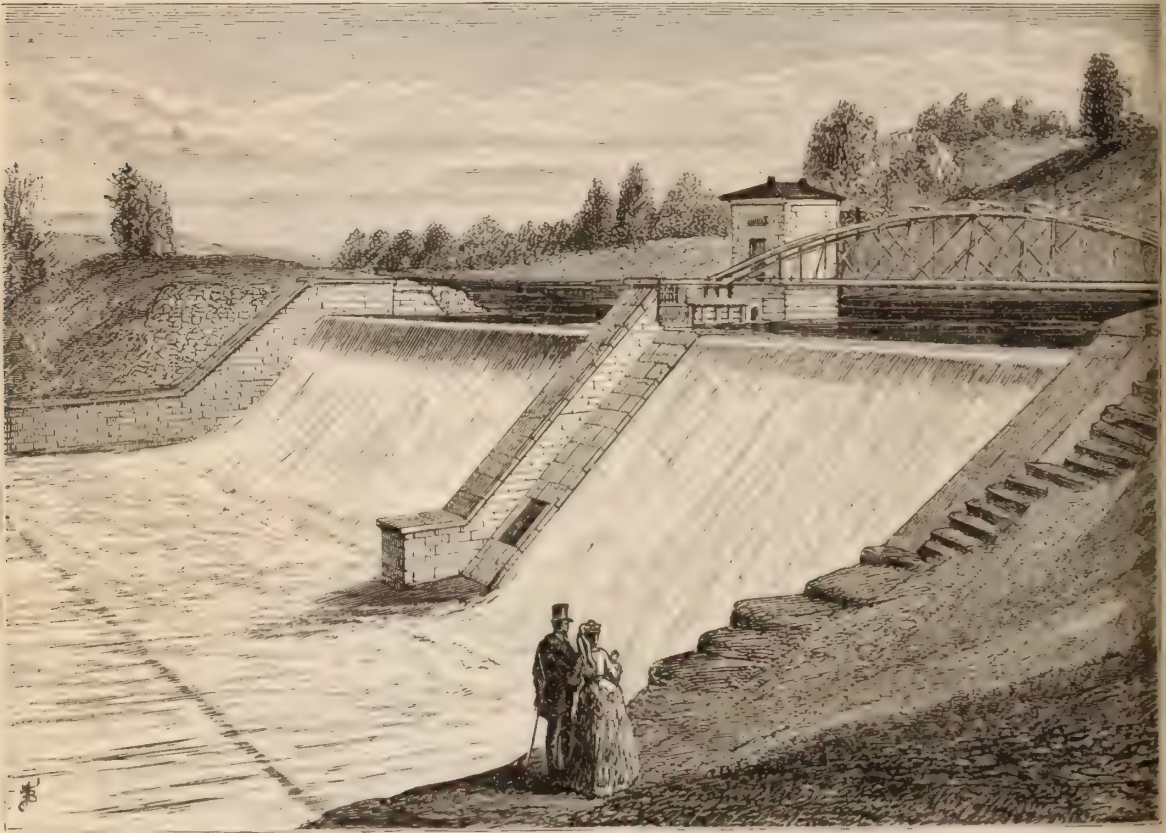
In the construction of the aqueduct fifty-five million bricks were used, and seven hundred thousand cubic yards of stone masonry built. At distances of a mile hollow circular towers were erected to afford ventilation.

The Croton Water-Works begin six miles above the mouth of the Croton River, where a dam elevates the water of the river fifty feet, or a hundred and sixty-six feet above mean tide; passes along the valley of the Croton to near its mouth, and thence into the valley of the Hudson; goes through the villages of Sing Sing, Tarrytown, Dobbs Ferry, Hastings and Yonkers; at the last leaves the bank of the Hudson and crosses the valley of Saw-Mill River and Tibbets' Brook; thence runs along the side of the ridge that bounds the southerly side of Tibbets' Brook Valley to within three and a half miles of the Harlem River, where the high grounds of the Hudson fall away, and passes, in consequence, over the summit lying between the Hudson and East Rivers to the Harlem and the great High Bridge. Over the bridge, which crosses the Harlem Valley and the river, the water thus brought is conveyed in immense iron pipes, so huge that a very tall man can stand erect within them. Then the aqueduct of masonry is resumed and continued a couple of miles to the termination of the high ground on the north side of Manhattan Valley,

where it again gives place to iron pipes which descend into the bottom of the valley, a hundred and two feet below the aqueduct level, and rise to the proper point on the opposite side and extend to the receiving reservoirs in Central Park.

The Sing Sing Kill, where it crosses the line of the aqueduct, runs in a deep and narrow gulf, the bottom of which is sixty-three feet below the grade line. The aqueduct bridge, which covers the gulf, is immense. Near the north end of the valley that spreads out from this is a road, culvert or arched viaduct, under the conduit. The principal work here is the large arch directly over the gulf. It is eighty-eight feet

and the only remaining source was the small amount which was running in Croton River, and which probably did not receive twenty-seven million gallons a day. Since then the lakes, varying in size from fifty to five hundred acres, at or near the sources of many of the tributaries of the Croton, which have their rise principally in Westchester and Putnam Counties—though some of the smaller rise in Dutchess County and within the State of Connecticut—have been drawn down. Two large storage reservoirs have been constructed near the head waters of the Croton; one at Boyd's Corner, in the town of Kent, Putnam County, and the other at Drewville, in the same county. The



DAM AT CROTON LAKE.

span and thirty-three feet rise, a massive work of stone.

This reservoir covers about four hundred acres, and has a storage capacity of about five hundred million gallons above a level that will allow the aqueduct to deliver thirty-five million gallons per day. The new receiving reservoirs in the Central Park have a capacity of about one thousand million gallons; the old reservoirs about a hundred and fifty million gallons. Large wells these, but none too large for the needs or desires of the big family that draws from them, as will be seen when it is stated that, in October, 1869, all of this available supply was practically exhausted,

citizens of New York are now drinking, using and wasting about eighty-five million gallons of water every twenty-four hours, a vast deal more than those who were before them drank at the time the works of the Manhattan Company were put in operation, when water from the celebrated "Tea Water Pump," which for years stood on the corner of Chatham and Pearl Streets, was purchased at a penny a gallon from the vendors who went about the town in carts and sparingly used it as no common luxury.

The Croton Dam sets the river back about five miles. The water is conducted to a gateway located on solid rock to the head of the aqueduct on the

southern shore, by a tunnel cut a hundred and eighty feet through rock. The gate-chamber is provided with a double set of gates,—one set of guard-gates of cast-iron, set in cast-iron frames, and one set of regulating gates, made of gun metal, set in frames of the same material. There are nine gates in each set, and all simply operated by means of wrought-iron screw-rods. In the north abutment of the dam there is a waste culvert with suitable gates of cast-iron to draw the water down in the reservoir whenever necessary.

The general formation of the country through which the aqueduct passes is extremely irregular, and consequently, in its construction, there was of necessity much deep cutting, frequent tunneling through ridges,

mentioned, there are numerous brooks and valleys, of less depth, requiring culverts and artificial foundations to support the work. The culverts number one hundred and fourteen, and their aggregate length is nearly eight thousand feet. The span varies from one and a half to twenty-five feet. There are five road culverts of from fourteen to twenty-feet span. All the culverts are of stone, laid in hydraulic cement. The line is embellished at frequent intervals with massive viaducts and bridges, which render it imposing, and at times picturesque. The prettiest picture along the way is perhaps at Sleepy Hollow, and the grandest about Sing Sing Kill.

The greatest interior width of the aqueduct is seven feet five inches, and the greatest height, eight feet



HIGH BRIDGE.

and heavy filling in deep ravines. There are on the line sixteen tunnels, varying in length from a hundred and sixty to over twelve hundred feet, and making an aggregate length of nearly seven thousand feet; and the height of the ridges, above the grade-level at the tunnels, ranges from twenty-five to seventy-five feet. In Westchester County twenty-five streams cross the line of the aqueduct, which are from twelve to seventy feet below the grade-line, and from twenty-five to eighty-three feet below the top covering of the aqueduct. The most prominent of the valleys are Lounsbury's, Indian Brook, Sing Sing Kill, Mill River, Jewell's Brook and Saw-Mill River; the foundations of which are in no case less than forty feet below the grade-line, or fifty-three feet below the top covering of the aqueduct. Besides those above

five and a half inches. The bottom is an inverted arch; the side walls rise four feet above the spring-line, with a bevel of one inch to a foot rise, so that the width at the top is eight inches greater than at the bottom; and the roofing arch is a semi-circle. In excavations a bed of concrete masonry is made the foundation, three inches thick at the centre of the inverted arch, twelve at the spring-line, and three under the side-walls or abutments; over this bed a heavy course of plastering is laid. The inverted arch is of brick, four inches thick; the side-walls are of rubble stone, two feet eight inches thick at the spring-line of the inverted arch, and two feet at the top, and are faced with brick; and the roofing arch is of brick, eight inches thick. Spandrels of stone are carried up solid from the exterior angle of side-wall on a line that

is tangent to the arch. The concrete masonry was formed by mixing one part of hydraulic cement, three parts of clean sand and three parts of fine broken stone. The masonry was all laid up in hydraulic cement obtained mostly from Ulster County. The mortar for the stone-work was composed of one measure of cement to three of clean, sharp sand, and for the brick masonry and plastering between the stone-work and the inner brick facing; and, over the roofing arch, one of cement to two of sand. Every cargo of cement was tested by actual experiment after it was brought to the work, before any was allowed to be used. All this care was necessary to produce a water-proof way. In rock tunneling the roofing arch is dispensed with.

To give free circulation of air through the aqueduct, thirty or forty ventilators are constructed at a uniform distance of a mile. They rise fourteen feet



VENTILATOR.

above the surface of the ground over the aqueduct, are circular in form, slightly beveling or tapering toward the top, and are built of stone. Ten or a dozen of them are constructed with doors that admit an easy entrance into the aqueduct. These ventilators are abrupt and unprotected, and at a distance very much resemble the old powder-houses erected by our grandfathers. Along the line of the aqueduct there are also six waste-weirs, so arranged as to allow the water to pass off when it rises above the proper height, with gates to draw it all off when necessary. The water from the weirs, or gates, falls into a well, and is then carried off through a culvert to the outside channel. Each weir and its appurtenances are inclosed by a stone building with a brick arched roof.

The water tower at the High Bridge with the aid of the low pressure engines for pumping the water from the aqueduct into the high-service reservoir con-

structed near by for the same purpose supplies the residents, who live on high ground, above the aqueduct level, with water. The new reservoirs in the upper section of Central Park lie just above the old, and extended from Eighty-sixth to Ninety-sixth Streets, and occupy nearly the whole width of the park, and cover a hundred and six acres. A person can walk or ride horseback, or drive around them. From the promenade in the park we see a vast, quiet, beautiful lake of clear water—if it happens to be a still, bright day—and notice on its edges shoals of fishes of glittering crimson, blue, and stripes of varied hues. At the north is a neat stone house, which is known as the "North Gate-house," through which the water from the long conduit is received; and at the south a larger and more picturesque house of stone, called the "South Gate-house," through which the waters of the reservoirs are sent down the avenues and over and about the great city. If you descend the South Gate-house from the driveway or the walk from the lower park, you pass up a series of short flights of stone steps, along a gravel path lined with arbor-vitæ and beds of fair flowers, over a picturesque bridge, and up a final and longer stone stairway to a broad stone threshold. See on the right and left there are basins of still water, inclosed by iron railings, about fifty by twenty feet; beyond parallel with them, rows of large breaks with up-right screw-rods; at the entrance an opening for a stairway leading somewhere below; and at the rear a prison-like door, which, being swung open, admits you to a little balcony hanging over the great lake, from which persons can look over the beautiful, transparent water to the North Gate-house, on the opposite side, and note a granite way from one house to the other, a few feet below the surface of the water, which divides the reservoir. By the breaks in the house the gates are open and shut to the great pipes below which supply the city with water. There are openings, or gates, all along the lines, by which the pipes can at any moment, and at almost any point, be cleaned or repaired, so that no stoppage of any magnitude can possibly occur.

The system of water supply of New York has grown with the growth of the city, and various reservoirs have been established at other points. Danger of water famine has compelled the city to make endeavors to increase the Croton supply. According to the plan recently adopted, a dam is to be built at Quaker Bridge, about two and a half miles below the present dam, to be about two hundred feet in height above the level of the Hudson River, and to increase the height of the water thirty-four feet above the present dam. The cost of building the new reservoir has been estimated at \$7,790,580, and the aqueduct at \$15,664,308. The new reservoir will receive the entire drainage of the Croton water-shed, and thirty-two billion gallons of water above the level of the aqueduct, and can therefore supply two hundred million gallons per day for one hundred and sixty days

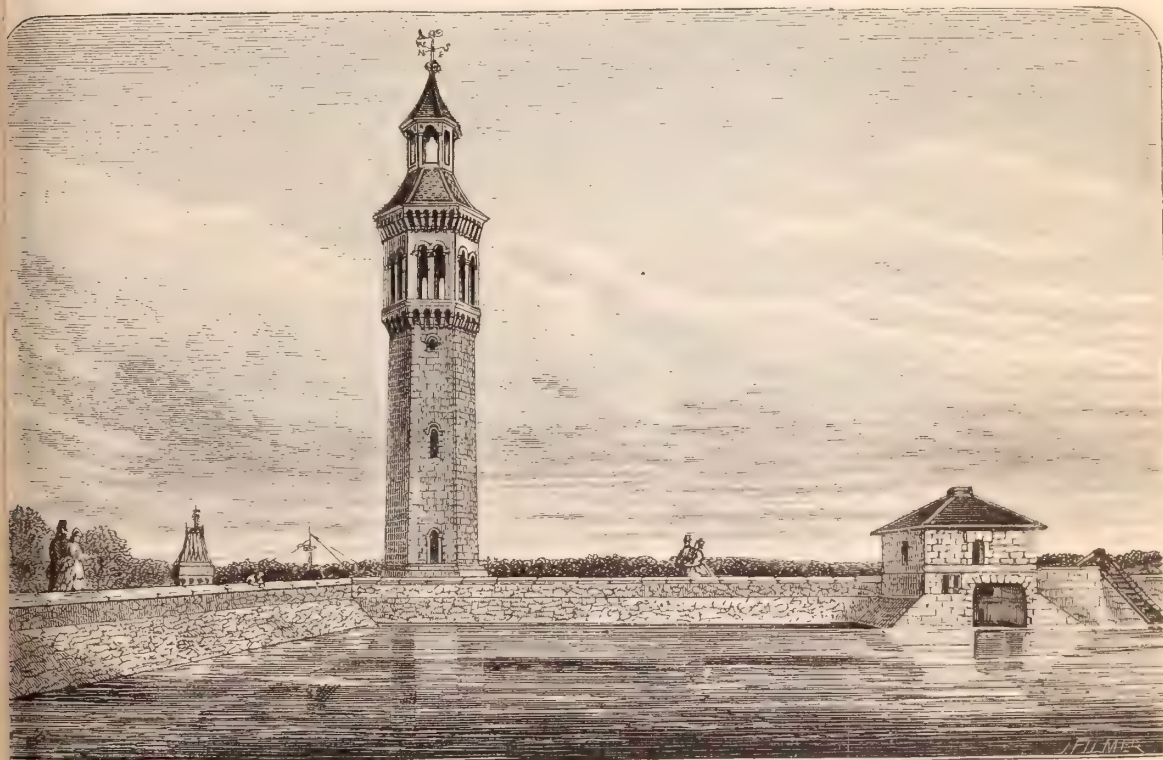
without recourse to the flow of the river. With the nine billion gallons of water in existing storage reservoirs and lakes, and five billion gallons in the reservoir about to be built on the east branch of the Croton, in the town of South East, Putnam County, the total available storage capacity will be forty-six billion gallons, sufficient to supply two hundred million gallons a day for two hundred and thirty days.¹

The new aqueduct will be capable of delivering two hundred and fifty million gallons per day, the entire minimum drainage of the Croton water-shed. This will supply a population of two million five hundred thousand at the rate of one hundred gallons a day per capita, or three million three hundred and

An analysis of the Croton water by Professor Chandler gives the following result:

Chloride of sodium	0.284	grains.
Sulphate of potash	0.205	"
Sulphate of soda	0.024	"
Sulphate of lime	0.024	"
Carbonate of lime	1.698	"
Carbonate of magnesia	0.935	"
Alumina and oxide of iron	0.058	"
Silica	0.222	"
Organic and volatile matter	0.874	"
Total solids		4.324

The annual rain-fall at Croton Lake from January 1, 1866, to December 31, 1882, according



WATER TOWER AT HIGH BRIDGE.

thirty thousand at the present rate of consumption—about seventy-five gallons a day per capita. The new aqueduct is to start from the present dam, and is to be cylindrical in shape and fourteen feet in diameter.

The territory drained by the Croton River amounts to three hundred and thirty-eight square miles.

In order to prevent contamination of the water by any settlement on the banks, it is proposed to purchase all the land within a quarter of a mile of the reservoir on all sides.

to the records kept at the dam, has been as follows:

1866	51.77	inches.	1875	53.54	inches.
1867	50.77	"	1876	61.19	"
1868	50.33	"	1877	51.61	"
1869	48.36	"	1878	71.48	"
1870	44.63	"	1879	53.37	"
1871	48.93	"	1880	39.64	"
1872	40.74	"	1881	55.50	"
1873	46.08	"	1882	59.29	"
1874	36.93	"			

The first superintendent of the dam was Daniel Adamson, an Englishman by birth, who had been employed as a mason on the dam when it was in course of construction. He was succeeded by Joseph

¹ Communication from Commissioner of Public Works (Hubert O. Thompson) to the Mayor of New York, February 23, 1882

Palmer, who held the position for only a few months, and he by Fernando Wood, the son of the noted New York politician of the same name. Mr. Wood took charge in the early part of 1875, and still retains the position. Mr. Adamson took up his residence on a hill close by the dam after he ceased to be the keeper, and died there about 1881, at an advanced age.

A little grove on the southern shore of the stream is frequently used for picnic parties. The scenery in the neighborhood of the dam is very pretty. On the northern side of the stream, beside the dam, is the Fairview House, erected between 1855 and 1860 by Andrew Purdy, and now kept by Joseph Walters & Son. Quite a number of city people resort to this hotel and to boarding-places in the vicinity during the summer. To the northwest, a short distance, in full view, is Turkey Mountain, which extends over an area of about eight hundred acres, nearly as far north as Yorktown Station. It is mostly covered with timber. It was the haunt of wild turkeys after they had ceased to appear in other localities, and thence derives its name.

About half a mile east of the dam the bridge of the New York City and Northern Railroad spans the river at an elevation of eighty-four feet. Near the northern end of the bridge is the station known as Croton Lake North. A short distance south, on the other side of the lake, is the station called Croton Lake South.

PINE'S BRIDGE.—Just within the eastern border of the town, on Croton Lake, and in the midst of beautiful scenery, is located the little settlement of Pine's Bridge, communicating with the opposite side of the lake, which is here quite narrow, by means of a bridge of the same name. The name is said to have been derived from a Mr. Pine, who lived near the original bridge. The village contains nine houses, including the two buildings known as the Croton Lake House, and there is also a white frame Methodist Church. The whole settlement will be obliterated by the contemplated increase in the depth of the reservoir, and the purchase of the land for a quarter of a mile back by New York City.

The old bridge was situated about half a mile east of the present structure, where the abutments are still visible at low water. In Revolutionary days it was the principal avenue of communication between points north and south of the stream. It was guarded a considerable portion of the time by a strong force of Americans. Remains of fortifications erected for the purpose are still visible on the hill to the south. On the flat land, east of the bridge, now covered by water, a portion of the Americans was encamped.¹

Enoch Crosby, the original of the hero of Cooper's best novel, "The Spy," commenced his career as a spy in the vicinity of Pine's Bridge.

When the New York City and Northern Railroad

was first projected to run through the town a number of the directors of the road formed the Croton Lake Land Association, and purchased about six hundred acres of land around Pine's Bridge on both sides of the lake, with the expectation of selling lots for the erection of country villas. They did not carry their plan into execution, however, and never made a sale.

THE CROTON LAKE HOUSE at Pine's Bridge was erected and occupied by Ezekiel Palmer in 1868, and another additional building to the north was put up about 1879. They are at present owned and managed by George and H. J. Palmer, nephews of the builder. There are accommodations for about forty guests.

THE CROTON LAKE METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—On a gentle knoll, about fifty feet above the waters of Croton Lake, is situated the Croton Lake Methodist Episcopal Church, a handsome white frame structure. It was purchased by the Methodists for one thousand dollars in 1842 from the Congregationalists, by whom it had been erected and used several years before. At first the church was connected with New Castle Circuit. Its successive pastors were as follows:

1842. . . Rev. Loyal B. Andrus.	1849. . . Rev. Jarvis Z. Nichols.
1843. . . Rev. William Blake.	1850-51. . Rev. Thomas Sparks.
1844. . . Rev. Bradley Selleck.	1852-53. . Rev. Davis Stocking.
1845-46. . Rev. Daniel Divinnie.	1854-55. . Rev. Benj. Griffin.
1847-48. . Rev. John Luckey.	

The society then became a separate charge, and has since had the following pastors:

1856. . Rev. Elbert Osborn.	1868-70. . Rev. J. W. Shrive.
1857-58. Rev. Gilbert D. Townsend.	1871-72. . Rev. Robert Kerr.
1859. . Rev. R. S. Ammerman.	1873. . . Rev. H. C. Humphrey.
1860-61. Rev. David Lyman.	1874-76. . Rev. J. Ashton.
1862-63. Rev. James Y. Bates.	1877-79. . Rev. J. B. Loomis.
1864. . Rev. Benj. M. Gemung.	1880-81. . Rev. Aaron Coons.
1865-66. Rev. George Daniels.	1882. . . Rev. E. H. W. Barden.
1867. . Rev. Jas. W. Macomber.	1883-84. . Rev. Robert Kerr.

During the ministry of David Lyman, the pastor in 1861 and 1862, who was a staunch Abolitionist, a division arose in the church caused by the conflict of feelings engendered by the great national strife, which worked great injury to the church, then in a very flourishing condition. A church at Yorktown, in the southwestern portion of the town, and one at Spring Valley, were connected with the Croton Lake Church as one charge about 1869.

The number of members (1884) is about forty-five, and of Sunday-school scholars about thirty. The stewards are Nathaniel Williams, John Tait, Horace Baker, Samuel Reynolds and William E. Reynolds. Within the village is the summer residence built by the late George E. L. Hyatt, a successful carpet and oil-cloth dealer in New York City. Since his death, a few years ago, the house has been for the most part unoccupied.

Another dwelling just south of the Methodist Episcopal Church is the property of Robert Ross, a broker on Pine Street, New York, but has been for some time occupied only by a family who take charge of the premises.

¹ See Revolutionary history of the town.

West of Pine's Bridge about half a mile, facing an arm of the lake is a residence erected by Henry Wood, but at present (1885) unoccupied. West of the railroad bridge, on the southern bank of the lake is another large dwelling erected by Fernando Wood, Jr.

BAILEY'S WIRE-MILL.—A wire-mill was formerly located on the Croton River below the dam, near the western border of the town. It was started about 1831 by the Messrs. Bailey, the firm consisting of James Bailey, a native of England, and his sons John, Abraham, James and Joseph. At the time of the flood on Croton River this manufactory, as elsewhere narrated, was swept away. After long and tedious litigation, damages were obtained by the firm from the city of New York for the loss of the property. The mill was rebuilt, but went out of existence about fifteen years ago (1869). The grist, cider and saw mills of Walter Twigger now occupy the locality.

THE YORKTOWN AND SPRING VALLEY METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCHES.—In the southwestern portion of the town are two Methodist Churches, the Yorktown and the Spring Valley Churches, which, together with the church at Croton Lake, have since (about 1869) constituted a single charge. Previously these two churches were connected with Croton Circuit.

The deed for the property on which the Yorktown Church is located was given by William Palmer and Eliza, his wife, to John G. Frost, Abraham Merritt and Benjamin F. Wood, July 5, 1866, and the church was built in the latter part of the same year. It has (1884) about twenty-five members, and about forty Sunday-school pupils. The stewards are Jacob Hitchcock, J. H. Palmer and Daniel Carpenter.

The deed for the Spring Valley Methodist Episcopal Church bears date of February 2, 1866, and the church was erected the same year. Meetings were held for some time previously in the house of a colored man named Hedding, about a mile south of the present church. It has about twenty-five members, and about thirty Sunday-school pupils. The stewards are Seth Fisher, Alfred Ackerly and Orson Sarles.

SUPERVISORS AND CLERKS OF THE MANOR OF CORTLANDT.

Supervisors.

1760¹-75. Pierre Van Cortlandt. | 1780-82. Samuel Haight.
1775²-79. Joseph Strang. | 1783-87. Joseph Strang.

Clerks.

1760³-69. Moses Travis. | 1770-87. Joseph Strang.

SUPERVISORS AND CLERKS OF THE TOWN SINCE ITS ORGANIZATION.

Supervisors.

1788. Joseph Strang.	1814-21. Thomas Tompkins.
1789-91. Elijah Lee.	1822. Abijah Lee.
1792-95. Ebenezer White.	1823-25. Thomas Tompkins.
1796-1802 Stephen Lines.	1826-27. David D. Webbers.
1803. Ebenezer White.	1828-30. Barnardus Montross.
1804-05. Elijah Lee.	1831-32. James Underhill.
1806-07. Peter Lane.	1833-35. Cornelius F. Ferris.
1808-10. John Conklin.	1836-40. Samuel Fowler.
1811. Abraham Requa.	1841-42. Stephen Lee.
1812-13. Nathaniel Hyatt.	1843. Barnardus Montross.

1844-47. Elias Q. Tompkins.
1848-49. Benjamin D. Miller.
1850-51. Isaac L. Tompkins.
1852-53. Abraham R. Strang.
1854-55. Lawrence P. Bostwick.
1856. Samuel Fowler.
1857. Daniel Strang.
1858-60. Dr. Benj. D. Miller.
1861-62. John B. Tompkins.
1863. Benjamin D. Miller.

1864. Nathaniel Cornell.⁴
1865-66. Stephen H. Knapp.
1867-68. Joseph F. Palmer.
1869-70. Elias Q. Horton.
1871. Joseph F. Palmer.
1872. James C. Travis.
1873-75. John B. Tompkins.
1876. Jesse Ryder.
1877-80. John W. Carpenter.
1881-85. William James Horton.

Clerks.

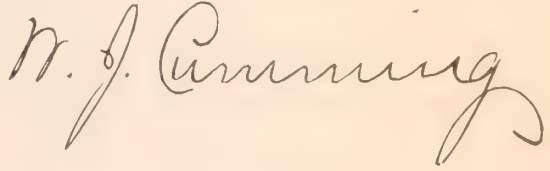
1788-94. Joseph Strang.
1795-1803. Stephen Lines.
1804-09. Nathaniel Hyatt.
1810-11. Thomas Tompkins.
1812. Henry White.
1813-19. Abraham Purdy.
1820-25. Benjamin Knapp.
1826-29. Joseph Fowler.
1830. Cornelius F. Ferris.
1831-35. Samuel Fowler.
1836-38. Wright Frost.
1839-41. John T. Clements.
1842-45. Stephen H. Knapp.
1846-51. Enos Lee.
1852-54. John B. Tompkins.

1855. Alexander Titus.
1856. John B. Tompkins.
1857-61. Egbert S. Fowler.
1862. Solomon D. Purdy.
1863. Randolph M. Lee.
1864. Solomon D. Purdy.
1865-66. Martin Van B. Travie.
1867-68. David Ryder.
1869-71. Stephen F. Horton.
1872-73. Francis E. Foshay.
1874. Wm. Emerson.
1875-77. George W. Mallett.
1879-81. Ferdinand Horton.
1882-84. Constant Whitney.
1885. Theo. F. Tompkins.

The town contains eleven school districts, in each of which is located a school-house. But one school-teacher is employed in each district. In 1883 (the last year of which a report is available) the average daily attendance of scholars in each district was as follows: First, 34; second, 18; third, 20; fourth, 31; fifth, 15; sixth, 16; seventh, 11; eighth, no report; ninth, 21; tenth, 12; eleventh, 10.

CENSUS OF YORKTOWN.

1712 91	1840 2819
(Manor of Cortlandt.)	1845 2278
1782 1726	1850 2273
(Middle Ward of Manor of Cortlandt, 420 Refugees.)	1855 2346
1790 1609	1860 2231
1825 2045	1865 2559
1830 2141	1870 2625
1835 2212	1875 2610
	1880 2481



CHAPTER VII.

SOMERS.

BY CHARLES E. CULVER.

SOMERS is situated near the centre of the northern tier of towns in Westchester County, and is distant from the county-seat about twenty miles. It is fifty miles from New York and about one hundred and twenty from Albany. It is bounded on the east by North Salem and Lewisboro, west by Yorktown,

¹ Record of the Manor of Cortlandt in Clerk's office at Yorktown.

² Records of Boards of Supervisors of Westchester County.

³ Record of Manor of Cortlandt.

⁴ Resigned and succeeded by Stephen H. Knapp.

and north by Putnam County, and south by Bedford and New Castle.

Somers was carved out of the old Cortlandt Manor and was first called "Stephen Town." All of this territory was first represented in the Board of County Supervisors by Pierre Van Cortlandt in 1760. He continued in that capacity until 1778, when he was succeeded by Major Joseph Strang, a resident of that part of Cortlandt Manor now known as Yorktown. He was succeeded by Samuel Haight in 1780, 1781 and 1782, when Strang again served from 1783 to 1788. On the 4th of March of the latter year Cortlandt Manor was divided into several towns and that part of it now known as Somers was called Stephen Town, after Stephen Van Cortlandt, to whom a part of the manor was allotted in 1734. At the beginning of the Revolution the manor was divided into three wards or districts, and the territory of Yorktown and Stephen Town was designated as the Middle District and called Hanover. It had no incorporated existence and was not represented in the Board of Supervisors. Upon the erection of Stephen Town, Hachaliah Brown was chosen as the supervisor of the town.

During the succeeding twenty years much trouble was experienced by the settlers in loss of mail matter and goods, from the fact that other towns of the same name existed in the northern and central portions of the State, and in 1808 the name was changed to Somerstown, in honor of Captain Richard Somers, one of the naval heroes of the Tripolitan War.

Richard Somers, the brave naval officer after whom the town is named, was born at Egg Harbor, N. J., in 1778, and was the son of Colonel Richard Somers, of the Revolutionary army, who died in 1794. Educated at a school in Philadelphia and at the Burlington Academy, he went to sea in 1794, became a midshipman in the United States navy in 1798, lieutenant in 1801, and was at the time of his death, on September 4, 1804, a master commander. In 1803 he commanded the schooner "Nautilus," in Commodore Preble's squadron in the Mediterranean, and bore a distinguished part in the several attacks on the Tripolitan gun-boats; himself leading one of the attacking divisions and Decatur the other. He volunteered to take the ketch "Intrepid," fitted up as a fire-ship, into the harbor of Tripoli, and with his brave comrades lost his life by its premature explosion.

The principal streams running through Somers are the Croton on its eastern boundary, being, in fact, the boundary line itself; the Muscoot, whose course runs southeasterly from near the northwest corner to its mouth, where it empties into the Croton under the north shadow of Muscoot Mountain, and about two miles and a half from the southern line near Croton Lake; Plum Brook, rising in Putnam County and flowing southeast, empties into the Croton in the south central part of the town, about half a mile from Golden's Bridge; Mill Brook, flowing southerly,

empties into the Muscoot; and Potash Brook, thus named from the fact that early in the century a potash manufactory was established thereon, near the present village of Somers, also rises in Putnam County, and flowing southeasterly, empties into Plum Brook about one-half mile from the junction of the latter with the Croton; Angle Fly, a noted trout stream, rises in the swamps of a valley west of Primrose Street, on the farm formerly owned by Micajah Wright (the builder of Mount Zion Methodist Episcopal Church), and flowing south empties into the Muscoot a mile from the mouth of the latter. Numerous other small streams, fed by springs, are to be found in the town, thus making the section eminently adapted to agricultural purposes. In the northern portions of the town, high ridges are the prominent topographical features, in which lie embedded vast quantities of iron-ore, some of which, on assay, yield sixty-one per cent., although as yet these hidden treasures have not been worked extensively. Through the town, from north to south, run three prominent ridges, which were the sites of signal fires during the aboriginal ownership of the land, and upon which are now situated some of the finest farms in the State. In the interval level, well-watered plains are found, which show evidences of having been the bottoms of extensive lakes or basins of swiftly-flowing rivers. The slope of the land is southeasterly; the rock formation gneiss and granite; the soil a rich loam, with a sub-stratum of clay. Not far from the southern boundary, and near the Muscoot River, old red sandstone crops out of a break in the western edge of the ridges above mentioned.

When the partition of the Manor of Cortlandt was made, in 1734, the allotment of this town was made: To Mrs. Margaret Bayard, lot No. 5; Phillip Van Cortlandt, lot No. 6; Andrew Johnston, lot No. 7; Andrew Miller, part of north lot No. 8; Stephen De Lancy, south lot No. 5; Stephen Van Cortlandt, south lot No. 6; and half of lot No. 7 to Mrs. Susannah Warren. These were the original owners of the town under the partition of the manor. Previous to this some adventurous spirits from Long Island, and beyond the present Connecticut line, had built their lodges in the wilderness and opened a friendly communication with the resident Indian tribe. Their homes were the huts of the frontiersmen; their sustenance depended on the skill with which they used the old flint-lock, or made the rude traps for the game that then abounded on the hills of Amaghogh or Amawalk. At this date some evidences of these early settlers may be found, far from highway or prosperous farm-houses, but still significantly pointing out their silent history to the careful searcher after antiquities. Later on, the people scattered in families and went farther from the bank of the Hudson River, out into the wilderness of what is now the town of Somers. They were met by enterprising eastern people, who came from the salt waters of the

Sound, and the shores of the Pilgrim fathers' home until, at last, a settlement of sturdy, honest, intelligent yeomanry was founded and maintained in the heart of the wilderness, which extended from the Connecticut River on the east to Hudson's River on the west. Both men and women were of that hardy class of pioneers who feared no toil, no hardship, no danger, worshipped truth and made a home which in part their descendants enjoy to-day.

On April 6th, 1736, the south part of Great Lot, No. 6, which was allotted to Stephen Van Cortlandt, was surveyed by Philip Verplanck, and divided into twenty-two lots. A map of this tract made at the time shows that on lots 11, 12 and 22 there were houses. Lot 22 was at the junction of Plum Brook with "Grootan,"—Croton River,—the lots 10 and 11, were west of the former, bordering on Great Lot No. 5.

A later map, date unknown, shows the lots in possession of the following persons:

No. 1, in the southwest corner of Great Lot bordering on Croton River and Great Lot 5, Joseph Morten, two hundred and twenty-six acres. No. 2, north of No. 1, William Williams, one hundred and eighty-five acres. No. 3, a triangular tract, bounded west by 1 and 2, south by Croton River, Joseph Morten, three hundred and sixty-eight acres. No. 4, north of No. 2, Henry Sommers, one hundred and ninety-eight acres. This lot on the old map is marked No. 6. Nos. 4 and 5 on the old map are marked in the later map as No. 5, Pelah Mead, three hundred and eighty-nine acres. Nos. 4, 5 and 6 extend north to the Muscoot River. Nos. 7 and 8, north of 4, 5 and 6 and the Muscoot River, are marked respectively to Abijah Crosse, two hundred and seventy acres, and Obadiah Purdy, two hundred and forty-eight acres. No. 9, north of 8, John Brown, two hundred and fifty-three acres. Daniel Durgie is marked as in possession of lot No. 10, two hundred and thirty acres, which borders east on Croton River, below the mouth of Plum Brook. No. 6 (on the old map No. 17) is marked to Joseph Griffin, three hundred and eighty-nine acres, on which was a house. This tract borders east on the Croton River, and extends to the mouth of the Muscoot. These persons were doubtless lessees under Van Cortlandt, and later, perhaps, became purchasers.

On March 20, 1762, Andrew Johnson leased to John Hempstead a certain lot of land, lying and being at Plum Brook, in the Manor of Cortlandt, which was then known as farm No. 4, west range, and a part of Great Lot No. 7. This was again leased to the same by the heirs of Johnson, after the latter's death. The lease is dated June 24, 1772. John Hempstead was one of the first settlers of the town under the Van Cortlandt heirs, and the site of his house, though nearly obliterated, can yet be discerned on the central ridge of the town. His descendants still live in the town in the persons of his great-great-grand-

children, Mrs. C. E. Culver, Mrs. C. A. Perry, Mrs. D. C. Light, while of his great-grandchildren three only survive—Hiram Hitt, of Connecticut; Mrs. Phebe Darby, of Syracuse; and Mrs. Jerusha Corsa, of Somers, all of them over seventy years of age. John Hempstead's tomb is to be found in the burial-ground on Somers' Plain, with this inscription:

"Sacred to the memory
of

John Hempstead,
who departed this life
the 26th of April, 1801,

Aged 107 years, 5 mos. & 21 ds.

How few can reach those years of time,
Which here are numbered to our view,
Since death calls most while in their prime,
And leaves behind so aged few."

In this connection it may be remarked that this same John Hempstead was, by trade, a builder, and erected the first house in Maiden Lane, New York, owning and occupying the same for some years. Afterwards the heirs and devisees of Stephen Van Cortlandt sub-divided and disposed of their various tracts of land to parties whose descendants still occupy the same. Out of the immense tract comprising the present four towns of the northern tier, which comprised the Van Cortlandt manor and for which a quit rental of forty shillings per annum was paid, about eleven hundred acres remain in the possession of the Van Cortlandt family. This land is situated in the southern central part of the town of Somers and has been leased to resident farmers for the past seventy years.

On the 4th of June, 1760, Samuel Bayard granted to Hachaliah Brown, of Rye, "all that tract of land being in the northernmost part of the Manor of Cortlandt, bounded North by the dividing line of Dutchess and Westchester, to the line of Phillips' upper patent, West by lot of Andrew Johnston, South by bounds of Samuel Brown, and East by Croton river." In the year 1762 Andrew Johnson again conveyed to Hachaliah Brown "all that lot of land situate, lying and being in lot No. 6, East range, and being part of North lot No. 7 at Plum Brook, consisting of two hundred and thirty acres." Thus it will be seen that Hachaliah Brown became, next to the heirs of the Van Cortlandts, one of the largest landed proprietors in the town. His original grant included the water privileges in the northeastern portion of the town, on the Kitchewan or Croton River, near the present village of Croton Falls. The descendants of these first owners still occupy a portion of the original lands. In 1772, on the 3d of December, the devisees of Andrew Johnston conveyed to Lewis Bailey farm No. 9 in west range of lot No. 7. In 1775 the executors and heirs of Johnston conveyed to Abraham Theale certain lands situated on this same stream, Plum Brook. Again, in 1793, we find John Johnson, executor of Andrew Johnson, deeding to Benjamin Green, of Stephentown, a farm in

the northeast corner of lot No. 4, west range, being part of Andrew Johnson's Great Lot No. 7. Thus it is evident that the *great lots* were subdivided and re-subdivided by the successive heirs of the original families. Among the families to whom these lands were conveyed we find the names of the Browns, Baileys, Teeds, Greens, Travises, Carpenters, Owens and Hortons.

It has been stated that the purchase of land from the Indians by Stephanus Van Cortlandt in 1699 was within the limits of Somers, but the deed distinctly says, "beginning on the south side of Kightawonck river, and so along said river." The location of this tract has not been clearly ascertained, but it is certain it is not within the present limits of Somers.

Evidence is plentiful that this territory was used largely as a hunting-ground by the various branches of Indian tribes that visited and crossed its ridges and vales. More especially is this the case on the westerly ridges and high lands in the vicinity of Amawalk Mountain. In this section arrow heads of different sizes are yearly turned up by the plow, while smooth, round stones of flinty composition are to be met with frequently. On the top of this elevation of land is a smooth plateau where a number of Indian graves were found, this evidently having been selected by them for a burial place. Near this plateau is a large never-failing spring of the purest cold water. From this point one of the grandest views in this region may be obtained. To the west, the line of blue hills beyond the Hudson stand boldly outlined; to the south, the bluffly margin of Long Island Sound appears; to the east, the undulating surface of Eastern Connecticut, while away over the hills of Putnam County lie scattered the thrifty farms and hamlets nearly to its northern line. One can easily imagine the lighted signal fires of the original owners of this soil as they flashed from ridge to ridge from the Hudson to the Connecticut Rivers, giving notice of the approach of the foe, or calling distant sachems to the council fire. Just south of this spot and on the farm of Stephen Reynolds is a large boulder, some seven feet by five, and four feet in height, lying on the surface of the ground in an open space between pieces of woodland. Near one end is a perfectly smooth, circular, bowl-shaped hollow, holding perhaps twelve quarts, which has evidently been used as an Indian mill. Arrow-heads of black flint have also been found embedded in oak and other species of trees in the woodlands bordering this vicinity.

Amawalk was an Indian village in 1609, and still retains its original name. Other evidences of a like nature as those recorded above have been found on the eastern ridges of the town, but they are mostly confined to a territory extending from southeast to northwest and about one and a half miles in width. Game abounded in these forests, and fish were plentiful in the numerous streams. Even to the present day the smaller brooks are eagerly visited in the

season by the angler for the trout which breed in the clear, cold spring water that flows swiftly over their stony beds. Deer were numerous here as recently as 1780, and some were shot during the early part of the present century. This was the probable attraction of these regions for the red men.

The agricultural capabilities of the town are unsurpassed in the county. The numerous intersecting streams, the rich intervalles and plains, the fine pasturage of the uplands, all combine to make Somers a favored territory in this respect. Along the valleys of the Croton and Muscote Rivers the soil is adapted to the production of any kind of grain in abundance, while the higher lands are eminently fitted for grazing. In the early days of its history the attention of its people was mainly directed to the fattening of cattle for the markets of the cities. Its near contiguity to New York, and the excellent facilities afforded by the turnpike road running directly through the town to that metropolis, rendered the transportation of large droves of sheep and cattle a comparatively easy matter. Hence the early farmers engaged extensively in this trade and it was a rare thing to find a farmer who was not also a drover. The practice was to go to some of the western and northern counties and purchase large herds of cattle, bring them here and fatten them on the farm, then drive them to New York or Boston markets. It was in this way that many of the residents of the town laid the foundations of a large property. The *New York Gazetteer*, of an early date, says of this traffic: "The village of Somers' Plain is the principal market of lean stock of cattle and sheep, brought hither from various and distant parts of the country to supply the wants occasioned by the sales of fattened cattle and sheep to the butchers of New York. The farmers of this county carry on an extensive traffic in this way, and droves are annually and almost constantly arriving from the inland regions, some from one hundred, two hundred and three hundred miles, to replace the consumption." From 1825 to 1850 there was an average of five thousand head of horned cattle annually fattened in this district for the New York markets. There were also kept at this period large flocks of sheep, and the wool crop was no inconsiderable source of revenue to the farmer. There are no certain means of arriving at the values of these productions in this early time, but one fact may be mentioned as exhibiting a slight indication. The Croton turnpike was organized in 1807, running from southeast directly through Somers to Sing Sing. It was the main highway to the markets of New York. Through the gates of this turnpike sheep were passed free of toll and cattle at twenty-five per cent. discount. These latter were charged by the score. At one of the gates on this high road two drovers alone paid one hundred and fifty dollars in the year 1839, while the total receipts, over one-half of which were for cattle, from this one gate, for the same year, were five hundred and eighty-six dollars, thus

showing partially the extent of this business. With the advent of railroads and the increased demands of the larger population of the city, there came a change to the agriculturists of the town, and the production of milk became the leading industry of the farm. At remunerative prices this was a valuable source of income, and for many years great and small farms engaged in this business, until at present it is hard to find a farmer who is not a milk producer. Yards of from twenty to two hundred cows are to be found, and the supply of milk ranges from one hundred and twenty to three thousand quarts per day shipped to the markets of the metropolis, while the production of cattle, sheep and hogs has almost entirely ceased, the farmer purchasing his supplies in the market and devoting the resources of his farm to the production of milk exclusively. The farms of Somers range in extent from seventy-five to three hundred acres each, and in many instances much attention has been bestowed upon the cultivation of orchards, a matter which was greatly neglected in the earlier days. Thousands of trees of choice fruit dot the hillsides and northern slopes of the town and are sought by the shippers to foreign markets, at a fair price. It is estimated that at least ten thousand barrels of first-class apples are annually produced in the town, some seasons exceeding this amount. The average price paid at the farm is one dollar and seventy-five cents per barrel. The valuation of real estate in the town in 1877 was \$1,455,455; 1880, \$1,170,966; 1884, \$1,078,941—showing a slight decrease. The rude farm-houses of the past have been replaced with elegant dwellings and the various appointments of the farm buildings have followed the progress of the age. Many of our townsmen sit in their cosy libraries or elegantly furnished parlors, surrounded with the luxurious improvements of the age, on the very site where stood the two-roomed log house of their grandsires, with its rude furniture and its walls pierced with loop-holes, to defend it from the approaching foe. The change has been complete and the days of the bone and sinew of the hardy pioneers have gone, so that, while there is an undoubted increase of intellectuality, the physique of the population has deteriorated and the bodily strength and vigor of the early settlers have become comparatively rare.

The principal manufacturing interest of the town was for a time conducted at the place and in the buildings described further on as St. Joseph's College. Previous to 1860 there were located at this place a fulling-mill and grist-mill and at one time a foundry, but the trade was simply a local one and no large amount of capital was invested; the most extensive was, perhaps, the cloth-dressing establishment of Reuben C. Varnall in this vicinity. Just northwest of this place, on a branch of the Muscoot, called Mill Brook, were, in 1800, located the paper-mills and woolen-mills of Wallace & Miller. During the War of 1812 Daniel, Abram and Charles Miller were in partnership in the

woolen-mills on this stream and filled a large government contract for cloths and cassimeres for the army. After the war closed the firm dissolved and the cloth-mills became paper-mills. These, in turn, were abandoned some forty years ago. In the year 1864-65 the property now owned by the Christian Brothers was purchased by George Juengst, who was a German and inventor and manufacturer of sewing machines. He immediately took possession of the place, remodeled some of the old mill buildings and erected a large factory and other buildings. He also erected a dam across the Muscoot River, at the west side of the circular plateau upon which his factory and foundries were located, thus giving him the best water-power in the county. The dam was constructed of solid masonry, bolted and cemented together, dressed stones of from two to four tons in weight being used and lined with brick work. The bed of the stream in this narrow gorge is solid rock, which, by the action of the water, has been worn into all kinds of fantastic shapes, presenting, in dry seasons, when the water is low below the dam, a weird appearance, inclosed as it is by perpendicular hills, covered with forest trees and creeping vines.

After the completion of the works, and in 1866, a stock company was formed by Mr. Juengst to manufacture the Empire Sewing-Machine, which was covered with his patents, and business was begun at once. The place then took the name of Empireville. Here for a few years was a busy community. From seventy to one hundred hands were constantly employed, besides the work furnished to the inhabitants in the vicinity at times of greater activity. The raw material, for use at the works, was transported from Katonah, on the Harlem railroad, three miles distant, and the finished machines were shipped from that station. From eighty to one hundred machines per week were finished and shipped.

Thus matters progressed for some five years, when, the city of New York having purchased the water at Lake Mahopac, the outlet of which is the Muscoot River, and having, by the terms of this purchase, obtained the power to confine the waters in the lake basin during the summer season, destroyed the value of the immense water-power at Empireville, and the gigantic wheel, which, with its systems of cogs and belts, gave the hum of busy trade to the numerous lathes and spindles in the great factory, ceased its revolutions. The property was sold to the Remingtons, of Ilion, N. Y., and the Empire merged into the Remington Sewing-Machine in 1871, thus closing up the prosperous manufacturing interest of Somers. In the early part of the century, and up to about forty years ago, a paper-mill, clothier's works and grist-mill were located at Owensville (now Croton Falls), in the northeast corner of the town. They were owned and operated by John Owen, but have long since ceased to exist. The water privileges of Somers are excellent and the hydraulic power unsurpassed at points on

either branch of the Croton River, the Muscoot River, and Plum Brook, but the purchase of the water before alluded to by the city of New York, has effectually settled the question of any extensive manufacturing interests being located on any of these streams.

In 1835 the population of the town was 1900; in 1840, 2082; in 1850, 1782; in 1860, 2012; in 1875, 1631; in 1880, 1630.

The valuation of real and personal property thirty years ago, or in 1855, was \$1,366,533. Now it is \$1,278,635. In 1855, which was previous to the active production of milk, which has since supplanted all other industries, the amount of butter produced in the town was one hundred and one thousand two hundred and seventy-eight pounds; of cheese four hundred and ninety-five pounds; Somers being the third town in the county in these products; at present not one-fortieth of that amount of butter is produced and no cheese is manufactured for market. The land area of the town is seventeen thousand two hundred and thirty-four acres, nine-tenths of which is devoted to the production of milk. The forest trees are being felled and are rapidly vanishing from the view to give more pasturage facilities, while at every station on the railroads leading to this vicinity are cars loaded with brewers' grains, or the refuse of the starch factories, which are purchased in the cities and fed to the cows in the country to make, in return, milk for the cities.

POLITICAL HISTORY—In the old town-books appear the following "Records of the proceedings from the first town-meeting of the people of Stephentown, being in the year of our Lord One Thousand Seven Hundred and Eighty-eight, whereof William Horton, Esq., was chosen town clerk. The first Tuesday in April in the above year written, the people of Stephentown met at the house of Benjamin Green for choosing town officers and other necessary business of the town for the ensuing year."

William Horton, Esq., town clerk.

Hachaliah Brown, supervisor.

Obadiah Purdy, Nathaniel Wright, Herman Hilliker, Samuel Green, assessors

John Stedwell, Jacob Lent, overseers of the poor.

Benjamin Green, constable and collector. Jacob Lent, security.

Mary Pinkney, Martha Osburn, Benjamin Green, pound masters.

David Montross, Nathaniel Wright, Remben Wright, Thomas Seymour, Nathan Brown, Abram Brown, Joseph Griffin, Archer Reed, Wm. Powell, John O. Bryant, fence and damage viewers.

Thaddeus Mead, William Teed, Jr., John Hallock, Joseph Horton, Joseph Griffin, David Montross, John Montross, William Beadle, William Horton, William Powell, Levi Parent, Moses Tompkins, Joseph Haden, Abram Underhill, Jonathan Travis, overseers of highways.

"Voted at the above meeting, that no person is to block Croton River until the 15th day of May next in the forfeiture of Ten Pounds."

It would seem to have been a practice to place logs of wood or walls of stone in the streams, nearly "blocking" them, and in the narrow aperture thus produced for the waters to flow through, to cause nets or huge wicker-baskets to be placed to catch

the fish. Thus we find that one of the first town ordinances related to fisheries. Even then protection had extended to fish. Again: "Voted also, that no rams are to run at large from the 20th day of August until the 5th day of November following. Also voted, that the next meeting be held at the house of Benjamin Green, Innkeeper, in Stephentown." This record of the first meeting held in the town is contained in a ledger kept for the purpose, and is in clear, careful, old style handwriting and concise in expression. It was not the first time Hachaliah Brown had occupied the supervisor's position, as he had held the same office in Upper Salem two years previously. William Horton, the town clerk, was a farmer and merchant, residing on the estate now belonging to Charles G. Teed, his grandson. The country store was situated on the corner of Lovell Street and the Peekskill road, and for many years was called "Teed's Corner," as, in after-years, Charles and William Teed continued the mercantile business here. It was a central part of the town, on a line from east to west. A few rods from this corner was the inn of Benjamin Green, where the town-meetings were held. The house—a large two-story building, plain and substantial—is still in good condition and is owned, together with the farm, by Randolph Austin, who is a member of one of the old families of Somers. At this time the hills of the town were thickly covered with a growth of oak, hickory, ash and chestnut, and the farms were, in many instances, but clearings on the upland and meadow in the valleys of the streams. As this date was directly after the declaration of peace, money was scarce in the town and exchange was the mercantile method adopted. Farms were purchased from the Van Cortlandt family and paid for in wheat and money. It seems, however, that some property was vested in the cause of the later War of the Rebellion, as we find records in 1789, the next year after the erection of the township, of the manumission of slaves, as follows:

"We, the subscribers, being the Overseers of the Poor of Stephen Town, in the County of Westchester and two of the Justices of the Peace for said County, upon the application of Reuben Wright Respecting the Manumitting his Slaves, one named Dinah, aged Twenty-one years, and one named Sib, aged Nineteen years. We having examined into said Business agreeable to the form of an Act entitled an Act Concerning Slaves, passed the 22nd day of February, 1788, do Certify that the said slaves are under Fifty years of age and of sufficient ability to provide for themselves, and do allow the same to be recorded. Given under our hands this 12th day of Aug., 1789.

"Entered and recorded 25th Sep., 1789.

"ABRAM BROWN, THOMAS UNDERHILL, Overseers of the Poor.

"WILLIAM HORTON, BENJAMIN STEVENSON, Justices.

"WILLIAM HORTON, Town Clerk."

Then follow similar records regarding the manumission of one "Prince" by Hachaliah Brown, in 1792, and "Richard" by the same, in 1807. The last entry is the manumission of two slaves, named "Lewis" and "Mathias," by Lewis Brown, in 1823.

They had an excise board in these days, it seems, for, on date of March 2, 1790, we find:

"Excise sold this year:	£	s.	d.
Benjamin Haight.	3	10	0
Benjamin Green.	2	10	0
William Martin.	2	0	0
Micajah Wright.	2	0	0."

At a later date is the following record of the first regular license granted in the town :

"Westchester County. We, Abraham Brown, Robert Graham and Daniel Quick (Commissioners for Granting Excise for the town of Stephen Town, in said County, for the year One Thousand Eight Hundred and Two), do hereby resolve that Ozias Osburn, William Green, Benjamin Green, John Hubbard, Hachaliah Bailey shall be Licensed and permitted to keep an Inn or Tavern, and to Retail Strong or Spiritous Liquors under Five Gallons to be Drunken in their Respective Dwelling-houses and Stores, Each of them Separately until the First Tuesday of May next, etc. Given over our hand the fourth Day of May, 1802.

"ABRAHAM BROWN,
"ROBERT GRAHAM, } *Commissioners.*
"DANIEL QUICK."

At the town-meeting held in 1790, it was "Voted for a bridge to be built over the Croton River, at or near the spot where the old bridge formerly stood, by the name of Golding's Bridge." A very neat iron structure now spans the river at this point, erected by the King Iron Bridge Company., of Cleveland, O., under the supervision of James P. Teed and John C. Holmes, supervisors of Somers and Lewisboro'. The name has been corrupted from Golding's to Golden's Bridge, the place having received its name from Abraham Golding, who resided in the vicinity and was a prominent resident of the town. He, with the members of his family, are buried in the grave-yard of Mount Zion Church, of which society he was one of the organizers.

The jury list for the town in 1819 included one hundred and fifty-four names. On July 1, 1830, there were one hundred and sixty names recorded. The present number is eighty-six. In the early days of the town, fences were scarce and the timber was in many places dense in growth; it was, therefore, not uncommon for stock to wander away from its owners. Hence we find recorded a list or, as it is termed "A Record of Marks" by which this stock was to be identified. There was also a law that any stock, horses, sheep, or cattle that had strayed into the inclosure of a person should be described and recorded at once on the town records. We find "William Horton's Ear mark is a half penny the under side of the Near Ear and a half-penny the upper side of the Ear." "Hachaliah Brown's Ear mark is two slits on the Near Ear, otherwise called a *Fleur-de-lis* and a nick the under side of the Off Ear." "Samuel Green's mark, a swallow fork on the Near Ear, and a half-penny under the Off Ear," etc., etc., thus making the matter of identification a comparatively easy task. The town-meetings were usually held at the house of Benjamin Green or at the store of C. G. & W. E. Teed with an occasional variation to the house of Uel Todd, which was situated about three miles south of Benjamin Green's and more central in location north and south. In 1846 a portion of the town, including Pine's Bridge, was annexed to

New Castle, as it was inconvenient for the residents of the southern corner of Somers to travel some miles around Croton Lake to attend a town-meeting. After this the town elections were held at Teed's corner until they were called at Somerstown Plain, where they are now held. In 1820 a bounty of one dollar and fifty cents was voted for every fox killed in the town. In 1885 a bounty of one and one-half cents was voted for the same. The following is the list of supervisors and town-clerks of the town.

SUPERVISORS.

1788-91 . . . Hachaliah Brown.	1851-53 . . . Silas Gregory.
1791-1807 . . . Abrqm Brown.	1853-54 . . . Israel Green.
1807-15 . . . Joseph Owen.	1854-56 . . . Wm. Marshall, Jr.
1817-18 . . . Joseph Owen.	1856-57 . . . Joseph Reynolds.
1818-33 . . . Stephen Brown, Jr.	1857-58 . . . Silas Gregory.
1833-37 . . . Gerard Crane.	1858-62 . . . Wm. Marshall, Jr.
1837-41 . . . Wm. Marshall.	1862-67 . . . Wm. E. Teed.
1841-44 . . . Israel Green.	1868. James W. Beldell.
1844-45 . . . Stephen Brown, Jr.	1869. Wm. Marshall.
1845-46 . . . Israel Green.	1870-71 . . . Wm. E. Teed.
1846-48 . . . Silas Gregory.	1872. Stephen Brown.
1848-49 . . . Jesse Horton.	1873-74 . . . Jesse G. Carpenter.
1849-50 . . . Wm. E. Teed.	1875-79 . . . Thaddeus Crane.
1850-51 . . . Joseph Griffin.	1880. James P. Teed. ¹

TOWN CLERKS.

1788-94 . . . Wm. Horton.	1845-49 . . . Wm. E. Tweed.
1794-1815 . . . Samuel Green.	1850-51 . . . Israel Green.
1815-35 . . . Fred. J. Coffin.	1852. Wm. Turk.
1835-41 . . . Israel Green.	1853-61 . . . Wm. Gerritsen.
1842. John Green.	1862. James Hyatt.
1843. Wm. E. Teed.	1863-74 . . . Wm. Gerritsen.
1844. Fred. I. Coffin.	1875 Jacob W. Tompkins. ²

Of late years it has been the practice to alternate the choice for supervisor between the two political parties, giving no opposition to the candidate who would best conserve the interests of the tax-payers. In 1884 the total vote of Somers was four hundred and eleven, being for judges of appeals. The Presidential vote was three hundred and seventy-one. In 1880 it was four hundred and four. The average vote of the town for many years has been some three hundred and forty. In the election of 1800, when Jefferson ran for President, ten votes were cast for him in this town, one of the ten voters being Ebenezer Frost, the father of Munson E. Frost, of West Somers. Robert Graham, whose name frequently appears on the town records, was one of the deputies from the county to attend the Provincial Convention on April 20, 1775, at New York, to choose delegates to represent the colony at the Continental Congress in Philadelphia on the 10th of the succeeding month. He was a member of the first and second Provincial Congresses. Frederick J. Coffin, the surrogate of the county in 1846, was also a resident of the town of Somers. In 1812 Captain Lewis Brown reported, as one of the officers to collect military taxables, five Quakers in the town whose taxes were placed by the Board of Supervisors at four dollars each, making twenty dollars, for which warrants were issued for collection.

¹ Present incumbent of the office.
² Present incumbent.

The assessment of real and personal property in Somers in 1808 was \$3317.57. In 1815 it was \$5,773.70, and in 1885 it is \$1,278,635. In 1883 it was "voted to raise by tax \$750 to build a bridge over Muscoot River, near the mill of Wm. and George Nelson, provided the Legislature of that year did not pass a bill which would cause the said bridge to be overflowed." The Aqueduct Bill was passed by the Legislature and hence the action of the town was void. This bill, which provides for the construction of a dam or dams across the Croton River in order to secure an increased water supply in New York, will submerge much of the valuable landed property in the southern part of the town, together with a large extent of the existing highways.

MILITARY HISTORY.—During the Revolutionary period the town was known as Hanover. This section was overrun by marauding bands of "Cowboys" and "Skinners." Back and forth over this section swept these bands of plunderers, robbing, burning and killing indiscriminately. The cattle of the settlers were driven into the British camp and the goods were divided among the captors. Some names have been preserved, as of persons actually engaged in service during this period. Ebenezer Brown was an ensign. Of the private soldiers little or nothing is known definitely. During the war, at different times, many who had been driven from their homes in the lower part of the county, fled to this section and became settlers of the town. In this way William Horton and wife came from White Plains on horseback, bringing with them all they had saved from the ruins of their property, inclosed in a sack and placed across the horse's back. They settled at the point afterward known as Teed's Corners. Mr. Horton was the first town clerk of Somers. It was also in this vicinity that Enoch Crosby and Luther Kinnicutt both began their careers as the secret agents of the American army. Within the borders of the town the wives of these men are interred. Cooper, in his "Spy," has made memorable the acts of these active agents of the patriots, as also the valley of the Croton, which was the scene of many of their exploits. Enoch Crosby's descendants resided for many years near Croton Falls. Luther Kinnicutt was the compeer of Crosby in his dangerous work, and although it is not known that they worked together, the character of the novelist was evidently drawn from both these men. Kinnicutt frequented the town after the close of the war and is remembered by some of our old residents as a tall, straight, spare man, of dark complexion, keen gray eyes, solemn visage, sharp-witted and eccentric.

Many anecdotes are related of Kinnicutt. He used to frequent the British camp as a peddler of small notions, and it has been hinted that his information, in some cases, as well as his wares, was for sale. At one time, as he was passing a church on Sunday, he looked in and saw the congregation assembled, but the

minister had not yet arrived. He coolly walked up the aisle to the high pulpit and took his seat. After a time the preacher appeared, and Kinnicutt rose from his seat and descended the steps, remarking, "I found the sheep without a shepherd and kept them till you came," and strode out of the building. At another time he was arrested for cutting down a gate on the Southeast and Croton turnpike, near Croton Falls. When called to answer the indictment he refused counsel, saying he wanted nothing to do with law or lawyers. He then denied the charge and evidence was taken in the case. The witnesses swore positively that Kinnicutt was seen to cut down the gate. It was a grave offense in those days. After the evidence was all in for the prosecution, Kinnicutt arose, saying, "You have sworn I cut down the gate; now I didn't do any such thing, I only sawed down the post the gate hung on!" and coolly walked out of court amid the unrepressed laughter of court and audience. He was at one time in his career confronted by Monroe Edwards, one of the most noted criminal lawyers of the State. Edwards, previous to this, had some family difficulties, which, however, were not generally known, but through him one member of his family had suffered imprisonment. Kinnicutt was a witness and under the cross-examination of Edwards. Pausing a moment, the noted lawyer asked, "What makes your face so black?" Kinnicutt looked him squarely in the eye, replying: "My face is not as black as your character, for you put your sister in State Prison!" It was a thunderbolt and resulted in the complete confusion of the lawyer.

On the estate of the late William J. Horton, in the western portion of the town, may still be seen the remains of a road, skirting the hillside, which was constructed by Washington's troops on their memorable march to Newburgh. It was made for the transportation of artillery, and crosses in a northeast direction. Walter Carpenter, who was a boy during the Revolution, was an eye-witness of a skirmish between two parties of the different armies. The red-coats were occupying a house near the present Yorktown line, when the Americans came up to the house and quietly surrounded it. A musket was then discharged, when the British rushed out and were captured. On another occasion and in the same vicinity the boy Carpenter saw a British horseman galloping rapidly through the fields, as if pursued. He dropped his pistol and Carpenter secured it and shot the man. Upon examination it was found the buttons on his coat were gold pieces covered over with gilt lace. It was no unusual thing for refugee patriots moving northward from the lower part of the county, in the winters of 1777 and 1778, to hollow out the runners of their wood-shod sleds and conceal in the aperture their specie, if they chanced to possess anything of the kind. One gentleman relates that his grandfather, who owned a farm near the present site of Mt. Zion Church, used to tell of driving his cattle to an

inclosure in a swamp on the rear of the estate and there keeping them in order to save them from the dreaded "Cowboys" who infested this region. At last came the end, and peace permitted the veterans to return to their neglected and in many cases devastated homes. In 1812 again the alarm of war was sounded and Somers was represented in that conflict, although the scene of hostilities was further removed than in the war of independence. Wilhelmus Gerritsen, whose patrimonial estate lay near Croton Dam, and who afterward married Letty, sister of Samuel Teed, was a captain and served during the war. The names also of James Ganong and Nathan Brown appear from this town. The grandson of the latter gentleman, Stephen Brown, served throughout the War of Secession. It appears that these gentlemen were commissioned officers.

Of the private soldiers who were engaged in this war no record can be found, although members of the families of Brown, Travis, Horton, Mead and Green were among the soldiery at this period. In the Mexican War the town was ably represented by Captain Hachaliah Brown, whose monument is mentioned elsewhere, and who participated in the battles of the campaign ending with the capture of the capital. At the outbreak of the Civil War, in 1861, the people of the town were aroused to a degree of enthusiasm rarely witnessed even during the exciting times of those days, and Somers was early at the front both with commissions and in the ranks. The young men who enlisted from the town were the flower of its manhood. They were the representatives of its leading families, and in their toilsome marches and battle-marked campaigns they were nobly sustained by their townsmen at home who remained to furnish the "sinews of war." Money was freely voted by the town and substantial aid was constantly given by the people of Somers to the boys in the field during the whole period of the War of the Rebellion, while now and then an aged father and mother would hastily travel to one of the many hospitals, in time, perhaps, to tenderly close the eyes of a brave young son. One of the first regiments in which were representatives of the town was the Thirty-eighth New York Volunteers (Second Scott Life Guard). Again the name of Brown appears, Gerard C. Brown having been a member of this regiment, together with Isaac Teed, George Kniffen and William Brown. At the expiration of the two years' term of service of the regiment George Kniffen took a commission in a New Jersey cavalry regiment and served until the close of the war. He was a native of Somers, as was also his brother, William E. Kniffen, who enlisted in the Fourth Artillery in 1861. He was killed in battle at Ream's Station, Va., August 23, 1864, and is buried in Mt. Zion grave-yard. Early in 1862, and under the call for volunteers, Edward Jones, the son of Jabez Jones, residing near Somers village, responded and began soliciting names in this vicinity to form a com-

pany. His efforts were successful and the young men of Somers, North Salem, Lewisboro' and Bedford enrolled their names in the One Hundred and Thirty-fifth New York Volunteers, afterwards and during the war the Sixth New York Heavy Artillery. Edward Jones was elected captain of his company, which was D, and received his commission September 10, 1862. He was afterward promoted to major, and died from wounds received at Cedar Creek, Va. His body was brought home and is interred in Ivandell Cemetery. A neat monument marks his grave, upon which is inscribed, on the face,—

Edward Jones,
major,
6th N. Y. Heavy
Art'y Vol.

On a shield is "Cedar Creek." Below the shield are two crossed cannons and the flag is draped over the top of the monument with a sword and belt depending from under its folds. On the side is,—

Edward Jones,
wounded at
Cedar Creek Oct. 19.
Died at Winchester, Va.,
Oct. 30th, 1864,
aged 25 years, 3 mo.
& 14 days.

Early in the war the ladies of the town organized a Soldier's Aid Society, which was continued throughout the entire conflict and proved of invaluable service to the objects of its solicitude. It was under the management of the leading ladies of Somers, and by means of private contributions, fairs, entertainments, etc., large sums of money were realized and valuable aid given to the Union cause. In the Union Burying Ground, near the northeast corner of the church and a few steps from the village street, stands, surrounded by a neat iron railing, a plain shaft of granite, some fifteen feet high, resting on a double base, which is placed on a neat mound. On the face is the inscription in plain Roman letters,—

In memoriam
of the brave men
from this vicinity
who fell in the great
Rebellion.
Erected by the Ladies'
Soldier's Aid Society
of Somers!
1865.

On the reverse,—

59th N. Y. V.
George Powers.

101st N. Y. V.
Stephen Bowles.

1st N. Y. C.
William Tryon.

29th Conn. V.
William Graham, Col^d.
James Butler, Col^d.

On the south side,—

6th N. Y. H. A.
 Maj. Edward Jones.
 Sergt. James B. Fanning.
 Corp. Thomas J. Austin.
 George Carrington.
 James Moriarty.
 Andrew Quick.
 Ezra Miller.
 James Quick.
 Cornelius Van Scoy.

On the north side,—

4th N. Y. H. A.
 Capt. James McKeel.
 Sergt. Theodore Quick.
 Sergt. William E. Kniffin.
 William Donnell.
 Chauncey W. Totten.
 John Jones.
 Freeman Light.
 Charles Clark.
 Norman B. Purdy.
 Alvin Gregory.
 Ch. Vredenburgh.

Thus were the names of the fallen placed on record and their memories preserved by the ladies of the town. Every burial-place in the town contains the head-stones of some of our soldiers and every Memorial Day witnesses the strewing of flowers on their graves. Almost every family carries on its records the names of one or more who became a sacrifice to the fierce war of secession. Among the natives and residents of the town who participated in this struggle may be mentioned, besides those already recorded, Stephen Brown, Lieut. Samuel S. Austin, Charles Fisher, Abel Smith, John J. Austin, P. Robertson, Elias Austin, William Brown, Sr., John T. Brown, James Bowles, George Brown, Benjamin Dayton, James Satterlee, Thomas Bennett, Ezra Griffen, Herman Camp. During the draft several of our townsmen drew prizes, and at once, if it was impossible for them to go personally, furnished substitutes. Some of the young men, in the early days of the war, enlisted from other States, and therefore no authentic record can be found of such enlistment in this town.

At a town-meeting held on the 25th of May, 1864, it was unanimously voted,—

"That the Sum of \$300 be paid as a Bounty or to procure a Volunteer in his stead to every person who shall be drafted into the military service of the United States from the Town of Somers, who shall have been examined and held to service, and who shall have paid the sum of \$25 to the Committee hereinafter appointed previous to the time of such draft. Each person who has already paid the sum shall be deemed to have complied with this Resolution.

"Supervisor, WM. E. TEED (*ex officio*),
 "JAMES PARENT,
 "MUNSON E. FROST,
 "JESSE G. CARPENTER,
 "WM. TURK,
 "Committee."

A year previous to this, on the 9th of January, 1863, at a special town-meeting "it was voted, with but one dissenting vote, to request the Legislature to pass an act legalizing an assessment apportioned on the town

of Somers to raise the sum of four thousand dollars paid by the supervisor of the town as a bounty to volunteers." This money had already been paid out of personal funds to the men who had volunteered from the town. The tax was collected at once, and although under the act of 1864 many of our townsmen were drafted, and the three hundred dollars was paid by the committee above mentioned, this town was among the first to be reported as "out of debt." The war indebtedness was paid fully and promptly and taxes assumed their normal proportions. The town has no military organization at present. The surviving veterans of the war are generally members of the Grand Army organization, but there is not a Post in the town.

The following is a list of soldiers who were mustered into service and were residents of Somers, with date of muster, as taken from an official record prepared by the town clerk, on file at White Plains :

George W. Kniffin, orderly sergeant, Thirty-eighth Regiment, Company B, June 5, 1861.
 William E. Kniffin, corporal, Fourth Heavy Artillery, Company A, September 28, 1861.
 Stephen Brown, Jr., sergeant, First Cavalry, Company D, August 1, 1861.
 Edward Jones, major, Sixth Artillery, Company D, August 27, 1862.
 Samuel S. Austin, lieutenant, Sixth Artillery, Company D, September 2, 1862.
 John James Austin, orderly sergeant, Sixth Artillery, Company D, September 2, 1862.
 Thomas J. Austin, private, Sixth Artillery, Company D, September 2, 1862.
 Abel Smith, private, Sixth Artillery, Company D, September 2, 1862.
 Peter J. Weaver, private, Sixth Artillery, Company M, December 4, 1862.
 Thomas M. Bennett, orderly sergeant, Sixth Artillery, Company A, December 4, 1862.
 Jacob Tilford, Jr., private, Sixth Artillery, Company D, September 2, 1862.
 Peter Robinson, private, One Hundred and Seventy-second Infantry, Company M, December 4, 1862.
 Henry W. Totten, private, Fourth Artillery, Company A, December 13, 1861.
 John Jones, private, Fourth Artillery, Company A, —, 1864.
 William Donell, private, Fourth Artillery, Company A, December 5, 1861.
 John C. Halstead, sergeant, Sixth Artillery, Company A, September 2, 1862.
 William H. Halstead, private, Sixth Artillery, Company A, September 2, 1862.
 Stephen Bowls, private, Tenth Infantry, Company A, September, 1861.
 James L. Bowls, private, One Hundred and First Infantry, Company A, September, 1861.
 Charles Clark, private, Fourth Artillery, Company F, August 28, 1862.
 John G. L. Thorn, private, Fourth Artillery, Company L, December 30, 1863.
 Thomas Donell, corporal, Fifty-seventh Infantry, Company A, August 29, 1861.
 Horace Marshall, private, Sixth Artillery, Company A, September 2, 1862.
 Henry V. Totten, private, Fourth Artillery, Company A, August 13, 1862.
 Warren Totten, private, Fourth Artillery, Company A, August 13, 1862.
 Sutton Reynolds, private, Twelfth Militia Guard, Company E, May 31, 1862.
 Asbury Sniffin, private, Second Cavalry, Company M, September 1, 1862.
 Sylvester Sniffin, private, Third M. G., September 2, 1862.
 George Goodwin, private, Fourth Artillery, Company A, December 28, 1863.

Elbert S. Hywood, private, Fourth Artillery, Company A, October 5, 1861.

Charles Gray, private, One Hundred and Thirty-fifth Infantry, September 2, 1862.

Charles McDonald, private, Thirty-eighth Infantry, Company G, June 1, 1861.

Daniel D. Miller, private, One Hundred and Thirty-fifth Infantry, Company I, September 2, 1862.

Isaac N. Teed, sergeant, Fourth Artillery, Company A, October 14, 1861.

Lewis G. Cree, private, Fourth Artillery, Company L, September 1, 1861.

Freeman Light, private, Sixth Artillery, Company A, February 1, 1864.

Charles H. Vredenburgh, private, One Hundred and Thirty-fifth Infantry, Company D, September 2, 1862.

Lewis Dixon, corporal, Fourth Artillery, Company A, November 25, 1861.

James B. Fanning, sergeant, Sixth Artillery, Company M, September 12, 1862.

John H. Caragan, private, Fourth Artillery, Company A, December 6, 1862.

George B. Caragan, private, Sixth Artillery, Company J, November 10, 1862.

Charles Fisher, second lieutenant, One Hundred and Thirty-fifth Infantry, Company D, September 2, 1862.

Daniel Barrett, private, Fourth Artillery, Company L, January 6, 1864.

William H. Barrett, private, Fourth Artillery, Company L, January 25, 1864.

Joseph H. Turk, private, Fourth Artillery, Company A, November 25, 1861.

Samuel Harris, private, Fourth Artillery, Company A, December 26, 1863.

James Moriarty, private, Sixth Artillery, Company A, September 2, 1862.

William Corminck, private, Sixth Artillery, Company D, August 25, 1862.

Alpheus D. Freer, private, One Hundred and Thirty-fifth Infantry, Company D, September 2, 1862.

David Daniels, private, Fourth Artillery, Company A, August 20, 1862.

Thomas J. O'Connor, navy, August 24, 1862.

Warren Spencer, private, Fourth Artillery, Company D, September 2, 1862.

John Johnson, private, Stanton Legion, September 2, 1862.

Dr. Benjamin Franklin, corporal, First New York Lincoln Cavalry, March, 1864.

James Butler, killed in First Bull Run battle.

Turner E. Weeks, private, Seventeenth Infantry, Company F, May 21, 1861.

William J. Brown, private, Fourth Artillery, August 27, 1862.

Philip Dexter, private, One Hundred and Thirty-fifth Infantry, Company G, August, 1862.

Nathan Austin, private, Sixth Infantry, Company K, January, 1865.

Wright Hawkins, private, Forty-seventh New York Volunteers, Company G, October, 1863.

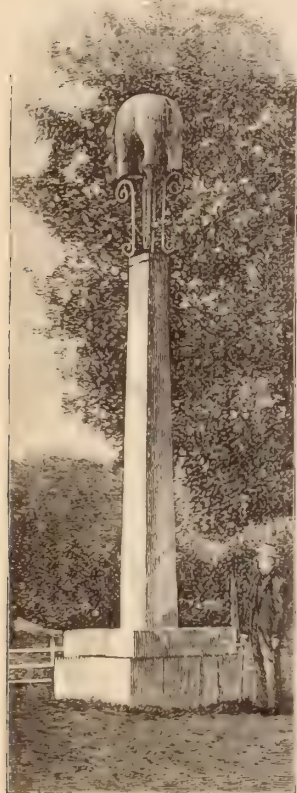
In addition to the above, there were enlisted twenty-three substitutes and twenty-five others were enlisted from other places for the town.

EARLY SETTLERS AND NOTABLE MEN.—Somers has long been considered exceptionally healthful. Its air is pure and wholesome; its water is clear and cold and limpid; its hills are kissed by the life-giving breezes that carry the promise of health into valleys and over its plains. One of the earliest settlers of the town, John Hempstead, died, as heretofore stated, at the age of one hundred and seven years. Three of his great-grandchildren are living, all of them over seventy years of age, and all born in the town. The Browns, Baileys, Wrights, Teeds, Frosts, Greens, Meads and Todds, all old families, exhibit living examples of a longevity which seems to be peculiar to the town. Hachaliah Brown was perhaps one of the earliest residents of the present town. He oc-

cupied a residence and land in the northeastern quarter and near the present Croton Falls. The house on the place is still standing, a long, low-rambling farm house with sloping roof and verandah along the front, which faces to the south. It is situated on a little rise of ground on the west side of the road leading to Lake Mahopac, and is surrounded by a grove of forest trees. The view from the house is southward, over rich meadows lying in the Croton Valley. In 1760 this land was conveyed to Hachaliah Brown, of Rye, who, in turn, conveyed it to Hachaliah Brown, Jr., who took possession. He married Abby Halstead and died May 22, 1813. He is buried in the Union burying-ground. His daughter Ann, married James Bailey. Another daughter, Auer, married a member of the Crane family. His sons were Nathan, Stephen and Lewis. The second son of Hachaliah, Sr., was Christopher, whose residence is still standing on the highway leading from Somers to Croton Falls. It is a roomy, one-and-a-half-story building, fronting the south, and bearing all the evidences of early construction,—the plain close shutters, low roof, small windows, etc. The place is now occupied by Isaac, son of Christopher. The Hachaliah Brown place has passed out of the family. Hachaliah Brown was prominent among the early leaders of the town, being the first supervisor elected in 1788. The present Stephen Brown is the son of Lewis, and grandson of Nathan. His residence is pleasantly situated on the Peekskill road, near the village of Somers, and is a large roomy farm house, having been somewhat remodeled a few years since, and now presenting a semi-Gothic appearance with its sharp gables. The first Christopher left Isaac, Aaron, Frederick and Phebe. His homestead is a low, comfortable residence, one-and-a-half-stories high, with sloping roof, situated on the Croton Falls road, and is occupied by his great-grandson Isaac. Benjamin, a brother of Christopher, resided in Putnam County. His daughter Amy married William J. Horton, of Western Somers, and survives him, living on the Horton homestead, near Amawalk. This farm was originally owned by Levi Parent, who finally relinquished it to the Van Cortlandts, who in turn conveyed it to Jesse Horton, and it has since remained in the Horton family. Of Christopher Brown's family, was Jonathan, whose son Charles was a resident of the town, and for many years postmaster in the village. His widow and daughter Amy still reside here.

Wm. Bailey resides in a handsome square, two-story and French-roofed mansion, fronting the green in Somers' village. He is about sixty-eight years of age, and although not born in the town, he has resided here since early childhood and has been prominently identified with the interests of the township. The Baileys are one of the oldest and best known families in this region. Wm. Bailey is and has been for years president of the Farmers' and Drovers' National Bank of this place and is the principal stockholder therein.

He also owns a large landed property here and a number of dwellings, a store building and large hotel in the village. Levi Bailey was living in 1795. He had eleven children. James, of Somers, and De Voe, of Putnam County, were the two in whom we are more particularly interested. James married Ann Brown, daughter of Hachaliah, and had eight children. He owned and occupied a large farm lying one mile south of the village, now owned by Wm. H. Wright. The residence, although much changed, still represents the comfortable old farm-house, built in the prevailing fashion; large rooms, low ceilings, very much on the plan of the old English farm-houses. It stands on



THE ELEPHANT MONUMENT.

the north side of the highway leading to Golden's Bridge, in a curve of the road. The ample yard and lawn are covered with shade-trees of noble growth. Hachaliah, the second son of James, was a man of enterprise, a large property owner, and the originator of the menagerie business in this country. In fact, it may be stated that Somerstown was the birth-place of this branch of the "show" business, which has since assumed such vast proportions, and Hachaliah Bailey was its "father." About the year 1815 he imported the first elephant into this country. This was the celebrated "Old Bet," and for a long time she constituted the sole "show." At the present time may be seen, on the triangular space of greensward in the village, and immediately in front of the Elephant Hotel, a single shaft of dressed granite some fifteen feet in height, resting on a double base, to which it is securely fastened by bolts and cement. It is some sixteen inches square at the bottom, tapering to about twelve inches at the top, where it supports a scroll-work of wrought-iron about three feet high, upon which stands a wooden image of an elephant. This image is some three feet high by four in length and is a perfect fac-simile of an elephant. It was erected about 1827, and the miniature "Bet" was gilded. At present, however, it presents a more natural appearance, being covered with a coat of mouse-colored paint. The image is composed of solid blocks

of wood carved into proper shape. It was erected by Hachaliah Bailey in commemoration of the first elephant and as an appropriate sign for his large brick hotel. He died in 1845, at the age of seventy years, having been fatally kicked by a vicious horse. His monument, a tall, plain, granite shaft, stands in the rear of the Presbyterian Church and is inscribed:

"Hachaliah Bailey,
Died Sept 2 1845
Aged 70 years.

Enterprise
Perseverance
Integrity"

De Voe Bailey married Elizabeth Smith, and left eleven children, the sixth son, Horace, removing from Putnam County to Somers. He married Sally Hull, of Connecticut, and had William, James, Elizabeth and Sarah. He married, for a second wife, Fanny Crane, of Vermont, and had Clarinda, now the wife of Thaddeus Crane. In 1818, Horace Bailey purchased the Joseph Owen property, on Somerstown Plain, and opened a store and hotel. Previous to this, in 1815, he had a store at the "corners," afterwards Teed's Corners. While still owning the farm in Putnam County he kept his store in operation at Somers and started a mail-coach line to New York from Somerstown. He bought the Elephant Hotel and farm belonging to it in 1837. Hachaliah had previously sold the property, which now became the property of Horace. William Bailey was an infant when his father removed to this place and has ever since been a resident of the town. At an early age he developed a taste for the prevailing pursuit of very many of our townsmen at that time—dealing in horses and cattle. He went into in the business and has traveled extensively over not only his own but other States and Territories, engaged in this and other business, and thereby becoming the possessor of a large and varied fund of valuable information. His keenness of perception and remarkably retentive memory have served to make him, in many respects, an exceptional man. He has been closely associated in various capacities with some of the leading men of the times, and his acquaintance is large and valuable; a man of strict integrity in business, he has become possessed of a handsome fortune through his own business efforts. He has identified himself with every beneficial enterprise of the town of Somers. His father was the first president of the Farmers' and Drovers' Bank of Somers, and he is its present presiding officer. His residence is one of the most prominent dwellings in the town. His sister Elizabeth married Alfred B. Mead, of North Salem, an old and prominent farmer and stock dealer there. The other sister, Sarah, married Alonzo B. Thacker, the present cashier of the Farmers' and Drovers' Bank, himself a native of the town and son of Solomon Thacker, who for many years was one of the principal business men of Somers Plains. The brother James is dead. Mr. Bailey has four children,

—Carrie, Sallie, James and William. His wife was Mary A. Morrison, a niece of James Libby, of New York.

Thaddeus Barlow came from Vermont to the town, a young man, about 1825. He was a blacksmith by trade, and, until a few years ago, carried on the business in this place. Among the first of his works was the shaping of the iron-work that holds the miniature elephant. This was in April, 1827. Since that date "Barlow's Shop" has never been permanently closed. Mr. Barlow owns a handsome old-style residence on the main street of the village and has retired from active life. His son Stephen continues the business at the forge. The Barlow residence was once owned by Micajah Wright, who kept an inn there in 1802. Mr. Barlow was one of the first vestrymen of St. Luke's Church and is still one of the wardens of that church. He married Mary, daughter of Daniel Quick, of North Salem, and has four living children,—Joseph, Edgar, Stephen and John.

James W. Bedell owns a large farm and handsome residence in the western part of the town overlooking the valley of the Muscote. His house is a large, substantial, partly Gothic building, the diamond-shaped window-panes giving it more of the Gothic character than do the actual proportions of the building. A beautiful lawn extends in front to the highway, down a gentle descent. Inside, the appliances of taste and cultivation are everywhere apparent. Mr. Bedell comes from Yorktown. His great-grandfather, Ephraim Beadle (as the name was then called), settled there, on the shore of Mohansic Lake, in 1750. After the Revolution, David Bedell and his brother William came across the Muscote River and purchased the present farm of Pierre Van Cortlandt for \$6.25 per acre. Together they built a log house, in a lot just southwest of the present residence, and felled the forest trees and fenced the land. David was the grandfather of James, and from him the present owner inherited the property, the father of James having died before the grandfather and both being only children. James Bedell has been prominent in town affairs, having held the office of supervisor of the town, and, during the war, a military position under the enrollment department. He was also active in furnishing the quota of troops from here under the various calls of the government. He married a daughter of Ebenezer White, M.D., and has one son and five daughters living. Mr. Bedell was the originator of Ivandell Cemetery, and carried the idea through to the incorporation of the association, in 1866. He is the president of the association at present.

Thaddeus Crane resides in a pleasant, old-style farm-house, roomy and substantial, with low, sloping roof and broad verandah, built very much like all the farm-houses of a century ago; situated just west of the village, on the Peekskill road. The property was formerly owned by Nathan Brown, father of Lewis and Stephen Brown. After the death of Nathan

Brown it was left to Stephen and was purchased by Mr. Crane. Thaddeus Crane is the eldest son of Gerard Crane and grandson of the Hon. Thaddeus Crane, who was a major and lieutenant-colonel in the Revolution, and Member of Assembly in 1777-79 and 1788-89. Colonel Crane is buried in North Salem, where Girard, the father of Thaddeus, was born, January 3, 1791.

He and his brother Thaddeus removed to Somers in 1827, and purchased a large property of the Brown estate. The mansion of Thaddeus is standing on the old road to Dean's Bridge, half a mile from the village, and is owned and occupied by John Dickinson, who married Lydia, a sister of Thaddeus and Gerard Crane. The latter erected a fine large mansion of cut stone by the side of the turnpike, one mile north of the village. It is two stories high, with basement beneath, and is a square structure covered with a deck roof. The building is finished in the best possible manner, both out and inside, and presents an imposing appearance. The approach is by a flagged walk through a yard inclosed with an ornamental iron paling fence, up several wide stone steps, with iron railings on either side, to a handsomely-carved door, which opens from a broad portico whose roof is supported by two fluted stone columns. The windows are large, the ceilings high and ornamented with mouldings and casts in plaster. It is a dwelling that would be attractive in any city in the world, and is doubly so in the country. Near the house is a long, hipped-roofed building, that is now a barn, but was built for, and used as, an animal house during the winter seasons. Mr. Crane was for many years one of the principal proprietors of a large menagerie. The property is now owned and occupied by William N. Todd, who purchased it of the Crane estate. Gerard Crane was one of the supervisors of the town, holding that office in 1833-37. He died in 1872, aged eighty-one years.

Thaddeus Crane has been a resident of the town, with the exception of a few years, all his life. He married Clarinda (daughter of Horace) Bailey, and has occupied prominent positions in local and political affairs. He held the office of supervisor from 1875 to 1879. Thaddeus and Gerard Crane were associated in the show business for a number of years when this business was in its infancy. Many of the old residents of Somers were at times identified with this peculiar calling with various success. As showing, to a small extent, the capital invested in animals, we append an extract from a bill of sale,—

"State of Virginia, Lunenburg Co., Know all men by these presents that I, John Miller, of Northampton County and State of Pennsylvania, do this day Bargain, Sell and Deliver unto Thaddeus & Gerard Crane, of Westchester County, New York, a Brazilian Tiger and Tigress, an African Leopard and Leopardess, two English Organs, a Bass Drum, an Italian Symbol, two Monkeys, the Cotamunda, two Wagons and five Horses, with Harness, together with the Signs, Cuts and all the apparatus that belongs to said Exhibition of Animals for the Consideration of Three Thousand five Hundred Dollars, etc., etc., and do defend the right and title to the same, and I do warrant the Leopards to be living

on the Seventh day of the present Instant. Witness my hand and Seal this 14th of February, 1821.

"In presence of
"THOMAS BROOKS,"

"JOHN MILLER, { SEAL }

Again, a bill of sale from Marcus Sloat, of Carmel, dated the 15th of March, 1825, conveys to,—

"T. & G. Crane, of Somers, Westchester County, the one Equal and undivided third part of a female Elephant, called Pet (formerly Perry), for and in Consideration of the Sum of Three Thousand Dollars to me in hand paid, the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged, etc., etc. Signed in presence of

"HULDAH QUICK,

"MARCUS SLOAT."

Thousands of dollars were invested in these enterprises, and in many instances very profitable returns were realized. The Wright family are also of the early residents. Daniel Wright, previous to the Revolution, owned an estate on Primrose Street, directly opposite the present Mount Zion Church. At the rear of the farm is a large swamp to which it was customary in those perilous times to drive the cattle during the day. In the afternoon they would be driven back to the house and fastened in a log inclosure to secure them from the "Cowboys." Here Micajah Wright attained his manhood, and succeeded to his patrimony. He was the builder of Mount Zion Church, and also of the house now standing on the farm. Afterwards he moved to Somers Plain and kept an inn in the building now owned by Mr. Barlow. In this house Charles Wright grew to man's estate, and from here he entered into the active life of the world. Micajah Wright, the father of Charles, died November 4, 1811, aged forty-eight years. Charles traveled extensively during his younger days, having been connected with the prevailing "show" business, which at this time seemed to engross general attention. He married Elizabeth Smith, of North Castle, and purchased a farm in Lewisboro, where his children at present living were born. He afterwards moved to Somers, bought the James Bailey estate before described, and there resided until his death, in 1862, at the age of seventy years and nine days. He left five sons—James, William H., John, Isaac C. and Samuel P. William owns the homestead, and is well known in political circles, having been a chairman of the Democratic County Committee, and always active in political campaigns. He has often been offered, but invariably refused, political office, both in the town and district. He was also prominent in the construction of the Mutual Union and Baltimore and Ohio telegraph lines, whose wires traverse the town from the southern to the northern extremities. James is a resident of the South, and Isaac resides in Chicago. John has retired from active business, and Samuel owns a fine farm and residence on Primrose Street, near Mount Zion Church, a property that was formerly owned by his grandfather, but passed into the hands of the Marshall family, from whom it again came into the Wright fam-

ily. On the road leading to Peekskill, and a mile east of West Somers depot, on an elevation that overlooks much of the upper valley of the Muscoot, stands a neat and attractive home. With its sloping lawn, its slightly location, its thrifty surroundings, it forms a pleasing picture. The house is new, and of modern construction and improvements. The old house stood a few rods west of the present building and under the hill at the intersection of Tomahawk Street and the West road. This has been torn down and removed. This residence is the home of Munson E. Frost, whose father was Ebenezer Frost, a son of John Frost, whose father came from England some time in 1700, and settled in Massachusetts. John Frost married a Miss Munson, of Connecticut, and came to New York State, buying land of the Brown family and settling just over the present line of Putnam County, near Croton Falls. Here Ebenezer was born July 8, 1776. He removed to Somers village in early life with his brother Joel, who subsequently became the judge of Putnam County Court, member of the Legislature and representative in Congress. Ebenezer entered into mercantile business in Somers village, where he remained some time, and then removed to West Somers. He was one of the ten voters in the town who cast a ballot for Thomas Jefferson in 1800, postmaster for over a quarter of a century, captain of the State Militia, one of the organizers of the Westchester County Bank, and a director thereof from its organization, to the day of his death. He married Mary, daughter of Samuel Green, and had Mary, Elizabeth, Calvin, Munson E. and Samuel. Munson E. has held the office of justice in Somers for many years, and is one of the prominent residents of the town. His brother, the Hon. Calvin Frost, of Peekskill, is one of the leading members of the legal profession. Esquire Frost has always been active in advancing the interests of Somers, and is an energetic yet careful expounder of the laws to evil-doers. He owns a handsome estate and is surrounded with all the comforts of life. At the eastern end of Somers village, near the junction of the Purdy's Station and Croton Falls roads, stands a large two-story frame building with a one-and-a-half-story extension to the south.

It is built in good, substantial style, and stands a little back from the street, in a large yard, well filled with tall shade-trees of oak and locust, forming a small grove. Directly in front of the residence, but across the street, are two aged, wide-spreading oaks that completely overshadow the highway with their long, leafy branches. Attached to the dwelling is a small, well-cultivated farm. This is the home of Samuel White, the son of Ebenezer White, M.D., who removed here from Yorktown in 1800. The White family came originally from Long Island. In 1800 Samuel's father removed from Yorktown to Somers, and resided here until his death, in 1865, at the age of eighty-five years, nine months and seven days. Dr.

White was a practicing physician of wide repute. One of his sons followed him in the profession, Dr. Oliver White, of New York City, who also attained eminence in his chosen calling. Dr. Ebenezer White was also a prominent member and officer of the Presbyterian Church. He married the sister of Esquire Frost's mother, and had eight children. Samuel owns and remains on the homestead, leading the easy life of a well-to-do farmer. He has always been, and still continues to be, interested in any measures looking to the welfare of his native town.

Just west of the central part of the town, and on the Peekskill road, are the estates of the members of the Green family. A long, two-story, well-proportioned dwelling, standing some rods back from the highway, with a tree-bordered drive leading to the door, and an upper and lower veranda extending across the entire front of the building, is the residence of the surviving members of the Israel Green branch of the family. Israel Green was the son of Samuel Green, who owned a large property, including the estate now occupied by his descendants, in the western central part of Somers. He died in 1827, at the age of eighty years, three months and five days, as is recorded on his head-stone, which stands in the family burial-ground, on the farm nearly opposite the residence. From him the Greens are descended, and just west of the homestead property lie the farms of the late Caleb and Stephen Green, one on each side of the highway, with large, tasteful residences, surrounded with all the evidences of thrift. The older male members of the family in Somers are all dead. Israel Green was the supervisor of Somers in 1841-44, and again in 1845. He was also town clerk in 1835-41, and again in 1850, and supervisor in 1854. His surviving son, James, married Ophelia, only daughter and child of Oliver U. Todd, and they reside on the Todd estate, near Whitehall Corner. John Green, brother of Israel, was also town clerk in 1841. His farm lay near Somers village. His daughter Helen married James Hyatt, who is one of the justices of the town, and resides in the roomy old farm-house and cultivates the farm, as well as discharges impartially and satisfactorily the duties of his office. Esquire Hyatt is also one of the wardens of St. Luke's Church, and a widely-known and highly-respected man. Adjoining the farm of Samuel Green was the land of William Horton, the first town clerk of Somers in 1788. When the British captured White Plains the Hortons escaped with the small amount of property that could be carried in a pillow-sack laid across the back of a horse. On horse-back they journeyed to this section, and here settled. They had originally come from Rye, and the father of William was one of the purchasers of the White Plains. William settled on the farm now owned by his grandson, Charles G. Teed. For many years he was prominent in the councils of the town, and pursued the occupations of farmer and store-keeper. He was clerk of the town for the first six years of its existence

as a township. He also became the owner of the property afterward owned by Harvey M. Todd. William Horton's daughter Mary was born here, and married Samuel Teed. This branch of the Horton family afterwards removed to North Salem, where they still reside. Charles G. Teed now owns the estate. It is a large and valuable property. The location was for many years known as Teed's Corners. It is at the intersection of Lovell Street with the Peekskill road, two miles from Somers village and one-quarter of a mile from Somers Centre depot. The residence is a fine, large, square, two-story and attic dwelling, surrounded on three sides by a broad verandah, situated in the centre of an ample, well-shaded lawn, and kept constantly in the best possible condition. The farm is a most excellent one and is highly cultivated. For many years a store and blacksmith and wheelwright shops were located here, but these have all passed away. The view from the piazza of the residence is beautiful, embracing the Plum Brook Valley, the village of Somers, two miles away, and the North Salem hills in the eastern distance. Charles Teed is the son of Samuel, whose estate is located nearly a mile farther south, on Primrose Street, now occupied by James P., the present supervisor of the town. Samuel Teed was the father of fifteen children, who, with three exceptions, are living. He married Mary Horton and brought her to the Teed homestead, where their children were born and brought up, and where the parents died—Samuel in 1857, aged seventy-two years, ten months and seven days.

His wife survived him about a year. Their children were all living at the death of the parents. There were seven sons and eight daughters. The residence is pleasantly located on the east side of Primrose Street, fronting south, and although materially changed in appearance within twenty years, the west end of the house is the same frame, etc., as was erected by the father of Samuel some time early in 1700. As the residence now appears, it is a very attractive home. The low roof has been raised and gabled with dormer windows, in the English style. It is a large, commodious structure and is surrounded on three sides by a wide, pleasant veranda. The view to the west is fine. The large farm is highly cultivated and is one of the best in the county. Charles Teed, the father of Samuel and grandfather of James, the present owner of the estate, was a blacksmith and farmer and built the original house, making all the nails therefor on his forge, which stood a few feet from the site of the present residence. This was some time before the Revolution. He married a Gregory and had ten children. Samuel was the oldest son. There were five daughters older. Charles' father was one of the earliest settlers of the town and from him sprang the family in all its branches. Charles Teed was a member of the nineteenth session of the Assembly in 1796 and continued a member of that body until and

including 1800. Samuel directed his attention to his farm and was also interested in the cattle business. At one time, about 1830, he, in connection with his brother-in-law, Lewis Horton, became a proprietor of a "show," but did not continue in the business long. William E. Teed, one of the sons, held the office of supervisor in 1849 to 1850 and also from 1862 to 1868 and 1870 to 1871. He was also clerk of the town five years. James P. is the present supervisor, which office he has held since 1880.

An old family, one of the first, is the Parent family. The homestead house and farm are situated in the western part of the town, the farm lying on the banks of the Muscoot River, directly opposite the James W. Bedell estate. It is a rich and productive estate. The house is built after the prevailing farm-house style. It is owned by the family, but is not occupied by them at present. Levi Parent purchased a large tract of land of the Van Cortlandts at an early day, but was unable to keep the entire tract, retaining at last this portion, which descended to Isaiah, his grandson, who, in turn, left it to James. James held the office of justice in the town for forty years. He removed from the family estate to the eastern part of the town and kept a store near Whitehall Corner, leasing a large farming property from the Van Cortlandts. This farm property has since been leased by his son James, who has had charge of it since his father's death, in 1880, aged seventy-eight years, seven months and twenty-seven days. During the long term of office held by Esquire Parent none of the many decisions rendered by him were reversed in a higher court. He was a well-known and active member of town political circles, as well as a successful farmer. His only surviving son, James, is the owner of and resides on a fine farming property, formerly owned by the Beadle family and lying on the north and south sides of the highway leading from the Katonah to Amawalk, about one mile west of Whitehall Corner. The dwelling is an old-fashioned, sloping-roofed farm-house, ample in dimensions and surrounded by large trees and a shady yard. This gentleman also has the charge of and cultivates the two remaining farms of the Van Cortlandt property, which adjoins his own estate. He married Rosalie Banks, of Lewisboro', and has two children—Isaiah and Mary.

In the northeastern part of the town is situated the neatly-kept and commodious residence of James Owen. It formed, originally, a part of the Brown purchase, but was sold to the Owen family, who gave the name of Owensville to the hamlet that gathered around the vicinity of the excellent water-power of the Croton River at this point, which was utilized by the erection of a paper-mill, clothier's works, etc., under the ownership of the Owens. The names of Joseph Owen and John Owen appear prominently in connection with the organization of the Presbyterian Churches of the town, and also in the records

of the Croton turnpike. In 1810 John Owen was conducting a mercantile business in Somers village, and Fred. J. Coffin had his office in the house of Joseph Owen, Jr., in the same place. Joseph Owen was a supervisor of the town in 1807-15, also in 1817-18. The family is one of the oldest and most highly respected in the town. The present Mr. Owen is a plain, unassuming gentleman of leisure, is social and intellectual in his tastes, and leads, in the home of his father, a bachelor life of unostentation. The residence is very pleasantly situated on the corner of a broad, shady street, and the grounds are kept scrupulously neat and attractive. The property adjoins that formerly owned by Thomas R. Lee, a prominent lawyer, whose handsome estate has passed into the ownership of Mr. Ettinger, a New York business man, who makes it his summer residence.

At the junction of the Purdy's and Dean's Bridge road, and near Somers village, is the residence formerly owned by John Titus, one of the old residents and prominent in the exhibition business, under the firm-name of June, Titus & Angewine, in 1827 or thereabouts. John Titus was a wealthy farmer and speculator, and descended from Edmund Titus, who was born in England in 1630, and moved from Massachusetts to Long Island in 1650. From Long Island the family came to Westchester County. The residence is pleasantly situated in the centre of a fine lawn, and is a neat, roomy mansion, well-filled with valuable artistic objects. It is the home of Ray Tompkins, who married a daughter of John Titus. Mr. Tompkins is a son of New York's noted Governor, Hon. D. D. Tompkins. The Tompkins family were from Scarsdale, where Hon. Daniel D. was born in 1774. Ray Tompkins moved to Somers and purchased the Ammi Pennoyer place on Primrose Street, adjoining the property of Samuel Teed. Here he resided for some years, eventually removing to Somers village. He was a prominent figure in the politics of New York City for many years, holding one of the chief offices in the Tammany Society, with Elijah F. Purdy and others. At this time he resided at Tompkinsville, Staten Island, after which he removed a second time to Somers. He was one of the directors of the Croton Turnpike Company, and was a prominent man in the councils of the town. He lives in the enjoyment of affluence, and leads a quiet life, possessing a fund of recollections of early political and social events. His only living son, Minthorne, is a resident of San Francisco, and a prominent bank official in that city.

The Gerritsens removed from Long Island some time in 1700, and settled near Croton Dam. Captain Wilhelmus Gerritsen married Letty, the fourth daughter of Charles Teed, and settled near Somers Centre, as it is now called. Here he purchased a farm and here his children were born. He was an officer in the War of 1812, and was always known as Captain Gerritsen. The estate is now owned by





Chas. H. Todd

Charles G. Teed, while his son Samuel resides on a farm one mile farther north, on Lovell Street, not far from the line of Putnam County. His son William was the clerk of the town from 1853 to 1861 and from 1862 to 1875, when he died. He married Mary Hallock and left no children. Captain Gerritsen was a quiet farmer and took no active part in town affairs. He died at an advanced age and is buried at Mount Zion. On the turnpike road, two and a half miles south of Somers village, on a high elevation of ground some distance west of the highway, is an imposing residence, built of wood and consisting of various apartments and buildings, seemingly joined together irregularly, with a square tower in the southeast corner. It is a handsome structure, and occupies a slightly location, from whence a view is obtained of the Plum Brook Valley, the undulating farms of eastern Somers and the distant hills of Connecticut. Surrounding the mansion is an ample lawn, and the cultivated fields of a rich and extensive farm. Just a few rods to the southeast is the old house, still in a good state of preservation, but which is used as a tenement for the farm hands. This is the property of the late Harvey M. Todd, the brother of Oliver Uel Todd.

Prominent among the names of successful men, who, by indomitable industry, have made Somers a town of model farms, stands that of Oliver Uel Todd. Early in life thrown upon his own resources, in a large degree, he developed those traits which command success in the face of discouragements, and maintained through a long life a good name, and departing, left naught but pleasant memories.

His lineage may be traced in an unbroken line back to the eleventh century, when the family emigrated from Scotland, and settled at Pontefact, Yorkshire, England, the name at that time being spelled Tod, and bearing the signification "a fox," the family crest having as a part of its design a picture of this wary animal.

In 1638 among the original settlers of New Haven, Conn., was Christopher Todd and his wife, Grace Middlebrook, they being the first of the name settling upon New England soil.

Samuel Todd, the second child of Christopher, married Mary Bradley, one of the pioneer women of the young colony. A numerous family grew up around their hearth-stone. Jonah, the seventh child, married Hannah Clark, and an only son blessed the union,—Abraham, born February 18, 1710. As he grew to maturity he was fitted for the ministry, and settled over the West Congregational Church of Greenwich, Conn., for about forty years. November 30, 1727, he married Hannah Dickinson, and reared a family of eight children. He died in 1772, and was buried in the old church-yard amidst the scenes of his life-work.

Tradition says that during the British occupancy of New York and vicinity the family was driven from their home in Greenwich, and two sons, Abraham

and Oliver, took up their abode some fifty miles north, in the town of South Salem, when they occupied adjoining farms.

Oliver was the father of four children,—Ira, Uel, Fannie and Huldah,—and living to sixty-six years was gathered to his fathers, and his remains, together with those of his wife, Lydia, who survived him eleven years, lie buried in the family plot near the Martin Todd homestead. His second son, Uel, father of Oliver Uel, remained upon the farm at South Salem, and married Laura Mead, by whom seven children were born, Oliver Uel Todd being the second son, and born October 5, 1805. At the age of seven he, with the other members of the family, moved to Somers, and settled upon the farm which afterward became his possession and home for life.

Educational advantages at that time were extremely limited, and the youthful Oliver made the most of the few winter months of tuition at the district school, and acquired a fair general education; but his life-work was to be more manual than mental, and his education was most thoroughly practical, instilled by the hardy experiences of the old days of farming, long ere labor-saving machinery had commenced its revolutionizing era. Close application and untiring industry, naturally resulted in developing a model farm, comprising two hundred and fifty acres, with a good house and farm buildings.

At the age of twenty-seven he married a lady from one of the old and respected Somers families, Hester Jane Green, who brought to the home he had prepared, an experience in the duties pertaining to a farmer's life, and a genial, happy disposition, well calculated to enhance its prosperity.

Before the iron rail connected the great west with New York, immense droves of cattle and sheep might be seen slowly wending their way along the main thoroughfare toward the city, many days and nights being occupied by the journey. Conveniently situated upon the direct "turnpike" road, the drovers found such ample accommodation at the Todd farm that for many years it became a noted hostelry for such itinerants frequently droves of cattle and sheep, from one to three miles in length, finding here rest and forage, and the way-worn and hungry drovers the best of refreshment.

Busy nights were those, when a mounted courier had announced the approach of a drove of a thousand or more head of stock to be corraled and fed, and twenty or thirty men tired, and hungry, to be fed and lodged. Great roasts of beef, and the fattest of turkeys have issued from those ample brick ovens, teeming with savory odors. But these scenes have long since ceased to be enacted, and the actors have passed along into the great silent majority. Many dollars were added to the accumulating possessions by these experiences often repeated, until this traffic was quite diverted away from the old turnpike, and the railroads ushered in a new *régime*.

Being of a quiet and retiring disposition, Mr. Todd almost entirely eschewed politics, save to exercise his franchise as a citizen, in which he uniformly cast his lot with the Republican party, with which he became identified upon its organization.

Likewise in religious matters he took no very active part, but was an attendant upon divine services when occasion offered, occasionally attending services at the Methodist Episcopal Chapel at Mount Zion, and contributing to several different societies of his abundance.

A full half-century of activity resulting in the acquiring of an ample fortune, the last decade of his life was rendered inactive by an insidious nerve disease, which though incapacitating him for any physical exertion, left his mind unclouded to the end.

He died October 5, 1880, on his seventy-fifth birthday, leaving a faithful and devoted wife and an only daughter, Ophelia, wife of James T. Green, to mourn his loss, a large circle of relatives and friends joining in sincere expressions of bereavement.

His obsequies were attended by a large concourse of friends from all the neighboring country, comprising many whose locks had been silvered by the flight of years even as had his.

In the family burying ground, a few rods north of the homestead, his remains are interred, a beautiful granite monument, of chaste design, marking their last resting-place; and a well-kept sward is spread like emerald tapestry over and around the ever-increasing mounds, as the generations follow each other to "That undiscovered country, from whose bourn no traveler returns."

Harvey Mead Todd, the brother of Oliver Uel Todd, was born in Lewisboro, June 2, 1803. He received his education in the district school of Somers, to which town the family removed shortly after his birth. He left school for the farm at an early age, and remained actively engaged in farming till his death, December 21, 1881. He was a plain, unostentatious man, upright and straightforward in every transaction, and thoroughly above the low methods of modern business. He won by his steady industry a large fortune, and obtained for himself a representative place in the community in which he lived.

He was an attendant of the Mount Zion Methodist Church of Somers, and was one of its most earnest supporters. He was a director of the Farmers' and Drovers' Bank at Somers.

He married Miss Esther W., daughter of William Nelson, of Somers. There were four children, of whom two died in infancy. The two surviving are William N. Todd, who married Miss Jane E. Wilson, of Somers, and Laura Josephine, who married Willis R. Smith, of North Salem. Mrs. Smith now occupies the homestead at Somers.

William N. Todd, the son of Harvey, resides on the Crane estate before described, having purchased that property a few years since. In addition to this, he

owns the productive farm adjoining his father's estate, known as the Wilson farm. William married Jane Elizabeth, daughter of Samuel Wilson, and purchased the estate of his father-in-law's heirs.

The Todd family have not been active in public affairs but have been earnest, industrious, careful and intelligent farmers, and thus have accumulated a competence. William N. has been, and is, a town officer, and is a representative resident of Somers.

A short distance west from the Todd estate, and on Primrose Street, is situated the large square frame dwelling belonging to Augustus Turner, whose father, Isaac, was a life-long resident of the town; his father, Joshua, having built the house and owned the farm a quarter of a mile south of the residence now owned by Augustus. The present residence is of recent construction, the original farm-house having been torn down some years ago. It is pleasantly located, having a fine southern view, and has a large and valuable farm attached. Mr. Turner is a representative farmer, as well as a successful one. His farms command all his attention and he cultivates them intelligently. Adjoining his property on the north is the farm and dwelling formerly owned by Daniel Wright, the father of Micajah. The old frame of the house is still standing, although its outward appearance has been modernized. It is built in the dominant style of sloping roof, low ceilings and heavy timbers. It is now an attractive home, and is owned by Asa Adams. It was purchased from Micajah Wright about 1800 by Joshua Culver, who removed from New York to this place. He was born in Norwich, Conn., his father, William, having come from New London. Joshua married Susan Story and afterwards purchased this farm, retiring from business in New York. Here his nine children were born, all of whom, with the exception of the oldest, are dead.

He sold the property to Ray Tompkins in 1846, and removed to Worcester, Mass., where he died in 1864, at the age of eighty-four years. Just north on the same street is the property formerly owned by William Marshall, who at an early date removed to Somers from New York and purchased this farm, where he resided for many years, finally tearing down the old building and erecting a spacious and attractive residence a short distance north of the original site. He died in 1862 at eighty-two years of age. He was an active man in the affairs of the town and was supervisor in 1837-41.

The estate is now owned by Samuel P. Wright. His son, Wm. Marshall, Jr., purchased the place formerly owned by Ray Tompkins, north of the Wright property, and entered into mercantile business in Somers village. He was also active in public affairs and was three times elected supervisor, serving in 1855-59, 1860, 1862 and in 1869.

The Hallocks are an old and prominent family of the town. They are members of the Society of Friends and consequently have ever been averse to





mingling in the active affairs of the town. Robert Hallock owned a large farm and a fine water-power on Plum Brook, a mile and a half west of Somers village. Here, surrounded with all the elements of prosperity, he attended to the duties of life and became the head of a family. He was an early settler of the town and his mill was known for miles around in every direction. The mill is still in operation and the old house is still an evidence of the substantial construction of the early days. It is approached through a lane leading from the highway, and is now owned by Harvey Varis, a direct descendant of the Van Vares of New York and New Amsterdam. On the east side of this lane is the family burying-ground, where lie the remains of the members of the family—not all of them, however, as some are buried in the Friends' burying-ground at Amawalk.

Robert died in 1853, at seventy-nine years of age, and Sarah, his wife, in 1863 at eighty-eight years. They left a large family, James, Edmund and Robert remaining settled in the town. Robert occupied the homestead and had sons—Elbert and William S. James owned a handsome residence, a fine farm and a saw and grist-mill a mile west of the old home, on Plum Brook, which are owned at present by Halstead B., his son. Edmund owns a farm adjoining the home property and his tasteful residence overlooks the farm of his father. They are among the most reliable and highly respected residents of the town.

On the south part of the turnpike road, and fronting the north extremity of Croton Lake, is a substantial farm-house, which was evidently built in the best possible manner in the days of its erection. Large, commodious and possessing some degree of ornamentation, its appearance betokens the liberal means of its owner. It is the homestead of the Nelson family. It has, however, long since been given up by the members of the family as a residence and their home is over a mile farther north, in a residence equally substantial and commodious and nearer the centre of the town and their estates. Absalom Nelson came to this section at an early day and purchased property. His son William continued the life of a farmer—gradually amassing wealth, sometimes by speculation, but always by cultivation of the soil. William was also an active man in public affairs, and we find him in the Assembly in 1820–21. His son Henry succeeded to the property and increased the value of the estate by adding thereto, by purchase, several farms in the neighborhood. He died in 1860, at forty-seven years of age, leaving William and George, who now own the various estates and carry on the most extensive milk producing business in the town, if not in the county. They are the owners of some five or six farms, all of which are devoted to the production of milk. One of the brothers remains in New York City to sell the milk produced upon their estates at home.

They employ many farm-laborers, generally foreigners, and conduct an extensive business. Fronting on

the Croton Lake is an old-fashioned farm-house, which has witnessed the flight of many years. Extending back to the northwest and north is a fertile farm. Its owner is Silas Gregory, a prominent and old resident of Somers. He does not at present occupy his farm, leasing it to other parties and residing with his son-in-law in Yorktown. He has been closely identified with the town for sixty years. He was supervisor in 1847–52 and 1857, and has held some town office for over half a century. He was the manufacturer of the first iron mould-board plow, and had he obtained a patent thereon, would have been immensely wealthy. As it is, however, he is in comfortable circumstances and leads a quiet life, surrounded by all that makes life enjoyable and possessing the esteem of his fellow-townsmen.

In a curve of the road north of the Gregory place, and nearer Whitehall Corner, is a neat, square, two-story farm-house, which is used as the polling-place for the Second Election District of Somers. It is of recent construction, having taken the place of the old building which for so many years used to be a noted watering-station for market-men and farmers driving to Sing Sing with produce for the boats. It is the home of Lewis Ferris, another representative farmer of the town. Mr. Ferris came from Lewisboro' at an early date, and purchasing this place, began to raise potatoes. He succeeded wonderfully, and from his potato-fields has come his competence. He is an old man, widely-known and highly-esteemed, and lives in the enjoyment of his well-earned prosperity. His son Anthony resides on the Nelson Teed property, a mile and a half from Somers village south, and is also a practical farmer.

One of the most attractive residences in the town is owned by Aaron B. Whitlock, and is located in the centre of fine grounds, at the intersection of two roads near Golden's Bridge, on the east line of Somers. The mansion is large, in the modern style, with French roof, wide verandas, side porticoes, etc., and surrounded by well-kept grounds. There is also a fine farm connected with the estate. The dwelling stands on the site of the Harvey Mead place, which forty years ago was owned and occupied by Harvey Mead, a farmer and cattle speculator, and one of the first freighters on the Harlem Railroad. Mr. Whitlock is from Lewisboro', and is engaged in an extensive mercantile business at Croton Falls. North of and adjoining his estate is that of George A. Teed, now owned by his son Allen. The house is new, having replaced one that was burned a few years since. The farm is a productive one. Allen and his brother George, who resides in a handsome brick house just west, on the cross-road leading to Primrose Street, are the only sons of George A. Teed. It is a branch of the family heretofore mentioned, and both of the young men (they are the only male survivors) are energetic, earnest, careful and prosperous farmers, as is evidenced by their buildings and the condition of their farms.

TURNPIKES AND RAILROADS.—It was important in the early days to secure easy transportation of goods and passengers to large markets and cities, and hence turnpikes were made through different sections, connecting different important points of business. The Croton turnpike was the name bestowed on the high road running through the town in a north and south direction, traversing its entire length, with toll-gates at certain points along the route. These turnpike roads were kept in the best possible order, owned and controlled by stock companies incorporated by the Legislature. The expenses of repairs, etc., and dividends, if any, were provided for by the receipts of certain sums levied on passers through the different gates, either on foot, in one or two-horse vehicles or on horse-back, and also on droves of cattle or sheep. Cattle were thus taxed by the score, instead of the single head, and parties were also allowed to commute by the quarter or yearly. Mail-stages also passed over the turnpike to and from New York *via* Sing Sing. The Croton turnpike was the continuation of the Southeast turnpike, which had its northeastern terminus in Danbury, where it connected with the Boston road. The Croton road had its southern terminus in Sing Sing, where it connected with New York by turnpike. Thus there was a constant stream of travel passing through this town, especially through the village. At this point a road branched off to the west, passing through Yorktown to Peekskill, which was also a much traveled route, especially for drovers with cattle. Along this route the old mile-stones are still to be seen, brown, moss-covered, but plainly showing the legend "twelve miles to Peekskill," "fourteen miles to Peekskill," etc. Along this western road are scattered the prosperous, highly cultivated farms and handsome residences of the Hallowells, Charles G. Teed, the Greens, Munson E. Frost and Joseph Perry, whose picturesque old mill stands on the Muscoot, near the road, surrounded by the tall elms of nearly a century's growth. The first records of the Croton turnpike are found in a book in which they were entered under date of September 25, 1807, at which meeting of the subscribers, held at the house of Nathaniel W. Marvin, in Southeast, the following directors were elected: Darius Crosby, Enoch Crosby, Joshua Purdy, Joseph Owea, Joseph C. Field, David Baldwin, Daniel Howes, Nathaniel W. Marvin, Russell I. Minor, Peter Crosby; Joshua Purdy, president; Russell I. Minor, clerk.

It was here "*Resolved* that Joshua Purdy, Esq., wait on his Excellency, the Governor, and request him to appoint the commission to lay out the said turnpike road mentioned in the Parliamentary Act relative to the Croton Turnpike Road." In October, 1809, a gate was ordered to be "erected on and across the said road on Somers Town Plane, near the house of Hachaliah Bailey." On May 22, 1813, a reward of two hundred dollars was offered "for the

apprehension of the persons who set fire to a house intended for a toll-house, and have made threats against the property of the company." In 1829, Hachaliah Bailey was elected secretary and John Owens, president, and the following toll gatherers or gate-keepers appointed: No. 1, Medad Palmer; No. 2, Thomas Betties; No. 3, David Adams. The numbers refer to the gates. November 8, 1833, John Reed was appointed toll-gatherer at the gate erected at Owensville. During the year 1839 there was received for tolls at Gate No. 1, \$586; No. 2, \$519; No. 3, \$274. At this time there were two thousand shares of the stock held and a dividend of forty cents per share was paid. At the incorporation, in 1807, the original number of shares was five hundred, at twenty dollars per share. The annual dividends paid amounted to from twenty-five to forty cents per share. The last dividend was paid in 1849, and the stock of the Croton Turnpike Company was transferred to a non-resident, the gates removed and it became a free road, although still known as the "Turnpike." The last board of directors were Thaddeus Crane, Ray Tompkins, John Titus, John J. June, Edwin Crosby, Jabez Jones, Silas Finch, Gerard Crane, Caleb S. Angevine; John Titus, president; Jabez Jones, secretary.

The railroads touching the town are but two. A branch of the New York and Harlem, running from Golden's Bridge, a distance of seven miles in a northerly course, to Lake Mahopac, is the first railroad that ever touched this latter point. Nearly its whole length is within the borders of the town. It is said to have been the first really new road complete ever constructed by the late Commodore Vanderbilt. Previous to its construction, parties seeking Mahopac as a summer resort were carried by stages from Croton Falls. A railroad project was broached for the western part of the town by which communication could be established between New York, different points on the Hudson and the New England States. This scheme was unfolded to the authorities of the Harlem road and a plan was at once formed to run a branch road from the Harlem at Golden's Bridge, direct through Somers Centre to the Lake. Before the first-mentioned scheme was put in operation, ground was broken and the construction of the Lake Branch began under the direction of George F. Avery, engineer, and was carried forward briskly to a satisfactory conclusion. On the 4th day of July, 1871, the first train of cars, bearing an excursion party, passed over the road to Lake Mahopac. It was not until 1872 that freight and passenger trains were run regularly on schedule time. For a time the travel and freight traffic promised favorably, but it has never been as great as was anticipated, and of late years, since the completion of another line, it has barely paid expenses. Somers Centre is the only station on the line in the town, from which is shipped about three thousand five hundred quarts of milk per day.

There is a switch on the road at Plum Brook Crossing, a little more than a mile south of the Centre, at which some two thousand five hundred quarts of milk per day are received.

The other road is called the New York City and Northern Railroad, and runs north through the extreme western edge of the town, touching at two stations—Amawalk and West Somers. This line connects at Brewster's, in Putnam County, with the New England, for points east to Boston. The principal business of this road, so far as this section is concerned, is the shipment of milk for the New York market. Owing to a lower freight tariff, its business is nearly double that of the Harlem Branch in this particular product, while in passenger and freight transportation it is more than double. The road, however, has met with many changes of proprietorship and administration since its inception, and it has been in operation only since 1879. In the first instance it was bonded, and subscriptions were freely taken by residents along its proposed line, but after reverses and fluctuations it became nearly or quite bankrupt, and the original investors were heavy losers. At present its business is steadily increasing, although it is now in the hands of receivers. Both of these roads are very dilatory in the payment of their annual taxes to the town, and a section of the Northern has been sold for the same. West Somers Post-Office and station, on this road, is a small collection of houses situated at the foot of Slop Street, more euphoniously known as Mahopac Avenue. It is one of the four principal streets running north and south, and is bordered by fine farms and comfortable dwellings. At West Somers is a store, blacksmith-shop and passenger-depot, while several neat cottages indicate enterprise. At Amawalk the store and shop constitute the village exclusive of the farm houses in the immediate vicinity. Near this station is the site of the ancient Indian village, and also a short distance away is the Friends' burial-place, which, at an early date, was the only burial-ground in the vicinity. It is related by a member of an old family that sometime in the early part of the century a person was to be buried there, and one of the leading members of the society was asked for the requisite permission. "What's the color of the coffin?" asked the sturdy Friend. "Black," was the answer (the coffin was of pine stained). "So is the devil!" was the curt reply, and the official rode away without vouchsafing another word. A member of the Green family buried two children in the ground and was refused permission to place even two field-stones at the head of the graves, to mark them. Today caskets and monuments are in vogue, and no protest is uttered.

VILLAGES OF THE TOWN.—The village of Somers is beautifully located on a level plain nearly a mile in length by one-eighth of a mile wide, with a broad, level drive through its centre. With the hamlets and post-offices of Somers Centre and West Somers,

it comprises the village population of the town. Fine farms and comfortable residences, many of the latter handsome edifices, border on Lovell, Primrose, Tomahawk and Slop Streets, the four named thoroughfares of the town outside the turnpike. All along the extent of the latter, handsome farm-houses and well-cultivated farms greet the eye and a general sense of substantial prosperity is conveyed to the traveler.

The village of Somers, or, as it is generally known, Somerstown Plain, is the principal collection of houses in the township. In early days it was an important point and was much larger numerically than at present, the advent of the railroad having drawn the population and business to the stations. The first survey of the Harlem Railroad was made directly through the village, but was opposed by some of the wealthiest residents and hence it was carried to Purdy's Station. Soon after it began running regularly several buildings were bought and removed to the station, one and a half miles distant from the Plain. In early days the village contained hat-factories, carriage-factories, furniture-shop, blacksmith-shop, three hotels, two stores, harness-shop, etc. In 1810 there was a newspaper published here, of which further mention will be made. This was also a prominent stopping-place for the stages of the "Red Bird" and "Eagle" lines, which passed through here for New York, connecting at Danbury with the Boston Line. At present it is a collection of some thirty-five dwellings, two churches, two store buildings, a village court-room, which is also the polling place, a hotel and bank. The Farmers' and Drovers' National Bank of Somers was organized in 1839 as an associated free bank under the State laws. The incorporation and beginning of business took place March 16, 1839. Its securities were stocks and real estate and its capital was one hundred and eleven thousand one hundred and fifty dollars. The following were its first directors: Horace Bailey, Leonard Clift, John Titus, Benjamin Doane, Stephen Brown, Jr., Epenetus Howe, Benjamin Lent, Edward Finch, Monson Perry, Isaac H. Purdy, Gerard Crane, Edwin Crosby, Charles Wright; Horace Bailey, president; Egbert Howland, cashier.

The bank transacted business under the State laws twenty-six years, or until 1865, when it became a national bank in conformity with the National Banking Law. In March, 1885, at a meeting of the shareholders, it was voted to continue its corporate existence another twenty years from June 9, 1885, or until June, 1905. The bank is pleasantly located in the corner, on the first floor of a large square brick building, fronting the green in the village. Its profits have always been moderate, but steady. Its bills have always been at or above par. Its dividends have always been regularly declared and paid. During its existence two unsuccessful attempts have been made to rob it, the last one in the spring of 1882, when powder was used to blow open the safe, which was an old one. The only result, however, was a

partial opening of the outer door of the safe, at which stage the robbers left. A new and improved safe was then put in the bank. This institution has a large clientage among farmers and merchants of this section. The president is William Bailey, of whom a sketch has been given. Alonzo B. Thacker, the present cashier, was born in Poughkeepsie, but his father removed to Somers when he was a child, and Mr. Thacker has resided in Somers nearly all his life, with the exception of a few years spent in farming in the western part of the State, and a short time in New Jersey. He is a little past middle age, and is a vigilant, trusty, hard-working banking officer. He married Sarah, daughter of Horace Bailey, and has three children, his son, Horace B., holding the office of assistant cashier and director in the bank. The entire time of both these gentlemen is fully occupied by this business, as is also that of a clerk, William Moore, of Purdy's. The present board of directors are William Bailey, T. H. Theall, Cornelius Dean, William H. Wright, H. Hobart Keeler, Thomas L. Purdy, Odle Close, I. H. Purdy, William N. Todd, A. B. Thacker, H. B. Thacker; William Bailey, president; A. B. Thacker, cashier; H. B. Thacker, assistant cashier.

INNS.—Of inns or hotels Somers has but one at the present time, although there are six dwellings within the borders, now occupied as residences, that were taverns in the early days, some of them as late as the '40s. In 1802 there were five prominent taverns—one near West Somers; one near the Centre, and where the town-meetings were held; one in the southern part, at Whitehall Corner, on the Mail turnpike, a large whitewashed building, which gave the corners of the roads a name; and two on the "Plain." Afterwards "Thorn's tavern," in the western portion, now a handsome residence, owned by John Purdy, was a prominent stopping-place for drovers and others traveling the Peekskill road, and a great resort for parties of young people during the winter. The most prominent, however, of any of these houses was the "Elephant Hotel," owned and kept by Hachaliah Bailey, who had the building erected in 1825. It is made of brick, which was manufactured on the farm, a few rods from the site of the hotel. The building is about sixty feet square, three stories in height, with a brick two-story addition in the rear, used as a kitchen, and the second story as sleeping-rooms. It has an entrance on the south, consisting of stone, iron-railed steps, and a stone-floored portico, leading into a broad, high-ceilinged hall, which extends the length of the building. To the right of the main hall is a short side hall, leading to a frame addition on the east side of the building, which contains three rooms below and sleeping apartments above. At this side also is the staircase leading to the second story. The house contains twenty-six rooms and is connected by a hallway on the second floor with a fine, large ball-room, which has held the social gatherings of several gene-

rations. The inside partition walls are of brick, being carried up with the building. The whole is covered with a deck roof, on the top of which is a level space, railed in with an ornamental wooden railing, from which a fine view of the surrounding country can be obtained. This hotel has provided shelter and abundant accommodations to many well-known and prominent personages of the State and nation. The room is still shown which was occupied by Aaron Burr on one occasion, and Munroe Edwards and other eminent lawyers, statesmen and politicians have enjoyed the noted hospitality of the "Elephant Hotel." This is the first and only name it has known in the sixty years of its existence. It is owned by William Bailey, and is occupied and managed by Ward Bronson.

NEWSPAPERS.—As early as 1809 a weekly newspaper was established here and published regularly. It was a sixteen-column folio, of moderate size and neatly printed. The copy before us has the following in print:

Tuesday, July 31, 1810.

SOMERS MUSEUM

AND

WESTCHESTER COUNTY ADVERTISER.

VOL. I. PRINTED AND PUBLISHED BY MILTON F. CUSHING. No. 37

First column,—

"Original Essay
For the *Somers Museum*,
Essay No. 5.
Education of Youth."

Then follows in the second, third and fourth columns the correspondence between Mr. Canning and Lord Erskine. Albert Gallatin's name appears as the writer of a paper on the correspondence. On the third page is intelligence from the Baltic, dated June 24th, and a copy of the letter from Emperor Napoleon to the Archduke Charles requesting him to officiate as proxy at the former's marriage to the Princess Louise. It also announces: "The 'frigate Constitution,' of forty-four guns, Commodore Hull, sailed from Boston for Norfolk on Friday last, where, it is said, the whole of our little navy are to assemble."

A special is given:

WASHINGTON CITY, July 18.

"We are informed that the sloop-of-war 'Hornet,' will sail for New York between the 25th and last of this month, for France and England, and that her commander will take charge of mercantile and other letters for Europe. The Secretary of War also left this city yesterday on a visit to the State of New York."

The prospectus reads,—

"*The Museum* is printed and published at Somers, Westchester County, every Tuesday by Milton F. Cushing, next door west of Joseph Cowan Jr.'s Inn.

"**CONTRIBUTORS:** To be printed on good paper, with new type, at one dollar and seventy-five cents per annum, payable quarterly; or two dollars, if not paid within a year. To companies of thirteen or more who take their papers from the office, one dollar and twenty-five cents, payable on delivery. To those subscribers who receive their papers by mail,

one dollar and twenty-five cents, payable in advance. Advertisements inserted conspicuously and at a moderate price. Those from out of town must be paid for before they are inserted. No papers discontinued until all arrearages are paid."

Among the advertisements appears:

"REMOVAL.

"FROST & GREEN

"Have removed their store of goods a few doors east of Micajah Wright's Inn, in Somers Village, where they have on hand a general assortment of Dry Goods and Groceries, which they offer for sale on reasonable terms for cash or produce."

Also,—

"The subscriber has commenced the practice of law in the town of Somers, Westchester County. His office is in the house of Joseph Owen, Jr. Business in the professional line attended to with fidelity.

"FREDERICK J. COFFIN.

"Somers, June 12, 1810."

Mr. Coffin was, after this, postmaster for many years, master in chancery and one of the surrogates of the county. The paper was continued some time, and gives evidence of considerable journalistic ability. At present there is no publication conducted in the town.

CHURCHES.—There are four churches and one chapel in the town. Two of them are Methodist Episcopal—the church and chapel—one Protestant Episcopal and two Presbyterian. Three have ceased to exist. One of these is the Christian Church, a large, barn-like structure in the western part of the town, which was used by this denomination for a number of years. It was erected sixty years ago, near Thorn's tavern, in West Somers, and the congregation acquired two acres of land. After services had been held in it for a number of years it was used by other denominations at intervals, but was finally abandoned and now forms part of a barn near the place upon which it was erected. About the same date the Methodist Protestants erected a small church in Tomahawk Street, and occupied it for some twenty-five years, when, by the decrease of the society by death and removal, it was given up to the occasional use of the Methodist Episcopal Society of Cortlandt Circuit. This society abandoned it in 1877. In 1829 a Methodist brick church was erected. Its location was a few rods north of Somers Plain, on the road leading to Lake Mahopac. It was a small structure, unpretending in appearance, yet large enough to accommodate the society resident in its vicinity, the average number of which was fifty. It became a part of Cortlandt Circuit and was supplied with stated preaching by the regular ministers of that circuit, whose names will be found in the sketch of Mt. Zion Church.

Owing to the removal, death and dismissal of members, and the organization of churches in adjacent neighborhoods, it was decided, in 1850, to disband. At this time the "Millerite Excitement" had reached this town, and the adherents of Joe Miller made overtures for the purchase of the church property. The board of trustees at this time consisted of Martin

Fanning, James Sloat and David Adams. Mr. Fanning strongly opposed the proposition of the Millerites, while the other members of the board favored it. At last his advice prevailed, and in this year (1850) he sold the property to Harrison Wright and turned the proceeds over to the Methodist Episcopal Society at Purdy's Station.

What is now called the Presbyterian Church of Somers is a plain, substantial, wood edifice, located centrally on Somers Plain, on the north side of a broad, level drive, flanked on either side by the old Union Burying-Ground and to the north by Ivandell Cemetery. A few rods in the rear rises Prospect Hill, or Brown's Mountain. It is no longer used as a place of regular church service, but is kept in excellent repair, and occasional services are held therein. On the 7th of September, 1806, it was called the "Union Meeting-House," and was owned and attended by the Christian people of various denominations who resided in its vicinity. The building was erected some time in 1799. On the date above mentioned (September 7, 1806), according to the church records, the following persons met and organized a society: Male—Deacon Elijah Dean, Assistant Deacon Darius Crosby, David Crawford, Uel. Todd, Shadrach Richards, Henry Slawson; Females—Sally Brown, Tirzah Crosby, Delilah Pugsley, Clarissa Haight, Phoebe Richards.

An entry under date of 1808 reads thus: "In the year of our Lord 1808, the Legislature of the State of New York having changed the name of the town from Stephentown to Somers, the title of the church became The Congregational Church of Somers." In 1810 there were twenty-seven members, and the church met at the Union Meeting-House under the ministrations of Rev. Silas Constant, who was the first pastor. He was followed by the subjoined ministers:

Rev. Sylvanus Haight, installed 1811, resigned.
 Rev. Allen Blair, installed 1813, resigned.
 Rev. Ezra Day, installed 1818, resigned.
 Rev. Abraham Purdy, installed 1824, died.
 Rev. Griffith H. Griffiths, installed 1825, resigned.
 Rev. Joseph Nimmo, installed 1832, resigned.

On May 2, 1833, is an entry as follows: "The Congregational Church of Somers was this day organized into a Presbyterian Church by a committee of the Bedford Presbytery." Under this dispensation the pastors were,—1835, Rev. Henry Benedict, resigned; 1836, Rev. Alexander Leadbither, resigned. Then came a division of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church, and hence a division of this society, in May, 1838. The Old School portion of the society, it seems by the records, took possession of the meeting-house and parsonage, and the New School people held worship in the Methodist Church. They were not idle, however, and "a suit was instituted by the Constitutional Presbyterians for possession of the church property. The cause was tried before the Supreme Court of Westchester County, Judge Ruggles

presiding. The jury, without leaving their seats, gave a verdict in favor of plaintiffs."—(Ch. Rec.) Then follows a list of twenty members who withdrew and constituted the church of Croton Falls. In October, 1838, the transfer was made from the Bedford Presbytery to the Third Presbytery of New York of the "First Presbyterian Church of Somers." Following is a list of the pastors:

Rev. George Monilaws, installed 1839, died.
 Rev. D. D. T. McLaughlin, installed 1846, resigned.
 Rev. W. K. Platt, installed 1857, resigned.
 Rev. J. Collins, installed 1864, resigned.
 Rev. P. H. Burghardt, installed 1865, resigned.
 Rev. C. B. Whitcomb, installed 1869, resigned.
 Rev. C. B. Dye, installed 1871, resigned.
 Rev. Joseph Beers, installed 1872, resigned.

The first statistical report appears on the records December 3, 1848, when there were forty-three communicants; in 1850, forty-five; 1852, fifty-five; 1854, fifty-three; 1855, forty-nine; 1859, seven.

In 1872 the church was discontinued as a regular preaching-point, owing to the decline of the society, because of deaths or other causes and the nearness of other churches, together with internecine differences. The Union Burying-Ground, immediately surrounding the church building, is one of the oldest in this part of the county, one interment, the name of which is undecipherable, bearing date 1720. Here, also, is buried one of the former pastors of the church, who died among his people, and over whose grave is erected a neat monument with the following inscription:

"In
 Memory of the
 Rev. George
 Monilaws,
 Pastor of the
 Presbyterian Church
 in Somers,
 who died
 April 6, 1848,
 Aged 34 years.

Estimable as a man,
 Earnest as a Preacher,
 Faithful as a Pastor,
 He being dead yet speaketh.

The memory of the just is blessed."

Here, also, is buried one of the original deacons of this church and prominent residents of this vicinity. Inscribed on the plain slab is the following:

"In
 Memory of
 Darius Crosby, who died
 Nov. 18, 1818, aged 50 years."

One of the elders of the church, and clerk of the society from 1833 to 1865, also lies here, with the plain inscription,—

"Ebenezer
 White, M.D.
 ———
 Died
 March 29, 1865,
 At 85 Years, 11 Mos
 and 7 D's."

Dr. White came from Yorktown to Somers Plain in 1800, and resided here until his death. His son, Samuel White, now occupies the family mansion, at the "head of the Plain," and part of the original farm was incorporated as Ivandell Cemetery. In this old ground may also be found the grave of one of the original owners of the large landed tracts granted by Andrew Johnson,—

"To the Memory of
 Hachaliah Brown,
 Born Aug. 27, 1797,
 Died May 22, 1813."

He was the son of Hachaliah Brown, of Rye. A great-grandson is also buried here. A fine monument, upon whose face is carved two crossed cannon, a sword and belt, with the letters "U. S.," marks his resting-place. Upon the obverse side is,—

"Hachaliah Brown,
 Brevet-Capt. U. S. Army,
 Born
 February 26, 1822,
 Died
 August 22, 1853.
 ———
 As the tree falleth so it lieth."

Upon the right side is inscribed,—

"Medelen
 Cerro Gordo,
 Garita Belen,
 Mexico."

Upon the left,—

"A Tribute of Affection
 To the Brave and Good
 by Regimental
 and
 Private friends."

Here, also, lie the remains of the wife of the noted Revolutionary spy, Luther Kinnicutt,—

"In Memory of
 Mary, wife of
 Luther Kinnicutt,
 who departed this life
 November the 13th, 1811,
 aged 56 years, 6 months
 and 10 days."

Many memorials of the early settlers' families are to be found here and in the adjoining cemetery, to which they have been removed. The Baileys, Cranes, Wrights, Owens, Joneses, Crosbys, Finches and Whites occupy much space in this village of the dead. Ivandell Cemetery adjoins the old ground and is laid out in circular drives and walks and is planted with ornamental shrubbery. It consists of seven acres and was part of the farm of Dr. Ebenezer White.

James W. Bedell, a son-in-law of Dr. White, purchased the land of Samuel White and laid out a cemetery. The entrance is formed of heavy iron gates, attached to high, square, capped granite posts. These gates open on the main driveway, which winds around various knolls and through miniature dells until it reaches a receiving vault excavated in the hillside

and formed of solid masonry. After the purchase and completion of the grounds, measures were taken to incorporate the cemetery by the following association of gentlemen, who met at the court-room in Somers village, November 10, 1866: Isaac H. Purdy, Aaron B. Whitlock, Odle Close, Joseph L. Sutton, William Marshall, Samuel White, Jackson O. Brown, James W. Bedell, Samuel S. Furgeson, William Turk, Sanford K. Teed, William Parker, William E. Teed, George W. Gregory, Eli Reynolds, William N. Bedell.

After the association had been permanently organized the following board of trustees were elected: I. H. Purdy, A. B. Whitlock, O. Close, Wm. Marshall, J. O. Brown, J. L. Sutton, William Gerritsen, Benj. F. Camp, S. White, W. Turk, S. S. Furgeson, J. W. Bedell; J. W. Bedell, president; W. Marshall, vice-president; William Turk, secretary; Samuel White, treasurer; William D. Parker, sexton.

In 1868 the act of incorporation was granted and Ivandell became a recognized burial-place. Several bodies were removed from the old burial-ground to the cemetery and plots were rapidly disposed of. Some handsome monuments have been erected in the grounds and some have been removed to Ivandell from other cemeteries. The present board of trustees and officers are: A. B. Thacker, William Bailey, Odle Close, James Hyatt, J. W. Bedell, A. B. Whitlock, S. White, Charles G. Teed, I. H. Purdy, T. Crane, W. N. Todd, W. H. Wright; President, J. W. Bedell; Treasurer, S. White; Secretary, James Hyatt; Superintendent of Interments, David C. Light.

In 1880, Dr. Oliver White, of New York City, a son of Dr. Ebenezer White, left a legacy of one thousand dollars to the cemetery association, the interest of which is to be applied to the keeping in order of the grounds.

The Presbyterian Church of Croton Falls is a plain, neat structure, surmounted with a low, square belfry, and pleasantly situated on the north bank of the main branch of the Croton River, in the north-eastern corner of the town, in what was, previous to the advent of the New York and Harlem Railroad, denominated Owensville. Here, fronting on a wide, tree-bordered, well-kept street, is the spiritual home of the congregation that was formerly a part of the First Presbyterian Church of Somers. As noted before, in the division of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church, in 1838, dissensions crept into the old church, which resulted in a trial before Judge Ruggles, and the withdrawal of a portion of the membership, who organized the Croton Falls Church. This church continued its connection with the Bedford Presbytery and received as its stated supply, in 1841, the Rev. Joseph Nimmo. The first members of the session of this church appear on the records as Benjamin Mead, Horace Jones and John Owen, elders, with John Owen, clerk, which position was filled by him until 1843. On January 20, 1846, a

meeting of the male members of the society was held at their place of worship, and a reorganization of the body took place. "It was unanimously resolved that the corporate name of the church should be 'The Presbyterian Church at Croton Falls.'" On the 6th of August, 1847, it is recorded that "Benjamin Mead, ruling elder of the church, died in the hope of a blessed immortality." He was one of the original elders and his place was filled by Thomas R. Lee, a direct descendant of Hon. Elijah Lee, whose residence was at Croton Falls. The church building was erected in 1847, and has been continuously occupied for worship, since that time, with but few exceptions, as in the case of illness or resignation of pastors. In October, 1870, measures were taken to unite this with the First Presbyterian Church of Somers, under one pastoral charge, alternating the public services. This was accomplished in 1872, and a committee of four from each society was appointed, as follows:

Somers Committee—Jacob Ruxer, G. B. Sarles, B. H. Merritt and Stephen Green.

Croton Falls Committee—George W. Abrams, Dr. C. E. Lee, Dr. J. G. Wood and Albert Chamberlain.

These united services was continued until the discontinuance of services at the First Presbyterian Church in Somers. There is no regular burial-place connected with this church, many of its members being plot-owners in Ivandell Cemetery. The records show a membership, at its organization, of seventeen; its first statistical report is dated April 4, 1869, to April 4, 1870. Whole number of communicants in 1870, forty-nine; in 1871, fifty-five. In 1885 it was forty-nine.

The pastors have been:

1847-48.—Rev. Joseph Nimmo	Resigned.
1849-50.—Rev. David Irving	"
1851-52.—Rev. James B. Ramsey	"
1853-57.—Rev. T. S. Brudner	"
1858-59.—Rev. A. B. Bullion	"
1860.—Rev. Andrew Shiland	"
1861-62.—Rev. A. H. Seeley	"
1863.—Rev. James Sinclair	"
1864-65.—J. B. Stoddard	"
1866-68.—Rev. H. W. Smuller	"
1868-71.—Rev. W. J. Thompson	"
1872-73.—Rev. Joseph Beers	"
1874-79.—Rev. R. A. Blackford	"
1881-84.—Rev. R. B. Mattice	"
1884-85.—Rev. R. Gibson	"

The church is in a prosperous state and bids fair to continue thus for many years.

In the early days of the history of the Methodist Episcopal Church, circuits were the adopted form of regular pastoral visitations to preaching-points, some being termed "six weeks' circuits," some "four weeks circuits," this being the length of time required by the preacher to fill his various preaching appointments on the circuit and reach his starting-point again. Of this class was Cortlandt Circuit, so named in honor of the original owners of this part of the county. Cortlandt Circuit first comprised all the upper part of the county under the jurisdiction of

the Methodist Episcopal Church, and the churches of this denomination in Somers, Lewisboro' and North Salem were thus designated as late as 1850. As the population increased in numbers and ability to maintain distinct church societies, the different churches became detached and the circuit system, as originally devised and operated, was abandoned. Mt. Zion Methodist Episcopal Church belonged to this circuit system and was one of the important points on old Cortlandt Circuit. There are but meagre records of the early history of this church, the original books having been mislaid or lost through some oversight or carelessness of those having them in charge. The society, however, was organized May 10, 1794, through the instrumentality of Rev. Freeborn Garrettson, who was a presiding elder in the Methodist connection and one of the contemporaries of Bishop Asbury. The church building was erected in the same year (1794), six years after the organization of Stepentown as a separate township. Joseph Hadden, Thomas Bailey, John Stedwell, Abraham Golding, Samuel Wilson, Jr., and Benjamin Huestis were elected the first board of trustees. The present board consists of James P. Teed, Asa Adams, Daniel Kennard, Augustus B. Quick, Harvey Varis, Clark J. Tompkins, Edward Ward and Jacob C. Tompkins.

The building was erected in the style so generally approved by Methodism at that early date. It was thirty feet wide, forty feet in length and one story in height, which was some years later increased to two and one-half stories. On three sides was a gallery which would accommodate as many persons as the body of the church. At the north end of the room was a high, narrow, inclosed pulpit, which has given way to the more modern and lower platform. The seats were plain, narrow, high and straight-backed. These have also been changed. The building was erected by Micajah Wright, who was a carpenter and farmer, and resided immediately across the highway west of the church. He afterwards removed to Somers village, three and a half miles distant, where, in 1810, he kept an "inn," and in which place he died November 4, 1811, aged forty-eight years. He is buried in the Union Burying-Ground in the village.

When this church was organized Somerstown Plain was the most important point in this section of the county. For this reason the society located their house of worship but a short distance from this point, and near the high road to Peekskill, which passed through what was afterwards known as Teed's Corner and now as Somers Centre. The building is in good condition and is beautifully located on the point of one of the ridges of the town, fronting the south and commanding an extensive view southward and eastward over the cultivated farms and wooded hills of Bedford and Lewisboro', the adjoining towns. Immediately in front and on either side is inclosed the burying-ground attached to the church. About two

acres of ground are thus occupied by thickly-placed graves, the inscriptions on the headstones covering a period from 1797 to the present time, the ground having been enlarged and is still in use as a burial-place. Regular services have been held in this church and regular pastors have been in charge since its organization, in 1794. The oldest decipherable headstone in the church-yard is that of

"Anna Teed,
daughter of John and Hannah Teed, who was born in the year of
our Lord 1703, Nov^r, and depart^d this Life
June the 4th, 1797."

Some twenty-five years ago Cortlandt Circuit, as such, was broken up and Mt. Zion became a separate charge, as did the other remaining churches comprising the circuit. The membership of this church has averaged some sixty names, while the number of families in the charge is as many more. Owing to the peculiar system of the itinerancy of the Methodist ministry, it is a difficult matter to obtain the dates of ministry of the different pastors who have regularly occupied this pulpit. Among the earliest, however, we find the historic names of Revs. Elijah Woolsey, Stephen Remington, Barney Mathias, Cyrus Foss, Samuel Weeks, Elbert Osborn, John Reynolds, Jesse Hunt, Henry Hatfield, Alonzo Selleck, Horace Bartlett, D. Stoughton, Nicholas White, W. McKendree Bangs, Joseph Bangs, Thomas Edwards, E. Andrews (drowned in Hudson River) and Bradley Selleck.

In later years we find some of the dates of ministrations, as follows:

1835-36	Rev. S. Vandusen.
1834, '45-46	Rev. A. F. Selleck.
1841-42	Rev. Denton Keeler.
1848-49	Rev. A. N. Molyneaux.
1849	Rev. G. W. Knapp.
1849	Rev. Elbert Osborn.
1850, '63.	Rev. D. W. C. Van Gaasbeck.
1851-52	Rev. C. F. Pelton.
1853	Rev. A. K. Sanford.
1853-54	Rev. W. Stevens.
1853-54	Rev. James Rusk.
1854, '59-60	Rev. H. B. Mead.
1855-56	Rev. G. D. Townsend.
1857	Rev. C. Fuller.
1850-51	Rev. M. M. Curtis.
1853-54	Rev. Richard Koeler.
1858-59	Rev. J. H. Lent.
1855	Rev. D. Gibson.
1861-62	Rev. H. C. Humphrey.
1863-64	Rev. W. E. Ketcham.
1865-66	_____
1867-68	_____
1870-72	Rev. Thomas S. Lent.
1873	Rev. C. R. North.
1874-76	Rev. N. O. Lent.
1877	Rev. E. Ashton.
1878-79	Rev. U. Symonds.
1881-83	Rev. T. S. Lent.
1884-85	Rev. R. L. Shurter.

The various pastors have held services at different points in the town in school-houses, and thus formed a nucleus for churches of the future.

At one of these points, Yorktown Station, on the New York City and Northern Railroad, a church has

already been formed, through the efforts of Mt. Zion Society, and in the year 1885 a church building was completed and dedicated, at which regular services are held by the pastor in charge of Mt. Zion. At another point, one and a half miles north of the old church at Somers Centre, a station on the Mahopac Branch of the New York and Harlem Railroad, a chapel was erected in 1882 which is also auxiliary to and under the supervision of Mt. Zion Methodist Episcopal Church. In the old grave-yard at the church are to be found the names of many of the old families of Somers. About sixty feet south of the church entrance is a plain headstone, upon which is inscribed,—

“ Sacred
to
the Memory of
Abraham Golding,
who departed this life
the 15th of Dec., 1810,
aged 69 years and 1 day.”

Mr. Golding was one of the original founders of the church, after whom was named the station of Golden's Bridge in the adjacent town of Lewisboro.' Another of the original board of trustees is buried in a family ground on the Oliver Todd estate, about one mile and a quarter south of the church, whose headstone bears the following inscription :

“ In
Memory of
John Stedwell,
Who Died
June 3, 1822,
Aged 84 Years, 4 months & 4 days.”

Near the grave of Abraham Golding is that of the second wife of Enoch Crosby, who was the well-known “Spy” of Cooper's novel,—

“ Margaret,
wife of
Enoch Crosby, Esq.,
formerly the wife of
Colonel Benjamin Green, deceased,
Died March 22, 1825,
Aged 64 years, 3 months
and 20 days.”

On the east side of the church and near the building itself is,—

“ The Grave of
John Tyack,
Born in New London,
Connecticut,
March 3, 1788.
Died in the City of
New York,
June 15, 1841,
Aged 53 years.”

This gentleman was one of the first importers of mill-stones into America. He was a half-brother of Joshua Culver, who was the owner of the farm adjoining the church property on the west, which he purchased in the early part of the present century. On the same side of the grounds and inclosed with a neat iron fence, is a large plot belonging to the family of Samuel Teed, whose monument occupies a central

position in the burial-plot. Upon its sides is inscribed,—

“ Samuel Teed, died
Sept. 7th, 1857.
Aged 72 years, 10 mos.
and 7 days.

—
Mary,
Wife of Samuel Teed, died
Dec. 15, 1858,
Aged 71 years, 3 mos.
and 8 days.”

These were among the early residents of the town, having been born within its limits, and continued to reside on a large farm half a mile north of the church until their death. At the death of the parents an unbroken family of fifteen children attended the funerals, and at the present time but three of the children are deceased. One of the sons, James P., is the present supervisor of the town, a position held by his brother, Wm. E. Teed (deceased), for a number of years. The father of Mary Teed, wife of Samuel Teed, was the first town clerk of the town. Memorials of the Teeds, Varisis, Reynoldses, Weekses, Turners, Kniffens and Nelsons are to be seen on all sides as we pass through this old burial-place.

The congregation which now comprises the membership of St. Luke's Protestant Episcopal Church of Somers formerly united in the services held by different denominations at the Union Meeting-House, having, in common with other branches of Christian people in the town, a pecuniary interest in the church building. Occasionally the service of the Episcopal Church was conducted by ministers of that denomination in the old meeting-house; but, about 1835, a separate organization was agitated, and in that year the present parish was formed, through the instrumentality of the Rev. Alexander Fraser. Steps were now taken to dispose of the Episcopalian interest in the old church building and property, and to secure a site and erect a house of worship for themselves. In this undertaking the members of the society were ably seconded by many of the residents of the town who had no particular affiliation with any body of Christians. The incorporation of the parish took place on the 28th of February, 1835, and the building was completed in 1842, the consecration services being conducted by the Right Rev. Benjamin Tredwell Onderdonk, on the 19th of January of that year, with Isaac Purdy and Fred. J. Coffin as church wardens, and Thaddeus Barlow, Aaron Brown, William Marshall, Gerard Crane, Edwin Finch, Charles Wright, William Clock and Ray Tompkins as vestrymen. The church building is a plain, substantial edifice of wood, standing on a basement of dressed stone, located centrally in one acre of ground, which was purchased of Horace Bailey. Its location is near the junction of the West or Peekskill road with the Croton turnpike or Sing Sing road. The front of the building presents a fine portico, with dressed stone floor

and steps, and roof supported by four lofty Ionic columns. Upon the top is a square belfry. The interior is neatly frescoed and ornamented with appropriate Scriptural texts. The chancel window is of stained glass, rich and chaste, and was presented to the church by Mrs. Elizabeth Vail, of Purdy's Station, a daughter of Isaac Hart Purdy, of North Salem. The chancel is beautifully decorated in blue and gold and contains two memorial tablets, one on either side of the window, on one of which is inscribed the Lord's Prayer, on the other a portion of the Decalogue. The decoration and tablets were a gift to the church by the Rev. C. E. Selleck, of Norwalk, a minister of the Episcopal Church, and principal of a private school for boys and young men at the latter place.

The gift was in commemoration of Willie Crane, a son of Thaddeus Crane, who, while a lad and attending Mr. Selleck's school, was accidentally drowned. The church is in a flourishing condition and numbers among its members some of the oldest and most prominent names of Somers, North Salem and Lewisboro. On one occasion, during the late war, the rector, Rev. Mr. Murphy, refused to read a special prayer for the soldiers and sailors and for those who had friends in the army, which prayer was ordered by the church. For a short time there was considerable agitation, but the matter reached the ears of the Right Rev. Bishop Potter, who at once removed the cause of complaint by removing the rector. The present rector, Rev. R. C. Russell, has officiated during the past sixteen years. He resides in North Salem, the two parishes being under one pastorate, but distinct in other matters. There is no regular burial-place connected with the parish, the members mainly being plot-owners in Ivandell Cemetery, and the various interments take place therein. Of the original vestrymen all are deceased save two—Thaddeus Barlow and Ray Tompkins. Mr. Barlow is still an officer of the church (being one of the wardens). He came into the town from Vermont in 1828, and has resided here since. He is the oldest living vestryman, being eighty-two years of age. Mr. Tompkins is still a resident of the town, although not connected with the congregation. His family are active members and strong supporters of the church. The present board of officers are Thaddeus Barlow, James Hyatt, wardens; Isaac Hart Purdy, Thaddeus Crane, William N. Todd, Isaac Purdy, William R. Strong, Thomas R. Lane, Richard Crilly, Isaac Brown, vestrymen.

Following is a list of the rectors:

1842-44	Rev. David H. Short.
1844-46	Rev. Samuel C. Davis.
1847-50	Rev. Alfred H. Partridge.
1851-54	Rev. John W. Moore.
1855-60	Rev. Benj. Webb.
1861-62	Rev. Chas. Douglass.
1863-66	Rev. Wm. Murphy.
1868-69	Rev. Jacob Moore.
1869	Rev. R. Condit Russell. ¹

¹ Present incumbent.

The number of communicants in 1842 was 13; present number, 61.

SCHOOLS.—The educational system of the town is conducted on the same basis as in all the country towns of the State. There is no especial school fund save that which is levied and collected as a tax. There are six full districts within the limits of the town, each having its school building, while four partial districts are to be found, the school buildings, with one exception, being located in adjoining towns. These buildings are of the usual order of country school architecture, as a rule,—plain, unpainted structures, generally placed on the verge of the highway, with but small or no grounds for recreation, and completely devoid of any tasteful or convenient arrangements.

The attendance is not large on the average at these schools, as the population of the town of school age is limited. From time to time districts have been consolidated, so that in some instances a large territory of two miles in length and nearly two in width is comprised within the boundaries of a district. One of the oldest, as well as the most important, of these districts includes the territory adjacent to and occupied by Somers Village or Plain. There was a school building on the site of the present house in 1800. Previous to this the school-house was situated half a mile farther northeast, as is mentioned in an old deed given by Andrew Brown to Benjamin Jessop on the 15th day of April, 1803. But few of the records of the district have been preserved, but some time in the early part of the present century a new building was erected on the site now occupied by the school, where it has since remained. The present house is located adjoining the grounds of the Presbyterian Church. It is a neat, two-story edifice surmounted by a cupola and bell. There are two classrooms and accommodations for one hundred and fifty pupils; but one of the rooms, however, is in use, with an average attendance of forty-five pupils. The building is located some rods back from the street, with a large play-ground, inclosed by a neat fence, in front. The interior of the school-house is completely furnished with the educational requisites of the age. About ten years ago the entire refurnishing of this building took place, and the olden style forms gave place to desks and seats of modern construction. Half a century ago the attendance at this school was much larger than at present and it then partook more of the character of an academy. Both upper and lower class-rooms were in use and the usual academic studies of those days were conducted. At present but little more than the rudiments are taught, the education being completed at some of the many seminaries and colleges of the country. The present teacher is Miss Amy Brown, a lineal descendant of one of the first settlers, Hachaliah Brown.

St. Joseph's Normal College is also located in the town of Somers, in a basin or bend of the Muscoot

River, at a point formerly devoted to the manufacture of the Empire Sewing-Machines and denominated Empireville. It is in the southern central part of the town, about one and a half miles from the mouth of the Muscote River. Here, in an inclosed valley, with but a narrow opening to the southeast, through which flows the rapid Muscote, are the buildings and grounds of this institution. The farm consists of three hundred acres. The buildings are of brick and were used by the sewing-machine company as factories, foundries and tenements. In March, 1882, the members of the Catholic Society, known as "The Brothers of the Christian Schools," purchased this property and at once began to remodel and improve it. The main building received the addition of one story (making it three stories in height) and a Mansard roof. This building fronts a beautiful lawn on the south and a high tower in the centre of the front denotes the principal entrance. The building is two hundred feet in length with an L one hundred and fifty feet long. The interior is divided into rooms for study, private rooms for the heads of the institute, and dormitories. At the east end of this building is the chapel, covering the entire width of the building and extending from the third floor to the roof. The ceiling is gracefully arched. The whole house is plain, simple and durable. To the west of this building were formerly standing six two-story brick cottages, which were the homes of the employees of the sewing-machine company. The houses were some twenty-five feet apart and formed a short street. These have been joined together into one long building surrounded with a broad veranda and used as one department of the college. A large, square, three-story and basement edifice, built of wood, and formerly used as a hotel, has also been converted into a department of the institute. All these buildings are of the most substantial character and are heated by a system of hot-water pipes. The river at this place has a fall of some seventy feet in one-eighth of a mile, and describes a half-circle around the plateau on which these buildings are located, thus furnishing abundance of water and power for all the purposes required. The society operating this college was established in France over two hundred years ago by John Baptist de la Salle.

It is under the jurisdiction of the Roman Catholic Church. Its object is the education of youth, and to this the members give their undivided attention. They live in community and lead lives of celibacy. The members number nearly fourteen thousand and are to be found in nearly every country in the world. They conduct institutions of learning in almost all the principal cities of the United States. In the International Exhibition at New Orleans, in 1884-85, they received the Grand Diploma of Honor, the highest award for school work. The college at Empireville received from the Exposition the Diploma of Honor for Normal Manuals, Appliances, Free-hand Draw-

ings, Linear and Architectural Maps and Studies from Nature. Brother Junian Peter, professor of botany at this college, received a Diploma for Collections of Plants and Woods, formed by him and his students for the museum.

The society is republican in form, the superior-general and his assistant being elected by the members. The general resides in Paris and the vice-general in Rome. St. Joseph's College includes three departments, viz.: the preparatory novitiate, the novitiate and the scholastic. In the first are boys from fourteen to sixteen years of age. Every possible care is taken of their physical, intellectual and moral training. Two years in this department qualifies them for the second or novitiate, where the studies are mainly religious, a special study of the rules, etc., of this society being made prominent. After passing a full year in this department they are admitted to the scholastic or final department. Here the attention of the student is directed to the theory and practice of teaching. The students give lessons in turn and are then criticized by both professors and their fellow-students. They are retained in this department until they receive a certificate of competency to teach, after which they are employed in teaching the primary classes in schools directed by members of the society. The preparatory novitiate occupies the long building formerly used as tenement-houses; the novitiate, the main building before described; and the scholastic department, the frame building formerly used as the hotel. The total number of pupils, including the three departments, in the St. Joseph's Normal College is one hundred and twenty.

The habit of the society gives them the appearance of ecclesiastics, consisting as it does of a long, black cassock, with a cloak over it, fastened by iron clasps, a falling collar and a black hat with wide brim; but they are not clergymen, their sole object being instruction. The institution is under the directorship of Brother Edward, a slightly-built, middle-aged gentleman of pleasing address, evidently of French extraction and of a high order of intelligence. His manner is frank and pleasing and he has evidently been appointed to the office he so ably fills on account of his exceptional qualifications.

The town received the following sums of money from the apportionment allotted by the State for school purposes: 1813, \$114.40; 1814-15, \$97.42; 1816-18, \$109.47; 1819-21, \$144.89; 1822-26, \$112.90; 1827-31, \$123.67; 1832-34, \$109.51; 1835, \$203.15; 1836-37, \$101.22; 1838-39, \$253.09; 1840, \$262.25; 1841, \$248.10.

In 1855 the town contained eight school districts, with a population of one thousand seven hundred and twenty-two, and received in that year \$659.78; in 1865, \$1169.78; in 1875, \$1642.50; and in 1885, \$1304.51.

Chas. C. Culver

BIOGRAPHY.

FERDINAND T. HOPKINS.

Ferdinand T. Hopkins is a descendant of one of the oldest families in Westchester County, the genealogy of which we append.¹ His great-grandmother was a sister of Enoch Crosby, the spy, famous as the "Harvey Birch" of Cooper's story.

Mr. Hopkins was born at Lake Mahopac, Putnam County, January 19, 1834, and continued to reside in that county till his twentieth year, when he removed to New York City. He has since followed a successful mercantile life, in connection with which he has been largely interested in real estate transactions. His early life was passed upon his father's farm, where he received a practical education, combined with a very thorough Christian training, which he has never forgotten and the principles of which he has not forsaken amid the sterner duties of his business career.

Mr. Hopkins first engaged in public affairs at the

¹Stephen Hopkins, of London, England, came to this country on the "Mayflower," in 1620, and settled in Plymouth, Mass. He brought with him, to his new home, his second wife, several children (including Oceanus, who was born on the voyage) and two servants. The following is the pedigree:

1st. *Stephen*, of London, and Plymouth, Mass.; born in 15—; married, first, ———, who died in England. By her he had Giles and Constance. He married, second, Elizabeth ———, in England. By her he had Damaris, Oceanus, Deborah, Caleb, Ruth and Elizabeth. Mr. Stephen Hopkins died at Plymouth in 1644.

2d. *Giles*, born ———; married Catharine Whelden, of Yarmouth, October, 1639. He was born in England and was a little boy when he came to America, with his father. He lived, for a time, in Yarmouth, Mass., and then removed to Earham (Cape Cod), where he died in 1690. Children: Mary, Stephen, John, Abigail, Deborah, Caleb, Ruth, Joshua, William, Elizabeth.

3d. *Stephen*, born in Yarmouth, September, 1642; married, first, Mary Myrick, of Earham, May 23, 1667. She died and he married, second, Bethia Atkins, in 1701. After the death of his first wife he removed to Harwich, Cape Cod, where he died October 10, 1748 or 1749. His children (all by his first wife) were Elizabeth, Stephen, Ruth, Judah, Samuel, Nathaniel, Joseph, Benjamin and Mary.

4th. *Joseph*, born 1688, in Harwich; married Mary Mayo, daughter of Hon. John and granddaughter of Rev. John Mayo, of Earham, April 17, 1712. He lived in Harwich all his life and died there April 24, 1771. She died January 15, 1771, aged seventy six years. Their tombstones are still standing in the old (now) Brewster Churchyard. Children: Isaac, Joseph, Mary, Jonathan, Hannah, Nathan, Prince, 180, Elizabeth, Prince 2d., Nathan 2d., Elizabeth, *Solomon*.

5th. *Joseph*, born in Harwich May 10, 1715; married Mary (or Mercy) Berry, September 16, 1736. They both joined the church August 29, 1742. They were dismissed to the church in "the Oblong" (now Putnam County, N. Y.), under the pastorate of the Rev. Elisha Kent, September 3, 1740. They probably removed some years previous, quite likely as early as 1745 or 1746. He died January, 1762. She died December, 1798. Children: Solomon, Isaiah, Edward, Berry, Joseph, Jr., Mary, Freeman, Hannah, Eli. The first three named were born on the Cape, the others in Putnam County.

6th. *Solomon*, born in Harwich, May 31, 1739; married Elizabeth Crosby. She is said to have been the sister of Enoch Crosby, the Harvey Birch of Cooper's "The Spy." Mr. Hopkins was a captain in the Continental army, and at the close of the war became an extensive purchaser of confiscated lands. He died September 22, 1792. She died January 5, 1801. Their tombstones are both standing in the old village Cemetery in Carmel. Children: Jeremiah, Bethia, Reuben, Sarah, Mary, Elizabeth.

7th. *Jeremiah*, born in Carmel, N. Y., August 16, 1762; married Thankful Stone about 1783. He was a major of militia and was always known by that title. He died October 17, 1829. She died April 18, 1833, aged seventy. Both buried in the old Gilead Cemetery. Children (probably not arranged in the order of birth): Joseph, Solomon, Ems, Naoma, Hannah, Abraham, Mirab, Nathaniel, Jeremiah, Reuben, Thomas.

8th. *Nathaniel*, born January 26, 1797; married Theresa Travis, about 1821-22. He died April 29, 1880. She died April 29, 1878. Children: Phoebe Ann, born Nov. 2, 1822; Mary Jane, born Sept. 2, 1824; Charlotte, born Aug. 22, 1831; Ferdinand T., born Jan. 19, 1834.

time of the crusade against Tweed. The part which he then performed was important, involving great secrecy and obliging him often to remain awake nights in order to avoid the vigilance of the conspirators who relieved the city's treasury of so many millions. At that time Mr. Hopkins also drew his check to defray half of the expense of the campaign in his district, which amount was partially refunded at a later date.

He was afterward appointed by Mayor Havemeyer an officer of the public schools, which position he held for six years. He was also a member of both the District and General Republican Committees for a long period. Business duties for the last eight years finally caused him to withdraw from political life.

Mr. Hopkins is prominent in the Congregational Church, and was elected a trustee of the Congregational Church of the Disciples, under the pastorate of Dr. George H. Hepworth, in 1876, and continued in that position until about six months after the doctor resigned, when he also sent in his resignation as trustee. Some eighteen months after Dr. Newman accepted the call to said church Mr. Hopkins was again elected a trustee by the Anti-Newman party, who believed that a Congregational Church should have a Congregational minister and be installed as such, thereby becoming a member of the church.

Mr. Hopkins entered the board of trustees single-handed, with a majority of eight against him, and, with his associate members of the church, called a council of some thirty of the leading ministers and laymen from the different States to decide the right and wrong of the question in dispute, and the fact whether the Congregational Church had rights and rules that must and should rule her and be obeyed. Dr. Dexter was elected chairman of the council, and such lights on Congregationalism as Dexter, Storrs, Taylor and many others spent three days in going over the facts, and the vote, with one or two dissenting, was that Dr. Newman must become a member, and be installed, or leave. Dr. Newman still insisted on staying, when Mr. Hopkins reluctantly became plaintiff in a suit in the New York courts to compel a compliance with the church rules. Obtaining an injunction from Judge Sedgwick, he compelled a fair count of votes to be taken, which resulted in electing a majority in both boards of officers in the church. Then the larger and longer suit of the contest was dropped by consent and Dr. Newman resigned. In all this matter Mr. Hopkins wishes it understood, that it was nothing personal against Dr. Newman, but he entered into it to prove whether or not the Congregational Church had rights that ought to be respected.

Mr. Hopkins is domestic in his habits. He spends five months of the year on his place in Westchester County, upon which he has spent much money and time in improving. His residence, of which we furnish a cut, is one of the finest in the locality. Mr. Hopkins is a gentleman of culture and a thorough man of affairs



F. S. Hopkins





RESIDENCE OF FERDINAND T. HOPKINS

SOMEKS, WESTCHESTER CO., N. Y.

CHAPTER VIII.¹

NORTH SALEM.

BY CHARLES E. CULVER,

Of Somers.

NORTH SALEM is in the northeastern portion of Westchester County, and is situated about fifty miles from New York, twenty-five from White Plains and one hundred from Albany. It is nearly square in shape, being some five and a half miles east and west and four miles north and south. It is bounded on the east by the Connecticut State line, on the west by Somers (the Croton River forming the dividing line between the towns), on the north by Putnam County and south by Lewisboro'. Its principal stream is the Mughtiticoos, as its aboriginal owners styled it, now called Titicus River, which traverses the town from east to west, very near the centre, and empties into the Croton at Purdy's Station, on the New York and Harlem Railroad. This stream furnishes abundance of water-power, is of rapid current, and is well supplied by springs along its entire river bed. It flows through a narrow valley, bordered by rising ground on either side. At certain points the hills seem almost to crowd the rushing rapids of the river into an exceptionally narrow gorge between rocky and wooded banks. The hills on either side of this valley rise to one hundred or three hundred feet and present a rugged, forest-covered country, with here and there glimpses of fine fertile tracts of meadow and upland, cultivated farms and handsome residences. The soil is better adapted to grazing than cultivation for root crops, except in the valley, where it is suited to any form of agriculture. The northeastern part of the town is rough and stony. In the southeastern corner rises Long Pond Mountain, at whose foot, across the line, in Lewisboro', lies the beautiful lake Waccabuc. Just on the northern boundary, between Putnam and Westchester Counties, is Lake Pehquennakonck, covering some four hundred acres of land, and a noted resort for fishing and picnic parties. The eastern part of North Salem includes a part of the tract of land called the "Oblong," the southeastern corner of the town still retaining its shape. This tract, containing sixty-one thousand four hundred and forty acres, and lying along the north part of the west line of Connecticut, was surrendered to New York State in 1731. The exact line between the States has, however, been a subject of much contention, and in 1856 commissioners appointed by each State met to settle the

boundary, but without success. At present the stone posts or monuments are to be found just east of the Titus property and on the Hunt farm, on a line running due southwest to and through the spur of Long Pond Mountain. Near the village of North Salem is a genuine natural curiosity—the big rock. It is a granite boulder, resting on five small stones at a present elevation of some four feet from the surface of the hillside where it is located. The immense rock is estimated, by measurement, to weigh sixty tons or upward. No granite is to be found in the neighborhood, and especially no traces of the blue granite, of which this boulder is composed. It may have been a passenger from northern climes in the glacial period, or it may have been removed from its stratified bed by some general moving power which existed after the rocks were lifted from their original beds, and ages before the present order of things. It evidently came to its present location by the agency of one of the great geologic drifts in past ages. No doubt, with the reverence for the supernatural that is inherent in the aborigine, the medicine men of forgotten tribes have oracularly spoken from its vicinity to the assembled councils of the braves. Residents of the town remember when it was much nearer the surface than now, although still resting on the smaller limestone rocks. The action of the elements, however, and the natural wash of rains have carried away the soil until it seems elevated in the air. A short distance from it exists a chalybeate spring, whose waters were considered at one time to be of medicinal value. It is easy to conceive, standing in the vicinity of this boulder and looking southward and easterly, through the Titicus Valley, the Indian tribes approaching to consult the oracle as to impending war among the red men or to resist the approach of the indefatigable white settler.

The Indian history of the town is not at all remarkable or voluminous. This territory was under the control of the Mohegans firstly, and more directly of the Kitchawonks, who claimed all the lands bordering the Kitchewan or Croton River. It does not appear that the territory comprising the town was considered of great value aside from a hunting-ground by its original owners, and that it was valuable in this respect is attested by the quantity of spear and arrow-heads that have been and are still unearthed, especially on the hilly lands of the northern and eastern portions of the town. There are evidences also of minor Indian villages that at one time existed in the southeast and northwestern parts. The remains of an Indian burial-place are to be seen near the former residence of Hon. Isaac Purdy. There is no doubt that, at an early period, these hills and valleys abounded in game more plentifully than did the lands of the Sound territory, and visiting tribes came here to find their supplies of food. The Mughtiticoos and Kitchewan also furnished a supply of fish, these streams being well

¹The author of this chapter desires to acknowledge his indebtedness to the Rev. R. Condit Russell, Rev. T. S. Lathrop, Rev. V. W. Benedict and Rev. R. F. White for various items of church history kindly given by them; also to Mr. Samuel B. Clark, the gentlemanly town clerk, for the free access to the records, etc., afforded by him, and to all who have in any manner assisted to lighten the labor attached to the compilation of a condensed history of the town of North Salem.

stocked with various species of the finny tribes to this day. In the early days of the town shad were taken from the Croton River, near the junction of the Titicus, and to this day a bend in the river, where there is a depth of some feet, is known as the "Shad Hole." Some of the lineal descendants of the original owners of the soil have resided in the town within a few years past, notably the descendants of Absalom Money, who was the son of Philip Money, an Indian and resident here in 1784.

During the Revolutionary War the inhabitants of North Salem were, at the earliest moment, arrayed on the patriot side of the conflict, and in that struggle no North Salem man proved false to his country. What is now known as Bogtown was then Yerks' Corners, and a young man who belonged to the Westchester County brigade had recently escaped from a British prison in New York and made his way over the lines to his own company, then encamped at this place. At that time the Cowboys were ravaging this section and this young soldier proposed to two of his companions that they take the road and capture something. After deliberation and the addition of four more to their number they started on the road. John Yerks, who at this time kept a small country store at these corners, proposed to John Paulding to form an expedition to go to the north line of the British army, and in the immediate neighborhood prevent the Cowboys from driving in the cattle of the farmers. Paulding acquiesced and with his companions started on the road to Lower Salem. From thence the party went to Pleasantville and then followed the Saw-Mill River Valley to the house of Jacob Romer, where they had breakfast. They then went to a hill just above Tarrytown, where the band of seven divided; Paulding, the master-spirit under Yerks, of the enterprise, Van Wart and Williams watching the lower road, while the remainder of the company went above. It was here, on the 23d of September, 1780, that this band of patriots captured Major John Andre, adjutant-general of the British army, and while incidentally saving West Point and the Continental army, stamped the brand of "traitor" on Arnold's brow. The expedition, as we have seen, originated in North Salem, and from North Salem the patriotic leader, Paulding, went. North Salem also furnished Col. Thaddeus Crane, Capt. Gilbert Budd, First Lieutenant Jesse Truesdale, Second Lieutenant John Van Wart and Capts. Solomon Close, Titus Reynolds and Ebenezer Slawson. In 1778 Jonathan Horton was major commanding the North Battalion of Westchester County. Two companies having been consolidated May 28, 1778, with the Lower Brigade, Col. Thaddeus Crane was first major, then lieutenant colonel. At the fight of Ridgefield, given in the history of the Revolution, Colonel Crane, as elsewhere stated, was shot through the lungs.

POLITICAL.—The territory now North Salem was embraced politically in Cortlandt Manor. In 1751, at

a meeting held at Salem on April 2d in that year, town officers were chosen, of whom Jacob Wall was supervisor and Nathaniel Wyatt was clerk. The town, however, is not mentioned by William Smith in his list of the towns of Westchester County in 1756. On January 10, 1763, mention is made of a "town-meeting at Salem." In 1760 North Salem is mentioned in records and letters as "The Upper District of Salem."

The supervisors records of the county, as printed, begin in October, 1772. In that year, and up to the meeting of the supervisors on the 31st of May, 1784, Abijah Gilbert represented the town of Salem as supervisor. At this meeting Thaddeus Crane appeared as supervisor of "The Town of Upper Salem" and Abijah Gilbert of Lower Salem. The towns were taxed separately from that time. On the 4th of March, 1788, when the county was formed into towns under the act of the Legislature, the town of Upper Salem became North Salem, and Ebenezer Purdy represented it at the first meeting of the Board of Supervisors, held May 6, 1788.

In 1782, on the 29th of May, the Board of Supervisors of the county met at the house of Solomon Close, in North Salem. In 1784 and '85 Colonel Thaddeus Crane was the supervisor of the town and in this year "Ephraim Grummin, Constable, was paid 16 shillings for numbering the people of the town," in order to furnish a basis for military taxation. Seven Quakers were reported as refusing to pay military taxes. In 1786 Hachaliah Brown was the supervisor, and in 1788 Ebenezer Purdy was chosen. This latter gentleman was afterwards, in 1797, one of the judges of the Court of Common Pleas. He was a prominent resident of the town, his grand-daughter now residing there. In 1779 he was elected to the Assembly and held this office until 1785. He was also a member of the same body in 1787, '91, '92 and '95, and was a State Senator from 1801 to 1806.

George C. Finch, M.D., also a native of the town, was elected to the Assembly in 1853. Joshua Purdy, of this town, was also one of the early associate judges of the county. He was the brother of Isaac Purdy and son of Joseph, who was the grandfather of the present Isaac Hart Purdy, and was one of the incorporators of St. James' Church in 1786.

It is recorded that on—

"This Sixth day of April, 1790, a Town Meeting was held at the Town house in North Salem, and that John Quick, Esq., was chosen Moderator, after which the Freeholders and Inhabitants of Said Town proceeded on to choosing Town Officers and doing all other business which concerned Said Town, and Daniel Delevan was chosen Town Clerk; John Quick, supervisor; Thos. Smith, Caleb Smith, Daniel Purdy, assessors; Thos. Veal, Timothy Van Scoy, overseers of the poor; John Delevan, Jonathan Hallett, Uriah Wallace, commissioners of roads; Thos. Veal, Timothy Van Scoy, Benajah Star, Stephen Baker, Meejah Fuller, trustees to provide a place for the reception of the poor.

"Voted, that £90 be raised for the support of the poor.

"Benjamin Close, Jacob Wallace, David Baxter, Isaac Koeler, Reuben Jump, Solomon Close, David Smith, Ebenezer Purdy, Robert Bloomer, Frederick Knox, Thos. Williams, John Finch, Abraham Knox, Meejah

Fuller, Abraham Van Scoy, Jonathan Brown, path-masters; Thos. Baxter, Stephen Baker, John Knox, Abraham Purdy, John Quick, Jr., Gilbert Bayley, fence-viewers and damago assessors; Daniel Delevan, pounder; William Rogers, constable; Solomon Close, collector."

It was voted at this first town meeting; "That all Hoggs above three months old shall be Liable to be taken in in the Streat and Ring^d, and the person that Rings said Hoggs, Shall recover one Shilling from the Owner of said Hoggs, for every Hogg so Ring^d with wire." "Voted, that the Town Clark Provide a book for the use of the Town, that shall cost not to exceed Sixteen Shillings."

In the year 1794 there are an account of the excise monies received, as follows:

	£	s.	d.
Caleb Smith, Jr.	2	10	0
Robert Brush.	2	10	0
Joel Keeler.	2	10	0
Uriah Wallace.	2	10	0
Jobe Smith.	2	0	0
James Wallace, Jr.	2	0	0
Gilbert Bayley.	2	0	0
Abraham Lockwood.	2	15	0
Total.	£18	5	0.

At a town-meeting held the 4th of April 1826, it was "Voted, that the Paupers of this Town be disposed of on Tuesday the 11th day of the present April." This was done by auction and the parties bidding the lowest price for boarding the paupers, secured them. It was an old statute under which many abuses were hidden. Under this law each town cared for its own poor. In 1832, at a canvass of the votes cast at a general election on "the fifth, sixth and seventh days of November, one hundred and eighty-four votes were given for Governor." In six years afterward, or on the fifth, sixth and seventh, of November 1838, the canvass shows two hundred and fifty-four votes cast for the same office. In 1884, at a general election, there were three hundred and sixty-eight votes cast, which is the full vote of the town. The town-meetings were originally held at the academy, but latterly have been held at the store of Mr. Lobdell, in Salem Centre. After the completion of the transfer of the academy building to the town, as authorized by the legislature, this will in future be the place of such meetings. The town records also contain the account of the laying of a road in 1846, and the following document in relation thereto:

"A Release: I do hereby releace to the Town of North Salem all claims to damages by reason of the laying out of a Highway through my lauds, occupied by Anzi Close, by order of the Commissioners of Highways, dated the 28th day of October, 1846.

"In witness whereof I have hereto set my hand and seal this 22d day of February, 1848.

"MARTHA A. DE LANCEY."



In common with other towns of the county, the papers of manumission of slaves appear on records, the last slave manumitted, appearing to be one "Prince," owned by Nathan Keeler. This slave

remained in the service of his master until his death at a ripe old age.

Following is a list of the supervisors and town clerks:

SUPERVISORS.

- | | |
|----------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| 1790. John Quick. | 1845. James Mills. |
| 1793. Daniel Delevan. | 1836. Epenetus Howe. |
| 1799. Ebenezer Purdy. | 1837. John J. June. |
| 1801. John Quick. | 1838. Nehemiah Wilson. |
| 1804. Epenetus Wallace. | 1840. Epenetus Howe. |
| 1805. Zabud June. | 1842. Nehemiah Wilson. |
| 1811. Charles Ambler. | 1844. Epenetus Howe. |
| 1813. Epenetus Wallace. | 1846. Isaac H. Purdy. |
| 1817. Ebenezer Purdy. | 1850. George C. Finch. |
| 1823. Isaac Purdy. | 1856. Isaac H. Purdy. |
| 1824. Jesse Smith ^f . | 1858. Joseph L. Sutton. |
| 1829. Isaac Purdy. | 1859. Gilbert F. Bailey. |
| 1830. Zabud June. | 1860. Joseph L. Sutton. |
| 1831. Samuel Field. | 1868. Odle Close. ¹ |
| 1834. Epenetus Howe. | |

CLERKS.

- | | |
|---------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| 1790. Daniel Delevan. | 1834. Nehemiah Wilson. |
| 1793. Uriah Wallace. | 1836. Daniel C. Baxter. |
| 1800. Ebenezer Purdy, Jr. | 1837. Epenetus Howe. |
| 1810. Epenetus Wallace. | 1838. Epenetus Wallace. |
| 1814. Isaac Smith. | 1839. Samuel H. Smith. |
| 1816. Jesse Smith. | 1842. Knapp Remington. ² |
| 1823. Daniel Lobdell. | 1849. John Close. |
| 1826. Epenetus Howe. | 1850. Ebenezer L. Close. |
| 1831. William Vail. | 1851. George N. Webb. |
| 1832. Floyd Quick. | 1855. Samuel B. Clark. ³ |
| 1833. Daniel C. Baxter. | |

The following is a list of owners of farm lands in 1846, as shown on the map made by John F. Jenkins in that year:

Silas Finch, Edwin Crosby, Rev. Joseph Nimmo, Joseph Adams, Major Bailey, William Purdy, Anson Field, Abijah Pedrick, Solomon Bailey, Nathan Ganun, Edward Ganun, Benjamin Angevine, Isaac Ferguson, Joseph Bailey, Harrison Byington, Thomas Knox, Frederick Knox, Gilbert Mead, Stephen Knoch, Joseph Cable, John Hanford, Harrison Bailey, David Bloomer, Charles Bloomer, William Bloomer, Isaac Townsend, David Vail, Benjamin Raymond, Ezra Rundle, Ann Draw, Charles Paddock, Ebenezer Palmer, Samuel Hunt, Widow Vail, William Vail, John Cable, C. Shoy, James Smith, Elias Smith, Benjamin Badeau, Reuben French, Melancthon Norton, L. Titus, Abram Smith, James Jarvis, John Smith, Widow Smith, William Smith, S. P. Quick, J. Wallace, J. Burchard, G. Bailey (store and hotel), Reuben Lockwood, L. Hunt, D. Bailey (store) Clark Scott, Ira Smith, John Baxter, Joel Baxter, Henry Smith, I. S. Beers, W. P. Baxter, Tillotson Stephen Bloomer, D. Hunt (store, saw and grist-mill), B. B. Gray, T. C. Quick, Epenetus Howe (paper-mill), Charles Cable, Dr. J. Hess, Alfred B. Mead, J. B. Keeler, Josiah Keeler, Nathan Keeler, Floyd Keeler, H. Osborn, Dr. E. Wallace, J. Wallace, A. and J. Close (hotel), S. Sherwood, John J. June, J. P. Lobdell, Morgan Miller, L. Hanford, Nathan Lobdell, Jacob Lobdell, Joseph Eggleston, Knapp Remington, S. H. Smith, Undrill W. Smith, Ezra French (saw and grist-mill), C. Stevens (store), A. Lobdell, (hotel), A. Von Scoy (store), Lewis Smith, Widow Quick, Ephraim Baker, James Hall, Samuel Reynolds, Benjamin Reynolds, Elliott Smith, Ira Wheeler (factory), A. Reynolds, T. Bailey, Henry Slosson, Augustus Slosson, C. Lobdell, Thomas Brown, J. Stockham, H. Ferguson, I. H. Purdy (saw and grist-mill), Isaac Quick, J. S. Frost, S. Ferguson, William Purdy, Norman Mead, David Horton, Thomas Purdy, B. Knapp, Edward Wright, D. Quick, Stephen Quick, William Green, E. Quick, Orrin Quick, John Quick, Joseph Sarles, T. Baker, J. Smith, Timothy Von Scoy (first), Timothy Von Scoy (second), Cornelius Von Scoy, Richard Way, E. Wilson, Widow Delevan, Joseph Worden, Bailey Allen, Clark Fuller (saw-mill), A. Allen, Nehemiah Wilson, Isaac D. Smith, Edward

¹ He has held the office ever since, and is the present supervisor.

² He died on the 8th day of April, 1846, after his re-election on the 4th of that month. On the 9th of May, 1846, D. C. Smith was appointed.

³ Mr. Clark has held the position ever since, and is the present clerk.

Smith, Widow Hoyt, Ephraim Grummon, William C. Baxter, James Howe, Sylvanus Townsend, John Braden, Samuel Townsend, Alfred Hawley, J. Sarles, George Bailey, Sarah Bishop's Rock.¹

Previous to its division into Upper and Lower Salem, this was one of the thickly-settled towns of the county. Its early inhabitants were from Connecticut and the New England States, and brought with them to this new settlement in the forest the thrift and energy that characterized the early pioneers. In the separate organization of the town, North Salem proper contained about four hundred inhabitants, scattered over its entire territory. In 1840 it contained 1161; in 1845, 1228; 1850, 1335; 1860, 1497; 1865, 1527, which figure has changed but a trifle since that date. The town embraces about thirteen thousand acres of land, improved and unimproved, the valuation of which in 1884 was eight hundred and twenty-four thousand five hundred and thirty-one dollars. In 1860 its production of butter was over 77,000 pounds, while to-day it is not one per cent. of that amount. In that year there were about 1100 cows kept in the town; now 2500 is nearer the figures, some farmers keeping a yard of 100, while many show from 40 to 60 milch cattle. At Croton Falls the receipts of milk by the railroad are from 1600 to 2000 quarts per day. At Purdy's it will reach 3000, while the factory uses from 6000 to 10,000 quarts per day. Besides this, there are large milk producers in the northern part of the town who deliver their product to the Borden Condensed Milk Company, at Brewster, Putnam County. The farmers in the southern portion of the town deliver the milk at Golden's Bridge, a station of the Harlem Railroad, situated in the north part of Lewisboro'. The lumber and coal-yards, of Messrs. Teed & Hunt, at Purdy's, and A. B. Whitlock at Croton Falls, also do a very extensive business, amounting to many thousands of dollars per annum, supplying the entire surrounding country with building materials and fuel.

North Salem contributed her quota of soldiers to sustain the cause of the Union in the late Rebellion and also paid liberal bounties to those who volunteered.

The following is a list of persons who enlisted, in New York regiments, and were residents of North Salem, with the date of enlistment, compiled from an official record prepared by the town clerk, and on file at White Plains:

Daniel Monahan, private, Ninety-fifth Infantry, Company B, June 3, 1862.
 Jacob Bosky, private, Fourth Heavy Artillery, Company L, March 3, 1864.
 Solomon Mills, private, Sixty-fifth Infantry, Company C, May 14, 1864.
 Eli R. L. Kent, private, Fourth Heavy Artillery, Company A, August 28, 1862.

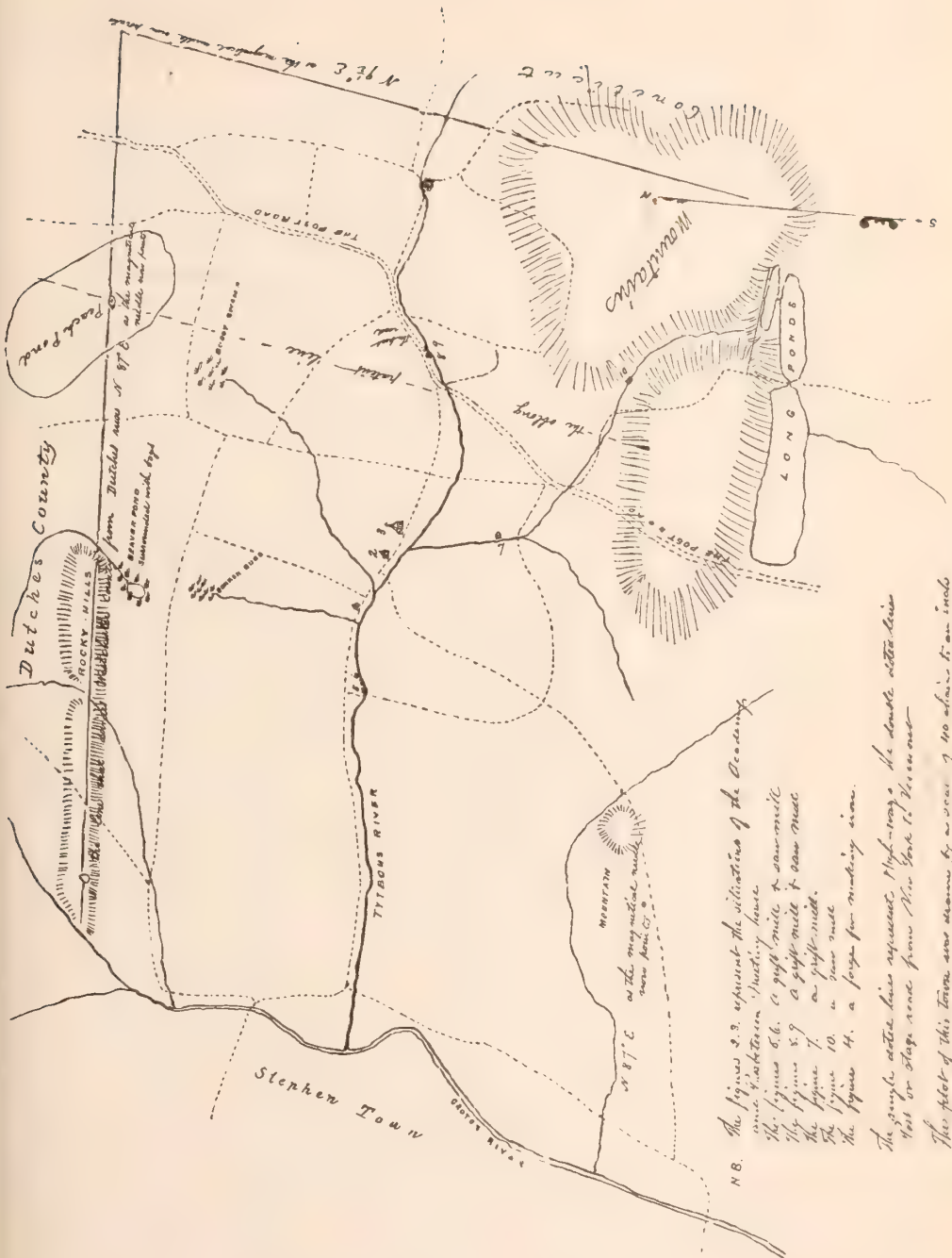
¹ Many years ago a young woman, by name Sarah Bishop, having been disappointed in life, came to the extreme southeast corner of the town and took up her abode under a large, overhanging rock, occasionally going down to Ridgefield with a few articles she had for sale. She resided here many years, and from this fact the place derived its name.

Charles E. White, private, Fourth Heavy Artillery, Company A, August 30, 1862.
 George Reynolds, private, Sixth Heavy Artillery, Company D, August 22, 1862.
 George W. Baxter, private, One Hundred and Ninetieth Infantry, Company A, March 30, 1865.
 Francis W. Cree, private, Sixth Artillery, Company A, September 13, 1862.
 Clark E. Smith, corporal, Fourth Artillery, Company A, August 29, 1862.
 Charles Bailey, Fourth Artillery, Company A, August 29, 1862.
 Benjamin A. Dickens, second lieutenant, Fourth Artillery, Company A, September 27, 1861.
 James H. Russell, private, Fourth Artillery, Company A, August 1, 1862.
 William Russell, private, One Hundred and Thirty-fifth Infantry, Company F, November 1, 1862.
 John W. Knapp, private, Fourth Artillery, September 25, 1861.
 Amos P. Quick, private, Fourth Artillery, Company L, March 3, 1864.
 Ira F. E. Bush, private, Fourth Artillery, Company L, March, 1864.
 James Quick, private, Thirty-eighth Infantry, Company G, June 3, 1861.
 Andrew J. Sarles, private, Fourth Artillery, Company S, June 20, 1864.
 Nelson Cree, private, Fourth Artillery, Company I, January 26, 1864.
 Theodore Quick, private, Fourth Artillery, Company A, September 25, 1861.
 George S. Robinson, private, Fourth Artillery, Company A, September 19, 1861.
 James M. McKeel, private, Fourth Artillery, Company A, September 25, 1861.
 Edward H. Dibble, corporal, Sixth Artillery, Company D, August 23, 1862.
 Isaac S. Wallace, private, Fourth Artillery, Company A, September 25, 1861.
 Stephen D. Merritt, private, Sixth Artillery, Company D, August 20, 1862.
 Edwin Rockwell, private, Fourth Artillery, Company A, October 7, 1861.
 Ezra Miller, private, Sixth Artillery, Company D, August 1, 1862.
 Thomas Hartigan, private, Fourth Artillery, Company F, August 30, 1862.
 Anthony M. Sutton, private, Fourth Artillery, Company L, January 5, 1864.
 John N. Cree, corporal, Sixth Artillery, Company D, August 8, 1862.
 Napoleon B. Lynes, first lieutenant, Fourth Artillery, Company A, August 28, 1862.
 Eugene Johnson, corporal, Fourth Artillery, Company F, August 28, 1862.
 Abram S. Knapp, private, Fourth Artillery, January 26, 1864.
 George Turner, private, Sixth Artillery, Company J, February 1, 1864.
 Lyman Ferguson, private, Fourth Artillery, Company J, February 1, 1864.

Of these, Charles White, George Reynolds, Ira Bush, A. J. Sarles, Nelson Cree, Stephen Merritt, N. B. Lynes and Abram Knapp were at the surrender of General Lee and the Confederate army. Charles Bailey was wounded at Petersburg, and died June 30, 1864. James H. Russell was taken prisoner at the battle of Ream's Station, about the 25th of August, 1864, and confined at Salisbury Prison, where he died about February 8, 1865.

J. Wesley Knapp was taken prisoner at Ream's Station, confined in Salisbury Prison, paroled February 20, 1865, and died at home March 30th following. James Quick, wounded at the first battle of Fredericksburg, December 12, 1862, died January 5, 1863, at Eckington Hospital, Washington, D. C. James M. McKeel was killed at the battle of Ream's Station August 25, 1864. Eugene Johnston, taken prisoner at the battle of Ream's Station, was confined in Salisbury Prison six months.

EARLY ROADS AND RAILROADS.—An act of Leg-



N.B. The figures 8, 9, represent the elevations of the Occoquan
 and Washington, D.C., respectively.
 The figure 8, 10, 99 ft. mile & one mile
 The figure 9, 99 ft. mile & one mile
 The figure 7, 99 ft. mile
 The figure 10, 99 ft. mile
 The figure 4, a figure for making iron.

The single vertical line represents 100 ft. high. The double vertical line
 that the slope runs from New York City, N. Y. east.

The plot of this town was drawn by a crew of 100 men in an oval
 by actual survey made since the beginning of the war for that purpose.

The 14th of Jan. 1798

DeWittes County, N. Y.
 of the town of North Salem

islature was passed in 1796 authorizing the survey of the towns of Westchester County. In accordance with its provisions, the town of North Salem was surveyed January 14, 1798, under the superintendence of Daniel Delavan, then supervisor, of the town. From this survey, a copy of which is here inserted, it will be noticed that a post road passes through the town from the north between Lake Pehquennakonck and the Connecticut line and on the west side of Long Pond or Lake Wepuc. It was the post road from Vermont to New York.

Highways were laid out as early as 1769, across the town from east to west, one following the course of the Titicus River to Croton River, the other from the post road, below Lake Pehquennakonck, to Croton River, and from this point along its eastern bank into Lewisboro'. Between Croton Falls and Purdy's Station a road crossed the Croton River into Stephentown (now Somers). The bridge at this place was built before the Revolution, as in April, 1777, the British army, under General Tryon, crossed when Danbury was burned. A bridge was rebuilt at the place by the town at a cost of £100, under the charge of Hachaliah Brown. Other roads intersected these named and ran north and south.

RAILROADS.—There is at the present time but one railroad that runs through or touches the town, viz.: the New York and Harlem Railroad, which passes through the west end of the town its entire width from north to south. Some thirty years ago there was a projected road between New York and Danbury, which would cross the northeastern portion of the town, and for a time much interest was felt in the enterprise. A survey was made and the proposed line ran directly through the village of North Salem. A few years afterward the expectations of the citizens were stimulated to an extent that led them to engage in building and other preparations for the location of a railroad station, but the project was abandoned, and with it the transient business activity ceased. The New York and Harlem road reached Croton Falls in 1846-47. Isaac Hart Purdy, whose farm covered the present site of Purdy's, and in whose honor the place was named, proposed to the railroad company to give a certain portion of land for their use in the erection of suitable depot buildings, cattle-yards, etc., provided they would locate a station here. This location was to belong to the railroad company so long as it was used as a depot or station. If it was ever abandoned, the land was to revert to the owner or his heirs. The company accepted the proposal and executed the necessary writings. Croton Falls was for some time the northern terminus of the road, so far as the running of regular trains was concerned. Immediately upon the decision of the railroad authorities to locate a depot at Purdy's, Mr. Purdy began the erection of a hotel. The company notified him of their decision on the 12th of June, and on the 4th of July following the frame of the large hotel now

owned and occupied by Eli Reynolds was raised. Previous to this there were but three buildings in the place, but dwellings now went up rapidly and settlers moved into the place. Stores, lumber-yard, factories, shops, etc., followed in rapid succession. Some of the people of North Salem were interested with Somers people in the then profitable "show" business, the Junes, Tituses, Angevines and Quicks being prominent owners of the shows that traveled through the country during the summer season. After the coming of the railroad huge buildings for animals were erected at Purdy's, where these shows then wintered, which, of course, gave an air of prosperity to the place. Some of these buildings still exist, but have been separated into different sections and utilized as barns, stables, etc. During the earlier days of the railroad, milk and farm produce of various kinds constituted the principal carrying trade, and carloads of these products were shipped twice each week (on market days) to New York City. Of late years, however, the principal shipment is milk, either in the crude state or after having passed through the manipulations of the condensing factory.

At Croton Falls, previous to the construction of the Mahopac Branch of this road through Somers, all of the passenger traffic from Lake Mahopac was received, which during the summer months was immense, as the latter is a well-known summer resort for the citizens of New York and other cities. At both these stations in the town of North Salem are also received from the western counties large numbers of cows constantly brought to this market by cattle dealers to furnish the milk farmers of this section a source from which to keep their yards supplied with fresh stock. It is safe to assert that the towns of the northern portion of Westchester County have been and are the chief source of revenue to the New York and Harlem Railroad Company, and it is from this section that a very considerable portion of the wealth accumulated by this railroad has been extracted. In the earlier days of the road its stock was not easily disposed of in the market for from seven to thirteen dollars, while at the present it is held for from one hundred and ninety to two hundred dollars.

EARLY SETTLEMENTS.—Stephanus Van Cortlandt, by will dated April 14, 1700, devised Cortlandt Manor to his eleven children. In 1734 a partition deed was executed, and in this division lot No. 8, embracing part of North Salem, Somers and Lewisboro', fell to Andrew Miller; lot No. 9, lying to the east, to Colonel John Schuyler, and later to Stephen De Lancey; lot No. 10, still farther east, to Stephen De Lancey, who married Anne Van Cortlandt, a daughter of Stephanus Van Cortlandt. By will Stephen De Lancey devised all his estate in the town (now North Salem) to his eldest son, James, who, on the 29th of December, 1744, conveyed lots 9 and 10 to his second son, Stephen. These two great lots were divided into thirty-six lots, which were leased

to settlers who began to emigrate to this region from Connecticut. Mr. De Lancey resided at the place now occupied by the academy, and which location is mentioned by him in deeds as De Lancey Town. No title was passed from him to the settlers until 1769, in which year he began the sale of lands to the tenants, who had for several years been in possession. Mention is made in all deeds of the land as being in actual possession of parties purchasing. The deeds were made "by force of the statute for transferring uses into possession." A part of the "Oblong" also came into his possession. In the deeds to part of the property conveyed, James De Lancey, a brother, and Judge Thomas Jones, a brother-in-law, united with him in conveying title. It is difficult at this day to determine at what time the land was first leased to tenants, but the Rev. Ebenezer Diblee says that in 1763 he had preached in the upper district of Salem for about fifteen years, which would signify that settlers were quite numerous. The Episcopal meeting-house was erected in 1763. The first deed on record of property conveyed by the De Lanceys was to the Rev. Epenetus Townsend, rector of the Episcopal Church, afterwards "St. James'." It was for sixty acres in lot 10, adjoining the church property. He built upon it a large house and resided there until his removal, in 1777. The property some years later passed to Dr. Epenetus Wallace.

Dr. Wallace was the father of the present Charles Wallace, and was one of the moving spirits of the earlier times. He several times held the position of supervisor of the town, and also town clerk, and was one of the prominent and early patrons of the North Salem Academy. In 1827 he was clerk of the academy board. He was also one of the early vestrymen of St. James' Church, the church building, which was erected in 1763, being located on his property. He exchanged the present site of the church for its former location. The old "Wallace House," a strong, durable, roomy building, still stands on the north side of the highway leading from Salem Centre to North Salem. It was erected by the Rev. Epenetus Townsend and purchased, together with the sixty acres of land connected with it, by Dr. Wallace. Charles Wallace was born September 17, 1796, and, although of such advanced age, is still an active man, often walking from four to six miles a day without fatigue. His faculties are clear, and he recounts with pleasure and animation the incidents of his early life, and describes the scenes of the days of his student experience at the old North Salem Academy with life-like fidelity. He is enjoying a ripe old age in peace and quietness. Mr. Wallace is one of the oldest living natives of the town, and is a member of one of the most prominent early families. The family are of Scotch descent, James Wallace having emigrated from Scotland to Ridgefield, Conn., about 1676, and from there to North Salem, where he died in 1762, aged eighty-

seven years. His son, Captain James, whose tomb is noticed elsewhere, was an officer of prominence during the Revolution. His oldest son, John, was the father of Epenetus, M.D., who married Phœbe, daughter of Deacon Solomon Close.

On the 10th of April, 1769, Denton Smith received a deed for one hundred and fifteen acres of land on farm 16, of the division of lot No. 10. He lived upon the property until his death, in 1808. By his will, dated October 20th in that year, he left his property to his wife, Elizabeth, and children,—sons, Daniel Denton, Nathaniel; daughters, Minee, Loretta, Sally (Halsted) Rebecca (Howley) and Hannah (Stevenson).

Levi Baily, on the 26th of October of the same year (1769), bought two hundred and twenty-seven acres on farm 5, on lot 9, bordering on the highway. It is from him the family in the town descended.

Nathaniel Delavan, November 25, 1769, purchased sixty acres of farm 12, lot 10, and on the 27th of May, 1774, he purchased two tracts of forty-six and thirty-three acres adjoining lands of Denton Smith, Ebenezer Lobdell, the Oblong line and Titicus River, and on the 8th of September, 1775, leased one hundred and seventy-six acres for ninety-nine years, and on September 3, 1778, assigned it to John Knox, by whom it was held for many years. Before 1846 it was in possession under the lease of Harrison Byington, who, on March 17, 1775, became the owner of one hundred and fifty-eight acres. Nathaniel Delavan also bought twelve acres of land in 1769, on lot 10, between the farms of Sylvanus Townsend and one formerly occupied by Captain Joshua Lobdell, deceased.

Sylvanus Townsend, who is mentioned in 1769 as living on land adjoining the farm of Nathaniel Delavan and Denton Smith, died in 1799, and left his property to his sons, William, Sylvanus, Justus and Samuel, and one daughter, Esther.

John Delavan, on the 18th of April, 1770, purchased thirty acres "at Delancey Town," north of the highway that leads from Croton River to the Oblong. Captain Joshua Lobdell lived adjoining the land of Nathaniel Delavan, but the family still remained.

On May 27, 1773, Daniel Lobdell bought one hundred and twenty-three acres of land, on which he then lived and which he had agreed previous to the date of the deed to convey to Gershom Hanford, but he did not convey it until May 3, 1774, at which time Gershom Hanford resided upon the farm. Daniel Lobdell was in possession of other lands adjacent. Ebenezer and John Lobdell were also in possession of lands in the vicinity. John bought, May 27, 1773, fifty-two acres, and one hundred and sixty acres, August 15, 1774, on the manor tract and on the west Oblong line. The deeds state that on it "was bog meadow known by the name of Sunken bogs." The land lies north of the Titicus River, at the head of the stream that joins the river near or at the old Rey-

nolds farm. The "Sunken bogs" are laid down in the town map of 1798. Near this land, and adjoining, was a tract of one hundred and sixty acres that had long been in possession of Ebenezer Lobdell, probably as a tenant. Owing to financial trouble it was seized by the sheriff of Westchester County as the property of Stephen De Lancey, and sold at public sale September 6, 1788, Samuel Lyon being the purchaser. He conveyed it, October 2d the same year, to Ebenezer Lobdell, Jacob Lobdell and Ebenezer Lobdell, Jr.

Abraham Delevan, on the 27th of May, 1773, bought twenty-three acres, on which he was living, and rented other lands, as the De Lancey rent-rolls show. On the 1st of January, 1774, there was due four pounds from Hannah, his wife, for the rent of No. 12, "Crow Hill."

Timothy Van Scoy, a tenant, was paying rent on farm 25, lot 9, January 1, 1773, and on the 27th of May, in that year, he bought fifty-nine acres, and subsequently added to it. Abraham Van Scoy the same day received a deed for forty-three acres adjoining Timothy, and on which he resided. Halsey Wood, also a tenant, bought seventy-three acres adjoining Ebenezer Purdy's land, May 27, 1775, which adjoined the land of David Brown. The latter owned twenty acres, which he sold, June 14, 1774, to Nathaniel Delevan.

David Nash bought eighty-six acres adjoining the above, January 26, 1774, and on August 18th, the same year, conveyed it to Nathaniel Delevan.

John Patrick (Pedrick), May 27, 1773, purchased one hundred and sixteen acres, on which he resided.

Matthew Delevan, May 27, 1773, purchased the tract of eighty-nine acres on which he lived. He also bought, April 1, 1775, the twenty acres of Nathaniel Delevan, which formerly belonged to David Brown, and in 1783 purchased eighty-seven acres of Nathan Delevan, adjoining land of Titus Reynolds. On April 24th, of the same year, he bought other land of Nathan Delevan, adjoining Halsey Wood, Titus Reynolds and Nathan Delevan's other land. Titus Reynolds, who was a tenant, bought, May 10, 1786, seventy acres south of the road leading from Salem to Croton River, and adjoining land of Stephen Baker and N. Delevan. His will bears date November 8, 1808, and the property was left to his sons, Benjamin and Samuel, and daughters, Sarah and Mary, and is now owned by Horace B. Reynolds, son of Samuel.

On the 15th of April, 1771, Samuel Scribner purchased three-quarters of an acre of land in Delanceytown, between the lots of Delancy and Jacob Mead. Cornelius Steenrod, on the 26th of May, 1773, bought at Delanceytown five and a half acres, and, January 5, 1777, one hundred and eight acres, with a large dwelling-house and barn, adjoining lands of Isaac Norton, Isaac Keeler, Abraham Delevan, Ebenezer Lobdell and Nathaniel Delevan. This locality became what is now North Salem village, and Steenrod

built mills there which passed to Jesse Brush and later to Epenetus Howe and others. The mill property is now in the possession of Walter Keeler's heirs.

Caleb Smith, June 21, 1773, purchased two hundred and eighteen and a half acres of a north farm in lot 9, on which he was living at the time. Epenetus Weed, a previous purchaser of land on the manor, sold ten acres to Ebenezer Lobdell, April 15, 1771. It was "near the house Jacob Lobdell formerly lived in."

The Ebenezer Lobdell farms were divided between his two sons, Ebenezer and Jacob. Henry Lobdell, the present owner of part of the estate, is a son of Nathan and grandson of Jacob. Abraham Knox, also a tenant on the manor lands, on the 16th of August, 1784, purchased four hundred and fifty acres, part of lot 10, adjoining lands of Ebenezer Purdy, William Bloomer, Gershom Hanford and the school-house lot, and on the road that leads to Daniel Purdy's.

Micajah Fuller purchased, December 24, 1793, two hundred and thirteen acres, adjoining Michael Halstead's land. Samuel Theale, on January 14, 1795, became the owner of two hundred and twenty-two acres on the road that leads to Dean's Bridge, adjoining lands of Gilbert Bailey, Ebenezer Theale and John Finch. The land of the latter at that time was occupied by Abraham Knox. Stephen Field resided, in 1795, on twenty acres, adjoining the land of Dr. Samuel Belden, which Jacob Keeler purchased January 19th in that year.

Colonel Thaddeus Crane, a resident of the town long before the Revolution, went out in the Continental army as major and was promoted to lieutenant-colonel. He was supervisor of the town from 1784 to 1788, member of the Assembly in 1777-78-79 and a member of the convention to deliberate upon the adoption of the Constitution and voted in favor of it. He sold land, July 3, 1795, to John Lobdell. His will on record is dated July 2, 1803. He left a wife, Lydia, and sons, Peter and James, and daughters, Mary (Mrs. Nathaniel Paddock), Sarah (Mrs. Abraham Smith), Elizabeth (Mrs. Nathaniel Smith), Ruth (Mrs. Jotham Smith), Abigail, Fanny, Lydia, Theda, Weltham and Sally.

There were other families not mentioned in the above that were also tenants and purchasers of the De Lancy lands, notably the Bakers, Howes, Nortons and Benedicts. The remainder of the lands unsold by Stephen De Lancy were devised by him to his brother, John Peter De Lancy, of Mamaroneck, January 1, 1795. They were left by him, January 28, 1823, to his three daughters, by whom they have in part been sold from time to time.

That portion of the town known as the Oblong or Equivalent Lands was not embraced in the original Cortlandt Manor. It was a tract of sixty-two thousand acres, about a mile and three-quarters wide by about sixty-two miles long, set off by Connecticut to

New York in May, 1731. On the 8th of June in that year fifty thousand acres were granted by John Montgomerie, then Governor of New York, to the Rev. Thomas Hawley and twenty-three others. James Brown, one of the number, retained a portion and the rest was divided among others, of whom Jonah Keeler received a part March 10, 1732, on which he then resided. James Brown's land was west, Joseph Keeler's and David Sherwood's on the north, and Thomas Smith's and Ensign Benedict's on the east. Jonah Keeler left the land to his son Jeremiah, who had three sons. The property is still in the family. The Keeler lands extended into Connecticut. James Brown, on June 8, 1749, sold three hundred and twenty-six acres of the land mentioned above to Solomon Close, it being on the western boundary of the Oblong Tract. Daniel Sherwood's land was on the north and Jonah Keeler's on the east. Solomon Close was a grandson of Thomas, who came to Greenwich from England in 1665. His father was Joseph, who moved to the Oblong soon after the purchase and died there in 1760, aged eighty-six years. Solomon died in 1778, aged seventy-two years. He left ten children, of whom Phoebe married Dr. Epenetus Wallace and Nathaniel, settled on the homestead and to whom his father conveyed eighteen and one-half acres April 16, 1759, on the Titicus River and along the Oblong line to the land of Stephen Brush. On March 29, 1770, he conveyed fifty-four acres adjoining the other and above it. Of other children, John was a graduate of Princeton College. David graduated at Yale College. They, with their brother, Tompkins, became ministers of the Presbyterian Church. Jesse, another son, was in the colonial military service, and died at Half-Moon Point in 1758. John Close, a descendant of Solomon, resides in the town, in a comfortable home, thickly surrounded with trees and shrubbery, near the Episcopal Church. At one time he, with his brother, conducted a hotel here, but of late years he has not engaged in active business life.

Odle Close, of Croton Falls, the present supervisor of the town, is a member of another branch of the Close family, always resident in Greenwich, Conn. Mr. Close resides at Croton Falls in a handsome residence beautifully situated on an elevated plateau just east of the depot, and commanding an extensive view of the surrounding country. The residence is built of wood, in the modern style of architecture, with irregularly arranged angles and a finely proportioned tower. The grounds surrounding the dwelling are kept scrupulously neat and attractive and are well filled with shrubbery. Here Mr. Close enjoys the privacy of an elegant home, surrounded by all the accessories of a cultivated taste and the refinements of an educated mind. His private law-office is located in the village, and near his home, but he spends much of his time at White Plains, in the general office of Close & Robertson. He is widely known as

a talented and most efficient member of the bar. He was born in Greenwich, Conn., and graduated from Yale College in 1842. He studied law in Bedford, and was, while pursuing his studies there, the principal of the old Bedford Academy for three years. His college classmates are many of them eminent men of the age. Chief Justice J. A. Peters, of Maine; Chancellor Runyon, of New Jersey; Judge Douglas Boardman, of New York; Rev. Dr. Hall, of Brooklyn; and Hon. Calvin Frost, of Peekskill, were among them. He entered into a law partnership with Hon. William H. Robertson, and they opened an office first in Mott Haven, removing to White Plains in 1865. Mr. Close came to Croton Falls to reside in 1854. He married Miss Samantha B. Numan, of Glens Falls, N. Y., in 1846, and had three children—one son and two daughters. One daughter only survives. His reputation for integrity and professional probity is second to none in the State. In 1868 he was elected supervisor of North Salem, which position he has filled in such an acceptable and honorable manner that he has held it successively ever since and is the present incumbent. In addition to these local honors, he held the office of register in bankruptcy in 1867, and for some twelve years thereafter, and was appointed by Governor John T. Hoffman, in 1873, one of the commissioners to draft amendments to the Constitution of the State. Mr. Close has been thoroughly identified with the interests and prosperity of the town, and is ever jealously watchful of its financial, political and material interests.

Ezekiel Hawley, the grandson of Rev. Thomas Hawley, was one of the original proprietors of the Oblong. His father was Joseph, the second son of the Rev. Thomas, and succeeded his father in the proprietorship in 1753; was also an officer in the Continental service and chairman of the Committee of Public Safety during the Revolutionary War. Ezekiel settled on part of the Oblong that came to his father, Joseph, in the southeastern part of the town, near Lewisboro'. He died in 1788, leaving four sons—Ezekiel, Peter, Joel and David—and five daughters. The estate in North Salem was divided as follows under a will dated June 2, 1786: The half of the real estate to Peter and Joel, and the other half equally among the five daughters. The Hawley homestead is now owned by Joel Hawley, son of Alfred S. and grandson of Joel.

The Baxters were early purchasers on the Oblong, of whom were Thomas, Daniel and Pettit. The latter died in 1807 and left three sons,—David, John and Richard,—and daughters,—Rhoda, Mary (Keeler), Joanna (Close) and Phoebe (Hunt).

The Palmers settled at the south of Lake Pebquenakonck, where David died in 1795, leaving his real estate, adjoining John Baxter's land, to his sons,—John, Daniel, Sylvanus, David and Elias,—where the family still reside.

The family of Vail were also purchasers on the

Oblong, southeast of the Palmers, and Thomas Vail was overseer of the poor in 1790. In 1812 Sarah Vail, his widow, devised her real estate to her two sons, William and John, and other property to daughters—Martha (Mrs. Seneca Ferris) and Phœbe (Mrs. Edward Brundage). The estate is still in the family.

Ephraim Baker, a Friend, was an early resident and a public speaker.

Stephen Baker lived at the same place and was a trustee of the town in 1790. The family in the town have descended from him.

The family of Brown, who have been numerous in the town from its beginning, have derived their land from James Brown, who was one of the original proprietors of the Oblong. He resided in Lower Salem for several years, and died in Norwalk, Conn., in 1769.

On the line of the highway, running north from Close's Corners, near Salem Centre and near the Episcopal Church, is the handsome June homestead, a large, substantial frame dwelling, and a fine tract of farming land. The Junes were of the oldest families, having descended from Zabud June, who was prominent in the early history of North Salem. This family were intimately associated with the show business, that flourished so largely in this section. In connection with another family of the town, whose extensive property and fine residence was located a short distance southeast of the Centre (the Titus family), they were heavily interested in the organization and ownership of these exhibitions. There were other residents who were more or less intimately associated with them, but the Junes and Tituses were the principal resident owners. Somers was the birth-place of the business, and Hachaliah Bailey the originator. The town of North Salem followed at once. In those days it required more brains and skill to manage one of these shows than it does in these days of railroad facilities and easy transportation. June, Titus & Angevine's menagerie was one of the largest and most successful of these early exhibitions. The circus business was separately conducted at this time, and Aaron Turner, of North Salem, was the originator of this branch. He afterwards moved to Danbury, Conn., and erected a monument to his memory in the shape of the large brick hotel known as the Turner House. June, Titus & Angevine brought over and exhibited the first hippopotamus ever seen in this country. Lewis June, John J. June, James June, Lewis Titus and Stephen Angevine were the proprietors. The latter gentleman was a descendant of the Angevines of New Rochelle, who came from France. For many years these families were engaged actively in this business and amassed a fortune, whose comforts they enjoyed fully during the declining years of their lives. They have passed away, but the property remains in the hands of their descendants.

Stebbins B. Quick, born in North Salem, October 19, 1829, is of English descent. His father, Fladius C. Quick, was a well-known showman of the olden time, as was also his uncle, whose namesake he was.

In his youth he attended the district school in North Salem, after leaving which he entered the North Salem Academy, an excellent institution in which he retains a lively interest to this day. Here he remained till his eighteenth year, when he went to New York City and engaged as a clerk in the office of Davis Collamore, who was heavily interested in the manufacture and sale of glass-ware and crockery.

After five years of faithful service as a clerk he was admitted to the firm as a partner, the house being known as Davis Collamore & Co. He remained with the firm as a partner for a period of twenty years, during which he became widely known throughout the trade and in New York business circles generally as a safe and desirable customer, and a thoroughly honest and honorable man of affairs. While a member of this firm Mr. Quick was also a director in the Bank of New York.

At the close of his twentieth year of partnership he retired from active life, and returning to North Salem, he purchased as his future residence the old homestead. At a large expense he reconstructed the buildings, and prepared for himself a comfortable home, in which he resides at the present time.

There is no gentleman living in North Salem better known to its people. Born and brought up in the town, he absented himself from it during only such time as was necessary to accumulate the competency of which every man feels the need. Returning, he settled down in the home which had been the dwelling-place of his family for many generations, and immediately interested himself in those institutions and in people which had been the familiar companions and friends of his childhood. The district school and the academy, which were partners in his education, are now the objects of his special attention, as is also the Methodist Church at North Salem, of which he is secretary and treasurer, as well as a liberal supporter. He has interested himself in local politics, and though he is by no means a politician, he has held, under the Republican party, the office of town auditor.

In 1869 he married Alice A. Read, whose sad death in 1874 was deeply felt throughout the entire community. He has one child, a daughter, Florence A., who resides with him at North Salem.

Stephen Butler, who owns a valuable residence and property at Purdy's, is now one of the oldest showmen living. He was born July 10, 1801, in Onondaga, N. Y., and distinctly remembers when the city of Syracuse was nothing but a black-ash swamp. He is a hale and well-preserved man, full of activity and vigorous health, notwithstanding his age and the exposures of his early life in the exhibition business. He entered the business in 1827 with Horace and Eben Crosby, and afterward united his interests with



A. B. Dick





RESIDENCE OF STEBBINS B. QUICK,
NORTH SALEM, N. Y.

Horton, Teed & Company. He retired from the business in 1835. The Hortons in this firm were Lewis and David Horton, brothers, and sons of William Horton, of Somers. Charles Teed, of Somers, was a brother-in-law and partner in the concern. The Horton residence is located near the south line of the town, on the highway leading from Purdy's to Golden's Bridge. The old house has been removed, and a large, square, two-story modern residence erected in its place. Upon the farm is a valuable granite quarry which has been worked considerably in later years, but mainly for local purposes. The property is owned by the family of David Horton, one of the sons; Lewis, and his sister Clarissa, both unmarried, residing on the homestead and conducting the farm. Lewis was one of the engineers of Central Park, New York; but constant devotion to his profession injured his eyes and he was forced to retire from active life to the farm, his home. A little over two miles east of Purdy's, on the North Salem road, is a fine, large modern residence. It is two stories in height, surrounded by wide verandas and ornamented with various devices of the architect. A spacious lawn stretches out from the house in every direction, interspersed with drives and walks, while the carriage-house and other out-buildings in the rear carry out in style the general line of the main structure. Lamps are also placed at intervals throughout the grounds, and a handsome basin of ornamental iron-work receives the water from a fountain-pipe in the centre of the front lawn. On the east lawn is an elaborate summer-house with radiating arbors. On the west side a small pond has been raised, the waters flowing over a cut-stone dam and across a circularly fenced inclosure, under a bridge on the highway into the Titicus River, which flows through the meadows lying opposite the dwelling and on the south side of the road. Nearly opposite the residence, and also on the south side of the highway, is an immense barn, in which are all the modern appliances for the feeding of stock, a steamer for steaming the feed, an engine for running the feed-cutters, etc. This property is the summer home and milk-farm of T. W. Decker, a well-known and extensive New York milk dealer. The property embraces parts of several farms, and is admirably situated for the business to which it is devoted. It was originally owned in early days by Judge Ebenezer Purdy, and was joined on the east by the Delevan farm. The latter property is now owned by Thomas L. Purdy, son of I. H. Purdy, whose handsome residence overlooks a long reach of rich meadow and valuable undulating farm land to the south and east, comprising a large extent of the central Titicus Valley. Passing on east through the hamlet of Salem Centre and crossing the Titicus at that point, a few rods south, a large, rambling house, with huge chimneys, stands before us. It bears the marks of age, yet suggests old-time prosperity, comfort and contentment. It is the home of the Under-

hill W. Smith family. This place was formerly owned by James Mills, who was a supervisor of the town in 1835. He was the father of the present D. O. Mills, the millionaire of California and New York. Underhill W. Smith was a native of the town and son of Daniel Smith, whose name is prominently mentioned in connection with the early history. He was born in 1797, and purchased this place in 1844. The original Smith homestead is in the southern part of the town, but since its purchase this has been the home. Mr. Smith was an active townsman and a prosperous farmer. He was one of the academy board for years, and one of its patrons. There are seven living children, some of them still residing in the town. Alfred occupies the homestead. Samuel is engaged in mercantile business at Purdy's, and owns a fine residence near the village, while Willis is an extensive farmer in Somers.

Families bearing the name of Mills came from the north of England and the Scotch border before the Revolution, settling in Long Island and on the adjacent shores of Connecticut. Before the beginning of the century they had spread to New York. James Mills settled in Dutchess County, and married Hannah Ogden. Shortly afterwards he removed to North Salem, Westchester County, where he reared a family of six sons and one daughter. Of these, the fifth son, Darius Ogden Mills, was born on September 5, 1825.

James Mills was for many years a leading man in the community, a considerable landholder, postmaster, justice of the peace, and engaged in various business enterprises. He finally bought a hotel and dock property in Sing Sing, and died there in 1841—his widow surviving him nine years. His Sing Sing investment, as well as some others in his later life, did not turn out fortunately; and thus, at the age of sixteen, D. O. Mills was left without any prospects in life, save what he could make for himself.

He had, however, been carefully educated for a business career by his father, being sent to the best schools then attainable—first to the North Salem Academy, then to the Mount Pleasant Academy, at Sing Sing, which at that time ranked high among the educational institutions of the State. At seventeen he left the academy and set about supporting himself and making his way in the world.

He secured a clerkship in New York. Here and in some work connected with the settlement of his father's small remaining estate he was occupied for the next few years. Finally his cousin, E. J. Townsend, invited him to Buffalo to serve as cashier in the Merchants' Bank of Erie County, with a partnership. In 1847, at the age of twenty-two, he removed to Buffalo under this arrangement. The bank was one of deposit and issue, under a special charter. The new cashier made friends, and the bank had what was for those times a good and increasingly profitable business.

In the summer of 1848 gold was discovered in California, and by the autumn the gold fever was visibly affecting the Buffalo community. It struck the members of the Mills family in New York, and two of the brothers, James and Edgar, started in a sailing-vessel around the Horn for California, taking with them quite a stock of goods, with which they proposed beginning business on the Pacific. D. O. Mills was not much impressed, being of a conservative tendency and satisfied with his present prospects. In the early winter, the news from California became still more alluring. Two of his Buffalo friends proposed to go to California with him and start in business together.

Mr. Mills illustrated then the rapidity of decision which afterward became an important element in his business career. He decided at once to go, and said he would be ready to start in ten days. His two associates found that they should be unable to carry out their plan; but, having made up his mind, Mr. Mills determined not to abandon the venture, and, in spite of the protests of friends and relatives, he did start within the ten days. His cousin and partner raised no objections, agreed to maintain the same relative interests in any business Mr. Mills might undertake in California that they had in the bank, and to protect all drafts Mr. Mills might make.

He started in the last of December, 1848, with a through ticket by way of the Isthmus, calling for passage up on the Pacific side on the first trip of the new steamer "California." At Panama he found some three thousand people waiting for steamers, or for any other craft that would take them to San Francisco. The reports were, that every ship entering the Golden Gate was instantly deserted by its crew for the gold-diggings, and that thus vessels found it impossible to get out of the harbor again. Seeing no chance for passage direct to San Francisco, he determined to try a longer route that promised to be shorter in the end; and, enlisting a friend in his scheme, he started for Callao, in the hope of finding either there or at some intervening port suitable ships to charter for San Francisco. A representative of one of the largest houses in Panama had, however, preceded him by about ten days and chartered the available sailing-vessels. At Callao they found the bark "Massachusetts," and, after considerable bargaining about the supplies and accommodations, engaged her to take a party of one hundred to San Francisco for ten thousand dollars. After some delays and a tedious and uncomfortable voyage of sixty days, they finally arrived off the Heads at San Francisco on June 8, 1849. The ship being delayed, unusually, as he thought, by the captain, Mr. Mills secured a small-boat from the ship, and, with six others, took the chances of rowing into an unknown harbor, from a point some miles outside the Heads. A flood-tide favored them, and so Mr. Mills finally landed on the sandy water-front of San Francisco,

not from the deck of the new steamer "California," but from a little row-boat.

By the time the ship got up he had found some acquaintances, heard the latest news from the diggings, looked over the place, abandoned any idea of washing gold, and laid his plans for a trading expedition to Stockton, in the San Joaquin Valley, then the headquarters for the business of the southern mines. He took as partner a fellow-voyager, who was well recommended, bought a sailing craft and stocked it with goods, buying in part for cash and getting the rest on consignments from a ship-owner who had met him on the journey out and was influenced in opening such relations with him about equally, as it seemed, by his personal bearing and his credits. At Stockton the cargo of the little craft was sold at prices that should have shown a handsome profit. Not liking his partner's business methods, however, he sold out the vessel on his return and closed the venture at a small loss. He had now found out that Sacramento, as a base of supplies for and trading with the mines, was a more attractive field; and his experience at Stockton had taught him what kinds of goods to take. In connection with two old acquaintances, he laid out every dollar he had left, excepting a trifle for personal expenses, and bought on credit or secured on special consignments enough to furnish nearly the entire cargo for a schooner about to sail for Sacramento. The freight bill was over five thousand dollars. At the time of arrival he had forty dollars left in his pocket. Reaching Sacramento, he ordered his goods discharged and asked the captain to make out his bill. Meantime, he began selling goods at the landing, as they were brought off, and before the bill was presented he had taken in gold dust enough to pay it.

This venture proving highly profitable, Mr. Mills at once began a regular business in Sacramento, selling general merchandise, buying gold dust, and dealing in exchange on New York. In accordance with the arrangements made with his cousin and partner in Buffalo, he closed out his Sacramento business in November, 1849, and started back to Buffalo with about forty thousand dollars as the net proceeds of his season's work. He was so pleased with his experience, however, and so satisfied with the country, its resources and prospects, that he was already resolved to make California his home. He reached Buffalo in December, having been absent just about a year, and proceeded to close out his interest in the bank. He busied himself during the winter in loading a bark and part of a ship with goods bought for the Sacramento trade. These were despatched around the Horn as early as possible, and in the spring he started back *via* the Isthmus. Arrived at Sacramento he again began dealing in general merchandise, gold dust and exchange. By the autumn of 1850 he had disposed of his various cargoes of merchandise, and had so enlarged the other branches of his business that they required all his attention.



MODEL DAIRY FARM,
RESIDENCE OF T. W. DECKER,
NORTH SALEM, WESTCHESTER COUNTY, N. Y.



Thus began the bank of D. O. Mills & Co., which at once became, and to this day, under the same title, remains, the leading bank of Sacramento or the interior of California. It is the oldest bank that has always maintained full credit in the State. After two years his cousin, Mr. Townsend, retired, Mr. Mills then taking the entire business and conducting it without a partner until 1862. He had, however, a branch bank and agency at Columbia, which his brothers James and Edgar conducted, and in which they were partners with him.

He was continuously and largely successful, and became known as the leading banker of the State, and, as the saying went, "the luckiest." "The luck of D. O. Mills" was almost a proverb, but it was accompanied with a reputation for judgment, rapid decision, boldness and absolute integrity. He would have nothing to do with questionable schemes, and his word was universally known to be as good as his bond.

In 1857 his health began to be impaired by overwork, and the physicians advised a trip overland. He accordingly fitted out a train and drove from Sacramento to the Missouri. This was the year of the Mountain Meadow massacre. When he passed through Salt Lake the temper of the Mormons was already ugly, and farther on the Indians were on the war-path. He came through, however, without interruption, although it was reported for a time that his party had been among those lost in an outbreak by a hitherto peaceful tribe. He derived great benefit from this overland trip, and the next year he supplemented it with a three months' journey in Europe. By 1862 he began to think of retiring from business or at least of securing more leisure and re-visiting Europe with his growing family. With this in mind, he re-organized his bank, taking in his brother Edgar and his cashier, Henry Miller, as partners. In 1885 the one and the son of the other were partners still.

In San Francisco, where the banking business was still mainly in the hands of private bankers, there had in 1863 begun to be felt the need of a bank with such capital and organization as to secure the amplest credit in foreign countries, and particularly in China, Japan and other sources of trade on the Pacific Ocean. Mr. Mills was naturally turned to as the man of the highest standing and credit to take the presidency. He was at first reluctant, but at last the challenge of greater responsibilities affected him, as it is apt to affect men of capacity and purpose, and he agreed to unite in the enterprise. His intention was to serve for only three or four years, when he hoped to retire finally from all business, save the care of his own property. By July, 1864, the capital of two million dollars was made up, Mr. Mills was elected president and the Bank of California began business.

Under the stimulus of the times and the confidence

inspired by the management, the business was soon so developed that the capital had to be raised to five million dollars. The bank became one of the best known financial institutions of the country. Its credit was of the highest, alike in London, Yokohama, Canton, Shanghai, Honolulu and throughout South America. It proved of immense service in aiding the development of the country, furnishing facilities for the establishment of manufactures on the coast and for building up the foreign commerce of San Francisco. It was an institution in which the community took a pride, and it rewarded its stockholders well, giving them a one per cent. monthly dividend, while also accumulating a surplus.

The three or four years Mr. Mills meant to serve when he took the presidency stretched out to nine; but at last he insisted on carrying out his plan of retiring from active business, and on the 15th of July, 1873, he resigned the presidency of the bank. He left it in splendid condition, with capital secure, a large surplus, highly profitable business, first-rate organization and unlimited credit. Two years later he was summoned back to help rescue it from utter wreck, and found it with liabilities of thirteen million five hundred thousand dollars above its capital and surplus, with only one hundred thousand dollars cash in its vaults, and with many doubtful assets.

From the establishment of the bank William C. Ralston had been associated with Mr. Mills as cashier, and had displayed business capacity of an order approaching financial genius. He had previously been engaged in private banking in San Francisco, and Mr. Mills had then loaned him a large part of the capital employed. This business relation had been entirely satisfactory. Mr. Ralston prospered and acquired both reputation as a banker and great personal popularity among business men, whom he was ever ready to assist to the verge of prudence. In the Bank of California he displayed the same traits and added to his popularity, so that on Mr. Mills' resignation the cashier had been naturally promoted to the presidency.

Mr. Mills had resigned from the directory also; but the new president begged him not to insist on this. As Mr. Mills had always attended to the foreign business and was the one officer of the institution whom foreign bankers knew, there seemed a reason for this, and so he consented that his name should remain on the board until the next regular election. But he was now preparing to go abroad and found his own business so burdensome that he was unwilling to assume responsibility for any more, and so insisted peremptorily that at the next election his name must be dropped. When this election came around, Mr. Mills was out of the State. On his return he found that Mr. Ralston had again placed him on the board. He at once remonstrated, but Mr. Ralston pressed the need of still having his name so pertinaciously, that Mr. Mills saw no way of escape without forcing an

actual breach with his old associate. But he resolved to secure his point at the next election. The ownership of two hundred and fifty shares of the stock was necessary to make a man eligible for the directorship. He ordered all his stock sold, and dismissed the subject from his mind. When the next election came around he was again absent. Returning, he learned to his amazement that his name still appeared as director. Mr. Ralston had bought two hundred and fifty shares of his stock and, instead of transferring it, had kept it standing in Mr. Mills' name.

It now became apparent that the management had affected the credit of the bank and its standing. Four or five days before its condition became known, William Sharon went to Mr. Mills with an appeal for help to save Mr. Ralston from failure in his personal speculations. He said nine hundred thousand dollars would carry him through. Mr. Mills could not forget their years of association and the constant consideration and courtesy which, since his retirement, Mr. Ralston had always shown him in everything except the matter of the directorship and he at once agreed to help. Within an hour he had seen Mr. Ralston and had arranged to let him have about four hundred thousand dollars that day and three hundred and fifty thousand dollars more in the next two or three days. The rest he had no doubt Ralston would be able to get elsewhere. It was subsequently learned that there had been an over-issue of about twelve thousand shares of the bank's stock. This stock was taken in and retired just before the failure, by Ralston and Sharon, and that was where Mr. Mills' money went.

Two days later Mr. Sharon went to Mr. Mills again with the news that the bank itself was in trouble. From the day of his resignation Mr. Mills had never met with the directors nor assumed the slightest responsibility. He was not a director by his own option, or except by the device above stated. But his name had continued to be used as if he were still associated with the management of the institution of which he had long been the head, and he had made no public protest. He now felt that he should stand in a false position before the public if he did not give all his energies to an effort to retrieve the disaster. He at once went into the bank, requested Mr. Ralston to call the directors together, and attended their meeting.

On the 26th of August, 1875, the bank closed its doors. On the 27th, at a meeting of the directors, William Sharon offered a resolution requesting Mr. Ralston's resignation as president of the bank, which was unanimously passed. Mr. Sharon then moved that Mr. Ralston's predecessor, Mr. Mills, be instructed to act as a committee of one from the board to present the resolution to Mr. Ralston, and this motion was unanimously passed. Mr. Mills went into the adjoining room and gave the resolution to Mr. Ralston, with the simple remark that he was instructed

by the board to do so. Mr. Ralston, who was also a man of few words in an emergency, read it over carefully, said "Yes," and taking up his pen wrote his resignation as president and member of the board of directors. This, with a pleasant phrase or two, he handed to Mr. Mills, and the two men parted. Mr. Mills went back to the board meeting, and, before they adjourned, the body of Mr. Ralston had been found floating in the bay. There had not been an unpleasant word, nor was there the remotest sign of any purpose of self-destruction.

There followed a period of intense popular excitement. The dead man had befriended thousands, and his lavish expenditures made him almost the idol of the people. He received such a funeral as a great statesman or soldier might envy; and in the chorus of eulogy that followed, the good he had done was all remembered, while the evil was interred with his bones.

Mr. Mills had been summoned back by a unanimous vote to the presidency, and he felt it his duty to accept; but without any compensation, save what he might find in promoting the good of the public in the very grave financial crisis that was threatened. It was found that at the time of the suspension the bank's liabilities were \$19,585,000, including \$5,000,000 capital stock and \$1,000,000 reserve, while it had on hand about \$100,000 in cash, in addition to its doubtful assets. Mr. Ralston's personal indebtedness to the bank was finally fixed at about \$4,500,000; and this claim was sold to Frank J. Newlands for account of Mr. Sharon for \$1,500,000, with an additional \$500,000, payment of which was to be contingent upon a final settlement of Ralston's estate. Next, on the 24th of September, 1875, there was formed an agreement between the stockholders on the one side and D. O. Mills, William Sharon, Thomas Bell and their associates on the other side, for creating a fund of not less than \$5,000,000 in order to re-establish the bank. Under this agreement, a subscribed fund of \$7,895,000 was raised, D. O. Mills starting the list with a subscription of \$1,000,000. The Oriental Bank corporation of London now consented to protect the outstanding drafts and credits of the bank to the extent of \$1,250,000, on condition that D. O. Mills, William Sharon and Thomas Bell would guarantee the due payment of the same; and these gentlemen gave their guarantees to that effect. Then, on September 30th, just one month and five days after the suspension, the board authorized the resumption of business on the 2d day of October.

As the iron doors of the bank were thrown open again, the bells of the city rang, and great crowds in the streets sent up cheer after cheer. Mr. Mills had expected a run, and had prepared for it. But at one o'clock he was able to announce to his board that deposits were largely in excess of drawings. A general financial crash on the Pacific coast was averted.



L. O. Mills



The crowds on the street, as they learned the satisfactory state of affairs inside, cheered and called for Mr. Mills, till he, who hated public appearances and had no gift of speech-making, was forced out again and again to bow his acknowledgments.

For some time his duties continued of the most onerous, perplexing and delicate character. But he stuck to his post till he saw the bank again thoroughly established and in the best condition. Then he once more tendered his resignation on March 12, 1878, to take effect at the pleasure of the board not later than the 1st of May; and so at last regained his liberty, with the firm purpose never again to undertake the care of any business but his own.

The later years of Mr. Mills' life have accordingly been quieter and less eventful. He gradually made heavy investments in the East and finally constructed the largest business building in New York, on Wall and Broad Streets and Exchange Place. Business interests, as well as the recollections and friendships of his youth, thus tended to draw him to the vicinity of his birth-place, until now he makes New York rather than San Francisco his home. He retains, however, his interests in California, and keeps up his place at Millbrae, seventeen miles south of San Francisco, which still deserves the reputation it has long had as one of the most elegant and tasteful homes of the State.

Mr. Mills has none of the ostentation or other foibles so often characteristic of self-made men. He is a liberal patron of the arts and has cultivated a discriminating taste, which finds ample expression in the choice collections both of Millbrae and of his home in New York. He is fond of the society of people whose experience and culture have run in different channels from his own, and is thus, in an unusual sense, a quiet, discriminating and broad-minded man of the world. Living always in substantial elegance, he never creates the impression of doing things for show. He is mindful of the charities of human life, but avoids the reputation of it, and gives wisely and silently.

On finally transferring his residence for the greater part of the year to his native State, he resigned his post as regent and treasurer of the University of California, and accompanied his resignation with a gift of seventy-five thousand dollars, to found a professorship of moral and intellectual philosophy. At the same time he took steps to present to the State the marble group, by Larkin G. Meade, of "Columbus before Queen Isabella," which now stands in the centre of the rotunda at the State-House.

Mr. Mills was married, on September 5, 1854, to Jane T., daughter of James Cunningham, of New York, and has two grown children, both married and living near him. Till near the date of the Civil War Mr. Mills remained a conservative Democrat, as his father had been before him. With the outbreak of the war he supported the Republican candidates and has generally done so since.

To the east of the old Mills' homestead in North Salem, and a short distance south of Close's Corners, we find probably the most noted residence in the town. It includes a large and valuable farm property, beautifully divided into hill and dale, grazing and arable lands, and from the residence a magnificent sweep of the Titicus valley, with its bordering hills and the blue mountains in the distance may be comprehended in the range of vision. It was formerly the property of James Howe, a member of the family of the Howes who were prominent early residents of Salem.

It was purchased early in 1853 by James S. Libby, a prominent business man of New York, who, after the purchase, decided to erect a suitable mansion in place of the old-style farm-house then on the premises. Accordingly plans were drawn and accepted, and the work began which produced, when completed, a massive stone edifice unequaled in this part of the country. The main building is square, two stories and attic, flat roof, surmounted with an observatory, and surrounded with a broad piazza. Attached to the rear is an angular one-story and attic addition, with basement story complete. The house is finely proportioned, and conveniently divided into the various reception, drawing, dining-rooms, library, parlor and sleeping-rooms. The whole presents a picture of solidity and luxurious ease. The house stands on a slight elevation overlooking a fine lawn, and is approached by winding drive-ways and walks. It was christened "Inland Vale," and for a number of years Mr. Libby enjoyed the comforts of his ample home. He, however, a few years since decided to sell, and found a purchaser in U. S. Grant, Jr., who immediately took possession and now resides here. General Grant, previous to his last illness, frequently visited his son at this beautiful home, and some of his blooded stock found quarters here. Since the general's death, Mrs. Grant has been much of the time an honored guest here. In the near vicinity is the residence of Alfred B. Mead, a member of the Mead family of Greenwich and Lewisboro'. His residence is a fine, commodious farm-house, situated on a slight elevation which slopes to the bank of the Titicus River, a few rods from the residence. It is a romantic and beautiful location. Mr. Mead was a prosperous farmer and cattle-dealer, and largely interested in the general prosperity of the town. His business and social connections were extensive and of the highest character. He was one of the principal stockholders in the American Condensed Milk Company, and was a thorough-going, upright townsman. He died, January 23, 1886, at the age of seventy years. His daughter is the wife of William I. H. Howe, the president of the Milk Company, and son of Epenetus Howe, one of the prominent men of early days. Mr. Howe owns a fine property in the village of North Salem, and his beautiful residence there is an indication of a cultivated taste combined with

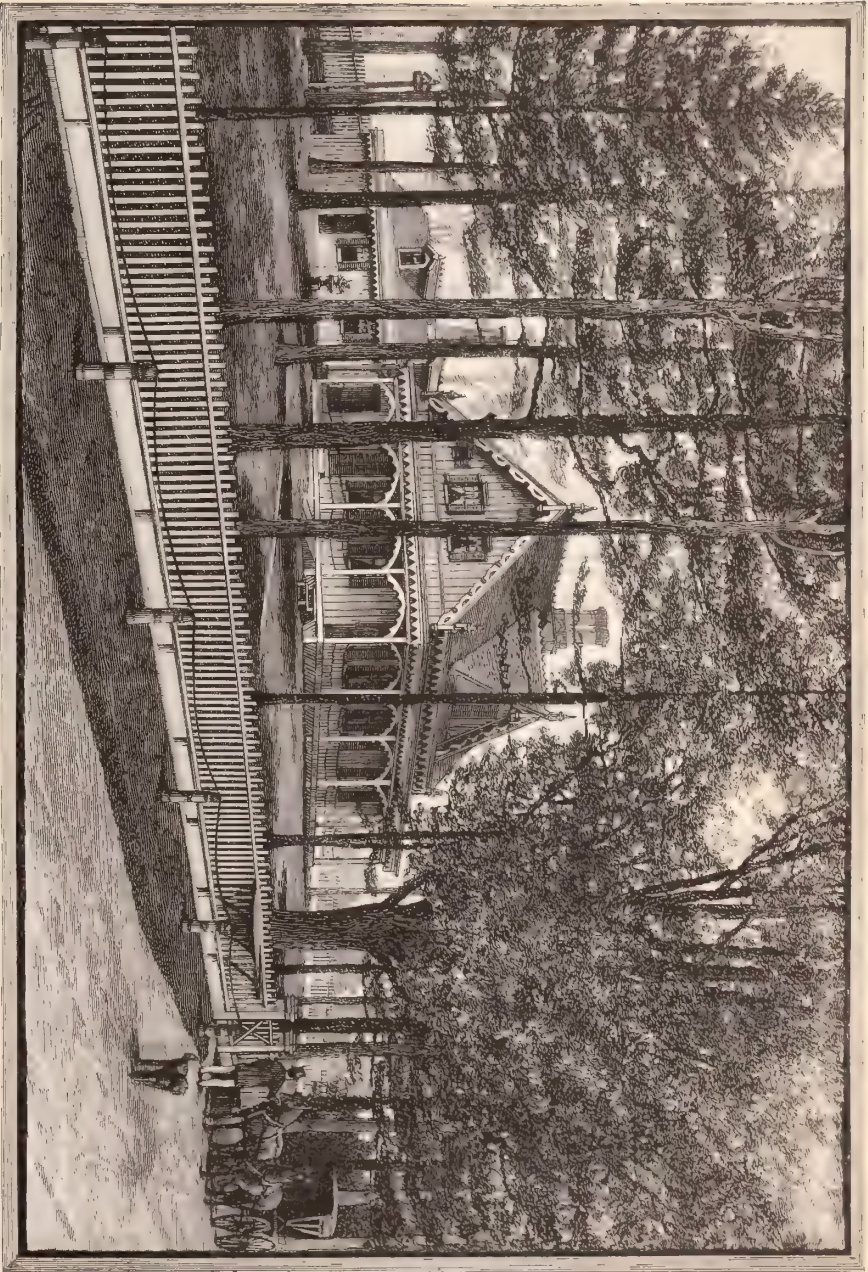
business enterprise and a high degree of prosperity. He was the main organizer of the Milk Company, and by earnest and persevering attention he has built up in the town a permanent and lucrative industry. The company have a large condensing factory also at Hawleyville, Conn., where they manufacture plain condensed milk. He is one of the leading business men of the town. His father held offices in the town for many years, as did also other members of the Howe family. In the vicinity of this village are also the residences of the Keeler family, together with their farms. Jonah Keeler was one of the first settlers of the town, and Nathan Keeler was for many years a prominent resident of North Salem. Floyd Keeler followed in the footsteps of his father, and his son, H. Hobart, now the owner of the valuable property left by Floyd, is also one of the excellent business men and principal townsmen of North Salem. Walter Keeler did much to encourage business enterprise in the town, and many dwellings, stores, business places, etc., attest his unwearied industry in this direction. His daughter, Mrs. Storrs, is the only descendant. Farther to the east and north are the comfortable, and, in many instances, elegant houses and valuable property of the Vails, Thealls, Nortons, Hunts and Finches. Of the latter family, James was a native of Somers, his father having erected a large, square brick mansion just south of Somers village, where he resided.

The place was sold and the family removed to North Salem, where Mr. Finch owns a valuable farm and elegant residence. He has held various offices of trust in the town and is a prominent and public-spirited citizen. Erastus and Edward Finch are sons of Ezra Finch and reside in Salem Centre. They are noted business men, conducting the mills that their father owned and which have a reputation throughout the section. They are also distillers of cider whiskey. Erastus is one of the academy board and a deputy sheriff of the county; their family is one of the oldest of the town and has always been closely identified with the town's prosperity. South of the Centre resides Nelson Grummon, a member of the family of which was Ephraim Grummon, who was paid "sixteen shillings for numbering the people by a warrant from the sheriff," in 1782. This family have always resided here. Nelson has occupied various offices of trust in the town, is one of its justices and excise commissioner at the present time and one of its leading citizens.

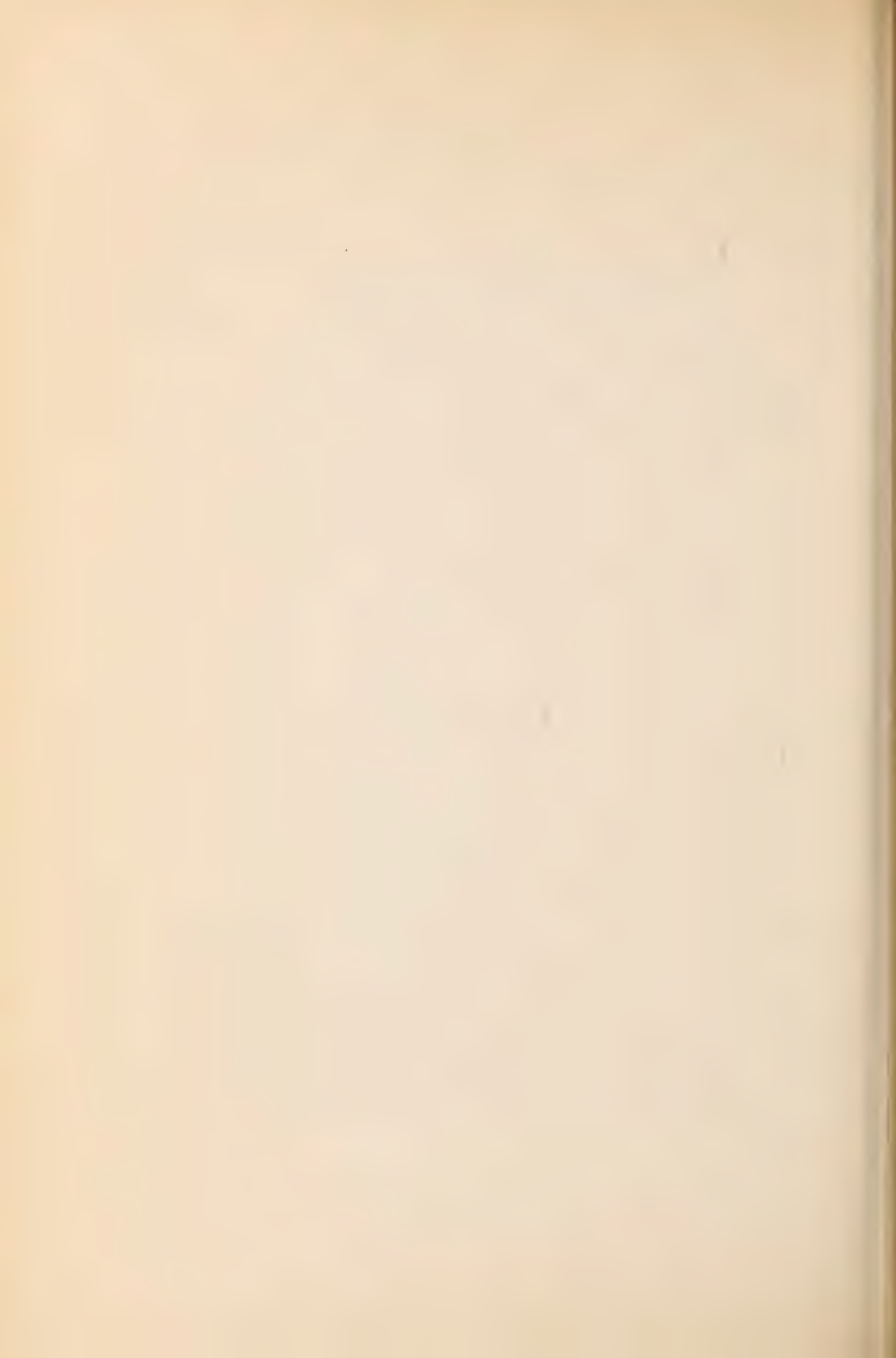
Samuel B. Clark, the present town clerk, has held the office of town clerk since 1855. He resides in a modest village residence just below the hill on which stands the Episcopal Church, of which he is the sexton. Mr. Clark's father, Jesse Clark, was a familiar figure to the early residents of the town before the advent of the railroad, as twice each week his market-wagon gathered up the butter, cheese, eggs, etc., at the highest prices and conveyed them to Sing Sing.

Mr. Clark was formerly engaged in teaching in South Salem and has often slept in the room where Andre was confined. He has now, however, retired from active life, save attention to the duties of his office, which he discharges in a most excellent and faithful manner. In a small, neat dwelling in Salem Centre resides one of the oldest residents and officials of the town, Jonathan Van Scoy. At the first town-meeting Timothy Van Scoy was elected overseer of the poor and trustee to provide a place for the reception of the poor. He was the father of Jonathan, who seems to have inherited the office from his father. Now over eighty years of age, he has held office in the town nearly continuously since he arrived at man's estate, and has always been a faithful officer and a man of sterling integrity. His declining years are passing peacefully on amidst the scenes of his younger and more active life. Mr. John Smith, also an old resident, owns and occupies an old-fashioned farm-house just west of the Centre. The building is a long, low, sloping-roofed story-and-a-half frame house, standing with its long porch across the side facing the road. Its old well-sweep at the west end of the house, the low double doors, the small-paned windows, the huge chimney all speak of the times when itself was young, bright with its coat of red paint, and the very aristocrat of its neighboring cabins, while history was being made. Mr. Smith prefers its comforts to any of the modern houses to-day. At Purdy's, just as the main road turns into River or First Street, stand on opposite corners two of the oldest houses in the place and yet they are so modernized by their owners as to present to the view two of the handsomest residences here; they are the homes of M. C. Teed, of the firm of Teed & Hunt, lumber and coal merchants, and D. L. Casselman, M.D. Both of these houses are of a unique style of architecture, with angles and gables and hoods and hints of towers, partly Gothic and partly Queen Anne, both surrounded with pleasant, neatly-kept grounds, and the whole forming, in both instances, a neat and artistically arranged home.

Mr. Teed is from the Somers family of that name, and has been a resident of Purdys' a number of years, a prominent business man of the place, and large property owner here. Dr. Casselman is a native of Western New York and a highly educated practicing physician, with a very extensive practice throughout this and adjacent towns. He married the daughter of A. B. Thacker, of Somers, cashier of the Farmers' and Drivers' National Bank, and settled here, purchasing the residence and former practice of Dr. C. E. Lee in January, 1880, since which time he has entirely remodeled the dwelling, making it one of the most attractive and beautiful of the many fine residences of the town. The proprietor of the hotel in this place comes of the Reynolds and Baker families, both of them among the earliest settlers of North Salem. Reynolds Corners, as it was formerly known, is in the vicinity of Wheeler's mill, on the line of the



RESIDENCE OF THE LATE WALTER KEELER,
NOW OCCUPIED BY RICHARD A. STORRS,
NORTH SALEM, WESTCHESTER COUNTY, N. Y.





RESIDENCE OF N. F. SMITH,
SOUTH CANTON, WASHINGTON COUNTY, N. H.

STONK

North Salem highway. Eli Reynolds was the son of Samuel Reynolds, who owned a farm in this vicinity. Several members of the family now reside here in plain, commodious, substantial residences. His mother was a Baker. The first Ephraim Baker owned a tract of land now owned by Mrs. Bailey, the widow of Todd Bailey, in 1770, and was a Quaker speaker. The farm was kept in the family until 1836. During part of the Revolution Stephen Baker resided here, and Stephen De Lancey boarded with him. Thomas Baker, the son of Stephen and grandson of Ephraim, married a sister of Ezekiel Halstead, of Lewisboro', also widely known as a Quaker speaker. Samuel Reynolds married the sister of Ephraim Baker (2nd). They were the father and mother of Eli Reynolds. The families are the oldest and most substantial in the town. On the Todd Bailey estate, situated in a grove of locust trees, is a plain story and attic building, small, rough in appearance, the patches of faded red on the clapboards showing its color in the years gone by. The plain entrance, without stoop, is in the side facing and but a few steps from the highway. Though insignificant as a dwelling, and now used as a farm tenement, yet the magnificent view down and across the Titicus Valley, over the undulating lands, away to the blue mountains in the southeast, more than compensates for the scanty accommodations of the dwelling. But the place has an association that is exceptionally pleasant. Here, during the summer of 1850, lived, with his family, the man who built up the most potent newspaper of its day, a power that swayed the councils of the nation, the moving spirit, in one sense, of the great War of Secession, the candidate for the highest office in the republic, the editor, the philosopher, the political economist, the generous Horace Greeley, of the *New York Tribune*. Here he drew the inspirations of nature fresh from field and grove, from vale and rugged headland, and carried the fresh air of country life to his busy sanctum in the city. An elegant villa is seen in the near distance. It is the home of Niles Smith, the son of Harvey Smith, of North Salem, a native of the town and a New York business man. Harvey Smith was one of the early freighters on the Harlem Railroad, and for many years sold the country produce at the Forty-second Street Market, in New York. His son Niles engaged for a time in the show business, eventually embarking in the hotel business in New York, in which he still continues. He purchased a tract of land about one mile from Purdy's, and erected this handsome villa-like dwelling,—a large, two-story square structure, surrounded with broad piazzas, and standing on an elevation which commands a splendid view of the surrounding country. The beautiful lawn slopes gently to the highway, which passes several rods from the residence, and the whole place is conspicuously attractive. Upon the north side of the highway leading east from Purdy's, and

little less than a mile therefrom, is the Brown homestead, now owned by F. D. Brown, a prominent farmer and official in the Methodist Episcopal Church. His present residence is a rather unique-looking, but exceedingly home-like and comfortable, mansion. It is much longer than wide, a story and a half in height, with pointed dormer windows in the roof, standing with the side to the street. An entrance midway in the front side is an alcove instead of a projection, while there are other entrances on either end, covered with the piazza roofs. It has a somewhat English cottage air, and is withal a most convenient and handsome residence. Mr. Brown is a native of the town, the generations of his family being noted elsewhere in the inscriptions recorded on grave-stones. Nathan Brown was his grandfather, whose son Thomas lived on the farm now adjoining the one owned by the son, Francis D.. The old place, thoroughly modernized in appearance, is occupied by Charles Bloomer, whose wife is a daughter of Thomas and sister of Francis D. Brown.

The western portion of the town is laid down on Cortlandt Manor as being Great Lot No. 8, and in the division in 1734 was laid off to Andrew Miller. Of the settlers who located on this lot were the families of Purdy. There are two branches of the family occupying lands in this strip. The first settlers of Fairfield, Connecticut, were of this family. The first was Francis Purdy, who died at Fairfield in 1658. From him came the family of Rye. Joseph was one of the original purchasers of White Plains; Samuel was the youngest son of Francis, and from him came the families of this town. At what time one of the family purchased on lot No. 8 is not known, or which one, but purchase was made of a large tract along the east side of the Croton River, and up Titicus River. The land was left by will to two sons, Hachaliah and Joshua. The latter resided in Rye township, and his eldest son Joseph, settled upon his father's portion and purchased other lands adjacent,—on June 2, 1786, sixty acres of Gilbert Theale, a son of Ebenezer, and June 12, 1793, part of the undivided lands of Hachaliah and Joshua.

He was eminent in the early councils of the settlers of the town. He married Letitia Ginon, and had three sons. His first son was Isaac, of North Salem, who married Miss Hart. Their son, Isaac Hart, resides in the old family mansion at Purdy's, a few rods from the depot. This house is most pleasantly located at the junction of the highways leading to North Salem on the east and Croton Falls on the north. It is a plain, large, substantial-looking dwelling, of two stories, projecting roof, shingle sides, fronting south, and commanding a fine view of the level meadow lands lying along the Croton and Titicus Rivers, and the wood-crowned hills on the east, west and south. It is surrounded by a fine lawn, inclosed by an ornamental iron fence and faced granite wall. Immediately in front of the residence,

and by the roadside, are two noble oaks, which have witnessed the scenes of over a century's experience. In the rear rises abruptly a hill of some two hundred feet in height, which was covered with forest when the dwelling was young; now this hillside is a fine orchard tract. The house itself was built by Joseph Purdy more than a hundred and twenty years ago, and has, with its fine farming lands, always remained in the family.

During the Revolution this part of the country was infested with the Cowboys, whose depredations were frequent and extensive. When the British lines had been extended northward after the battle of White Plains, many of the residents of the towns of Salem and Somers were robbed of their stock in the night, until at last Joseph Purdy collected some of his neighbors and they determined to watch for and, if possible capture the marauders. Accordingly, one night several of these determined men met at Mr. Purdy's house and gathered in what is now the sitting-room, in the southwest corner of the building. All lights were extinguished and in the darkness these farmers waited and watched. The sound of horses' feet was heard coming down the hill a few rods northwest of the house, on the road leading from Somers over Dean's Bridge. Silently some of the party left the house by the rear entrance and passed around the corner of the building to the road in front.

There were two horsemen approaching, and through some noise made by the party on foot, they discovered their danger and turned to flee. One of them jumped from his horse and took to the wooded ridge in the rear of the house; the other kept on up the hill the way he had come. The pursuing party followed closely, ordering the horsemen to halt, but without avail. They thereupon divided, one part of them following the single horseman, while the other party turned their attention to the man on foot, whom, after a sharp chase, they captured, returning with him to the house. The lights were then brought in and the man was recognized as a Tory sympathizer, well-to-do and well known. He was asked to give the name of his companion, but refused, whereupon he was informed that if he would do so he would be released, but if not he should be at once hanged on one of the oak-trees standing in front of the house. He still refused and a rope was produced. He was taken out to the tree and here he was given another chance, but to no purpose, and the rope was put around his neck, the end thrown over a projecting limb and sturdy arms soon swung his feet clear from the ground. After a short time he was let down and immediately sank to the ground unconscious. He soon revived, however, but still refused to divulge his comrade's name. Again he was drawn up, and some of the party were strongly in favor of ending the matter and leaving him hanging, but wiser counsels prevailed and after a third hanging, with the same

result as before, the man was released in a terribly weakened condition and with an admonition to leave the country. The other party in the mean time had traced the horseman to Somers, as it is now known, where he left his horse and, procuring a pair of women's shoes in place of his own, proceeded toward the west on foot. He was tracked to the banks of a small stream running through the lands of Stephen Brown at present, where he eluded the search by wading a long distance in the water. Not long after this some of the noted Tories left this section. Hon. Joshua Purdy, later one of the associate judges of the county, son of Joseph and the uncle of the present Isaac H. Purdy, was an eye-witness of this incident, he being a boy at the time and residing at home with his parents. He afterwards came into possession of the property by inheritance, and died in this house. Isaac Purdy then owned the property and the present proprietor was born here. I. Hart Purdy was the originator of Purdy's Station, and his family are of the oldest and most prominent of the town. He has occupied positions of trust and eminence in the town for many years and lives in quiet, surrounded by all the comforts and luxuries of life. He and his sons, Isaac and Thomas L., are large property owners in North Salem, and are prominent in social and political circles. On his grandmother's side, Philena Griffen married James Hart in 1764. Their daughter, Anna Hart, married Isaac Purdy. From this family Mr. Purdy receives the name of Hart. He is also connected by marriage with the families of Howe, Perry and Keeler, of Salem, and Brown and Crane, of Somers. A sister of Isaac Purdy married Daniel Quick and the Quick estate joins the Purdy homestead on the north. The house is a fine, large, old-fashioned farm-house, with an air of comfort and prosperity, standing in a large yard and surrounded by tall locust and other trees. Attached to the Quick homestead is a large farm extending across the Croton River and into Somers. The Harlem Railroad also passes through this farm, under the hill a few rods west of the house. Isaac Quick, the son of Daniel, succeeded to his father's estate. The names of both father and son are prominent in the early annals of the town. After the death of Isaac the estate passed into the hands of one of the Slawson brothers, business men of New York, who married a daughter of the house. North, on the same highway, and near Croton Falls, is an old house standing at the junction of the highway, and directly opposite a small mill-pond. It is at present used as a tenement for farm laborers. It is a one-story and basement house, with sloping roof and low ceilings, and a long piazza in front. In this house was born, eighty years ago, another member of the Purdy family. This place was owned by William Purdy, who was the son of Daniel, son of Hachaliah. In this house was born, in 1807, Joel Purdy, who inherited his father (William's) property, and whose handsome residence, command-

ing a beautiful view of the Croton Valley to the south and west, is located but a few rods from the old house. Joel Purdy was engaged in business in New York for many years and amassed a competence, after which he returned to his native town and erected the fine residence above mentioned; also factory and store buildings at Croton Falls, where his son is engaged in mercantile life. He has been and is an active man in the community, was one of the original organizers of the Baptist Church and occupies a prominent official position therein. He is also a large owner of real estate in the vicinity. There was another Purdy family in early Salem—that of Judge Ebenezer Purdy, prominently mentioned in connection with town and academical interests. This was a separate and distinct family, having no connection, so far as is known, with the same-named branches mentioned.

It has long been known that Harvey Birch, the hero of Fenimore Cooper's novel of "The Spy," was



Enoch Crosby

a real personage, and that his true name was Enoch Crosby, and a most accurate description of the man and his exploits was made in an address delivered before the Westchester County Historical Society, at Peekskill, on January 21, 1879, by Mr. Joseph Barrett, who confirmed his place in history. The facts were mainly derived from ex-Chief Justice John Jay, to whom Cooper was also indebted for the sketch which he developed into the romantic figure of "The Spy."

Following Mr. Barrett, however, we find that Judge Jay erred in his notion that Crosby's operations ever took him into New York City; on the contrary, they were confined entirely to the country districts along the Hudson.

Crosby was born in Harwich, Barnstable County, Mass., January 4, 1750, and at the breaking out of the Revolution was a shoemaker at Danbury, Conn. He had previously been a tanner and currier. He was an ardent patriot, and enlisted before the battle of Lexington in Benedict's company, of Waterbury's

regiment, which was attached to that branch of the Canada expedition of August, 1775, commanded first by Schuyler and then by Montgomery. His term of enlistment expiring, he returned to Danbury after the occupation of Montreal, and then traveled over Dutchess and Westchester Counties as a peripatetic shoemaker. Thus he not only acquired that intimate knowledge of the country that was to prove so valuable to the American cause, but also was brought into contact with the Whigs and Tories, the bummers, raiders, Cowboys and Skinners who infested the neutral ground between the lines of the opposing armies.

His first work as a spy was accidental. Determining to re-enlist, he tramped southward toward the American forces, through Westchester County, in September, 1776, and on the way met a Tory, who fell into the belief that Crosby was one of his own stamp. Crosby did not undeceive him, and, as the stranger had a loose tongue, the young American was soon put in information of all the Tory secrets in that part of the country. Having learned so much, it occurred to him that he might as well prosecute the adventure which fortune had placed in his hands, and asked to be taken to a meeting of Tories, which his companion had told him was to be held near by, to raise a company for the King's service. He must have played his part admirably, for he gained audience with all the important royal sympathizers of the neighborhood, including the secret enemies of the patriots, and laid a most admirable plot for their discomfiture.

Learning that a meeting of the Tory band was to be held on a certain night, he slipped away on the previous morning and by a forced march across the country reached at midnight the house of a Mr. Young, eight miles from White Plains, whom he knew to be a true American. Prevailing on this man to accompany him, they aroused Messrs. Jay, Duer, Sackett and Platt, the Committee of Safety at White Plains, and Crosby gave them the news which he had gathered with so much daring and adroitness. They ordered out Captain Townsend's company of mounted rangers, who swept across the country under Crosby's lead, surprised the assembled Tories, and ere daylight dawned had every man of them prisoners and on their way to White Plains.

The fame of this exploit went everywhere through the American lines. Crosby, then a strapping fellow of twenty-seven years, nearly six feet tall, broad and muscular, talked to Mr. Jay about re-enlisting, but that sagacious gentleman represented to him that in no way could he do so much for his country as by continuing in that line of duty for which this one achievement seemed to mark him as specially fitted. "Our greatest danger," said Mr. Jay to him, "is our secret foes. We know how to guard against our enemies in the field, but we have no defense against secret enemies, who profess to be friendly to us and plot their treason in midnight cabals. One who can coun-

tract these influences is entitled to more credit than he who fights in the ranks." Crosby demurred at first, but finally accepted the employment of a spy on the condition that if he should die in their service, the committee would see that his name was vindicated. With much feeling Mr. Jay and his associates gave him this solemn assurance, and Crosby consecrated himself to his dangerous and arduous task.

Carrying a pass from the committee, which was to be used only in cases of extreme necessity, and disguised as a traveling cobbler, he set out on his secret mission to discover and entrap the bands of Tories forming under cover. This was in the late fall of 1776. Very shortly he applied for a shoemaker's job at a farm-house, and discovering that a Royalist company was being enlisted in the vicinage, professed a desire to enlist, but declined to give his name because the roll might fall into the hands of the rebels. He gained the confidence of the Tory leaders so completely that he was allowed to examine the roll, and was shown an immense haystack in a meadow near the captain's house, which proved to be a framework covered with hay and capable of concealing forty or fifty men. A meeting of the company having been arranged for the next evening, he left his bed in the captain's house during the night previous, reported to the committee at White Plains, and was back in his bed before the family were stirring. The band was duly surrounded and captured, Crosby among them, by Townsend's rangers, and marched to confinement in the old Dutch Church at Fishkill, where they were examined by the committee. By collusion, Crosby escaped from the church, but was compelled to rush past the sentinels in the dark. They fired at him, but he escaped unhurt.

By agreement with the committee he was known as John Smith. Twelve miles northwest of Marlborough he wormed out of a Tory farmer the information that an English captain was hiding in a cave near by, and trying to recruit a company. Repeating his ruse of a desire to enlist, the spy discovered that a meeting was to be held on Tuesday, November 5, 1776, at a barn on Butter Hill. Suggesting to the captain that they had best leave the cave separately, he departed and sent word to the committee. Crosby arrived at the barn in due time with the Tories and laid down with them in the hay. Presently he heard a cough outside, the signal agreed upon, which he answered, and the barn was quickly filled with the rangers. Colonel Duer, of the Committee of Safety, had come with them for the express purpose of protecting Crosby, and, indeed, had given the signal. The English captain was ordered to call his roll, but Crosby did not respond to his name. Townsend, who was not in the secret, prodded him out with a bayonet from the hay, and, recognizing the man who had escaped him at Fishkill, promised to load him with irons. He shackled the spy, took him to his own quarters and confined him in an upper room.

But when Townsend had drunk after dinner plentifully of wine which the maid, instructed by the Committee of Safety, had enriched with a gentle opiate, and was sleeping soundly, she unlocked the door with the key which she took from Townsend's pocket and led Crosby forth to freedom.

By such methods Crosby was instrumental in the capture of many Tory bands. He spent several weeks in the family of a Dutchman, near Fishkill, where he was known as Jacob Brown. He had numerous fictitious names, of which Harvey Birch was one. In December, 1776, he was sent to Bennington, Vt., by orders of the committee. The object of his journey was accomplished, for, besides apprehending a number of secret enemies of the country in that region, he obtained such information as enabled him to surprise a company of them much nearer home. This was at Pawling, Dutchess County, and, fearing to trust himself again to the vengeance of Captain Townsend, he arranged with Colonel Morehouse, a Whig of the neighborhood, to raise a body of volunteers and capture them. When their rendezvous was surrounded, Crosby, he having again made a false enlistment, was dragged out from under a bed, where he had taken refuge, and complained that his leg was so much injured that he could not walk. The accommodating colonel took him on his horse, and, of course, he soon got away.

For three years Crosby continued in the employ of the Committee of Safety, but at last the Tories, marveling much at the detection of their covert undertakings, fixed suspicion upon him. A band traced him to the house of his brother-in-law in the Highlands, and beat him until they left him for dead. They were followed by a company of Whigs, who pursued them to the Croton River, where some were killed and others driven into the stream. It was months before Crosby recovered, and it was then plain that his days of usefulness as a spy were past. He joined Captain Philip Van Cortlandt's company, and was appointed a subordinate officer. While on duty at Teller's Point, in the spring of 1780, he decoyed a boat's crew from a British ship in the stream to the shore by parading on the beach a soldier dressed in Lafayette's uniform. He had his ambuscade set for them and captured them all. In the following fall his enlistment expired and he retired to private life. His whole pay from the government was but two hundred and fifty dollars, so that any remuneration he received from the Committee of Safety must have been very little. In October, 1781, in partnership with his brother Benjamin, he bought three hundred and seventy-nine acres of the forfeited Roger Morris estate, near Brewster's. A part of this tract is now covered by the Croton Reservoir. He erected a frame house on the east branch of the Croton River, a short distance east of the upper iron bridge at Croton Falls, where he lived a quiet life many years. The property is now owned by Joel B. Purdy. Later, Crosby

built the house now owned by his grand-daughter, Mrs. S. E. Mead, of Golden's Bridge. It stands north of the old house. In this house Crosby passed the later years of his life, and died June 25, 1835. He was interred in the old Gilead burying-ground, near Carmel, Putnam County. He married the widow of Colonel Benjamin Green. Colonel Green was also a soldier of the Revolution, and after the close of the war settled near the present Somers Centre depot. After the colonel's death his widow remained in the house until her marriage with Crosby, which was brought about by Dr. Ebenezer White. In the course of conversation on one occasion, Crosby asked the doctor if he would not find a wife for him. The doctor promised to try and do so. He finally bethought him of the Widow Green in her lonely state. The widow was apparently pleased with the recommendation of his friend Crosby, as set forth by the doctor, and an introduction took place, followed shortly afterwards by marriage.

He was a justice of the peace nearly thirty years. His exploits became known to the public through the Astor trials and the publication and dramatization of Cooper's novel. When it was produced at the Lafayette Theatre, Laurens Street, N. Y., he was induced to sit in a stage box. The crowd rose and cheered him with great enthusiasm, to which he responded with a bow. He was so modest that the world would never have known from him of his services to his country.

Near Croton Falls, and about two miles northeast of the village, is the large, handsome residence and productive farm of Gilbert F. Bailey. This estate has been in the family since the early settlement of the town, and different members of the family have been prominent residents of the town and active in its councils. The present owner was supervisor in 1859. His great-grandfather was one of the officers elected at the first town-meeting in 1790. His father, Solomon Bailey, was at one time the heaviest tax-payer in the town. Mr. Bailey is a plain, unassuming farmer, about fifty-two years of age, warm-hearted, generous and a public-spirited citizen. He is a graduate of Yale, of the class of '56, and numbers among his classmates some of the bright lights of the time, in literary and political life. He is one of the earnest members of the Baptist Church at Croton Falls and prominent in its councils. With all his accomplishments, not the least of which is a genuine poetical taste, Mr. Bailey chooses a quiet, practical farmer's life and loves his comfortable home and its surroundings.

VILLAGES AND POST-OFFICES.—The town has four hamlets and post-offices, viz.: North Salem, Salem Centre, Croton Falls and Purdy's. The two latter are situated on the extreme eastern boundary, and are stations on the line of the Harlem Railroad. The first named is in the northeastern section and is a small hamlet, surrounded by a farming community. North Salem and Salem Centre are the oldest villages

of the town. They are contiguous to each other, being only about two miles apart and both lying on the banks of the Titicus River. North Salem contains two stores, a mill and a number of comfortable dwellings, while in the immediate vicinity are the Methodist, Universalist, St. James' Protestant Episcopal and Presbyterian Churches. In this vicinity also are to be found some of the handsome residences of the wealthy townsmen and of strangers who have come from the city and purchased property here.

At Salem Centre there are a store, mills, some twenty dwellings and the old North Salem Academy, which was incorporated in 1790, and is one of the oldest in the State. This village composes the centre of a large farming community and, so recently as 1850, was one of the most important points in the town. In recent years trade has tended toward the railroad centres. Both these villages have mail facilities each day from Purdy's by stage. Along the highways leading from the centre in every direction are located the solid, old-fashioned houses of the farmer or the more pretentious dwellings of the man of larger means.

Purdy's Station, or Purdy's, as it is now called, came into existence with the advent of the New York and Harlem Railroad in 1845. The land upon which this village and station stands was part of the farm of Isaac H. Purdy, after whom the place was named, and whose large, plain, substantial farm-house, over a century old, stands a few rods northeast of the station. The place consists of a Methodist Episcopal Church and parsonage, the works of the American Condensed Milk Company, saw and grist-mills, lumber and coal yard of Teed & Hunt, hotel of Eli Reynolds, a public hall, also owned by Mr. Reynolds, a disused Presbyterian Chapel, now occupied as a dwelling, a marble yard conducted by George Godwin, five dry-goods and grocery stores, one jewelry establishment, two tin shops, a harness shop, one wagon and two blacksmith shops, a market and some fifty dwellings, some of them large and comfortable residences, built in the modern style. The Titicus River runs along the north side of one of the main streets, passes under the railroad bridge immediately north of the depot and empties into the Croton a few rods west of the place. The works of the milk company give this hamlet an air of business importance and prosperity. Croton Falls, two miles north, the next station on the railroad, is situated in the extreme northwestern corner of the town and about six miles from North Salem. It was formerly known as Owensville and was the seat of the mills of John Owen. It lies on both sides of the main branch of the Croton River, which furnishes a fine water-power for manufacturing purposes, which power, however, has been of little use to the progress of the place, owing to the high price at which it has been held by its owners, and the heretofore exorbitant rates of transportation charged by the railroad company. After the coming of the rail-

road the name of Croton Falls was substituted for the older one and is still retained, although an effort was made by James Owen to have the place named Kitchewan, after the Indian name of the river. This was, however, unsuccessful and, although there is nearly a total absence of any "falls," save short rapids for a few rods, Croton Falls was the adopted appellation. The village is built in an irregular form, along the shores of the river by the side of the railroad, and upon the steep bluffs on the east side of the track. Some handsome residences may be found here, indicating a cultivated taste and an abundance of means. Perhaps the most conspicuous is the home of Odle Close, supervisor of the town. The residence of Joel Purdy, near the village, is also attractive. In the village proper the Baptist Church edifice is the most notable.

The place contains one manufacturing establishment, built for and once used as an auger-factory, a feed-mill, large lumber and coal yards, three general stores, one grocery, one watch-making establishment, one hotel, the Croton House, one harness-shop, a large drug-store, blacksmith-shop, extensive green-houses (for a small village), a large hall and a Masonic building, together with various small shops and about eighty dwellings. Croton Falls also possesses a newspaper office, from which is issued a weekly paper, of which more will be said in its proper place. The site of a portion of Croton Falls was originally a burial-place for the families of the northern part of Westchester and the southern portion of Putnam Counties, the old grave-yard covering the hill on which are now placed the lumber yard and store buildings of A. B. Whitlock. The north-western portion of the village was the seat of business activity previous to the coming of the railroad, and as Owensville was known for its paper-mills and clothier's works throughout the entire county. Just north of the place stands the Crosby mansion, now in partial decay, but still a handsome dwelling, situated on an elevation overlooking the narrow valley of the Croton, and surrounded with extensive grounds. Darius Crosby was its late owner. Near the village, to the south, stands the Roman Catholic Church, which was erected with the advent of the Harlem Railroad. A large proportion of its members are residents of the near vicinity.

RELIGIOUS DENOMINATIONS.

North Salem possesses seven churches at present, in which religious services are regularly held, viz.: St. James' Protestant Episcopal, the Presbyterian, two Methodist Episcopal—one at North Salem, the other, with parsonage, at Purdy's,—a Universalist, a Baptist and the Roman Catholic. There was also a separate class of the Methodist Episcopal Church organized at Croton Falls, and, for a time, distinct services were held in Union Hall, at that place, but, after a few years, this was given up and the class organization

merged into the church society at Purdy's. The Presbyterians, also, of Somers and the vicinity of Purdy's for a few years maintained services in a building erected for a chapel at Purdy's, but it was found that a division of services and congregations weakened the church and the chapel was abandoned. The building was used for some time as a public school, but was finally converted into a dwelling with a small hall in the second story, which is occasionally used for social gatherings.

ST. JAMES' PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL PARISH is the oldest church organization in the town. The present church edifice is a handsome Gothic structure built of wood and located on an elevation on the north side of the highway leading from Salem Centre to North Salem, and about midway between the two villages. It was commenced in 1868 and finished the following year, costing about six thousand dollars. This is the third church building erected by this parish.

The parish of Salem (now North Salem) was organized by the Rev. Ebenezer Dibble. He was a native of Danbury, Conn., where he was born in 1712 and educated in Yale College, from which he graduated in 1734. He became a convert to the Episcopal Church from the Congregational, and in 1747 went to England for Holy Orders and returned to New York in October, 1748, as missionary to Stamford, Conn. It is stated that about 1750 he began holding services in a private house in Upper Salem, as then called, which he continued for many years. In a letter written by Mr. Dibble to the secretary of the Venerable Society, dated March 25, 1761, he says,—

"*Rev. Sir:*

"I preached at Salem, in the Upper District, on Sunday, the 22d of February last, to a very large congregation, and the poor people scattered about in the wilderness are, I am informed, concerting measures to build a small church, as a private house will seldom contain the people that went to church when I preach among them, which is as often as the duties of my extensive mission will permit."

Mr. St. George Talbot, a liberal patron of the church, addressed the secretary of the society July 10, 1763, in which communication he says he "desired Mr. Dibble to accompany me to Salem, where he preached the first Sunday in Trinity to a large congregation, . . . and gave the communion to about thirty persons, who behaved very decently. There they have built and almost covered a church." The lot was on the borders of Cortlandt Manor and known as lot No. 10. The edifice was thirty by forty feet, with galleries and glazed windows. The lot on which it was built was used as a burying-ground. Soon after the date of Mr. Dibble's letter the parish was united with Ridgefield and Ridgebury, Conn., and Richard S. Clark, a lay reader for that parish, assumed the services in this place, which he continued until 1766, when he went to England for Holy Orders. The Rev. Mr. Dibble and the Rev. Mr. Leaming then recommended to the society the appointment of Ebenezer Townsend as lay reader, which was granted, and in 1767 he accepted leave to visit London for

Holy Orders. His license was dated December 21, 1767. He was appointed as missionary to the parish of Salem, Ridgefield and Ridgebury. He was inducted to office on Sunday, May 29, 1768, by the Rev. Mr. Dibble, who preached a sermon upon the occasion. On the 13th of June, 1769, Stephen De Lancey conveyed to the Rev. Mr. Townsend sixty acres of land adjoining the church, on which Mr. Townsend, the next year, erected a large dwelling-house.

Here he resided and looked after the spiritual wants of the people of North Salem, Ridgebury, Ridgefield and adjacent parts of this territory. At this time the mutterings of war were heard throughout the land, and Mr. Townsend, seeing the position assumed by the American provinces toward the home government, began to preach against rebellion and to counsel peace, exerting the whole of his influence in favor of submission to the mother-country. This course necessarily estranged many of his people, who were entering into the coming struggle with heart and body. He held service for three Sundays after the Declaration of Independence was promulgated, and then, following the example of his brother clergy throughout the province, he discontinued public services until such time as they could be performed under the protection of the King. In a letter written to the Home Society in 1776 he says he had "baptized thirty infants, buried seven and married three." On the 21st of October, 1776, he was arrested by order of the Committee of Safety and was sent as a prisoner to Fishkill, where he was detained and suffered many hardships, his family in the mean time remaining in North Salem and suffering much from his absence and the knowledge of his condition. In March, 1777, he still refused to take the oath of allegiance to the colonies, and was then permitted to go to Long Island, which was in possession of the British. His house and farm were, some years later, sold to Epenetus Wallace, M.D. The house is now standing, not far from the present church edifice, and is known as the "Old Wallace House." The Rev. Mr. Townsend and family finally embarked on a vessel bound for Nova Scotia, but the ship foundered during the passage and all on board perished. Service being thus discontinued, the church building was desecrated and completely ruined. After the close of the Revolution the few Episcopalians who remained pulled down what was left of the building, and sold the timbers, boards, shingles, laths, glass and nails at public auction. Old nails would be a rare article to offer at auction in these days, but the nails used in the construction of this and contemporary buildings were all forged by hand, and were of value, even though second-hand. At this time also the silver chalice belonging to the church was sold for one hundred dollars. It had been presented to the congregation by Susan De Lancey, daughter of Lieutenant-Governor James De Lancey, and had been deposited by Mr. Townsend, before he sailed from Long Island,

with the Rev. Benjamin (afterwards Bishop) Moore, together with the library and velvet cushion belonging to the church. In 1785 Mr. Moore notified the church wardens of the parish that these articles were in his possession, subject to their order. The Rev. David Perry was deputed to receive them for the vestry, which he did.

At this time the church was not incorporated, and on the 1st of March, 1786, the members of the society met at the house of Joseph Purdy and by their action became an incorporated body under the name of the Episcopal Church of Upper Salem. They also elected as trustees Ebenezer Lobdell, Daniel Smith and Joseph Purdy. At a meeting held July 9, 1792, James Bailey, Benjamin Close, Gershom Hanford, John Lobdell, Gilbert Bailey and Jonathan Hallett were chosen trustees, and at the same meeting the name of the society was declared to be "The Church Wardens and Vestrymen or Trustees of the corporation of St. James' Church in the town of North Salem, Westchester County, N. Y."

On the 17th of March, 1795, an act of Legislature was passed for the relief of the Protestant Episcopal Churches in the State, and to allow them to elect church wardens and vestrymen. In accordance therewith, a meeting was held May 28, 1797, and James Bailey and Benjamin Close were elected church wardens and Epenetus Wallace, John Lobdell, Gershom Hanford, Joshua Purdy, Gilbert Bailey, Daniel Sherwood, Jacob Lobdell and Joseph Knox, vestrymen. The name of the society was also re-affirmed.

The materials composing the old church were sold May 25, 1797, and the ground on which the church had stood, together with the six acres on which the present rectory stands, were rented out, the money thus secured being placed at interest. In the mean time the Rev. Mr. Perry continued to hold services in this and neighboring parishes and a new church was earnestly advised. October 10, 1810, Dr. Epenetus Wallace exchanged the present site for the old one. The second church edifice was commenced by the laying of the corner-stone, on the 30th of August, 1810, by the Rev. Nathan Felch. The building was completed in 1814 and was consecrated to the service of God in 1816 by the Right Rev. John H. Hobart, D.D. It cost about two thousand dollars, of which sum Trinity Parish, New York City, gave one thousand dollars, the balance being provided from the fund on hand and the benefactions of the residents of the town, among whom are prominently mentioned Epenetus Wallace, M.D., and Joseph Purdy.

The first incorporation of which any record remains was on the 3d of June, 1786, under the title of "Episcopal Reformed Protestant Church at Upper Salem." There was a previous incorporation, but the date is not obtainable. Ebenezer Lobdell, Daniel Smith and Joseph Purdy were the trustees. A third

incorporation took place on the 30th of June, 1797. James Bailey and Benjamin Close were wardens, and Epenetus Wallace, John Lobdell, Gershom Hanford, Joshua Purdy, Gilbert Bailey, Daniel Sherwood, Jacob Lobdell and Joseph Knox, vestrymen. Mr. Stebbins Baxter, a resident of the town, died in 1820, bequeathing his entire property to St. James' Parish. After deducting necessary expenses of settlement, etc., about eleven hundred dollars was netted to the church. Mr. Baxter is buried in the cemetery just northwest of the present church, a plain headstone bearing this simple inscription,—

" In
Memory of
Stebbins Baxter,
who died
Feb. 28, 1820,
aged 66 years."

The wardens and vestrymen erected a parsonage and barn in 1842 at an expense of about one thousand dollars, the money being raised by subscription. There are six acres of land connected with the rectory, which is located about one mile east of the church and near the village of North Salem. The third church building was commenced in 1868 and completed the following year. Its location is on the site of the second church and is a fine one, commanding a beautiful view of the Titicus Valley towards the southeast. It is a fine Gothic edifice, arranged in modern style, and includes a commodious vestry. It is kept in excellent order, and the services are well and constantly attended. The cost of the building was about six thousand dollars. In 1829 there were seventeen communicants. In 1844 there were eighteen. In the present year (1886) there are forty-six.

The rectors of the parish have been,—

1750	Rev. Ebenezer Dibble, D.D.
1764	Rev. Richard S. Clark.
1768	Rev. Epenetus Townsend.
1790	Rev. David Perry, M.D.
1804	Rev. George Stebeck.
1810	Rev. Nathan Felch.
1816	Rev. George Weller.
1820	Rev. Samuel Nichols.
1829	Rev. Hiram Jelliff.
1835	Rev. Alexander Fraser.
1836	Rev. Benjamin Evens.
1841	Rev. David H. Short, D.D.
1842	Rev. Albert P. Smith.
1847	Rev. Nathan W. Munroe.
1848	Rev. Orsamus H. Smith.
1851	Rev. John Wells Moore.
1855	Rev. David H. Short, D.D.
1861	Rev. Russel Trevett, D.D.
1866	Rev. John S. Stone, D.D.
1869	Rev. Robert Condit Russell. ¹

This congregation, one of the oldest in northern Westchester, is vigorous and flourishing. The North Salem Cemetery is located but a short distance from St. James' Church and in it lie most of the founders of the parish and its early officers. This burial-

¹The present pastor.

ground was purchased by the town officers in the year 1806. Previous to this there had been interments in what is now the southern part of the grounds. On July 22, 1806, Matthew Smith conveyed to the town officers one acre and one rood of land for forty dollars, "to be used as a burial-place forever." In October, 1851, this was added to by a purchase of land from James Eggleston and wife. There are now about three acres of ground within the walls, in which space are buried very many whose names were prominent in the early history of the town and county. Here lies one of the early vestrymen of St. James' Church and one of the early proprietors of the town,—

" In
Memory of
Jacob Lobdell,
who died
Feb. 27, 1834,
Æ 77 years."

Also,—

" Zabud June,
Died
Nov. 19, 1859,
aged 93 years & 6 mos."

Mr. June was one of the prominent showmen of the early days, and the name is familiar wherever a show has been seen or known. He was also one of the early supervisors of the town, having served in that capacity in 1805. Memorials to the families of June, Hunt, Purdy, Close, Wallace, Lobdell, Norton, Hanford, Howe, Titus and Delevan are to be seen in every direction through this well-kept resting-place of the dead.

PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.—On the north side of the highway leading from Salem Centre to North Salem village stands a plain, substantial-looking white edifice surmounted by a square tower, very similar in outward appearance to the Methodist Episcopal Church at Purdy's. This is the North Salem Presbyterian Church. It is located on a gentle elevation and is near St. James' Protestant Episcopal Church. The building is of wood, the style severely plain, devoid of ornamentation and substantial. This is the second building of its kind in the town and was erected in 1847, and dedicated on the 15th of October of that year. The old church stood a short distance to the eastward and was sold, with its site, to Alfred B. Mead, December 5, 1856. But few authentic records can be obtained concerning the old church.

The first authentic information of Presbyterians in the vicinity is found in a letter from the Rev. Ebenezer Townsend to the secretary of the Venerable Society, in London, of date Salem, March 25, 1771. He was then rector of Salem and Ridgefield Parish, and resided in the old "Wallace House." He says: "There are some church people, Presbyterians, Baptists and Quakers scattered among them. . . . It has been proposed by some of them to build a church or Presbyterian Meeting-House, but nothing is yet concluded." It appears from this letter that an effort

was then made to organize and to build a church. In the year 1772 John Blydenburgh, a candidate for the ministry, was authorized to preach for a time at Upper Salem. In 1774 the people requested of the Presbytery a supply, which was granted for two months. It is evident that a church edifice was built within a few years from that time, as mention is made of the Presbyterian meeting-house in 1779. It also appears to have been a sort of an independent organization, inclining to the Congregational in its government and form of worship. This has been the fact in nearly all the Presbyterian Churches in the northern part of the county. The church records are entitled "Records of the Congregational Church at Upper Salem," and under the date of August 20, 1779, the following is found: "At a meeting of the church members living in Upper Salem, Cortlandt's Manor and other places adjacent, to consult whether they were desirous of uniting for forming into church order, there were present Peter Benedict, Jehiel Tyler, Jonathan Rogers, Thaddeus Crane, Solomon Close, Ezekiel Hawley, Jesse Truesdale, Joseph Doolittle, John Platt, James Wallace and Peter Ferris." Peter Benedict was chosen moderator. Five days afterward it was voted to unite and form into church order. The matter was taken in hand at once, as the sturdy farmers were determined to perfect a church organization as speedily as possible. This was the Revolutionary period, and delays were dangerous. "At a meeting of the Society of the upper end of Salem, on the 11th of May, 1779, at the Upper Presbyterian Meeting-House," a committee, consisting of Jesse Truesdale, Solomon Close and Nathaniel Delevan, were appointed "to get preaching."

On the 24th of January, 1786, the members of the church met at the meeting-house and elected trustees and became an incorporated body, under the name of the "Congregationalist Society in Upper Salem." John Platt, Benjamin Wood, Abraham Lockwood, David Smith, Bonage Starr and Moses Richard were the trustees. For forty-six years, or until 1832, this organization was continued in this form, when a second incorporation took place, on the 25th of September of that year, as a Presbyterian Church. It was then voted to place the organization under the control of the Bedford Presbytery, which was accordingly done. At this time John Wallace, Horace Barnum and Richard H. Lockwood were the trustees. For some fourteen years the congregation worshipped in the old church, when the expediency of erecting a new house of worship presented itself to the society, and accordingly the old building and site were disposed of to Alfred B. Mead, and the present edifice was built. The society was served by the officiating ministers of Croton Falls and Purdy's and by occasional supplies. The average number of communicants has been twenty-two. The ministers have been,—

1783. Rev. Joel Benedict.
Rev. John Blindbur.

1787. Rev. Amzi Lewis.
Rev. Abner Benedict.
1792. Rev. Richard Andrews.
1798. Rev. — Phelps.
1799. Rev. John McNiece.
Rev. — Cornwall.
1815. Rev. Abraham Purdy.
1817. Rev. Herman Delevan.
Rev. David Delevan.
1835. Rev. Alexander Leachather.
1841. Rev. Joseph Nimmo.
1849. Rev. David Irving.
1851. Rev. James B. Ramsey.
1853. Rev. T. S. Bradner.
1858. Rev. A. B. Bullion.
1860. Rev. A. Shiland.
1861. Rev. A. H. Seeley.
1863. Rev. James Sinclair.
1864. Rev. J. B. Stoddard.
1866. Rev. H. W. Smuller.
1868. Rev. W. J. Thompson.
1872. Rev. Joseph Beers.
1874-79. Rev. R. A. Blackford.
1882. Rev. R. B. Mattice.
1885. Rev. T. S. Gibson.

During the later years services have been held but semi-monthly, save in cases of special supplies. There is no regular graveyard connected with the church exclusively, the interments taking place in the North Salem Cemetery, which is located about half a mile northwest of the church, on a pleasant gravelly knoll. The grounds are inclosed with a substantial stone fence, the front along the highway being of dressed stone, laid in cement. The entrance is by a double iron gateway, and a broad, smooth driveway leads directly through the centre of the grounds. At the side of the drive, and near the gate, stands a plain monument of white marble, resting on a double base, and bearing the inscription,—

Erected
to the memory of
Rev. Abraham Purdy, A.M.,
who died at Somers,
on the 7th day of August
A.D., 1825, in the 44th year
of his age.

Immediately above the inscription are the square and compass, and on the opposite side are the symbols of the Masonic Chapter. Mr. Purdy was one of the ministers who officiated at the Presbyterian Church here and in Somers. Near this monument is another, somewhat similar in size and style, upon which is recorded,—

Beneath this Monument
lie the remains of
Doctor
Benjamin Delevan,
of the
United States Army,
who died at Natchitoches,
State of Louisiana,
26th Nov. A.D. 1827,
in the 36th year of his age,
and was interred here
the 18th of March, 1829.

Dr. Delevan was a member of the Delevan family, who were among the early settlers under the De Lanceys. He was in the regular army. Another

member of the family lies near this monument, with this inscription,—

Sacred
to the memory of
John Delevan,
who died
Jan. 8, 1834,
in the 90th year
of his age.

John Delevan owned a large tract of land near the present Salem Centre and on both sides of the Titicus River. He attempted to change, somewhat, the course of the stream, which involved him in a lawsuit with his neighbor, Judge Ebenezer Purdy, who owned the adjoining tract. The suit ended only in the death of the principals. In this ground is also buried one of the most prominent of the early settlers, and one of the central figures in the early organization of the Presbyterian Church, as well as the town; near the front of the cemetery, to the left of the main entrance, inscribed on a plain headstone, kept in good preservation, we find,—

In memory
of
Deacon Solomon Close,
who died
July the 31, 1778, in the
73 year of his age.

The Close family were originally from Greenwich, Conn., and this branch of the family, in the person of Joseph, the father of Deacon Solomon, removed to North Salem in 1749. He died there in 1760, at eighty-six years of age. Associated with Deacon Close in the organization of the congregation, in 1779, was Jonathan Rogers, who is buried not far from his former associate, his tombstone bearing this inscription,—

In the memory of
Jonathan Rogers, who
died July the 12, 1788,
aged 74 years and 10 months.

Ezekiel Hawley was also one of the original incorporators of the congregation, and his son Joel followed his father's footsteps. In this cemetery, on a plain white headstone, we read,—

In
memory of
Joel Hawley,
who died
Jan. 19, 1841,
aged 66 years
and 10 mo's.

Another of this band lies near, who was also a soldier during the trying period in our American history. In cleanly-cut letters, upon which no moss has encroached, on a plain blue slate headstone is the inscription,—

IN MEMORY OF
CAPT. JAMES WALLACE, WHO
DEPARTED THIS LIFE MARCH
YE 20TH AD 1782 JE 60.

COME VIEW THIS DIRTY SOLEMN SHADE
MY LIVING FRIENDS SINCE I AM DEAD
AND IN THIS GRAVE CONSENT TO LIE
YE TELL THE LIVING THEY MUST DIE

One more of this early company of patriots and public-spirited townsmen must be mentioned, who also "sleeps the sleep" in this silent hamlet of the dead,—

Col. Thaddeus Crane,
died
Sept. 1st, 1800.
aged 71 years, 5 mos.
and 20 days.

Colonel Crane was an active participant in the war for liberty, holding a commission in the American army. While leading his command against a party of British, just over the present eastern line of the town and near Ridgefield, he was shot through the lungs, and the large flat rock is still to be seen where he was carried by some of his soldiers to have the bullet extracted, which was done by cutting the skin just under the shoulder-blade, the ball having passed directly through the lung and lodged under the skin of the back. It was thought impossible for him to recover, but he did so, and lived several years afterward. The bullet was preserved for many years by his family, but was eventually lost. Colonel Crane was the father of Thaddeus and Gerard Crane, of Somers, the noted showmen, and his grandson, Thaddeus Crane, is now a prominent resident of the latter town. Thus the men who were instrumental in the organization of church and state in the town, who side by side defended the liberties of both during life, are now united in death and repose in company.

METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCHES.—At Purdy's, two miles south of Croton Falls, is situated one of the Methodist Episcopal Churches of the town, together with the parsonage house and property. Both of the Methodist societies are under the one pastorate, and previous to 1860 formed a part of the old Cortlandt Circuit, with Mount Zion in Somers, Hermon Chapel and Cross River in Lewisboro', etc. Upon the division of this circuit, which, in the older days, was supplied by three preachers at one time, as was the custom of the itineracy, Purdy's and North Salem became a charge by itself. The North Salem Church is the older of the two, the present modern edifice having replaced the small plain building that was erected in 1832 on a lot bought of Jonah Keeler, June 21st, in that year, near the site of the present building. The Methodist Episcopal Society of North Salem was organized early in the century, but the act of incorporation is dated the 2d of January, 1832. Shortly afterwards the first church was built. Its location was a good one, in the northeastern part of the town, on the highway leading from Danbury, Conn. The edifice was small, plain and well suited to the simple habits of the early members of the society. For many years the Methodist people gathered within its plain whitewashed walls and listened to the earnest exhortations of the old-time preachers. Jonas Keeler, Abel Smith, William Cable and Stephen Ryder were its first trustees. Its preachers were the same as given in the Somers history as having officiated on Cortlandt

Circuit, and such historic Methodists as McKendree Bangs, Barney Mathias, Samuel Weeks, Nicholas White, Joseph Bangs, Cyrus Foss and others filled the old church with the power of their eloquent appeals to the unconverted. But the greater portion of the old generation of Methodists have passed away with the preachers whose voices are hushed forever, and so also has the church building. In its stead a neat modern structure has been reared near the site of the original church. The building is an irregularly-shaped edifice of frame, with one tower and a hooded corner, in each of which is an entrance; steep, slated roof and narrow, arched, stained-glass windows. It is located in pleasant grounds, on the Main Street of the village of North Salem. Immediately in the rear of the church, and detached therefrom, is a two-story building, with outside staircase, which is used as a class and lecture-room. Inside the church is neatly arranged. It is an attractive-looking building and an ornament to the village. The street on which it faces was originally the main highway through the town, and was bordered by substantial farm-houses and well-cultivated farms. There were but few houses in the immediate vicinity, but Walter Keeler, son of Jonah Keeler, and a wealthy native of the town, conceived the idea of making a large village and railroad depot here. The survey for the Danbury and New York Railroad had already been made, and the line ran along the east side of the Titicus River and through the place. Accordingly, between the years 1865 and 1875, streets were graded, a number of dwellings and stores were erected, and the former small grist-mill, which had served the farmers for generations, was enlarged to four times its original proportions, and the excellent water-power was much improved. Business became most active, and mechanics and others were attracted to the place, and North Salem became a thriving village. But the railroad did not come, and the population was found to be too large for the capacities of the hamlet. About this time the members of the Methodist Episcopal Society agitated the question of a new church, which culminated in 1877, when the present edifice was erected by Jeremiah Birdsall, a large contractor and builder, a resident of the village. The old building was sold, and is now used as a barn by Mr. Scott, whose residence is near the present church. The moving spirit in the erection of the new church was Isaac T. Frost, a veteran member of the society, who has since died. The audience-room has a seating capacity of about two hundred, the seats being arranged in semi-circular form; the ceiling is of corrugated iron and arched to the centre, where is placed an improved ventilator. There is no gallery, the choir being provided with seats on the platform in the rear of the desk. The other Methodist Episcopal Church at Purdy's is a plain, substantial structure, also of wood, located on River Street, directly opposite the works of the American Condensed Milk Com-

pany. The building is without ornamentation of any kind, a simple, double-doored entrance, without portico, opening into a narrow vestibule, from which a door on either side leads to the audience-room. Stairways, also, on either end of the vestibule, lead to a gallery across the front end of the building. A short, square belfry surmounts the church, in which is placed a mellow-toned bell. The seating capacity of the building, including the gallery, is about one hundred and fifty. The parsonage adjoins the church lot, and is a neat two-story residence, plain and comporting in style with the church itself. The congregation worshipping here formerly attended services at the Brick Church in Somers, but that church was sold in 1850, and the proceeds of the sale were given to the Purdy's people. Then it was that the building of a church at the latter place was taken into advisement. On the 27th of December, 1851, a building committee was appointed, consisting of Thomas Brown, father of the present F. D. Brown, and S. S. Furgeson, both of them representative men in the Methodist connection. The former, at a ripe age, has joined the silent majority; the latter is still living at Purdy's, over eighty years of age, but very feeble. The contract for building the church was awarded to Scott & Birdsall. The grounds on which it and the parsonage stand were given to the society by Isaac H. Purdy. In July, 1852, the building was completed, and on the 10th day of December, 1852, it was dedicated by Bishop Foster. The cost of the building was three thousand dollars. Rev. C. F. Pelton was the preacher in charge. After the church was secured it was deemed advisable to provide a suitable residence for the preachers, in order that their home might be at a railroad station. Consequently funds were raised during the intervening six years, and in 1858, during the pastorate of Rev. I. H. Lent, a comfortable house was built for a parsonage at a cost of two thousand dollars. Previous to, and at this date, these two points were included in Cortlandt Circuit, and the preachers who officiated at Purdy's and North Salem were the same who preached at Mount Zion, etc. About 1860, however, the circuit was divided and ceased to exist under its former name, and Purdy's and North Salem thereafter appear on the church records as the designated charge. Rev. J. Z. Nichols appears to have been the first pastor, having charge of these points in 1861. He was one of the veteran ministers of the Methodist Episcopal Church, having entered the ministry in 1823. He was an active preacher for fifty-eight years, dying August 14, 1881, at eighty-one years of age. He is buried at Greenwood, L. I. The church property on this charge is valued at eight thousand dollars; parsonage, two thousand dollars—making a total of ten thousand dollars. There is a membership of one hundred and thirty-eight—Purdy's, seventy-seven; North Salem, sixty-one. The present board of trustees are: Purdy's—S. S. Furgeson, F. D. Brown, A. B. Whitlock, C.

Bloomer, I. McKeel, Ananias Westcott, Philander Palmer; North Salem—Henry Barhite, David Hanford, J. L. Hanford, Isaac Angleman, Stebbins Quick, Joshua Fisher and Isaac Merrick. As before stated, the preachers who served on Cortland Circuit officiated at these points until the division of the circuit. Their names may be found in the history of Somers. Since 1860 the following pastors have been appointed here:

1861	Rev. J. Z. Nichols
1863-64	Rev. D. W. C. Van Gaasbeck
1865-67	Rev. H. C. Humphrey
1868	Rev. H. H. Birkins
1869-70	Rev. J. W. Jones
1871-72	Rev. M. R. Lent
1873-75	Rev. Aaron Coons
1876-77	Rev. A. R. Burroughs
1878-80	Rev. George W. Knapp
1881-83	Rev. I. H. Lent
1883-85	Rev. R. F. White, present pastor

Of the above, the Rev. A. R. Burroughs died at the parsonage, after a sudden illness contracted while on a business visit to New York. He was much esteemed by his congregation and the entire community, and had done good service in the society. His death was a shock to the entire community. It was during his administration that the new church at North Salem was erected. He died November 28, 1877, aged thirty-eight years, and was buried at Andes, N. Y.

The society is in a flourishing condition and its future prospects are very bright.

THE UNIVERSALIST CONGREGATION OF NORTH SALEM own and occupy a handsome church building, constructed of wood and located on a small elevation in the village of North Salem, and nearly opposite the Methodist Episcopal Church. It is a neat and attractive building and commands a fine view of the river valley and the forest-crowned hills of Connecticut in the distance. The churches of North Salem, in all their appointments, are an honor to the enterprise and liberality of her townsmen. Especially is this the fact as regards this society. The church property is in excellent condition and the society is eminently prosperous. There was occasional preaching of the Universalist faith in this town by various ministers of the denomination from the year 1808 to 1824. In 1824 the Rev. Thomas F. King was engaged to preach here one-half of the time. Other preachers and the services of lay readers filled up the remaining half of the time until 1832. During this period the question of a church and organized society was warmly considered and agitated. Other societies were provided with buildings in which to worship and the townsmen whose affiliations were with this faith were by no means deficient in pecuniary ability to build a suitable home for worship. Accordingly, on the 17th of January, 1832, an organization of the "Universalist Society of North Salem" was effected, with Levi Smith, Epenetus Howe, William Howe, Henry Hunt, Samuel Hunt and Thomas Smith trustees. Gilbert Hunt was elected collector and

Jesse Smith treasurer. A special meeting of the society was held February 4, 1832, at which it was voted to build a church. A lot containing five roods of land was purchased May 5, 1832, of Samuel H. Smith. On the 8th of October following the church was completed and dedicated, the Rev. Thomas J. Sawyer, D.D., preaching the dedicatory sermon to a large congregation.

On March 4, 1833, a lot, forty-seven feet on the highway adjoining the church, was purchased of William Vail, Jr. Rev. Mr. Whittaker preached until May, 1833. At the time of organization there were but thirteen members, as follows: Samuel Truesdell, Samuel Hunt, William Howe, Thomas Smith, Eliphallet Brush, Hezekiah Scott, Holsted Hoyt, William Smith, Pratt Baldwin, Harry Hunt, Gilbert Hunt, Seth Jennings, John Brush. Again for a few months the pulpit was supplied by various preachers from other churches of this connection until January, 1834, when the Rev. Shaler J. Hillyer began to preach here. His services were acceptable, and May 1, 1837, he became the settled minister. He held his charge with fidelity until he died, on September 28, 1865. The society increased in numbers and the property in value during his pastorate. On January 3, 1840, Jeremiah Smith, a friend of the organization, died and bequeathed to the society about three thousand dollars, which formed the nucleus of a fund which has since been kept intact for church uses and increased by interest income and subsequent posthumous gifts. The Rev. Thomas S. Lathrop preached for the first time to this society in November, 1865.

He occupied the pulpit one-half of the time until January, 1868, when he became the regularly settled minister and is the present pastor. He was installed June 7, 1870, when the new church edifice was completed and dedicated. The first building was a neat, plain structure comporting with the needs of the early members of the congregation. The present edifice is larger and more ornate. Mr. Hillyer's term of service covered over thirty years. Mr. Lathrop's has reached about twenty years to the present, thus making but two regular settlements of ministers and no dismissals. The church has always been a free church, no pews ever being sold or rented, and the expenses for pastor's salary and all other items are provided for by voluntary subscription. The church and society are one, all members of the parish, old and young, belonging to the organization. There is an average attendance at the public services of from fifty to one hundred, the number of families sustaining the connection being about thirty. Several members reside in the adjoining town of Somers. Some of the members rarely appear at the Sunday service, but maintain their connection with the society and call into requisition the services of Pastor Lathrop at marriages and funerals. The church property, with the stated fund, is valued at about twenty thousand dollars, and the entire society is firmly established on

a substantial and increasingly prosperous basis. The present membership is about one hundred and fifty, and includes some of the oldest and wealthiest families of this section. The pastors have been,—

1824.	Rev. Thomas F. King.
1832.	Rev. William Whitaker.
1834.	Rev. Shaler J. Hillyer.
1865.	Rev. Thomas S. Lathrop. ¹

BAPTIST CHURCH.—On a high range of ground on the east side of the town, called Cat Ridge, is a portion of the ground and foundation of a small building which was known as the Cat Ridge Baptist Church. It was long since dissolved as a religious society, the surviving members having either united with other denominations or with other Baptist Churches outside the town. The society was originally organized early in the present century, and incorporated on October 13, 1833. At the latter period Ebenezer Whelpp, Edward Ganong, John Wesley Searles, John Braden and James Mills were trustees. Adjoining the church is an old burying-ground in which are interred members of families prominent in the early organization, as well as others.

The descendants of some of the older Baptist families have joined the congregation which worships at Croton Falls. This society worships in a very attractive church edifice, which is comparatively new, and built of wood, in the modern style of church architecture. The Baptist Society is the youngest regular religious association in the town. In the winter of 1868 and 1869 the Rev. E. Edwards, then pastor of the Baptist Church in Brewster, Putnam County, was engaged by Deacon Joel B. Purdy and a few others in the village to preach for them on alternate Sabbath evenings. The meetings were then held in what was known as Pardee's Hall, a large room in the hotel kept by Harrison Pardee. The Methodists also occupied this room on the alternating evenings. As the attendance increased, Mr. Purdy conceived the idea of erecting a suitable building, in which should be a large hall that could be used for religious services, lectures, etc. This was accordingly done, and Union Hall was the outcome. The hall has a seating capacity for two hundred, and is on the ground floor of a large, commodious building, the basement and upper stories of which are used as tenements. In May, 1870 a meeting was held in this hall to reorganize the Baptist Church of Croton Falls. After a full examination of the letters presented, and the articles of faith adopted, it was voted to recognize this body as a regular and independent Baptist Church. The number of constituent members was ten—four male and six female. The church was admitted into the Union Association at its annual meeting in Patterson, N. Y., in 1870. Until October of that year Rev. E. C. Romine supplied the pulpit. On October 9, 1870, the following resolution appears on

the records: "*Resolved*, That the church extend a call to Rev. V. W. Benedict to become their pastor; that the salary be one thousand dollars per annum, payable monthly." Mr. Benedict accepted the call and has since remained the pastor of this church. On March 18, 1875, a meeting of the society was called for the purpose of incorporation under the laws of the State. The corporate name of the Croton Falls Baptist Church was adopted, and the following board of trustees elected: Joel J. Purdy, Thatcher H. Theal, David Adams, Israel Pinckney and Gilbert F. Bailey. Subscriptions were now taken for the erection of a church, which project was successful, and at a meeting of the society August 9, 1877, plans from the architects were submitted. The plan presented by J. A. Wood was accepted, and the board of trustees, together with the pastor, J. C. Purdy, James S. Whitlock, and W. A. Ferris, were appointed a committee to superintend the erection of the building. Ground was broken in September 1877, and the contract for the foundation was awarded to Benjamin McCollum and James Fagan; that for the carpenter work and painting and subsequently the mason-work, to Jeremiah Birdsall, of North Salem. The glass (stained) for the windows was purchased in Boston, through the architect. The services connected with the laying of the corner-stone were held April 16, 1878, and the house was dedicated in October of the same year. It is finely located on an elevation at the north end of the village, surrounded by a sloping lawn and easy of approach for vehicles or on foot. In the rear are commodious sheds for horses. The building is rectangular, with a transept across the west or rear end, which forms a large lecture-room and communicates with the audience-room by means of sliding doors at the back of the platform. Two towers rise from the front corners of the building, the taller one containing a fined-toned bell, the gift of a Mrs. Chase. The whole structure is admirably proportioned and attractive in appearance. The seating capacity of the church proper is two hundred and sixty, and the lecture-room one hundred. The cost of the edifice was a little over nine thousand dollars. On the corner opposite to the church is located a neat dwelling, two stories and attic, with half French roof, surrounded by pleasant grounds and making an attractive home. This is the parsonage and the residence of Rev. V. W. Benedict. Of the ten constituent members, four are dead; the remaining six are still communicants of the church. There is no regular burial-place connected with the society, the interments taking place mainly in Ivandell Cemetery, at Somers, two miles distant from Croton Falls. The present membership is ninety-five, and the society is in an eminently healthy and vigorous condition.

A burial-ground is situated on the south bank of the Titicus River, and near the water's edge, so near, in fact, that some of the grounds have been washed away. It is located on a knoll rising some fifteen

¹ The present pastor.

feet above the level of the meadow by which it is surrounded, and lies about one mile northeast of Purdy's, on the farm owned by Jackson Stocum. Interments are not made in this ground at present. There are some sixty stones to be seen, most of them the common gray gneiss of the county. The oldest appears to be that of one Vance, who died in 1755. The major part of the inscription has been obliterated by the action of the elements. Here lie members of the Purdy, Brown, Quick and Stocum families, earlier residents of the town. On one stone we read,

HERE LIES THE
BODY OF RACHEL PU-
RDY WHO DIED JUNE
THE 13 DAY 1784 AGED
71 YEARS OLD.

Rachel Purdy was a member of the family of Judge Purdy, who owned several tracts of land in the town, among them one of the farms now owned by T. W. Decker, where his residence is located. Two direct descendants of Judge Purdy are living—Aurelia (a maiden lady residing in Salem) and Ebenezer (a resident of Katonah). Another stone records,—

In
Memory of
John Quick,
who died
Oct. 15, 1840,
aged 80 years,
6 mos. and 3 d's.

Another,—

In
Memory of
Daniel Quick,
Died
Oct. 11, 1861,
aged 75 years, 8 mos.
and 19 days.

These were two of the earlier settlers of the town, the name of John Quick appearing on the town records as the first supervisor, as was also "Nathan Stokham," who died in 1822, aged forty-six years, and lies buried here. Side by side lie four members of the Brown family, one of whose descendants (F. D. Brown) lives in a large, comfortable farm-house, just across the river, and but a few rods from the graveyard. "Rebecca Brown" died March 28, 1857, at the age of ninety-seven years; "Susannah, wife of Samuel Brown," died February 20, 1810, at the age of one hundred and two years, ten months and twenty-three days; "Samuel Brown," the husband of the above, died November 27, 1815, at eighty-one years of age; and "Nathan Brown," the son of Samuel, died September, 1843, at the age of seventy-six years—thus aggregating the sum of three hundred and fifty-six years for four members of the same family, all residents and natives of the town. Several years have elapsed since any interments have taken place in this ground, and it is practically closed as a burial-place.

FRIENDS' MEETING-HOUSE.—In the northeast corner of the town, and not far from the boundary line, stands a plain, unassuming building, modest and de-

void of any ornamentation. It is one of the old landmarks, and stands as a quiet representative of the last century. It is the Friends' Meeting-House, and is situated near the lower end of Lake Pehquennakonck. There are but few authentic records of this meeting-house, although it is known to have been erected at a very early day, and the services of the Friends have been conducted therein for many years. Ephraim Baker (who settled on the estate now owned by Mrs. Bailey, between Purdy's and Salem Centre, about 1750) was a Quaker speaker, and frequently attended the meetings in this house, which was probably built about that time. Ezekiel Halsted in later years was a public speaker. The society is at present very few in numbers, consisting mainly of elderly persons, and the services are held at intervals, although the building is kept in repair and not allowed to be relinquished entirely. Edward Ryder is an occasional speaker. In its near vicinity are the comfortable residences of wealthy farmers and the boarding-houses at and near Pehquennakonck Lake, a body of water lying partly in this town and partly in Putnam County, which covers about four hundred acres of land and is a resort for fishermen at all seasons of the year. Pickerel, perch, etc., abound in its waters, and immense quantities of the first-named fish are taken, especially during the winter season, by local and visiting sportsmen.

ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH.—Situated at Croton Falls, on the top of a rocky bluff, through a cut in which pass, a few rods away, the tracks of the New York and Harlem Railroad, is the Roman Catholic Church. It is a low, unpretending, wooden structure surmounted by a cross. The view from its site is a peculiarly fine one—including the Croton Valley to the south, the bluff hills of North Salem on the east and the gently undulating lands of Somers on the west, while less than an eighth of a mile to the north is the hamlet and station of Croton Falls. Its location is well chosen, as many of its members use the cars as a means of reaching it, and its contiguity to the railroad depot renders this an easy matter. Previous to the advent of the railroad very few parishioners were to be found in this immediate vicinity; but, with the construction of the Harlem Road, there came a new element of the population, bringing with them the desire for the privileges of the church of their choice. Accordingly, a plot of land, which had been sold by Major Bailey to Cornelius Travis, was purchased from the latter, and the erection of a house of worship commenced. The church was finished in 1851 by David Hitchcock, and immediately dedicated. The congregation is large and flourishing, and the attendance includes a circuit of seven or eight miles. A good dwelling for the residence of the officiating priest was secured at Purdy's, and is owned by the parish. The voices of various celebrated priests have been heard within the walls of this church building during the thirty-five years of its existence. Two of them

(Fathers John and Keeney) died at the Purdy's parsonage while serving the parish. Father Healy, of Brewster, is now the officiating clergyman. Many of the prominent members are residents of the village of Croton Falls, where they settled before and at the time the church was built.

MASONIC LODGE.—In June, 1855, a few of the residents of Croton Falls and vicinity, who had become impressed with the idea that some local organization would be of benefit to the place, met together and talked over the organization of a Masonic lodge. Previous to this there had been such an organization in existence in this vicinity, and the earlier Masons used to attend their regular communications at the "red house," in Salem. But these older members of the order were now dead and no organized lodge was in the vicinity. Accordingly, in June, 1855, it was decided to form a lodge, which was done. The body was called Croton Lodge, No. 368. The charter members were Geo. Gregory, Harrison Pardee, Thos. Fields, Edward Adams, William Bailey, Hiram Dean and Christopher Brown. The last-named had been a member of the older organization, previous to the anti-Mason excitement. These members visited New York and received their degrees from Puritan Lodge, 339. The first officers elected were George Gregory, W. M.; Harrison Pardee, J. W.; Edward Adams, S. W.; Thomas Fields, Secretary and Treasurer.

At this time Edward Adams was conducting quite an extensive business in the place, and he erected a large brick building of two stories on the corner of the Main Street, the upper portion of which was arranged for a Masonic Hall. It was here the lodge held its meetings and transacted its regular business. Of the original members, George Gregory, the first Master, died two years ago, and is buried under a handsome marble shaft in Ivandell Cemetery, at Somers. Harrison Pardee, another, was the popular hotel proprietor at Croton Falls, and died suddenly while sitting in his chair a few years since. Christopher Brown has also died and Edward Adams died in 1886 at his home in Danbury, Conn. Alexander Harrington was the first Mason made by this new lodge. Owing to the fact that there were a number of Masons and others who wished to become members of the order residing at Brewster, in Putnam County, and the next station north on the line of the railroad, the lodge was removed to that place in 1875-76. The organization is strong for a country lodge whose members are scattered over a large territory, and is in a good condition. The name and number are still retained, although the place of meeting has been changed. The present officers are C. Denton, W. M.; Isaac Armstrong, S. W.; — —, J. W.; F. Wells, Secretary and Treasurer.

NEWSPAPERS.—During the summer of 1878 William H. Miller, the book-keeper for Whitlock Brothers, proposed to J. W. Keeler, the postmaster at Croton Falls, and a gentleman who had seen consid-

erable service in literary and newspaper work, that they enter into a newspaper enterprise. At first several difficulties of more or less magnitude and of a local character presented themselves, but were, one by one, disposed of, and the result was the issue of *The Croton Falls News*, on Wednesday, August 7, 1878. As the type and office properties had not yet been purchased, the first numbers of the paper were printed at Carmel, in Putnam County. J. W. Keeler and William H. Miller were the editors and proprietors, and the paper was a folio thirteen by nineteen inches, five columns to the page, and presented a neat appearance. It aimed to be purely a local paper without pretensions as to political or county preferences or patronage. Shortly after its first number was issued, having met with unexpected success and the hearty co-operation of the residents of North Salem and adjacent towns, an office was secured, type, etc., purchased, and it was henceforth published at Croton Falls, its present home. Mr. Miller, the original proprietor, disposed of his interest to Mr. Keeler, who devoted his attention to it for some five years, increasing its popularity and subscription list until it reached a circulation of some five hundred copies weekly. At this time the editor was attacked with a serious illness, resulting from an accident which occurred while running off an edition of the paper. For some months the issue was irregular and much of its influence was lost. Upon the recovery of Mr. Keeler, however, the publication was resumed, and shortly afterwards the entire business was purchased by De Witt C. Pinckney, who had been engaged in educational pursuits in the South. Mr. Pinckney was a native of Carmel, and had returned from the Southern States with the view of locating in this section. He changed the name of the paper to *The Croton Falls Folio*, under which title it is now published. In the fall of 1885 Mr. Pinckney sold the paper to its original proprietor, William H. Miller, who, after a few weeks, again sold it to Theodore S. Foster, who is the present editor and owner. It has regained nearly all the ground that it had lost, and circulates extensively in the northern part of Westchester and the southern part of Putnam Counties. It has been enlarged at different times, and its typographical appearance improved, until it is now eighteen by twenty-four inches, seven columns to the page, folio, and ranks well with the other papers published in the county, although one of the younger children.

SCHOOL.—The first record of a school-house in the town is found in a deed made in 1784, when a property is described as on a road "leading past the school-house" and land of Abraham Knox, William Bloomer and Gershom Hanford.

Another is mentioned in 1816 as being on the highway leading past Amos Fuller's, who lived in the lower part of the town. In 1825 there were five school-houses, known as "the David Horton," in the southwest corner, "the Clark Fuller, or Red House," the "Slos-

son," the "Bloomer," and the "Field," "Ginney" or "Hardscrabble."

The town received as its portion of the school tax amounts as follows:

1813	\$76.10	1836-38	\$62.76
1814-15	66.06	1839	156.90
1816-18	62.98	1840	162.59
1819-21	83.95	1841-45	137.96
1822-26	71.45	1855	240.80
1827-29	97.93	1865	814.68
1830-31	77.81	1875	1423.23
1832-35	69.97	1885	1285.10

The State came under the public-school system about 1825, and soon after towns were divided into districts and managed by directors chosen for the purpose.

The town is divided into seven full districts and one part district, in each of which is the ordinary country school-house. In the case of two of these districts, however, an honorable exception should be made. In Districts Nos. 1 and 2 the school buildings are neat, roomy, well-built and well-kept houses, presenting a creditable appearance both inside and outside, and are well adapted for school purposes. The average attendance throughout is about twenty-five scholars. By far the most notable building in the town is the academy standing at Salem Centre. Historic reminiscences cluster around this old building. Erected for a private residence by Stephen De Lancey, while yet the United States was but an unfulfilled dream, it was afterwards devoted to the culture of the mind and became the *alma mater* of men who helped to found the greatness of our State and nation. The North Salem Academy is a large wooden structure, two stories and attic, covered with a hipped roof, out of which project four dormer windows, presenting the appearance of some of the old colonial houses which may be seen at intervals in the lower part of the county. From the centre of the roof rises a square belfry, pointedly capped. In the centre of the front of the building, which faces the south, is the entrance and a small square portico, immediately above which, on the second floor, is a large square window, with old-style side-lights, and a small arched window under the projecting gable, which rises from the centre of the side-roof. The building stands on elevated ground, level, however, with the Main Street, and is surrounded by a large yard. It commands a fine view of the valley of the Titicus and the surrounding country in every direction. The first floor was generally occupied by the family of the principal and boarding students, the upper floor being devoted to educational purposes solely. The rooms are large, airy, light and conveniently arranged. The building was erected somewhere about the year 1770, and was intended by its owner, Stephen De Lancey, as a residence for himself and family, a fine farm being attached to it. It was never completely finished as a residence, the owner having removed from the town. In 1786 it was purchased by a company

of the townspeople of this and adjacent towns, and completed as an academy. In an old day-book, under the account of Ebenezer Purdy, who was one of the principal members of the Academy Company, we find, under date of 1787, some items in relation thereto,—“To six days at New York to get the Wrightings for the house and land completed, £3 12s.” “To a Carpenter, four days to get out timber, at six shillings per day, £1 10s.” “To seven days’ boarding, provision and rum, 10s. 9d.” “To carting thirty-one Boards from Peekskill, 16s.” “To Frederick Jay, for glass, £9 2s.” “Paid for iron to make Hinges, 2s.” “To ten pounds of fat for the roof, 6s.” “Paid to the mason for building the chimneys, £5 1s.” “To John Lawrence, for one set of globes, £11 4s.” In 1792 is the item, “Paid for the philosophical apparatus, £60.” In the year 1787 also appear the names of contributors to the academy fund, in which are found,—“Cash received of John Jay, £10; Judge Ward, £4; Mr. Hamilton, £6; Mr. Burr, £3; Augustus Van Courlandt, £3; Amzi Lewis, £32; Hachaliah Brown, £8; Philip Livingston, £10.”

In 1790 is recorded, “money received of the regents of the college to furnish articles for the academy, £98.” In June 27, 1792, is noted; “Took up the bond given by Delancey by paying £242.” It seems from these records that the first use of the building as a school was in 1787, when Rev. Amzi Lewis was placed in charge of it as an educational institution. It was evidently in a flourishing condition. Among the earlier officers of the board were Hachaliah Brown, Thaddeus Crane, Samuel Barnum, Jesse Close, John, Daniel and Olmsted Delevan, Benjamin Haight, Ebenezer Purdy, Abraham Lockwood, Gilbert Hunt, Isaac Keeler, Uriah Wallace and Captain Jones. Upon the application of Benjamin Haight and thirty-eight others it was incorporated by the regents of the university on February 19, 1790, being the first in Westchester County and the third incorporated academy in the State, Clinton Academy, in East Hampton, and Erasmus Hall, at Flatbush, both having received their incorporation a little over two years previously. After the close of Mr. Lewis’ administration the prosperity of the institution appears to have declined somewhat until 1801, when the Rev. John McNiece, who was a man of high intellectual attainments and an eloquent preacher of the Presbyterian Church, took charge of the school. This gentleman was one of the compatriots of Emmet, Adrain, McNeven and others of the Irish leaders, and came to America in 1795. During his administration the academy saw its most popular and prosperous days, and students were received from all sections of the country, and many names on its roll-books became noted in the annals of State and national government. Among its earlier students were Honorable Daniel D. Tompkins (New York’s war Governor from 1807 to 1816 and Vice-President in 1817), Chancellor James Kent, LL.D., Colonel J. N. Tallmadge and brother,

and other eminent men. The reports to the regents fluctuated considerably after the term of Mr. McNiece had ended. During his administration the roll showed at one time eighty students. After this for some years, at different dates, no report whatever was made, and in the year 1827 it was found necessary to call the attention of the patrons of the institution to its condition, which appeared to indicate decay. A resolution was adopted that the academy buildings be repaired and placed in good order etc., and then is appended a list of names, forty-eight in number, of contributors of from one to twenty-five dollars each for this purpose. Among the names are those of Pierre Van Cortlandt, Jr., Peter Jay Munroe, Lewis Morris, Stephen De Lancey, John Quick, etc. Epenetus Wallace, M.D., was at this time clerk of the board. The reports of subsequent years show a decided increase in the number of pupils and the prosperity of the academy. Among the teachers mentioned are the Revs. Herman Daggett, Abraham Purdy, A.M., and Hiram Jeliff, the two first-named being ministers of the North Salem Presbyterian Church, and Dr. Samuel B. Mead, Ebenezer Close, John C. Jones and G. S. Tozer. Under the more recent *régime* John F. Jenkins, A.M., conducted the institution for many years, assisted by his daughter, Miss Mary A. Jenkins, who had charge of the preparatory branches. This lady still resides at Salem Centre, but a few rods from the academy building, having married a member of the Lobdell family, and is now conducting a private school in the village. During the administration of Mr. Jenkins the annual catalogue showed an attendance of from seventy to one hundred and forty-five pupils, including day-scholars and boarders. During the Revolution this building was used as a court-room for the trial of Tories and British aiders and sympathizers, and as a jail for the confinement of such enemies to the patriot cause. It was here that a man named Paine was brought in and tried as a spy. He was condemned and was executed about half a mile northwest of the academy grounds. In 1781 the French army passed through the town on their way from Rhode Island to join the army of Washington on the Hudson. They encamped on the grounds surrounding the academy for two days, and the officers occupied quarters in the building.

The present board of trustees consists of Walter K. Ritch, president; Samuel B. Clark, clerk; Ira Wheeler, James Quick, Daniel D. Smith, Erastus R. Finch, Stebbins B. Quick, Raymond Weed, T. W. Decker, D. S. Halstead. Two others, Underhill W. Smith and John June, are deceased. By an act of the Legislature of the State, passed June 7, 1884, the buildings and real estate incorporated and known as the North Salem Academy were directed to be given to the town for the purposes and uses of a town hall, and the incorporation of "the trustees of the academy of North Salem, in the county of Westchester," which was effected February 19, 1790, was dissolved.

A special meeting of the board of trustees was therefore called and held at the town clerk's office, March 5, 1885, at which it was "*Resolved*, that the academy building, and all the real estate belonging to said North Salem Academy, be conveyed to the town to be used as a town hall, and that the president and clerk be authorized and directed to make and execute the necessary papers for the same, and also that all funds due the academy and in the treasurer's hands be paid to the supervisor of the town to make repairs, etc., on the building." By this it is seen that the town has become possessed of a commodious town-house, which is rich in reminiscences of the early times and of the noted minds that have gone out from under its overshadowing roof-tree to leave their impress on the acts of the commonwealth of State and nation.

INDUSTRIES OF THE TOWN.—As has been remarked, the agricultural interests of the town have developed more in grazing than in root cultivation of the soil, which is a gravelly and clay loam, well adapted to grass culture. The Mughtiticoos or Titicus River, in its course through the town, is flanked by rich tracts of meadow land, where abundance of hay is produced, of the best quality, while the hillsides grow a sweet, nutritious grass that is eminently conducive to the production of the dairy products and fatted cattle. In this, as in the adjoining towns in the northern tier, the principal occupation of the agricultural portion of the community is the production of milk for the New York market. Previous to the advent of the railroad, however, it was different, and mixed farming was the rule, instead of, as now, the exception. Then, by market-wagon twice a week, or once a fortnight by private farm-wagons, the butter, cheese, eggs, etc., were carried to the Hudson River, at Sing Sing or Peekskill, and from thence shipped by sloop to New York, while the fatted cattle found purchasers in the numerous drovers who passed through this vicinity. It was on this basis that the older residents paid for their lands and became comparatively wealthy. Substantial farm-houses are to be seen in every direction throughout the township, surrounded by well cultivated and thrifty farms.

The statistics of the town show that the culminating point of legitimate agricultural production was about 1850, since which time all the tendency has been towards milk production. This is accounted for by the construction of the New York and Harlem Railroad, which passes through the western end of the town, and the erection of a condensed milk factory on the Titicus River, at Purdy's Station, which supplies a market for a large amount of the lacteal product of the North Salem farms. This latter enterprise is owned and conducted by residents of the town. In the town is also the large milk farm of T. W. Decker & Sons, whose wholesale and retail milk establishment in New York City was originated in 1841. The milk from the Decker place is shipped

directly to the proprietors in the city, and the utmost care is taken at the farm, by a corps of competent men, in its production. Thus it may be said that almost the entire agricultural production of North Salem is milk.

The town is essentially an agricultural district, its hills and valleys being perhaps better adapted to grazing than grain tillage, and manufactures have but small space in the industrial pursuits of North Salem, and are confined to limited dimensions. Water-power is, however, abundant, both on the Croton River, in the northwest corner, and on the Titicus, running through the centre. Along the latter river are to be found the ruins of former dams, where, at an early day, were located cloth and paper, grist and saw-mills. There are on this stream at present, in North Salem, Salem Centre and at Purdy's, flour, grist and saw-mills, which, however, have only local custom.

MILLS AT NORTH SALEM.—On the 5th of January, 1777, Cornelius Steenrod purchased of Stephen De Lancey and others one hundred and eight acres of land on the Titicus River, on which was a large dwelling-house and barn, adjoining lands of Isaac Norton, Isaac Keeler, Abraham Delevan, Ebenezer Lobdell and Nathaniel Delevan. On part of this tract, on the river and on the south side of the highway leading from Croton River to Upper Salem, he built a grist and saw-mill, which, with four acres of land and the mill-pond, he sold, May 19, 1779, to Jesse Brush, who was at the time in charge of the mills. At this time Philip Briggs was resident adjoining on land bought of Steenrod. At the same place, on the 23d of April, 1825, David Seaman sold to Lewis B. Titus and Epenetus Howe, merchants, three tracts of land containing twenty-nine acres of land. On the 28th of April the next year Epenetus Howe bought of Titus all his interest in four parcels of land along the river, including the store, grist-mill, saw-mill, paper-mill, shops, houses, barns and all water privileges. This was the land bought of Seaman and the four acres containing the mills which were in possession of Seaman at the time the purchase was made. The land is described as being on the road from the Presbyterian Meeting-House to Ridgefield. A new grist-mill was erected, as in 1829 the "old mill-house" is mentioned. A paper-mill was also built lower down the stream about 1835, which was continued by various parties until 1870, when it was destroyed by fire.

FORGE AND FURNACE.—On a map of the town made in 1798 a forge is marked as being near the intersection of a road running north and south, with the river road farther east and near the Connecticut line, on land now owned by Jeremiah Birdsall and near the site of his present distillery. The ore was obtained in the vicinity and from near Brewster's. Ephraim Baker, a resident of the town, owner of a large tract of land and long since departed, used to describe the furnace and large trip-hammer to his

grandchildren, and mention, as an actual occurrence witnessed by him, the fact that one Solomon Steenrod, who was connected with the works, crawled through the eye of the hammer. This would indicate that the works were of no mean extent. The ore was smelted by means of charcoal, which was made in abundant quantities in the forests covering the hills to the north and east.

The old forge or furnace has entirely disappeared, but the remains of the dam and slag and cinders are still to be seen. A short distance up the stream Levi Smith, about 1820, erected a fulling-mill, which was continued until about 1852, when it was abandoned. His brother, Elias Smith, was a hatter and kept a shop across the road from the mill.

WHEELER'S FACTORY.—Midway between Purdy's and Salem Centre are located on this river the woolen-mills of Ira Wheeler. These mills occupy large buildings, have a fine water-power and are kept in operation during nearly every season, although the manufacture of cloth is limited, Mr. Wheeler combining the business of farmer with that of manufacturer. He resides in a large fine house of modern construction near his mills, and is not particularly interested in the race for wealth or prominence.

How long prior to 1798 a grist and saw-mill was in operation on the Titicus River, at this place, is not known, but in the survey of the town made in that year one is marked where Wheeler's factory now is. In 1812 Isaac Purdy erected a woolen-mill and began manufacturing. During the War of 1812 it was employed on army contracts for cloth. At the close of the war prices for such materials suddenly dropped below the cost of production. Just previous to this period Mr. Purdy had procured, or caused to be built, a large inclosed two-horse wagon; the sides and tops were made of wood and water-tight. Two small doors at the rear gave access to the interior, in which shelves were arranged on either side. This vehicle he loaded with cloth, the product of his mills. He then engaged his nephew, Isaac Quick, to take charge of the goods and start on a selling tour through the western and lake counties of the State. While the young man was gone the war closed and prices fell. He was at a loss what course to pursue. He was then in the interior of the State, many miles from home, and could not dispose of his goods at any figure, as but very little money was in circulation. Under this condition of affairs he turned his horses' heads homewards and despondingly started on his return. Mr. Purdy, however, was alert and equal to the occasion. He had watched affairs very closely, and when the crisis came he was well on his way westward travelling on horseback to meet his nephew with the cloth wagon, which he did, to the surprise of the latter. Thereupon they began to trade the cloth for cattle, and shortly afterwards Mr. Purdy and his young nephew arrived at home with over three hundred head of oxen and cows, which he facetiously termed "cloth cattle."

After this the mills were run mainly to supply the local traffic, and the wool produced by the farmers of this section found a market at the door.

Soon after the close of the war the mills passed to Stephen Brundage, who, on May 2, 1818, sold these mills, including water-power and twenty-five acres of land, to Hiram Jackson and Horace B. Smith. April 1, 1822, Thomas B. Waring became a partner, buying the interest of Smith. Waring became the sole proprietor, and April 1, 1834, sold to Samuel Higgins, who, on April 2, 1838, conveyed the property to Ira Wheeler, the present owner. A Mr. Raymond was interested for a short time, but soon retired. The ruins of the old grist-mill were torn away after the property came into the possession of Mr. Wheeler.

PURDY'S GRIST AND SAW-MILLS.—Isaac Purdy erected a saw-mill at Purdy's Station about 1800, and soon after erected a grist-mill. On the 19th of June, 1813, he erected a cider-mill and large shed, and on the same day his son, the present Isaac H. Purdy, now on the homestead farm, was born. The mills have been kept in operation to the present time.

In 1798 the map mentioned shows a grist-mill on the branch of the Titicus River that joins that stream from the south at Finch's Mill, about a mile up the stream, and a saw-mill at the foot of Long Pond Mountain.

About 1826 Ezra Finch erected a cider-mill, saw-mill and distillery on the river, near the academy, and in 1835 erected a grist-mill.

There was also a large grain distillery farther south, at a place called Yerks' Corners, now known as Bogtown. Grain was received and purchased at this place, mainly rye and wheat, from the inhabitants residing in a circuit of twenty-five miles around. At Bogtown was also established a nail-factory, which employed some twenty or thirty hands constantly in the manufacture of various kinds of nails. These industries have, however, entirely disappeared and nothing but the traces of the old dams or foundations of the buildings can be discovered. At the present time the industries of importance are located at Croton Falls and Purdy's. At the first-mentioned place are the works of George Juengst & Sons, manufacturers of machinists' tools and steel planers. The buildings occupied by this firm were erected by Joel Purdy in 1866, who still owns them, with the excellent water-power attached. There are two large main buildings, one of two stories, connected by a one-story structure, which has been used as a foundry. They are on an elevated table-land, lying along a bend of the Croton River. The water is carried across this table-land in a race-way, which taps the Croton some one hundred rods above the factory buildings, serves the purposes for which it is designed, and flows away directly into the river again over a broad chute. The buildings were originally erected for the purposes of a wrench-factory, and leased to an Eastern company. This enterprise was conducted with vary-

ing success for some two years, when, owing to business reverses, etc., the work was suspended and finally abandoned. Then another company took hold of the works and commenced an extensive business in the manufacture of augers, etc. It was then known as the Croton Falls Auger Works. For some time this continued a success and a large trade was controlled. It was the day of prosperity for the village of Croton Falls. For some business reason, however, this company gave up, and the buildings remained unoccupied for a long time. Mr. Purdy himself was a large loser in the auger works. At length a hat manufacturer leased the property, and for a time prosperity was promised. This enterprise, however, went the way of all the rest, and again the large factory was closed and idle. In 1883 the present firm leased the buildings for three years, and immediately began fitting them up with their heavy machinery. Since that time the firm have been constantly at work.

In 1884 Mr. George Juengst purchased a water-power on the Croton, and about half a mile northeast of the present factory, owned by Close & Whitlock, where he has erected a large factory, one hundred and thirty-two feet long by fifty feet wide, to which is to be added a building of smaller size, to which the firm removed in 1886. This new building is on the north boundary line of Westchester County and the town of North Salem. Messrs. Juengst & Sons employ about twenty men, and their business aggregates about twenty-five thousand dollars per annum. Their goods are shipped to all parts of the world. W. S. Harris has also in connection with his watch-making and jewelry establishment a conveniently arranged workshop, well-fitted with various lathes and fine machinery, the motive-power of which is steam, where he pursues the occupation of model-maker and manufacturer of small machinery. The next industry of importance in the town is the works of the American Condensed Milk Company, which are located on the south bank of the Titicus River and on River Street at Purdy's. This building was erected first as Price & Sons' marble-works, and was owned, with the real estate forming the block now occupied by M. C. Teed as a residence, by E. W. Price. The water-power was carried by a race-way into the factory to cut, saw and polish stones quarried from the Vermont marble strata and from the quarries of Italy.

Mr. Price did an extensive business from about 1850 to 1860, when, by reason of business reverses, he was obliged to suspend. His son Edwin carried on the marble-cutting business for a few years afterwards, but the site of the cutting works was purchased by William Howe and others. Afterwards a milk condensing factory was suggested by George White, who had been interested in this business previously. Accordingly, the water-power was utilized and the milk condensing began about 1864. For a long time it was an uncertain enterprise, but finally began to make money and the sales afforded a handsome pro-

fit on the investments. The factory building is about one hundred feet in length by thirty feet wide, two stories and Mansard. Its usual capacity for condensing the fresh milk brought in by the adjacent farmers every day is three hundred and nine quart cans of fresh milk, making a little over one hundred cans of condensed milk, which is shipped to New York. The amount of business done by this factory is regulated principally by the state of the metropolitan market, but the average business done is over forty thousand dollars per annum. William I. H. Howe, son of Epenetus Howe, Alfred B. Mead and William Bailey, of Somers, compose the stockholders. The business of milk condensing is a constantly increasing source of profit.

HOTELS.—The oldest inn or hotel in the town is located near its northeastern boundary, just on the edge of the village of North Salem. It has been used as a hotel over a century, though for a few years past it has been occupied as a private dwelling. It was kept as an inn by the Lockwood family in 1794, and was a noted stopping-place for drovers and showmen for many years. Standing, as it did, on the main highway from the east to Sing Sing and New York, it became a well-known hostelry to all the travelers of those days. George Bailey, a veteran showman, owned and occupied it for a number of years, and this rendered it a notable resort for his contemporaries in the same line of business. Jackson Mead was the last proprietor of the building as a hotel in 1883. It is now owned by Platt Bailey, and occupied as a dwelling. On the west shore of Lake Pehquennakonck, and near the north line of the town, is another large building, which has been modernized and enlarged, but which has always been kept as an inn or boarding-place. It is owned by Thomas Vail, and has always been held by the family; formerly by Major Vail, then by his son, William Vail, and now by Thomas, the son of William. This has also been a noted resort, more especially for parties of sportsmen, who come to enjoy the excellent fishing in the waters of the lake, which, from the earliest days, has divided with Long Pond, as it was formerly known, now Lake Waccabuc, on the southern line of North Salem, the honors of being the best fishing-grounds in this section of the State. These two houses were the oldest hotels in the town.

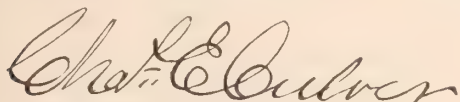
Another building, situated on the cross-roads near St. James' Church, and a short distance from Salem Centre, was used as a hotel for a number of years by members of the Close family, who owned a tract of land here and who were very early settlers of the town. The building still belongs to the family, although now unoccupied. At the present Bogtown lived, during the Revolution, John Yerks, who afterwards removed to Mount Pleasant, and who kept a general country store. The building still stands, a long, low, colonial-looking house, with sloping roof and long veranda. Although it was not considered

an inn, yet "refreshments for man or beast" could generally be found here. At this period, and for years after, this was an important point in the town, situated, as it was, on the road to Lower or South Salem, and about midway between the two points. It was then denominated Yerks' Corners, and for years the general training of the militia of this section was held here. It was also from this place that the party started out on the memorable expedition that resulted in the capture of Major Andre. When the railroad came through the town, in 1846, and people began to gather around the stations, hotels at these places became a necessity, and Isaac H. Purdy had one constructed at Purdy's, and Thomas R. Lee erected one at Croton Falls. Both of these houses have been conducted as hotels ever since. The one at Purdy's was at first a large, plain, two-story building, with full accommodations for the public who traveled at that time, some forty years ago. It was leased by Norman Smith at first, who was its proprietor for a number of years. Then Hart Crosby became the landlord and it was noted throughout this section for its excellent accommodations. He kept it some nine years and was succeeded by William T. Ganung, who, in turn, gave place to C. H. Rundle. Eli Reynolds, a native of the town and a direct descendant of one of the early families, who, at this time, was engaged in the blacksmith business, determined to change his occupation, and accordingly purchased the hotel property, which he has now occupied for a number of years.

The building was enlarged by additions and the height increased by a Mansard roof, until at present it is one of the most attractive and pleasant houses of entertainment on the line of the Harlem Railroad. Mr. Reynolds is also an extensive property owner in Purdy's, exclusive of the hotel. A few years ago he purchased a large, two-story building, which had been used as a hotel for a few years, located on the west side of the track, and removed it to the hotel lot, where he had it refitted as a hall for public meetings, lectures, etc., with a fine ball-room on the second floor. The hotel building at Croton Falls, known as the Croton House, is located just a few rods north of the passenger depot and but a few feet from the tracks of the Harlem Railroad.

It is a plain building, commodious and well-appointed, pleasantly located and surrounded with a wide veranda on three sides. It fronts the south and Main Street of the village. It was erected in 1847-48 by Thomas R. Lee, who owned considerable property in and near Croton Falls, and whose handsome residence was located just across the Croton River, in the town of Somers, now owned and occupied as a summer residence by Mr. Ettinger. Previous to the erection of the hotel David Hitchcock, a carpenter and builder, who still resides in the village, and who was engaged in some large contracts for the railroad company, put up a building for a dining-

room and restaurant, of which he was the proprietor. This latter was the first building at Croton Falls which was in any manner devoted to refreshment. After the completion of Lee's building it was leased to Lyman Bailey, who immediately opened it as a hotel proper. Mr. Bailey was a member of the Bailey family of Putnam County and Somers, many members of which have been interested in the hotel and show business from early days. It immediately became a successful enterprise, and has long been known as a first-class country hotel. After Mr. Bailey as proprietor came for a time H. Williams, and then Harrison Pardee purchased the property, improved its appearance, added to the house, and, for many years, until his death, some five years since, rendered the place widely and favorably known to the traveling public. While Mr. Pardee was the proprietor of the house the passenger and freight travel came to this station from Lake Mahopac, and it was no uncommon sight to see a line of wagons and carriages, extending several rods in length, awaiting the arrival of the trains from New York. Croton Falls was then a station of importance and business prosperity. Mr. Pardee died while in possession of the property, and it was sold to close the estate. Henry Bernd, a business man of Danbury, Conn., became the purchaser. He is the present owner. It was then leased by Ward Bronson, of Brewster, who continued to maintain its excellent character until the spring of 1885, when Mr. Bronson removed to the Elephant Hotel, in Somers, and Joseph O. Carpenter succeeded him. Mr. Carpenter immediately refitted the house throughout, and continues its well-earned popularity. This and the hotel at Purdy's are the only places of the kind now in operation in the town.



CHAPTER IX.

LEWISBORO.

BY J. W. KEELER, ESQ.

THE town of Lewisboro' is situated twenty miles northeast of White Plains, and is bounded on the north by North Salem, east by Connecticut, south by Connecticut, Poundridge and Bedford, and west by Poundridge, Bedford and Somers. One of the principal features of the topography is its lakes, the chief of which are Waccabuc (Long Pond), South Pond and North Pond. These lakes are all connected, North Pond flowing into South Pond, and that into Lake Waccabuc, the largest of the three, covering over two hundred acres, or as much as the other two together. The waters of these lakes are deep and pure and abound in fish, viz.: black bass, pickerel,

white and yellow perch, bull-heads, eels, etc. The scenery around them is exceedingly picturesque and beautiful. On the north side Long Pond Mountains rise abruptly from the shores of Lake Waccabuc and North Pond, while around the southern shores green fields and shady groves slope to the water's edge. At the west end of Waccabuc is situated the "Waccabuc House," a popular summer resort for New York City people. In 1870 the Croton Water Department of the city of New York took possession of these lakes and placed a gate in the outlet of Lake Waccabuc, for the purpose of storing water to increase the supply for the city. They also improved and enlarged the water-way between the lakes, so that boats can now easily pass from one lake to the other.

The outlet of Lake Waccabuc is the Peppenegheck or Cross River, which flows south to near the centre of the town and then west, emptying into Croton River at Wood's Bridge, near Katonah. The Croton River flows along the western border of the town, while the Tatomuck and the west branch of Norwalk River flow through the eastern portion. In every portion of the town ever-living springs of pure water abound.

The general surface of Lewisboro' is broken and hilly, in the extreme northern part mountainous. The soil, a clay mixed with sandy loam, though rugged, has generally been well tilled, the inhabitants being mostly agriculturists, and good crops of corn, rye, oats, potatoes, etc., are raised annually. Much attention is also paid to grazing and producing milk for the New York market.

Lewisboro' was first organized under the Van Cortlandt patent as Salem, and then included the present town of North Salem. To distinguish it from the upper part of the town, it was called Lower Salem up to 1806. In 1783 the town was divided by act of Legislature, Long Pond Mountain being the dividing line. The part south of the mountain retained the name of Lower Salem. In 1806 the name was changed to South Salem, and in 1840 again changed to Lewisboro', in honor of John Lewis, a leading citizen, who had contributed largely to the growth of the public schools. Most of the early settlers came from Connecticut,—Norwalk, Stamford, Greenwich, etc.

The first purchase of lands within the limits of the town was made of the Indians in 1640, when Mehackem, Narawake and Pemeate, Indians of Norwalk, agreed to convey to Daniel Patrick, of Greenwich, all their lands on the west side of "Norwake River, as far up in the country as an Indian can go in a day, from sun rising to sun setting," etc. The consideration was "ten fathoms wampum, three hatchets, three hoes, six glasses, twelve tobacco pipes, three knives, ten drills and ten needles." Again we find that on August the 15th, 1673, Ponus and Onox, his son, sold to the people of Stamford all their lands extending sixteen miles north of Stamford bounds for the pasture of their cattle. In the

month of May, 1708, some gentlemen, citizens of Norwalk, petitioned the General Assembly of the colony of Connecticut, then in session at Hartford, to grant them "libertie" to purchase of the Indians a certain tract of land bounded south on Norwalk bounds, northeast on Danbury and west upon York line. The General Assembly granted the petitioners such "libertie," and appointed Major Peter Burr, of Fairfield, John Copp, of Norwalk, and Josiah Starr, of Danbury, a committee to make a survey of the aforesaid tract of land and make a report to the General Assembly in October following. On the 30th of May, 1708, the purchase was made as shown by the following deed:

"To all to whom these presents shall come greeting: Know ye that I, Catoonah, Sachem of Ramapoo Indians and associates within Her Majesty's Province of New York, in America: For and in consideration of One Hundred Pounds as Current Money of S^d Province to us in hand before the ensembling hereof, well and truly paid by John Belden, Samuel Keeler, Sen^r, Mathew Seamer, James Brown, Benjamin Wilson, Joseph Birchard, John Whitte, Sen^r, Matthias Saintjohn, Benjamin Hickecock, John Beebe, Samuel Saintjohn, John Bouton, Joseph Keeler, Samuel Smith, Junior, Jonathan Stevens, Daniel Olmstead, John Sturdivant, Samuel Keeler, Jun^r, Joseph Bouton, Jonathan Rockwell, Edmund Wareing, Joseph Whitte, Daniel Hait, Thomas Hyatt, James Benedict, Joseph Crampton, Ebenezer Sension, Mathew Saintjohn, all of y^e Town of Norwalk, in y^e County of Fairfield, within her Majesty's Colony of Connecticut, in New England, and Thomas Smith, Thomas Canfield and Samuel Smith, of y^e Town of Milford, in y^e County of New Haven, and Colony aforesaid. The receipt whereof we do hereby acknowledge, and ourselves herewith fully satisfied and contented, and thereof, and of every part and parcel thereof, Do Exonerate, Acquite and Discharge the S^d John Belden, Samuel Keeler, Sen^r, Matthias Saintjohn, Etc., their heirs, Executors, Administrators, forever by these presents. Have given, granted, bargained, sold, Allowed, conveyed and Confirmed, and by these presents Do freely, fully and absolutely give, grant, bargain, sell, Alien, Convey and Confirm unto them the said John Belden, Samuel Keeler, Sen^r, Matthias Saintjohn and their Associates, heirs, assigns forever a certain tract of land situate, Lying and being so esteemed within her Majesty's Colony of Connecticut aforesaid. Butted and Bounded as followeth: at a Rock with Stones layed thereon that lyeth upon y^e West side of Norwalk River, about twenty rods Northward of y^e crossing or where Danbury old cart path crosseth the River, which said rock is y^e South-East corner, and from S^d corner a line Runneth upwards unto Umpewaug pond to a White Oak Tree standing by y^e Northwest corner of said pond, the said Tree being Marked and Stones lay'd about it and is the North East Corner, and from the S^d Corner Tree another line Running near two points to the North of West into a pond Called Jesopack, and continues y^e same course until it meets with a second pond called Aokeels, crossing by y^e South End of both ponds, and from thence running near West until it Extends to a place Called Mamanasquag, where is an Oak Tree Marked, on y^e North Side of y^e Outlet of Water that comes out from a sort of grassy pond which is known and Called by S^d name, which Tree is y^e North West Corner, and from S^d Tree another line Running South, bearing to y^e East About one Mile and half, Running by y^e East side of another Mountain Called Asoquatah until it Meets Stamford Bound line about a quarter of a Mile to y^e Eastward of Cross River pond, where stands a marked White Oak Tree with stones about it and is y^e South West Corner and from S^d Marked Tree along by Stamford line until it comes to Norwalk purchase Bounds, to the S^d Rock at the South East Corner, containing by Estimation Twenty Thousand Acres, be the same more or less. Indian Names South East Corner, 'Wheer Cock,' North East Corner, 'Wononkpa Koonk,' North West Corner, 'Mamanasquag,' South West Corner, 'Narahawins.'

"To Have and to Hold the S^d granted and bargained premises with all the appurtenances, privileges and Comodities to the same belonging or in any wise Appertaining to them y^e Above Named persons, their associates, heirs, and assigns forever, to them and their only proper Use, benefit and behoof forever. And I, the said Catoonah and Associates, for Ourselves, our heirs, Executors, administrators, Do covenant, promise and grant to and with the above said persons, their Associates, heirs, and assigns, that before the Ensembling hereof. We are the true

Sole and Lawfull Owners of y^e above bargained premises, and by Native Right Seized and possessed of the Same in our own proper Right as a Good, perfect and Absolute Estate of Inheritance in fee Simple, and have Ourselves good, Rightfull power and Sufficient Authority to grant, bargain, Sell, Convey and Confirme S^d Bargained premises in manner as above S^d, and that the S^d John Belden and the rest above said, their Associates, heirs and assigns, Shall and may from time to time, and at all times forever hereafter, by force and virtue of these presents, Lawfully and peaceably and quietly Have, Hold, Use, Occupie, posses and enjoy the said Demised and bargained premises.

"With the appurtenances free and clear and freely and clearly Aquitted, Exonerated & Discharged of from all and all Manner of former and other gifts, grants, bargains, Sales, Leases, Mortgages, Wills, Intails, Joynters, Dowries, Judgments, Executions, Incumbrances & Extents.

"Furthermore, I, the said Catoonah, and Associates for ourselves our heirs, Executors, administrators Do Covenant and Engage y^e above Demised premises to them, the S^d John Belden, and the rest above S^d, their Associates, heirs, Assigns, against the Lawfull Claims or Demands of any person or persons whatsoever forever hereafter to Warrant, secure and Defend.

"In Witness whereof we have hereunto Sett our hands and Seals, this Thirtieth Day of September, in the Seventh year of y^e Reign of our Sovereign Lady Ann Queen of England, &c., and in y^e year of our Lord God 1708.

"Signed, Sealed and Delivered in presence of

"Catoonah,	Gootkas,
Wawkamawwee,	Wouquamick Mahke,
Naraneka,	Waspahchain,
Tawpornick,	Cawwehorn,
John Holmes, Jr.,	Joseph Seeley,
John Copp.	

"This above Written Bill of Sale is acknowledged by y^e Grantors this 30th Day of September, 1708.

"Before me,

"SAMUEL HAIT,
"Justice of Peace."

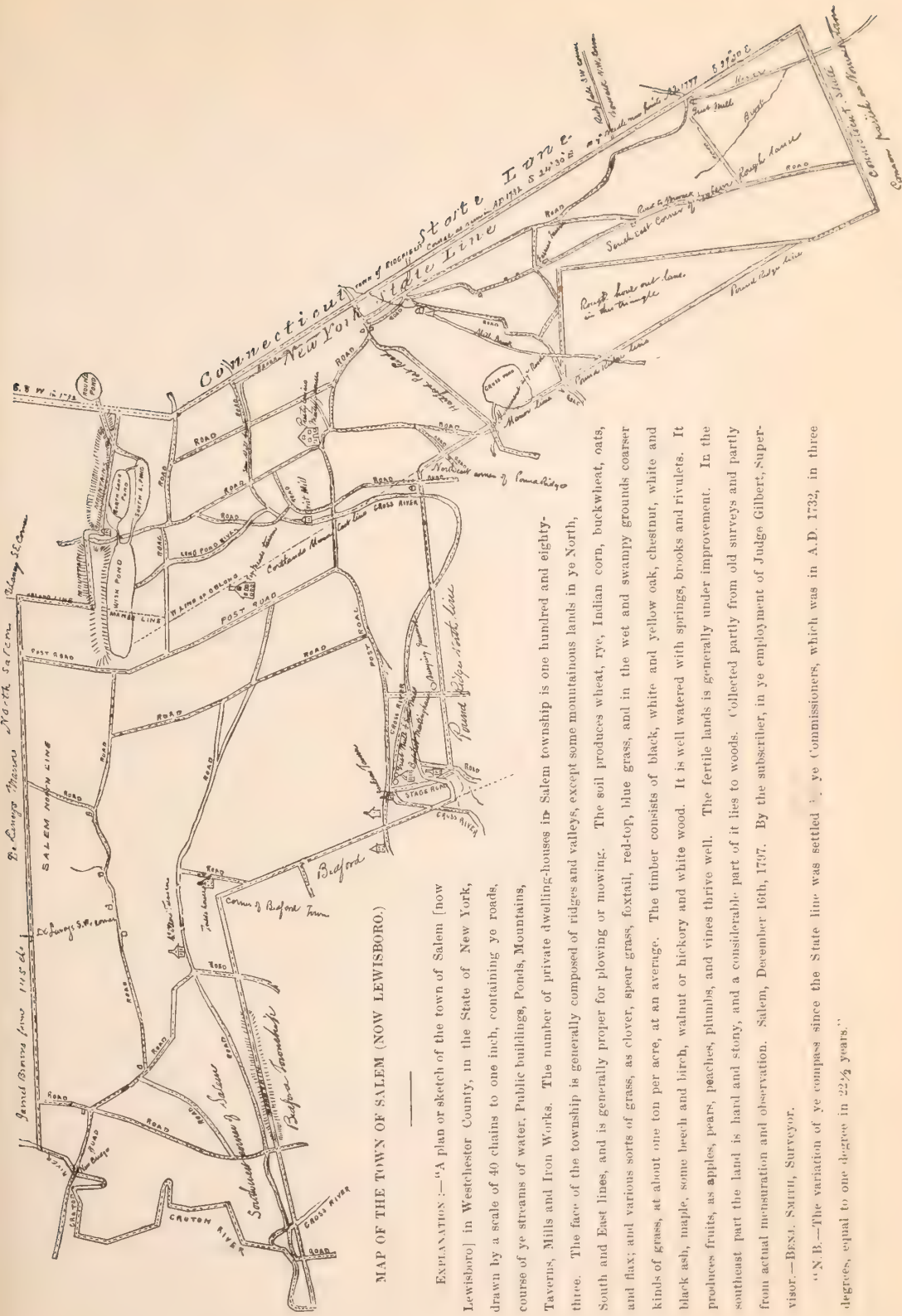
The purchase and survey having been made, the commissioners reported to the General Assembly at New Haven, in October, 1709. On the 13th of October, 1709, the following grant was made to them by the General Assembly:

"Whereas, the General Assembly of this Colony, Holden at Hartford, May 13th, 1708, Upon the petition of Sundry of the Inhabitants of the town of Norwalk, praying for liberty to purchase of the Indians a certain tract of Land, lying within this Colony, Bounded Northerly and Northeasterly with the Town of Danbury, Southerly with the S^d Town of Norwalk, and West or Westerly with y^e line or Boundary between this Colony & y^e province of New York, to the end they might make a Plantation there and settle upon the same—Did Grant to the said petitioners a liberty to purchase the same Tract of Land.

"And pursuant thereto y^e S^d Petitioners did buy and purchase of Catoonah, a Sachem, and other Indians, the aforesaid tract of Land as by their Deed of Conveyance thereof, under their hands and Seals bearing Date September 30th, 1708, now laid before this Assembly, had been made appear.

"And whereas, the General Assembly of this Colony Holden at Hartford, May y^e 12th, 1709, Did desire and Impower Major Peter Burr, Mr. John Copp, and Mr. Josiah Starr to make a survey of the S^d tract of Land and to lay out a Town Platt there, and to Make Return of their doings therein to this Assembly at this time, and the S^d Peter Burr and John Copp, in pursuance thereof having taken a view of the said Tract of Land & having thereupon made a Return or Report thereof to this Assembly, which hath been read and considered.

"This Assembly Do now give and Grant to the said petitioners, that is to say, to the Persons hereafter named, viz: John Belden, Samuel Keeler, Sen^r, Mathew Seamer, Matthias Saintjohn, Benjamin Wilson, Samuel St. John, James Brown, Benjamin Hickecock, Joseph Keeler, Samuel Keeler, Jr., Samuel Smith, Matthew St. John, Jonathan Stevens, Daniel Olmstead, John Sturdivant, Jonathan Rockwell, Joseph Whitney, Thomas Hyatt, James Benedict, Joseph Crampton and Richard Olmsted, of the S^d Town of Norwalk, and Thomas Smith, Thomas Canfield, Samuel Smith and Ebenezer Smith, of y^e Town of Milford, and to their heirs and assigns forever, All the afore Mentioned Tract or Parcel of Land, Butted & Bounded as followeth: that is to say, On the South or Southerly, with



MAP OF THE TOWN OF SALEM (NOW LEWISBORO.)

EXPLANATION:—“A plan or sketch of the town of Salem [now Lewisboro] in Westchester County, in the State of New York, drawn by a scale of 40 chains to one inch, containing ye roads, course of ye streams of water, Public buildings, Ponds, Mountains, Taverns, Mills and Iron Works. The number of private dwelling-houses in Salem township is one hundred and eighty-three. The face of the township is generally composed of ridges and valleys, except some mountainous lands in ye North, South and East lines, and is generally proper for plowing or mowing. The soil produces wheat, rye, Indian corn, buckwheat, oats, and flax; and various sorts of grass, as clover, spear grass, foxtail, red-top, blue grass, and in the wet and swampy grounds coarser kinds of grass, at about one ton per acre, at an average. The timber consists of black, white and yellow oak, chestnut, white and black ash, maple, some beech and birch, walnut or hickory and white wood. It is well watered with springs, brooks and rivulets. It produces fruits, as apples, pears, peaches, plumbs, and vines thrive well. The fertile lands is generally under improvement. In the southeast part the land is hard and stony, and a considerable part of it lies to woods. Collected partly from old surveys and partly from actual measurement and observation. Salem, December 16th, 1797. By the subscriber, in ye employment of Judges Gilbert, Supervisor.—BENJ. SMITH, Surveyor.

“N.B.—The variation of ye compass since the State line was settled by ye Commissioners, which was in A.D. 1732, in three degrees, equal to one degree in 22½ years.”

the S^d Town of Norwalk, On the West or Westerly, with the line or boundary between this Colony and the Province of New York, On the East or Easterly, partly with y^e line to be continued and Run like unto y^e line between y^e S^d Town of Norwalk and y^e Town of Fairfield, from y^e North End thereof unto a Certain black Oak tree marked with Letters and having Stones layed about the same, Standing upon y^e Mountain Commonly called the West Cedar Mountain, and partly with a direct and Strait line to be run from S^d Black Oak Tree to a Certain Large White Oak Tree, marked and having Stones layed about it, Standing at or near the North West Corner of Unpewauge pond. And on the North or Northerly, with a direct Strait Line to be run from y^e S^d White Oak Tree to y^e South Westerly Corner of y^e Town of Danbury, and continued unto y^e S^d Line or Boundary between this Colony and y^e Province of New York, be y^e S^d tract of Land more or less, With all and Singular y^e rights, Members and appurtenances thereof. And this Assembly do hereby Enact & Grant that the S^d Tract of Land shall be an In-ire Township of itself, and shall be called and known by Y^e name of Ridgefield and shall be held and enjoyed by y^e S^d John Belden, Samuel Keeler, senr, Matthew Seamor, Matthias St. John, Benjamin Wilson, Samuel St. John, James Brown, Benjamin Hiccock, Joseph Keeler, Samuel Keeler, Jr, Samuel Smith, Matthew St. John, Jonathan Stevens, Daniel Olmsted, John Stridivant, Jonathan Rockwell, Joseph Whitney, Thomas Hyatt, James Benedict, Joseph Crampton and Richard Olmsted, of Norwalk, and Thomas Smith, Thomas Canfield, Samuel Smith and Ebenezer Smith, of y^e Town of Milford, and their heirs and assigns in Equal and Even Shares & be divided accordingly into lots and parcels, from time to time, by y^e order of y^e Major vote of them, to be accounted by y^e Major part of interests therein. Provided that this act shall not be construed to the prejudice of any former Grant of this Court, and provided always -- Nevertheless that if the S^d John Belden, Samuel Keeler, senr, Matthew Seamor, Nathan St. John, Benjamin Wilson, &c., their heirs, assigns and Associates, Do not or shall not, within four years next, after the date of this act or Grant, Settle or Dwell upon the S^d Tract of Land to y^e number of twenty-eight families, and after Continue and Dwell there for the space of four years next following, that then it shall be in the Liberty and power of this Assembly to Grant of y^e S^d Tract of Land, Settlement to any other persons as they Shall See Cause.

"A true Copy of Record. Attest :
"CALEB STANLY, *Secretary.*"

That those who received the above grant complied with all requirements and conditions contained therein is evident from the fact that on May 22, 1714, letters patent were issued to them by the Governor, Council and Representatives of Her Majesty's colony of Connecticut, in General Court assembled.

The original proprietors of the Ridgefield patent numbered twenty-five, but subsequently others were admitted to the association until there were twenty-nine members. Among the last to come in was Rev. Thomas Hawley, who afterward took an active part in the management. The association then took the name of Hawley & Co.

At the time the patent was issued to John Belden and his associates the boundary between the colony of Connecticut and the province of New York was the so-called twenty-mile line. For a number of years previous to 1683 there had been a dispute between the two colonies concerning this boundary. But in October, 1683, an agreement was concluded between the Governor of Connecticut and a committee appointed from New York to act with him, by which it was stipulated that the line between the colony of Connecticut and the province of New York should commence at Lyon's Point, at the mouth of Byram River, and continue thence along said river to the country road; thence northwest eight miles from Lyon's Point; then twelve miles east-northeast, and then in a line parallel to the Hudson

River, and twenty miles distant therefrom to the south line of Massachusetts. This so-called twenty-mile line or manor line passed through Cross Pond near its centre; thence north, crossing the old Bedford road just west of the residence of the late Joseph S. Wood; thence north between the farms of James Lawrence and Solomon Mead, crossing the road leading from Salem meeting-house to Cross River in front of and west of the present residence of Solomon Mead; thence over the hill to the twenty-mile monument near the south side of Long Pond. Solomon Mead's house and James Lawrence's farm were in the Ridgefield patent. Joseph Benedict's farm was in Van Cortlandt Manor.

The Ridgefield patent being bounded "west by York line, or the line twenty miles from Hudson River," that patent covered the whole eastern portion of Lewisboro'. The western portion, or west of the "twenty-mile line," to Croton River, belonged to Cortlandt Manor, for which a royal patent or charter was issued to Stephanus Van Cortlandt, June 17, 1697. The commissioners who surveyed the "manor" in 1734 erected a monument near the southern shore of Lake Waccabuc, or Long Pond, on land now owned by Robert Hoe, which they estimated to be twenty miles from Cortlandt's Point, on the Hudson River. This monument afterward became important as a mark in defining boundaries of land. In 1725 the proprietors of the Ridgefield patent were again considerably exercised over another proposed change of boundaries between the colony of Connecticut and the province of New York. Connecticut, wishing to retain all the coast line possible, proposed to exchange lands along her western border for Greenwich and a part of Stamford. Commissioners were appointed by the two colonies to settle the matter. They met at Greenwich, April 29, 1725, and came to the following agreement: "That the line should commence at the westernmost line, called the eight-mile line; then running east-northeast thirteen miles and sixty-four rods from the eight-mile line; thence northward, parallel with the line twenty miles from Hudson River to Massachusetts line." The lands to be thus surrendered by Connecticut to New York, as an equivalent for Greenwich and Stamford, they estimated at sixty-one thousand four hundred and forty acres. By this arrangement of the boundary lines, a strip of land one mile and three-quarters and fifty-two rods wide, along the western side of the Ridgefield patent, would be transferred to the province of New York. When it was found the lines were to be so established, Hawley & Co., proprietors of the Ridgefield patent, petitioned the Governor and Council of the province of New York, praying that a patent might be issued to them for fifty thousand acres of these "Equivalent lands," now called the "Oblong." After their petition had been duly considered a patent was issued to them June 8, 1731, as follows:

"To whom these present may come or may concern :

"It is hereby certified that whereas Thomas Hawley, etc., inhabitants of the Town of Ridgefield, as of the eastern part of this province, by their humble petition presented unto his Excellency in council the 3^d day of September, setting forth that they and their ancestors have for a long time been settled upon, cultivated and improved certain lands near the eastern part of this Province, held by Patent from the Colony of Connecticut, are supposed to be in that part of y^e Province of New York Commonly called the 'Equivalent Lands,' and that the petitioners, together with their Associates, would be willing to defray the charges and expense of finding out and ascertaining the true partition lines between both the S^d colonies, provided that 50,000 acres of the S^d Lands be granted to the petitioners; and whereas the partition lines between the S^d Colonies have been accordingly run out and ascertained by Commissioners for both the S^d Colonies being thereunto duly commissioned and appointed, and sixty-one thousand four hundred and forty acres of S^d land of the S^d Colony of Connecticut were lately at the Settling of the S^d partition lines Surrendered to the S^d province of New York for the use of his Majesty; whereof the petitioners prayed his Excellency would be favorably pleased to Grant them, their heirs and Assigns his Majesty's letters patent for 50,000 acres of the S^d land under such quit-rent provisions and restrictions as is and are directed in his Excellency's commission and instructions, &c., &c."

Letters patent were issued to Thomas Hawley and others as follows :

"ROYAL LETTERS PATENT FOR Y^e 'OBLONG.' George y^e Second, by y^e grace of God, of Great Britian, France and Ireland—King, Defender of y^e faith, &c.

"To All to whom these presents chall come, Greeting :

"Whereas, before and after y^e year 1683, the extent, bounds and limits of our province of New York on y^e part adjoining to our Colony of Connecticut is altogether unsettled and uncertain, and in order for the settling, ascertaining and determining where the bounds of y^e S^d Province and Colony with respect to one another should be: upon the three and twentieth day of November, 1683, certain articles of agreement were concluded between Col. Thomas Dongan, their Governor of this S^d Province, and the council of y^e S^d Province on y^e one side, and Robert Foster, Esq^r., Governor of y^e Colony of Connecticut, Major Nathaniel Gold, Capt. John Allen Secretary and Mr. William Pitkin in Commission with him, from Connecticut, on y^e other side, by which it was agreed that y^e bounds between y^e S^d Province and Colony from thenceforth should begin at Lyon's Point at y^e north of y^e Byram River, where it falls into y^e Sound; from thence to go as y^e S^d River runneth to y^e place where y^e Common Road or wading place over y^e S^d River is; and from thence to run North North West into y^e country so far as would be Eight English Miles from y^e aforesaid Lyon's Point, and that a line twelve miles being measured from Lyon's Point according to y^e general course of y^e Sound Westward where y^e S^d twelve miles endeth, as y^e line should be run from y^e Sound North West eight miles into y^e country, and also a fourth line should be run from y^e Northernmost end of y^e eight miles line, being y^e third mentioned line, which fourth line, with y^e first mentioned line, should be y^e bounds where they should fall or happen to run, and that from y^e eastward end of y^e fourth mentioned line (which was to be twelve miles in length) a line parallel to Hudson's River, in every place twenty miles distant from Hudson's River, should be y^e bounds between y^e S^d Colony of Connecticut, so far as Connecticut Colony doth extend Northward, and is y^e Southerly line of Massachusetts Bay Colony, &c., &c.

"It is hereby certified that Thomas Hawley, Nathan St. John, Samuel Smitte, Benjamin Benedict, Richard Olmsted, Thomas Smith, Ebenezer Smith, Daniel Sherwood, Benjamin Burt, Thomas Hyatt, Benjamin Wilson, Joseph Lee, Joseph Keeler, James Benedict, Richard Osborne Samuel Smith, Junr., Daniel Olmstead, Timothy Keeler, Jonah Keeler, Matthew Semer, Joseph Northrop, James Brown, Andrew Ireland, John Thomas and Benjamin Birdsell, inhabitants of y^e Town of Ridgefield as of y^e Eastern parts of our Province, by their humble petition presented unto his Excellency in Council y^e third day of September, setting forth that they and their ancestors have for a long time been settled upon, cultivated and improved certain lands near y^e Eastern part of this Province held by Patent from y^e Colony of Connecticut, but that Contrary to their Expectations, some of y^e lands to be sold by Patent from y^e Colony of Connecticut are supposed to be within that part of y^e Province of New York Commonly Called y^e 'Equivalent Lands' and that y^e petitioners together with their associates would be willing to defray y^e charge and expense of finding out and ascertaining the partition lines between both

the S^d Colonies provided that 50,000 acres of y^e S^d lands be granted to y^e petitioners, and, whereas y^e partition lines between y^e S^d Colonies have been accordingly run out and ascertained by Commissioners, for both Colonies being thereto duly Commissioned and appointed, and sixty-one thousand four hundred and forty acres of land of y^e S^d Colony of Connecticut were lately of y^e settlement of y^e S^d partition lines surrendered to y^e S^d Province of New York for y^e use of his majesty, whereof y^e petitioners prayed his Excellency would be favorably pleased to grant them and their heirs and assigns his Majesty's letters Patent for 50,000 acres of y^e S^d land under such quit-rents, provisions and restrictions as is and are directed in his Excellency's Commission and instructions which petition then and there read and considered of his Majesty's Council of this Province and afterwards, on y^e same day, humbly advise and consent that his Excellency do grant y^e prayer of y^e same &c., given &c., &c.

"Four several tracts, y^e first of which begins at y^e Monument, where y^e two lines intersect, which are y^e Eastwardly bounds of y^e S^d surrendered lands, and is one mile three-quarters of a mile and fifty-two rods distant, on a line running north eighty-four degrees east from y^e Monument, and y^e end of y^e twenty-mile line from Courtlant's Point, west to y^e end of Long Pond, &c.; thence along y^e south side of S^d Pond to y^e easterly bounds of S^d surrendered lands. The second tract begins at y^e Monument, standing at two miles from y^e Monument, at y^e end of y^e twenty miles from Courtlant's Point. The third begins at y^e eighth-mile Monument, on y^e westerly bounds of y^e S^d surrendered lands, on y^e line running north twelve degrees and thirty minutes east from y^e Monument at y^e end of y^e twenty miles from Courtlant's Point. The fourth tract begins at y^e thirty-fourth mile from y^e Monument, at y^e end of y^e twenty miles from Courtlant's Point, &c. The Patentee Yielding, rendering and paying therefor yearly and every year for ever unto us at our Custom House, in our City of New York, unto our Receiver-General, for the time being, on y^e Annunciation of y^e Blessed Virgin Mary, commonly called Lady Day, the yearly rent of seven shillings and six pence for each hundred acres of y^e above-granted lands and so in proportion for y^e lesser quantity thereof.

"Given under our hand at New York, y^e eighth day of June, in the fourth year of his Majesty's reign, A.D. 1731.

"JOHN MONTGOMRIE."

Previous to receiving their patent from the Governor of New York, Hawley & Co. had, for the sum of one thousand pounds, on March 31, 1729, released to James Brown all their interest in the southern end of the Oblong or Equivalent Lands. On March 10, 1732-32, Hawley & Co. released to Ebenezer Smith, one of their number, three hundred and twelve acres of the Equivalent Lands; to Jonah Keeler, a certain tract of land situated and lying in the Equivalent Lands; to Samuel Smith, formerly of Milford, two hundred and twenty-eight acres of the undivided lands of the colony, bounded west by the twenty-mile line. In 1743 Benjamin Wilson released to Joseph Keeler "all his right, title, and interest whatsoever in y^e Oblong or Equivalent Lands," the consideration being six pounds twelve shillings. June 8, 1749, James Brown conveyed to Solomon Close, of Greenwich, "in y^e colony of Connecticut," three hundred and twenty-six acres of a tract of land granted to Hawley & Co. in 1731. December 23, 1751, Hawley & Co., "out of good will they had to the inhabitants of Salem," conveyed two parcels of land "situated and lying in the lower part of y^e Oblong or Equivalent Lands to the First Presbyterian or Independent minister who would be called and ordained in Salem, for y^e use and benefit of himself and his successors forever," etc. By deed bearing date December 10, 1764, Jonathan Brown, of Rye, N. Y., conveyed to John Bouton, Jr., twenty-two acres of land in the "Oblong;" consideration, one hundred

and fifty-five pounds. December 15, 1768, John Osborn conveyed to Amos Benedict fifty-two acres of land near Long Pond; consideration, one hundred and thirty pounds. On June 30, 1773, Uriah Crawford, of Newtown, Conn., conveyed to Sands Raymond, of Norwalk, Conn., one hundred acres of land lying in the southern part of the Oblong. February 28, 1743, Thomas Rockwell, of Ridgefield, conveyed to Peter Burr, of Brookfield, Conn., a tract of land situated and lying in the Oblong or Equivalent Lands. May 28, 1782, Eli Rundle, Jr., of Salem, conveyed to Sylvanus Ferris, of Greenwich, Conn., a certain tract of land lying in Salem, on each side of the road leading from Canaan Parish to Ridgefield, etc. December 2, 1759, John Rockwell, of Ridgefield, "in y^e Colony of Connecticut, for ye sum of £50 current money of Connecticut," sold all his right in the lands in the Oblong.

INDIAN REMAINS.—On the high ridge of land east of Cross Pond, now owned by George Keeler, exist indisputable indications that an Indian village was once located there. The ground is covered with chips and pieces of white flint (quarries of which are plentiful in that vicinity), from which arrow-heads, spear-heads and other implements of war, the chase and for domestic uses were made by the Indians. The plow, as it passes through the soil of the adjoining fields, turns up innumerable quantities of these articles. In a grove just north of the road leading from South Salem post-office to Cross River, between the bridge over the outlet of Lake Waccabuc and the residence of Mr. Joseph Benedict, can yet be seen the remains of an Indian burial-place. Near the southeast corner of the town, just east of the residence of Mr. Aaron O. Wakeman, was until recently a curiosity called the "Indian Well." It was shaped like an inverted conoid, the top two feet in diameter and the depth three feet, worked into a solid rock by the hand of the red man, or by the action of a tiny stream of water which had fallen into it from the neighboring rock perhaps for centuries. In 1882 and 1883 the city of Norwalk constructed a storage reservoir on the west branch of Norwalk River, near this well. The contractor who built the dam, to procure stone, destroyed the well.

Near the highway leading from Lewisboro' post-office to Poundridge, and about fifty rods in the rear of Abram Canfield's house, is a small cave called "Belden's Cave." The entrance is an arch about twenty inches high and twenty-five feet long, leading to a chamber five feet high and six by ten feet. In this cave an eccentric individual named Belden lived for a number of years.

VILLAGES OF THE TOWNSHIP.—South Salem is delightfully situated among the hills near the centre of the town. It consists of a post-office, two churches, a store, a shoe manufacturing establishment and about thirty dwellings. This post-office was the first established in the town. The first postmaster was

Mr. Gould Hawley, commissioned by Hon. Francis Granger, Postmaster General, in 1813. Mr. Hawley continued to hold the office until his death, January 24, 1864, at which time he was the oldest postmaster in the United States. When the name of the town was changed to Lewisboro', in 1840, the post-office retained its old name, "South Salem." Cyrus Lawrence is the present postmaster. A daily mail is received here by way of Katonah. Since the first "town meeting" in 1747 all the town business has been done at this place.

Four miles west of South Salem post-office is located the hamlet of Cross River, so called on account of its being situated on the banks of that stream. It consists of a post-office, two churches, two stores, a flour and feed-mill, saw-mill and about twenty-five dwellings.

Four miles south of South Salem post-office is located the little hamlet of Lewisboro'. Here is a post-office, a store and about ten dwelling-houses. The post-office was established in 1842. Cyrus M. Ferris, the first postmaster, was commissioned by Hon. Charles A. Wickliffe, Postmaster-General. Mr. Stephen Seymour is the present postmaster. Daily mail is received *via* Stamford.

In the southeastern corner of Lewisboro' is the "Vista" neighborhood. Here we find a post-office, two churches, a store and a number of dwellings. It has a daily mail *via* Stamford.

Golden's Bridge is a station on the Harlem Railroad, in the northwestern corner of the town. In this hamlet are a post-office, three stores, a church and about twenty-five dwellings.

In the neighborhood known as Mead Street a post-office has recently been established and named "Waccabuc."

AGRICULTURE.—Lewisboro' is decidedly an agricultural town. Notwithstanding its soil is rugged and hard to cultivate, its inhabitants thrive by the plow. According to the census statistics of 1880 the productions are as follows:

The number of acres of improved lands is 13,000; woodland, 2120 acres; other lands, 2602 acres. The improved lands are divided as follows: Plow lands, 1574 acres; pasture, 6064 acres; mown land, 4806 acres. The productions were,—hay, 4924 tons; buckwheat, 1388 bushels; corn, 18,219 bushels; oats, 11,116 bushels; potatoes, 15,038 bushels; tobacco, 2500 pounds. In addition, there were 1212 barrels of cider made, 28,000 pounds of grapes raised, 1500 gallons of wine made. The value of eggs sold was \$4470. Of milch cows there were 1398 head. The butter made was 52,208 pounds; milk sold, 505,780 gallons; pork raised, 101,636 pounds. A few berries are also raised for market, but not much attention is paid to horticulture except for family use.

COLONIAL HISTORY.—The first town-meeting was held April 8, 1747. The early records of the town are interesting, as they show the progress made from year to year.

"At a townde metinge in Salem, in west Chester County, April y^e 8th, A. D. 1747.

"1st. Timothy Canfield, moderator.

"2^d. Nathaniel Wiat, clerk.

"3^d. Jacob wales, supervisor for y^e year insuinge.

"4th. Vot, David webster, Constbel for y^e year insuinge.

"5th. Vot, James wales, Colecter for y^e year insuinge.

"6th. Vot, sgr. Gilbord and Peter bennadek and Daniel Canfield, survers for y^e year insuinge.

"8th. Vot, timothy Canfield and Jacob walis, Nathan wiatt, sesors for y^e year insuinge.

"9th. Vot, Nathan Watross, Joseph Crofut, fence vowers for y^e year insuinge.

"10th. Vot to bould a pound before timothy Canfield's Dore, and he to keep the Ce.

"11th. Vot, sgr. Gilbord, townd treshur.

"12th. Vot no man shall take aney Cattle to keep out of y^e government. If he or thee dow^{sd} persons shall pay five shillings per head.

"At a townde metinge, in Salem, in Westchester County, April y^e 5th, A. D. 1748.

"1st. Vot, Capt. Tutle, modrater.

"2^d. Vot, timothy Canfield, supervisor for y^e yere insuinge.

"3^d. Vot, David webster, Constabel for y^e yere insuinge and Clector for y^e yere insuinge, and Nathan Omsted to Clect in rigfield; Joseph osbon, sesor for y^e yere insuinge; Capt. tutle, sgr. Gilbord, sesor for y^e year insuinge; Peter benadek, sesor for y^e year insuinge; Joseph Crofut, James walis, Nathan wiat, survers for y^e yere insuinge; Nathan northrop and Joseph Crofut, fence viuers, the 20th day of August you must bring in your list; Jacob walis, Quit-master.

"At a townde metinge, in Salem, in y^e County of westchester, April y^e 4th, 1749.

"1st. Vot, Capt. tutel, moderator.

"2^d. william wiat, Clerk.

"3^d. Jacob walis, supervisor.

"4th. Epnets how, Constael and Clectr; Nathan omsted, Nathanel wiatt, James walis, timothy Canfield, sesors for y^e insuinge year; Nathaniel wiatt, John walis, Capt. tutle, Nathan northrop, Joseph Crofut, fence viuers.

"April 2^d, 1751. It was voted 'that y^e tound brande is y^e letter H and it shall be set on y^e left Shoulder.'

"April 6th, 1756. Voted to build a pound in John Wallis' goat pasture.

"At a metinge of y^e proprietors of that part of y^e oblong or equivalent lands that lyeth in y^e County of westchester within y^e Province of New York, legally warned and convened in Salem, at y^e hcuse of Josiah Gilbert, Esqr., February 22, 1757, the aforesaid metinge made choice of Abijah Gilbert to be the Clerk to enter y^e vots of s^d metinge, and by further vote of s^d metinge, Mr. James Brown, of Norwalk, was chosen moderator of s^d metinge, and thereupon after debating and duly considering y^e difficulties they were under in regard of collecting y^e Quit Rent due his majesty's on that grant made to Hawley & Co. of s^d equivalent lands, y^e extent thereof being nearly 70 miles from north to south, and annexed to Sundry of y^e Counties to which those lands lye adjacent, and thereupon it was agreed and unanimously voted that James Brown, Esqr., of s^d Salem, shall be and was by s^d meeting made choice of and fully empowered to be their Agent, and in their names and behalf and at their cost and charge to repair to New York, and prepare and prefer a memorial signed by him in their names to y^e General Assembly, now sitting, or that should hereafter be held or sitting in and for y^e Province of New York in order for y^e obtaining liberty for collecting Quit Rent now due, or hereafter to become Due, and pay y^e same to y^e Reciever General separte for y^e rest of y^e proprietors of y^e s^d Patent.

"The above is a true record of y^e vote and proceedings of s^d meeting by me.

"ABIJAH GILBERT,
"Town Clerk."

Below is a copy of the oath Abijah Gilbert was required to take on his assuming the duties of town clerk:

"I, Abijah Gilbert, Do Solemnly Swear that I will well, truly and faithfully execute the office of Town Clerk in and for the Town of Lower Salem for the ensuing year, or until another shall be chosen or appointed in my room or stead, and that I will true entries make of all

Deeds and other instruments of writing, and all other matters as I shall enter on record.

"Sworn before me this 2^d day of May, 1757.

"ABIEAH GILBERT.

"NATHAN ROCKWELL,

"Justice of the Peace."

April 5, 1757, voted, Josiah Gilbert, James Brown, Esq., Benjamin Close, assessors, to assess owners and proprietors of lands lying in Salem, and to deliver the assessment to collector.

Voted, Nathaniel Stebbins, collector, to collect and pay His Majesty's quit-rent.

Voted, that Nathaniel Stebbins shall collect His Majesty's quit-rent for six pence per pound, and pay the same to the receiver-general.

April 4, 1758, voted, that a lawful fence should be four feet high, and poundage for sheep breaking through, two pence per head.

At a special town-meeting, held October 10, 1759, at the house of Josiah Gilbert, Lieutenant Close, moderator, James Brown was "duly appointed an Agent to repair to new york to Report the plan of the General Assembly, and get that portion of the Oblong as lyeth in Westchester County sett off as a separte Township, and s^d meeting voted to raise the sum of 12 pounds to defray the Charge of Justice Brown for expenses he has been out and Charges that shall yet arise, to be paid by every person according to what they possess."

April 1, 1760, voted, that there should be "a division of highways, to take place on y^e long bridge, at y^e middle space between y^e two Outlets of y^e Long Pond, y^e inhabitants living northward of y^e Repair y^e bridge & road north of s^d space, & those living southward to repair y^e road & bridge southward of s^d space."

April 7, 1761, voted "that y^e assessors have eight shillings per year for their services."

April 6, 1762, voted, that all roads laid out or hereafter laid out, should be placed "on y^e town records, the town to be at the expense of recording."

January 18, 1763, a special town-meeting was called, "to consider such matters and pass such vote as may be for ye welfare of ye town."

"The meeting being informed that one Docter Michael Abbott, of Ridgefield in ye Colony of Connecticut hath lately come into this place and with other persons from ye Colony of Connecticut, to this meeting unknown, which people the aforesaid Abbott hath enokulated with ye small pox at ye house of one Greshom Selick, which house stands on ye highway in this place, by means whereby ye people are greatly exposed and put in such danger of taking ye small-pox, &c., &c., and of having ye small-pox spread by means of such unjust proceedings and that under ye present circumstances of this place, such a distemper being spread among them will be attended with most fatal consequences of ye reason of ye great number of poor people among us that are not by any means able to pay ye charges of ye enokulation of themselves and family, they must inevitably suffer in case it should spread among them, &c., &c.

"This meeting thinks it contrary to natural right as well as to ye intentions of ye law that they should be thus exposed and endangered in their lives and estates to gratify ye avoricious inclinations of a Doctor or ye Doctors of ye Colony of Connecticut or any other person, &c., &c."

April 5, 1763, the meeting chose Thomas Hayes, Esquire Crane and Abijah Gilbert "to take an assess-

ment of all ye lands lying in ye town of Salem and make a rate on ye owners and proprietors for one year's quit-rent due his Majesty. Chose Josiah Gilbert as treasurer to receive ye quit-rent and keep it till called for."

"Solomon Close to collect ye rent and pay it over to Esquire Gilbert for six pence a pound."

April 2, 1765, it was voted that the town clerk should purchase a book for a town record, the price not to exceed forty shillings.

"At a meeting of the proprietors and freeholders of the town of Salem, being legally warned and convened at the house of Josiah Gilbert, in said Salem, on the 19th day of September, 1765, the aforesaid meeting made choice of Peter Benedict for their Moderator and chose Abijah Gilbert for their clerk, to enter their votes.

"Chose Lieutenant Benjamin Close, James Brown and Josiah Gilbert, Esq., Ezekiel Hawley and Esquire Thaddeus Crane for a committee or agents to act for the whole and manage their affairs, if either of them should be molested or disturbed by any person or persons laying claim to their lands and by a further vote of s^d meeting, Deacon Solomon Close was chosen to hold and keep a bond given by said committee to indemnify those persons that have subscribed to them.

"The above being a true record of ye votes and proceedings of said meeting by me. "ABIJAH GILBERT, Clerk."

April 2, 1771, it was voted "that if any person or persons whatsoever, who live in this town, that shall take or receive any cattle from Connecticut of such persons as have no interest or lands in this town and shall let them run at large in any of the highways on common lands of Salem, or shall in any way be instrumental in salting or wonting such cattle, shall be assessed or rated one shilling per head for such cattle, &c."

"At a meeting of ye proprietors and freeholders of ye lower division of ye Oblong being legally warned and convened at ye meeting-house in Salem, on ye 22nd day of October, 1771.

"Jonah Gilbert, moderator.

"Abijah Gilbert, clerk.

"Voted Deacon Solomon Close, John Hawley and Abijah Gilbert assessors to take an assessment and make up the quit-rent of s^d lower division.

"Chose Thomas Baxter collector to collect for ten pence on ye pound."

"Also voted to allow the assessors one dollar each for their labor."

REVOLUTIONARY HISTORY.—In 1775, when the county of Westchester was divided into military districts, Salem comprised two districts, the Upper and Lower. The following officers were appointed to organize and take command of the militia; For the Lower District—Abijah Gilbert, captain; Jacob Haight, first lieutenant; Sands Raymond, second lieutenant; Joseph Cooley, ensign. For the Upper District—Thaddeus Crane, captain; Jesse Truesdale, first lieutenant; Ezekiel Hawley, second lieutenant; Ebenezer Brown, ensign.

At a regular town-meeting held at the meeting-house in Lower Salem, April 4, 1775, Esquire Crane offered a "resolve" which, according to the town records, was disposed of as follows:

"On Squire Crane's introducing to the consideration of ye meeting some 'resolves,' recommended by Colonel Phillips against appointing delegates for Congress, the previous question being put, whether this meeting will comply with ye s^d 'resolve,' and voted in ye affirmative by only three or four voices, there being a considerable number that refused to act. On ye question being put whether we will not comply with ye s^d resolves, which was carried by about twenty or thirty voices."

The above record is somewhat obscure, but the records of 1777 show more clearly the position of the town on Revolutionary matters. On May 2, 1777, it was "voted that there shall be a tax raised on ye freeholders and Inhabitants in ye manner other taxes is paid to raise a bounty for one-fourth part of ye Militia now called for service. Voted 2^d to Raise eight pounds for each man who shall enlist and go into three months' service to be employed for ye use of each class and to be equally divided to each man in s^d Class according to what each man pays except on agreement made to ye contrary. S^d Meeting Chose Joseph Truesdale and Solomon Close a Committee for ye purpose before mentioned."

"At a meeting of the inhabitants and freeholders of the District of Salem, at the Presbyterian Church, in the said District, April 6th, 1779, Capt. Nathan Rockwell and Isaac Norton were appointed to meet the Committee from other Districts in this County to consult matters that concern the safety of the States." In 1780, a portion of Col. Sheldon's Second Regiment of Light Horse was encamped in the town. The main body were encamped on Keeler's Ridge, southwest of the Keeler mansion. This spot was no doubt selected on account of its close proximity to the Bedford road, which was closely watched after the battle of Ridgefield, on account of its commanding position and the extensive view to be had from its summit of the surrounding country.

The horses were quartered on the farm of the late Jeremiah Wood, then owned by his father, Ebenezer, grandfather of the present Ebenezer Wood, Sr. Some of the officers were quartered with James Brown, whose house stood on the Bedford road, opposite the present residence of Miss Lucy Wood. Col. Sheldon's headquarters were at the house of Esquire Gilbert, which stood about half a mile north of South Salem Meeting-House, on the road to Upper Salem. Joshua King (General King, of Ridgefield, Conn.), then a lieutenant-colonel in Sheldon's Second Regiment of Light Horse, had charge of headquarters at Squire Gilbert's September 24, 1780. Early on the morning of that day an adjutant and guard arrived from Colonel Jamison's headquarters at North Castle with a prisoner who called himself John Anderson, whom he had been ordered to deliver to Colonel Sheldon for safe keeping. Accordingly, Lieutenant King took charge of him. Though the prisoner's garments were soiled and travel-stained, he had the appearance of being a gentleman. Lieutenant King was being shaved when the prisoner arrived, and when the valet had finished with him, he politely asked Mr. Anderson if the like operation would not be agreeable to him. The prisoner readily accepted the offer, and when the powder began to fly from his hair Lieutenant King was convinced that he had no ordinary person in charge. After the shaving and hair-dressing had been concluded, Mr. Anderson asked the privilege of retiring to a bed, that his soiled

linen might be washed. Lieutenant King replied that it would not be necessary for him to go to bed, as whatever change he might desire was at his service. With many thanks the prisoner availed himself of the offer, and soon reappeared, his condition very much improved. As much as was consistent with their respective positions, these two became friendly. They occupied the same room and the same bed. The room being small, the prisoner asked Lieutenant King if they could not walk in the doorway. His request was granted, and they walked and talked together. The prisoner appeared nervous and anxious, and at last remarked that he must make a confidant of some one, and knew no more proper person than the lieutenant. He then told him his true name was John Andre, that he was a British officer, etc. He requested pen, ink and paper, and wrote to General Washington the letter to be found in this volume on page 207.

After the latter was despatched to General Washington his mind seemed relieved. He drew an amusing sketch of himself and his escort, and presented it to the officers with the remark that "It will give an idea of the manner in which I was escorted to my present quarters."

About midnight the express returned with orders from General Washington to Colonel Sheldon to send Major Andre to headquarters immediately. Lieutenant King started with him at once, though the rain fell in torrents and the night was dark. Before he arrived at Upper Salem Meeting-House he met another express with a letter addressed to the officer who had Andre in charge, directing him what route to take and disclosing the treachery of Arnold, etc. After they arrived at headquarters Lieutenant King remained with the prisoner until his execution, even walking with him to the gallows.

In 1817 a friend wrote to General King asking him for the exact facts in relation to the capture and execution of Andre. The general's reply, though often requested for publication, was never made public until 1878, when it was published in Teller's "History of Ridgefield" as follows:

"RIDGEFIELD, JUNE 17, 1817.

"DEAR SIR: Yours of the 9th is before me. I have noted the contents and am sorry to express the indignation I feel at the idea of being obliged to translate a foreign language to obtain a true history of any part of our revolution. The facts, so far as I am acquainted with them, I will state to the best of my ability or recollection.

"Paulding, Williams and Van Wart I never saw before or since that event. I know nothing about them. The time and place where they stopped Major Andre seem to justify the character you have drawn of them. The truth is, to the imprudence of the man, and not the patriotism of any one, is to be ascribed the capture of Major Andre. I was the first and only Officer who had charge of him whilst at the Head Quarters of 2d Regiment of Light Dragoons, which was then at Esquire Gilbert's in South Salem. He was brought up by an adjutant and four men belonging to the Connecticut Militia, under the command of Lieut.-Col. Jamison, from the lines near Tarrytown, a character under the disguised name of John Anderson. He looked somewhat like a reduced gentleman. His small clothes were Nankin, with long white top boots, in part his undress military suit. His coat purple, with gold lace, worn somewhat threadbare, with small brimmed tarnished beaver on his head. He wore his hair in a *queue*, with long, black band, and his clothes somewhat

dirty. In this garb I took charge of him. After breakfast my Barber came in to dress me, after which I requested *him* to undergo the same operation, which he did. When the ribbon was taken from his hair I observed it full of powder. This circumstance, with others that occurred, induced me to believe I had no ordinary person in charge. He requested permission to take a bed, whilst his shirt and small clothes could be washed. I told him that was needless, for a change was at his service, which he accepted. We were close pent up in a bed-room with a guard at the door and window. There was a spacious yard before the door which he desired he might be permitted to walk in with me. I accordingly disposed of my guard in such a manner as to prevent escape. While walking together he observed he must make a confidant of somebody, and he knew not a more proper person than myself, as I had appeared to befriend a stranger in distress. After settling the point between ourselves, he told me who he was and gave me a short account of himself from the time he was taken at St. John's, in 1775, to that time. He requested pen and ink and wrote immediately to Genl. Washington, declaring who he was. About midnight the express returned with orders from Genl. Washington to Col. Sheldon to send Major Andre immediately to Headquarters. I started with him and before I got to North Salem Meeting-house met another express with a letter directed to the Officer who had Major Andre in charge and which letter directed a circuitous route to Head Quarters, for fear of recapture, and gave an account of Arnold's desertion, &c., with directions to forward the letter to Col. Sheldon. I did so, and before I got to the end of my journey I was joined by Capt. Hoodgers first, and, after, by Major Talmage and Capt. Rogers. Having given you this clue, I proceed with the Major's own story. He said he came up the North river in the Sloop of war 'Vulture' for the purpose of seeing a person by flag of truce. That was not, however, accomplished. Of course he had to come ashore in a skiff, and after he had done his business the wind was so high, the Dutchman who took him ashore dare not venture to return him on board.

"The night following the Militia had lined the shore so that no attempt would be safely made. Consequently he was furnished, after changing his clothes, with a Continental horse and General Arnold's pass, and was to take a route by Peekskill, Crumpond, Pine's Bridge, Sing Sing, Tarrytown, &c., to New York.

"Nothing occurred to disturb him on his route until he arrived at the last place, except at Crumpond. He told me his hair stood erect and his heart was in his mouth on meeting Col. Samuel B. Webb, of our army, plump in the face. An acquaintance of his said that Col. Stodert knew him and he thought that he was gone, but they kept moving along and soon passed each other. He then thought himself past all danger, and while ruminating on his good luck and hair-breadth escapes he was assailed by three bushmen, near Tarrytown, who ordered him to stand. He said to them, 'I hope, gentlemen, you belong to the lower party.' 'We do,' says one. 'So do I,' says he, 'and by the token of this ring and key you will let me pass. I am a British Officer on business of importance and must not be detained.' One of them took his watch from him and then ordered him to dismount. The moment that was done he said he found he was mistaken; he must shift his tone. He says, 'I am happy, gentlemen, to find I am mistaken. You belong to the upper party and so do I, and to convince you of it, here is Genl. Arnold's pass,' handing it to them. 'Damn Arnold's pass,' said they. 'You said you were a British Officer. Where is your money?' 'Gentlemen, I have none about me,' he replied. 'You a British Officer with a gold watch and no money! let us search him.' They did so, but found none. Says one, 'He has got his money in his boots; let's have them off and see.' They took off his boots and there they found his papers, but no money. They then examined his saddle, but found none. He said he saw they had such a thirst for money he would put them in the way to get it, if they would be directed by him. He asked them to name their sum to deliver him at King's Bridge. They answered him in this way, 'If we deliver you at King's Bridge we shall be sent to the Sugar House and you will save your money.' He says, 'If you will not trust my honor, two of you may stay with me and one shall go with the letter I will write. Name your sum.' The sum agreed upon I cannot recollect, whether it was 500 or 1000 guineas, but I think the latter was the sum. They held a consultation a considerable time and finally they told him if he wrote a party would be sent out to take them and then they should all be prisoners. They said they had concluded to take him to the Commanding officer on the lines. They did so and retained the watch until General Washington sent for them to Tappan, when the watch was restored to Major Andre.

"Thus, you see, had money been at command after the imprudent confession of Major Andre, or any security given that the British would have put confidence in, he might have passed on to Sir Henry Clinton's

Headquarters with all his papers and Arnold's pass into the bargain. I do not recollect to have seen a true statement of this business in any history that has fallen into my hands. If my memory serves me Arnold solicited and obtained the command of West Point in consequence of his being an invalid, and the reason why his negotiations were not completed by flag or truce, I will state what General Washington told the French ambassador Luzerne. He stated on his route to Hartford, that he dined with General Arnold at Haverstraw, at Joshua Smith's, where Arnold and Andre met. General Arnold showed him a letter from General Robinson directed to General Israel Putnam, or Officer Commanding West Point, requesting an interview by flag on business of the first importance to the United States. General Arnold asked Gen^l Washington if he should go and hear what he had to say. General Washington replied that it would be very improper for the Commander in chief of a post to meet anybody himself. He could send a trusty hand if he thought proper. But he added, 'I had no more suspicion of Arnold than I had of myself.' This accounts for Major Andre's failure to negotiate by flag and his subsequent movements. I have thus complied with your request, giving you such facts, viz.: what I had from the mouth of Major Andre and what I heard Gen^l Washington tell the French Minister soon after the execution of Andre."

Ten years ago the Gilbert mansion, where Andre was confined during his stay in Lower Salem, was still standing, and an attempt was made by the Hon. John Jay to preserve this Revolutionary relic. But for some reason the payments were not made and Mr. Linus Hoyt, the owner, took down the building and removed the material.

Josiah Gilbert, the original owner of the building, was among the first settlers of Salem (Lewisboro'). He was the son of John Gilbert, of Stratford, in the colony of Connecticut. He is said to have been a man of more than ordinary abilities, with a fair education for those days. From the first he took a leading part in the affairs of the town and the church. At the first town-meeting, held in 1747, he was elected town treasurer, and continued to hold the office for many years. He was one of the first eighteen members to form the "Church of Christ" in Salem, which is now the Presbyterian Church. He was the first justice of the peace and the only one in the town for many years. Meetings of the town and of the church were frequently called at his house. Mr. Gilbert's advice in all matters appertaining to the church or the public welfare was always sought for and followed. He died October 20, 1781, at the age of eighty-three. His dust mingles with the mold of the little graveyard where, at eventide, the shadow of the tall spire of the church he loved so well falls softly on the mound that marks his last resting-place.

Abijah Gilbert, son of Josiah, was elected town clerk April 6, 1756. On the 2d of April, 1771, he was elected supervisor and town clerk and held both offices continuously until he was relieved of the duties of town clerk by Jacob Gilbert, April 3, 1792. The office of supervisor he continued to hold until 1807. He was a man of education, of sound judgment and an excellent penman, as the town records show. Benajah Gilbert, a son of Josiah Gilbert, was the grandfather of the present Thomas Gilbert, of Lewisboro'.

The Reynolds family, of Lewisboro', also took a

prominent part in the Revolutionary War. The late Alvah Reynolds, better known as Deacon Reynolds, of Lewisboro', was a son of Lieutenant Nathaniel Reynolds, who served with distinction in the Revolutionary army. He was present at the battles of White Plains and Ridgefield, and was finally captured while on guard by the British Light Horse Cavalry, under Colonel Simcoe. After two years and four months' imprisonment he was released and returned to the homestead at Lewisboro, where his son Alvah was born September 23, 1796. The latter resided at Lewisboro till he was forty-five years of age, when he removed with his family, consisting of his wife, two daughters and one son, to the town of Yonkers. Here he purchased the farm of John Underhill, whose grandmother had received the property by grant from the British government. After living for ten years upon the place he sold it to James Chambers and removed to another farm in the northern portion of the town of East Chester. Here he resided for nineteen years, till 1872, when he returned to Lewisboro, where he died May 6, 1881. Mr. Reynolds married Phebe Ann, daughter of Thomas Field, a landed proprietor of the town of Mount Pleasant, with whom he lived at the time of his death.

He was a strictly religious man, a Baptist in his church connection, and very liberal in his gifts to benevolent objects. He helped to build the Baptist Churches of Yonkers, Tarrytown, Mount Vernon and New Rochelle. In the churches of New Rochelle and Lewisboro he held the office of deacon.

He had four children, two daughters and two sons,—Mary E., Elmira C., Thomas F. and George W., all of whom are married and still survive.

James Brown, one of the prominent figures of the Revolutionary period, was the son of James Brown, gentleman, of Norwalk, in the colony of Connecticut, one of the original proprietors of Ridgefield. It will be remembered that on March 31, 1729, the proprietors of Ridgefield released to James Brown, of Norwalk, one of their number, one hundred acres of land lying on the west side of the Oblong, along the twenty-mile line. On this land he erected a dwelling-house, which stood on the north side of the road leading from Ridgefield to Bedford, opposite the present residence of Miss Lucy Wood. Into this house moved his son, James Brown, Jr., and commenced the manufacture of potash for the West India trade. The works stood near a swamp south of his residence and the labor was all performed by negro slaves, who lived in log huts near the potash works. The foundation of the building in which the business was carried on is still to be seen. Near by is the finest spring of pure water to be found in the town. At the death of James Brown, Sr., he bequeathed to his son, James Brown, "the dwelling he now lives in at Salem, and all the lands I have, which lyeth north of the

road or highway leading from Ridgefield to Bedford; also my negro Lucas and his son Dyar." Also to his sons James and Samuel the barn standing on the south side of the road leading from Ridgefield to Bedford, with one-half the land lying "on the south side of said road, which is bounded south by a pond called Cross Pond, to be divided between them so as to make it equal between them, or near as may be Quality and Quantity," etc. He also gave to his daughter, Joanna Brown, his negro man Cato and "the wench he hath now married. Likewise I give and bequeath to my daughter Joanna one cow and calf such as she shall chose and my young mair colt which came from my old black pacing mair," etc.

James Brown was elected supervisor of Salem, April 7, 1752, and continued to hold the office for fifteen years. He was also a justice of the peace. He was a staunch supporter of the King and the Church of England. At his death the property passed into the hands of his nephew, Samuel B. Isaacs, and from his heirs to Aaron Hull, who sold it to Wakeman B. Wood, who built a new house and took down the old Brown mansion. The last of the slaves was "Old Tower," who resided in a hut under Tower Hill. He perished in the great Christmas snow-storm of 1811.

On the corner where the New Canaan road leaves the road leading from South Salem post-office to Ridgefield, Conn., stands the Keeler mansion, erected in 1788 by Jeremiah Keeler, whose grandfather, Timothy Keeler, was one of the original proprietors of Ridgefield. The house is a large two-story structure, with an immense stone chimney in the centre. The massive hewn oak timbers placed in the building ninety-eight years ago are still as sound and free from decay as when they were brought from the forest.

Jeremiah Keeler was a soldier of the Revolution, born in Ridgefield, Conn., May 6, 1760. In April, 1777, when young Keeler was not yet seventeen, he witnessed the battle of Ridgefield, which so aroused the patriotism in his soul that he immediately enlisted in the Continental army for three years, or during the

war. After serving for three years in the "Connecticut Line," he was selected, with other young men, by Baron Steuben, for a brigade of light infantry then forming for the Marquis De Lafayette, who was to furnish them with uniforms and equipments of the latest French style. The brigade was formed and drilled under the eye of the baron, and in the new French uniforms made an imposing appearance. Mr. Keeler soon rose to be orderly sergeant of Captain Chapman's company. In 1781 the brigade marched to Virginia to oppose Arnold, who was making a raid in that State. Instead of meeting Arnold, they met Cornwallis. After a number of skirmishes, marches and counter-marches they drove Cornwallis into

Yorktown, where he was held until the arrival of Washington and the army from the north. Then, with the aid of the French fleet to blockade the mouth of the James River, began the siege of Yorktown. Two British redoubts in front of Yorktown greatly annoyed the American lines. Washington resolved to capture them. Lafayette's light infantry brigade was selected to storm one, a French brigade the other. One dark, stormy night the troops were ordered to fall in, and silently, through rain and inky darkness, with unloaded muskets and fixed bayonets, they marched toward the fort. Close under the walls they halted for a moment to allow the axe-men to clear away the abattis.

The noise of the axes alarmed the British. The sentry hailed them, fired his musket and ran. The word came "forward at double quick!" and with a cheer, through a murderous fire, the brigade went over the walls, and the fort was captured. Sergeant Keeler was the second man to jump into the fort. For his gallantry on this occasion, and for the skill and energy he displayed in re-forming his company after the capture, to be ready to repel any attempt that might be made by the enemy, he received the thanks of General Lafayette. He witnessed the surrender of Cornwallis, and his vivid description of that eventful day and the imposing appearance of the French army on that occasion was very interesting. Though the surrender of Cornwallis virtually ended the war, he remained



Alvah Reynolds

faithfully at his post until the army was disbanded in 1783. When he received his discharge in Virginia, as a testimonial of regard for a faithful and courageous soldier, he was presented with the sword he had carried through the various reverses and successes of the "Lafayette Brigade of Light Infantry." With his sword as a staff, Mr. Keeler marched home to Ridgefield. In the winter of 1784-85 he returned to Virginia and taught school. In 1787 he commenced the construction of the Keeler mansion, which he completed the following year. On the 23d of April, 1788, he married Huldah Hull, of Limestone District, Ridgefield, first cousin of Aaron Burr, and moved into his new house. Mr. Keeler was a prominent member of the Presbyterian Church, South Salem, and for many years a justice of the peace. He died February 9, 1853, at the age of ninety-three. Mr. Keeler's children numbered eleven. Huldah G. married John Bouton; Timothy H. settled in South Carolina, where he died; Sallie M. married Newman Mead; Anna Maria married Alfred Avery; Jeremiah W. died in South Carolina; Thaddeus H. married Laura A. Avery and lived and died on the old homestead; John Ely is now living in Brooklyn. The rest of the children died young. At the old mansion may still be seen the sword which was presented to Sergeant Keeler, and the family Bible, containing the family records of Jeremiah Keeler and his father, at the head of which is this memorandum in the handwriting of Mr. Keeler: "*Jeremiah Keeler* had this Holy Book from the Estate of his deceased father on ye 16th April, 1799." In a little cemetery near the old mansion, around a fine monument, sleep the remains of a number of the Keeler family.

The Keeler family has a somewhat remarkable record for longevity, as the following will show:

Aaron Keeler died December 31, 1811, at the age of fifty-one, leaving a widow and eleven children. One child died before the father and one was born after his death, so that the family numbered thirteen children, as follows: Nancy, born December 4, 1791, died December 21, 1884; John, born January 14, 1793, died February 20, 1868; Jeremiah, born June 22, 1794, died January 21, 1860; Lois, born May 22, 1796, still living; Esther, born February 26, 1798, still living; Anna, born January 25, 1800, died May 23, 1820; Abbie, born August 5, 1801, died April 5, 1864; Mary, born February 15, 1803, still living; Harriet, born April 8, 1804, died June 21, 1808; Lewis, born May 5, 1806, still living; Sallie, born November 5, 1807, still living; Eli, born September 18, 1810, still living; Aaron, born August 17, 1812, still living.

Sylvanus Ferris, another Revolutionary worthy, was born in the town of Greenwich, Connecticut, August 10, 1737. He married Mary Mead, who was also born in Greenwich, September 10, 1743. They lived in their native town prosperous and happy till the outbreaking of the Revolutionary War, when Mr.

Ferris, espousing the cause of freedom, became obnoxious to his Tory neighbors. He served in the campaign against Ticonderoga and Crown Point.

Mr. Ferris was persecuted in Greenwich to such an extent that he sold out what the Tories and Cowboys had left him, and on the 28th of May, 1782, purchased from Eli Rundle the farm now owned by Mr. Lawson. The house stands nearly opposite the Lewisboro post-office. He moved his family there immediately, and commenced the business of farming and keeping a country hotel. The house was known to travelers as an inn until 1815. Mrs. Ferris, with saddle-bags filled with stockings of her own and neighbors' knitting, made annual visits to the city of New York on horseback, disposed of the goods, purchased such articles as herself and neighbors needed, and brought what she could home with her. On one of these visits Mrs. Ferris pulled a sprout from one of the large black walnut trees north of Harlem Bridge for a whip. When she reached her home she planted it, and the immense tree that grew from it can now be seen at the old homestead. Mr. Ferris' family consisted of four sons and five daughters. Seven of them were born in Greenwich and two in Salem. Henry, the eldest, settled in Cato Four Corners, Cayuga County, New York. His two sons, Justice and Thatcher, became prominent men in politics and in the affairs of the town, and served in the Legislature. Sylvanus married Sarah Olmstead, of Ridgefield, Connecticut. Soon after his marriage he moved to Norway, New York, where he became highly respected for his integrity and sound judgment. In 1837 he removed to Galesburg, Illinois, where he died at the age of eighty-three. Gideon lived and died on the old homestead. He was the father of the present Mr. C. M. Ferris, now of Norwalk, the first postmaster at Lewisboro. James moved to Newcomerstown, Ohio. Molly married a Hayes and Hannah a Raymond, and moved to Charlton, New York. Sarah married a Morgan and lived in Wilton, Connecticut. Betsy married a Mr. Darling and lived a number of years in Reading, Connecticut; then moved to Maryland. Mr. Cyrus M. Ferris, of Norwalk, has in his possession a watch which belonged to his grandfather, Sylvanus, who carried it through the Indian Wars and the campaign of Ticonderoga and Crown Point. When the Tories made a raid on him he saved his watch by burying it in the ashes behind the back-log. The watch, which he purchased in 1754, is still in a good state of preservation.

The Meade¹ family came originally from Somersetshire, or Devonshire, into County Essex, England, during the reign of King Henry VI. (A. D. 1422), and first settled at "Elmdon." There seems to have been eight distinct families of the name in England, known by their respective coats-of-arms, four having the Pelican, and four the Trefoil as their heraldic design.

¹ From genealogy of the Mead family, by Rev. J. H. H. De Mille.



Solomon Mead



A number of distinguished individuals were numbered among these English families; among others, Rev. Matthew Mead, a celebrated non-conformist divine in the reign of Charles I., and his son, Dr. Richard, who was appointed physician in ordinary to King George II., and who first practiced inoculation in England. The name is spelled both with and without the final "e." The Earl of Clan-William line always used the "e." That family is of Irish extraction, and is the one from which the Meades of Virginia are derived. In England the spelling was variable.

The family in this country, at least that portion which settled in Fairfield County, Connecticut, preserved the tradition that two brothers came over from England and that one stopped at the eastward while the other came to "Horse-neck" (Greenwich), Conn. The tradition is possibly correct, as a Gabriel Mead and David Mead settled in Lexington, Mass. Gabriel was born in 1587 and died in 1666, aged seventy-nine. A son, Israel, was born in 1639 and there were several daughters. David was possibly also a son of Gabriel, though he does not seem to be mentioned in the will.¹

The first record of any Mead in Fairfield County, Connecticut, is the following in Stamford town records:

"December 7, 1641, William Mayd received from the Town of Stamford a house lot and five acres of land."

The date 1641 agrees with the Lexington dates and seems to bear out the tradition of the family as mentioned. This William is the ancestor of the Fairfield County Meads. We have record of three children, though there were probably four. A son who died in 1657-58 is noted in Huntington's "History of Stamford."

The three children of William, of whom we have record, are Joseph, born 1630, died 1690; Martha, married John Richardson, of Stamford; and John, the ancestor of the Greenwich Meads. Both Joseph and John were settled for a time at Hempstead, Long Island, but they afterwards removed to Fairfield County, and located there. John purchased land of Richard Crab and the deed is dated October 26, 1660. The descendants of William are practically innumerable.

The Westchester County branch was established in the town of Lewisboro, (then South Salem), about the year 1776 by Col. Enoch Mead, a brother of Major-General Ebenezer Mead, of Greenwich, Conn. Col. Mead married, at the age of twenty, Miss Jemima Mead, daughter of Caleb Mead, of Greenwich, who was in her twentieth year. He and his young bride made a journey of exploration up into Massachusetts, on horseback, but returned and settled on a ridge traversed by the New York and Albany Post road, about half a mile south of Lake Waccabuc. Here he

built a log house in which he was still living when the war of Independence broke out, and in which was born his oldest son, Col. Solomon Mead, but from which he soon removed to the house, still standing, which is owned and occupied by his descendants. Col. Enoch Mead was a man of great energy and ability, and his wife, who long survived him, was a woman of heroic resolution and indomitable courage. Many traditions are preserved in the family of their patriotic and self-sacrificing devotion to the national cause and of the risks they ran—of the swift horse which had to be kept in the cellar; of the repulse of a band of marauding cowboys by the youthful matron alone, except for an infant child and a negro slave boy; of the flight of the little household into the woods at the rumored approach of the enemy. Col. Enoch Mead served at one time on the staff of his brother, the general, but managed, while the war was still in progress, to get his new house built for his young wife. Here their family of nine children were born, six of them living to a good old age, and the other three dying in childhood and early youth. Here the oldest son, Colonel Solomon, died in 1870, at the great age of ninety-two years. The place is now known as "Elmdon."

Colonel Solomon was, like his father, a man of uncommon ability, and through his long life his services were in constant demand as a friendly adviser and arbitrator. He also married very young, wedding, at the age of twenty, Miss Eunice Gilbert, aged nineteen. The oldest son of this youthful couple, Jacob Gilbert Mead, died at his place, a few hundred yards to the northward, in 1884, at the advanced age of eighty-four. Colonel Solomon, as were his parents and a number of his children, was buried in the family burying-ground, about one-quarter of a mile south of his former residence.

The eastern boundary of the farm was formerly that of Cortlandt Manor,—the so-called twenty-mile line, which divided it from Connecticut; and the rude monument erected by the commissioners in 1734, to mark an angle of the line, is still standing in the stone wall of which it forms a part.

The second son, Alfred (or, as he always, for some unaccountable reason, spelled it, Alphred), was established a little way down the road and before many years eight comfortable houses in succession, on as many flourishing farms, were occupied by members of the family, all bearing the family name, so that the road became known as Mead Street. The first minister of the Presbyterian Church in South Salem was Parson Solomon Mead, who was an uncle of Colonel Enoch Mead. He was settled May 19, 1752, and remained in charge until shortly before his death, in 1812, at the age of eighty-six. He was very eccentric and grew more so as age increased upon him. Many amusing stories have been told of his peculiarities. He lies buried in the cemetery at South Salem, and a neat tombstone marks his resting-place.

¹ The historian of the Lexington family does not believe there is any connection between the two families, though the dates of settlement agree very nearly.

There is another and apparently a distinct family of Meads in the neighborhood of Lake Waccabuc and Waccabuc Mountain. The first one of this family was Charles Mead, who was born in Greenwich and for many years worked on the farm of Deacon Abraham Mead, also an uncle of Colonel Enoch. As this Charles was born in 1743, and appears to have been over forty years of age when he married, he could not have gone to South Salem earlier than 1788. His parentage is involved in obscurity, but his descendants are many.

The following genealogy is that of the family of William, who settled in Stamford in 1641.

"II. Joseph², son of William¹, b. 1630, m. Mary Brown, of Stamford, and had five sons and one daughter,—1 Zachariah³, who died without issue; 2 Joseph³, 3 Daniel³, 4 Elisha³, 5 Richard³, and 6 Mary³.

2 Joseph³, m. Sarah —, and had,—

(1) Sarah⁴, m. Benj. Stebbings, of Ridgefield—10 children.

(2) Joseph⁴.

(3) Theophilus⁴, m. Abigail Westcoat, and had 8 children,—Azor⁵, Abigail⁵, Mary⁵, Esther⁵, Rachel⁵, Martha⁵, Sarah⁵, Theophilus⁵.

(4) Jeremiah⁴, m. Hannah St. John, and had 7 children,—Capt. Thaddeus⁵, Stephen⁵, Hannah⁵, Matthew⁵, Phoebe⁵, Jeremiah⁵, Sarah⁵.

(5) Zachariah⁴, m. Sarah —.

(6) Nehemiah⁴, m. Mehetabel — and had nine children,—Joseph⁵, Zachariah⁵, Nehemiah⁵, Deborah⁵, Lydia⁵, Abijah⁵, David⁵, Daniel⁵.

(7) Israel⁴, m. — and had one son, Joseph⁵.

III. Martha², dau. of William¹, m. John Richardson, of Stamford. There appears no record of children.

IV. John², son of William¹, m. Hannah Potter, of Stamford, and they had eight sons and four daughters,—1 John³, 2 Joseph³, 3 Hannah³, 4 Ebenezer³, 5 Jonathan³, 6 David³, 7 Benjamin³, 8 Nathaniel³, 9 Samuel³, 10 Abigail³, 11 Elizabeth³, 12 Mary³.

1 John³, son of John², m. Ruth Hardy, of Stamford. They had four children,—

(1) John⁴, m. Elizabeth Lockwood, of North Greenwich.

(2) Jonathan⁴, m. Martha —.

(3) Elizabeth⁴.

(4) Nathan⁴, who went to Dutchess County, locating at Amenia.

John⁴, who m. Elizabeth Lockwood had six children,—Gen¹ John⁵, Capt. Nathaniel⁵, Seth⁵, Capt. Matthew⁵, Elizabeth⁵, m. James Darrow, and Ann⁵, m. Gilbert Barnore.

Gen¹ John⁵, son of John⁴, m. 1st Mary Brush, of Huntington, L. I., and had nine children,—

1 John⁶; 2 Anna⁶, m. John Eells and had eight children; 3 Mary⁶ (twin sister to Anna), m. Levi Hanford and had nine children; 4 Elizabeth⁶, m. Hezekiah Hobby had ten children, three only lived to grow up; 5 Mary Ann⁶, 6 Alan⁶, 7 Seth⁶, 8 Benjamin⁶, 9 Walter⁶.

Gen¹ John⁵, m. 2d Mehetabel, widow of Jonathan Peck, dau. of — Blackman; by her he had one child,—Mehetabel⁶, who m. John Marshall and had one dau., Eliza.

John⁶, son of Gen¹ John⁵, m. Mary Coe, of Rye, and had nine children,—1 Alice⁷, m. Peter Mead (in the line of 9 Samuel³); 2 Hester⁷, m. James Simmons; 3 Mary⁷, m. — Fowler; 4 Edward⁷, 5 James⁷, 6 Frances⁷, m. — Bloomer, 7 Benjamin⁷, died young, 8 Brush⁷, and 9 John⁷.

Capt. Nathaniel⁵, son of John⁴, brother of Gen¹ John⁵, m. 1st Charity Bush and 2d Hannah Hobby Seymour. They had seven children, 1 Jasper⁶, 2 Nathaniel⁶, 3 William⁶, 4 Charity⁶, m. Joshua Knapp, 5 Rachel⁶, 6 Betsy⁶, 7 Anna⁶, m. Gilbert Totten.

Jasper⁶, son of Capt. Nathaniel⁵, m. Sarah Mead (in the line of 4 Ebenezer³). Their children were eleven in number,—1 Rachel⁷, m. Abram Mead (line of Ebenezer), 2 Bush⁷, 3 Titus⁷, 4 Sally⁷, m. Israel Mead (line of Ebenezer), 5 Shadrach⁷, 6 Andrew⁷, 7 Nathaniel⁷, 8 Charity Bush, m. Wm. H. Mead (line of Ebenezer), 9 Eliza Ann⁷, m. — Thompson, 10 Wm. Titus⁷, 11 Daughter, died one year.

Nathaniel⁶, son of Nathaniel⁵, had three sons, Elijah⁷, Joseph⁷, Seth⁷.

William⁶, son of Nathaniel⁵, m. Hannah Hobby and had ten children,—1 John⁷, 2 Charity⁷, 3 William Bush⁷, 4 Nathaniel⁷, 5 Sabrina⁷, 6 Rebecca⁷, 7 Rhessa F.⁷, 8 Mary⁷, 9 Ann⁷, 10 Gilbert⁷.

Seth⁷, son of John⁶, m. Deborah Disbrow. They had four children,—Mary⁸, Joseph⁸, Seth⁸, Hannah⁸.

Capt. Matthew⁵, son of John⁴, m. Mary Brush. They had twelve children,—1 Betsy⁶, m. — Brown; 2 Ruth⁶, m. Benajah Bouton and had eight children; 3 Mary⁶, m. Alexander Grigg; 4 Matthew⁶; 5 Justus Bush; 6 Ann⁶, m. Samuel Denton and had two children; 7 Rebecca⁶, m. 1st Mead, 2d Gilmore—by 1st marriage one child, by 2d two; 8 Charity⁶, m. Walter Howell and had four children; 9 Sally⁶, m. Thaddeus Fancher; 10 Amos⁶; 11 Pamela⁶, m. Stephen Marshall and had four children; 12 Bush⁶.

Matthew⁶, son of Capt. Matthew⁵, m. Nancy Hobby and had nine children,—1 Hannah⁷, m. Hickson Merritt and had seven children; 2 Matthew⁷, m. Hannah Moody, no children; 3 Justus Bush⁷, m. 1st Nancy Hanford, 2d — Merritt; 4 Clemence⁷, m. Ralph Ritch; 5 Thomas H.⁷, m. 1st Sophia Finch, 2d Sarah Edwards, no children; 6 Mary⁷, m. John P. Anderson; 7 Hobby⁷; 8 Amos⁷; 9 William L.⁷.

Justus Bush⁶, son of Capt. Matthew⁵, m. Polly Knapp and had ten children,—1 Walter K.⁷; 2 Susan⁷, m. Lewis Eldridge and had four children; 3 Justus Bush⁷; 4 James⁷; 5 Mary⁷, m. William Sherwood; 6 Rebecca, m. Drake Marshall and had eight children; 7 Ann⁷, m. John Craft; 8 Joseph G.⁷, m. Mary G. Taylor; 9 Cornelia⁷, m. William Scofield and had nine children (the third, Cornelia Ann, m. Oliver D. Mead, in the line of Ebenezer); 10 William H.

Amos⁶, son of Capt. Matthew⁵, m. Carolina White and had eleven children: 1 Sally⁷, m. Hiram H. Birdsall and had nine children, 2 Richard⁷, 3 Garrett V.⁷, 4 Loiza⁷, 5 Duncan C.⁷, 6 Caroline⁷; 7 Mary⁷, 8 George⁷, 9 John⁷, 10 Almira⁷, m. Charles Haley, eight children, 11 John B.⁷.

Bush⁶, son of Capt. Matthew⁵, m. Sarah Wilson, and had six children,—1 Elizabeth⁷, m. Henry Ferris, and had two children; 2 Matthew⁷; 3 Bythemia⁷, m. Caleb Holmes; 4 Susan⁷, m. John Matthews; 5 Sophia⁷, m. Joseph E. Russell and had three children; 6, William Henry⁷.

Jonathan⁴, son of John³, m. Martha —. Of him nothing is definitely known.

Nathan⁴, son of John³, m. and went to Dutchess County, and died in the beginning of the Revolution. He had but one son, Job, who located at "Nine Partners" and contributed toward the building of the "Red Meeting-House" in Amenia, built in 1758.

Job⁵, son of Nathan⁴, m. Mercy King and had 1 Rebecca⁶, m. Warren Williams; 2 Job⁶; 3 Nathan⁶; 4 Mercy⁶, m. John Garusey and had three children; 5 Joshua⁶.

Job⁶, son of Job⁵, m. Ruth Hibbard and had 1 Nancy⁷, m. Daniel Benjamin, who had six children; 2 Sarah⁷, m. Ambrose Smith; 3 Mary⁷, m. Ambrose Smith and had eight children, 4 Henry Hibbard; 5 John King; 6 Barak⁷.

Nathan⁶, son of Job⁵, m. Sarah Hibbard and had 1 Myra⁷, m. Eli A. Ellis; 2 Electa⁷, m. 1st Hiram Smith, 2d Joel Knapp; 3 Nathan⁷.

Joshua⁶, son of Job⁵, m. Sybil Benjamin and had five children,—1 Isaac Newton; 2 Amelia M.⁷, m. Jonathan I. S. Wood, no children; 3 Wm. Harding; 4 Albert⁷, d. young; 5 Charles H.⁷; 6 Rebecca⁷, m. Milton Webster and had eight children.

Joseph³, second son of John², m. Mary —. They had five children.

(1) Jeremiah⁴, b. 1700.

(2) Jacob⁴, born 1701, m. 1725, and had ten children,—1 Joseph⁵; 2 Jemima⁵; 3 Fanny⁵; 4 Jeremiah⁵; 5 Jacob⁵; 6 Sarah⁵; 7 Elizabeth⁵; 8 Hannah⁵; 9 Rachel⁵; 10 Abigail⁵.

(3) Rebecca⁴, b. 1702, m. Abraham Rundle and had Sarah.

(4) Elizabeth⁴, b. 1704.

(5) Hannah⁴, b. 1705.

Of this family we have no further *certain* records, though a large line seems to reach back to Jeremiah.

Hannah³, daughter of John², married in 1677, John Scofield and had seven children,—Samuel, John, Ebenezer, Nathaniel, Mercy, Mary, Susanna.

Ebenezer³, third son of John², m. Sarah Knapp, of Stamford, and had nine children,—

(1) Ebenezer⁴.

(2) Caleb⁴.

(3) Sarah⁴, b. 1696, m. Jonathan Hobby.

(4) Hannah⁴, b. 1702, m. John Hobby.

(5) Capt. Jabez⁴.

(6) David⁴.

(7) Abigail⁴, m. Isaac Holmes; they had five children.

(8) Susanna⁴, m. Moses Husted; they had three children.

(9) Jemima⁴, m. Moses Knapp; they had ten children.

(1) Ebenezer,⁴ oldest son of first Ebenezer, m. Hannah Brown, of Rye. They had twelve children—1 Ebenezer;⁵ 2 Silas;⁵ 3 Abraham;⁵ 4 Jonas;⁵ 5 Solomon;⁵ 6 Deliverance;⁵ 7 Amos;⁵ 8 Edmund;⁵ 9 Hannah (d. a. 23);⁵ 10 Jabez;⁵ 11 Jared;⁵ 12 Abraham.⁵

Ebenezer,⁵ son of Ebenezer,⁴ m. Amy Knapp and had 1 Gen'l Ebenezer;⁶ 2 Hannah,⁶ m. Elkanah Mead; 3 Col. Enoch,⁶ who settled in Lewisborough.

Gen'l Ebenezer,⁶ oldest son of Ebenezer,⁵ m. Nancy Mead (line of Benjamin), and had seven children,—1 Nancy;⁷ 2 Hannah,⁷ d. young; 3 Marilda,⁷ m. T. Boughton and had 1 John,⁸ 2 Son,⁸ 3 Hannah;⁸ 4 Ebenezer;⁷ 5 Rhenmah,⁷ m. Timothy Walker and had 1 Nancy Eliza,⁸ 2 Julia Caroline,⁸ 3 Polly Augusta,⁸ 4 Ebenezer Mead,⁸ 5 Joseph A.;⁸ 6 Jabez;⁷ 7 Amy,⁷ m. Epenetus Lockwood.

Ebenezer,⁷ oldest son of Ebenezer,⁶ m. first Zetta Mead (line of Ebenezer), second Elizabeth Holmes and had eleven children,—1 Hannah,⁸ m. Seely Mead (line of David); 2 Almira,⁸ m. first Rev. Ebenezer Platt, second Capt. Israel Peck; 3 Rev. Ebenezer;⁸ 4 Emeline Z.,⁸ m. Daniel B. Kratzer and had 1 Jared M.,⁹ 2 Edgar B.,⁹ 3 Amzi A.;⁹ 5 Mary E.;⁸ 6 Rev. Enoch;⁸ 7 Zetta,⁸ m. Rev. Mr. Day and had 1 Ebenezer,⁹ 2 Theodore,⁹ 3 Josie;⁹ 8 Lydia Ann;⁹ 9 Nancy;⁹ 10 Nancy;⁹ 11 Theodore Holmes.⁹

Rev. Ebenezer,⁸ oldest son of Ebenezer,⁷ m. first Maria Lester, second Mary A. Lyman, and had six children,—1 Ebenezer;⁹ 2 William L.⁹ d. young; 3 Maria E.,⁹ m. V. A. Hilburn and had 1 Theodore V.,¹⁰ 2 Anna Laura,¹⁰ 3 Caroline Alma,¹⁰ 4 Francis Lester,¹⁰ 5 Howard Mead,¹⁰ 6 M. Helena Almira,¹⁰ 7 Edward Lyman;¹⁰ 4 Infant son;⁹ 5 Alma Ann;⁹ 6 Theodore Dwight,⁹ never married.

Rev. Enoch,⁸ second son of Ebenezer,⁷ m. Mary E. James, and had two children,—1. Hon. James R.,⁹ 2. Mary E.⁹.

Theodore Holmes,⁸ third son of Ebenezer,⁷ m. Cornelia J. Mead (line of David?); no children.

Hon. James R.,⁹ son of Rev. Enoch,⁸ m. 1st Agnes Barcome, 2d Lucy M. Inman, and had four children,—1. James L.,¹⁰ 2. Agnes L.,¹⁰ 3. Mary,¹⁰ 4. Willie.¹⁰

Ebenezer,⁹ oldest son of Rev. Ebenezer,⁸ m. Mary Gaure, and had five children,—1. Maria Lester,¹⁰ 2. Ebenezer,¹⁰ 3. Theodore Dwight,¹⁰ 4. William,¹⁰ 5. Catharine.¹⁰

Jabez,⁷ second son of Gen. Ebenezer,⁶ m. Laura Davis (line of Benjamin), and had four children,—1. Jabez,⁸ 2. Amy,⁸ 3. Martha,⁸ (m. Silas Husted, and had 1. Amos W.,⁹ 2. Amy M.,⁹ 3. Sylvester D.,⁹ 4. Harriet E.,⁹ 5. Jabez,⁹ 4. Lucina,⁸ d. young.

Jabez,⁸ son of Jabez,⁷ m. Mary J. Hobby, and had six children,—1. Lucina J.,⁹ m. Abraham Reynolds; 2. Harriet R.,⁹ m. Lyman Mead (line of Ebenezer); 3. Herman H.,⁹ m. Mary J. Timpany (and had 1 Adele F.,¹⁰ 2. Elouise C.,¹⁰ 3. Clara B.,¹⁰); 4. Charlotte A.,⁹ 5. Arthur D.,⁹ m. Alice Bingham (and had 1 Jennie Bingham,¹⁰ 2. Herbert W.,¹⁰ 3. Elbert C.,¹⁰); 6. Everett D.,⁹.

COL. ENOCH,⁶ second son of Ebenezer,⁵ m. Memima Mead (line of Ebenezer) and had nine children,—1. Solomon,⁷ 2. Sally,⁷ (d. young), 3. Alphred,⁷ 4. Laura,⁷ m. Uel Todd; 5. Thirza,⁷ m. Joseph Brundage, and had ten children (1 Caroline,⁸ 2. Joseph,⁸ 3. Jane,⁸ 4. Enoch,⁸ 5. Harry,⁸ 6. Elizabeth,⁸ m. Staats Edw. Mead (line of Benjamin), 7. Rufus,⁸ 8. James,⁸ 9. Oscar,⁸ 10. Loretta,⁸); 6. Harvey,⁷ (d. young), 7. Hancy,⁷ m. 1st Martin Rockwell, 2d John Selby; 8. Rufus, d. young; 9. Sarah,⁷ m. Joseph Silkman.

Solomon,⁷ oldest son of Col. Enoch,⁶ m. Eunice Gilbert, and had eight children,—1. Mary,⁸ m. Cyrus Laurence, and had Solomon,⁹; 2. Jacob Gilbert,⁸ 3. Laura,⁸ (d. young) 4. Enoch Milan,⁸ 5. Laura Ann,⁸ 6. Elizabeth,⁸ m. William L. Smith (and had 1 Thomas Mead,⁹ 2. Eunice Gilbert,⁹ 3. William Enoch,⁹); 7. Harvey,⁸ 8. Thirza,⁸ m. Robert Hoe (and had 1 Robert,⁹ 2. Arthur,⁹ 3. Laura,⁹).

Jacob Gilbert,⁸ oldest son of Solomon,⁷ m. Sally A. Todd, and had two children,—1. Solomon Todd,⁹ m. Sarah E. Quick; 2. Elbert,⁹ m. Mary E. Studwell.

Enoch Milan,⁸ second son of Solomon,⁷ m. Elizabeth Hoe Mudge, and had five children,—1. Theodore Hoe,⁹ m. Anna Rebecca Johnson, and had 1 Theodore Hoe,¹⁰ (d. young), 2. Mary Ellen,¹⁰ (d. young), 3. Ethel,¹⁰ (d. young), 4. Laurence Johnson,¹⁰ 5. Anna Theodora,¹⁰ 6. Gilbert,¹⁰; 2. Lucy Gilbert,⁹; 3. Frederick Milan,⁹ m. Edith Featherstone, and have three children, Hilda, Cicely and Beatrice; 3. Herbert,⁹ m. Anna D. F. Rockwell, and have one son, Herbert; 4. Edward Spencer,⁹ m. E. Susie Abbott.

There was a prophecy in this Ebenezer family that the name Ebenezer for the oldest son would end with this child. He was only three years of age when he died. It was current in the family while his father was yet a boy.

Alphred,⁷ second son of Colonel Enoch,⁶ m. Polly Brundage, and had seven children,—1. Alfred B.,⁸ 2. Loretta,⁸ 3. Martin Rockwell,⁸ 4. Mary,⁸ m. G. Charles Benedict; 5. George W.,⁸ 6. Joseph,⁸ 7. Erastus F.,⁸ Alfred B.,⁸ oldest son of Alphred,⁷ m. 1st Sarah Howe, 2d Elizabeth Bailey, and had 1. Laura Jane,⁹ m. W. H. I. Howe, and had Epenetus,¹⁰ and Alfred Mead,¹⁰; 2. George A.,⁹.

Martin Rockwell,⁸ second son of Alphred,⁷ m. Octavia A. Badeau, and had two children (d. in infancy).

George W.,⁸ third son of Alphred,⁷ m. Sarah F. Studwell (line of Ebenezer), and had eight children,—1. Alfred J.,⁹ 2. Fanny Studwell,⁹ 3. Elizabeth Brundage,⁹ 4. Loretta Josephine,⁹ 5. Florence Church,⁹ 6. George,⁹ 7. John Studwell,⁹ 8. Joseph,⁹.

Erastus F.,⁸ youngest son of Alphred,⁷ m. Lillie Wright.

John Clason Holmes, who has long been identified with the best interests of Lewisboro, is also descended from one of the oldest families in the county. He is the second son of John and Ruth Holmes, and was born in Bedford September 22, 1825. The families of both his parents have lived in Bedford from the earliest settlement. His first ancestor in this country, John Holmes, of Beverly, in Yorkshire (from whom he is seventh in lineal descent), was one of the twenty-four pioneers in the spring of 1681, and the family of Clason, the maiden-name of his mother, came there soon afterward. John Holmes is the only one of the first proprietors of Bedford whose English birth-place is known. He died in 1729, at the age of ninety years.

He had two daughters—Sarah (who married Jonathan Miller) and Rose (who married John Westcott), and six sons—John, Stephen, Richard, David, Joseph and Jonathan. They have numerous descendants in this and other States. One of his grandsons was Colonel James Holmes, of the regiment of British refugees, of whom mention is made in the history of Bedford. John Holmes was conspicuous, even among his Puritan neighbors, as "a God-fearing man," was energetic and thrifty, and occupied a prominent place in town affairs. His house was on the spot where that of Mrs. James Lounsbery now stands. His son Richard was the next in the direct line of the subject of this sketch. He held the office of collector of the town of Bedford, and some of his official papers and memoranda are preserved. His son Richard was the third in descent, and was known as "Lieutenant" Holmes, having been commissioned in His Majesty's service by Lieutenant-Governor George Clarke in 1737. The fourth was Peter, a plain, patriotic man, who served in the American army as a private during the War of the Revolution. His son Abijah, the fifth in the line, was also a soldier in that war. He was appointed an ensign in Colonel Delevan's regiment in 1797. His commission is signed by Governor Jay. He served also in the War of 1812. His son John was born about a mile from Cross River, on the Bedford road, where "the Red House" now stands. He was a quiet, successful farmer, of retiring disposition and habits.

Owing to these traits in his father's character, and to the death of an elder brother (who had taken much of the management of the outside business), John C. Holmes, the remaining son, was, at an early age, entrusted with matters more important than usually fall

to the care of one so young. He received a common-school education, and taught a district school for a term or two with success. In 1849 he removed to Lewisboro, and, after holding the offices of constable, collector and assessor, was, in the spring of 1856, elected to the office of justice of the peace, a position which he has held continuously since that time, a period of over thirty years. In 1874 he was chosen supervisor of Lewisboro, and re-elected every year since. He has also been postmaster of Cross River for nineteen years. In politics he is a Republican.

In addition to the large farm on which he was born, and which he inherited from his father, he owns and manages three or four smaller ones. He has for some twenty years past conducted the business of a dealer in cattle and sheep at the Union Stock Yards, foot of West Sixtieth Street, New York. He also owns and supervises a country store at Cross River, where he resides.

In the year 1847 Mr. Holmes married Harriet A. Avery, of Cross River, by whom he had several children, none of whom are now living. He was married a second time, in 1866, to Marietta Robertson, daughter of the late Henry Robertson, of Bedford. He has one son (John Robertson Holmes), a lad of sixteen, the eighth in descent from John Holmes, of Beverly, and the fourth John.

Mr. Holmes is a man of large business capacity, excellent judgment, great energy in whatever he undertakes and thorough integrity. With a firm and somewhat unyielding manner, and a bluntness of speech that is one of his marked characteristics, he possesses a liberal and benevolent disposition. It is an evidence of the esteem in which he is held by the community in which his life has been passed, that he is often called on to act as executor or administrator. In that capacity he is a safe counselor and a judicious representative, and in all trusts, both private and public, he has discharged his duties to the satisfaction of his friends and his constituents.

SARAH BISHOP'S CAVE.—Near the close of the Revolutionary War there appeared in Lower Salem a young woman of medium height, fair complexion

and graceful figure, dressed in the prevailing fashion of those days, viz.: petticoat and short gown, of rich material, and carrying a bundle of female apparel made of costly fabrics for those times. Her face had evidently once been handsome and attractive, and her refined manners and conversation gave evidence that she had been reared in the best society. She gave her name as "Sarah Bishop," but of her past history or former residence she was as silent as the grave. She was a devout Christian and went from house to house among the deacons of the Presbyterian Church, spinning, knitting, sewing, etc. She was quiet and unobtrusive, her only failing being her desire to sleep during the day and work at night. This peculiarity sometimes greatly annoyed the good deacons, so much

so that Deacon John Bouton at last kindly told her that unless she could work during the day and sleep at night, as other people did, he should have to dispense with her services. Occasionally she would disappear for weeks at a time and then reappear as suddenly as she went. At last it was discovered by some hunters that she had taken up her abode in a cave on the southern slope of the eastern part of Long Pond Mountain, near its top. This cave was formed by some convulsion of nature throwing out from the side of a ledge a wedge-shaped mass of rock, moving it away some ten feet, where it still rests. Above this aperture the rock was left entire, thus forming a

roof to the wedge-shaped room. Across the wide part of the mouth of this cave she had built a stone wall, from the top of which barks, pulled from the neighboring trees, had been placed so as to close up the front, except the small entrance through which she passed in and out. This rude abode she had chosen for a home, far away from the haunts of men, on the lonely mountain-side, with no companions but beasts, birds and reptiles. Why she had selected this secluded spot for a home was a mystery that none of the good people of Salem could solve. The rumor somehow got abroad that she had formerly been a resident of Long Island; that she had there lived in a happy and comfortable home, associating with the wealthy and refined, until the British



Mr. C. Holmes

landed and laid waste, by fire and sword, her father's property. She was said to have suffered all the indignities that could possibly be heaped upon her by a British officer of high rank, and for this reason she had fled from the scenes of her childhood and sought the solitude and retirement of the wilderness. How much truth there was in this story was never known, but on the strength of this rumor it was imagined she had selected this spot because it commanded a view of her old home on Long Island.

The following account of a visit to the cave of the hermitess was published in a Poughkeepsie newspaper in 1804:

"Yesterday I went in company of two Capt. Smiths, of this town (Upper Salem, N. Y.), to the mountain to visit the hermitage. As you pass the southern and elevated ridge of the mountain, and begin to descend the southern steep, you meet with a perpendicular descent of rock, in the front of which is this cave. At the foot of this rock is a gentle descent of rich and fertile ground, extending about ten rods, when it instantly forms a frightful precipice, descending half a mile to the pond called Long Pond. In the front of this rock, on the north, where the cave is, and level with the ground, there appears a large frustum of the rock of a double fathom in size, thrown out by some unknown convulsion of nature, and lying in front of the cavity from which it was rent, partly inclosing the mouth and forming a room. The rock is left entire above and forms the roof of this humble mansion. This cavity is the habitation of the hermitess, in which she has passed the best of her years, excluded from all society. She keeps no domestic animal—not even a fowl, cat or dog. Her little plantation, consisting of half an acre, is cleared of its wood and reduced to grass, where she has raised a few peach-trees and yearly plants, a few hills of beans, cucumbers and potatoes. The whole is surrounded with a luxuriant grape-vine, which over-spreads the surrounding wood and is very productive. On the opposite side of this little tenement is a fine fountain of excellent water. At this fountain we found the wonderful woman, whose appearance it is a little difficult to describe. Indeed, like nature in its first state, she is without form. Her dress appeared little else than one confused and shapeless mass of rags, patched together without any order, which obscured all human shape, excepting her head, which was clothed with a luxuriance of lank, grey hair, depending on every side as time had formed it, without any covering or ornament. When she discovered our approach she exhibited the appearance of a wild, timid animal. She started and hastened to her cave, which she entered and barricaded the entrance with old shells pulled from the decayed trees. We approached this humble habitation, and, after some conversation with its inmate, obtained liberty to remove the palisades and look in, for we were not able to enter, the room being only sufficient to accommodate one person. We saw no utensil, either for labor or cooking, save an old pewter basin and a gourd-shell; no bed but the solid rock, unless it were a few old rags scattered here and there; no bed-clothes of any kind, not the least appearance of food or fire. She had, indeed, a place in the corner of her cell where a fire had sometime been kindled, but it did not appear there had been one for some months. To confirm this, a gentleman says he passed her cell five or six days after the great fall of snow in the beginning of March; that she had no fire then and had not been out of her cave since the snow had fallen. How she subsists during the severe season is yet a mystery. She says she eats but little flesh of any kind; in the summer she lives on berries, nuts and roots. We conversed with her for some time, found her to be of sound mind, a religious turn of thought, and entirely happy in her situation. Of this she has given repeated proofs by refusing to quit this dreary abode. She keeps a Bible with her, and says she takes much satisfaction and spent much time in reading it."

Mr. S. G. Goodrich (Peter Parley), who was born and spent his youthful days in Ridgefield, Conn., in his "Recollections of a Life-time," says of the hermitess,—

"In my rambles among the mountains I have seen her passing through the forest or sitting silent as a statue upon the prostrate trunk of a tree, or perchance upon a stone or mound, scarcely to be distinguished from the inanimate objects—wood, earth and rock—around her.

She had a sense of propriety as to personal appearance, for when she visited the town she was decently, though poorly, clad; when alone in the wilderness she seemed little more than a squalid mass of rags. My excursions frequently brought me within the wild precincts of her solitary den. Several times I have paid a visit to the spot, and in two instances found her at home. A place more desolate in its general outline, more absolutely given up to the wildness of nature, it is impossible to conceive. Her cave was a hollow rock about six feet square. Except a few rags and an old basin, it was without furniture, her bed being the floor of the cave and her pillow a projecting point of the rock. It was entered by a natural door about three feet wide and four feet high, and was closed in severe weather only by pieces of bark. At a distance of a few feet was a cleft where she kept a supply of roots and nuts which she gathered and the food that was given her. She was reputed to have a secret depository where she kept a quantity of antique dresses, several of them of rich silk and apparently suited to fashionable life. At a little distance down the ledge there was a fine spring of water, in the vicinity of which she was often found in fair weather.

"There was no attempt, either in or around the spot, to bestow upon it an air of convenience or comfort. A small space of cleared ground was occupied by a few thriftless peach-trees and in summer a patch of starveling beans, cucumbers and potatoes. Up two or three of the adjacent forest trees there clambered luxuriant grapevines highly productive in their season.

"With the exception of these feeble marks of cultivation all was left ghastly and savage as nature made it. The trees, standing upon the top of the cliff and exposed to the shock of the tempest, were bent and stooping towards the valley—their limbs contorted and their roots clinging as with an agonizing grasp into the rifts of the rocks upon which they stood. Many of them were hoary with age and hollow with decay; others were stripped of their leaves by the blasts and others still grooved and splintered by lightning. The valley below, enriched with the decay of centuries and fed with the moisture from the surrounding hills, was a wild paradise of towering oaks and other giants of the vegetable kingdom, with a rank undergrowth of tangled shrubs. In the distance to the East, the gathered streams spread out into a beautiful expanse of water called Long Pond. A place at once so secluded and so wild was, of course, the chosen haunt of birds, beasts and reptiles. The eagle built her nest and reared her young in the clefts of the rocks; foxes found shelter in the caverns and serpents reveled alike in the dry hollows of the cliffs and the dank recesses of the valley. The hermitess had made companionship with these brute-tenants of the wood. The birds had become so familiar with her that they seemed to heed her almost as little as if she had been a stone. The fox fearlessly pursued his hunt and his gambols in her presence. The rattlesnake hushed his monitory signal as he approached her. Such things, at least, were entertained by the popular belief. It is said, indeed, that she had domesticated a particular rattlesnake and that he paid her daily visits; she was accustomed—so said the legend—to bring him milk from the villages, which he devoured with great relish.

"During the winter she was confined for several months to her cell. At that period she lived upon roots and nuts which she had laid in for the season. She had no fire, and, deserted even by her brute companions, she was absolutely alone save that she seemed to hold communion with the invisible world. She appeared to have no sense of Solitude, no weariness at the slow lapse of days and months. Night had no darkness, the tempest no terror, winter no desolation for her.

When Spring returned she came down from her mountain home a mere shadow, each year her form more bent, her limbs more thin and wasted, her hair more bleached, her eye more colorless."

As time went by, the visits of the hermitess to the homes of the deacons of Salem became less and less frequent. She attended the Presbyterian Church at Salem, where her name is recorded as a member in 1804. She always came late, and then glided into a back pew to avoid observation.

In January, 1809, this strange, mysterious life ended in a manner sadly in keeping with all she had suffered in the past. She had been down to the foot of the mountain, to visit some friends. Late in the afternoon a snow-storm came on, and against the earnest protestations of Mr. Darius Benedict's family,

she left for her mountain home. The storm grew fiercer as night came on, and the wind moaned dismally through the tops of the tall pines. The snow whirled in blinding eddies over the rugged rocks and up the mountain-side as the hermitess toiled slowly through the storm, along the side of the pond, at the foot of the mountain. She had made half the distance to her den, when, becoming exhausted, she sat down, in a little hollow sheltered from the piercing blast, to rest. The storm howled on, and the snow continued to fall on rock and tree and on her wasted body; but she heeded them not. There, with the falling snow for a winding-sheet and the tempest singing a solemn requiem, she fell into that sleep that knows no waking, and her worn spirit took its flight forever. A few days after the storm, some men passing by the cave noticed that the hermitess had not been out of her cave since the snow fell. They examined the den, and found it empty. They gave the alarm, and, after a protracted search, the frozen remains of "Aunt Sarah" were found in the little hollow. The kind neighbors took the body, prepared it for burial and laid it to rest in the burying-ground near the Episcopal Church, North Salem.

The view from the top of the mountain, back of this cave, is extensive and beautiful beyond description. To the south Long Island Sound, for sixty miles, is spread before the eye, and beyond it the blue line of the Long Island hills. Near at hand a billowy landscape of bright green fields, wood-crowned heights and dark forests stretches from the foot of the mountain to the borders of the Sound. To the west the vision is bounded by the Highlands of the Hudson.

Just below and a little to the west of the cave is "Prospect Rock," from the top of which the view is remarkably fine. Farther down are two lakes, side by side, like two huge mirrors, framed in summer by foliage of the brightest green. To the west Lake Waccabuc glistens in the sunshine like a sheet of burnished silver.

TOWN HISTORY AFTER THE REVOLUTION.—It appears that the township of Salem was divided by act of the Legislature in 1783, the upper portion, north of the bridge, between the ponds, taking the name of North Salem, that portion south of the bridge retaining the name of Lower Salem.

The records show that "at an annual town-meeting, held by the freeholders and inhabitants of the Township of Lower Salem, pursuant to the laws of the State of New York, April 6th, 1784, Nathan Rockwell and Gould Bouton were appointed to examine and settle with Abijah Gilbert, late supervisor of the precinct of Salem, and report thereon at the next annual town-meeting.

"Also appointed the said Gould Bouton, William Rockwell and Abijah Gilbert to settle accounts with such persons as may be appointed for the town of Upper Salem, Reporting the money formerly received for excise, and to Determine the proportion that shall belong to each town; and by a vote of said meeting

the proportion of money that shall belong to the town of Lower Salem on the settlement to be made as aforesaid shall be appropriated to the use of the Rev. Solomon Mead's Church."

April 6, 1790. At this meeting it was agreed "to give Benjamin Chapman excise for the present year on account of his completing some work to the meeting-house."

Benjamin Chapman kept the "Old Church Tavern," formerly the first Episcopal Church in the town. It was closed by the patriots in 1776.

In 1790 the first bridge over Croton River, at Dean's Bridge, was provided for, the sum of forty pounds being raised by Lower Salem on condition that Stephentown should raise a like sum.

April 5, 1791, the overseers of the poor were "Authorized and empowered by the town of Salem to collect the property of Stephen Brundage, who is now in a state of Distraction, and apply it for his support during his illness, and to settle all the former expenses of taking care of him from his first distraction."

April 3, 1792, Moses Newman and James Dann are to pay fifty shillings each for a fine for selling spirituous liquors, to be paid within two months from that date. The town gives the one-half of their fine, if paid as above said, to the overseers of the poor.

April 5, 1796, it was voted that "all Swine that may run in the commons shall be ringed (pigs except), and it is voted if any person shall find any large swine running at large, without being ringed, he shall give the owner of such swine forty-eight hours' notice to ring his swine, and if the owner thereof shall not ring his swine with such notice, he may ring his swine, and shall be intitled to one shilling for every swine he rings, and the owner thereof shall pay for the same."

April 7, 1801, it was voted that "a law shall be passed that hogs that run in the common shall be rung. That pigs of three months old shall be considered hogs."

In 1806-7 the name of the town was changed to South Salem.

April 7, 1812, it was voted that "Nathan Monroe shall be exempt from supporting more than one of Stephen Canfield's children; that Stephen Canfield be prosecuted for the support of his children."

In April, 1828, the town-meeting was opened at the house of Thomas Smith, and on motion, by a vote, was removed to the Baptist Meeting-House.

Following is a list of town officers:

SUPERVISORS.			
No. Terms.		No. Terms.	
Jacob Wallis	4	Martin Mead	3
Timothy Canfield	1	Nathan Howe	2
James Brown	15	Joel Lawrence	3
Benjamin Close	1	Jeremiah Howe	8
Thaddeus Crane	3	Cyrus Lawrence	1
Abijah Gilbert	32	Daniel Hunt	32
Joel Bouton	2	John C. Holmes	11
Stephen Gilbert	6	(the present incumbent.)	
Solomon Mead	10		

TOWN CLERKS.

No. Terms.	No. Terms.
Nathaniel Wyatt 7	Gould Hawley 1
Benjamin Belden 1	Darius Weed 3
Abijah Gilbert 32	Thomas Mead 33
Jacob Gilbert 10	Cyrus Lawrence 4
Clark Mead 1	Jeremiah Howe 15
Aaron Keeler 5	Erastus E. Bouton 3
Samuel Ambler 1	Samuel H. Lawrence 2
Thomas Smith 2	Cyrus Faucher 4
Joel Bouton 3	Fred. Howe 10
Solomon Mead 2	(the present incumbent.)
Henry Hoyt 1	

The first town treasurer was Josiah Gilbert, who was town treasurer until his death, October 20, 1781.

The first election recorded occurred on April 30th and 1st and 2d days of May, 1799. The vote for Senator was as follows:

Pierre Van Cortlandt, Jr. 54	Nathan Rockwel 1
Ezekiel Robins 55	Charles Teed 1
John B. Coles 49	Abel Smith 1
Pierre Van Cortlandt 5	Abijah Gilbert 1
Richard Hatfield 1	

The vote in subsequent years is appended,—

1801. FOR GOVERNOR.

George Clinton 75
Stephen Van Rensselaer 71

1802. FOR CONGRESS.

Phillip Van Cortlandt 101
Richard Hatfield 4
Samuel Town 1

1803. For Senator 109	1820. For Governor 125
1804. For Congress 112	1821. For Congress 138
1804. For Governor 149	1822. For Governor 133
1805. For Senator 96	1823. For Congress 50
1806. For Congress 102	1825. For Senator 125
1807. For Governor 136	1826. For Governor 128
1809. For Senator 145	1827. For Senator 63
1810. For Governor 186	1827. For Secretary of State 333
1811. For Senator 141	1828. For Governor 371
1812. For Congress 179	1870. For Governor 300
1813. For Governor 121	1872. For Governor 336
1814. For Congress 129	1874. For Governor 319
1815. For Senator 98	1876. For Governor 359
1816. For Governor 104	1878. For Governor 313
1818. For Congress 91	1880. For Governor 399
1819. For Senator 210	1882. For Governor 234

At the annual town-meeting held in April, 1855, Messrs. Jeremiah Howe, Clark Newman and Cyrus M. Ferris were appointed a committee to purchase land at Cross River, South Salem and at Lewisboro (southern part of town) for free cemetery purposes. Purchases were accordingly made of Isaac Hayes, Stephen L. Hoyt, William Hunt and James Lockwood.

TRANSPORTATION.—The first mail stage line through Lewisboro was that commencing at Danbury, Connecticut, thence *via* Ridgefield, South Salem, Cross River, Bedford and White Plains to New York daily. This continued until the Harlem Railroad was completed to Croton Falls, in 1848. This route was then discontinued and another established, commencing at the Lewisboro post-office (Ferris), thence *via* South Salem, Boutonville, Cross Run, Katonah and Harlem Railroad to New York. At this time one mail route commences at Boutonville

and continue thence *via* South Salem, Cross River and Katonah to New York daily. Another route commences at Lewisboro post-office and extends thence *via* New Canaan to Stamford and by the New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad to New York. Daily service by both routes.

RAILROADS.—The New York and Harlem Railroad passes through the western portion of the town, with a station at Golden's Bridge. One hundred and twenty cans of milk are forwarded from this station daily, and other business to the amount of fifteen hundred dollars per month in transportation of passengers and freight, etc., is done there.

A branch railroad from this point to Lake Mahopac does a large passenger business through the summer.

In 1865 a railroad was chartered under the name of the White Plains, Danbury and Northern Railroad, to pass through the town from north to south in the vicinity of Cross River. Considerable money was expended and work done on various parts of the line, but the enterprise, owing to the lack of funds, fell through, and no part of the road in the town was ever completed.

In 1868 the Ridgefield and Port Chester Railroad Company was organized. This road was to pass through the eastern portion of the town. After some two hundred and fifty thousand dollars had been expended in right of way, grading, etc., work was suspended and the road has never been completed.

POPULATION.—The first enumeration of the population of the town occurred in 1782 when it was found that there were—

Heads of families	130
Males under 16 years of age	200
Males above 16 years and under 60 years	62
Males above 60 years	4
Females under 16 years	189
Females above 16 years	206

Refugees.

Males under 16 years	26
Males above 16 years and under 60 years	36
Males above 60 years	1
Females under 16 years	45
Females above 16 years	28

Total	927
In 1835	1470
1840	1619
1845	1541
1850	1608
1855	1775
1860	1885
1865	1653
1870	1601
1875	1598
1880	1612

In 1875 the proportion was as follows: Native, 1494; foreign, 104; white, 1596; colored, 2; males, 787; females, 811; aliens, 46, voters, 478.

VITAL STATISTICS.—Notwithstanding it is required that statistics of births, marriages and deaths shall be filed with the town clerk, the law is not complied

with, or only partially complied with; consequently the records are very meagre.

1847: Births, 25; marriages, 19; deaths, 9. 1848: Births, 29; marriages, 23; deaths, 19. 1849: Births, 33; marriages, 21; deaths, 21.

There are no further records until 1881. In that year there were 4 marriages; 1882, 4; 1883, 3; 1884, 4; only one death recorded in 1883. In 1884 there were seven deaths.

MANUFACTURES.—Boot and shoe-making is the principal mechanical industry of the town. Previous to 1835 Mr. Samuel Grummon carried on the business at the foot of Long Pond Mountain, on the south side, on the road leading from South Salem Meeting-House to North Salem. Mr. Grummon died in 1834, and in the spring of 1835 Mr. Eli Keeler, living in the neighborhood known as Keeler Street, took up the business of boot and shoe manufacturing. In 1838 Mr. Keeler moved his shop and business to South Salem village, where he still carries on the business. Mr. Keeler continues to manufacture what is known to the trade as hand-made work and his boots and shoes are much sought for on this account. He gives employment to a large number of men and women.

WAR OF THE REBELLION.—The records show that this town was not behindhand in furnishing men and money to assist in prosecuting the war for the preservation of the Union.

At a public meeting of the citizens of the town of Lewisboro, called for in anticipation of drafts being ordered to procure soldiers to assist in putting down the Rebellion against the United States government, which was held on the 20th day of August, 1862, at the Presbyterian meeting-house, South Salem, and which was very largely attended, Jeremiah Howe was chosen chairman and Webster B. Hull and Cyrus Fancher secretaries. A committee of eight was appointed to draft resolutions for the consideration of the meeting. Among other resolutions acted upon by the meeting the following are here recorded as passed by the meeting because they are referred to afterward at a special town-meeting legally called and held,—

“Resolved that the sum of — dollars be raised by tax on the property of the town of Lewisboro for the purpose of procuring the Quota of volunteers for said town under the last two calls of our government without resorting to a draft.

“Resolved, that a committee of three be appointed to apportion the necessary sum upon the taxable property of the town according to the assessment of the present year, 1862.

“In pursuance of these resolutions, Cyrus Lawrence, James Williamson and David Hunt were appointed a committee.

“Resolved, that a bounty of two hundred dollars be guaranteed to each resident of the town of Lewisboro who shall enlist before the 30 day of September next, whether the full quota of the town be made up by enlistment or not. Fifty dollars of such bounty to be paid upon the presentation of the affidavit of each Volunteer stating the Company and Regiment in which he shall have enlisted, the name of the Recruiting Officer and the fact of his being mustered in, and twenty five dollars monthly thereof to the family of, or order of, such Volunteer.”

At a special meeting held at the lecture-room, the usual place of holding town-meetings, September 2,

1862, pursuant to a call made by the proper persons to take measures to fill the quota of the town under call made by the President of the United States for men, Daniel Hunt, chairman, Cyrus Lawrence, 2d, clerk *pro tem.* the resolutions following were presented and adopted:

“Resolved, that the electors of the town of Lewisboro ratify and confirm so much of the action of the meeting of the inhabitants of said town, held August 12th, 1862, as relates to raising money by tax to pay all persons who might enlist in service of the United States to make the Quota of the town under the last two calls of our Government.

“Resolved, that a committee be appointed for the purpose of apportioning the tax upon the Valuation of Real and Personal property, as made by the Assessors for the present year, 1862, sufficient for the purpose mentioned in the foregoing resolutions as soon as convenient.

“Resolved, that one or more responsible persons be appointed by this meeting for each school district and part district to collect the same immediately and pay it to the Supervisor of the town, reporting the list of the amount unpaid and of all persons, if any, who refuse to pay. Out of the money so collected and paid the Supervisor is to pay to Each person enlisted the sum of two hundred dollars, who shall be credited to the town when properly mustered in or reimburse themselves for money already paid.

“Resolved, that application be made to the Legislature of this State, at its next Session, to legalize such tax upon all the property of the town, with an addition of twenty per cent. of said tax upon the property of those who shall refuse to pay.”

At a special town-meeting held February 23, 1864, for the purpose of raising money to procure the number of men necessary to be raised in the town, it was,—

“Resolved, that the town of Lewisboro will pay until its Quota is filled three hundred dollars bounty. If necessary, the Supervisor is authorized to increase this sum from one hundred to three hundred dollars. The money to be raised by tax on the town in five equal installments, the first to become due March 1st, 1865, and one installment in each following year, with interest, until paid.

“The Supervisor to raise the money by issuing bonds to bear a rate of interest not to exceed seven per cent.”

Another special town-meeting was held July 28, 1864, at which it was,—

“Resolved, to raise on the Credit of the town twelve thousand dollars, or so much thereof as may be necessary to fill the quota of the town, under the call for 200,000 men, made July, 1864.”

The supervisor was empowered to raise the money by issuing bonds. Of this amount, two thousand five hundred dollars was, with the interest on the same, to be paid every year, commencing in 1870, until the whole was paid. It was also,—

“Resolved, that the sum of four hundred dollars shall be paid to any person in this town that shall furnish a substitute for three years, and three hundred dollars to him who shall furnish a substitute for one year prior to the draft. And that there be paid for Volunteers to fill such Quota a hundred dollars for volunteers for one year, three hundred dollars for two years and four hundred dollars for three years. And if such Quota be not filled and the draft takes place, each person drafted and accepted shall be entitled to the sum of four hundred dollars for procuring a substitute or serving in person.

“Resolved, that every person liable to a draft, in order to be benefited by the bounties mentioned in the foregoing resolutions, shall pay to either of the town auditors, on or before the 8th day of August next, the sum of twenty-five dollars.

“Another town-meeting was held August 26, 1864, at which it was Resolved to increase the bounties to five hundred dollars for each substitute, irrespective of his term of service, and for each man drafted six hundred dollars.”

There are no records in the town clerk's office showing the names and number of men sent to the

front from this town during the Civil War. Mr. Hunt, the supervisor, who had the whole charge of the matter, died in 1884, leaving no list; therefore it is impossible to give a perfect record of them. The following is a list of those who are known: Andrus Hull joined Company I, Forty-fourth Regiment New York Volunteers, at the Normal School, Albany, where he was completing his education. After two years' service he was appointed a captain and assigned to the Twentieth Regiment of United States Colored Infantry. After serving to the close of the war he went to Chicago, Ill., where he was appointed paymaster by the Chicago and Northwestern Railroad Company, in whose service he now is. W. H. Ambler was killed instantly by a cannon-ball at the battle of Gettysburg, Pa. Samuel Ambler, John Burr Smith, Ebenezer Selleck, Lyman Addis, Thomas Cunningham, Sylvester Keeler, George A. Hoyt and John O'Brien were other soldiers whose names are remembered.

RELIGIOUS DENOMINATIONS.

The Presbyterian Church edifice is a plain wooden structure, forty by sixty feet, with tower and spire, ornamented with a handsome gilded vane. A large bell hangs in the tower. The building occupies a commanding position in the village. It appears that for some time previous to the year 1752 the Rev. Solomon Mead, an Independent minister, from Greenwich, in the Colony of Connecticut, had been preaching to the people of Lower Salem, in the neighborhood of the present church, and had gathered together a goodly number of those who had no desire to worship according to the ritual of the Church of England. In 1751, probably through the influence of the Rev. Mr. Mead, the proprietors of the undivided lands in the Oblong executed a deed, conveying to the first Presbyterian or Independent minister who should be settled and ordained in Salem, two tracts or parcels of land situate and lying in the lower ten miles of the Oblong. The deed was as follows:

"To all Christian people to whom these presents shall come, greeting:
 "Know ye that we, the signers of this Instrument, for and in consideration of our love and good-will to & for ye Inhabitants of Salem, in ye County of Westchester & in ye Province of New York, and for ye Redeemer's Interest among them, Have by these Presents Devoted, Released and Quitted, and do by these presents freely, fully and absolutely Devote, Release and quit our claims in and unto two certain tracts or pieces of Land lying in ye lower released ten miles of ye Oblong or Equivalent Lands which is yet undivided, to and for ye uses and Improvement of ye first Presbyterian or Independent Minister that shall be settled and ordained in s^d town of Salem, and to his successors forever. S^d Land is bounded as followeth, viz.: One piece Bounded North by Highway; West, Nathan Northrop's Land; South, by ye Land of James Brown; East, Nothing. The other plan Lying by Bedford Road, and is Bounded South by s^d Road and ye Land of Thomas Hyatt; East, by ye Land of Thomas Hyatt and James Brown; North, by T. Hyatt's Land, and West by ye Land of s^d Thomas Hyatt & Ephraim Coly. To Have & to Hold s^d Devoted, quitted & Released Premises, with all ye privaliges & appurtenances to ye same belonging or in any wise appertaining. We say we have & by these presents Do Devote & Release ye same unto him ye s^d Minister & to his successors in ye Ministry in s^d town forever, from us, our heirs, Executors and Administrators for him ye s^d Minister & his successors, to Hold and Improve to their Benefit and Behoof.
 "In testimony whereof we have hereunto set our hands and seals this

twenty-third day of December, One Thousand Seven Hundred and Fifty-one, and in ye twenty-fifth year of ye Reign of our Sovereign Lord, George ye Second, King, &c.

"Signed, sealed and delivered In ye presence of

Benjamin Rockwell.	his
John Souton.	Benjamin X Benedict.
her	mark.
Adah X Smith.	Timothy Keeler.
mark.	Thomas Smith.
her	Jonah Keeler.
lidy X tongue.	Mathew Semor.
mark.	Samuel Smith.
who see Benjamin.	Benjamin Hawley.
Benedict sign.	Nathan St. John.
Ezekil Hawley.	Thomas Rockwell.
Joseph Keeler.	Joseph Northrop.
Thomas Hyatt.	Thaddeus Crane.
Josiah Smith.	Benjamin Hayt.
James Benedict.	Salick Smith.
Samuel Smith.	Ebenezer Smith.
Nathan Olmstead.	Benjamin Keeler."



The deed is indorsed as follows:

"Be it Remembered, that on ye sixteenth day of November, 1774, there appeared before me, Caleb Knowles, Esq., one of ye Judges of ye Superior Court of Common Pleas for ye County of Westchester, Benjamin Rockwell, one of ye witnesses to ye within deed of sale, and on his Oath declared that he see all ye Grantors to ye s^d deed, excepting Benjamin Benedict, seal and deliver ye same as their free, voluntary act & deed for ye uses therein mentioned; and likewise Ezekiel Hawley, one of ye witnesses to s^d deed, appeared before me at ye same time, & on his Oath declared he see ye s^d Benjamin Benedict seal and deliver ye s^d deed as his free, Volente act and deed, for ye uses therein mentioned; and I, having inspected s^d deed and find no material mistake or interlineation therein, and I allow ye same to be recorded.

"CALEB KNOWLES."

The next thing in order was to settle a minister. The proceedings to this end are shown in the first book of church records, kept by the Rev. Solomon Mead, as follows:

"Records of ye Church of Christ, in Salem, ye first church in s^d town, with some places adjacent.

"As this people belong not to any Presbytery or association, it was agreed by s^d society that ye committe of s^d society, with ye Candidate then on Probation, viz., Mr. Solomon Mead, Jointly should send for some of ye Neighboring Ministers, to perform ye work of authorizing of him, ye s^d Mr. Mead, and invest him with ye Ministerial charge over them. The ministers sent for were those ye following, viz.: Rev. Messrs. Abraham Todd, Elisha Kent, William Gaylord, Jonathan Ingersoll, Robert Silliman and Samuel Sacket, Which convention was agreed to be called on May ye 20th, 1752. Accordingly, on ye 19th, met those and there sat down in convention, which I transcribe from ye doings of s^d Convention, and is as followeth:

"At a convention of Ministers at Salem, on ye 19th of May, Anno Domini 1752, met upon ye Desire of ye People of Salem and places adjoining, in conjunction with Mr. Solomon Mead, a candidate for ye Gospel Ministry, in order to ordain ye S^d Mr. Mead a Gospel Minister among or over s^d People. Present of ye Rev^d Messrs. sent for,—Abraham Todd, Elisha Kent, Jonathan Ingersoll and Samuel Sacket. Mr. Todd chosen Moderator; Mr. Ingersoll, Scribe. The meeting opened by prayer performed by ye Molerator, Mr. Todd. The Rev. Mr. James Davenport being Present, was voted in as member of ye convention. Proceeded on Mr. Mead's trial. Examined him in ye Languages, in his experience, acquaintance with religion, his doctrinal Knowledge of Divinity and his Orthodoxy. Then Meeting adjourned till tomorrow morning. Met according to adjournment. Mr. Mead presented and read a Sermon to ye convention, and, upon an unanimously agreed on Vote, to proceed in ye ordination of Mr. Mead. Voted, that Mr. Ingersoll make ye first prayer and give ye right hand of fellowship; that Mr. Todd should preach; that Mr. Sacket make ye ordination prayer; that Mr. Kent give ye charge, and that Mr. Davenport conclude with prayer and a word of exhortation. At which time a church was Gathered, con

sisting of Eighteen Members, viz., Josiah Gilbert, Solomon Close, Stephen Brush, Jonah Keeler, Noah St. John, Daniel St. John, Nathan Northrop, Andrew Bishop, Ebenezer Scofield, John Bouton, Ebenezer Grummond, Lot Keeler, Paul Keeler, Abraham Northrop, Benjamin Bishop and Elijah Keeler, and ye ordination performed accordingly.

Test,

"JONATHAN INGERSOLL, *Scribe.*

"This was ye first Ordination in Salem, and ye first church gathered in S^d Salem.

"Signed,

"SOLOMON MEAD."

"The first Sabbath after S^d Ordination,—viz., May ye 24th, I took a vote of ye Chh., whether we should join with ye Western Association in Fairfield County. Voted in ye affirmative ye whole Chh., except Nathan Northrop. Accordingly I joined as a Member of S^d Association, on ye next Tuesday,—viz., ye 26th of May, there being an Association of Fairfield County then sitting. A Con. Association as yet not meeting, the Chh. as yet have not joined, but propose so to do as soon as opportunity dos present.

"At a meeting of S^d Chh., on July 24 1752, voted, our Brother Solomon Close be our Deacon.

"Voted, 24, Our Brother John Bouton be our Deacon.

"Sept. 14th, 1752 (new stile), at a meeting of S^d Chh., voted to contribute 4 pence a man and three pence a woman for ye year ensuing. Also agreed on it, by ye desire of ye chh., to have the Sacrament administered once in two months.

"Immediately the following persons were rec^d by ye church. On recommendation of Rev^d Mr. Silliman, Ebenezer Bouton and Abigail his wife; by Rev^d Mr. Ingersoll, John Loder and his wife; Keziah, wife of Timothy Canfield and Rebecca ye wife of Benjamin Rockwell and Peregrina ye wife of Nathan Northrop; Jane, ye wife of Noah St. John; Sarah, ye wife of Daniel St. John; Mary, ye wife of David Canfield; Deborah, ye wife of Ebenezer Grummond; Elizabeth, ye wife of Josiah Gilbert; Deborah, ye wife of Solomon Close; Mary, ye wife of Joseph Osborn; Jehial Tiler and Jemina his wife. Also, Phebe Canfield, Hannah, ye wife of Andrew Bishop; Mary, ye wife of Stephen Brush; ye widow Rebecca St. John; Mary, ye wife of John Bouton; Mary, ye wife of Ebenezer Scofield; Abigail, wife of Abraham Northrop; Patience, wife of David Sanford; ye wives of Paul and Lott Keeler; David Crispe and his wife, Unice; and James Bishop recommended by Rev^d Mr. Wells."

June 17, 1753, Nathan Finch and his wife were recommended by Rev. Mr. Silliman. July 23, 1752, Epenetus Howe and his wife were admitted. August 30, 1752, the wife of Benjamin Bishop was admitted. From this time to 1802 one hundred and sixty-eight united with the church.

"Sept. 8th, 1757. At a meeting of ye Ch^b to hear reasons of Deacon Bouton's resigning his Office. After hearing and agreeing he had a right to lay down, ye Ch^b proceeded to a new choice, again make choice of ye Deacon. He desires 3 weeks from ye Lord's Day ensuing for consideration; ye petition granted, ye deacon accepts.

"Sept. 29th, 1763. A meeting of ye Ch^b of Christ in Salem at ye Meetinge house considered whether this Ch^b would adopt ye Presbytery form of Ch^b government; Voted in ye affirmative.

"24. Agreed to chose five ruling elders.

"23. That these should stand but for one year.

"4th. Voted the following persons for the above term:

"1. Deacon Solomon Close.

"2. Deacon John Bouton.

"3. Josiah Gilbert, Esq.

"4. Joseph Osborn.

"5. Thaddeus Crane.

"April 10th, 1765. At a meetinge of ye Ch^b in Salem, Voted to continue ye same Elders as were above voted. Joseph Benedict was Chose Elder in room of Joseph Osborn, Deceased.

"On September 30th, 1778, was Elected Nathaniel Wicks, Deacon, in ye room of Deacon Close, deceased.

"The same date Mr. Wicks was Elected Elder.

"May 28th, 1782, Elected two Elders,—Nathan Rockwell and Capt. Gould Bouton.

"Dec. 3^d, 1782. There met the Session at my house, to hear the request of Lieut. Solomon Close, who was by ye Congregational Church in Upper Salmc excommunicated. Desired the Session would meet at his house,

that he might have an opportunity of vindicating his innocence and that some ministers might be called in to Join with the Session. The request was complied with and agreed to call in Messrs. Lewis, of Wilton, Lewis and Mills belonging to the Presbytery and also to call all members of the Church to hear, and appointed the 7th of January ensuing.

"Met January 7th, 1783, according to appointment, but of Ministers, only the Rev. Mr. Lewis, of Wilton, attended and some papers of Mr. Close were wanting; therefore adjourned until February 11th ensuing.

"Met according to adjournment and Messrs. Lewis & Mills present. Mr. Lewis of Wilton did not attend. After collecting all the evidence and hearing over Mr. Close's full vindication concluded nothing Scandalous found against him, but for some reasons did not come into a full determination until the month of March, when he was received into the Communion of the church."

At a meeting of the trustees, February 14, 1797, it was unanimously agreed to petition the Legislature to authorize them to sell parsonage lands not to exceed fifty acres, that a more eligible site might be purchased for a parsonage house.

The Rev. Solomon Mead continued pastor of the church until 1800. Old age and infirmities rendering him unfit to longer preside over the church, he resigned his charge after having been pastor for forty-eight years. On December 24, 1799, at a meeting of the trustees, it was resolved to retire Mr. Mead on one hundred dollars and his firewood for a year. This offer he accepted.

Mr. Mead died in September, 1813, as appears from the following entry of September 5, 1813, in the church book of records:

"Departed this Life the Rev^d Solomon Mead, Aged 86 years, 9 months and 2 days. He officiated in the ministry 48 years, 3 Months & 15 days. In his ministry he baptised children & adults, 312, Married one couple and attended 328 burials. There we See ended a long life of a Venerable Minister, Who may well be remembered by this Church for his great zeal in the cause of Religion, for his planting a church in this place and letting his light shine in such a manner as to be imitated safely by all."

In the year of Mr. Mead's retirement, 1800, it was determined to settle Rev. Robert Porter over the congregation as pastor and to pay him three hundred and seventy-five dollars a year.

In March, 1800, permission was granted by the Legislature to the trustees to sell fifty acres of land. It was accordingly sold in several parcels as follows:

	Acres.	Roods.	Rods.	Price.
To Elisha Avery	7	0	28	\$113.00
" Andrew Massey	10	0	6	12.50
" Philander Lawrence	8	0	30	81.89
" John Bouton	7	1	13	69.52
" Joseph Webster	2	2	0	6.75
" Giles Mabey	4	3	9	61.57
" Nathan Olmstead	0	1	0	8.00
" Samuel B. Isaacs	8	0	0	66.00

April 5, 1802, Rev. Robert H. Chapman was called to preach for one year, at a salary of three hundred and seventy-five dollars, a house to live in, and the church to move his goods.

December 21, 1803, Rev. Mr. Osborn was invited to preach for six months. October 29, 1804, a call was extended to Rev. John Ely. Mr. Ely accepted, and "on the 27th of November, 1804, was convened at Salem, by letters missive from the Moderator of the Presbytery of Hudson, for the purpose of receiving

from the Ch. and Society in Salem their call to the Rev. John Ely, to take the Pastoral charge of them and to proceed to installation if the way was prepared. Present—Ministers: Revs. Solomon Mead, John Minor, John Clark and Ebenezer Grant; Elders: Gould Bouton, Salem; Samuel Hall, South East; Mr. Flagden, Peter Flemming, Bedford; Correspondent members from Connecticut, Rev. Samuel Goodrich, Rev. John Clark, Rev. Israel Ward, Danbury.”

In 1801 the land where the parsonage now stands was purchased of Mr. Thaddeus Rockwell.

December 4, 1804, it was voted to build a barn; also voted that William Townsend should have twenty shillings to sweep the house, put in the glass and fix the east door.

The church records do not show when the first church was erected or when the first meetings were held. It is supposed they were held in a log house that stood just west of the present residence of Mr. Milo Webster, on the road leading from South Salem to Poundridge. Probably a church edifice was erected soon after Mr. Mead was installed. The first mention of a meeting-house occurs in the church records September 29, 1763, when a “meeting of ye church of Christ in Salem was held at ye Meeting-House to consider whether this Chh. would adopt ye Presbyterian form of Chh. government. Voted in ye Affirmative.” The next mention of a meeting-house occurs in the town records, 1775, when a town-meeting was called to assemble at ye meeting-house in Salem to consider some “Resolves” in regard to the war. The first meeting-house stood a few feet north of the present building and was a barn-like structure without a fire-place, and benches instead of pews. In 1795 an inventory was made of the church property, in which a church edifice was included. In April, 1796, it was agreed to take the old seats out of the meeting-house and have pews erected instead. The pews were completed the following October and rented as follows:

Pew No.		£	s.	d.
3	Gould Bouton for	4	10	0
13	James Reynolds for	1	10	0
7	John Bouton for	2	5	0
2	Daniel Bouton for	2	10	0
1	Nathan Rockwell for	4	13	0
6	Stephen Gilbert for	5	0	0
5	Josiah Jones for	3	12	0
4	Job Smith for	4	6	0
14	Nathan Adams for	3	0	0
18	Samuel Ambler for	1	11	0
8	Jacob Conklin for	4	1	0
11	Pettit Loder for	3	1	0
10	Thomas Gilbert for	4	0	0
9	Epenetus Bishop for	3	5	0
15	Michael Brooks for	2	0	0
16	Andrew Massey for	1	12	0
17	Aaron Keeler for	1	10	0

December 3, 1805, it was voted that some wood be given to the singing-school, at the school-house, and to keep fire in the school-house on Sabbath day, at noon, between meetings. It was also voted that the

west door be fastened up through the winter. November 8, 1810, it was voted that Job Rockwell will take care of the meeting-house for two dollars.

September 2, 1813, Rev. Jacob Burbank was called to be pastor, at a salary of three hundred dollars and use of parsonage. March 2, 1818, Rev. Charles F. Butler was called to be the pastor.

In 1825, the old church edifice being out of repair, it was resolved to build a new one. Accordingly, the present edifice was erected. In 1873 the church was again repaired and remodeled, inside and out, at a cost of \$8430.57.

LIST OF PASTORS.

1752	Rev. Solomon Mead.
1800	Rev. Robert Porter.
1802	Rev. Robert H. Chapman.
1803	Rev. Mr. — Osborn.
1804	Rev. John Ely.
1813	Rev. Jacob Burbank.
1818	Rev. Charles F. Butler.
1834	Rev. Reuben Frame.
1852	Rev. Aaron L. Lindsley.
1863	Rev. Daniel S. Gregory.
1871	Rev. Thomas Gray.
1876	Rev. Henry J. Owen.
1877	Rev. G. A. Seeley.
1878	Rev. George M. McCampbell.
1883	Rev. Dr. Buchanan.
1884	Rev. L. D. Calkins, present incumbent.

The first bell was purchased in 1846. In 1852 the trustees petitioned Judge John W. Mills for permission to sell certain real estate. Such permission was duly granted, April 16, 1852, and the land sold.

In the grave-yard which surrounds the church rest the remains of the Gilberts, Websters, Benedicts, Rockwells, Keelers, Boutons, Lawrences, Meads, etc. Near the southwest corner of the yard stands a plain marble slab bearing this inscription,—

“To the
Memory of
Rev. Solomon Mead
First Pastor of the Presbyterian
Church in this Place A. D. 86.
He had charge of this people 48 years.
Ob. September 1812

While Marble Monuments decay
The righteous live in Endless day,
And Earthly temples turn to dust
Blest is the Memory of the just.”

Just east of the path leading up to the church from the south is the grave of Josiah Gilbert, one of the first men among the early settlers of Salem. He was the first town treasurer and one of the first church members. A plain slate slab marks the head of his grave, with the following inscription:

“To
Ye Memory
Josiah Gilbert, Esqr
Who departed this life Oct 20, 1781
in ye 83^d year of his life.
A person very Eminent to promote
ye Gospel and ye public good.”

Near the grave of Josiah Gilbert (the first) is the grave of his grandson Josiah (the second). The in-

scription on the stone that marks his last resting-place is as follows:

"To the memory of
Josiah Gilbert
Died
October 25th 1858
In the 77th year of his age

For forty-five years he was a member and thirty-six years an Elder of the Presbyterian Church."

In the town cemetery, a short distance west of the church, monuments have been erected by the Raymonds, St. Johns, Woods, Williamsons, Adamsons, etc. The oldest grave-stone in the church-yard is that erected to the memory of Jacob Benedict, son of Amos and Martha Benedict, who died October 2, 1755.

EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—In the year 1759 the Rev. Ebenezer Dibble, a missionary from the Church of England, located at Stamford, in the colony of Connecticut, says, in his report, that on the 24th day of June, in the above year, he "preached in the lower district of Salem to considerable of an audience of decently behaved people." In a letter written to the Home Secretary, in September, 1759, he says—"the people of Lower Salem are poor, but I shall do all I can to serve them. I preached to them two weeks ago on a special fast, appointed in that Province, to implore the smiles and blessings of Divine Providence to attend his Majesty's arms in the ensuing campaign." In 1767 the Rev. Epenetus Townsend was appointed missionary to Ridgefield, Ridgebury and Salem. He held services at the dwelling-houses of James Brown and others until 1771 when a church was completed and consecrated. It stood opposite where the road leading from New Canaan to South Salem unites with the Ridgefield road to the latter place, now known as Keeler's Corner. The building stood on land now owned by the heirs of the late Thaddeus H. Keeler, whose grandfather sold the lot to the trustees—Gershom Selleck, James Brown and others. Mr. Townsend preached in this church until July, 1776, when, the independence of the colonies having been declared, and many of his most active members having joined the Continental army, they requested Mr. Townsend to omit that part of the service where divine blessings were invoked for the King and the royal family. Mr. Townsend declined; and, on the following Sabbath, when that part of the service was reached, the patriots rose up in a body and forbid him proceeding further with the service. He closed his book and left the church, the congregation following him. The church was closed and the key taken possession of by the patriots. Mr. Townsend was soon after arrested as a person dangerous to the American cause, and sent a prisoner to Fishkill. In 1780 the church was used by Colonel Sheldon's troops as a hospital, and several soldiers who died there were buried in the little grave-yard near by. This ground is now used as a private burial-place for the Keeler family. Subsequently, Mr. Ben-

jamin Chapman, a contractor, took the property, to satisfy his claims against it, and fitted it up for an inn. For years after it was known as the "Church Tavern." In 1795 Mr. Chapman sold the property to Mr. John L. Morehouse, who disposed of it to Jeremiah Keeler. In 1796 Mr. Keeler took down the building and removed the material. Some of the partitions that were taken from the church can still be seen in the Keeler mansion, nearly opposite where the church once stood.

After the closing of the church, in 1776, there was no organization in Salem until 1811, when a church was incorporated under the title of The Church Wardens and Vestrymen of the Protestant Episcopal Church of Salem. The vestry were Augustus McCarroll and William Sherwood, church wardens; Henry Hoyt, Gould Bouton, Samuel Ambler, Absalom Holmes, Jesse Jervis, Samuel B. Isaacs, Joseph Nash, James Church, vestrymen.

There was no church edifice in which to hold services, which were held in various places in the town until 1852, when Rev. Alfred Patridge commenced to hold meetings in a grove on the land of Stephen L. Hoyt, just west of the Presbyterian Church, South Salem. In a short time the parish was again reorganized under the title of St. John's Church of South Salem, and on the 16th of August, 1852, the following vestry were chosen: Jonathan Beers and Isaac Hays, church wardens; Stephen L. Hoyt, Samuel Field, Amos N. Raymond, Timothy Jones, William H. Robertson (afterwards collector of the port of New York) Ferris Bouton, William Lockwood and John Burr Whitlock, vestrymen.

Mainly through the influence of Rev. Mr. Patridge, Stephen Lewis Hoyt deeded to the church a lot of land six rods square, in the grove where the meetings had previously been held, and in 1853 a neat stone edifice, thirty-eight by forty-eight feet, with tower, was erected, and September 18, 1855, the church was consecrated by Right Rev. Horatio Potter, bishop of the diocese. Benjamin Loder, of New York, presented the church with a bell weighing six hundred and ninety-seven pounds. For some years no regular services have been held in this church.

In 1870 John Lewis, of Clinton, Conn., gave the church twenty-eight acres of land in the lower part of Lewisboro, on condition that a chapel should be built thereon, to be called St. Paul's Chapel. On the 12th of April, 1871, the corner-stone of St. Paul's Church was laid, on the land which had been given by Mr. Lewis. No further progress has been made towards the erection of the church.

In 1871 a rectory was completed, a part of which was the former residence of Isaac B. Hays, situated on the forks of the road leading from South Salem and Ridgefield to New Canaan. Near the rectory, in a tower, hangs the bell presented to St. Paul's Church by William M. Tweed, of New York.

In the cemetery near the rectory repose the remains

of John Lewis. A neat tomb-stone bears this inscription,—

John Lewis
Born
February 4th, 1793,
Died
October 1st, 1871.

He was a liberal benefactor to the public schools of Lewisboro, after whom the town was named; also the donor of the adjoining parsonage property to the Protestant Episcopal Church of St. John's.

The rectors and ministers who have officiated in South Salem Episcopal Church are :

1759	Rev. Ebenezer Dibble.
1771	Rev. Epenetus Townsend.
1810	Rev. Mather Felch.
1816	Rev. George Weller.
1852	Rev. Alfred Patridge.
1855	Rev. Franklin Babbitt.
1859	Rev. David Scott.
1861	Rev. A. M. Ives.
1868	Rev. Robert Bolton.
1879	Rev. Alexander Hamilton.

The present officiating rector is the Rev. Mr. Selleck, of Norwalk, Conn.

FRIENDS' MEETING-HOUSE (Golden's Bridge).— Meetings of "The Religious Society of Friends" began at the house of Robert Runnels, in the town of Bedford, in 1792. In the summer of 1798 an acre and a half of land was purchased near Golden's Bridge. This land was conveyed by Isaac Frost to Isaac McKeel, of Yorktown, and Abraham I. Underhill, of Cortlandtown, who were appointed by Chappaqua Monthly Meeting (of which the Salem Meeting was then a constituent branch) as trustees to take the title. As the records make no mention of the erection of a meeting-house at that time, it may be inferred that there was a building on the lot that answered for a meeting-place. In 1810 the meeting at Peach Pond, that had existed for about seventy years, was discontinued and the remaining members of the society there were assigned to Salem. Upon the establishment of a Monthly Meeting at Amawalk, in the town of Yorktown, about the year 1800, Salem Meeting became a branch of it, and in 1814 the present meeting-house was erected, an addition to the old lot having been purchased for forty-one dollars. Amawalk Monthly Meeting appointed Henry Jackson and Josiah Cock to hold the title in trust, to whom Isaac Frost and Patience, his wife, and Stephen Frost, and Mary, his wife, gave a quit-claim deed dated 15th of Fourth Month, 1815, for two acres and thirty rods of land.

There is no data for computing the membership at the beginning of the present century, but prominent among the members at that time were Edward Brundage, Henry Dickinson, Robert and Elijah Reynolds, Richard Weeks, Abraham Powell, Abel Underhill, Robert Hallock, Sylvanus Townsend, James Kniffin, Holly Lyons, Jared Green, Isaac Field, Thomas Smith, Joseph Bailey, William Field. Ezekiel Hal-

stead became a member in 1811, and was for many years a prominent minister. In 1829 the membership assigned to this meeting numbered fifty-one. Religious meetings were held regularly twice a week from their beginning until 1880, and in 1882 they were formally discontinued, since which time the house has not been occupied, except on special occasions.

The present trustees are Richard Weeks, of Somers; Joseph T. Hallock, Jesse H. Griffin and Wright Hallock, of Yorktown; and Edmund P. Hallock, of Peekskill.

In the burying-ground near this meeting-house repose the remains of

"Arnell Dickinson Died Oct 29th, 1832, Aged 60 years 3 m^o & 13d^{ds}."

"Silas Weeks Died 7th Month 29th, 1868, Aged 74 years."

"Joseph Weeks Died 7th Month 4th day, 1876, Aged 76 years, 4 m^o & 8^{ds}."

"Oliver Green, Born 15th of 2^d Month, 1788, Died 18th of 10th Month, 1862."

METHODIST CHURCHES.—The Methodist Protestant Church (Vista) was organized in 1853, with John S. Hoyt, Anson Benedict and Samuel Benedict, trustees. The first minister was Rev. O. C. Dykman and the present pastor is Rev. Mr. Dibble.

The Methodist Episcopal Church (Cross River), was incorporated March 28, 1843, with Joseph Wilson, Daniel Silkman, John Silkman, Aaron Silkman, Walter S. Lyon and John Brady, trustees.

Hermon Chapel, near the residence of Mr. Edward Brady, and the Methodist Episcopal Church at Golden's Bridge are under the same ministry with Cross River.

BAPTIST CHURCHES.—The Baptist Church (Cross River) was incorporated March 28, 1842, with Lewis Holmes, Abijah Reynolds, Lewis Mead, Titus Reynolds and Josiah M. Elmore, trustees.

In 1830^a a Baptist Church was erected in the lower part of Lewisboro, near the present residence of Aaron O. Wakeman, by Walker Wakeman, Asa Raymond, Amos Northrop and others. Rev. Ebenezer Raymond preached in this house for a number of years. Other ministers who supplied the pulpit there were Elder Flandreau, of New Rochelle; Elder Goldsmith, of Guilford, Conn.; and Rev. Mr. Card, of Cross River. Elder Hobby, of Cross River, was the last. In 1870 the church was taken down and the material removed.

PUBLIC SCHOOLS.—In 1839 John Lewis, a wealthy citizen of New York City, whose ancestors were natives of South Salem, and whose name has heretofore been mentioned in the course of this narrative, proposed that if the name of the town was changed in honor of him, he would give the income from ten thousand dollars for the support of the common schools of the town. Accordingly, in March, 1840, an act was passed by the Legislature changing the

name of the town to Lewisboro. Mr. Lewis then set aside ten thousand dollars, profitably invested, for the town. The interest he paid over semi-annually for the use of the schools, it amounting to the sum of six hundred dollars per year. By act of the Legislature, passed in 1842, Jeremiah Howe, Charles Wright and Isaac Hayes were appointed trustees of the "Lewis School Fund," to receive the money and apportion it among the several school districts. In 1856 Mr. Lewis turned over to the trustees ninety-nine hundred dollars in stocks and bonds and was relieved from further obligations. In 1884 the income from this fund was three hundred and forty-seven dollars. In 1880 the number of children in the town between the ages of five and twenty-one was four hundred and nine.

LIBRARY.—A library was purchased in 1798 by the inhabitants of the town of Salem (Lewisboro), and was opened to the public in 1799—Aaron Keeler, librarian; and Thomas Rockwell, Samuel Ambler, Isaac Pardee, Thomas Mead and Thatcher Hayes, trustees.

In the spring of 1804 "The trustees of Salem Library met pursuant to public notice and agreeable to the act passed the first day of April, 1796, for the purpose of incorporating public circulating libraries, and proceeded to make certain by-laws for the benefit of said society," etc. The library was incorporated under the general laws of the State. Any person wishing to become a member must be regularly proposed by a member, balloted for and, if accepted, pay fifty cents a year. If books were damaged a fine was imposed. Only one book could be taken out at a time and all members were forbidden to lend books to non-subscribers. The institution flourished for a number of years. New books were added from time to time until the catalogue contained some two hundred volumes. As a new generation came on interest in the institution began to wane. The most valuable books were carried away by any one who took a fancy to them, until of this once valuable collection nothing desirable remains. Sidney R. Lockwood was the last librarian. The Rev. Reuben Frame, pastor of the Presbyterian Church, was at one time treasurer and librarian. Below is a copy of one of his characteristic reports,—

"The Treasurer would report that at the annual meeting of the trustees last March there were in his hands . . .	\$75.72 $\frac{1}{4}$
Since which time he has received	26
Making the sum of	\$75.98 $\frac{1}{4}$
Of which he has expended for books	6.44
Leaving in his hands at present	\$69.54 $\frac{1}{4}$

" R. FRAME.

"The Treasurer and Librarian would beg leave from them to state that if his unfaithfulness in office should not be a sufficient reason for bestowing the honor he has had for three years on some more worthy person, then for different reasons, not necessary to state, he would express the wish not to have the honor placed upon his head, or the burden on his shoulders any longer.

" Most Respectfully Yours, &c.
" R. FRAME "

LEADING RESIDENTS OF LEWISBORO.—On the road leading from South Salem to Cross River stands the palatial residence of the late Cyrus Lawrence (1st), now occupied by his son, James S. Cyrus Lawrence (1st) was born in Lewisboro. He entered into town politics when quite young; served one year as supervisor, three years as town clerk and was a justice of the peace for forty years. In the latter part of his life he engaged quite extensively in the practice of law, and was for some time counsel to the County Board of Excise. He died in 1864, at the age of eighty-one.

Cyrus Lawrence, the present postmaster, was born in Poundridge. In early life he adopted the profession of school-teacher. Subsequently he became a country store-keeper, and after the death of Gould Hawley, in 1864, he was appointed postmaster. In 1872 he was elected justice of sessions in Westchester County, and continued in that office for three terms. In 1876 he ran for county clerk and came within a very few votes of being elected. For many years he has held the office of justice, and at the last session of the Legislature (1884-85) he held the office of index clerk to that body.

Jeremiah Howe was born in Lewisboro. He was a farmer, and was elected supervisor in 1830, holding the office for eight years. In 1850 he was elected town clerk, which office he held fifteen years. Frederick Howe, son of Jeremiah, is the present town clerk, and has already held the office ten years.

On Mead Street, a short distance south of the "Waccabuc House," stands the country residence of Robert Hoe, of New York City. Mr. Hoe is a son of Robert Hoe, one of the celebrated manufacturers of saws and steam printing-presses.

One and a half miles east of Golden's Bridge Depot, on the road to Lake Waccabuc, stands the large three-story farm-house of Mr. E. B. Brady. Mr. Brady is the largest farmer in the town. He is said to be the owner of one thousand six hundred acres of land, and makes about forty quart cans of milk per day.

Edward B. Brady is a son of Simeon Brady, who died at Golden's Bridge, and was a well-known and successful farmer of the town of Lewisboro. Simeon Brady had five children, of whom Edward B. was the third. He was born in Lewisboro, April 5, 1833, and is of the fourth generation residing in that town.

He spent his early childhood in the district school. After leaving this he became actively engaged in the farming and live stock business, together with his father, in which he has since remained. He deals very extensively in cattle, shipping largely from various parts of the West.

Contrary to the generality of Eastern farmers, he has made a success of his business, being now in possession of an extensive tract of land in the northern portion of the county, where he is largely engaged in the production of milk.

He married Julia, daughter of Martin Todd, of



Amiel Hunt



Lewisboro. They have nine children, six sons and three daughters—Arthur L., Julia, Cornelia, Edward, Hortense, Simeon, Martin, Enoch and Harry—all of whom reside with their parents.

Mr. Brady is well known throughout Westchester County and is greatly respected for his steady business habits and his sterling integrity.

Nearer to Golden's Bridge, on the same road, is located the residence of Mr. Norman Merritt, the next largest farmer in the town. Mr. Merritt is the owner of seven hundred and fifty acres of land, and makes about thirty forty-quart cans of milk per day.

Daniel Hunt was of English descent. His father, Daniel Hunt, removed from North Salem to Lewisboro, where he bought a large farm and resided upon it until his death. He had five children, of whom Daniel, the youngest, was born May 19, 1818. Daniel received his education in the district school at South Salem, which he left for the farm at an early age.

Mr. Hunt was for many years prominently connected with every good work in and about Lewisboro and was widely known for his liberality and sterling qualities. In his twenty-third year he was elected supervisor of the town of Lewisboro, which office he filled for thirty-three years consecutively. During the latter portion of this time he experienced no opposition. He was also justice of the peace for many years and filled the position with ability and integrity. He died May, 14, 1874.

He married, January 1, 1851, Jane A., daughter of Jeremiah Howe, of Lewisboro. There are three children—Louisa, Frank and Carrie E.—all of whom reside at the homestead.

CHAPTER X.

POUNDRIDGE.

BY GEORGE THATCHER SMITH.

A QUIET town, lying in the most remote part of the county, and a little apart from the main lines of travel, Poundridge affords no extensive field for the occurrence of notable events, and naturally its history has been a more modest one than that of its larger and more pretentious sister towns in the county. Poundridge is situated upon the eastern border of the county, and, though distant only about sixteen miles in a direct line northeast of White Plains, yet, following the ordinary line of communication and travel, the distance to the county-seat is twenty-five miles. It is one of the oldest townships, having been organized in 1788. Bounded on the north and east by Lewisboro, and on the southeast and south by the Connecticut towns of New Canaan and Stamford, it enjoys the proximity of the "Land of Steady Habits." On the west are North Castle and Bedford. The general surface of the town, as its inhabitants are well aware, is no prairie land, and may be generally described as rough; but it has its compensations in that the land is good and yields a fair return for labor, the springs and streams of water are frequent and abundant, the air of the hills and valleys is fresh,

pure and conducive to long life.

Across the northwest part of the town run the Stone Hills, a high, rugged and broken range, about four miles in length and presenting the wildest and most beautiful scenery in the county. Here, although within fifty miles of New York, the hunter and trapper find the solitude of the original forest, and there are localities in these hills seldom trodden by the foot of man. Here the copperhead or red adder still finds a secure retreat, and numbers of them are yearly killed along the base of the hills. Just opposite this range, to the southeast, rises another high and rocky range, three-quarters of a mile in length, called Candle-wood Hills, a name



Handwritten signature of E. P. Brady

Handwritten signature of J. M. Keck

derived from the excellence of the fuel found there. From the top of these hills a fine view of Long Island, with the Sound and intervening country, is obtained.

About half a mile to the south, upon an elevated ridge, also commanding a good view of Long Island and the Sound, stands the village of Poundridge. It is nearly in the centre of the town and contains two churches, one school-house, one store, a post-office and about twenty dwelling-houses.

Through the eastern part of the town is a chain of ponds, five in number. The most northerly is Cross Pond, covering an extent of one hundred acres, and noted for abundance of fish. This is fed by springs, and has its outlet into Cross River; thence into the Croton. A short distance south of this are, or were, three others—Round Pond, Middle Pond and Lower Pond—all communicating with each other and having an outlet into Tatomuck or Mill River, which empties into the Sound at Stamford. In the year 1869 the Stamford Water Company, looking to the permanence of their water supply, built a dam twenty feet high across the outlet, raising the water so that the three ponds were united in one, which was appropriately called "Trinity Lake." It is a beautiful body of water, one and one-quarter miles in length, with high banks well wooded with evergreen and other trees, and, among the evergreens, fine picnic-grounds, which are becoming quite a resort for parties of pleasure. A natural curiosity of the lake is its floating islands. These, though only a few rods in extent, present the phenomenon of rising to the surface of the water in the summer, and sinking to the bottom of the lake on the approach of winter. Not far from the west shore of the lake is a large boulder known as the "Rocking Stone," and weighing ten tons or more, which is so exactly balanced on a rock beneath, that a child, or even the breeze, can cause it to rock. Several similar boulders lie on the top of a ridge southwest of the lake. A short distance southeast of Trinity Lake, and separated from the Mill River Valley by an intervening ridge, is Mud Mill Pond, a pretty sheet of water in spite of its name. It lies among wooded hills, and its southern extremity reaches into Connecticut.

The surface of the town is uneven, being traversed by broken ridges running in the same general direction—north and south. The high and rugged hills, with the deep adjacent valleys, furnish some fine natural scenery. Specially noticeable are views in the vicinity of the residence of N. B. Adams, opposite the Stone Hills; also about Trinity Lake and along the valley of the Mill River.

The soil is mainly a gravelly loam suitable for grass and pasturage, and yielding a good return in grain and fruit. The prevailing interest is the agricultural, and the proximity of such places as Stamford and Norwalk gives the farmers a good market for their produce. There are no manufacturing establishments, although in years past the making of

boots and shoes was an important industry. The name Poundridge, so say the traditions of the old inhabitants, is derived from an inclosure, or pound, erected in early times on the ridge near the site of the present village, for the purpose of collecting and confining the cattle when they were driven in from the common pasturage on the uninclosed land. Another version is, that the Indians, availing themselves of the Stone Hills on the northwest and the chain of lakes on the east, closed the opening between them with palisades and assembling in large numbers, drove the game from the south and west into the inclosure or pound thus formed. But a thorough acquaintance with the ground will convince any one of the improbability that such a thing has ever been done in that locality. Hence the name could not be derived from the Indian romance, and we must accept the more prosaic derivation.

Poundridge appears to have been included in an Indian grant or sale to Capt. Nathaniel Turner and others in 1640,¹ which grant was confirmed by the Indians to the settlers of Stamford in 1655. The boundaries of the grant are rather indefinite, but included also the towns of Darien, New Canaan and a great part of Bedford and Greenwich.

In making this grant, the chiefs, one of whom was Ponus, "Sagamore of Toquams (Stamford)," reserved a piece of ground for himself and the other Indians to plant on. These grounds were in the vicinity of Stamford, near the street that still bears his name. In 1667 the Indians again confirmed the agreement of 1655. In answer to an application from the proprietors, inhabitants of Stamford, for a confirmation of their title, the General Court of Connecticut, on the 26th of May, 1685, issued a patent to them of which the following is an extract:

[L. S.] "WHEREAS the General Court of Conn. hath formally granted unto the Proprietors, Inhabitants of the Town of Stamford, all those lands, both meadow and upland, within these Buttricks; upon the South East on y^e Five Mile Brook, between Stamford & Norwalk, from y^e mouth of said brook, till it meet with the cross-path that now is where y^e Country Road crosses the said River, and from thence to run up into y^e country till twelve miles be run out upon y^e same line—that is, between Stamford & Fairfield—and upon the West to Totomak Brook, where the lowermost path or road that now is to Greenwich, East by said Brook, and from thence to run in a straight line to the West end of a line drawn from the Falls of Stamford, Mill River, which line is to run a due west point towards Greenwich bounds, a short mile, and from the West end at the said line, to run due north, to the north of the present country road to Rye, and from thence to run up into the country, the same line that is between Norwalk & Stamford, to the end of the bounds, the said land having been, by purchase or otherwise, lawfully obtained of the Indians, native proprietors. &c., &c. Know y^e that the said Gov. and company aforesaid, in general Court, according to the conditions granted to them by his Majesty in his Charter, have given and granted, and by these presents do give, grant, ratify and confirm unto Mr. John Bishop, Mr. Richard Lowe, Capt. Jonathan Selleck, Capt. John Selleck, Lieut. Francis Bull, Lieut. Jonathan Bull, Ensign John Bales, Mr. Abraham Ambler, Mr. Peter Ferris and Mr. Joshua Hoyt, & the rest of the said present proprietors of the Township of Stamford, their heirs, successors and assignees forever, the aforesaid parcel of land, &c., &c., &c. . . .

"In witness whereof, we have caused the Seal of the Colony to be

¹ Stamford Town Records.

hereunto affixed, this 26th of May, 1685, in y^e first year of the reign of our Lord King James the 2d of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith.

“ROBERT TREAT, *Governor.*”

In 1701 occurred another confirmation of title to the inhabitants of Stamford by the Sagamore Catonah and other Indians. The boundaries given on the north—“by the Stone Hills upon a straight line eastward into ye upper end of ye Long Pond and from thence an east line until it meets with a line drawn north from ye upper end of Five-Mile River”—would seem to have included nearly the whole town within the township of Stamford.

In 1731, at a settlement of boundary lines between the colonies, Poundridge fell within the limits of New York.

In 1741 a settlement was made where the village now stands by Joseph Lockwood, James Brown, David Potts, Ebenezer Scofield and others from Stamford. Joseph Lockwood (then seventy-seven years of age) was accompanied by his son Joseph, who had married Sarah, a daughter of Joshua Hoyt, one of the original proprietors, and his grandson Ebenezer, then a boy of six, who was destined to take a prominent part in the coming Revolutionary struggle. Eleven years before this, in 1730, Deacon John Fancher had settled in the town, being, as far as can be ascertained, the first settler. He had seven sons and two daughters and from him are descended all the Fanchers of Poundridge.

No extraordinary event appears to have marked the early years of the settlement. There were no Indian troubles to disturb them; in fact, the Indians had entirely disappeared from view. No record or tradition recalls their presence and were it not for the numerous arrow-heads that have been picked up on the ridge where the village is located, and which proves it to have been an Indian resort, there is nothing to remind one that such a people ever existed.

Accustomed as we are to the rapid growth of our country in population, it appears at first sight remarkable that a town within fifty miles of a great city should, since 1855, have steadily decreased in the number of its inhabitants, until at present the total is not as great as it was ten years after the Revolution. This is due to several causes—first, the lack of special manufacturing facilities and difference in methods of manufacture. Formerly shoemaking was a leading industry in the town. The workmen then went to the “shoe-shops” in adjoining towns, received their work cut out and took it home, each one making the whole article, whether boot or shoe. But now, the invention of machinery and the practice of working in gangs or teams obliges the most of the work to be done in the large factories, so that workmen are compelled to live near the factory, and as farming is almost the only remaining source of employment, it naturally follows that mechanical occupations and business opportunities must

be sought elsewhere, and thus there is a constant drain upon the population.

Another cause lies in the decrease in the number of children. Fifty or sixty years ago there was not a school district but that had several families with from six to ten children each. Now there are very few such families in the town. Twenty-five years ago the number of children of school age (five to twenty-one) in School District No. 5 was one hundred and twenty. Now it barely reaches eighty.

STATISTICS OF POPULATION.

Year.	Pop.	Year.	Pop.
1790	1062	1850	1186
1800	1266	1860	1471
1810	1249	1865	1299
1820	1359	1870	1194
1830	1437	1875	1008
1840	1497	1880	1034

EXTRACTS, CENSUS OF 1880.

Total population	1034
Number of persons above seventy years of age	57
“ “ “ “ eighty “ “ “	13
“ “ “ “ ninety “ “ “	2
Number of voters	322
“ “ children less than one year of age	18
“ “ deaths for year ending May 31, 1880	11
“ “ farms in the town	197
“ “ inhabited dwelling houses	251
“ “ families	273
Average number in a family	3 8-10

Area, 10,914 acres.

Assessed value 1874, \$302,726; Value per acre, \$27.73; Corrected value 1874, \$293,007; Value per acre, \$26.85. Assessed value 1884, \$297,318; Value per acre, \$27.19; Corrected value 1884, \$288,987; Value per acre, \$26.43.

Rate of tax in 1885, 8 36-100 mills on the dollar. This does not include the school or road-tax.

Poundridge is rather remarkable on account of its freedom for many years from the sale of intoxicating drinks. The sentiment and practice of the people here in early times in regard to the use of intoxicating drinks probably did not differ much from that of those in the country generally. Rum and cider were in common and daily use in nearly every family, not even excepting those of the minister and officers of the church. This is proved by the day-books of the village store, fragments of which are preserved which cover a period of several years not long after the beginning of the present century. In these the names of all the principal families of the town occur as debtor for various articles of daily consumption, and in almost every group of charges is found some such item as, “To one Gill of Rum, 6d.,” “1 Pint Rum, 12d.,” “1 Pint of Brandy, —,” “1 drink Rum, 3d.,” etc., the “Gill of Rum” occurring most frequently. Moderation in drinking was the temperance preached in those days, and no doubt it was earnestly advocated; but any one who has talked with the old people about those “old times” will be convinced that the proportion of moderate drinkers was very large. The first men in the town who openly and earnestly advocated temperance on a total abstinence basis

were William L. Smith¹ and Benjamin Keeler, about the year 1826. Meetings were held in the school-houses or in private houses in different parts of the town, and a gradual change in public sentiment took place. But this was not effected without long-continued effort and in the face of strong opposition. The case of Daniel Potts, of Bedford, in 1845, who died on his way home from one of the places in this town where liquor was sold, had much influence in bringing public opinion to the "no license" point; and when, about 1848, the question of "license or no license" was brought squarely before the people to be voted on, the "no license" party had thirty-nine majority. That "settled the question" from that time to this, and no license has been granted since.

The names of most of the early settlers, the Scofields, Fanchers, Boutons, Sellecks, Potts, Hoyts, Adamsons and others are still borne in the town by numerous descendants, but it is noticeable that one family, the Lockwoods, formerly the most numerous and influential, have now but one representative bearing the name. There are also very few left in the town to perpetuate the names of two other of the original families, the Browns and Danns.²

Miles Adams, one of the leading citizens of the town, is descended from Nathan Adams, one of five brothers, who came from England to settle in South Salem (now Lewisboro) prior to the Revolution.



Miles Adams

¹ William L. Smith—great-grandson of Joseph Lockwood, one of the original settlers—was born July, 1803, died January 17, 1885. He early in life identified himself with the temperance cause, and his house issued to have been the first one "raised" in the town without the aid of whiskey. He also showed his disregard of a popular superstition by having the "raising" on Friday. In spite of prophecies to the contrary there was plenty of help at the "raising," many coming from curiosity to see if the frame could go up without rum. He was also the first to discontinue the practice of giving whiskey and cider to his loved men, and all his life was a zealous advocate of total abstinence. In politics he was, in the early part of his life, a Democrat, but with decided anti-slavery opinions, and joined the Republicans upon the formation of that party. He filled in succession all the various town offices, and was an active leader in everything pertaining to the public good. For thirty-two years he was an elder in the Presbyterian Church, and for more than sixty years connected with the Sabbath-school either as teacher or superintendent.

² The genealogies of most of the early families are to be found in papers left by the late Judge Ezra Lockwood, and to memoranda compiled by him; the writer is indebted for many facts contained in these pages.

Nathan Adams had four sons—Abraham, Moses, Nathan and Hosea. Hosea married a daughter of Timothy Reynolds, who was captured by the Indians on Long Island and held by them for seven years, and afterwards escaped to enlist in the patriot army, serving throughout the Revolution and receiving a pension from the government for life. He was the father of six children—Nathan B., Timothy C., Lizetta, Clarissa, Nancy and Sally. Nathan B. was the father of Miles Adams, who has for the past nine years represented the town of Poundridge in the Board of Supervisors.

Mr. Adams was born at Poundridge January 6, 1835. He was educated in the district school of that neighborhood, and for the greater portion of his life has pursued the calling of a farmer. His good judgment, integrity and prudent methods of dealing with men brought him forward years ago as a person worthy of political honors. He has held a number of positions by appointment of the State, and was at one time a lieutenant in the militia under Governor Fenton. During the war he was chosen inspector of elections for seven consecutive terms, casting the soldiers' vote by proxy, and, as stated above, is at present serving his ninth term as supervisor of his native town.

In politics he is a Democrat, but his impartial manner of dealing with political questions has won him many staunch supporters in both parties. For twelve years he has been a member of the County Committee, and has also served a number of times as delegate to State and National Conventions. He is a member of the Methodist Church in his town, of which he has been an official since 1868. His habit of mastering every matter submitted to his consideration has given him a breadth of knowledge and a fund of information which not only makes him a thoroughly intelligent legislator, but also a very active and conscientious Christian.

The line of the projected New York, Portchester and Danbury Railroad runs through the town, about one mile east of the village, and was graded for about one-third of its extent before work was suspended. At present there is a daily mail stage running be-

tween the village and Stamford, Connecticut, a distance of nearly twelve miles. The nearest railroad station is New Canaan, seven miles away. Bedford, on the Harlem Railroad, is eight miles distant from the village.

MILITARY HISTORY.—Nothing took place to excite a military spirit in the people of Poundridge until the contest between England and her colonies, when nearly all the people were found on the right side. There were a few Tories, for tradition has preserved the names of two or three, and a letter¹ from the Committee of Safety (which we here append) confirms it:

“POUNDRIDGE, 15 October, 1776.

“*Hon. Sirs:*

“We, the Sub. Com. of Poundridge, in Westchester Co., beg leave to inform your Honors that we are apprehensive that there is danger of our prisoners leaving us and joining the Ministerial Army, as we are not above 9 or 10 miles from the water where the Sound is full of the Ministerial Ships or tenders. One of our number is already gone to Long Island, and numbers are gone from other places, who are no doubt now with the Ministerial Army. There are disaffected persons daily going over to them, which gives us much trouble. Therefore, we humbly beg your honors would give us some directions concerning them, that they may be speedily removed at some farther distance. We would also inform you that for the misdemeanors of one of them, and our own safety, we have been obliged to commit him to jail at the White Plains; these, with all proper respects,

“From yours to serve,

“JOSEPH AMBLER,

“*Ch. of Com.*”

The year 1779, when the whole county of Westchester was the theatre of blood, rapine and plunder, and life and property were in danger from foes without and traitors within, brought its share of suffering and hardship to the people of Poundridge. The whole of the county below North Castle was in the hands of the British, and from their lines parties of Tories and British made frequent excursions for forage and plunder, keeping the inhabitants in a state of alarm. Neither life nor property were safe. Joseph Pelham, living near the Stone Hills, was awakened in the night by a noise at his barn; going out, he found a party of marauders stealing his cattle, and before he could do anything to stop them he was shot down and killed.

Prudence Smith, daughter of Joseph Lockwood, and niece of Major E. Lockwood, who, at the time of Tarleton's raid, was a girl of eleven years of age, has often told the writer of this chapter that she distinctly remembered that her father and other residents of the village feared at times to sleep in their houses at night, and used to go to a secluded place in the woods, east of the village, and sleep in an old saw-mill. She also had a vivid recollection of the appearance of Tarleton's men as they charged through the village in pursuit of Colonel Sheldon's men “standing up in their stirrups and shouting and whirling their swords over their heads.” She also said that after burning the church they brought fire-brands from it to burn the house she lived in, but just as they

reached it they were fired upon by some militia who were concealed in a field of wheat, west of the village, and dropping the fire-brands, they shouted “The rebels are upon us!” jumped upon their horses and quickly rode off.

The village was at this time occupied by Colonel Sheldon's regiment of light dragoons, who made the house of Major Lockwood² and the church their headquarters. The regiment was engaged in frequent skirmishes with the British and Tories, and it was for the surprise of this regiment, and the capture of Major Lockwood, that Sir Henry Clinton sent Colonel B. Tarleton with a detachment of dragoons and mounted infantry (about three hundred men) on the night of July 1, 1779. The precaution of the Committee of Safety had placed in the enemy's camp below the lines, the spy Luther Kinnicutt who, on the day previous, gave notice to Colonel Sheldon of the intended attack, but could not find out the precise day.

The night proved stormy and the torrents of rain would have retarded the progress of a commander of less intrepidity than Tarleton. Because of the storm, Sheldon apprehended no danger, but took the precaution to have his horses in readiness. Sentinels were placed about a mile from the church, on both the north and south roads leading to Bedford. The sentinel on the north road at early dawn descried a large body of dragoons under rapid movement, who passed the junction of the roads leading from Bedford to Poundridge and continued on toward Ridgefield. This mistake of the enemy in pursuing the Ridgefield Road for half a mile or more gave time for the vidette to return and give notice. Sheldon supposing it might be Colonel Moyland's regiment, which was expected, dispatched Major Talmage, with a few men, to reconnoitre. About half-way to the junction of the roads, as Talmage ascended a hill by the present residence of Nathan Brisco, he met the troops of Tarleton ascending the hill on the other side. Talmage wheeled and returned at full speed with Tarleton at his heels and burst into the village, giving Sheldon's command barely time to mount their horses, which were tied to the fence on the east side of the road by the meeting-house. A general rout ensued. Sheldon's regiment moved off down the road leading to Stamford for about three-quarters of a mile, then separated, part taking the Stamford and part the New Canaan road, with Tarleton's dragoons following and harassing their rear, killing one and wounding and taking prisoners some eighteen or twenty. Among the prisoners taken was Alsop Hunt, a son-in-law of Major Lockwood. Mr. Hunt was a member of the Society of Friends, and although a non-combatant, was an ardent friend of his country. He was taken to New York and lodged in the provost prison.

¹ Records Prov. Cong.

² So conspicuous by this time for his activity in the patriotic cause that a reward of forty guineas was offered for his head.

He would have escaped had not his young wife, Betsy, a girl of seventeen, insisted upon being taken upon the horse with him.

The pursuit lasted several hours, when Tarleton, unable to overtake Sheldon, returned to the village and burned Major Lockwood's house, with most of its contents, one of his officers so far forgetting himself as to strike the major's wife with the flat of his sword upon her refusing to bring him some articles that he demanded. He also burned the Presbyterian church and was about to commit further outrages when the militia rallying, fired upon his troops. He then retreated, carrying away all the plunder possible. He was pursued to North Castle by the militia.

Several incidents of the retreat and pursuit have been preserved and are as follows:

John Buckhout, who happened to be in the rear of Sheldon's regiment during the retreat, was accosted in an imperative tone by a British dragoon, "Surrender, you d—d rebel, or I'll blow your brains out." John, not heeding the threat, was saluted with a pistol-shot, which hit his cap and perforated his scalp on the side of his head without further injury. "There (says the dragoon), you d—d rebel, a little more and I should have blown your brains out." "Yes, d—n you (replied John), a little more and you wouldn't have touched me." John continued his speed and escaped.

Jared Hoyt, a brave soldier also in the rear, was hard pressed by Tarleton's advance, and within striking distance of his assailant, when he received a blow from the heavy cutlass of his pursuer on the head. The blow, accompanied by curses and demands to surrender, only cleft the skin and hair from the side of his head. Hoyt instantly returned the blow back-handed, which struck his assailant directly in the mouth, enlarging that organ from ear to ear, and silencing him.

On returning from the pursuit, three of Tarleton's men stopped at the residence of Judge William Fancher, and while plundering the house of every thing that seemed to them of value, one of the soldiers noticed a chest which was locked, and ordered Mrs. Fancher to bring the key. She refused. He then became abusive and threatened to kill her. One of his companions, a petty officer, told him to let her alone. He thereupon went out and returned with a large stone, with which he smashed in the lid. They took some valuable papers from the chest, and mounting their horses rode a few steps to a little brook, where they stopped to let them drink. At this moment a man named William Brown, standing at a distance of sixty rods, fired at them. The ball, nearly spent, struck the soldier who broke open the chest, upon the top of the head, stunning him so that he fell from his horse. His companions hastily examining him, and thinking him dead, took his money and valuables and rode off. Brown then came up, when the soldier, who was only stunned, began to revive, whereupon Brown placing the muzzle of his gun close to his head, sent a bullet through it. It was a

barbarous act, with no extenuation, save perhaps the bitter state of feeling which the marauders themselves caused by acts of plunder and violence.

The spirit of the women is shown by the answer of Mrs. Sarah Lockwood, who, when the British rode up to her door and demanded—"which way the ——— rebels had gone?" replied, "I know no rebels but yourselves, and you are rebelling against the Almighty."

Following are contemporaneous accounts of the affair:

"Holt's account, published at Poughkeepsie, in the *New York Journal* of July 5th, 1779:

"We hear that last Friday 300 of the enemies' light horse came out as far as Pound Ridge, with intent to surprise part of Col. Sheldon's regiment of Light Dragoons, which was quartered at [Major] Lockwood's. Col. Sheldon having very short notice of their coming, had only just time to mount his horses, when a skirmish ensued, which lasted but a short time. Col. Sheldon being overpowered, was obliged to give way. The enemy burnt the meeting-house and Major Lockwood's house at that place, and would not suffer the family to take anything away. On their return they burnt several other houses and plundered as usual. The militia collected to about 350 and pursued them, but as the enemy were on horse-back they could not overtake them. The enemy lost 2 killed and 4 taken prisoners. Col. Sheldon had 4 of his men taken, and likewise 4 of the inhabitants fell into their hands. The number wounded on either side cannot be ascertained."

"Rivington's account from the *Gazette* of July 7, 1779. Last Thursday night [i. e., July 1st] Lieutenant-Col. Tarleton marched with a detachment of Cavalry, and early in the morning attacked a party of the Rebels' Nags, commanded by a Col. Sheldon, in the neighborhood of Bradford, distant about 32 miles from the British advanced post. The enemy's situation was in a wood, with a Morass on each side, which was intersected by a road, along which they, with great precipitancy, retreated. The Rebel officers and men quitted their Jades and threw themselves over the fences to gain the swamp. By so sudden a flight, in so narrow a road, no great impression could be made, only on the rear, of whom about 22 were killed and wounded. Two corps of Rebel Militia, which had formed on their rear, at the approach of the Legion, quitted their posts, retreating to the Morass. The Colonel finding it impracticable, with his fatigued horses, to pursue them further, returned to the camp of the Rebels, burned and destroyed their whole baggage, and brought off a standard, about 100 helmets and 17 prisoners, with the loss of one corporal of the Legion killed and one Light horseman wounded by some skulking militia firing from fences on his return. They were cautioned by the commanding officer to desist from firing on pain of their houses being consumed, but still foolhardily persevering in their hostility, he was constrained to carry his menaces into execution, and several houses were accordingly destroyed. Amongst the prisoners is one of the Van Tassels, from near Tarrytown, of a pedigree partly Indian, partly Batavian. This despicable cut-throat has of late amused himself with cruelly flagellating numbers of inoffensive women, whom he had suspected of frequenting the New York markets. Four of this handy varlet's brothers also are in safe custody, held as hostages for four men of the Provincial corps, who had been made prisoners on the North River, tried and destined to the cords by their new Republican Legislature. We are assured the enemy has been formally apprised that the fate of the Van Tassel fraternity will depend immediately upon that of the Loyal Provincials. When once the gallows of castigation shall be erected on the side of loyalty, a period to the public and wanton murder of the King's friends will most assuredly follow. One Hunt, formerly of this city, but of late a vender of the confiscated estates of Loyal Refugees, an orator, a misseuger employed by Congress, etc., etc., was at this same time delivered to the custody of W. Cunningham, to sympathize at leisure en Provoct with his friend Van Tassel on the disastrous condition of their paper pastures, the dwindled numbers of Mr. Washington's scald miserables, and the chump-fallen countenance of each delegate at this time composing the distracted continental Congress."

Tarleton's Report to Sir Henry Clinton.

"Dated CAMP ON THE BRONX, July 2, 1779, 11 P.M.

"SIR,

"I have the honor to inform your excellency that I moved with the detachment you were pleased to entrust me with, consisting

of seventy of the 17th light dragoons, part of the legion infantry and cavalry, Queens rangers, Hussars and some mounted yagers, in all about two hundred, at half-past 11 o'clock last night. The weather being remarkably bad, prevented my making North Castle church before 4 o'clock next morning, where I received confirmation of my intelligence relative to the number and situation of Sheldon's regiment and one hundred continental foot, but no tidings of Moyland's regiment of dragoons. I pursued my route through Bedford to Pound Ridge without any material occurrence, in the district of the ridge and within three hundred yards of the enemy, who were not alarmed. My guide in front mistook the road; another guide informed me of the error, and it was rectified as soon as possible. The enemy's vidette had noticed our passing their front. The whole regiment was mounted and formed behind the meeting-house. An attack was instantly made by the advanced guard, consisting of the 17th light dragoons, the ground not allowing more than seven or eight in front. The enemy did not stand the charge; a general route ensued. The difficulties of the country, and there being no possibility of obtaining their rear, enabled the greatest part of the regiment to escape. The pursuit continued for four miles on the Stamford and Salem roads. The loss of men in Sheldon's dragoons, upon inquiry and comparison of accounts, I estimate at twenty-six or twenty-seven killed, wounded and prisoners. But their disgrace in the loss of the standard of the regiment and of helmets, arms and accoutrements was great. A part of the officers' and regimental baggage fell into our hands. I have hitherto omitted mentioning the militia to the amount of one hundred and twenty, who, together with the Continental foot, broke and dispersed at the appearance of the king's troops. The Militia assembled again on eminences and in swamps, and before we quitted the ground on which the first charge was made they fired at great distance.

"We were successful in killing, wounding and taking fifteen of them; the rest hovered almost out of our sight. The inveteracy of the inhabitants of Pound Ridge and near Bedford, in firing from houses and out-houses, obliged (us) to burn some of their meeting and some of their dwelling-houses, with stores. I proposed to the militia terms, that if they would not fire shots from buildings I would not burn. They interpreted my mild proposal wrong, imputing it to fear. They persisted in firing till the torch stopped their progress, after which not a shot was fired. With pleasure I relate to your excellency that the loss sustained by his majesties troops is trifling, one hussar of the legion killed, one wounded, one horse of the 17th Dragoons killed. The whole of the detachment except the above being returned to camp. The infantry of the legion mounted on horses, were extremely fatigued by a march of Sixty-four miles in twenty-three hours.

"I have the honor to be etc.

(Signed,)

"BANASERE TARLETON,
"Lt.-Col. British Legion."

Extract from a letter of an Officer of Sheldon's Regiment, dated "Salem, July 3, 1779."

"Yesterday morning about sunrise, a detachment of the second regiment of light dragoons consisting of ninety men, commanded by Col. Sheldon, posted near Pound Ridge meeting-house, was notified of the advance of the enemy by our videttes. Our horses being previously saddled and bridled, the men were ordered immediately to mount. As soon as we were paraded, the enemy's horse were discovered rapidly advancing, about three or four hundred in number. The enemy having driven in our advanced parties, they began the charge on the detachment which, from the great superiority of the enemy, was obliged to move off. The enemy pushed hard on our rear for more than two miles, in the course of which a scattering fire was kept up between their advance and our rear, and a constant charge with the sword. The country through which we passed being very mountainous and rocky, caused many of our horses to blunder and fall, which occasioned some to fall into the hands of the enemy. We immediately collected some of the Militia and began to pursue the enemy, following them below North Castle Church. They moved off with such great precipitation that we could not come up with them. Before the enemy moved off, they burnt the meeting-house at Pound Ridge and the dwelling-house of Benjamin Hays, at Bedford. They (as usual) plundered most of the houses they came to and set fire to several houses, which they fortunately extinguished. Our loss on this occasion was ten wounded and eight missing and twelve horses missing. The enemy's loss, one killed, wounded uncertain, four prisoners, four horses taken and one ditto killed."

Captain Nathan Lockwood was a Revolutionary soldier of great bravery and eccentric character. He had the misfortune to be taken prisoner by the British during the war, and was confined in one of the prisons of New York. While in confinement he was visited by one Hays, a fellow-townsmen and a Tory. Hays tried to induce him to join the Tories and enlist in a loyalist legion then forming. Lockwood bluntly refused, whereupon Hays began to abuse him, taunting him with his condition as a prisoner, and setting before him the gallows and other miseries to which he and the other rebels would come as a punishment for rebellion. Captain Lockwood promptly told him that as soon as he was released from prison his first business would be to search him out and give him a thrashing. It came to pass in process of time that Captain Lockwood was set free and wended his way homeward, reaching Poundridge late one evening. He passed his own house without stopping and went to the house of Hays, which was several miles farther on, providing himself on the way with a good hickory switch. It was the dead of night and all were in bed. He rapped at the door, and Hays appearing, partly dressed, he made himself known, and, after reminding him of his promise, fell upon him with the switch and gave him a thorough castigation, laying it on with all the energy of an insulted man. He then went to greet his home and family. Time passed on, and about 1822 Captain Lockwood was still living, old and in very moderate circumstances.

A petition was drawn up by his fellow-townsmen, and sent to Congress through General Aaron Ward, then their Representative, asking Congress to grant Captain Lockwood a pension. General Ward presented the petition, at the same time relating the incident above narrated. Congress at once suspended the rules, and unanimously passed a resolution giving Captain Lockwood a pension of eight dollars per month. This is said to have been the first Revolutionary pension granted by Congress. Among those who afterwards obtained pensions were Amos Dixon, Asahel Scofield, Nathan Slauson, Reuben Ayres, Timothy Reynolds, Deacon Thomas Peck and Holmes Austin.

In the War of 1812 the militia of the town were ordered out for short periods of service when New York City and the adjacent coast-line was threatened with attack, but they were not called upon to do any fighting. Quite a number enlisted and served on the northern frontier, but there are no definite statistics at hand in relation to them. Since the passage of the law giving pensions to the surviving soldiers of the War of 1812 about twenty-five soldiers, or their representatives, have enjoyed its benefits.

Soon after the close of the Revolutionary War a uniformed artillery company was organized. It was supported with considerable spirit, and its members were mainly residents of the town. During the War of 1812 it was ordered to New York City. At the

close of the war it was disbanded, but soon after (1816 or 1817) it was reorganized, and Job Hoyt, who was the first lieutenant at the close of the war, was its first captain. It was attached to the Thirty-eighth New York State Militia Regiment, Colonel Andrew Warner, and kept up its organization until 1848. Its numbers varied from fifty to eighty men, and it was supplied with one piece of artillery, a six or eight-pounder, for which a small house was erected in the village. Among its captains were Joseph Miller, William L. Smith, Benjamin Lines, Benjamin Brown, Eleazar Slauson and Asahel Hoyt.

An amusing incident in connection with the history of this company occurred during the anti-rent troubles in New York State. It appearing probable at one time that the services of the militia would be required, the members of the company were one day notified to hold themselves in readiness to march at a moment's notice. Two of the company, struck with panic at the idea which took hold of them of being dragged from their homes and "drafted into the army," immediately "broke for the woods" on the Connecticut line, being resolved to camp out until the "cruel war was over." One of them, in crossing "Mud Mill Pond," broke through the ice, and, after extricating himself, wandered about during the night, and nearly perished with cold and exposure. It was some time before their fears were allayed and they returned home.

The election of Polk¹ was followed by the Mexican War, for which the town furnished no volunteers, but the discoveries of gold in California excited far greater interest. Many had an eager desire to go and seek their fortunes in this new field, and some who could not go themselves were willing to "fit out" others to go, with the hope of sharing the profits. Accordingly, on the 22d of March, 1849, Horace Reynolds, David Potts and Edgar Murray sailed in the ship "Samoset" for San Francisco *via* Cape Horn. On the 10th of September Francis N. Murray and James Thayer left home for San Francisco *via* the Isthmus of Panama. They all reached their destination safely, except Murray, who was taken sick and died on the passage up from Panama to San Francisco. He was buried at sea, opposite St. Nicolas Island. None of the others seem to have realized their expectation of getting rich, and but two (Thayer and Potts) ever came back to Poundridge.

The breaking out of the Civil War, in 1861, called forth a nearly unanimous response from the citizens

of the town in favor of maintaining the Union at all hazards, and the records show that there was no backwardness in contributing both men and money. At this time the town contained about three hundred and forty men of voting age.

Before the close of the war ninety-four residents of the town had enlisted in the army and three in the navy; there were also ten re-enlistments. Of these, forty-one enlisted in New York State regiments and fifty-three in Connecticut regiments. Seven were killed in battle, while seven were wounded and seventeen others were discharged on account of disability caused by wounds or sickness. Thirteen died of disease while in the army, and three fell the victims of inhuman treatment at Andersonville Prison. It is interesting to note that the loss occasioned by disease and disability was more than six per cent. greater among those in New York regiments than among those in Connecticut regiments. Six men deserted after enlistment, but, with one or two exceptions, they were men who were tempted to enlist by the large bounties given in the last year of the war. As to occupation, sixty-one were shoemakers and twenty-eight were farmers. These figures relate entirely to residents of the town and do not include about thirty-six men (non-residents) who were procured by the supervisor to fill the quota of the town under the last two calls of the President, in 1864. These men were paid bounties varying from three to five hundred dollars each. Nothing is known of their subsequent history, as no statistics were ever furnished concerning them, except that the names of sixteen were ascertained and placed upon the town records. The result of the call in 1863, under which the first draft was made, was that the quota of the town was not filled and thirteen men were drafted. In the spring of 1864, when, upon another call of the President for three hundred thousand men, it appearing evident that the quota of the town could not be filled by volunteers without extra inducement, a special town-meeting was held March 23, 1864, at which it was resolved "that each of the 13 men previously drafted should receive \$150. That each Person in the Town liable to draft who should, within a certain time, pay ten dollars to the Supervisor, should, if drafted and held, receive \$300 to help him if he chose to procure a substitute." Under this resolution twelve hundred dollars was paid to the supervisor by those subject to draft.²

The quota of the town (sixteen men) was filled, a bounty of three hundred dollars being paid to each man. Seven thousand dollars was at this time borrowed from the county, known as the "first issue of county bonds." Another call for men soon followed, and another draft was impending. A special town-meeting was held August 5, 1864, to provide for the quota of the town under this call for five hundred

¹In celebrating the election of James K. Polk, on the 9th of November, 1844, an accident happened which injured for life two young men of the town, Eli A. Slauson and Seth Austin. The field-piece belonging to the artillery company was brought to the Meeting House Hill, and while firing a salute, the gun was prematurely discharged while Slauson and Austin were ramming home the cartridge. Slauson was badly burned about the face and body, both his arms were broken above the elbows and his right arm so shattered at the wrist that amputation was necessary. Austin was also badly burned and the fingers of his right hand nearly torn from their sockets.

²There was no person in the town subject to military duty who, at this or any other time, found it convenient to visit a foreign country in order to dodge his obligations as a citizen of the United States.

thousand men. A resolution, somewhat similar to the one passed at the previous March meeting, was adopted—"that each person liable to draft who should at once pay \$10 to the supervisor, should, if drafted and held, have a substitute provided at the expense of the Town; or any such persons choosing to go themselves should receive a sum equal to that paid for substitutes, and those furnishing substitutes for themselves, a like sum." The board of town officers were authorized to issue town bonds for this purpose. The total quota of the town under the last two calls was forty-three. For the first of these, sixteen enlisted men received three hundred dollars apiece; in filling the second, twenty men received five hundred dollars apiece, and seven received no bounty from the town, but were hired by individuals as substitutes. To meet these expenses, town bonds were issued to the amount of seventeen thousand five hundred dollars. This money was mainly borrowed from citizens of the town. Ten thousand two hundred dollars was also borrowed from the county, known as the "second issue of county bonds." Under the second assessment of ten dollars upon those liable to draft, nine hundred dollars was paid in, making the total realized from both twenty-one hundred dollars.

The close of the war left the town with a heavy burden of debt; that is to say, it was large in proportion to the value of the property that must be assessed to pay it. The amount of debt, stated briefly, was town bonds, \$17,500; first issue county bonds, \$7100; second issue county bonds, \$10,200; county bond relief soldiers' families, \$480—total, \$35,280.

From the thirty million dollars appropriated by the State to reimburse counties and towns for money raised to procure volunteers, the town received nine thousand six hundred dollars; but this was mostly applied toward paying the taxes of the town from 1865 to 1868, instead of using it in paying off the debt. The principal of the debt was reduced every year by two thousand dollars, which was raised by direct tax, until, in 1881, the whole was paid and taxes were reduced more than one-half.

Following is a list of names of residents of Poundridge who enlisted in the War of the Rebellion:

David F. Avery, ¹	John W. Brown.
Wm. H. Ambler, ²	Henry C. Brown.
James Allstream.	Adam Billings, ¹
Ed. M. Abbott, ³	Samuel Bouton.
Francis B. Avery, ³	Squire S. Birdsall.
Jonathan Austin.	Isaac B. Brown.
Abram Ackerly, ³	Chas. F. Benger, ⁵
Samuel Bouton.	Chas. H. Corban.
Alpheus Birdsall, ³	Geo. E. Dixon, ⁶
Theo. Birdsall.	Alanson C. Dixon.
Theodorice Barclough, ⁴	Stephen Dixon.
Chas. W. Bishop, ³	Levi Dixon, ⁶
Chas. H. Brush, ¹	Thomas Driscoll, ¹
Francis Bouton.	Douglas Fancher.
Wm. L. Brown, ¹	David Finch.
Francis Bouton.	Geo. W. Finch, ⁷
Geo. W. Brown, ³	David Finch.
O. Scott Brown.	William Fagan.
Ezra B. Bouton, ⁴	Wash. Irving Finch.

Jacob Grant.	Alanson Peatt, ³
Stephen Gamm.	Daniel Randall, ¹
Joseph Hartford.	Seth Remington.
Thomas F. Hartford.	Samuel T. Ready.
Wm. Geo. Hallett, ³	Chauncey Raymond.
Chas. Hamilton, ⁴	Benj. Selleck.
John Hull, ¹	John E. Sarles, ¹
Wilson L. Hull.	Edward Sarles.
Geo. E. Hoyt.	Geo. P. Sarles, ¹
Levi Jones.	Wm. B. Shaw.
Miles O. Jones.	Geo. B. Selleck, ²
Alva Jones.	Geo. J. Stevens.
Stephen Keeler.	Reuben F. Sylvester, ¹
Geo. P. Lawrence, ⁴	James M. Sarles.
John B. Lawrence, ⁵	James B. Slauson, ³
Timothy Murhan.	Reub. F. Sylvester.
Leander Marshall, ²	Nath'l Van W. Sylvester, ¹
Barlow Marshall, ²	Benedict A. Stephens, ¹
Cyrus Marshall.	Andrew J. Scofield.
Elijah Marshall.	Levi Sutton.
Cyrus Miller.	Geo. W. Saunders, ⁹
Isaac W. Miller.	James D. Sarles.
Greenly Marshall, ¹	Wm. S. Taylor.
Mich. L. Murphy.	Linus Wood, ¹
Charles Nichols.	Samuel A. Wood.
Patrick Osborne.	Israel Wood, ¹
Henry Peatt, ¹	Sylvester Wood.
Jas. A. Potts, ⁸	Israel Wood.
Geo. H. Potts.	Hiram Williams.
John Peatt.	Chauncey Wandell, ⁶
Horace Peatt, ³	

In politics the town has usually been nearly equally divided between the two great political parties of the day. As between Whigs and Democrats, the latter had a slight preponderance in their favor. The Lockwood family, as was natural from its position and influence, has figured conspicuously in the politics of the town, and at no time has political excitement run higher than when the brothers, Horatio and Ezra, were the leaders respectively of the Democrats and Whigs. The Republicans first obtained a majority in 1856. The following is the electoral vote as far as can be ascertained:

	1836.	Vote.
Martin Van Buren		118
William Henry Harrison		68
1840.		
Martin Van Buren		140
William H. Harrison		149
James G. Birney (anti-slavery)		5
1844.		
Henry Clay		144
James K. Polk		153
James G. Birney		7
1848.		
Zachary Taylor		128
Lewis Cass		71
Martin Van Buren		37
1852.		
Franklin Pierce		118
Winfield Scott		131
John P. Hale (Free-Soil)		8

¹ Disabled. ² Killed at Gettysburg.
³ Died of disease ⁴ Killed at Petersburg.
⁵ Killed at Fort Fisher. ⁶ Wounded.
⁷ Killed. ⁸ Died at Andersonville.
⁹ Killed at Fort St. Philip.

1856.	
John C. Fremont	143
James Buchanan	45
Millard Fillmore	59
1860.	
Abraham Lincoln	185
Stephen A. Douglass	143
1864.	
Abraham Lincoln	154
George B. McClellan	146
1868.	
U. S. Grant	167
Horatio Seymour	145
1872.	
Horace Greeley	131
U. S. Grant	127
1876.	
Samuel J. Tilden	166
R. B. Hayes	150
Peter Cooper	0
1880.	
James A. Garfield	157
W. S. Hancock	144
J. B. Weaver	0
1884.	
Grover Cleveland	145
James G. Blaine	119
B. F. Butler	0
J. P. St. John	5

SUPERVISORS OF THE TOWN.

Names.	Term of Office.
Ebenezer Lockwood	1772-1779
William Fancher	1780-1781
Ebenezer Lockwood	1782-1786
William Fancher	1788-1801
Ebenezer Lockwood	1802-1806
Ezra Lockwood	1807-1819
Horatio Lockwood	1820-1823
John G. Ferris	1824
Horatio Lockwood	1825-1839
William Lockwood	1840-1843
Alsop H. Lockwood	1844-1853
William L. Smith	1854-1855
Alsop H. Lockwood	1856-1868
David W. Miller	1869-1871
Stephen Taylor	1872
Daniel B. Rockwell	1873
Miles Adams	1874-1877
D. N. Chichester	1878-1881
Miles Adams	1882-1885

RELIGIOUS DENOMINATIONS.

The churches of the town are all modest frame buildings, put up in the simplest style, and but one, the Presbyterian, is furnished with a bell.

PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.—The original settlers of Poundridge were English, descendants of the English Puritans, of New England; consequently the meeting-house soon followed the dwelling-house. The oldest record extant with regard to a house of worship is one which begins as follows:

“OLD POUNDRIDGE, January 7, 1760.

“A society's meeting legally warned and accordingly met—of which
 “1st, Ebenezer Scofield chose moderator by maj. vote
 “2d. And the same meeting William Jarvis, clerk by maj. vote.
 “3d. By maj. vote concluded to build a meeting-house in this place, on condition we can get a subscription sufficient to build such a house as shall be convenient, etc.”

There were fourteen resolutions in all, the substance of which was, that the meeting-house should be built on the “Burying Hill,”¹ so called (three-fourths of a mile south of the village); that it should be thirty-six feet long and thirty wide; that the head carpenter should receive four shillings per day, the hewers three shillings and scorers two shillings six pence;—that a man with four good cattle for drawing timber should get eight shillings.

The results of this meeting do not appear to have been satisfactory, for a subsequent meeting was held, of which the following is a copy of the proceedings:

“OLD POUNDRIDGE, Feb. 15, 1760.

“A Societies Meeting legally warned accordingly meet.
 “1st. By a Maj. Vote, Capt. Reuben Lockwood, chose Moderator.
 “2d. Wm. Jarvis, Clerk by Maj. Vote.
 “3d. By Maj. Vote it is concluded to build a Meeting-House in this place.
 “4th. By Maj. Vote it is concluded to build a Meeting-House on the Hill betwixt Joseph Lockwood's House and Ebenezer Lockwood's Barn.
 “5th. By Maj. Vote, Lieut. Fancher, Ebenezer Scofield, Ebenezer Lockwood, Nathaniel Bouton and John Crawford is appointed to pitch the spot on the Hill aforesaid, and lay a heap of stones where the Meeting-House should set.
 “6th. By Maj. Vote, Eben Scofield, John Fancher, Samuel Ferris, Nathl Bouton and Israel Lockwood are appointed Committees to act on the affair of building the Meeting-House on the Hill aforesaid.
 “7th. By Maj. Vote it is concluded that the Meeting-House should be clabboarded.
 “8th. By Maj. Vote it is concluded to build a Meeting-House 36 ft. long, 30 ft. wide with 16 ft. Posts.
 “9th. By Maj. Vote it is concluded that if the aforesaid Com. can get the Subscription of 67 £, that the Com. is to proceed in building. Furthermore, every one that subscribes to give any thing towards the building, is hereby obligated to pay their respective subscriptions on the Committee's demand, either in work or money.
 “10th. By vote it is concluded that common laborers shall have 2s. 6d. per day and a Man and Team of 4 cattle shall have 6s. per day.

“In pursuance of the foregoing resolutions,” says an old record, “a meeting-house was erected on the site where the present meeting-house stood in the highway, previous to its removal to the present site, and which first meeting-house was built soon after the meeting was held, as last stated, but having been burnt by a detachment of the British dragoons, under command of Colonel Tarleton, on the 2d of July, 1779, the present house was erected on the same site in the year 1786, and removed a little farther back from the highway to its present position, in 1833.”

The Presbyterian congregation thus organized was

¹ Copy of Old Record.—It will be recollected that in the early settlement of Poundridge, it was within the ecclesiastical jurisdiction of Rye and tributary or paid tithes to the support of the Episcopal Clergy of the present Township of Rye. The first settlement of Poundridge was under a grant from the Gen. Court of Ct. in 1683, and was mostly included within the limits of that grant. After the establishment of the present boundary line of Connecticut in 1730, four miles of the territory adjoining Connecticut was claimed by the Patentees of the original grant to the Township of Stamford, and by them distributed to the respective owners in 1757, after setting apart a lot of land including the Burial Ground and about ten acres adjoining, at the junction of the roads $\frac{1}{4}$ of a mile South of the Village. This was the first grant of land given for the use of a Presbyterian Minister, and in his absence, for the use of common school in Poundridge. On this ground the first School-House in the Town was built.”

not incorporated until April 28, 1788, under act of Legislature, passed April 6, 1784. The trustees at the time were

"certified to be Nathl Bouton, William Fancher, John Hoyt, Benaiah Brown, Thaddens Seymour and Ebenezer Seymour, them and their successors to be a body corporate and forever and hereafter known by the name of the Trustees for the Pres. Ch. and Congregation of Poundridge to be governed in discipline and worship according to the Directory of now established church of Scotland.

"Signed by

" JOSEPH LOCKWOOD,
" EBENEZER LOCKWOOD.

"Recorded July 19, 1790."

The first settled minister was the Rev. Mr. Strong, in 1770. Rev. Blackleash Burritt was ordained on the 15th of June, 1774, and continued the settled minister until after 1776. From that time there was no settled minister over the church till 1790, when Rev. Benjamin Judd was ordained. "In the interim



THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, POUNDRIDGE.

the church had occasional supplies. Mr. Brush, — Kittletas, — Murdock (1786) are remembered.²¹ After Mr. Judd, Rev. Abram Barfield was hired to preach for a year. Next Rev. Samuel Blatchford supplied the place and Bedford for a year, when he was called to Greenfield, Connecticut, to succeed Dr. Dwight, called to the presidency of Yale College. Next came Rev. Abner Benedict, who stayed two years and more. In 1800 Rev. Richard Andrus was engaged from year to year, to preach and continued, with the exception of one year (1817), until the fall of 1818. Mr. Bronson, of Yorktown, then preached half the time for a year, and was succeeded in the summer of 1819 by Rev. John G. Lowe, who stayed until January, 1822.

Up to 1800 the church had been in connection

¹ Old Record.

with the Presbytery of Dutchess, but Mr. Andrus and Mr. Lowe belonged to a Presbytery² which had seceded from the Synod and Presbytery of Dutchess, and during their ministry the relations of the church to its own Presbytery practically ceased. In 1822 the church sent a memorial to the Presbytery of North River, asking to be reorganized and received under its care. The request was granted, and the Rev. Jacob Green, of Bedford, and Rev. C. F. Butler, of South Salem, were appointed a committee to visit the church and preside over the reorganization. This was effected July 2, 1822. In the year 1828, as some doubt existed with regard to the legal incorporation of the church,³ they resolved upon a new act of incorporation. This was effected April 22, 1828, under the title of "the Presbyterian Church and Congregation of Poundridge, belonging to the Presbytery of North River, under the care of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in the United States. Horatio Lockwood, Joseph St. John and Samuel Weed were elected trustees. Signed,

"Witness: " REUBEN AYRES,
" JACOB GREEN. " ABIJAH ST. JOHN.
"Recorded April 26, 1828."

Following is a list of the pastors:

When Installed.	Names.
1770	Rev. — Strong.
1774	Rev. Blackleash Burritt.
1777-88	Supplies Occasional.
1788	Rev. Benjamin Judd.
1794	Rev. Abram Barfield.
1795	Rev. Samuel Blatchford, D.D.
1796	Rev. Abner Benedict.
1800	Rev. Richard Andrus.
1819	Rev. J. G. Lowe.
1824	Rev. Asahel Bronson.
1825	Rev. Daniel Crocker.
1827	Rev. Henry Dean.
1832	Rev. John White.
1833	Rev. Robert G. Thompson.
1835	Rev. William Patterson.

STATISTICS OF CHURCH MEMBERSHIP.

Year.	No. Members.	Year.	No. Members.
1788	32	1856	95
1806	49	1866	99
1826	46	1876	84
1836	62	1884	84
1846	90		

Rev. William Patterson, the present pastor, came to Poundridge in July, 1835, was ordained February 9, 1836, and completed the fiftieth year of his ministry in this place on the second Sabbath of July, 1885. Of the sixty-two members of the church at the time of his ordination but four are living,—Sarah C. Patterson (his wife), Charlotte Smith, Sabrina Sniffin and Mrs. Aug. Dixon. His extended pastorate in this place and the estimation in which he is held by

² Morris County Presbytery.

³ The doubt was caused by the temporary disappearance of the record of incorporation from the county clerk's office. After the termination of a certain lawsuit in which the trustees were engaged on behalf of the church, it was found in its place again.

the people of this and the adjoining towns calls for something more than brief allusion. A sketch in the *Stamford Herald* of May 7, 1884, says,—“He came here a half-century ago in the full flush of youth, fresh from his theological studies in Philadelphia. After a brief residence he married Miss Sarah Thatcher, a resident of the village and a member of one of the most prominent families of the time, and through the whole fifty years of his ministerial work she has been a most faithful and happy ally in her husband’s pastoral labor. She has shared in an equal degree the honor, respect and love ever accorded to Mr. Patterson, and with him has withstood in a remarkable degree the advance of years. In this aged minister gentleness, refinement, scholarship and piety are beautifully blended in a character which his



REV. WILLIAM PATTERSON.

parishioners truly revere; and their friendship, cemented by years of affectionate intercourse, is tender, close and beautiful. In his nature Rev. Mr. Patterson is genial and generous-hearted. He is possessed of intellectual power and strong sympathies, and gifted with great personal magnetism. In personal appearance he is not at all bowed down by the weight of years, but is erect, of average height and somewhat inclined to *embonpoint*,—in short, an example of splendid physical development. His hair, always closely trimmed, has been for many years white as the driven snow, and more than aught else gives him the appearance of age. In conversation he is exceedingly interesting, and his language sparkles with the proverbial wit and humor that characterize his countrymen. His salary is modest, but he occupies a convenient and cosy manse, and lives comfortably

and contentedly with his wife and two daughters. The fervent prayer of every member of his congregation is that he may be spared many years yet to minister unto them.”

METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—Of the Methodist Episcopal Congregation of Poundridge, an old record says,—“This religious organization owes its paternity in Poundridge to Henry Eames, a religious enthusiast, born in Ireland, emigrated hither soon after the Revolutionary War, and who may be justly called the Father of Methodism in this place. Eames spent much of his time in endeavoring to make converts. About the year 1785 he was visited by Thomas Coke, mentioned in the early history of Methodism as ‘Doctor or Bishop Coke.’ Coke while here preached in the house of Captain Joseph Lockwood, and was the first Methodist who ever preached in this place. The first converts were made in the neighborhood of Dantown some years after the preaching of Coke, and the first Methodist meeting-house ever built in this or any adjoining town was erected by a few individuals, on land given for the purpose by Squire Dan, near the Connecticut line. This was about 1795. A house was built by individual subscription, and was to belong to the subscribers in proportion to the sums respectively gave.”

The instrument bears date June 10, 1797, and is in these words,—

“POT NERRIDGE, JUNE 10, 1797.

“Whereas, a few of the people of this Society and neighborhood have gone forward and raised and covered a House standing near Samuel Selleck, for the purpose of Publick worship in the name of Methodist, and we being willing to know the Proprietors of said House, we do here put the names and the sums of each Proprietor, viz,—

£ s. d.		£ s. d.	
Squire Dann	20 2 6	Elisha Waters	0 12 6
Daniel Weed	16 12 9	Darling Selleck	7 8 6
James Dann, Jr.	12 4 0	Nathan Selleck	0 14 0
Enoch Stevens	5 11 6	Isaac Selleck	2 16 2
Samuel Dann	13 14 0	Samuel Selleck	5 0 0
Henry Eames, Jr.	3 10 0	Thomas Selleck	4 4 0
Israel Slason	6 0 6	Jonathan Slason	2 0 0
James Jones	1 1 10	Daniel Slason	1 18 4
Moses Stevens	2 6 0	Elihu Slason	1 10 0
Aaron Waters	2 7 6	Simeon Slason	1 16 10
Nathaniel Dann	1 10 6	Jonas Slason	1 10 0
James McDonald	1 4 0	Selleck Scofield	0 12 0
Thomas Eames	0 10 0	Brother Lyon	0 10 0
James Dann, Sr.	8 14 3	Brother Sanford	0 8 0

By these records it appears that the house was owned and built by individuals, each one owning a share in proportion to the size of his contribution, and was not the property of a religious corporation. The building continued to be the settled place of worship of the Methodist Society until a meeting-house was built in the village of Poundridge in 1833, when the Dantown Station was abandoned as the regular place of worship. Most of the owners, however, still adhered to the old church, and meetings continued to be held there in connection with the Methodist Protestant Society of East Poundridge.¹

¹ They also objected to the use of the word *Episcopal* and to the government by Bishops, holding that the simple word *Methodist* was the title of the Church.

The dissensions that arose finally resulted in the pulling down of the old church in 1842, when the Rev. Mr. Sizer was on the circuit.

The Methodist Episcopal congregation was first incorporated in 1822, James Brown, John Haws and Samuel K. Olmsted, trustees. A second incorporation took place December 21, 1832, and about this time a lot was purchased in the village and a house of worship erected adjoining the residence of the late Judge Ezra Lockwood.

Following is a list of the ministers in charge :

Date of Service.	Name.
1833-34.	Revs. — Francis.
	— Hibbard.
1835	— Davenport.
1836	Hill and Ostrander.
1837	— Gothard.
1838	— Oldrin.
1839	J. Stebbins.
1840	I. Sanford.
1841-42.	— Sizer.
1843	— Washburn.
1845	George Waterbury.
1847	John T. Mulnex.
1848-49.	W. W. Brewer.
1850-51.	M. N. Olmsted.
1852-53	J. A. Selleck.
1854-55	J. Henson.
1856-57.	E. Oldrin.
1858-59.	Harvey Husted.
1860-61.	T. D. Little.
1862-63.	F. W. Smith.
1864-65	A. K. Crawford.
1866	W. Ross.
1867-69.	H. Scofield.
1870	W. H. Bangs.
1871-72	W. Gothard.
1873-74	W. L. Holmes.
1875-76	J. H. Crofut.
1877-78	Sylvester Smith.
1879-80	W. T. Gilbert.
1881-83	B. A. Gilman.
1884	J. S. Haugh.

The number of church members in 1885 was seventy.

The church is attached to the New York East Conference, and at present the church at High Ridge, Conn., is combined with it, under the care of the same pastor.

M. E. CHAPEL.—In 1873 a society was formed and a neat little chapel built at Great Hill, in the southwest part of the town. This is in connection with the Methodist Episcopal Church, and has regular preaching by a minister on this circuit. The number of members at present is twenty-eight.

The following ministers have had charge: Revs. Goodenough, Baker, Taylor, Powell, Still, Roden, Dossy, La Cour, Bennetto and Seiber.

METHODIST PROTESTANT CHURCH.—In the year 1834 a church was erected in East Poundridge, on a site given by Seeley Fancher. The society was formed several years previous to this, but was not incorporated until March 14, 1833, under the title, "The Methodist Protestant Church and Society in Poundridge." It was reincorporated November 2, 1846, ii.—50

under the title "The Trustees of the Methodist Protestant Society of Poundridge." Seeley Fancher, William Brown and Joseph Waterbury were the trustees.

Following is a list of the pastors :

Time of service.	Names.
1832-33	Revs. — Bosley.
1834	I. Lounsbury.
	John Ambler.
1835	I. Lounsbury.
	J. Timmermann.
1836-38.	S. N. Henderson.
	G. N. Langdon.
1839-41.	M. R. Lent.
	E. W. Griswold.
1842-44.	Robert Woodruff.
1845-47.	Ransom Ballou.
1848-50.	William Harris.
1851-53.	William M. H. Smith.
1854-55.	Fred. Dickerman.
1856	O. H. Dickerson.
1857-58.	Duke Whitely.
1859-60.	John Morris.
1861	Joshua Hudson.
1862-65.	J. H. Painter.
1866-67.	Stephen Baker.
1868-69.	George W. Dykerman.
1870	G. E. Saunderson.
1871	J. G. Dyer.
1872-75.	H. S. Hull.
1876-78.	Abram J. Conklin.
1879-80.	J. H. Holden.
1881-82.	Samuel Thompson.
1883-85.	Theodore L. Dibble.

The present membership of the church numbers fifty-two, having somewhat decreased within the last few years.

CEMETERIES.—Of the burying-places in the town, the oldest is "Burial Hill," about three-fourths of a mile south of the village. Here lie the remains of some of the earliest inhabitants, and here repose representatives of all the principal families of the town for more than a century past. But few stones remain to identify the graves of those who were buried previous to 1800, and on part of these the inscriptions are illegible. Among the oldest are "Thaddeus H. Lockwood, died in 1774;" "John Ferris, died 1778;" "A. B., 1771;" "J. M. L., 1787;" "Major Ebenezer Lockwood, born 1737, died July 29, 1821;"¹ "Capt. John Guerrill, born in Nantucket, Mass., Dec. 7, 1795, died in Cronstadt, Russia, June 3d, 1831."²

¹ Major Ebenezer Lockwood, son of Captain Joseph Lockwood, came with his father from Stamford in 1744, being then a boy of six. At the death of his father, in 1757, the patrimony of four or five hundred acres (comprising the land on which stands the present village) was divided between himself and only surviving brother. At the age of twenty-five he was appointed one of His Majesty's justices of the peace, an office which he held until the Revolution. He took an active part in that struggle, was a major in the Continental army, a member of the Committee of Safety, member of the Provincial Congress, and by his activity was so obnoxious to the British officers that they offered a reward for his head. After the war he was a member of the convention for forming a State Constitution, was appointed a judge of the county, sent several times to the Legislature and held other offices of trust. He was the father of Horatio and Judge Ezra Lockwood, both men of some note in the county, and grandfather of the late Alsop H. Lockwood, for many years supervisor of the town of Poundridge, and at one time sheriff of Westchester County.

² Captain John Guerrill married Hannah Thatcher, a granddaughter of Major Lockwood.

One of the most prominent is that to the memory of Captain Jonah G. Hoyt,—

Jonah G. Hoyt,
Capt. 2d N. Y. S. M., died July 4, 1863,
from wounds received at the battle of Gettysburg,
aged 37 yrs. & 10 mo.

"We'll meet again, came from the lips of the warrior, bold and brave,
Where war's red plains no more we'll see; no more the bloody wave.
We'll see no more our banner float upon the battle plain,
Where war's dread voice strikes on the ear,
On high we'll meet again."

The Presbyterian Society have now a new cemetery about one mile west of the old one, near the residence of D. N. Chichester. The other burial-places are mostly family plots. In one near the chapel at Great Hill is a monument to Captain Greenleaf B. Miller, a promising young officer, and more than ordinarily gifted with qualities that endeared him to a large circle of friends. He served in the War of the Rebellion, enlisting as private in the Ninetieth New York Volunteers, and rose by successive steps to the rank of captain. He died while still in the service of his country. He was a contributor to some of the literary papers of the day, and the epitaph on his monument was composed by himself. It is as follows:

"Capt. G. B. Miller
117 U. S. C. T.
died at
Brazos de Santiago,
Texas.
March 1st, 1867.
aged 34 years.

"Thus is human life uncertain
As the streamlet's silvery gush;
Like the bird that tarrys only
For a season in the bush;
Like the Flowers that bloom in autumn
Pass we from the stage of life,
But we've then a rest eternal,
And a home of joy supernal,
'Yond all touch of blight and strife."

SCHOOLS.—The town is divided into seven school districts, and the buildings are so placed that no child is more than one and a half miles from the nearest school-house. The number of children of school age in 1883, was two hundred and thirty-two; in 1884, two hundred and twenty-four. The amount of public money appropriated in 1884 was \$613.99; amount raised by tax in 1884, \$720.61—total expense for public schools in 1884, \$1334.60.

Gen. J. Smith

CHAPTER XI.

BEDFORD.

BY JOSEPH BARRETT.

THE town of Bedford is situated about forty miles north of the city of New York. It is bounded north by Somers and Lewisboro, east by Lewisboro and

Poundridge, south by Poundridge and North Castle, and west by New Castle. In shape it is nearly square, except where the Croton River cuts off the northwest corner.

The surface, like that of the neighboring towns, is greatly diversified, forming here and there ridges, mostly fertile and well cultivated, with valleys between, through which flow the principal streams. There are also many hills or peaks, prominent among which are Mount Aspetong, a mile north of Bedford village, and Noname's Hill, called after Noname, one of the Indian chiefs, and Guard Hill, the two last-named in the southern part of the town.

There are plains of considerable extent about Bedford village, and one north of Mount Kisco, called by the early settlers Cisqua Meadow.

The soil varies as greatly as the surface, and the classification of the Indian deeds, "upland, meadow and swamp," still holds good. On the ridges is generally found clay loam. In the valleys are many natural meadows, still untouched by the plow, after two centuries of civilized ownership, and there are swamps, but of limited area. Nearly every farm has its tract of woodland, a relic of the "forest primeval." A striking natural feature of the soil of the town is a strip of land called sometimes the "Sand Belt," beginning at the north side of the town at Katonah and running across the town southeasterly, about parallel with the eastern boundry and averaging half a mile in width. On this tract the uplands are generally loam or sandy knolls, but swamps and natural meadow are found in the low lands.

The principal streams of the town are the Croton (Indian, Kitchawan), which forms the boundary on the northwest for nearly three miles; the Cross River (Indian, Peppenegbek), named from John Cross, one of the first pioneers; the Mianus, which flows into the town and out again near the southeast corner; the Beaver Dam, Broad Brook, David's Brook, Miry Brook, Spruce Brook, one of the boundaries of the Indian deeds, Kisco Brook and Kisco River, near Mount Kisco. The last-named was for its whole length, down to Croton River, the western boundary of the town as bought from the Indians.

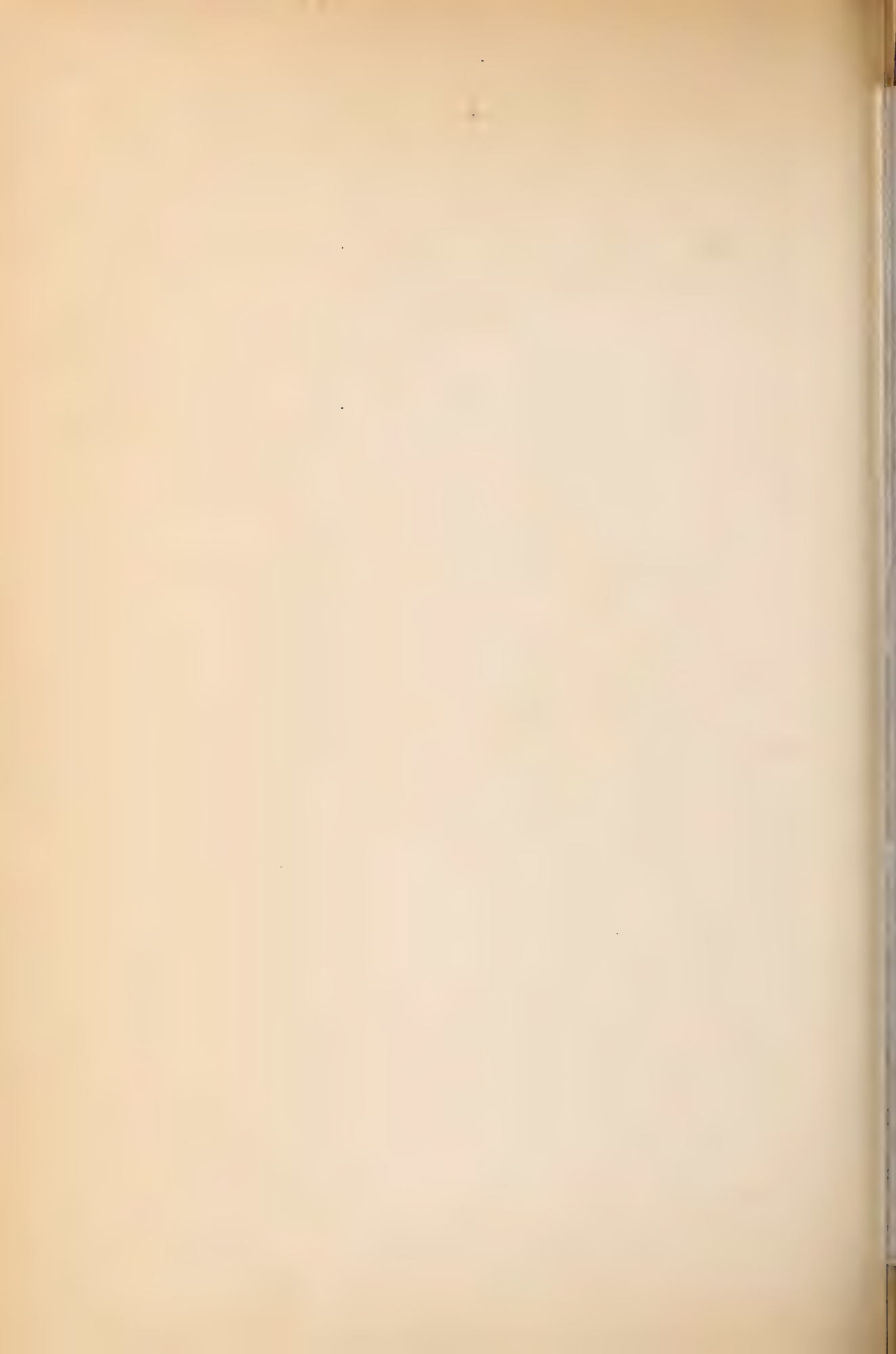
The people of Bedford are a community of farmers, the substantial descendants, in great part, of the early settlers, whose names are perpetuated throughout the town.

The late James Washington Anderson was the youngest of five children of James W. Anderson, an Englishman by birth, who came to New York to reside.

His mother's maiden name was Elizabeth Semler. She was of an old Knickerbocker family, whose home was a farm-house, standing where Stephenson's car factory now is, in Twenty-seventh Street, New York. Upon her marriage, her father gave to her husband and herself a small farm in the neighborhood, the house being at the corner of Twenty-ninth Street and



Gen. R. Anderson



Broadway, where the Gilsey House stands. This continued to be their home during their lives, he dying in 1829, and she, surviving him nearly forty years, occupying it till her death in 1868. There James Washington Anderson was born June 29, 1817. His education was mainly received at private schools in the city, chiefly at Stephens' High School. As he grew into boyhood, he developed such a strong taste for a military life, that it became his father's purpose to send him to West Point, but when he was twelve years old his father died, and the project was abandoned. When old enough, however, he joined the Seventh Company of the Twenty-seventh Regiment, New York State Artillery, and served seven years. This organization was afterwards merged into the now famous Seventh Regiment, so that he was one of the Seventh Regiment Veterans. He was also in early life an enthusiastic member of the Volunteer Fire Department.

Having inherited from his father property sufficient for his comfortable support, he engaged in no business beyond caring for the real estate, which the growth of the city soon brought into the market. He resided with his mother and led a quiet life, finding his amusements in athletic and field sports. On the 10th of March, 1853, he was married to Miss Harriet E. Cory, of Morristown, N.J., and removed to East Chester, in this county, in the month of May following. For nearly twenty years that was his home. In 1872, he bought the farm in Cherry Street, near Katonah, known as the Alfred Wood place, and lived there for the remainder of his life. Some years later he purchased the farm adjoining on the south, known to old residents as the Harry Haight farm, and subsequently the property formerly owned by Squire Wood, Sr., and other smaller places, and interested himself in their cultivation and improvement. From the time Mr. Anderson came to the town, he won the respect and esteem of all who knew him. He took a strong interest in town affairs, and was a liberal and public spirited citizen. He was an earnest and uncompromising temperance man, and in the spring of 1880, consented to be the candidate of the "No License" people for Excise Commissioner, though he

had previously declined to accept any public place, and was handsomely elected, being the first man chosen in the town on that issue. He was re-elected in 1883, and held the office at the time of his death.

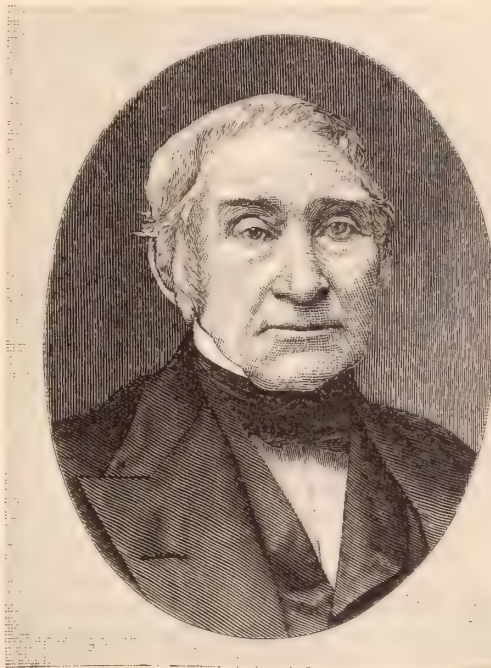
He was a man of plain tastes, of vivacious temperament, of genial and sociable disposition, and of the most scrupulous integrity and uprightness. All through his life he was a lover of nature in her various forms, and even his chance acquaintances knew his enthusiasm for trees and flowers. His long rambles with dog and gun, more for the ramble than for the game, were among his greatest pleasures, so long as his health permitted.

He became a member of the Methodist Church while in East Chester. When the new church at Katonah was built in 1875, he was a liberal contributor, and was for several years one of its officers.

In the spring of 1883 his constitution was seriously weakened by an attack of pneumonia, which nearly cost him his life. Early in 1885 disease of a pulmonary nature again seized him, and after months of painful illness, he died on October 25, of that year.

Mr. Anderson had three children, James M., Eugene, and Elizabeth, who, with his widow survive him.

Amos Newman, another of the representative citizens of Bedford, was born at Carmel, Putnam Co., November 2, 1797. His father, Stephen Newman



Amos Newman

was related to the Bedford family of that name, and his mother was Eunice Hait or Hoyt, the name being spelled and pronounced both ways indifferently. Her family has also long been resident in the town. During Mr. Newman's youth his parents removed to Bedford, and lived on the farm now owned by Mr. E. J. Purdy, a short distance east of Katonah. He was married, January 4, 1826, to Phebe Powell, daughter of Abraham Powell, of Bedford, and continued for the next four years to reside with his parents. At the end of that time he went to live on the Powell homestead, the early home of his wife, near Cantito Corners, now owned by the Messrs Lyon. Here, with his three brothers-in-law, Jared, Abraham and Dickinson Powell, he made his home for twenty-five years, and here

several children were born, only one of whom, Stephen P. Newman, lived to reach manhood. In 1855 he bought of Thomas S. Lyon the farm a mile east Katonah, and in 1862 built a handsome house, of which was his home during the remainder of his life.

His later years brought a severe affliction in the death of his only son. Stephen P. Newman was married October, 9, 1867, to Miss Clarissa, daughter of Phineas Lounsbery, of Bedford, and sister of the late Doctor S. Stephen Lounsbery, of Mamaroneck; was taken ill upon his wedding journey, and died at Niagara Falls on the 22d of the same month. Deprived thus painfully, by death, of the only stay of their declining years, the aged parents placed their affections upon the youthful widow, who after that time lived with them, making it the purpose of her life to contribute to their comfort, and being cherished as a daughter in return.

Mr. Newman died March 1, 1880, his widow surviving him until the fall of 1885. He was a man of unassuming manner and industrious habits. Having no ambition beyond the honorable and successful pursuit of his calling, he attained that object, and died as he had lived, respected by the community where his life was spent.

The average extent of the farms of Bedford is, perhaps, not much above one hundred acres each, though there are a considerable number twice that size, and here and there one of three or four hundred acres. Formerly all farm products were conveyed with great labor either to villages on the Sound or on the Hudson. The building of the Harlem Railroad, about forty years ago, changed this, and changed also the character of farm products. Instead of producing wool, flax, grain and butter, the majority of farmers now turned their attention to the production of milk for the New York market.

The town has never possessed manufacturing interests of importance, beyond such of the ordinary mechanic arts as are necessary for the convenience of her own people. The factory of the American Lens Company, established a few years ago at Katonah, is the only one now in operation in the town. It gives employment to about thirty persons.

There are in Bedford four villages—Bedford, Katonah, Bedford Station and Mount Kisco.

The first-named was the site of the original settlement, and the nucleus of the present town. Occupying one of the most picturesque spots in all this region of country, it early became the most prominent village of the north part of the county, if not of the whole county,¹ and soon after the establishment of the State government it was made a half-shire town with White Plains.² The present court-house was built in 1787, but courts had been held in the Presbyterian

meeting-house before that date. The town continued to be one of the county-seats till 1868, when the holding of courts here ceased, by act of the Legislature. Several years after that date the old court-house was presented to the town by the Board of Supervisors, and is now used for elections and other local public purposes. It is rapidly going to decay. Down to the end of the stage-coaching days the village was a considerable business centre, but after the building of the New York and Harlem Railroad, which is four miles off at the nearest point, trade and travel were diverted to the stations, and since that time its history has been quiet and uneventful. It has always been a healthful and agreeable place of residence, and of late it has been greatly embellished by the liberality of some of its citizens, notably Messrs. James and Richard Lounsbery. The Presbyterian, Methodist and Catholic Churches are situated within a few steps of each other. The old Bedford Academy, the former Bedford Female Institute, and the district school complete the list of public buildings. There is no hotel, though for many years one was kept opposite the court-house, where Cornelius Seely kept the "ordinary" in 1698. There are six or seven stores and shops. One mile north is a small hamlet of a dozen houses, where the Episcopal and Baptist Churches are, and where formerly were two stores. This has sometimes been called the upper village of Bedford, but it has no distinctive name.

The place where Katonah now is was open farmland when the railroad reached this point, in 1848. Whitlockville was half a mile to the west, and that was for the first few years the name of the station and the post-office. The present name was chosen in honor of the old chief whose home is supposed to have been in the northern part of the town. The place, though picturesque in its surroundings, has but scanty natural advantages in the way of attractive building sites or extended streets. The Cross River flows through the village, and furnishes power for the American Lens Factory and Cox's Mills, at Whitlockville, or the "old village," as it is now usually called. In 1873 a serious fire occurred, which destroyed several stores and houses, and for a year or two had a discouraging effect on the growth of the place. This gave rise to the formation of the Katonah Fire Department, consisting of three companies, which has been maintained since that time, and which compares favorably with those of some larger villages. There is a Village Improvement Society, organized a few years ago, chiefly by the intelligent efforts of Henry E. Pellew, who is its president. It has under its care an excellent library and reading-room, and has been the instrument in various matters of improvement and reform. Of the two churches, the Presbyterian and Methodist, more extended mention is made further on.

Among the business enterprises of Bedford, that established by the Hoyt Brothers at Katonah is widely

¹ The Census of 1790 Bedford was the most populous town in the county.

² For several years after the establishment of the State Government, the meetings of the Board of Supervisors were held here each alternate year.





James E. Hoyt

and favorably known along the railroad and throughout the upper part of the county. James E. Hoyt, one of the firm, is the third son of James Hoyt, who removed from Lewisboro' to Bedford about 1820. His mother's maiden name was Elizabeth Banks, a daughter of Jonathan Banks, of Banksville, to whom reference is made in the history of North Castle. His father lived for several years on the farm now owned by James F. Merritt, and in 1843 bought the property known since that time as Hoyt's Mills, and now owned by his son, Seth S. Hoyt. James E. Hoyt was born May 31, 1839. His boyhood was spent at home, and he received a common-school education, a part of the time at South Salem, where the district school was considered to be in advance of the smaller schools about the country, in the advantages it offered to pupils. At the age of sixteen he entered the store of David Putney, at Katonah, as a clerk, and after a year there went to Purdy's Station to take a similar position with William A. Moore. In 1858 he returned to Putney's store and remained until 1862, when he formed a co-partnership with William Banks, under the firm-name of Banks & Hoyt. They carried on the business of a general store at New Castle Corners until 1865. In that year, in connection with David Putney and his younger brother Albert, he again entered the mercantile business at Katonah, in the same store where he began. The firm of Putney & Hoyt Brothers was succeeded in January, 1866, by the present firm of Hoyt Brothers, consisting of Samuel B., James E. and Albert Hoyt. In addition to the usual business of a country store, they have a furniture store and undertaking business, which had previously been the property of the senior member. The business thus established has been well conducted and prosperous.

Since attaining his majority, Mr. Hoyt has been a Republican, influential in the local councils of his party and active in election work. Though often solicited to become a candidate for office, he always declined, and held no political position until 1873, when Governor Dix appointed him one of the loan commissioners for this county. He discharged the duties of the office with fidelity for ten years.

In June, 1881, by the death of Mr. George Fisher, one of the superintendents of the poor of the county, a vacancy occurred in that office. A meeting of the Board of Supervisors was to be held on the 17th, and it was understood that an appointment would be made. On the morning of that day the then supervisor of Bedford asked Mr. Hoyt to allow the use of his name as a candidate. After some hesitation he consented, and was chosen on the first ballot to serve until a successor should be chosen at the next election. In the fall of that year he was elected over Mr. M. J. Dillon by a majority of three hundred and eighty-five, carrying his own town by a handsome vote. He was renominated in 1883, and again elected by a plurality of twenty-three hundred and ninety-

three votes over Mr. Andrew George, and a majority of twenty-three hundred and thirty-nine over two competitors. As the county was strongly Democratic, this vote shows the public confidence which Mr. Hoyt had gained during his two years' service. By reason of a change in the application of the law, he is now (1886) serving as sole superintendent for the county. By his careful business methods, judicious management and humane consideration for the unfortunate objects of his care, Mr. Hoyt has won the approval of his constituents and the commendation of the charitable associations which interest themselves in matters of that nature.

He was married, October 4, 1865, to Miss Matilda Kirby, daughter of Leonard Kirby, of Kirbyville. She died in 1879, leaving no children.

Mr. Hoyt is an active member and officer of the Katonah Methodist Church, and has been for several years superintendent of its Sunday-school. He has always been a zealous advocate of the temperance cause, and gives his influence and assistance to all enterprises that promise good to the community in which he is a useful and honored resident.

The district school has two departments and an excellent building. There is a Post of the Grand Army, which owns its hall and the land on which it stands. There are some eighteen stores and shops and a hotel.

Bedford Station is now the nearest point on the railroad from which Bedford village is reached, and a mail stage connects the two places. Consisting of only a house or two when the depot was established, its growth at first was slow. It has become a community of thrifty and industrious people, and a shipping-point for a good farming neighborhood. The Methodist Episcopal is the only church. The district school occupies a commodious building, and is well cared for. There are eight or ten stores and other business places and a hotel.

The neighborhood about Mount Kisco was called by that name from the earliest settlement. The record of the division of the West Purchase (1701-08) repeatedly refers to "Kisco Plain"¹ (now Oakwood Cemetery and the lands east of it), "Kisco Brook" and "Kisco."

The present village lies in both the towns of Bedford and New Castle, the boundary crossing the railroad slantwise some twenty rods south of the station. Though no larger at the beginning than the other stations, its better natural position has been conducive to more rapid growth, and several years ago it was incorporated, taking within its limits the two hamlets of

¹ In the deed of the West Purchase, "Cisqua Meadow and "Cisqua River" are mentioned, and by some this has been supposed to be the true spelling. But John Copp, the surveyor of the West Purchase (the most accurate of those who made the early records), always writes it Kisco. The accuracy of the deed is questionable, for it has "Muscotah" instead of "Croton," a palpable blunder. The conveyancer probably confounded Kisco and Cisqua, the latter name belonging to another locality.

New Castle Corner and Kirbyville, lying a mile east. Its chief manufacturing interest is that of the Spencer Optical Works, which was established here some years ago. It is in New Castle, the operatives residing in both towns. The Presbyterian and Catholic Churches, and the Friends' Meeting-House are in Bedford, the Methodist Church in New Castle. Two weekly papers are published,—*The Mount Kisco Weekly*, which was started by Carpenter Brothers, in 1872, and is now published by Charles S. Patteson, and *The Recorder*, which was first printed by Miller & Lockwood, at Katonah, in 1873, and removed to this place some five years ago. It is now conducted by Frank Dromgoole. Both are enterprising and creditable publications. Mount Kisco has a library and reading-room, an efficient Fire Department, a Masonic lodge, a Grand Army Post, bearing the name of Stewart Hart, a resident of the village, and one of the earliest volunteers in the late war. The school-house of Union Free School District No. 13 occupies a central position in the village. It is a handsome building of two stories, and there are at present four departments. The building erected some thirty years ago for the Mount Kisco Educational Institute stands on a commanding site a little east of the station. It was occupied for some years as a school, but is now used as a hotel. There are in the village some forty stores, offices, shops and other places of business and three hotels.

Two miles east of Katonah is the Jay estate, owned by that family since 1743, when Mary, wife of Peter Jay and mother of Chief Justice Jay, inherited it from her father, Colonel Jacobus Van Cortlandt.¹ It then consisted of twelve hundred and ninety-nine acres, which, on the death of Peter Jay, in 1782 went to his three sons,—Peter, Frederick and John. The latter became an owner of a part of the shares of Peter and Frederick, and received also a part of the share of John Chambers. About that time he built the oldest part of the present house (west of the main hall), and it was occupied by his agent in charge of the farm. At the close of the century, when he was preparing to retire from public life, he built the eastern part of the house, and in 1818 the north wing and the kitchen. At the end of his second term as Governor he came here to reside, arriving with his family in May, 1801, and made this place his home till his death, in 1829. He was instrumental in the founding of Bedford Academy and the building of St. Matthew's Church, and took a cordial interest in the affairs of the town. The famous elms and maples which adorn the roadsides in the neighborhood attest his foresight and public spirit. From him the estate passed to his

son, William Jay, who may be said to have succeeded also to the respect and esteem in which his father's name and memory were always held in this community. He was for many years one of the judges of the Court of Common Pleas of this county, and his active interest in philanthropic and religious matters is too well known to need particular mention. On his death, in 1858, the present owner, Hon. John Jay, came into possession of the homestead. The farm now comprises about seven hundred acres, one hundred on the south side of the road, which belonged to the original estate, now being owned by Mr. Henry E. Pellew, a brother-in-law of Mr. Jay. The site of the homestead is one of the most delightful, having a southern exposure and a commanding view. The house contains many valuable family portraits by eminent artists, and an extensive library collected successively by Governor Jay, Judge Jay, and the present owner. Near Mr. Pellew's residence (called Katonah's Wood, built by Hon. John Jay about 1850 and occupied by him until the death of Judge Jay) is the spot which tradition has pointed out as the grave of Katonah, the Indian chief, and his wife.

One of the institutions of the town which is worthy of mention here, is the "Farmers' Club of the Town of Bedford," which was founded about thirty-five years ago by practical farmers of the town, and has held monthly meetings regularly ever since. Of its original members few are now living. Its aim has been to advance the interests of agriculture in this and neighboring towns, and its discussions have been able and useful. It has occasionally sent delegations to the State capital to advise in respect to pending legislation affecting local interests, and it was in response to its urgent request that the Harlem Railroad, a few years ago, consented to adopt the excursion rates, which are still in force. Its meetings in summer are held at the houses of the members; in winter, in a public hall. In the month of June in each year there is a show of flowers and small fruits.

INDIAN HISTORY AND GRANTS.—The earliest date at which any part of the present town of Bedford passed out of Indian possession was July 1, 1640, when the New Haven colony, through their agent, Captain Nathaniel Turner, bought from Ponus, Sagamore of Toquams, and Wascussue, Sagamore of Shippan, a tract of land, including the present town of Stamford, Conn., running eight miles along the Sound and extending sixteen miles into the wilderness lying to the northwest. During the summer of the next year a settlement was made at Stamford, first called Rippowam, by twenty-eight men from Wethersfield, one of the three plantations of the Connecticut colony, who had become wearied with the "contentions and feuds which for four or five years had rendered their home in that new colony comfortless and unprofitable."² But no inland settlement

¹The other heirs were Frederick Van Cortlandt, Margaret, wife of Abraham Depeyster; and Anne, wife of John Chambers. Colonel Van Cortlandt was one of the proprietors of the Northwest Corner Purchase, and bought lands also in the Vineyard and Dibble Purchases and in the southwest part of the town. At the time of his death he owned over five thousand acres.

²Huntington's "History of Stamford."

was made under Turner's deed for forty years afterward, the early pioneers preferring to dwell within easy reach of navigable waters. We may well imagine, however, that the settlers and their sons, as they grew up, became familiar with the hunting and fishing-grounds of the friendly Mohegans, and had made prospecting tours to "locate" available spots for future settlements when they should find themselves outgrowing their home on the Rippowam Harbor.

So, perhaps, it happened that following up the Myanos¹ to its bend, just southeast of the present village of Bedford, noting the mill-site, a short distance above where James Miller's mill now is, the fertile meadow-lands of the valley, the warm soil of the Indian corn-fields, on the plains to the west and north, and, it may be, equally appreciating the picturesque loveliness of the whole surrounding country, they chose this beautiful spot to be their home and that of their descendants. In 1680 twenty-two Stamford men, having obtained a grant from the Stamford authorities of a tract of land "at the north end of Stamford bounds," bargained with the Indians for it in the honest fashion of the eastern colonists. The deed, the first under which the settlement of Bedford was actually made, is given entire as an example of those which follow :

"Stamford, this twenty-third day of December, one thousand six hundred and eighty.

"Witness these present, that we, whose names are underwritten, namely Katoonah, Rockahway, Sepotah, Jovis, Tomacoppah, Kakenand, we doe for ourselves, our heires, executors, administrators and assigns, and for and in the behalf of al the other proprietors of the land commonly called the hopp ground ; we say we doe hereby sel, alinate, assign and set over from us, our heires, executors, administrators and assigns for ever, a certain parcel of meddow and upland commonly called and known by the hopp ground, which land lyes at the north end of Stamford bounds ; as it is already bounded with markt trees, only the west line to be extended southward til it shal meet with a southwest line drawn from three markt white oaks, standing very neere together at the southeast corner of the sd land, we, the above named, do hereby sel, alinate, assign and set over from us and ours, the land above specified, with all the rights and privileges thereunto belonging unto Richard Ambler, Abraham Ambler, Joseph Theale, Daniel Weed, Eleazar Slawson, John Wescot, Jonathan Pettit, John Cross, John Miller, Nicholas Webster, Richard Ayres, William Clark, Jonas Seely, Joseph Stevens, Daniel Jones, Thomas Pannoyer, John Holmes, jun., Benjamin Stevens, John Green, Sen'r., David Waterbury, Samuel Weed, Jonathan Kilborn ; them, their heires, executors, administrators and assigns, for ever, quietly to posses and injoy without molestation by us or ours, or any by our means or procurement ; moreover, we, ye above mentioned Katoonah, Rockahway, Sepotah, Jovis, Tohmacoppah, Pannaps, Kakenand, doe bargen and hereby grant full liberty of timber and herbedge for them and their creatures upon our aicent [adjacent] lands for ever, and do hereby acknowledge to have received full satisfaction for the land above sd, in witness of truth we have caused this bil of sale, and hereby set our hands and seals the day and date above written.

"Thus under writ, signed, sealed and delivered in presence of us :

"Joshua Knap,	Rockaway, σ mark,
David Waterbury,	Jovis, ξ mark,
taco, τ his mark,	Tohmapah, κ mark,
poading, φ his mark,	Pannaps, ρ mark,
Katoonah, χ mark,	Kakenand, ς mark."

¹ Spelled also Mianus, Mahanes, Maharness. The local pronunciation was Marnus.

"STAMFORD, 23^d December, 1680.

"Then paid unto ye Indians specified in this within bill of sale for the purchase as follows :

	£	s.	d.
12 Indian Cotes	9	0	0
6 blankets	9	0	0
300 gilders wampum	16	0	0
two yard red brodcloth	2	5	0
six yard red coton	1	10	0
more by expenses	0	01	0
totals	46	10	0

"The above bill of sale is acknowledged by the grantors the Indians, by their several names—I say acknowledged before me

"RICH LAW,
Coms.

"STAMFORD, December 23, 1680.

"Entered upon record 26 of Feb., 1691,

"ABRAHAM AMBLER, *scd'c*."

The tract conveyed by this deed was referred to for several years afterwards as "Bedford Three Miles Square," but its extent was somewhat greater. It comprised the southeastern section of the present town, extending north as far as Cantito Corners, and Broad Brook was its western limit.³

The price paid for this tract of seven thousand six hundred and seventy-three acres, as appears by the memorandum recorded with the deed, was about £46. But real estate was not high in those days, though it seems to have been improving, for the whole city and county of New York was sold in 1626 for twenty-four dollars. In only one other of the Indian deeds is the consideration stated. The bargains were usually made "to the full satisfaction" of the grantors ; and the doubtful phraseology leads to the suspicion that some of the early settlers had the knack of making easy terms with the red men when they were in good humor. Doubtless they had much other traffic with the Indians beside the purchase of lands. This region was rich in fur-bearing animals, and the successful hunter was only too eager to exchange the product of his skill for the attractive but cheap commodities which the white men had brought with them.⁴

² I. Vol. Bedford Deeds, page 129.

³ Among the records of Bedford is a book in MS., entitled "The Laws and Orders of Coneticut Colony, passed by the Generall Assembly, from time to time, In Hartford. Entered up in Record by Zachariah Roberts."

On a blank leaf of this book, in the handwriting of John Copp, town clerk some twenty years later, is the following memorandum, showing the acreage of each purchase, and made, evidently, to determine the share of the quit-rent payable by the proprietors of each. [See Patents, etc.]

	farthings.	acres.	
Old Purch ^e	18,415	7673	19. 3. 7-3
New P	14,376	5990	14.19. 6
N. W. Corner	6,865	2865	7. 3. 0-1
N. E. Corner	4,266½	1736	4. 8.10-2
Vineyard & Dibble.	4,266½	1736	4. 8.10-2
			50. 4.1-0

A part of Simsbury, Conn., is still called Hop Meadow. The region had long been called the Hop Ground, presumably from its natural product, and was so known for the first year or two.

⁴ At a town-meeting, held February 4, 1702, it was voted to sell the Cross Vineyard Purchase to John Dibble for eighteen pounds, "3 pounds

It appears that Katonah and his associates were recognized in 1680 as the proprietors of the lands lying northwest of Stamford bounds, which Turner had bought of Ponus and Wascussue in 1640, and which Ponus and his eldest son, Onax, had confirmed to the Stamford men in 1655. What had become of the descendants of Ponus in the mean time, or how Katonah got possession, it is not easy to determine. Finding him here, the settlers could only deal with him, and apparently they had no difficulty in persuading him to ratify the grant of his predecessors. It is to be borne in mind that the Indian deeds were indefinite in bounds and extent; that they were written by the purchasers, often with but a meagre knowledge of the region they sought to describe, and it was not unusual, after a few years, to find it necessary to obtain a second deed confirming the first, in order to remove uncertainties which had arisen.

The lands comprised in Bedford were released by the Indians under eight deeds:

First, that given above.

Recorded this 20th Day of Feb^r 1774

July 19: 1732
John Holmes & Co
P^r James Holmes
John Clark

March 3^d Day 1747/8 p^r Reuben Holm
Clark

July 6th 1709
P^r John Copp Record

EARLY ACKNOWLEDGMENTS OF DEEDS.

Second, the deed "to the proprietors of Bedford" for the Koamong purchase, "which land and Meadow lyes at the southwest of the bounds of the said proprietors of Bedford, bought of y^e Indians, as appears by a former bill of sale," May 2, 1683.¹

Third, the deed to Daniel Simkins for a "Sertaine pees of land lying west of the bounds of Bedford," known afterward as "Simpkins half mile square,"² May 25, 1692.

in money and 15 pounds in indian truck equivalent to money, in case that the town hath the indian purchase westward of the town." On March 2d, following, the same vote was repeated, the phrase "Indian pay" being used. One week later it was resolved "that if Capt. Mathews can and will help the town with some indian truck, they will give him full satisfaction next paye time or fall of the year."

¹ Bedford Records, book i. p. 115. This purchase was not very important. It does not appear in Copp's memorandum, being probably included in the old purchase. It may be that the deed was intended to confirm the old one in respect to that part of the boundary, or to rectify some misunderstanding.

² Records, book i. p. 139.

Fourth, the deed "to y^e inhabitation of Bedford of a certain track of meadow and upland northerd from y^e town, bounded by a small brook east, which runs neer y^e west sid of potiticus path and west by Bever dam River, north by y^e Cross River and south by Bedford's land,"³ July 24, 1700. This tract was known as Cross's Vineyard.

Fifth, the deed "to ye inhabitation of Bedford" for land "as followeth: namely, to begin whaire bever dam river and cros river meets, and so to run on y^e norwest side of a brook called miry brook, and then to run cross the hills west, on y^e west side of Cisqua meadow, until it meets the river called Cisqua and a great swamp: and so to run up the brook, and by marked trees to the north end of Birum pond and so to y^e south end of Cohamong pond, and then to a great read oake tree formerly marked by the Indians for Bedford's suthermost bounds, which stands on the west sid of the west turn of meanous river."⁴

This became known as the "New" or "West Purchase," the most important for purposes of settlement since the Old Purchase. Its boundaries are more carefully stated than those in any of the other deeds, and may be followed with accuracy at this day. It seems certain that this purchase had been the subject of negotiation with the Indians some years before. Even by this deed, possession was not obtained, nor was the matter settled until April 20, 1702, when a confirmatory deed was given.

Sixth, the deed "to mr. Jacobus Van Cortlandt, of y^e city and province of New York, and Zachariah Roberts, sen'r, of Bedford, a certain track of upland meadow land and swamps . . . to begin where Bever dam river and y^e Cross River meets and so to run westwardly by Bedford's marked trees until it comes to a black oak tree marked upon a high hill, and then to run west to Cisqua River, and then down said river until it runs into Muscotah river,⁵ and then to keep y^e south side of Muscotah river until it meets the aforesaid river, and to keep the said Cross River until it meets y^e aforesaid Bever dam river,"⁶ July 21 1703. This purchase was known as the Northwest Corner.

Seventh, the deed to John Dibell, of Bedford, for land "bounded by marked trees, from one branch of Bever Dam River southward of Ston hills, and so to run westward of Ston hills, northward by marked trees, until it meets with a brook coming out of Ston hills, and so to be bounded by sd. brook until it meets y^e Cross River, and bounded by the said Cross River until it meets a small brook. and then bounded west-

³ Records, vol. i. p. 141.

⁴ Records, vol. i. p. 160.

⁵ Evidently Croton River is meant.

⁶ Records, vol. i. p. 170.

ward by Bedford's Cross Vineyard Purchase, and then bounded by Bedford's first purchase southwardly and eastwardly until it meets the aforesaid branch,"¹ dated January 4, 1704. This is called the Dibble purchase. The boundaries are somewhat obscurely stated, but it was practically bounded north by the Cross River, east by the brook that flows nearly parallel with the present town line, and empties into Cross River, near George Rusco's, west by Spruce Brook and south by the Old Purchase.

Eighth, the deed to Joseph Seeley, of Bedford, for a tract of land laying "on y^e north side of y^e Cross River, so called, and bounded as followeth: easterly by a brook that Runeth in to s^d River, westerly by a brook y^t Runs to y^e Cross River, northerly by two black ash trees and southerly by y^e above s^d Cross River,"² January 23, 1722. This was called the Northeast Corner. The consideration named in the deed was twenty pounds.

The various deeds of land included within the present town, given from 1640 to 1722, are signed by thirty-five different Indians, counting the original deeds to the Stamford men—Ponus, Owenoke, Wassussue, Onax (eldest son of Ponus), Katonah, Rockaway, Sepotah, Jovis, Tomopah or Tomocoppah, Pan-naps, Kakenand, Papiag, Tandaquid, Queranoy, Chickheage or Chickheog, Nonama, Wappowam, Pummesehom, Wewonapodge, Toyebeakeep, Rarohq-nosh, Wackemane, Cacaraco, Mangakom, Aratom or Aratoma, Simon, Manaqui, Mushato, Wequacom, Wapapon, Mantoro, Anhook, Paparinuk, Withams.

These unpronounceable names were never written by their owners, of course, and the conveyancer spelled them as he could best judge by the sound. Hence it is not strange that we find many of them written variously in different deeds, sometimes in the same deed.

The Indians were here in scattered groups or families as late as 1760.⁵ Arrow-heads and other relics are often found, and some of their proper names are perpetuated. Katonah (the station of the Harlem Railroad, in the northwest corner of the town) commemorates the name of the chieftain, Peppeneghek is sometimes revived as the former name of Cross River, Cantito has been referred to, Cisqua and Kisco are possibly the same, Cohamong is shortened to Coman, Noname's Hill still bears his name, Succabonk has been derisively anglicised as Suck-a-bone, Cohansey (the neighborhood about Aaron Sutton's) is nearly forgotten, Aspetong is still the name of the mountain northwest of Bedford village (the highest point of land in the town), and the Mianus River is still so known.

THE SETTLEMENT AND THE SETTLERS —The twenty-two "proprietors of the hopp-ground," whose names are given in the first Indian deed of 1680, began their settlement by holding a meeting at Stamford (whence they came) on the 10th of March, 1681, "to chuse and appoint and fully empower Jos. Theale, Abra. Ambler, John Miller, Daniel Jones and John Cross to lay out the house lots" and also "one lotment to every propriator, in the field on the east side of the plain;" "and it shall be in the discretion of these men to make each man's lot proportionable in quantity to what it lacks in quality, but no man's house lot shall be less than three acres."

On March 17th the committee made the division by drawing lots, and on the 23d of March the "proprietors agree that what the committee have done shall stand;" "and the meeting house shall be set upon the comman so layd out, namly, the rock called Bates, his hill." At this meeting John Bates and Nathaniel Cross were received as "proprietors," they paying

⁵ Mrs. William Benedict, of Pleasantville, remembers that her grandmother used to relate that, when a little girl, she visited Indians in their wigwam, a short distance southeast of Bedford, and was invited to stay to dinner, which consisted of a woodchuck, baked in the ashes. She was a daughter of John Ferris and was born in 1752.

*Rat's Goad
lit mark
grayes in lit
marks
fand a Quid
lit mark
quirona lit
mark*

*chick charge
lit mark*

*This above written bill of sale acknowledged
by the grantor each of them before
Bedford the day of may 1683
comissioned*

*January 24. 1716
Zach miller*

INDIAN AUTOGRAPHS.

This last deed marks the end of Indian rule in Bedford. It is the only one of all the deeds which is not signed by Katonah, Sagamore, and hence it is to be inferred that he died between 1704 and 1722, and was spared the pain of seeing the last acre of his happy hunting-grounds pass out of the possession of his race. Tradition tells us that he lies buried beside his favorite wife on the heights of Cantito³ (Katonah's own land), and two immense boulders near the house of Mr. Henry E. Pellew are shown as marking the spot where, with his face toward the rising sun, lies all that was mortal of the great chieftain.⁴

¹ Records, vol. i. p. 181.
² Bedford Records, vol. ii. p. 111.
³ In one of the Indian dialects Kanda-town signified "a high ridge of land." Was not this the origin of the word Cantito?
⁴ It must be confessed that there are no records to substantiate this; but, in the absence of any better evidence as to the great Sagamore's place of sepulture, this is recommended for belief. It is, doubtless, as authentic as that which has hallowed the graves of more famous men.

their share of the charges and being equal in all respects with the others.

These twenty-four men were nearly all the sons of English Puritans, founders of the colony of Massachusetts Bay. There is no authority for the statement that they came from Bedfordshire, in England, and from that circumstance gave the name to the new town. The name of "Bedford" was probably given by the General Court of Connecticut "in accordance with a principle adopted many years before, 'intending,' as they quaintly expressed it, 'thereby to keep and leave to posterity the memorial of several places of note in our dear native country of England.'"¹

John Holmes is the only one of the number whose English home is known. He was born in Beverly, Yorkshire, in 1639, and came to this country in 1640.

The first official notice or recognition of the new settlement is the grant from the General Court of Connecticut Colony, at Hartford, which is as follows:

"At a general court held at Hartford, May 12, 1681.

"This court being moved to grant liberty to erect a plantation upon the hopp-ground and adiacent lands about Twelve miles to y^e northwards of Stamford, doe grant their request and appoint Captain Richard Olmstead, Lieut. Jonath. Bell, Lieut. Jonathan Lockwood and Mr. Joseph Theall to be a committee to entertain such persons as shall plant there, and to manage, order and dispose of y^e affayrs of that plantation according to their best skill, so as may best advance y^e well-far and groth of y^e said plantation, and they ear to take care yt there be a sutable loot laid out for the first minister of ye place and a loot for ye ministry to be and belong to ye ministry forever.

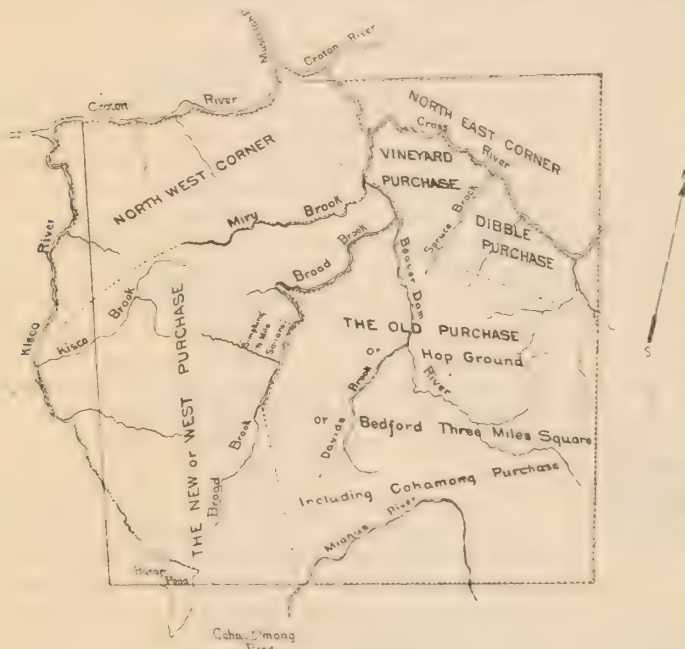
"This is a trew copping taken out of the records of Hartford.

"Vera Copia,

"Tost. ELEAZAR KIMBERLY, Secretary.

"Hartfrd, Jan^y 21, 1696."*

At this time it was supposed that the Hop Ground was within the bounds of Connecticut by the colonial lines of 1664, but in 1683 a line was agreed on by New York and Connecticut, reluctantly enough by the latter, which left Bedford within the colony of New York. The new settlers, being by all their associations essentially a part of Connecticut, never assented to this arrangement, and, finally, repudiated it. "For twenty years the people remained in a state of chronic uneasiness and disaffection. It was not only that their sympathies, social and religious, leaned toward Connecticut, but their material interests were in jeopardy. Under the chartered government of the colony they were secured in the possession of their lands, which they had honestly bought from the Indians and diligently improved. But no sooner had their town been annexed to New York, than notice came to them from the sheriff of Westchester County, bidding them show what right and title they had to their lands. Instead of obeying this summons, the inhabitants applied



MAP OF BEDFORD.

"The little company has its leader and patriarch in Richard Ambler, now seventy years old, a representative of the first generation of New England men. He was of Watertown as early as 1637. His only son, Abraham Ambler, accompanies the expedition, of which, indeed, he is one of the most influential members. The men thus associated are not only from the same town, and the same religious society, but there are ties also of kinship and marriage uniting them. Daniel and Samuel Weed are brothers. So are John and Nathaniel Cross and Joseph and Benjamin Stevens. John Miller and Jonas Seely are half-brothers, while Abraham Ambler and John Bates, John Cross and John Bates, Nicholas Webster and David Waterbury are brothers-in-law."²

to Connecticut for a patent confirming their territory to them under the laws of the colony."⁴ In 1697 Connecticut issued the patent and took the town under its protection, but in 1700 the matter was settled by an order from the King, and Connecticut released Bedford from all allegiance. A copy of this release is in the town records.⁵ The early town-meetings were frequent, and the minutes were kept with great care, the paragraphs being numbered from "firstly," as far as the case required—in one case to "fourteenthly." At the meeting of March 22, 1681, when the common and a site for the meeting-

*The certified copy of the record, taken as the date shows, in 1696, is in possession of John C. Holmes, of Cross River, seventh in descent from John Holmes, of Beverly.

⁴ Bard's "History of Bedford Church."

⁵ Vol. 1, p. 132.

¹ "History of Bedford Church," Charles W. Bard, D. D., 1882.

² Bard's "History of Bedford Church."

house were provided for, a committee was designated to lay out all the plains and meadows westward and eastward of the town, and "other lands and meadows they see convenient." These things were accordingly done. Each proprietor had a house lot of three acres upon the village street, they judging it safer to keep their dwellings near each other in case of difficulty with the Indians. This lot was to be forfeited unless built on within three years. The common, originally three acres in extent, like the home lots, has now dwindled to but little more than one-third of that size. Besides his house lot, each pioneer was allotted a quantity of land in the "east field," which extended to where the house of the late Phineas Lounsbery is; a smaller tract in the "meadows," or low lands along the Mianus, Beaver Dam and other streams; and, thirdly, in the "west plain" and in the "great northe plain," lying north of the village toward where the Baptist Church now stands. The committees were always enjoined, in dividing these lands, to make up in quantity what the lot might lack in quality, and it came to be the practice, which was in vogue many years later, to describe a tract of land as "six and three-quarter acres sized for six acres, or "23 acres sized for 18 acres."

The committee reported, March, 1681, that,—

"they cast lots first for the east field; 2^{dly} for the meadows; 3^{dly} for the plains, and the lots being solemnly drawn were as follows:

	Field lots.	Meadows.	Plains.
"Rich. Ambler	17	10	1
Abraham Ambler	12	22	19
Jos. Theale	4	8	7
Dan. Weed	6	6	5
Elea. Slason	15	2	4
J. Wescot	10	14	21
Jonah Pettit	19	11	18
John Cross	11	24	12
Jo. Miller	16	15	24
Nickolas Webster	14	23	3
Rich. Ayres	1	9	23
Jonas Seely	13	4	2
Jos. Stevens	2	21	6
Dan. Jones	18	23	17
Thos. Panoyr	8	7	13
Jo. Homs	21	20	11
Ben. Stevens	5	17	10
Jo. Green	20	5	22
David Waterbury	7	1	9
Sa. Weed	3	18	15
Jon ^h Kilborn	22	12	14
John Bats	23	16	16
Nathaniel Cross	24	19	20
William Clark	9	3	8"

As may be seen from the deed for the Hop Ground the cost was forty-six pounds, or, in round numbers, two pounds for each man. It was on this basis that the meeting voted, on October 11, 1681, any inhabitant, on paying forty shillings, should have an equal share with the proprietors in all the undivided land. In December, 1681, Zachariah Roberts, Samuel Barrett and Thomas Canfield were received as inhabitants. Roberts was chosen town clerk, afterward justice of the peace, and for several years was prominent in

town affairs. He lived near David's Hill,¹ and gave his lands along David's Brook to his sons Zachariah, Jr., and Hezekiah. In "december, 1681, Joshua Webb is reseived an inhabitant, in case they shall agree with him to build a Grist Mill in ye place." A committee was appointed to confer with Webb, and a mill and dam were built by him and the town jointly, he to furnish the iron-work, and the town to cart and furnish the timber and millstones; "and then the mill, when finished, is to be the sd Joshua Webb's, his proper right and tytle, only he is not at any time to sell, alinate, or any other way dispose of ye said mill, except it be to him or them that the town shall appoint, and the said Joshua doth bind himself and his to find the town at hop-ground with good meale, they finding good corne; the tole, as in the law, is expressed."

This mill was on Mianus River, about a quarter of a mile above where James Miller's mill now is. In 1701 the town "doth agree to buy" the mill of Richard Webb, son of Joshua, for the use of the town, for the sum of fifteen pounds. Another mill seems to have become necessary at this time, for, in November, 1701, "the town, by a maigor vote, doth agree that their corne-mill shall be set upon Beaver Dam River, at the first convenient place below David's broock, and that there shall be thirty acres of land layed out to the mill, and to lye to it for ever; that the lawful oners of the mill shall enjoy the said thirty acres of land for ever, not else." Very stringent "artickells of agreement" were made with John Dibell to build the mill, he, as in the former case, "to finde ye towne with good sofsiant meale, they finding good sofsiant corne," and he to have both mill and "thirty acres of land" forever. This mill was where Mathews mill is now. There is some reason for believing that the old mill was removed to this site.

The following will serve as an example of the vote by which new settlers were received into the colony. The date is "december, 1681." They "give unto william Sturdevant, upon his acceptance and submitting to their order of reseving inhabitants: they give him a house lot, containing three acres, and six acres of land in the east feild and three acres of meadow, he paying twenty shillings to ye company, and to take twenty rod of fence in ye coman field for ever." From this it appears that every inhabitant was expected to maintain his share of the fence surrounding the "field" or plow-land, the individual shares not being separated by fences. The cattle were pastured on the undivided lands and on lands not yet bought from the Indians, this last fact appearing from the clause in the first Indian deed, which recites that the purchasers were to have "full liberty of timber and herbedge for them and their creatures upon our

¹ The names David's Hill and David's Brook are found in the earliest records, but their origin is unknown. It is conjectured that David was an Indian who had acquired the English name—not a very unusual circumstance.

adjacent lands for ever." A brander for the town was, therefore, appointed, and cattle were branded with the owner's mark. Entries like the following appear in the town books: "Zachariah Roberts maketh entry of his ere marck for his marckable creatures, namely, a swallow forck on ye toop of each ere (1683)." "The mark of Roger Lyon is a step the under side of the near ear, and a half penny the upper side of the off" (1766). These marks are found on record as late as 1813.

The records of Greenwich, Conn., show that previous to 1676, Thomas Lyon had obtained a grant of a "sartaine parsell of Land on the lower end of Byram Neck, by estimation three hundred acres."

It is supposed, but not definitely known, that he came from England not long before that year and settled in Greenwich. He was an inhabitant in 1688, and his will, dated Sept. 6, 1689, is in the records of the town of Fairfield, where the nearest Probate Court was at that time. He had nine children,—John, Thomas, Samuel, Joseph, Mary, Abigail, Elizabeth, Sarah and Deborah. To his oldest son, John Lyon, he left "the mill at Rhye." He died between 1689 and 1691, as appears by a release recorded in Greenwich, in which his daughter Mary and her husband, John Wilson, release Jno. Lyon from all claims, as executor of his father's will. John Lyon also lived at Greenwich and was a considerable land-holder. In June, 1696, he and six other Greenwich men

bought of the Indians, Crawamateen, Nepawhenn and others, a tract of land a mile and a half long and a mile wide, on the west bank of Byram River. The records contain a deed of gift for a parcel of land to his "son, John Lyon, Jun'r." His will, probated in 1730, is recorded in Stamford, a Court of Probate having been established there in 1728.

His son, John Lyon, the third in descent, continued to live in Greenwich and was evidently an active and thrifty man. He is described as "Ensigne John Lyon." He owned at various times many pieces of land in Stamford, Greenwich and Westchester County. His children were John, Roger, Elizabeth, James and perhaps others. Roger Lyon was born December 15, 1715, and in early manhood removed to North Castle,

where he bought an extensive estate, part of which is still occupied by his descendants, and kept a store near where S. A. Lyon now lives. He was a captain in the American Army during the War of the Revolution. It is related that General Washington and his staff once dined at Captain Lyon's house, and the silver cup which the general used on that occasion is still preserved by the family. Some of his old account and memorandum books in the possession of Mr. S. A. Lyon, of North Castle, contain quaint items of business affairs, and in one of them is the following statement of his death, evidently written by one of his sons: "In the 83^d year of his age, the 13th of May, 1797, Saturday, about Sunset, Departed this life,

Capt. Roger Lyon, of North Castle, and was interred Monday afternoon, the 15th. A funeral sermon was preached by the Rev. A. Brown. Text was in Deuteronomy, 32 chapter, 29 verse."

Roger Lyon had eleven children. Justus Lyon, the fourth son, was born July 6, 1744, and removed to Bedford in early life. He resided on the place just west of the Baptist Church, owned by his family until a few years ago, and died there about 1815. He had two sons, William and John. William Lyon married Rachel Robertson, daughter of Jabez Robertson, Sr., and continued to reside with his father for a number of years. He had six children,—three sons and three daughters,—of whom Stephen Lyon, the seventh in lineal descent



Stephen Lyon

from Thomas Lyon, was the oldest. He was born October 29, 1810, at the Robertson homestead in Cantito, which was then the dwelling of his mother's father. He lived until about 1830 with his parents on the old Lyon place, above referred to, when his father removed to the farm now owned by the heirs of his younger brother, Ferris Lyon. Shortly after this time he began the marketing business, making weekly trips to Port Chester to sell farm produce. This enterprise he carried on without interruption for more than forty years. For a large part of this time he also engaged in buying and selling small stock, sheep, calves, etc., in the same market. In 1835 he purchased and occupied the farm

where he has since resided, and with his other pursuits has been a careful farmer. Mr. Lyon has been collector of the town, was inspector of election for many years successively and was a deputy sheriff for nine years. In politics he is a Democrat and took an active part during the war in filling the town quota of troops by contributing liberally.

He is a man of well-known stability of character, of great independence in thought and action, and of honest and upright life. He has been for half a century an influential member of the Bedford Baptist Church.

He has been twice married,—the first time, on January 9, 1834, to Miss Amanda A. Miller, daughter of John Miller, at Bedford, who died in 1847. By this marriage he had five children, of whom three are now living,—John M., of Port Chester; William P. and Jere M., of Katonah. He has two grandchildren, M. Amanda and Stephen D., who are the children of William P. Lyon. Mr. Lyon was married the second time, in October, 1851, to Miss Amy A. Wheeler, of Sing Sing, who is still living.

During the first year the proprietors of Bedford voted to receive eleven *inhabitants* into the Hop Ground in order to the settlement of a town. "Under the laws of Connecticut it was necessary that a plantation should consist of a sufficient body of freeholders in order to be dignified by the name and be admitted to the rights of a town." In addition to the five mentioned, the following was received: Thos Hyat, Stephen Clason, Theoph. Balden (Baldwin), Thomas Wildman, Joseph Green, Daniel Simkins. When the proper number had thus been acquired, application was made to the General Court at Hartford, and their petition was granted by the following order :

"May 16, 1682, Vpon the petition of the people of Hop Ground, this Court doth grant them the privilege of a plantation, and doe order that the name of the towne shall hencefort be called Bedford. And this court doe appoint Joseph Theale to be the present cheife military officer for the Train Band of said Bedford; and Abram Ambler is impowered by this court to grant warrants, to swear officers and witnesses, and to joyne persons in marriage according to law; and they doe free the sayd towne of Bedford from the county rates for the space of three yeares] next ensueing."²

The town had now received its permanent name, a chief military officer and its first magistrate. The names of Theal and Ambler were doubtless suggested by the petitioners, for their respective duties. Ambler was conspicuous among the pioneers for his learning and was elected the first town clerk and recorder of lands. The earliest records are in his careful handwriting.

It is curious to note the attempts of the little colony to retain the ownership of the land as common property. October 11, 1681 were enacted the following :

"6th. It is agreed by the proprietors and by them concluded that not withstanding what inhabitants they shall [receive] in the hop ground,

yet they hold the full power in their owne hands of disposing lands, and the inhabitants shall not have any voice in disposing any lands.

"7th. It is voted that not any inhabitant they shall receive into the sd hop ground shall have any power to sell, alinate or any other way dispose any land or lands that shall be layd out to him or them, or any part of such lands, without ye consent and abrobation of the proprietors upon the penalty of forfeiting the said land unto the proprietors."

A year later we find this :

"8th October, 1682, whereas it testified that John Slason, being one of the proprietors, and hath sold his right in this place, contrary to ye order without consent of ye town, therefore ye town taks ye sd right into their owne hands."

This action apparently led to trouble, for on "May 2, 1683, at a town-meeting ye town by vote doth repeale that Act of forfeiting John Slason's right of his said lands here in Bedford³ only his house lot excepted, and he to have another house lot in lue of the sd lot." This, however, was special legislation; the original enactment was made more stringent not long afterward. But in 1690 the march of public improvement demanded that the "great northe plain" as far as David's Hill be fenced in and allotted for plowing land, and we find that the people would no longer consent to the forfeiture clause, for on March 8, 1692, "the town by vote both order and agree that this above said great plain that is layed out unto every inhabitant it shall be free from any *sequest* [sequest, liability to be sequestered, or forfeited], and to be forever unto them and theyrs at theyr dispose, as other lands ear."

The town records for the first few years contain a wealth of quaint and curious history of which but little can be compressed into a sketch like this. In "ienwary 1687-88" there were eighteen men at a town meeting who voted "that every one here presant at the town-meeting shall have a pees of land containing four akers aded unto theyr former dividens for theyr faithfulness at the attending of town-meetings." Whether this "salary grab" was carried into effect, we do not know. In 1690 the town voted a bounty on wolves. The annual meeting in March chose a "clark, two sezars" (assessors), two "fence vewars" and two "sonairs" (surveyors). In 1691 they made "chois of Daniel Simkings for head man for ye town of Bedford to end any contravercy between indians and inglish according to the best of his skill." There is abundant legislation about the "yearley reate" of the minister, and who shall "geather" it for him, for the support of the minister, was as much a part of the civil government as laying out of lands and highways. In 1687-88 collectors were appointed to gather Mr. Denham's rate for this year and were also empowered to "gather the remainder that is behind of the former years, and make payment of it to Mr. Denham."

On December 16, 1692, David Mead was chosen "to keep the town drum, to keep it in repair and to beat it when necessary, and to be allowed ten shil-

¹ Baird's "History Bedford Church."

² Colonial Records of Connecticut.

³ This is the first instance in which the place is called Bedford in the records.

lings yearly." In 1698 it was agreed that "every acre of land and meadow within the bounds of Bedford that is alooted unto pertickler persons, both improved and not improved that is what every man doth possess for their one (own): that man or person shall pay three pence an acre, yearly for every acre, towards the maintaining of a minister amongst us" In 1699 the town voted "to exchange with Stephen Clason four acres of swamp and give him four acres of upland if he will beat the drum until this day twelve month, the town to keep the drum in repair."¹

About 1690 an effort was made to keep a register of marriages and births after the English custom, but it soon fell into disuse.

After a short time the settlers began to increase in number, and to select homes a little out of the village. Then they found it convenient to sell and exchange the house-lots and their various scattered interests so as to consolidate their property near the places chosen for residences. The books of the town about the last of the century are full of the records of these deeds, conveying tracts varying from three acres, or the house lot, to twenty or more in the field being the tract or "lotments" which fell to each proprietor in the original division. The boundaries were usually the lines of the adjacent lotments, on "the street," or the "cartway," on one side where it was so bounded. None of these can now be identified, except in rare instances where a stream became a boundary. It is not likely that any land has remained in the possession of the same family from the settlement until now. The families, however, are still here in unbroken descent, of many of the original settlers of 1680 and 1681. From that day to this the names of Ambler, Bates, Barrett, Canfield, Clark, Green, Holmes, Jones, Seeley, Slawson, Stevens,

Weed, Wescot and others have remained among us, while others, like Theal, Simpkins and Roberts, who had prominent parts in the organization of the town, either returned whence they came after a few years, or went still farther into the new country.²

Benjamin Isaacs Ambler is the eighth lineal descendant of Richard Ambler, "the leader and patriarch" of the twenty-four Stamford men by whom Bedford was settled in 1681, who was born in Lincolnshire, England, in 1609, came to Watertown in 1637, to Stamford in 1641, and lived till 1699. From him more than four-fifths of the Amblers in this country are descended. His only surviving son, Abraham, was another of the pioneers. He was born September 22,

1642, and on Christmas day, 1662, married Mary Bates, a sister of John Bates, another of the settlers. Abraham Ambler was one of the most influential members of the little colony. He was empowered by the General Court of Connecticut (for Bedford was at first under that province) "to grant warrants, swear officers and witnesses, and joyne persons in marriage," and was elected by his fellow-settlers as town clerk and recorder of deeds. He also was one of those "gifted brethren" who were chosen by their neighbors "to carry on the Lord's day," in the absence of the minister.

His son Abraham, the third in the line, was born January 5, 1665. The fourth in descent was Abraham,

the third of that name, born September 6, 1693.

The fifth was Joshua, an elder in the Presbyterian Church of Bedford, and its frequent representative at Presbytery from 1768 till the end of his life. It is recorded that on May 9, 1770, "Mr. Ambler, being an elder in the church at Bedford, yet living much nearer to Pound Ridge, his circumstances being somewhat critical, and he in doubt where to join, begs the advice of Presbytery; who having considered the matter, advise him, upon the whole, to remain where he is." His son Benjamin was born in 1749 and died in December, 1811. The seventh in descent was



Benjamin S. Ambler

¹ New England's Sabbath day
Is heaven-like, still and pure;
Then Israel walks the way,
Up to the temple's door.
The way we tell
When there to come
By beat of drum
Or sounding shell."

² Roberts died about 1707, and his sons went to Stamford. Theal went to Putnam County.

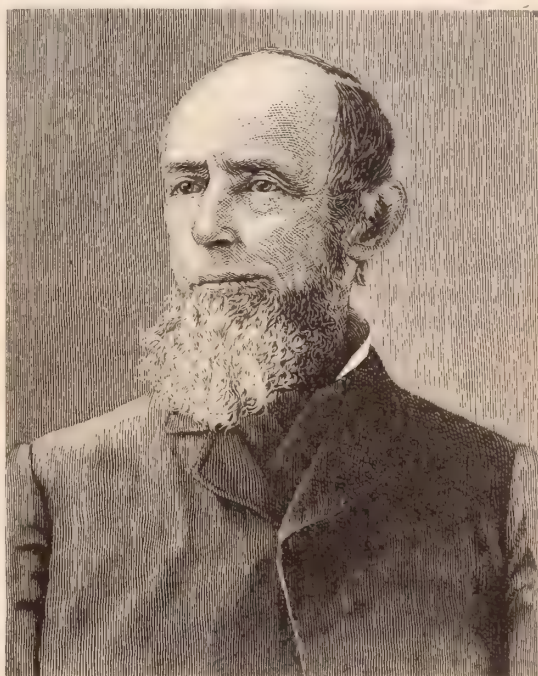
Joseph, who was born May 23, 1804, at the old Ambler homestead, now known as the Whelpley Place. The family had for several generations owned a large tract of land in that section, lying partly in Poundridge. On May 23, 1827, he married Maria Rodgers, of Patterson, Putnam County, a niece of Benjamin Isaacs, of Bedford, and a member of his family. For several years after his marriage he occupied a part of his father's property in the town of Poundridge, and Benjamin I. Ambler was born there on July 27, 1830. His only brother, Joseph Augustus, was born in 1833, and died in infancy. In 1835, after the death of Judge Isaacs, for whom he was named, his father bought the Isaacs farm in Bedford village, and resided there till his death, on August 15, 1876. The house, which stands fronting "The Green," is supposed to have been the first one erected in the village after the place was burned in 1779. It was long occupied by Benjamin Isaacs, who was town clerk from 1804 to 1831, and many years county judge, and has been the home of the present owner for fifty-one years.

Benjamin I. Ambler received his education under the care of Samuel L. Holmes, who kept a select school in Bedford; at the Bedford Academy under Mr. Close, Mr. Williamson and others; and at Union Academy. In 1853 he entered the mercantile business in Bedford, in partnership with the late Hezekiah D. Robertson, under the firm-name of Ambler & Robertson. In 1858 the partnership was dissolved and he continued the business until 1863, since which time his occupation has been that of a farmer.

In his earlier life Mr. Ambler took an active interest in politics, and in 1854 was elected supervisor, being the second Democrat in many years to achieve that distinction. He was again chosen to that office in 1862. From 1853 to 1863 he was postmaster of Bedford, and was deputy sheriff from 1852 to 1855. In the fall of 1858 he was the candidate of the Democratic party for sheriff, but though he ran largely ahead of his ticket, he was defeated by a small majority. He was the president of the board of trustees of the Bedford Fe-

male Institute for some fifteen years, during the period when it was most successful. Mr. Ambler is a gentleman of dignified and courteous address, careful and accurate in business matters, of genial temperament and kind disposition. He was married, on September 23, 1863, to Miss Anna M. Lounsbury, daughter of James Lounsbury, of Bedford. He has no children.

It is quite certain that all the different Clark families of Bedford and vicinity are descended from William Clark, one of the first proprietors of Bedford in 1681. His father, Samuel Clark, was born in Devonshire, England, in 1619, came to Wethersfield in 1636, and was one of the "company of restless and dissatisfied men" who forsook that colony and settled Stamford in 1641. William Clark was born in Stamford in 1645, and died in 1712. The tradition is that his house was near John Green Clark's present residence; but it could not have been his first abiding-place in Bedford, for the three-acre "home-lots" of the settlers were all where the village is now. His son Nathan was born in Stamford in 1676, and came to Bedford with his father, being then five years old. His will, dated April 29, 1726, making various bequests to his numerous children, is in possession of one of his



A Mead Clark

descendants, Mrs. Albert Williamson, of Bedford, a daughter of Jeremiah Clark. He lived, however, several years after making his will. His wife was Sarah, daughter of Jacob Smith.

His son Joseph was the fourth in the line. The fifth was named Joseph, also, and his lifetime comes down to the memory of those now living. He was born in 1753, and died in 1821. He married Hannah Clock, of Greenwich. His son John was born in 1789. He spent a part of his early life in Dutchess County, but returned to Bedford and resided many years on the old Clark homestead, now owned by his son, John Green Clark. He married Lucy Mead, daughter of Abel Mead, of Bedford, but formerly of Greenwich. He was a man of solid worth, of strong religious character, and was thorough-

ly respected wherever he was known. He died in 1863

His oldest son, Abel Mead Clark, the seventh in direct descent from Samuel Clark, of Devonshire, was born September 28, 1820. Like most boys in his circumstances, he learned at an early age to do his part in the work of the farm. His education was obtained at the district schools, and later at Union Academy, of which Alex. G. Reynolds was principal. On September 10, 1850, he married Mrs. Mary A. Bell, daughter of Robert Knowlton, and soon after purchased and occupied the farm of James Lounsbery, and remained there for seven years. He then bought of John T. White the place near his father's, known as the Joshua Raymond farm, and has resided there until this time. He is a representative Westchester County farmer. He has devoted himself to his occupation with energy, intelligence and enthusiasm, and has made it a success. He was for several years president of the Bedford Farmers' Club, and has frequently been its delegate to various State Agricultural Fairs. The only public office he has held is that of town auditor. Mr. Clark, like all his ancestors in the direct line, back to William Clark, is a member of the Bedford Presbyterian Church. He has two children,—Robert K., and Margaretta,—and three grandchildren,—Mary Augusta, Albert Mead and Katharine Bell Clark.

The proprietors first found it necessary to enlarge their borders two years after their arrival, when they made the Koamong purchase, described in the second deed. It was not important in extent or quality, and concerning the manner of its division and allotment there is but scanty record. It is probable that it was used chiefly for pasturage. It was situated, as has been said, southwest of the first purchase, extending probably from the west turn of Mianus River to Chestnut Ridge. The name is perpetuated in Coman Hills. Nine years later Daniel Simkins, availing himself of his position of "head man" to settle differences with the Indians, bought a half-mile square (one hundred and sixty acres) lying along the west bank of Broad Brook, now the farm of Richard Nolan, and established his home there. It is a tradition that his son, Vincent Simkins, who was afterward prominent in town affairs, was the first white child born in the town. This farm was included in the deed for the West purchase in 1700 without mention of the prior purchase, but was not included in the division, being frequently referred to as "Vincent Simkins'-half-mile square."¹

It does not appear that there was much in the way of settlement upon Cross' vineyard purchase, made July 24, 1700. In November of that year the town voted to sell it to "John Tomson, merchant at Stam-

ford," for "eight pounds, four pounds in money and four pounds in goods at money prices." Tomson did not become a purchaser, however, and in February, 1701, the town-meeting voted to sell it to John Dibell "for eighteen pounds, three pounds in money, and fifteen pounds in indian truck equifelent to money in case that the town hath the indian purchase westward of the town which they formerly bargained for."

In November, 1699, the town received as a resident Mr. John Copp, of Norwalk, a surveyor and a man of more than usual attainments. He was at once welcomed with great cordiality, and given a "home loot, twenty acres of out land, sixteen of plow land and four acres of meadow land. He was also to have "the use of ye toune loot and ye toune land and meadow in ye feild this next yeare, without they want of it for a minister." The next month "the town by a maigor vote chuse Mr. John Copp to put things to vote in theyr meetings if he is present." They also bought of "ye said Copp" a "grindle-stone," for which they paid the modest price of "six acres of pastur land." For a time he rivaled Zachariah Roberts in importance. They soon elected him town treasurer, and put him on a committee to agree with the Indians for the land westward of the town.²

This was the largest of all the purchases except the first. It comprised lands lying nearer the town than any other, stretching for several miles along their western boundary (Broad Brook) and for several years it is likely that they had viewed it with longing eyes. The terms of the purchase were arranged by the committee and the deed was made September 6, 1700. What misunderstanding or delay occurred in relation to it we do not know, but there was an obstacle of some sort, for at a town-meeting held in Bedford, October 4, 1701, "the town by major vote doth order the committe to proceed with ye Indians about purchaseing ye lands westward of ye old purchase formerly bought of ye Indians," and at a town-meeting, November 3, 1701, "the town by major vote doth agree that ye land westward of ye first purchase shall be paid by heads, and every head that payeth ye Indians for it shall have every one of them an equal [right] according to what they pay." Also,

¹ The town by majr. vote doth chuse Zachariah Roberts, Sen'r, John Holms, Jun'r and Jonathan Pottet for their committee, and giveth them full power to take care in ye Toune's behalf, to see ye Indians satisfied for ye land they formerly bought of ye Indians, which is west of our first purchase, and every man that hath land in ye toune hath liberty to put in a head, and they are to pay twenty shillings to ye purchase, and to defray Charges."

As there were thirty-six "head-rights" or shares in the company, it is evident that the stock of this early land association amounted to thirty-six pounds. Out of this, charges were to be defrayed, so that the

² The committee was as follows: "John Miller, Senar, Cornelius Seely, Senar, Richard Ayers, Senar, Zachariah Roberts, Senar, Mr. John Copp, them five."

¹ There is reason to believe that others beside Simkins bought small tracts from the Indians and settled on them, but there are no deeds of that kind on record except his. Deed Recorded Bedford Book, No. 1, p. 162.



"MAPLEHURST,"
BEDFORD, N. Y.
RESIDENCE OF JAMES LOUNSBERY.



"JOCUISTITA HALL,"
BEDFORD, N. Y.
RESIDENCE OF RICHARD P. LOUNSBERY.



price paid to the Indians was less than this, but there was no record of the sum paid. The committee very soon succeeded in their negotiations, however, and the conformatory grant was made April 20, 1702, being signed by the same six Indians¹ as the previous deed, and witnessed by the same two men on behalf of the town—Zachariah Roberts and John Holmes.

On September 28, 1702, the town-meeting directed that the new land should be laid out in thirty-six lots of fifty acres each, or sixty "if ye land will hold out," and ordered that convenient highways be made. The committee for this important work consisted of Zachariah Roberts, John Copp, Stephen Clason, Nathan Clark, John Miller, Jr., Jonathan Miller, John Wascot and Richard Wascot. Any three of them were to have power to act, and they were to have five shillings a lot for their labor.

We are indebted to the accurate and methodical John Copp for a complete record of the survey and division of this tract. It is in a book evidently purchased for the purpose, in Copp's careful and handsome handwriting, and abounding in his quaint and elaborate sentences. He was designated by the committee to make the survey of lots and highways, "they to find hands needful to assist him from Day to Day until s^d work be finished. And that the s^d Copp do make a Return of his Doeings unto ye proprietors of s^d Purchase; and Prepare a lot upon ye Thirty-six lots when laid out, numbering them from one to Thirty-six in order for a Draught upon ye same, that shall determine unto whom ye Respective Lotments shall Appertain."

Copp began his work at Broad Brook Swamp, at a place called Cohansey,² and laid out a "ten rod highway," westward to Kisco Brook. Then going a mile north along Broad Brook he laid out another highway, "full ten rods wide," to Kisco Brook. These roads are now only of ordinary width. The highways north and south, from where Simeon Woolsey's and Stephen Knowlton's houses now are, came next. All these remain substantially as originally surveyed, and show Copp's rectangular plan. Then he divided the land into fifty-acre lotments, and numbered them, making a map to go with the book, which cannot now be found. There were occasional "waist lots" left, where it was thought that the lay of the land or the quality of the soil did not justify him in including them among those to be drawn for by the owners. There was also a large tract about Chestnut Ridge left undivided and smaller tracts in other parts of the purchase. Lot No. 1 was south of the road at Cohansey, and No. 36 was on Miry Brook, where it flows into Beaver Dam River.

It was not until April 30, 1708 that the work was completed and the share-holders met to draw the lots.

Copp prefaces his statement of the drawing by the following:

"At s^d Meeting:

"A copy of ye account of ye proprietors of ye afores^d new Purchase in s^d Bedford, as it was found left by Justice Zachariah Roberts, Deceased, who was ye Principal actor about ye same, and according to his way of Expressing their Rights in ye same by head Rights are, viz:

"Zachariah Roberts, 2 Head Rights; John Copp, 2; John Miller, Senr., 1 (sold by Jon^a David Miller to John Dible); Zachariah Roberts, Junr., 1; Richard Wascot, 1; Richard Holmes, 1; John Holmes, Junr., 1; Cornelius Seely, Senr., 2; David Holmes, 1; Jonathan Holmes, 1; Richard Ayers, 1 (sold to John Dible); John Wascot, Senr., 1 (sold to Richard Holmes and by him sold to Richard Scofield and Peter Demilt); Joseph Palmer, 1; John Holmes, Junr., 1; John Wascot, Junr., 1; Stephen Clasen, 1 (sold to John Dible); Jonathan Petit, 1 (sold to John Dible and by s^d Dible to Zachariah Roberts); Richard Ayers, Junr., 1 (sold to Tho. Wood, sold to John Dible); Caleb Web, bought of Zach. Roberts, 1 (sold to Tho. Wood, sold to John Dible); Nathan Clark, 1; Jonathan Miller, 1; David Mead, 1; Abraham Wead, 1; David Miller, 1 (sold to John Holmes, Junr.); Richard Web, bought of Zach. Roberts, 1 (sold to John Dible); John Miller, Junr., 1; John Dible, 1; Cornelius Seely, Junr., 1; Ephraim Palmer, 1 (sold to Tho. Wood, sold to John Dible); Robert Williams, 1; Hezekiah Roberts, 1; Daniel Jones, 1; Joseph Hunt, 1; the number of Rights, 36."

During the five years and a half which have elapsed since the work began, ten of the thirty-three shareholders have relinquished their interests, one, John Miller, Sr, by death, and the others doubtless tired of the delay or in need of the money invested. Seven of these shares, we observe, were acquired, in addition to his original right, by John Dibble, the owner of the mill on the Beaver Dam, and an inveterate speculator, and sold by him to Jacobus van Courtland. Roberts had died also, but his original shares, with one bought by him, still stood in his name, as appears by the next memorandum, showing the "present proprietors at the time of the drawing:

"Zachariah Roberts, Sr. 3	Joseph Palmer 1
Coll. Jacobus Van Courtland,	John Holms, Jr. 2
Bought of John Dible. 8	Richard Scofield, Peter Denil, 1
John Copp 2	John Wascot 1
Zachariah Roberts, Jr. 1	Nathan Clark. 1
Richard Wascot. 1	Jonathan Miller. 1
Richard Holmes. 1	David Mead. 1
John Holms, Sr. Given to his	Abraham Wead. 1
son, Joseph Holms 1	John Miller, Jr. 1
Cornelius Seely, Sr. Given to	Cornelius Seely, Jr. 1
Joseph. 1	Robert Williams 1
To Sarah. 1	Hezekiah Roberts. 1
David Holms. 1	Daniel Jones 1
Jonathan Holmes. 1	Joseph Hunt 1."

The proprietors "then proceeded to draw ye lot aforesaid," and the names and numbers are recorded. No further division was made until August 3, 1725, when the proprietors met and appointed John Copp, Nathan Clark and David Holmes a committee to lay out and divide by lot all the undivided lands remaining. They found it a vexatious undertaking. They availed themselves of their power "fully to determine all matters and things respecting the same." They first "made additions to such of ye proprietors whose aforementioned lots lay convenient for such additions to be made to them," and then, April 18, 1736, called a meeting of the proprietors and reported that there were eleven men to whose lots they could not make additions, as done in other cases, and asked these

¹ Katonah, Wackemane, Aratoma, Simon, Caerota, Mangakom.

² Where Aaron Sutton now resides.

eleven to draw lots for other allotments, which was done. But there was one tract of about nine hundred acres bounded northerly by "a highway that passes under Noname's Hill, anciently called Frederick's Path,"¹ of which they say,—"In viewing of the^d Last-mentioned and Described Tract of Land, we found it Exceeding Rough, Hilly, Mountanous, Rockey, and the most part mean and unprofitable Land, and So much out of proportion with the other lands we had before Viewed, That it seemed beyond our skill to Determin upon any Equal Equivalent between the one and the other."

The succeeding allotments give the names of many new proprietors, and by the time the last of the new purchase was divided, in April, 1738, it is probable that the new tract was well settled and occupied.

There are but meagre accounts of the division and settlement of the later purchases. The northwest corner, bought by Jacobus Van Cortlandt and Zachariah Roberts, was apparently a speculation of their own.

The patentees of the Dibble purchase, on June 24, 1736, appointed Vincent Simkins, John Holmes and Richard Holmes to divide that tract, and the division was made by lot April 22, 1737. The same three men had been selected on May 28, 1736, to divide the land lying north of the Cross River, constituting the last purchase. This division they made June 23, 1736. Both tracts were owned by the same twenty-nine men, and the surveys were made by Samuel Purdy. In 1735 and 1737 meetings were held by the owners of the first two purchases, and a committee appointed to divide all undivided lands. This committee was continued, and succeeded by others, until all the lands were allotted. The last scattered remnants of "the common land" were thus disposed of as late as 1772.

Years before this, doubtless, the town had become fully settled throughout. The Indians had become a memory of the past, farms had been well improved,

the necessary manufactures and facilities for comfortable living had been established, and the town had almost accomplished the first century of its history.

The record of the allotments of land by the various committees and of the subsequent deeds and bills of sale by individuals is entire, from the earliest time down to the close of the last century, when these documents began to be recorded in the office of the county clerk. The boundaries of the land are in most cases indefinite and cannot now be traced except where streams form partial bounds. The oldest titles known to the writer are that of the farm of the late Henry Robertson, which his grandfather, William, bought of Daniel Merritt in 1744, and the Jay estate, which came from Colonel Jacobus Van Cortlandt to his

daughter Mary, wife of Peter Jay, after his death, in 1748. Van Cortlandt was one of the largest purchasers of land from the Indians (and from the settlers as well), and in the later years of his life consolidated his purchases in the north part of the town.

The ancestors of the Robertson family of Bedford were of Scotch origin. They were among the early settlers of Fairfield County, Connecticut, John Robertson being mentioned in the records of Greenwich in 1677, and William Robertson removed from that town to Bedford in 1744, having bought of Daniel Merritt the farm at Cantito, which is yet in possession of the family. He had several children, some of



Henry Robertson

whom died unmarried, and one removed to Saratoga County, where his descendants still live. The homestead remained in the ownership of his son Jabez, who was twice married. By his last marriage he had three daughters—Rachel, Betsey and Catharine—and three sons—Jabez, Lawrence and Henry, the last two being twins, familiarly called Harry and Larry. The old friends of Henry Robertson well remember his humorous way of relating that he was one of a pair of twins, of whom one was born in November and the other in December, which was a fact, their births having occurred half an hour apart. He was born December 1, 1791. His boyhood and early education were like those of other boys of the vicinity. He taught school for some time, and for several years

¹The road from "the four corners" to New Castle Corner. It is not known why it was called "Frederick's Path,"—not unlikely after an Indian who had assumed that name.

kept a store in a part of the house now owned by B. I. Ambler, in Bedford village, then the property of Benjamin Isaacs. He was also for a time in partnership with his brother Jabez, near the Baptist Church, in the same business. On April 4, 1822, he married Huldah H. Fanton, daughter of Hull Fanton, of Weston, Connecticut. They had five children—William H.; Elizabeth, wife of the late A. F. Dickinson; Sarah, wife of J. F. Sherwood, who died in 1850; Marietta, wife of John C. Holmes, of Lewisboro'; and Emma, wife of Joseph Barrett. After his marriage he lived on the farm, and for more than thirty years, before the days of railroads, he ran a market-wagon to Tarrytown and Cos Cob. In this business his genial disposition and upright dealings gave him a successful trade.

In politics he was first a Federalist, and afterwards a Whig, and always took a leading and active part. In early life he held minor town offices. Between 1830 and 1850 he was supervisor of Bedford for fifteen years. His fearless integrity, sound sense, ready wit and courteous manner combined to make him a candidate whom none cared to oppose. After his withdrawal from the office he did not abandon his interest in politics. From the formation of the Republican party he was in its ranks, and for the last few years of his life, though nearly ninety years of age, he made it a matter of pride to be the first to offer his vote at the polls at sunrise of election day.

Mr. Robertson was connected with the Bedford Baptist Church for more than fifty years. During all that time he was one of its most influential and valued members, active in its work and liberal in its support. He was plain in his tastes and manner of life, sincere in his opinions and prompt in expressing them. Possessed of strong good sense, thorough honesty and great elements of popularity, he only lacked the ambition for it to have achieved high station in public life. As it was, he had the respect and esteem of all who knew him.

He died April 10, 1881, on the place where he was born, and in the house which had been his home for nearly three-quarters of a century.

Jabez Robertson, the brother of Henry, was the

second of six children—three sons and three daughters—of Jabez and Rachel Robertson. He was born August 22, 1787, at the Robertson farm, in Cantito, which his grandfather, William Robertson, previously of Greenville, Conn., bought in 1743, and which is still owned by the heirs of his younger brother Henry. His boyhood was spent there, and was occupied with the usual industries of a farmer's life in those times. His education was the best that could be imparted by the schoolmasters of the neighborhood, and if it was better than that of most boys of his day, it was because he was above the average in ability and application. He taught school near his home for several winters, residing with his father, working on the farm during the remainder of the year, and finding abundant opportunity for the employment of

the mechanical skill and ingenuity which he possessed in an unusual degree.

He was married, March 26, 1815, to Miss Betsey Smith, daughter of Matthias Smith, then deceased, and after that time lived at the house of his wife's mother, which afterward became his own property, and was his home for the remainder of his life. About the time of his marriage, in partnership with his brother Henry, he started a store near the Baptist Church, continuing the business there for some years, and afterward in Bedford village. Not long after this time he was appointed by the Governor a justice of the peace.



JABEZ ROBERTSON.

That office first became elective in 1830, and he was elected in 1831, his term of appointment probably expiring at that time. He was re-elected every four years after, and was still a justice at the time of his death, having held the office for over fifty years. In 1831 he was also chosen town clerk, and held that position, with the interruption of but one year, till 1857. From 1824 to 1843 he was one of the commissioners of schools for the town. In all these positions his long continuance testifies to the satisfaction of his constituents. As town clerk he succeeded Benjamin Isaacs, who had held the office twenty-seven years, and discharged the duties of the place with the systematic care which was habitual to him. As a justice of the peace he acquired great familiarity with the subjects which came to his atten-

tion, and it is related that during the half-century of his service no decision of his court was ever reversed. His advice was constantly sought, and, as it was his practice to discourage litigation, his prudent counsel often averted lawsuits and led to peaceable settlements.

Mr. Robertson was from an early period of his life a leading member of the Baptist Church, and was for many years one of its prominent officers. His devotion to its welfare was proverbial, and his influence in its counsels cannot be measured.

It is not too much to say that among the citizens of this town who have become prominent in its quiet history, none has "borne a fairer character," or been more sincerely honored, than Jabez Robertson. Gentle and affectionate in his family, faithful and sincere in his friendships, dignified and affable in public, diligent and accurate in business and upright in every habit and action, he combined those characteristics which produced a well-ordered life and have left after his death a blessed memory.

He died December 15, 1872. Of his eight children three only—Milton, William N. and Catharine—survive him.

The earliest census of Bedford was taken in 1712, when the whole population was one hundred and seventy-two, that of the county being two thousand eight hundred and fifteen. Of this number, three hundred and thirty-three were slaves, but none were owned in Bedford, the people here being too poor at that early date to indulge in such luxuries. These figures are taken from the Documentary History of New York, but their accuracy is questionable, as it would appear that a colony of thirty-five inhabitants, mostly, if not all, heads of families, must have attained a larger number than one hundred and seventy-two in the first thirty years of their settlement, making no account of new-comers.

In 1784 "the people were numbered," the record informs us, "in the township of Bedford, and there were males under 16 years old, 196; over 16 years old and under 50 there were 153, and over 50 there were 32. In all the male inhabitants there appeared to be,—male inhabitants, 381; female inhabitants under 16, 176; over 16 and under 50, 164; and over 50, 36; in all female inhabitants, 376,—total, 757. Recorded 28th of October, 1784, Philip Leek, town clerk." These figures strike us as being too small, and they are; for on a slip of paper, three by four inches, loose in the book, are the above figures, in Philip Leek's handwriting, headed "on Fleming's Role there is"—and on the other side of the paper, on "Leek's Role, there are 200 boys under 16 years old; 137 over 16 and under 50; 35 over 50—372 in all. One hundred and ninety-one girls under 16; 144 over 16 and under 50; 35 over 50 years—330 in all."

Evidently, Leek forgot to record his own district enumeration after recording Peter Fleming's, and he must have forgotten to record others also, for these

two lists give but thirteen hundred and fifty-nine, while the next enumeration, made by order of Congress only six years later (in 1790), shows a population of twenty-four hundred and seventy-eight, larger than that of any other town in the county.¹

These are the printed figures, but this is the way the record gives it:²

"This census taken by Samuel Finley, Ass't Marshall for the State of New York.
 "North Decr., 1790.
 "No. of Families. 422
 "No. of Males. 1237
 "Females 1183
 "Free blacks. 10
 "Slaves 37
 "Total No. of souls 2467
 "Recd. March 22d, 1791.

"ELIAS NEWMAN, T. C."

In 1814 the population was twenty-six hundred and seventy-five, of whom eighteen were slaves.

The gradual freeing of the slaves was provided for by an act of the Legislature, about 1804, and it became necessary that births of slave children should be filed with the overseers of the poor. There are many of these records extending over a period of twenty years, and also several instances of the voluntary manumission of slaves owned by citizens, among whom are Aaron Read, John Jay, Elisha Clark and others.

In 1826 the population was twenty-five hundred and eight. This was sixty years ago. To show the changes in our manner of living since that time, it may be stated that there were "manufactured in the domestic way, in families," during the previous year, thirty-four hundred and seventy-eight yards of fulled cloth, thirty-three hundred and fifty-five yards of "other woolen cloth fulled" and twelve thousand four hundred and seventy-six yards of linen cloth.

The population by the census of 1875 was thirty-seven hundred and fifty, and in 1880, thirty-seven hundred and thirty-one.

The town contains many of the representative men of Westchester County. Among them may be mentioned:

Edwin Snyder who was one of nine children of John Augustus Snyder, who came to this country from Halle, in Prussian Saxony, about the beginning of this century. His mother was an American lady, Miss Sarah Wood of Elizabeth, N. J. He was born at No. 73 Maiden Lane, New York City, October 17, 1814. His education was obtained at private schools in New York, one of which, kept by a Mr Pickett, he often referred to. At the age of eighteen, and after the death of his father, he went to Augusta, Georgia, and obtained employment as a clerk. So

¹ North Castle was next in size, with two thousand four hundred and seventy, and Morrisania, the smallest, had only one hundred and thirty-three.

² Vol. 3, p. 185.



Samuel Raymond



well adapted was he to the occupation he had chosen that before many years he established himself in business as a cotton merchant and was exceedingly successful. In 1845 he returned to New York, and after that time carried on business in both cities, in partnership with his brother, under the firm-name of E. & J. A. Snyder, the latter-named being in charge of the Augusta branch. This was for several years one of the most prominent and best known houses in the neighborhood of Hanover Square, the headquarters of the cotton trade. The head of the firm was especially conspicuous for his energy and sagacity, and was known among his associates as "The Cotton King."

During this period Mr. Snyder made many investments in real estate, purchasing lots and erecting buildings thereon in different parts of the city. These ventures were directed with the good judgment and foresight which characterized him. In 1856, having acquired a large fortune, he retired from active business, and in 1858 bought the farm now known as Undercliff, which was his residence during the remainder of his life. Here he lived quietly, occupying himself with improving and beautifying his place, and was esteemed by his neighbors as a cordial, kind-hearted man. Possessed of a dignified and handsome presence, he made an agreeable impression upon strangers, and was popular among his acquaintances and friends. He was widely known and beloved for

his great and unostentatious benevolence. Gifted by nature with a strong constitution, he lived to celebrate his seventieth birthday, although for many years he had suffered with rheumatism, and for the last eight years had not left his house. He died May 15, 1885, and was buried in Greenwood.

Mr. Snyder was twice married—the second time, in 1873, to Miss Emily Robinson, of Detroit, Mich., daughter of the late Charles Robinson, of Rochester. She survives him and is his sole heir. He had no children.

The only surviving members of his father's large family are his brother Henry, and his sister Eliza,

widow of Richard Williamson, president of the Bull's Head Bank, both of whom reside in New York.

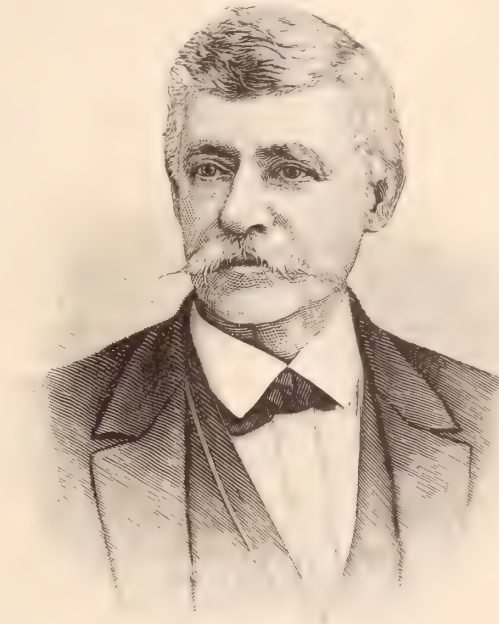
Aaron Raymond, another representative citizen of Bedford, is of English and Scotch descent. His father, who married Miss Tyler, was a farmer, residing at Bedford, Westchester County, where Aaron, the second of four children, was born February 20, 1834.

After finishing his education at the Bedford Academy, he, in 1852, moved to New York City, where he was employed as a clerk in the wholesale cloth and clothing house of D. C. Otis & Perry. Five years later he founded, with P. L. Rogers, the well-known clothing store at the corner of Nassau and Fulton Streets. In 1864 Mr. Rogers died, leaving Mr. Raymond the sole proprietor in an already large and rapidly increasing business.

For a few years he remained alone, after which he associated with him, as partner, his youngest brother, Augustus Raymond, who is still a member of the firm.

By perseverance and close attention to the minutest detail of his business, Mr. Raymond has succeeded in placing his house among the first in New York City. During the course of his mercantile career he has, from time to time, invested largely in real estate and has now in his possession the building, on Nassau and Fulton Streets, occupied by his store, together with other property in New York City, New Jersey and Westchester County.

Mr. Raymond is well known in social and business circles, being one of



Erwin Snyder

the oldest and most prominent members of the Union League Club, and the Chamber of Commerce. In politics he is a steadfast Republican.

In 1859 he married Sarah E. Olcott. They have five children,—Jesse, Edgar O., John M., Madeleine, and Genevieve. By his well-known character for integrity and his genial manner, Mr. Raymond has won for himself the respect and esteem of all who have been brought into contact with him, and his remarkable success as a business man adds lustre to the name of a family which has been long and honorably connected with the history of Westchester County.

PATENTS AND PRESENT BOUNDARIES.—For a

few years after the settlement the pioneers gave themselves no concern about their title to their domains further than to satisfy the Indians and render proper allegiance to the Colonial government of Connecticut. But the discussion which soon arose respecting the boundary led Connecticut to insist, in 1685, that the towns should obtain patents and thus have lawful evidence of their titles and rights. As we have before seen, the people of Bedford were only too glad to avail themselves of this invitation, and after full consideration, doubtless, on May 14, 1687, it was voted that "there shall be money raised to pay for a patten, and that every right of land in the town shall pay an equal proportion." A committee of nine, "or any five of them," was empowered to collect the money and to use it if need be. Of this committee Captain Theal was the head. Though they were directed to report to the town a true account of their action, nothing more is found in the records about the matter for nearly ten years. The delay was no doubt due to the hesitation felt by Connecticut authority to grant a patent during the unsettled condition of the boundary question. The controversy was a long and angry one, carried on by the Governors of both colonies with considerable hostile feeling, and participated in by the residents of each with a spirit which was at times even warlike. Our people did not remit their efforts, however, and in 1692 Zachariah Roberts, of Bedford, and Mr. Underhill, of Rye (the two towns acting together in the matter) went to Hartford to urge the General Court to action in their favor. On January 11, 1697, the "town by vote doth choes Zachariah Roberts for to go to Governor Treat, to see if they can be settled under Coneticut: & the town is to allow him three shillings a day for himself and his hors in ye town's rate, for every day he is out: & what he expends in money, the town is to allow half his expense." On January 26th, a fortnight after, came the annual town-meeting for the election of officers and other business. Whether Roberts had performed his mission to Hartford in the mean time is not quite certain, but it would seem that he had; for at this meeting, with his never-failing thrift, he secured the adoption of this resolution: "The town by a maiger vote doth agre, that every man in the town y^t is in the list & y^t hath land in y^e town, shall pay to Zachariah Roberts, sen'r, two pounds of flax for his money expenses for going to Coneticut; & y^e town doth desire Jonathan Pettit to geather it." On May 1st of the same year, the town still urging the matter, voted to petition the General Court "y^t they may have the pattent granted them for their township, teen milds long from y^e north end of Stamford bounds; to rune teen milds northward in to the woods, and aight milds wide." In this same month Roberts wrote a pathetic letter to Governor Treat and the General Court, describing the troubles which

"proved almost our undoing for severall years," referring to the fact that in January of that year the colony had taken them under its protection,¹ and requesting "for what favor we can have from the Honrd Court at this time for our growth and increase, as we may be beneficial to the honour of God and the good of the country." This final appeal must have settled the question, for the patent was issued May 21, 1697. The persons named as grantees are "John Miller, Senr., Daniel Simkins, Zachariah Roberts, Cornelius Seely, Jeremiah Andrews, John Westcoate, John Miller, Junr., John Holmes, Junr., and the rest of the present proprietors of Bedford." The tract is described: "All those lands boath meadows, swamps and uplands, within these abutments, viz: Southerly on the bounds of the Township of Stanford: Westerly on the wilderness, Northerly on the wilderness, and easterly on the wilderness, or land not yet laid out; Every of which sides is six miles in length, to witt: from the east side westerly, and from the South side northerly, and is a township of six miles square, or six miles on every side, which said lands have been by purchase or otherwise lawfully obtained of the Indian native proprietors." The Connecticut authorities very prudently declined, in view of the complications existing, to grant the request of the people for a tract eight by ten miles in size.

To the disappointment of our people, the boundary question was finally settled, in 1700, against their wishes, as we have before seen, and they were again left without any legal warrant to their lands from the colony of which they now formed a part. Accordingly, they lost no time in taking steps to have ratified to them by their new government what the former one had granted.²

On November 4, 1700, "the town by a maiger vote doth desire and impower Mr. John Tomson and Zachariah Roberts to go to New Yorck and clear up our rits and priveledges in order to ataine a patten to conferme to us our rits, titles and privileges & theyr charges to be paid out of the above said bargin."³

What impediments the committee found in New York cannot be told, but it was three years and a half before the object was attained. Evidently questions soon arose as to the validity of titles and the practicability of buying and selling land, for on February 1702,—

²The condition of things during these years is shown by the early deeds. Following the settlement of 1683 the town is usually described as "Bedford in the County of Westchester and province [or colony] of New York." About 1688, after application was made to Connecticut for the patent, the phrase changes to "Westchester in his majesty's dominion [or territory] of newengland." Sometimes this is abbreviated "Bedford in newengland." Then in 1693-94 we find Bedford in the "province of New York," and during the same time, "in new england." After the patent of 1697, deeds apparently drawn by Roberts triumphantly recite, "Bedford in the County of fairfield and in the Colony of Connecticut." This becomes the regular form until after the final settlement of the boundary in 1700.

³The "bargin" referred to was the offer to sell Cross's vineyard to John Tomson for eight pounds, November 4, 1700.

¹Bedford Records, vol. I, p. 132.

"The town doth order and agree y^t all y^e lands and meadows entered upon publick record in the town of Bedford, both by Abraham Ambler, recorder, and by Zachariah Roberts recorder, both under Coneticut and under New Yorck, that it shall stand good; that is, all the lands and meadows entered upon publick record from the beginning of the town to this very day, shall stand good to them and their ayrs [heirs] for ever."

Very strong and emphatic was this; for it would not do to have the real estate market wait upon the unsuccessful committee. The next month they thought they had found a man who could help them, and on March 9, 1702, the town (firstly) received Captain Peter Mathews, of New York, as an inhabitant, and granted him a home lot upon the same conditions as other home lots were granted, and (secondly) the town "by maigor vote doth desire, entreat and empower Cap Mathews for to git our patent and privileges conferred to us the town of Bedford, as soon, chep and easy as may be, and for so doeing the town doth ingadge to give s^d Mathews a grateude of land for his chardg and peanes (pains) to his satisfaction if they are capable." But "Cap Mathews" liked a definite understanding, and on,—

"Aprill 1, 1702, the town doth grant Cap. Peter Mathews, of New York, a track of land in y^e bounds of Bedford, which is on the south-west corner of our purchase sou west of Nonames Hill, and on the south sid of the road that goeth from bedford to hutson's river and so by the place whair Wampas wigwam was, and to Birum Pond—the medow and upland, ruf & smoth, in estimation three hundred ackers, which he is to have upon y^e condision that he is at y^e chardg to git our lands already purchased, patent and privileges conferred to us at New York, as it be set on file there for our conformation."

It did not take long for the thrifty Roberts to realize that it was a good time to get the town to vote liberal appropriations. Six weeks later, May 14th, the town granted him a good-sized tract lying along Kisco Brook and down to Kisco River, apparently covering a large part of the present village of Mount Kisco, "on condision that he goeth to New Yorck, & ioynes with and is helpful to Captain Petter Mathews to git our land y^t we have already purchased, or our patent and privileges conferred unto us at New York; and this done, then y^e above s^d land and medow is to be to him and his forever."

Roberts was town clerk, at this time, and appended to this resolution, evidently written at a later date and in different ink, are the words, "and in iune following Zacha: Roberts, Sen'r, went to New York and got y^e town's land secured to them." But when he penned this vain boast, he must have failed to notice the next entry, in his handwriting also, from which it will be seen that on "Ogust 20, 1702," the patent was not yet secured, and, what is more to the purpose, would not be, until Capt. Mathews, the insatiate lobbyist, had another chance at the public domains. On that date the town voted that Mathews should have "aded and ioyned" to his former three hundred acres enough "to bring it up one thousand acres, he compleating the above s^d patent." This proved sufficient stimulus, and the patent was granted April 8, 1704, by which the Connecticut patent was referred to and confirmed.

Captain Mathews, on March 28, 1705, received two hundred acres more for his "trouble and chardges in running y^e patent;" so that he probably made a survey of the lines as previously run. The grantees mentioned in this patent were twenty-nine in number, and the quit-rent to be paid annually to the crown was five pounds. But it was always reluctantly paid. In 1714 there was an arrearage of fifty pounds, for none had been paid. There is an occasional reference to it in the minutes of town-meetings, and in 1791, after the Revolution, a tax of ten pounds was raised, in addition to other money on hand, to "discharge the quit-rents due from this town." Elias Newman and Richard Sackett were entrusted with the business, the former being both supervisor and town clerk that year. On April 7, 1795, the town voted to approve Newman's account, and "Voted to enter the Recp^t for Quit-Rents on the Town Records in full length." Perhaps the town clerk, Henry Wilson, thought his entering the resolution a sufficient record, for the receipt does not appear; but not so the people, for at the annual meeting on the first Tuesday of April, 1798, the matter was again called up, and finally disposed of as follows: "Whereas, the sum of \$110.30 that remained in the hands of Elias Newman, then Supervisor, of the Money Raised to Settle the Quit-Rents, due from this Town, was directed to be paid to the then Poor Master, hath been paid and whereas the receipt from the said Newman was ordered to be of Record, therefore voted Unanimously, that the Payment thereof be entered of Record. Also Voted, that the final Discharge of the Auditor of this from Quit-Rents Due from the town of Bedford be Entered of Record."

The boundaries of the town have remained substantially as fixed by the patent, except that a considerable tract lying north of the Croton River has not been included in Bedford, as it would if the patent description of "six miles square" were followed. The reason for this is, without question, found in the fact that Katonah and the other chiefs from whom our settlers bought their lands, never claimed jurisdiction north of the Croton, but that those lands were sold to the Hon. Stephanus Van Cortlandt by the Indians of that region, a little after the time when our first settlement was made.¹

No official survey of the town has been made in late years, nor is any on record, so far as the writer has ascertained. The boundaries, like those of most rural towns, are not monumented, and their existence is

¹It will be remembered that in 1697 the settlers, when applying for the patent, asked to have it extend ten miles north of Stamford bounds. Perhaps some of our settlers may have "squatted" in that region, making temporary terms with the Indians they found in possession. It is a curious circumstance that, as late as 1797, the Friends' Meeting at Golden's Bridge was referred to in the records of that body as the "Bedford Meeting" (James Wood, address before New York Historical Society, 1884), and in 1791 the town voted ten pounds to be paid "to the Committee to build a bridge over Croton River, at a place called Golden's Bridge."

but a matter of tradition, handed down from father to son or from one landholder to the next, with more or less of exactness. So long as the land is used only for farming purposes, these limits have been found sufficiently definite. But a few years ago, in the village of Mount Kisco, which lies in both Bedford and New Castle, it became desirable to know the exact situation of the boundary. An attempt was made in 1879, under the direction of the supervisors of the two towns, to have the line surveyed. In the absence of any official map or survey, recourse was had to a map found on file in the office of the State engineer and surveyor, described as follows:

"A map of the township of Bedford, in the County of Westchester and State of New York, in the Latt. $41^{\circ} 16'$ North, Beginning at the S. E. corner and thence N. 15° W. 550 chains to a heap of stones at the N. E. corner; thence S. 73° W. 338 chains to Croton River, opposite Muscot hill, or mountain; thence along Croton River as it runs to the N. W. corner; thence along the east bounds of the manner of Cortland and North Castle S. $18^{\circ} 40'$ E. 440 chains to a heap of stones at the S. W. corner; thence along the northerly Bounds of North Castle, the Middle Patten formerly so called, and Pound Ridge, 495 chains to the place of beginning. . . . Variation of the Compass N. $3^{\circ} 35'$ W. from the true meridian. The above-described map of Bedford surveyed and Plotted at the request of James McDonald, Esq., of Bedford. By Charles Webb, surveyor, Stamford, November A.D. 1797."

The northern portion of the line in question was easily found. It is marked by an old and substantial stone wall, running (except for the variation of the needle) by the course given on Webb's map, which he doubtless took from it. For nearly two miles it extends right across the country, without regard to the lay of the ground, broken only by two highways, and until lately with not even a bar-way through it. The oldest inhabitants, when questioned about its origin, say, "It has *always* been there." It is undoubtedly the most notable landmark in this part of the county. Tradition says it was built by order of Stephanus Van Cortlandt soon after the Van Cortlandt Manor was granted.

It can scarcely be said that he "built better than he knew;" for he built it as the boundary line between two great provinces. It was in June, 1697, that he obtained his manor grant, bounded southerly by a line beginning near the mouth of the Croton and running "due east twenty English miles." But a month previously Bedford had obtained her patent from Connecticut; and so, when Van Cortlandt's surveyor, working on his "due east" line,¹ was advancing through Bedford, he was doubtless apprised by our settlers that he was on Connecticut soil. No use to go farther; so he ran his line around the north side of Bedford, leaving her out of the Van Cortlandt Manor, as this ancient wall has for nearly two centuries silently testified.

The wall does not extend quite so far south as where the ancient manor line intersects the town boundary; but the west line of the town is traced

with sufficient clearness as far as the village of Mount Kisco. The heap of stones mentioned by Webb as the "S. W. Corner" remained and was well known by those residing near, until a few years ago, when the stones were removed by a farmer. The spot was identified, for the purpose of the survey of 1879, but all attempts to make the manor line, duly extended, strike that spot, were failures. Such a line falls west of the accepted boundary along that part of the town. An attempt was made, reversing Webb's course, and working from the south end, to coincide with the manor line in that way, but the line so run reached the Croton River several hundred feet east of the manor line, and parallel with it for its whole length, thus establishing, first, the correctness of the work, and second, the fact that the boundary between the two towns, as it has been accepted by the residents of both, for so long a time "that the memory of man goeth not to the contrary," cannot be a straight line, as it appears on the published maps.

It seems to the writer that this is accounted for as follows: It has been stated that the patent from the colony of New York was not obtained until April, 1704, although it was applied for in 1700, and was urged with persistence and anxiety by the people during the time intervening. But on February 14, 1701, the West Patent of North Castle (which then included the town of New Castle) was granted to Robert Walters and his nine associates. This grant, probably by error based on an imperfect understanding of the boundaries of the various grants, covered *nearly a quarter of the territory described in the application of the Bedford people*, then pending,—that is, nearly the southwestern quarter of the town. Possibly this was a reason for the delay which so worried the Bedford settlers. The bounds of the West Patent (so far as they effect this part of the story) are "bounded northerly by the Manor of Cortlandt, and eastwardly by *Bedford line of three miles square*." This expression, "Bedford three miles square," as has been said before, meant the first Bedford Purchase, or the Hop Ground. The error of Robert Walters and his associates, therefore, was in bounding the West Patent easterly by that tract, instead of by the whole town, as described in the Connecticut Patent of 1697. Their boundary on the north, the "Manor of Cortlandt," was correct, and they, having made the error of supposing the west line of "Bedford three miles square" to be the west boundary of Bedford, naturally thought that the manor extended as far eastward as the old purchase. This tract of four thousand one hundred and fifty acres then was, by royal patent, situated in two towns, but as a matter of fact was a part of Bedford, and was never claimed by North Castle. The quit-rent to the crown, payable yearly, for the West Patent was six pounds and five shillings. The people of Bedford, finding it burden enough to pay the quit-rent due by the terms of the Bedford Patent, and feeling the injustice of paying a

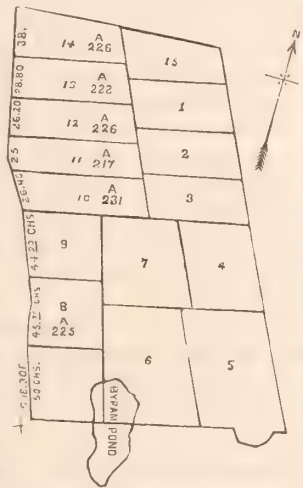
¹ Now the boundary line between New Castle and Yorktown. Until 1846 Somers extended it eastward to this line.

share of that of the West Patent, to which, by a blunder, they were technically liable, refused to pay the latter. The quit-rent was always an unwelcome tax. Its payment was often neglected or delayed throughout the colony, and in 1762 the Colonial Assembly passed an act for collecting the quit-rents and for the sale of land, if necessary. Charles Clinton, Jonathan Brown and Elisha Budd were appointed commissioners, and Nathaniel Merritt, surveyor, under this act. On July 25, 1765, they met and laid out all that part of the above recited tract (the West Patent) which the proprietors had not sold,¹ which part is, by our survey, included within the limits and bounds following: "Beginning at a heap of stones formerly set up in the southwest corner of the said piece of land, and runs thence north 19½ E. 8 chains 66 links; 75 East 140 chains; thence South 39° E. 6 chains 70 links; thence south 89° E. 11 chains 20 links to the road that leads from Bedford to North Castle; thence along said road north 61° 30' east 7 chains 28 links; thence north 75° east 7 chains 50 links; thence north 26° W. 259 chains to a line lately run for the south bounds of the manor of Cortlandt; thence along said line south 87° north 144 chains to a stone fence on the east side of the Widow Sutton's land;² thence south 12° 30' east 107 chains; thence south 33° 20' east 34 chains 20 links; thence south 20° 30' east 65 chains 20 links; thence south 13° E. 35 chains 40 links; thence south 16° east 43 chains to the place of beginning, containing 4151 acres." The tract was divided into sixteen lots, advertised and sold.

This description and map are copied from those on file in the office of the Secretary of State, Albany. The survey, on both the south and west town boundaries, between Bedford and North Castle,³ evidently followed the town lines as then understood, and as usage and ownership had established them during the seventy or eighty years preceding. No official survey has been made since, and this is probably the most correct map of that part of the town boundary now in existence.

MILITARY HISTORY AND INCIDENTS.—The first re-

¹ Obviously the "proprietors had not sold" it because they never had a good title to it.
² The stone wall before mentioned.
³ New Castle was not taken from North Castle until 1798.



MAP OF BEDFORD.

corded military achievement of which this town was the scene occurred in February, 1684, during the Dutch and Indian War, when the Indian village south-east of the present village of Bedford was burned by Captain John Underhill, and several hundred of the Indians butchered, the pious historian of the time observing, "the Lord having collected the most of our enemies there to celebrate some peculiar festival." The place was the plain below the cliff, near the old school-house. As the causes which led to this unfortunate event are fully discussed in another chapter it is not necessary further to refer to them here. Its result was to weaken and intimidate the surviving Indians, so that when our settlers made their acquaintance, about thirty-five years afterward, they were disposed to be friendly. Disagreements may have arisen, which threatened to become serious, and it was such a contingency, perhaps, that led the town to vote, April 15, 1700, to "agree, that if they fortify, it shall be John Holmes, Sen'r's., house, and ye house y^e was Joshua Webb's, desesed." But there is no evidence that it became necessary to fortify, and soon after this date we find their commercial relations with the Indians unbroken.

That some of our ancestors had a desire for military glory and sought to gratify it by joining the expedition which captured Louisburg, on Cape Breton Island, in 1745, is not very gloriously indicated by the following warrant, preserved among the papers of the ancestors of John C. Holmes, Esq., now of Lewisboro:

"Westchester County, ss. To the Constable of Bedford, Greeting: Pursuant to ye order of councill of this Colony, you are hereby, in his maj.'s name, Required to take, apprehend all or any of ye souldiers, if to be found, that Inlisted themselves in his maj.'s service in a Expedition against Canada, and now have deserted sd service, and them safely convey to ye Keeper of his maj.'s goal at Westchester: who is hereby required to receive him or them into close custody, and them safely to keep until notice thereof be given to ye officers under whom they Inlisted, or until some other particular orders be given concerning them. And in your so doing this shall be your warent. Given under our hands and seals, at Bedford, this 15th of September, in ye twentieth year of his maj.'s Reign, A.D. 1746.

"JOHN HOLMES.
 "JOHN MILLER."

The signers were probably town officers.⁴

In the French and Indian War, of which the Louisburg expedition may be considered an initial step, the town took a part. James Holmes, son of John Holmes,⁵ whose name is attached to the above war-

⁴ John Holmes was a son of John Holmes, of Beverly. It is not clear, though it is likely, that he was town clerk at the date of this paper. He certainly was from 1732 to 1740. The office was held by Reuben Holmes from 1747 to 1750. He was succeeded by another John Holmes, who gave place again to the John Holmes in question, in 1761. He continued in the office until his death, by small pox, in 1763, holding, at the same time, the positions of justice of the peace and captain in the militia. He was also an elder in the Presbyterian Church. He was succeeded as town clerk by his son, James Holmes, who held the office till 1774.

⁵ The information which the said James Holmes has, regarding the life and standing in society of his grandfather, John Holmes, is quite limited, he having died, although at an advanced age, still many years since. But in respect to his father, John Holmes, he can with assurance observe that no man sustained a fairer character.—"Life of James Holmes," New Haven, 1815.

rant, volunteered in 1757, being then twenty years of age, and went against Canada. In 1758 he received enlisting orders and a lieutenant's commission, and fought under Abercrombie at the battle of Ticonderoga. The following year he was promoted to a captaincy and served with reputation till the final conquest of Canada, in 1760. He then returned to Bedford, became a farmer, succeeded his father as town clerk, and was a lieutenant-colonel of militia. When the troubles between the colonies and the mother-country, which had been brewing for several years, culminated in 1775, and a Provincial Convention met at New York, he was sent as member from Westchester, but did not attend. "He was looked upon with rather a doubtful eye, was suspected of being a Loyalist. He was a moderate man and heartily wished for a reconciliation between Great Britain and her colonies. His real sentiments were shortly put to the test. His ambition, perhaps, prevailed. War was declared, an army ordered to be raised, and Canada invaded. Holmes was offered a regiment. He accepted it, went with Montgomery, was at the siege of St. John's, at the capture of Montreal, and at the attempt to storm Quebec. The rebels being driven out of Canada, Holmes resigned his regiment and returned to North Castle [Bedford].

"The campaign of 1776 being as favorable to Britain as prejudicial to rebellion, Holmes thought the war at an end, left the rebel country, took refuge within the British lines and renewed his oaths of allegiance. He also took a pardon from the commissioners for restoring peace. He lived within the British lines until 1779, when, finding the British affairs growing worse and worse, he privately left Long Island, went into the rebel country, applied to the rebel Governor, offered to abjure his sovereign and swear allegiance to the States. Clinton, the rebel Governor, treated him with great contempt, refused to receive his submission, called him a deserter from the cause and one not to be trusted. The usage, perhaps, was not improper for a person guilty of such tergiversation.¹

The minutes of town-meetings during the Revolutionary period are lost, having been destroyed, as it is supposed, when the village was burned during the war. This loss is greatly to be regretted, for it would have interested us to know what action our ancestors took during those times when all the colonies were in excitement. There is no doubt that this town, a stronghold of religious liberty from the beginning,² was intensely opposed to the acts of oppression which emanated from the British Parliament, against the earnest remonstrance of its wisest and worthiest mem-

bers. Many of the men of the town went early into the service, some becoming commissioned officers, whose commissions are still preserved by their descendants. Here and there, however, were Tories, friendships and families being sundered by division of sentiment—love of liberty on the one side, and devotion to the King, or at least a halting hope of reconciliation, on the other. The Loyalists, however, were not so numerous as in the lower part of the county, where the antecedents of the people had been different, and where they were more exposed to British influences. Some of them remained at home, while others abandoned their property and took refuge within the British lines, and sought to return after the war. But they were not welcomed. At the town-meeting, April 7, 1784, held in the new Presbyterian meeting-house on the hill, it was "voted, that no persons that have been over to the enemy shall come into the town to reside; if any have already come in, they are to be immediately drove out. Voted, that Richard Sackett, James Trowbridge, Silvenus Reynolds, John Banks, Jun'r, Captain St. John, Eli Tyler, Gabriel Higgins, John Miller ye 3^d, Ezekiel Newman, Cornelius Clark, Abijah Holmes and Abram Holly be a committee to cary the above resolution into execution."

This vigorous resolution was to some degree enforced. Certain of the Tories were banished and their farms confiscated; they took up their residence in Nova Scotia, while others lived and died here, but never regained the respect or confidence of their neighbors.

The town was on the border of the neutral ground and was in a constant state of alarm, both from the occasional presence of British soldiers and from the sudden raids of the Cowboys and Skinners. The great calamity of the war was the burning of the village by a detachment of cavalry under Lieutenant-Colonel Banastre Tarleton, July 2, 1779.

One object of the expedition was, probably, to capture Major Ebenezer Lockwood, of Poundridge, a member of the Committee of Safety, for whose head a prize of forty guineas had been offered, but the general purpose of it is accounted for by Sir Henry Clinton's instructions from the British ministry to make the rebellious people feel the utmost severity of war.³

Tarleton left his camp at Mile Square, near the present village of West Mount Vernon, in the town of Yonkers, at half-past eleven o'clock on the evening previous, and arrived at Poundridge by way of New Castle Corner (now called) and Bedford, during the

¹ From the "History of New York during the Revolutionary War," written by Judge Thomas Jones, of Queens County, between 1782 and 1792, and published 1879, under the auspices of the "New York Historical Society," edited by Edward F. de Lancey, —a Loyalist account of the subject of which it treats.

² "He was a Presbyterian, and, of course, a flaming Republican." "History of New York during the Revolutionary War," by Thomas Jones.

³ "The British army overran the whole county of Westchester. Fewer two parties met, the rebels were always defeated. The towns of Bedford, Salem, North Castle, a number of reputable farm-houses in different parts, and about ten sacred edifices of every denomination of Protestants were burned. "What end a proceeding of this kind answered I never could devise."—From the "History of New York during the Revolutionary War." By Thomas Jones, Justice of the Supreme Court of the Province," written before 1792, remained in MSS till 1879, when published by New York Historical Society.

forenoon of July 2d. Here he was confronted by Colonel Elisha Sheldon with ninety cavalry, and Major Leavenworth with one hundred and twenty untrained militia. "Sheldon in his report estimates the number of the British at three hundred and sixty, while Tarleton gives 'about two hundred.' As he reports seventy of the light hussars, and mentions four other regiments from which he had selected his men (probably in equal proportions) his estimate 'about two hundred' would be sufficiently elastic to embrace the number given by Sheldon. Before so superior a force of picked soldiers the Americans had to retreat precipitately."¹ Tarleton, after routing them and taking a few prisoners, burned their camp equipage, plundered and burned the dwelling of Major Lockwood, whom he had failed to capture, and burned the meeting-house. Retreating toward Bedford, he was harassed by Sheldon's cavalry, aided by the inhabitants, and by the time he reached Bedford they made it so uncomfortable for him that he threatened to burn the village unless they desisted. "They interpreted my mild proposal wrong, imputing it to fear," says Tarleton in his report. "They persisted in firing till the torch stopped their progress, after which not a shot was fired." The tradition is that only one house was left standing after this raid, and that was pulled down a few years ago. The house where Benjamin Hayes kept a tavern, owned by Colonel James Holmes, and standing where William Raymond lately resided, was among those burned. The Presbyterian Church at the foot of the hill, where the blacksmith-shop is now, of course, did not escape. Tarleton retreated by the White Plains road, burning several farm-houses in Bedford and North Castle as he went, among them that of John Ferris. They entered the house of Daniel Ferris to burn it, but finding the fire out, went to a log-house a short distance away, and were returning with a fire-brand when they were fired upon by a party of six Americans concealed near the house, among the trees. The man who carried the brand was wounded and was carried away by his comrades, and the house was then saved.² It seems to have been currently believed in Bedford after the war that Colonel James Holmes accompanied the expedition, one story being that the single house permitted to remain belonged to him, and another being that he caused his own house to be burned, expecting, in the event of final success by the British, to be paid for it. But the truth probably is that he had nothing to do with the affair. The corps of Westchester County Refugees are not mentioned as a part of the expedition, nor was he its lieutenant-colonel until 1781.³

Aside from his shifty course in political matters, he

had the reputation of being an "honest, worthy, humane, friendly man," and not at all the sort of person to lead an attack on his native town. His own account of his whereabouts at the time also seems to indicate that the general impression was erroneous. Nor is it likely that Tarleton would have lost his way in going from Bedford to Poundridge if Holmes had been in his company, as he reported that he did. It appears to the writer that the bad notoriety attached to Holmes' name in this matter is due more to his conspicuous position, and the general detestation in which he was held at the time than to any facts which can now be ascertained.

"On this raid Tarleton not only carried off arms and helmets from Sheldon's camp, but secured some very important papers, as we learn from a letter of Washington to Major Tallmadge, who was posted at Bedford, dated July 5, 1779:

"Sir:

"The loss of your papers was a most unlucky accident, and shows how dangerous it is to keep papers of any consequence at an advance post. I beg you will take care to guard against the like in future.

"The person who is most endangered by the acquisition of your letter is one H., who lives not far from the Bowway on the island of New York. I wish you would endeavor to give him the speediest notice of what has happened. My anxiety on his account is great. If he is really the man he has been represented to be, he will in all probability fall a sacrifice."

"There are good reasons for inferring that this 'H' was Elisha Holmes, who was one of Washington's most confidential spies, and who died in Bedford about thirty-five years ago. He was allowed to take a command under Sir Henry Clinton, and was entrusted by Washington with the minor military movements, in order that he might give information to the English and thus prove the value of his services. Happening to be in New York City in June, he heard of an intended movement against Bedford, his native village. As there was no time to communicate with Washington, he sent to the American commandant at Bedford a dispatch signed 'E. H.' As the handwriting was unknown to the officer, he forwarded the note immediately to Washington, who was then in the Highlands. On receiving it, he wrote on it in pencil, 'Believe all that E. H. tells you, George Washington,' and ordered the courier to return with the utmost speed. It was this dispatch which Washington feared would endanger the life of his friend. It seems that H., a few days after Tarleton's expedition, was summoned by Sir Henry Clinton, who after asking several questions in a general way, suddenly presented the note and inquired if he knew the handwriting, and who E. H. was. 'It is Elijah Hadden, the spy you hanged yesterday at Powles' Hook,' was the quick answer. His coolness and ready wit saved his life."⁴

the British lines, where he remained about a month, and then went to the south part of Long Island, where he remained inactive till the year 1779; then, hearing that his brother at Bedford had died, he repaired within the American lines, put himself within the power of the American army, and by order of Governor Clinton was escorted to the jail in Poughkeepsie, and put into close confinement and there continued until July, 1780. He then made an escape, was betrayed in about five days and committed to the dungeon, where he remained thirteen weeks; was then let out of the dungeon, but continued in prison until July, 1781, during which time he was not admitted to bail, notwithstanding ample security was offered. He then made his escape again and went within the British lines. During his confinement his estate was confiscated. He was now destitute of property, and having no means of subsistence, he accepted the appointment of lieutenant-colonel of the corps of Westchester County refugees."

From "A Short Account of the Descent and Life of James Holmes, Esq., communicated by himself, for the benefit of his two daughters and their descendants, and committed to writing by a friend," New Haven, 1815. (Reprinted in Jones's "History of New York during the Revolutionary War.")

⁴From "Tarleton's Raid through Bedford in 1779." Address before the Westchester County Historical Society, June, 1878, by Rev. Lea Luquer, rector of St. Matthew's Church, Bedford.

¹Addresses of Rev. Lea Luquer before the Westchester County Historical Society, June, 1878.

²Related by Mrs. William Benedict, of Pleasantville, a descendant of Daniel Ferris.

³In the spring of 1778 "he was made prisoner . . . ordered to the guard-house and put under the charge of a captain's company. He soon made an escape from the severe treatment he received, and went within

Throughout this period the people of the town were in a constant state of alarm from the sudden raids of the enemy, and were often comforted by the presence of detachments of American troops. The army of Rochambeau passed through the town in 1781, on their way from Rhode Island to the Highlands, and a portion of it remained here for several days. It is a tradition that the cavalry, or a part of them, were encamped on the farm owned till his death by the late Henry Robertson, and then owned by his father.¹

The house of Daniel Ferris, south of the village of Bedford, was taken possession of by British officers and soldiers at one time during the war and used by them, together with its furniture, during their stay in the neighborhood. At that time they

"captured a deserter whom they punished by running the gauntlet through a double row of soldiers, receiving thirty-nine stripes. The inner row of soldiers stood with lashes in their hands, the outer row with swords. When the man was ready for the race an English shilling was placed between his teeth, and was denied by his sufferings. He was carried into the house and lay in a helpless condition for three weeks. He finally recovered. This took place in the lower part of Bedford, on the flat meadow, north side of Coman Brook, on the east side of the road leading from White Plains to Bedford."²

The War of 1812 found two uniformed companies in the town, one of cavalry and one of artillery. These both went, with drafts from the three militia companies of the town, to the defense of the city of New York, then threatened by the British fleet, and were stationed at Brooklyn for several months. So far as the writer can ascertain, the only one of these veterans now living is Mr. Zebulon Reynolds, of Mount Kisco. During the late Civil War the town was early represented in the field. Meetings were held soon after the fall of Fort Sumter, and the sentiment of the town was earnestly patriotic. It has not been practicable to obtain lists of those who volunteered from this town. They were numerous, and were distributed among many regiments. Several died in battle or by disease contracted in camp, and their record is that of the record of their noble comrades all over the country. Later on in the course of the war the ladies of the town contributed nobly to the work of the Christian and Sanitary Commissions. Meetings were held at various houses, and by systematic and continued industry, large quantities of hospital supplies were forwarded to the seat of war. When the time came that volunteers were no longer easily obtained, the town provided for paying bounties for volunteers, and for taking care of their families in their absence. When drafts were ordered, special meetings were frequently held, and money was

voted to pay the commutation of those drafted or to provide substitutes for them. Town bonds were issued from time to time by the supervisors of the town³ aggregating about \$75,000, all of which were paid off year by year as they became due. The last were paid about ten years after the close of the war.

CIVIL AND OFFICIAL HISTORY.—In the early times the most important office in the town was that of town clerk. Whatever interest this or any historical sketch may possess is due to the faithful and painstaking men who preserved for us, often in labored and unaccustomed handwriting, and in quaint and awkward phrase, not only the votes and enactments of our ancestors, but even their ideas and peculiarities. It is most fascinating to trace "between the lines" of these blurred and ancient records the changes of thought and habit, the rise and fall of little ambitions, the spirit of speculation and of thrift and the evidences of successes and failures. As we attempt to "recall and reconstruct the past," by the aid of these early scribes, we come to feel almost a personal acquaintance with them, and relinquish their society with regret. Among those especially worthy of our appreciation are Abraham Ambler, Zachariah Roberts, John Copp, Cornelius Seely, Zachariah Mills, John Holmes, Reuben Holmes and James Holmes. Those in later years who have held the office longest and fitted it best were Benjamin Isaacs and Jabez Robertson.

Next in importance was the office of justice of the peace. Abraham Ambler was the first incumbent, having been designated by the General Court of Connecticut, and it would appear that the office continued to be filled by that authority, as there is no mention of justices being elected at the annual town-meetings of that period. It was customary to elect a messenger and constable for the Town Court, from which it is to be inferred that the justice's court was one of some dignity.⁴ There is no record, however, giving us any information of this, and our only record of the names of the early justices is where they appear as taking acknowledgments of deeds. Joseph Theal held the office as long as he remained in the town. Roberts became justice in 1702, and held the office till his death, in 1707 or 1708. Many deeds were acknowledged before him as justice and recorded by him as town clerk. He was succeeded by John Bayley, before whom John Copp took the oath as town clerk, April 30, 1708. After this time the record became obscure, for the reason that many deeds are recorded without acknowledgment, and later it was the practice to acknowledge them before a judge of a Court of Record.

Caleb Haight was the first justice elected at town-

¹ B. I. Ambler, 1862-63; James Wood, 1864-65; H. D. Robertson for several years after.

² The small stream flowing through the valley, between the village and the seminary, was known from a very early date as "Whipping-Post Brook." Perhaps this term commemorates the method of punishment inflicted by the early justices.

¹ "On the morning of the 2d of June, 1781, the grenadiers and chasseurs of the regiment of Bourbonnais left Ridgebury for Bedford, which they reached after a hard march across a hilly country, a distance of fifteen miles. At Bedford this detachment made a junction with the legion of Lauzun, which had until this point marched on the left flank of the army, but now took a strong position beyond Bedford."—*Magazine of American History*, January, 1880.

² Related by Mrs. William Benedict, of Pleasantville, a granddaughter of Mr. Ferris.

meeting in the town, in 1830. Jabez Robertson was chosen the following year.

Those who have held the office the longest in later years are Jabez Robertson, Jared P. Hoyt, Myron B. Silkman and Moses W. Fish.

The office of supervisor, as now constituted, did not exist under the early government. There was an office of that name, to which Zachariah Roberts was chosen in 1693 and John Miller in 1703, but there is no other mention of it in the early years, and its duties are not known to the writer. The important positions then were "towne's men" (the selectmen of New England at present), assessor, collector, surveyor, and, perhaps, most of all, fence-viewer and "pounders." Each year the fence viewers were enjoined "to find defects with moderation," and pound-masters were a serious necessity, when the whole tillable lands of a town were enclosed by a single fence. The record of town meetings is complete since the one held April 6, 1784, "at the Presbyterian meeting-house."¹

This meeting

"Made choice of Zebadiah Mills, Moderator.

also, Philip Leek, Town Clerk

Do. Peter Fleming, Supervisor.

Do. Lemuel Light, Constable and Collector.

James McDonald, Esq., his Surety.

"Made choice of Philip Leek, one of ye Assessors.

Do. Richard Sacket, one other.

Do. John Miller, one other.

Do. Ephraim Raymond, one other.

"Made choice of James McDonald, }
and Eli Taylor, } Commissioners of the Roads.
and Zebadiah Mills, }

"Made choice of Nathan Canfield, Pounder, as usual."

The list closes with the names of eight fence-viewers and thirty-one highway masters.

In 1807 David Miller was elected supervisor, and held the office twenty-six years. Henry Robertson succeeded him, continuing in the position fourteen years. Since that time no one individual has held the place so long as either of the above.

The civil history of Bedford, during those two centuries of her existence has been an honorable one. The administration of town affairs, while careful and economical, has always been directed for the interest of the people. The town has not lost a dollar by defaulting officers or by other breaches of trust. Her citizens have always been of excellent reputation for morality, intelligence and rectitude. They have from time to time occupied nearly every position of trust in the county, and have frequently been chosen to the Legislature, and it has twice happened that each branch of the Legislature had at the same time, for its presiding officer, a native of this town.²

Bedford has been represented in the Halls of

Congress³ and Foreign Courts;⁴ she has exerted her full influence in times of peace as well as in war times, and her public men, as well as her private citizens, have been respected for their integrity and for their faithful discharge of public duty.

CHURCHES.

There are in the town of Bedford thirteen places of worship—three Presbyterian, at Bedford Village, Mount Kisco and Katonah; four Methodist Episcopal, at Bedford Village, Katonah, Chestnut Ridge and Bedford Station; one Protestant Episcopal and one Baptist, situated a mile north of Bedford Village; two Roman Catholic, at Mount Kisco and Bedford Village; one of the Society of Friends, at Mount Kisco, and the Bethany Union Chapel, two miles from Bedford on the road to Cross River. The Methodist Episcopal Church at Mount Kisco is in the town of New Castle, standing very near the town line, and a large part of its congregation are Bedford people.

THE FIRST PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH OF BEDFORD had its origin in the strong religious sentiment which was a distinguishing feature of the Puritan settlers. Obeying the injunction of the General Court, one of their very first acts was to provide a suitable house lot for their future minister and a site for the meeting-house. For several years the history of the town and the history of the church are inseparable. At the same meeting "the town by major vote" chose their local officers, offered a bounty for wolves, and levied the "yearly reate" for the support of the minister.

At this early date the church in Bedford was not, it is true, under the form of government known now as Presbyterian, for there was no Presbytery organized in this country until 1705. "But they were Presbyterians in the larger sense in which that name was used from the beginning among the Connecticut churches. The ecclesiastical system that prevailed in Connecticut was one that bore a close affinity with the Presbyterian order, and that was frequently designated, even at a very early day, Presbyterian. . . . The principal friends and patrons of this colony in England from the beginning, and many of those who came over to settle here, were avowed Presbyterians. . . . Thus there was much to justify the usage, in accordance with which, from early times, and down to a period comparatively recent, the churches of Connecticut have been familiarly styled Presbyterian. Such, at all events, was the designation of the Bedford Church from the beginning."⁵ In December, 1681, the town called "mr. priddon, of Gemeco"

³ W. H. Robertson, 1867-68.

⁴ Hon. John Jay, Minister to Austria.

⁵ From "History of Bedford Church. Discourse delivered at the Celebration of the Two hundredth Anniversary of the Founding of the Presbyterian Church of Bedford, Westchester County, N. Y., March 22, 1881, by Charles W. Baird, D.D." A most interesting and valuable contribution, not only to the history of this church but also to that of the town and county.

¹ The minutes of town meetings between 1722 and 1784 are not to be found. It is probable that they were destroyed when the village was burned, during the Revolution.

² W. H. Robertson, President of the Senate; James W. Husted, Speaker of the Assembly.

(Jamaica, L. I.) to be their minister, designating Captain Theale "to goe to mr. priddon to declare their mind, and Abraham Ambler "to write to Mr. priddon in their name and behalf."

"It has been stated that John Prudden came to Bedford and preached here for some time. This, however, is a mistake. Mr. Prudden, of Jamaica, continued the Minister of that town for ten full years from the date of his call in 1676. Bedford remained for three years without a resident minister."¹ During this time it was the practice of the people to designate one of their own number "to carry on the Lord's day," among whom were John Holmes, Abraham Ambler, John Wescot, Zachariah Roberts, Cornelius Seely and Daniel Jones. The first settled minister was Thomas Denham or Dunham. He died here, and is buried in the ancient grave-yard at the foot of Bates' Hill, doubtless with many of his parishioners, whose graves are unmarked and unknown.

When the town came under the government of New York, in 1700, our people found themselves in the parish of Rye instead of the parish of Stamford. The Provincial Assembly had, in 1693, passed an "Act for Settling a Ministry in the City and County of New York" and in three adjacent counties. One of the parishes mentioned in this act included Rye, Mamaroneck and Bedford. No particular church was mentioned in the act, and all the members of the assembly which passed it, save one, were Dissenters. But the Governor of the province, who was a zealous adherent of the Church of England, made every effort to execute the law for the benefit of that church. The third minister, John Jones, hesitated to accept the call of the Bedford people, fearing that he should not be able to conduct his ministry without unpleasantly encountering the government of the province. The people had met in town-meeting and petitioned the General Assembly to exempt them from the provisions of the act of 1693, and had Jacobus Van Cortlandt convey their message, but in vain. Rye, being then without a minister, had for the time yielded, and the Propagation Society sent Mr. Thomas Pritchard to be their missionary at Rye and Bedford. On his arrival here he found most violent opposition. Headed by Justice Zachariah Roberts the people had voted in town-meeting not to pay Mr. Pritchard his salary, and Mr. Jones was fearless and unceasing in his warfare upon the Church of England and the Provincial Government. The Governor was finally obliged to come to the defense of his missionary. Jones was compelled to give bonds to appear at the next term of the court and Roberts was left in the custody of the sheriff. This was in May, 1705."² Disgusted

with that sort of life Mr. Jones left Bedford within a few months. Another effort was then made by the people to be released from the maladministration of the act of 1693. Being again refused by Lord Cornbury they gave up the struggle, and for fifteen years were without a minister. "They were taxed year by year for the support of the Church of England missionary at Rye, twenty miles off, the constable of the town being required to collect the quota assessed upon this part of the missionary's parish," and pay the amount in half-yearly instalments to the church wardens.³ This continued till the Revolution, the tax constantly increasing from about twelve pounds per year in 1710 to ninety-nine pounds in 1776.

Among the nineteen ministers of this church, from the beginning to the present time, there have been several who are worthy of special mention for their exceptional ability and character. The brief limits of these pages permit reference to but one—the fourth pastor, Rev. William Tennent, "that eminent man, whose name is intimately associated with the early history of Presbyterianism, and of evangelical religion in this country. It was probably under Mr. Tennent's ministry that this church came for the first time under the care of a Presbytery."⁴ A clergyman of the Irish Episcopal church, he had removed to America less than two years before, and had joined the Synod of Philadelphia, upon giving his reasons for dissenting from the doctrines and practices of prelacy. After preaching for eighteen months in Eastchester, N. Y., he came to Bedford. He was now forty-eight years old, and his four sons, Gilbert, William, John and Charles, were youths nine to seventeen years of age. Bedford had no more interesting association than that of the presence of this remarkable family within its precincts."⁵

Being able to give their minister but forty pounds a year for his support, the people agreed that he should have a hundred acres of land, fourteen of which, in the east field, were conveyed to him by the proprietors March 1, 1721, and the remainder was laid out for him at Cantito March 20, 1722. "The norwest corner by y^e road to y^e fishing falls,⁶ bounded by a red oak tree upon y^e old purchas line, etc., etc. * * * y^e contents of w^o is 80 [acres]."⁷ Other tracts adjoining this were subsequently allotted to him, until he seems to have had between two and three hundred acres in that neighborhood. The writer has not been able to identify the exact location of this land.

It has been stated that Mr. Tennent and his family

considering the relations of the parties a month before; how it is accounted for the writer leaves others to guess. The land seems to have been on Cherry Street, now the farm of Weeden Fowler.

¹ Baird's History of Bedford Church.

² The Presbytery of Philadelphia.

³ Baird's History of Bedford Church.

⁴ Doubtless the Indian fish weirs on Croton River, which still exist near Wood's Bridge.

⁵ Bedford Records, Vol. II., pp. 73.

¹ Baird's History of Bedford Church.

² On June 21, 1705, Roberts and his wife sold to Pritchard for one hundred pounds sterling, three hundred acres in the northwest corner purchase; "one hundred and ten rods northward along the Indian path which leads to Muscoota, and thence runs westward on the said path in length one hundred rods," etc. This was a curious transaction, con-

resided on this farm, but that is not clear. About the time of his removal from Bedford, as it is supposed, that is, in August, 1726, he sold these outlying lands, part to Isaac Quintard, of Stamford, and part to Theophilus Kellem and Hezekiah Roberts.¹ On May 16, 1749, his "son and heir at law," Gilbert Tennent, "for the promoting and support [of] the Gospel of Jesus Christ according to and under the presbyterian discipline," gave to the trustees of the Presbyterian Church, "John Holmes & John Miller, Esqrs., Zebadiah Mills, Yeo," several parcels of land, all apparently in the vicinity of Bedford village: "one house and home lot, containing by estimation about ten acres; two lots in the east field, containing by estimation 8 acre each," etc. It appears to the writer that this house and home lot was more likely to be Mr. Tennent's residence than the Cantito farm.

"It is with no small satisfaction that I * * * establish the fact that Bedford was for so long a period the home and parish of William Tennent. 'The Presbyterian church,' says Dr. Alexander, 'is probably not more indebted for her prosperity, and for the evangelical spirit which has generally pervaded her body, to any individual than to the elder Tennent.' We cannot doubt that his preaching and holy living and the examples of piety furnished by his family, made an abiding impression upon this community."—Baird's History of Bedford Church.

Although the site for the meeting-house was selected by the committee at the time of the first division of the home lots, no building was erected for several years. At a town-meeting, October 15, 1689, "the town doth agree to build Mr. Abraham Ambler, senior, a frame fortye foote long and twenty-two foote wide, and to set it up fit for elabording and shingling, and to rais it up by the last of March to come after the date hereof, and the house above-mentioned is to be teen foote and a half between ioyns, and this frame, above-mentioned, is to be set up upon the consideration that Mr. Abraham Ambler, senior, will come up as often as he can conveniently to carry on the Lord's day amongst us one year y^t he may settle with us."² The building stood near "the rock called Bates hill," where the Methodist Church now stands. How long it remained is not known. The second one stood at the upper end of the village, near where the blacksmith shop now is, at the foot of the hill.

It was destroyed when the village was burned by the British under Tarleton, July 2, 1779. The third edifice was erected after the Revolution,³ on the summit of the hill, where it was a landmark well known throughout all the surrounding country until it was removed in 1879. The fourth and present church

stands on the parsonage property, facing "The Green," or old common. It was presented by Francis A. Palmer, a native of this town, and for many years past President of the National Broadway Bank, New York. It is Gothic in architecture, and is the handsomest and best appointed church-building in this part of the county. It was dedicated August 15, 1872.

Following is a list of the ministers of Bedford Presbyterian Church:

- Rev. Thomas Denham, 1684-89, died 1689.
- Rev. Joseph Morgan, 1699-1702, died after 1740.
- Rev. John Jones, 1702-5, died 1719.
- Rev. William Tennent, 1720-27, died 1745.
- Rev. Henry Baldwin, 1728, died before 1740.
- Rev. Robert Sturgeon, 1732-43, died after 1750.
- Rev. Samuel Sackett, 1743-53, died 1784.
- Rev. Eliphalet Ball, 1754-68, died 1797.
- Rev. Samuel Mills, 1769-86, died 1813.
- Rev. John Davenport, 1786-91, died 1821.
- Rev. Isaac Foster, 1792-94, died 1807.
- Rev. Samuel Blatchford, 1795, died 1828.
- Rev. Josiah Henderson, 1798-1803, died after 1822.
- Rev. Ebenezer Grant, 1804-21, died 1821.
- Rev. Jacob Green, 1822-48, died 1851.
- Rev. David Inglis, 1848-52, died 1877.
- Rev. David C. Lyon, 1851-57.
- Rev. Peter B. Heroy, 1857-78, died 1878.
- Rev. James H. Hoyt, 1880.

THE MOUNT KISCO PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH was organized June 15, 1852. A few years before that (1847) the completion of the railroad to that point had caused the building up of a considerable village, where none existed before, and seventeen members of the Bedford Church, living in the western part of the town, were formed into a new church. The house of worship was soon built, and the growth of the organization was rapid. It is now nearly as strong in membership as the parent church. Its pulpit was, for a short time, supplied by ministers from other churches.

The ministers of Mount Kisco Presbyterian Church have been:

- Rev. Andrew Shiland, installed June, 1854; resigned April, 1870.
- Rev. John Hancock, installed October, 1870; resigned September, 1876.
- Rev. John H. Frazee, installed June, 1877; resigned November, 1879.
- Rev. James W. Johnson, installed June, 1880; resigned September, 1883.
- Rev. Addison D. Madeira, installed November, 1884; present pastor.

THE KATONAH PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH was organized November 17, 1872. The Rev. John Hancock, then the pastor of the Mount Kisco Church, and Mr. John J. Wood, one of the elders, were largely instrumental in its organization, and five of its original members came from that church. The present church edifice was completed early in 1875, the regular services being held, up to that time, in a public hall at Katonah. The Rev. Mr. Hazleton, of the Presbyterian Church at North Salem, preached here for some time, holding services in his own church in the morning and at Katonah in the afternoon. In the spring of 1875 a call was given to the Rev. John H. Eastman, then just graduated from the Union

¹ Bedford Records, Vol. II., pp. 105, 116.

² "It is evident from the dimensions given in these specifications, that the house thus described could not have been intended for a dwelling, and must have been the Meeting-House, the building of which had been urged upon the settlers by Mr. Ambler, of Stamford."—Baird's History of Bedford Church.

³ It was probably built in the fall of 1783, as the deed for the site, presented by Mr. Lewis McDonald, was dated August 6, 1783, and the annual town-meeting was held in the new building, April 7, 1784.

Theological Seminary. He was installed in July, 1875, and is still the pastor of the church.

THE PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL CHURCH in Bedford is the outgrowth of the Church of England sentiment which existed here very early in the history of the town. Slender enough at the beginning, it was carefully fostered by the "Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts,"¹ one of whose earliest acts was to designate Rev. Alexander Stuart as "missionary at Bedford." The parish, however, consisted of Rye, Mamaroneck and Bedford, and the latter not constituting a sufficient field, Mr. Stuart went elsewhere. The first inducted rector of the parish was the Rev. Thomas Pritchard, who was sent here in 1704. Some of his difficulties in Bedford have been referred to elsewhere. His ministry lasted only for a year.²

The ministers of this three-fold parish were appointed by the Propagation Society (which usually ratified the choice of the vestry) and were inducted by order of the Governor, down to the time of the Revolution. After the tragic death of Rev. Mr. Avery in 1776, there was no minister in the parish for ten years or more, owing to the troubled and unsettled times. In 1789, on April 19th, "the few members of the church who could be collected in the northern part of the county assembled and incorporated themselves as 'The trustees of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the townships of Bedford and North Castle.'"³

In 1796, shortly after the town of New Castle was formed from North Castle, a reorganization was effected as "The Protestant Episcopal Church in the united towns of Bedford and New Castle, to continue by the regular name of St. George's Church." In 1803 the vestry, having received a part of the legacy of St. George Talbot, "decided to purchase from Lemuel Light the frame house and forty acres of land to be used as a residence and glebe for the minister. This is the property now held by St. Matthew's Church.

In 1807 the balance of the Talbot legacy being received, it was determined to build a church on the land already purchased. St. Matthew's was finished in 1809. The parish was aided in this work by a gift of five hundred dollars from Trinity Church, New York. Services at the old church at New Castle Corner, were now discontinued, and not long after, the building, having become dilapidated, was pulled down.⁴ Of the ministers who served the parish

formed by uniting the New Castle and Bedford congregations, there is but scanty record, until 1804, when Rev. George Strebeck was called. He remained less than a year. Previous to this, there is some reason for believing that the parish was in care of Rev. Theodosius Bartow, for thirty years rector of Trinity Church, New Rochelle.

The following is a list of Episcopal ministers at Bedford.

MISSIONARIES OF THE GOSPEL PROPAGATION SOCIETY.

Date of call.			
1704	Rev. Thomas Pritchard	1705	Died.
1705	" George Muirson	1708	"
1709	" Christopher Bridge	1719	"
1722	" Robert Jenney	1726	Resigned.
1726	" James Wetmore	1760	Died.
1763	" Ebenezer Punderson	1764	"
1765	" Ephraim Avery	1776	"

RECTOR OF ST. GEORGE'S, OF BEDFORD AND NEW CASTLE.

1804	Rev. George Strebeck	1805	Resigned.
------	--------------------------------	------	-----------

RECTORS OF ST. MATTHEW'S.

1809	Rev. Nathan Felch	1813	Resigned.
1814	" George Weller	1817	"
1818	" Samuel Nichols	1839	"
1839	" Alfred H. Partridge	1855	"
1855	" Edward B. Boggs	1866	"
1866	" Lea Luquer		Present rector.

THE BAPTIST CHURCH.—The "Baptist Church of Christ in Bedford," as it is styled in the old records of the church, was organized in September, 1787, by seventeen members of the Stamford Baptist Church,⁵ who were dismissed for the purpose, and who combined with themselves those of their religious opinion whom they found in this neighborhood. The date of incorporation is September 3, 1801. There are no records of the church until September 22, 1798. After that time they were kept in due form, though sometimes briefly. It is probable that previous to that date there was no settled pastor, or even weekly preaching. But about that time the church was built, and in December, 1799, it was voted "that this church keep up meetings at this house every Lord's day." The minutes for the next year or two contain references to Elder Jones, Elder Rand and Elder Wines, from which it is inferred that they preached here occasionally, but there was no regularly called pastor until January 1802, when Elder Ezra Fountain, previously known as Deacon Fountain, was called. He was received as pastor in May, 1802, and continued that relation till November, 1837. In September, 1823, however, he asked a letter of dismission to unite with the Baptist Church at Peekskill, which was granted in November. His name reappears in the minutes of monthly meetings in April, 1824, and in October it was voted "to give Elder Ezra Fountain a general invitation to a seat with this church," so that he seems to have resumed his relation and to have continued the pastor till his

¹ Incorporated in London June 16, 1701, to send missionaries to the colonies.

² "About a year after his settlement in Rye the Rev. Mr. Pritchard died, a fortunate occurrence for the parish, for his conduct had not been such as to conciliate those who were unfriendly to his mission." Rev. Lea Luquer, Centennial address, 1876.

³ His brief ministry ended deplorably in March or April of the next year. — *Bard's "History of Bedford Church."*

⁴ Rev. L. Luquer, Centennial address, Bedford, 1876.

⁵ St. Mark's of New Castle, erected in 1852, stands nearly on the same site.

⁵ The Stamford Church was also the mother of the North Salem Baptist Church, now defunct, and the Sing Sing Baptist Church. The First Baptist Church of New York City was also, in part, an offshoot from it.

resignation, in 1837.¹ The membership in 1824 numbered one hundred and nine.

The church was repaired at considerable expense in 1837 and was in a good state of preservation in 1864, when it was removed to make room for the present more commodious edifice. The site is a handsome one, a few rods south of St. Matthew's Church, in a triangular plot of somewhat less than an acre, liberally shaded with maples. These doubtless had their origin in a resolution passed at the monthly meeting in March, 1832, which appointed a committee "to purchase young trees of sugar maple, and set them about twenty feet apart, on the line of our ground, around our Meeting-House."

Of the ministers whose names are given below, some were engaged to supply the pulpit for short terms, and were not regularly called as pastors. The Rev. Elkanah Holmes, a Baptist minister who resided near by, is worthy of mention in connection with this church, as he frequently preached here during the ministry of Mr. Fountain. He was not, however, regularly in charge of the church.

MINISTERS OF BEDFORD BAPTIST CHURCH.

- Rev. Ezra Fountain, May, 1802, to November, 1837.
- Rev. David Bernard, December, 1837, to May, 1838.
- Rev. Charles H. Underhill, August, 1838, to April, 1840.
- Rev. Lemuel Covell, April, 1840, to October, 1841.
- Rev. — Bigelow, December, 1841, to February, 1842.
- Rev. Nathan A. Reed, March, 1842, to March, 1847.
- Rev. Farman Knowlton, April, 1847, to June, 1847.
- Rev. I. S. Gifford, July, 1847, to July, 1857.
- Rev. E. T. Strickland, November, 1857, to November, 1858.
- Rev. J. H. Parks, December, 1858, to June, 1862.
- Rev. Richard Harris, August, 1862, to August, 1866.
- Rev. Conant Sawyer, D.D., June, 1867, to 1875.
- Rev. Joseph Burnett, November, 1875, to March, 1879.
- Rev. W. H. Marshall, May, 1879, to June, 1881.
- Rev. J. F. Feitner, July, 1882, present pastor.

KATONAH METHODIST CHURCH.—Toward the close of the last century Peter Moriarty and his colleagues, itinerant Methodist preachers of the New Rochelle Circuit, began to hold occasional meetings in Cherry Street, Whitlockville, and other neighborhoods in the northern part of the town. As Methodism prospered in the county and preaching-stations became more numerous, these meetings came successively under the care of other circuits established in the northern part of the county—the Croton Circuit shortly after 1800, the Mount Pleasant Circuit in 1826, and the Bedford Circuit in 1833. The ministers in charge of this circuit in 1833 were Henry Hatfield and Denton Keeler.

In the summer of 1836 a school-house was built

in Whitlockville, and in November of that year the Methodists of the neighborhood began to hold Thursday evening prayer-meetings in it. "This was the beginning of 'The Great Revival,' as it was called, and it deserved the name, for it was probably the greatest religious revival, everything considered, the place has ever known. . . . The whole region was deeply moved, and more than one hundred and fifty professed conversion, the larger part of whom joined the Methodist Episcopal Church."² In the spring of 1837 the question of building a church was seriously discussed, and an organization effected. The house was built during the summer and fall, and was dedicated December 2, 1837, by Rev. Francis Hodgson, of New York.

Whitlockville continued to be a part of the Bedford Circuit until 1857, when it was, in connection with Cross River, made a separate charge. In 1865 it was made a station, with a minister appointed to it alone. In 1872 the name was changed from Whitlockville to Katonah, that having become the name of the post-office several years before.

About that time the necessity for a new church edifice began to be apparent, and following the change of name and the changed location of the village, a new site was chosen near the station, and the present church erected in 1874. The contributions of the congregation were liberal, and the building is large, handsome and convenient. It was dedicated January 21, 1875.

The old church was occupied for the last time Sunday evening, January 17, 1875. The building, with the land on which it stands, was a few years afterward sold to the American Lens Company, whose works are near by.

The following is a list of the ministers appointed to this church after it was set off from the Bedford Circuit, in 1857:

WHITLOCKVILLE AND CROSS RIVER.

- 1857-58 A. Hunt.
- 1859-60 Thomas Edwards.
- 1861-62 A. C. Gallahue.
- 1863-64 J. Z. Nichols.

WHITLOCKVILLE.

- 1865-66 E. B. Otheman.
- 1867-68 J. C. Hoyt.
- 1869-71 W. M. Chipp.

KATONAH.

- 1872-74 Thomas La Monte.
- 1875-77 Edmund Lewis.
- 1878-80 Philip Germond.
- 1881-83 Richard Wheatley.
- 1881-85 W. S. Winans, Jr.

BEDFORD AND CHESTNUT RIDGE METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCHES.—In 1806, chiefly through the instrumentality of James Fountain,³ an ardent and able

¹ During a part of this time he preached the third Sunday of each month at Yorktown. He died in 1840, and was buried on his farm, which was afterward bought by John A. Miller and is now owned by Samuel Hoyt. His remains have been removed to Buxton Cemetery, and the tombstone bears the inscription, written by himself,—

"A dying preacher I have been
To dying sinners such as you;
A dying preacher I remain
To all who come my grave to view."

² Rev. Thomas La Monte, Historical Sketch of Katonah Methodist Episcopal Church, August, 1878.

³ He was a brother of Ezra Fountain, for thirty-five years minister of the Bedford Baptist Church. His home was where Benjamin B. Sarles now lives.

Methodist exhorter, a church of that denomination was built at the "Four Corners," two miles west of Bedford, on the road to New Castle. It was known as the Bedford Methodist Church, and for several years doubtless belonged to the New Rochelle Circuit. In 1826 the Mount Pleasant Circuit was formed and included this church, and in 1833 the Bedford Circuit was set off. The appointments on the Bedford Circuit for that year, and the amounts assessed to them for the finances of the circuit, were as follows:

Round Hill	\$68.28
North Castle	39.70
Drake Waterbury's	13.87
John Waterbury's	14.37
New Castle	77.82
Middle Patent	82.17
Bedford	34.84
S. Moseman's	21.50
Cherry Street	44.68
Chestnut Ridge	48.91
To be raised by quarterly collections	58.34

It would appear from this table that the class, or organization, at Chestnut Ridge, two or three miles to the southwest, was stronger in membership than the one at the Four Corners. In 1837 the church edifice was removed to Bedford village and erected at the west of the old burying-ground, where the first meeting-house of the settlers stood, at the foot of the "rock called Bates his hill." Again the most of the work was done by James Fountain. The Chestnut Ridge people were disposed to complain on account of the increased distance to the church in its new situation, and set plans on foot for having one of their own. This was accomplished after a few years, and in 1846 the present house in Chestnut Ridge was built. It was dedicated on July 19th of that year. Bedford and Chestnut Ridge (together with Middle Patent) became a separate pastoral charge in 1856, being set off from the Bedford Circuit, which was probably divided up about that time. The preachers to the united charge since that time have been,—

1856	William Stevens.
1857-58	John W. Jones.
1859-60	Ira Ferris.
1861-62	George Daniel.
1863-64-65	N. S. Tuthill.
1866-67-68	J. H. Champion.
1869-70-71	J. H. Hawkshurst.
1872-73-74	Edmund Lewis.
1875-76	William Blake.
1877-78-79	J. M. Burger.
1880-81-82	R. M. Roberts.
1883-84-85	E. H. W. Barden.

BEDFORD STATION METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—The Methodist Church at Bedford Station was organized early in 1884, and in the spring of that year Rev. W. H. Bowne was appointed its first pastor. He was succeeded in April, 1885, by Rev. D. W. B. Thompson. The present house of worship is the one built in 1858 as a union chapel, and occupied by the Presbyterian, Baptist and Methodist ministers of the vicinity by turns, since that time, for regular services on Sunday afternoons. This union service has now

been discontinued. It is expected that a new church edifice will soon be erected.

ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCHES.—The parish of St. Francis was established about 1871. It had previously been a mission attached to the parish at Sing Sing. Father M. C. Brennan was its first pastor. He built a large and handsome rectory near the church. He remained about three years and was succeeded by Rev. John Henry. During his pastorate the church at Pleasantville, which is a part of this parish, was erected. After a stay of two years he was followed by the present rector, Rev. M. W. Newman, who came from Rondout, N. Y. He paid off the debt of the Mount Kisco Church, and, in 1883, built a church at Bedford village, being considerably aided in that work by members of other churches in the neighborhood. The congregations of the three churches number about twelve hundred.

FRIENDS' MEETING-HOUSE.—Croton Valley Meeting of Friends was established in 1806. The meeting-house stood near the Croton River, a little below the mouth of the Kisco. When the Croton Lake was raised for New York City's water supply, the house was moved upon the adjoining land, belonging to Henry Sutton. After the separation in 1829, because of differences in doctrinal views, the Hicksite branch retained the house and the Orthodox held their religious services in the house of Moses Sutton until 1845, when the present house¹ near Croton Lake was built. The Hicksite Meeting was afterward discontinued. Another meeting was organized by them at the village of Mount Kisco, about the year 1856, and a meeting-house erected there. This meeting still continues.

BETHANY UNION CHAPEL.—In the year 1879 the old Presbyterian Church, which had not been used since the dedication of the one presented to the society by F. A. Palmer, was removed about two miles from Bedford to a site near the farm of Mr. Palmer. A Union Sunday-school is held regularly, and preaching when opportunity offers.

Francis A. Palmer, widely known in business circles in New York City as president of the National Broadway Bank, was born in the town of Bedford, Westchester Co., Nov. 26, 1812. He removed to New York City, Nov., 1831, where he entered into business.

In 1849 he organized the Broadway Bank, which has grown under his management to be one of the strongest banking institutions in New York City. The efficiency and care with which he has guarded its interests through many depressing periods in the financial history of the city give Mr. Palmer just claim to rank among the able financiers of the time. He is well known in the business and social circles of Westchester County.

SCHOOLS.—From 1680 to 1813 there is no mention of schools in the town records. The early settlers regarded it as proper to support the church at the pub-

¹ This meeting-house is in New Castle, near the Bedford line.

lic expense, but not to provide for the education of the children. Most of the pioneers were men of fair attainments for their rank in life, but some of them were obliged to make their mark when signing their deeds, and a still larger proportion in the next generation did the same. In later years, however, the town gave evidence of the intelligence and enterprise of her citizens by its attention to public education. "Dr. Dwight, in 1813, made exception in favor of Bedford and two other localities when he says of Westchester County—'Neither Learning or Religion has, within my knowledge, flourished to any great extent among the inhabitants.'"¹

The Bedford Academy was one of the first institutions chartered by the regents of the university after their incorporation (in 1784), but it is not now subject to their supervision. On January 19, 1807, the Presbyterian Society of Bedford gave the lot "fifty feet in front, and one hundred feet in rear, of the west corner of the parsonage meadow, fronting the green and adjoining Coll. Holly's garden, for the express purpose of building an academy thereon, and to be used for no other purpose whatever." Rev. Ebenezer Grant, then pastor of the Presbyterian Church, was the first president of its board of proprietors, and its first principal was the Rev. Daniel Crocker. Governor Jay was one of the original subscribers. It has been, at different times in its history, a large and flourishing school, and "many of its pupils have attained distinction as professional and business men." Among its successful principals have been H. S. Banks, S. L. Holmes, Albert Williamson, James W. Husted, D. S. Dusinger, George H. Sutton and J. F. Williams.

Union Academy was established by Alexander G. Reynolds, who was its principal for many years. He enumerates many prominent men among his former pupils. The academy has now been closed for several years.

Bedford Female Institute was incorporated with a capital stock of ten thousand dollars in 1856, and the building erected the same year. It was managed by several persons with varying success for about twenty years. Its best known and most successful principal was Rev. Robert Bolton. It has recently been sold and the property is now in private hands. In addition to these, there have been at various times, and in different quarters of the town, private schools conducted by capable teachers, and well patronized by those who preferred them to the public schools. In 1813 the town voted to comply with the State law providing for common schools, electing as commissioners Aaron Read, Benjamin Isaacs and David Olmsted, and for inspectors Ebenezer Grant, Peter Fleming, Jeremiah Lounsbury, William Jay, William H. Sackett and William Isaacs. Since that time the public schools have been maintained with suitable

liberality. There are fifteen school districts in the town, one of which, that in the village of Mount Kisco (lying partly in New Castle), has been organized as a Union Free School. It has a convenient and attractive building. Those at Katonah and Bedford Station are also worthy of notice, and of only two or three in the town can it be said that they are not up to the requirements of the times.

CEMETERIES.—It has been stated that the "Green," or old common in the village of Bedford, and the land near by, where the old burying-ground now is, was an Indian burial-place. This is in all probability an error. It is not likely that the early settlers would have selected a spot of that character, for their common, or pleasure-ground. Still less likely is it that they would have used it for their own place of burial, where the making of a grave would disturb the repose of the sleeping warriors whose descendants were even then living in the neighborhood, and on friendly terms with the new-comers. Nor have any relics such as are usually found in Indian graves ever been discovered either here or, so far as the writer can ascertain, anywhere in the town.

The ancient graveyard referred to above, overhung by the "rock called Bates his hill," was the first burial-place of the white men, and there without doubt the "forefathers of the hamlet sleep." The first minister, Rev. Thomas Dunham, died in 1689, and was buried there. The earliest graves, unmarked by any inscribed stone, long ago passed beyond recognition, and many of the quaint tombstones of later generations have fallen into decay. Many years ago it was not unusual, in making a grave, to disturb one long forgotten, and for a long time past burials there have been rare. Occasional notes in the town records refer to repairing the fence by setting new posts, etc. In 1802 the care of it was made over to the Presbyterian Society. This continued three years, when the town voted to build a stone wall about the ground. Afterwards it was the practice to allow it to be used "for the pasture of sheep and calves only."

The next oldest graveyard is probably that near the house of the late Peter K. Buxton, and hence usually known as Buxton Cemetery. It consisted of but little more than one acre of ground until about thirty years ago, when it was enlarged by the addition of some four or five acres and lots regularly sold to individual owners. There is also an old burying-ground a short distance north of Mathew's Mills, encompassed about by the farm of Jere Miller. It has been chiefly used by families in the neighborhood. Others are at St. Matthew's Church, at Katonah, adjoining the property of the Methodist Episcopal Church; on the road from Hoyt's Mills to Cross River, and on the road from Stephen Knowlton's to New Castle. There were also, some forty years ago, many family grave-plots situated on the farms of the respective owners. But this practice has largely gone out of favor, and on the sale of farms such burial-places have disappeared, the remains be-

¹ Baird's "History of Bedford Church."

ing removed to public grounds. Some, however, still remain. The largest cemetery in the town is the Bedford Union Cemetery, situated on the "Great Northe Plain," half a mile southeast of the Baptist Church. It was established in 1866, by several residents of the neighborhood, who bought a suitable tract of land, some twenty-five acres in extent, and sold plots to individuals. It is neatly laid out, and adorned with many handsome monuments. It is not incorporated.

Joseph Barrett

CHAPTER XII.

NEW CASTLE.

BY JOSEPH BARRETT, ESQ.,
Of Katonah, Bedford.

THE town of New Castle is thirty-five miles north of the city of New York, and is bounded north by Cortlandt, Yorktown and Somers, east by Bedford, south by North Castle and west by Ossining and Mount Pleasant.

It was set off from the town of North Castle, and given its present name, March 18, 1791. Its territory was increased by the act of the Legislature, May 12, 1846, which annexed to it all that part of Somers lying south of the Croton River.

EARLY HISTORY AND BOUNDARIES.—Although there are references, more or less obscure, to lands extending eighteen or twenty miles north of the Sound, said to have been bought of the Indians in 1660, by John Richbell, who purchased at Mamaronck in 1661, there is no definite record of the transfer of the lands now comprised in the town of New Castle, until Col. Caleb Heathcote bought of Wampus and his associates the tract lying west of the Byram River and Bedford, and within the angle formed by the boundaries of the Van Cortlandt and Philipse Manors, in 1696. It is probable that the Richbell purchase was understood to affect this tract, for Colonel Heathcote thought it prudent, before taking title, to obtain from Mrs. Anne Richbell, widow of John Richbell, permission to purchase from the Indians lands which might have been included in grants previously made to her husband. It was not unusual, even where the first grants were well defined, and their bounds traceable, and the grantors still in possession, to obtain a second or confirmatory deed.¹ In this case thirty-six years had elapsed and

a new generation, perhaps a new dynasty, so to speak, had come into power, and the land was evidently still occupied by them. Wampus was apparently the ruling sachem, as his is the leading name in the body of the deed, though others sign it with him.² It has been supposed that he lived near the little lake still called Wampus Pond, which lies on the boundary between this town and North Castle, but it is probable that his wigwam was farther north, perhaps in the neighborhood of Kirbyville.³

The deed is as follows:

"This indenture, made on the 19th of october, in the eighth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord, William the Third, by the Grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, &c., and in the year of our Lord Christ, 1696, between Wampus, Indian Sachem, and others, whose names are hereunto set and seals affixed, native proprietors of all that tract of land situate, lying and being in the county of Westchester, in the province of New York, in America, bounded north by Croton River, easterly by Byram River and Bedford line, southerly by the land of John Harrison and his associate, and the line stretching to Byram River, aforesaid, and westerly by the land of Frederick Philipse.

"Now know all men that Wampus, Cornelius and Coharnith, Indian Sachems and others, whose names are hereunto subscribed and seals affixed, the native proprietors of the aforesaid tract of land, have, for and in consideration of the sum of £100, good and lawful moneey of New York, to them in hand paid by the said Caleb Heathcote, at and before the en-sealing and delivery of these presents, the receipt whereof they do hereby acknowledge, and themselves and each and every of them to be there-with fully satisfied, contented and paid, and thereof, and every part and parcel thereof, they do by these presents forever acquit and discharge the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs, executors, administrators, &c., having given, granted, bargained and sold, aliened, enfeoffed, released and confirmed, and do by these presents clearly and absolutely give, grant, bargain and sell, alien, enfeof, release and confirm unto the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns, forever, all that the before-mentioned tract of land within the county of Westchester, bounded as above expressed and set forth, together with all and singular the messuages, tenements, gardens, orchards, arable lands, pastures, feedings, woods, underwoods, meadows, marshes, lakes, ponds, rivers, rivulets, mines, minerals (royal mines only excepted) fishing, fowling, hunting and hawk-ing, rights, privileges, hereditaments and appurtenances to the same, be-longing or in any way appertaining, and all the estate, right, interest, claim, possession, property and demand of the said Wampus, Cornelius and Coharnith, sachems, and the other Indians whose names are here-unto subscribed, and each and every of them in and to the premises, in and to every part and parcel thereof, to have and to hold the before-mentioned tract of land, and all other the above-granted premises to him, the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns to the only proper benefit and behoof of him, the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns forever.

"In testimony whereof the parties to these presents have hereunto set their hands and affixed their seals, the day and year first above written.

"Sealed and delivered in presence of William Lawrence and Joseph Samuel.

"PATRICK.
"COHARNUS.
"BETTY PATRICK.
"WILLIAM COHARNUS'S WIFE.
"WACAPU X her mark.
"WAMPUS, Indian, O his mark.
"CORNELIUS, S his mark.
"ROE ROE, J his mark."

¹ "Sometimes the grant is of the land that belonged to such an Indian by name, or is bounded by such an Indian's land, but to prove that any particular spot belonged to any particular Indian, or to show the bounds of any particular Indian, I believe is beyond human skill, so as to make it evident to any indifferent man."—*Calden's Report*, 1792.

² In 1700 the town of Bedford voted to give Captain Peter Matthews a tract of land "on the south side of the road that goeth from Bedford to Hutson's River, and so by the place where Wampus's wigwam was." The road referred to did not pass within two or three miles of Wampus Pond.

³ "This was no uncommon occurrence in dealings with the natives. Their ideas of proprietorship were notoriously imperfect, and the settlers of New England often found it necessary, in order to pacify them, to repeat the purchases of the very same lands."—*Barrett's History of Rye*.

This deed includes all of the present town of New Castle except the strip at the northeast corner which was taken from Somers in 1846, and also that part of North Castle which lies west of the Byram River, or about half of that town. It is more elaborate in form than is usual in Indian deeds, which are mostly mere memorandums of sale, in which not even the consideration is stated. Other deeds to Colonel Heathcote are full and formal like this, a circumstance which is probably due to Heathcote's business habits.¹ The boundaries were apparently ascertained with proper care, and correctly described the tract intended to be conveyed. When the patent was issued certain changes were made in the description, which will be referred to hereafter.

Having satisfied the Indians, the next step was to obtain the grant or patent from the government. Patents were issued by the Governor of the province, with the approval of his Council, and were the only recognized title to lands. It was the established principle that the petitioner for a patent should show that he had purchased the land of the Indians, and satisfied them, before his claim could be considered. The petition was then usually referred to a committee of the Council, who examined and reported on it for the action of the Governor. The Council at this time, and down to the end of the colonial period, consisted of twelve men, of whom five were a quorum. They were appointed by the Governor.

"In an executive capacity they acted as a privy council to the head of the government in civil matters, who was generally present when the executive council was in session. They were consulted in the grant of patents, which could not pass the seal without their advise; they had also a voice in the appointment to most of the civil offices in the colony. . . . They constituted the second branch of the Legislature, co-ordinate with the Senate of the present day. . . . A councillor's title was 'The Honorable.' . . . He held his office during pleasure, and served without salary. His position, nevertheless, was such that he was enabled to secure for himself, his family and friends, large grants of lands which indemnified him for whatever time and labor he lost."²

¹ Caleb Heathcote was of an old English family. He had been a merchant in London, and left his native land, it is said, on account of being supplanted by his brother in the affections of the lady whom he expected to marry. He came here in 1692, at the age of twenty-seven, and his ability, ambition and fortune soon gave him a prominent place in the affairs of New York and Westchester. The very year of his arrival he was selected as one of the Governor's Council, a position of considerable political power, in which he continued till 1697, and which he again held from 1702 to 1720. He was for many years judge of the court of the county, and colonel of its militia, and mayor of New York City from 1711 to 1713. He was a most conspicuous and zealous promoter of the work of the Church of England in this county, through the Gospel Propagation Society, who found him a faithful adviser and diligent correspondent. Like most of those who had a strong interest with the government of the province, he soon caught the land fever. Besides his rights in the West, Middle and East Patents, and his "Lordship and Manor of Scarsdale" (see Scarsdale), he had interests in Richmond and Ulster and was the leading spirit in the "Great Nine Partners'" tract in Dutchess County.

² New York Civil List, 1881, page 238. Among the honorable Councillors whose names are conspicuous as grantees of land in various parts of the province were William Pinhorne, William Smith, Caleb Heathcote, Peter Schuyler, Abr. Depeyster, Samuel Staats, R. Walters, James Graham, Thomas Weaver, John Bridges, Roger Mompesson, William Peartree and others.

The land grants of some of the early English Governors gave rise to serious scandals.

"The most extraordinary favors of former governors were but petty grants in comparison of his (Fletcher's). He was a generous man, and gave the King's lands by parcels of upwards of one hundred thousand acres to a man, and to some particular favorites, four or five times that quantity; but the King was not pleased with him, as I am told, and he was recalled in disgrace. The Earl of Bellomont, who succeeded, having orders to use all legal means for breaking extravagant grants of land, joined with the assembly in vacating several of the extravagant grants made by Coll. Fletcher, but as this act was carried thro' with spirit of party in the assembly, it passed with much less impartiality than might have been expected from the Justice of the Legislature. For some of the most extravagant grants were passed over, while others were declared extravagant and vacated that no way deserved that character. . . . After his death the administration fell into Capt. Nanfan's hands, then Lieut.-Govr. It appears that the grants made in his time passed in a hurry without any previous Survey, but upon very uncertain informations of the natural Boundaries, which the Grantees took in their Grants, so that some of them are become a sort of ambulatory Grants, the Patentees claiming, by virtue of the same Grant, sometimes in One part of the country, sometimes in another, as they are driven from one place to another by others claiming the same lands with more certainty. In other Grants, we find the same persons joined in several grants with others, which Grants were intended for different Tracts, and in appearance seem to be so, and yet by their present claims they take in the same Lands within the bounds of their several Grants. . . . The Earl of Bellomont was succeeded, after Queen Anne's accession to the throne, by her cousin, the Lord Cornbury.

"The Grants of large tracts upon trifling quitrents, that were made during his Lordship's administration at least equaled those of all his predecessors put together. Indeed, his Lordship's inclinations were so evident to every body at that time, that two Gentlemen (as I am well assured) had agreed with his Lordship for a Grant of all the lands in the Province, at a Lump, which were not at that time granted, and that the only thing which prevented the passing of that grant was, that those Gent^ls apprehended that the Grant would of itself appear so extravagant and would create so many enemies, that they would not be able to hold it. . . . No quantity of Land or number of Acres for the most part are mentioned in any of these Grants, nor is it possible to discover the quantity by inspection of the Patents, as it may be done in those Grants which are founded on a previous Survey; and where any quantity is expressed it seems to be done more with design to hide the real quantity (if their present claims be truly conformable to their original bounds) than to set forth the truth, for I have heard of one instance at least, where the patent Grants 300 acres, and the patentee now claims upwards of sixty thousand acres within the bounds of his Grant. Others, suspecting that such disproportion between the real quantity and the quantity expressed in the Grant might invalidate the Grant, got the quantity of Land to be expressed in the following manner: Containing for example, One thousand acres of profitable Land, beside wood Land and Waste; and yet, when these Lands were Granted, perhaps there was not ten acres that was not woodland, or One Acre that at the time of the Grant yielded any profit, or one acre that by improvement might not be made profitable. . . . It is evident that in many of these the Governor who granted them was deceived as to the quantity; but that the King was deceived in all of them. The Governors who granted these large tracts, if they knew their extent, were guilty of a notorious breach of trust, and as it cannot be supposed that they did this merely in the gaiety of their heart, they must have had some temptation, and this must be supposed to proceed from those that received the Benefit of it. That therefore the Grantees are equally guilty with the Gov^r in deceiving the King, and likewise of defrauding all the adventurers or settlers in the Colony, of their equal chance of obtaining the most improvable and convenient lands, and of preventing the improvement and settling of the Colony, for which purpose only the Lands are supposed to be granted."³

After reading these extracts any one who has formed the impression that the public servants of former generations were superior to those of these days in purity of purpose and honesty of acts, or

³ From Surveyor General Cadwallader Colden's "Report on the Lands in the Province of New York," 1732.

that political "rings" are a modern device, may properly revise his opinion. The schemes of the land-grabbing adventurers of the colonial period, if they could be fully known, would rival in villany, if not in the extent of their plunder, the most successful jobs of the present day. There were then no magnificent public buildings to erect, and not much money in the treasury to steal; the public lands were about all there was in sight, and the virtuous representatives of the "prerogative royal" raided them without compunction.

When Heathcote made the Indian purchase, as already stated, it was probably his expectation to make the tract a part of his individual possessions, all to be erected into a manor like those of Van Cortlandt and Philipse. When he first discovered the difficulties surrounding this enterprise it is not possible to say. He had agreed to take out a patent within six months after the Indian purchase, but had apparently discovered hostility to him among the Honorable Councilors, and had, at least for the time, abandoned his plan and waited for developments. Thus matters stood until the month of February, 1702, a period of five years. It is not too much to infer, in the light of subsequent events, that the Honorable Councilors had caused Heathcote to be informed that there was a method by which his patent could be made to pass the Council. To suggestions of this kind, Heathcote, confident in his ability to make his way in what he had begun, seems to have refused to listen. But on the 9th of February, 1702, the "strikers," to use a modern term, in their desire to bring matters to an issue, called to their aid Lieutenant-Governor Nanfan, whose character and methods have been so well outlined by Colden, and in due form presented to him the following petition:

"To the Honorable John Nanfan, Esq., His Majesty's Lieutenant-Governor and Commander-in-chief of the Province of New York, and the Honorable Councilors;—The humble petition of Matthew Clarkson, Lancaster Symes, Robert Walters, Richard Slater, Cornelius Depeyster, Leigh Atwood, Barne Cosens and [erasure] Showeth,

"That Coll. Caleb Heathcote, by his petition to Coll. Benjamin Fletcher, late Governor of this province, in Council preferred the 12th day of October, 1696, prayed liberty to purchase of and from the Indians a parcel of land in the County of Westchester between Croton River and the north bounds of Mr. Harrison's purchase, which petition was granted, provided that Col. Heathcote sued forth a patent for the same within six months then next to come, and

"That on the 23d of the said month of October the said Heathcote alleging to the said Governor and Council that he had purchased the said land of the Indians on the 19th of the said month, and producing the said pretended purchase thereof to the council board, it was ordered that a warrant should issue for surveying the said land. That the said Col. Heathcote, not having, within the time mentioned, procured either patent or survey for the same, and the said land having hitherto lain without any manner of improvement and yielded no rent or other profit to the Crown; may it please your honors, that your petitioners may be allowed to be the first discoverers, and in case no purchase hath been made from the Indian proprietors, that your petitioners may have a license to purchase the same. But in case that the said Col. Heathcote hath made any real purchase, he not having complied with the said proviso, that your petitioners, paying the said Col. Heathcote his purchase money may have a patent for the said land, under such reasonable quit-rent as to your honors shall seem fit, and that in order therunto a precept may issue to his majesty's solicitor, to inquire into the premises, and that upon

return of affidavit found for his Majesty, and after that the bounds of the premises shall have been ascertained and the purchase made by your petitioners, if occasion shall require, or otherwise tender of the provided purchase money, that your petitioners may have a patent thereof and your petitioners will ever pray."

It will be of interest to inquire who these men were. Matthew Clarkson was secretary of the province, an office corresponding to that of Secretary of State now, and all patents were countersigned by him. Symes was a large land-holder in several counties. Robert Walters¹ was a merchant with a taste for political life. He had been a member of Governor Leisler's Assembly, an associate judge of the Supreme Court, and was, at this time, a member of the Governor's Council. Richard Slater was a "dummy," representing Thomas Weaver, who was a member of the Council and was also the solicitor-general, by whom warrants for patents were prepared. Cornelius Depeyster and Leigh Atwood were near relatives of Abraham Depeyster and William Atwood, who were both in the Council. Barne Cosens was clerk of the Council.

It is not surprising that a petition, signed by these men, had a convincing effect, not only on the Governor, but also on Colonel Heathcote. Within the next five days the thing was arranged. Heathcote, who had bought the land from the Indian proprietors in good faith, and had a valuable property, came to terms and took the "ring" into partnership, to prevent them from driving him out entirely. It was clearly what modern slang defines as a "divvy." On the 14th of February, Nanfan issued the warrant to the solicitor-general (who was represented in the partnership) to prepare letters patent. The warrant is as follows:

"By the Honorable John Nanfan, Esq., Lieut. Governor and Commander-in-chief of the Province of New York and territories depending thereon in America and Canada.

"You are hereby required to prepare a draft of letters for Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depeyster, Caleb Heathcote, Mathew Clarkson, John Cholwell, Richard Slater, Lancaster Syme, Robert Lurting and Barne Cosens for all that certain tract of land situate, lying and being in the county of Westchester, bounded Northerly by Croton River, easterly by Byram River and Bedford line, Southerly by the land of John Harrison and line aforesaid and Rye line stretching to Byram River aforesaid, and westerly by the land of Frederick Philipse and Bronckx River, to have and to hold to them, their heirs and assigns, to the only proper use and behoof of them, their heirs and assigns forever, at and under the yearly rent of six pounds five shillings current money of New York, and for so doing this shall be your sufficient warrant. Given under my hand and seal at our Fort William Henry in New York, this 14th day of February, 1702, and in the 14th year of his Majesty's reign.

"To Thomas Weaver, Esq., Solicitor General of the Provinces of New York and of Canada.

"JOHN NANFAN."

This warrant, it will be seen, contained three names not in the petition—those of Heathcote, John Cholwell and Robert Lurting.

The latter really owned no interest, but represented Heathcote, so that Heathcote owned two shares in ten, or one-fifth. Of Cholwell little is known, except

¹ The name is written both Walters and Walter.

that he was a large land-owner. The patent was granted the same day, February 14, 1702. It is called the

WEST PATENT OF NORTH CASTLE.

"William the Third, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland King, Defender of the Faith, to all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting: Whereas our loving subjects, Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depeyster, Caleb Heathcote, Matthew Clarkson, John Cholwell, Richard Slater, Lancaster Smyes, Robert Lurting and Barne Cosens, have by their petitions presented unto our trusty and well beloved John Nanfan, Esq., our Lieutenant Governor and Commander-in-Chief of our province of New York and the territories depending thereon in America, prayed our grant and confirmation of a certain tract of land in our County of Westchester, bounded Northerly by the Manor of Cortlandt, and Eastwardly with Bedford line of three miles square, the white fields and Byram River, southerly by the land of John Harrison, Rye line, stretching to Byram River aforesaid and the White Plains, and westwardly by the Bronck's River and the manor of Philipsburgh, excepting out of the bounds aforesaid all the land in Mr. Richbell's Patent, according to the lines of said patent, now in the tenure and occupation of Colonel Caleb Heathcote, which first above named tract of land was purchased by Caleb Heathcote and others with whom he has agreed, excepting James Mott and Henry Disbrow, whom he hath undertaken to satisfy. Within which bounds there are by estimation about five thousand acres of profitable land, besides wastes and woodlands, which reasonable request we being willing to grant, know ye that of our special grace, certain knowledge and mere motion we have given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents doe for us, our heirs and successors, give, grant, ratify and confirm unto our said loving subjects, Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depeyster, Caleb Heathcote, Matthew Clarkson, John Cholwell, Richard Slater, Lancaster Smyes, Robert Lurting and Barne Cosens, all the above recited tract of land within our County of Westchester and within the limits and bounds aforesaid, together with all and singular, the woods, underwoods, trees, timber, feedings, pastures, meadows, marshes, swamps, ponds, pools, waters, water courses, rivers, rivulets, runs, brooks, streams, fishing, fowling, hunting and hawking, mines, minerals (silver and gold mines excepted), and all other profits and benefits, privileges and liberties, advantages, hereditaments and appertanances whatsoever to the aforesaid tract of land, within the limits and bounds aforesaid mentioned, belonging or in any ways appertaining, to have and to hold all the aforesaid tract of land, together with all and singular the woods, underwoods, &c., &c., &c. . . . to be holden of us, our heirs and successors in free and common socage as of our Manor of East Greenwich in our County of Kent, within our Realm of England, yielding, rendering and paying therefor yearly and every year forever, at our city of New York, unto us, our heirs and successors, or to such officer or officers as shall from time to time be empowered to receive the same, the annual and yearly rent of six pounds five shillings current money of New York, in lieu of all other rents, dues, duties, services and demands whatsoever.

"In testimony whereof we have caused the great Seal of our Province to be hereunto affixed. Witness, John Nanfan, Esq., Lieut Governor and Commander-in-chief of our Province of New York and the territories depending thereon in America, and Vice Admiral of the same, at our fort in New York, this 14th day of February, 1701-2, and in the 14th year of our reign.

"By his honour's command,
"JOHN NANFAN.1"

M. CLARKSON,
Secretary."

On the 18th day of February, 1702, four days after the date of the patent, the ten patentees made an "Indenture Decempartite,"² in which it was agreed that there should be "no survivorship," but that the lands described in the patent should be "with all convenient expedition" divided into "ten several distinct parts," so that each proprietor could have

¹ Original document in possession of Mr. David W. Smith, of North Castle.

² The original, a formidable document on three immense parchment sheets, is in possession of Mr. David W. Smith, of Kensico.

his own separate possession, and until that could be done, they were to share equally in the profits and expenses. This division evidently never took place.

On the 29th of May, 1702, Robert Lurting conveyed the share which stood in his name to Caleb Heathcote, and "did, among other things, declare that his name in the said letters patent was used only in trust for the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns." On the 10th of August, 1702, Richard Slater conveyed to Thomas Weaver (solicitor-general and member of the Council) all his rights in all the patents in which he was concerned, and declared that "his name was used only in trust for, and on the part and behoof of, the said Thomas Weaver, and that no estate or interest in or to the premises in any of the said letters patent³ mentioned, thereby doth, or of right ought to enure or accrue to the said Richard Slater." But worse than this: Barne Cosens, on the 12th of August, 1702, "by indenture under his hand and seal, duly executed, did declare and acknowledge that his name in the said letters patent and indenture of Covenant, was used only in trust for, and in the part and behoof of, John Nanfan, of the City of New York, Esqr., his heirs and assigns," and so conveyed his share to the Lieutenant-Governor, who, on the 7th of November, 1704, sold his interest to Ebenezer Wilson, Esq., high sheriff of the city and county of New York. Wilson held this share till October 25, 1710, when he, with Margery, his wife, sold it to "Peter Fauconnier,⁴ of the City of New York, Esqr.," who evidently became the managing man of the enterprise, for the tract was known as "Fauconnier and Company's West Patent" for many years. He retained an interest in the patent until April 10, 1745, when he conveyed it to Magdalen Valloeu, who was probably a relative.

Reference has been made to the circumstance that the description found in the patent does not agree with that in the Indian deed. In the latter the eastern boundary is stated "Eastwardly by Byram

³ The "syndicate" which began with the West Patent soon obtained control of all the land left up to that time unpatented in the county of Westchester. During the previous July, Colonel Heathcote, in connection with Joseph Theale, John Horton and Joseph Purdy, all of Rye, had bought of the Indians the tract lying between Bedford line on the north and the colony line on the south, and embraced within the great bend of the Mianus River. The ten partners took these three men in, and on the 17th February, 1702, they were granted what has become known as the Middle Patent, from its position between the two great tracts, the East and West Patents. On the 25th of February, 1702 the syndicate, increased by the name of Peter Matthews, bought of the Indians the great tract called the East Patent, lying east of Bedford and extending to the colony line, out of which nearly all of Poundridge and Lewisboro have been formed. They procured the patent on the 2d of March. Colonel Heathcote obtained the royal grant for the Lordship or Manor of Scarsdale on the 30th of March following, having completed the Indian purchases necessary to that end but a few days before. Of course in that domain he was the sole owner. Whether his success in this respect had any connection with the other enterprises of those busy days the writer leaves others to guess.

⁴ "Fauconnier was a native of France, high in favor with Bellomont and Cornbury, Governors of New York, and by the latter made collector and receiver-general in 1705."—*Baird's "History of Rye."*

River and Bedford line." In the patent it reads, "Eastwardly with *Bedford line of three miles square*, the White fields and Byram River." This expression, "Bedford three miles square," was employed to designate the Bedford first purchase, or Hop Ground, a tract of about that size in the southeastern part of the town. But a patent for the whole town of Bedford had been granted by the Governor of Connecticut in 1697, while Bedford was under the jurisdiction of that colony, and that patent the colony of New York was bound to respect and to confirm. The eastern boundary of the West Patent, therefore, should have been, as in the Indian deed, "Bedford line and Byram River." The effect of the error was to include within the West Patent nearly a quarter of the town of Bedford, that is, the Southwest Corner, which had been confirmed to her people four years before. It is not easy to determine whether this was merely a blunder on the part of the solicitor-general in preparing the patent, due, perhaps, to his oversight of the facts in the case of the Bedford Patent, or whether it was a deliberate attempt to ignore that transaction and to increase the possessions of himself and his partners. It may have been a blunder caused by some one unfamiliar with the region mistaking the west line of Bedford first purchase for the west line of Bedford new purchase; but it may have been an attempt to "grab" a tract, which, so far as the records of New York then showed, was not yet granted to any one; for, though the great boundary line dispute between the two colonies was settled a year before, New York had not yet confirmed to the Bedford people the Connecticut charter, and it was not so confirmed till 1704, but was at this very time held in abeyance, to their great anxiety and disquietude.¹ Had the solicitor-general followed the Indian deed as prepared by Heathcote and the warrant of the Governor, which was based upon the deed, instead of going out of his way to say "Bedford line of three miles square," no trouble would have occurred. It seems difficult, on the whole, to avoid the inference that it was the intention to quite ignore the rights of the Bedford people to the lands they had bought and settled upon, for the East Patent, granted a fortnight later, was so described as to include within its limits the southeastern quarter of the town of Bedford. Thus these men took, or tried to take, all of Bedford south of the line which Van Cortlandt had caused to be surveyed across that town for the southern boundary of his manor, but which he had to abandon.² The confirmation of the Bedford Patent by the authorities of the province of New York in 1704, of course, deprived the ten patentees of the advantage that they expected to derive from the bold act of the

solicitor-general, if such it was; but the complications arising from it were not so easily disposed of. As time passed on it was found, of course, that the government failed to receive quit-rents for the parts of the East and West Patents which have been described as erroneously included within their bounds, for neither the original patentees nor those deriving titles from them had ever had possession of those lands, or any profit from them. There grew up, therefore, arrears of quit-rent, and on January 8, 1762, the Lieutenant-Governor, Council and General Assembly of the colony (the legislative power) passed an "act for the more effectual collecting of his Majesty's Quit-Rents in the Colony of New York, and Partition of Lands in order thereto." Charles Clinton, Jonathan Brown and Elisha Budd were appointed commissioners to partition and survey the lands in question. They undertook to survey the tract in the southwest corner of Bedford, wrongly included in the West Patent, but were driven off by the outraged farmers. Finally, by aid of the sheriff a survey was completed, and the lands were advertised for sale in June, 1766. It was found that this tract consisted of four thousand one hundred and fifty-one acres. The same commissioners also made a survey of a tract wrongly included in the East Patent, comprising some sixteen thousand acres, of which a quarter, perhaps, was in Bedford. Maps of these surveys, with the field-books of the surveyor, Nathaniel Merritt, were filed in the office of the Secretary of State, where they are still preserved, and duplicates were placed in the county clerk's office of this county, but only the map of the East Patent tract is now found.³

(For copy of the map of part of West Patent, and its relations to the boundaries of Bedford and New Castle, see Bedford, Patents and Boundary Lines.)

The northern boundary of the tract bought from the Indians by Heathcote was the Croton River; but before the patent was issued Van Cortlandt had obtained the charter for his manor, the southern limit of which was a due east line running twenty miles from a point near the mouth of the Croton; hence this was fixed as the north boundary of the West Patent, and so remains, Van Cortlandt's line dividing New Castle from Yorktown and Cortlandt on the north. Until 1846 Somers, (formerly called Stephen-town) extended south to this line. On May 12th, of that year, the act was passed, annexing to New Castle that part of Somers lying south of the Croton River.

The west boundary of the town was the same from the beginning—that is, the slanting line which originated as the northern boundary of the lands of Frederick Philipse, his possessions extending along the Hudson River to Kitchawan Creek, "and so eastward into the woods along said creek or river two English miles, and from thence upon a direct east

¹ See Bedford, Patents and Boundary Lines.

² See Bedford, Patents and Boundary Lines. Peter Matthews, one of the grantees of the East Patent, was at this very time retained by the Bedford people to secure the confirmation of their patent. Little did they imagine why he did not succeed.

³ Map No. 564, Register's Office.

line to Bronx's river, and so running southward along the said Bronx's river,"¹ etc.

It was supposed when this description was written, that a "due east line" from the point mentioned on the Croton would find the source of the Bronx; but when the survey came to be made, it was found that the Bronx had its origin too far south for that, so the present line was run southeasterly to the Bronx River at the point known in the early descriptions as "the head of the Bronx," where the towns of North Castle, New Castle and Mount Pleasant now come together. Had the theory of Frederick Philipse proved correct, his manor would have been bounded on the north by the Manor of Cortlandt and would have extended east nearly to the Bedford line. As it was, there remained between the two manors an irregular tract, running to an acute angle at the Croton River two miles from its mouth, which has become the present town of New Castle, the shape and origin of which were doubtless well understood by Heathcote and his partners.

The history of the settlers of the early West Patent is obscure. There are traditions of settlers, here and there, who had bought farms from the Indians and occupied them, but they had no title which was valid in the view of the government. The patentees, it has already been stated, did not live here. Their interest was not that of settlers seeking a home, but merely that of speculators. From them all actual settlers must obtain their titles. They had intended to partition the tract, so that each partner could have his separate share, which he could sell without regard to the others, but this was not done, and persons who wished to buy land could only perfect their titles by obtaining releases from all the partners. This was an obstacle to rapid growth. Some of the patentees died within a few years, and none were easy of access. Their enterprise seemed to them to be regarded with hostility by the adjoining towns, especially those in Connecticut. The few settlers, having no local government or township, were threatened,

taxed and made to do military duty, by whichever neighboring town could easiest enforce its semblance of authority. "For above sixteen full years," the patentees complained, did these "obstacles and discouragements" hinder the settling of their lands. But in the three years following (1718-20) the patentees succeeded in persuading some good farmers from Long Island, where land was already becoming scarce, to take up farms, and in August, 1721, in their petition to Governor Burnett for the incorporation of their lands into a township, they boasted of thirty men able to bear arms.²

These men from Long Island were the Quakers, who came into this town by way of Harrison's Purchase.

Their descendants from that day to this have constituted a large part of the population. Among the families which have been here longest are those of Haight, Weeks, Carpenter, Quimby, Hunt, Sutton, Birdsall, Barnes and Haviland.

The first representatives of the Hunt family in America were English. They originally settled in Connecticut, a branch of their number afterward removing to the town of Westchester. Mr. Levi Hunt, the representative of the family in New Castle, was born in the town of Westchester, July 15, 1815. He attended the district school at Westchester during his childhood, and also spent two years at the Friends' school there. For a short period following his last term he remained at home, helping in the manage-

ment of his father's farm and preparing himself for the profession of a teacher, which he followed for nine years in the district school at West Farms. He also taught, during the greater portion of this time, a large class of young ladies at a private academy in the same neighborhood. In 1846 he decided to give up his profession and embark in the mercantile business at Chappaqua, in which he has since been engaged. He has not failed to identify himself with local politics in the town of New Castle. He has always been a thorough Democrat, and was elected by that party to the superintendency of the public



Levi Hunt

¹ Patent of the "Lordship or Manor of Philipsburgh."

² Petition of Walters, Fancher, Depoyster, and Symes. See North Castle.)

schools of the town. At a special town-meeting held for the purpose of providing ways and means to furnish the military quota required by the government from the town for the defense of the Union during the late war, he was elected treasurer of the fund raised for bounties, and so successful was he in the management of affairs that the town was enabled to escape the first draft by the provision of substitutes. He has also held the offices of commissioner of highways and justice of the peace. Mr. Hunt married, July 5, 1842, Phebe Cock, daughter of Stephen Cock, of Newburgh, N. Y. He has two children,—Charlotte Ann, and George.

The names of Kipp, Concklin, Acker, Van Tassel and Beeckman doubtless indicate that another element found its way into the West Patent from among the Dutch tenantry of Frederick Philipse, the nearest neighbor on the west.

The growth of the town after its incorporation was apparently more rapid; but as time went on and the original patentees died, and their heirs and assigns became more numerous and more scattered it became more difficult to obtain clear titles to land. There were undivided lands full forty years after the date of the patent. Under these circumstances the collecting of the quit-rent was difficult, and the town was often in arrears. Entries like this are found in the North Castle record; "Caleb Fowler has undertook to gather the quit-rent money for the right of J. Cholwell, from the year Forty-one to the year Forty-three." "Feb. y^e 25, 1744: Then met at a Lawful Town Meeting to consider about the Quit-rent money that is behind; then chose William Dusenbury and Benjamin Smith to act and serve upon the Right of Robert Walter, etc."

Much of interest pertaining to this period is lost on account of the lack of the town records of deeds, which cannot be found. Minutes of town-meetings refer to the duty of the town clerk as a recorder of deeds, and it was usual at that time to so record them. In other towns the records of early transfers of lands are a valuable source of town and family history, and it is greatly to be regretted that in this town and North Castle this source of information has disappeared.

The rights of the ten patentees continued to "encumber the ground" for more than sixty years. Their children and grandchildren were now their successors. The titles to nearly all the land in the town, some of which had been in the possession of the occupants for half a century, were clouded by the valid claims of forty or fifty people, scattered over New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Canada and Europe.

Whether some aggressive persons among these heirs began to urge their claims, or whether it was the sense of insecurity and the quit-rent annoyance, which led to action on the part of the farmers, cannot now be told. But it is evident that they determined to rid themselves of the burden that they had so long carried. Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler and Joseph

Sutton were selected to represent the people concerned, and to obtain warrantee deeds from every possible claimant. There is no mention of the matter in the town-meetings; it was apparently a voluntary and private undertaking. How long it required, or what obstacles were encountered, can only be surmised, but there is reason to think it was the work of years. They obtained releases from all the heirs and assigns of the ten patentees, and all these transfers, except those of the rights of Walters, Cholwell and one-half the right of Slater, are on record in the register's office. Isabella Davis, sole executrix of Cholwell, had sold his right to Richard Ogden and Josiah Quimby, January 24, 1720, for one hundred and seventy-four pounds. It would appear that Smith, Fowler and Sutton acquired this right first.

Little is known about the Walters right except that they secured it. The half-right of Slater, really owned by Thomas Weaver, was inherited by his daughter, Anna Fox, who sold to Wetmore. This was also secured.

The rights originally represented by the names of Heathcote, Lurting, Symes and Cosens, half the rights of Atwood and Clarkson and the remaining half of the Slater-Weaver right, making five and one-half shares, were conveyed to Smith and his associates by deed bearing date June 7, 1763, and recorded in the register's office of this county, Liber H, pages 276-305. This deed is a marvel of skill and labor, and a lasting memorial to the patient thoroughness with which these three men carried out their purpose. It traces the family record of each patentee; it shows who died childless, who intestate, and what heirs were then surviving. In cases where heirs were represented by an attorney, it cites the provisions of the power of attorney and shows why a power was necessary. With special minuteness it lays bare the fact that Lieutenant Governor Nanfan, through his clerk, Cosens, corruptly obtained a share of the public lands, which he was supposed to protect, and that his solicitor-general, Thomas Weaver, did the same. It shows how the active and thrifty Fanconnier got into the enterprise which has ever since borne his name, and how Heathcote, by the use of Lurting, held two shares instead of one, in the scheme which he had vainly hoped to control alone.

The "parties of the first part" are twenty-one in number,—

First: Anne de Lancey, widow (daughter of Heathcote), and Lewis Johnson, of Perth Amboy, gentleman, whose wife, then deceased, was Martha Heathcote. These represented the Heathcote rights.

Second: Freeman Clarkson, David Clarkson, Matthew Clarkson and Levinus Clarkson, of the city of New York, gentlemen; Matthew Clarkson, of Philadelphia, merchant; Gerardus Clarkson, of Philadelphia, surgeon; Catharine Hazzard, of the city of New York, widow; Samuel Finley, of Prince Town in New Jersey, clerk, and Ann, his wife.

(These nine persons, excepting, of course, the last, were grandchildren of Matthew Clarkson, the patentee; the first four, children of David, son of Matthew, and the next four, children of Matthew, son of the patentee. Atwood had died intestate and his sisters had sold their interests to David Clarkson, son of the patentee, October 27 and 28, 1719, and he had sold one-fourth each to his brothers Matthew and Levinus, and his

sister Anne. The two last-named were at this time living in Holland, and a separate deed was afterward obtained from them. The Clarksons therefore represent one-half of the Atwood and Clarkson shares.)

Third: John Ogilvie, of Montreal, in the province of Canada, clerk, and Catharine, his wife, and Elizabeth Rosevelt, of the city of New York, widow. (These two ladies were granddaughters of Lancaster Symes.)

Fourth: John Bard, of the city of New York, surgeon; David Stout of the borough of Lancaster and county of Lancaster and province of Pennsylvania, by the said John Bard, his attorney; Peter Valteau, of the county of Chester, in the province of Pennsylvania, by the said John Bard, his attorney; Lucus Lazier, of the city of New York, by the said John Bard, his attorney; Fauconnier Valteau of the city of New York, saddler; Elizabeth Valteau, of the city of New York, widow. (These names represent the Fauconnier interest. Fauconnier had conveyed all his right to Magdalen Valteau, April 10, 1745. John Bard was one of her executors. Stout and Lazier married Margaret and Ann, respectively, daughters of Magdalen Valteau. Peter and Fauconnier Valteau were doubtless her sons, and Elizabeth, the widow of her other son, Theodorus. It is presumed, but not known certainly, that Magdalen Valteau was a daughter of Fauconnier.)

Fifth: Catharine Pocklington, late of the Parish of St. George, Hanover Square, in the county of Middlesex, in the kingdom of Great Britain, widow, by Richard Nichols, of the city of New York, esquire, her attorney. (One of the two daughters of Thomas Weaver, representing one half of his share.)

The parties of the second part were "Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler and Joseph Sutton, of the county of Westchester, in the province of New York, Yeomen, and their associates." The consideration named in the deed was five thousand three hundred and eighty pounds. The deed conveyed "all the Estate, Right, Title, Interest, Trusts, Parts, Shares, Proportions, Claims and Demands whatsoever, both in Law and Equity, of them the said" parties of the first part.

The Depeyster interest was conveyed in 1738 by Cornelius Depeyster to his five children by a deed of gift. On August 8, 1763, four of these shares were secured by Smith and his associates by a deed similar in its provisions to that above mentioned.¹ The consideration was eight hundred and twenty pounds. On the 10th of November, 1763, a deed was obtained from Levinus and Anne Clarkson, "both residing at Voorburgh, near the Hague," the son and daughter of Matthew Clarkson, the patentee, which finished the transfer of the Atwood and Clarkson interests as before explained.² The consideration named in this deed was one thousand and twenty-five pounds. The remaining share of the Depeyster interest, consisting of "one undivided fifth part of one undivided tenth part of the said tract" (the West Patent), was, on June 25, 1764, conveyed to Smith, Fowler and Sutton by "Philip Hughes, Chaplain of a Regiment of foot, and Mary his wife; Philip Van Cortlandt, of Jamaica in Queens County, Gentleman, and William Ricketts Van Cortlandt, of the City of New York," for the sum of two hundred and five pounds.³

Each of these deeds contains a clause varying slightly in phraseology, but of the same purport, which excepts from the provisions of the instrument "that Part of the said Tract of Land, being the Northeastern part thereof, which is now possessed, or claimed or held by any person or persons under Bed-

ford New Purchase, supposed to contain about seven thousand acres." This is the land before described as erroneously included in the West Patent. When surveyed, a few years later, it was found to contain forty-one hundred and fifty-one acres. The deeds also recite,—

"And, Whereas, seven thousand acres of the above Tract of Land is now supposed to be in the possession of the Inhabitants of Bedford New Purchase, and is above excepted out of this release, and the Parties to these presents, of the Second Part have before purchased the Rights of John Cholwell and Robert Walters and one-half of the Right of Richard Slater, three of the Patentees, supposed to contain Eight thousand acres more, and of some of the other patentees, or others claiming under them, four thousand seven hundred acres more; now therefore the said ———, for themselves and their Heirs, the said one full and equal undivided Tenth part of the remaining Part of the Said Tract of Land and Premises in and by the said letters patent granted, supposed to contain about twelve thousand three hundred acres,⁴ be it more or less, against them the said ——— and their heirs, . . . shall and will warrant and forever defend by these presents."

This is copied from the Clarkson deed, but the others contain substantially the same exceptions and provisions.

By the Hughes deed of June 25, 1764, the ownership of the original grantees in the West Patent disappeared forever, and the people were freed from the vexatious encumbrance which had so long retarded the growth of their town and impeded their prosperity. Titles were next perfected by Smith, Fowler and Sutton, conveying to the actual owners and occupants the interests they had acquired on their behalf, as above described.

At the time of the division of North Castle by setting off this town,⁵ it was the second town in the

⁴ This computation indicates that the original West Patent was then estimated at thirty-two thousand acres. The grant describes it as "five thousand acres of profitable land," which recalls Colden's report, before referred to. As New Castle and North Castle together contain about twenty-six thousand acres, this estimate, allowing seven thousand acres for the part in Bedford, was considerably too large.

From the Clarkson deed it appears that the price paid for an "undivided tenth" was ten hundred and twenty-five pounds; the same is true in the Depeyster and Hughes deeds, the first conveying four-fifths for eight hundred and twenty pounds and the latter one-fifth for two hundred and five pounds, making one thousand and twenty-five. In the larger deed conveying five and a half shares, the consideration seems intended to cover five and a quarter shares instead of five and a half; accurately five and a quarter shares would amount to fifty-three hundred and eighty-one and a quarter pounds. Possibly the deduction was made in the share of the Widow Pocklington, of England, though she seemed to be entitled a one-half right.

It appears from these figures that it cost the settlers ten thousand two hundred and fifty pounds to free their lands of these old claims.

⁵ The act is as follows:

Laws of 1791, Chapter xxxvi.

"An Act to divide the town of North Castle, in the County of Westchester.

"Passed 18th March, 1791.

"Be it enacted by the people of the State of New York, represented in Senate and Assembly, and it is hereby enacted by authority of the same

"That from and after the first Monday of April next, all that part of the town of North Castle, in the County of Westchester, that lies east and south of a line drawn from the southwest corner of the town of Bedford to the Head of Bronx River, where the same divides the town of Mount Pleasant from the town of North Castle, shall be one separate town by the name of North Castle; and the first town-meeting for the said town of North Castle shall be held at the dwelling-house of Harri-son Palmer. And all the remaining part of the said town of North Castle that lies west and north of the aforesaid line shall be one other separate

¹ Register's office, Liber H, p. 305. ² *Ibid.* 310. ³ *Ibid.* 316.

county in assessed valuation, ranking next to Westchester in that respect, and the first in population. After the division the Board of Supervisors for several years regarded New Castle and North Castle as equal in assessed valuation, and laid the taxes for county expenses equally upon each. North Castle had for many years a little more than half the population, until ten or fifteen years past, when the increased growth of the villages along the railroad has given New Castle the larger number. Its population by the census of 1880 was two thousand two hundred and ninety seven.

The town of New Castle was first represented in the Board of Supervisors at the regular session held in the court-house in White Plains, May 31, 1791, by Isaac Smith, the first supervisor. There had been a meeting on the 23d of May, to canvass the votes cast for members of Assembly, but the supervisor of New Castle does not seem to have been present.

The reason which led to the separation of this town from North Castle, so far as the writer can ascertain, was merely the matter of convenience. The town of North Castle, as it existed previous to the division, was awkward in shape and size. It stretched around the south and west sides of Bedford, reaching nearly to the eastern limit of that town, extending south along the Bronx River for several miles, and to the mouth of the Croton on the west. The distance from its western extremity to either the most southern or eastern point was too great for the convenient transaction of town business, and it lay, like a pair of saddle-bags, in such shape as naturally suggested an easy division. This was accordingly done by a line three miles in length, drawn from the southwest corner of Bedford, in a southwest direction, to the "head of the Bronx."

For similar reasons that part of the town which formerly belonged to Somers was annexed to this town. It comprises the tract included between Bedford on the east and Yorktown on the west, the Croton on the north and the old Van Cortlandt Manor line, the present southern boundary of Yorktown and Somers, on the south. It is about two miles in length by nearly a mile in breadth, and contains some fifteen or twenty dwellings. After the formation of the Croton Lake, in 1841, the inhabitants¹ of that part of Somers began to agitate the question of annexation to New Castle, as they could not reach the upper part of Somers, where town-meetings were held, except by going through Yorktown or Bedford, in order to cross the lake by the bridges, and thus making a long detour. A bill was accordingly prepared, and taken to

town, by the name of New Castle; and the first town-meeting for the town of New Castle shall be held at the dwelling-house of Hannah Leggett. And the said town of North Castle, and the said town of New Castle, shall separately and severally hold and enjoy all the privileges and immunities that the town of North Castle held and enjoyed by any former law of this State, and immediately before the passing of this act."

(The Second Section relates to the division of the poor of the towns.)

¹ Thomas Carpenter was the active mover in the matter.

Albany by Zopher Carpenter. Ezra Marshall, then member of Assembly, secured its passage immediately in the House, and Saxton Smith, then Senator, did the same in the Senate. The Governor signed it at once,² and the next day Mr. Carpenter was on his way home, with a copy of the law.

The following is from the record of the first town-meeting :

"At a town meeting held for the town of New Castle, April 5, 1791, was chosen the following officers: Abraham Hyatt, Town Clerk; Isaac Smith, Supervisor; Sutton Craft, Constable; Benjamin Carpenter, Collector, and Caleb Carpenter, his security; Caleb Haight, Nathaniel Smith, Henry Slawson, assessors; Caleb Carpenter, Abraham Hyatt, overseers of the Poor; Caleb Haight, Nathaniel Smith, Henry Slawson, Commissioners of Roads; James Underhill, Pounder; Nathaniel Conklin, Jesse Brady and Isaac Powell, damage prizers and fence viewers."

Isaac Smith, Caleb Carpenter and Isaiah Green were appointed to meet "a committee from the town of North Castle, and to settle all disputes which may exist between the town of New Castle and the aforesaid town, of any nature whatsoever; also to settle the line between the two towns."³ The same committee was continued the next year. "Doctor Isaac Smith" was re-elected supervisor. He died in May, however, and on the 21st of that month a special meeting was held, and Isaiah Green was chosen his successor. The town-meetings at this period were held at different public-houses in the town. In 1796 four persons were licensed to sell strong liquors, at a fee of two pounds each. A year or two thereafter the license was fixed at five dollars, and in 1803 the meeting voted that "Jesse Brady have the license for selling liquors free." Perhaps this favor was regarded as a return for his accommodating the town, as the meetings were frequently held at his house for several years. He was first called "Lieutenant" Jesse Brady, then he was referred to as "captain;" was elected town clerk, and afterward filled the office of supervisor for several years. His tavern was on the property lately owned by Azariah Carpenter, about two miles east of Merritt's Corners.

Other early supervisors were Stephen Carpenter, five years; Caleb Kirby, eighteen years, from 1803 to 1820; James Fish, five years, from 1821 to 1825; Gilbert Brundage, ten years or more. Zopher Carpenter held the office for several terms, and his son, Francis M. Carpenter, is now (1886) serving his twenty second year in the position, a length of term which has been exceeded but twice, so far as the writer can ascertain, in the history of the county.⁴

The Carpenters of Westchester County trace their descent from Ezra Carpenter, of Wilkshire, Wales, who was born in 1570. He had two sons, Richard and William. The latter died unmarried. Richard had several sons, one of whom, Timothy, was born in

² May 12, 1846.

³ The commissioners appointed by North Castle were Abel Smith, Gilbert Palmer and Thomas Ferris.

⁴ Daniel Hunt, of Lewisboro, thirty-three years, and David Miller, of Bedford, twenty-six years.

1665, came to America in 1678 and settled in Hempstead, Long Island. He also had a number of sons, one of whom, John, of Oyster Bay, was born June 13, 1690. His son John, known as John Carpenter the latter, was born January 7, 1714, and removed to New Castle (then North Castle) in 1736, when the tide of Quaker emigration from Long Island, by the way of Harrison's Purchase, had fully set in. He established his home on the farm recently known as the Cary place, now owned by the heirs of the late E. C. Cowdin, and adjoining their residence. There he carried on his trade; and found his customers among the farmers of the vicinity. From him the different Carpenter families of New Castle and adjacent towns have sprung. He had three sons—Abraham, Jacob and Gilbert.

Abraham was born December 27, 1738. He married Lydia Totten, and lived for some time on a farm which he cleared, the dwelling-house standing where Halstead's store, in Mount Kisco, now is. Subsequently he owned the place where Daniel H. Hallock lately lived, and it is related that his house there was accidentally burned during the Revolutionary War.

His son James, the seventh in descent, was born January 3, 1773. His wife was Elizabeth Totten. He resided for many years on the place where his son Zopher, afterward lived, but spent the last of his life at the place which was formerly the site

of Jesse Brady's tavern, and till lately owned by his grandson, Azariah Carpenter.

The next in the direct line is Zopher, who was born in New Castle, August 5, 1805, and has lived in that town for the greater part of his life. For several years past he has resided just across the line in the town of Bedford, in the village of Mount Kisco. He was several times supervisor of New Castle. He has been an energetic and successful business man, and at his present age, though retired from business, is active and capable. His wife, who is also living, was Phebe Marshall, daughter of James Marshall, whose family were old residents in this vicinity.

Their eldest son, Francis Marshall Carpenter, was born in New Castle, July 10, 1834. A year later his

parents removed to the farm on the Sing Sing road, which was their home for many years, and which had been also the home of his grandfather. There he spent his boyhood. His early education was obtained at the district schools, and later at Union Academy, in Bedford, under the direction of Alex. G. Reynolds.

At the age of nineteen he engaged as clerk in a general store at Mount Kisco, in which he became partner the next year, in company with John T. Carpenter and H. Young, under the firm-name of Carpenter, Young & Co. After a time he continued the business alone, and later, in partnership with his brother, under the title of F. M. & J. T. Carpenter. Abandoning the store in 1862, he bought the farm where he was brought up, and was a farmer till 1873, when he

sold the place. Since 1874 he has been engaged in the coal trade in New York City, with James H. Pettengill as partner, under the name of Carpenter & Pettengill.

In 1863 Mr. Carpenter was elected supervisor of New Castle, and, with the exception of the years 1869 and 1870, has continued in the position until the present time. He is now serving for the twenty-second year, a length of service which has been exceeded in only two instances in the history of the county. In 1872 and again in 1873, he was chosen chairman of the Board of Supervisors. His course in public matters has been marked by a judicious attention to the general interest. He is known throughout the



F. M. CARPENTER.

county as one of the most capable and influential members of the board, and personally, he has won the respect and esteem of his associates, of whatever political party. His high character and wide acquaintance have repeatedly brought his name into prominence for higher political honors, but he has hitherto declined to be a candidate.

It is a striking proof of the confidence reposed in Mr. Carpenter by the people who know him best, that for many years past he has been frequently called upon to act as executor, and appointed as guardian or trustee to represent minor heirs. In the discharge of these trusts, as well as his public ones, he has attained a well-deserved and honorable reputation.

In the community where he has long resided he is appreciated for his energy and sagacity in business, his superior judgment, his unquestioned integrity, and for the various qualities which make a good neighbor and a sincere friend.

He was married, November 24, 1859, to Miss Mary B. Miller, daughter of John A. Miller, of Bedford. She died in 1885. Of their four children, two only survive,—Carrie, wife of Charles F. Matthews, of Mount Kisco, and Zopher, a youth seventeen years of age, the tenth from his Welsh ancestor to bear the family name.

Abraham Hyatt was the first town clerk, and held that position for many years. The town records consist only of minutes of town-meetings, the acts of highway commissioners in reference to roads and certain town accounts. There are no records of deeds, either in this town or North Castle, from which it was taken,—such as were kept in some of the towns previous to the time when it became customary to record them in the office of the county clerk. There are various records of the freeing of slaves in the manner provided by law. Among the persons so filing certificates were Abraham Hyatt and Gilbert Strang.

MILITARY HISTORY AND INCIDENTS.—The territory now included in the town of New Castle, like all the surrounding region, bore its full share in the rigors of the war for independence. It was a part of the Neutral Ground, as it was called, "and was subjected, from its vicinity to the city, to be foraged by the royal forces, and plundered and insulted by Refugees and Tories. No part of the Union was more harried and trampled down by friend and foe, during the Revolution, than this debatable region." It lay in the direct track of some of the principal military movements of both armies. Expeditions which crossed the Croton at Pine's Bridge found their way through this part of North Castle. In November, 1776, a fortnight after the battle of White Plains, when the jealous and willful Lee, with a delay that bordered on insubordination, was holding his forces at North Castle, Washington wrote to him. "I recommend it to your consideration, whether your retiring to Croton Bridge may not be more advisable than to run the hazard of an attack with unequal numbers. At any rate, I think all your baggage and stores, except such as are necessary for immediate use, ought to be to the northward of Croton River. You will consider the post at Croton's (or Pine's) Bridge, as under your immediate care."

Washington left North Castle at eleven o'clock on the 10th of November, and arrived at Peekskill at sunset. His road was along by Wampus Pond to "North Castle Church," through where New Castle Corners and Mount Kisco now are, up the hill west of the depot, across Kisco River, turning to the right, where George Knox now lives, and thence to Pine's

Bridge.¹ There is a tradition that on one of his journeys through this town he and his staff took dinner in the shade on a large rock in the door-yard of the old Kirby place, at Kirbyville. The rock, at least, is still there; but as it probably was not an agreeable place to lunch on the 10th of November, some other date, if any, must be assigned to the occurrence. Washington crossed the Hudson, and finding himself in peril, constantly besought Lee to come to his aid; but not until the 30th of November did he arrive at Peekskill, marching, doubtless, by the same road. His command seems to have consisted of about two thousand men. Throughout the war this was an important road, connecting Peekskill and North Castle, the one commanding the entrance to the Highlands, the other a secure point convenient to the lower part of the county. On July 2, 1781, Washington advised Rochambeau, whose troops had been for a month scattered in various places, to "move to North Castle and concentrate his whole force. North Castle was selected as being in a direct route by which to receive provisions from Crompond, and also on the road for an advance to White Plains, if circumstances should warrant."²

In August following, six weeks after the failure of the movement of the Allied Armies against New York, Washington's army, followed by Rochambeau's, both of which had in the mean time been encamped between Dobbs Ferry and White Plains, passed through this town on the march to Verplanck's Point by way of Pine's Bridge and Crompond.

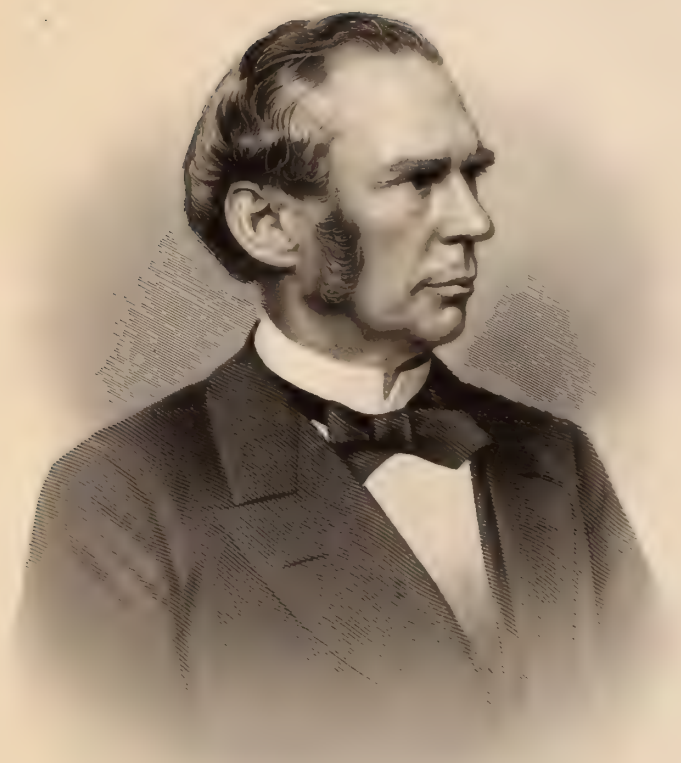
The route is now uncertain, but it is likely that was the road running northward, through the central part of the town. The residence of Mr. Silas Tompkins, situated on that road, about a mile and a half west of Chappaqua, is said to have been for a short time Washington's headquarters, and this may have been the occasion. Whether it was or not, that march was doubtless the most notable instance of the "pomp and circumstance of war" which visited this town during the struggle. "All Westchester County," says Irving, "was alive with the tramp of troops, the gleam of arms, and the lumbering of artillery and baggage-wagons along its roads."

It is quite possible that some of the encampments and movements which are described as being in North Castle were in this town. The old St. George's Church was apparently a place of rendezvous for soldiers of both armies by turns. Tarleton's troops rested there without molestation on the night of July

¹This road passes over Crow Hill. "The intrenchments thrown up by the American Army right away after the Battle of White Plains, in 1776, are still to be seen each side of the Crow Hill Road, near Croton Lake. In the immediate vicinity a number of years ago, several knives and bayonets and some cannon balls were found by workmen who were digging the cellar for Sanford Weeks' house."—*Mt. Kisco Weekly*, April 9, 1886.

²*Monroe of American History*, January, 1880. "The Allied Armies before New York, in 1781." In that article Rochambeau's force is estimated at ten thousand men.





Respectfully yours
Elliot G. Loring

1, 1779, on his forced march from Yonkers to Pound-ridge and Bedford. It was occupied, probably, at different times, when our army was in the vicinity, as a hospital for sick and wounded American soldiers, and many of their graves, unmarked by any monument, are in the old burying-ground about St. Mark's Church.

The people of that period were chiefly Republican, willing to make sacrifices and endure distresses for the cause of liberty; but there were Tories in this town, as elsewhere throughout the county, who did not scruple to act as foragers and sutlers to the British army, and incurred the hatred and contempt of their neighbors thereby. Opportunities for that sort of service were easy in the furnishing of supplies and the driving of cattle from the farming district to the city or to points within the British lines, and the pay was good. The names of some of these men are still remembered and their memory is still execrated.¹

The town sent soldiers to the War of 1812, but the writer has been able to obtain but a few of their names and does not deem it proper to mention those while others equally deserving cannot be ascertained.

The War of the Rebellion found New Castle thoroughly loyal to the government. Although a large part of the population belonged to the Society of Friends, whose peaceful creed has always disinclined them to encourage war or bloodshed in any form, their devotion to the principles of freedom kept them firm in their allegiance throughout those trying years. No record of the volunteers who responded to the first calls of President Lincoln has been kept in the town. They enlisted in various regiments, and their identity has not been preserved, nor can their number be accurately stated. They formed a respectable body of men, both in number and in character.

When, in the second year of the war, volunteering began to decline, special meetings were held and liberal sums of money were voted "to be used for the encouragement of volunteer enlistment." Later, meetings were repeatedly called to provide for substitutes for drafted men. The sums thus voted, including moneys raised for the support of the families of absent soldiers, amounted to about forty-eight thousand dollars. The town, as was usual in this part of the State, issued bonds for the amounts voted, which were paid off year by year, in convenient instalments. The last of the war debt was paid in 1871.

THE TOWN AT PRESENT.—The surface, like that of most of the northern part of the county, is broken into well-defined ridges and valleys, whose general direction is nearly north and south, or bearing to northeast and southwest. In the western part of the town these ridges are varied by numerous separate hills and ranges of rough land, much of which is rocky and cover-

ed with the trees common to this region, among which the graceful and tapering cedar of the Hudson River slopes is conspicuous. In the eastern part of the town the surface is smoother and better adapted to farming. Farmers are to a considerable extent throughout the town engaged in the milk business. There are extensive orchards, and great quantities of apples, especially of russets, are shipped from Chappaqua in good seasons. For several years past many farmers have made a specialty of raising cucumbers for pickles, and there is a factory, or pickle-house, at Chappaqua, where they are purchased.

Among the many beautiful farms and residences in New Castle, that belonging to the late Hon. Elliot Christopher Cowdin deserves mention. Mr. Cowdin was born in Jamaica, Vermont, August 9, 1819. He was educated and trained for a commercial life in Boston, where he lived when he was not absent in Europe, as the representative of the large importing house with which he was associated. In 1852 he established the importing house of Elliot C. Cowdin & Co., in New York and Paris, and marrying, in 1853, the daughter of Samuel W. Waldron, of Boston, he resided abroad till 1858, when he returned to New York for a permanent home.

Although an ardent Republican in politics, and a man of strong convictions, as well as a facile public speaker, Mr. Cowdin did not appear very prominently before the public until the stirring times of the late war, when he assisted in the foundation of the "Union League Club," together with the Rev. Dr. Bellows, his pastor, and a few others, and through and with the club exercised considerable influence in political affairs. He was also a member of the "New England Society," and for two years its president, and was almost invariably one of the speakers at the annual dinners, and was also a prominent member of the Century Club. As a zealous member of the "New York Chamber of Commerce," from whose meetings he was rarely absent, Mr. Cowdin influenced public and commercial affairs. As chairman of the executive committee of that body, it fell to his lot to move many of the resolutions which have been from time to time recorded by the press, and to make many of his ablest reports and addresses. Upon subjects which interested him he spoke with readiness, directness and point. He was in Paris at the outbreak of the Franco-German war, went to Germany during the siege, but returned in time to witness the excesses of the Commune, and delivered an able paper on the subject at Cooper Institute upon his return to this country. He crossed the Atlantic eighty-six times, and, curiously enough, was a personal witness of every revolution from 1848 down to the last abortive struggle of the Communists. In 1878 he attended the exposition as the representative of the United States, and wrote the able report on silk culture which is on record in the State Department.

In the autumn of 1876, Mr. Cowdin was urged by

¹"A part of the farm now owned by Samuel Washburn was confiscated soon after the Revolutionary war, because of the aid and sympathy given the British by the sons of the owner of the land. The farm was bought by Abraham Hyatt."—*Mt. Kisco Weekly*, April 9, 1886.

his friends of the Chamber of Commerce to accept a nomination for the Assembly. He was elected and during the following winter endeavored to introduce and pass bills "To reduce the excessive taxation of Bank Shares," "For Cleaning the Streets of New York," and a "Bill for the Retrenchment and Reform in the Municipality of New York." He labored daily eighteen hours of the twenty-four while he was in the Assembly, zealous for the public good, and though often unsuccessful, he left behind him a record for intelligence, public spirit and legislative ability seldom surpassed.

In 1877 Mr. Cowdin retired from commercial life. He purchased a farm at New Castle, and went quite seriously to work to turn his acres into a model farm. He was still engaged in this manner when his death took place, April 12, 1880.

As a resident of Westchester County, Mr. Cowdin was solicited by the Republicans of the Twelfth Congressional District to take the nomination for the place made vacant by the death of Alexander T. Smith, of Yonkers, which, owing to his desire to remain in private life, he declined. Unquestionably he would have been the next nominee, for he was greatly popular through the district. His Republicanism was strong; the result of thought, habit and conviction. He always took a lively interest in political affairs, which had for him a keen pleasure and attraction, and at the last election, although he declined the nomination for Congress, he was active all through the campaign, and presided at the great "merchants' meeting" at Cooper Institute, when Senator Blaine delivered his address. This was Mr. Cowdin's last appearance in public.

His sudden death took from the arena of public life one who was single-minded, sincere, upright and one of the very kindest-hearted of men from Westchester County, an intelligent and faithful citizen and a kind neighbor.

The soil of New Castle is chiefly a clay loam. There is very little of a sandy or gravelly nature within its limits. Owing to its broken surface, the town is particularly well watered with springs and streams. The Kisco River flows northerly through the eastern part of the town into the Croton, which forms the northern boundary for nearly a mile, and again touches the town at the western extremity. Roaring Brook tumbles down through a notch in the Chappaqua Hills just west of the Harlem Railroad track, midway between Mount Kisco and Chappaqua, and finds its way into the Kisco. Three of the principal streams of the county, the Bronx, the Saw-Mill River and the Pocantico, take their rise in New Castle—the first in Dark Hollow, about two miles east of Chappaqua, near the North Castle line; the Saw-Mill River, a mile or more west of Chappaqua; and the Pocantico, in the valley east of Merritt's Corners. Near the last-named place there is also a mineral spring, known as the Pool Spring. It is situated on the farm of William

E. Eustace, called from it the Pool Farm, in a very picturesque and romantic spot. It is said to possess valuable medicinal properties, and many years ago a hotel was built and an attempt made to bring the place into favor as a public resort, but though some notoriety was acquired, the enterprise did not succeed, and was long since abandoned.

The chief manufacturing establishments of the town are the Spencer Optical Manufacturing Company and the Chappaqua Shoe Manufacturing Company. The works of the former are on the Kisco River, a short distance below the village of Kirbyville, having been removed from New Haven, Conn., in the spring of 1874. The officers are James E. Spencer, president; John S. Spencer, secretary and treasurer, and C. Elliott Spencer superintendent in charge.

The world is indebted to the Spencer Optical Manufacturing Company, of New York and Mt. Kisco, for the introduction of the diamond spectacles. The extensive business of this corporation was begun in 1858 by J. E. Spencer & Co.

Before that time manufacturers of spectacles were more intent upon getting up a cheap article, by which they could command the market, than something which would really improve and preserve the sight of the wearers. The Messrs. Spencer decided on an opposite course. They devoted themselves to the production of glasses which would combine every quality of excellence with reasonableness of cost. The result of this study was the perfecting of the diamond spectacles in 1869.

The business, which was started originally by J. E. Spencer and John S. Spencer, has grown and extended with such rapidity that the Spencer Optical Manufacturing Company now run the largest spectacle manufactories in the world. There are the only factories in existence which make everything pertaining to spectacles, including the lenses. There are at present nearly two hundred workmen employed, although the capacity of the machinery is equal to three hundred and fifty hands when required. The product of the factory last year amounted to the enormous total of five hundred and fifty thousand pairs of spectacles. The finest as well as the less expensive grades are made, and every kind of machinery peculiar to this work is used, from the ponderous lathes which make the tools to the delicate and complicated devices for finishing the lenses ready for the frames. The warehouse of the company is at No. 15 Maiden Lane, New York.

Many of the machines in use at the works are the invention of Mr. Spencer, and are novel in their design and construction. Some of them are automatic, and were designed particularly for optical work. This firm were the first regular manufacturers of steel spectacles and eye-glasses in the United States, and they are at present the only makers of celluloid optical goods. Some of the last of these—the celluloid tortoise-shell and amber shades—are most at-



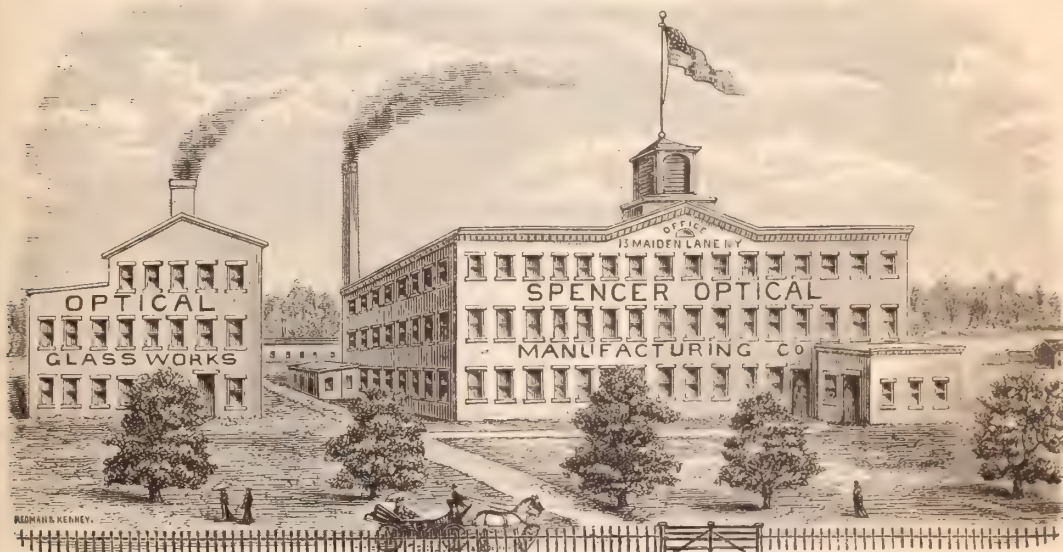
James E. Flinn

tractive in appearance. They are much lighter than any others. Twenty-five pairs of the frames weigh only one ounce, being made from fibrous material. They are much stronger and more durable than any others, and they can be dropped without injury upon the hardest substance. Their beauty far surpasses the ordinary tortoise-shell, rubber and steel frames commonly in use. They are not affected by atmospheric changes, being equally well adapted to either warm or cold climates. The springs are made of a combination of metals, which will neither rust nor be affected by heat or frost. These frames are set with fine lenses, accurately focused to suit all sights, which, with their many other advantages, make them very popular. Reading glasses and many other

The following is a copy of the judges' report of the forty-eighth exhibition of the American Institute on optical goods, held in New York in October and November:

"The important exhibit of the Spencer Optical Manufacturing Company of a variety of articles, the exquisite art with which they put to account every material in nature fit for optical work, appears to fully justify their claims to being the largest manufacturers of spectacles and eye-glasses in the world. Their spectacles and eye-glasses in infinite variety, the beauty, the lightness, the elegance of their frames of an almost artistic workmanship, cannot be surpassed. With this lightness of work they combine substance and durability.

"Their celluloid frames should be not passed without special mention. They manufacture their own lenses, produce them entirely colorless, making them free from polarization of light. The accurate grinding of those lenses should not be left unnoticed. The extremely low price at which they can sell their products is not the least important feature of the working of this company.



SPENCER OPTICAL WORKS.

articles are also made by the company from these materials, they having the exclusive right to manufacture optical goods from them.

The jury on optical goods of the Centennial Exposition unanimously awarded to the Spencer Optical Manufacturing Company the highest honors in their gift, placing them at the head of all their competitors, both American and foreign, as will be seen from the following extract from the official report:

"The undersigned having examined the products herein described, respectfully recommend the same to the United States Centennial Commission for award for the following reasons, viz.:

"Good workmanship, variety and elegance of pattern and cheapness. The glass used is excellent in quality and the frames of various materials, including the metals, shell, rubber and celluloid. The excellent temper of the steel frames is particularly noticeable.

"F. A. P. BARNARD."

(Signature of the judge.)

"The judges consider this exhibit of great value and decided superiority, and recommend that a medal of superiority be awarded to this company.

"The medal awarded.

"A true copy of this report on file,

"JOHN W. CHAMBERS, Secretary."

These reports speak for themselves and award the Spencer Optical Manufacturing Company the highest honor, thereby placing them in a position they have striven, through the merits of their goods, to attain. The products of this company are at present sold and used throughout the United States, Canada and many other countries in all portions of the globe.

On the evening of April 21, 1877, the main factory of the company took fire and was completely destroyed. But such great energy was displayed by John S. Spencer and others that, although delayed in various ways, they had replaced the building and

were moving machinery into it in thirty-five days from the commencement of its construction. During the period between its destruction and replacement the company manufactured their goods at Birmingham, Conn.

James Edwin Spencer, the enterprising young business man, who founded the Spencer Optical Manufacturing Company, was born in the city of New York in 1839, his father being at that time extensively engaged in building operations there. Shortly after his birth his family removed to Guilford, Conn., where the youth attended school till his eleventh year. At that time he succeeded in persuading his parents to allow him to reside and work upon the farm with his grandfather, Mr. Samuel Spencer, also of Guilford, which he did, attending High School during the winter till his sixteenth year, at which time he commenced his business career as an apprentice to the firm of Brown & Kirby, manufacturers of optical goods in New Haven.

He remained in this position for four years, at the conclusion of which, feeling strongly the necessity for a more thorough education, he returned to Guilford and entered the institute at that place, continuing a course of studies for one year. After leaving the institute, the firm of Brown & Kirby having meanwhile retired from business, he rented their factory and started in a small way to manufacture optical goods on his own account. Many difficulties were at first experienced, but the venture, however, owing to his indomitable will, proved successful. Additional help was hired, the business was moved to a larger building, new and improved machinery was brought into requisition and the concern was established upon a permanent basis. In 1861 Mr. Spencer admitted as an apprentice his brother, John S. Spencer, who, a few years later, became a partner the firm being known as J. E. Spencer & Co. The name was again changed in 1869 to the Spencer Optical Manufacturing Company, owing to the incorporation of a stock concern, which enabled the brothers to work more advantageously. Of this company Mr. Spencer is president. His courage in taking hold, with a limited capital, of a business abandoned by its former proprietors, together with his untiring efforts in its subsequent conduct, entitle him to a foremost place among the live business men of the time. The factory now under his control, and the business of which forms the principal industry of Mount Kisco, whither it was removed from New Haven in 1874, is one of the largest of its kind in the United States, furnishing employment to nearly two hundred persons.

John Stowe Spencer, well known in business circles as secretary and treasurer of the Spencer Optical Manufacturing Company, was the youngest of seven children. He was born in Guilford, Conn., April 6, 1845. His father, Isaac S. Spencer, was a son of Samuel Spencer, of Guilford, and was, for

several years previous to 1839, an extensive builder in New York City. In that year he removed to Guilford, where, in 1854, he purchased, in connection with his eldest son, Christopher, an iron foundry and manufacturing business.

The Spencer family was remarkable for longevity. Samuel Spencer died at the age of ninety-six, his wife also at ninety-six and her sister at ninety-eight. Their three graves are side by side in the Guilford Cemetery and are objects of curiosity.

Mr. Spencer attended public school till his twelfth year, when he entered the Guilford Institute, where he remained until he was sixteen. He early gave evidence of the spirit of independence (which has since characterized his life) by working on a farm during the summer for money to pay for his schooling in the winter, though this course was unnecessary, his father being abundantly able to bear the expense. After leaving the Guilford Institute he entered, as apprentice, the optical manufactory of his brother James, at New Haven, where, after two years' hard labor, he came to be considered the first workman in the factory. Being naturally ambitious and anxious to advance, he proposed to his brother the advisability of allowing him to make a trip through the United States for the purpose of introducing his goods. The proposition was accepted, and at the age of eighteen he commenced the occupation of a traveling salesman, at which he remained for six years, visiting the principal cities in twenty-two States. At the end of this time the business had increased to such an extent that he was admitted as a partner, the firm being known as J. E. Spencer & Co. The salesrooms of the house were also removed to New York, and from that time Mr. Spencer remained in that city.

From 1864 to 1883 the firm carried on the manufacture of jewelry, but in the latter year, owing to the increase of the optical business, this branch was dropped.

Mr. Spencer has given much attention to mechanical pursuits, and he has, during his business career, taken out eleven patents, the securing of which has had much to do with the success of the concern.

In November, 1869, the firm of J. E. Spencer & Co. was organized as a joint-stock company, to be known as the Spencer Optical Manufacturing Company, of which Mr. Spencer was made one of the directors, and was also chosen secretary and treasurer, positions which he still holds. His motto has ever been "Original designs and every quality of excellence, with reasonableness of cost." His steady attention to the business of the salesroom, together with his personal supervision of the work at the factory in Mount Kisco, insure to his patrons the reliability of the firm. His energy has been highly useful to the industry of Westchester County.

The Shoe Company's Factory is at Chappaqua. The company was incorporated in 1885, with H. W. Bischoff as president and treasurer, and R. Farring-



John S. Jones



ton as secretary, both of whom, with William Bird, are trustees. The same parties had conducted the business as a private firm for several years previous to incorporation. There are employed about forty men and boys and thirty-five women and girls.

Henry W. Bischoff, for many years prominent as a manufacturer at Chappaqua, was born in the village of Destel, Westphalia, Prussia, November 13, 1834. He was educated in the public school at that place, which he left at fourteen, to work upon the family farm, and aid in the family support, his father having died while he was in his tenth year.

At the age of twenty he came to New York City, where he entered a grocery store as clerk, leaving it three years later to start, with his small savings, in the same business for himself, at No. 59 West Forty-fourth Street. He

was successful in the venture, and remained thus till 1863, when he sold out and removed to Chappaqua. Here he became in the same year proprietor of the Askawau House, and simultaneously obtained the position of ticket agent for the Harlem Railroad, which he retained for several years. He parted with his interest in the Askawau House in 1868, and soon after, in connection with Messrs. Farrington and Bird, started in the shoe manufacturing business, under the firm name of Farrington, Bischoff & Bird. In 1876 their factory was destroyed by fire, causing the firm severe loss. Mr. Bischoff, however, immediately set about building a new establishment, which

was occupied a few months afterward, and in which the business was carried steadily forward for a few years, at the end of which time he purchased the interests of Messrs. Farrington and Bird, managing the concern under the style of Henry W. Bischoff till 1885, when he formed, as has been said, the "Chappaqua Shoe Manufacturing Company," of which he is at present president.

Mr. Bischoff is a gentleman of much push and enterprise, and is highly esteemed, not only by his own townsmen, but also by a large circle of business and social acquaintances. He has been connected with several organizations, prominent among which was the First Regiment of Cavalry, National Guard State of New York, in Company K of which he held the commission of second lieutenant. He is also a mem-

ber of the Kisco Lodge, No. 708, Free and Accepted Masons, in which he has held the position of treasurer since December, 1872. In politics he is a Republican, and formerly served his town as commissioner of highways and postmaster.

He married, September 19, 1858, Miss Margaret Harms, of Kursted, in Hanover, Germany, whose sad death took place July 3, 1879. Six children were the result of this union, five of whom survive; namely: Minnie (who married Edgar Johnson, of Pleasantville, N. Y.), Anna, Louisa, Henry and William.

The villages of the town are Mount Kisco, which includes within its limits the older hamlets of New Castle Corner and Kirbyville, Chappaqua and Merritt's Corners.

Mount Kisco lies partly in the town of Bedford and has been described in the chapter relating to that town. New Castle Corner is the name of an old village or hamlet a mile east of Mount Kisco Station, where the first settlement in this vicinity was made. Here the Episcopal and Methodist Churches were early located. The town line passes through the building where the post-office (New Castle) has been kept for many years. Kirbyville takes its name from Caleb Kirby, one of the earliest inhabitants. It lies contiguous to the last-named hamlet, consisting of some thirty or forty houses, situated along the Kisco River. Some twenty-five years ago a cotton-factory gave



HENRY W. BISCHOFF.

the place some importance and appearance of activity, which subsequently declined. It has now been somewhat revived by the establishment there of the Spencer Optical Works. A picturesque feature of the neighborhood is the mill-pond, still called Kirby's Pond, though it is owned by Hon. W. H. Leonard.

There is, in the office of the state engineer, a map of the town of New Castle, by William Adams, without date, but known to have been made about 1797. The roads about New Castle Corner appear substantially as now. There was a grist-mill where it is now, and a saw-mill just above the site of the optical factory. Croft's tavern occupies the site of the house of the late M. W. Fish. Where the village of Mount Kisco

Adams was supervisor of Mount Pleasant about this time.

now flourishes there are no houses; the map shows a swamp. The road leading up from Wampus Pond is described as the "road to New Castle Church," and the surveyor has made it as straight as possible. Some of the names of the inhabitants are given, among them Green, Underhill, Haight, Brady, Carpenter, Hall, Wright and Dickinson.

Chappaqua¹ is the name of the Harlem Railroad station, four miles south of Mount Kisco. The name was formerly applied to the neighborhood a mile west of the station, where the two meeting-houses of the Friends were, and where the Chappaqua Mountain Institute now is, and was of Indian origin. The "Chappaqua Hills" is the name given to a rocky ridge west of the valley in which the Harlem Railroad runs. A thrifty village has now grown up about the station. There are two places of worship—the Union Chapel and that of the Orthodox branch of the Friends—a hotel, about twenty places of business and the shoe-factory, which is mentioned elsewhere.

The chief historical interest which attaches to Chappaqua is that it was for twenty years the residence and home of Horace Greeley. Always an enthusiast in matters pertaining to agriculture, and finding himself at the age of forty wearied with a busy life, in 1851 he bought about seventy-five acres of land near the station and built a modest cottage. Here he spent his Saturdays and other occasional days that he could spare, and greatly enjoyed the recreation and diversion which his farm afforded him.² Here also he put in practice his ideas respecting "high farming." He drained the swamp lying along the railroad, just below the station, laying tile at great expense, and had the satisfaction of seeing it transformed from a wilderness into a fertile meadow. His published accounts of his success with this part of his farm have made the "Greeley Swamp" famous. His greatest delight was to spend his days in trimming with a sharp, new axe, the rank growth of his shade-trees. His experiments in farming, his purchases of expensive fertilizers, his extravagant outlay of labor and material, were watched by his practical neighbors, and were met with much gentle ridicule. But profit was not his object; the visible improvement amply compensated him.

"Looking down over the reclaimed swamp, all bright now with waving flax, he said one day, 'all else that I have done may be of no avail;

but what is done here is done; it will last.' The upland has been prepared for irrigation, the water being supplied by a brook which tumbled down the hill through a deep glen. Its course was arrested by a dam, and, from the reservoir thus formed, pipes are laid to the different fields, which can be inundated by the turning of a cock. The experiment of irrigation, however, has been suspended. The brook, swollen with rage at the loss of its ancient liberty, burst through the dam³ and scattered four thousand dollars' worth of solid masonry in the space of a minute and a half. A new attempt will be made to reduce it to submission, and conduct its waters in peaceful and fertilizing rivulets down the rows of corn and potatoes."⁴

The farm is now owned by Miss Gabrielle Greeley, only surviving child of Mr. Greeley. While Mr. Greeley's residence was in the town of New Castle, the polling-place of the election district was at Sarles' Corners, some four miles distant. It was his custom always to vote, both at general and local elections, and it was usual for him to spend the whole day at the polls when the election was important, discussing public questions with those who would gather about him for the purpose. His relations with his neighbors here were of the pleasantest nature, and the days that he spent at Chappaqua were doubtless the happiest of his busy life.

Sarles' Corners was long the name of a small hamlet on the Sing Sing and Somerstown turnpike, a little west of the centre of the town, and about four miles from Sing Sing. For many years the town meetings were held here, and it is still one of the polling-places. There is a large hotel built of granite, which is abundant in the neighborhood. The quarry from which the stone for the Croton Dam was obtained is near by. The place of late years has been called Merritt's Corners, and has given its name to the station on the New York and Northern Railroad, a short distance to the east. There are at the station two or three places of business.

SCHOOLS.—At a meeting held September 26, 1814, the town voted to comply with the act of the Legislature providing for a system of public instruction, and the following were chosen as officers: Stephen Fowler, Jesse Brady and Nathan Merritt, commissioners; and Jonathan Cornell, Isaac Weeks, Nathaniel Hyatt, William Quimby, Thomas Vail and William Williams, inspectors. The town is now divided into eight districts, besides parts of districts lying in adjoining towns. The best school building is at Chappaqua, half a mile east of the depot. It has rooms for two departments, and is pleasantly situated.

³ It is related that this dam was built on plans obtained by Mr. Greeley from Professor W. M. Gillespie, Professor of Civil Engineering in Union College. After the dam was carried away, Mr. Greeley met the professor and said, "That dam fell down." "Oh, no; it didn't, Mr. Greeley," returned the professor. "That is impossible." "But I tell you it *did*," insisted H. G.; "there was a great freshet and it could not hold the water." "Mr. Greeley," said Professor Gillespie, serenely, "so long as the laws of nature remain as they were when I gave you those plans, that dam *couldn't* fall down." It turned out that, after the dam was begun, it was decided to increase the height, in order to make a larger pond, without changing the dimensions of the base of the masonry; hence the result. Union College boys used to tell the story to illustrate Professor Gillespie's faith in the laws and principles of his profession.

⁴ Parton's "Life of Greeley." N. Y., 1855.

¹ Pronounced Shappaquaw, and sometimes so spelled by early writers.

² "And so I, in the sober afternoon of life, when its sun, if not high, is still warm, have bought a few acres of land in the broad, still country, and, bearing thither my household treasures, have resolved to steal from the city's labors and anxieties at least one day in each week, wherein to revive, as a farmer, the memories of my childhood's humble home. And already I realize that the experiment cannot cost so much as it is worth; already I find in that day's quiet an antidote and a solace for the feverish, festering cares of the weeks which environ it; already my brook murmurs a soothing even-song to my burning, throbbing brain; and my trees, gently stirred by the fresh breeze, whisper to my spirit something of their own quiet strength and patient trust in God."

—Greeley's Address before the Indiana State Agricultural Society, October, 1854.

In 1855-56 the Mount Kisco Educational Institute was erected. It stands on a prominent spot a short distance east of the railroad, and is a three-story building, well suited to the purpose for which it was intended. It was built by a stock company whose capital was \$10,000. Its first principal was Mr. Daniel Littlefield, who had been a teacher of a New York public school. It was conducted as a school for both sexes, and was managed for several years by various persons with but moderate success. It has been for some time in private hands, and is now occupied as a hotel.

The Chappaqua Mountain Institute was erected in 1869-70, and was opened in November, 1870, with about fifty pupils. It was built by subscriptions among Friends of the "Purchase Quarterly Meeting" and of New York. It is handsomely situated a short distance from Chappaqua Station, near the old Friends' Meeting-House. The original building was burned February 21, 1885, and the new building, now in course of erection,¹ occupies the same site. The building will be, when completed, one hundred and eighty feet by sixty, with additions back, the whole to be of brick and stone. While under the care of the "Purchase Quarterly Meeting" of Friends, it has not been sectarian, and has been largely patronized by other denominations the average

yearly attendance being seventy-five. The school was not long interrupted by the fire, as suitable buildings in the neighborhood were at once leased for use until the completion of the new building. Mr. Samuel C. Collins, the present principal, has had charge of the institute from the beginning. Five teachers are employed, besides occasional lecturers.

Joshua B. Washburn, the treasurer of the institution, is a son of Reuben Washburn, who was born in the town of Mount Pleasant September 13, 1775, and was a farmer there until his death. Reuben Washburn married Hannah Flewellen, and of their twelve children, Joshua B. was the eleventh. He was born

at the homestead July 20, 1820, and was educated at the district in his native place, which he left, when nineteen, for the farm.

He has since continued to pursue the calling of a farmer—first upon his father's place, till his thirtieth year, when he married Caroline Underhill, daughter of Alfred Underhill, and removed to Greenburgh, where he resided for a short time with his father-in-law. He afterward bought his father's place at Mount Pleasant, where he resided for one year, followed by another at Unionville, which he, in turn, left for Golden's Bridge, where he purchased a farm of his own. Nine years passed away at Golden's Bridge, after which he bought a portion of the estate of Solomon Underhill,

at Sing Sing, which he sold three years later. He remained one year longer in Sing Sing, however, till he had possessed himself of a small farm at Chappaqua, which he parted with soon after in exchange for the property of his father-in-law, at Greenburgh, which was also sold and his present farm at Chappaqua purchased.

Mr. Washburn has resided in Chappaqua since 1872. He is a member of the Society of Friends, and has interested himself deeply in the movements of that organization throughout the country, particularly in the Chappaqua Mountain Institute, of which, as has been said, he is treasurer. He is recognized throughout the county as

an exceedingly useful citizen and member of society. He has had five children, one of whom (Alfred) is dead. The survivors are Franklin J., Jane C., Charles E. and Howard R.

CHURCHES.

There are in New Castle seven places of worship,—one Protestant Episcopal, one Methodist Episcopal, two Union Chapels or Churches, and three of the Society of Friends—two Orthodox and one Hicksite. There is also a Baptist Society duly organized at Chappaqua, but as yet it has no house of worship.

ST. MARK'S CHURCH.—As early as 1722 the Rev. Robert Jenney, the Church of England missionary in charge of the parish of Rye, which included Bedford and Mamaroneck, began holding services at



Joshua B. Washburn

¹ January, 1886.

this place, then known as North Castle, and characterized by him as "a new settlement in the woods." The interests of the church in this neighborhood seem to have prospered in his hands. His successor, Rev. James Wetmore, also a missionary under the direction of the Gospel Propagation Society, found the place of sufficient importance to warrant his preaching there once in five weeks,¹ and about this time the Society maintained a schoolmaster at Bedford and North Castle. At Bedford there were in 1725, according to Mr. Wetmore, "eight or ten families of the church,"—*i. e.* the church of England; and at North Castle the number was much smaller, as may be inferred from the following statement of the quotas to be paid by each of the churches or preaching stations of the parish during that year: "Rye, £34 4s. 0d.; Bedford, £16 2s. 0d.; Mamaroneck, £18 0s. 0d.; Scarsdale, £5 3s. 0d.; North Castle, £2 9s. 0d."² Mr. Wetmore served this parish with the greatest devotion for thirty-four years, preaching at the places named and also at White Plains, and for a part of the time occasionally at Stamford and Greenwich. In 1745 he was relieved by the appointment of his son-in-law, the Rev. Joseph Lamson, to assist him. In 1746 this gentlemen reported to the Society that he officiated "to full congregations" at Bedford and North Castle.³ Mr. Lamson continued in this relation for about two years. In 1753 Mr. Wetmore reported that the congregations had so increased that there were hopes that Bedford and North Castle would be able to support a minister. This hope, however, was not realized for many years. In 1759 Mr. St. George Talbot, an English gentleman, then living in New York, made, through Mr. Wetmore, a liberal donation for the benefit of the churches of Bedford and North Castle. It was then resolved to build a church at North Castle, and on the second Sunday of October, 1761, it was opened with preaching by the Rev. George Dibble, rector of St. John's Church, Stamford. "Mr. St. George Talbot, the pious and noble benefactor, was present and was highly pleased with the number and devout behaviour of the people."⁴ It was called St. George's Church, and stood about on the site of the present church. It was under the care of the ministers of the Gospel Propagation Society until the Revolution, when, from the nature of affairs in the Neutral Ground, it was impossible to hold services for several years. On April 19, 1787, it was incorporated under the act of April 6, 1784, by the name of "The Protestant Episcopal Church in the townships of Bedford and North Castle." Owing to a subsequent enactment affecting Episcopal Churches, it was re-incorporated September 25, 1796, under the name, "The Protestant Episcopal Church in the united towns of Bedford and New Castle, to

continue by the regular name of St. George's Church." The only regularly called pastor of the two churches was the Rev. George Strebeck, who was the rector from, August 1804, to March, 1805, when he resigned. In 1806 the people of Bedford began to agitate the question of obtaining the residue of the bequest of St. George Talbot, and building a church there. This (St. Matthew's) was completed in 1809, and as the majority of the congregation were at Bedford, St. George's fell into disuse. The building, then nearly sixty years old, was taken down, and a part of the frame is still in existence in a barn on the farm formerly the property of the late Hezekiah Raymond. "It was said to be a very decent place for public worship, forty feet by thirty, with galleries covered and closed with cedar. It is related that this building was used as a hospital and guard-house during the war."⁵ Tarleton mentions it as his halting-place at 4 o'clock, on the morning of July 2, 1779, on his way to Bedford.⁶

The present St. Mark's Church was incorporated October 7, 1850, with Gilbert Martin and Henry D. Tyler as wardens, and Gilbert Brundage, Thomas Wright, Thomas W. Sarles, John Cary, Andrew Dunn, Simeon Woolsey, George W. Brower and Lewis Tripp as vestrymen. It seems unfortunate that the old name of St. George's was not preserved. The organization was largely due to the efforts of the Rev. Robert W. Harris, of Grace Church, White Plains, by whose agency funds were raised for the erection of the church. The parish was admitted into formal union with the convention of the diocese of New York in 1851. The building, which is of neat and church-like appearance, stands near the site of old St. George's, a few rods from the shore of Kirby's Pond, and in the midst of the grave-yard, where the remains of the earliest settlers are supposed to lie. The church was first opened for public worship on the Feast of the Conversion of Saint Paul, Sunday, January 25, 1852. An interesting historical discourse was delivered by the Rev. Mr. Harris, in whose charge the parish continued for some time thereafter. The next rector was the Rev. Isaac D. Vermilye, who had charge both of this parish and that of St. Stephen's, in North Castle, until the early part of 1858. About Easter, of that year, the Rev. William L. Peck took charge of the parish, and was its regularly instituted rector from October, 1859, until Easter, 1865. During 1865 services were supplied by the Rev. Martin Moody, now deceased. The Rev. Joseph W. Hyde

⁵ Address of Rev. L. Luquer.—"Tarleton's Raid through Bedford in 1779."

⁶ "A field on the farm of James T. Sutton is called by the gentleman, 'the French Meadow,' because of a French doctor having been killed there during the Revolutionary War. The doctor was on his way from Paris Bridge to the Episcopal Church at New Castle Corners, which was filled with the sick and wounded of the American army, who greatly needed medical aid, which the doctor proposed to contribute, but was prevented from so doing by being fatally murdered on his way down."—"Records," Mount Kisco, March 19, 1886.

¹ Records of the Propagation Society.

² Records of Vestry of Rye.

³ Records of Propagation Society.

⁴ Records of the Gospel Propagation Society.

was rector for a short time during 1866, and was succeeded by the Rev. C. Winter Bolton, who accepted the rectorship April 1, 1867, and resigned about Easter, 1871. At the close of Mr. Bolton's pastorate the connection with St. Stephen's ceased. There was then a vacancy for about two years. Rev. James W. Sparks was rector during 1873 and 1874, and Rev. Joseph H. Young in 1875-76. Rev. C. B. Mee became rector in the summer of 1877 and continued till early in 1880. The church was vacant until August 1, 1880, when the Rev. John Anketell succeeded to the rectorship. He resigned at Easter, 1882. The Rev. Benjamin T. Hall, formerly of St. Stephen's, became the rector October 1, 1882, and is the present incumbent. During his occupancy of the parish he has also had charge of St. John's Church at Pleasantville, and for a part of the time has conducted "cottage services" at Chappaqua. By the will of Mr. Thomas Wright, who died in the fall of 1882, the church was made the recipient of the late residence of that gentleman, which is now used for a rectory. There are several acres of land attached, and it is conveniently and pleasantly situated near the church.

THE NEW CASTLE METHODIST CHURCH.—The Methodist Episcopal Church of New Castle, like all of that denomination in this region, is the result of the labors of John Wesley's missionaries in this county, which began just before the War of the Revolution, at New Rochelle. Greatly interrupted by the war, the effects of which were most seriously felt throughout the neutral ground, the movement took a fresh start immediately after its close, and the New Rochelle Circuit was formed in 1787. It comprised Westchester County, and the "regions beyond," and the names of its faithful itinerants, Moriarty, Garretson, Phœbus, Brush, and others, are still remembered in the oldest Methodist families, in this and neighboring towns. The first churches organized under their efforts were those of North Castle and New Rochelle, which were incorporated in 1791.

As the cause of Methodism prospered, there grew up in the county several offshoots from the New Rochelle circuit; first it was extended and called the New Rochelle and Croton; then the Croton was set off; then, in 1809, the Cortlandt; in 1826 the Mount Pleasant; and in 1833, the Bedford Circuit. Under each of these, except the Cortlandt, the churches and classes in Bedford and New Castle were successively cared for. The Cortlandt circuit was the northern part of the county.

During the early years of this century, prayer and class-meetings were held at the houses of leading Methodists in this vicinity, notably those of James Hall, in Hall Street, (now Sarles Street) and of Caleb Kirby, at Kirbyville, both members and officers in the North Castle Church. A great revival about 1818 and an increased attendance at these meetings and at the meetings of the circuit preachers, led to a discussion of the question of organizing a church at New

Castle. By the efforts of those already named, and of James Fish, Tyler Fountain and others, the church was incorporated December 16, 1824. In the following year a lot of a quarter of an acre was given by Caleb Kirby, near where St. Mark's Church now stands, and in 1826 the first church was erected thereon. It was a small and plain building, not unlike an ordinary school-house, but it served the purpose of the society for sixteen years, and its pulpit was occupied by many noted preachers of those times, among them, it is related, the famous Lorenzo Dow.

In 1833, when the Bedford circuit was formed, this congregation was the second in importance of the ten appointments of the circuit, Middle Patent being the first.¹ In 1845 it had attained sufficient size to be set off from the circuit, and was made, with one or two other appointments, a separate charge.

Five years before this the Bedford church, which had stood many years at the Four Corners, was moved to Bedford village, and the New Castle congregations received considerable accessions from families who had previously attended that church. Owing to this, and to other causes of growth, the little church was found to be too small, and a more commodious one was built a few rods south of the first. It was dedicated in February, 1843, with services by Rev. Charles Putnam and others. This edifice was used till 1867. In the meantime, as in other villages, the centre of business and of population had moved toward the railroad station at Mount Kisco, and, when the third house of worship became necessary, the site was moved half a mile further west. It was begun in 1866, and the lecture room in the basement so far finished as to be used in May, 1867. The building was completed a little more than a year later, and dedicated August 20, 1868, with services by Bishop Janes, Dr. Foster, Dr. Wakely and others. It stands on the very edge of the town, the boundary between New Castle and Bedford crossing the yard a few feet in front of the church. It is a handsome and convenient structure. A parsonage was built (in 1871) near by, the cost of both being not far from thirty thousand dollars. Both the old churches are still standing, having been rebuilt, and are in use as dwellings.

The following is a list of the ministers of New Castle Methodist Episcopal Church since it became a separate charge, in 1845,—

1845-46. . . Rev. Daniel Devine.	1865. . . . Rev. Thomas Fero.
1847-48. . . Rev. John Luckey.	1866-68. . . Rev. J. Millard.
1849. . . . Rev. J. Z. Nichols.	1869-70. . . Rev. Delos Lull.
1850-51. . . Rev. Thomas Sparks.	1871-72. . . Rev. J. F. Richmond.
1852-53. . . Rev. Davis Stocking.	1873-74. . . Rev. C. M. Eggleston.
1854-55. . . Rev. Benjamin Griffin.	1875-77. . . Rev. J. W. Ackerly.
1856-57. . . Rev. C. S. Brown.	1878-79. . . Rev. S. I. Ferguson.
1858-59. . . Rev. Thomas Lodge.	1880-82. . . Rev. Wm. E. Ketcham.
1860-61. . . Rev. D. Buck.	1883-85. . . Rev. George Clarke.
1862-63. . . Rev. A. D. Vail.	1886. . . . Rev. G. W. Terbush.
1864. . . . Rev. E. Foster.	

CHAPPAQUA UNION MEETING HOUSE.—"The

¹ See Bedford, "History of Methodist Episcopal Church."

Chappaqua Union Meeting House Association" was incorporated February 4, 1867, with Jesse H. Underhill, Robert S. Haviland, Edward J. Carpenter, Robert Lindley Murray, and Horace Greeley as trustees. The articles of incorporation set forth that the "said building is to be used for holding religious meetings, the accommodation of Sunday-schools, and the delivery of lectures, or for any other benevolent, charitable, literary, or scientific purpose that the trustees, managers or directors shall authorize." The building is a good-sized convenient structure, standing at the foot of the hill east of the station, a few steps north of the entrance to the Greeley place. It has been constantly used for the purposes above mentioned.

NEW CASTLE UNION CHURCH.—"The Union Free Church of New Castle" was incorporated November 5, 1867, with Jesse Ryder, E. D. Truesdell, David B. Tompkins, Isaac Young, William L. Dubois, and James Cornell, as trustees. The building is in the western part of the town, about three miles from Sing Sing, near the school-house of district No. 6. The intentions of the founders are thus expressed in the articles of incorporation; "to establish a free church which shall be used for the purpose of Christian worship of Almighty God, and for promoting Christian knowledge and instruction." Religious services are frequently held there under the direction of ministers of different denominations.

FRIEND'S MEETING HOUSES.—There are three Meeting Houses of the Society of Friends in the town of New Castle: one belonging to the Hicksite branch, at the old site a mile west of Chappaqua station, and two of the Orthodox Friends, one at Chappaqua and the other known as Croton Valley Meeting House, at the extreme north end of the town, between the Bedford line and Kisco River.

This part of Westchester County has been from the earliest settlement a Quaker stronghold. Friends' first settled at Chappaqua about 1730 and for several years meetings for worship were held at the house of Abel Weeks.

A preparative meeting was set up in 1745 and the Chappaqua Meeting House was built in 1753 and enlarged in 1778. All the Friends in Westchester County belonged to Purchase Monthly Meeting, held at Harrison's Purchase, until 1785, when that meeting was divided and Chappaqua Monthly Meeting was established. The members of the meeting at North Castle and of that at Amawalk in Yorktown belonged to this Monthly Meeting. In 1798 Chappaqua Monthly Meeting was divided, the meetings at North Castle and Chappaqua continuing to form the Chappaqua Monthly, and those at Amawalk and Salem constituting the Amawalk Monthly Meeting. After the separation occurred in the society in 1827 on account of differences in doctrinal views, that branch which approved the teachings of Elias Hicks continued to use the old Meeting House at Chappaqua, while the Orthodox people built a new one close

by, which was in use until 1883 when it was abandoned and a new building of modern architecture and tasteful appearance erected by them at Chappaqua station.

The Croton Valley meeting was established in 1806. The meeting house stood near the Croton River a little below the mouth of the Kisco. When the Croton Lake was raised for New York City's water supply the house was moved upon the adjoining land belonging to Henry Sutton. After the division in 1827 the Hicksite branch retained the house and the Orthodox had their religious services in the house of Moses Sutton until 1845, when the present house was built. The Hicksite meeting was afterward discontinued. Another meeting was organized by them at Mount Kisco about the year 1856 and a meeting house erected. This meeting still continues. (See Bedford).

BAPTIST CHURCH.—The Chappaqua Baptist Church was organized February 22, 1881, with nine members, and was formally recognized on the twenty-fifth of May of that year. In the month of July following the church unanimously called the Rev. W. H. Marshall (formerly of Bedford) to be the pastor. He served the charge efficiently and faithfully for about a year and a half. Since his ministry closed there has been no settled pastor but the pulpit has been supplied by different preachers. The church became a member of the Southern New York Baptist Association in October, 1881.

No house of worship has yet been erected, but services have always been held in the Chappaqua Union Meeting House.

CEMETERIES.—The oldest burial place in the town is probably that near St. Mark's Church, where the "North Castle Church" of pre-revolutionary times stood. There are several small grave-yards which have been used by families, or neighborhoods, in different parts of the town. Some twenty years ago the Fair Ridge Cemetery, a short distance north of the old Friends' Meeting-Houses, was laid, and was incorporated December 26, 1882, when more land was added to it. It now consists of about twenty acres. The present officers are Azariah Carpenter, president; R. S. Haviland, secretary.

Oakwood Cemetery, a very beautiful tract of land of fifty-five acres, is in the village of Mount Kisco. It was laid out by Mr. Chauncey Smith, then the owner of the land, and given the name of Locust Hill about 1872. It was incorporated January 9, 1883, by its present name. The present officers are James Wood, president; Francis M. Carpenter, secretary and treasurer.

Joseph Barrell

CHAPTER XIII.

NORTH CASTLE.

BY JOSEPH BARRETT AND W. H. HORTON.

NORTH CASTLE lies upon the eastern border of the county, adjoining Fairfield County, in Connecticut. It is bounded north by New Castle and Bedford, east by Poundridge and the State of Connecticut, south by White Plains and Harrison and west by Mount Pleasant. It is about thirty-five miles north of New York City. Until 1791 it included the present town of New Castle.

INDIAN DEEDS AND PATENTS.—The first record concerning lands now embraced in this town shows that in 1640 Ponus, sagamore, sold to Nathaniel Turner, on behalf of Quinnipiacke (New Haven), a tract of land known as the Toquams. In the sale of this tract he reserved for the use of himself "the liberty of his corn and pasture lands." These lands were known by the Indians as Shehaug and Hoquetch.¹

In 1665 Ponus and his eldest son, Onax, made a second agreement in regard to these same lands, and while they admitted that the first purchase-money was paid, "yet things not being clear and being very unsatisfied, they came to another agreement."² Just what the trouble was does not appear, but from the general tenor of the papers recorded it would seem as if the Puritans had set their houses too near the Indian planting-grounds, and in consequence the English hog damaged the red man's corn, or the cattle of the white man may have strayed over the boundary line into their pasture-land. In 1640 Ponus was the ruling sachem of the Siwanois, also known as one of the seven tribes of the coast. This chieftaincy was one of the largest of the Wappinger sub-divisions. They occupied the northern shore of the Sound from Norwalk, twenty-four miles to the neighborhood of Hell Gate. A very large village of this chieftaincy was situated on the shores of Rye Pond.³ The residence of Ponus in 1640 was called Poningo.⁴ The English settlements along the shores of the Sound on the one side, and the Dutch on the banks of the Hudson River on the other side, naturally crowded the Indians back from the shore-lands into this interior country. And when we look upon these beautiful, though small lakes, and listen to the babbling of these crystal streams as they course their winding way down the sides of these noble hills and through these pleasant valleys, we can easily imagine that the Indian found here much that he had learned in his

youth to expect only when he had reached the happy hunting-ground of the future. It was the liberty of a beautiful spot that the old Indian sachem Ponus had reserved for "his and the rest of the said Indians to plant on."

Sixty years after Ponus had made his sale to Stamford, his descendants sold even that which the old sagamore had reserved. The same tide of immigration that had crowded them into the hill country was now crowding them out. The lakes, the hills and the valleys, with their fields and villages, passed into the possession of the white man, while the Indian, with little to show for his trading, built his last wigwam among the tall grasses that grew on the borders of Tamarack Swamp.

The lands included in the present town were finally conveyed to the white men substantially in three tracts. First: the part of the town lying west of the Byram River, which was included in Heathcote's great purchase of October 19, 1696, known afterward as the West Patent.⁵

Second: the eastern part of the town lying between the north and south courses of the Mahanas, or Mianus River, which Serringoe, Rarequash and other Indians conveyed to Colonel Caleb Heathcote and Joseph Theal, John Horton and Joseph Purdy, of Rye, on July 5, 1701.

Third: the remaining or central part of the present town, bounded west by the Byram, and east by the Mianus as it flows northward, south by Connecticut and north by Bedford. This tract contains some of the most desirable land in the town, and was at an early date sought for by various persons who had come up from Rye. The prior claims of these men seem to have embarrassed Heathcote in his designs, and he became associated with them in various purchases, which they together made of the Indians. On the 11th of June, 1701, Heathcote, Theal, Horton and Purdy bought of the same Indians already mentioned a "certain parcel and tract of land, bounded as followeth: Easterly by Byram River, northerly to the northwest corner of a great swamp, commonly called the Pound Swamp, thence a south-westerly line to Rye's great pond, and bounded by the said pond westerly, and so runs to Harrison's great marked tree." On the 4th day of July, 1701, the same Indians, Serringoe, Rarequash, Washpaken, Ramhone and Pakenain, conveyed "to Colonel Caleb Heathcote, Captain James Mott, Robert Lockhard, Jonathan Lockhard's son, Nathaniel Silleck, Richard Scofield, Gershom Lockhard, Gershom's son, and Henry Disbrow a certain parcel of land bounded as followeth: To begin at Byram River at the Colony line, and so to run to Mehanas River, as the said line goes, running northerly on the Mehanas River, as the river goes, a mile into the woods, and from the colony line on Byram

¹ Huntington's "History of Stamford," p. 98.

² Huntington's "History of Stamford," p. 98.

³ Ruttenbeer, "North River Indians," p. 81.

⁴ Ruttenbeer, p. 81.

⁵ See New Castle.

River three miles northerly, as the river runs, into the woods, and from the head of said line to the head of the other line above mentioned, to have and to hold, etc."¹ This tract was called the White Fields.

On July 11, 1701, the Indian proprietors, Wapato, Araquah and Rorata, sold to "James Mott, Mr. Justice Joseph Purdy, and Henry Disbrow" a tract "bounded as followeth: Myanos River east, the colony line south, Bieram river west, Bedford north-east, another pattene north."²

Thus the same land was purchased over and over, from the same Indians and from different Indians, in the loose fashion which prevailed wherever purchases were made from the first owners of the soil. The ownership of this region is confused and uncertain for several years. Several other sales are recorded, but on the 14th of July, 1705, the Indian claims ceased by a deed to George Booth, John Bond and others, by which they sold "all the land, swamp and meadow" that they had in Westchester County.

These purchases were confirmed by the government under three patents. The West Patent, which included all of this town lying west of the Byram, and ail of New Castle, will be found fully described in the history of New Castle. The second tract, above referred to, was patented to the same ten men who held the West Patent, with the addition of Theal, Horton and Purdy, who seem to have made such progress in dealing with the Indians that they had to be taken into partnership by Heathcote and his associates. The patent was dated February 17, 1701, and became known as the Middle Patent, from its situation between the West and East Patents. This last-named tract was secured by the same company of speculators, by patent dated February 25, 1701, and was the largest of all their three patents, including, as it was worded, the major part of Poundridge and Lewisboro, and also, either by error or by design, a considerable area that belonged to Bedford. The "Middle Patent" is still the name of that part of the town.

"MIDDLE PATENT. William, the third, by the grace of God of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, etc., to all to whom these presents shall come or may concern, sendeth greeting. Whereas, our loving subjects—Colonel Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton, Joseph Purdy, Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Matthew Clarkson, Lancaster Sims, Cornelius Depeyster, Richard Slater, John Cholwell, Robert Lutting and Barne Cosens—have, by their petition, presented unto our trusty and well-beloved John Nanfan, Esq., our Lieut.-Governor and Commander-in-chief of our Province of New York and territories depending thereon in America, etc., and prayed our grant and confirmation of a certain tract of land in the county of Westchester, bounded southerly by the colony line of Connecticut, easterly by Mahanas river, northerly by Bedford line marked trees to Mehanas river again, and southerly as the said river goes against the stream to ye head of the said river, and so to the said colony line, which said tract of land on the 14th day of July last past, was by our said Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton and Joseph Purdy, etc., purchased of the native proprietors, and containing within the limits aforesaid, by estima-

tion, about 1500 acres of profitable land, besides wastes and woodlands, which reasonable request we being willing to grant. Know ye, that in our especial grace, certain knowledge and mere motion, we have given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents doe for us, our heirs and successors, give, grant, ratify and confirm, unto our said loving subjects—Colonel Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton, Joseph Purdy, Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Matthew Clarkson, Lancaster Sims, Cornelius Depeyster, Richard Slater, John Cholwell, Robert Lutting and Barne Cosens—all the afore-rected tract of land within the county of Westchester and within the limits and bounds aforesaid, together with all and singular the woods, underwoods, trees, timber, feeding, pastures, meadows, marshes, swamps, ponds, pools, waters, water courses, rivers, rivulets, runs, brooks, streams, fishing, fowling, hunting, hawking, &c., mines, minerals, &c. (silver and gold mines excepted), and all other profits, benefits, privileges, liberties, advantages, hereditaments and appurtenances whatsoever, to the aforesaid tract of land within the limits and bounds aforesaid, belonging or in any way or ways appertaining unto them, the said Colonel Caleb Heathcote, &c., their heirs and assigns, to the only proper use, benefit and behoof of him, the said Colonel Caleb Heathcote, &c., &c., their heirs and assigns forever, to be holden of us, our heirs and successors, in free and common socage as of our manor of East Greenwich, in our county of Kent within our realm of England, yealding, rendering and paying therefore yearly and every year on the feast day of the nativity of our Blessed Saviour, the annual yearly rent of one pound seven shillings and six pence current money of New York in lieu and stead of all other rents, dues, duties, services and demands whatsoever. In testimony whereof we have caused the great seal of our said Province to be hereunto affixed. Witness John Nanfan, Esq., our Lieut.-Governor and commander in-chief of our Province of New York this 17th day of February, 1701-2 and in the 14th year of our reign.

"JOHN NANFAN."

The men to whom these patents were granted had no intention of settling on these lands. They were not farmers; they were merchants, gentlemen, officials and ex-officials in the city of New York, who were in favor with the friends of the crown and adherents of the Church of England.³ They were the middlemen who stood between the aboriginal proprietors of these hunting grounds and the tillers of the soil. The leader of the yeomen was John Clapp, a sagacious and energetic man, who looked upon the claims of these speculators as being contrary to the design of the government in granting lands for the purpose of settlement.

In April, 1705, Clapp bought of the Indians a large quantity of land in the neighborhood of Rye Pond, part of which was apparently in the State of Connecticut; but part was within the tract between the Byram and the Mahanas. About this time Clapp and his associates seem to have thought they had obtained control of the whole tract in question, for they applied to Lord Cornbury for a patent, as follows:

"The humble petition of John Clapp, in behalf of himself and company, to his Excellency Edward Viscount Cornbury, Captain-General and Governor-in-chief, &c., humbly sheweth that by virtue of a Licence to him and company, granted for the purchasing of land of the native Indian proprietors in West Chester County, that they had made a purchase of a tract of land bounded as followeth: By Bieram river west; southerly by the Colony line, and running easterly till it meet with an oldere patent; northerly till it meets with the Bedford line; west till it meets with the head of Bieram river aforesaid. The said petitioners therefore most humbly pray his Excellency to grant them a warrant for Surveying the same, that they might prosecute the same for a patent.

"Endorsed; received in Council on the 14th day April, 1705, and a warrant of Survey issued accordingly."⁴

¹ County Records, Lib. C., page 96.

² County Records, Lib. G., page 108.

³ For some account of these patentees, see New Castle.

⁴ Land Papers, Albany, N. Y., vol. iv. p. 48.

Notwithstanding the warrant of survey was ordered, as appears in this indorsement, there were others who had something to say.

A few months later it appears, by the petition of George Booth, William Bond and company,—

"That they, with Mr. Clapp and others (after a hearing some time since before your Excellency in Council), are agreed to join in company in the land formerly in question between them, lying and being in the county of Westchester; that your Petitioners did intend to Petition your Lordship for a War^t to the Attorney-Gen^l to draw a Draft of Letters Patent of s^d Land for your Pet^{rs}, together wth Mr. Clapp and others, as aforesaid, but her Majties affairs in the Jerseys requiring your Lords^{ps} attendance there, and the Despatching the packets for England since your return from thence, has been the occasion of their delay. But so it is, may it please your Excellency, the s^d Mr. Clapp, together with some others, have privately obtained a War^t to the Attorney-Gen^l to draw Letters patents for the Land your Petition^{rs} were to be partners with, and has wholly left your Petitioners out, not making them acquainted therewith, and, as your Petition^{rs} are Informed, is now Ingressed by the Secretary and made ready to pass the Great Seal. Your Petition^{rs} therefore most humbly pray your Lords^{ps} and this hono^{ble} Bord to inspect the s^d Letters Patent and to cause the s^d Mr. Clapp to make proof of his Tittles, that your Petition^{rs} may no ways enjure by the said Patent, and your Petition^{rs} shall ever pray.

Signed,

"GEORGE BOOTH,
"WILLIAM BOND.

"Endorsed: read in Council 27th Dec., 1705." 1

It appears from the following petition that Clapp, Booth and Bond came to an agreement concerning this land:

"John Clapp and Company, pursuant to his Excellency's warrant of Survey, had been to considerable expence in Surveying a tract of land Lying to the Eastward of Biram river, wch said tract of Land was purchased in the year 1701 of the Native Indian Proprietors, but the same being not warranted by sufficient Lycence, the Government is now vested in and at the Disposal of the Crown. Mr. Clapp and company humbly petition that his Excellency be pleased to grant unto them the said tract of land pursuant to the Surveyor-Gen^l's Survey thereof made and returned unto the Secretary's Office, and under such moderate Quitt Rent as to his Excellency shall seem meet.

"Signed.

"GEORGE BOOTH,
"R. BROUGHTON,
"WILLIAM BOND,
"JAMES MOTT,
"RICHARD SCHOFIELD,
"JOHN CARYLL,
"AUG. GRAHAM,
"JOHN CALOHAIT,
"HENRY DISBROW,
"GEO. H. PALDWICK.

"Endorsed: read in Council on the 21st day Feb., 1705-6, and a warrant ordered to be drawn for ye Attorney-Gen^l to prepare a patent for John Clapp and company." 2

In accordance with the methods and practices of the public men of those times,³ the land-owners seem to have found it necessary to further enlarge their company before the patent could be obtained. They evidently had to agree to share their privileges with persons representing the powers that then managed the government. When the patent was granted, in the following month, the names of Ann Bridges and Roger Mompesson led those of the real owners. This lady was the wife of John Bridges, member of the Council, chief justice of the province, judge of the

Colonial Court and occupant of other offices. He is described as "the Honorable Doctor John Bridges, LL.D." Apparently he did not consider it decorous to be connected with a land grant, and for that reason was represented by his wife. Roger Mompesson was less sensitive. He was, at this very time, chief justice and member of the Governor's Council (which ratified the patents) and judge of the Court of Admiralty. The patent was granted on March 2, 1706, by Lord Cornbury, Governor of the province, to Ann Bridges, Roger Mompesson, George Booth, William Anderson, William Bond, John Person, Daniel Clark, John Clapp and Lewis Perant, and the land was described as bounded "West by Biram River, East by Mehanas River, North by the Bedford line and Cohamong Brook, and South by the Colony line," to be held in nine parts, and to be divided one-ninth part to each of the patentees, at an annual quit-rent of fifty shillings.⁴

But there was another public man who coveted an interest in this attractive property. Thomas Wenham, previously one of the associate judges of the Colonial Court, was, at this time and until his death in 1709, a member of the Governor's Council, and, at one time, a member of Assembly. The nine persons above mentioned sold Wenham one-tenth interest on the 16th of September, 1706, and two years afterward applied for a new patent. After describing the patent of March 2, 1706, and reciting the sale to Wenham, they say,—

"And whereas the said Letter Patent were under a Certain Condition or proviso, that they should Settle, clear and make Improvement on the said Lands, or some part thereof, within the Space of two years then Next following, And your Petitioners having made some Improvement on part of the Said Lands, Yet fearing some Dispute may arise hereafter, what Shall be esteemed a Settlement, & whether the Terme were fully completed within y^e time Limited to prevent charges and Expenses which your Petitioners may thereby Otherwise be subjected unto.

"Your Petitioners Humbly pray that yo^r Lordship would be pleased to grant her Majty's Letters Patent of Grant and Confirmation unto them the Said Ann Bridges, Roger Mompesson, George Booth, William Anderson, Wm. Bond, Jn^o Person, Dan^l Clark, Jn^o Clapp, Lewis Perant and Tho. Wenham and their Heirs, of the said Tract of Land & premises Under the yearly Quit-rent, 5^s each, which, in the whole, will amount to the said 50s., as formerly reserved with a further Term of two years for Clearing and making Improvement thereon.

"And yo^r Petitioners shall ever pray, &c.

"ANN BRIDGES,
"R. MOMPESON.
"GEORGE BOOTH.
"WILL. ANDERSON.
"THO. WENHAM."

"Endorsed: The petition of Ann Bridges and others; read 17th 7th and granted, patent issued.

The year thus omitted was evidently 1708, as the patent was dated a week later.

PATENT.

"Anne, by the grace of God of Great Britain, France and Ireland, Queen, Defender of the Faith, &c. To all to whom this shall come, Sendeth greeting. Whereas, by our letters patent, bearing date the 2d day of March, 1705, in the fourth year of our reign, we have given, granted, ratified and confirmed unto our loving subjects, Ann Bridges, Roger

¹ Land Papers, Albany, N. Y., vol. iv. p. 65.

² Land Papers, Albany, N. Y.

³ See New Castle, History of West Patent.

⁴ Book of Patents, Albany, vol. vii., p. 288.

Mompesson, George Booth, William Anderson, Wm. Bond, John Person, Daniel Clark, John Clapp, Lewis Perant, all that certain tract or parcel of land in the county of Westchester, beginning at a certain small brook called Cohamng Brook, where the said brook empties its self into Mehanas River, and runs thence up the said river Mehanas southerly to the head thereof, to a beech tree standing by a small spring, and marked with letters T. M., and thence south to the colony line of Connecticut, which runs in the rear of the town of Greenwich and Housenack, and so by the said line as it runs westerly to Byram River; thence by the river (including the said river) to the head thereof, to two certain white ash trees, standing on the north end of a certain bog-meadow, marked with three letters, D. G., P. C., T. C.; and thence easterly in a direct line to the head of Cohamng Brook, as it runs to the place where it begun, bounded west by Byram River, east by Mehanas River, north by Bedford line and Cohamng Brook, and south by Colony line, together with all the woods, underwoods, &c.; and whereas said Anne Bridges, Roger Mompesson, George Booth, &c., by their indenture of lease and release bearing date the 18th and 19th days of September, in the fifth year of our reign, and for considerations therein mentioned, did grant and convey unto Thomas Wenham, Esq., and to his heirs and assigns, one-tenth part of the said premises; and whereas the said Anne Bridges, Roger Mompesson, George Booth, William Anderson, William Bond, John Person, Daniel Clark, John Clapp, Lewis Perant and Thomas Wenham have since, by their petition presented to our right trusty and well-beloved cousin, Edward Viscount Cornbury, captain-general and governor-in-chief in and over our province of New York and territories thereon depending in America, and vice-admiral of the same, &c., in Council, there in setting forth that having made some improvements on the said lands, and fearing some disputes may arise hereafter, what shall be esteemed a settlement, &c., the which petition wee being minded to grant *know yee* . . . that for divers considerations us thereunto moving of our special grace, &c., wee have given, granted, released, ratified and confirmed, and in and by this present, for our selves, our heirs and successors, to give, grant, release, ratify and confirm unto the said Anne Bridges, Roger Mompesson, &c., within the bounds and limits above in our said recited letters patent, &c., &c., in ten equal part to be divided, &c., to be holden of us, our heirs and successors, &c., in free and common socage, as of our manor of East Greenwich, in our county of Kent, within our realm of England, yielding, releasing and paying therefor yearly and every year hereforward, and unto our heirs, at our custom-house at New York, to our collector or receiver-general then for the time being, at or upon the feast day of the Nativity of Saint John the Baptist, the yearly rent or sum of £2 10s., current money of the province of New York, &c., this 25th day of September, in the seventh year of our reign a. d. 1708.¹

“EDWARD CORNBURY.”

This grant ended the contests which had been in progress for seven years, first with the Indians and afterward with the government, to obtain possession of the tract lying between the Mahanas and the Byram. How it happened does not appear, but Colonel Heathcote, who had been the controlling spirit in the purchases to the east and west, and who also began the negotiations with the Indians for this property in 1701, was entirely left out. Possibly his colleagues in the Council thought he ought to be satisfied with his other and larger possessions.

THE SETTLERS AND THE SETTLEMENT.—It is probable that the southern portions of the town were at quite an early date occupied by enterprising men, who deemed it safe to abandon the villages along the Sound and establish friendly relations with the Indians, and that in this way there was a sprinkling of English settlers already on the ground before the dates of any of the Indian deeds which have been referred to. As early as Governor Fletcher's time (1692-98) the records have the following:²

¹ Book Patents, Albany.

² Land Papers, Albany.

“The humble Peticon of John Brundage sheweth, that whereas your excellen^{ty} petitioner being informed of A Certain Parcell of vacante [. . .], purchased Land about the quantity of four hundred [acres] lying on Biram River in the County of Westchester, near fourteen miles from the Sound, which land your Excellen^{ty} Petitioner and his Brothers-in-law, desirous to settle and improve, humbly prays Your Excellen^{ty} would graciously be pleased to grant unto Your Excellen^{ty} Peticon^{er} Your Excellen^{ty} want^{er} to purchase the same. And your Excellen^{ty} Peticon^{er}, as in Duty Bound, will ever pray.

“The X mark of
JOHN BRUNDAGE.”³

This land, no doubt, lay east of Byram River and near the colony line, and it seems probable that Brundage settled upon it. John Clapp also is supposed to have lived in the neighborhood of Rye Pond at an early date.

The oldest settlements in the town were doubtless made in the part covered by the Ann Bridges patent. That tract was chiefly in the hands of men who had local interests and sympathies, and were of the manner of life of the settlers nearer the Sound, while the east and west ends of the town were in the possession of Walters, Heathcote and their associates, who were regarded as speculators and as enemies to the growth and prosperity of the colony. The advancement of this part of the county was much retarded also by the lack of the privileges of local government. The condition of affairs will be well understood from the petition which Walters and his associates addressed to Governor Burnett in 1721, praying that their possessions might be erected into a town,—

“To his Excellency William Burnett, Esq., Captain General and Governor in chief, &c., &c.

“The humble Petition of Robert Walters, Cornelius Depeyster, Lancaster Symes and Peter Fauconner, in behalf of themselves and others: That whereas” . . . (The petition begins by reciting at full length the descriptions and dates of the West, Middle and East Patents, and then proceeds,—)

“And whereas many of the said Patentees are, since the granting of the same three letters Patents, dead, some have left this Province and others of Them have wholly alienated and conveyed to Persons partly unknown to the rest their right and title to the same Lands, and among them the above named Barne Cosens, his whole right, title and interest therein hath been for valuable considerations conveyed, made over and transferred unto the above-named petitioner, Peter Fauconner, his heirs and assigns for ever, whereby he is lawfully become as one of the Patentees of the said three Tracts of land which lay situate contiguous to one another, upon the back of the Township of Rye in Westchester County, in the Province of New York, and of several other Townships in the colony of Connecticut, bordering upon the North and West limits thereof, and that notwithstanding the many obstacles and discouragements which for above 16 whole years did hinder the Petitioners from settling of the said lands, occasioned by the insults of the most part of the inhabitants of the said Townships, who, tho' the Division lines were in the year 1684 fixt and agreed upon between this Province and Colony of Connecticut by Commissioners sufficiently authorized thereunto from both Governments, and confirmed by King William, of ever blessed memory, in March, 1700, by reason that in such length of time all the trees then marked for concluding the said limits have been cut, blown or burnt down, not contented with enjoying quietly all the lands within their own, out of their insatiableness would not be determined by any bounds, but continue to use for ranging all your Petitioners and others owners Lands adjoining to the said lines for one hundred miles long and several miles broad, tho' belonging to this Province; have and do still threaten to burn the houses and Burns and to reap, carry away or destroy the wheat and other grains that any settler should pretend to build, sow

³ Land Papers, Albany.

or plant on the said lands; The Petitioners yet at their great charge and industry have within this 3 years prevailed to get out of Long Island, where, because of their increase, the inhabitants do want lands, so many industrious, good farmers to settle and improve upon their said lands in Westchester county, under the obedience of the Government of this Province, that they are already capable of mustering upwards of Thirty men able to bare arms, who are yet nevertheless much disturbed and molested for the reasons above mentioned in their peaceable and quiet enjoyment of their improvements by the Inhabitants of the said several Townships within this and the other neighboring Government, who, besides the threats aforementioned to force to desert, do molest the said new settlers by calling from a vast distance often to attend before the Justices of their courts; by forcing them to train under the officers of their Militia; by else imposing considerable fines on them; by laying excessive part of their county Taxes on them, as if they did belong to and were within the limits of their pretended jurisdiction; by distraining for Towns rates and petty charges, and for not appearing in arms and other Town pretended duties, which said several hardships do not only greatly and absolutely obstruct the further settling of the said Lands, but so much discourage those already made thereon that it might in earnest force the settlers away from their new settlements and entirely waste and depopulate those confines of this Province, to the great prejudice thereof, if not speedily remedied, which, as your Pet^{rs} humbly conceive being easy to be done, They most humbly pray—may it please your Excellency—That your Excellency be therefore graciously pleased to grant to your Petitioners, or such number of them as to your Excellency that seem meet, a charter of incorporation into a Township or Borough to and for the use of the patentees aforesaid, their heirs and assigns and of the Inhabitants of the said 3 several tracts of land, confirming the same according to the bounds and limits thereof to them, the said owners and their successors for ever in such manner and way as by Council learned in the law may be drawn up and provided agreeable to an instruction from your Excellency to that purpose, as some other Townships within this province have at several times obtained and do actually enjoy; That they be made one company of Militia by themselves, yet belonging to the Regiment of Westchester Co., commanded by Officers from among themselves, or others, not of the Neighborhood of any of the adjacent Towns; that the said Trustees be appointed Justices of the peace in the said district and have amongst themselves and the Inhabitants of the said lands appointed in the commission of the peace, besides the said Trustees at least one Justice, two Constables, one Collector, one Assessor, one Surveyer of the Highways and such other Town officers as that be thought needful and proper for their quiet and good Government, the better to enable them to maintain the peace and the rights of this Province, adjoining to the division lines: and that your Excellency be pleased to give a name to the township or Borough into which the said lands shall be incorporated.

"And as in duty bound the Petitioners that ever pray &c.,¹

"LANCASTER SYMES,
"P. FAUCONNIER,
"R. WALLER,
"C. DEPEYSTER."

This petition was considered by Governor Burnett and Council on the 24th of August, 1721, and they "were of the opinion that letters patent of incorporation be granted pursuant to the prayer thereof." The attorney-general, James Alexander, Esq., was thereupon duly directed "to prepare draft of letters patent of incorporation."

No copy or record of the patent so issued can be found in the Land Papers at Albany, and the reasons that led to the choice of the name of North Castle, which the petitioners left to the Governor, are unknown. The name first appears in the minutes of the court at Westchester on October 3, 1721. This court was then invested with certain powers now in the Board of Supervisors, such as levying taxes, etc., and it held sessions several times each year, at which each town was represented by the constable and

usually by the assessors. After the above date this town was regularly represented. It is a matter greatly regretted by all who are interested in the early history of the town that no record of town-meetings can be found until 1736, and that no record of deeds in the town can be found at all. These records of lands in other towns form a most useful source of information, and it is plain, from the minutes of the town-meetings, that such records were kept in North Castle, but they have disappeared.

The petition of Walters and his associates for incorporation as a town contemplated that their three tracts should be embraced in such a town, and described these tracts as "contiguous." This was an error, or else it was an effort to mislead the Governor, for while the East and Middle Patents were contiguous, the Middle and West Patents were separated by the Ann Bridges patent, in which Walters and the others had no interest, as has been shown. Nevertheless, the town of North Castle, as at first incorporated, appears to have included that, as well as the three patents of Walters and his partners, extending over the whole of the present town of New Castle and a large part of Poundridge. The annual town meetings up to 1744 appointed "sensors" and highway masters for the East Patent, sometimes describing it as "old Pound Ridge." In 1745 that practice ceased, and it was apparently at that time that Poundridge ceased to be a part of North Castle. It is likely that the inhabitants of the Ann Bridges patent acquiesced in the movement to incorporate, as there was every reason why it would be advantageous for them to do so.

From this time the settlement of the town seems to have steadily advanced. There was a strong Quaker element which came from the older settlements on Long Island, up through Harrison's Purchase, and gave character to the early population, which, in a great degree, still remains. Availing themselves of the civil privileges which the formation of the town secured to them, the inhabitants began to apply themselves to permanent improvements. Mills were established, and roads to give them access to the neighboring towns were carefully laid out. At first it appears that roads were laid out by county commissioners, and later, in case they were in more than one town, by commissioners from such towns acting together. The following original survey of the road from Bedford village through North Castle will be of interest:

"A publick Road Surveyed and laid out march 9, 1722, by Joseph Drake, John Stephenson & Lewis Morris, Jr., three of ye Com^{rs}. Beginning at ye house of Zachariah Mills, and so long ye south side of Bates's hill, Keeping four rods wide along ye south side of ye said Ridge of hills till you come to Theate's meadow, and so along ye north side of ye s^d meadow till ye cross both ye brooks ye empty by themselves in ye s^d meadow, and from thence thro' Comonk Valley and over Comonk brook till you come unto Comonk Ridge, so over ye s^d Ridge and thro' Comonk broken land till you come to Comonk pond, and so along Comonk pond, up another ridge till you come to Cleke's brook, so over Clerk's Ridge, across ye northeast end of Nicholl's field and over Red brook; so along

¹ Petition from vol. vii. p. 61, Land Papers.

ye Rear of ye sd Lotts upon ye great Ridge till it comes to Samuel Cole's Land, and so between Samuel Cole's and Will Fowler's till you come to Samuel Cole's Barn, running along his lot, by a range of marked trees, till it meet with Pellham's land, so along his Lott till it meets with ye road laid out by Connecticut, so along ye said road till it comes to Ogdens's Mills,¹ at Byram, so over Byram, and along ye north end of Augustain Graham's Lott, and across Graham's brook till it meet with ye other road formerly laid out by the commissioners, to ye northward of Samuel Blackman's house, still keeping four rods wide.

"Surveyed and laid out by us,

"JOSEPH DRAKE.

"LEWIS MORRIS, JR.

"JNO. STEVENSON.

"Entered by W. Foster, Clerk."²

Among the first who came were Nathan Carpenter, Samuel Coles, William Fowler, Francis Pelham,³ Jonathan Ogdens, Thomas Golding, Joseph Dickerson, Cenaman Merritt, Joseph Sherod [Sherwood?], Thomas Green, Silas Carpenter, Timothy Carpenter, Job Wright, Robert Carpenter, Josiah Quimby, David Brundage, James Wood, Isaac Finch, Samuel Quimby, Benoni Platt, Jacob Van Pelt, Moses Quimby, John Brush, Thomas Hutchings, John Washburn, Nathaniel Brundage, Solomon Wood, Benjamin Brush, Stephen Brush and Samuel Dean.

At the town-meeting on April 5, 1737, a vote was taken to allow John Hallock to build a mill on Wampus Brook, near Abel Weeks'. The mill on the Byram was evidently earlier. The one at Kensico is also of early origin.

Those who are curious about such matters may be able to trace the early growth and prosperity of North Castle to the following rigid enactment of a protective tariff for the town, in respect to domestic animals. On April 5, 1743, an act was passed "that any person that keeps any cattle that is bought out of any other town shall pay ten shillings for the good of the town."

The minutes of town-meetings for several years after 1740 are full of resolutions and appointments of committees relative to collecting the quit-rent. It had been allowed to fall into arrears, until the receiver-general had taken measures to collect it, when the people found themselves obliged to make energetic efforts to relieve themselves of the burden. The following will show the condition of the affair in 1747:

"March ye 9th, 1747.—Then settled with Moses Quimby in behalf of the town about the Quit-Rent, that the said Moses Quimby and twelve other men was chosen to settle at a town meeting on ye 18th day of September, 1747; and some of the Persons or Possessors of the town being faulty in not paying the said Quit-Rent, was obliged to hire twenty-five pounds to make up the money the town was sued for.

"Settled by

"BENJAMIN SMITH."

¹Ogdens's Mills, known afterward as Nash's Mills, were located on Byram River, and on the road leading from Smith's Tavern, across the corner of Connecticut, to the head of King Street, which street it intersects a little south of the Smith homestead. It was this mill that the first settlers of North Castle patronized. It was burned during the Revolutionary War.

²Entries of highways, County Records, vol. i, p. 2.

³Francis Pelham was a justice of the peace and a commissioner to lay out highways. He became very obnoxious on account of his arbitrary ways and intemperate habits, and, in consequence of a petition of the people, he was removed from his office of justice by Rip Van Dam, the acting Governor, about 1731.

Entries like these in the town records were not infrequent: "Caleb Fowler has undertook to gather the quit-rent money for the right of Robert Walters, from the year Forty-one to the year Forty-three: "Joseph Fowler has undertook to gather the quit-rent money for the right of John Cholwell." "February ye 25, 1744, Then met at a lawful town-meeting to consider about the quit-rent money that is behind; then chose William Dusenberry to act and serve upon the right of Robert Walter," etc.

The patentees, as it has been said, did not live in the town, and as time elapsed, their representatives became scattered and difficult to find. It will be perceived that this state of affairs made it almost impossible to obtain a clear title to land, and it was without doubt an obstacle to the growth and advancement of the town. In many cases farmers appear to have taken titles from such of the patentees as they could easily reach. About 1760 the rights of the patentees of the West Patent were purchased, and releases were obtained from all their heirs, by a committee consisting of Benjamin Smith, Joseph Sutton and Caleb Fowler. This work, which was performed with the greatest care and thoroughness, is described at length in the history of New Castle. It is probable that similar measures were taken to clear the titles in the Middle Patent, but there is no record of it, so far as the writer is aware.

In the latter part of the last century the population rapidly increased, and in 1790 it was the most populous town in the county except, possibly, Bedford. In the following year New Castle was taken from it, and since that time its boundaries have remained unchanged. The following documents, taken from the Documentary History of New York, show the slave population of the town in 1755:

"NORTH CASTLE, May 4, 1755.

"This comes to let you know that Aron Forman had one Negro man Named frances, and George Kniffin has two Negro men, one named pomp and the other Cuffe, and Thomas Golding has one wench named Elizabeth, and Antoni Trip has one Negro fellow Named Ned, and a wench Named francis, and Roger Lyon has one wench Named Mereum, and Samuel Banks has one wench Named Marget, and Timothy Carpenter has one wench Named Susanah. This from your friend to serve.

"AARON FORMAN, Capt." ⁴

"A list of ye Negroes in Captine Dusenbury's Company, for year 1755,—

Robert Dickenson, 1 man, Dick.
Nathaniel Carpenter, 1 wench, Dinah.
Abel Weeks, 1 man, Lewis
Joseph Sutton, 2, a man and woman, Roger and Dorothy.
Peter Toten, 1 man, Prius.
Elias Clap, 1 man, Narow (Nero).
Caleb Fowler, 1 wench, Peg
Elizabeth Fowler, 1 wench, Teen."⁵

The following table shows the population of the town by the several census returns from 1790 to this time:

⁴Doc. Hist. of N. Y., vol. iii, p. 855.

⁵Doc. Hist. N. Y., vol. iii., p. 856.

1790	2478	1845	2010
1800	1168	1850	2189
1810	1366	1855	2415
1814	1220	1860	2487
1820	1480	1865	2198
1825	1543	1870	1906
1830	1653	1875	1961
1835	1789	1880	1818
1840	2058		

MILITARY HISTORY AND INCIDENTS.—The town of North Castle was an important part of the county during the Revolutionary War. Its geographical position was such that the American troops could be safely held there, within easy reach for operations against the enemy about New York, or for the defense of the lower towns; and at the same time, the Highlands of the Hudson were accessible by a direct road. The whole French army seems to have been encamped here for a time, probably on the ridge north of Rye Lake, where the remains of an extensive earthwork are still to be seen. The old house at Sands' Mills which was Jamison's headquarters in September, 1780, when Andre was brought there by his captors, still exists as a barn. For a century it has been despoiled by relic-hunters. In the immediate vicinity, grew until a few years ago a black walnut tree, to which, the local tradition says, Andre was bound while he and his captors had dinner, and out of which a neighboring citizen has made an article of furniture, which is shown to visitors. It is to be hoped the tradition is a mistake, as it does not seem probable that Paulding, Williams and Van Wart considered such an indignity to be necessary. It would not be difficult to occupy more of space than the limits of this sketch will permit, with this and kindred subjects, but as the history of the county during the Revolutionary period forms a separate part of this work, it need not be further treated here. The population of the town during that time was, like the people of other towns, divided in political sentiment. Along the Connecticut border and in the northeastern part there was the strongest sympathy for the American cause. The town suffered severely,¹

¹ The writer has been permitted to present the following sketch of the capture of Mr. Jonathan Banks, of Banksville, written by his son, many years ago. It shows what life in the Neutral Ground was like during the Revolution.

"My father and mother were sleeping, when, at the break of day, the rushing tramp of British horsemen awoke them. Said father, 'Anna, the Hessians are upon us!' Mother sprang out of bed, and raising the window-curtain, saw the troop passing the house, remarking at the same time, 'No, Jonathan, I believe they are our own Colonel Sheldon's army.' In another moment, however, the presence of an enemy was verified by the dashing in of the front window, which was followed by a scene the description of which, as given by mother, I have often listened to with breathless interest.

"At the time of the capture of my father he had been married just six months. Father was taken to New York and confined in the old Sugar House, which was the most popular receptacle for Whig prisoners. . . . The party of cavalry who made a prisoner of my father also compelled my grandfather, who was an aged and infirm gentleman, to give up his money. They also drove away his cattle and literally pillaged his dwelling of every portable article of any value. My father's and mother's wardrobe, containing not only the marriage suits of each,

many houses being burned by Tarleton on his way down from Bedford in July, 1779, by the White Plains road, and the whole region being greatly harassed by the raids of the British regulars and Tory sympathizers, except when protection was afforded by the presence of the American army.

It is stated that the town was well represented in the armies and camps of the government during the War of 1812. The writer, however, has not been able to obtain particulars, or even the names of soldiers who thus served.

But in the War of the Rebellion, North Castle made a record of which she is justly proud. Early in the war enlistments began, and the various methods for rendering assistance to the brothers and sons in camp, field and hospital, which were practised all over the North, were adopted here. As the war lengthened, the town voted liberal measures of aid to the national arms, creating for that purpose a debt of some fifty thousand dollars. The last of this war debt was paid off several years ago.

The following is believed to be a correct list of the soldiers (officers and privates) who enlisted from this town during the war:

Edgar Ferris.	Othniel Merritt.
Charles Ferris.	William B. Williams.
John Ferris.	John Kinsley.
Felix Ackerley.	William Glenning.
William Tuttle.	William Angevine.
George W. Knapp.	John Terrell.
George W. Gale.	Charles Vredenburgh.
Thomas J. Ackerman.	James Brundage.
Daniel Fleming.	Henry C. Vredenburgh.
Richard Boyce.	James N. Angevine.
Jeremiah Mathias.	George W. Zarr.
Edward Tucker.	Alonzo E. Carpenter.
William H. Farrington.	Jotham Carpenter.
John Robbins.	Henry R. Finch.
Samuel T. Tucker.	John Nugent.
Charles P. Tucker.	James Sheridan.
John Tucker.	Cass A. Dan.
Charles Raymond.	Augustus Wood.
Edward Riley.	John Woolsey.
Sylvester Ackerman.	Charles Palmer.
Lawrence Green.	William French.
Albert H. Ransom.	Edward T. Palmer.
Frederick Kratz.	Hudson Reynolds.
Henry J. Williams.	Leander Reynolds.
John W. Sniffen.	George Reynolds.
Joseph L. Brundage.	Mathias G. Hobby.
George W. Brundage.	John W. Lockwood.
William H. Dayton.	George G. Lockwood.
George H. Brundage.	William O. Scribner.
Caleb Valentine.	Abraham Phillips.
Joseph Cunningham.	George W. Hall.
Samuel Cunningham.	George Tallman.
Samuel W. Palmer.	Banks Lounsberry.

but all of the linen and woolen cloth, spun and woven by my mother, shared the same fate. I have heard my father tell of his putting on his beaver hat, as he was leaving his young wife, and that an officer took it off his head and gave him one in return that he took from the head of his colored servant. . . . They took father a mile below his house, where they stopped for breakfast. Then they stripped him of his clothing and scourged him with whips of raw hide, on his naked flesh, till his sufferings had become so intense that his tormentors thought death would ensue. He survived the outrage, but he carried with him to the grave the scars of the British scourge and the British sword."

Stephen Thorn.
John McCarthy.
Harmon Demarest.
Charles R. Demarest.
David D. Brundage.
John Kane.
James B. Stillson.
Elisha Ferris.
Jacob Adams.
Joseph A. Lashanbart.
William Mathews.
John Shookemey.
Edward Reynolds.
Harry Behmer.
Mortimer G. Cox.
George Higgins.
Jackson Lewis.
Caleb Adams.
George Lewis.
Benjamin D. Searles.
Daniel M. Searles.
Hiram Slagle.
George W. Ackerley.
George Lovelett.
Henry H. Lovelett.
William Strang.
John Land.
James H. Tompkins.
William B. Adams.
Jacob C. Lewis.
John W. Davis.
Henry Davis.
George Lewis.
John Freeland.
William L. Freeland.
James Smitten.
John E. Stillson.
William Metclements.
Hiram G. Ferris.
William Pearsall.
Harry Ferris.
Edward Jordan.

John Rich.
Andrew J. Tallman.
John B. Lockwood.
John A. Keeler.
William H. Feeks.
Wright Feeks.
James Groves.
Aaron Poillon.
Edgar Ferris (2d).
William L. Ferris.
George Wood.
George H. King.
Harry King.
David King.
Ira B. King.
Robert Farrington.
Samuel Farrington.
William Valentine.
Solomon Gilchrist.
William H. Purdy.
Edwin Ames.
Henry C. Weeks.
Charles E. Farrington.
Henry E. Higgins.
Robert E. Higgins.
Rufus Reynolds.
George W. Starey.
Joseph Corris.
Stephen Sellick.
William H. Reynolds.
Carlton Reynolds.
Lewis Clark.
George W. Reynolds.
James Davis.
Noble Robinson.
Charles W. Hoyt.
William Morrison.
Franklin Johnson.
Aaron J. Mosher.
John Sherwood.
Aaron Sherwood.
Henry Corris.

NAMES OF COLORED SOLDIERS.

William H. Seymore.
Morgan Stephens.
Elisha Barker.
John W. Seymore.
Daniel Odell.
James A. Williams.

Allen Banks.
George W. Johnson.
Alfred Seymore.
James S. Seymore.
Thomas Butler.

THE TOWN AT PRESENT. The present town of North Castle is essentially a rural town, having no railroad running through it, except where the New York and Harlem touches it at the southwest corner. There is no incorporated village, and indeed no village of considerable size. It is long, narrow, and irregular in shape, as naturally resulted from its formation after other towns about it were taken up and patented, and from the fact of its lying on both sides of the angle in the Connecticut State line. From its northeastern to its southwestern limit it measures over twenty miles, while its breadth is nowhere more than seven, and averages much less. Its surface is greatly varied. Throughout the northeastern part the formation is that so common in this part of New York and Connecticut, composed of rocky hills and ridges, among which are small fertile valleys, with frequent springs and streams. Most of the Middle Patent, which lies between the two valleys of the Mianus River, is of this character. In this part of the

town are found precipitous cliffs and ledges. One of them, of considerable local celebrity, near the residence of the late Samuel Brown, is fifty-two feet in height, and its overhanging wall projects sufficiently to give protection from the falling rain. The tradition is that it was valued by the Indians as a permanent place of shelter. It is called the Rock House. This district extends across the "West Turn of Mianus River," as the early settlers were accustomed to say, toward Byram Pond, and this tract is called the Coman Hills, from the Indian name Cohamong, which designated that locality. South of this, along the road from Bedford to White Plains, is a high ridge of excellent farming land, sloping east and west to the valleys of the Mianus and the Byram, and extending southerly into Connecticut, and thence across its jutting angle to the "Heights of North Castle," on the north of Rye Pond. Along this road are some of the oldest farmsteads of the town. On the west side of the Byram, and with its main branch, the Wampus, flowing through it, lies the broad and fertile valley, called from the earliest times, Mile-square. North and west from here, towards the New Castle line and the Bronx, the land is varied in character. Toward the south end of the town are the rocky ridges, which Washington was glad to place between him and the enemy after the battle of White Plains.

The soil is chiefly a clay loam, but little of a sandy or gravelly character being found in the town. The Rocky hillsides, with their pure springs, afford the best of pasturage, and support many small dairy farms, while in sections which are more easily cultivated farming takes a somewhat different character. On account of their remoteness from railroad stations, comparatively few of the farmers have engaged in the milk business, for many years the favorite industry of Westchester farmers, but have devoted their lands more to general products, for which they find markets in Portchester and other villages along the sound.

North Castle is exceedingly well watered. On the Bedford border lies Byram Pond, a beautiful lake a mile in length, with a precipitous wooded hill on the west, and on the east the sloping fields of the adjacent farms. Out of it flows the Byram River, the eastern boundary of the old West Patent. Crossing the town, it enters Connecticut, and for the last few miles of its progress towards the sound, becomes the boundary between the two states. Nestled among the Cohamong Hills, a mile east of Byram Pond, lies the little Cohamong Pond, whose waters find their way northward, by Cohamong Brook, through Bedford to the Mianus River. On the New Castle boundary is Wampus Pond, named after the Indian Sachem whose wigwam stood a little to the northward. Out of it tumbles Wampus Brook, on which, in 1737, John Hallock obtained the town's consent to build his mill. It flows into the Byram. The Mianus, rising in Con-

necticut, flows northward through the town, bends around into Bedford, and in its southern course forms the eastern boundary of the town, separating it from Pound Ridge. It receives, in both its valleys, various tributaries. The Bronx forms the western boundary from New Castle to White Plains. Its principal branch is formed by the confluence of the outlet of Rye Lake with the Bear Gutter Brook. Within a few years past the Bronx has been dammed near Kensico, to afford an additional water supply for New York City. The lake or reservoir thus formed lies in this town and Mount Pleasant. It is some two miles in length, and with the picturesque country about its shores, forms a delightful feature of this region.

The villages and hamlets of the town are Armonk, Kensico, Banksville and North Castle.

Armonk, the Indian name of the Byram Lake and river, was, in 1851, conferred on the village and post-office of Mile Square, by which name it had been known for a longer time than the memory of man can determine.

The tradition is that some one purchased, or acquired for some service a right to select within the bounds of the West Patent, a square mile of land wherever he might choose.¹ The writer cannot but commend the judgment of this ancient but perhaps mythical prospector, for nowhere in the west patent is there a square block of six hundred and forty acres, that will surpass in fertility and beauty the lovely valley of Armonk. The original settlement seems to have been a mile further up the Wampus Brook, where Hallock's mill was, and where the Quakers held their meetings as early as 1742. Later, the mill went to the Sands family, and the hamlet is still known as Sands' Mills. Within a stone's throw of the mill is the building, now a barn, which served the purpose of a headquarters for Colonel Jamison, when Major Andre was taken there on the day of his capture in September 1780. Among those largely engaged in agriculture in this locality, is Samuel Orlando Townsend. Mr. Townsend is descended from one of the

¹ In March 1734 an agreement was made between James Delancy, Esq., Peter Fauconnier, Cornelius Depeyster, David Clarkson and John Symes, of the one part and Josiah Quimby, of the other part, in which Quimby, who had become the owner of one-twentieth part of the West Patent, (that is one half of Cholwell's share) undertook to defend certain actions of ejectment brought by William Anderson and others, against certain persons for lands claimed and held by virtue of the aforesaid patent, and in particular, to produce "evidence of the place called *Bedford three miles square*, and sundry other places necessary to be proved." For lack of this evidence two suits had already been lost. In consideration of this undertaking on the part of Quimby, the others agree "that he shall lay his right to six hundred acres of land within the aforesaid patent, upon any lands within the same at his election, which have already been taken up by consent or order of said Josiah Quimby, between the west and middle branch of Byram River and are now in the possession of sundry persons claiming under him, and shall have liberty to take up, appropriate and hold the same to himself, his heirs and assigns forever." They further promise to "use reasonable methods to bring the rest of the proprietors into the same agreement." (*County Record, Liber. G p. 308*). No record of the result of the suits can be found, but as the quantity of land specified lacks but forty acres of a square mile, and as the location between the Byram and the Wampus Rivers is correct, it appears to the writer that this document fully establishes the origin of the name of Mile Square, especially as Quimby was right and ought to have succeeded in the suits.

oldest families in the county, and his farm is one of the best in the town.

The earliest trace of the Townsends runs back to about 1100, when a gentleman named Ludovicus De Haville came from Normandy and married the only child of a gentleman living near Raynham, in the county of Norfolk, England, and settling upon his wife's paternal acres, adopted the family name of Townsend. These lands descended not only entire, but largely augmented, to their descendants for eight hundred years. In 1483 the head of the house was made a baron by King Richard III., on Bosworth field. In later years one of the family, Richard Townsend, was a colonel under Oliver Cromwell, and for his gallant services in Ireland received a large estate in the county of Cork, which is still held by his descendants. The principal seat is Castle Townsend, on a promontory projecting into the Irish Sea. About 1630 three brothers—John Henry, and Richard Townsend—came from Norfolkshire, England, and settled at Oyster Bay, Long Island. Here they lived and died, and their graves may be seen on the estate of Chancellor McCoon. The brothers belonged to the Society of Friends, and on the farm is still pointed out the rock from which George Fox "held forth" to large assemblages of people.

John, the eldest brother, married Elizabeth Montgomery, a daughter of one of the colonial Governors, but on becoming a Quaker he abandoned the practice of law, which was his profession.

Richard Townsend, the youngest brother, died in October, 1687, and Israel Townsend, who was one of his descendants, removed from Oyster Bay to North Castle, Westchester County, in the spring of 1776. He was born September 25, 1742, and married Phebe Weeks, who was born October 11, 1752. Their children were,—

1. Walter, born April 19, 1772; married Jemima White and had three children,—Juliana, wife of Smith Baker; Thirza, wife of Abijah Sands; and Euphrosyne, wife of John C. F. Merritt.
2. Susanna, born August 11, 1775; married Samuel Y. Sands.
3. Josiah, born March 12, 1778. Lost at sea in 1810.
4. Samuel, born August 11, 1778; married Rebecca Purdy and had three children,—Caroline, wife of John O. Barnham; Isaiah; and Maria T., wife of Charles Webb.
5. Jacob, born February 18, 1784; married Susanna Lounsbury and had one child, Louisa S. Mrs. Townsend died in 1812 and he married Jane Berrian in 1816. She died, and he next married Mary Woodworth, in 1822. His son, Rev. Israel Leander Townsend, lives in Washington, D. C.
6. Dorinda, born June 13, 1786; married Samuel T. Wright.
7. John, born January 5, 1789; married Eliza P. Horton and had children,—Leander W.; Dorinda E., wife of Stephen Hyatt; Melissa A., wife of Reuben W. Howes; Caroline E., wife of Thomas Wilson; John, who married Elizabeth Adams; and Josephine V., who died young.
8. Israel, born April 9, 1791; married Phebe, daughter of Joseph Sands, and had children,—Elizabeth S., born September 12, 1816, who married Andrew J. Kinch, January 6, 1840; Job Leonidas, born June 16, 1819, and married Sarah Ely, September 15, 1852; Samuel Orlando, born September 13, 1821, and married Elizabeth K. Hunt, January 5, 1849; Israel Jerome, born April 25, 1825, and married Mary L. Emmons, August 19, 1853.
9. Phebe, born September 26, 1793; married Isaac Baker.
10. Job, born May 17, 1796; died young.

Israel Townsend, the father of this family, died in 1832, at the age of ninety. His son Israel died in 1855, at the age of sixty-four.

Samuel Orlando Townsend, third child of Israel Townsend the 2d, is a well-known and prominent citizen of Armonk, in the town of North Castle. Extensively engaged in agriculture, his farm of more than two hundred acres is one of the finest in that section of the county. His father, Israel Townsend, was widely known for his intelligence and ability, and was a highly respected citizen. Samuel O. married (as stated above) Elizabeth K., daughter of Eden Hunt, January 5, 1849. Their children are Caroline L., wife of Reese Carpenter, of Brooklyn; Edith, wife of Rev. Henry N. Wayne, of Staten Island; and Samuel E., who resides with his father in North Castle.

The children of Andrew J. Kinch and his wife, Elizabeth Townsend, are, 1st, Leonidas T., born March 28, 1841, who married Eleanor H. Steele, of Bordentown, N. J., December 31, 1863. He was accidentally shot April 15, 1867, and died on the following day. 2d, Israel H., born May 30, 1845, and married Cornelia H. Van Kirk, December 7, 1864.

The children of Job Leonidas Townsend and Sarah Ely are Frank L., who married Catharine Miller, of White Plains, and Phebe G. The family reside in Brooklyn.

The children of Rev. Israel Jerome Townsend and Mary L. Emmons are Hubert I., who married Helen Tochee, of Aberdeen, Scotland, and Mary E. Mr. Townsend is a clergyman of the Episcopal Church and resides at Fairmount, Martin County, Minn.

John Townsend, son of Israel (1st), was State Senator. His son John resides at Riverdale, in this county.

Sands Family.—Caleb Sands was the father of five sons,—Joseph, Samuel, Thomas, Othniel and other children. Joseph, who was born November 26, 1760, and died February 12, 1831, married Elizabeth Thorn, born September 29, 1770, and died April, 1855. Their children were Phebe (who married Israel Townsend, 2d), Esther, Thorn and Joseph.

For many years the manufacture of shoes has been an important industry in North Castle. "Shoe bosses" have had their shops and stores in different parts of the town, the workmen, formerly more than now, taking to their homes, such work as could be

there performed. In 1851 Armonk was a flourishing centre of this business. Shops increased in their facilities, plots of land were sold, and many houses of modest but comfortable character were built. These circumstances drew the centre of population away from the old site, or perhaps, more correctly, increased it in the new situation. The shoe-manufacturing business is still of considerable importance, the principal manufacturers being A. M. McDonald, and Acker Brothers.

An interesting association of this village which is worth preserving, is that of the "Old Log Cabin," which stood where the Methodist Church is now. It was built for the use of the Whig party, for holding political meetings during the Harrison campaign of

1840. North Castle was a strong Whig centre. The older politicians of the county well remember an enthusiastic mass-meeting which was held there during that summer. The building remained and was used during the Clay campaign of 1844, being employed in the meantime for conventions and for meetings of a local nature. The congregation of St. Stephen's Church worshipped there before the erection of the church edifice.

There are in Armonk two churches, referred to elsewhere, some six or eight stores and other places of business, and a hotel.

Kensico is a picturesque little village in the southwestern part of the town, about a mile and a half from

Kensico depot on the Harlem Railroad. The name is an Indian one, suggested by Mr. Washington Tompkins in 1848, when the post-office was established there. The place had previously been called Robbins' Mills, from the grist and saw mills of John Robbins on the branch of the Bronx, before referred to. There have been at different times, factories of considerable extent established here, but none are now in operation.

There are two churches and several stores and other places of business.

Banksville lies on the boundary between Middle Patent and Connecticut. Its post-office is in the latter State; the population and the business places are divided by the State line. The name came from the



Sam'l O. Townsend

Banks family, who were among the earliest settlers, and whose descendants are still numerous in the neighborhood. It is a scattered hamlet. The only church is the Baptist, which is in the State of Connecticut.

North Castle is the name of a hamlet and post-office on the Bedford and White Plains road, about midway between Bedford and the Connecticut line. A shoe-shop and store which formerly constituted its business, are now closed. Some twenty years ago, the New York, Housatonic and Northern Railroad, connecting White Plains with Danbury in Connecticut, was surveyed, and partly graded, through this neighborhood, following mainly the western valley of the Mianus. Had it reached completion it would doubtless have contributed to the growth of this region.

The town is divided into seven school districts, which compare favorably, in their buildings, and in their enterprise in educational matters, with those of other rival towns. There are at present no private schools of importance in the town. The Rev. Mr. Vermilye, rector of St. Stephen's Church, maintained a boarding-school at Armonk for several years, with success, and after his death in 1864, it was continued for a time, by Mrs. Vermilye. Since that time the educational facilities of North Castle have been confined to the public schools.

CHURCHES.

There are five church buildings in the town of North Castle; three Methodist and two Episcopal.

There was a Friends' Meeting-House, near Sands' Mills, a mile north of Armonk, which was one of the earliest of that denomination in the county. It was abandoned a few years ago.

ARMONK METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—The Methodist Church at Armonk, if not the first, is one of the very earliest of the organizations which accompanied the revival of Methodism in this county after the War of the Revolution. New York City,¹ captured soon after the beginning of the war and held by the British, was dropped from the Conference Minutes in 1778, and did not again appear until 1783. In 1787 the New Rochelle Circuit was formed and Samuel O. Talbot appointed to it. It embraced all of Westchester and Putnam counties within its limits and included about five hundred and twenty-five members.² "Talbot was followed in 1788 by Peter Moriarty and Albert Van Nostrand. Moriarty was appointed to it five times in fifteen years, the last time being in 1803. And when he and his fellow itinerants of this period (Albert Van Nostrand, Jacob Brush, Thomas Woolsey, William Phebus and others) entered upon this field of labor, they found it 'white to the harvest.'

¹ The first Methodist Episcopal society formed in this country was in New York City; the second was at Ashgrove, Washington County; the third was at New Rochelle.

² Baird's History of Rye.

"No part of the country had suffered more in the late contest. Westchester County being a kind of border-land had been often ravaged by both armies. In some places the churches had been burned, in others closed, and the ordinances of religion suspended. The people in many places, not only impoverished but morally and spiritually destitute, greatly needed the Gospel, whether they were ready to welcome it or not."³

The faithful and earnest itinerants above mentioned visited nearly every part of the county, preaching and organizing classes, which were the germs of future churches. Traditions of their labors in North Castle, Bedford and the northern towns of the county have come down to our day, and the church at North Castle was one of the first results of these labors. Just when this society was organized the writer has not been able to ascertain, but it had become strong enough and energetic enough to build a church before it was deemed necessary to avail itself of the act of 1784 authorizing religious bodies to incorporate. The meeting to choose trustees and transact the necessary business preparatory to filing articles of incorporation was held in the church December 24, 1791. The first trustees were Caleb Merritt, Sr., Othniel Sands, James Hall, Thomas Nash, Charles Green and John Ferris, and the corporate title was "The Methodist Episcopal Church in North Castle in Westchester County." On January 4, 1800, articles of incorporation were again filed in the office of the county clerk, which were in no respect different from the first, except in the names of the trustees, who were James Hall, Caleb Kirby and Jacob Craft. This was apparently necessary on account of some informality which does not appear on the record.

The congregation seems to have been gathered from a considerable region of country. The churches at New Castle and Middle Patent were offshoots from it, and it is quite likely that its influence extended as far northward as the old church at the Four Corners, in Bedford, out of which grew those now at Bedford Village and Chestnut Ridge.

Concerning the origin and building of the old church there is scarcely a tradition to be found. It stood a mile north of Milesquare (now Armonk) and a short distance south of the neighborhood called Sands' Mills. Adjoining the site of the church is an ancient grave-yard where many of the early dwellers in the town were buried. It would appear that the building of a church at that early day had proved a serious undertaking for the society. About 1820, when some of the most prominent members, James Hall, Caleb Kirby and others, who lived some five miles distant, near New Castle Corners, were agitating the question of building a church there to meet the wants of that locality, it was felt that they could not be spared.

³ Rev. Thomas Lamont; sketch of Katonah Methodist Episcopal Church, 1878.

"There was a heavy debt on the North Castle church, and it seemed at one time to exhaust their resources to maintain their running expenses, with interest on the debt; yet it was shouldered by Mr. James Hall, and it was considered presumptuous to think of building a new church at New Castle, and assuming new responsibilities . . . New men were raised up to aid the mother church at North Castle, among them Drake Waterbury, John Robbins and others."¹

The first building was repaired about 1840, and was occupied by the society until 1872, when the present edifice at Armonk was built, the site being changed, as the center of population had moved to that place in consequence of the growth of that village some years before. A suitable plot of land at the corner of the two main streets of the village, handsome and well shaded, was selected and a church of modern design erected thereon. It has a Sunday-school room at the rear, and a graceful spire, and s a credit to the village and the neighboring country. The cost was about ten thousand dollars. The society does not own a parsonage.

The writer deems it appropriate to present, in connection with the history of the oldest Methodist Church in this region, the following list of the preachers on the successive circuits under which it has been a charge since 1787. This list is believed to be correct.²

NEW ROCHELLE CIRCUIT.

- 1787.—Samuel O. Talbot.
- 1788.—Peter Moriarty, Albert Van Nostrand.
- 1789.—Peter Moriarty, Samuel Smith.
- 1790.—William Phœbus, M. Swain, Jacob Brush.
- 1791.—Jacob Brush, T. Everard, T. Lovell.

CROTON CIRCUIT.

- 1792.—Peter Moriarty.
- 1793.—Sylvester Hutchinson, Jacob Egbert.
- 1794.—S. Hutchinson, Peter Moriarty, D. Dennis.
- 1795.—Thomas Woolsey, A. Van Nostrand, Jacob Perkins.
- 1796.—Joseph Sutton, David Brown, Ezekiel Canfield.
- 1797.—David Brown, John Wilson, John Baker.
- 1798.—Peter Vannest, Thomas Woolsey.
- 1799.—John Clark, Timothy Dewey, Epaphras Kibby.
- 1800.—David Brown, John Wilson, Elijah Chichester.
- 1801.—John Wilson, James Campbell, William Pickett.
- 1802.—Wm. Thatcher, Geo. Dougherty, Henry Clark, Francis Ward.
- 1803.—Peter Moriarty, Isaac Candee.
- 1804.—Joseph Sawyer, Nathan Felch.
- 1805.—William Hubbard, John Robertson.
- 1806.—William Hubbard, John Finnegan.
- 1807.—James Coloman, Isaac Candee.
- 1808.—Elijah Woolsey, Isaac Candee.
- 1809.—Ezekiel Canfield, Jonathan Lyon.
- 1810.—Luman Andrus, Stephen Richmond.
- 1811.—Phœbus Cook, Jacob Lyon, H. Redstone.
- 1812.—Henry Barnes, John Russell.
- 1813.—Eben Smith, Zalmon Lyon.
- 1814.—Aaron Hunt, Ebon Smith.
- 1815.—Aaron Hunt, Ezekiel Canfield.
- 1816.—Ezekiel Canfield, Jesse Hunt.
- 1817-18.—Eben Smith, Smith Arnold.
- 1819-20.—Elijah Woolsey, John B. Matthias.
- 1821.—Samuel Bushnell, Noble W. Thomas.
- 1822.—Samuel Bushnell, Samuel D. Ferguson.
- 1823.—Marvin Richardson.
- 1824.—Marvin Richardson, Peter C. Oakley.

¹ Rev. W. E. Ketchum. Historical Address in New Castle Methodist Episcopal Church, March 29, 1882.

² For many of the names previous to 1829, the writer is indebted to Dr. R. B. Griswold, of the Middle Patent M. E. Church.

1825.—Thomas Mason, Stephen Remington, R. Harris

SPUNT PLEASANT CIRCUIT.

- 1826.—Horace Bartlett, Stephen Remington.
- 1827.—Horace Bartlett, Luman Andrus.
- 1828.—Nicholas White, Luman Andrus.
- 1829.—Nicholas White, Henry Hatfield.
- 1830.—Noble W. Thomas, Henry Hatfield.
- 1831.—Noble W. Thomas, John Reynolds.
- 1832.—John Reynolds, Daniel Devinne.

BEDFORD CIRCUIT.

- 1833.³—Henry Hatfield, Denton Keeler.
- 1834.—Loren Clark, Denton Keeler.
- 1835.—Loren Clark, Alonzo F. Sellick.
- 1836.—Alonzo F. Sellick, George L. Fuller.
- 1837.—Seymour Van Dusen, William H. Bangs.
- 1839-40.—Robert Travis, J. L. Dickerson.
- 1841-42.—Jesse Hunt, James H. Romer.
- 1843.—Charles F. Pelton, J. K. Still.
- 1844-45.—D. B. Turner.
- 1846.—Bradley Selleck, Thomas Sparks.
- 1847.—Thomas Sparks, Uriah Messiter.
- 1848.—Loren Clark, George W. Knapp.
- 1849.—Loren Clark, Joseph Elliott.
- 1850-51.—Loyal B. Andrus, Francis Donnelly.
- 1852-53.—W. S. Stilwell, H. B. Mead.
- 1854.—John A. Selleck, Clark Fuller.
- 1855-56.—S. M. Knapp, W. Stevens.

The Bedford circuit was discontinued in 1856, and Armonk and Kencico were constituted a separate charge, and have so continued except during 1872-73, when Middle Patent was connected with Armonk, and 1874, when Armonk was the sole charge. The ministers since 1856 have been as follows :

- 1856-57 Rev. A. K. Sanford.
- 1858-59 Rev. T. M. Curry.
- 1860-61 Rev. Thomas Carter.
- 1862 Rev. Delos Lull.
- 1863 Rev. O. V. Amerman.
- 1864 Rev. I. H. Lent.
- 1865-66 Rev. W. E. Ketchum.
- 1867-69 Rev. L. B. Andrews.
- 1870-71 Rev. Thomas Elliott.
- 1872-73 Rev. Adee Vail.
- 1874 Rev. Stephen White.
- 1875-77 Rev. Abram Davis.
- 1878-79 Rev. J. H. Lane.
- 1880-81 Rev. John Keogan.
- 1882-84 Rev. J. W. Macomber.
- 1885-86 Rev. Robert Kerr.

MIDDLE PATENT METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.

—The Methodist Church at Middle Patent was incorporated December 24, 1825, a meeting being held at the house of Captain James Banks, "agreeably to legal notice of fifteen days previously given, for the purpose of electing trustees for a house of worship about to be erected in Middle Patent for the use of the Methodist Church. John Ferris, Peter Bussing, Ezekiel Finch, William Finch and Jacob Johnson were elected trustees of said house, which is to be denominated and known by the style and title of Wesley Chapel."⁴ For several years before this, religious services had been held in the old school-house, about a quarter of a mile north of the present church. This

³ For appointments under Bedford Circuit, see Bedford, History of M. E. Church.

⁴ Record of Incorporation of Religious Societies, County Clerk's Office.

building was but a few years ago moved away by David C. Banks, to the farm now owned by Benjamin C. Arnold. The first house of worship was erected in 1825 on land procured from Joshua Knapp.

The prominent members at that time were John Ferris, (father of Dr. W. H. Ferris), Rev. Peter Bus-sing, Enos Hobby, Allen Hobby, Jacob Johnson, Ezekiel Finch, William Finch and James Guion. The building now used as a dwelling, immediately north of the church, was the first church edifice in Middle Patent. At the time of organization this church was under the care of the Croton Circuit. In 1826 the Mount Pleasant Circuit was formed and included all the societies in this neighborhood. In 1833 this again was divided, and the Bedford Circuit was formed, with ten appointments, of which Middle Patent was the strongest in number of members.¹ The Bedford Circuit was discontinued in 1856, and since that time Middle Patent has always been connected with Bedford as a charge, except during three years, 1872-73-74, when it was with Armonk under the care of Rev. Adee Vail.

(For list of pastors from 1856 to the present time see Bedford, History of Methodist Episcopal Church). The present church edifice was built in 1842. It stands about half-way between Bedford and the Connecticut line, and near the western boundary of the original Middle Patent.

METHODIST CHURCH OF KENSICO.—The Methodist Episcopal Church at Kensico was organized at a meeting held for that purpose November 8, 1835, in the old red school-house, where religious meetings had been held for some time before that date. The place was then known as Robbins' Mills, Kensico being an Indian name which was selected when the post-office was established there, about 1848. The first trustees were Sands Sutton, John Robbins, Caleb P. Horton, Hatfield Davis and Edwin Palmer, and the corporate name adopted for the church was "North Castle Zion Methodist Episcopal Church in Westchester County." On the 29th of December, 1835, a plot of land was given by Daniel H. Fisher, and a house of worship erected thereon during the following winter and spring, at a cost of about eight hundred dollars.

It was dedicated July 10, 1836, the Rev. Lewis M. Pease, of New York, officiating on the occasion. This house served the purpose of the society for nearly half a century. The last sermon was preached in the old church October 11, 1885, by Rev. William F. Hatfield, of Tarrytown, who had resided in the neighborhood and attended services there in his boyhood. On the 14th of that month it was sold, with the land belonging to it, to Mr. Patrick Daly, to be used for a Roman Catholic Church.

On September 8, 1885, the trustees bought of Mrs. Mary Fowler a site for a new church, near the old

one, but on the opposite side of the highway. The cost was three hundred dollars. The new building was soon begun, and the corner-stone was laid on November 18, 1885, with appropriate ceremonies. The Rev. Dr. G. H. Gregory, presiding elder of the district, conducted the services, assisted by the pastor, Rev. Robert Kerr, and by Rev. Delos Lull, of White Plains. This house is now nearly completed. It is a church-like edifice of modern architecture and pleasing appearance, and is valued, with furniture and bell, at about four thousand dollars. The present board of trustees consists of William O. Carpenter, Daniel H. Wyckoff, Lewis S. Onderdonk, Edwin Cox and Virgil A. Krepps.

Since the dissolution of the Bedford Circuit in 1856, this church has been associated with Armonk as a pastoral charge, except during the years 1872-73-74, when it was not connected with any other church, and was under the care of the Rev. Jacob C. Washburn. The names of the other ministers are given in the sketch of the Armonk Methodist Episcopal Church.

ST. STEPHEN'S CHURCH.—The first entry in the records of the business meetings of St. Stephen's Church sets forth that "at a meeting of male persons of full age belonging to the Congregation assembling for Divine Worship in the Log Cabin,² Milesquare, Town of North Castle on the tenth of October, 1842," the initial steps were taken toward the organization of a church. The services in the Log Cabin had been conducted by the Rev. Robert W. Harris, of White Plains, and to his efforts St. Stephen's owes its origin.

There is a tradition that there was an intention to establish a church of this denomination in this neighborhood nearly a hundred years before, but it was abandoned, and the building was erected in 1761 at New Castle Corners, then a part of this town. (See St. Mark's Church, New Castle.)

At the meeting referred to, on October 10, 1842, Israel Townsend and Samuel B. Ferris were elected church wardens, and John Merritt, Reuben M. Green, Leemon B. Tripp, Joseph Close, Zial Eggleston, Elisha Sutton, Jonathan H. Green and Isaiah Townsend were chosen vestrymen, under the title of "St. Stephen's Church in the village of Milesquare, town of North Castle." The articles of incorporation were filed in the office of the county clerk some little time afterward. The erection of the present edifice was begun in the spring following, and it was consecrated in September, 1843. It stands on the street which enters the village from the east, fronting the south, and occupying a handsome plot of ground. Adjoining is the parish burial-place.

The Rev. R. W. Harris, then rector of Grace Church, White Plains, took charge of the parish until 1853, when the Rev. Isaac D. Vermilye became the first

¹The "Log Cabin" was erected by the Whigs in the summer of 1810, for holding political meetings. It stood at the corner of the two streets where the Methodist Church now is.

¹See Bedford, History of Methodist Episcopal Church.

regular rector, officiating also at St. Mark's, New Castle, until the early part of 1858. His pastorate here continued until his death, in 1864. The Rev. Martin Moody had charge of the parish for a part of 1865, and was succeeded by Rev. Joseph W. Hyde in 1866. Each of these occupied the field for a few months only.

The Rev. C. Winter Bolton assumed the rectorship April 1, 1867, and, like his predecessors, took charge of St. Mark's, five miles distant, until about Easter, 1871, since which date each parish has had its own rector. Mr. Bolton continued rector of St. Stephen's until October 13, 1880, when he resigned. The Rev. Benjamin T. Hall was called to the rectorship January 24, 1881, and entered upon its duties soon after. He remained until September 18, 1882, when he removed to St. Mark's. There was then a vacancy for about a year, during which time, however, services were supplied by various persons. The Rev. John T. Pearce was called to be rector October 11, 1883, began his duties on the 28th of the same month, and is the present pastor. On the opposite side of the street from the church, on a beautiful lot given for the purpose by Mr. William R. Carr, stands the rectory. It is a commodious and tasteful house.

ST. MARY'S CHURCH.—St. Mary's Church is situated in the northeastern part of the town, but little more than a mile from the Bedford line, on the road leading from Bedford village to Stanwich, in Connecticut, in a neighborhood which is now somewhat less populous than it was thirty years ago. It owes its origin to the labors of the Rev. Alfred H. Partridge, rector of St. Matthew's, in Bedford, who has left in the record-book of the church a careful account of its early history. For several years previous to 1851 he had officiated in the neighborhood, preaching once a month in the school-house near Samuel Brown's, and collected a good congregation of devout and humble worshippers, so that the room was not large enough to accommodate all who came. He often expressed the desire to have a church built, but did not meet with much encouragement until the Rev. Washington Rodman, of West Farms, preached there in the fall of 1851, when he became so much interested in the enterprise that he promised to contribute two hundred dollars toward a church edifice. "Then the people were aroused to the necessity and importance of the undertaking," says Mr. Partridge, "and the work began in earnest. Measures were immediately taken to collect funds, which resulted in a complete success." The building cost \$1623.13, exclusive of timber, blinds and furniture. The ladies of the congregation contributed a large amount; Rev. Mr. Rodman, already mentioned and the Rev. Dr. Harris, of White Plains, were among those who gave to the work. The church was consecrated to the worship of God by Bishop Jonathan Mayhew Wainwright, September 22, 1853.

The usual steps for incorporation were taken at a meeting held December 29, 1851, at which time

Samuel Brown and Benjamin Smith were elected church wardens, and Joseph S. Hobby, Henry Hobby, David M. Johnson, Henry Downes, William H. Hobby, Samuel Lounsbury, William Downes and Oliver Finch were elected vestrymen, under the name and title "St. Mary's Church in the town of North Castle."

Owing to an informality in regard to the proper witnessing of the signatures to the articles, it became necessary to prepare and record others, which was done September 15, 1853, the officers being the same.

The church was in charge of the Rev. Mr. Partridge until May, 1855, when he resigned, and Rev. Franklin Babbitt became the rector,¹ remaining until his resignation, in December, 1857. In the following year he was succeeded by the Rev. Isaac D. Vermilye, who also officiated at St. Stephen's, Armonk, some seven or eight miles distant. He preached here until failing health compelled him to abandon this part of his charge about three years before his death, which occurred August 24, 1864. Rev. E. B. Boggs, of St. Matthew's, then took charge of the parish for a year or more. The Rev. Angus M. Ives succeeded to the rectorship, preaching at Lewisboro at the same time. He remained the pastor until 1865. In October, 1866, the Rev. Lea Luquer, of St. Matthew's, finding the field vacant, began to hold services here, and continued them regularly each Sunday for some years. As his health proved unequal to this demand, he preached at less frequent intervals until 1878, since which time the church has been closed.

THE FRIENDS' MEETING-HOUSE.—A Friends' Meeting at North Castle was spoken of as early as 1742, and it was reported as regularly held in 1764. A Preparative Meeting was established here in 1797, and the house was built in that year. A Preparative Meeting is a meeting for the transaction of church business, appointing representatives to the Monthly Meetings, etc. The meetings held before the Preparative were meetings for worship, and were held at private houses. The North Castle Meeting was a part of the Chappaqua Monthly Meeting.

The house was abandoned some twenty years ago in consequence of the sparseness of the Quaker population in that immediate neighborhood, those to the south attending the Purchase Meeting, and those farther north the Chappaqua. The house was sold to be used as a shop, and is still in good repair.

PROSPECTIVE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH.—The old Methodist Church at Kensico was bought by Mr. Patrick Daly, of that place, and has been put in repair with the expectation that it would eventually become a Roman Catholic Church. Its purchase, for use as a Sunday-school building, was approved by the pastor of St. John's Roman Catholic Church, at White Plains, in which parish it is, and a Sunday-school will soon be established. No formal organization has yet been effected.

¹ Mr. Babbitt had charge of St. John's, Lewisboro, at the same time. He is now (1886) rector of a church at Nyack, Rockland County, N. Y.

CEMETERIES.— There are no incorporated cemeteries in the town, nor indeed any of modern pretensions. There are many family burial-plots all over the town, most of which are no longer in use, although they are preserved and guarded from injury. One of the oldest public burying-grounds is that near where the old Methodist Church stood at Sands' Mills. There is also an ancient one near the Bedford road. Adjoining the Middle Patent Methodist Church and St. Stephen's Church at Armonk there are cemeteries of respectable size and neat appearance.

SUPERVISORS OF THE TOWN OF NORTH CASTLE.

- 1736-38. George Dennis.
- 1738-39. Jonathan Ogden.
- 1739-42. Adam Seaman.
- 1742-49. George Dennis.
- 1749-54. Benjamin Smith.
- 1754-56. George Dennis.
- 1756-57. Caleb Fowler.
- 1757-58. Capt. Aaron Formon.
- 1758-71. Caleb Fowler.
- 1771-77. Dr. David Dayton.
- 1776. No Annual Town-Meeting held.
- 1777-78. Jonathan Platt.
- 1778-81. Jacob Purdy.
- 1781-84. Andrew Sniffin.
- 1784-1801. Abel Smith.
- 1801-6. Isaac Webbers.
- 1806-7. Abel Smith.
- 1807-9. Peter Lyon.
- 1809-11. John Palmer.
- 1811-20. John Ferris.
- 1820-33. James Hopkins.
- 1833-36. Rees Carpenter.
- 1836-38. Guy B. Hobby.
- 1838-39. Rees Carpenter.
- 1839-40. William Williams.

- 1840-41. Abraham Miller.
- 1841-43. Nathan I. Green.
- 1843-44. Israel Townsend.
- 1844-45. Job Sands.
- 1845-46. Guy B. Hobby.
- 1846-47. Job Sands.
- 1847-49. Nathan I. Green.
- 1849-52. Samuel B. Ferris.
- 1852-53. Nathan I. Green.
- 1853-55. Joseph Hobby.
- 1855-56. Benjamin Tripp.
- 1856-60. Charles Purdy.
- 1860-62. Leemon B. Tripp.
- 1862-63. William S. Brown.
- 1863-65. Evander Odell.
- 1865-67. David W. Smith.
- 1867-71. James Hopkins.
- 1871-72. David W. Smith.
- 1872-75. James Hopkins.
- 1875-76. Horace B. Flewillin.
- 1876-80. James Hopkins.
- 1880-81. Aaron F. Read
- 1881-82. James Hopkins.
- 1882-84. Edwin R. Hopkins.
- 1884. Joseph B. See.

TOWN CLERKS.

- 1736-42. Moses Quimby.
- 1742-54. Benjamin Smith.
- 1754-59. Nathaniel Merritt.
- 1759-70. Benjamin Smith.
- 1770-78. Gilbert Thorn.
- 1777. Independence, no Election.
- 1778-87. Andrew Sniffin.
- 1787-88. Peter Lyon.
- 1788-89. William Wright.
- 1789-91. Thomas Ferris.
- 1791-98. Harrison Palmer.
- 1798-1830. Capt. John Smith.
- 1830-44. Samuel P. Smith.
- 1844-45. Thorn Sands.

- 1845-55. Samuel P. Smith.
- 1855-56. Floyd G. Cox.
- 1856-57. David Carpenter.
- 1857-60. Job L. Townsend.
- 1860-62. James Hopkins.
- 1862-63. David Carpenter.
- 1863-66. Job L. Townsend.
- 1866-67. James Hopkins.
- 1867-75. Charles Raymond.
- 1875-76. Edwin R. Hopkins.
- 1876-80. W. H. Creemer.
- 1880-81. Forman W. Miller.
- 1881-83. Marvin R. Baker.
- 1883-85. W. H. Creemer.

Joseph Barrett

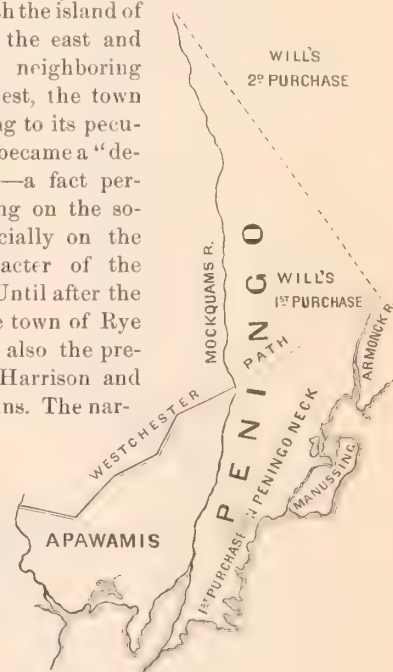
W. H. Horton

CHAPTER XIV.

RYE.

BY REV. CHARLES W. BAIRD, D.D.,
Pastor of the Presbyterian Church, Rye.

As a frontier settlement of New England, as a border-town and as a part of the "Neutral Ground," Rye possesses distinctive claims to historical notice. Its territory lies on the confines of two States, New York and Connecticut, whose boundaries from the outset were but ill defined and remained for nearly a century in dispute. Beginning with a point of land that juts into Long Island Sound, a tract nowhere more than two miles wide stretches northward about nine miles to a sharp angle on the Connecticut border. This tract, to which the Indians gave the name Peningo, constitutes, with the island of Manussing on the east and a part of the neighboring shore on the west, the town of Rye. Owing to its peculiar location it became a "debatable land,"—a fact perceptibly bearing on the social and especially on the religious character of the community. Until after the Revolution the town of Rye comprehended also the present towns of Harrison and the White Plains. The narrow tract along Byram River and the Sound was first occupied by the settlers for convenience and security, because nearer and more accessible to the very much older plantations of Connecticut. Soon, however, they removed from the shore, where the surface is rocky and broken, to more favorable situations inland. But the inequality of surface imparts to Rye a picturesque and varied beauty, and adds attraction as a place of suburban resort and residence. In the south and southwest, towards the Sound and bordering upon it, the land is generally level. Near the Episcopal Church rises a rocky ridge, extending northward and dividing the town into two nearly equal parts. This ridge gradually widens into a plateau of undulating surface, one-fourth to three-fourths of a mile wide, sloping on the northeast to Byram River and on the west to Blind Brook. Another ridge begins at the lower end of Peningo Neck or Brown's Point and gradually rises toward Grace Church Street, where it breaks into a



succession of hills that extend to the village of Port Chester. Along the shore of the Sound the rocks form low bluffs, or are broken into large, irregular masses. Similar masses of coarse granite below the beach form "clumps" or islands, curiously worn and perforated. Bar Rock is the clump which at low tide is connected with the beach by a sand-bar; Humphrey's Rock is the clump south of Bar Rock; Black Tom lies east of Parsonage Point;¹ Wrack Clump, southeast of Pine Island, is so called from the fact that many vessels have been wrecked on its rocks.

The settlement of Rye dates back more than two hundred years to the time when the Dutch were still in possession of the province they called "New Netherland." It was in Westchester County that the troubles of the Dutch with the Indian tribes of the interior commenced. Here also began those difficulties with the English which, though less sanguinary, foreboded much more clearly the termination of the Dutch rule. The region that included the site of the present town of Rye was an almost unbroken wilderness. Except along the seaboard, no settlement had been effected by either Dutch or English. The country lying between the Hudson and the Byram Rivers was claimed by a part of the Mohegan tribe. Their villages were most numerous along the shores of the Sound. A Mohegan village stood near the beach. The level grounds along the shores of the creek north of the present village of Milton were cultivated as Indian fields. Here and there clusters of wigwams occurred on the western bank of the creek overlooking the salt meadows through which the Mockquams or Blind Brook winds to the Sound. Some families, too, had their homes on Manussing Island, off the eastern shore of the neck. Much of the country was over-spread by swamps. One of these extended through the valley—once perhaps the basin of a lake or the bed of a river—between Rye and Port Chester. Another, which the beaver frequented, stretched along the valley of the Apawamis. Through the woods adjoining this stream, the hunter followed his prey; and near by an Indian path, obliquely cutting this tract of land at its widest part, formed the rude thoroughfare connecting the native settlements, which was early designated by the English as "the Old Westchester Path."

This path was originally an Indian trail, that led from Manhattan Island to a wading-place not far from the mouth of Byram River, and thence through the present town of Greenwich, perhaps to Stamford and beyond. It was used by the Dutch and English from the very first occupation of the country, and long before any towns or plantations appeared along its course it formed a line of travel between New York

and New England. It was probably for this reason that the earliest settlements were made upon this line. It is now the dividing line between the towns of Rye and Harrison. The first allusion to it occurs in 1661. Five years later it was already spoken of as "ye now known and common path coming up from Westchester." The path in the town of Rye has been disused for probably more than a hundred years, except in some few places, and as a way of communication between one farm and another. The marked trees which formerly indicated its course are now replaced by small granite posts, denoting the boundary line of the towns of Rye and Harrison. By means of this boundary we may trace the old path for about three miles from the vicinity of Mamaroneck River to a point on the banks of Blind Brook, near the house now owned by Mr. Charles Park. Beyond this its course is not certainly known. It is believed, however, that Ridge Street is the continuation of the old Westchester Path, at least for some distance.

It was in the last days of the Dutch rule in North America that a little company of New Englanders from the neighboring town of Greenwich, Conn., undertook to establish themselves on a territory described in their own language as "a small tract of land lying between Greenwich and Westchester. It was one of those "necks" to which the Indians were so partial, on account of the facilities afforded them for fishing. Here stood the villages of several Mohegan families, and near by lay their gardens and corn-fields. From the abundance of Indian remains in this neighborhood, it seems highly probable that both Peningo Neck and Manussing Island had already, in a measure, been prepared for the occupation of the Connecticut colonists, who found these shores comparatively denuded of the forest, and in some localities under a tolerable degree of cultivation.

The original purchasers were Peter Disbrow, John Coe and Thomas Stedwell. A fourth, John Budd, was associated with them in some of their purchases, and several others joined them in the actual settlement of the place; but the earliest negotiations appear to have been conducted in behalf of the three persons named. They were all residents of Greenwich when the first Indian treaty was signed. Their leader was Peter Disbrow, a young, intelligent, self-reliant man. Early in the year 1660 Disbrow was in treaty with the Indians of Peningo Neck for the purchase of that tract. The deed of purchase was lost during Disbrow's own life-time. The petition of the people of Rye in 1720, for a patent from the crown, gives an account of this purchase, in which it is stated that Disbrow acted by authority from the colony of Connecticut (under whose government the township of Rye then lay), and that, on the 3d of January, 1660, he purchased "from the then Native Indian Proprietors a Certain Tract of Land lying on the maine between a certaine place then called Rahonness to the East and to the West Chester Path to the North and

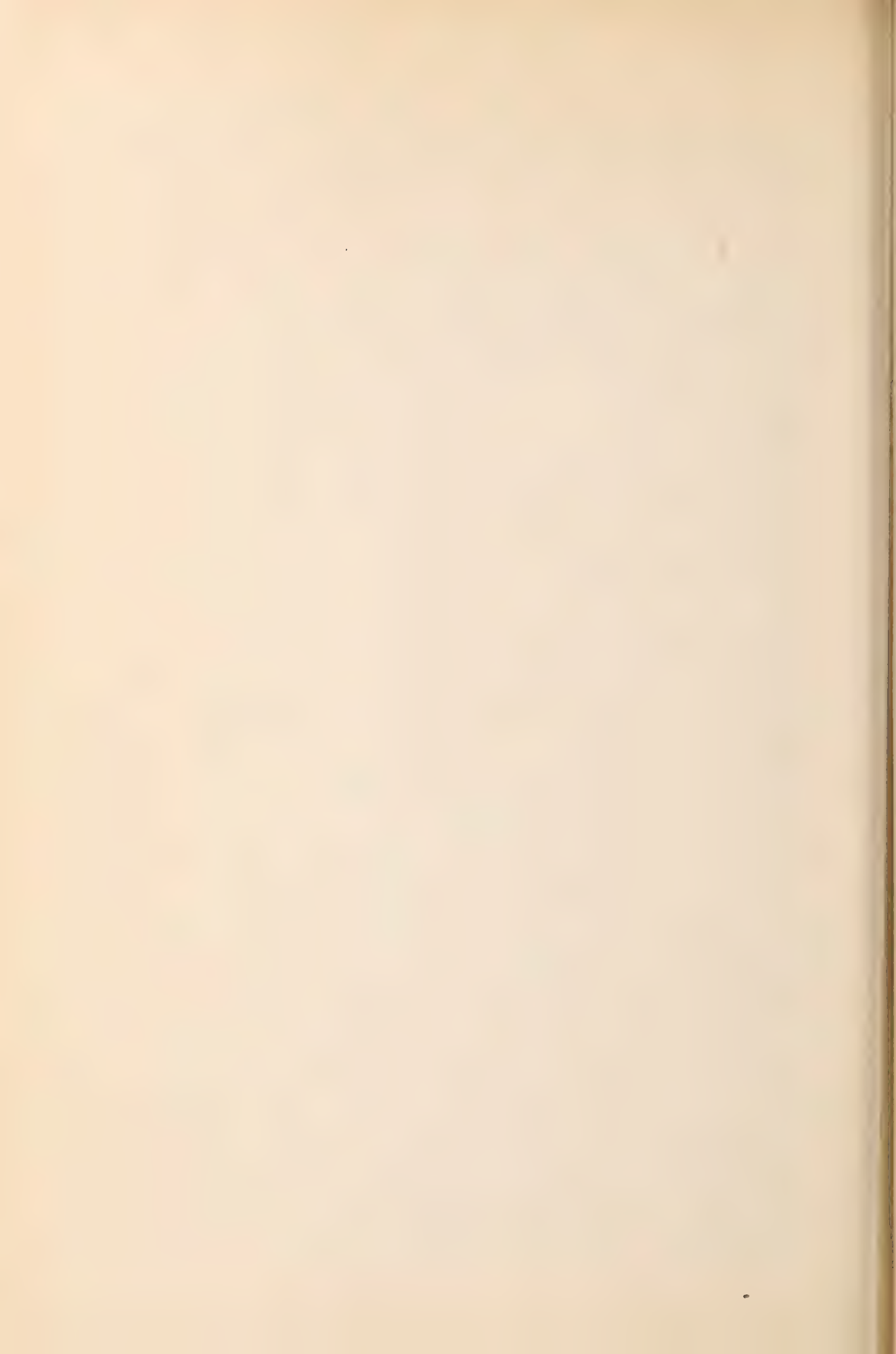
¹On Wednesday morning, March 31, 1886, the steamer "Capital City," formerly known as the "City of Hartford," was wrecked on the rock known as Black Tom, off Parsonage Point. The "Capital City" was a vessel two hundred and fifty feet in length and forty feet beam. Her capacity was one thousand four hundred tons.



"CHRISMERE"

RESIDENCE OF ALEXANDER TAYLOR, JR.

RYE NECK, N. Y.



up to a River then called Moaquanes to the West. That is to say all the Land lying between the aforesaid Two Rivers then called Peningoe Extending from the Said Path to the North and South to the Sea or Sound." We have no means of determining where the transaction took place, but, not improbably, it may have been effected at the Indian village that stood near the lower end of the beach.

This first purchase on Peningo Neck comprised the lower part of the present town of Rye, on the east side of Blind Brook. From the extreme end of the peninsula proper, or Brown's Point, the tract extended as far north as the present village of Port Chester. A line of marked trees from east to west was the boundary of this tract, beginning a little below Park's Mill, where a branch of Blind Brook empties into that stream, and running in a southeasterly direction to Byram River. Nearly six months elapsed before any further steps were taken. The purchasers had no intention of settling as yet upon the main. But east of Peningo Neck, separated from it only by a narrow channel, lay an island about a mile in length, called by the Indians Manussing. It appears not to have been included in the first purchase. On the 29th day of June, 1660, Peter Disbrow, John Coe and Thomas Stedwell concluded a treaty by which it was acquired from the Indian proprietors, Shanarockwell (sagamore), Maowhobo, Cokensekoo and others. The land thus transferred is described as being "near unto the main land which is called in the Indian name Peningo." Besides the island, which the purchasers were "quietly to enjoy from any molestation of us or any other Indians," the settlers were ceded the right to feed their cattle upon the main land, called Peningo, without molestation, and take what "timbers or trees" they might require for their use. The consideration paid was "Eight cotes and Seven Shirts and fiftene fathom of wompone."

By the two treaties the settlers acquired the lower half of the present territory of the town, between Blind Brook and the Sound or Byram River, together with the adjoining island of Manussing. Nearly a year later they bought the land lying farther north, between the same streams. This purchase included considerably more than the present territory of the town. The deed is dated May 22, 1661. The three purchases completed the territory of Rye on the east side of Blind Brook. Indeed, they took in also a part of the town of Greenwich,—the tract of land between the present State line and Byram River,—and the claim of Rye to this territory subsequently caused no little trouble between the two towns. Attention was next directed to the lands lying west of Blind Brook, a much more extensive and important field, from the fact that expansion in that direction was restricted only by the dangers and difficulties of peopling a wilderness, whereas on the east the settlers were liable to encroach upon their neighbors of Greenwich. Within

little more than a year after the last purchase east of Blind Brook they bought from the Indians the lands on the west side of that stream extending to Mamaroneck River and beyond. Upon these purchases the town of Rye subsequently founded its claim to the territory now known as Rye Neck, and to the present townships of Harrison and the White Plains.

In these transactions John Budd replaces Peter Disbrow as the principal agent. On the 8th of November, 1661, he purchased the tract called by the Indians Apawamis, and by the white men Budd's Neck. This tract was bounded on the east by Blind Brook and on the west by the little stream whose Indian name was Pockcotessewake, since known as Stony Brook or Beaver Meadow Branch. Northward it extended as far as the Westchester Path and southward to the sea. The land thus described constitutes now the southwestern part of the town. It has always formed a part of the territory of Rye, but, unlike the former purchases, it was claimed by a single proprietor, John Budd, and for a period of nearly sixty years was held under a distinct patent. A second deed, executed a few days later, transferred to Budd the Indian title to the islands in the Sound near the purchased territory, known as the Hen and Pine Islands and the Scotch Caps.

Shortly after, Budd purchased the West Neck, or the tract of land adjoining Budd's Neck proper, and lying between Stony Brook and Mamaroneck River. Still another purchase was made in the following summer, on the 2d day of June, 1662, by John Budd in company with Disbrow, Coe and Stedwell or Stedwell, the original purchasers. It is the first occasion upon which these four names appear together. The settlers now bought the tract of land above the Westchester Path and west of Blind Brook or directly north of Budd's Neck. This was the territory of the present town of Harrison—a territory owned by the proprietors of Rye, but wrested from the town some forty years later.

It will be observed that the settlers paid the Indians for the land thus secured, not in a few worthless trinkets, but in clothing and weapons, the Indian currency. For Budd's Neck the patentee paid "Eightie pounds Sterling," and for the Harrison tract twenty pounds sterling.

The time occupied in effecting the different purchases was about two years and a half. Meantime the three original purchasers, who were living at Greenwich when the first two treaties were made, had come down with some others to the little island of Manussing, near the mouth of Byram River, and were already preparing to cross over to the main. They had acquired the title to a very considerable property. The southern part of it alone comprised the tract of land between Byram River and Mamaroneck River, while to the north it extended twenty miles, and to the northwest an indefinite distance. These boundaries included, besides the area now covered by

the towns of Rye and Harrison, much of the towns of North Castle and Bedford in New York and of Greenwich in Connecticut, whilst in a northwesterly direction the territory claimed was absolutely without a fixed limit. As the frontier town of Connecticut, Rye long cherished pretensions to the whole region as far as the Hudson.

While the dealings with the natives were in progress the settlement on Manussing Island was commenced. It is impossible to fix the exact date, but it must have been in the summer or fall of 1660. Disbrow and his companions were still living at Greenwich when the deed of June 29, 1660, was concluded. The next deed, May 22, 1661, mentions "the bounds of Hastings on the south," showing that the lands previously bought had received a name, and implying that they were already occupied. It is unlikely that the settlers would delay their coming after securing an eligible site, and it may be presumed that they arrived in July or August, 1660. It was but an hour's sail from Greenwich, and they came undoubtedly in boats, as they could thus transport their families and household goods much more readily than by the Indian paths through the forest and across the ford from Peningo Neck.

On Manussing Island the settlers were within easy reach of assistance from Greenwich in case of attack, and could reach that place in a very short time if they found it necessary to retreat. They were not likely to be noticed by the Dutch, though their island lay within the line designated by the last treaty. From their savage neighbors they would be comparatively safe, and here, while completing their acquisitions on the mainland, they could gradually strengthen themselves and prepare to extend the sphere of their operations. The island itself was an inviting spot.

It lay on the eastern side of Peningo Neck, only separated from it by a narrow creek. Westward, a broad expanse of sedge land, or salt meadow, intervened, almost hiding the channel in its winding course, and seeming to connect the island with the main. On the other side, toward the sea, a wide beach bordered its entire length. An Indian village had formerly stood on the southern part of the island; perhaps some of the deserted wigwams yet remained; and the upland, like the salt meadows, presented that appearance of cultivation which drew the white man to the places that had been improved in some measure by the natives before his coming.

Looking southward, the planters had in prospect an almost unbroken wilderness. The only spot between them and New Amsterdam where Europeans had yet attempted to establish themselves was a point of land, ten miles below, known to the Dutch as Ann's Hook. Here, eighteen years before, the famous Mother Hutchinson had been slain by the Indians, in one of their risings upon the Dutch. This point had since been bought by Thomas Pell, of Fairfield, who was now endeavoring, under authority of Connecticut,

to form a settlement there, in spite of Governor Stuyvesant's remonstrances. Across the Sound, which is here about five miles wide, the shores of Long Island were already in great part possessed by the English. Hempstead,¹ just opposite; Oyster Bay and Huntington, to the east, had been settled some years before; the first with the consent of the Dutch themselves, the other two under patent from the New Haven colony. It was at Hempstead Harbor, directly across the Sound, that the dividing line, agreed upon in 1650, between the Dutch possessions on Long Island and those of the English terminated.

Manussing Island² comprises about one hundred acres of upland, with as many more of sedge or salt meadow. The first business of the settlers was to apportion the land among themselves and erect some temporary habitations. A home-lot of two or three acres was assigned to each. These lots were probably contiguous to each other, and the houses built upon them soon presented the appearance of a small village. The first houses built were nothing better than log cabins. The timber was cut on Peningo Neck. More comfortable dwellings soon replaced these, the materials being brought down from the older settlements.

The island village took the name of Hastings. There is no reason to doubt that it was so called after the famous seaport on the English Channel. And it is fair to infer that some one at least of the settlers came from Sussex, in England. Part of the mainland received this appellation, together with the island. "The bounds of Hastings" extended, we have seen, about as far north on Peningo Neck as the present village of Port Chester. But some time elapsed before any improvements were attempted in this direction. For two or three years certainly the planters confined themselves to their insular home.

The three purchasers of the island, Disbrow, Coe and Studwell, were soon joined by other adventurers, if, indeed, they were not accompanied by them at the outset. The following are the names of all the planters of whom we have any record as belonging to the island settlement:

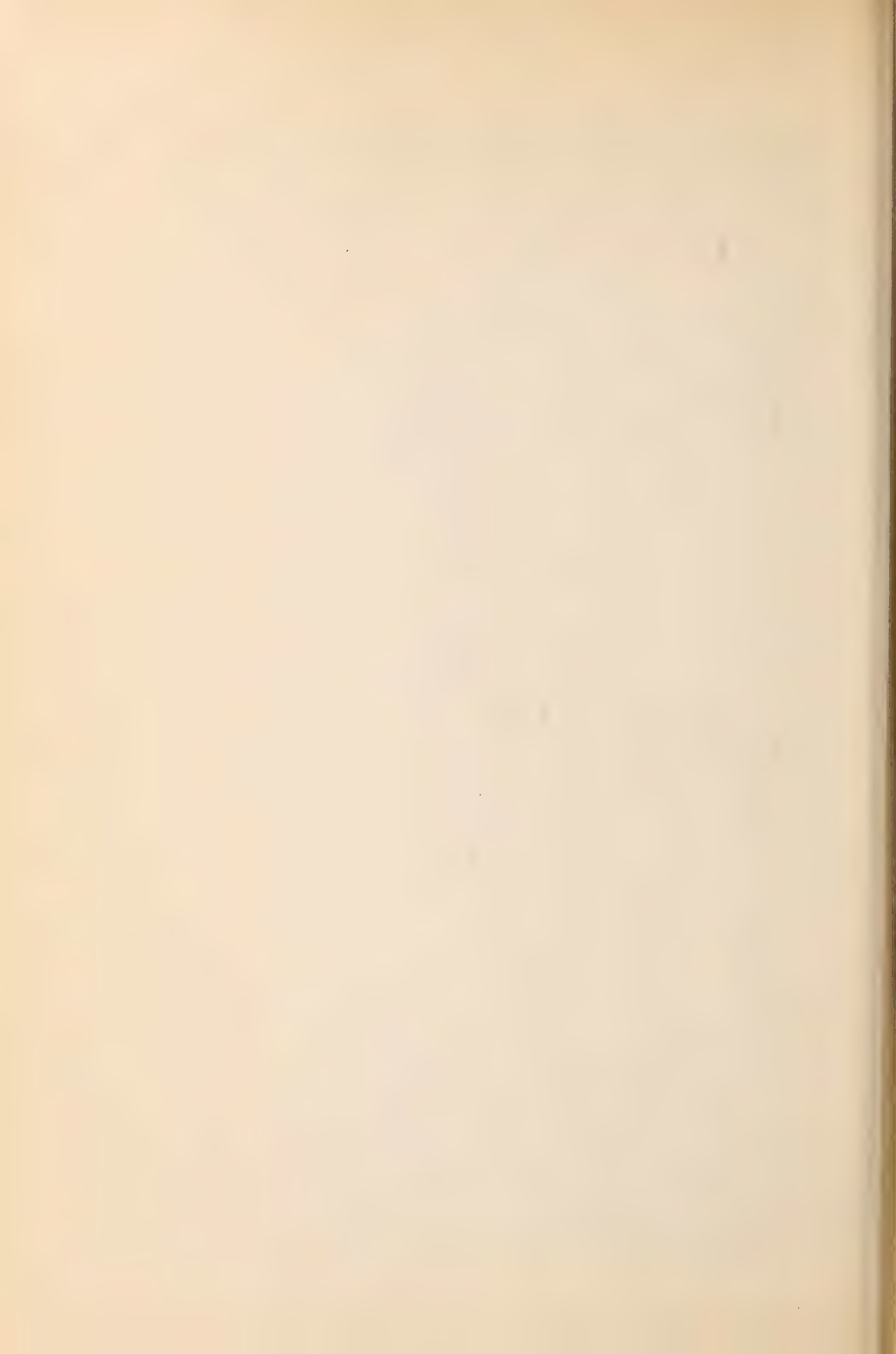
Peter Disbrow.	John Bromlish.
John Coe.	Frederick Harmonson.
Thomas Studwell	Thomas Applebee.
John Budd.	Philip Galpin.
William Odell.	George Clere.
Richard Fowles.	John Jackson.
Samuel Alling.	Walter Lancaster.
Robert Hudson.	

¹The most distant point of land to be seen from Manussing Island, looking up the Sound, is Eaton's Neck. West of this point is Huntington Bay. Oyster Bay is the next inlet, and nearer still is Hempstead Harbor.

²Traces of several dwellings have been found on the southern part of the island, where they appear to have formed a cluster, a few rods apart. The summer-house on Mrs. William P. Van Rensselaer's grounds indicates about the spot where this little village stood. Fifty or sixty years ago the walls of a small stone house were still to be seen at this end of the island, perhaps a part of the ancient house of Richard Fowles.



"MAPLE TERRACE."
RESIDENCE OF FRANCIS S. SMITH,
PORT CHESTER, N. Y.



Two other names, which are undecipherable, stand connected with these, making seventeen in all. The last three do not appear until the third year of the settlement. The others may not improbably have been associated with it from the first.

Eight of these names are permanently connected with the history of our settlement. The other seven, in the list given above, were but transient members of the plantation. Their names soon disappear from its records. Of Samuel Alling, Thomas Applebe and Frederick Harminson we know scarcely anything. Robert Hudson was living at Rye some years later. George Clere remained long enough to obtain a homelot in the new village, on the main. John Jackson and Walter Lancaster removed to the town of East Chester, New York, of which place the latter became one of the proprietors and leading men.

With perhaps one exception, the settlers were Englishmen by birth, and doubtless, also, Puritans in faith. They were, most of them, the sons of men who had sought refuge on these shores, among the earliest companies of emigrants to New England. There are grounds for believing that they were men capable of appreciating the benefits and obligations of civil freedom. Some of them at least were men of religious principle and conviction.

The earliest document that has come down to us from these times is a declaration of their purposes and desires, drawn up about two years after the commencement of the enterprise. The Restoration had just occurred in Great Britain. On the accession of Charles the Second to the throne it was expected that the American colonies would profess their allegiance in the usual form of an address and petition. The colonies were somewhat slow to do this. Connecticut, however, was the first to offer these professions of submission. The address of the General Court at Hartford to the King was ordered to be drawn up on the 14th of March, 1661. It had probably come to the knowledge of the settlers at Hastings. They unite in expressing their concurrence in that address; and they also take the opportunity to define their true position as those who, though dwelling in the wilderness, "remote from other places," are loth to be viewed as outlaws. And while proclaiming their reverence for constituted authority, they reserve their rights of conscience and private judgment. They will yield subjection only to "wholesome laws, that are just and righteous, according to God and our capableness to receive."

"HASTING, July 26 1662

"Know all men whom this may concern that [we the] inhabitants of Minnissing Island whose names are here vnder writtne, do declare unto all the true [th] we came not hither to live without government as pretended, and therefore doe proclayme Charles the Second our lawful lord and king: and doe voluntarily submit our selves and all our lands that we have bought of the English and Indians: vnder his gracious protection: and do expect according to his gracious declaration: unto all his subjects which we are and desire to be subject to all his holson laws that are just and Righteous according to God and our capableness to receive: where unto we doe subscribe.

* * * * *

"The mark of SAMUEL ALLING,

"The mark of ROBERT HUDSONE, JOHN BRONDISH,

"The mark of FREDERICK HARMINSONE, "The mark of THOMAS APLEBE."

PETER DISBROW, JOHN COE,

The mark of THOMAS SIEDWELL, The mark of WILLIAM ODELE

It would appear from the language of this document that some suspicion had been cast upon the enterprise. The motive of these planters in going beyond the limits of previous settlements had been impugned. Hence their declaration that they "came not hither to live without government." There is evidence, too, that they felt themselves in danger from lawless and disorderly men, who were but too ready to join a new adventure; for at the same time with the above statement the settlers drew up the following compact, which they signed in the same manner:

"We do agree that for our land bought on the mayn land, called in the Indian Peningoe, and in English the Biaram land, lying between the aforesaid Biaram river and the Blind brook, bounded east and west with these two rivers, and on the north with Westchester path, and on the south with the sea, for a plantation, and the name of the town to be called Hastings.

"And now lastly we have jointly agreed that he that will subscribe to these orders, here is land for him, and he that doth refuse to subscribe hereunto we have no land for him. HASTINGS, July 26, 1662. The planters hands to these orders.

* * * * *

* * * * *

SAMUEL ALLING,

THOMAS APLEBE.

ROBERT HUTSON, JOHN BRONDISH, FREDERICK HARMINSON.

"August 11, 1662. These orders made by the purchasers of the land with our hands.

"PETER DISBROW, THOMAS SIEDWELL,

JOHN COE, WILLIAM ODELL."

While thus endeavoring to maintain good order in their little commonwealth, the settlers were anxious, as they had good reason to be, about their political situation. Great uneasiness was now felt throughout New England regarding the designs of Great Britain. The King, whose restoration the colonies reluctantly proclaimed, was thought to be not a little inclined to curtail the liberties of his subjects across the sea, and to repress the spirit of independence for which they were already becoming noted. Connecticut, however, by the skillful management of its agent, the celebrated John Winthrop, had obtained a royal charter conferring most valuable privileges: constituting that colony, in fact, a self-governing State, and reaffirming its claims to a wide extent of territory. The General Court at Hartford hastened to apprise the towns, and require their submission to the new order of things. Notice even was sent, to Governor Stuyvesant's great displeasure, as far as Oostdorp, or Westchester village, in New Netherland, where Connecticut men had settled some years before under grants from the Dutch. The Hartford government informed them that by the terms of the new charter they were included in the colony limits, and enjoined

upon them, "at their peril," to send deputies to the next meeting of the Court. Perhaps it was the very same messenger, riding "post haste" to the Dutch village, who turned aside from his course along the Westchester Path, as he reached Peningo Neck, and came down to the little island settlement with the good news of the charter. At all events, a message of like import reached the inhabitants of Hastings, and they gladly took steps to place themselves at once under the protection of the colony, and seek the rights and privileges of a fully constituted town. A meeting was called, and Richard Vowles was chosen to go to Fairfield, and there be qualified as constable for the plantation. Shortly after, the settlers addressed the following letter to the General Court:

"FROM HASTING THE 1 MTH 26: 1663.

"MUCH HONORED SIRS,—Wee the inhabitance of the townde of Hastings whose names are heer vnder writte: being seted upon a small tract of land lying betwixt Greenwich and Westchester: which land wee have bought with our money: the which: wee understand doth lye within your patant: and where as you have allredy required our subiection: as his majesties subjects, which we did willingly and redily imbrace and according to your desior: we sent a man to Fairfield, who have there takne the oathe of a Constable: we have now made choyse of our nayghbar John Bud for a deputi and sent him up to your Corte to act for us as hee shall see good; it is our desior: to have [some] settled way of government amongst us: and therefore we do crave so much favor at the hands of the honorable Cort: that whether they do make us a constable or aney other offesere that they would give him povr to grant a warrant in case of need because we be som what remote from other places: thus leaving it to yovr wise and judicious consideration we remayn yours to command:

" PETER DISBROW
 " RICHARD FROWLES
 " GEORGE CLERE
 " PHILIP GALPINE
 " JOHN COE
 " WILLIAM ODELL
 " JOHN BRONDIG
 " JOHN JAGSON
 " THOMAS STEDWELL
 his mark
 " WALTER LANCASTER
 his mark."

"This is ouer desier
 In the name of
 the Rest."

The modest request of the men of Hastings was granted, after some delay. At the session of the General Court in Hartford, on the 8th of October, 1663,—

"Ln^t John Bud" makes his appearance, and "is appoynted Commissioner for the Town of Hastings, and is inuested with Magistraticall power within the limits of that Town." Moreover, "Rich: Vowles is appoynted Constable for the town of Hastings, and Mr. Bud is to give him his oath."

Connecticut at the same time reasserted its claim to the territory west of this place, the General Court declaring that "all the land between *West Chester and Stamford* doth belong to the Colony of Connecticut."

Budd and Vowles had both been admitted, the year before, to the privileges of freemen; the former as an inhabitant of Southold, and the latter as an inhabitant of Greenwich. Perhaps Hastings, which had not yet been recognized as a plantation, was at that date considered to lie within the bounds of the latter town.

The little village now rejoiced in something like a well-ordered social state. It had a magistrate "commissionated to grant warrants," and also in case of need "to marry persons." It had a grave and discreet constable, with full power to apprehend . . .

"Such as are ouertaken with drinke, swearing, Sabbath breaking, slighting of the ordinances, lying, vagrant persons, or any other that shall offend in any of these."

With these safeguards and immunities, the settlers remained for another year or two upon their island. Meanwhile, however, certain changes had been going on, betokening the removal of some, at least, of the inhabitants from the island to the main. On the 28th of April, 1663, the four purchasers—Disbrow, Coe, Stedwell and Budd—by a deed of sale conveyed the island, together with the land on the main, to the following planters: Samuel Allen, Richard Vowles, Philip Galpin, Thomas Applebe, William Odell, John Brondig and John Coe. According to the terms of this transfer, the planters were to pay forty shillings a lot, in cattle or corn, between the above date and the month of January, ensuing.

SETTLEMENT ON THE MAINLAND—THE VILLAGE OF RYE.—It was not until two or three years after their arrival that the settlers made an attempt to occupy the mainland opposite Manussing Island. About 1664 the colony was joined by several new families. The names of Thomas and Hachaliah Browne, George Lane, George Kniffen, Stephen Sherwood and Timothy Knap first appear about this time. In September of the same year New Amsterdam was surrendered to the English, who soon made

themselves masters of the entire province. Those who had hesitated to settle on the territory claimed by the Dutch now came forward. Among them, no doubt, were the families referred to. There was no room for



LAND GATE, RYE, ENGLAND.

the new-comers on the island, and so they were given lands on the coast. The first houses were built at no great distance from the ford at the southern end of Manussing Island. Hachaliah Browne—according to a family tradition—built his first house on the bank which overlooks the beach, in a field now belonging to the heirs of the late Newberry Halsted. Others settled near by. "Burying Hill," an elevated point of land beautifully situated at the eastern extremity of the beach, was doubtless occupied very early as a building spot. These houses formed a suburb, so to speak, of the village on the island. In later years the island was known

as "The Old Town." The road leading to the beach was anciently known as "y^e highway that goeth to y^e Old Town Plat."

One of the first buildings erected on the highway was the mill, which stood at the head of the creek or at the mouth of Blind Brook, on the opposite side of Peningo Neck, and within half a mile of the beach. John Budd was the proprietor. The spot where the mill stood, on the west side of Blind Brook Creek, on the south side of the bridge, over which the cross-road from Milton to the post road passes, is still pointed out. Traces of the mill were to be seen within the memory of persons now living, and part of the dam still remains and forms the road-bed.

By the year 1665, therefore, two infant settlements had sprung up within "the bounds of Hastings,"—one on the island, the other on the shore of Peningo Neck, stretching across to Blind Brook. The latter had already begun to be known by the name of Rye, given presumably in honor of Thomas and Hachaliah Browne. They were the sons of Mr. Thomas Browne, a gentleman of good family from Rye, in Sussex County, England, who settled at Cambridge, Mass., in 1632. It is worthy of note that the names of two neighboring seaports on the English coast, Rye and Hastings, should have been bestowed upon the Peningo settlement.

On the 11th of May, 1665, the General Court of Connecticut passed an act merging these settlements under the name which the town has borne ever since. The act is as follows:

"It is ordered that the Villages of Hastings and Rye shall be for the future conioyned and make one Plantation, and that it shall be called by the appellation of Rye."

At the following session of the General Court Mr. Lawes and Lieutenant Richard Olmsted were appointed to view the lands appertaining to Hastings and Rye, "to see what there is that may be sutable for a plantation and to make returne to the Court at the next session." There is no record of any such "returne," but it was probably favorable, for Rye was now enrolled as a town, bearing its portion of the public charge.

Within the next five or six years the village on Manussing Island became extinct. The location on the mainland was more favorable, and the settlers, with a single exception, removed to Rye. Philip Galpin alone objected to this change. He did not wish to leave the island and felt sorely aggrieved that his neighbors should do so. He accordingly petitioned the General Court at Hartford that they be restrained from departing. On the 11th of May,

1671, the magistrates decided that Galpin was not "oppressed" by the removal, as alleged, and advised him to comply with his neighbors and remove with them. A few planters besides Galpin remained, notwithstanding the general migration. As late as the year 1720 the island had a population sufficiently large to claim the right to erect a pound. The Coes, Sherwoods and Vowles were the principal owners in 1707, and about the middle of the same century the families of Fowler, Carpenter, Dusenberry and Haviland appear as the owners.

The new town-plot lay at the upper end of the Neck, along the eastern bank of Blind Brook. The present Milton road was the village street, on either side of which the home-lots of the settlers were laid out. The Field Fence was the northern boundary of the village. This inclosure began where Grace Church Street now begins and stretched across the Neck from Blind Brook to the late residence of Mr. James H. Titus.



RYE, IN SUSSEX COUNTY, ENGLAND.

Somewhere, probably in the neighborhood of the spot where the district school-house long stood, north of the Episcopal Church, was the Field Gate. The home-lots, which commenced here, were generally of two or three acres each. Some are represented as to size and position by the grounds of Messrs. Bell, Ennis, Budd and others, near the Episcopal Church. They extended down the street as far as the road leading to the beach. The lots on the west side ran across to Blind Brook; those on the east side reached back to the "town-field." The town field was the tract in the rear of the home-lots on the east side of the Milton road. It comprised the whole space between Grace Church Street on the north and Milton on the south. This area is now covered by the lands of Messrs. Greacen, Anderson, Downing and others. Here was the common pasture-ground of the early inhabitants. Some of the settlers, however, had their meadow lots within this tract; and in after-years the whole of the town-field

was by degrees apportioned among the proprietors till nothing remained of the "commons." A part of the town-plot was known in early times as "The Plains." This name belonged to the level grounds bordering on Blind Brook, at the upper end of the village, and extending from the present stone bridge to the neighborhood of the railway station. It is not unlikely that this tract may have been originally cleared and improved by the Indians, thus offering a favorable spot for the site of a new plantation. The home-lots on The Plains appear to have been held as the choicest part of the village grounds. They fronted on the street, or Milton road, and back to the brook, the post road, which now passes through the village, not having been opened as yet.

The houses erected were not mere temporary structures, as on Manussing Island, but solid buildings of wood or stone, some of which have lasted until our own day. They were long, narrow structures, entered from the side, and stood with gable end close upon the road and huge chimney projecting at the rear. Each dwelling generally contained two rooms on the ground floor—a kitchen and a "best room"—with sleeping apartments in the loft.

From the town records and a few remaining vestiges of olden time we are enabled to form some idea of the village as it was constituted two centuries ago. The mill stood a little way back from the lower end of the street. John Budd was now dead, but his son-in-law, Lieutenant Joseph Horton, was the proprietor. His house stood near by the mill. In the same vicinity were the houses of George Lane, Jacob Pearce, Robert Bloomer and others. Higher up the street, on the left hand, along the bank of the brook or creek, lived William Odell, John Ogden, Jonathan Vowles, John Budd, Jr., and George Kniffin. Traces of some of these houses have been seen by persons still living. On the corner of the road leading to the beach was the house of Timothy Knap. Beyond, on a knoll directly south of the residence of Mrs. Edward P. Cowles, stood the homestead of the Purdy family. The late residence of Hachaliah Brown, now owned by the estate of C. V. Anderson, occupies, it is believed, the spot where his ancestor, of the same name, settled. Opposite the Episcopal Church, on the site of the old house now owned by Mr. Daniel Budd, was the dwelling of John Boyd. The church itself stands on the southeast corner of "Mr. Collier's lot." The old stone tavern, removed some fourteen or fifteen years ago, and known as "Van Sicklen's," was undoubtedly built at a very early day. It is thought to have been for a time the home of Peter Disbrow. Here Mr. Isaac Denham, son of the first minister of Rye, lived afterwards.

For several years the settlers did not venture into the wilderness beyond the Field Fence. In the course of time a few houses were built a little way beyond this boundary. Where the Penfield House, as it was formerly called (owned lately by Mr. D. H. Mead), stands

now, Peter Brown, a son of the first Hachaliah Brown, lived. On the opposite corner, and where the Roman Catholic Church now stands, was "George Lane's old house-lot." Above this, in the block bounded by the post road and Purchase Street, were the home-lots of John Banks, John Brondige, Joseph Purdy and others. Nearly opposite Park Institute stood the homestead of Thomas Merritt, Sr., mentioned as early as 1688. The parsonage, or minister's house, occupied the southeast corner of the "parsonage lot," a tract of land including between three or four acres, on Blind Brook, south of the house owned by the family of the late David H. Mead. Here resided Mr. Thomas Denham at the time of which we speak. There was no meeting-house, and the little congregation met in private dwellings, notably in that of Timothy Knap, to whom the town awarded forty shillings in 1682, "for the liberty of his house to meet in, and for beating of the drum for the time past."

Serious differences as to the tenure of lands appear to have arisen among the people of Rye at an early day. In the act by which the town was constituted, May 11, 1665, it is stated that "Mr. Gold, Mr. Lawes and John Banks, or any two of them, are desired and appointed to take pains to goe down to settle and issue such differences as may be disturbing to y^e inhabitants of those Villages of Hastings and Rye." The differences, however, continued unhealed, and, in 1668, the inhabitants of Rye and one Richard Bullard petitioned the General Court to interpose. On the 8th of October the court appointed Lieutenant Richard Olmsted, Thomas Fitch and John Holly to go to Rye speedily and endeavor to compose the differences "respecting land or other matters." The dispute arose from the fact that the title to the lands in Budd's Neck was held by John Budd, who assumed the right to settle people upon them "Extremely prejudiciall to the towne, without the towne's approbation," to quote the language of the petition. The petitioners therefore prayed that the neck of the land be delivered to the town upon payment to Budd "by Indian purchases, with interest, he abating for what land he hath sold if not prejudiciall to the towne." The signers of the petition were Peter Disbrow, Richard Vowles, Timothy Knapp, William Woodhull, John Brondig, Thomas Browne, Robert Bloomer, Stephen Sherwood, George Lane. The effort to "compose" the differences, made by the appointment of a committee on the part of the General Court, was evidently a failure; for, in May, 1671, a larger committee (Captain Nathan Gold, Mr. Thomas Fitch, Mr. Holly, Lieutenant Richard Olmstead and Mr. John Barr) was appointed for the same purpose and also to secure a minister to settle among the people of Rye. This mission also seems to have been without result; for, on the 14th of October, 1672, the court "order that Mr. Bird (Budd) and those of Rye that have impropriated the lands of Rye to themselves, shall appeare at the Generall Court in May next, to make appeare

their right, for then the Court intends to settle those lands according to righteousness, that so a plantation may be encouraged, and plantation worke may go forward to better satisfaction than formerly." The person thus summoned to Hartford was John Budd, *Jr.*, his father having died in 1670. What was done in his case does not appear from the records, but, at any rate, he was left in undisturbed possession of his lands. Budd's Neck was incorporated into the town of Rye, while the claims of Mr. Budd as proprietor were allowed. There is no evidence that a distinct patent for the tract was obtained from Connecticut; and it was not until the year 1720 that Joseph Budd, grandson of the first purchaser, obtained a patent for his lands from the government of the province of New York.

After the settlement of the dispute concerning Budd's Neck, the jurisdiction of the town appears to have been unquestioned. Local officers were sometimes appointed specifically for the "east side of Blind Brook" and the "west side."

Early in July, 1675, the settlers at Rye received intelligence of the Indian outbreak that marked the commencement of the bloody conflict known as "King Philip's War." It reached them by a letter from the Governor and Council of the colony, which was read at a meeting called by Joseph Horton, Thomas Browne and John Brondig. Rye was too far removed from the scene of conflict to be in immediate danger, but great alarm no doubt was felt. The fidelity of the neighboring tribes was doubted, and it was deemed prudent to provide against attack from that quarter. Accordingly, on the 5th of March, 1676, Thomas Lyon and Thomas Browne were appointed in town-meeting to choose a house or place to be fortified for the safety of the town. It was also resolved that the young men who should come into the fortification, and remained during the troubles, were to have an equal proportion of the undivided lands, "provided they be such as the town approve." The "fortified place" was undoubtedly the old stone house known as "Van Sicklin's," which has only disappeared in recent years. As the Indians of the neighborhood did not rise, the townsmen had no occasion to use it for purposes of defense. It was torn down in 1868, the Methodist Episcopal congregation having bought the place for a parsonage. An inner wall was discovered, which had evidently been constructed for defensive purposes. The house itself was a curious specimen of the substantial structures of the olden time. The walls were hollow and of great thickness. The beams supporting the floors measured eight

inches square. All the wood used was oak, hewn with the axe; the rafters were "tenoned into plate," without the use of nails, and the timber supporting the mantel in each of the two rooms on the ground floor was twelve feet and a half long and fourteen by nineteen inches thick. The old fort stood directly south of the present Methodist parsonage, and considerably nearer to the road. It measured twenty-four feet in width and forty in length. The main entrance in olden times was at the south side.

Alarm from another quarter was caused, in July, 1673, by the appearance of a fleet of twelve Dutch vessels in New York Bay. England was then at war with Holland, and it was feared the Dutch would attempt to recapture their North American possessions. They actually took New York and occupied the greater portion of the colony. Connecticut prepared



THE OLD FORT, RYE.

for war and Rye, as a border town, became a point of excitement and danger. On account of its proximity to the enemy, it was expressly excused from the requirement to raise men and arms. The adjoining town, Mamaroneck, submitted to the Dutch. The people of Rye remained firm. One of their leading men, Mr. John Banks, took a prominent part in the events which followed, being selected by the General Court as a messenger to the Dutch commander at New York. In December Rye united with Stamford and Greenwich in petitioning the General Court in Boston for help. The war-cloud was finally dispelled by the news of peace between England and the United Provinces, only to reappear again in 1690, when the French, having declared war against England, attempted to conquer the province of New York.

Among the Connecticut volunteers who took part on the English side, were some from Rye. In a "list of soldiers for y^e Expedition of Albany," who left

Fort William on the 2d of April, 1689, occur the names of Jacob Pearce, Richard Walters, Jonas Stevens and John Bassett, all "of Rye," together with others that are not so designated, but are recognizable as persons from this town: John Boyd, Philip Travis, Philip Galpin.

For the first twenty years, 1660-80, the settlers seem to have confined themselves to Peningo Neck, although the treaties with the Indians had secured to them all the lands between Byram River and Blind Brook, for a distance of "six or seven miles from the sea." Peningo Neck was also known as "the Purchase of the Eighteen." It was, as we have seen, the tract south of Westchester Path, or the mouth of Byram River. These were "the bounds of Hastings," afterward known as "the first Purchase of Peningo Neck," and within this tract the first divisions appear to have related to the lands "in the Field." Here, new home-lots of two or three acres each, and "new meadow-lots" of ten acres each, were

distributed among the proprietors out of the common lands "within the fence" which ran from Blind Brook to the nearest inlet of the Sound, along the present line of Grace Church Street. There was, very early, a division of lands in the Long Swamp, lying back of the town-lots situated on the east side of the "street," or Milton road. It ran through part of the farms, in recent



OLD FORT, GABLE END.

years, of Messrs. Halsted, Greacen and Anderson. Its soil was rich, requiring little improvement, and could be made to produce the rank meadow grass which was needed for the cattle. With the clearing of forests and decrease of streams, the swamps have greatly diminished, and in most places wholly disappeared. About 1670, there was a division of the lands on "Wolf-pit Ridge" or Plain. This name was afterward changed to *Pulpit Plain*. It designated the high lands on the road to Port Chester. The lands beyond this remained undivided till 1702. In that year there was a division of "building lots lying by the country road below the Steep Hollow." This was the name given to the beautiful glen that lies on the north side of the road to Port Chester. In 1678 the first division of lands on the north side of what is now Grace Church Street occurred. These were called the Hassock Meadow lots, and consisted of about ten acres each. In this division, George Kniffin received an allotment of land which has continued in the pos-

session of his descendants down to the present day.

The division of lands on "Barton's Neck" began about 1678. This was an important part of the territory comprehended in the first purchase on Peningo Neck. The name, however, is entirely obsolete. The "Neck" comprised all the lands now bordering on Grace Church Street, north of the road leading to Manussing Island, as far as the brook and inlet above Dr. Sands' house, near Port Chester. It included, therefore, the lands owned, of late years, by Messrs. Titus and Brooks, the Provost estate and others, ending with what is now Lyon's Point. The western boundary of the tract was Hassock Meadow Brook, which takes its rise in the valley behind the house of Mr. Jonathan Sniffin. The tract was about a mile in length, and lay just outside the "Field Fence," along the shore of the Sound. In the first division (1678) each proprietor of Peningo Neck received a share of the land, about six or eight acres each. New allotments were made down to 1723. The first farms in Rye had their origin here, the allotments being so arranged that each proprietor came in time to have a considerable portion of land, not in scattered parcels, but in contiguous parts. Gradually, as in the Field, the lands became absorbed by purchase, into the hands of a few proprietors. Chief among them was John Merrit, who, by the end of the century, had acquired most of the upper part of Barton's Neck, and from whom this part received the name it bore for perhaps a hundred years, of Merrit's Point. The Sherwoods, Coes and Ogdens also owned large portions of land here. Grace Church Street was not laid out through this tract until the beginning of the next century. There was a path or "drift-way" leading to the lots before this. But in 1701 the town appointed Jonathan Vowles, John Merrit, Sr., and Deliverance Brown, Sr., "to mark the road upon Barton's Neck and the highway down unto the salt water." This, undoubtedly, was Grace Church Street, a name, however, which we do not meet with until 1736. The lower part of this street, below the corner of the road leading to Manussing Island, originated in a path along the line of the Field Fence.

By the year 1680 the number of settlers had increased to forty-nine or fifty, and the lands north of the bounds of Hastings, between Blind Brook and Byram River, extending back into the country six or seven miles from the Sound, were beginning to be occupied. In 1678 a distribution of land, in lots of eighteen acres each, was made along the eastern line or Byram River. This region became known as Byram Ridge. The allotments began apparently at the lower end of King Street, in the present village of Port Chester, and extended along the western side of Byram River. They stretched across the colony line, being bounded on the east by the river. King Street is first alluded to in 1681, as a road laid out through this tract. New distributions were made from time

to time, until the whole of this beautiful ridge as far as the northern boundary of the town was divided up. About the time of the first allotment a bargain was made with the Indians for the purchase of the adjoining tract on the west. It was really included in the second purchase, but was claimed by an Indian chief, known as Lame Will or Limping Will, whom the settlers found it expedient to satisfy. It now constitutes the northern part of the town of Rye, or all that portion of it which lies above the present village of Port Chester, and is known as Lame Will's Purchase. The purchase was effected in the fall of 1680 by Robert Bloomer, Hachaliah Browne and Thomas Merritt, on behalf of the proprietors of Peningo Neck. The tract was called by the Indians Eaukecupacuson, and by the English Hog-Pen Ridge. It commenced at a point where the "branch" of Blind Brook joins the main stream. From thence the southern boundary ran eastward to "the old marked trees" at "the Great Swamp." Northward it extended along Blind Brook to certain other marked trees, where the line now divides the town of Rye from that of North Castle. A few weeks after the purchase of this tract the town, November 28, 1680, appointed Peter Disbrow, together with the three men previously sent, "for to go with the Indians to view some land lying between the Blind Brook and Byram River, and to make a thorow bargain with them if they shall see it best." Nearly a year elapsed before the final action was taken. On the 8th of October, 1681, however, Lame Will, for the consideration of "three coats received," sold to the inhabitants of Rye a tract of land "between Byram river and the Blind brook," or "Honge," apparently lying north of the preceding purchase, and within the present limits of North Castle.

The lands comprised in Will's purchases, along Blind Brook, do not appear to have been divided and improved until long after those on Byram Ridge. There was a manifest reluctance still to spread into the interior, and a strong preference for the neighborhood of the shore and river, especially in the direction of the older Connecticut settlements. We have good reason to believe that those lands were mostly appropriated, and many of them cleared and partly cultivated, before much advance was made into the forests lying immediately to the north. Twenty years after the first purchase on Byram Ridge, February 14, 1699-1700, the town selected Lieutenant Horton, Benjamin Horton, Joseph Purdy, Justice Brown, Sergeant Merritt and John Stoakham to lay out the White Plains Purchase and Lame Will's two purchases. But Lame Will's Purchase was not actually laid out until ten years later. In the mean time the town, at a meeting held in January, 1699-1700, made an offer to all who desired lands, to give them free use of lands for the space of ten years, and appointed Hachaliah Browne and George Lane, Sr., "to make out the lands to any person that shall take them up

as aforesaid." Under this act land was taken by several individuals in the yet undivided tract of Will's Purchase. Robert Bloomer, in 1701, took five acres, "lying on the lower end of the Hog-pen Ridge, being near the lower falls of Blind Brook." Here was located the mill long known by his name. In 1707 "the town granted unto Robert Bloomer, Jr., the stream of Blind brook at the falls of the said brook to erect a mill or mills, with this proviso, that the Said Bloomer does accomplish the said mill within the space of ten years, but if not, the stream to return unto the town again." On the 11th of April, 1709, "the lots laid out in Will's purchases were drawn for." Each allotment was of thirty-eight acres. On the 18th of February, 1711, "the second division of lots laid out in Lame Will's two purchases" occurred. These were situated higher up and on the east side of the colony line. A third draught of seven-acre lots followed. The proprietors of Will's purchases numbered thirty-four. The list comprises the names of nearly all the proprietors of Peningo Neck, who were evidently interested in both these acquisitions. But the companies were quite distinct; and there were several of the proprietors of the more recent purchases who had no rights among those of the former. Occasionally, it seems, they met together to consult upon matters of common interest. Thus,—

"At a meeting held in Rye by the Proprietors of the Neck of Apequamas and Peningo Neck and the purchasers of the White Plains and Will's purchases, June the 15th, 1715, Justice Browne, David Ogden, Justice John Hoyt, Richard Ogden, Samuel Purdy, George Lane, Jr., are chosen to take the care and the whole management of surveying the town's bounds of their lands to the best of their discretion, and to call out any person or persons in managing of the same."

The "layers out" were chosen from among those peculiarly fitted for the business, and among the persons thus selected, the names of Isaac Denham, John Brondig and the justices, Deliverance Brown and Joseph Purdy, most frequently occur. For discharging their duties they received, as their compensation, an additional allotment of land.

There was a tract of land adjoining the lower part of "Will's first purchase," but not included in it, which was held by the proprietors of Peningo Neck. This was the tract between Blind Brook and the Ridge road, south of the road to Park's Mill. The lower portion of this tract was called Brush Ridge and the upper part Branch Ridge. The former was divided about the same time as the first division of Will's Purchase; the latter in 1713. Samuel Brown, son of Deliverance, bought up a considerable part of the land on both ridges, a few years after the division, and thus procured a farm of one hundred acres, on which he resided.

The title to the lands in the town of Rye was vested in a corporation known as the "Proprietors," an institution not peculiar to the town itself, but known also to many other towns in Connecticut, and also in Massachusetts. Usually the settlers, before starting for their intended location, would enter into a written

agreement, after which they would send an agent or committee ahead to purchase land from the Indians. The bargain having been effected, they would make application to the General Court of the colony for confirmation of their title. This request was generally granted, and the company became a corporation of proprietors. The corporation owned the land as tenants in common until it should be divided and assigned for individual occupation. Every member of the company was entitled to a certain share of land for immediate use. He also possessed a right or share in the undivided or common lands, by which he could claim his portion of any part of them that might be distributed at any time. These were called Proprietors' Rights, and were handed down, in most cases, from father to son, as valuable privileges. Sometimes, however, a proprietor would sell his right in the undivided lands to a new-comer in the settlement, who would thus acquire all the privileges of an original member. More frequently the proprietor would sell a part of his proprietary right, and then the new member would become joint owner with the seller in any lands that might fall to him in future.

The original proprietors in Rye were Peter Disbrow, John Coe and Thomas Stedwell, with whom were afterwards associated John Budd and William Odell. On the 28th of April, 1663, Disbrow, Coe, Stedwell and Budd conveyed the island, together with the mainland which they had purchased, to a body of seven planters,—Samuel Alling, Richard Vowles, Philip Galpin, Thomas Applebe, William Odell, John Brondig and John Coe.

The four grantors, no doubt, retained their personal interest in the property thus conveyed, so that the new body of proprietors consisted of eleven persons. Another was probably added before long, making twelve, and this, no doubt, was the original number of the company afterwards designated as "The Eighteen Proprietors of Peningo Neck." About 1690 the list of proprietors comprised, it is thought, the following names: Peter Disbrow, John Coe, Thomas Stedwell, George Kniffin, John Brondig, William Odell, Richard Vowles, John Ogden, Philip Galpin, Jacob Pierce, George Lane, Isaac Sherwood, John Banks, John Purdy, Thomas Merritt, John Merritt, Thomas Browne and Hachaliah Browne.

The number of proprietors fluctuated, although they were always spoken of in popular parlance as "The Eighteen," but the number of shares remained the same. Parts of shares were often sold. The proprietors met for the transaction of business twice every year, and the records of their proceedings are contained in the same books with those of the town-meetings, but entered separately. From time to time at these meetings a new division of the common lands was ordered. Various other matters also engaged the attention of the proprietors. In 1711 they "agree to build a school-house upon their own charge." In 1708 they lay out a tract of land for a sheep pasture. In

1709 they grant to Isaac Denham "liberty to make a woulf-pitt on the pull-pitt plaine, and to fence in half an acre of land about" it. One of the last meetings, of which there is a full account, was held November 23, 1731.

At this meeting a committee was chosen to lay out and distribute the undivided lands remaining, and sell, and appropriate the proceeds of the sale for their trouble. Some small parcels are mentioned as still left. About this time, probably, the affairs of the company were wound up, and it soon ceased to be. There were common lands held and distributed long after this period; but these belonged to the town, being outside of the proper limits of the first purchase on Peningo Neck.

A last division of Peningo Neck is mentioned in 1751 as having occurred since 1744. Among the lands then distributed was a tract on the Boston road, above the house where Mr. Ezraiah Wetmore now lives. In this division a parcel of land was laid out "to the Lyons."

TOWN GOVERNMENT—DEPUTIES TO THE GENERAL COURT—BOUNDARY DISPUTE.—The little island settlement of Hastings was never a town, in the strict sense of the word, though honored with that title in the records of the General Court of Connecticut. It was not enumerated among the plantations of the colony, nor had it any deputy in the court. In October, 1663, "Ln' John Bud" was appointed commissioner for the town of Hastings, and invested with "Magistratical power" within the limits of the town. At the same time Richard Vowles was appointed town constable. Rye is mentioned for the first time in the records of the General Court October 13, 1664, when the court ordered that Lieutenant Budd continue in his place of commissioner for Hastings and Rye. At the following spring session "Peter Disborough" was admitted to a seat as the representative of Rye, which was henceforth recognized as one of the plantations of the colony. October 12, 1665, Richard Vowles appeared as deputy, and Rye for the first time has a place in the "List of Persons and Estates." The town brand for horses, as fixed by the court, was the capital letter R. May 10, 1666, Lieutenant Budd was the deputy. Rye was now included within county limits. "From the East bounds of Stratford," the court ordered, "to y^e west bounds of Rye, shal be for future one County, w^{ch} shal be called the County of fairfield. And it is ordered that the County Court shal be held at Fairfield on the second Tuesday in March and the first Tuesday in November yearly."

May 9, 1667, the court confirmed Joseph Horton as "Lieutenant to the trayn band of Rye." "Mr. Richard Lawes (Law) and Mr. John Holly are chosen Commissioners for the Townes of Standford, Greenwich & Rye, and to assist in the Execution of Justice at the courts at Fayerfield for the yeare ensuing."

October 8, 1668, Rye sent two deputies to Hartford, John Budd and Richard Vowles. The latter was again

chosen deputy in 1669. May 12, 1670, John Banks and "Peter Disbroe" appear for Rye, and at the October session Timothy Knap was deputy. In May, 1671, Banks and Disbrow again represented Rye. At this session the court decided that the bounds of Rye should "extend up into the country northward twelve miles." May 9, 1672, the court,—

"desires and appoynts Ltⁿ Olmsted, Mr. John Holly, Jonathan Lockwood and Ltⁿ Joseph Orton, a committee to measure on an east north-east lyne from Mamoreneck River to the west bownds of Fayerfeild, and to make report to this Court in October next, the distance twixt the sayd places and the quantitie of miles belonging to each of those plantations. This to be don at the charge of the townes of Norwalke, Standford, Greenwich & Rye."

A similar committee was appointed in 1673,—

"to consider of those lands between Stratford and Momoreanoke River that are not already granted by order of the Court to any plantation; and to proportion them to the severall plantations between Stratford and Momoreanoke River, as they judge may be most equal and accomodating to the plantations as now they are settled."

In the same year the General Court confirmed the report of a committee appointed to settle the bounds and dividing lines of the several towns in Fairfield County. "The bownds between Greenwich and Rye," according to this act, "is to be from the mouth of Byram River, to run up the River one quarter of a mile above the great stone lyeing in the cross path by the S^d Riuer; and from thence the sayd comons, upwards, between Standford bownds and the Colony line, is to be equally diuided between them by a parrallel line wth Standford and Norwalke, to the end of their bownds up in the country."

October 12, 1676, the court appointed a committee to put a value upon all the lands in the several plantations, determining the rate of their valuation in the list of estates. Lands at Rye were to be estimated "as Stonington,"—that is "for one fowerth of their improved land by tillage, moweing and English pasture to be listed twenty shillings p. acre; the other three partes at ten shillings pr. acre; and all other lands perticularly impropriated by fence at one shilling per acre."

May 9, 1678, Lieutenant Joseph Horton, of Rye, was "commissioned to grant warrants and to marry persons." This commission was repeated in 1679 and 1680, and in 1681 Lieutenant Horton was made commissioner, or justice of the peace, for the town.

At the October session of the General Court in 1681, Peter Disbrow was deputy again from Rye, and was remitted his county rate for the year ensuing, on account of the "great losse" that had befallen him by fire.

May, 1682, John Ogden, of Rye, presented himself before the General Court and, on behalf of the people, complained that sundry persons, and particularly Frederick Philipse, had been making improvements of lands within their bounds. Mr. Philipse had been building mills near Hudson River, encroaching thereby upon the town's territory, which was believed to extend in a northwesterly direction from the mouth of Mamaroneck River to the Hudson, and even be-

yond. The General Court gave Mr. Ogden a letter to the Governor of New York protesting against such proceedings, and reminding him that by the agreement made in 1664, a line running northwest from the mouth of Mamaroneck River to the Massachusetts line was to be the dividing line between Connecticut and New York.

Timothy Knap was deputy in October, 1683, at the last meeting of the General Court of Hartford at which deputies from Rye were present until the revolt of the town to Connecticut, some years later. In the following month, November 28, 1683, Rye was ceded to the province of New York, according to the articles of agreement then concluded for the establishment of the boundary line. Rye remained unwillingly under the rule of New York for several years, until, smarting under certain grievances, the inhabitants "revolted" back to Connecticut. They were strongly attached to the colony, and it would seem that even while submitting outwardly to the new government, they made overtures to their former friends, asking to be received back. Thus, as early as 1686, we find them applying for a patent, doubtless in view of an order which the General Court had issued the year before to all the towns within its jurisdiction, relative to the securing of charters for their lands. November 23d, "the town empowered Benjamin Colyer and John Brondige to treat with the governor for a general patent for the township of Rye." The proprietors of Peningo Neck at the same time authorized these persons to obtain a particular patent in their behalf for the said Neck. The court, it appears, however well inclined, did not see fit just then to grant either of those applications. Again, in 1692, at the October session of the General Court, "Mr. Underhill, of Rye, and Zachary Roberts of Bedford," were in attendance and the court granted them an allowance for their expenses. Finally, at a meeting of the Governor and Council, January 19, 1697, Thomas Merritt and Deliverance Brown appeared in behalf of "the town of Rie," with the request that the plantation might be owned as included within the colony and that a charter be granted to them for their lands. The petition was granted and a patent for the town was ordered to be prepared forthwith. In this patent the boundaries of the township were described in the following language:

"Bounded westward eight miles upon the Dividing Line between the Province of Newyork and the Colonie of Connecticutt according as it was settled by his Maiesties Comissioners as appears by their act or Report thereupon. And Eastward on a line beginning at the mouth of Byram River and Running up the said River one quarter of a mile above the Great Stone lying in the path by the said River and from thence Continued by a parrallel line eight miles into the Countrey and bounded southward upon the sea and northward upon the Wildernesse."

This tract was bargained, granted, enfeoffed and

confirmed by Robert Treat, the Governor of the colony, "to Joseph Theale, Thomas Merritt, Deliverance Brown, John Horton, Joseph Horton, Francis Purdie, Hechaliah Brown, Timothie Knap, George Lane and John Merritt, their heirs, assignes and their Associates forever," who were to hold it as of "his Majesties mannor of East Greenwich [in Kent] to have and to hold in free and Comon Soccage, And not in Capite nor by Knight Service. Excepting and reserving for his Majestie, his heirs and successors, the fift part of all the Oar of Gold and Silver which shall be found therein from time to time." At the meeting of the General Court, May 13, 1697, "Mr. Vmphrie Vnderhill" and Deliverance Brown took their seats as deputies. The court "did by their vote declare their approbation of the act of the Councill, January the 19th, 1696 [1697] in undertaking the protection of the townes of Rie and Bedford as members of this corporation, and appointed John Horton Lieut. for the town of Rye, and John Lyon to be their Ensign."

At the next spring session, May 12, 1698, Mr. Joseph Horton was the representative from Rye. Captain Humphrey Underhill was sent to the court in October of the same year. Deliverance Brown, of Rye, was appointed one of the justices of the county of Fairfield; and in October, 1699, the deputies of this town appeared for the last time. They were "M^r Tho^s Merritt" and "Lieut^e Jn^o Horton." The following year, the King having decided the boundary controversy adversely to the claims of Connecticut, the court gave order, October, 1700, that "a signification thereof be sent to the inhabitants of Rye and Bedford, signed by the secretary, that they are freed from duty to this governm^t and that they are under the governm^t of Newyorke."¹

October, 1664	Ln ^t John Budd.	October, 1676	Timothy Knap.
October, 1665	Richard Vowles.	May, 1677	John Brundige.
October, 1666	Lt. Bud.	October, 1677	Mr. John Bankes.
May, 1667	Mr. Jn ^o Bud.	May, 1678	Mr. John Bancks.
October, 1668	Mr. John Budd.	October, 1678	Timothy Knap.
	Richard Vowles.	October, 1679	Peter Disbrough.
May, 1669	Richard Fowles.	May, 1680	Mr. John Bankes.
May, 1670	Mr. John Banks.	May, 1681	John Braindige.
	Peter Disbroe.	October, 1681	Peter Disbroe.
October, 1670	Timothy Knap.	October, 1682	Timothy Napp.
May, 1671	Mr. John Banckes.	October, 1683	Timothy Knap.
	Peter Disbroe.	May, 1697	Mr. Vmphrie Vnderhill.
May, 1672	Mr. John Bankes.		Mr. Deliverance Brown.
	Mr. Jos. Orton.	May, 1698	Mr. Joseph Horton.
June, 1672	Mr. John Bankes.	October, 1698	Capt ^e Vmphrie Vnderhill.
October, 1672	Mr. John Bankes.	October, 1699	Mr. Tho ^s Merritt.
May, 1673	Peter Disbroe.		Lieut ^e Jn ^o Horton.
October, 1674	Mr. John Ogden.		
May, 1675	Mr. John Bankes.		
July, 1675	Mr. John Bankes.		
May, 1676	Peter Disbroe.		

Meanwhile the authorities of New York had vainly endeavored to induce the people of Rye to accept the arrangement which had transferred them from the

mother colony of Connecticut. In 1685 Governor Dongan issued a proclamation requiring the people of Rye and Bedford to appear before him and prove their title to the lands upon which they were seated. This summons, it appears, was not obeyed. The consequence was that Rye was despoiled of that portion of its territory afterwards known as Harrison's Purchase, and which was one of the earliest acquisitions of the settlers of Rye. The tract was situated above Westchester Path, between Blind Brook and Mamaroneck River, and extended as far north as Rye Pond. It was in consequence of the failure of the people of Rye to secure the revocation of the grant to Harrison that they "revolted" back to Connecticut. The town, in fact, seceded, renouncing the authority of the provincial government and returning to Connecticut. For four years Rye was a part of the latter colony. From 1697 to 1700, inclusive, the inhabitants designated themselves as living in Rye, "in the county of Fairfield in the colony of Connecticut." They applied to the General Court at Hartford for the settlement of any matters in dispute and the court seems to have considered and disposed of such applications precisely as in the case of any town east of Byram River. In 1700, however, the King's order in Council placed them back within the jurisdiction they had renounced, "forever thereafter to be and remain under the government of the Province of New York." The people acquiesced in this decision, but at a meeting held on the 29th of September, 1701, Deliverance Brown, Sr., was chosen to go to New York to make the town's grievances known to the Governor and Council. At another meeting in February, 1702-3, the town, "by a major vote," chose Captain Theale, George Lane, Sr., and Isaac Denham "to forewarne any person or persons that shall lay out any Lands within the towne bounds without the towne's approbation or order; that is to say, within the township of Rye."

For a period of seventy years and more the town was harassed by the famous boundary dispute between the colonies of New York and Connecticut. In 1731 the line was at length virtually fixed where it is now considered to be. Strictly speaking, however, the question is an open one even yet. After a lapse of two hundred years the boundary between New York and Connecticut remains unsettled. By the erratic course of the line five towns and part of a sixth, which would otherwise fall within the territory of New York, are cut off and inclosed within the limits of Connecticut. Greenwich, Stamford, Darien, New Canaan, Norwalk and a part of Wilton are thus secured to Connecticut, while Rye just falls short of being included.

The differences as to the boundary question began with the Dutch and continued under the English domination. The western boundary of Connecticut, as agreed upon by representatives of the two colonies on the 28th of October, 1664, was the Mamaroneck River and a line drawn from the eastern side, "where

¹Following is a list of the deputies from Rye to the General Court 1664-1700.

y° fresh water fall into y° Salt" at high-water mark, north-northwest to the line of Massachusetts. The line thus determined would have intersected the Hudson at West Point, and cut off a large tract of land on the other side of the river before reaching the line of Massachusetts, which, at that time, it was claimed, ran across the continent to the sea. A survey made in 1680 showed the people of Rye the extent of the country which, under this compact, might be claimed by Connecticut. As the remotest settlement of the latter colony, the territory of Rye would, of course, reach to the extreme western boundary, wherever that might be fixed. It appears that the people of Rye attempted to enforce this claim. Some of them—who they were we do not know—undertook about this time to occupy and settle the lands along the Hudson which fell within the line traced from the mouth of Mamaroneck River. Meeting with opposition in this attempt, they complained to the Legislature of Connecticut, who gravely presented the matter to the Governor of New York as a grievance that called for redress. Nothing came of this protest, and in November, 1683, the articles were concluded between Governor Dongan and Council of New York and the Governor and delegates of Connecticut, by which the dividing line was placed very nearly where it has remained ever since. It was agreed on both sides that the line should run as originally intended—about twenty miles east of the Hudson River. But it became evident that to follow this measurement rigidly would be to inflict a serious injury upon Connecticut. Under the terms of her charter she had long before planted several towns beyond the limits thus defined. It was, therefore, conceded that these five towns should remain a part of Connecticut, the boundary being so traced as to exclude them from the province of New York, though by so doing it must be made to approach considerably nearer to the Hudson than the distance agreed upon for its general course. Indeed, the nearest of these towns—Greenwich—is actually within *eight* miles of the Hudson at its northwestern corner. As an offset, however, to the tract thus surrendered, New York was to gain an "equivalent tract" from Connecticut. A strip of land along the boundary, north of the excepted towns, was to be measured off, just wide enough to embrace as many acres—sixty-one thousand four hundred and forty—as they contained, and this tract, lying beyond the required distance of twenty miles, was to belong to New York. It measured two miles in width and over fifty miles in length, and was afterwards known, very appropriately, as "The Oblong." In pursuance of the agreement, the boundary was to begin at the mouth of Byram River, a small stream dividing the towns of Rye and Greenwich, at a point about thirty miles from the city of New York. This river was to be followed as far as the head of tide-water, or about a mile and a half from the Sound, to a certain "Wading-place," where the common road crossed the

stream. Here a rock, known as "the Great Stone at the Wading-place," was to be a boundary mark. From this point the line was to run north-northwest till it should reach a point eight miles from the Sound. A line twelve miles in length was then to be measured, running eastward parallel to the general course of the Sound. From its termination another line of eight miles was to be traced, again running north-northwest. Thence, and for the remainder of its course, the boundary was to run parallel to the Hudson River, in a northerly direction to the Massachusetts line, at a distance of twenty miles, besides the equivalent tract. This determination of the matter was highly displeasing to the town of Rye, which found itself cut off from the mother colony of Connecticut, to which it was so heartily attached. The Governor of Connecticut and his associates anticipated the dissatisfaction which followed their action in Rye, and addressed a letter to the selectmen, expressing their regret at having been compelled by



THE GREAT STONE AT THE WADING-PLACE.

stress of circumstances to cede the town to New York. On the 8th of May, in the following year, the Legislature of Connecticut formally ratified the agreement, and appointed a surveyor and others to attend to the laying out of the line. This duty was performed in the following October. Governor Dongan's proclamation, issued on the 4th of June, 1685, empowered the high sheriff of Westchester County to warn all the inhabitants of Rye and Bedford to appear before the Governor and Council on the 2d or 3d of October next ensuing to show what right and title they had to their possessions. The summons was not obeyed, and the towns of Rye and Bedford boldly declared the arrangement to be null and void, and asserted their independence of New York and allegiance to Connecticut. For ten years disaffection smouldered, the authority of the province was ignored, taxes were paid but irregularly to either government; and whenever possible, matters in controversy were carried up to Hartford, and Hartford magistrates came down to perform their functions at Rye. These were troublous times in the

town. Feuds and dissensions among themselves added to the perplexity of the inhabitants. Some of them, it would appear, sided with the province in the controversy, and hence, doubtless, some of the actions for defamation and other proofs of disturbance which we find on record about this time. At length the grant in 1695 to John Harrison of lands belonging to Rye caused the people to break out into open revolt. On the 19th of January, 1697, Rye and Bedford applied to the General Court of Connecticut to be taken under its care, and were received. On the 8th of April, 1697, Benjamin Collier, high sheriff of Westchester County, undertook to hold an election for members of the General Assembly of New York in Rye. Only sixteen or seventeen men, however, made their appearance at the place of election, and when the clerk had finished reading the writ of election, "up comes Major Sellick, of Standford," says the sheriff, "with about fifty Dragoes, whom he called his life-guard, with their arms presented, and demanded my business." Thereupon the sheriff had the King's writ read again for the benefit of Major Sellick, who "fell into hard words, and said he came there to protect the Inhabitants of Rye under their government of Connecticut." "The which," adds the sheriff, "I denied, and said was within my Bailiwick. But, after much banter, he invited us into a house and withdrew himself from his Company, and did acknowledge his Excellency to be their Captain-General, and so I left him."

This raid of Major Sellick caused considerable stir. It was denounced by the General Assembly of New York as "a forcible invasion of His Majesty's right and dominion of this His Majesty's Province;" and the Assembly further declared that it was "humbly of opinion that the inhabitants of the said towns, Rye and Bedford, ought not to continue in their defection, without incurring the Pains and Penalties established by law upon such as rebel against His Majesty's Government." They therefore petition the Governor to "address his proclamation requiring the inhabitants of the said towns to return unto their faith and allegiance at a certain day, and assure them of His Majesty's grace and pardon upon that condition,—otherwise that they may be proceeded against as the law directs." They would also have His Excellency to represent unto the government of Connecticut "the great evil they commit by protecting such of His Majesty's subjects that have revolted;" how they have thereby "lessened the strength of His Majesty government here,—being a frontier province,—and by that means given great advantage to His Majesty's declared enemies, the French. And if they have any right or claim in the law to those towns of Rye and Bedford, that they may apply unto His Majesty, who is the sole Judge of extent and limits of his dominions in America, and submit the same unto his royal determination, and not by force of arms enter upon His Majesty's Dominions, to the

evil example of those disaffected to His Majesty's government, and the disuniting of strength of His Majesty's subjects, now necessary to be employed against His Majesty's enemies, the French."

Governor Fletcher issued his proclamation in all haste, on the next day, requiring the towns to return to their allegiance, and shortly after addressed his complaints to Connecticut. That colony replied promptly, disclaiming any intention of using force, and referring the whole matter to the King, who, they declared, had never annexed those towns to New York. After considerable recrimination between the two colonies, Governor Fletcher was recalled to England. Upon the arrival of his successor, Lord Bellomont, Connecticut sent a delegation to congratulate him. Lord Bellomont expressed his thanks for the compliment, but denied the reasons advanced by Connecticut for countenancing the towns of Rye and Bedford in their revolt. He also submitted a letter from the Lords Commissioners of Trade on the subject. Nearly two years elapsed before the controversy ended.

On the 29th of March, 1700, King William III. approved and confirmed the agreement of 1683 and 1684, whereby Rye and Bedford were included in New York; and on the 10th day of October following, the General Court at Hartford released Bedford and Rye from all allegiance.

In the mean time the people of Rye had held their town-meetings as usual, choosing their officers and attending to the division and improvement of their lands. Deliverance Brown and Captain Joseph Theall had been their justices before the separation from New York, and retained their offices for years afterwards. They, with the constables, Robert Bloomer and Caleb Hyat, and the townsmen, at the head of whom was Hachaliah Brown, kept good order in the little settlement. They yielded without demur to the final decision of their case by the crown. So testifies Deliverance Brown in a petition to the Governor in their behalf for relief from excessive taxation. No further claim upon the territory of Rye was made by Connecticut, nor do the people appear to have renewed their attempt to join that colony. Yet for thirty years more, until the completion of the boundary survey in 1731, there was an unsettled feeling among them relative to their political state. This was particularly the case with reference to the division line between the towns of Rye and Greenwich. There was a protracted dispute between the two towns on this subject; and, after various failures to effect a settlement, New York and Connecticut selected commissioners, who met at Rye in April, 1725, and began the work of marking the boundary. They started at "the Great Stone at the Wading-place," which had been designated as the point of beginning forty-one years before. Their survey was extended as far as that of 1684, to "the Duke's trees" at the northwest angle of the town of Greenwich, where

three white oaks had been marked as the termination of the former survey. Here the work was suspended for want of funds, and it was not resumed until the spring of 1731. The survey was then completed to the Massachusetts line; the "equivalent tract" or "oblong" was measured "and set off to New York," and the line dividing the province of New York from the colony of Connecticut was designated by monuments at intervals of two miles. The "Great Rock at the Wading-place" may still be found at the north-eastern end of the bridge crossing the Byram River. Starting at this rock, the boundary line strikes across to King Street, and follows the course of that road for about two miles. At the distance of five miles from the wading-place it crosses Blind Brook near the head of that stream at an angle which terminates the territory of Rye. The famous "Duke's trees" are about two miles north of this point.

The boundary line laid down in 1731 remained without disturbance until 1855, when the question arose as to its existing definiteness. On some portions of the line the marks had disappeared and along the whole distance the greatest uncertainty existed. Residents near the border refrained from voting in either State, while officers of justice and tax collectors hesitated to exercise their authority up to any well-defined limit. These circumstances were taken advantage of by those who wished to evade the payment of taxes or the enforcement of the law. In May, 1855, the General Assembly of Connecticut took steps to have the true position of the boundary line ascertained, by means of a new survey and the erection of new monuments. In the following year the New York Legislature took similar action and the commissioners appointed under the several acts employed an engineer to run the line. The commissioners could not agree, however, as to the method of running the line, and nothing was done. In August, 1859, new commissioners were appointed on the part of each State, but, owing to the tenacity with which Connecticut adhered to the claim that a straight line should be run, regardless of existing monuments to indicate the original course, no agreement could be reached.

The last step taken in this matter occurred in 1860. On the 3d of April in that year, the Legislature of New York passed an act, empowering the commissioners formerly appointed "to survey and mark with suitable monuments" the "line between the two States, as fixed by the survey of 1731." They were to give due notice of their purpose to the commissioners of Connecticut, inviting them to join in the duties imposed upon them. But in case of their refusal or neglect to do so, they were to proceed alone, and perform the work assigned. The commissioners of New York, acting under these instructions, held several conferences with those of Connecticut. But the latter adhered inflexibly to the principle that the boundary to be established must be a *straight line*. The commissioners from New York therefore pursued the course en-

joined upon them. They fixed and marked the boundary line between the two States, placing monuments along its course at intervals of one mile, from the Massachusetts line to the mouth of Byram River. This work was undertaken on the 8th of June, 1860, and was completed in the autumn of that year.

On December 5, 1879, this line was agreed to by commissioners appointed by both States to establish the boundaries, which agreement was ratified by the legislatures of New York and Connecticut, and confirmed by Congress during the session of 1880-81.¹

In 1720 the people of Rye took steps to procure a patent for their lands from the British crown. The petitioners were Daniel Purdy, son of John Purdy, deceased; Samuel Brown and Benjamin Brown, "in behalfe of themselves and diverse other Inhabitants of the said Township of Rye." They asked for letters patent for the tract of land lying between Blind Brook and the colony line, from the southern extremity of Peningo Neck to "the Antient marked Trees of Limping Will's purchase." The Governor and Council referred the petition to the people of Rye at large. A town-meeting was held and it was decided that the inhabitants of Rye "unanimously have noe objection against granting the said Lands to the said Petitioners, but only that the same cannot be Granted to them by the Express Limitts and Boundaries as p'ticularly Described by the said Petition by reason it would Interfere with Lands already Granted to other persons." A somewhat different description was suggested,—*e. g.*, "beginning at a certaine Rock lyeing on a point of Land ^c known by the name of Town Neck point" . . . "together with a certaine Island Included known by the name of Monussing Island lyeing about Twenty Rodes from the maine Land."

An old controversy which had been slumbering for some years, regarding the ownership of the southern part of Manussing Island, was now revived. Samuel Odell, who claimed it, against Roger Park, remonstrated against the granting of a patent that should fail to secure him in his rights to that property. Depositions of various parties were taken on the subject before the Council. The surveyor-general, Cadwalader Colden, surveyed the tract, exclusive of the island, and made his report August 11, 1720. And finally, July 28th, the gentlemen of the Council to whom the petition of Rye had been referred, reported favorably upon it. Letters patent were issued August 11, 1720, to Daniel Purdy and Samuel and Benjamin Brown, for themselves and the other inhabitants of Rye, exclusive of Budd's Neck, that tract being held by another patent granted the month before.

The tract known to the natives as Quaroppas, and to the settlers as the White Plains, was purchased from the Indians in 1683. There was, however, an opposing claimant in the person of John Richbell, of Mamaroneck, a native of England, who had bought

¹See "Boundary" &c., in Chapter I., Volume I. of this work.

of the Indians in 1660, about the same time that Disbrow effected the purchase of Peningo Neck, the lands adjoining the town of Rye on the west. His right to these lands was confirmed in 1662 by the authorities of New Netherland, and in 1668 by the government of New York. Mr. Richbell's patent gave him possession of the "three necks" bounded on the east by Mamaroneck River, and on the west by Stony Brook, together with the land lying north of these bounds "twenty miles into the woods." The claim thus set up conflicted with that of the settlers of Rye. As the border town of Connecticut, they conceived that their bounds extended westward as far as the western line of that colony. This was a north-line drawn from the east side of Mamaroneck River northwest to the line of Massachusetts. But negotiations were now pending between Connecticut and New York for a more satisfactory settlement of that boundary, and on the 28th of November, 1683, the two governments agreed upon a line to begin at the mouth of Byram River. Meanwhile, doubtless anticipating this decision, the inhabitants of Rye, on the 22d of November, only six days before the date of that agreement, concluded a treaty with the Indian proprietors of the White Plains for the purchase of that tract. They describe it as "lying within the town bounds of Rye." Mr. Richbell was not inclined to yield his claims upon the territory, and petitioned Governor Dongan to grant an order to clear it, as he was "wholly obstructed and hindered by Rye men," who had "made a great Disturbance amongst them and Pretends a right to the same." The inhabitants of Rye were summoned to show cause why the lands in dispute should not of right belong and appertain to Mr. Richbell. The controversy seems to have remained unsettled. Mr. Richbell died soon after this, and the greater part of his lands, including all the northern portion, came into the possession of the Hon. Caleb Heathcote. In 1701 Colonel Heathcote obtained a confirmation of his rights to the Richbell estate by purchasing again from the Indians the "necks" formerly known as East and Great Neck (now called Orienta and Larchmont), with the lands lying north of them along Mamaroneck River to its source and across to the Bronx. This tract included the whole of the present town of Scarsdale, for which Colonel Heathcote immediately obtained letters patent from the British crown, securing to him that territory, and constituting the "lordship" or Manor of Scarsdale. But his Indian grants included also the whole of the White Plains, which the inhabitants of Rye had purchased from the Indians in 1683, and where some of them were already settled, although no division of the lands had yet been made. This new encroachment on their territory occurred just at the close of their unsuccessful attempt to return to the colony of Connecticut. Having failed to recover the lands appropriated by Harrison, the people of Rye probably had little hope of resisting these claims. Colonel Heath-

cote, however, seems to have been disposed to treat them with great fairness. In the charter which he obtained for his lands, exception was made of "y^e land called White Plains, which is in dispute y^e said Caleb Heathcote and some of y^e inhabitants of y^e town of Rye." To that land the patent gave him no further title than he already possessed. At a meeting held by "the Propertities of the White Plains purchase," February 24, 1701-2, Hachaliah Browne, Deliverance Browne, Humphrey Underhill, Thomas Merriut, Sr., Isaac Denham, John Stokham and Benjamin Horton were chosen a committee to agree with Colonel Heathcote concerning the running of a line between Colonel Heathcote's patent and the White Plains purchase. The controversy was still pending in 1702, when the Rev. Mr. Christopher Bridge, Hachaliah Browne, Ensign John Horton, Captain Joseph Budd, and John Hoyt were chosen to treat with Colonel Heathcote for a quittance of "all his claime of the above said White Plaine purchase." The question was still unsettled at the time of Colonel Heathcote's death, about four years later. Owing, doubtless, to these difficulties, the White Plains purchase remained undivided for many years. Finally, "at a meeting held in Rye by the Proprietors of the White Plaines purchase, February the 11, 1714-15," Captain Joseph Budd, Ensign John Horton, Mr. John Hoyt, Samuel Purdy, Caleb Hiat and George Lane, Jr., "are chosen to rectify all mistakes that has been formerly made by the former layers out of the White Plaines purchase, and also has power to add or diminish the just and true proportion of all the lotments of land which is in dispute to be above or under the true proportion, and to lay out proportionable all the remaining part of the abovesaid purchase; and when so done to make return to the said proprietors."

This committee appear to have completed their work in the year 1720. The lands divided were apportioned to forty-one proprietors, all of whom were inhabitants of Rye. In the following year, 1721, certain individuals who had already settled upon lands in White Plains obtained from the British government a patent for themselves and their associates for the whole tract of four thousand four hundred and thirty-five acres. These persons were Joseph Budd, John Hoyt, Caleb Hoyt, Humphrey Underhill, Joseph Purdy, George Lane, Daniel Lane, Moses Knap, John Horton, David Horton, Jonathan Lynch, Peter Hatfield, James Travis, Isaac Covert, Benjamin Brown, John Turner, David Ogden and William Yeomans. Several of them were actual settlers. White Plains drew largely on the strength of the community of Rye. Several of the latter's most enterprising inhabitants removed thither about this time. Some branches of nearly all the ancient families established themselves there, and, indeed, those families are now represented there more numerously than in the parent settlement. The accom-

panying diagram shows the location of their lands and houses. It is copied from the map accompanying a survey of the tract made before the granting of the patent. After the Revolutionary War, in 1788, the White Plains became a town distinct from Rye, of which it had till then formed a part.

TOWN OFFICERS OF RYE.—The local government of Rye in early times was administered by a considerable number of functionaries. About the year 1700, when there were sixty persons paying county rates, we find them choosing the following officers: A supervisor, five townsmen or selectmen, a constable, a town clerk or recorder, two assessors, two listers, two pounders, two fence-viewers, three sheep-masters and a collector. With a justice of the peace, besides two deputies to the General Court, and any number of "layers out" of public lands and roads, to say



THE WHITE PLAINS, IN 1721.¹

nothing of the captain, lieutenants, ensigns and sergeants of the "train-bands;" there seems to have been official business of some sort or other for nearly every member of the community.

The town clerk appears to have been the most important of the village worthies. But two persons filled the position during the first three-quarters of a

¹The references in the diagram are explained as follows in the original drawing:—A, Caleb Hyat's. B, Joseph Purdy's. C, Humphrey Underhill's. D, Sam^l Merritt's. E, Sam^l Hunt's. F, Sam^l Hunt's Mill. G, Sam^l Hoyt's. H, John Hoyt's. I, George Lane's. K, Dan Brundige's. L, James Travis. M, Moses Knap's. N, John Hyat's. O, Dan^l Lane's. P, Sam^l Horton's. Q, Christ^r Yeomans. R, Anthony Miller's. S and T, Dan^l Brundige's Bound Trees. U, Beginning of Mr. Bridge's Patent. V, Y^e Bound Tree between Mr. Bridge and Sam^l Hunt. W, Y^e Bound Tree between Humphrey Underhill and Sam^l Hunt. a, Y^e road to Mamaroneck. b, Road to East Chester. c, Road up to y^e woods. d, Road to Hudson's Ferry. e, Road to Mr. Phillips' Mills. f, Road to Bedford. g, Road to California Patent [sic]. h, Road to Rye. i, Road to Budd's Neck.¹

century. John Brondige was probably chosen as town clerk in the early days of the settlement. We find mention of him as such in 1678. He remained in office probably to the time of his death, in 1697, and was succeeded by Samuel Lane, who was town clerk until 1736. Besides keeping a record of the proceedings at the town-meetings, the clerk was required to enter in a book provided for the purpose, a statement of the bounds and dimensions of every man's land. Each grant, sale or mortgage of land must thus likewise be recorded to be of force. Prior to the Revolution these records were kept in three folio volumes, which are still preserved in fair condition. The records of the town-meetings were kept, not in bound volumes, but in books composed of forty or fifty leaves stitched together. The oldest of these have in recent years disappeared. They related to the doings of the first thirty or thirty-five years—from the foundation of the town to the year 1697. Mr. Bolton, however, who had access to these documents when preparing his county and ecclesiastical histories, has preserved many interesting facts which he gathered from them. Some accounts of town matters are also interspersed among the land records which fill the bound volumes. Here, too, the Indian deeds for all the territory purchased by the proprietors and the town are carefully engrossed.

At the first town-meetings the number of freeholders was perhaps twenty-five or thirty. Eighteen of these were proprietors and had exclusive control of the common lands within the first purchase on Peningo Neck. All other lands not yet distributed belonged to the "town in general" or the whole body of inhabitants qualified to vote. These also possessed the right to admit or exclude new comers into the settlement.

The following statement shows the population, and the estimated property of the inhabitants for the time during which the town was subject to Connecticut. It is made up from the "Lists of Persons and Estates" kept by the General Court:

	Persons.	Ct. Rec.	Estates.
1665	25	ii. 28	£1211 00 00
1666	32	ii. 49	1547 10 00
1667	36	ii. 72	1721 00 00
1668	45	ii. 94	2174 00 00
1669	50	ii. 117	2403 10 00
1670	41	ii. 137	1950 12 00
1671	42	ii. 160	1979 15 00
1672	43	ii. 186	2031 00 00
1673	37	ii. 210	1767 05 00
1674	41	ii. 236	1944 00 00
1675	40	ii. 264	1909 01 00
1676	32	ii. 290	1591 00 00
1677	38	ii. 320	1789 00 00
1678	44	iii. 17	2122 00 00
1679	48	iii. 36	2361 00 00
1680	49	iii. 67	2274 00 00
1681	50	iii. 86	2415 00 00
1682	50	iii. 106	2612 00 00
1683	47	iii. 126	2339 00 00
1698	56	iv. 265	3136 18 00
1699	60	iv. 297	3306 00 00

The persons here enumerated were male inhabitants, of adult age, paying taxes upon an estate of fifty pounds each. Ministers of the Gospel, deputies to the General Court and some others were exempted. The figures, therefore, may be taken to represent approximately the number of families in the town.

Besides electing officers, the town-meetings had much other business to transact. The prevention of damages by cattle, the reception or exclusion of inhabitants, the disposal of lands belonging to persons removing from the town, the fixing of bounties for the killing of wolves, the selection of persons to look after the boundaries of public lands, the granting of permission to open taverns, erect mills, etc., the adoption of regulations concerning sheep and cattle, were among the matters discussed and determined in town-meeting.

Where the town-meetings were held does not appear until the year 1728, when it is mentioned that the meeting took place at the school-house near the church in Rye. It is probable that this had been the place of meeting for some years. As early as 1708, notice of a special meeting of the town was given by "a warrant from a Justice of the Peace Sett upon a signe post nere the Church four days before the meeting."

The selectmen presided on these occasions, and as early as 1705 the town chose trustees or overseers, whose duty was to take care of the town lands and the town's interests, rights and privileges in the lands within the boundaries of the town. Full power was given them to raise money as they might have occasion in pursuance of their trust, and to sell or mortgage undivided lands, "or other ways as they shall see best within their said year." The charges that might arise, the town agreed to "disburse by equall proportion, and alsoe to have equall proportion of Lands thereby recovered." This action was evidently taken to prevent encroachments similar to those which the town had already suffered.

Justice was administered by a magistrate, known at first as the commissioner. In 1697-98 the office of justice of the peace was substituted. They were empowered, "with the selectmen of the town, or any two of them, to hear and determine any action that should be presented before them for tryall to the value of forty shillings." The first commissioner was Mr. John Budd, appointed in 1663 and 1664. He was succeeded by Lieutenant Joseph Horton in 1678. In 1698 Deliverance Brown was appointed justice of the peace by the Connecticut authorities and continued to hold the office under the New York government until 1716.

The following is a list of the town officers of Rye from the beginning:

1661. Joseph Theall.
1701. Deliverance Brown.
1702. John Frost.
1703-6. Thomas Merritt.

1707-8. Joseph Purdy.
1711. John Hoyt.
1713-16. Joseph Budd.
1717-19. John Hoyt.

1720-22. Joseph Budd.
1723-39. Samuel Purdy.
1740-43. John Thomas.
1744-46. Samuel Purdy.
1747. Samuel Tredwell.
1749. Samuel Purdy.
1750-61. Wm. Willett.
1762-63. Jonathan Brown.
1764. Timothy Wetmore.
1765-67. John Thomas.
1768. Timothy Wetmore.
1769-70. John Thomas, Jr.
1771-72. Ebenezer Haviland.
1783-84. John Thomas.
1785-86. Jesse Hunt.
1788. Gilbert Brondige.
1789-95. Thomas Bowne.
1796. Bartholomew Hadden.
1797. John Guion.
1799. John Brown.
1800. Thomas Brown.
1801-4. John Guion.
1805-6. Samuel Marvin.
1807-8. Samuel Armor.
1809-22. Samuel Deall.
1823-34. David Kirby.
1835-37. John Theall.
1838. David Kirby.
1839-40. Willett Moseman.
1841. John Theall.
1842-45. James D. Halsted.
1846-47. J. C. Roosevelt Brown.
1848. Dr. D. Jerome Sands.
1849. John S. Provoost.
1850. Wm. Horton.
1851-53. Newberry D. Halsted.
1854. John S. Provoost.
1855-59. John E. Marshall.
1861. John W. Lounsberry.
1862-64. James D. Halsted.
1865. Wilson D. Slawson.
1866-68. Thomas K. Downing.
1869-71. Howard C. Cady.
1871-73. Amherst Wight.
1773-74. George W. Wesley.
1874-83. Samuel Wm. Johnson.
1883-86. Wm. Ryan.

TOWNSMEN.¹

1671.—Joseph Horton, Thomas Brown, John Brondig.
1683.—Joseph Horton "and others."
1697.—Hachaliah Browne, Thomas Merritt, John Frost, John Horton, Jonathan Hart.
1699.—Joseph Theall, Hachaliah Browne, Thomas Merritt, Sr., John Lyons, Samuel Lane.
1701.—John Merritt, Andrew Coe, Joseph Budd, Robert Bloomer, Samuel Lane.
1702.—Joseph Theall, George Lane, Sr., Robert Bloomer, Samuel Kniffin, Samuel Lane.
1703-11.—Joseph Theall, Robert Bloomer, Samuel Lane.
1713-18.—Robert Bloomer, Thomas Merritt, Jr., Daniel Purdy.
1728.—Jonathan Brown, Andrew Merritt, William Fowler, Daniel Purdy, Joseph Kniffin, William Willett.
1729.—Samuel Purdy, Robert Bloomer, Jr., David Ogden, Benjamin Brown, John Thomas, Jonathan Haight, John Horton.

TOWN CLERKS.

1678-93. John Brondig.
1696. John Hoyt.
1697-1736. Samuel Lane.
1737-46. Samuel Purdy.
1747. Ebenezer Kniffin.
1748-50. Samuel Purdy.
1751. Gilbert Bloomer.
1752. Samuel Purdy.
1753-69. Ebenezer Kniffin.
1770-72. Dr. Eben. Haviland.
1783-86. John Thomas.
1788-93. John Merritt.
1794-99. John Doughty.
1800-1. Ezzraiah Wetmore.
1802-14. Philemon Halsted, Jr.
1815-24. Charles Field.
1825. William Bush.
1826. John Theall.
1827-28. Josiah Bulkley.
1829-32. Joseph H. Anderson.
1833-36. Horace B. Smith.
1838-39. Joshua Ewen.
1840. William Provoost.
1841-45. Jonathan J. Deall.
1846. Edward Field.
1847-48. William Horton.
1849-52. Charles W. Field.
1853-55. Eli Curtis.
1856-58. Charles D. Pixley.
1859. Edward H. Purdy.
1860-62. H. M. Henderson.
1862-64. Edwin Horton.
1865-66. J. M. McCarty.
1867-68. Ch. G. Pixley.
1869-71. Edwin Horton.
1871-74. Herman L. Marshall.
1874-76. Charles De Mott.
1876-86. Purdy S. Sands.
1886. Charles De Mott.

CONSTATES.

1671. George Lane.
1678. Caleb Hart.
1681-82. Timothy Knap.
1684-85. Thomas Merritt.
1696. Deliverance Brown.
1697. Robert Bloomer.
1699. Caleb Hart.
1701. Samuel Kniffin.
1702. John Hoyt.
1703-8. John Disbrow.
1711-13. Daniel Purdy
(Son of John.)
1714. Anthony Miller.
1715. Robert Bloomer, Jr.
1716. Benjamin Brown.
1717. Daniel Purdy
(Son of Francis.)
1718. Samuel Miller.
1719. Joseph Brondige, Jr.
1720-22. Abraham Miller.

¹ After 1711 these officers are called "Trustees or Overseers."

1723. Joseph Horton, Jr.
 1724-25. Abraham Miller.
 1726-36. Thomas Fowler.
 1737. Francis Doughty.
 1738. Abraham Miller.
 1739-41. Joshua Brondige.
 1742-43. Joseph Haight.
 1744-49. Hachaliah Theall.
 1750. John Doughty.
 1751-56. Benjamin Brown, Jr.
 1657. James Wetmore.
 1758-61. Benjamin Brown.
 1762-65. Gilbert Brondige.
 1766-67. James Anderson.
 1768-73. John Doughty.
 1783. John Merritt.
 1784-87. William Brown.
 1788. John A. Hawkins.
 1789-95. John Hawkins, Jr.
 1796-1800. Ezraiah Wetmore.
 1801. Philemon Halsted, Jr.
 1802-3. Ezraiah Wetmore.
 1804-20. John Hawkins.
 1824. Ezraiah Wetmore.
 1822. Ezraiah Wetmore.
 Henry Belden.
 1823. Ezraiah Wetmore.
 George Hains.
 1824. Ezraiah Wetmore.
 John Theall.
 1825. Ezraiah Wetmore.
 Daniel S. Merritt.
 1826. Alexander Ennis.
 1827-32. Ezraiah Wetmore.
 1833-36. Sylvanus Merritt.
 1837. Sylvanus Van Sicklin.
 1838-40. William Bettys.
 1841-43. Purdy Slater.
 1844. George Provoost.
 1845. William Bettys.
 1846-47. Vincent Slater.
 1848. Purdy Slater.
 1849. William Bettys.
 George S. Bartlett.
 1850. George S. Bartlett.
 Samuel Kelly.
 Charles Theall.
 1851. William H. Guion.
 William A. Purdy.
 Birdsey Wakeley.
 Samuel Sniffen.
 1852. William H. Guion.
 William A. Purdy.
 Purdy Slater.
 1853. Purdy Slater.
 Coles T. Morrell.
 1854. William H. Guion.
 Purdy Slater.
 1856. Ezra Kniffen.
 Naaman H. Turner.
 1857. Ezra Kniffen.
 Purdy Slater.
 1858. Samuel Bouton.
 John Shearer.
 Purdy Slater.
 William Slater.
 1859. Isaac Covert.
 John Shearer.
 Purdy Slater.
 1860. Purdy Slater.
 John Shearer.
 Ch. McIntosh.
 1861. Purdy Slater.
 John Shearer.
 Ch. McIntosh.
 1862. Purdy Slater.
 John Shearer.
 George Bailey.

1863. William M. Slater.
 John Shearer.
 George W. Lee.
 Alexander Worden.
 1864. Purdy Slater.
 Robert Archer.
 Matthew Brundage.
 Alexander Worden.
 1865. Charles Merritt.
 Purdy Slater.
 Richard Archer.
 J. H. De Camp.
 1866. Samuel Hopps.
 Purdy Slater.
 J. H. De Camp.
 1867. John Hughes.
 Purdy Slater.
 R. C. Singler.
 1868. W. Romer.
 Purdy Slater.
 A. M. Perrin.
 Michael Burns.
 1869. Purdy Slater.
 William Romer.
 Michael Gorman.
 1870. Wm. H. Henderson.
 William Romer.
 Thomas Burns.
 — Tompkins.
 1871. James Dusenberry.
 Edwin Parker.
 Joseph Hains.
 Alex. Gourley.
 Purdy Slater.
 1872. Geo. H. Ellis.
 Purdy Slater.
 Jas. Halstead.
 John F. Brennecke.
 Jas. Dusenberry.
 1873. Jas. Dusenberry.
 Geo. H. Ellis.
 Geo. Bacchus.
 Jos. Halstead.
 Ed. Brundage.
 1874. Geo. H. Ellis.
 Thos. G. Willson.
 Purdy Slater.
 Wm. M. Stilwell.
 John Donovan.
 1875. Ed. Brundage.
 Elisha Tuttle.
 Henry Zeh.
 Wm. M. Slater.
 Wm. Young.
 1876. Ed. P. Brundage.
 Henry Zeh.
 Wm. M. Slater.
 Hugh Riley.
 Elisha Tuttle.
 Ed. Parker.
 1877. Ed. Parker.
 Elisha Tuttle.
 Chas. A. Gleason.
 S. A. Marshall.
 John O. Merritt.
 1878. Stephen A. Marshall.
 Henry Zeh.
 Elisha Tuttle.
 Wm. M. Hutchison.
 C. A. T. Rodrian.
 1879. Stephen A. Marshall.
 C. A. T. Rodrian.
 Elisha Tuttle.
 Jas. McGearry.
 Wm. M. Hutchison.
 1880. Stephen A. Marshall.
 Wm. M. Hutchison.
 Wm. Hodgins.
 Jas. McGearry.
 C. A. T. Rodrian.

1881. John H. Webb.
 Wm. M. Slater.
 Jos. Hains.
 Edw. Kane.
 Chauncey Haviland.
 1882. Michael O'Neil.
 Wm. M. Slater.
 Elisha Tuttle.
 Edw. Kane.
 Chauncey Haviland.
 1883. Edw. Kane.
 Alex. Worden.
 Wm. P. Wallace.
 Elisha Tuttle.
 John Sivalls.
 1884. Elisha Tuttle.
 John Sivalls.
 1662. John Budd.
 1678-88. Joseph Horton.
 1693. Daniel Straing.
 1698-1716. Deliverance Brown.
 1703-15. Joseph Purdy.
 1705-18. Caleb Heathcote.
 1710-22. Joseph Budd.
 1710-17. Isaac Denham.
 1720-31. Jonathan Haight.
 1720-53. Samuel Purdy.
 1726-53. Caleb Hyatt.
 1728-46. Benjamin Brown.
 Charles Theall.
 1734-67. Daniel Purdy.
 1734-52. Francis Doughty.
 1734. Thomas Fowler.
 1738-75. John Thomas.
 1738-45. Samuel Tredwell.
 Adam Seaman.
 1739. Samuel Thorn.
 1739. Samuel Brown.
 1740-48. John Lyon.
 1740. George Lane.
 1741-45. John Budd.
 1743. John Bloomer.
 1746-69. Gilbert Bloomer.
 1753. Jonathan Purdy.
 James Stevenson.
 1754. Lewis McDonald.
 1755. Moses Owen.
 Abraham Guion.
 Hachaliah Browne.
 1756-69. Ebenezer Kniffen.
 1757-61. Elisha Hiatt.
 1765. Gabriel Lynch.
 John Hyatt.
 Joseph Budd.
 Hach'ah Brown, Jr.
 John Thomas.
 1769. Hach'ah Brown, Jr.
 Charles Theall.
 Roger Lyon.
 Abraham Hatfield.
 Samuel Purdy.
 1773. William Anderson.
 1793. Thomas Browne.
 Jonathan Bailey.
 1799. John Brown.
 Isaac Sniffin.
 Samuel Marvin.
 1812. Rivers Morrell.
 1821. Nehemiah Brown.
 David Munson.
 1830. John H. Smith.
 William T. Praul.

Alex. Worden.
 Edw. Kane.
 Wm. P. Wallace.
 1885. John Sivalls.
 Samuel H. Graham.
 Alex. Worden.
 Wm. M. Hutchison.
 Theo. C. Parker.
 1886. John Sivalls.
 Samuel H. Graham.
 D. A. Butterfield.
 W. J. Devanny.
 T. C. Parker.
 W. P. Wallace.
 G. S. Merritt.
 Edw. Desmond.
 Jas. S. Merritt.

JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

1831. Abram Guion.
 1831. James W. Brown.
 1832. Thomas W. Garniss.
 Horace B. Smith.
 David H. Mead.
 1833. John H. Smith.
 Rivers Morrell.
 David H. Mead.
 Ralph Marshall.
 1834. John H. Smith.
 Peter W. Edgel.
 David H. Mead.
 James W. Brown.
 1835. Jonathan H. Gidney.
 George W. Smith.
 1836. James W. Brown.
 Monmouth Lyon.
 1837. Darius W. Todd.
 David H. Mead.
 Merritt Brown.
 1838. Peter W. Edgel.
 Thomas Purdy.
 Oliver F. Green.
 1839. Darius W. Todd.
 Samuel Haviland.
 J.iah Bulkley.
 1860. Alexander Ennis.
 E. Sours.
 A. Van Amringe.
 E. P. Morrell.
 1861. A. Van Amringe.
 1862. Ch. W. Field.
 1863. Joseph G. Fowler.
 J. Henry Gilbert.
 Shubael R. Strang.
 1864. G. H. Haight.
 1865. R. F. Brundage.
 1867. H. M. Henderson.
 1868. S. R. Strang.
 1869. G. R. Haight.
 1870. I. C. Sheldon.
 1871. H. M. Henderson.
 1872. S. R. Strang.
 1873. N. Tompkins.
 1874. W. Ryan.
 1875. H. M. Henderson.
 1876. J. Dusenberry.
 1877. T. C. Palmer.
 1878. W. Ryan.
 1879. H. M. Henderson.
 1880. A. Fowler.
 1881. T. C. Palmer.
 1882. M. Connolly.
 1883. M. Connolly.
 1884. H. M. Henderson.
 1885. R. C. Downing.
 1886. T. C. Palmer.

TRUSTEES OF PUBLIC LANDS.

1869. Wilfred P. Purdy. Jonathan Purdy. George L. Cornell.	1878. Michael Stuber. Mathew Connolly.
1870. Aug. Abendroth. Jonathan Purdy.	1879. Henry L. Raymond. Michael Stuber. Bernard Baruch.
1871. Aug. Abendroth. Wm. B. Halstead.	1880. Geo. Hurlbutt. Wm. D. Beck. E. B. Valentine.
1872. E. Sours. Wm. Purdy.	1881. Geo. Hurlbutt. A. M. Halstead. Theo. Van Amringe.
1873. Wilfred P. Purdy. William Purdy. Samuel Bouton.	1882. Wilfred P. Purdy. William H. Tyler. Theo. Van Amringe.
1874. Michael Stuber. Jacob Messereau. Samuel Bouton.	1883. Wilfred P. Purdy. William H. Tyler. Theo. Van Amringe.
1875. Jacob Messereau. William Gedney. Jonathan Purdy.	1884. Wilfred P. Purdy. William H. Tyler. Theo. Van Amringe.
1876. Jacob Messereau. William Gedney. Jonathan Purdy.	1885. John Sherburn. Wilfred P. Purdy. Theo. Van Amringe.
1877. Thomas B. Peck. Michael Stuber. Thomas G. Willson.	1886. Theo. Van Amringe. John Sherburn. Wilfred P. Purdy.
1878. Thomas B. Peck.	

FARMERS OF THE EXCISE.

1710.	The Justices.
1714. September 4	Joseph Budd.
1716. September 4	Joseph Budd.
1720. November 19	Joseph Budd.
1737. October 14	Ebenezer Hevland (and others).
1741. November 3	James Wood.
1743. December 2	Samuel Purdy.
1747. October 31	Samuel Purdy.
1748. November 12	Samuel Purdy.
1750. October 12	Benjamin Brown, Jr.
1750. October 12	Underhill Budd.
1752. November 11	Benjamin Brown, Jr. Underhill Budd.
1763. December 13	John Thomas, Jr.
1765. December 23	John Thomas, Jr.
1768. February 3	John Thomas, Jr.
1769. December 30	John Thomas, Jr.
1770. December 22	John Thomas, Jr.
1772. February 26	John Thomas, Jr.
1774. February 8	John Thomas, Jr.
1775. January 31	John Thomas, Jr.

MANNERS AND CUSTOMS—SLAVERY—VILLAGE INNS, ROADS, ETC.—The home life of the people of Rye in early times was of the simplest character. There was not much variety in the furniture. Each room, even the kitchen and parlor or "best room," was generally supplied with a bed. Besides this, a table or two, a cupboard and some chests constituted the heavier articles of "household stuff." Of chairs there were few, sometimes none, rude stools and the invariable coffer or chest supplying the necessary seats. The dishes in ordinary use were of wood; the choicer utensils, pewter. The clothing was mostly of domestic manufacture. Leather garments were much worn at this period. Deer-skin and buck-skin, racoon and fox-skins, wolf and bear-skins were used for this purpose. "Indian stockings" or moccasins were worn to some extent instead of shoes. The household linen and other valuables were stored away in the great "chests," three or four of which appear to have been owned by every family. The floors were

generally bare. Feather beds were used. The "warming-pan" was considered indispensable for comfort. Every house possessed a loom. A huge fire-place, ten or twelve feet wide and half as many deep, occupied one side of the kitchen. Labor was well paid. In 1680 a day laborer in Connecticut received two shillings and some times two shillings and sixpence per day.

Rye, in common with other Connecticut towns, maintained its militia organization. The "Trayn-Band of Rye" is mentioned in the colony records of 1667. It consisted of all male persons between sixteen and sixty years of age, ministers and magistrates only excepted. Trainings took place six times a year. They were great occasions, usually solemnized by prayer. The place of training was "in the heart of the town." This, it is conjectured, was where the flag-staff now stands, at the junction of the post road and the road to the Purchase. The train-band does not seem to have been completely officered for a number of years. Joseph Horton was confirmed in 1667 as "lieutenant to the trayn-band." The town did not number persons enough until near the close of the century to entitle it to have a company. "Captain" Joseph Horton is first heard of in 1690.

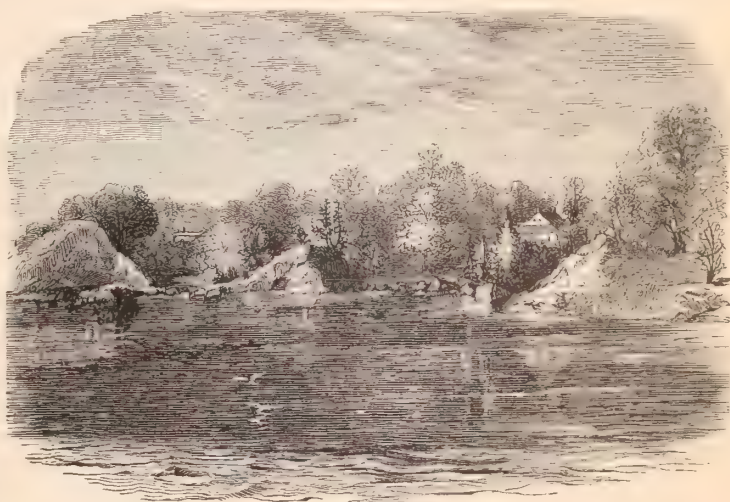
Many of the names of places in common use in early times have disappeared. The Indian names Peningo, Apawamis, Manussing, Honge, Eaukecaupacuson, Quaroppas, Pockcotessen, Mamaroneck, Mockquams or Moaquanes, and Armonck were carefully retained by the early settlers in their deeds, but most of them were never used. The Armonck was already known as Byram River, the Mockquams as Blind Brook, when they came here. Eaukecaupacuson soon yielded to "Lame Will's Purchase" and "Rye Woods." Pockcotessen was called Stony Brook. Apawamis became Budd's Neck, and later Rye Neck. Quaroppas was replaced by "The White Playnes." Only Peningo, Manussing and Mamaroneck remain in common use.

Beginning with the nomenclature of the township where the settlers began it when they crossed from Manussing Island to the main shore, we have "The Flats" and the "Horse Race," as the ancient names for the beach. "Burying Hill" was the point of land which terminates it on the east—now the site of a hotel. The channel between the island and the main shore was known as "The Gut." "Rye Ferry," the ancient landing, was north of the present steamboat landing, at the end of a lane on the Provoost estate. The residence in recent years of Mr. Jacobs was known as "the house by the ferry." "Fishing Rock," mentioned as early as 1699, and also called Ogden's Dock, is on Fox Island, at the mouth of Byram River. "Chevalier" or "Cavalier's Rock," is within sight just below the steamboat landing. Fox Island was commonly so called as early as 1699. "Goose Island" is not far from Fox Island, about half a mile up the Byram River and directly opposite Lyon's Dock.

"Negro Point" is the name of a locality on the west side of Byram River, just below Lyon's Dock. The "Wading-Place" across Byram River was at the point where the bridge now crosses that river. Here, on the Connecticut side, close to the northeastern corner of the bridge, is the "Great Stone by the Wading-Place," which has been a boundary mark for two centuries. There was another wading-place used in former days about where the New Haven Railroad crosses the river. This was called the "lower going over," a name afterwards corrupted into "log in over." The "Scotch Caps" are the rugged masses of rock that lie off the tapering point of land known as Brown's or Wainwright's Point. The southern part of the peninsula itself was called the "Scotch Cap Neck" or "Ox-pasture Neck." "Parsonage Point" is the next projection from Peningo Neck on the east. "Kniffin's Cove" is a small inlet of the Sound on which was formerly a warehouse and a dock. "Ware's Cove" or "Reynolds' Cove" is below this, opposite the north end of Pine Island. "Galpin's Cove" was on Budd's Neck, below "Bullock's Landing." The records disclose the names of several brooks which have dwindled to insignificant rills since the disappearance of forests and swamps. Besides Blind Brook and Stony Brook, there was Bound Brook, Gunn Brook, Hassock Meadow Brook, Horseneck Brook, Rattlesnake Brook, Blind Brook Branch, Crooked Gutter and Causeway Brook.

Among the ancient names of hills and slopes are "Walles' Ridge," "Raccoon Ridge," "Taffy's Plain," "Tom Jeffer's Hill" (the elevation on which the Episcopal Church now stands), "Branch Ridge" and "Brush Ridge," designating the slope along which the present Ridge Street proceeds as far as the road to Park's mill and perhaps some distance beyond. Above this the same street runs over "Hog Pen Ridge," by which name the settlers as early as 1682 designated some of their choicest lands. "Byram Ridge" was the tract of land on the west side of Byram River from the junction of Ridge and King Streets, or thereabouts, down to the neighborhood of Port Chester. "Wolfpit Ridge" or "Pulpit Plain" was the high ground north of Rye upon which the district school, academy and seminary are now situated. A more modern name for the same region is "The Cedars." "Steep Hollow" was the name of a beautiful glen on the property of Mr. Quintard. It was so called as early as 1700. The "Upper" and "Lower Hassock Meadows" lie in the valley between Grace Church Street and the post road, through which the railroad passes from Rye to Port Chester. "Sniffin's Hill" is the rounded eminence since known as Bloomer's

Hill, above Port Chester. "Barton's Neck" is the ancient name of the tract through which Grace Church Street runs, from the neighborhood of the road to Manussing Island as far as the entrance to Port Chester. "Saw Pit," the ancient name of Port Chester, occurs for the first time in 1732. "Merritt's Point" is now known as Lyon's Point. The swamps of early times had each its own designation. There was the "Long Swamp," back of the home-lots in the Town Field, east of the Milton road and Grace Church Street; the "Great Swamp," north of the present Roman Catholic Cemetery and east of Ridge Street; "Beaver Swamp," in the valley of Stony Brook, where the Union Cemetery is situated; "Timothy's Swamp," named, perhaps, after Timothy Knap, once constable of Rye, and part of the "Saw-Log Swamp." The names of persons or families were bestowed upon certain localities. The land between Regent Street and King Street from the post road to



HORSE ROCK.

RYE FERRY.

HOUSE BY THE FERRY.

Purchase Avenue was long known and is still remembered as "Kniffin's land." The extreme eastern part of the Town Field, bordered by Grace Church Street and the road to Kirby's mill, was anciently "Coe's land," since "Bird's land." "Bloomer's Island" is a tract of a few acres in the old Town Field near the creek or Sound, the waters of which surrounded it at high tide. Bullock's Meadow was part of the farm owned in recent years by Mr. Stevens.

The people of Rye were content, for the most part, to call themselves by the humble but honest name of yeomen. They were farmers, living frugally upon the produce of the soil. By the middle of the last century, however, a number of trades had been established in Rye, such as those of wheelwrights, cordwainers, carpenters, saddlers, tailors, hatters, weavers, ropemakers and the like. In many cases these were also farmers who joined some handicraft to their ordinary business, particularly in winter. From early times

the town had a considerable number of millers, the numerous streams affording excellent facilities for mills. Of these there were fifteen or twenty in operation before the Revolution. The first were grist-mills. John Budd's, afterwards known as Lyon's mill, on Blind Brook Creek, was built some time prior to 1669. Not long after, perhaps, the mill on the opposite side of Rye Neck was built by the same proprietor on Mamaroneck River. In 1696, Samuel Lane and Joseph Lyon received permission from the town to build a mill on Blind Brook,—the location of which is supposed to be that now occupied by Park's mill. This was long known as Bloomer's mill; and there were at least two others, above it, on the same stream. What is now known as Davenport's mill, near the outlet of Stony Brook, was owned in the latter part of the last century by Justice Gilbert Bloomer; and that heretofore known as Van Amringe's was formerly Deall's mill. In 1705, Samuel Hunt had leave to build a grist-mill, on Mamaroneck River at the falls above Henry Underhill's. He must build within two years, and "grind the town's corn for the 14th part." In 1711, Richard Ogden was allowed to build a mill on Byram River, "between the *lower going over* and the country road." Peter Brown's fulling-mill stood in 1731 in the rear of the late "Penfield House,"—now owned by the family of the late D. H. Mead. Kirby's mill was built about a hundred years ago by one Wright Frost. Colonel Thomas' mill is indicated on our Revolutionary chart of 1779; it stood near the cross-road from Harrison post-office to King Street. Kennedy's mill is marked on a map of Rye in 1798.

No early mention is made of saw-mills at Rye. The first settlers built their houses without the aid of sawed lumber. Not only the beams, but even the planks and shingles were hewn and shaped by hand.

Many of the inhabitants "followed the water." Within a few years after the settlement of the town there were several docks or landings along the shore. From these, small fishing-crafts put out into the Sound, and before long a few sloops or barges sailed to Oyster Bay and New York. A century ago most of the families composing the little village of Saw Pit derived their support from these pursuits. So, too, did many of those living on the lower part of Rye Neck. A hundred years ago the oyster fishery had become quite an important business at Rye. In 1753 much excitement was caused by a "great destruction of our oysters in Byram River." Certain persons were "getting great Quantities with Rakes to Burn into Lyme." Action was taken in town-meeting to put a stop to the practice. Besides the market-sloops that sailed from Saw Pit, Rye and Rye Neck to New York, there were some large vessels sailing to distant ports. In 1774 there was a whaling sloop belonging to Mamaroneck.

The farmers of Rye led a comparatively easy life. Land was plentiful and cheap, and the soil fresh and

productive. We have a graphic description of the farms and the farming in this region, as they appeared in 1789, from the pen of General Washington. Writing at Mrs. Haviland's, in Rye, he speaks of the land he had passed through during the day, as "strong, well covered with grass and a luxuriant crop of Indian Corn intermixed with Pomptons (which were yet ungathered) in the field. We met four droves of Beef Cattle for the New York Market (about thirty in a drove) some of which were very fine—also a flock of sheep for the same place. We scarcely passed a farm-house that did not abound in Geese. Their cattle seemed to be of a good quality, and their hogs large, but rather long legged. No dwelling-house is seen without a Stone or Brick Chimney, and rarely any without a shingled roof—*generally* the sides are of shingles also. The farms are very close together, and separated, as one enclosure after another also is by fences of stone, which are indeed easily made, as the country is immensely stoney."

The town poor were cared for by the vestry of Rye, and the fund for their maintenance was raised by taxation. Nothing is said of any appropriation for this purpose until 1725, when the vestry agreed that there should be raised, besides the money for the minister, the sum of eight pounds for the poor. This moderate amount appears to have sufficed for several years. Later on, however, the amount required was from forty to fifty pounds, and sometimes even as much as ninety or a hundred. Just before the Revolution the custom was introduced in Rye of putting up the poor at auction. Before this they had been taken in to board with families whose bills, if approved, were paid by the vestry. But in 1775 'the Justices and Vestry agreed that the poor of the parish should be Sett at Vandue to the Lowest bidder, and that the Clark of the Vestry put public advertizement for the same.' The sale was simply a contract with parties who engaged to support the poor at the least expense to the vestry, and the sums for which the paupers were "sold," represented the amounts which the successful bidders were willing to take for their board. The parochial system ceased at the time of the Revolution, and the vestry of Rye became a defunct institution. After the war the care of the poor devolved upon the county officers. Trivial infractions of the law were punished with the stocks and the whipping-post. In 1739 and for two subsequent years the town elected a "public whipper." Thomas Rickey and Samuel Bumpas were the persons chosen to this office.

Among the institutions of the olden time in Rye, slavery must not be left out of the account. It is, in fact, little more than half a century since slavery ceased to have a legal existence in the State of New York. The first settlers appear to have brought a few negroes with them from Connecticut, and for a considerable length of time the number of slaves in Rye was small. A census taken in 1712, fifty years after the founding of the town, showed but

eighteen negroes, of all ages, within its limits, which then included Harrison and the White Plains. The first mention of slavery in the records of Rye occurs in 1689. Jacob Pearce, one of the original planters, left, among his goods and chattels, a negro woman named Rose.

With the growth of the town the number of slaves increased very considerably. From eighteen, according to the census of 1712, it had risen, in 1755, to one hundred and seventeen. A list of the families owning slaves at that period shows that they were distributed very widely through the town. Neither layman nor ecclesiastic appears to have had any scruples as to owning this kind of property. The names, even, of several members of the Society of Friends are on the list. Few families owned more than two or three negroes. Mr. Jay, Colonel Willett and Mr. Thomas were the largest owners.

A small stone building in the rear of the house now the residence of Mrs. E. P. Cowles was a place of confinement for refractory slaves. It was torn down only some fifteen years ago. In 1712 the people of Rye were alarmed by a supposed plot among the slaves of New York to burn that city. In 1714 Isaac Denham, of Rye, petitioned the Court of General Sessions, at Westchester, "to raise the sum of twenty-five pounds for satisfaction for One Negro Man called Primus, who was executed for his misdemeanours." And in 1719 Isaac Denham and Charles Forster applied "to be allowed the value of two negro men lately belonging to them and Executed for crimes committed in this county." The men were appraised at twenty pounds and payment was ordered. About the year 1698 some negroes, brought from the coast of Guinea, were landed at Rye and there delivered to the son of Mr. Frederick Philipse, of Philipsburg. It was charged that the parties concerned in this transaction had dealings with pirates, and this intimation must have caused some alarm to the inhabitants of Rye. Captain Kidd was then at the height of his career, and the shores of Long Island Sound had frequently been visited by him and by other freebooters.

But little effort was made to educate the slaves. In 1708 the Rev. Mr. Muirson writes,—“There are only a few negroes in this parish, save what are in Colonel Heathcote’s family, where I think there are more than in all the parish besides. However, so many as we have, I shall not be wanting in my endeavors for their good.” In 1724 the Rev. Mr. Jenny reports,—“There are a few negroes and Indian slaves, but no free infidels [heathen] in my parish. The catechist, a schoolmaster from the Honourable Society [for the Propagation of the Gospel], has often proposed to teach them the Catechism, but we cannot prevail on their masters to spare them from their labour for that good work.” In 1728 the Rev. Mr. Wetmore writes that the number of negroes in his parish was about one hundred. “Since Mr. Cleator has been blind and unable to teach school,” adds Mr.

Wetmore, “he has taken pains with the negroes, so many as their masters would allow to come; but of late they have left off coming altogether. Those that belong to Quaker masters, they will allow them no instruction. Some Presbyterians will allow their servants to be taught, but are unwilling they should be baptized. And those of the Church are not much better, so that there is but one negro in the parish baptized.”

For several years following the period of the Revolution the pages of the town records of Rye are occupied with certificates relating to the manumission of slaves. These declarations were made in accordance with the terms of an act of the Legislature, February 22, 1788, and of another act, March 29, 1799. The latter act provided for the gradual abolition of slavery. In 1817 another act was passed, declaring all slaves to be free on the 4th of July, 1827.

In 1798 the town contained one hundred and twenty-three slaves. In 1820 there were in Rye fourteen slaves and one hundred and twenty-six free blacks; in White Plains eight slaves and sixty-three free blacks. Seven years later slavery expired in the State of New York. At that time there was a considerable negro population in Rye, but in recent years there have been very few black inhabitants. The European laborer has almost completely supplanted the African, and, whether by death or removal to other places, they have been reduced to a mere handful.

DISAPPEARANCE OF THE INDIANS.—The Indian inhabitants of Rye have long since faded away, leaving but few and faint traces of their mournful history. Before the New England settlers came they had been in subjection to the Five Nations, to whom they paid an annual tribute. The fullest account of the condition of the Indians of Rye is that of Rev. Mr. Muirson, already quoted with reference to the negroes. “As to the Indians, the natives of the country,” he says, in a letter to the Gospel Propagation Society in January, 1708, “they are a decaying people. We have not now in all this parish twenty families, whereas not many years ago there were several hundreds. . . . I have taken some pains to teach some of them, but to no purpose, for they seem regardless of instruction.” Long after the settlement of the town there were Indians living within its bounds, some of them quite near the village, but the greater number back in the “wilderness” that still overspread the northern part of Rye. This was the case in most of the Connecticut towns, the laws obliging the inhabitants to reserve to the natives a sufficient quantity of planting-ground, and protecting the latter from insult, fraud and violence. The twenty families, of whom Mr. Muirson speaks, were reduced by the year 1720 to four or five “families of Indians,” writes Mr. Bridge, “that often abide in this parish, but are frequently removing, almost every month or six weeks.” After this date we hear little more of

Indians at Rye, except as slaves. Tradition states that in old times a band of Indians used to visit Rye once a year, resorting to the beach, where they had a frolic which lasted several days. Another place which they frequented as late, certainly, as the middle of the last century, was a spot on Grace Church Street, at the corner of the road now called Kirby Avenue. Here a troop of Indians would come every year and spend the night in a "pow-wow," during which their cries and yells would keep the whole neighborhood awake.

Many interesting relics of the Indians have been found along the shores of the Sound in the neighborhood of Rye. Heaps of clam-shells mark the sites of their villages. These occur in great abundance on Manussing Island, on Parsonage Point, in the vicinity of the beach, and near Blind Brook and the creek into which it empties. Indian graves have also frequently



STRANG'S TAVERN, RYE.

been discovered. "The former existence of Indian habitations on the great neck of Poningo," says Mr. Bolton, "is amply proved by the number of hunting and warlike weapons found in that neighborhood. The site of the principal Mohegan village was on or near Parsonage Point. In the same vicinity is situated Burying Hill, their place of sepulture. The remains of six Indians were discovered on excavating the present foundations for Newberry Halsted's residence. Manussing Island was undoubtedly the site of an Indian village. Another site was in a field on Peningo Neck, about seventy-five rods south of the road to Rye Beach. "Swamp Mortar Rock," near by, is pointed out as the place where the Indian women used to pound their corn in a circular basin cut in the rock, about two feet and a half in diameter and about as deep. Another Indian mortar is to be seen on the shore of a cove called Ware's Cove.

TAVERNS AND PUBLIC ROADS.—The "public-

house" or tavern at Rye was an important institution, for the town was on the route from New York to Boston, and a halting-place for travelers. Inn-keepers were chosen by the town, and none but persons of good character and estate were considered eligible. The earliest notice of such an appointment in the town records states that at a town-meeting in Rye, March 24, 1697-98, Joseph Horton was chosen "to keep a house of entertainment for travelers for the year ensuing." Joseph Horton lived on Rye Neck, and the house here referred to is supposed to have stood on the site, or in the neighborhood, of the old mill, which has in recent years been renovated. In the village itself Straing's Tavern was the ancient public-house. A portion of the original building is still standing on the southeast corner of the post road and Rectory Street. The tavern was kept by Daniel Straing, a French Protestant refugee, who had removed to this country a few years prior to 1704. He died in 1706, and his widow kept the inn for several years. Straing's Tavern was a place of note long after this. On a map of Budd's Neck of 1720 the bridge over Blind Brook is denoted the King's Bridge, "nere Strange." The justices and vestry of Rye held their meetings here as early as 1734, and the town-meetings may not improbably have been held here at a much earlier day. The old house was still a place of public entertainment some forty years ago, and was kept by a lineal descendant of the first Daniel Straing. It remained unaltered until within a few years ago.

Another noted inn was the old stone house known of late years as Van Sicklin's. In early days this building was a fort or place of defense. Afterwards it became the residence of Isaac Denham, son of the first settled minister of Rye. Mr. Denham died in 1723, and his executors sold his house and home-lot in 1728 to Francis Doughty, Jr., of Flushing.

In the *New York Gazette* of June 20, 1748, there is an advertisement announcing that "Francis Doughty, who kept the Kingsbridge, is now removed to the Sign of the Sun in Rye." Like his predecessors, Horton and Straing, Mr. Doughty was a justice of the peace for the town of Rye. The justices and vestry met at his house from 1730 to 1734, and again at the same place from 1770 to 1776, when his son, John Doughty, kept the tavern. Another John Doughty, grandson of Francis, succeeded to the dignities and emoluments of the office which seems to have descended from father to son as a matter of course.

A map of the town in 1797 represents "Doughty's house" as still known by that name.

Penfield's Hotel was a noted hostelry about half a century ago. Fifty years before it had been "a noted tavern for many years," and before that it was the residence of one of the leading men of the town. Here Peter Brown lived previous to 1731. The house, which was situated on the post road at Rye, and was known as the "Square House," passed after the death of Brown into the possession of the Rev. James Wetmore, rector of the parish of Rye. It was the residence of his son, Timothy Wetmore, in 1763, about which time, probably, it became an inn. As early as 1770, Dr. Ebenezer Haviland, afterwards a surgeon in the Revolutionary army, kept a tavern here. In 1774 John Adams stopped at "Haviland's, of Rye," on his way from Boston to New York.

During the Revolution John Wright kept the inn; but after the war it appears to have reverted to the widow of Dr. Ebenezer Haviland, Mrs. Tamar Haviland, who managed it for several years. During her incumbency, Rye was visited by Gen. Washington, who says, in his diary, under date of Thursday, October 15, 1789: "After dinner, through frequent light showers, we proceeded to the Tavern of a Mrs. Haviland, at Rye, who keeps a very neat and decent Inn." The general again stopped at Rye on his way back to New York from New England, November 12th, and spent the night at "the Widow Haviland's." The widow was succeeded by Peter Quintard, who was landlord in 1797. The next landlord was William Marrener, and in 1801 the Square House passed into the hands of Nathaniel Penfield, a fine specimen of the ancient

landlord—a man of courtly manners and unblemished character. After his death, in 1810, the house was kept for a few years by his son, the late Henry L. Penfield, who died in 1867. At Penfield's Hotel the stages on the Boston road stopped until some fifty years ago. Among its distinguished guests was General Lafayette when making a tour from New York into New England in 1824. The general, his suite and the committee dined together at the hotel. The general had been received at Mamaroneck with a salute "fired by the inhabitants," the ringing of bells and the playing of the national airs by "an excellent band of music." The Square House ceased to be a tavern about 1830. In 1835, Rachel, widow of Nathaniel, and Henry L. Penfield and his wife, Mary, sold the property, with twenty-three acres of land, to David H. Mead.

The earliest reference to the sale of liquor in Rye occurs under the date of April 17, 1789, when David

Doughty was "permitted to sell spirituous liquors without paying excise." April 14, 1797, "Samuel Travis was permitted to keep a Tavern in the House which David Doughty formerly occupied, the Town to refund back money; he shall pay for a permit for the same." Of the drinking habits of the early inhabitants of Rye, there are other traces besides the maintenance of so many public-houses. Even those who brought with them something of the rigidity of Puritan manners had their drinking cups and tankards at hand. There is reason to believe, however, that they exercised comparative moderation in the use of spirituous liquors. At a later date drunkenness was very prevalent in the community. Rev. Mr. Muirson writes in 1707, "Swearing and drinking and Sabbath-breaking" are the vices that are "chiefly predominant." Mr. Wetmore, schoolmaster at Rye, complains in 1765 that "many of our people are too



HAVILAND'S, OR PENFIELD HOUSE, RYE.

much addicted to the taverns." The custom of furnishing liquor at funerals prevailed in Rye a hundred years ago, as appears from the following entry in the vestry-book of the parish: "March 13, 1759. To Ebenezer Kniffin, for half a Gallon Rum for y^e Burying of Patrick Holoday."

Situated so near the sea-board, and within thirty miles of New York City, Rye has enjoyed from the earliest times whatever facilities existed for public communication. For at least fifty years after the foundation of the town all travel by land was performed on horseback. In 1672 a schedule of prices was established, to be paid to persons employed for the conveyance of letters and other missives in the service of the colony of Connecticut. From the 1st of May to the 1st of October the allowance from Rye to Hartford was "the horses hyer twelve shillings, the man and expences twenty shillings; all is one pound twelve shillings." From October to April the

charge was to be eight-pence more "for every night they lye out." Postal communication between New York and Boston was established in 1672. The mails as late as 1750 were carried by messengers riding on horseback from stage to stage. There was but one mail each-week to Boston and intermediate points. Besides the public post, there were post-riders in the service of the newspapers. The people of Rye not only read the New York papers, but occasionally advertised in them. In 1772 the first stage-coach began to run between New York and Boston. The proprietors were Jonathan and Nicholas Brown. In 1787 the stages made three trips every week in summer and two in winter. In the same year there was a stage every other day from New York to Rye, and from the advertisement of its proprietor, Obadiah Wright, who announces that he "now runs the Stage from this to Rye, which Mr. Hall formerly run," it would appear that the people of Rye had been in the enjoyment of similar facilities before. They probably depended more upon water communication, however, than upon that by land. The earliest mention of a dock, or wharf, occurs under the date of 1679, when the town granted to John Ogden "forty-eight or fifty acres of land by the water-side at the Fishing Rock, for the purpose of building a house and wharf. The inhabitants of Pennington neck to have wharfage free." In 1739 a ferry was established between the town of Rye and Oyster Bay, L. I. John Budd, Hachaliah Browne and Jonathan Browne were at the head of the enterprise. The list of subscribers toward the expense of obtaining a patent embraced twenty-six names. They obtained the right to "enjoy a share of the privileges and emoluments of the ferry in proportion to the sums" subscribed. The ferry continued in use until the latter part of the century. In 1786 Isaac Brown, of Rye, purchased the rights of the proprietors. A map of Rye in 1797 shows the "house at the Ferry," near the mouth of Byram River. This house, about a century ago, was kept by a German, Frederick de Weissenfels, who afterwards obtained some distinction as an officer in the Revolutionary army.

At the beginning of the present century the ordinary and favorite mode of traveling from Rye to New York and back was by sloop. Several market-sloops ran regularly between Rye and New York. Some of them started from Saw Pit (now Port Chester); others from Milton, and others still from Rye Neck. There was a dock below Milton, at Kniffin's Cove, and one known as Jonathan Horton's, near the house of the late Captain Bouton. In 1803 nine market sloops ran regularly from Rye to New York, four from Saw Pit and one from Rye Neck. There were also three packet-vessels carrying freight and passengers. In 1812 one sloop ran from Rye Neck to New York and three from Saw Pit.

The post-road from New York to Boston intersects the lower part of the town of Rye, and forms the main street of the village. It did not exist at the time of

the first settlement. The only avenue of communication by land, as heretofore stated, was the "old Westchester Path." An Indian trail originally, it was never laid out as a public highway, but was used awhile by the inhabitants of the towns through which it passed, as well as by occasional travelers to New York or Connecticut. The "country road," as it was called, appears to have been laid out about the year 1672. In May of that year the General Court of Connecticut appointed Mr. John Holly, Lieutenant Jonathan Bell and John Green to view the township of Rye and to "consider what highways might be requisite and necessary for the use of the town and Colony, and lay them out and see them recorded in the town book." The roads provided for were for the most part neighborhood roads simply. As yet there was no public thoroughfare through Connecticut or New York. The road to Greenwich or Stamford was probably one of the roads laid out under the order of 1672. "The Standford road," "the path commonly called the Standford Road," is mentioned in 1680, eight years after that order. This was probably identical with the present post road leading from Mamaroneck River to Byram River, in the same general course as now. That portion of it which passes through the village of Rye, along the bank of Blind Brook, must have been opened before the year 1676.

The "country roads" leading from one town to another came in time to be considered as the public highway of the colony and province. The "country road" is mentioned as already existing in 1699, when a survey of it was ordered by the town, for the purpose probably of widening the road. In 1703 an act was passed for laying out highways throughout the several counties of the province of New York. One of its provisions established the present post road of Rye. A peculiarity of the highway of that day was the presence of a gate across the road wherever a side-road entered the main one of the settlement. There was such a gate on the Milton road, near the present cemetery by Blind Brook, in 1719; and another on the road leading from the Great Bridge, near the spot where the Presbyterian Church now stands, to Manussing Island. As late as 1779, on the fine road now leading from Harrison Station to North Street, there were "bars" at different points. Many such obstructions doubtless existed in the earlier part of the century, even on the Boston road, where it crossed the town. Until quite recently the Boston road was familiarly known as "the turnpike." It has, in fact, ceased to be a turnpike only in recent years. In 1800 a corporation was formed by act of the Legislature by the name of "The President, Directors and Company of the Westchester Turnpike Road." Philip Pell, John P. Delancy, Cornelius Rosevelt, Peter J. Monroe and Gabriel Furman were the members of the corporation mentioned in the act. The general course of the road coincided with that of the old Boston road established in 1703, just as that road followed

in the main, the course of the country road established in 1672. There has been several deviations, however, from the ancient line in the town of Rye. The first occurred where the turnpike road entered Rye, crossing Mamaroneck River. Here the old road ran about thirty rods north of the line adopted in 1800. The street now called Tompkins Avenue is the ancient highway. In 1811 the commissioners closed a part of "the old Boston Road, beginning at Mamaroneck River and extending eastwardly to the post set in the ground opposite Daniel Gidney's house, and thence to the land of William Gidney." Another change was made between Dr. Jay's residence and that of the late Mr. George Brown. The old road diverged from the line adopted for the turnpike at a point a little south of the present Bradford mansion. It returned to its present course at the southeast corner of Mr. Brown's lawn, forming a curve about fifteen rods at its greatest distance from the present road. Above Mr. Theall's house the road was straightened for a distance of half a mile. The old road is that which passes Mr. Benjamin Mead's house. The stone bridge across Blind Brook which has been demolished and replaced by a larger one, was built by the turnpike company. Before this the road crossed the brook over a wooden bridge, which stood about half-way between the present bridge and the ford. Through the village of Rye the turnpike retained the course of the old road, except at the head of Grace Church Street, where a slight change was made. Between Rye and "Saw Pit," or Port Chester, there was no material change. A slight deviation occurred between Rye and Port Chester, at the foot of Regent Street. A more considerable change was made in the village of Saw Pit. Here the turnpike company opened a new road between the old road and the water. This change begins where the road to Lyon's Point intersects Main Street. Beyond this the back street now called Fountain Street represents the course of the old road as far as Mrs. Moseman's residence. Passing along the north side of that house, it ran about parallel with the present course of the railway, and very near it, to the spot where the turnpike crosses the railway; thence, as the turnpike runs, to a place not far from the railway embankment, indicated by bars; and thence along the bank of Byram River to a point very nearly opposite to the bridge.

TAXATION AND EXCISE LAWS.—The revolt of Rye and Bedford from New York in 1697 has been represented as a step taken to avoid the payment of taxes. The loss of their lands, resulting from the action of

the Governor and Council of New York, was the principal cause; but the dread of excessive taxation may well have quickened the desire of the people to place themselves under the protection of Connecticut, whose public charges were light. Under the administration of Lord Cornbury, Rye had an experience of the evils she had feared. In 1703 the town was required to raise the sum of £44 for special purposes, besides £25 10s. for the regular county tax. In 1715 the General Assembly passed "an excise bill on strong liquors," which continued in force until the Revolution, and was said in 1762 to bring into the public treasury £1000 per annum. Mr. Joseph Budd, of Rye, the patentee of Budd's Neck and grandson of the original purchaser of that tract, was commissioner of the excise for the county of Westchester.

OLD HOUSES AND NOTABILITIES OF RYE.—On the 1st of April, 1770, the dwelling of Major Hachaliah Browne, in Rye, took fire and was burned. The



THE HALSTED HOUSE.

family were asleep when the fire broke out, and narrowly escaped with their lives. Major Browne's house and furniture had been burned ten years before. The later fire was supposed to be of incendiary origin. The house thus burned stood on the site of the house where his grandson, the late Hachaliah Browne, died in 1861.

The present building is said to have been erected in 1774.

Roger Park was one of the notabilities of Rye a century ago. His farm of two hundred and forty acres lay north of Major Brown's, in the old Town Field. Mrs. Park was a daughter of John Disbrow, and brought her husband a considerable fortune. She is said to have owned one of the only two carriages—it was a two-wheeled chaise—that had yet been seen in Rye. Next to these gentlemen, perhaps

the largest proprietor on Peningo Neck at this time was Philemon Halsted. He lived in the house which is still standing on the corner of the Milton road and the road to the beach, and owned the farm on both sides of the latter road, now the Newberry Halsted estate. His nephew Ezekiel, who had lately sold this property to Philemon, bought, in 1771, the land farther south, now Mr. George L. Cornell's and Mr. Underhill Halsted's. South of this, the greater part of the Neck was owned by David Brown, third son of Hachaliah. The little village of Milton had not yet sprung up. Lyon's mill had probably ceased to exist, and not more than two or three houses stood along the creek below. Sloops landed on the opposite side of the Neck from the present dock, at "Kniffin's Cove," where there is still a dock, and where formerly there had been a "warehouse" or store. Another large proprietor, Josiah Purdy, had now been dead some years. His son, Seth Purdy, had succeeded

hood. Mr. Jay, the father, exercised, no doubt, a marked influence in Rye. He is said to have been a man of sincere and fervent piety, of cheerful temper, warm affections and strong good sense. Mrs. Jay was a lady of cultivated mind.

The upper part of Budd's Neck was owned, a century ago, chiefly by the Purdys and Thealls. Captain Joshua Purdy lived in the house now owned by Mr. William Purdy. He adhered to the British side in the Revolutionary struggle, and was imprisoned. He lived until near the close of the century. Charles Theall was living, in the Revolutionary era, in the house now Mr. B. Mead's, where, probably, his grandfather, Captain Joseph Theall, had lived eighty years before. Charles owned a farm said to have measured "a mile square." This he divided, before his death, eight years later, among his four sons. Gilbert, the eldest, was living on the west side of the brook, opposite the house where Mr. Corning resides. North of his farm lay the new parsonage land, a part of the late Rev. James Wetmore's farm, which he had left eleven years earlier for this use. James Wetmore, his son, lived north of this, where Mrs. Buckley lives; and Timothy Wetmore now a leading man in Rye, lived in the old Square House. In Harrison's Precinct, as it was called, on the border of Budd's Neck, Mr. David Haight, one of the largest proprietors, was living in 1770. His house stood, its gable close to the road-side, on North Street, by the gate of the grounds lately owned by Captain Josiah Macy. He was now almost seventy, and lived to be nearly a hundred years old.

In the northern part of the town, Judge Thomas was the most prominent personage. His estate in "Rye Woods" was large, and furnished with a number of slaves. His eldest son, John Thomas, Jr., was supervisor of the town as well as justice of the peace and farmer of the excise for the county. The Thomas family, with the Jays in the lower part of the town, held a commanding position among the inhabitants of Rye. Both families espoused the patriotic side in the Revolutionary struggle, and during the earlier years of the war, at least, their influence was greatly felt.

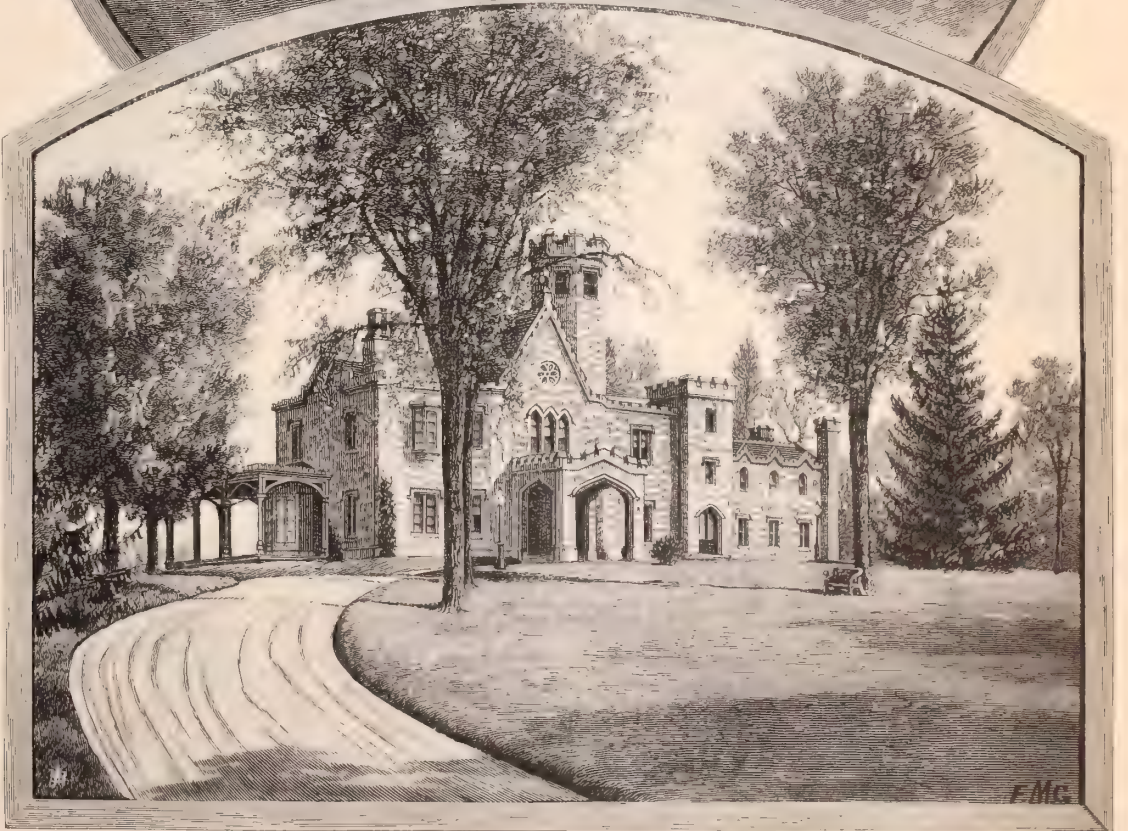
RYE FAIR.—Among the topics of village talk in 1770, perhaps the chief was the plan for establishing a fair at Rye. The Browns, the Halsteds, the Parks and the Purdys of that day joined with many others in a petition to the Governor, Lord Dunmore, in which, after stating that, by an act of Assembly passed



RYE BEACH..

to his estate. He owned the lands on both sides of the post road, above the village, from "the Cedars" to Blind Brook. Josiah Purdy's house stood a few rods north of Park Institute, close upon the road.

Jonathan Kniffin's farm in 1770 bordered upon the post road, above Regent Street, and extended northward to Purchase Avenue. Regent Street was then called Kniffin's Lane. It was Jonathan Kniffin's daughter who was so cruelly murdered on the highway near Rye in 1777. Peter Jay was living at this time on the estate which he had bought twenty-five years before at Rye from John Budd's grandson. The Jay mansion stood nearly on the site of the present house. It was a long, low building, but one room deep and eighty feet in width, having attained this size by repeated additions to meet the wants of a numerous family. Here John Jay spent his child-



"WHITBY,"
RESIDENCE OF JOSEPH PARK,
RYE, WESTCHESTER CO., N. Y.

many years before (1692), Rye had been declared entitled to the benefit of holding a fair once (in October) in every year, to sell "all Country Produce and other effects whatsoever," but the inhabitants had never applied to have the fair held, as they had the right, the request was made that the Governor "would please to appoint Doctor Ebenezer Haviland, of said Rye, to be Governor, and to have full power according to said Act of Assembly to keep and hold a fair in Said Rye, in the month of October next." Governor Dunmore granted the request and appointed Dr. Haviland to be governor of such a fair, to be kept at Rye on the second Tuesday in October, yearly, and to end the Friday next following, being in all four days and no longer. Such fairs had been held from time immemorial in England. It is not known how far the custom was carried out in Rye, but there is reason to suppose a brisk trade was driven on these occasions.

Before the Revolution, Rye Beach was a popular resort for pleasure-seekers. Horse-racing on "Rye Flats" was a favorite pastime.

FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR—EMIGRATION.—The French and Indian War drew many recruits from Rye. The muster-rolls of companies raised in Westchester County in 1758 and 1759 contain the names of thirty-four or thirty-five men whose "place of birth" was Rye. Undoubtedly many others went from the town in the course of the war, but the muster-rolls for the earlier campaigns do not specify the place where the recruits belonged. Not a few of the returned soldiers settled afterwards in the neighborhood of Lake Champlain and Lake George. The conquest of Canada was followed by a considerable emigration, encouraged by the large grants of land made to the parties applying for them. Among these applicants were some eighty families, mostly from Westchester County, N. Y. Dr. William Hooker Smith, son of the venerable minister of Rye, was among the leaders of the enterprise, and several others were from Rye. How many of these petitioners actually removed to "the northern frontier" cannot be determined, but it is a matter of tradition that several families of Rye emigrated "after the French war" to that region. An old inhabitant remembered hearing in his youth that "a good many went from Rye as recruits at the time of the French war and afterwards settled about Lake Champlain."

RYE IN THE REVOLUTION.—Rye played its humble part in the Revolutionary War, and not a few events of interest occurred in the town and the region round-about. At several periods in the course of the war the place was occupied by British or American forces, while at other times it lay between the opposing armies. In common with all the southern portion of Westchester County, it suffered severely from the ravages of both armies. The town was divided in sentiment. There were warm partisans of the British cause at Rye, and there were also

those who boldly espoused the people's side. The prevailing mood, however, was one of uncertainty, and the thought of resistance to law and revolt from the mother country was abhorrent to many minds. In 1774 the first recorded action took place at a meeting held on the 10th of August. The occasion of the meeting was the closing of the port of Boston. The "Freeholders and Inhabitants of the township of Rye" who composed this meeting selected John Thomas, Jr., James Horton, Jr., Robert Bloomer, Zeno Carpenter and Ebenezer Haviland as a committee to consult and determine with committees of the other towns and districts of Westchester County upon the expediency of sending one or more delegates to the Congress to be held in Philadelphia in September following. The committee elected Ebenezer Haviland chairman, and presented the following resolutions which were unanimously approved:

"This Meeting being greatly alarmed at the late Proceedings of the British Parliament, in order to raise a Revenue in America, and considering their late most cruel, unjust and unwarrantable Act for shutting up the Port of Boston, having a direct Tendency to deprive a free People of their most valuable Rights and Privileges, an Introduction to subjugate the Inhabitants of the English Colonies, and render them Vassals to the British House of Commons.

"RESOLVE FIRST. That they think it their greatest Happiness to live under the illustrious House of Hanover, and that they will steadfastly and uniformly bear true and faithful Allegiance to his Majesty King George the Third, under the Enjoyments of their constitutional Rights and Privileges, as fellow-Subjects with those in England.

"SECOND. That we conceive it a fundamental Part of the British Constitution, that no Man shall be taxed but by his own Consent, or that of his Representative in Parliament; and as we are by no Means represented, we consider all Acts of Parliament imposing Taxes on the Colonies an undue exertion of Power, and subversive of one of the most valuable Privileges of the English Constitution.

"THIRD. That it is the Opinion of this Meeting, that the Act of Parliament for shutting up the Port of Boston, and divesting some of the Inhabitants of private Property, is a most unparalleled, rigorous and unjust Piece of Cruelty and Despotism.

"FOURTH. That Unanimity and firmness of Measures in the Colonies are the most effectual Means to secure the invaded Rights and Privileges of America, and to avoid the impending Ruin which now threatens this once happy Country.

"FIFTH. That the most effectual Mode of redressing our Grievances will be by General Congress of Delegates from the different Colonies, and that we are willing to abide by such Measures as they in their Wisdom shall think most conducive upon such an important Occasion.

"By Order of the Committee,

"EBENEZER HAVILAND, Chairman."

The action of this meeting made no small stir among the people of Rye. Opinions were divided as to the wisdom of the resolutions passed. They were moderate enough certainly, but there was danger lest they might be misunderstood. To prevent this, a paper was gotten up, six weeks after the meeting of August 10th, and signed by a large proportion of the inhabitants, whose names appear attached to it in *Rivington's New York Gazetteer* of October 13, 1774,—

"RYE, September 24, 1774.

"We, the subscribers, freeholders and inhabitants of the town of Rye, in the County of Westchester, being much concerned with the unhappy situation of public affairs, think it our duty to our King and country to declare, that we have not been concerned in any resolutions entered into, or measures taken, with regard to the disputes at present subsisting with the mother country: we also testify our dislike to many hot and furious proceedings, in consequence of said disputes, which we think are more

likely to ruin this once happy country than remove grievances, if any there are.

"We also declare our great desire and full resolution to live and die peaceable subjects to our gracious sovereign King George the third, and his laws."¹

Fifteen of the subscribers² published a statement on the 17th of October, 1774, declaring that they had been "suddenly and unwarily drawn in to sign" the document of September 24th, and that, upon mature deliberation, being convinced that they acted "preposterously," and without adverting properly to the matter in dispute between the mother country and her colonies, they were "sorry" that they ever had any concern in the paper and "do by these presents utterly disclaim every part thereof, except our expression of loyalty to the king and obedience to the constitutional laws of the realm."

Timothy Wetmore, son of the late rector of Rye, and a man of considerable influence in the place, also published a statement in which he took the ground that Parliament had no right to tax America, though it had a right to regulate the trade of the empire. "I am further of opinion," he declared, "that several acts of Parliament are grievances, and that the execution of them ought to be opposed in such manner as may be consistent with the duty of a subject to our sovereign: tho' I cannot help expressing my disapprobation of many violent proceedings in some of the colonies." An ardent patriot about the same time addresses "the Knaves and Fools in the town of Rye," asking the "Fools," what in the world could have put into their heads that it were better for them to have their "faces blacked and be negroes and beasts of burden for people in England," than to live and die like their forefathers, in a state of freedom. "I really could not have believed," he adds, "that there had been so many asses in all America, as there appears to be in your little paltry town. Instead of *Rye Town*, let it hereafter be called *Simple Town*. It seems you are such geese as not to

know when you are *oppressed*, and when you are not."

Among the delegates to the Second Continental Congress, which met in Philadelphia on the 10th of May, 1775, was John Thomas, Jr., of Rye.

The call for soldiers for the Continental army was promptly responded to in Rye. Three companies were formed, mostly within the limits of Rye, which then included Harrison and the White Plains. These companies were embraced in the "South Battalion of Westchester County." The officers chosen were the following:

1. Mamaroneck and Rye, except the upper end of King Street: Robert Bloomer, captain; Alexander Hunt, first lieutenant; Ezekiel Halsted, second lieutenant; and Daniel Horton, ensign.

2. Scarsdale, White Plains and Brown's Point: Joshua Hatfield, captain; James Verrian, first lieutenant; Anthony Miller, second lieutenant; and John Falconer, ensign.

3. Harrison's Precinct and the upper end of King Street: Henry Dusingberry, captain; Lyon Miller, first lieutenant; Caleb Paulding Horton, second lieutenant; and Gilbert Dusingberry, ensign.

One of the first who volunteered was Frederick de Weissenfels, who kept the tavern at Rye Ferry. He applied, with Marinus Willett, Gershom Mott and five others, on the 6th of June, 1775, for a commission in the service. Weissenfels was appointed captain of Company I, First Regiment New York Continental Troops. He was soon after made colonel and was in command of a regiment at the battle of White Plains. In October, 1780, he was in command under General Heath at Albany. Conceiving that his services were not properly appreciated, he left the army before the close of the war, but bore a high character as an officer and a patriot. He was one of the original members of the New York Society of the Cincinnati. He died May 14, 1806. Among others from the town of Rye who embarked early in the country's cause, were Dr. Ebenezer Haviland, Dr. William Hooker Smith and Colonel Thomas Thomas. Colonel Gilbert Budd, though a resident of Mamaroneck, should not be omitted, for he belonged to one of the oldest families of Rye.

On the 12th of June, 1775, the Connecticut forces, encamped near Greenwich, were reviewed by General Wooster. On the 27th these forces, or a portion, passed through Rye on their way to New York. General Wooster afterwards had his headquarters at Rye for a considerable time. On the day before the arrival of the Connecticut troops, General Washington had passed through Rye on his way to the camp at Boston, where he was to take command of the Continental army. He was attended, as far as King's Bridge, by a troop of gentlemen of the Philadelphia Light Horse and a number of the inhabitants of New York City.

Frequent outrages and depredations show that the

¹ (Signed) Isaac Gidney, Daniel Erwin, Philemon Halstead, Abraham Wetmore, Roger Park, James Budd, John Collum, Roger Kniffen, Thomas Kniffen, Henry Bird, John Hawkins, Gilbert Merritt, Esq., Robert Merrit, Andrew Merrit, John Carhart, Roger Merrit, Archibald Tilford, Israel Seaman, Isaac Anderson, Adam Seaman, William Hall, John Willis, Ruesens Morrel, Capt. Abraham Bush, Nehemiah Sherwood, Abraham Miller, Andrew Lion, William Crooker, Jonathan Kniffen, James Jamison, Andrew Carhart, John Buvelot, Thomas Brown, Seth Purdy, Gilbert Thael, Gilbert Thael Junr, Disbury Park, Isaac Brown, Joseph Merrit Junr, Major James Horton, Peter Florence, Jonathan Gidney, Nathaniel Sutfen, William Armstrong, John Guion, Sol. Gidney, James Hanes, Elijah Hanes, Bartholomew Hanes, Thomas Thael, John Affrey, Gilbert Hanes, Dennis Lury, Hack. Purdy, Joshua Purdy, Roger Purdy, Charles Thael Esq., James Wetmore, Gilbert Brundidge, John Kniffen, William Brown, Joseph Clark, John Park, Joseph Purdy, James Gidney, Joshua Gidney, Jonathan Budd, James Purdy, Ebenezer Brown, Ebenezer Brown Junr, John Adee, John Slater, Henry Slater, Nathaniel Purdy, Benjamin Kniffen, Andrew Kniffen, Joseph Wilson, Nehemiah Wilson, Thomas Wilson, Benjamin Wilson, Gilbert Morris Junr, Timothy Wetmore Esq., James Hart.

² Abraham Miller, William Crooker, James Jameson, Andrew Carhart, John Buflot, William Brown, Gilbert Brundige, Israel Seaman, John Willis, Adam Seaman, Andrew Lyon, Gilbert Merritt, John Carhart, John Slater, Isaac Anderson.

state of the country had already become precarious and unsettled. At Rye several daring robberies were perpetrated. The friends of Congress complained that the Tories were "getting the upper hand of them, and threaten them daily." Some patriots had their private property injured by the destruction of fences and cropping of horses' tails and manes. Some of the Tories declared they would fire upon any one who should come to their houses and attempt to take away their arms. Godfrey Hains, of Rye Neck, was one of the most defiant of the Loyalists, and was finally arrested for speaking disrespectfully of Congress. He succeeded, however, in making his escape from jail, and took refuge on board a man-of-war in New York Harbor. With a number of others living on Rye Neck, he formed a plan to capture Judge Thomas at his house in Rye Woods. The plot, however, came to the knowledge of Captain Gilbert Budd, of Mamaroneck, and, upon his information, William Lounsberry and several others were arrested and bound over to keep the peace.

The Tories of the neighborhood made strenuous efforts to procure supplies for the British army at Boston. Between Byram River and King's Bridge, in December, 1775, there were about two thousand barrels of pork, chiefly in the hands of the Tories, besides what had been sent off. In the same neighborhood, for three or four miles around, there were not more than eight or ten Whigs to one hundred and twenty Tories. On the night of January 17, 1776, some cannon which had been placed near King's Bridge for the purpose of defending the approaches to New York City in that direction, were found to have been spiked. It was ascertained that William Lounsberry and his Tory associates of Rye Neck and Mamaroneck were the guilty parties.

In May, 1776, a Committee of Safety was chosen for Rye, to serve one year in the interest of the patriot cause. It was composed of Samuel Townsend, Isaac Seaman, Frederick Jay, Samuel Lyon, Gilbert Lyon and John Thomas, Jr. Acting in conjunction with a similar committee for Harrison, it kept a vigilant eye upon the Tories in Rye Neck. Lounsberry was again active, this time endeavoring to obtain recruits for the royal army. On the 5th of June several persons disaffected to the American cause were ordered to be arrested. Among them were William Sutton, Joseph Purdy and James Horton, Jr. Others "considered in a suspicious light" were to appear when summoned, Solomon Fowler among them. On the arrival of the British men-of-war in New York Harbor, in the summer of 1776, the Tories of Rye and vicinity grew bolder. It was found necessary to arrest William Sutton and his son, John, "because of inimical declarations and threats." Several farmers of Rye had already been detained for some time at the White Plains as disaffected persons. Among them were Monmouth Hart, John McCullum, Joseph and John Gedney, Joseph Purdy, Gilbert Horton,

Captain Joshua Purdy, Josiah and Isaac Brown, Bartholomew Hains, Joseph Haviland, Adam Seaman, Samuel Merritt and Jeremiah Travis.

With the arrival of the British fleet the waters of Long Island Sound became, for the first time, a scene of hostilities. The appearance of two men-of-war between Hart and City Islands, and of another near Frog's Neck, caused great excitement. The Committee of Safety, at Rye, ordered out the militia to guard from Rye Neck to Rodman's Neck. Colonel Budd was in command.

The retreat of Washington to the White Plains, in October, 1776, transferred the scene of active military operations to the vicinity of Rye. The period of real danger and suffering to the inhabitants now began. The town was occupied at first by a small American force,—the Twentieth Regiment of Connecticut Militia, commanded by Major Zabdiel Rogers. The roar of cannon during the battle of White Plains was heard in Rye, only seven miles away, and the day must have been passed by the inhabitants in great agitation. The action on Chatterton's Hill took place just outside the town limits, in Greenburgh, west of the Bronx River. On the 1st of November a fight took place, within the limits of Rye, between the American division, under General Heath, and a portion of the British army, at which General Washington himself was present. The British were repulsed with the loss to the Americans of only one man.

A scarcity of provisions, resulting from the presence of so large a body of men, intensified the distress in the vicinity of Rye, and the wanton destruction of property by both armies caused great suffering to the non-combatants. The court-house, Presbyterian Church and other buildings at White Plains were burned, and similar scenes were enacted elsewhere in the neighborhood. Many a night the reddened horizon or the visible flames betokened the ruin of some family whose barn or house was being consumed within the region of the "debatable land."

The first appearance of the "King's troops" at Rye was in the last days of October, 1776. Just before General Howe withdrew his army from the White Plains, a brigade under the command of General Agnew "pushed forward about two miles beyond Rye," in hopes of bringing a "large detachment of the American army, which was stationed at Saw Pit, to an engagement." Not being able to come up with them, they returned on Sunday afternoon, November 3d, to join the royal forces near the White Plains. It was a great day for the Loyalists at Rye. "Many of them showed particular marks of joy" upon the passage of the King's troops. Conspicuous among these was the Rev. Mr. Avery, the rector of the parish, who had been in correspondence with Governor Tryon before the arrival of the British army in New York, and had been very outspoken in his professions of sympathy with the British cause. The

American troops reached Rye on the same evening, and, by the Loyalist account, "showed their resentment" toward the Tory sympathizers "by plundering their houses, driving off their cattle, taking away their grain and imprisoning some of them." Among the rest, Mr. Avery was a sufferer and lost his cattle, horses, etc. Two days later he was found dead in the neighborhood of his house. "Many people," writes Mr. Seabury from New York, to the secretary of the Gospel Propagation Society in England, "are very confident that he was murdered by the rebels. Others suppose that his late repeated losses and disappointments, the insults and threats of the rebels and the absence of his best friends, who had, the day before, gone off for fear of the rebels, drove him into a state of desperation too severe for his strength of mind."

Lawless bands of marauders—Cowboys and Skinners—infested the Neutral Ground, ravaging the whole country between the British and American lines, a region some thirty miles in extent, embracing nearly the whole of Westchester County. Rye was still protected to some extent, however, by the presence of some American troops. General Parsons was at Saw Pit (now Port Chester) early in November with a portion of his brigade. He had a post, also, "near the head of Rye Pond," October 29th, securing the communication of the army at the White Plains in that direction. A month later, in December, 1776, General Wooster, commanding the Connecticut Militia, had his headquarters at Saw Pit. Complaint was made, however, that some of his men oppressed the inhabitants even more than the enemy themselves, taking off stock, household furniture and even farming utensils.

Early in 1777 the American forces were withdrawn and the country given over to the enemy. "The Queen's Rangers," a body of American Loyalists, soon became the scourge of the population. They had been recruited originally in Connecticut and the vicinity of New York, and were commanded by Robert Rogers, of New Hampshire, "one of the most odious of all Americans of note" who had enlisted under the royal standard. His men made daily excursions into different parts of the county, "taking with them by force of arms many good inhabitants, also their stock, grain and everything else that falls in their way, and destroying all that they cannot take with them." Although an American force was stationed at Saw Pit, they did not hesitate to make an occasional dash into the neighborhood. On one of these occasions, Thomas Kniffen, a lad of fourteen or fifteen, was passing through "Steep Hollow," between Rye and Saw Pit, driving his father's cows home from pasture. As he approached the post road a party "from below" came along the road, and took him prisoner, making him drive the cows down to New York Island, where he remained in camp with them for several weeks. By this time the cattle had been

butchered, and his captors set forth on a new marauding tour, taking him with them as guide. They took their course northward in the direction of the White Plains, but finding little spoil, crossed over into the town of Rye, and concealed themselves in the Great Swamp, which still existed, between Regent and Ridge Streets. Kniffen was ordered to go to some of the neighboring houses and find out where they could obtain food. He went to the house of Caleb Sniffen, on the old road near Mr. Peyton's, told the family what his errand was, and who were hiding in the swamp, and then starting across the fields toward the American lines, ran for his life to Byram Bridge, where he went into camp, and told his story, and enlisted in the army. Just then whale-boats were being fitted out for service on the Sound. Kniffen engaged as a whale-boat man, and served through the war in this capacity. He cruised most of the time along the coast from "Horseneck" to Throg's Point, making occasional dashes across to Long Island, or annoying the British boats and vessels in the Sound. In this sort of warfare not a few of the inhabitants of Rye were likewise engaged; but little is known at present of their exploits.

Sniffen's Hill, according to our old inhabitants, was the place where an American force encamped in Rye, at various times in the course of the war. The more modern name of the locality is Bloomer's Hill. It overlooks the village of Port Chester and commands an extensive view of the surrounding country. It was probably on this hill that the Connecticut troops were encamped from the early part of October, 1776, till the following spring. The commanding officers date their letters sometimes from Saw Pit and sometimes from Rye Neck. The latter name was commonly given at that time to Peningo Neck rather than to the portion of the town which lies west of it, toward Mamaroneck. Probably the same spot was meant by both designations.

In the summer of 1778 Washington was again for several weeks at the White Plains. The British after the battle of Monmouth had retreated to New York, and the Americans, from their former post on the hills of Westchester, awaited further movements on the enemy's part. Washington also attempted to cooperate with a French fleet, which had just arrived, in an attempt to capture New York. The plan for various reasons failed, but the army remained at White Plains and Rye from the 20th of July until the 15th of September. So many and such illustrious summer visitors Rye never had before and has never had since. The generals with their attendants were lodged in the best houses. Lord Stirling occupied the Anderson mansion, in Harrison. General Greene's quarters were on Purchase Street, below Rye Pond. General Lee was at Saw Pit.

During part of the war a detachment of French troops, it is said, was stationed near Saw Pit. The spot pointed out as their camping-ground is on the

west side of King Street, opposite the Misses Merrit's house.

The American force, under General Heath, which, in October, 1776, had been stationed "near the head of Rye Pond," in the northern part of Rye, was ordered, in January, 1777, to move down, with a considerable force, toward New York, as if he had a design on that city. The movement from Rye was begun on the 8th of January. On the night of the 17th the American forces, in three divisions, began to move towards Kingsbridge, but, on the 29th, the operations were concluded and the troops fell back. A cordon of troops was formed, on the 31st, from Dobbs Ferry to Mamaroneck. A number of Loyalists, from Rye and Mamaroneck, were now with the British army in New York, but their families remained within the American lines. General Wooster announced his intention to require these families to remove from the place and "go below," unless the men returned and pledged themselves to stay quietly at home, in which case they should be protected and not disturbed nor imprisoned. Commissioners were also appointed to seize the personal property of those inhabitants of Westchester County who had gone over to the enemy, and dispose of it at public sale. This measure was executed in some instances with so much rigor that great suffering resulted, and it was found necessary to caution the commissioners to proceed with less harshness. Soon after the withdrawal of the American army from New York great numbers of poor persons were sent into Westchester County from the poorhouse of that city and from elsewhere. Rye, Mamaroneck and New Rochelle were the places appointed

for their reception. Judge Thomas distributed them as well as he could in the several districts of the county. Among the accounts sent in to the Committee of Safety for the support of these indigent people was that of Ezekiel Halsted, who provided for fifty-one of them. The sum of £21 16s. 4d. was allowed him for this service. The presence of so many helpless persons must have added to the trials of the already overburdened inhabitants. The sufferings of the people of Rye and all the lower part of Westchester County excited deep sympathy. The frequent calls for the services of the militia greatly distressed them, as it took the husbandman from his occupation and prevented the gathering of his crops. In March, 1777, Colonel Humphreys was directed to proceed, with all the men he had raised, immediately to Westchester County for the protection of the well-affected; and, if the troops proved insufficient, to raise volun-

teers, not exceeding three hundred in number. A committee of three was also appointed by the Provincial Congress to devise ways and means for the permanent defense of the inhabitants from the ravages of the enemy. Little was done for them, however, except to express sympathy and promise help. It was not, in fact, the design of the American generals to keep a strong military force in this region. Washington had held, at an earlier stage of the war, that, for military reasons, the whole of the southern portion of Westchester County ought to be desolated, and the army stationed in the Highlands east of the Hudson. At present the chief anxiety was to remove all forage and stores that might fall into the hands of the enemy. A number of teamsters were employed in the spring of 1777 for this purpose, as well as for the removal of "well-affected inhabitants." Among the teamsters were Daniel Horton, Stephen Field, John Cromwell and others, of Rye.



SNIFFEN'S HILL.

Every week now brought stories of inroads by parties from the British lines penetrating far into the interior of the country. In one of these raids, March 22, 1777, the British succeeded in capturing a person whom they had long been seeking to take, Judge Thomas, of Rye. They seized him at his house in "Rye Woods," and hurried him off to prison in New York.

A Mr. Miller, probably William Miller, deputy chairman of the Westchester Committee of Safety, was captured at the same time. Judge Thomas died in New York soon after his arrest, and was buried in Trinity Church-yard.

It was in the spring of 1777 that the daughter of Jonathan Kniffin, of Rye, was fired upon and killed by some Cowboys concealed behind a wall. Her dead body was plundered of its clothing, and one of her fingers was cut nearly off in the effort to secure a

ring. Her corpse was left exposed in the highway. The murder is said to have occurred on the post road, a short distance above the village of Rye, near the entrance to Mr. Hunt's late residence.

Rye was one of the points, on the northern shore of the Sound, from which boats,—generally whale-boats, propelled with oars,—put forth from time to time to annoy the enemy. They would dart across the Sound under cover of the night, and run into the inlets of the Long Island shore, landing near the house of a Tory family, sometimes to plunder and sometimes to take prisoners. Small British vessels cruising in the Sound were occasionally captured. Market-sloops, loaded with provisions for the British army, were favorite prey. Great quantities of forage and other stores belonging to the enemy were destroyed. The whale-boat service was pursued with greatest activity in 1780 and 1781. The Loyalist refugees on Long Island would often retaliate with similar whale-boat expeditions, directed against the inhabitants of the opposite shore, including, doubtless, those of Rye.

On Wednesday, October 7, 1778, the "Queen's Rangers," now commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe, visited Rye and captured, on King Street, "six light dragoons belonging to Sheldon's Regiment," at the same time burning a store with a considerable quantity of merchandise. But on Friday, November 13th, a more important seizure took place. The house of Colonel Thomas, at "Rye Woods," was again surprised, this time by a party of the Rangers under Simcoe. Colonel Thomas, the son of Judge Thomas, who had been captured in the same way the year before, was, like his father, very active and fearless in his support of the American cause, and was bitterly hated by the enemy. The Rangers marched all night, and surrounded the house by daybreak. As the party approached the house, a shot was fired from a window, killing a man by Simcoe's side. The house was immediately forced, and the person who fired the shot was killed. This person was James Brundage, a son of Gilbert Brundage, of Rye, a young man of fine character and high promise. He was killed "while on his knees, begging for his life." Thomas Carpenter, another young man who was also in the house at the time, came near losing his life, being stabbed in many places by the soldiers' bayonets, while hidden under a bed. Colonel Thomas leaped out of a window, and came near escaping, but was taken by one of the hussars. The British cavalry proceeded to the American picket, about a mile farther, hoping to surprise a party of horse who were stationed there. But the sound of musketry had alarmed them, and after firing their carbines and wounding one of the enemy, they retreated.

Early in 1780 nearly three hundred Continental troops were stationed in Rye, the main body being encamped probably near the intersection of King Street and the road running east from the meeting-

house. It was near Merritt's Tavern, at the upper end of King Street, that, on December 2, 1781, a detachment of New York infantry levies under Captain Sackett was attacked by a party of De Lancey's refugee cavalry. Sackett was captured while apart from his men, and the command devolved on Lieutenant Mosher. There was a sharp engagement, in which the cavalry were repulsed three times with the bayonet, not a shot being fired by the Americans. After the third attack, however, the Americans were ordered to fire on the retiring troops, which they did, killing one man and dangerously wounding eight others, among them Captain Kipp. Mosher's men, taking advantage of the discomfiture of their assailants, escaped to a neighboring piece of woods, not having a man even wounded. This is said to have been the most astonishing feat, on the part of both the officers and men, that was enacted during the whole war. General Washington often spoke of the affair, and it was reported all over Europe, to show the utility of the bayonet, and that a small party of infantry thus armed may successfully resist a strong body of cavalry.

Several engagements took place in 1779 and 1780 below Rye, at Sherwood's Bridge (Glenville) and at Byram Bridge. On Thursday night, February 27, 1779, a small party sent from the American lines at Horseneck or Greenwich towards New York, discovered a British force at New Rochelle advancing toward Rye. The party, composed of a captain and thirty men, retired before them undiscovered as far as Rye Neck; but here, as it was growing light, the enemy perceived and attacked them. They defended themselves as best they could, but were soon defeated by superior numbers and several were killed. The party now scattered; some of them were driven by the enemy from the post road down into Milton, where they managed to keep away from their pursuers, crossing the heads of the creeks and hiding in the swamps; while others made their way to Saw Pit, where they took advantage of an elevated piece of ground and made some stand; but the superior force of the enemy compelled them to retire over Byram Bridge, which they took up, and by this means were enabled to reach Horseneck in safety. The British troops, consisting of several regiments, a body of dragoons and a detachment of artillery, were on their way to Greenwich for the purpose of destroying the salt-works at that place. This they accomplished, while General Putnam, who had observed their approach, went to Stamford to collect a body of militia and other troops which were there. Upon his return the enemy retreated, and "got over Byram river before dusk, the rebels," by a Tory paper's account, "annoying the rear with a considerable fire." According to Putnam's report, a number of prisoners were taken and two of the enemy's baggage and ammunition wagons were captured. In May and June of the same year parties of British troops dashed

through the town on their way to the Connecticut border.

Besides the British soldiery and the Cowboys, their humble allies, there was a class of men during the war whom the people dreaded perhaps equally or more—lawless characters, who, as it commonly happens in such times, would take advantage of the troubled state of the community to plunder, outrage and murder the peaceable part of the population without mercy, on their own account. One such individual there was, among others, in Rye, whose very name was a constant terror. Shubael Merritt was neither Cowboy nor Skinner; but he was a man whom everybody feared; one who, as it was said, "would shoot a man for the pleasure of it." He was killed some time after the close of the war by a young man whose father he had murdered.

The alarms and sufferings produced by the frequent forays among the people may be faintly imagined. But tradition represents the state of things in Rye as one which could scarcely be made worse by any new infliction. The inhabitants, say our old men, "were pillaged on both sides. Very many had moved away; those who stayed had to be *milk-and-water* men." The place was considered particularly unsafe, because "the scouting parties would generally go as near as they could to the lines" of either army. "The fences were all down. The farmers could not cultivate the lands." Many of the owners of property were killed, or were never heard from, and in some cases the lands for this reason became lost to the families who had a right to them. The opinion prevails among those who cherish recollections of the old times, that there was no part of the Neutral Ground where the inhabitants suffered more than in the town of Rye.

FROM THE CLOSE OF THE REVOLUTION TO THE PRESENT TIME.—For two years after the virtual termination of the war with the surrender of Cornwallis, at Yorktown, New York remained in the hands of the British. The British occupation ceased, however, on the 23d of November, 1783. In the meantime great changes were going on in the population of the surrounding country, including Rye. Families that had fled from their homes through fear of the British began to return, and those who had rendered themselves obnoxious to the new powers hastened to remove from the place. Numbers of the Tory inhabitants of Rye sought new homes in New Brunswick and Nova Scotia; some returned after a few months of absence, others remained for the balance of their lives. The town records show a blank from April 7,

1772, to April 1, 1783. This long interruption, for the space of eleven years, is explained by the following statement which precedes the record of the first town-meeting after the close of the war:

"It may be thought strange why a Town-Meeting in the Town of Rye has not been held for so many years. The war coming on and put the Town in such great confusion, and Many of the principal People left their Habitations, that no Law could take Place amongst them until this time."

At this first meeting John Thomas was chosen supervisor.

The people of Rye had held that part of their lands known as Peningo Neck—or the tract between Blind Brook and Byram River—by a charter from the British crown, granted in the year 1720. For this tract, estimated at four thousand five hundred acres, they were required, according to the terms of the charter, to pay a *Quit-Rent* of 2s. 6d. per hundred acres, every year to the State. In 1787 the arrears of



BYRAM BRIDGE.

this rent, which were claimed by the government of New York, were paid by Mr. Jesse Hunt, supervisor of the town, to the public receiver. They amounted to £99 3s. 5d. The whole system of quit-rents was soon after abolished.

The territory of Rye was reduced to its present size by an act of the Legislature, March 7, 1788. White Plains and Harrison, which had formed a part of Rye as "precincts" or districts of the town, were then constituted distinct towns. The act provided "that all that part of the said county of Westchester bounded southerly by the Sound, easterly by Connecticut, and westerly by the town of Harrison and Mamaroneck River, including Captain's Island and all the islands in the Sound lying south of the said bounds, shall be, and hereby is erected into a town by the name of Rye."

In point of population the town remained stationary for a long series of years. At the close of the last

century it contained 986 inhabitants, of whom 154 were qualified electors and 123 were slaves. In 1810 the population was 1278, of whom 225 were subject to taxation. The taxable property of the town was then valued at \$319,871. In 1820 the population had only increased to 1342 and the taxable property was valued at \$444,619. At that time there were in the town of Rye 177 persons employed in agriculture, 80 in manufactures and 35 in commerce. There were but eight foreigners not naturalized. There were 126 free blacks and 14 slaves. The electors numbered 283. The town contained 5892 acres of improved land, 981 cattle, 203 horses and 394 sheep. There were six grist-mills and one saw-mill; and during the year 12,939 yards of cloth were manufactured in the town.

Dr. Dwight, in a description of Rye in 1811, says,—

“Rye borders upon Mamaroneck eastward, and has a much handsomer surface and a still better soil. On an elevation not far from its western limit stands the mansion-house of the late Mr. Jay, father of the Hon. John Jay. It is now the property of Mr. Peter Jay, the youngest son of the original proprietor. . . . There are two villages, one of which is customarily called Rye, consisting of perhaps twenty houses, built on the border of a small mill-stream.”

In 1815 or 1816 Rye was visited by Joseph Bonaparte, ex-King of Spain, in search of a location for his proposed American home. He is said to have been much pleased with Theall's Hill, on the post road, about a mile below the village of Rye, but was unable to obtain sufficient land in one body for a park.

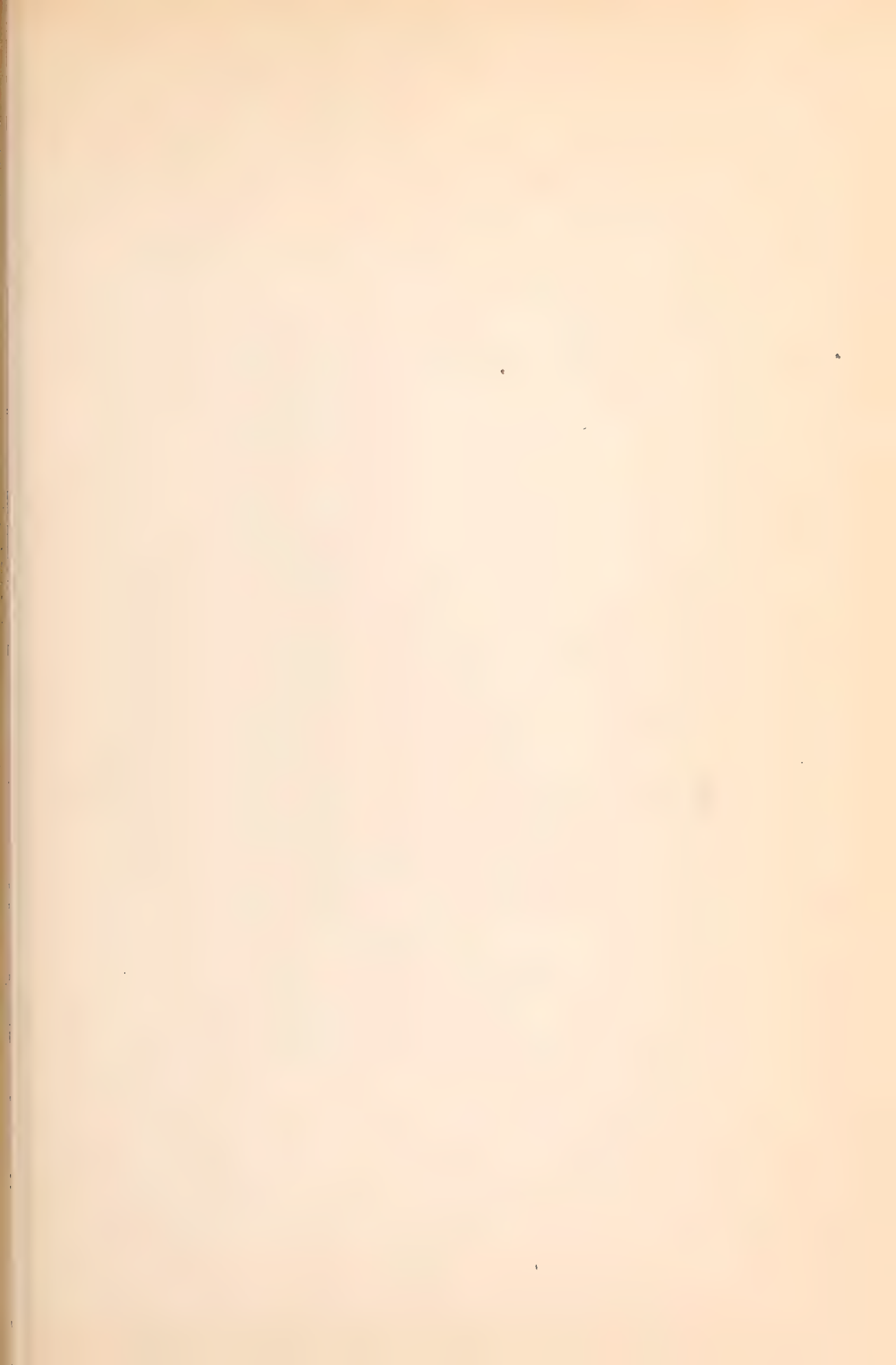
Between the years 1820 and 1830 the increased facilities of communication with New York City afforded by steamboat service opened a new era in the history of Rye. Property rose in value, and as early as 1825 there were schemes for disposing of land in building lots at high prices. Forty years ago, however, Rye was still a secluded village, separated by a journey of several hours from the stir and thrift of the city. “The houses number about thirty-five or forty. The Boston mail passes through daily. A steamboat touches every week-day at Rye Port, to and from New York. The boats now running are the ‘Nimrod,’ Captain John Brooks, and the ‘Croton,’ Captain Charles Peck; Sloops (Milton and New York), the ‘John Jay,’ Captain Leander Bishop, (Port Chester and New York) the ‘Sarah Adee,’ Captain Bird, and the ‘New York,’ Captain Gilbert Lyon. Rye is much resorted to in summer by citizens of New York. There is no regular hotel or place of entertainment. The post-office is kept by Daniel H. Mead, in the ‘Square House,’—one of the oldest houses in the place—formerly owned by the Penfield family. It stands on the post road in the village, at the commencement of the Purchase road, near the twenty-six milestone. The population of the town of Rye [in 1841] is about one thousand eight hundred and twenty.”

The construction of the New Haven Railroad in 1847-49 brought the town into closer contact with the

outside world. Before this for several years stages had been running from Mamaroneck to Williams' Bridge, where passengers were enabled to take the cars of the Harlem River Railroad. In 1870 the population of the town, according to the United States Census of that year, had increased to seven thousand one hundred and fifty two, and in 1880 had decreased to 6576.

During the late Civil War the town of Rye contributed freely to the success of the Union cause. Soon after the appearance of President Lincoln's call for seventy-five thousand volunteers, public notice was given in Rye of a meeting to be held on the 29th of April, 1861, to take action in the matter. Meanwhile, without waiting for formalities, the business of obtaining recruits was commenced. Thomas Beal, Sr., a native of Baltimore and a volunteer of the War of 1812, but then a resident of Port Chester, deserves particular mention for his untiring efforts from the earliest moment to obtain volunteers. The public meeting was held on the 29th of April, in the public square at Port Chester. Benjamin Loder presided and made an address. James H. Titus offered resolutions, which were adopted, expressing the general sense of the meeting. A committee to collect funds and to aid the work of the Federal government was appointed. It was named “The Union Defense Committee of the town of Rye,” and consisted originally of ten persons,—James H. Titus, Samuel K. Satterlee, Wm. P. Abendroth, John E. Marshall, Augustus Wiggin, George P. Titus, Augustus Van Amringe, Noah Tompkins, Wm. B. Halsted and Josiah H. Macy. To these were afterwards added Edward J. Swords, Ephraim Sours, Geo. L. Cornell, Wm. H. Smith and Augustus M. Halsted. Subsequently, Messrs. Macy and Smith, being residents of Harrison, resigned, and Wm. L. Bush and John W. Lounsbury were appointed in their place. The supervisor of the town, James D. Halsted, united in action with the committee during the war. James H. Titus was chosen chairman of the committee; George P. Titus, secretary; and John E. Marshall, treasurer. The following sub-committees were appointed: On finances, John E. Marshall, Edward J. Swords, Wm. B. Halsted; military committee, S. K. Satterlee, G. P. Titus, A. Wiggin, A. Van Amringe, W. L. Bush, A. M. Halsted; relief committee, W. P. Abendroth, E. Sours, G. L. Cornell, J. H. Titus, N. Tompkins, J. W. Lounsbury.

A relief fund of five thousand dollars was soon raised, and from this fund relief was extended during the year to the families of those who enlisted from the town of Rye. The number of families thus aided was, at one time, fifty. The number of volunteers who were sent to the field, prior to any enrollment by State authority, was upwards of two hundred, of which number one hundred and twenty-six were persons from the town of Rye. In the early part of 1862, when the voluntary fund thus raised in the





RESIDENCE OF W. J. TINGUE,
PORT CHESTER, N. Y.



HAWTHORNE WOOLEN MILLS,
GLENVILLE, NEAR PORT CHESTER, N. Y.
PROPERTY OF W. J. TINGUE.



town was nearly expended, the Legislature of the State of New York passed an act authorizing the county to issue bonds to the amount of fifty thousand dollars, for the relief of the families of volunteers. By this act the town auditors were alone authorized to apply the moneys thus provided; and the Defense Committee, supposing their labors were ended, prepared to dissolve. But on the 13th day of August, 1862, Governor Morgan issued a call for additional volunteers, under a new proclamation of the President, and the several towns were directed to fill up the quotas which were assigned to them. In this aspect of affairs, the Defense Committee, in the spirit of their first resolution, determined to continue their efforts, and proceeded to make arrangements for the filling up of the quota of this town, which was one hundred and thirty-eight men. They then resolved to procure the signatures of a majority of the tax-paying inhabitants of Rye, authorizing the supervisor to borrow upon the credit of the town a sum sufficient for the payment of a bounty of one hundred dollars to each recruit, and also for the expenses of recruiting. The sum of fourteen thousand five hundred dollars was thus raised by the committee, and by an act passed in 1863 this measure was declared legal by the State. Town bonds, payable in one, two, three, four and five years, were issued in pursuance of the provisions of this act; and in this manner provision was made for the payment of the sum required. Bonds for this amount were accordingly issued. The bonds for the first year were for two thousand five hundred dollars. Those for subsequent years were for three thousand dollars each.

The action of the Union Defense Committee did not stop here. Shortly, an order came for drafting men into the service for the war. The quota of this town was fixed at eighty men. The committee determined to furnish a bounty of three hundred dollars to every man drafted who should go to the war, and also to pay three hundred dollars for each substitute provided. A special town-meeting was called, and authority was given to the supervisor to borrow upon the credit of the town the further sum of twelve thousand six hundred dollars, and to apply the money thus raised to the payment of bounty money and for substitutes. The result of the draft was that forty-two residents of this town were held to perform military service. All of these, but one, were provided with substitutes at three hundred dollars each.

Soon after came the call for three hundred thousand additional troops. The quota of the town of Rye under this last call was forty-five. Again the Defense Committee took the lead, and by their prompt action the funds were raised for filling up this last quota. The sum of fourteen thousand six hundred and twenty-five dollars was borrowed from various individuals, upon the credit of the town. With this fund the committee procured the necessary number of recruits, paying for each recruit the sum of three hundred and twenty-

five dollars, which included the expense of recruiting. This quota was filled and completed on the 30th of December, 1863, and the statement was made, by authority of the provost marshal, that the town of Rye was the first town in this Congressional district that filled its quota under the call for three hundred thousand men.

Rye furnished from the opening of the Rebellion about three hundred and fifty men for the war. Of these, one hundred and twenty-six were residents of the town, and were volunteers under the first call; one hundred and thirty-eight enlisted under Governor Morgan's proclamation of August 13, 1862; one man was drafted, forty-one substitutes were provided and forty-five recruits obtained. The town responded promptly to every call made for troops, either by national or by State government, and provided bountifully for the families of those who went forth to sustain the honor of the country. It is supposed that, in addition to the numbers already stated, as many as fifty persons from the town enlisted in Connecticut regiments.

The work of the Union Defense Committee was admirably done. Their consultations were always marked with harmony and zealous co-operation.

On the 30th of April, 1861, Captain Nelson B. Bartram left the town with the first company of volunteers. They were duly mustered into the service of the United States in the city of New York, as Company B, Seventeenth Regiment New York Volunteers. In this company forty-four men who were residents of this town served.¹

¹ Their names were, —

- | | |
|---------------------|--------------------|
| Nelson B. Bartram. | Charles Gedney. |
| John Vickers. | Joseph Hibbert. |
| Charles Hilbert. | William Hennessy. |
| James Fox. | Augustus Adams. |
| Thomas Beal, Jr. | Jacob Lender. |
| Louis Neelling. | William H. Lee. |
| Augustus Dittman. | William Lee. |
| Wm. A. Crothers. | John Murphy. |
| Seaman V. Morrell. | John Murty. |
| Joseph H. Beal. | Thomas McKay. |
| Robert Magee. | Lafayette Merritt. |
| William Baker. | Henri Siltz. |
| Andrew Burns. | James Worden. |
| Edward Bowen. | Anthony Warner. |
| George W. Bulkley. | William Whelpley. |
| John Beal. | Theodore Miller. |
| Darius Butterfield. | Ulric Ersigner. |
| James Cunningham. | John Fay. |
| Frederick Cross. | Daniel Mahon. |
| Thomas Donahue. | Richard Aylman. |
| Benjamin Glawson. | Timothy Bulkley. |
| Conrad Graff. | Jerry O'Donald. |

Captain Bartram was promoted, December 5, 1861, to be major. Charles Hilbert, second lieutenant, was promoted, December 20th, to be captain.

John Vickers, first lieutenant, was transferred, August 3d, to Company F.

Thomas Beal, Jr., sergeant till October 4th; first sergeant till August 30, 1862; was wounded in the battle of Bull Run, and promoted to be second lieutenant from that date.

Robert Magee, corporal till October 4th; sergeant till March 1, 1863; was first sergeant from that date.

This company did good service, and bore a very high character throughout the war.

Immediately after its departure Captain Charles H. Palmer commenced to recruit, at his expense, a company in the town, which, when filled, was mustered into the service, in the city of New York, as Company C, Forty-ninth Regiment New York Volunteers. Twenty of its members were residents of Rye.¹

When Captain Palmer's company was nearly filled, Captain Thomas Beal commenced to recruit a company in Rye, sending the men as fast as they were recruited to Staten Island, where they were mustered into the service. Thirty-eight of these men were residents of the town.²

In addition to the recruits thus sent out there were enlisted and mustered into the service in different regiments of New York and Brooklyn twenty-three men, residents of the town.³

When the call came in 1862 for three hundred thousand men, Captain Palmer resigned his position

and returned to Port Chester to organize another company. It was mustered into the service at Youkers, on the 2d of September, 1862, in the Thirtieth New York Volunteers. It was transferred to the Sixth New York Heavy Artillery on the 2d of October, 1862.⁴

Thirty-seven volunteers from the town enlisted and were enrolled in other regiments of New York and Brooklyn subsequent to July 2, 1862.⁵

Others, who are not named in the foregoing lists, went into the army from Rye, and did good service at different periods in the course of the war. Among them were Peter A. Jay, Dr. John C. Jay, Jr., Arthur W. Parsons and Kiliaen Van Rensselaer.

In recent years the growth of Rye has been greatly accelerated by its increasing popularity as a summer resort. Many families have been drawn hither by the beauty and healthfulness of the spot and by its proximity to New York. A large number have made it their permanent home.

RELIGIOUS DENOMINATIONS.—As the latest and remotest plantation of the colony of Connecticut, Rye remained longer than any other without the benefits of a settled ministry, and when those benefits had been secured in a measure, the transfer of the town from the government of Connecticut to that of New

¹ Joseph Beal, corporal. John Beal, corporal from August 10, 1862; was sergeant from March 1, 1863.

Silas Downs was corporal from October 4, 1861.

James Fox was promoted to be sergeant-major October 4, 1862.

Benj. Clawson was corporal from March 1, 1863.

² Their names were,—

Charles H. Palmer.
Jacob Adams.
Gabriel Burger.
William H. Tyler.
Benjamin Sherwood.
Bloomer Churchill.
Calvin Churchill.
George Fish.
Wm. H. Hutchins.
Joseph Sterry.

³ Their names were,—

Theodore P. Butler.
William H. Voorhies.
Lucius Miller.
Adam Ijer.
John Williams.
James Anderson.
— Allemer.
— Knotz.
George H. Summers.
Silas Weed.
John Ready.
Stephen S. Sutton.
Samuel C. Ingersoll.
Jeremiah Sheridan.
John H. Hopper.
Edw. L. Lee.
James Shaw.
Milton Wing.
Emmet M. Hoyt.

⁴ Their names were,—

E. D. Richman.
Henry S. Green.
David E. Daniels.
David C. Banks.
Joseph Harrison.
Philip Angel.
George Hillman.
John Hillman.
Charles Riddle.
Edward Stiles.
Edw. W. Thompson.

John Mead.
Levi Strayer.
Gilbert Miller.
William Howard.
John Fisher.
Augustus Smith.
Leander Burns.
J. Wright.
Frederick C. Lord.
I. Wight.

Lawrence Fitzgerald.
George W. Floyd.
John P. Whitehouse.
William Walton.
Martin Davidson.
John C. O'Neal.
Patrick McArdle.
Edwin A. Rogers.
William Keys.
Floyd Pugsley.
Hiram Brundage.
John Rockett.
William Cleveland.
Albert Burrows.
Joseph Hines.
Richard Pearson.
John C. Faulkner.
James Moines.
John McCormick.

John Townley.
James Thompson.
Ambr. W. Thompson.
John Kaufman.
John Fisher.
— Dodge.
Geo. E. Waring, Jr.
Joseph Crank.
Joseph Bird.
Martin Stahelen.
James Waring.

John Waring.

⁴ The following members of this company were residents of the town of Rye:

Charles H. Palmer, captain, wounded at Mechanicsville, May 3, 1864, while in command of the First Battalion, promoted in February, 1865, to be major, and shortly after commissioned as colonel, but not mustered in; Charles McIntosh, first sergeant, wounded May 20, 1864; James Reynolds, sergeant; Cephas Peck, sergeant; John L. Little, sergeant; Gabriel S. Burger, sergeant; George E. Rood, corporal; Henry C. Fox, corporal; Frank Kelly; John Hughes, wounded June 13, 1864; Jeremiah L. Butterfield, killed May 30, 1864; Michael Madigan; Joseph H. Morrell; John A. Billington; John S. St. John, corporal, taken prisoner May 27, 1864; Jacob Lender; William Reynolds; Wm. H. Mosier; Jacob Scheile; Wm. H. Romer, Sr.; William Ashby; John Riley; Wm. H. Romer, Jr.; Peter Butterfield; Walter L. Rood; Owen Duffy, wounded July 12, 1864; Edward Billington; Thomas T. Halpin; William H. Hees; William E. Briggs; William S. Morse; Henry Lowrey, died April 5, 1863; T. W. Johnson, wounded May 30, 1864; Thos. M. Smith; Luke Gaffney; John S. Merritt; B. McDonnell; Geo. W. P. Bouton; T. M. Swift; Thos. Golden, wounded June 18, 1864; Thomas Conlin; Thos. Colvin; John Townsend; Sidney Smith; James Taylor; John Miller; S. Waterbury.

⁵ Their names were,—

Edward Ireland, Clinton Summers, Joseph Smith, Michael McGrath, Henry Loomis, Jeremiah Summers, Robert Bennett, Andrew Johns, Lewis Soura, William Davison, Augustus Johnson, Walter Andrews, Andrew St. John, William H. Miles, Henry C. Brown, Philemon A. Paris, Francis H. Minnett, Edward C. Tompkins, Thos. Murphy, Wm. E. Thorne, John S. Kraft, Alexander S. Merritt, John Glynn, John H. Hanes (Thirteenth Cavalry), William Eams, Peter Devil, David Nichol, Edward Parker (Thirteenth Cavalry), Albert Fuller, Andrew McLaurie, William Brown, Edward Murtagh, William H. Prior, James Power, Julius Schmidt, G. W. Howard, Thos. Smith.

The following persons from the town were mustered into Connecticut regiments.

Thomas Miley.
Michael Cum.
Peter O'Brien.
Charles Down.
Francis Elliott.
Frank Middlebrook.
John Reardon.

Martin Fitzpatrick.
— Washburn.
— Washburn.
Abraham Van Houghton.
Edwin Field.
Chas. McGill.
Stephen P. Wesley.

Charles Cowden

York was followed by religious differences and dissensions that could not but be prejudicial to the highest interests of the people. The settlers of Connecticut were English Puritans. Their doctrinal belief was Calvinistic and their ecclesiastical system was a modified form of Presbyterianism. The first care of the founders of Connecticut was to provide every town with religious ordinances and a competent ministry. In October, 1669, nine years after the commencement of a plantation at Rye, the General Court of Connecticut was informed that the people of Rye were "yet destitute of an orthodox minister." There were families enough to support a minister, but the people seem to have drifted into loose and "disorderly" ways. John Coe and Marmaduke Smith, who were represented to the court as unsound and heterodox, were undertaking to teach or conduct religious services. John Coe was one of the founders of the town. Who Marmaduke Smith was does not appear. Under instructions from the General Court, a town-meeting was held at Rye, November 17, 1670, and the inhabitants made choice of Joseph Horton, Thomas Brown and John Brondig, who were "to do their endeavour to procure a minister." It was also agreed to allow "two-pence in the pound for the maintenance of a minister amongst us; that is to say an orthodox minister." Six months elapsed and in May, 1671, the General Court appointed certain persons to go to Rye, and, besides other business, "to lend their endeavours in the procuring of an able and orthodox minister to settle in that place."

"If the people of Rye shall not concur with their endeavours in procuring a minister, and comfortably settling of him" among them, these persons were empowered "to agree with a suitable man for that worke in that place;" and they were to "insure to him a mayntenance to the value of forty pownds p^r annum, which the treasurer, by warrant to the constable of sayd Rye, shall order the gathering and payment thereof, with the Country Rate."

Three years more pass by, making fourteen in all, during which Rye seems to have been without a stated ministry. It does not follow that the Gospel was never preached here throughout that period. Trumbull says that Rye and Greenwich "had occasional preaching only for a considerable time." Colonel Heathcote, speaking of the care that the people of Rye took to provide a parsonage house "at such times as they were destitute of a minister," mentions the adjoining towns of Greenwich and Stamford as places "where they were always supplied."

The first person who is known to have officiated for any length of time in the ministry at Rye was Eliphalet Jones, who, in 1674, was requested by the General Court "to take the paynes to dispence the word of God to the people of Rye once a fortnight on the Lord's Day, till the court, October next, and then this court will take further order concerning them and for Mr. Joanes' satisfaction."

Eliphalet Jones was the son of the Rev. John Jones, a man of some note in the early history of the New England churches. He came to this country from England, in 1635, a clergyman of the Established Church, and was first settled at Concord, Massachusetts, and afterwards at Fairfield, Connecticut, where he became pastor of the church organized there by his efforts. Eliphalet was born at Concord in 1641. He received his education under the care of Peter Bulkley, who had been his father's colleague at Concord, and studied at Harvard College, but did not graduate. In 1669 we find him admitted to the privileges of a freeman of Connecticut. He was at Greenwich in 1674, when the above order was given; not, however, as the settled pastor of that town, but as a missionary or evangelist. It would seem that he continued in this neighborhood for about three years, preaching at Rye, probably, from time to time, as occasion appeared. In 1677, Mr. Jones accepted a call to Huntington, Long Island, where he remained and labored for more than fifty years, dying in 1731, at the good old age of ninety. He was never married. He is said to have been "a man of great purity and simplicity of life and manners, and a faithful and successful preacher."

Having provided for an occasional supply, the General Court continued to urge upon the people the necessity of securing a regular pastor. October 8, 1674, a committee was appointed to "endeavour the obteyning and setling of a minister at Rye." In the spring of 1675 the people took steps in that direction. The Rev. John Prudden,¹ minister of Jamaica, Long Island, was called to Rye, at the suggestion of the General Court of Connecticut. He came in the spring of the year 1675, but remained only a year, in consequence, it would seem, of a disagreement with reference to the parsonage house and lands. The people had set apart a lot for the minister's house and certain other lands for a glebe. The house-lot was situated in the village, "by the Blind Brook." It would appear that Mr. Prudden objected to the location, for on the 27th of May, 1675, the town exchanged this lot for the home-lot of Peter Disbrow, which Mr. Prudden was to have for his parsonage lot if he remained. A building was commenced on the site for the minister. But in 1676 the agreement for the exchange of the lots was canceled, and next year the "frame intended for the parsonage house" was

¹ In the "History of Rye," page 277, *sup.*, I have stated that this minister was Peter Prudden. So the name is given by Mr. Bolton ("History of the Protestant Episcopal Church in Westchester County," page 133), in a quotation from the town records, vol. A, now lost. But it is certain that John Prudden was intended, not Peter, his father, who was minister of Wethersfield, Conn., in 1638. John Prudden was minister of Jamaica, L. I., from 1670 to 1675, and from 1676 to 1692. In January, 1674-75, he informed the people of Jamaica that he was "under engagement to another people," and brought his ministry there to a close; but a year later he returned and remained in Jamaica until 1692. This interval was undoubtedly the term of Mr. Prudden's ministry at Rye. He died in Newark, N. J., December 11, 1725.

sold. This, doubtless, was owing to the fact that the negotiation with Mr. Prudden had failed. He returned to Jamaica, and resumed his ministry in that place, where he remained for sixteen years longer.

His successor was the Rev. Thomas Denham, who was the first minister actually settled at Rye. He came in 1677 and remained for seven years. A house-lot was appropriated to his use in June, 1677, and on the 22d of November following he was admitted as an inhabitant of Rye. On the 21st of June, 1678, it was decided that he was "to have all the grass on the highway at the old town, besides an equal share with the proprietors of Peningo Neck." On the 5th of March, 1679, "fifty poles of land lying before his door, toward the brook," were granted to Mr. Denham. His salary was to be thirty pounds per annum.

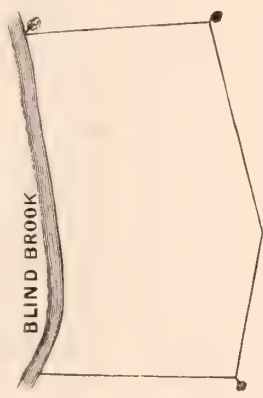
Mr. Denham's home was the parsonage house in the village, at the southeast corner of the parsonage lot. "The small framed dwelling" must have afforded very narrow accommodations for his family—a wife and six children. Not far from the house, on the opposite side of the post road, was the house of Timothy Knapp, where, for want of a church, the little community was accustomed to meet on the Sabbath for public worship. Mr. Denham's ministry terminated about 1684. He removed to Bedford and became pastor of the church in that place. He died there in 1689, at the age of sixty-eight. He seems to have been a worthy minister, and to have enjoyed the respect and confidence of the people of Rye. He was succeeded as pastor of Rye by Rev. John Woodbridge, in 1684. Mr. Woodbridge appears to have preached for several years, with interruptions, during which the place was without a minister. In 1690 and 1693 persons were appointed to procure one, and in 1697 a committee was appointed to confer with Mr. Woodbridge "concerning his settling amongst us." Whatever agreement was reached was not of long duration, for in 1697 Rev. Nathanael Bowers came to Rye, and remained as pastor till 1700, when he was called to Greenwich. The work of building a church was undertaken during the pastorate of Mr. Bowers. "At a town-meeting in Rye September 20, 1697, Capt. Theall, John Horton, Joseph Purdy, Hacaliah Browne, John Lyon, Thomas Merit, Isaac Denham are chosen as a Comitty for the management and carrying on the worke of building of a meeting-house for the town of Ry and also for the appointing of a place where it shall set and the above-said meeting-house shall not exceed [exceed] above thirty foot square." In November, 1698, another committee is chosen "for the building of a house for minester." January 25, 1698 [1699], the town resolves that "whereas a comitty was appointed at a former town-meeting for the building of a town-house for the yose of the ministere and the town hath further impowered the above-said comitty to proceed in the building of ye house with all speed—

the above-said house is to be as followeth: thirty foot in length and twenty foot in breadth and two story in haith and a Leanto joyning to it." In the same year, February 27th, "the Proprietors of Peningo Neck grant unto the towne of Rye a parcell of land of four rods square for the said towne [to] set a house upon, lying as convenient as may be on that lot where the town-house now stands." The "town-house" meant sometimes the minister's dwelling and sometimes the place of worship. The above orders evidently referred to its use as a place of worship. On the 30th of August, 1670, Isaac Denham and Joseph Budd were chosen collectors to gather the moneys due for the building of the town-house—Denham for the east side of Blind Brook and Budd for the west side. In June, 1701, Isaac Denham was made collector for the whole town of Rye for the gathering of moneys due for building the town-house. The money was raised in the customary way—by a tax levied on the inhabitants. How far the building of the church proceeded at this period has not been ascertained. It would appear that moneys were granted and some portion of them collected for this purpose. A site for the house seems also to have been chosen "on that lot where the town-house now stands." This was the parsonage house, and the spot must have been on the same narrow strip of land in the village between the post road and Blind Brook. There is no evidence, however, that such a building was actually erected there. About the same time these measures were in contemplation an effort was made to secure more ground for the minister's use. On the 29th of December, 1698, the town appointed John Lyon and Isaac Denham a committee to lay out land for a parsonage, not exceeding forty acres, where they might "see it convenient." The committee were also directed to enter into negotiations with Humphrey Underhill for his land and lay it out if he and they could agree. It does not appear that they succeeded.

The "parsonage lots" at Rye were three tracts of land set apart, according to the New England custom, soon after the settlement of the town. One of these was situated at the lower end of Peningo Neck, on "Parsonage Point," another was in the Town Field, and the third lay in the village proper, on the bank of Blind Brook. Parsonage Point was evidently the very earliest reservation of land for the minister's use. It comprised three acres, and the location indicates that it was set apart by the inhabitants of "Hastings," or while the settlers still lingered near Manussing Island, about the year 1662. Parsonage Point forms the southeastern extremity of Peningo Neck, and lies about a mile below Rye Beach. It is laid down upon the maps to this day, and the name is still in common use. The "home-lot" in the village where the ministers, first of the Presbyterian and afterwards of the Anglican communion, lived, occupied the grounds owned in recent years by Mr. Augustus Halsted, Miss Bush and Mr. Thomas Peck,

between the post road and Blind Brook. All the church reservations passed into the hands of the Church of England, which became the established religion at Rye, as elsewhere in the province of New York, and Christ Church Parish retained possession of the "home-lot" until 1847, when it was sold. The same parish acquired before the Revolution a valuable glebe on the west side of Blind Brook, opposite the village, which was sold in 1846.

For many years after the removal of Mr. Bowers to Greenwich, in 1700, the Presbyterians of Rye were without a settled pastor. Some of them conformed to the Church of England. Others attended the Anglican services without conforming. By far the greater part of the population, however, continued to avow themselves Presbyterians. In 1710 two-thirds of the population belonged to that denomination. Upon the death of the Anglican clergyman, Mr. Bridge, May 22, 1719, the Presbyterians attempted to possess themselves of the church, which was regarded as town property, and, in their opinion, free to them for purposes of public worship. They appear to have succeeded, and during the three years that elapsed before another rector was inducted they probably met here, more or less regularly, under the Rev. Stephen Buckingham's teachings, whom they had invited to labor among them. Under his ministry the Presbyterian congregation became consolidated and thenceforth maintained a corporate existence.



THE "HOME LOT" IN 1722.

Mr. Buckingham returned to Connecticut in 1722 and was succeeded by Rev. John Walton, who came to Rye about 1723, remaining until 1728. Mr. Walton, who came from the Presbytery of Philadelphia, was a native of New London, Conn., and a graduate of Yale. He is said to have been a gifted preacher, but erratic and self-willed. His labors served, however, to greatly strengthen the congregation at Rye. Through his efforts a house of worship was built at White Plains, and another, soon afterwards, at Rye, on Pulpit Plain, on the northwest corner of the post road and the "road to the Cedars, subsequently opened." The latter church occupied this site until the Revolutionary War. It was not erected without considerable difficulty. Aid was asked of the Governor and Council of Connecticut. The petition, dated May 11, 1727, was signed by the following persons:

- | | |
|------------------|---------------------------|
| John Walton. | Joseph Sharhod (Sherwood) |
| Ebenezer Theall. | Andro Sharhod [id.] |
| Joseph Brondige. | Peter Brown. |
| Samuell Lane. | Sammuel Brown. |

- | | |
|--------------------------------|------------------------------|
| Daniel Purdy. | Thomas Lyon junr. |
| Abrahan Brondige | Wm. Mohmath (Monmouth) Hart. |
| Samuell Lane jr. | Joseph Horton. |
| Hezekiah Lane. | Andrew Merritt. |
| Robert Bloomer. | Benoney Merritt. |
| Joseph Kniffin. | Joseph Purdy. |
| Benjamin Brown. | Jonathan Haight. |
| Thomas Brown. | Joseph Purdy. |
| Hachliah Brown. | Jonathan Haight. |
| Timothy Knap. | Joseph Purdy. |
| Jonathan Browne. | Nathan Lane. |
| Thail [Israel] Kniffin. | John Haight. |
| Danjell Purdy. | Samuel Hait. |
| Joseph Merritt. | John Turner. |
| Thomas Robeson. | John Turner iun. |
| Michel Barsit [Michael Basset] | David Horton. |
| David Horton junr. | Robert Travis. |
| Samuell Horton. | John Garrison. |
| Samuell Horton junr. | Jonathan Lane. |
| John Travis. | Caleb Hyatt. |
| Benjamin Knap. | Caleb Hyatt junr. |
| Solomon Lane. | Nathan Hyatt. |
| John Hyatt. | Moses Knap. |
| Jonathan Linch. | Daniell Knap. |
| Robert Travis. | George Lane senr. |
| Daniel Lane. | George Lane. |
| Robert Bloomer jr. | |

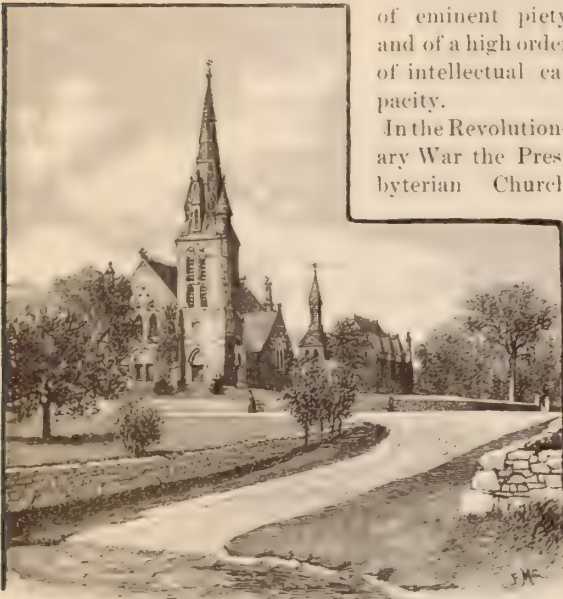
The application was refused, but the trustees of Yale College became interested in the project and suggested that an effort be made to obtain assistance from the General Assembly of Connecticut. John Haight and Robert Bloomer were appointed by the Presbyterians of Rye to further inform the Yale trustees of the state of affairs. The trustees thereupon took action indorsing the appeal of Rye, which obtained a second and more favorable hearing at the hands of the Connecticut authorities. The Assembly adopted a resolution calling for contributions from the various congregations in the colony. The people of Connecticut, we learn, "contributed largely." On the 15th of May, 1729, a building site was secured and in course of time the proposed house of worship built, as heretofore stated.

Mr. Walton left Rye early in 1728 and was succeeded by the Rev. Edmund Ward, a native of Killingworth, Conn., and a graduate of Yale, who remained until 1729, when he removed to Guilford, Conn. A vacancy of several years succeeded Mr. Ward's departure. On the 30th of December, 1742, a council of the Eastern Consociation of Fairfield County, Conn., met at Rye and ordained the Rev. John Smith as minister of that place. Mr. Smith was a native of England, born on the 5th of May, 1702. He was a brother of the Hon. William Smith, a distinguished lawyer in the city of New York previous to the Revolution, and afterwards chief justice of the province of Lower Canada. He came to this country when a boy, with his father, Thomas Smith, who settled in the city of New York. In his youth he formed an acquaintance, which afterwards ripened into ardent friendship, with Jonathan Edwards. The wife of Mr. Smith was a daughter of James Hooker, of Guilford, Conn., a grandson of Thomas Hooker, the famous Puritan divine. Mr. Smith labored in Rye with great energy and zeal. At first he resided

in that village, but afterwards removed to White Plains, continuing, however, to preach in Rye. In 1763 he added to his duties the charge of the Presbyterian Church of Sing Sing. Five years later he applied to the Presbytery of Dutchess County for the assistance of a colleague. In October, 1769, Mr. Ichabod Lewis was ordained to serve in this capacity as minister of White Plains and Sing Sing. It is supposed that Mr. Smith continued to preach more or less frequently at Rye until within a short time of his death, which occurred at the White Plains on the 26th of February, 1771. His remains lie in the church-yard and the inscription on his tomb designates him as the "first ordained minister of the Presbyterian persuasion in Rye and the White Plains," adding that, "worn out with various labors," he "fell asleep in Jesus." He appears, from all accounts,

to have been a man of eminent piety and of a high order of intellectual capacity.

In the Revolutionary War the Presbyterian Church



THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, RYE.

of Rye was destroyed by fire, as were nearly all the churches of this region. The congregation, owing to the troubles of the times, was greatly scattered. Its leading members were stanch Whigs, and were consequently obliged to remove from the disputed territory, of which Rye was a part, in order to escape the depredations of the British troops from New York. At the close of the Revolution the Presbyterians of Rye were found to be very few and feeble. The effort to resuscitate the congregation was doubtless due, in great measure, to the influence of the Rev. Dr. Isaac Lewis, of Greenwich. Since the loss of their church the remaining Presbyterians of Rye had frequented public worship at Greenwich. The first step toward rebuilding the church was taken in 1792. On the 22d of November in that year Jesse Park and Phoebe, his wife, of the town of Harrison, conveyed to Joseph

Theale, Ezekiel Halsted, Jr., and John Merritt, of Rye, as trustees for the Presbyterian Society, a tract of land comprising half an acre. The church was built in the following spring. A considerable part of the money raised for this purpose had been subscribed by the people of Greenwich. It was dedicated to the worship of God, in the course of the year 1793, by the Rev. Isaac Lewis, D.D., who preached here for some months every Sunday, after service in his own church. His son, the Rev. Isaac Lewis, Jr., subsequently pastor at New Rochelle, succeeded him for a short time in this duty. But after this the congregation remained for a long period without a stated ministry. Occasional services were held by ministers visiting the place, and sometimes the building was occupied, on special occasions, by persons of other religious persuasions. For about twenty years, from 1793 to 1812, the congregation had no settled pastor. It had been incorporated on the 5th of June, 1795, under the name of "The Presbyterian Church of Rye." The trustees were Robert Merritt, Ezekiel Halsted, Jr., Nathan Brown, John Doughty, James Hunt and David Rogers.

The church, erected in 1793, was a very plain and unpretending structure. It was a frame building, much smaller than the present church, and stood partly on the same spot, but fronting somewhat nearer to the road. It had neither belfry or spire. There were two doors on the front. The interior of the building remained unfinished many years. The walls were not plastered and instead of pews there were planks, the ends of which rested upon logs, for seats. In this condition it remained for eighteen or twenty years. In 1811 Dr. Dwight stated that there had been no Presbyterian minister at Rye within his remembrance. Soon after this the Methodists of Rye obtained possession of the church and occupied it for a period of sixteen years, from 1812 to 1828. The congregation was now greatly reduced in numbers. Owing to the death or removal from the place of some of the most prominent individuals, and the apathy of the rest, the society became in a manner extinct. This was due, however, quite as much to a change in the religious views of some of the surviving members, some of whom united with the Methodist denomination. It was by the efforts of Mr. Ebenezer Clark, a merchant of New York, who came to Rye in 1821, that the building was recovered to its original use. Ascertaining that a congregation of his own religious faith had formerly existed here, and that the edifice now standing had been built for them, he claimed it in behalf of the Presbyterians of the place. This claim was not admitted without some discussion. The Methodist congregation had now worshipped here for many years. They conceived that so long a possession gave them a right to the property, the original title to which was perhaps by that time somewhat obscure. Mr. Clark, however, was able to show clearly that the land had been given for a Presbyter-

rian Church, that a society of that denomination had been incorporated under the law of the State and that the building had been appropriated from the first to their use.

A service was held by the Presbyterian congregation on the 7th of December, 1828, in the district school-house of Rye, preparatory to the resumption of public worship in the church. The Rev. George Stebbins, of New Rochelle, preached on this occasion. Soon after the occupation of the building the Rev. Noah C. Saxton began his ministry here as "stated supply," and continued until May, 1829. Meanwhile, on the 4th of March, the formal organization of a church took place by order of the Presbytery of New York. A committee of the Presbytery, consisting of the Rev. Samuel H. Cox, D.D., and the Rev. Henry G. Ludlow, performed this duty. A church was organized, with ten members, and Messrs. Ebenezer Clark and William Lester were chosen and ordained as ruling elders.

The Rev. Williams H. Whittemore was the first minister of the little congregation after the reorganization of the church. He was a graduate of Yale, and married a daughter of Ebenezer Clark. His ministry of three years at Rye, from May, 1829, to April, 1832, was very successful. In the summer of 1829 the church at Rye, now somewhat dilapidated, was thoroughly repaired, chiefly at Mr. Clark's expense. In October of the same year the ecclesiastical relation of the church at Rye was transferred from the Presbytery of New York to the new Presbytery of Bedford. Mr. Whittemore¹ was succeeded by Rev. David Remington, who officiated from April, 1832, to the time of his death, January 24, 1834. He was a man of no ordinary power and labored with untiring zeal. Rev. Thomas Payne commenced his labors at Rye a few months after Mr. Remington's death. He remained until 1836, and was succeeded by Rev. John Hunter, who officiated for a few months. Until now the ministers who preached here did so in the capacity of "stated supplies," the congregation having not yet secured, or not feeling as yet able to support, a settled pastor. But in October, 1836, the Rev. James R. Davenport was ordained and installed as pastor of this church by the Presbytery of Bedford. The relation, however, subsisted but a short time. In April, 1838, Mr. Davenport resigned his charge, and not long after took orders in the Protestant Episcopal Church. His successor was the Rev. Edward D. Bryan, a graduate of Princeton College and Seminary, who was ordained and installed as pastor October 9, 1838. His ministry in Rye lasted until October 31, 1860, a period of twenty-two years.

At the commencement of this pastorate the congregation was still a small and feeble one. The whole number of communicants was but twenty-two. With the increase of the population, however, the church

grew, and ultimately became not only self-supporting but able to take part in the promotion of religion elsewhere.

Mr. Bryan was succeeded by the present pastor, Rev. Charles W. Baird, D.D., installed May 9, 1861. The actual membership of the church is two hundred and thirty.

In 1869 the congregation bought land adjoining the church lot, with a view to the erection of a new and larger house of worship. The corner-stone of this building was laid on Tuesday, November 29, 1870, and on December 5, 1872, the completed sanctuary was dedicated to the worship of Almighty God. It is built of the stone of the country—for the mass of the walls—and is relieved with Jersey and Ohio stone dressings. The style of the architecture is thirteenth century Gothic, and the whole building, both inside



INTERIOR OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, RYE.

and outside, has been truthfully executed. In plan, there are nave, aisles and transepts, with a tower at the west end of the south aisle. The cleve-story walls are of stone, and rest on stone columns with richly-carved capitals. The roof is open-timbered, while the ceiling of the apse is groined. The whole interior has been decorated, and the larger windows are filled with memorials in glass. The tower has on its corner a turret which encases a stairway, and terminates above the tower in a stone spire. The tower itself is built in three stages, and on each of its four faces is pierced with lofty couplet windows and bold louvres; at the top is an appropriate cornice, from which the broaches rise; also four tabernacle windows from the cardinal faces of the spire, which is built entirely of stone up to the richly-gabled corona. The spire is crocketed, with a finial supporting a ball surmounted by a cross. The height to the top of the spire is one hundred and fifty feet. The main door-

¹ He died in Rye, July 25, 1885, in his eighty-sixth year.

way is the central feature of the west end, and is massive in treatment. Its spandrels are ornamented with circular panels, which are decorated with ecclesiastical emblems. The tympanum over the door is of solid stone, and is to be filled with a sculptured subject. The front window is double-bayed, with a circular window at the top. All the gables are coped and surmounted with crosses.

Adjoining the church is the Sunday-school room, erected by the late Mr. William Mathews in memory of his infant daughter Bessie. It is upwards of fifty feet square. Over the entrance, in the tympanum of the arch, is a *bas relief* representing our Lord blessing little children.

The architect is Richard M. Upjohn, New York.

EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—In 1693 the General Assembly of New York, at the suggestion of Governor Fletcher, passed an act for settling Protestant ministers in four of the counties of the province. One of these ministers was to have the care of Rye, Mamaroneck and Bedford. For their maintenance a certain sum was to be levied annually by a tax on the inhabitants. By "Protestant ministers" the Assembly, which was, with one exception, composed of "Dissenters," certainly did not mean ministers of the Church of England; but Governor Fletcher, whose object was to make the Church of England the established church of the land, claimed the right not only of inducting or suspending any minister appointed under its provisions, but of controlling the choice of the ministers. The English clergy also claimed the same prerogatives under an established church as in England. The people of the province were liable to be taxed for their support, even though, in great majority, of different religious persuasions. In obscure places, where it could be done without public scandal, they were put in possession of all the property which had been set apart for ecclesiastical purposes by the town. The attempt to carry out these pretensions was not always successful. But it succeeded at Rye, as it did at Jamaica, Hempstead and elsewhere. The parsonage house and lands, by order of Governor Cornbury, were surrendered to the newly-arrived rector. The inhabitants, who had kept them hitherto for the use of a ministry of their own choice, were dispossessed of this property, without form of law or shadow of right.

In obedience to the act of 1693, the people of Rye were summoned by their justice, Joseph Theall, to meet for the election of church wardens and vestrymen. This meeting took place on the 28th of February, 1694-95. John Lane and John Brondig were elected church wardens, and Jonathan Hart, Joseph Horton, Joseph Purdy, Timothy Knapp, Hachaliah Browne, Thomas Merritt, Deliverance Brown and Isaac Denham, vestrymen. For nine years nothing is heard of vestry or church wardens. On the 12th of January 1702-3, Colonel Caleb Heathcote and Justice Theall were chosen churchwardens,

and Justice Mott, Justice Purdy, Captain Horton, Deliverance Browne, Hachaliah Brown, George Lane, Sr., Thomas Purdy, Thomas Disbrow, Isaac Denham and Samuel Lane, vestrymen. These men were probably, with scarcely an exception, "Dissenters," and the vestry was rather a secular than an ecclesiastical body. It was chosen by the freeholders at large, and its chief duty, besides providing for the minister's salary, was to look after the poor.

To Colonel Caleb Heathcote, more than to any one else, is due the credit of having founded and fostered the Church of England in this part of the country and particularly at Rye. He was a man of great influence, which he devoted wholly to the interests of the church. At his instance the English Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, formed in 1701, sent one of its first missionaries to officiate at Rye. In April, 1704, the Rev. Thomas Pritchard, A.M., arrived in New York, having been appointed by the Bishop of London and sent by the Gospel Propagation Society to officiate in the parish of Rye. Governor Cornbury forthwith issued his mandate for Mr. Pritchard's induction, and in May the new minister entered upon his duties. He soon proved, however, to be an unsuitable person, and remained but a few months. His successor, who may be regarded as the first rector of Rye, was the Rev. George Muirson, A.M. Mr. Muirson was a native of Scotland, and came to this country in 1703, as a schoolmaster of the Gospel Propagation Society. While laboring in this capacity he won the esteem and affection of many persons, and was soon sent back to England strongly recommended as a candidate for orders. He returned to New York in the summer of 1705, having received ordination from the Bishop of London, and on the 31st of July, Governor Cornbury signed the mandate for his induction as "Rector of the Parish Church of Rye, Mameroneck and Bedford."

The "Parish Church," however, was yet in the future. The people had been accustomed to worship in the "town-house" during the ministry of their former pastors, as well as when supplied by the neighboring ministers of Connecticut while without a pastor. The "meeting-house," which they had talked of building in 1697, was not yet completed, if, indeed, begun. Mr. Muirson's first work was to gather a congregation; for the people were all "Dissenters," "who never were in a Church of England congregation before." He soon reports a very large attendance of "constant hearers," many of whom he has been enabled to admit into the church by baptism. He prosecuted his work with great energy and zeal, and was very successful, owing to his amiable and genial manners and his popularity as a preacher. He soon persuaded the people to engage anew in the effort to build a house of worship. At a town-meeting held on the 26th of September, 1705, it was determined to build the church, Colonel Heathcote having promised a supply of nails and hooks and

hinges for the doors and windows. The walls were to be of stone. Captain Horton, Justice Purdy, Isaac Denham and Samuel Lane were appointed a building committee, and it was determined that the church should be located "at the East End of the Lot which was formerly Mr. Collier's, in the street." At a subsequent meeting a tax was laid upon the inhabitants to raise funds for this purpose. February 18, 1706, it was agreed that "all male persons from sixteen years and upward be assessed at twelve pound per head in all charges for the building of a church." "Liberty is given for to get stone and timber upon any particular men's land, provided you get not within a fence, for the building of a church." At a meeting held February 25, 1706, they agreed "that *the parish* of Rye shall reape the towne house fit for a minister to Live in and to keep the said house in reape for the use of the ministree." Six years after this we read that "the town hath past a voat that they will not reape the house which Mr. Bridge now dwells in."

The church "will be finished next spring," writes Mr. Muirson, November 21, 1705, to the Society's secretary in London, "so that we shall want pulpit cloaths and furniture for y^e communion table." The work, however, did not go on so fast. In April some preparations had been made by carting stone, and most of the timber had been brought. In October the stone-work was finished and the building covered. "But the winter approaching, and the people being extremely poor and having exhausted what little money they had on what is done already, we cannot proceed any further this fall," writes Mr. Muirson, "but hope next year to finish all, with a steeple, which when completed will make a large and beautiful building." It was fifty feet long, thirty-six feet wide and twenty feet high. Many years passed, however, before the church was completed. In 1722 the rector, Mr. Jenney, states, "The church, though built in Mr. Muirson's time, is not yet finished." It was at last completed about the year 1727. The building occupied the present site of Christ Church, in Rye. As usual then, it stood "in the street"—at the junction of Grace Church Street and what is now called Rectory Street. It was known as Grace Church in 1736, and probably many years before. This, however, was not its corporate name, but one in popular use. The legal designation was "The Parish Church of Rye."

Mr. Muirson died October 12, 1708, at the age of thirty-three. He was a tireless worker, and his death was a great loss to the people of Rye. His successor was the Rev. Mr. Reynolds, who came to Rye in October, 1709. He had officiated but a few times, however, when orders came from the Society removing him from his post and forbidding him to preach. The reasons for this proceeding are not known. Mr. Reynolds was superseded by the Rev. Christopher Bridge, M.A., an English clergyman, who had previously been

settled in Boston as assistant minister of King's Chapel, and afterwards in Narragansett. He came to Rye in January, 1710.

The records of the vestry of this parish commence soon after the beginning of Mr. Bridge's ministry, January 9, 1710-11. It does not appear that any account of the proceedings of that body had been kept until then. The number of communicants varied little from that reported by Mr. Muirson. In 1710 there were forty-three; in 1711, forty-four, in 1712, forty-two. Mr. Bridge died at Rye, May 22, 1719. He seems to have been successful in his ministry and the good feeling which prevailed in Mr. Muirson's time continued during his pastorate. A vacancy of three years occurred between the death of Mr. Bridge and the induction of his successor. For the first few months the church was supplied by clergymen from New York and other places, under the direction of the Rev. Mr. Vesey; but after this it appears to have been occupied by the Presbyterian congregation.

The Gospel Propagation Society, in 1722, appointed the Rev. Henry Barclay as their missionary at Rye. Meanwhile, however, the church wardens and vestry had called the Rev. Robert Jenney, A.M., at that time chaplain of the royal forces at New York. Mr. Jenney was inducted as Rector June 7, 1722. He found the congregation much weakened, and his ministry proved, on the whole, unsuccessful. The Presbyterians had gained in strength, and a lawsuit in which he engaged, to recover the salary which had accumulated since the death of Mr. Bridge, considerably impaired his influence. He removed from Rye, in 1726, to Hempstead, L. I., and finally to Philadelphia, where he became the rector of Christ Church. His successor at Rye, Rev. James Wetmore, A.M., a native of Middletown, Conn., and formerly a Congregationalist minister, was called on June 7, 1726. The congregation at Rye increased considerably under his ministry. It was during this period that the famous George Whitefield visited Rye, in 1740, at the invitation of Mr. Wetmore himself, and preached in his church. Mr. Wetmore's pastorate covered a period of nearly thirty-four years. He died of small-pox in 1760, at the age of sixty-five. His activity continued to the close, but his last years appear to have been saddened by increasing dissensions in the parish. In his will he set apart a portion of his own farm on the west side of Blind Brook for a glebe. A small plot of ground in the glebe was set apart as a burial-place for the rectors of the parish, and Mr. Wetmore himself was the first whose remains were laid here, those of his predecessors who died at Rye having been interred beneath the church. The graves of several of the later rectors occupy this plot, which lies directly opposite the rear of Mr. Daniel Strang's store. A few rods south of the burying-ground, on the other side of a small knoll, there was a small house formerly, which, after the Revolution, was occupied for a while both as a parsonage-house and place of worship. The

vestry of Christ Church retained possession of the glebe sequestered by Mr. Wetmore until 1846, when they sold it. After the fire of 1794 the vestry purchased the rectory grounds, now owned by Christ Church, for four hundred pounds. The grounds comprised four acres, and in ancient times formed part of the village plot known as "The Plains." The rectory stood, until within a few years ago, near the post road toward the northern line of the grounds. Christ Church owns also the narrow strip of land directly opposite the rectory grounds, between the post road and the brook.

The parish remained vacant after Mr. Wetmore's death for more than two years. Rev. Ebenezer Punderson, of New Haven, was called, and commenced his labors on July 1, 1762. In November of the following year he was inducted as rector. He died within less than a year after this, September 22, 1764.

The church was now "greatly decayed," and in need of speedy repairs. In view of this necessity, a number of the inhabitants united in a petition, which was presented to the Lieutenant-Governor of the province, on November 16, 1764, asking for an act of incorporation. They allege that the interests of the church are suffering for the want of "some persons legally authorized to manage" its affairs, and that they and others who are disposed to provide funds for its support, and for the better maintenance of the ministry, are discouraged from contributing to the repair of the church, lest the moneys given for that purpose may be misapplied. This petition was granted on December 19, 1764. The petitioners, and the rest of the inhabitants of the parish of Rye in communion with the Church of England, and their successors, with the rector of the said parish for the time being, were constituted by royal charter a "body corporate and politick," by the name of the "Rector and inhabitants of the parish of Rye, in communion with the Church of England." The charter provides that they shall meet at the church on Tuesday in Easter week in every year, and choose two of their members to be church wardens, and eight others to be vestrymen for the ensuing year.

Mr. Punderson's successor—the last rector of the parish before the Revolution—was the Rev. Ephraim Avery, A.M., who was called by the vestry on August 27, 1765. Mr. Avery was a native of Connecticut, the son of a Congregational pastor, and, like his predecessors, Wetmore and Punderson, a graduate of Yale. He was only twenty-four when he came to Rye. He was inducted as rector September 9, 1765. For a time his relations to his congregation were harmonious. But in the disputes between the colonies and the mother country, which culminated finally in the Revolution, Mr. Avery sided with Great Britain, and thus became estranged from many of his parishioners. He was subjected to insults and indignities at the hands of the Whigs, which, following close upon the death of his wife, affected his health seriously.

He died November 5, 1776, after a ministry of more than eleven years.

Grace Church appears to have been standing in 1779, but was destroyed by fire probably soon afterwards. No meeting of the vestry was held, so far as the records show, for nine years, from 1776 to 1785, and no mention is made of any public religious service after Mr. Avery's death. At the close of the war Rev. Andrew Fowler collected the congregation at Rye and the White Plains and held services on alternate Sundays for six months, beginning in April, 1784. Services were held in Rye at the old parsonage house, on the west side of Blind Brook. On the 27th of April, 1785, the congregation met at the house of Mrs. Tamer Haviland and selected trustees "to take charge of the Temporalities of the Church." These trustees hired out the church lands at a very low rent. In May, 1786, the congregation held another meeting, and decided to send delegates to a convention of the Protestant Episcopal Church, to be held at St. Paul's Church, New York. On the 8th of September, 1787, a call was extended to the Rev. Richard C. Moore at a salary of one hundred and twenty pounds. Mr. Moore, then recently ordained, accepted, and began his labors in the ministry at Rye. During the year he remained the congregation took steps toward rebuilding their church. They decided to build it "upon the Hill, at or near the Place where the old ruins were standing." It was to be of wood, fifty feet in length and thirty-eight feet in width, with galleries on the west and south sides, and without a steeple. The contract for the erection of the church was made April 16, 1788, with James Ford, of New York, for one hundred and twenty pounds. The corner-stone was laid in June of that year, apparently, and the edifice was probably completed by the 1st of November, the time fixed in the contract. Meanwhile the congregation continued to worship in the parsonage house, on the west side of Blind Brook. In May "a sufficient number of benches to accommodate" the people were to be procured.

Mr. Moore resigned the charge of this parish on the 1st of August, 1788, having been called to the rectorship of St. Andrew's Church, Richmond, on Staten Island. At the request of the vestry, however, he consented to continue his labors here until the 1st of October. It is probable, therefore, that he officiated in the new church, which must have been completed by this time. Mr. Moore was rector of St. Andrew's Church for twenty-one years. In 1809 he accepted the charge of St. Stephen's Church, in the city of New York, and in 1814 he was called to the office of bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church in Virginia. He died November 11, 1841, at the age of seventy-nine.

The congregation remained without a pastor for more than two years. On the 15th of December, 1790, the vestry called the Rev. David Foote, who had been officiating for some weeks, "to act as rector

of this parish," agreeing to pay him a salary of one hundred pounds, with the profits of the glebe for one year from November 7th. Mr. Foote accepted, and remained as rector nearly three years. He died at Rye on the 1st of August, 1793, aged thirty-two.

The church, though opened for service in November, 1788, remained in an unfinished state for several years. At a meeting of the vestry, May 4, 1791, a subscription was ordered to raise money to complete the building. The floor was to be laid anew, three windows were to be added, and the walls were to be lined with boards as high as the windows, above which they were to be plastered. Subscribers were to be entitled to pews, the highest value of which was seven pounds. Two square pews were built next the chancel, one of which was taken by Peter Jay, and the other appropriated to the widow of Josiah Brown, in consideration of his "forwardness in promoting the building of the church."

On the 5th of December, 1793, the vestry called the Rev. John Jackson Sands to the rectorship. He resigned the charge May 4, 1796, in consequence of some dissatisfaction. It was during his pastorate that the name of the church, for some reason which does not appear, was changed from Grace to Christ Church. In the winter of 1794 the parsonage house, on the west side of Blind Brook, was destroyed by fire. The vestry at first inclined to rebuild on the same site, but finally determined to purchase the rectory grounds, of which mention has already been made.

The Rev. George Ogilvie, of Norwalk, Conn., was called to this parish October 26, 1796. He came, but was here for less than six months. He died April 3, 1797, and was buried in the little graveyard opposite the church, on the west side of Blind Brook. His successor, the Rev. Samuel Haskell, was called August 7, 1797. He was born near Boston in 1762; served in the American army toward the close of the war; prepared himself for Yale College, where he graduated in 1790, and was ordained to the ministry of the Episcopal Church in 1794. He was rector at Rye for three years and a half, resigning his charge in April, 1801; but he returned to this parish after an interval of eight years, in 1809, and continued here until May, 1823. The intervening period was occupied by the ministry of the Rev. Evan Rogers, a native of Pennsylvania, and for some years a "zealous and laborious itinerant preacher of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and afterwards an Episcopalian minister." He was called to Rye October 8, 1801, and remained until his death, January 25, 1809. He was buried in the cemetery near Milton. During the pastorate of his successor, Mr. Haskell, the parish was divided. That portion of the people that worshipped at White Plains now became a distinct congregation. On the 8th of June, 1815, it was decided that "Divine Service be celebrated every Sabbath day in the church at Rye." On the 18th of March, 1824, the vestry

determined that the church should "be opened for Divine Service twice every Sabbath, except on the third Sabbath, in the afternoon, when Service is to be held in the school-house at the Saw Pitt." The office of parish clerk was extant in Rye as late as 1807, when Nathaniel Nelson was employed as assistant clerk to conduct the singing in the absence of the other clerk.

Mr. Haskell was followed by the Rev. William Thompson, a native of Ireland, who commenced his labors at Rye on the 1st of October, 1823. He died at Rye on the 26th of August, 1830, after serving the parish acceptably for seven years. The Rev. John M. Forbès was rector in 1830, and the Rev. William M. Carmichael in 1832. On the 8th of September, 1834, the Rev. Peter S. Chauncey was called to this parish, where he continued for fifteen years. Mr. Chauncey's memory is cherished warmly by the people among whom he spent so large a part of his able and successful ministry. His labors were not confined to the congregation at Rye. For the first two years he had charge also of St. Thomas' Church, Mamaroneck. This he relinquished, by wish of the vestry, November 14, 1836; but in December of the same year he commenced holding services at Saw Pit, soon after called Port Chester. Mr. Chauncey resigned the rectorship of Rye in 1849. He removed to Hartford, Conn., and thence to Yorkville, N. Y., and died, greatly regretted by many to whom he had ministered, in 1866.

He was followed at Rye by the Rev. Edward C. Bull, whose ministry here began May 13, 1849, and lasted ten years,—until May 1, 1859,—when the vestry, in accepting his resignation on account of impaired health, testified to the faithfulness, earnestness and ability with which he had discharged the duties of his office. During Mr. Bull's incumbency the wooden church, built in 1788, was replaced by a beautiful edifice of stone. The first steps toward this work were taken September 9, 1852. Plans for the building, by Messrs. Wills & Dudley, architects, of New York, were accepted January 21, 1854. The church was consecrated Thursday, March 15, 1855, by Bishop Wainwright. The cost of the erection, nearly eighteen thousand dollars, was entirely paid by the 1st of October, 1857.

Rev. John Campbell White was called to the rectorship May 5, 1859. He resigned on the 1st of April, 1864, and was succeeded by the Rev. Reese F. Alsop, November 27, 1864. A neat Sunday-school room was erected in this year near the church, and soon after this the church itself was enlarged and embellished at considerable expense. But on the evening of December 21, 1866, the church was destroyed by fire. Within two years a new and larger edifice arose on the site, and was consecrated by Bishop Potter June 19, 1869. It is in the early Gothic style, from the designs of Mr. Florentin Pelletier. It will seat six hundred persons. The ground plan consists of chancel, nave and aisles,

with organ and robing-rooms. The chancel is twenty-six feet deep by twenty feet wide, separated from the nave by a bold chancel arch, and raised two feet above the floor of the nave and aisles; these are ninety-three feet long by forty-eight feet wide inside. The extreme length is one hundred and thirty-five feet. At the southwest angle of the gable and aisle walls is the tower, from which are carried up four buttress piers, forming an open belfry, and surmounted by a stone spire, which is crowned at one hundred feet by an iron cross. The exterior walls are of rubble stone, quarried on the site, with dressings wrought of Connecticut brown stone. The aisle and gable walls are strengthened with buttresses marking the bays.

The roofs are covered with slates, banded in different shades, and laid alternately plain and pointed; all the ridges are surmounted with ornamental iron cresting. Over the nave the open roof rises forty-five feet, and is divided into six bays by moulded arches, with principals, tie-beams and open tracery; and between the nave and aisles is a colonnade of short octagonal posts with moulded caps, from which spring moulded arches with pierced quatrefoil circles in the spandrels. There is no clere-story; but the pitch of the roof is broken over these arches. Twelve small trefoil windows light the roof, one in the centre of each bay on either side. These windows are hung to open for ventilation, and filled with stained glass of rich colors, as are all the windows of the church, most of which bear appropriate emblems. At the west end of the nave, overhanging the porch and lobbies, is a gallery carried on strong trusses; this, together with the roof-timbers, is of pine, stained and varnished. The ceiling between the rafters is plastered and colored a light blue; below the window-sills the side walls are wainscoted with narrow ash; otherwise, the walls are painted a plain light gray color, contrasting with the seats, which are of ash. In the chancel the furniture, with the reredos and chancel-rail, is of chestnut, oiled.

Rev. Reese F. Alsop resigned the charge of Christ Church February 17, 1873, after a ministry of more than eight years. He was succeeded by Rev. Chauncey B. Brewster, who was called to this church May 29, 1873, and who remained in charge nearly nine years, resigning February 12, 1882. In April, 1882, Rev. Walter Mitchell was called to be rector, and continued in office until April 25, 1886.

METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—Methodism was introduced into Westchester County in 1771 by Joseph Pilmoor, then stationed in New York. Francis Asbury, afterwards bishop, preached in the same year at Rye and neighboring points. The Revolutionary War compelled the preachers to leave New York. The first family of this religious persuasion known to have resided in this town was that of Hachaliah Brundage, a local preacher, who came to Rye about the year 1790, and held religious services in his own house. Though some despised and de-

rided, others were attracted by his fervor, and a few were profited. No permanent society, however, was organized until 1804 or 1805. Esther Halsted, wife of Ezekiel Halsted, of Rye, established family worship, conducting the services herself, and invited all in her employ to be present. Mr. Halsted, who was an active member of the Congregational Church at Greenwich, identified himself, not long after his marriage, with the Methodists. The use of the Presbyterian Church was obtained, and religious services were held more or less regularly for a number of years by the Methodists, who made various improvements at their own expense. In May, 1821, the society at Rye formed part of the New Rochelle Circuit. In this year, under the labors of E. Woolsey and W. Jewett, there was a revival of religion at Rye, and many persons were converted. At a Quarterly Meeting Conference held at the Rye Meeting-house, October 2, 1824, Stephen Remington was recommended for admission to the New York Annual Conference. The following persons were also recommended for admission: John Lefever, December 27, 1823; S. U. Fisher, October 1, 1825; William Gothard, April 8, 1837; R. C. Putney, March 9, 1844, and Robert Codling, April, 1845. All of these persons were received into the Conference, and became successful ministers. At a Quarterly Meeting Conference held at Rye, September 12, 1829, a constitution was adopted by which the Conference formed itself into a Missionary, Bible, Tract and Sunday-school Society. In 1829 the Presbyterian congregation of Rye was re-organized, and now used the church jointly with the Methodists, who alone had occupied the house for sixteen or eighteen years. In March, 1831, a four days' meeting was held in Rye. Rev. J. N. Maffitt preached. "Many were converted, of whom about thirty joined the Methodist Church." Differences between the two congregations which occupied the same house of worship finally led to a separation. From March, 1832, the Methodist Society ceased to meet in the church, and took measures to build for themselves. In May, 1832, Philemon Halsted, Elisha Halsted and David H. Mead were appointed a committee to buy a lot and build a church. A lot comprising half an acre was bought, and a house of worship erected. In June, 1852, Rye was made an independent station, and Rev. W. F. Collins appointed pastor. At the close of his term, during which there were many conversions, he reported one hundred and four members. In 1853, a house and four acres of land, situated on the turnpike, about half a mile from the church, were bought for a parsonage. In January, 1855, the trustees bought eight acres of land for a cemetery. To this nearly seven acres were added by subsequent purchases.

Rev. G. S. Gilbert succeeded to the pastorate in May, 1853. He was followed in May, 1855, by Rev. D. Osborn, "whose labours were accompanied by a revival in which twenty were received on probation."

George Taylor succeeded him in 1857; in 1859 B. Pillsbury was pastor, and in 1860 C. T. Mallory. In November, 1855, the trustees sold the parsonage, which was too remote from the church; and in April, 1860, they bought land directly opposite the church, where they built a pleasant parsonage. In March, 1864, the church was remodeled, at an expense of four thousand dollars. The next pastors were T. D. Littlewood in 1862, W. Ross in 1864, and L. P. Perry in 1866. During Mr. Perry's term the property adjoining the church, containing about two and a half acres, was bought for ten thousand dollars. A Sunday-school room was built, a house on the premises was altered for a parsonage, and other improvements were made, at a cost of about five thousand dollars. To aid in meeting these expenses the former parsonage was sold. In January, 1869, a revival commenced, resulting in the addition of thirty to the church on probation. The ministers of this church succeeding Mr. Perry have been the Rev. Messrs. N. Mead, 1869-71; George Stillman, 1872-74; W. H. Wardell, 1875-77; A. Hill, 1878-80; C. E. Glover, 1881-83. Mr. Glover died while in charge, October 2, 1883. He was followed by the Rev. G. Sullman, the present incumbent.

ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCHES.—Within the limits of the town of Rye there are at present three Roman Catholic places of worship,—one, of which an account will be given in the following chapter, in Port Chester; another on Rye Neck, at the southern end of the town; and a third, recently established, in the village of Rye.

Rye Neck, with Mamaroneck, was formerly comprehended in the parish of New Rochelle, and religious services were held more or less frequently for the benefit of the Roman Catholic inhabitants of these localities by the priests of that parish. But in 1864, through the efforts of the Rev. Thomas McLoughlin, "the church of the Most Holy Trinity, of Rye Neck and Mamaroneck," was built, and was dedicated by the Archbishop of New York. The district was erected into a separate parish in 1874. The first resident priest was the Rev. Christopher A. Farrell. The present rector is the Rev. Isidor Meister. The new edifice, of which the corner-stone was laid in 1885, is of Gothic architecture; the material, Byram blue-stone trimmed with Newark stone. It will accommodate eight hundred persons.

The first steps toward the establishment of a Roman Catholic Church in the village of Rye were taken in 1875, when the Rev. John McEvoy commenced to hold religious services in a hall known as the "Armory," near the railroad station. Later, the house formerly the residence of Mr. William Smith, at the junction of the post road and Purchase Street, was bought, and was altered to meet the immediate wants of the congregation. The lower part of the building now serves as a place of worship and the upper floor is used for the purposes of a parochial school. It is

proposed to build a church upon this eligible site, to bear the name of the Church of the Resurrection. The Rev. Michael Lane is the rector.

THE FRIENDS.—The Society of Friends was represented in Rye at a very early period. In 1706 there were "Some Quakers" in the town, whom the Church of England minister, Rev. Mr. Muirson, attempted, without success, to win over to his faith. His successor, Mr. Bridge, reported seven families of Quakers in the parish in 1710, "and 4 or 5 families inclining to them." In this year an attempt was made by a party of "ranting Quakers," according to Mr. Bridge, to form themselves into a society, but two years later Mr. Bridge records his success in disputing with them, and adds, they "have never since held a public meeting in these parts." Five years afterwards, however, he writes, "The Quakers . . . come frequently in great numbers, from Long Island and other places, to hold their meeting in the out-parts of my parish." Harrison's Purchase was settled chiefly by members of the Society. About 1726 occasional meetings were held in private houses at Rye and Mamaroneck. Such a meeting was appointed May 13, 1726, to be held every other month, at the house of James Mott. Another, in 1727, was at Robert Sneathing's, apparently in Rye. The Purchase Meeting-house, which stood "about seven miles from the Church (Grace Church), towards North Castle," was built in 1727. The land was given by Anthony Field. The "half-year's meeting of Friends" in this region had been held of late at Mamaroneck. A proposition was made, December 8, 1727, to remove the meeting to "Rye Meeting-House," and discontinue the meeting at Robert Sneathing's. This was done. In 1742 the Monthly Meeting was transferred from Mamaroneck to the meeting-house "in Rye woods." The subsequent history of the Friends of Rye will be found in the chapter on the town of Harrison, with which they were more closely identified.

SCHOOLS.—Under the old Connecticut laws every town of fifty householders was required to appoint a person to teach all the children who applied to him for instruction to read and write. As the population of Rye scarcely reached this figure while the town belonged to Connecticut, no provision of this kind was ever made. If anything was done for the education of the young, it was by voluntary effort. At a meeting of the town, held April 22, 1690, Captain Horton, Joseph Theall and John Brondige were chosen to procure a minister and, if possible, a schoolmaster. Nothing more appears on the subject until January 29, 1711, when the proprietors of Peningo Neck decided, at one of their meetings, to build a school-house, at their own charge, near "Tom. Jeffers' hill," below Joseph Kniffen's. There are grounds for believing that this site is identical with that occupied, until within some forty years ago, by the district school-house in Rye, in front of the Episcopal Church. "Sarg' Merrit, Richard Ogden and George

Kniffen" were chosen to stake out the site and also to mark out a quarter of an acre adjoining for a garden for the use of the schoolmaster. Any person who contributed in like proportion to the building of the school-house was to have an equal share with the proprietors in its privileges. There were other schools about this time in different parts of the town, of which but little is known. "As to schools," writes the Rev. James Wetmore in 1728, "there are several poor ones in different parts of the parish. Where a number of families live near together, they hire a man and woman at a cheap rate, subscribing every one what they will allow. Some masters get £20 per annum and their diet; but there is no public provision at all for a school in this parish."

There was no respect in which Rye lost so much by its annexation to New York as in the matter of common-school education. Connecticut, like Massachusetts, showed from the first great care for the instruction of the young. Hartford established a town school as early as 1642, and in 1643 a vote was passed that "the town shall pay for the schooling of the poor." In 1670 it was said that one-fourth of the annual revenue of the colony was laid out in maintaining free schools. In New York no provision was made for a general system of education before the Revolution. Whatever was done for this interest was done by individuals or by religious bodies. The Society in England for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts supported a schoolmaster at Rye for a great many years. This was done originally at the instance of the Hon. Caleb Heathcote, who was active in establishing a school here about the year 1706. In 1707 Mr. Joseph Cleator began teaching and continued to keep a school until his death, which occurred in 1732. For the last eight or ten years of his life, however, he was blind, and could only give instruction in the catechism. "While he had his sight," says Mr. Wetmore, "they tell me he kept a constant and good school." In 1714 a Mr. Huddleston was also engaged in teaching, under the Society's care, in some part of the parish of Rye, which then included Bedford and Mamaroneck, as well as the town of Rye. Mr. Cleator was succeeded at Rye, in 1733, by Mr. Samuel Purdy, who continued in charge until 1749, when he removed to White Plains. Timothy Wetmore, a son of Rev. James Wetmore, succeeded him at Rye, and taught the school until 1769. His brother James, after a short interval, took charge of it, but gave it up at the breaking out of the Revolution, being an active supporter of the British cause. In 1719 the school numbered fifty pupils; in 1739, forty-six; in 1776, seventy-one. Under one of the Society's teachers, Mr. Huddleston, Rye may be said to have possessed a Sunday-school twenty years before the birth of Robert Raikes, the supposed founder of that institution.

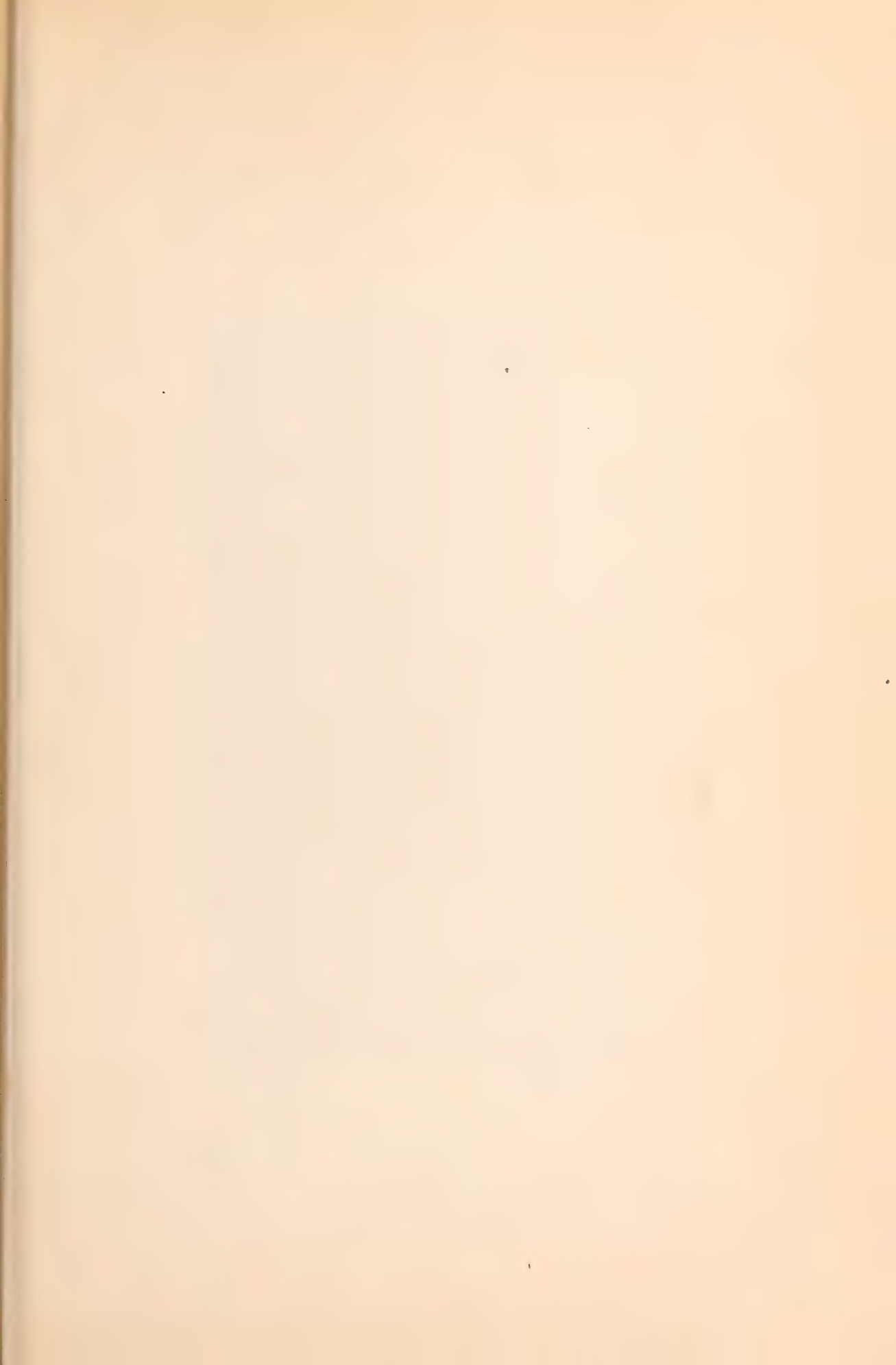
The school at Rye was probably held in the building mentioned first in 1738, as "the school-house near

the church." It stood close upon the cross-road, and a few rods back from the post road, in front of the Episcopal Church in the village. Here, as we have already seen, the town-meetings were held for forty years or more. As to the kind of instruction given, we learn from John Adams, who spent a night at Rye in 1774, "They have a school for writing and cyphering, but no grammar school." The year after John Adams' visit the Rev. Mr. Avery, minister of the Episcopal Church, announced his purpose to establish a school of a superior kind. His advertisement appeared in the *New York Mercury* of April 3, 1775. The place where Mr. Avery proposed to keep his school was probably the parsonage across the Blind Brook. It is uncertain whether his plan was carried into effect. His death occurred in the following year. A certain George Harris taught the school more or less of the time from 1762 to 1777. He was not employed by the Society, and it may be inferred that during his incumbency the school was controlled by the town and was no longer of a denominational character. Tradition avers that he was a barbarous pedagogue, inflicting cruel punishments upon his scholars. He was an ardent Whig, and was cast into prison through the machinations, as he claimed, of James Wetmore, "brother to that arch tory, or enemy to his country, Timothy Wetmore."

On Rye Neck, or Budd's Neck, as it was then called, there was a school-house as early as the year 1739. It stood near the spot occupied by a later school-house, on the west side of the post road, below the farm-house belonging to Dr. Jay. From this spot the school was removed some years ago to its present site on Barry Lane. There was also a school in the neighborhood of Saw Pit some time before the Revolution. It stood on King Street, upon land now owned by Mr. Charles White. Jonathan Vickers taught the school during the closing years of the last century. He was succeeded by Henry Kelly about the year 1800, and he by a Mr. Chichester about the year 1802. In 1803 the old house was demolished, and a new one was erected in the course of the following year, on the east side of the street. As there was no church in the place, this was intended to serve the double purpose of church and school-house. The house was removed to what is now called King Street Square, probably about the year 1810. The present house was built in 1853, remodeled and enlarged in 1867 and 1868.

There was a school-house a few years since on Regent Street, where a small office now stands, not far from the corner of Purchase Avenue. Here one Evans B. Hollis taught school some fifty years ago. He was an Englishman, and is said to have been an excellent teacher. He came to Rye from Sing Sing, and taught first for a while at the school near "Saw Pit." The school on Regent Street had existed long before Mr. Hollis' time.

Shortly after the passage, in 1812, by the New York





RYE SEMINARY,
RYE, N. Y.

Legislature, of an act for the establishment of common schools, steps were taken in Rye to carry its provisions into effect. On April 6, 1813, "a vote was taken, agreeably to notice from the County Clerk, that the School Fund was to be distributed; and it was carried in the affirmative, to accept of the money allotted them." At the same meeting school commissioners and inspectors were chosen for the first time. Messrs. Samuel Deall, Ezraiah Wetmore and Jared Peck were elected commissioners, and the Rev. Samuel Haskell and Messrs. John Guion, Charles Field and John Brown were chosen inspectors of schools.

The division of the town into school districts was commenced in 1814. Three districts and two "neighborhoods" were formed. A fourth district was added in 1826. According to this division, District No. 1, on Rye Neck, comprehended that part of the town south of the house of Sylvanus Lyon (now Mr. Benjamin Mead's). No. 2 lay north of this point, extending as far as Thomas Brown's house (Mr. Charles Park's, lately Mr. Allen Carpenter's). On the east side of Blind Brook it included that part of the town which lies south of Ezraiah Wetmore's and north of Philemon Halsted's (now Mr. Daniel Budd's). No. 3 lay north of this, comprising the village of Saw Pit (now Port Chester) and the upper part of the town. No. 4 included the whole of Peningo Neck below Philemon Halsted's. This arrangement has been somewhat modified. At present there are five school districts in Rye—the fifth comprising the upper part of the town, above Port Chester. Rye Neck, commencing at Dr. Jay's, forms a separate district (No. 1) and No. 2 includes Peningo Neck, below Mr. Anderson's, with the west side of Blind Brook, below Mr. Mead's. Provision for higher education was also made during the period of growth which followed the acquisition of railroad facilities. Some attempt had already been made, between the years 1820 and 1830, to establish an academy of a superior order. In 1831, Mr. Samuel U. Berrian took charge of this institution. He had been associated in New York with the eminent grammarian Gould Brown, and came to Rye from the Livingston County High School, of which he was for a time principal. Mr. Berrian taught first in a building on the post road, below the bridge, and afterwards in the "Square House," in the village. In 1834 he opened a boarding-school in the house which he had just built north of the village. This school, known as the Chrestomathic Institute, was maintained with great success for a number of years.

In 1869 Park Institute—a school for boys—was established and opened for the admission of students, in the school-building erected by Mr. Berrian, and enlarged and greatly improved by Mr. Joseph Park, whose name it bears. The building and grounds, and the furniture and apparatus of the school, have been generously provided by him. Park Institute was conducted from 1873 to 1884 by Henry Tatlock, A.M. The present principal is the Rev. Scott B. Rathbun, A.M.

Rye Female Seminary, a boarding and day-school, was established in 1869 by Mrs. S. J. Life, principal. This school, now in its seventeenth year, has become widely known as an institution of great excellence.

On the same elevation with Park Institute and Rye Seminary, near the village of Rye, and overlooking it, stands the district school (No. 3), a neat and commodious structure, erected in the year 1868. The conspicuous position of these three buildings, devoted to the cause of education, is indicative of the intelligent and liberal interest with which that cause is regarded by the people of the place, and assures the visitor, in search of a country home, of exceptional advantages for the training of the young.

PHYSICIANS AND LAWYERS.—Rye appears to have been without a resident physician for the first sixty years. The people depended, doubtless, for medical aid, as for many other conveniences, on the neighboring town of Stamford. Dr. Devaney is the first physician whose name is on record at Rye. It occurs in the vestry book under date of 1724. Dr. Worden is next on the list. He practiced in Rye about 1738. Dr. William Bowness practiced in 1739, and Dr. William Alleson in 1747. Dr. John Smith was a practicing physician at Rye in 1747. This was the Rev. John Smith, for nearly thirty years pastor of the Presbyterian Church of Rye and the White Plains. He was settled here in 1742, and died in 1771. According to some of his descendants, Dr. Smith was distinguished for his medical skill, particularly in the treatment of the insane. His recipes are said to have been kept in the family and followed with great success long after his death. Dr. William Hooker Smith is mentioned frequently from 1753 to 1771. He was the oldest son of Dr. John Smith, and appears to have practiced with his father and to have succeeded him at Rye. He was also a surgeon in the Continental army, serving with credit throughout the war. Dr. Peter Hufeford practiced in Rye as early as 1753, and continued until near the commencement of the Revolution. Dr. Nicholas Bailey, who is first mentioned in 1758, practiced medicine in Rye for a number of years previous to the Revolution. Dr. David Daton also practiced in Rye about the year 1768; Dr. Nathaniel Downing in 1763; Dr. Robert Graham in 1771 and 1775. Dr. Downing was a resident of Rye, and his name occurs in connection with a subject which was agitating the community—inoculation for small-pox. This method of preventing that dreadful disease awakened the liveliest fears of the ignorant everywhere, and in some places inoculation was absolutely forbidden, and physicians performing it were rendered liable to severe penalties. In Rye it appears to have been permitted under certain regulations, which betray the same prejudices and misapprehensions that prevailed elsewhere. April 4, 1763, James Wetmore, in Rye, on the post road, "acquaints all persons that are disposed to be inoculated that they may be well accommodated" at his house,

"where constant attendance will be given by Doctor Nathaniel Downing (as he boards at said house), who has inoculated a Number of persons there that have had the Small Pox uncommonly light." September 23, 1763, "The pleasant situated house at *Rye Ferry*, where inoculation was carried on last fall and Winter with great success," is advertised as "now provided with genteel accommodations for all those who are inclined to be inoculated for the Small Pox the ensuing season at a very moderate price; and as the greatest care and attention will be given by the Doctors and Nurses provided for the patients, it is hoped that the usual success and encouragement will be continued."

But the inhabitants watched these proceedings with an evil eye. Their alarm and displeasure found vent before long "at a lawful town-meeting," which was held at the school-house in Rye, April 2, 1765. At this meeting it was resolved "that wharas sum persons have, in said town, in their own houses, tacken percons from other places into their familes, and sum of the Inhabitents of said town and their hath ben anocelated with the Small pox, whereby it hath put maney of the inhabitents in fear of cetching of the same," no person should be permitted to receive persons for inoculation, except in such houses as should be designated by two justices of the peace and the supervisor of the town.

Dr. Ebenezer Haviland was a physician in Rye in 1766, and appears to have had an extensive practice. He entered the Continental army, and served through the greater part of the war as surgeon.

Dr. Clark Sanford, of Vermont, who commenced the practice of medicine in Greenwich, Conn., about 1790, had many patients in Rye.

Dr. Sanford was noted for his skill in the treatment of a fearful epidemic known as the "Winter Fever," which prevailed extensively from 1812 to 1815. He was widely known to the profession as one of the first who manufactured pulverized Peruvian bark. This preparation was sold under the name of "Sanford's Bark." He had a mill at Glenville for grinding drugs, one of the first establishments of the kind in the country. He died about the year 1820, aged over sixty years, leaving three sons—Josephus, John and Henry—and two daughters. Dr. Benjamin Rockwell commenced practice in Saw Pit (now Port Chester) about the year 1809. He was born in Lewisboro or South Salem, N. Y., about the year 1786, and was a son of Judge Nathan Rockwell, of that place. Dr. Rockwell practiced medicine here for twelve or fifteen years, and was regarded as a very skillful physician. He removed to the city of New York, and died there. He had a son William, who was also a physician. Dr. David Rogers, after practicing for many years in Fairfield, Conn., removed to the town of Rye about the year 1808. He remained there until the time of his death. He was the father of Dr. David Rogers, Jr., who commenced practice in Mamaroneck

before the year 1800, and removed about 1820 to the city of New York, where he died about the year 1844, aged nearly seventy. Dr. David Rogers, Jr., had two sons, also physicians,—Drs. David L. and James Rogers, of New York. Dr. Charles McDonald settled in the village of Saw Pit in 1808. In his younger days he had served in his professional capacity in the army of the Revolution, and was a warm and devoted patriot. His professional career in this town covered a period of about a third of a century, and was highly creditable for its skill and success. He was a portly man, weighing not less than two hundred and fifty pounds. His countenance always wore a genial smile, and he was the particular favorite of the juvenile portion of the community. Dr. McDonald died, respected and beloved by a large circle of friends, September 12, 1841, aged eighty-two years.

Dr. Elisha Belcher, a native of Preston (now Lebanon), Conn., joined the Continental army, and was stationed as surgeon at Greenwich, where he continued to practice medicine until within the year of his death. He died December, 1825, in his sixty-ninth year. He had two sons, both physicians, one of whom, Dr. Elisha R. Belcher, settled in Saw Pit in 1816, and engaged partly in the exercise of his profession and partly in mercantile pursuits. He remained here about four years, and then removed to New York. Dr. James Willson was a graduate of the College of Physicians and Surgeons in the city of New York. He practiced in the city for some years and removed to Rye about the year 1825. He was a man of fine professional education, marked and decided in character and successful in practice. He died in 1862. Dr. Thomas Close was a native of Greenwich, Conn. He commenced the practice of medicine in Port Chester about the year 1830. He was much esteemed as a physician. He removed to Brooklyn in 1862. Dr. William Stillman Stanley was a graduate of Brown University, Providence, R. I., and received the degree of M.D. from that institution in 1828. He became a resident of Mamaroneck in that year, and in 1837 removed to Rye Neck, where he resided for many years. Dr. D. Jerome Sands graduated at the College of Physicians and Surgeons in the city of New York in 1840. Soon after he came to Port Chester, and has practiced here ever since. Dr. John H. T. Cockey was a native of Maryland, and graduated at the University of Maryland in 1832. He engaged in the practice of medicine first in Frederick County, Md., then in Litchfield County, Conn.; and after practicing in New York for four years, came to Rye in May, 1855. He died May 21, 1881. Dr. Seth Stephen Lounsbury, son of Phineas Lounsbury, of Bedford, N. Y., was born in that place September 11, 1837. He entered Lafayette College, Easton, Pa., in 1855, and after two years' study began the study of medicine under the supervision of his uncle, Dr. William Miner, of New York. He commenced practice in that city, and in 1862

entered the army as assistant surgeon of the One Hundred and Seventieth Regiment New York Volunteers. He was promoted to be surgeon of the One Hundred and Fifty-sixth New York Volunteers, remained till the close of the war, and was mustered out of service in August, 1865. He commenced practice in October, 1865, in connection with Dr. William S. Stanley, at Rye Neck. He died in Bedford April 26, 1872. Dr. Edward F. Mathews graduated at the College of Physicians and Surgeons New York, commenced practice in Port Chester, his present location, in 1856. Dr. Norton J. Sands graduated at the same institution in 1868, and is now engaged in the practice of his profession in Port Chester. Dr. S. L. Hall and Dr. T. C. Elmendorf, of the homœopathic school of medicine, were both graduated at the New York Homœopathic College in 1875, and came soon after to Port Chester, where they have been in practice ever since. Dr. Elizabeth Bates was graduated at the Woman's Medical College of Pennsylvania in 1854. Dr. J. Lewin, a native of Germany, is a graduate of the Jena Medical College. In the village of Rye, Dr. Frederick Eugene Bassett, a graduate of the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York (1878), is established in the practice of medicine.

The legal profession was not largely represented in early times in the town of Rye. The single name of Timothy Wetmore appears as that of an attorney-at-law living in Rye before the Revolution. Mr. Wetmore was licensed April 26, 1770. He was the son of the Rev. James Wetmore, and held a position of commanding influence in the community.

Jonathan F. Vickers, who taught school at "Saw Pit" for some years toward the close of the last century, was familiarly known as "Lawyer" Vickers, and was engaged to some extent in the practice of the law.

Daniel Haight, attorney and counsellor-at-law in Port Chester, was admitted at the bar in 1850, and has pursued his profession in this town since that time.

CEMETERIES.—The oldest cemetery in Rye is the little burying-ground by Blind Brook, at the turn of the road above Milton. The oldest legible inscription is that on the tomb of Nehemiah Webb, son of Rev. Joseph Webb, of Fairfield, who died at Rye, April 24, 1722, in his twenty-eighth year. The oldest legible inscriptions on other graves are these:

"In Memory of Mr. Elisha Budd, who died Sept. 21st, 1765, in the 60th year of his Age."

"In memory of Mrs. Anne Budd, wife of Mr. Elisha Budd, who died Dec. 6th, 1760."

"Mr. Joseph Lyon, who died Feb. 21, 1761, in the 84th year of his Age."

"Sarah Lyon, wife of Joseph Lyon, died Jan. 26, 1769."

"In Memory of Godfrey Hains who departed this Life July 22, 1768 aged 93 years."

"In memory of Anne wife of Godfrey Hains who departed this Life Febr'y 19, 1758, aged 68 years."

"In Memory of Jonathan Brown, who deceased June 15, 1768, aged 62 years."

Four tombstones in this grave-yard bear the name of Ezekiel Halsted,—

"In Memory of Ezekiel Halsted who Deceased in Rye 30th October 1757 in the 49th year of his Age."

"In Memory of Ezekiel Halsted who departed this life Febr'y 20th 1805, in the 67th year of his Age."

"Sacred to the Memory of Ezekiel Halsted who died April 18 1829 aged 68 years 2 months and 13 days."

"Sacred to the memory of Ezekiel Halsted jr. who died August 26, 1828, aged 41 years and 13 days. Having been a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church 22 years."

One of the tombs in this cemetery was erected—"In memory of Martha, wife of Dr. David Rogers, and daughter of the Rev. Charles Tennent, who died April 12, 1813, aged 62 years."

Two of the rectors of Christ Church lie buried here; their graves are near the entrance of the grave-yard,—the Reverend Evan Rogers who died January 25, 1809, in his forty-second year; and the Reverend William Thompson, who died August 26, 1830.

The earliest mention of this burying-ground in the town records occurs in a deed dated 1753. It speaks of "y^e boring [burying] place in Rye neck," opposite a certain tract of land on the west side of the mill creek, which Samuel Purdy conveyed to his sons, Samuel and Caleb.

In 1761, "Jonathan Brown iuner is aloud" [allowed] by the town "the priviledge of pastring the Buring yard upon the Conditions that he mackes a Geat and Cuts the Brush and Keeps it Clear." This permission was renewed yearly until 1770.

It seems likely that the Blind Brook Cemetery was laid out about the year 1750. An aged person informed the writer that the land was given to the town for this purpose by Joseph Lyon, who lies buried here, and who died in 1761. The fact that older inscriptions, like that of Mr. Webb, are to be found, may be accounted for by the supposition that bodies were removed to this place from other localities after the opening of a common burying-ground. In early times the practice of maintaining private or family places of interment prevailed in Rye, as it did elsewhere.

The small cemetery on the west side of Blind Brook, opposite Christ Church in Rye, is well known as the spot where several of the rectors of that church lie buried. This, however, was not one of the more ancient places of sepulture in the town, having been set apart for the purpose probably about the year 1760. Previous to that time the rectors who died while in charge of this parish were buried underneath the church. Interments were also formerly made, it is said, to some extent in the grounds adjacent to the Episcopal Church.

One of the most beautiful and interesting localities in Rye is the cemetery of the Jay family, on their estate. To this spot, in 1807, the remains of various members of that family were removed from their vault in New York. Here a monument stands "to the memory of JOHN JAY."

The burying-ground known as "The Union Cemetery of Rye" originated in 1837. In that year James Barker and David Brooks, of Rye, bought from Benjamin Mead three acres of land, which they gave to the authorities of Christ Church, Rye, "with a view to secure to the said church a suitable burial-place." This gift included the front part of the ground on North Street or the White Plains road. In conveying this property to the church, the donors stipulated that certain plots should be reserved as burial-places for the ministers of the three churches of Rye, and their families; and also that two strips on the eastern and western sides of the ground should be appropriated as a public cemetery. In January, 1855, the trustees of the Methodist Episcopal Church of Rye bought eight acres contiguous to this tract; and in 1864-68, they added more than six acres, making fourteen and a quarter in all. The grounds thus owned by the two congregations have been graded, inclosed and laid out uniformly, with no visible separation between them; and they form one of the most beautiful cemeteries in this part of the country.

To the southwest of the Union Cemetery lies the "Colored Cemetery," a plot of one acre, the title of which is vested in the trustees of public lands. In olden times the colored people of Rye had a place of interment in the Town Field, on the present Anderson estate, and another on Budd's Neck, nearly opposite the house of Mr. Benjamin Mead. The latter spot is no longer recognizable as a place of sepulture, having been for years ploughed over with the surrounding field. The former contains a number of humble, unchronicled graves.

PORT CHESTER.—This village, at the mouth of Byram River, was known early in the eighteenth century, and until within the last fifty years, as "Saw Pit." That very inelegant name had its origin in the fact that a spot on Lyon's Point, now part of the village of Port Chester, was occupied in ancient times for the building of boats. There was a landing here, known as "Saw Pitt landing," as early as 1732; and in 1741 we hear of "some small lots lately laid out at the Saw Pits, so called." These lots, it appears, were distributed among "the ancient Proprietors of Peningo Neck," and the apportionment was one of the last that took place under the proprietary system. Until near the period of the Revolution it can scarcely be said that a village existed here. The farmers of King Street and Hog-Pen Ridge brought their produce down to the market-sloops which made their weekly passage from Saw Pit to New York, and a tavern or

two, with a few boatmen's houses, were built in course of time. Abraham Bush, who for many years sailed from this port, had his father's home-lot "near Saw Pit landing" in 1745. Isaac Anderson and Samuel Lyon, "mariners," lived here some years earlier. The maps of a century ago, however, do not indicate more than half a dozen houses between Regent Street and Byram Bridge, and even twenty years later there were not more than sixteen or eighteen. The taverns were Samuel Marvin's and Israel Seaman's. Marvin's tavern was the house on Willett Street, near the railroad arch, still standing—a good specimen of the solid and comfortable dwellings of the better sort in olden times. It passed into the hands of Reuben Coe early in the present century. Seaman's tavern stood on the southeast corner of Main Street and the street leading to Lyon's Point. It was a noted resort of boatmen and farmers in ancient days. During



JOHN JAY.

THE JAY CEMETERY, RYE.

the Revolution Seaman sided with the British and went away. In 1779 the tavern was known as Lawrence's.

Adam Seaman's grist-mill, formerly Richard Ogden's, stood in 1743 near the point where the railroad bridge now crosses Byram River. This was the wading-place known as the "lower going over." At the close of the Revolution the mill was the property of one of the Bowne family. The old mill, known as Squire's Bowne's, was still standing in 1800. Between the old country road and the water there were no houses in 1800. Opposite Mr. Gershom Bulkley's the tide came up to the road-side. Where Adee Street intersects Main Street there was a channel which Moses Crooker's sloop used to sail up, and the fields beyond this were often overflowed at high-water. The Saw Pit school-house stood on the west side of King



EAGLE IRON AND STOVE WORKS,
ABENDROTH BROTHERS, PROPRIETORS,
PORT CHESTER, N. Y.



Street, about forty rods from the railroad. Between Seaman's tavern and the western end of the village there were three or four small houses. On the triangular lot west of the school-house, and near the Catholic Church, stood a building known as "the Haunted House." It was torn down some fifty years ago. Here a certain Captain Flood, who is said to have "sailed the first market-sloop out of Saw-pit," lived at the time of the Revolution. "John Flood the boatman" was one of the persons examined by the Committee of Safety in 1776, in connection with the trial of certain Tories concerned in the spiking of cannon at King's Bridge. In this house, tradition states, a daughter of Captain Flood was murdered, and the neighborhood was thought to be haunted by her ghost. Timid persons were long unwilling to pass over the road approaching this house after dark; and there were stories afloat of strange flickering lights that had been seen moving over the meadows near by in the night. Wiser heads, however, knew of the "Will o' the wisp" or the "Jack o' lantern," which frequents low marshy grounds like those around this spot; for here, just in front of the Haunted House, were the "upper hassocky meadows," now comparatively dry and salubrious, but once, doubtless, a dismal and unwholesome swamp.

In 1837 the village of Saw Pit took its present name, Port Chester. By an act of the Legislature passed on May 14, 1868, Port Chester was incorporated as a village with specified limits, within the town of Rye. The limits of the village are thus stated in the charter:

"All that part of the town of Rye, in the County of Westchester, contained in the following limits, to wit: Beginning at a rock at the easterly end of Byram bridge, on the boundary line between the States of Connecticut and New York; thence, by said boundary line north 24 degrees and 15 minutes west, 16 chains and 97 links to the boundary line between lands of E. L. Smith and the Misses Merritt; thence by said boundary line and across the land of said Merritts and by the boundary between Mrs. Bush and said Merritts, south 75 and $\frac{3}{4}$ degrees west, 42 chains and 45 links, to the easterly line of King street; thence by the same course, across said King street and lands of the estate of William Bush, Thomas Lyon, the estate of Nehemiah Brown, Alva Slater and E. B. Wesley, 48 chains and 45 links to the boundary line between lands of E. B. Wesley and Jethro Daggett; thence by said boundary line and across lands of William Mathews, south 10 degrees and 10 minutes west, 20 chains and 95 links to the Purchase road; thence, by the same course, across said Purchase road and through lands of Abraham Merritt, Thomas Lyon, Hannah M. Barton, the estate of Philip Duffy, deceased, Elizabeth Merritt, Samuel S. Bent, William P. Abendroth, and Charles T. Goodwin, 56 chains and 70 links to the centre of the road leading from the Boston post road to Ridge street; thence through the centre of the said first mentioned road south 63 and $\frac{3}{4}$ degrees east, 12 chains and 78 links, south 56 and a half degrees east, 3 chains and 24 links, and south 50 and $\frac{3}{4}$ degrees east, 5 chains and 62 links, to the westerly line of the Boston post road; thence across said road and through lands of Ezraiah Wetmore and the estate of Gilbert Bush, deceased, south 61 degrees east, 39 chains and twenty links to the Grace church street road; thence by the same course, across said road and through lands of the estate of William T. Provost, deceased, 24 chains and 75 links to the northerly end of Horse rock at high water mark; thence by the same course through the harbor or bay to the Connecticut State line; thence northerly by said State line and Byram river to the place of beginning; shall be hereafter known and distinguished as the village of Port Chester."

According to the census of 1880 this village con-

tained then three thousand two hundred and fifty-four inhabitants. But within the past few years the growth of the population has been rapid, and it is now believed to exceed the number of four thousand. There can be little doubt that Port Chester is destined to be an important manufacturing town. At present its leading establishments are the machine shops of Messrs. Abendroth, proprietors of the Eagle Foundry; the Port Chester Bolt and Nut Company, organized June 15, 1882; and the National Chuck Company; the planing-mills of Messrs. George Mertz & Sons, and Messrs. Slater Brothers; and the shirt manufactory conducted by Messrs. Pond, West & Simons. These flourishing establishments, with others, give employment to several hundreds of operatives.

Port Chester possesses five churches and two banks—the First National Bank, organized May 9, 1864, and the Savings Bank, organized June 17, 1865.

The *Port Chester Banner* was the first newspaper published in this town. Its first number appeared on Saturday, October 4, 1844. The editor was Evans Hollis. The *Banner* was a small paper, in politics "purely Democratic." It was continued for a little more than one year, the last number being issued at the close of the State election in the autumn of 1845. The next newspaper was *The Nineteenth Century*, edited and published by T. J. Sutherland. The first number was issued April 2, 1846. It was discontinued in the autumn of the same year. *The Experiment* was the title of another paper, started by Abraham G. Levy, August 12, 1848. It appeared in an enlarged form April 21, 1849, but ceased with the issue of August 25th, in the same year. *The Port Chester Monitor* appeared for the first time February 13, 1864. Messrs. James E. Beers and George W. Smith were the editors. This paper was conducted with considerable ability, and continued its career until August, 1867. *The Port Chester Journal*, founded by B. F. Ashley, first appeared November 27, 1868. The present proprietor is M. L. Delavan. *The Port Chester Enterprise*, another weekly newspaper, was commenced September 3, 1884. It is conducted by B. F. McDermott.

The Presbyterian Church was the first house of worship built in what is now Port Chester. On the 26th of May, 1830, the frame of the edifice was raised upon a plot of ground which had been given for the purpose by Mr. George Adee. Only the basement was used at first. It was dedicated December 19, 1830, Rev. Joel Mann, of Greenwich, preaching. The church was completed and dedicated in September, 1833, Rev. Dr. Spencer, of Brooklyn, preaching. Rev. Williams C. Whittemore, of Rye, had charge of the congregation when the church was built. He was followed, at Rye and Saw Pit, by the Rev. David Remington, whose ministry commenced in April, 1832, and was terminated January 24, 1834, by his sudden death. Rev. Thomas Payne succeeded him, from 1834 to 1836; and Rev. James R. Davenport

was pastor from October 13, 1836, to April, 1838. In July, 1838, the Rev. Edward D. Bryan commenced his labors at Rye. The service at Port Chester, which had hitherto been held in the afternoon, was now transferred to the morning, and an evening service was also maintained. Mr. Bryan resided for several years at Port Chester, as one or two of his predecessors had done, and no small part of his time was devoted to this field. "In 1839 a season of spiritual refreshing was enjoyed, which resulted in the addition of ten persons to the church."

The congregations of Rye and Port Chester remained united for a period of twenty-three years. In 1852 it was found expedient to dissolve this connection, and organize a distinct church at Port Chester. This was done on the 4th of August in that year, by the Presbytery of Bedford. The new church was constituted with forty-one members, all of whom had, until then, been connected with the church of Rye; and with one elder, Mr. Ephraim Sours. Rev. Henry Benedict, the first pastor, began his labors in June, 1853, and was installed October 9, 1854. He resigned his charge April 22, 1863, and was succeeded by Rev. Valentine A. Lewis, ordained and installed November 1, 1864. His pastorate ended in October, 1867, and the Rev. Ezra F. Mundy was installed March 9, 1868. His resignation took effect April 1, 1877; and the Rev. Willis W. Dowd, the present pastor, was installed May 8, 1877.

The Methodist Episcopal Church of Port Chester was built about 1831. Prior to this the district school-house had been used as a place of worship. The church was a small structure, which occupied the site of the present handsome and spacious church. The latter was dedicated on Sunday, August 15, 1858, Bishop Janes officiating. Its cost was about ten thousand dollars. In 1864 the church took the name of Summerfield Church, in honor of John Summerfield. The ministers in charge since 1847 have been Rev. Messrs. W. B. Hoyt, J. A. Edmonds, Justus O. North, William F. Smith, — Cotant, William Porteus, G. S. Gilbert, Otis Saxton, C. T. Mallory, W. F. Hatfield, C. B. Ford, S. H. Smith, W. Platts, T. G. Osborn, S. M. Hammond, W. T. Pray, G. H. Goodsell, E. A. Blake. The present pastor is the Rev. John Pegg.

The King Street Methodist Episcopal Church was built about the same time with that of Saw Pit, though it would appear that the project of its erection was entertained much earlier. At a Quarterly Conference held at New Rochelle, December 27, 1823, E. Halsted, D. Kirby and D. H. Mead were "appointed a committee to consider the propriety of building a church at King Street." This locality had been one of the appointments of the New Rochelle Circuit for several years.

The Protestant Episcopal Church was erected in 1843-44, on land given by William Ade. Ser-

vice had previously been held in the old school-house at the foot of King Street Hill, in the Methodist Church, and in a building now known as Armonck Hall, then called Burger's Chapel. Rev. P. S. Chauncey, of Rye, had begun to officiate here in December, 1836. The corner-stone of the church was laid on the 25th of July, 1843, Bishop Onderdonk officiating. The building was completed at a cost of about six thousand dollars, and on Monday, July 15, 1844, it was consecrated by Bishop Onderdonk as "St. Peter's Chapel, in connection with Christ Church, Rye," and under the pastoral charge of the rector of the parish.¹ Mr. Chauncey continued to perform the duties of this part of his charge until January 30, 1848, when he resigned the rectorship of Rye. During the ministry of the Rev. Edward C. Bull, who succeeded him, steps were taken to form a distinct parish at Port Chester, and on the 12th of April, 1852, proceedings were instituted to incorporate St. Peter's Church. The Rev. Isaac Peck was called, May 24, 1852, as rector. He accepted and entered upon his duties in August. During the following summer the church was enlarged by an addition at the east end. Mr. Peck resigned June 7, 1858, and was followed by the Rev. George C. Pennell, rector from July 2, 1858, till August, 1859. His successor, the Rev. Samuel Hollingsworth, D.D., entered upon his duties on the 5th of February, 1860. He resigned his charge as rector in June, 1872. Dr. Hollingsworth died in San Sebastian, Spain, August 15, 1884. The Rev. Brockholst Morgan became rector of this church September 15, 1872, and resigned in November, 1879. His successor was the Rev. J. G. Rosencrantz, who entered upon his duties in March, 1880, and whose useful career was terminated by death in the autumn of 1881. The present rector is the Rev. Edward Kenney, B.D., elected May 16, 1882.

The rectory of St. Peter's Church was built in 1860; the ground, two acres and three-eighths, was given by Read Peck.

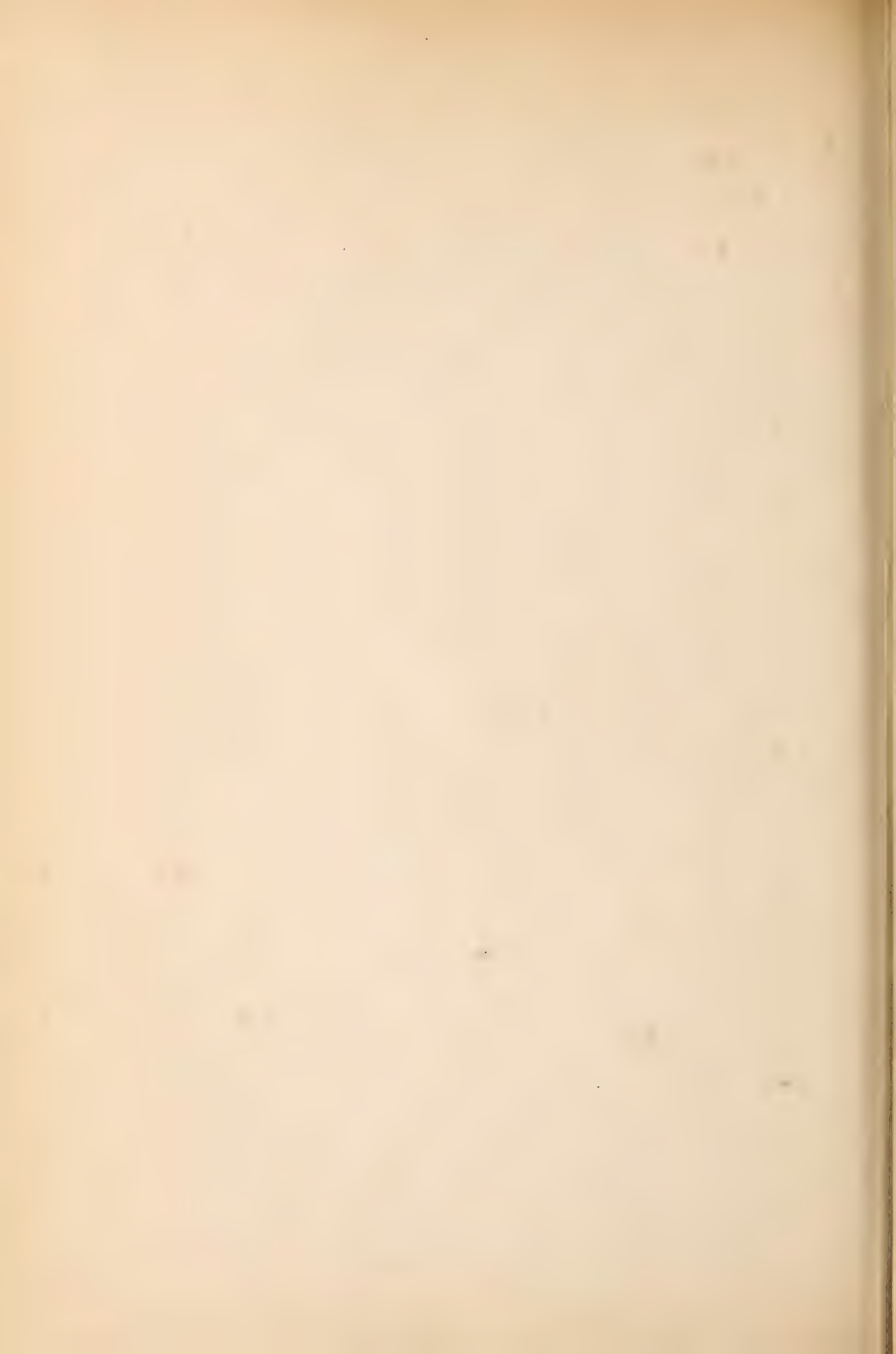
The Baptist Church of Port Chester was dedicated on the 2d of February, 1865. Its pastors have been Rev. Messrs. E. S. Raymond, Dr. Byrne, Lawson Stewart, Jonathan Bastow, A. C. Ferguson, W. H. Barnes, D. T. Phillips and W. F. Wakefield.

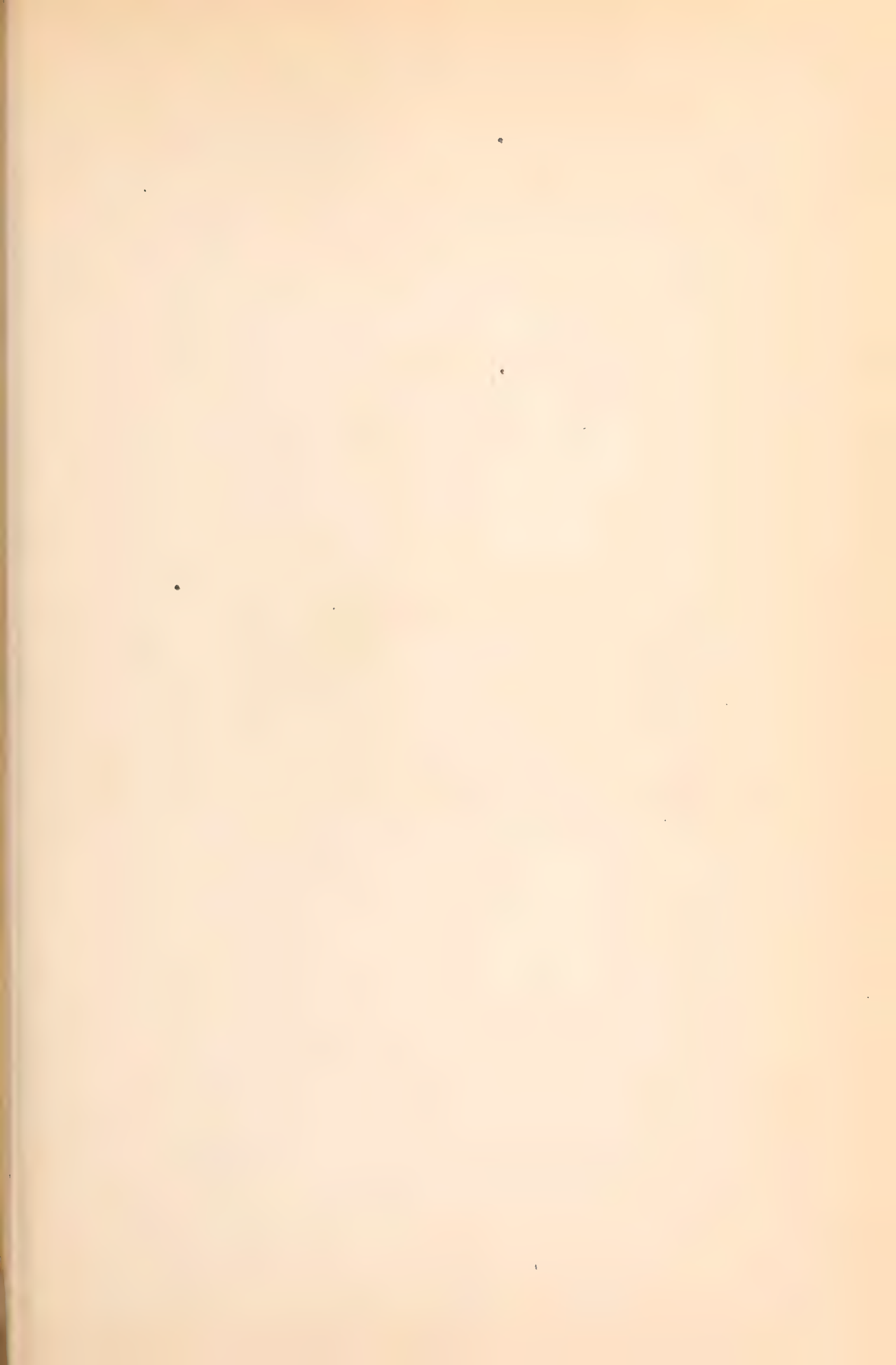
In 1834 the few Roman Catholics of Port Chester congregated for the first time, for religious purposes, in a private house. This they continued to do for several years, visited occasionally by priests from Harlem, Westchester and New Rochelle. About the year 1846 they purchased a small frame building on Main Street, which they used as a church until 1852, when the Rev. E. J. O'Reilly became pastor of Port Chester and the adjoining missions,—New Rochelle, Mamaroneck and White Plains. After residing here a few months he removed to New Rochelle, where he

¹This church was destroyed by fire in December, 1883.



J. S. M. Quintard







RESIDENCE OF GEO. W. QUINTARD,
PORT CHESTER, N. Y. •

remained until 1853, retaining charge of the above places. In 1852 the old church, which had become too small, was sold, a new site was bought and the present church, named "Our Lady of Mercy," was built upon it. Rev. E. J. O'Reilly was succeeded in 1853 by Rev. Thomas McLoughlin, who remained for one year. In 1854 Rev. Matthew Dowling, the present pastor, was appointed. Connected with this church there is a school for boys and one for girls, and a convent, occupied by the Sisters of Charity, who have charge of the female department.

Charles W. Baird

BIOGRAPHY.¹

GEORGE W. QUINTARD.

The life stories of many of our leading business men, whether abounding in thrilling incidents and adventure and signaled by vicissitudes of fortune which have conspicuously evoked the nobler attributes of a worthy manhood, or merely characterized by a plain, matter-of-fact struggle upward and onward to the goal of success, must possess a certain degree of interest to all, and particularly to those who are still striving along the beaten track with ends unattained and aspirations unsatisfied. More than this: a study of these life records suggests an instructive lesson to the youth of our country, and presents a guide to honorable distinction, which need only be appreciated to be advantageously utilized.

George W. Quintard ranks prominently among the successful business men of New York City. His record bespeaks an enterprise and a genius, coupled with sterling qualities of head and heart, which afford an example worthy of imitation, and eminently fit him to be classed among the representative men of our day.

He was born in Stamford, Connecticut, on April 22, 1822. His father, Isaac Quintard, and his ancestors resided in that town for several generations, and were most estimable citizens, distinguished for probity and intelligence. After receiving the usual education given in the public schools of the town, young Quintard, at the age of fifteen, followed the custom of most bright boys of Connecticut, and came in quest of fortune to New York. Finding employment in one of the leading houses in the grocery trade, he followed that calling with industry and fidelity for five or six years, after which he embarked in business on his own account, continuing therein for four years.

In 1847, being then only twenty-five years of age,

he became one of the firm of T. F. Secor & Co., owning the Morgan Iron Works of New York; and three years later, in 1850, became co-proprietor of that large establishment with Charles Morgan, whose daughter he married, and who then, as now, was one of the leading and most opulent ship-owners and merchants of the city. In 1852 Mr. Quintard assumed control, and from that time up to 1857, with the exception of two years, was sole manager of the works which, for the volume of business and the high repute borne, was second to no similar manufacturing concern in the country.

During the eventful period of the war Mr. Quintard enjoyed, in the highest possible degree, the confidence of the government at Washington. He was often consulted by the chief officials of the Navy Department regarding the construction of steam vessels of war, and built and sold to the United States a larger number of such ships than were turned out by any other establishment. Indeed, so honorably conspicuous had become the reputation of the Morgan Iron Works that when, in 1863, the Italian government determined to build two first-class frigates in New York City, Mr. Quintard was selected to construct the engines for the "Re d'Italia."

Between 1861 and 1864 he built for the United States government the engines for the following war steamers:

- | | |
|--------------|-------------|
| Onondaga, | Ammonoosuc, |
| Wachusett, | Chippewa, |
| Seminole, | Katahdin, |
| Muscoota, | Ascutney, |
| Chenango, | Idaho, |
| Ticonderoga, | Tioga |

Kinneo.

and engines for the following ocean steamers in the merchant service:

- | | |
|--------------------|------------------|
| Golden Rule, | General Barnes, |
| Herman Livingston, | Vera Cruz, |
| Manhattan, | Rapidan, |
| Raleigh, | Hatteras, |
| Albemarle. | Eastern Queen, |
| Cambridge, | Continental, |
| City of Hartford. | Fah-Hee (China), |
| Everglade, | Cosmopolitan, |
| Mississippi, | Orizaba, |
| Charles Morgan, | Nautilus, |
| Granite State, | Golden Age, |
| San Francisco, | George Law, |
| Fulton, | Yangsee (China), |
| Peiho (China), | De Soto, |
| Bienville, | Peruano, |
| W. G. Hawes, | Ocean Queen, |
| Flushing, | New Brunswick, |
| Island Home, | Commonwealth, |
| Alabama, | Villa Clara. |

¹The following biographical sketches were prepared and inserted in this chapter by the publishers.

Also the engines for the following steamers on the Western Lakes—steamers that in their day were of dimensions, and fitted up with appointments, not surpassed by those of any of the steamers on the North River or elsewhere:

Southern Michigan, Western Metropolis,	Northern Indiana, Crescent City.
---	-------------------------------------

In 1867 Mr. Quintard disposed of his interest in the Morgan Iron Works to John Roach, and became principal proprietor and president of the New York and Charleston Steamship Company, and still continues at the head of that corporation. In 1869 he became interested in the Quintard Iron Works, an extensive establishment for the manufacture of steam-engines and machinery, his principal associate in the proprietorship being James Murphy, long and favorably known as one of the prominent and most successful men in that particular branch of industry. Mr. Murphy's son is also a member of the firm. This business is now in the possession and under the management of N. F. Palmer.

Few men of his years have been participants in works of greater magnitude than Mr. Quintard; while, at the same time, few have been more active in institutions of practical benevolence. Successful from the outset, he has prosecuted that success steadily and surely, increasing in enterprise, so to speak, with augmenting ability to accomplish his undertakings.

In the administration of large and varied business interests his career has been without reproach; and he has never deviated from those principles of integrity which were developed as fundamental elements of his character in early youth.

Besides the presidency of the two great corporations already named, Mr. Quintard is a director of the Manhattan Life Insurance Company of New York, and of the Butchers' and Drovers' Bank. He is president of the New England and Nova Scotia Steamship Company (Portland to Halifax); vice-president of the Eleventh Ward Bank, trustee of the Eastern Dispensary, director of the New York, Lake Erie and Western Railroad Company, and is, at this writing, widely known as the assignee of the great ship-builder, John Roach. In each of these corporations and businesses he takes an active and prominent part.

SAMUEL K. SATTERLEE.

Mr. Satterlee is a member of the well-known New York family of that name, and comes of good old English stock. His ancestor, Captain Benedict Satterlee, emigrated from Exeter to New England in fulfillment of a marriage engagement with one of New England's fair Puritans, the daughter of James Bemis, of New London. Captain Satterlee was a member of the Church of England, and son of one of the clergymen mentioned in the annals of the time, who were

persecuted and sequestered during the Protectorate for fealty to Church and King. The marriage took place August 2, 1682, and from the union sprang a numerous progeny.

Mr. Satterlee was born in the city of New York in 1818. At the age of sixteen he was appointed corresponding and note clerk in the prominent banking-house of Morgan, Ketchum & Co., on Wall Street, the position having become vacant by the resignation of Junius P. Morgan, the present eminent London banker. Subsequently, and for seven years, he was cashier to the successors of that house. Failing in health, he removed to Connecticut, and for ten or more years served as financial officer of several banks, receiving special commendation in the reports of the bank commissioners of that State. In 1853 he removed to Rye, and a few years thereafter became one of the principal proprietors of the Stamford Manufacturing Company.

During the Civil War, though not in accord with the Republican party, he was appointed chairman of the military division of the "Union Defense Committee of Rye," which rendered such effective service in the support of the government. It is noteworthy that although he has held more than a score of offices of trust, they came to him without solicitation. Every position, including his first clerkship, sought him.

He married Mary P., daughter of the late Judge Brown, of Rye, whose homestead they have occupied since his death, in 1855, and where they still reside with their grandsons, Satterlee Saltonstall and Dudley Winthrop Saltonstall, children of their only daughter.

He was one of the founders of the St. Nicholas Club of New York, and is a member of various other organizations. He is widely known throughout the county in which he lives, and is esteemed by one and all a worthy Christian gentleman and a thorough man of affairs.

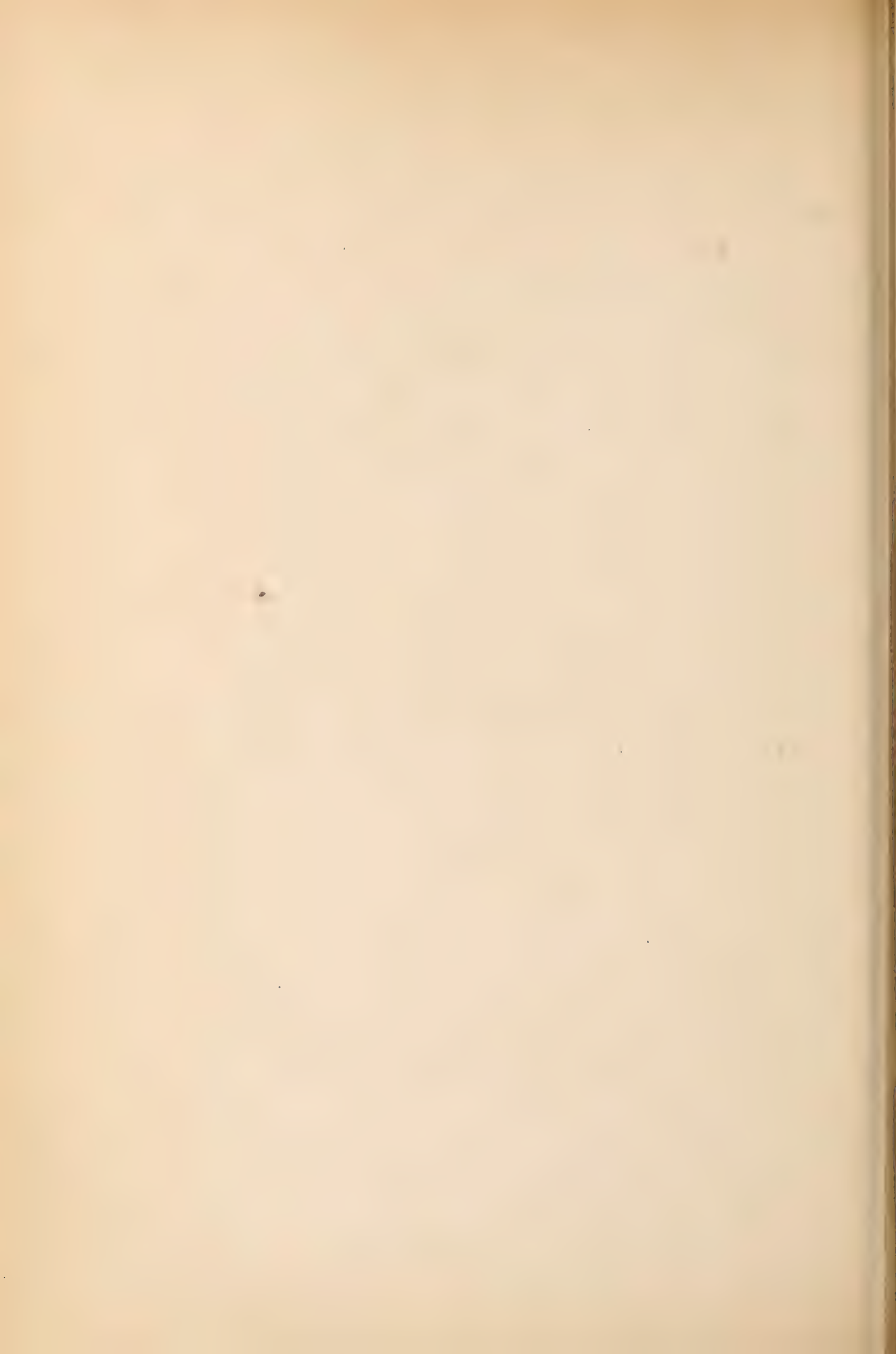
ALEXANDER TAYLOR.

This well-known banker and business man was the son of John and Jane Lamont Taylor, and was born at Leith, Scotland, August 26, 1821. In 1822 he came to New York with his parents.

His father was a well-known merchant in New York City. He died deeply regretted, in April, 1840, leaving his wife and a young family to push their way through the world alone. Though not twenty years of age when the care of the family—then consisting of his mother, two brothers and two sisters—devolved upon him, Alexander Taylor, under the wise and gentle guidance of his mother, at once applied himself to the serious work of life, and, with the courage and self-denial of his race, slowly, but surely, made comfortable provision for them all. His father's illness had called him at the age of nineteen from his school to the active life of Wall Street. Here he entered the office of a stock and money brokerage firm, with whom



A. Sutterlee







RESIDENCE OF THE LATE JUDGE BROWN.
ROCKY HILL, N. Y.
DESIGNED BY THE ARCHT. JOHN W. WATSON, AND ENGRAVED BY H. K. BATTERLEE.

he remained until it dissolved and went out of business, leaving the young broker without occupation. Nothing daunted, however, he resolved to make use of the experience he had gained in a trial of business upon his own account. Immediately hiring the office of the dissolved firm, he started on his long and successful career at 62 Wall Street, then known as Jones Court. His next-door neighbor at the time was Jacob Little, the famous financier, whose kindly words of advice and counsel did much toward the encouragement of the young beginner.

The business of Mr. Taylor was fairly successful from the start, and at a later period was transferred to 76 Wall Street, where his brothers, William L. and Peter B., as they became of age, were taken into the firm, and the name was changed to that of "Taylor Brothers." For more than a quarter of a century the reputation of this house has been honorably maintained. Their bills on the Union Bank of London, Belfast Banking Company of Ireland and National Bank of Scotland were well known in every town, village and hamlet in the United Kingdom.

In 1870 Mr. Taylor retired from the firm, with the view of establishing his sons Alexander and George in business, under the firm-name of Alexander Taylor's Sons. After this was accomplished, desiring to reside in Europe, he accepted the very flattering proposal to become the resident partner in London of the banking-house of Clews, Habicht & Co. This house, then in very high standing, was the fiscal agent of the United States government in England.

Prior to his departure a farewell reception was tendered him at the Union League Club, on the evening of the 8th of May, 1872, by a committee of the most distinguished gentlemen in the city. *Harper's Weekly*, speaking of the event, says: "It may be doubted if any reception ever given in New York to a person of high political position or eminence in any walk of life was attended by a larger number of representative men than was the reception given to Mr. Alexander Taylor on the evening of the 8th inst., at the Union League Club, prior to his departure for Europe. It was the first occurrence of the kind, on a large scale, that has taken place in New York, and was a brilliant success. It could not have been more so, for among the thousand gentlemen present were the notable men of the metropolis—merchants, bankers, men of letters, artists, dramatists, lawyers, doctors, &c., &c. It was a hearty expression of regard toward one who combines the qualities of a true gentleman and thorough man of affairs."

Mr. Taylor, during his stay in London, promoted and aided in the establishment of many important enterprises, and rendered valuable assistance to the Japanese commissioners in placing their loan. His good offices and friendship were recognized by their finance minister in a letter of thanks, and the presentation of a pair of Japanese vases of a rare and beautiful design as a token of gratitude.

The panic of 1873 will long be remembered for its unexpected and destructive effects. The failure of Jay Cooke & Co. was the beginning of a series of bankruptcies that carried down thousands who thought themselves beyond its reach. The house of Henry Clews & Co. made every effort to avoid suspension. They paid out millions of their best assets to stem the tide, but all to no avail. The house closed its doors, and with its failure the London house succumbed also. Universal sympathy was expressed for Mr. Taylor, in the unlooked-for and sudden catastrophe, but no blame attached to him, and as a mark of confidence he was requested by the trustees of the estate to proceed to New York at once and take such steps as he might deem necessary for the protection of the creditors. About the same time the British bondholders of the Burlington, Cedar Rapids and Minnesota Railway Company appointed Mr. Taylor their attorney in fact to proceed to recover their property. Promptly associating himself with the New York committee, foreclosure and a reorganization followed; in due course he was elected a director in the new company and appointed treasurer. Four years of wise management brought the property to a prosperous basis.

Mr. Taylor was an influential member of the New York Stock Exchange for many years, and elected a governor for various terms; was chairman of the committee to consolidate the Government Board and the public, or open board with the exchange, and served on most of the committees. He was one of the committee to represent the Exchange at the Centennial Exposition at Philadelphia. He also received the nomination for president of the Exchange, but failed of election owing to his advocacy of a measure to remove the Exchange into more commodious quarters. This project had enlisted in its favor many of the best minds of the board, but the opposition of property interests was too strong to be overcome. He gave up his seat several years ago. His son and brothers continue active and influential members.

Mr. Taylor at an early stage was greatly interested in the subject of electric lighting. He aided in establishing the Gramme Electrical Company, and for a time was a director and its treasurer.

The subject of a canal across the Isthmus had long been considered by him as the most important world's work remaining to be done. His preferences were all in favor of the route through Nicaragua. De Lesseps meanwhile had inaugurated the Panama scheme. Mr. Taylor and his associates did not believe in the feasibility of that route and they proceeded with their plans. The government of Nicaragua granted a very valuable concession and a society was organized to promote the work. A bill was presented to the Congress of the United States providing for incorporation, and at several stages a government guarantee of interest was asked for. Mr. Taylor took a very active part in the proceedings; was one of the

first directors and chairman of the executive committee. Admiral Ammin, Engineer Menocal and the late Hon. S. L. Phelps were conspicuous for their devotion to the enterprise. The inaction of Congress has delayed matters, but the late Secretary of State Frelinghuysen dispatched Engineer Menocal with a surveying corps to determine the probable cost and the best line for the canal. A report very favorable is in preparation, to be submitted to Congress. Mr. Taylor has abiding faith in the ultimate completion of the work.

The New York, West Shore and Buffalo Railway also attracted his attention. His friends were in it and he was invited to take part in the work of organization. Everything then seemed to favor the plan. Sixteen millions of dollars were immediately subscribed to the bonds and further subscriptions declined. Ten millions of cash was already in the treasury, and work begun with great vigor. Mr. Taylor was elected a director and treasurer.

He was also a director in the Ontario and Western Railroad and the Wallkill Valley Railway. These positions were all resigned in 1882, he desiring to join his family in Europe for a short period of rest. Within a month after his arrival in Paris his youngest daughter, Christine, a lovely and gifted girl, died there suddenly, in the eighteenth year of her age. The blow to her parents and family was terrible; an immediate return to this country was decided upon, and in a fortnight Mr. Taylor with his wife and remaining daughter were again settled in "Linwood," their country home at Rye Neck. Here they have resided ever since. Indeed, the Taylors are a county family in the best English sense. They have resided at "Linwood" all the year around and almost continuously for twenty-five years some member of the family has kept open house. The fires have never gone out. The sons, Alexander and George, have erected pretty residences within speaking distance of the old homestead. Mr. Taylor and family attend St. Thomas' Episcopal Church at Mamaroneck. Mrs. Taylor takes charge of a large class in the Sabbath-school and she also personally superintends and maintains the Rye Neck Industrial Free School, which she organized some years ago, the object being to educate young girls in sewing and needlework.

On the 16th of March, 1883, the mother of Mr. Taylor died, in the eighty-first year of her age. She was born in Leith, Scotland, and was a notable example of the best traits of the Scottish character. She was greatly loved by her family and highly esteemed by a wide circle who had the pleasure of her acquaintance.

Mr. Taylor was formerly one of the directors of the Demilt Dispensary of the city of New York, and for more than twenty years a manager of the annual "Charity Ball" for the benefit of the Nursery and Child's Hospital. The monuments erected in the Central Park to the memory of Sir Walter Scott and

Robert Burns met with active support from him and he rendered valuable service upon the committees. As a member of and an officer in the St. Andrew's Society and the Burns Club of the city of New York he has been long and highly regarded.

He has been for many years a Fellow of the National Academy of Design and a member of the Union League Club of the city of New York. He is chairman of the American Board of Trustees of the Scottish Union and National Insurance Company of Scotland, of which, it may be interesting to know, Sir Walter Scott was the first governor.

It is a great pleasure to present the county which has enjoyed his citizenship for so many years with this brief outline of Mr. Taylor's career. A comparatively poor boy with no capital except those sterling qualities which were inherited from and fostered by an eminently Christian mother and a wise and prudent father, he has carved his way amid the ever-changing fortune of Wall Street to a permanent place in public estimation and popularity. Notwithstanding the business cares which have engrossed the major part of his time, he has ever found a spare moment for the appreciation of noble works of art, science and literature. As an amateur he has done considerable painting, both in oil and water color, and has also indulged in an occasional rhyme or essay. He is an upright man, an enterprising citizen, a true friend and a courteous gentleman. As such he will long be appreciated throughout the locality in which he lives and also the county at large.

ALEXANDER TAYLOR, JR.,

Son of the preceding, and one of the most popular and successful young men in the county, was born in the city of New York, June 22, 1848. In early boyhood he attended school at the Charlier Institute and finished his education at Churchill's Military Academy, at Sing Sing. At the age of seventeen he entered his father's office in Wall Street as a clerk, and in a few years was taken in as junior partner. Four years of partnership with Taylor Bros. created an ambition to venture on his own account, and with his father as associate and adviser, business was established at No. 56 Broadway, under the firm-name of Alexander Taylor & Son. Later the senior withdrew to go to Europe, and William Taylor's younger brother, George M. Taylor, was taken into the business, under the firm-name of Alexander Taylor's Sons. Two years ago Mr. George M. Taylor retired to the country, and under the name of Alexander Taylor, Jr., the business is now conducted.

Mr. Taylor is many-sided; his occupations and charities are numerous and various. Close attention to business does not prevent him from taking lively interest in other affairs. As a prominent member of the Stock Exchange he has won the regard of a wide circle of friends, especially among the younger members. He is noted for his keen and accurate judgment

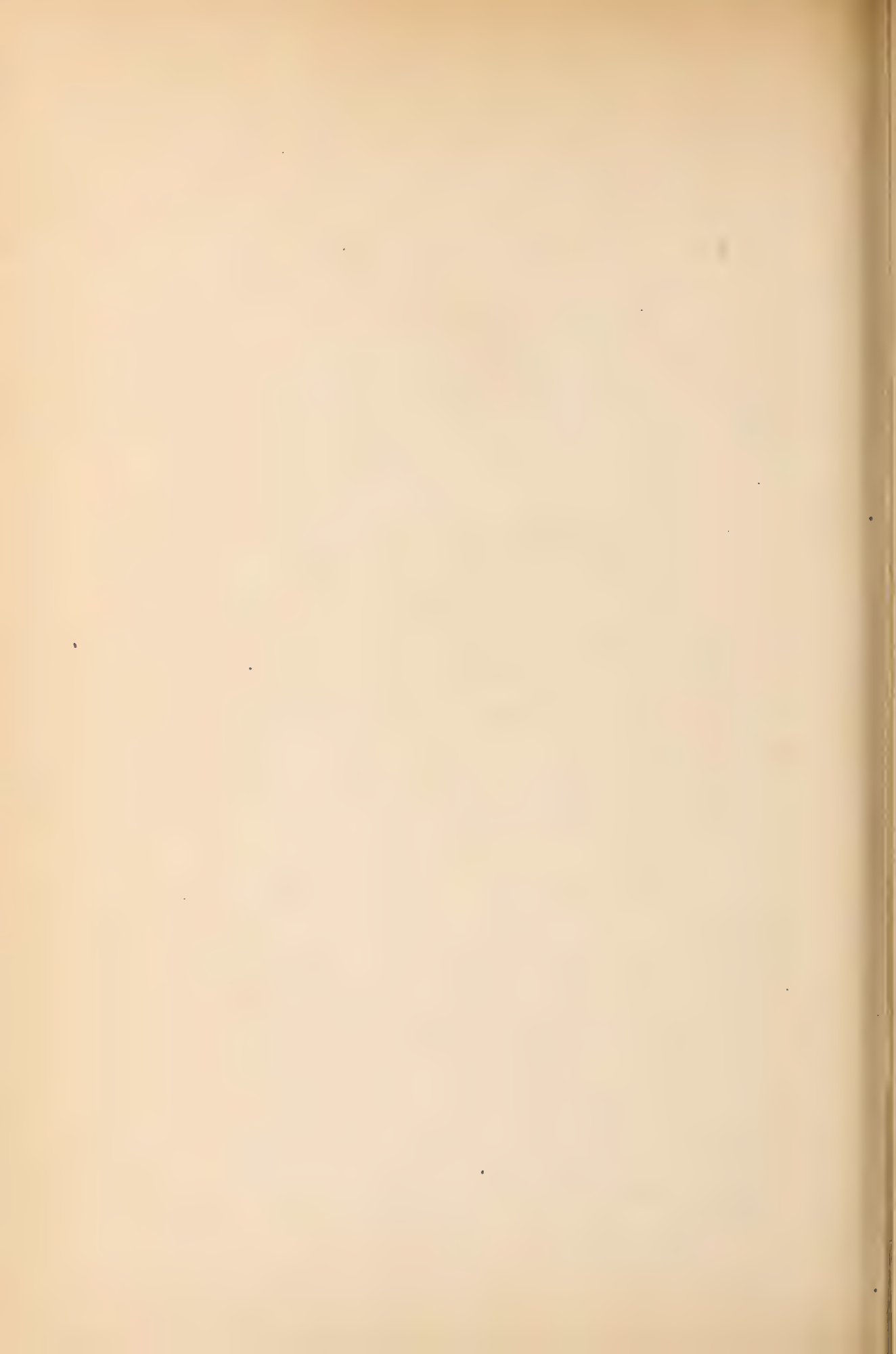




Alex. Taylor



Mr Taylor Esq







N. C. Ford

and his success has been the success of many of his friends. He thought, properly, it was the duty of young men of respectability to take some part in politics, and not to leave the legislation of the country in the hands of professional politicians. He was always a strong Republican, and when he was tendered a nomination for Congress in the Twelfth Congressional District, now the Fourteenth, he did not hesitate to accept it. This important district includes the whole of Westchester County, together with the Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth Wards of the city of New York. The district is a regular Democratic stronghold, but so great was his personal popularity that he carried the county by a majority of three hundred and forty votes and was only defeated in the two city wards by a small majority for his opponent, Hon. Waldo Hutchins. Mr. Taylor has been unceasing and persistent for his party, a bearer of its burdens and an incessant worker in its ranks. He is eminently entitled to any distinction it can confer.

He is a club man in the fullest sense of the word; in field sports he is prominent and fortunate, a great lover of the rod and gun and he is also an enthusiastic yachtsman. His admiration for horses is well known, and his efforts in founding the Gentlemen's Driving Association of New York were recognized by the presentation to him of a magnificent bowl of hammered silver. He was one of the organizers of the National Horse Show of America, and is still a director. He also assisted in the organization of the "Country Club," at Bartow, in this county, and is one of its governors. Prominent among the many clubs to which he belongs may be mentioned the Union League, the New York Yacht Club, the Leiderkranz Society, St. Andrew's Society, the Larchmont and Pelham Yacht Clubs, the American Jockey Club and the Coney Island Jockey Club. He is a Mason and belongs to Holland Lodge of New York.

On June 3, 1868, he married Fannie, youngest daughter of Hon. Henry I. Taylor, a well-known merchant of New York. They have had seven children, four of whom, three sons and one daughter, are dead. The names of the surviving three daughters are Laura, the eldest; Alexandrina, the next; and Fannie, the youngest. Mrs. Taylor is fond of intellectual pursuits, such as reading, painting and music. The walls of her beautiful residence "Chrimere," Rye Neck, bear evidence of taste and refinement, many of the works being from her own hands. The family attend St. Thomas' Episcopal Church, at Mamaroneck.

"Chrimere," the home of Mr. Taylor, stands upon a knoll facing the Sound. The sloping lawn runs to the water's edge and the views are picturesque and striking. In the stables are various horses of choice breeding, from the fast trotters to the high-stepping carriage team. The kennels contain selected dogs of value, most of them prize-winners. In each department Mr. Taylor's taste and affection are displayed

by the loving care bestowed on their welfare. His humanity and largeness of soul does not stop here, for his heart goes into the ranks of the poor and needy. No man in the county is more frequently called upon and none certainly responds more cheerfully. His good fellowship is proverbial, his popularity unbounded. It is rare to find so many sterling qualities combined, but Mr. Taylor is unique and original. The people of this county are to be congratulated on the possession of one so marked, so varied, so respected and beloved.

NATHAN C. POND, A.M.

One of the most successful business men of Westchester County is Nathan C. Pond.

Born and brought up on a farm, and early forced to struggle for the very necessities of life, he nevertheless managed to secure for himself a thorough classical education, and, having spent the vigor of his life in giving to the youth in various sections of the country that instruction he so much craved in his own childhood, has since, in the limited space of ten years, acquired a competence, with prospects of still greater financial success.

His father, Elihu Pond, was born in Franklin, Mass., in 1795. He married Rachel Fuller, of Medway, and soon after removed to Oakham, in that State. It was here that Nathan C., the fifth of nine children, was born April 27, 1829. His boyhood was one of constant labor for support. Such were the circumstances of the family during the financial depression of 1836 and 1837 that the lad, though but seven years old, was obliged to go out at day's work. In fact, his whole childhood and youth were spent in arduous labor, to the great disadvantage of his mental development. In the winter seasons he attended, during a short period, the district school at Oakham, doing most of his studying in the morning before the family were astir; but at fourteen years of age even this privilege was denied him and he was reduced to the condition of a mere machine, doing so much work a day for a bare existence. To a youthful and ambitious mind, filled with a desire to rise, such a life was painful in the extreme. This is shown by the fact that in his sixteenth year he chose to leave home, agreeing in return for the privilege to contribute one hundred dollars a year toward the family support, rather than to be thus bound down to an existence which offered no charm and to a life which had no object. From his sixteenth to his twenty-first year he kept his promise, earning the money as best he could either by teaching the district school or in the workshop or on neighboring farms. At twenty-one years of age he found himself in possession of a surplus of seventy-five dollars. With this he determined to begin a preparation for college. At first his father endeavored to dissuade him from this purpose, offering as an inducement to give him the farm on condition that he would return

home and assume the support of the family. But he could not underrate the importance of acquiring an education, and with that end in view he entered Munson Academy, where he spent two years.

While here and at Amherst College he was obliged to obtain the necessary means of support by working during his vacations at whatever he found most remunerative. In one of these he was commissioned by the American Sunday-School Union to labor in Moorefield, West Virginia. As a result of the acquaintance made, he was called to teach there at the close of his collegiate course. Before going to Moorefield as an instructor he married Sarah E. Keep, of Munson, Mass., for whom he formed an attachment while in the academy, and to whose loving co-operation he attributes much of his past and present success. At the close of one year he returned to Massachusetts to become the first principal of the High School in Spencer.

In the spring of 1857 he was called to the principalship of public graded schools in Norwich, Conn. While here he refused a lucrative business position, in order to pursue his chosen profession. Two years after he took charge of the public schools in Ansonia, Conn., and four years later he was called to be principal and superintendent of schools in Danbury, in the same State. Here a large school building was erected under his direction and a High School established. His wise administration and efficient efforts, as conceded by all, added greatly to the educational advantages of the town. During his labors in Ansonia and Danbury he was often associated with the State superintendent of instruction in giving lectures on methods of teaching and kindred subjects before Teachers' Institutes of the State. His life as a teacher was ever characterized by faithful, energetic and efficient service. In 1870, without previous intimation, and in recognition of the able work done by him as an educator, he received from his Alma Mater the honorary degree of A.M. His rising family and the recognized instability of a teacher's position in the public schools led him to relinquish his position in the spring of 1873, to enter the arena of business. During the financial depression and disasters of the September following the savings of his eighteen years of professional life were swallowed up. In the spring of 1874 he came to Port Chester, a stranger, without any capital, excepting that which was represented by a few well-worn sewing-machines, and took in hand a business for which his ability has been abundantly proved by his success. What he has made of it may be seen at a glance by any who may pass the extensive shirt manufactory at Port Chester. Several hundred employes, male and female, well paid, well clothed and prosperous, together with the constant click and rattle of machinery, indicate a progressive and profitable industry. During the business depression of the past several years he has never in consequence closed his manufactory

for an hour, nor lowered the wages of those employed, depending rather upon the increase of business for profits.

His business has tended to advance the financial prosperity of Port Chester, and his love of education has made him watchful and helpful in securing increased intellectual advantages for the place. For six years he was a member of the Board of Education, and to his familiarity with the needs of public schools the village is largely indebted for the fine edifice recently erected and the establishment of a High School.

Mr. Pond has ever exerted an influence for moral culture and the elevation of those about him. Not only has he carried his religious principles into his business, but they have been the controlling power of his life. His Christian character has been manifested in the loving support of an aged mother for many years and by his liberal contributions to all benevolent objects. His early deprivations have made him peculiarly susceptible to human suffering, and his heart and purse are ever open to relieve. He joined the Congregational Church in early life, was licensed to preach the gospel by the Fairfield West Association while teaching in Danbury and frequently preached to churches inviting him, either as substitute or supply, as he still does, though he never sought ordination. He is now a member of the Presbyterian Church, the same in doctrine as the Congregational, serving it as a ruling elder; trustee, treasurer of the society and leader of the church choir; has been an active worker in the Sunday-school, both as a teacher and superintendent. He is a Republican, and, although he has never held political office, he is prominently interested in State and national affairs. He has three children,—Jessie C., Louis K. and Mamie C.,—all of whom are with him at present. Such a life as that of Mr. Pond needs no comment.

WILLIAM P. ABENDROTH.

Prominent among the men of the county who, by persistent effort and hard work, have won for themselves fortune, reputation and the comforts of life, is William P. Abendroth. Favored by no advantageous circumstances at the start, nor brilliant speculation in its progress, his business career has been one of untiring industry.

He was born in Germany, December 18, 1818. Fourteen years later he came with his parents to this country. After a short stay in New York City the family removed to Albany, N. Y., and soon afterward the young man entered the iron foundry of Dr. Ephraim Nott in that city, where he commenced learning the founder's trade. During his sojourn here of two years, and while in other towns, until he reached his twentieth year, he improved his leisure time in the evenings by studying in night-schools. In 1834 Dr. Nott transferred his business to New York



Mr P Abendroth







Joseph Paul

City and started the Novelty Iron Works, where Mr. Abendroth finished his apprenticeship in 1836.

In the same year he left the firm by whom he had been employed and engaged as a journeyman in the foundry of Bartlett Bent, in Jersey City.

Ambitious of improving his position and circumstances, he withdrew from the employ of Mr. Bent in the fall of 1839, to travel southward to New Orleans, notwithstanding the position as foreman in the foundry tendered him by Mr. Bent. The voyage to New Orleans in those days was made chiefly by sailing-vessels, as the application of steam to navigation was not then perfected to an extent which rendered it safe and expeditious. After a short stay in the commercial centre of the South, he proceeded up the Mississippi River, working at his trade in St. Louis and subsequently in Cincinnati.

After spending a year in what was then termed "The West," he returned and worked in the foundry of George E. Waring, at Stamford, Conn. A stay of a few months in this place completed his career as a journeyman. In 1840 he came to Port Chester, and, together with Philip Rollhaus, who is so kindly remembered in the place to this day, laid the foundation of the gigantic enterprise which at present furnishes support to more of its inhabitants than any three or four establishments in the village.

The original building in which they began their business is yet remaining and is now filled with moulding sand, while the partitions are still standing which formerly divided the office and pattern-shop from the main building. It is with a just and pardonable pride that Mr. Abendroth preserves this monument of his early struggles, which have resulted in the building up of an establishment comprising many factories and warehouses and employing over five hundred hands.

At the beginning he was largely dependent on credit; but so rapidly did his business increase, and so honorably did he conduct the same, that at the end of one year Bartlett Bent, his former employer, had extended his line of credit to the amount of many thousand dollars.

His obligations were always promptly met, and from that time the business continued to increase until it developed into its present immense proportions, occupying a main building three hundred and sixty-five feet long by seventy-two feet broad. In 1842 an office in New York City was opened, which is now at Nos. 109 and 111 Beekman Street, and includes two large sales-rooms.

Upon the retirement of Mr. Rollhaus from the firm, in 1845, Mr. Abendroth took into the business his two brothers, Augustus and John, and some years later his brother-in-law, John D. Fraser. John Abendroth withdrew from the firm in 1874, while Augustus continued his connection until his death, in 1882. In 1876 a stock company was organized, which continues with Mr. Abendroth at its head. There is

no company in the business whose trade is built upon a more solid basis, or whose affairs are managed on sounder principles of economy and integrity.

In addition to the business of the Eagle Iron Works, he has been identified with every public enterprise which tended to advance the interests and welfare of the village. In 1864 he assisted in the organization of the First National Bank of Port Chester, of which he remains a director. In 1865, together with a number of gentlemen, he secured the charter, organized the Port Chester Savings Bank, one of the stanchest banks in the county, and was chosen its president, which office he yet holds. His career in banking circles has been stamped by the same principles of economy, conservatism and good judgment which characterized him in commercial life.

In the administration of local municipal matters he has likewise interested himself, having been president of the village for four years, besides taking active part in various minor organizations. In the establishment of the Port Chester Water Works Company he was a prime mover and still continues a director. He takes a lively interest in everything pertaining to the success and advancement of the various enterprises with which he is connected.

In 1843 he married Anna Maria Fraser, of Jersey City. They have five children living.

JOSEPH PARK.

Mr. Park, who was born in the town of Rye, May 24, 1823, is the senior member, and was one of the originators of the well-known firm of Park & Tilford, whose reputation as grocers and importers is second to that of no similar business house in the world.

He is of French descent. His family, which is among the oldest in Westchester County, was for many years previous to his birth settled in and about the town of Rye, where they were engaged in farming. His father, after whom he was named, being also thus occupied, early instructed the youth in all the intricacies of seed-time and harvest with the hope, perhaps, that he would become in time a practical farmer. But this was not to be the case, for at the age of thirteen the young man left his home and began his active career as a clerk in the grocery store of Benjamin Albro, at 168 Grand Street, New York. For three years he discharged his duties in this capacity, and then, in connection with his employer's brother, purchased the business, continuing it for one year under the firm-name of Albro & Park.

At the end of that time Mr. Albro retired and was replaced by the present partner, Mr. John M. Tilford. The firm-name has now remained unchanged for about forty-six years.

Mr. Park has been remarkable for his strict attention to the business which it has been his fortune to create. Together with Mr. Tilford, he has evolved from a comparatively unpretentious beginning at No.

35 Carmine Street, New York, a custom and a credit which has no parallel in the history of the grocery business, either in this country or abroad. The four large stores of the firm in New York, situated—two upon Sixth Avenue, one at the corner of Twenty-first Street and Broadway and the other, said to be the finest store of its kind in the world, at Fifth Avenue and Fifty-ninth Street,—are crowded to overflowing with manufactured delicacies and natural luxuries from all portions of the globe, which stand ready at a moment's notice for delivery to any part of the city.

Though Mr. Park early forsook the farm as a means of support, he still preferred life in the country to that of the city. Twenty-five years ago he began the purchase of ground in the neighborhood of his early home, till by gradual addition his proprietorship extends over fourteen hundred acres, situated partly in the town of Rye and partly in Harrison. This land is all improved and is carefully worked by a large force of men under whose skilled hands it yearly presents a picture of farming success rarely equaled in this part of the State. His residence of Whitly, situated upon this estate, is a model of elegance and taste.

In 1849 he married Miss Mary T. Carpenter, of Harrison, and has had two sons,—George C. and Hobart J. His extensive business operations have brought him into contact with numerous important financial interests in the city of New York, and he is connected with many of its moneyed corporations, stock companies, etc., prominent among which are the New York County Bank, Bank of the Metropolis and the New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad, in each of which he is a director.

Though well along in life and cumbered with a load of business cares, Mr. Park still retains a strong physique, and a cordial manner which has won for him many friends, both in commercial circles and in social life. It is with pleasure he is accorded the place he deserves in the history of his native county.

WILLIAM RYAN.

Mr. Ryan, the eldest of thirteen children of John Ryan and Elizabeth Gleason, was born at Silvermines, Tipperary County, Ireland, March 8, 1840. When he was about five years of age, the family, consisting of the father, mother, son and daughter, Ellen, removed to America and settled in Stanwich, Conn.

Here he attended the public schools a few years, and later, during a couple of winter terms at Middle Patent, Westchester County, was enabled to pursue such rudimentary studies as were taught in the district school at that place.

His time from the age of nine to nineteen, with the exception of the school-days noted, was constantly and laboriously, if not profitably or pleasantly, occupied by the duties of a farmer boy. At the latter age, yielding to an ardent desire for adventure, he de-

termined to seek in the West an opportunity for gratifying his passion for traveling.

Accordingly, he arrived in Leavenworth, Kansas, early in the spring of 1859. The Pike's Peak gold-fever was then beginning to agitate the restless spirits on the border of civilization; and young Ryan was soon one of a small company, which, having invested nearly the whole of their united resources in oxen, a wagon, a few mining tools and provisions sufficient for six months, started for the Rocky Mountains.

The course followed was the Smoky Hill route, through Central and Western Kansas, at that time an untracked waste, particularly dangerous to an unprotected party on account of hostile Indians. It was also destitute of wood for hundreds of miles, and often bare of pasturage and scantily supplied with water.

Arriving at Denver, then consisting only of a few tents and huts, on the 1st of June, the company disbanded. The majority, despairing of any success in mining, made the best of their way East by way of the Platte River Valley. Ryan, with two companions, however, determined to spend some time prospecting in the mountains, and selecting the two best travelers among the oxen, hitched them to a pair of wagon wheels, and, tying a small tent, some mining tools and three months' provisions on the axle, made the first trip with a team from Denver to the mines. After a week's prospecting they finally settled on the site of what is now Central City, where Mr. Ryan helped erect the first tent and miner's cabin. By this time gold had been struck in paying quantities in this vicinity, and he continued, with varying success, to work and prospect in lodes, gulches and placer diggings during that and the following season. Meeting with an accident and his health failing, after spending a winter in Mississippi, near Vicksburg, and a summer on a farm in Missouri, he returned home, and moved to Port Chester in 1861.

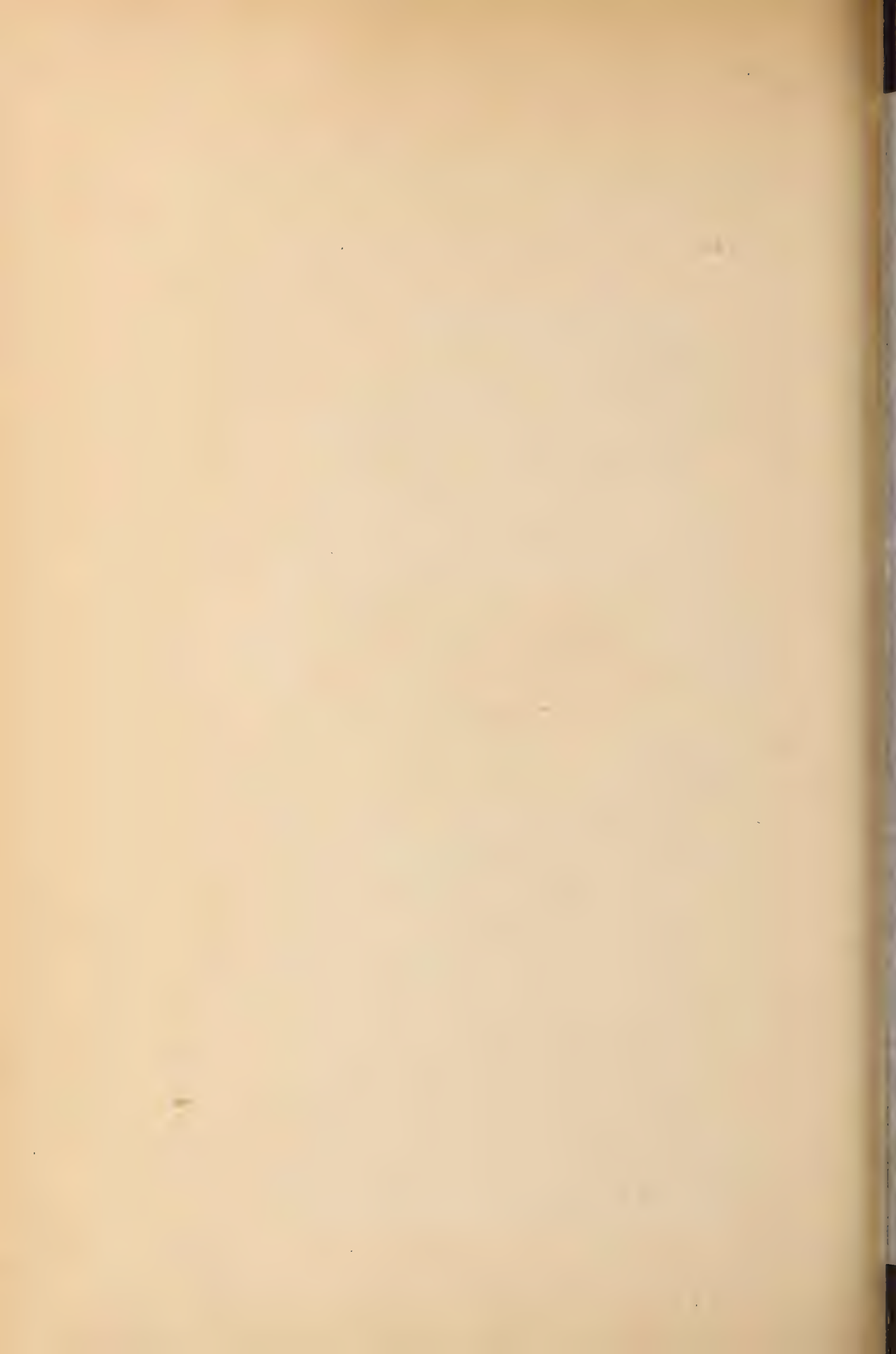
Here he worked on a farm five years, devoting whatever spare hours he could command to the improvement of his education; then, entering the profession of school-teaching, he taught first at Byram, Conn., and afterwards at Mamaroneck and Bronxdale, N. Y., continuing, however, to reside at Port Chester.

In 1870 he formed a partnership with John Duffy, and began the grocery business, and for the two succeeding years taught school at Bronxdale and attended to his business in the store at such hours of mornings, evenings and Saturdays as he could devote to that purpose. In 1874 the firm was dissolved, Mr. Ryan continuing the business, to which he added that of coal, wood and stone. In 1880 he associated with himself his brother Frank and P. O'Malley, forming the present firm of William Ryan & Co., and greatly extending the business.

He was, in 1870, elected a trustee of the village of Port Chester, and served six years in that office. He



Wm. R. G. G.



was a member of the Board of Education for two terms, being president when the elegant Union Free-School building was erected. He held the office of justice of peace for several years, and in 1883 was elected without opposition supervisor of the town of Rye, receiving a similar compliment in 1884 and 1885.

In 1875 he was married to Mary O'Malley, who died in 1879, leaving him two daughters, Elizabeth and Ellen Agnes.

JOHN W. LOUNSBURY.

A familiar face upon the streets of Port Chester is that of Mr. Lounsbury. Comfortable in circumstances and surrounded by every necessity of life as he now is, many of his fellow-townsmen recall distinctly the time, when, by his unaided efforts, he was laying the foundation of his present fortune by the side of a blacksmith's forge. Easy in disposition and slow to decide a point, he has not been the victim of those mistakes and misfortunes which arise from the possession of an ardent temperament. Consequently his life has been an uninterrupted history of success.

He is the second son of Edward Lounsbury, a Connecticut farmer, who married Nancy Peck at Stamford, in that State. From Stamford the family removed to Flushing, Long Island, shortly before the birth of John W., which occurred there April 29, 1825. His

father's circumstances not being such as to admit of expensive educational advantages, the youth was allowed to obtain what schooling he could, only after he had performed his share toward the family support.

The contracted privileges to which this subjected him, together with the monotony of farm life, caused him, at the age of fourteen, to leave Stamford, to which his parents had meanwhile returned. He came first to New York City, where he remained for three years, occupying the position of clerk in a grocery store. But clerking behind the counter was not what he had intended, and at the end of that period he left New York and came to Port Chester. Entering the blacksmith and carriage repair shop of William Stivers, he

commenced learning the blacksmith trade. For four years he remained at this work, at the expiration of which, by industry and economy, he had accumulated enough money to purchase the business from his employer. This he did, and for a period of five years continued in its successful management.

On the 1st of September, 1851, however, feeling that there was a good opportunity for such venture, he established the general grocery business, an avocation in which he is engaged at this time. As a merchant he has been peculiarly successful, and from the proceeds of his business, by prudence and foresight, has been enabled to accumulate the large wealth which is at present in his possession.

He has figured prominently in politics. He was elected supervisor of the town of Rye from 1860 to 1861, upon the Republican ticket, being a staunch supporter of that party. He was also a trustee of the village of Port Chester for three years and afterward its president. At the incorporation of the Port Chester Library and Reading-Room, his name was among the first upon the membership roll and he is at present its president. He is a director in and vice-president of the First National Bank of Port Chester and a director of the Westchester Fire Insurance Company.

December 9, 1849, he married Jane A., daughter of Isaac B. Redfield, of Port Chester. Their children are George R., Daniel M., Herbert S. and Charles E., three

of whom reside in Port Chester and one in Chicago. Mr. Lounsbury continues to be actively engaged in every good work.



John W. Lounsbury

CHAPTER XV.

HARRISON.

BY REV. CHARLES W. BAIRD, D.D.,

Pastor Presbyterian Church, Rye.

THE town of Harrison is noted in the history of the county as having been the bone of contention that led the town of Rye to "secede" from the prov-

ince of New York, and ask to be taken back to Connecticut. The story has been told elsewhere in this volume, and needs only to be recapitulated briefly here. A tract of land situated above Westchester Path, between Blind Brook and Mamaroneck River, and extending as far north as Rye Pond, was purchased in 1662 by Peter Disbrow and his companions from certain Indians. Four years later John Budd bought, from other Indians, a more extensive tract, including the preceding purchase. Neither Disbrow nor Budd made any attempt to improve the land, and it remained vacant and uncultivated.

In 1695, John Harrison, disregarding these claims, bought the territory north of Westchester Path from an Indian who professed to be "the true owner and proprietor." Harrison's Purchase was surveyed by order of Colonel Fletcher, Governor of New York, and a patent was granted by the British government to Harrison and his associates.

The inhabitants of Rye in general, who represented the interests of Disbrow and his co-purchasers,—all of whom were among the original settlers of the town,—together with the son and heir of John Budd, opposed the grant. Unfortunately, instead of combining their forces, they presented two separate claims. This division was fatal. The Council paid no regard to either claim, but confirmed Harrison's title. Hence the secession of the exasperated people of Rye, in 1697. The King's order in Council placed them back within the jurisdiction of the province of New York, in 1700.

The purchase was held in equal shares by five patentees. These were John Harrison, William Nicols, Ebenezer Wilson, David Jamison and Samuel Haight.¹ The last named was the only one of the original patentees who retained his portion of the land. John Harrison sold his interest in the purchase to William Lawrence in 1702. Wilson conveyed his to his son-in-law, Philip Rokeby, in 1708. Nicols and Jamison probably disposed of their shares before that date or soon after.²

Haight was a member of the Society of Friends, and most of the early settlers were of the same religious persuasion and came like him from Flushing, or from other Long Island towns. It is probable that their intention was from the first to found a "Quaker" settlement.

Harrison's Purchase was first settled about the year 1724. A few of the inhabitants of Rye bought land in this section, but in no such number as removed to the White Plains and other purchases. Roger Park,³ of Rye, as early as 1740, had acquired lands in Harrison's Purchase, which are owned by

¹ Catch Heathcote bought two hundred acres from Jamison in 1712 (Co. Rec. B. 200).

² E. Bondmut Servoss, Esq., of Harlem, N. Y., represents all the legal rights of Ebenezer Wilson. The descendants of Haight retained possession of their ancestor's lands until a comparatively recent day.

³ Records C, 170.

some of the name at the present day. The Rev. James Wetmore owned a farm in the lower part of the Purchase. William Horton owned lands on "Brown's Point," near St. Mary's Pond, in 1757.⁴ Gilbert Bloomer owned in 1743 a farm which he then sold to Thomas Carpenter. This farm is now the property of Mr. Charles Park.

A tract of land anciently known as "Brown's Point," now a part of Harrison, bordering on White Plains, appears to have been held, at first, as distinct from either purchase. The principal proprietors in the lower part of this tract were Obadiah and David, sons of Joseph Purdy, who owned lands situated here, at the time of his death, in 1709. "Home-lots" were owned here in 1725 by John Haight, Caleb Hyat, Abraham Miller, Francis La Count and others. Transfers of property are recorded from Walter Williams to Eliezur Yeomans in 1739; Daniel Cornell to Daniel Merritt, 1749; David Purdy to Michael Chatterton, 1752. In 1757, William Hooker Smith, oldest son of the Rev. John Smith, of Rye, owned land on the Point, and in 1769, Thomas Smith, his younger brother, bought a house and thirteen acres of land, beginning at the bridge across the Causeway Brook, and lying between the brook and the road to John Horton's mill. Here, in a house which is still standing, Dr. Smith passed the last days of his life.

Until the Revolution the inhabitants of the Purchase participated with those of Rye in the transaction of town business, without any other distinction than that of having their own officers for the discharge of local functions. We find Samuel Field chosen as "surveyor for harycons pattne" in 1724, and "sheepmaster" in 1725; and Roger Park, chosen as "pounder" in 1729. In 1773 the Board of Supervisors for Westchester County refuses to recognize a supervisor for Harrison, as distinct from the town of Rye.⁵ Harrison also formed one of the six precincts of the parish of Rye, under the semi-ecclesiastical system that prevailed. The first election of officers for the town of Harrison was held April 5, 1774, and resulted as follows:

"Major Thomas Thomas, supervisor; William Miller, clerk; Wilsey Dusenberry, constable and collector; Stephen Fields and Job Hadden, Jr., assessors; Samuel Haviland, William Anderson, Thomas Vail, Alexander Hains, Job Hadden and Samuel Purdy, highway masters; Thomas Park, pounder; Samuel Haviland and Thomas Park, fence and damage viewers."

The following extracts from the town records relate to the election of town officers at the commencement of the Revolution, and immediately subsequent:⁶

"On Tuesday, the 2nd of April, 1776, the freeholders, inhabitants of Harrison's Precinct, met at the place appointed by law and made choice of the following town officers: Samuel Haviland, supervisor; William Miller, town clerk; Joshua Hunt, John Haight, Welsey Dusenberry, assessors; Joseph Carpenter, highway master for lower part; David Halstead, high-

⁴ Bond D. 116, 178.

⁵ Proceedings of the Board of Supervisors of Westchester County for 1869 (appendix, pages 9, 10).

⁶ Bolton's "History of Westchester," pages 387, 388.

way master for the middle; Stephen Field, highway master for the upper; William Ascough, highway master for Brown's Point; William Woodward, highway master for North Street; Job Hadden, highway master for West and Haight Streets, all to the usual bounds; Samuel Haviland, Thomas Park, fence and damage viewers; Thomas Park, pounder."

"At a town-meeting held this first day of April, 1783, in Harrison's Precinct, State of New York, the following town officers were chosen to serve the ensuing year:

"Isaiah Maynard, supervisor; Stephen Field, town clerk; James Miller, constable and collector; Thomas Thomas, William Woodward, Thomas Carpenter, assessors; Henry Dusenberry, pounder; John Cromwell, overseer of the highway for upper part of precinct; Richard Barnes, for the middle part; Joseph Carpenter, for the lower part; Roger Purdy, for North Street; Job Hadden, Jr., for the west part of the patent; Henry Dusenberry, Elisha Horton, fence and damage viewers."

Harrison was organized as a separate township on the 7th of March, 1788. In 1790 the town contained 1004 inhabitants. Since that time the growth of the population seems to have been singularly intermittent. Thus, in 1800 only 855 inhabitants are reported. The number swells up to 1119 in 1810, only to fall as low as 825 in 1814. In 1820 there were 994 inhabitants; 999 in 1825; 1085 in 1830; 1016 in 1835; 1139 in 1840; 1039 in 1845; 1262 in 1850; 1413 in 1860; 1380 in 1865; 792¹ in 1870; 1431 in 1875; 1494 in 1880, when the last census was taken.

The town measures nine miles at its greatest length by nearly three miles at its greatest width. In shape it is very irregular. Its area is ninety-nine hundred and thirty-four acres, or a little more than fifteen and a half square miles. The value of the real estate in 1886 was \$1,039,912, or an average of \$103.08 per acre. The irregular lines and consequent peculiar shape of the town are puzzling when one attempts to bound it. On the north it is bounded by North Castle, on the east by Connecticut and the town of Rye, on the south also by the town of Rye, and on the west by the towns of Mamaroneck, White Plains and North Castle. It is separated from Long Island Sound by a narrow strip of the town of Rye. The soil is principally loam, fertile and well cultivated.

The surface, mostly level in the southern part, begins to undulate and to rise gradually towards the north, from the point nearest the Sound, a disposition which makes the landscape eminently picturesque. From the highest points the eye embraces the whole expanse of the almost level ground, dotted with fine farms, green fields, elegant mansions and cosy country homes, half-hidden by clumps of trees; and beyond all this it rests, charmed, on the beautiful prospects presented by the Sound and Long Island.

The beauty of this region is enhanced by the numerous streams that enrich and enliven it. The Mamaroneck River constitutes, for the most part, the

western boundary line of the town, and Blind Brook (Mockquams River) the eastern line, while several smaller streams, that drain the soil, add their waters to these two rivers, which run south into Long Island Sound, supplying mill-seats in abundance. Turning from this enchanting view, and looking towards the north, we see the crystal surface of Rye Pond. This beautiful sheet of water covers two hundred and eighty-four acres of ground. It abounds in fish of many varieties, and is a resort dear to the disciples of Izaak Walton. Rye Pond has an outlet on the west side, which, passing through another pretty sheet of water (called Little Rye Pond), flows into the Bronx River, of which it is the principal source. Little Rye Pond has an extent of twenty-seven acres. St. Mary's Lake, on the northwestern line, is another beautiful sheet of water.

The growth of wood consists principally of oak of all kinds, chestnut and hickory, which is in great abundance, as also ash and elm. Here is found, also, the tulip tree, called by Mr. Downing "decidedly the most stately tree in North America." Nature has



ST. VINCENT'S RETREAT FOR THE INSANE, HARRISON.

been lavish of her gifts in this region, and with the attractions presented by the town, it is not surprising that so many city men have sought homes in it, where they may rest and forget the cares of business.

The New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad crosses the southern portion of the town. Harrison Station, twenty-two miles from the city of New York, was opened in June, 1870. The elegant station building was erected and given to the railroad company by the late Mr. William Mathews, who owned the property on which it stands. Near the station is the Harrison Hotel, a handsome frame building erected by Mr. Mathews a few years ago. There are several very tasteful residences near Harrison Station, south of the railroad track. A short distance to the north of the station are still other of buildings of more modern appearance.

About a mile to the north of Harrison Station, on North Street, is St. Vincent's Retreat for the Insane,

¹These are the figures for the year 1870, as they appear in the United States Census Reports. The census, however, must have been incorrectly taken, for there could be no reason for so great a decrease in the population between the years 1865 and 1870, or for the still greater increase in the next five years.

which is under the charge of the Sisters of Charity of St. Vincent de Paul. This institution was opened December 11, 1879. Its incorporators were Mary A. Ely, Maria F. Wallace, Mary T. O'Reilly, Catharine Fitzgibbon, Margaret Whightman, Eliza Sweeny and Mary C. Dodge. The buildings which comprise the Retreat are situated in the midst of large, well-cultivated grounds, and consist of the administrative building, the pavilions for the insane patients, the chaplain's residence, the overseer's cottage, the gate-keeper's lodge and the barns and stables.

The four pavilions for the insane recall nothing of the dingy mad-houses of our fathers. Each pavilion has four corridors one hundred and ten feet in length and forty-five in width, and on each floor there are twelve private rooms, and a dining-room, parlor, clothes-room, bath-room, etc. Plenty of light and space and thorough ventilation contribute to the comfort of the patients and help to make them cheerful in the midst of their mental misery. The sanitary condition of these buildings is under constant and strict supervision. The institution has license to take care of sixty patients. Up to the present time only female patients have been received.

A number of very fine residences are located in the immediate vicinity of the Retreat. On the lot adjoining the grounds on the south is the elegant stone dwelling erected by the late William Mathews. Since his death, a few years ago, the mansion has been occupied by his widow. He was the owner of about five hundred acres of land in the town of Harrison, and was one of its most public-spirited citizens.

Mr. Frank A. Abbot, who is connected with the Associated Press in New York, Mr. Charles Park, of the firm of Park & Tilford, grocers, New York, Mr. W. H. Macy and Mr. William Drake have also fine residences in the vicinity.

About a quarter of a mile north of St. Vincent's Retreat, on North Street, is a small frame chapel of neat appearance. It was erected in 1872 at the expense of Mr. Frank A. Abbot, on ground donated by Mr. Mathews, and is called Memorial Chapel, in memory of Mr. Abbot's mother. This chapel is used for union meetings. It has no settled pastor, but services have been conducted in it by various ministers and by Mr. Abbot. There is a Sunday-school in connection with the chapel, which is attended (1886) by about forty pupils.

The name "Purchase" has been given to a hamlet which has grown up around the crossing of Harrison Avenue and Purchase Street, a little north of the middle of the town. There is a post-office in this village, and also a Methodist meeting-house. Purchase village is prettily situated in the midst of a fine farming country.

As early as 1843 the Rev. H. A. Mead, a local elder, commenced preaching here in a school-house

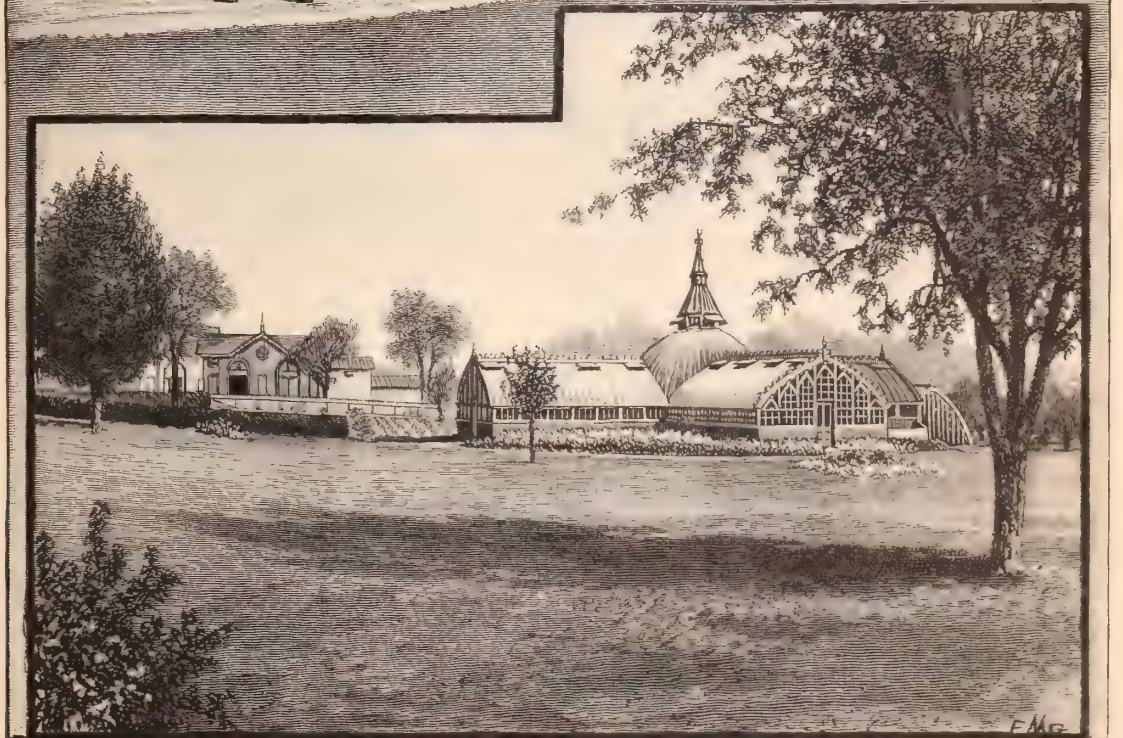
and in a private dwelling. The present house of worship was built in 1855-56. This church was long connected with the Methodist Episcopal Church of White Plains. Mr. Mead remained in charge for a few years, when he removed from White Plains to Port Chester and ceased his ministrations. In 1868 Rev. Aaron Rogers became pastor of this chapel and another on West Street, a position which he held for one year. Subsequently, meetings were conducted for a number of years by pastors or members of the church at White Plains. In April, 1881, Rev. William A. Hughson was appointed pastor of the churches at Purchase, Lake Street and Rosedale. Mr. Hughson occupied this position for a year before the churches were taken into Conference, after which he remained in charge for the full term of three years. In 1885 the number of members connected with the three churches was twelve, and that of probationers was forty. The value of the church property in the charge was estimated at three thousand five hundred dollars.

The trustees of the Purchase Street Church in 1885 were William M. Field, Tertullus Martin, William Peppard, John Weeks and Charles H. Fisher.

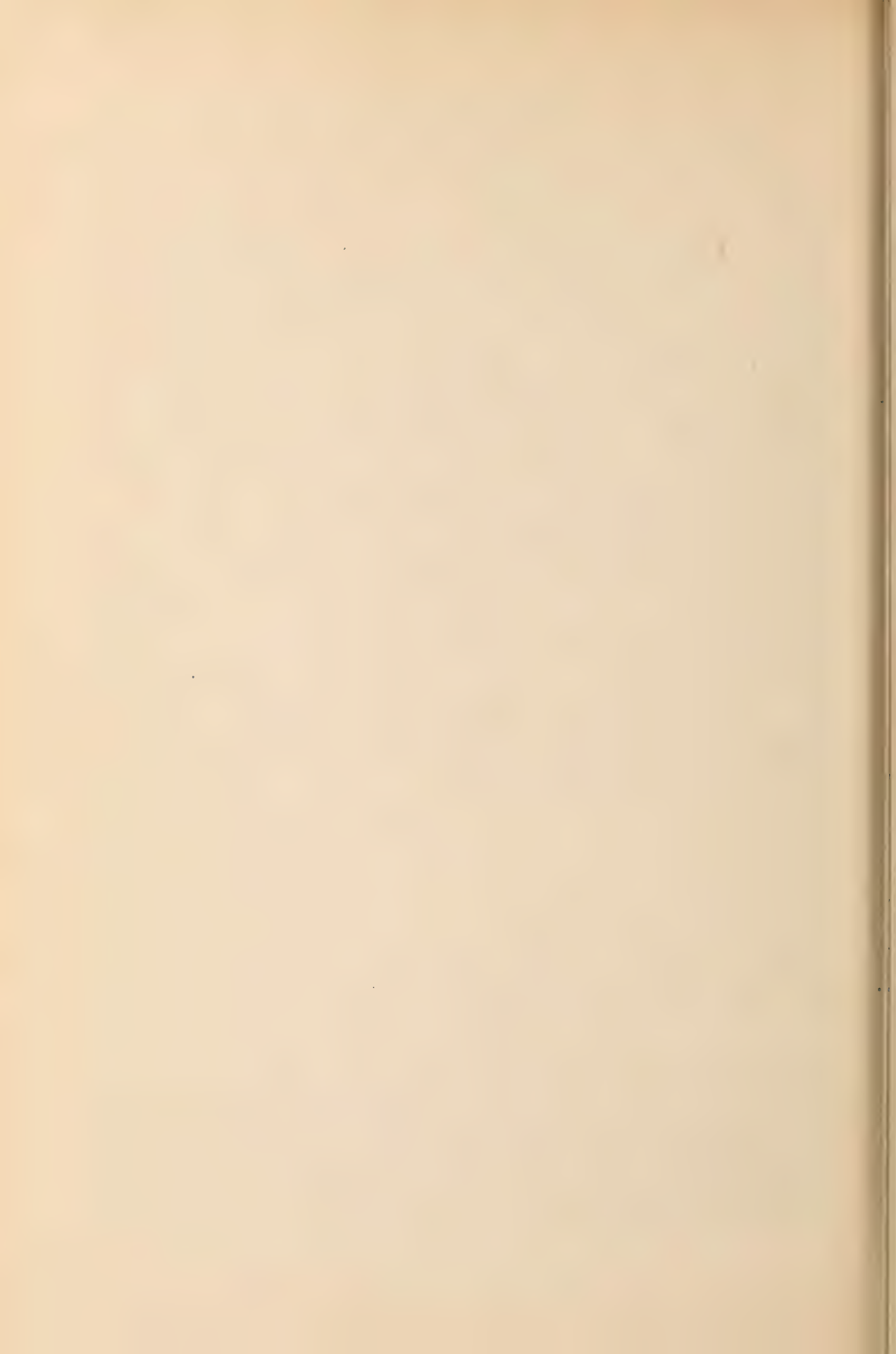
The Lake Street Methodist Episcopal Church, mentioned above, is also in the town of Harrison. Previous to the establishment of this church services had been held for a number of years in Park's school-house, under the leadership of members of the Methodist Church at White Plains. The Lake Street Church was erected in 1874. The trustees in 1885 were George M. Platt, Augustus Garrett and J. H. Purdy.

There are a number of very handsome residences in the vicinity of Purchase. Bordering the village on the south, and extending along Purchase Street, is the "Ophir Farm," now the property of John Roach, the noted ship-builder. The very elegant mansion which adorns "Ophir Farm" was erected in 1870-71, at a cost of about two hundred thousand dollars, by Benjamin Holliday, the former proprietor of the overland stage route across the plains to the Pacific Ocean, who bought the land, in the shape of a number of small farms, in 1864. Mr. Holliday's total purchase amounted to seven hundred and fifty acres. He resided but little on the estate. His wife and other members of his family lived there, however, for a few years. Mr. Holliday died and was buried on Ophir Farm. The Mutual Life Insurance Company, of New York, which held a mortgage on the property, then became its possessor, and eventually sold it to Mr. Roach. The property has been the occasion of a good deal of litigation. The magnificent stone mansion has remained almost unoccupied since Mrs. Holliday's death. This lady, who was a Roman Catholic, caused a small stone chapel to be erected near the house. It is never opened for worship.

During Mr. Holliday's lifetime an attempt was made to establish a private park on the property. A



RESIDENCE OF CHAS. PARK,
HARRISON, WESTCHESTER CO., N. Y.



piece of ground adjoining Westchester Avenue was fenced in, and a number of buffaloes and deer were placed in the inclosure. But the animals having in several instances leaped out and caused damage to the neighboring property, the plan was abandoned.

Adjoining the Ophir Farm on the south, and facing Purchase Street, is the handsome residence of Elwood Birdsall, of the firm of Russell, Birdsall & Ward, proprietors of a large screw and bolt manufactory at Pemberwick, Conn. In the immediate vicinity there are several substantial farm-houses, occupied by Messrs. J. C. Haviland, W. F. Haviland, D. A. Haviland and Charles C. Haviland. The Havilands are at the present time the most numerous family in the town of Harrison. They are descended from five men who are mentioned in the records of Rye—Jacob, in 1715; Benjamin and Adam, in 1716; and Thomas and John, in 1723 and 1725. In 1724, Benjamin, called Junior, conveyed a farm of one hundred and thirty acres, in Harrison, to his son, Ebenezer. "Solomon, son of Benjamin, deceased, married Hannah, daughter of Thomas Carpenter, September 17, 1742."—*Friend's Rec.* Charity, daughter of Benjamin Haviland, married John Hutchins, 16th of Fourth Month, 1742. William Haviland, supposed to have been a grandson of Jacob, resided in Harrison's Purchase, and "was the father of Margaret, who married Stephen Cornell, 16th of Eighth Month, 1775, (*Friend's Rec.*); and Charity, who married Richard Beuling, 4th of Twelfth Month, 1776."

About the middle of the eastern side of the town stands the residence formerly occupied by Warren Leland, at one time proprietor of the Metropolitan Hotel, of New York, and the Grand Union Hotel, of Saratoga. Mr. Leland became a property-owner in Harrison in 1857. His house and farm are now owned by Mr. Joseph Park, of Rye, of the firm of Park & Tilford, of New York City. Mr. Park is the largest owner of real estate in Harrison, his possessions within the town amounting to about one thousand two hundred acres.

Bordering on Harrison Avenue, on the eastern side of the town, was, in early days, the farm and residence of the Hon. John Thomas, the patriot, who died a prisoner in New York in 1777.¹ Thomas Thomas, of Harrison, the third son of Judge Thomas, was, like his father, an ardent supporter of the American cause, and for this reason was bitterly hated by the British and their sympathizers. He was one of the most prominent Whigs of the North and a distinguished military officer. He had been elected chairman of the Committee of Public Safety in 1776, and as an active partisan leader had given much annoyance to the enemy. It may well be imagined how much the latter desired and strove to effect his capture. But Col. Thomas was as wary as he was brave, and to surprise him was no easy matter. It was done,

at last. On Friday, November 13, 1778, about daybreak, Col. Thomas' house was surrounded by a party of the Queen's Rangers under Lieut.-Col. Simcoe. The patriot had slept at home that night—for the first time in many months. The British troops had gone into winter-quarters; his own spies had reported to him that the Queen's Rangers were to march to Long Island. He, therefore, had every reason to feel secure. Col. Simcoe, who tells the story in his *Military Journal*, having gone with a party to pull down some frame houses in order to procure planks for the huts of the soldiers who were to remain in the vicinity at King's Bridge, left a detachment to do this work, and marched all night with the remainder of his force to surprise Thomas. A shot fired from the house killed a soldier by the side of Col. Simcoe. The British then forced their way into the house and killed the man who fired the shot. "This person, as we learn from local tradition, was James Brundage, a son of Gilbert Brundage, of Rye, a young man of fine character and high promise, whose cruel death was long remembered here. He was killed 'while on his knees begging for his life.' Thomas Carpenter, another young man who was also in the house at the time, came near losing his life, being stabbed in many places by the soldiers' bayonets, while hidden under the bed." Colonel Thomas nearly effected his escape, but was retaken by one of the soldiers. The cavalry then advanced towards an American picket, about a mile distant, hoping to surprise a party of light horse stationed there. The noise of the firing at Thomas' house had put the Americans on the alert, and after firing their carbines at the enemy and wounding one of the officers of the Rangers, they fled and escaped without injury. "The spot occupied by the American force, whose picket-guard Simcoe had hoped to surprise, was probably at the head of King Street, near Rye Pond."

Subsequently General Thomas was exchanged. After his death his sister Charity, wife of James Ferris, of Throckmorton's Neck, fell heir to his possessions. The property eventually passed out of the hands of the Ferrises, and now belongs to the estate of A. T. Stewart. The remains of the members of the Thomas family are buried in an inclosure on this farm. A memorial to General Thomas bears the following inscription:

" SACRED
to the memory
of
MAJOR GENERAL
THOMAS THOMAS
who died on the 29th of May
A. D. 1824,
in the 79th year of his age.
As a soldier of the Revolution of 1776,
he aided in achieving
the Independence of the
United States:
As a member of the Legislature
of the State of New York
he assisted in laying the
foundation of those institutions,
that are intended to perpetuate the
Republic."

¹ See notice in "Bench and Bar."

The epitaph of General Thomas' wife is as follows :

" SACRED
to the memory of
CATHARINE THOMAS
widow of
Thomas Thomas,
who died on the 15th day of
January, A. D. 1825,
in the 79th year of her age."

There are also gravestones over the remains of General Thomas' children,—Charles Floyd, Nancy and Gloriana.

In 1824 the town of Rye was visited by General Lafayette, then on his way from New York to New England. He is said to have been introduced on this occasion to Mrs. General Thomas, who had been widowed only a few months before. This interview took place on the 20th of August, 1824, and the circumstance is commemorated by an inscription on a pane of glass, which may still be seen in the side-light of the main entrance to the hotel in Port Chester, where the illustrious foreigner was stopping.

On Purchase Street, north of the hamlet of Purchase, are the handsome dwellings of Richard S. Collins, a gentleman of large fortune, who has retired from active business, and is a minister among the Orthodox Friends; John C. Burling, a grocer in Brooklyn, N. Y.; Milton Knapp, who is engaged in the floating elevator business in New York; Elnathan Carpenter, a farmer; and others. At the extreme northern end of the town is Rye Pond, already described. This pond is now the property of the city of New York, and is the source from which the water supply for the upper wards of the city, north of the Harlem River, is obtained.

Bordering upon the Rye Pond is a fine dairy farm, of about four hundred and fifty acres, owned by Mr. Frank Tilford. This property formerly belonged to the Cromwell family, who owned a large estate in the town at an early period. They claimed descent from Colonel John Cromwell, son of Sir Oliver Cromwell, and cousin of the Protector. John Cromwell, of Harrison, was taken prisoner by the British and conveyed to New York. Early in 1780 a body of Continental troops were stationed on the Cromwell homestead, and some gallant fighting took place in that vicinity. The Cromwell family is represented in West Farms, but the Harrison branch has disappeared.

Not far south of Rye Pond are the meeting-house, free school and grave-yard of the Society of Friends. As we have already seen, Samuel Haight, and most of the early settlers on this land belonged to this sect, and it would seem to have been their intention to found a "Quaker" settlement here. It will, therefore, be not without interest to follow the rise and progress of this colony.

The earliest mention of a meeting of Friends in Westchester County is in 1723, when there was a "Quaker meeting-house in Westchester village." In 1726 and 1727 meetings of Friends are recorded as

having taken place in Rye and Mamaroneck. The Purchase Meeting-house was built in 1727. The land on which it was erected is said to have been the gift of Anthony Field, who removed in 1725 from Flushing, Long Island, to the farm adjoining the meeting-house lot. The Field family were long respected residents of Harrison, but their property is now owned by other parties.

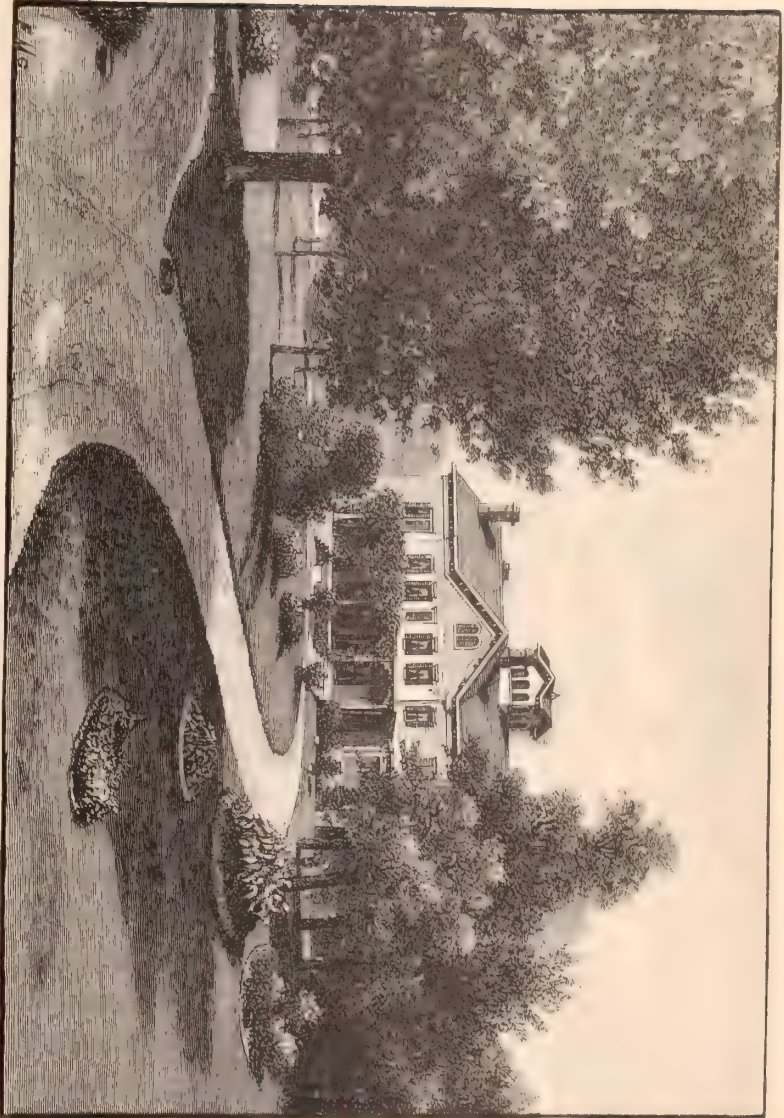
Great excitement seems to have attended the efforts of this religious body to spread their creed here. "Where any of them settle," writes Mr. Wetmore, rector of Rye in 1730, "they spare no pains to infect their neighborhood." Where they meet with any encouragement they hold meetings day after day. Celebrated preachers are procured from a distance, and "a great fame" is spread before them "to invite many curiosities." "Our people of credit," says he, "will often go to their meetings, especially their great and general meetings," which, he thinks, are very pernicious, and ought to be suppressed.¹ It is difficult to realize that these things were written concerning "the calm community of Friends." Such a stir reminds us of early Methodism, and of the fervid zeal of Makemie and the Tennents among the Presbyterians. But it is well known that the religious movement which commenced with George Fox was characterized in its earlier phases by great enthusiasm, and by active exertions to propagate the principles of its members. The Friends who settled in Harrison appear to have been of this spirit. "Swarms of them," complains the troubled rector, "make frequent visits hither." They "hold their yearly meetings, monthly, quarterly and weekly meetings, *yea, and sometimes daily.*" They scatter books all over the parish, and Mr. Wetmore, who is a ready writer, feels constrained to write and print two letters and three dialogues in refutation of their arguments. These, he hopes, will be of great service to "stop the growth of Quakerism in these parts."²

In 1742, on the "Eleventh day of First Month" (January), the Monthly Meeting was transferred from Mamaroneck to the "Meeting-House in Rye Woods" [Harrison]. This meeting was now held at three places on the main: alternately, at Westchester, Mamaroneck and Purchase, and subject to it, meetings had by this time been established at New Milford, the Oblong and Nine Partners.³ And in 1744, on the "Eighth day of Ninth Month" (September), a proposition was made to establish a Quarterly Meeting "*on this side,*"—i. e., on the main. Accordingly, the Yearly Meeting, still held at Flushing, on the

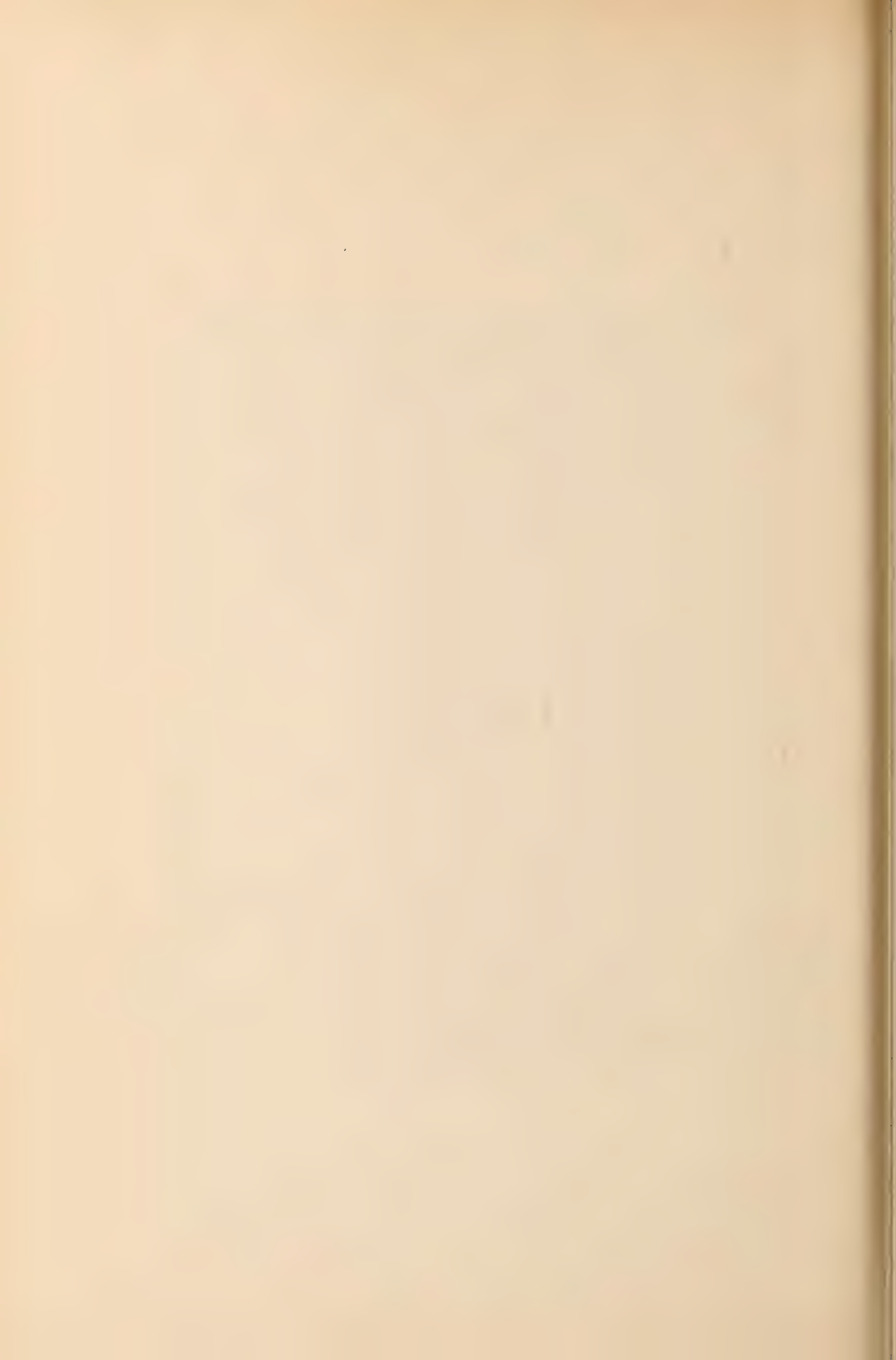
¹ Bolton, "History of the Protestant Episcopal Church," etc., page 254.

² *Ibid.*, pages 256, 257. These publications were entitled "Two Letters in Answer to the Quakers," 1730; and "Dialogues in Answer to the Quakers," 1732. *Ibid.*, page 287.

³ A meeting was commenced at North Castle in 1761, and was held once a fortnight in winter. The North Castle Meeting-house was built in 1798.



RESIDENCE OF R. S. COLLINS,
PURCHASE ST., HARRISON, WESTCHESTER CO., N. Y.



13th of Fourth Month (April), 1745, appointed a Quarterly Meeting to be held at the Purchase.¹

Little remains to be said of the external history of this community. In 1778 the Monthly Meeting was held in King Street, at the house of Thomas Clapp, on the 13th day of Eighth Month (August). The reason for this change was, "the Meeting-House at Purchase being made use of for a hospital for the sick of the Army." September 10th, "The Meeting House is not yet to be had." October 8th, the meeting is held as formerly in the Purchase Meeting-House.

On the 11th of February, 1779, it is represented at the Monthly Meeting that "several young men of the society are now prisoners, and are likely to be brought under great suffering by refusing to bear arms and do other military service." "Those in authority are willing to release them, providing they can make it appear that they are members." A committee is appointed to assure the authorities of their membership.

In 1782 a record is made concerning the sufferings of Friends connected with this Monthly Meeting, in consequence of their testimony against war. The total amount of loss on this account is stated to be £1445.

In 1784, on the 14th of Tenth Month (October), the following action was taken: "The Meeting-House in the Purchase having been used for a *Court of Judicature*, and being likely to be used for that purpose again, a committee is appointed to apply to those in authority to prevent such use."

In 1797 the meeting-house was enlarged to its present size by an addition on the east side.

The Society of Friends, to its immortal honor, has always been the consistent and earnest opponent of negro slavery. The Friends of Harrison have a record on this subject not unworthy of that of their brethren elsewhere. It appears that about the time of the Revolution some individuals belonging to their body were owners of slaves. The following facts are gathered from the Society's books:

"Twelfth of Ninth Month, 1776. This meeting appoints certain persons 'a Committee to visit those that keep negroes as slaves—agreeably to directions of the Yearly Meeting—and report to a future meeting.'

"Tenth of Fourth Month, 1777. The Committee report, 'We have, according to appointment, visited nearly all those within the verge of this Monthly Meeting that hold slaves, and hereby inform the meeting that a considerable number have been declared free under hand and seal since last year, and we have encouragement to hope that if the practice is kept up of treating with them that still hold them, that the good effect of such sincere labour will not be lost, but turn to the satisfaction and comfort of others as well as of ourselves.'

A committee was appointed to examine acts of manumission, and have them recorded if authentic.

"Fourteenth of Fifth Month, 1778. It was resolved that 'Friends continuing to hold slaves,' and 'who still refuse to free them, shall be dealt with as disorderly members.'

"Ninth of Twelfth Month, 1779. Three Friends were disowned for not setting their slaves free.

"Seventh of Eighth Month, 1781. It appears by the Yearly Meeting extracts [Flushing] that the state of negroes set free by Friends was

taken into consideration; 'whether Friends who had had their services during the prime of their lives should not do something for their compensation and support; and also investigating into their temporal and spiritual condition and the education of youth.'

"Twelfth of Fourth Month, 1782. The committee appointed to make these inquiries [in Harrison] reported that the condition of most of the negroes set free was satisfactory; but there was 'great shortness in regard to instructing youth, though some appear careful on that account.'"²

In 1827 a separation took place in the Society of Friends in this country. Two distinct bodies were formed, each claiming the name of Friends. The one party, however, became known as the Orthodox, and the other as Hicksites, from Elias Hicks, whose opinions they were understood to approve. In the town of Harrison the separation occurred the next year, in 1828. The "Orthodox" Friends erected a meeting-house near the old building, which is held by the other branch.

The number of members of the Hicksite denomination at Purchase is at present (1886) about one hundred and seventy-five. The number of Orthodox Friends is somewhat less.

In 1828 Thomas Clapp, of Greenwich, Conn., left by will one hundred and fifty acres on the west side of Rye Pond for the education of poor children of the town of Harrison. No income was derived from this bequest, however, until a few years ago, when the property was sold to the Westchester Ice Company, for fifteen thousand dollars. This fund has been placed under the care of a board of trustees connected with the Hicksite Church, and with the interest a school-house, located just beside the church, is maintained. It is attended by about fifteen scholars and has one teacher.

In accordance with a regulation adopted by the Friends at the Purchase Monthly Meeting, held on the 10th of Sixth Month, 1874, grave-stones are not allowed to be placed in the burial-ground "containing any inscription, except the name of the deceased, with the name of Husband or Wife or Parents, when desired, and the date of Birth and Death;" not exceeding "16 inches in width, 5 inches in thickness, and the necessary height above the surface of the ground to receive the aforesaid inscription legibly." The oldest grave-stone is marked with the following brief inscription:

"R. W.,
March 31, 1731."

In this grave-yard repose the remains of the wife of Major Wm. Lainey Huggerford, of Revolutionary fame. Her epitaph reads as follows:

"The Remains of
CHARITY HUGGERFORD
lies here.
Called to the eternal world
the tenth day of July, 1807,
In the 52d year of her age."

The Friends in Harrison, though not so numerous as they were a hundred years ago, are still a highly

¹ Records of the Society in Harrison.

² Records of the Society of Friends in Harrison.

respectable and influential community. They have the characteristic traits of this peaceable and quiet people—frugality, simplicity of manners, strictness of morals, care for their poor, and abhorrence of oppression in every form. Many of their families who brought this faith with them into this region, a century and a half since, have removed from the Purchase and their lands are now owned by persons of other religious persuasions. But a number remain; and the old meeting-house itself abides, substantial and unadorned, as when first reared amid the primeval forest, having witnessed the turmoil and suffering of war, as well as the silent worship of a religion of peace; and near by, in the grave-yard, the founders of the community and several generations of their descendants rest.

A short distance west of Purchase village, on the road leading to White Plains, is a small burying-ground in which repose the remains of members of the Anderson, Avery, Wheeler, Hatfield, Waydell, Travis and Hyatt families. The cemetery is included in the farm once owned by the Andersons, but now belonging to John Roach. Joseph H. Anderson, who once resided on this farm, was a prominent man.

"In 1832 and 1833 he was elected member of Assembly for this county; in 1834 he was elected sheriff of the county for the term of three years; and in 1842 and 1844 he was elected Representative in Congress from this district. Few of our citizens have been more honored by the public voice."¹ Mr. Anderson was a native of the county. "In public as in private life he ever bore an untarnished reputation, commanding the respect of his fellow-citizens." In politics he was a Democrat. He died January 17, 1870, and was buried in the cemetery above mentioned, where his father and mother already reposed.

Just beyond the line of White Plains, in Harrison, between the Mamaroneck River and Westchester Avenue, is a row of about twenty houses, occupied chiefly by colored people, which has received the humorous designation of "Blackberry Row." In this row is located St. Luke's Methodist Episcopal Church, the members of which are colored people. The colored people originally attended the Methodist Episcopal Church on Broadway, in White Plains. As early as 1845, and possibly four or five years earlier, a fund was raised by subscription, and a small frame building was erected in the northwestern part of the town of Harrison, just over the line of North Castle, which was used by the colored people as a school-house and chapel. Religious services were conducted there for a number of years by white people belonging to the White Plains Methodist Episcopal Church. A division occurred among the colored people, however, and a number of them, under the leadership of Richard O'Neil, withdrew, and, after worshipping for

four or five years in private houses, erected the present church, on Westchester Avenue. The edifice was dedicated August 29, 1874. The church has been served by four ministers from the African Methodist Episcopal Conference, but, about the beginning of 1886, became connected with the Methodist Episcopal Conference. The present pastor (1886) is James A. Whyte, and the number of members is ten.

The original congregation continues to hold meetings in the church, in the northwestern corner of Harrison. The membership is small.

Our highways have been greatly improved since the days of Madame Knight, who complained so bitterly of their wretched condition in the early part of the eighteenth century, as, indeed, the "Father of his country" did eighty-five years later.

The old Purchase road (now Purchase Street) crosses the town in its length, running from Rye to Rye Pond and North Castle. Many memories of the Revolutionary days are connected with this road. On the east side of it can be seen the grave of an old veteran, by the name of John Peter Follow, who died at the advanced age of one hundred and twenty. He requested that the following epitaph might be inscribed on his tombstone:

"Here lies as good a soldier
As ever fought in Flanders."

In the same vicinity is the grave of Louis Burling, a colored soldier of the Revolution, who served as a private in Colonel Samuel Pell's regiment.

Lincoln Avenue, on the east side, runs almost parallel with the Purchase road. This thoroughfare enters Rye town at both ends, thus insulating a part of Harrison, which indents the line of separation from that town. Mamaroneck Avenue, on the west side, runs along Mamaroneck River and connects the town of that name with Harrison. It branches off near the river, and, running in a northeasterly direction into Harrison, connects with the Purchase road.

Harrison Avenue crosses the town in its widest part, connecting it with White Plains on the west and with Rye on the east. This road intersects the Purchase road and Lincoln Avenue. Another road enters the town at Westchester Avenue, on the extreme point of connection with White Plains, and, running in a northeasterly direction, crosses the Purchase road and enters Connecticut at its point of junction with Rye. Two cross-roads branch off from this road; the one beginning about the centre of the north end of the town, runs northwest to North Castle; the other, beginning farther west, runs to some distance in a northerly direction, makes a curve and turns westward, entering also North Castle. Harrison, it will be seen, does not lack the means of communication with its bordering sister towns.

Although Harrison was only a precinct of Rye until after the Revolution, it has a military history covering that trying period; though presenting few incidents of great moment, it is a history not devoid of

¹ *Eastern State Journal* (White Plains), January 21, 1870.

interest. The news of the closing of the port of Boston, after the famous "tea-party," roused public indignation throughout the country; the people of Harrison Precinct were not the last to pronounce themselves. The *New York Gazette and the Weekly Mercury* of August 15, 1774, contains the following item of news: "We hear from Harrison's Purchase in Westchester County, that on the 2d instant, the Inhabitants of that Precinct met, enter'd into spirited Resolves, which include a Non-importation Agreement, and are similar to those of the other colonies."

When, in the following year, the province of New York was required by the Continental Congress to contribute her quota of four regiments, the call for soldiers was promptly responded to in Rye, and three companies were raised, one of them in "Harrison's Precinct and the upper end of King Street." This company elected Henry Dusingberry, captain; Lyon Miller, first lieutenant; Caleb Paulding Horton, second lieutenant; and Gilbert Dusingberry, ensign.

The three companies were embraced in the "South Battalion of Westchester County," and did good and active service.

"The Committee of Safety for Harrison's Precinct, February 20, 1776, report the officers elected in a company of minute-men in Colonel Drake's regiment. They are Hezekiah Gray, captain; Cornelius Clark, first lieutenant; James Miller, second lieutenant; Isaac Titus, ensign.

"In the same month, at a meeting of the Troop of Westchester County, held at the house of Wilsey Dusingberry, in Harrison's Precinct, the following gentlemen were elected officers, to wit.: Samuel Tredwell, captain; Thaddeus Avery, lieutenant, chosen unanimously; Abraham Hatfield was chosen cornet and Uytendall Allaire, quartermaster, each by a majority. Commissions were ordered for these gentlemen."¹

In Harrison's Precinct, the Committee of Safety chosen to serve for one year from May, 1776, was composed of William Miller, (deputy chairman), Lewis M'Donald, Peter Fleming, James Raymond, Marcus Mosenell.

The people of the Purchase had had their full share of trouble and suffering; they were now about to see some hard fighting at their very doors, and to witness one of the most brilliant achievements of the war.

"Upon the 23d of October, 1776, Col. Tyler's, Huntington's and Throop's regiments, of Gen. Parson's brigade, and of Gen. Heath's division, moved and took post at the head of King Street, near Rye Pond.

"On the 4th of December, 1781," says General Heath, "Captain Sackett, of the New York levies, near Harrison Purchase, below the lines, having gone a small distance from his detachment on the morning of the 2d, was taken prisoner by a party of the enemy. The enemy afterward attacked Lieutenant Mosher, to whom the command of the detachment fell. Lieutenant Mosher and the detachment behaved with great bravery, repulsed the enemy, killed one of them and two horses, and wounded eight of the enemy, among them a Captain Kipp, said mortally. Colonel Holmes and Captain Kipp had their horses killed under them. The levies had not a man killed or wounded."²

Mosher's command consisted of only eighteen men, while the British horse (a party of De Lancey's loyal refugee cavalry) numbered over seventy. The disparity of numbers was great, and the manner in

which the victory was won presents the most admirable example of indomitable courage combined with extraordinary coolness. Mosher had taken a strong position near Merritt's tavern, "where he 'formed his men in a solid Body, with fixed Bayonets.' They were ordered not to fire a shot, but to receive the enemy's charge in silence, until further instructions."

Thrice did the British cavalry dash at the compact little body of patriots, and thrice they were received at the point of the bristling row of bayonets held by unflinching hands. As they fell back for the third time the word "Fire!" was given by the heroic Mosher. This single discharge of musketry was terribly effective, as we have seen; it threw the troopers into dire confusion, and the cool-headed lieutenant availed himself of this to withdraw his men and seek safety in a neighboring piece of woods. A veteran general, consummate in the art of war, could not have shown greater judgment or better strategy. Washington, himself, often alluded to this affair in terms of praise and admiration.

The scenes of wretchedness and woe which prevailed in this section have been described in another chapter; we need not dwell upon them here. Trial, danger and suffering all were borne in common with the other towns of the county. The few facts quoted in the preceding pages show that the men of Harrison did their duty nobly in the Revolutionary War. Less than a century later another crisis was to come, as momentous as the first, for the existence of that Union—the offspring of the Revolution—born in the glorious days of 1776, was threatened. The Southern States had seceded and they must be coerced into returning to the Union. In this contingency, as in the troubled days of old, the people of Harrison did their duty.

The calls of President Lincoln, on April 15, 1861, for seventy-five thousand militia, and on July 22, 1861, for five hundred thousand volunteers, met with so ready a response that it was not found necessary to apportion quotas to be filled by the different towns.

The records of the town of Harrison are therefore silent as to the number of men that went out from its boundaries to the war in that year. Judging, however, by the number of soldiers furnished by the town under subsequent calls, about thirty-five residents of Harrison must have gone forth in 1861 to fight for the preservation of the Union.

From the town records it would appear that the town of Harrison filled its quotas under the various calls for troops at considerably less expense, proportionately to its population, than most of its sister towns. Under the call of July, 1862, for three hundred thousand volunteers to serve for three years, and of August, 1862, for three hundred thousand volunteers to serve for nine months, the quota of the town of Harrison was forty-four men. On the 14th of August, 1862, a meeting of the citizens of the town was held at Purchase, to consider the means to be employed to

¹ "American Archives," fourth series, vol. v. pp. 290, 295.

² Heath's Mem., 75, 76, quoted by Bolton, "Hist. of Westchester."

fill the quota. It was resolved that a committee of five should be appointed "to raise money by subscription for the purpose of raising volunteers from the town, and that the said committee act as a Union Defense Committee." Samuel Hopper, Samuel G. Purdy, John Palmer, David A. Haviland and Daniel W. Gray were appointed the committee. At a subsequent meeting Thomas Park was put on the committee in place of Daniel W. Gray, who was unable to serve, and Elwood Birdsall was also added to it. The committee found that they could not raise sufficient money by voluntary subscription to fill the quota, and at a meeting of the citizens held August 20th, it was resolved that five thousand dollars should be borrowed on the credit of the town, and that one hundred dollars should be given to each volunteer, or to each drafted person desiring to procure a substitute. The town furnished under this call fifty-five men (an equivalent in money, however, being accepted in a few cases instead of a man), or eleven more than its quota—a circumstance which redounded to its profit subsequently.

Under the call in the latter part of 1863 for three hundred thousand men, the quota of Harrison was twenty men, and under the call of February 1, 1864, for two hundred thousand, its quota was eleven men. The twenty men required under the former call were furnished at an expense to the town of six thousand six hundred dollars, but owing to the fact that the town was credited with a surplus of eleven men under the call of 1862, it was released from furnishing any soldiers under the call of February, 1864. As the bounties paid to volunteers were considerably higher at the latter date than at the former, the town was thus enabled to save a good deal of money.

Under the call of March 14, 1864, for two hundred thousand men, the quota of the town of Harrison was thirteen men. The town procured this number of volunteers at the expense of three hundred dollars for each man, or three thousand nine hundred dollars altogether. As it then appeared likely that a further call for troops would soon follow, the Union Defense Committee, seeing that the price of volunteers was advancing, obtained fifteen men in addition to those just mentioned, at three hundred and seventy-five dollars apiece, or for a total of five thousand six hundred and twenty-five dollars.

The wisdom of this action was soon apparent. A call for five hundred thousand soldiers was issued on July 18, 1864, and to Harrison was assigned the duty of raising thirty men. It was necessary, therefore, for the town to procure fifteen men, in addition to those already obtained, and this was done at an expense of \$12,499.75.

Under the call of December 19, 1864, for three hundred thousand men, the quota of Harrison was seventeen, and was filled at an expense of \$7917.98. This was the last call for troops made by the government.

A list of the soldiers credited to the town of Harrison during the Civil War, and of residents of the town who enlisted and were credited elsewhere, was prepared in 1865 by John Field, the town clerk, for the State Bureau of Military Statistics. The list contains the names of one hundred and sixty-eight soldiers, fifteen of whom were men belonging to Harrison who enlisted outside of New York. Of the remainder, thirty-one are set down as being residents of the town. Doubtless the list omits quite a number of inhabitants of Harrison who became soldiers, but it is more nearly complete than anything that could now be obtained, and accordingly the names and records of the residents of the town that appear in it are appended. It is a remarkable fact that but one man from Harrison is chronicled as having met his death from a bullet wound. This person was John Lea Brown, a colored man belonging to the Twenty-ninth Connecticut Infantry, who was killed by a minie ball, at Deep Bottom, Va., in 1864. Quite a number of others, however, were discharged from service on account of disability.

RESIDENTS OF THE TOWN OF HARRISON WHO WERE SOLDIERS DURING THE CIVIL WAR AND THEIR RECORDS.

- Joseph Brooks, farmer, enlisted August 30, 1862, for three years in Company E, One Hundred and Thirty-fifth New York Infantry, afterwards Sixth New York Heavy Artillery; rank, private.
- Stephen D. Burger, carpenter, enlisted August 30, 1862, for three years in Company E, Sixth New York Heavy Artillery; mustered out June 28, 1865, at Petersburg; rank, sergeant.
- Francis M. Burger, farmer, enlisted September 17, 1862, for three years in First M. Rifles; mustered out June 12, 1865, at Richmond, Va.; rank, private.
- George Burger, farmer, enlisted September 22, 1862, for three years in Company K, First M. Rifles; mustered out June 12, 1865, at Richmond, Va.; rank, private.
- Joseph E. Bird, carpenter, enlisted October, 1863, for three years in Fifth New Jersey Battery; mustered out June, 1865; rank, private.
- John Banker, clerk, enlisted September 1, 1861, for three years in Company C, Forty ninth New York Infantry; mustered out October 8, 1864, in New York; rank, private.
- David Barker, laborer, enlisted September 27, 1863, for three years in Company E, Eleventh New York Heavy Artillery; mustered out October 2, 1865, at New Orleans, La.; rank, private.
- William Combs, laborer, enlisted for three years in Company L, Ira Harris Cavalry; mustered out November 25, 1863, by reason of such an injury on the skull as to produce epilepsy; rank, private.
- Samuel B. Farrington, laborer, enlisted August 30, 1862, in Company E, Sixth New York Heavy Artillery; discharged June 27, 1865; was wounded in the foot at Travillon's Station; rank, private.
- Robert Farrington, laborer, enlisted August 30, 1862, for three years in Sixth New York Heavy Artillery; discharged May 26, 1865, at Fortress Monroe, by reason of disability; rank, private.
- Joseph Flanagan, laborer, enlisted September 6, 1862, for three years in Company B, Sixth New York Heavy Artillery; rank, private.
- David G. Fisher, laborer, enlisted July 10, 1861, for two years in Company A, Twenty seventh New York Infantry; discharged July 12, 1862, on account of physical disability; rank, private.
- Daniel Farrington, shoemaker, enlisted July, 1861, for three years in Company E, Twenty-seventh New York Infantry; rank, private.
- Solomon Galchrist, farmer, enlisted December 2, 1863, for three years in Company A, One Hundred and Twentieth New York Infantry; mustered out October 7, 1865, at New Orleans; rank, corporal.
- Joseph Haviland, enlisted August, 1862.
- Nehemiah Harris, farmer, enlisted August 30, 1862, for three years in Company E, Sixth New York Heavy Artillery; rank, private.
- William Hicks, blacksmith, enlisted August 30, 1862, for three years in Sixth New York Heavy Artillery; rank, private.





Ellwood Burdett

Hezekiah Harris, farmer, enlisted September 17, 1862, for three years in Company A, First M. Rifles; rank, corporal.

James Henry Hopper, farmer, enlisted September 1, 1861, for three years in Company C, Forty-ninth Infantry; discharged February 15, 1863, at White Oaks, Va., by reason of disability; rank, private.

John J. Horton, farmer, enlisted September 2, 1861, for three years in Company C, Forty-ninth Infantry; discharged January 6, 1863, by reason of disability; rank, private.

William Purdy, laborer, enlisted September 24, 1863, for three years in Company E, Twentieth Regiment; discharged October 7, 1865, at New Orleans, La.; rank, private.

George Washington Platt, farmer, enlisted September 2, 1861, for three years in Company C, Forty-ninth New York Infantry; discharged February 11, 1862, at Camp Griffin, on account of disability; rank, corporal.

William Peppard, laborer, enlisted in One Hundred and Second New York Infantry; rank, private.

Robert Allen Robertson, laborer, enlisted for three years in the Twentieth New York Infantry; rank, private.

Thomas G. Sutton, farmer, enlisted May 4, 1864, for three years, as private, in One Hundred and Thirty-fourth Infantry; mustered out June 21, 1865; attained the rank of corporal.

Philip Spencer, enlisted September 23, 1863, for three years in Second Battery; rank, private.

James Sterry, mechanic, enlisted September 1, 1861, for three years in Company C, Forty-ninth Regiment; rank attained, sergeant.

William M. Shelley, laborer, enlisted September 2, 1861, for three years in Company C, Forty-ninth Regiment; mustered out June 27, 1865, at Washington; rank, corporal.

Jerome Weeks, farmer, enlisted August 8, 1862, for three years in Company B, Sixth New York Heavy Artillery; rank, private.

George Weeks, laborer, enlisted in August, 1862, for three years in Company G, First New York Cavalry; died October 3, 1862, at Suffolk, Va., of typhoid fever; rank, private.

Matthew Wallace, farmer, entered Company L, Ira Harris Cavalry, for three years.

Henry T. Wesley, laborer, mustered December 10, 1861, into Ninety-fifth New York Infantry, Company K; mustered out July 16, 1865, and fell overboard from a ferry-boat on his way home and was drowned.

Residents of Harrison who enlisted outside of New York and were not credited to the town of Harrison in the filling of its quotas. All were colored men,—

Benjamin Barker, laborer, enlisted September 27, 1863, for three years in Company E, Fourteenth Rhode Island Heavy Artillery; mustered out October 2, 1865; rank, corporal.

Thomas L. Brown, enlisted December 27, 1863, for three years in Company G, Twenty-ninth Connecticut Infantry; mustered out June 21, 1865, at Fortress Monroe, Va.; rank, private.

John Lea Brown, enlisted December 27, 1863, for three years in Company G, Twenty-ninth Connecticut Infantry; killed by minie bullet at Deep Bottom, Va., October 26, 1864; rank, private.

Joseph Griffen, laborer, enlisted September 27, 1863, for three years in Company E, Fourteenth Rhode Island Infantry; mustered out October 2, 1865, at New Orleans; rank, private.

William Glasco, laborer, enlisted December 26, 1864, for three years in the Twenty-ninth Connecticut Infantry; rank, private.

Thomas Gregory, laborer, enlisted December 24, 1863, for three years in Company C, Twenty-ninth Connecticut Infantry; mustered out at Brownsville, Tex., September 8, 1865; rank, private.

William Henry Halstead, laborer, enlisted December, 1863, for three years in Company B, Twenty-ninth Connecticut Infantry; mustered out November, 1865; rank, private.

Edward Hall, entered Twenty-ninth Connecticut Infantry; rank, private.

Robert Mitchell, entered Company B, Twenty-ninth Connecticut Infantry; rank, private.

John Purdy, farmer, enlisted December 16, 1863, in Company D, Twenty-ninth Connecticut Infantry; discharged February 26, 1865, near Chapin's Farm, Va., by reason of disability; rank, private.

Horace Seymour, farmer, enlisted December 8, 1863, for three years in Company B, Twenty-ninth Connecticut Infantry; mustered out October 24, 1865, at Brownsville, Tex.; rank, private.

Solomon Tierce, mason, enlisted December 8, 1863, for three years in Company B, Twenty-ninth Connecticut Infantry; mustered out in November, 1865; rank, private.

Simeon Anderson Tierce, laborer, enlisted September 26, 1863, for three years in Fourteenth Rhode Island Heavy Artillery; died July 7, 1864, in service, of typhoid fever; rank, sergeant.

Jacob Williams, farmer, enlisted April 7, 1863, for three years in Company F, Fifty-fourth Massachusetts Infantry; mustered out August 20, 1865, at Boston, Mass.; rank, private.

OFFICERS OF THE TOWN OF HARRISON.—The first election of officers for the town of Harrison was held April 5, 1774, and resulted as follows:

“Major Thomas Thomas, supervisor; Wm. Miller, clerk; Wiley Dusenberry, constable and collector; Stephen Fields and Job Hadden Jr., assessors; Samuel Haviland, William Anderson, Thomas Vail, Alexander Hains, Job Hadden and Samuel Purdy, highway masters; Thomas Park, pounder; Samuel Haviland and Thomas Park, fence and damage viewers.

Samuel Haviland was elected supervisor in 1775 and 1776, and William Miller town clerk at the same time. There were no further elections until 1783. Since that time the supervisors and town clerks have been as follows:

Supervisors.

1783. Isaiah Maynard.	1847. James D. Merritt.
1784. William Miller.	1850. David P. Halsted.
1791. Joseph Carpenter.	1852. John Palmer.
1793. William Vail.	1853. Daniel W. Gray.
1801. Thomas Carpenter.	1857. Edward Willets.
1802. William Vail.	1858. Samuel Hopper.
1805. Thomas Halstead.	1863. Daniel W. Gray.
1808. Simeon Tyler.	1864. Edward Willets.
1810. Thomas Halsted.	1875. Daniel W. Gray.
1828. Jeremiah Anderson.	1876. Edward Willets.
1836. William M. Cromwell. ¹	1878. George T. Burling.
1837. William H. Purdy.	1883. Daniel W. Gray.
1840. Joseph H. Anderson.	1884. George T. Burling.
1841. Thomas C. Fields.	

Town Clerks.

1783. Stephen Field.	1847. William A. Cromwell.
1788. William Miller.	1856. Jonathan Purdy.
1791. William Vail.	1860. William H. Dusenberry.
1793. Thomas Carpenter.	1863. William Cross.
1801. Simeon Tyler.	1864. John Field.
1802. Thomas Carpenter.	1866. Albert Sutton.
1818. John Carpenter.	1868. Charles C. Haviland.
1836. James D. Merritt.	1869. Albert Sutton.
1839. Seymour Bouton.	1872. Charles C. Haviland.
1841. Caleb Sauds.	

Charles W. Baird

BIOGRAPHY.

ELLWOOD BURDSALL.

Mr. Burdsall was born at New Brunswick, N. J., July 18, 1814. His ancestors were among the early English settlers of this country. Those on his father's side were members of the Society of Friends, while those of the mother were Presbyterians. His maternal grandfather served in the army during the Revo-

¹ Jeremiah Anderson was elected supervisor in 1836, but refused to serve, and Cromwell was elected at a special meeting in his stead.

lutionary War, and was engaged in the battles of Trenton and Monmouth. For three years he was confined by the British as a prisoner of war in the "Old Sugar House" and the different prison-ships.

After receiving a common-school education, such as the neighborhood in which he lived afforded, Mr. Burdsall, whose father had died in 1823, when he was but nine years of age, left his native place and learned the carpenter's trade at Philadelphia in 1829. In 1835 he journeyed to Appalachicola, Fla., on the Gulf of Mexico, where he erected a number of dwellings and warehouses. In 1837 he was elected a member of the City Council of Appalachicola. Shortly afterwards the yellow fever broke out, and prevailed for some time with unusual fatality. Many of the inhabitants became panic-stricken and fled from the city, among the fugitives being all the members of the government except the city treasurer, a Mr. Boot, and Mr. Burdsall. The latter organized a hospital outside the town, and, with the aid of other courageous men, gathered the sick together and placed them in the wards, where he attended them more or less frequently daily. For nearly two months the fever continued to rage, little business being transacted during the time, and the dead being buried without funerals.

Mr. Burdsall remained in Florida till 1844, when he left that State for New York. He then associated himself with William E. Ward, and they founded the bolt manufacturing business at Port Chester, N. Y. The original name of the firm was Burdsall & Ward, which was changed to Russell, Burdsall & Ward upon the addition to it of Isaac D. Russell. The firm retains the latter name at the present time and has been successfully managed under it for the past forty years.

In 1851 Mr. Burdsall married Miss Hannah G. Haviland, a daughter of John Haviland, a member of one of the oldest families in Harrison. In 1854 he built his present residence in Harrison.

At the organization of the First National Bank of Port Chester, Mr. Burdsall was elected president and has been re-elected annually. The bank has never passed a dividend.

Mr. Burdsall was elected in 1863 a manager of Swarthmore College, an institution under the care of the Society of Friends, near Philadelphia, which position he resigned ten years later. Since 1867 he has been a manager of Chappaqua Mountain Institute, near Chappaqua, Westchester County, N. Y., which is also under the care of the Society of Friends. He is interested in a number of other enterprises, some of which are in the neighborhood of his home, and others located elsewhere. His influence is widely felt in social and business circles throughout the county, and especially among the "Friends," of which Society he is a prominent member.

CHAPTER XVI.

EAST CHESTER.

BY REV. WILLIAM S. COFFEY, M.A.

SITUATION.—The township of East Chester, at first styled "Hutchinson's," is divided on its eastern border from the towns of Pelham and New Rochelle by Hutchinson River and East Chester Creek, and on its western border from the town of Yonkers by the Bronx River. It is bounded on the north by the town of Scarsdale, and on the south by the town of Westchester and Black Dog Brook. It is about seven miles long. At its northern extremity it is some four and one-half miles from White Plains, the county-seat of Westchester County, and at its southern limit about fifteen miles from the City Hall, New York City. The town varies in width from one mile to two and three-sixteenths. The surface is undulating, with ridges and valleys extending north and south. The soil is varied, a marked feature being the large quantities of stone which abound in it. President Washington, passing through East Chester in 1790, describes it as "very rough and stoney,"—"immensely stoney." The streams already mentioned and some smaller ones, as Rattlesnake Brook and Ann Hook Brook, contribute much to the natural beauty of this town. At the southeast corner the bay, into which the creek empties, bears also the name East Chester. Goose Island, the very small island which projects, as it were, out of the water, and which adds so much to the attractive scenery of the locality known often as Pelham Bridge, is part of this town. There appears to be a reference to this island in the town minutes of March 1, 1679.

SETTLEMENT.—The settlement of this town took place in 1664, by the immigration from Fairfield County, Conn., of ten of its families, which, within a year or two, were joined by others, making the families of the original colony in all twenty-six. The adventure was made under the auspices of Mr. Thomas Pell, a fellow-townsmen, who, some years before, had purchased the land from the aboriginal inhabitants. But it is strongly suspected that an impelling motive in seeking in this direction their new home was the further practical assertion of the right of the "Colony of Connecticut" over the territory as far "south" as "the sea," which included Westchester County. This claim had already been made in the settlement of Westchester town, and Thomas Pell was in each case the moving spirit. The colonists of East Chester, however, so soon as they realized their position, deemed it expedient to secure themselves beyond question in their rights and property, and this they did, first by conciliating with acceptable payments the natives and then by obtaining from the Royal Governor of New York, Richard Nichols, a patent which confirmed and granted unto them, in definite form and bounds, their "plantation." In this

State paper the town is said to be "commonly called and known by the name of ten farms or East Chester," by which latter name it is further ordered henceforth to be "distinguished." The patentees in this important document were Philip Pinckney, James Eustis and William Haiden, who very shortly after in due form passed over the grant unto themselves and the following, their associates: John Hoitte, Richard Shute, David Osborne, Samuel Drake, John Embury, John Jackson, Moses Jackson and Moses Hoit. This paper also evidently serves the further purpose of assigning also equal rights in the patent to the following more recent settlers, who joined with those already mentioned in an agreement bearing date 1665: Thomas Shute, Nathaniel Tompkins, Joseph Joans, Daniel Goodwin, William Squire, John Goding, John A. Pinkney, Samuel Godwin, Richard Headley, Henry Fowler, John Drake, John Clarke, Nathaniel White.¹

The covenant here referred to covered the varied interests of the settlers. A few of the points in it, which are in all twenty-seven, are presented,—

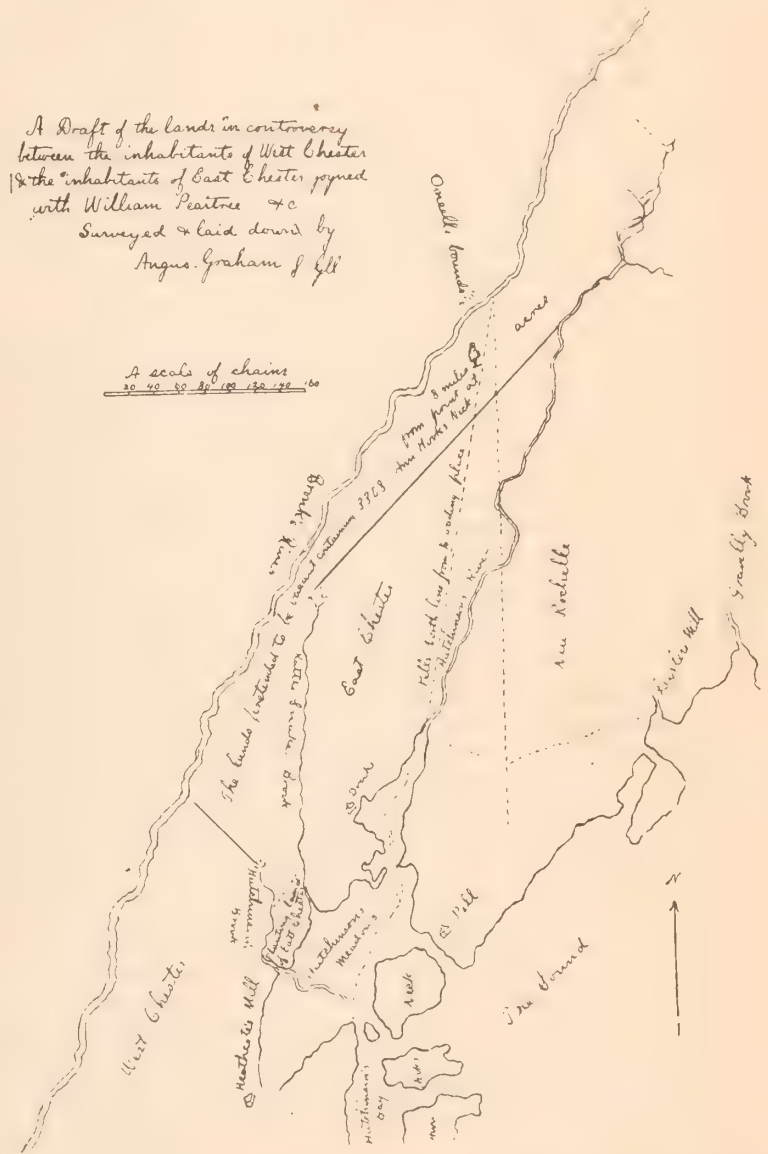
- "7. That none exceed the quantity of 15 acres untill all have that quantity.
- "9. That every man build and inhabit on his home lot before the next winter.
- "8. That every man hath that meado that is most convenient for him.
- "21. That one day every spring be improved for the destroying of rattlesnacks.
- "26. If any mans meado or upland be worse in quality that be considered in quantity."

The selection of land and meadow seems to have been made by each man almost immediately after these determinations, and sales and exchanges of the land thus chosen soon followed. Several divisions of the remaining land, in course of time, as in 1672 and in 1682, took place.² The official record of these important transactions, it is evident from the town books, was not made until a much later date.

In 1729 a committee of nine was appointed to find out the common or undivided land of this "old patent of East Chester," and to lay out the same to every

man according to privilege; and, at the same time, it was ordered that "every lot of land" should be "bounded as the same was first laid out, although it may contain or comprehend more or less acres than it was granted or laid out for."

In 1704 John Drake, Henry Fowler, Joseph Drake, Edmund Ward and Jeremiah Fowler are authorized to act for the freeholders of the town, with Colonel



Peartree, Colonel Van Cortlandt and Mr. Van Horne (Mr. funhorn), in procuring a patent for "all the lands without the northeast line," without and within—that is to say, all the lands. This patent was granted, but not issued until 1708. In 1715 the sum of fifty pounds, to pay the necessary charges, was levied by rate upon the freeholders according to each man's privilege or interest in it, which amount being raised,

¹ Town Minutes, p. 75.

² Town Minutes, pp. 5 and 11, 1st vol.

it is determined at a town-meeting that Justis Noah Barton and Robert Sneedon, Treasurer of East Chester, "should go down to New York to make up ye acc^{ts} of ye town with ye Yorkers in partnership with us, and also ye acc^{ts} of ye lawyers."¹ The delivery of the patent to the freeholders was not made until 1729, when, in view of a dispute as to the northeast and southwest line between the old and new patents, the freeholders agreed "that whereas there is a certain Chestnut-tree and the Stump of another Chestnut-tree by a rock, 4 feet high, which stands by the road that goes by the White Plains by James Morgan's field," which is adjudged to be in the line aforesaid, that the said line shall begin at said tree and so run northeast to Hutchinson's River, and from the said tree to run a straight line to the rock marked with the letter p, near unto Moses Hunt's house, which is to be forever deemed the partition line between the old and new Patents of East Chester, or Long Reach, commonly so called.²

In the following spring it was determined that the land of this second patent be laid out at eight shillings per acre to those persons that have debts due on said new patent for services that they have therein done. A special meeting, however, had to be held in the month of June to levy a rate "by proportion to sink ye quit-rents due on the said new Patent to this present year and also to discharge ye money that Mr. Henry Fowler Sen^r, is arrested for, with the charges thereby accrued."

In February, 1731, John Ward, Roger Barton, Edward Ward, Nehemiah Palmer and Joseph Fowler were appointed a committee, with the assignees, one of whom was Captain John Drake and another, in all likelihood, Henry Fowler, to lay out the land of this patent and to make such prudent rules and orders as shall seem fit. Some years, however, elapsed before the difficulties which arose in obtaining this patent disappeared. One unfortunate suit-at-law at least, besides that against Henry Fowler, viz., Moses Fowler vs. John Hewstis, was caused by these complications.

SETTLEMENT NEAR TUCKAHOE.—Upon the opening of the marble quarries near the Bronx, just above Bompo's Bridge, now Tuckahoe Station, on the Harlem Railroad, a large number of small homes for the workmen were erected, and a sensible increase in the population of the town is visible, and this influx and addition of houses went on for a number of years, and the several villages of Waverley, Lakeville, Sebastopol have sprung up.

SETTLEMENT OF MT. VERNON.—But the most important subsequent event in the development of the town occurred in the settlements in the southeast part of it in the year 1851. It would seem that the exorbitant rents which were asked at the time in the City of New York, for dwellings of even moderate ac-

commodation, drove to combined movements, for the purchase of land, somewhere within forty minutes' ride by rail from the business quarters. One of the earliest of these assumed the name of "The New York Industrial Home Association, No. 1," and set up as qualifications for membership good moral character, industrious habits and desire to promote the common purpose,—protection against the unjust power and influence of capital and against land monopoly as the efficient cause of poverty. It is generally conceded that the founder of this project and the largest contributor to its success was a tailor in the city by the name of Stevens, who afterwards became a man of much influence and usefulness in the town. It must also be mentioned that the Honorable Horace Greeley, editor at the time of the *New York Tribune*, was an officer of the Association and gave it his best support. Within six months the required number of members, one thousand, was obtained and the land secured.

Of the one hundred farms offered, five in the town of East Chester, belonging severally to Colonel John R. Hayward, Sylvanus Purdy, Andrew Purdy and his two sons, John and Andrew Oscar, and containing three hundred and sixty-nine and one-half acres, were deemed the most suitable.³ The name first given to the place was Monticello, but for post-office reasons that of Mount Vernon was afterwards chosen.

The interest of the members of the Association in the welfare of the town was soon felt. This appears in a protest forwarded in 1851, by the Association, to the Commissioners of Land, against granting to John Schuyler, of Pelham, the privilege of constructing a dock out from his land into East Chester Creek. The Association met during the year, receiving its dues, giving orders for the payments for the land, for surveys of it and plans for laying it out, for contracts for the grading of the avenues and streets; also arranging for the distribution among the members of the one thousand quarter-acre lots into which the village was divided. A depot was also erected and given to the New Haven Railroad Company. Four school-lots of half an acre each were set apart for eventual use. On the third Wednesday in October a Jubilee over the success of the movement was observed in the new village. On the 12th of December the president, John Stevens, reported that fifty-six or fifty-eight houses were building, and on the 6th of August, 1852, the Executive committee declared that three hundred had been erected or were under way. One of the causes of this rapid progress was the reversionary clause in the deeds given, which re-

¹ It is said that Mr. Ebenezer Burling, of the firm of Burling & Saechi, having been applied to for a site for the new village, consulted Mr. Henry Munroe, who, remembering a remark of Gouverneur Morris, after the settlement of Morrisania, that the next settlement should be between the two railroads, as being a desirable location, communicated this saying to Burling; and so Morris, Munroe, Burling and Stevens went up to see the place offered, which was approved by the committee and soon adopted by the association.

¹ Town Minutes, Vol. II., 1717.

² Town Minutes, Vol. III., p. 13.

quired this erection within three years or a forfeiture of the land. This provision in the deed undoubtedly was not legally binding, but effected the purpose for which the members of the Association freely placed themselves under its seeming risks. The lots not improved, as so required, were, however, in a few years relieved from this incumbrance by releases freely given. The village thus settled was, on the 10th of December, 1853, incorporated, having at the time within its bounds 1370 inhabitants, of whom 564 were parents, 623 children and the remainder unmarried adults and apprentices.

The following are the names of the petitioners to the court in this action: Thomas Jones, Stephen Bogart, John B. Brennan, Enoch Douglass, Amzi Hill, Henry Biggins, John Davolls and William Wisdom, only one of whom, Mr. Douglass, resides in the neighborhood. Stephen Bogart was elected the President of the village, and the following citizens have since held the position: Joseph S. Gregory, M.D., Thomas Jones, Cornelius Cooper, Richard Atkinson, George L. Baxter, John B. Brennan, John Stevens, David Quackenbush, William H. Pemberton, Edward Martin, Azro Fowler, George R. Crawford, Henry Huss, John Van Santvoord, William J. Collins, and the present incumbent, Jared Sandford. Contemporary with the settlement just described was that of West Mount Vernon, under the direction of the Teutonic Homestead Association, which was composed mainly of Germans, five hundred in number, who purchased 131 $\frac{4}{10}$ acres, and rapidly established themselves in the town. The land settled lays between the Bronx River and the road formerly called Road to Bedford and Vermont and the Mile Square Road as it nears Hunt's Bridge. Several other appropriations of land adjoining these villages, made in consequence of their success, as East and Central Mount Vernon, Washingtonville, Fleetwood and Chester Hill, have also added to the growth of the town, though more slowly and less perceptibly, but pointing out some of the best sites in it.

West Mount Vernon and Central Mount Vernon were incorporated as one village in 1869, with Christian Ross as the first president, and the following gentlemen were his successors: Joseph Bellesheim, Horace Loomis and John Van Santvoord. During the term of office of the last-named, West Mount Vernon was, by an act of the Legislature, united to Mount Vernon, the concurrence of a majority vote of the citizens of each village first being had. This took place in 1878. In the same manner an adjoining portion of the town, called East Mount Vernon, had been at an earlier date annexed to the original village of Mount Vernon.

The following is a list of the Clerks of the two Incorporations:

West Mt. Vernon.—Isaac A. Farrington, John Zillig, H. C. Bissell.

Mt. Vernon.—P. L. McClellan, W. P. Sleight, Chas. T. Hathaway, George Stevens, James H. Jenkins.

It is an interesting point in the history of this village that its improvement was from the first a matter of ardent consideration with its inhabitants. It must be conceded, however, that the original intention of these settlements—home ownership—has, as might have been expected, been for a long time entirely ignored.

INDIANS.—This town was no doubt more a hunting-ground of the Indians than their place of residence. Wigwams, indeed, are found indicated far up on the banks of the Aqueanounck, or Hutchinson's River, but the marks are not of permanent occupation. The territory, however, is full of the accessories of the chase, which have in these later years come to the surface. The tribes identified with this immediate region are the Sewanoy and Weckquaesgeeks, the former of whom had their abodes nearer Long Island Sound, and the latter along the shores of Hudson River. In the Indian deeds of the town occur the names of Woriatapus, Ann Hook (whose earlier name was Wampage), Porrige (or Hopescoe), Gramatan, Pathune, Sagamore and Elias.

The aborigines were sometimes found dangerous neighbors. As early as 1675 it was deemed a wise precaution by Pinkney, Haiden and their fellow-settlers to build a fort for defense against possible assault. This was at the time when Deerfield and other villages in Massachusetts had been attacked, and there was fear that the ill-will had become general. The Indians appear to have remained in the vicinity up to a late period, and in the War of the Revolution to have taken sides with the colonists.

CHURCHES.

The original settlers of East Chester seem without delay to have endeavored to make provision for their spiritual interests. In the nineteenth of the articles of agreement among them in 1665 they resolved to "give new encouragement to Mr. Brewster each other week to give us a word of exhortation, and that when we are settled we meet together every other week one hour, to talk of the best things." The Rev. Nathaniel Brewster, here referred to, was serving at the time at Westchester, who thereupon took charge of the religious welfare of East Chester for several years. The Rev. Ezekiel Fogge, the Rev. Warham Mather and the Rev. Morgan Jones next ministered in this town. In 1692 it was determined to build a meeting-house, which, however, was not fully accomplished until 1700, at which time the services of the Rev. Joseph Morgan were secured. The consent to his induction was sought from the Governor, but refused, upon which application was made to the General Assembly for a separation of the town from the Parish, in which it had been combined with Westchester, Pelham, Yonkers and New Rochelle, by an Act in 1693. The request was answered by an Act establishing East Chester as an independent religious state organization, by the name and style of "the Parish of East Chester, in the County

of West Chester." This Act, however, was not approved by the Home government, for reasons offered by the Bishop of London, and, by order of Her Majesty the Queen, was disallowed.¹ It would seem that up to this time the support of these ministries was paid by voluntary offerings, an attempt in 1674 to impose a rate being resisted. The following from the town minutes illustrate the anxiety of the inhabitants on the subject of obtaining religious advantages: In July, 1674, a resolution was passed " . . . by reason we hear that Mr. Fogge did express himself to be desirous and also willing to live and settle among us in East Chester, in consideration whereof we are willing to manifest our acceptance to embrace his good company, and shall provide for his present comfort and likewise for his future livelihood." In 1677 a house and land and forty pounds a year is determined upon for a minister settling in the town. The next year twenty pounds is subscribed to carry on Sabbath day services, by the following: William Haiden, Richard Shute, Nathaniel and John Tompkins, John Pinckney, Richard Headley, Samuel and John Drake, Will Squier and — Greay.

In 1692 several of the inhabitants "promised to conterybute unto Samuel Casting, he being chosen to Read in the bibell and other good sermon-books, and so to carion the Sabath days Exercises as according to our Honorabell Col. Heathcut's order unto us. Henry fowler promises to give one Bushell of good winter wheat.

	s.	d.		s.	d.
" John Tompkins	3	0	John Pinckney, five		
John Clark	2	0	pecks of Indian corn,		
Joseph Drake	4	0	William Gray	2	0
Thomas Pinckney. . . .	3	0	John Shute	3	0
Isaac Taylor	2	0	Benjamin Taylor	2	0
John Drake	4	0	Thomas Shute	4	6

The order here referred to was that of which Col. Heathcote writes in his letter in 1704 to the Venerable Society for Propagating the Gospel, in which, after describing the demoralization which had taken place since the settlement of Westchester County, he says, "having then the command of the militia, I sent an order to all the Captains requiring them to call their men under arms and to acquaint them in case they would not in every town agree among themselves to appoint *readers* and pass the Sabbath in the best manner they could till such times as they could be better provided, that they should every Sunday call their companions under arms and spend the day in exercise."

The meeting-house erected in 1700 for divine worship is described as a frame building, twenty-eight feet square and about eighteen feet to the eaves, the sides as well as roof being shingled. The interior was wainscoted and had a gallery.

The following plan of the sittings and the names

of their occupants is found in the Second book of Town Minutes, p. 34:

" Mr. Justis Pink.	Henry Fowler, Snr.
Richard Shute.	John Pink.
Thomas Shute.	Moses Hort, Snr.
John Shute.	Moses Hort, Jnr.
Mate' Vollen.	John Lanc.
	Robert —.
	John Lankate.

(The north side below to this.)

Capt. John Drake.
— Drake.
John Tomkins.
Nathaniel Tomkins.
Mr. William Chaterton.

(East to this.)

Isac Taylor.
Isac Lause.
Edward Hancock.
Thomas Veall.
Jeremia Fowler.
Isac Odell.
John Gee.
Joseph Gee.

(South side to this.)

(West to this.)"

This building stood on the "Green," and the site is now marked as between the two locusts which are farthest apart in the row of trees that so grace this interesting locality.

The Rev. Joseph Morgan seems to have spent some seven or eight years in the town. At the time of his settlement thirty pounds a year was agreed upon for his salary, "to be raised upon" the "rateable estates," and a house and home-lot and orchard were also furnished him. But Mr. Morgan, not liking this provision, instead of the house and land offered, twenty acres were granted, him with a twenty-five pound privilege, which he accepted, a portion of which land afterwards was wanted for highway purposes, and an equal quantity at the rear of his estate given him in exchange. In 1701 the town provides a committee to set persons to work for the use and service of Mr. Joseph Morgan, and in the next year the use of a piece of meadow for ten years is voted him. In 1703 an obligation for a year is ordered, but the committee to obtain subscriptions for the payment encounter difficulty in persuading their neighbors to contribute. Mr. Morgan, in 1708, moved into New England, and in 1709 went to Monmouth County, N. J., to minister to the Dutch Churches, and continued there at least twenty-two years.²

Nothing could be more clear than that the induction, on the 19th of November, 1702, of the Rev. John Bartow, a missionary of the Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts, into the Rectorship of the combined Parish already named, was eventually the cause of Mr. Morgan's removal. Here was a case calling for forbearance, and yet firmness. The building used for worship had been erected at public expense and was by law in possession of the Rector of the parish, and yet Mr. Bartow, by not resisting Mr. Morgan in the use of it ordinarily, thought his own visits would be the more welcome and his claims as the representative of the Established Church would be more calmly weighed. Of course at first the amount

¹ N. Y. C. L. MSS., vol. IV., pp. 1026-1038.

² Town Record of East Chester, Bk 2, pp. 20, 23, 29, 46, 49. Romeyn's Disc. at Ref. Dutch Ch., Huckensack, May 2, 1809, p. 40.

levied was regarded as objectionable, but it was soon seen to be inconsiderable by the side of what was required for an entire support. Passion, which was no doubt at first aroused, subsided. Mr. Bartow, in a letter of May, 1703, says: "East Chester used many means to prevent and disturb my settlement, but all their attempts were frustrated by my Lord Cornbury, and now they begin to come into better tempers, many of them, having left their minister, are joynd with us, nay, the minister himself talks of coming to England for Episcopal orders."¹

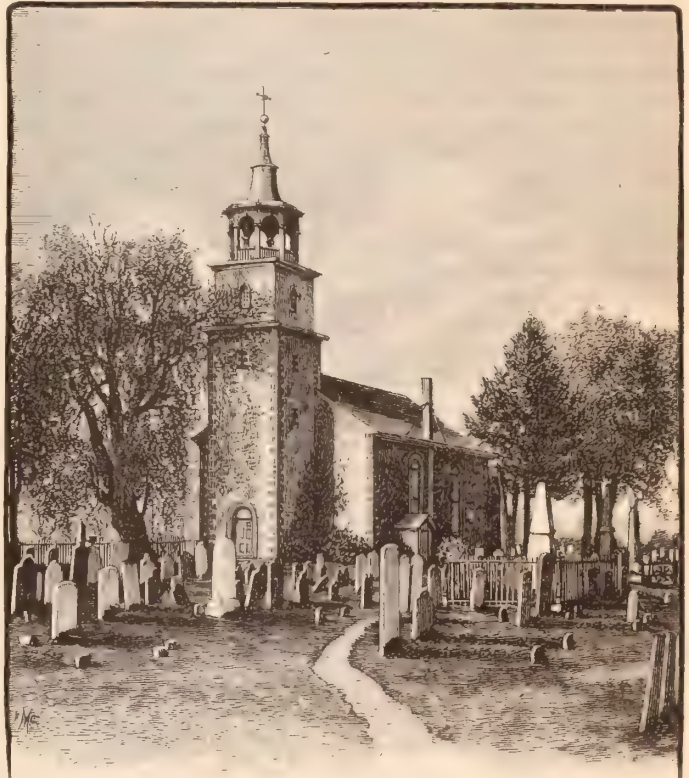
In a petition from East Chester to Governor Cornbury, John Drake, Jos. Drake and Wm. Chadderton, for the inhabitants of East Chester, say: "we assure your Excellency that 'tis our earnest desires to come under the Regulation of the Church of England as by law established, as so is our minister, Mr. Morgan, for which reason we are desirous to continue him amongst us," etc.²

It would appear from this and other indications that after a few years of diminishing dissatisfaction with the constituted order of things and increasing esteem for Mr. Bartow, ecclesiastical matters were placed on the footing in which they continued till the Revolution.

Mr. Bartow was succeeded in 1727 in the Rectorship by the Rev. Thos. Standard, A.M., M.D., who for thirty-three years faithfully ministered in the different congregations of his extended parish. At first he resided at Westchester, but during the latter half of his connection made his home at East Chester, opposite the church. He died in 1760.

The Rev. John Milner, in February, 1761, came to the charge of the Parish of Westchester. He was a native of the County and a graduate of Princeton College. His ministrations brought together crowded congregations. The administrations of baptisms were large, and a remarkable increase in the number of communicants is observed. In 1764, the old building being much decayed and in winter found very cold for use, the foundation of a new church was laid. Mr. Milner resigning and removing to Virginia, the Rev. Samuel Seabury, in December, 1766, succeeded him. The erection of the church was continued until it was inclosed, at which time work upon it was suspended. Mr. Seabury speaks of it as well built, the truth of which remark its strength one hundred and twenty years afterwards attests. The services of the church were maintained in the old building until October, 1776. During the war it was torn down and consumed as fuel in the new church, then in use as a

British hospital. Full four years were allowed to pass after the war before any attempt was made to resume services. The Rev. Elias Cooper, who had also the Rectorship of St. John's Church, Yonkers, was in charge of this Parish from 1789 to 1801. His unbounded popularity in Yonkers had its counterpart on this side of the Bronx. He was ordained to the Priesthood in the church at East Chester, and for more than sixty years afterward were his praises upon the lips of the people of this town. Under Mr. Cooper the Parish, which had been organized in 1787 under the General Act of 1784, was, in 1795, under the provisions of the Act for the relief of the Protestant Episcopal Church of



ST. PAUL'S CHURCH, EAST CHESTER.

the State, re-incorporated, and took then first the name of St. Paul. The first Wardens were Wm. Popham and Lancaster Underhill, and the first Vestrymen Philip Pell, Lewis Guion, Isaac Ward, John Reid, Isaie Guion, Abraham Valentine, Wm. Pinkney and Wm. Crawford. The Rev. Isaac Wilkins succeeded Mr. Cooper in the Rectorship. Dr. Wilkins, twenty-five years before this, had been a member of the Colonial Assembly from the borough of Westchester, and was, besides, the reputed author of the political pamphlets which bore the name of the "Westchester Farmer." He seems to have been regarded with the greatest respect, and in connection with his duties at St. Peter's, Westchester, to have rendered most faithful service at East Chester. During this period he

¹ Hawk's N. Y. MSS., vol. i, 18, 19, 20. ² Doc. Hist. of N. Y., vol. iii. p. 928.

represented the diocese of New York in the General Convention of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the Lower House, of which body he was for several sessions a most able presiding officer. Dr. Wilkins was succeeded by the Rev. Ravaud Kearney. Of fine presence and great ardor, Mr. Kearney drew around him a large congregation. His immediate successor was the Rev. Lewis P. Bayard, afterwards Rector of St. Clement's Church, New York. The Rev. Lawson Carter was Rector for ten years, from October, 1826, and the Rev. Robt. Bolton for seven or eight years. The Rev. Edwin Harwood, now Rector of Trinity Church, New Haven; was in charge for about thirteen months. In August, 1847, the Rev. Henry E. Duncan was elected Rector. Under Mr. Duncan a parsonage was built. After four and a half years of devoted labor, Mr. Duncan resigned this, his first parish, and became Rector of the Holy Innocents, West Point. He has since been Rector of St. Luke's Church, Fishkill Landing. On the 1st of February, 1852, the present incumbent, Rev. William Samuel Coffey, entered upon his prolonged ministry. During this period an enlargement of the church edifice has taken place. The church-yard has been inclosed with a substantial stone fencing, and the Parish has received a comfortable endowment and other smaller pecuniary benefactions. The following persons have been Church Wardens of this Parish:

William Popham	October 4, 1795, to Easter, 1804.
William Popham	Easter, 1817, to Easter, 1823.
Lancaster Underhill	October 4, 1795, to Easter, 1824.
Rem Rapelye	Easter, 1804, to Easter 1805.
Jeromeus Alstyne	Easter, 1805, to Easter, 1808.
Lewis Guion	Easter, 1808, to Easter, 1810.
Isaac Ward	Easter, 1810, to Easter, 1817.
John Townsend	Easter, 1823, to December 18, 1849.
Philemon H. Fowler	Easter, 1824, to Easter, 1853.
Robert Bartow	Easter, 1850, to Easter, 1853.
Nathaniel Valentine	Easter, 1853, to Easter, 1855.
Nathaniel Valentine	Easter, 1858, to November 6, 1877.
Samuel T. Carey	Easter, 1853, to July, 1857.
Francis W. Edmonds	Easter, 1855, to Easter, 1857.
Philip R. Underhill	Easter, 1857, to Easter, 1872.
Robert H. Coburn	Easter, 1872, to Easter, 1879.
Alfred H. Duncombe	Easter, 1878.
Geo. P. Clapp	Easter, 1879, to January, 1884.
Stephen P. Hunt	Easter, 1884.

ST. PAUL'S CHURCH-YARD contains about three and a half acres of land, and, it is estimated, holds in sacred trust over six thousand bodies. This burying-place was started in the very infancy of the town. The oldest inscriptions legible are those of "M. V. D.," who deceased "FEB. 15, 1704," and of "R. S.," the date of whose death was Dec. 14th, of the same year. The monument to William Crawford, which rests horizontally upon brick walls, seems to have been the most conspicuous in the yard before the Revolution. The following family names of the town are read frequently upon the tomb-stones: Pinkney, Drake, Fowler, Shute, Hunt, Ward, Valentine, Pell, Sherwood, Underhill, Morgan, Briggs, Searing, Purdy, Reid, Barker, Bertine, Odell. There are vaults in this cemetery belonging to the Pell, Hill, Grigg, Prime, Sands, Morgan, Valentine, Masterton, Kain, H. R.

Morgan, Drake, Seaman, Coutant, Oakley, Beekman, Farrington, Schieffelin, Dooley, Skidmore, Fowler and Street families. The Comfort Sands Vault bears the date of 1790, but its erection here was at a much later period, the remains in it being transferred with the slab from Brooklyn to this church-yard. Comfort Sands, who was born at Sands Point, Long Island, in 1748, and a merchant in New York City from 1769, was most active in all the patriotic movements preceding and during the Revolutionary war. In 1775 he was a member of the Provincial Congress, and in 1776 was chosen auditor-general of accounts in the American army, which office he held for five years. At the close of the war he returned to mercantile life. He was President of the Chamber of Commerce and a member of Assembly for several years. He died in 1834. The Fowler vault contains the remains of Capt. Jonathan Fowler, of the French War, and of his son, Capt. Theodosius Fowler, of Revolutionary fame. In the "Prevost Plot" are buried Major George W. Prevost, of the British army, and the Rev. Augustine P. Prevost, who was at his death Rector of St. John's Church, Canandaigua. In this yard are also the remains of Philip Pell, Judge-Advocate of the American army, and those of his brother, Major Samuel Pell. A spot is pointed out in this cemetery where the sand for the mortar used in erecting the church was obtained. It has the added interest of being the burial-place of a large number of soldiers who died at the time of the Revolution, of the prevailing disease (bloody flux), in the church, then used as a hospital.

The following are the names of the Sextons of this church-yard:

Richard Stivers	1755	William Biddle	1854
Mark Christian	1760-91	Abraham Kingston	1855-57
James Pell	1791-93	Enoch Wilson	1857-73
Benjamin Barton	1793-1816	William Harker	
Augustus Lawrence	1816-42	Anthony Bennett	1877
Theodosius Hunt	1842-51	Peter Kracher	1877-85
John Lamont	1854-54	Eugene Holley	1885

The following very injudicious language is upon the tombstone of a mother:

"Life ending here is life begun,
For here a Christian lies, tho' not a modern one—
One who, in life, evinced to all good will,
Who died a victim to a want of skill—
One who, in life and death forgave
Those here or absent from her grave.—*Mo. Mother.*

How much in contrast the lines to a mother on another tombstone! Here are two of the verses,—

"Never more to hear her saying,
Darling, are you ill or well;
Gently on our forehead laying
Hands that like a blessing fell.
Oh, my mother, never more.

"Never more to feel her gliding
By the bed her prayers had blest,
With her hand the curls fondling
Lest it should disturb our rest.
Oh, my mother, never more."

METHODIST CHURCH IN THE VILLAGE OF EAST CHESTER.—The followers of John Wesley seem very early to have held meetings in this town. Bishop Asbury, who was frequently the guest of a Widow Sherwood, in Tuckahoe, near the Bronx, on many occasions, it is said, came down and preached in the village of East Chester, at Moses Secord's house,¹ which was on the road to West Chester, near Rattlesnake Brook. In the formation of the Methodist Society of New Rochelle, four of the six incorporators were residents of East Chester.

In 1835 an incorporation took place under the name of "The Trustees of the Methodist Episcopal Church in the town of East Chester, in the County of West Chester and State of New York." This took place on the 16th of November and immediately a strip of land, one hundred and sixty feet front by seventy-five feet deep, was purchased from Frederick Friend, and the erection of a church, sixty feet long by thirty feet wide and twenty feet high, was commenced. This building was dedicated on Sunday, July 31, 1836, in the presence of a "large and respectable congregation," the Rev. Drs. Bangs and Luckey² preaching able and appropriate sermons. In 1841 the parsonage was built on the north end of the church lot, with a stable of medium size adjoining it. The following ministers have been in charge of this congregation:

Edward Oldrin	1836-37	Edward Oldrin	1859
J. D. Banks	1837	Alexander McAlister	1861
John Davis	1838	Buel Goodsell	1863
S. C. Perry	1838-39	Samuel W. King	1863
Henry Hatfield	1839	T. D. Littlewood	1864
Daniel R. Wright	1840	Henry Gidman	1866
Thomas Burch	1840	William E. Bell	1869
John A. Silleck	1842	Henry Scofield	1870
H. Humphrey	1842	Guy S. Frazay	1873
F. W. Sesser	1843	Justus O. Worth	1874
J. C. Washburn	1845	Samuel Seaman	
George Waterbury	1847	M. N. Olmstead	
John Henson	1849	Charles Kelsey	
Daniel De Vinne	1851	Moses L. Scudder	
William H. Bangs	1853	— Wilson	
Seth W. Scofield	1855	J. S. Haugh	
William Ross	1857	C. S. Wing	1886

Mr. Thomas Griffin, who was a local preacher from 1833 till his death (in 1843), was one of the earliest and strongest supporters of this religious movement. The following persons have been trustees of this church:

Thomas Griffin.	William Howe.
Peter Bertine.	J. M. Lockwood.
Isaiah Sickles.	T. P. Huestis.
Nicholas Duff.	J. G. Lane.
Gilbert Underhill.	E. A. Campbell.
John Wolfe.	J. W. Anderson.
John Boyce.	F. H. Hart.
Edward Deere.	Joseph Latting.
Andrew Wolfe.	W. H. H. Barker.
John W. Towt.	Norman Secord.
Augustus Lawrence.	Lewis K. Osborne.
E. L. Tommine.	J. P. Marquand, Jr.
L. Disbrow.	William Johnson.

¹ This old house, now removed, stood near the entrance to Cragdon, late the residence of Mr. William Seaton.

² *Christian Advocate and Journal*, September 2, 1836.

Peter S. Burtia.	Andrew Beattie.
W. Full.	Richard Williams.
James P. Hinman.	Peter Colling.
James Barker.	Frances Crawford.

REFORMED CHURCH, BRONXVILLE.—This church was formed in 1850 by a committee from the Classis of New York. Land having been given in 1849 by the family of the Rev. Robert Bolton, who, while rector of St. Paul's, had resided in this neighborhood, the erection of a church edifice was commenced. It was dedicated April 9, 1850. The Rev. Dr. Dewitt preached the sermon, being assisted in the opening services by the pastor, the Rev. A. T. Stewart. On the 14th of December the church was legally incorporated as "The Reformed Protestant Dutch Church of Bronxville." The following is the list of pastors:

Rev. A. T. Stewart	1850	Rev. Alfred C. Myers	1872
Rev. Joseph A. Collier	1852	Rev. John Hutchinson	1876
Rev. Washington Roosevelt	1857	Rev. E. I. Runk	1884

The present elders are T. Burwell and Alexander Masterton, and the present deacons Francis Bacon, Clarence Leggett and F. Springer. The number of communicants is eighty-nine. The church has lately been enlarged by the addition of a chapel, in which is a beautiful memorial window. In 1880 a parsonage was built, which is regarded as one of the most attractive in the county.

REFORMED CHURCH, MT. VERNON.—In the autumn of 1852 or winter of 1852 and 1853, the Rev. Mr. Snyder, a missionary of the Reformed Church, commenced his labors in the village of Mt. Vernon. A church was established with an original membership of fourteen persons in May, 1853. In November the society was incorporated under the name of "Reformed Church of Mt. Vernon." A frame building was soon erected, which continued in use until 1872, when the much-admired edifice now in use was dedicated. The sermons on this occasion, May 28, 1872, were preached by the Rev. Drs. Ormiston and John Hall, of New York City. The old building was converted into a chapel. The Rev. Isaac M. See was the second installed pastor of this congregation and rendered it faithful service for ten years. He was succeeded by the Rev. Mancius H. Hutton who remained in charge fifteen years. His ability and courteousness won him hosts of friends. The present pastor, the Rev. Charles K. Clearwater, entered upon his duties in the fall of 1879, and is successfully carrying on the work.

METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH, MOUNT VERNON.—The first services of this society were held by the minister in charge of the Methodist Church at East Chester, — the Rev. Daniel De Vinne, — at first in private residences, and eventually in a room over the carpenter's shop of Mr. Wisdom, in Third Avenue, near First Street. The society was organized January 13, 1852, and incorporated March 6, 1854, under the name of "First Methodist Episcopal Church in Mount Vernon." The church, which was commenced in 1853 (the corner-stone being laid on

the 4th of July), was not finished until the spring of 1856; but, for more than two years before this, the congregation assembled for worship in the basement of the new building. The dedication services took place on the 20th of April, 1856, the Rev. Dr. James Floy, J. B. Hagany and Rev. L. W. Peck officiating. The following clergymen of the Methodist Church have been stationed at this church: Revs. Daniel De Vinne, William Bangs, Seneca Howland, Samuel Smith, William H. Boole, Samuel A. Seaman, Seymour Landon, Isaac E. Smith, Charles Kelsey, James Carroll, John Dickinson, A. C. Bowdish, M. L. Scudder, D.D., Robert Crook, LL.D., and C. S. Wing, the present pastor. The membership of this society, at this time, is about three hundred and fifty. The yearly expenditure is about three thousand dollars. The benevolent collections amount to seven hundred and fifty dollars.

The erection of a beautiful and commodious new church is progressing. The old building has been moved and the new placed on the original site. Among the names of the deceased officers of this church are the honored ones of John G. Satterly, William Miller, William Howe, Jonathan Hicks, James Howland.

BAPTIST CHURCH.—The first meetings of the Baptists of the town were held in Wisdom's sash and blind factory, on Third Avenue, near First Street, Mt. Vernon, and later in Journeau's Hall, Fifth Avenue and Fourth Street, in the same village. A meeting to form a society was first held Sunday, April 24, 1853, after morning service, and on the 11th of May, at the house of John Buskirk, eighteen members organized themselves into a Baptist Church and asked for recognition as such from the Baptist Churches in New York City and vicinity. Two councils accordingly were held, one of consent and the second to give the hand of fellowship. On the 26th of December, 1853, the church called its first pastor, Brother Joseph Burnett. On the 17th of August, 1854, the society was incorporated, the corporate name assumed being "The Trustees of the Baptist Church of the village of Mt. Vernon, town of East-Chester, county of Westchester." On the 27th of November the corner-stone of a church building was laid, when addresses were delivered by the Rev. J. A. McKean and by the Rev. A. D. Gillette, of New York. The Rev. Charles Waterhouse was called to be pastor April 30, 1855, and on the 25th of December of the same year the church, with appropriate ceremonies, was opened for the worship of God. On the 26th of January, 1857, Brother Richard Harris was called. His successors have been Rev. U. B. Guiscard, called August 18, 1862; Brother Owen A. Williams, called August 20, 1865; Brother E. T. Hiscox, P.D., called December 3, 1874; and the Rev. Dr. T. M. Colwell, called October, 1885. There are at present two hundred and thirty-four names on the roll of membership representing one hundred and forty-six families.

Efforts which promise success are being put forth to raise by subscription the amount necessary for a new church.

UNIVERSALIST CHURCH.—The first services of this society were held by the Rev. Henry Lyon in a second-story room, corner of Third Avenue and Fourth Street, called Central Hall. Incorporation took place February 12, 1855, the name taken being "The Universalist Society of Mt. Vernon." An edifice was erected the next year, and was dedicated September 23, 1856, the Rev. T. J. Sawyer delivering the sermon in the morning and the Rev. Dr. E. H. Chapin in the afternoon. The Rev. Mr. Lombard, the Rev. Mr. Shepherd, the Rev. T. S. Aldrich and the Rev. Mr. Johnson, the present pastor, have in succession had the charge of this congregation.

TRINITY CHURCH, MT. VERNON.—It was the desire of the Rev. H. E. Duncan, rector of St. Paul's, to meet the coming responsibilities of his position, in the settlement of the village of Mt. Vernon, by providing in advance in its midst a house of worship for the new-comers. In his sermon (June 22, 1851) on occasion of the Jubilee of the Society for Propagating the Gospel, he says: "There will come, not far from us, many, I fear, to be added to the already lamentable number of those who know not the Lord Jesus. But there will be those whose souls are athirst for God, who love Christ and his Church, and who will want a sanctuary and a minister, and the ordinances of religion. I have no time to show the necessity of building a church for these new neighbors. I believe it to be just as requisite for us to do so as it was for the churchmen of England to send over the gospel and the church to us."

Evening prayer was held by him under this thought, in 1851, at the house of Samson Valentine, Esq., near Hunt's Bridge, where also his successor, the Rev. W. S. Coffey, officiated. On the 21st of June, 1852, the new Rector, in a small school-house at Scott's Bridge, commenced a series of services which, after an interruption, were resumed in the spring of 1854, on Fourth Avenue, Mt. Vernon, in the office of Mr. P. L. McClelan, counselor-at-law, but soon more permanently established in the building at the corner of Fifth Avenue and First Street, now Kapp's Hotel. At this room, on the 21st of October, 1856, a new Parish was formed, under the corporate name "The Rector, Church Wardens and Vestrymen of Trinity Church, in the village of Mt. Vernon, Town of East Chester, County of Westchester and State of New York." The Rev. Mr. Coffey still retained the rectorship, Mr. Richard Baldwin and Mr. George O. Street being the wardens. The place of worship was soon removed to Journeau's Hall, at the corner of Fifth Avenue and Fourth Street. A subscription of about four thousand dollars having been obtained, and three quarter-acre lots donated by Richard Atkinson, George O. Street and Samuel T. Jennings, the corner-stone of a stone church was laid on the 24th of November, 1857, with appro-

priate ceremonies, by the Bishop of the Diocese. Mr. Henry Dudley, of New York, was the architect, and the Rector, Richard Atkinson and John Stevens, the building committee.

After two years, during one of which the work, with a desire to avoid debt, was prudently suspended, the church was opened for Evening prayer on Christmas Day, 1859. The Rector preached the sermon, but was assisted in the service by several of the neighboring clergy. It was stated at the time that more than four hundred persons had contributed to the expense incurred. The stained glass windows (except the East Window and the memorial window to Mrs. Elizabeth Underhill), the chancel furniture and the massive doors were individual donations. The Rev. Mr. Coffey continued Rector until 1873, during which time numerous improvements were made. He was succeeded by the Rev. Clarence Buel in a ministry of eighteen months. The Rev. William B. Hooper came to the rectorship in 1875, and was followed in 1878 by the Rev. Stephen F. Holmes, the present incumbent.

The following persons have been Wardens of this church.

Richard Baldwin.	William A. Seaver.
George O. Street.	Gideon D. Pond.
Richard Atkinson.	Stephen Gray.
John Stevens.	Samuel O. Howe.
Edward Martin.	Luke Blakelock.
Peter Noll.	Dr. Archibald M. Campbell.
James H. Jenkins.	

An addition to this church is now in course of completion.

CHURCH OF THE SACRED HEART.—The Roman Catholics of East Chester, who became more numerous at the laying out of Mount Vernon were early in 1852 favored with the services of the priest from Westchester, Father Eugene McGuire. The first Mass was celebrated on the ground-floor of a barn near Fourth Avenue and Fifth Street, and afterward in the house of Peter O'Connor, on the corner of Third Avenue and Fifth Street. Father O'Reilly, who soon after came to Westchester, continued these visitations. About the same time the Rev. Father Joseph Baldoff was sent from New York to officiate for the German settlers. His first Mass was in the house of John Begelspacher, on Seventh Avenue, near Fourth Street, and after a while at O'Connor's. The whole care eventually devolved upon Father Baldoff. In 1856 he transferred the place of assembling to the house of George Rickert, in Bleecker Street, West Mount Vernon, where he himself had rooms, and where, after two or three years of duty, he died. Father Kinsella, of Westchester, now taking the charge of this movement, determined upon the erection of a church, and lot 366, corner of Fifth Avenue and Second Street, was purchased for two hundred and thirty-five dollars, and a plain wooden structure, without debt, erected. This building, which was named St. Matthew's and which was afterward enlarged, continued in use for a number of years and

was in 1878 removed to give place to the fine edifice which now so adorns the neighborhood. Father Kinsella was succeeded by Father J. T. Cole, under whose active and wise administration the new church was built. The Priest's house, on the opposite corner, is one of the best in the village.

THE CHURCH OF ST. JACOB.—The German Roman Catholics, especially of West Mount Vernon, very naturally desiring the ministrations of one speaking their own language, made application to their Bishop, who at last consented and placed the Rev. Father Karl over the new congregation, which was incorporated February 18, 1870. A school building, to which an addition and other improvements were subsequently made, serves, for the time being, the purposes of this congregation.

The following priests, since Father Karl, have had the charge: The Rev. Father Preiss, the Rev. Father Bruhy, the Rev. Father Stumpe, the Rev. Father Sorg and the Rev. Father Albinger.

LUTHERAN (ST. PAUL'S) CHURCH, MT. VERNON.—In the early months of 1858 the Lutherans of the town commenced a movement to provide themselves with religious services, and in the latter part of March established themselves in the upper room of the building at the corner of Fifth Avenue and First Street, under the ministrations of Rev. Herman Boeringer. They removed from this place of meeting to one in Bleecker Street, where Rev. J. H. Baden officiated for them for six years. Just before the close of this period their church on the corner of Mt. Vernon Avenue and Union was built. It was opened (without debt) for worship in December, 1864, the Rev. Mr. Garlich preaching the sermon, and the Rev. Mr. Stohlman, the Rev. Mr. Dress and the minister in charge, Mr. Baden, assisting in the services. The trustees were Messrs. F. W. Weiss, Constantine Weiss, F. Friedhoff, F. Nolting, E. Fishbeck, Charles Richter, I. Gruband John Henry Apel. In 1865 the trustees received, by deed, the lots 215 and 216 of the Teutonic Homestead Association, originally inalienably set apart by it for religious or educational purposes. The incorporation of the church seems not to have been effected until March 25, when the name in law assumed was "German Evangelical Lutheran St. Paul's Church at West Mount Vernon." The Rev. Mr. Semon in 1865, the Rev. Mr. Brandt, in 1866, and the Rev. Mr. Berkenmayer, in 1868, came to the pastoral charge. In 1875, after the cutting down of Bock's Hill, which was a great advantage to the position of the church building, it was resolved to dispose of it and erect another on Seventh Avenue, near First Street, in Mount Vernon. This building was dedicated to divine worship on the 12th of January, 1877, the sermons being preached by the Rev. Dr. Krotel and Pastor Bose, of New York City. The Rev. Mr. Berkenmayer was succeeded by the Rev. Mr. Sommers, the present pastor.

In 1875 a new society of Lutherans was formed,

which organized under the name of St. Matthew's, and have occupied the old church. Their first pastor was the Rev. August Torbeck, who was succeeded by the Rev. Mr. Bruno Dietrich.

MOUNT VERNON NEW CHURCH SOCIETY.—The first services of this religious body in this town were held in this town in 1864, at the residence of Dr. S. L. Close, in Fourth Avenue, near Sixth Street, Mount Vernon, under the Rev. J. P. Stuart, and continued in this more quiet way for several years, when they were removed to the Universalist Church. On the 18th of January an act of incorporation was obtained. In 1873 a church was built on Chester Hill, and on the 31st of October of that year opened with the proper ceremonies. Soon after this Rev. Oliver Dyer was ordained for this charge.

GERMAN METHODIST CHURCH, MT. VERNON.—The first services of this society were held in 1854 by the Rev. John Lutz, who came up from Morrisania for the purpose. The second place of meeting was in the hall on Twelfth Avenue, near First Street, whence it was removed to the room on the corner of Fifth Avenue and First Street. Here the congregation remained until able to use the basement of their new church, commenced in 1864. The church proper was first used on the last Sunday of that year. This society was incorporated September 19, 1870. The following clergymen have had charge of this congregation: The Rev. John Lutz, the Rev. Charles Botsenhardt, Rev. I. Deininger, Rev. Leonard Mayer, Rev. George Meyer, Rev. Jacob Weck, Rev. Frederick Bonn, Rev. Charles Brockmeier, Rev. C. F. Hoffrogge, Rev. F. W. Hoppman, Rev. Jacob Kindler, Rev. Philip Stahl, Rev. E. Wolf, Rev. J. J. Messiner, Rev. F. Rey, Rev. John Flad.

CHURCH OF THE IMMACULATE CONCEPTION (UPPER EAST CHESTER).—In and after 1850, as was possible and expedient, Mass was celebrated for the Roman Catholics of this portion of the town. Fathers O'Reilly and Kinsella, of Westchester, and Baldorf, Mt. Vernon, came up for this purpose, and the house of Thomas Dunn was used for the sacred office. Father McLaughlin, of New Rochelle, succeeded to the oversight and ministrations in this neighborhood, and, in 1857, erected the church in which, since enlarged, the largest portion of the population of the upper part of the town offer up their worship to God. Father McLaughlin continued the care of this congregation until October, 1865, when, shortly after, Father McEvoy became the priest in charge. Father John A. Keogh, the present incumbent, succeeded him in 1878, and under his wise supervision a handsome rectory has been built, and Holy Mount Cemetery, a mile above the church, a most desirable location, has been laid out for its important uses.

SCHOOLS.

The Fourteenth Article of the "Agreement" made between the early settlers of East Chester is as

follows: "That provision be endeavored for education of children, and then encouragement be given unto any that shall take pains according to our former way of rating." In this language, no doubt, reference is made to the mode to which they had been accustomed, in their old Connecticut home, in providing for the collective instruction of their children. How far they were successful at the first in carrying out their desires does not appear. The erection of a school-house was not determined upon until 1683. The encouragement then given to Mr. Morgan Jones to be their school-master did not, it would seem, add any more to his haste to comply with their wishes than the call, three years previous, to be their minister.

In 1696, whoever may have been his predecessor, "Mr. Benjamin Collier" is admitted "to live in this town as scollmaster amongst us." Mr. Collier, from 1688 to 1692, had been high sheriff of Westchester County, and a resident of the town of Rye. In the following February an acre of land for a home-lot is voted him. At the meeting, however, which authorized this gift, the language, in which "a place for a school-house is excepted" from the order forbidding any more land being laid out half a mile above and half a mile below the country road, rather shows that a school-house had not yet been built.

The next record bearing upon the school history of the town is the appointment, in 1713, of Captain Joseph Drake and Jeremiah Fowler as "overseers of ye school in ye town." The Rev. John Bartow, writing to the Propagation Society in 1814, makes the suggestion that a youth, with an allowance of five pounds, be sent over to teach the children sometimes at Yonkers, sometimes at East Chester, and asserts that he knew the inhabitants would allow him twenty pounds more.¹

In 1726 it was agreed to vote at the public town-meeting (January 26th), "that there should be a lott of land laid out" "for to build a school-house thereon" "out of the comon" "which lyeth between the" "which goeth from the house wherein James Betty now lives in to Joshua Tompkins, from thence another road runs up to Isaac Treecheels, and from Isaac Treecheels another road down to James Bettys," "to be layed between the roads," "in length six rods and in breadth three rods." "Also, that on the lot" "should be a house built for the use aforesaid, twenty foot long and fourteen foot wide, and seven foot between joyntts in height." It was to be completed by the 1st of May next, and the expense to be paid by "Rate." Here, for upwards of one hundred and fifty years, with brief intervals excepted, the children of this portion of the town have attended school.

Two years afterward a Mr. Delpesch, who is mentioned by the clergyman of the parish (Dr. Standard)

¹ N. Y. MSS. from Archives at Fulham, vol. 1, p. 473-474.

as "very well adapted and fitted for that business, and as well spoken of as being diligent in it," is the schoolmaster in East Chester. His income from this engagement was "what the parents of the children taught do give."

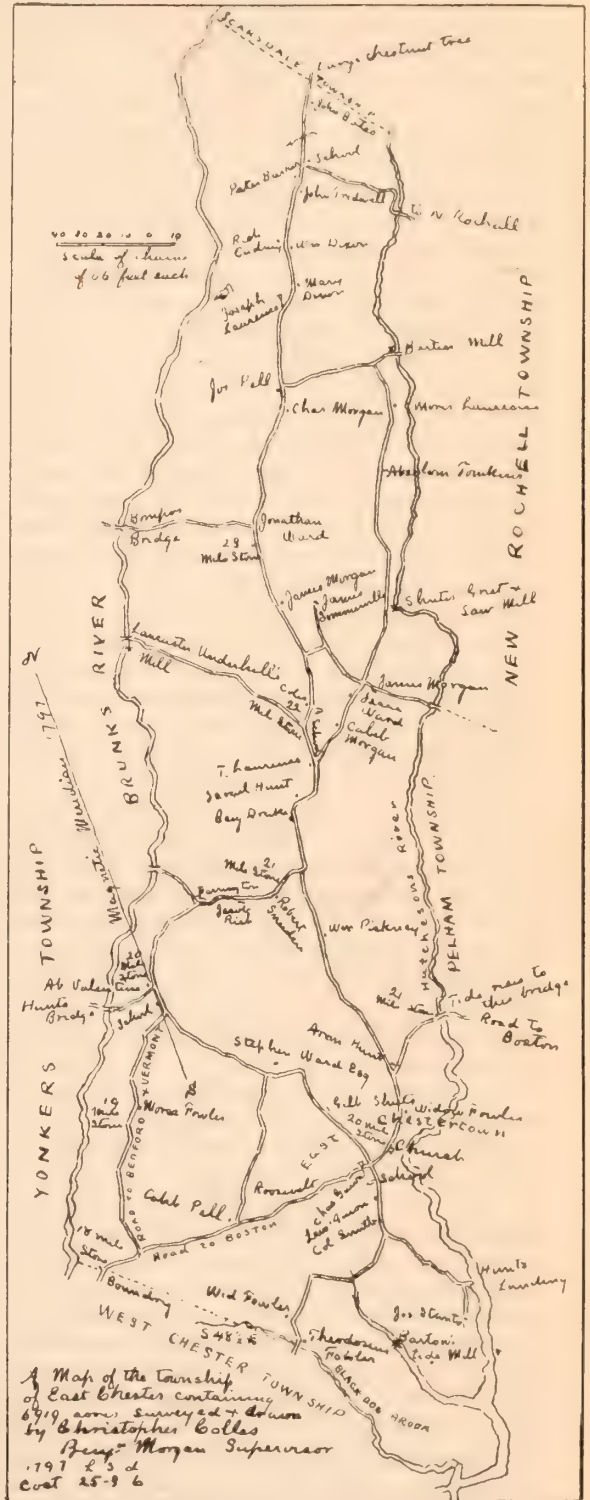
In this same year (1728) public provision is made for the instruction of the young in the upper part of the town. A lot is "laid out for a school-house in the woods, near the land of John Vail's," of six rods in length and four rods in breadth. On this lot a building, constructed for the purpose by private effort, was already standing, but how long before this we vainly seek. The action of the next year, in ordering that five pounds be paid "to those men which Buill ye School-House in ye woods by John Vail's, towards paying for ye Building said School-House," shows that the erection was of late occurrence, and was met by the prompt consideration of the town, especially after appropriating sixteen pounds towards the cost of the school-house in the village. These payments, however, were made feasible by the offers of Benjamin Drake and Edmund Ward to purchase certain lands for these sums, perhaps largely with a view to assist in this good work. Between this period and the Revolution a number of sums of money, coming in from rents and sales of land, are applied to school purposes.

It would appear¹ that the school-house in the lower part of the town was destroyed during the War for Independence, and that it was first determined (in 1787) to erect a new one on the Green, but that this resolve was changed three years afterward, when it was resolved that it should be built where it formerly stood, with the moneys obtained by subscription for that purpose, and placed first in the care of — Haviland, and, upon his decease, in the hands of Charles Guion.

As a matter of interest, the resolution of the town in 1795 is referred to, in which it is ordered "that the ground opposite Wm. Crawford's is not to be leased out, but to be left for an Academy."

By act of the Legislature, April 9, 1795, provision being made for the education of the children by an annual appropriation for five years, and for the election in each town of school commissioners, in the spring of 1796 William Crawford, Benjamin Morgan, Gilbert Shute, John Tredwell and Daniel Searing were chosen, who were, with the exception of Mr. Crawford, continued in the position until the expiration of the five years, Mr. James N. Roosevelt taking the place of Mr. Crawford. On a map of the town, of 1797, there is represented the locations of four schools in the town. The lower one is near Charles Guion's tavern; the middle one, on the White Plains road, near the corner of the road that sets off to New Rochelle, adjoining the present Infant Asylum grounds; the upper one, on the same road, half a mile below

Scarsdale; and the fourth, on the Bedford and Vermont road, near Hunt's Bridge. In 1800 it seems to



have been deemed advisable to remove the lower school-house, "to the hollow ground adjoining the

¹ Vide town minutes of April 6, 1784.

land of Marian Workman," which is presumed to have been a matter of but few feet.

We are without record of any action as to the schools of the town during the next twelve years. In the year 1812 the school trustees are allowed the money coming from the lease of the ground belonging to the lower school-house, and which had been heretofore paid to the Overseers of the poor. The trustees are henceforth to receive the rent of the same. In 1813, in compliance with the act of the Legislature of 1812, three School Commissioners and six Inspectors of schools are elected at town-meeting, and a resolution passed "to raise the sum equal to that the Commissioners receive for the Schools." In the act of 1795 an amount, one-half of that coming from the State, was raised. The act of 1812 now calls for an equal amount. The election of commissioners and inspectors was annually made at town-meeting until 1844, when a Superintendent of common schools was chosen instead. The following persons deserve mention for years of service, at this period, in behalf of the schools of the town: James Somerville, Dr. Peter Moulton, Benjamin H. Underhill, Augustus Lawrence and Israel Hunt.

At what time a division of the town into three districts took place can only be conjectured—probably under the provisions of the act of 1812, when, besides the Commissioners and Inspectors chosen by the town, there were also Trustees to be elected in charge of these divisions. In 1815 we have the reports of these trustees of the three districts up to the 1st day of April. It appears that the sum appropriated by the State to the town was \$126.74, and that the number of children in the town at the time (between the ages of five and fifteen) was two hundred and fifty-four, of whom one hundred and nine had been under instruction. In 1820 an improvement in the attendance is perceptible. In the report of the commissioners to the County Clerk the number of children in the town is two hundred and sixty-eight and the attendance one hundred and seventy.

Our school history will now be pursued under the headings of the titles of the several districts.

DISTRICT NUMBER ONE.—The school-house in this district, erected shortly after the Revolution, was replaced in 1836 by a new one, but on an adjoining site in the old school lot. An exchange of land with the town was made for the purpose. In 1852 a portion of the district was set off as a new one and named District Number Four. In 1855 the inhabitants of the district organized themselves under the provisions of the Union Free School Act. In 1878 a new school-house of brick was built on the road which is an extension of Fifth Avenue of the village of Mount Vernon. The building is ample and well planned and furnished. The old structure and site were sold. The present principal is Beekman Van Gaasbeck, who has held the position for seven and one-half years. The following are called to mind as his pre-

decessors: James Armstrong, Horace Martin, Orrin Sumner, Mr. — Smith, Moses F. Secord, William Dawson, Charles Pierce, — Woodbeck, Alexander Lane, — Hastings, James Crawford (1843-50, inclusive), Josiah C. Balsden, Edward S. Keeler (1855), Dexter E. Wilbur, James A. Purdy, A. O. Morrill, Mrs. — Webb, John Hauptman, Coleman Hazen, D. O. Quimby, N. W. Haight, I. S. Williams and L. Reynolds. The school library contains four hundred and sixty-five volumes. The present members of the Board of Education are Nathan Johnson, Frederick Hart, John G. Fay, John H. Davis, Thomas R. Hodge.

DISTRICT NUMBER TWO.—The educational interests of this district were carefully watched by Moses Drake, Caleb Morgan and Sheriff Townsend for the first twenty years of its separate existence, and several of the best instructors in the State were here employed. In or about 1835 the old frame school on the corner gave way to a pretty marble structure, erected on the west side of White Plains road, and immediately adjoining the property of Thomas Lawrence. The following persons are believed to have taught in the old school-house: B. Barnum, 1784, 1789; Henry Barry, 1786; John Rich, 1790; Samuel Young, 1790; Andrew Dean, 1792; Daniel Sniffen, 1794; John Thompson, 1799, 1807; James Forsyth, 1803; Mr. Warne, 1806; Elijah Horton, 1811; Samuel Powers, 1813; Seth Martin, Lewis H. Hobby (afterwards of the New York University Grammar School), 1818, 1819; Martha Boyd, 1819; Hary Finch, 1820 (Mr. Finch afterward took holy orders, and was for many years rector of Christ Church, Shrewsbury, N. J.); Joseph Jeffrey, 1821; Thomas Carroll, Mr. Martin, Mr. Stephen Remington.

In the marble school-house the following teachers are remembered: Joseph Perkins, Josiah Charles Balsden, Mr. — Jackson, Mr. Francis Meeker, Mr. Briggs, Mr. William C. Howe, Samuel Jelliff, Miss Hale, Mr. Marsh, Beekman Van Gaasbeck, Mr. Alby, Miss Sarah Odell, Miss Blair, Cornelius J. Dumond, David Tyson.

After the settlement of West Mount Vernon the trustees provided a small school-house for that neighborhood, and here for several years Mr. Lewis N. Clark taught with much acceptableness. In March, 1856, the district was divided, and a new one organized as District Number Five. On the 7th of December, 1867, District Number Two was formed into a Union Free School District. In the spring of 1869 the marble school-house was removed to Union Corners. The teachers at this school were Mrs. Sarah S. Lane, Miss Edith A. Merritt, Mrs. Elizabeth B. Merritt. In the following spring a site at Bronxville was presented by the Messrs. Dewitt, and a school-house there also erected. Mrs. Grace N. Sanford was placed in charge of this school which position she continues to hold with great favor.

In the fall of 1879 a school was started by the

trustees, in a rented house on Chester Hill, to meet the wants of that growing neighborhood. It has been since found advisable to erect on the White Plains road, not far from the original site, "near Vail's," a new and very beautiful school-house of brick and wood. The location is at about the same distance from Chester Hill and Union Corners, and will obviate the necessity of schools at those points.

Mrs. Edith Merritt was made principal of this school, in which she has just been succeeded by Miss Nettie Smith. Mr. Francis Bacon was secretary of the board from 1872 until 1885. The present members of the Board of Education are George J. Busted president, William H. Archer, Dr. Robert Taylor, F. W. Chivvis.

DISTRICT NUMBER THREE.—The number of children taught in this district in 1815 was twenty-three. It was at this time, and for a number of years subsequently, united with a portion of New Rochelle. John Bates, Isaac Burpo and Ransom Burtis appear to have taken much interest in the school interests of their neighborhood. They were assisted by fellow-trustees of New Rochelle, from which the largest number of the scholars came. Reports from the trustees of the district to the town commissioners are on file in the town clerk's office for the years 1822-34 inclusive with the exception of 1829, and give the impression that the school was regularly conducted, and that the children in the district though few in number, had excellent advantages. It would seem not at all unlikely that the sessions of the school, which were at first held in the school-house in East Chester, near Bates, were afterwards, for a while, conducted in the school-house near Cooper's Corner, New Rochelle. Mr. Horace Martin (in 1822), Mr. Charles Stewart (in 1827), Mr. Sanford (in 1830), Mr. Stewart, Mr. Carpenter, Mr. Charles Feeks, Mr. Daniel Little and Mr. ——— Spicer are remembered as having taught at this time. In 1858 or 1859 the district was organized into a Free School District. A school-house of marble from the quarries had just been built in the lower part of the district. The land was the gift of Fisher & Bird, New York. An upper and a lower school were from this time forward sustained.

The names of the following teachers of the two schools have been obtained :

<i>Upper School.</i>	<i>Lower School.</i>
Mr. Welsh.	Thomas Clark '71
Mr. Quinlan.	Bourke Cochran '73
Mr. Frederick Elliot.	Daniel McGlory '75
Mr. Jenning.	— Cleveland '80
Mr. Cook.	George W. Stewart '82
Mr. Trowbridge '75	Benjamin Black '83
Mr. Gamewell.	Martin W. Griffin '84
Mr. H. S. Young.	C. A. Barnett '85
Mr. Webster '73	
Mr. John S. Brown '81	
Mr. Martin Lovering.	

Mr. Charles V. Morgan was at one time sole trustee of this school. The following are at present the

members of the Board of Education, Ralph Coates president, John Fisher, James S. Young, Edward O'Reilly and Michael O'Reilly.

DISTRICT NUMBER FOUR.—This district was set off from Number One in the spring of 1852 by the action of the Supervisor, Town Clerk and Town Superintendent. Its first meeting was held on the 10th of June, when Egbert S. Manning was elected District Clerk and James W. Comstock, Samuel Munson and Edmund Hoole, Trustees. A second meeting was held in the same month, when the trustees were directed immediately to hire suitable apartments for school purposes and procure a teacher. Mr. John A. Graves was employed, and the school at first located on the second floor of the unfinished house of Mr. J. L. Guerin, on the corner of Fifth Avenue and Third Street, Mt. Vernon. In the fall it was removed to Journeau's Hall, Fifth Avenue and Fourth Street.

Mr. Graves is now a clergyman of the Protestant Episcopal Church, residing in Washington, D. C. His wife assisted him in the instruction of the children. In the early autumn of 1852 the erection of the new school-house was commenced. It was placed on the lot on Fourth Avenue, near Fourth Street, Mt. Vernon, which had been set apart for the purpose by the Industrial Association. By the 1st of January it was inclosed. In the spring of 1853, the upper floor being finished, the school was removed into the new building. At a meeting of the district, held in the winter, it was determined to obtain a special act of incorporation, which, on the 8th of June, was passed. It was entitled, "An Act to establish Free Schools in School District No. 4, in the town of East Chester, West Chester County." On the 15th of July, at a district meeting, the following persons were duly elected members of the Board of Education as required by the act: John F. Luther, John Stevens, William Hathaway, Samuel T. Jennings, F. C. Beschorman, David Demarest, James C. Stevens, Amos Cheeny and William H. Price. Mr. Stevens was elected president of the board. Not long after this organization the school building was completed, and better arrangements were secured.

On the 19th of December, 1859, a primary school, which was deemed necessary, was opened in hired apartments on Twelfth Avenue, and was placed under the care of Mrs. William Atkinson. In 1862, at an expense of one thousand dollars, the old school building was greatly enlarged. Another change, giving additional accommodation, was made in 1869. In the spring and summer of 1870 two new buildings were put up—one on Tenth Avenue for the primary school in that neighborhood; the other, also for younger children, at Washingtonville. Each school has two rooms, and will accommodate about one hundred pupils. In 1873 an amendment of the act of 1853 was secured. In 1877 it was determined to build a new school-house, and lots were obtained on Fifth Avenue and Second Street for the purpose. The building

is of three stories, with a frontage of ninety feet and a depth of one hundred and thirteen feet, and was erected at a cost of fifty-five thousand dollars. The rooms are ample, and have all the modern school appliances.

The following citizens have been Presidents of the Board since Mr. Stevens: George W. Cooper, J. Q. A. Butler, R. S. Hatfield, Jacob Labagh, Noah S. Whitlock, David Quackenbush, Samuel T. Jennings, John H. Zabriskie, J. S. Gregory, M.D., Thomas M. Taylor, who is the present presiding officer. Mr. Zabriskie for seventeen years occupied the position. A list of the principals of the school is also presented: John A. Graves, June, 1852; John Oakley, September, 1853; W. L. V. Bard, April 1, 1857; J. F. Wright, July 1, 1857; W. H. Bailey, January 1, 1859; John A. Nichols, September 1, 1861; Beekman Van Gaasbeck, January 1, 1864; Joseph S. Wood, January 1, 1865 (Mr. Wood's protracted labors were attended with marked success); M. L. Cook, October, 1875; and Charles E. Nichols, the present excellent incumbent, April 1, 1876. Mr. Nichols is assisted by twenty female teachers. It will show the steady growth of this school by stating that the average attendance in 1859 was 239; in 1880, 550; in 1884, 734; in March, 1885, 850. The school is possessed of a library of two thousand seven hundred and seventy-eight books. As a matter of interest in the history of this school, it may not be amiss to state that the celebrated Adelina Patti was at one time a pupil of this school. At a trustee meeting, in a debate over a school examination, the following language was used: "It is said that there was not time! Why! a young Italian opera girl (Miss Patti) was there, and took up a large portion of the time playing on the piano."¹ The following citizens of this district are now members of the Board of Education: John Irwin, S. B. Carlisle, Henry Huss, A. F. Gescheidt, J. R. Johnson, J. H. Jenkins, B. W. Tilton, W. McD. Halsey.

DISTRICT NUMBER FIVE.—At a meeting in March, 1856, of the inhabitants of School District Number Two, residing in West Mount Vernon and vicinity, it was resolved to form a new school district, which, being accomplished, an organization under the Union Free School Act was determined upon, and the following persons elected trustees of the district, henceforth to be called Number Five: George Archer, Benedict Stern, C. Gunther, E. Cappelman, George A. Cassabeer and F. Selchow. From this time the school seems to have prospered under its various teachers, and with the increase of the population, several additions were made to the old school-house. These, however, failed to meet the growing want of room, and accordingly, in 1876, a large brick school-house was built, which was finished and opened with appropriate exercises in February, 1877. In

this building, which is eighty feet front by fifty feet deep and two stories high, with two extensions, each ten feet by twenty-five, there is space for nine classrooms, each twenty-one feet by twenty-five, with a large hall, eighty feet in length, all well ventilated and with proper provision for heating. The building cost seventeen thousand three hundred and fifty-nine dollars. The following are the names of those who have been Presidents of the Board of Education and of those who have been Principals of the school:

Presidents.

George Archer	
Thomas Oakley	1867
H. Trede	1868
Bernard Hufnagel	1869
John Zillig	1870-77
George E. Fuechsel	1879
John L. Huss	1880
George C. Apel	1882
George H. Brown	1883
James L. Morgan	1884
Otto Hufeland	1885

Principals.

Theodore Bradley	1856
George Hyde	1856
William C. Smith	1856
S. G. Mead	1857
R. E. Paddock	1859
H. T. Duensing	1859
Henry Christman	December, 1862
Mary E. Spinning	December, 1868
Oran Baxter	November, 1868
L. Reynolds	June, 1869
H. T. Duensing	September, 1869
Charles O. Hurlburt	November, 1871
James Hall	1872
Henry C. Apel	1875
A. H. Hart	1875
B. Frank Taylor	1876

There are seven hundred books in the library. The average attendance last year was three hundred and fifty; in 1881, three hundred; in 1886, three hundred and eighty-five.

The following gentlemen, beside Mr. Hufeland, are the present members of the Board of Education: Henry Rudolph, W. C. Wilkin, James L. Morgan, George C. Appell and John Zillig.

The account thus presented of the instruction of the children of the town under public auspices must now be supplemented by a brief notice of the private schools which, in their day, have been useful and prosperous.

MR. JOHN OAKLEY'S SELECT BOARDING AND DAY SCHOOL, for boys and girls, was established by him, April, 1857, at his residence on Tenth Avenue, near Second Street, in the village of Mt. Vernon, and for more than twenty years enjoyed a high degree of popularity. Mr. Oakley was a scholar of large and varied attainments. An excellent instructor himself, he also engaged, from time to time, the most competent assistants, both male and female. Mr. Oakley survived his retirement from his profession barely a year. His death occurred in 1880.

CHESTERHORPE.—An English, French and German boarding and day-school for young ladies was

¹ *Mt. Vernon Gazette*, September 29, 1855.

started in Ninth Avenue, Mount Vernon, in 1871, by Mrs. Anne Vermilye, and for several years was conducted with marked ability and great advantage to the neighborhood.

The Misses Lockwood's school, which has within a year or two been started, and which has met with marked success, is also here noticed, with the full confidence that the promise of increasing usefulness which is indicated by its present flourishing condition will be more than realized.

MANUFACTURING AND MECHANICAL INTERESTS.

Among the early settlers of East Chester were several mechanics—as John Emery, a smith; Moses Jackson, a weaver; John Jackson, a carpenter—who appear to have followed their vocations in the town, much appreciated. A town-meeting resolution of 1672 describes the first two “as endeavoring to carry on their Trades for our comforts according unto rational endeavors,” and guarantees “that if God take them or either of them away by disease that their heirs shall enjoy their inheritance without any molestation as from assoshat.” Still earlier, in 1670, we find John Jackson building the mill on Rattlesnake Creek for the town.

This mill was near the Westchester highway, a connecting road being soon laid out, since called “The Mill Road,” on which is a piece of wild and beautiful scenery. This mill, no doubt, answers to Wright's Mill of a later date, vestiges of which are discovered at the ice pond at the rear of Odell's tavern. The keeping up the running of this mill seems to have been one of the early anxieties of the town. It is thought not at all unlikely that when, in 1676, a subscription loan of twenty-two pounds is made up to induce John Embury to become the “smith,” the person indicated is John Emery, who evidently had been obliged to remove, finding the supply of his immediate wants of more consequence to him than the generous provision made for his family after his death.

The subscription, however, served, if at all, only a temporary purpose, for in 1679 the inhabitants are making overtures to John Taylor, of Woodbridge, and by liberal offers engage him as their miller. Three acres of upland and two of meadow are set apart for this smith, who agrees “to grind the corn which comes first to the mill, and in scarcity of water to grind onldy for the inhabitants of East Chester, for the sixteenth parte towell of wheat and the twelfth parte Indian Corn, and to pay twenty-eight pounds at or before the 25th day of December next.” This arrangement, however, seems to have fallen through and in November of the next year (1680) the mill is sold to Samuel Goding, with a “covenant concerning keepin the mill and grinding our corn.” Six years afterwards Thomas Norton's land is said to be adjacent to “Goding's Mill.” In November, 1682, Thomas Smith and Jeames Right are admitted to be inhabit-

ants and are encouraged by gifts of land, conditioned upon their continuance in the place and their pursuance of their trades, “the first being a smith, the second a boatman.”

In the spring of that same year a piece of upland had been granted, evidently without result, to “Gabrielle Linch,” on condition that he carry on his trade of a smith.

In 1685 Edward Gilliam, another smith, is solicited to come into the town and carry on his trade, and is promised the accommodation of upland and meadow, as formerly provided, and in case he shall continue seven years or die within that period in this place, then the upland and meadow shall be his, his heirs and successors forever. The same offer is made in 1692 to Robert Lellhance, and in 1693 to Robert Stiner, both smiths.

On the 30th of December, 1692, Edward Avery, tanner and shoemaker, is engaged to carry on his trades for the term of three years, and is granted a home-lot of three acres. In 1698 Avery is allowed the use of the water or brook on the north part of the town for “to water his hides in for the term of Three years, he yearly paing to penc, If it be demanded.” In 1703 Avery is granted two acres of land at fifteen shillings an acre.

In 1708 it was agreed that Lewis Guion should have the common meadow that was laid out for a smith, so long as he shall follow the said trade in the town of East Chester.

In 1694 a committee is appointed concerning the setting up and carrying on a saw-mill, “and the conveaniancey or unconveaniancey of and for the said saw-mill.” It would seem that permission was given by the town in 1696 to Colonel Heathcote to build a mill or mills on Hutchinson's River or Creek, and that a formal covenant had been executed, but that John Pell would not consent; upon which the town, unwilling to lose the advantage, offer Colonel Heathcote the privilege of building the mills upon Rattlesnake Brook Creek and promise, on condition of the erection of such within eighteen months, that they will release him from his old obligation, and that a new covenant shall be drawn up by both parties. Privileges of this kind continue to be given—as in 1717 to Thomas Nichols, and as in 1727 to Aaron Owen, who may build a fulling or grist-mill upon Rattlesnake Brook, not “intruding on any grant before made by the town.”

Permissions were also granted to construct mills at Fisher's Landing and at the town landing, then called Silleck's Landing; but it is believed that the structures contemplated were not erected. A mill, however, was built about one hundred years afterward, in 1826,¹ at Fisher's Landing (near Lockwood's Bridge), which remained there but a few years, being destroyed by fire. It is curious to note, however, the care

¹ Vide act of Legislature, 1826.

shown in the early grant that the navigation of the creek here should not be interfered with a—"passage-way" "sufficient" for "cannoes to pass" is to be provided. So in the Act of 1800, authorizing the building of the turnpike road, a draw-bridge is called for over the creek at this landing.

But perhaps the greatest advantage obtained in this part of the town was the construction of the mill since called "Bartow's" and Reid's Mill," at Sanders' Landing, by Thomas Shute and Joseph Stanton, in 1739. The articles of agreement between these persons represent them as having meadow lying on each side of Rattlesnake Creek, and bind them jointly for the expenses of construction, repair and care of the mill, and guarantee to each an equal share in the profits; and in case of the determination of either party to sell his share, give the other party the first right of purchasing it. Mr. Shute, in 1742, disposed of his share to Henry Tippitt.¹ In 1759 the mill and other buildings were the property of Dr. Thomas Wright, who sold them to Adolph Waldron "Boulter," who, in 1766, sold to John Bartow, and he, in 1790, to John Reid,² father of Robert Reid, the last miller.

Referring again to concessions of the town, we find it in 1721 granting the privilege to Thomas Oakley to construct mills upon the Bronx, a mile from the north boundary of the town. Eight years after, for his encouragement to keep this mill for the public advantage, a gift of land is made to him.

The fine water-power on the Bronx at what is called Bronxville has, for more than a hundred years, made this an interesting point for its manufacturing value. Here for many years Lancaster Underhill and his sons carried on a grist and saw-mill and a factory for the carding of wool. Some forty years ago it came into the hands of Mr. James P. Swain and was then known as Bronx Mill. Mr. Swain used it as a grist-mill and a screw and axle manufactory. The building, which is still standing, is described as of stone, four stories high and in dimensions forty feet by eighty feet.

A short distance below this on the Bronx, say one-quarter of a mile, is Mr. Frederick W. Kraft's piano and glove leather factory, in which, with twenty men employed, some fifteen to twenty thousand dollars' worth of goods are annually turned out. Mr. Kraft has been here since 1880.

The mills on Hutchinson River, in the northeast part of the town, have also, for at least ninety years, been in working order. In 1797 they are spoken of as Burtis' and Shute's Mills, and some fifty years after as the "saw and grist mills of John Tompkins and Stephen Anderson."³ A rope and cord manufactory was at one time also carried on here by Mr. Anderson.

On the Bronx, near the old Hunt's Bridge, Mr. F. W. Weiss has a glue factory, which he first started

at Johnstown, Pennsylvania, but removed to East Chester in 1852. This business, with its five buildings, takes up about one and a half acres. Employment is given to six workmen, and about fifteen thousand dollars' worth of material is annually placed upon the market. The glue is said to be the purest manufactured.

The factory of Mr. James Wilkinson, also in the western part of the town, is a large four-story building, sixty by thirty feet in size, with an extension, and in it, for seventeen years past, has been carried on the manufacture of black and shell jewelry, combs and other useful articles from raw horn, vulcanized rubber and tortoise shell. From thirty to fifty hands are frequently employed, the greater part of whom are skilled artisans.

It is now seventy years since the value of the quarries upon the land of Jonathan Ward came to be appreciated. Mr. James Mocherie, having purchased of Mr. Ward in 1823, began, with Mr. Francis Kain, getting out stone for buildings. Mr. Abijah Morgan was soon associated with Mr. Kain. Among the very first edifices erected in New York City, for which this quarry furnished material, was the small but very pretty Tradesman's Bank, on Chatham Street. The stone was carted to East Chester Landing, and thence by sloop to the place of destination. The Sub-Treasury in Wall Street, the City Hall in Brooklyn, the General Post-Office in Washington, the Custom-House in New Orleans, and numerous private residences, were built of East Chester marble. It is said that enough marble has been taken from these quarries to build whole cities. To the edifices is to be added a vast number of monuments, notable among which, as one of the oldest and most conspicuous, is that of Thomas Addis Emmett, in St. Paul's Churchyard in New York City. The quarries passed into the hands of A. Gilbert Morgan and Alexander Masterton, then to James Hall and Alexander Masterton, and at the death of Mr. Masterton, his son, John M., succeeded to his place in the firm. At the death of Mr. Hall, Mr. John M. Masterton became sole owner. The continuation of the vein of marble northward has occasioned other quarries to be opened on the line above. After the construction of the Harlem Railroad, connection was made with the quarry yards, and the stone has since been carried away by rail. It is a matter of pleasurable interest to recall the names of four of the schooners engaged in transporting the stone,—the "Eliza Miller," the "Charming Sally," the "Miller's Damsel" and "Henrietta Jane,"—and also of the two brothers, still living, citizens of East Chester, who were in command of one or other of these vessels, Captains James and Gilbert Barker.

In 1857 an association was formed by enterprising citizens of Mount Vernon to erect a building with steam-power, to be available for manufacturing purposes. The corner-stone was laid on the 4th of July, Richard Atkinson, George Archer and John B. Bren-

¹ Book of Westchester County Deeds, vol. G, p. 488.

² Book of Deeds: Book H, p. 162 and 166, and L, p. 42.

³ Bolton's "History of Westchester County," vol. I, p. 162.

nan being the building committee. It is of three stories, and thirty-six feet high, and its ground floor dimensions are twenty-five by eighty feet.

Its first use was during the Civil War, when Johnston & Dow occupied it for the manufacture of cartridges, for which they had contracts with the government. At the time of the draft riots this building was in imminent danger, and the citizens were armed to defend it.

From January 1, 1865 to April 1, 1869, this building was in possession of Benjamin W. Tilton, as a carriage factory. The vehicles turned out from this establishment were of superior workmanship, and equal to the best in the New York market. Velocipedes for country roads were also manufactured here.

For six or seven years Harrison, Bradford & Co. used this building as a pen factory. Seventy-five persons were under employ, and three hundred thousand gross of pens of every shape and size were annually produced.

The building belongs at this date (1885) to Mr. J. W. Nichols, who, from 1882, has carried on in it the manufacture of straw and felt hats from the imported braid and raw. One hundred hands are employed. Mr. Nichols makes his own shapes and patterns, and turned out last Spring two thousand cases of goods.

In 1858 Mr. Edmund Hoole erected a building on Fourth Avenue, where now stands the Masonic Hall, in which he established a factory for the manufacture of duplex checks and railroad stamps, for each of which he had his own patents. Mr. Hoole met with great success in his business, and eventually removed it to New York.

In Spafard's Gazetteer of 1824 it is stated that 2735 yards of cloth were manufactured in East Chester in the year 1821.

MILITARY HISTORY OF THE TOWN.—The position of the early settlers in East Chester was one of extreme danger. The memory of the massacres at Throgg's Neck and Pelham was calculated to keep up their apprehensions. Under no mere fancy, then, did they unite with Westchester in an organization for defense. The following order of Governor Andross, dated November 25, 1675, presents the fact of the existence of a military company in this vicinity, and its absolute necessity. The order is addressed to the captain (Osburn), and is as follows: "By the Governor's order I am to inform you that, considering the distance of East Chester from your town and the competent number of men ther . . . have thought good to appoint a Lieut. ther, who is to be a second Lieut. to your company, and doth not thinke it conveniant for the tow towns to be called togeather so as to leave either of them destitute of men but upon very extraordinary occasion, so that each may Train in their own Town. the person pitched upon by the Governor is the old Lieut. Will Haiden, to whom I will take care to send a comishon as soune as pose-

bell I can."¹ It is evident that Haiden, who was one of the three original patentees of East Chester, and whose house was fortified, that it might, "by God's help and Blessing, answer our Honorable Governor's order and our preservation," had, at the organization of the militia, been made Lieutenant, but had resigned. He was now reappointed, and afterward, at the formation of a separate company at East Chester, became its leader. In the town minutes in 1681 he is entitled Captain, and no doubt held the position from fifteen to twenty years. It was during the time of his command that, with seventy men, he marched* to New York to assist Leisler and joined with him and others in signing the bold declaration of their fealty to the Protestant faith. He was succeeded in office by his Lieutenant, John Drake. In 1700, in a report of the strength of the militia in the province of New York, a foot company in the town of East Chester is mentioned with the following officers: John Drake, Captain; Joseph Drake, Lieutenant; Henry Tower, Ensign. In 1710, in a list of sixty-one of the male inhabitants of East Chester between the ages of sixteen and sixty liable to military duty, Captain John Drake is the leading name.

As in 1711, and frequently afterwards in the town minutes, Joseph Drake is styled Captain, it is plain that he must at this time have succeeded his older brother John in this position. He was in all likelihood followed by William Pinkney, whose tombstone is in St. Paul's Church-yard, inscribed with this title "Capt. Will Pinkney." He died in 1755, aged seventy-five years. In 1745 we have in the town minutes the name of John Fowler the fourth time, elected Supervisor, but who is now for the first time as subsequently, graced with the prefix Captain. Mr. Fowler doubtless held his military command for a number of years.

At this time the Regiment in Westchester County is reported to have one hundred and thirty officers and one thousand one hundred and forty-six men, and the military interest must have been largely awakened. In the wars with the French on the English colonial borders, in the middle of the eighteenth century, and which involved much anxiety and enthusiasm in the Province of New York, Westchester County did her part, and the names of her inhabitants appear numerous on the muster-rolls, and East Chester is found not behind other towns in her devotion.

In the muster-roll (April 20, 1758) of the Company of one hundred and twenty men, of which Jonathan Fowler, of East Chester, is Captain; and in the rolls Captains Verplanck (1758), Ogden (1758), Haight (1759), Bayeux (1760) and Stevens (1762), the names of the following natives of East Chester are found:

Name.	Age.
Gilbert Shute, sergeant	24
John Bates, sergeant	24

¹ Town minutes, Bk. 1, p. 23 or 24.

Nathaniel Appleby, sergeant	23
John Crookson, corporal	23
John Steves	27
William Johnson	17
Esther Noyes	21
Joseph Aspendall	21
Barley Fowler	20
John Pinkney, sergeant	54
Peter Rozel	20
Robert Stivers	25
Richard Besser	40
Jeremiah Fowler	32
Gabriel Yeomans	18
Peter Williams	24
Richard Stivers	21
Isaac Briggs	19
Robert Stevens	23

and the name of Mark Christian is to be added, who, though a native of Boston, is recognized as one thoroughly identified with the town.

In 1773 a large regiment of twenty-nine companies is in the county, each with its Captain, two Lieutenants and an Ensign.

At the commencement of the Revolutionary proceedings in Westchester County, the following persons, residents of East Chester, were chosen as officers of a company in full sympathy with the uprising: Stephen Sneden, captain; Thomas Pinkney, first lieutenant; Daniel Searing, second lieutenant; and William Pinkney, ensign.

Their commissions were issued September 20, 1775, but Captain Sneden and Lieutenant Searing having in the next spring been transferred to duty as members of the committee for the county, the officership was recast, and Thomas Pinkney became Captain; William Pinkney, first Lieutenant; John Sneden, second Lieutenant; and William Reed, Ensign.¹

There appears to have been no restriction upon the preferences for this or that company or regiment in those enlisting in the Continental army. Theodosius Fowler, connected with a New York City regiment, it is stated on the evidence of an eye-witness, was engaged with success in recruiting duty in East Chester, among his old neighbors and relatives.² Strong feeling on this subject of freedom of choice in enlistment was exhibited. James Willis, a lieutenant of the New Rochelle company, swears that he was present with his command on the 22d of July, at East Chester, when the south part of Colonel Drake's regiment was called out; that he was summoned into Mr. Forbes' house to meet the rest of the officers; that he heard several of the militia say that they would rather fight on that "Green" till they were dead than to go under officers they did not like.³

While the Revolutionists were thus active, combinations were also being formed in aid of the forces of

the mother country. The Queen's Rangers, a regiment of Loyalists brought together in 1776, was composed, for the most part, of those "who had already been exiled for their attachment to the British Government, and who now acted upon the firmest principles in its defense."⁴ Many of its recruits were from this neighborhood. John Ward, son of Edmund Ward, of East Chester, was an officer in this regiment, and also Captain Solomon Fowler, son of Moses Fowler. Both are described as brave and gallant men. Captain Fowler was killed in an attack on Horse Neck, but Mr. Ward survived the war and settled in New Brunswick.

The troop of Lieutenant-Colonel Emerich's Dragoons was largely recruited from this county,—“inlisted to serve His Majesty King George the Third in the above-mentioned corps of Provincial Chasseurs, and doth acknowledge to have heard read unto him the second and sixth sections of the Articles of War against mutiny and desertion, and took the oath of fidelity mentioned in the Articles of War.”

During the seven years of the war, East Chester was the scene of continued excitement and of much distress—the centre “of the famous ‘Neutral Ground’ of History, Romance and Song.”

Friday, the 18th of October, 1776, was a day of great anxiety in East Chester. The British progress from Rodman's Neck, disputed, as it was, by Colonel Glover with six regiments all the way to Pell's Bridge, was, no doubt, watched with intense interest on this side of the Hutchinson River. The loss in this skirmish was very heavy. The Americans returned to their camp at Hunt's Bridge, while the Royalist army pitched its tents on the Pelham flats, not, however, until it had deposited its sick and wounded in the yet unfinished stone church, nor if the tradition in the Van Cortlandt family be correct, until after a grand evening parade on the Green. A halt was made for a few days, and then the English forces passed on to New Rochelle.

In February, 1777, it was deemed necessary by the Continental army to remove or destroy all the grain and forage in the town of East Chester and neighborhood, to prevent its falling into the hands of the enemy. A skillful disposition of the troops was, therefore, made in order to effect this without hindrance. Five hundred of the Connecticut line were stationed along the Old Post road, between East Chester village and the junction of that road with the road from White Plains.⁵ The New York troops, three hundred and fifty in number, were ranged from Ward's house (where is now Judge Gifford's residence) down to Benjamin Drake's (the old house on the westerly side of the White Plains road, above what is now called Sageman's Corner.) The remainder of the Connecticut troops were placed at Tuckahoe (the

¹ Calendar of Hist. MSS., vol. i. pp. 158, 257, 632.

² Captain Theodosius Fowler, who was the son of Jonathan Fowler, was in the service from the spring of 1776 to the close of the contest, not being absent during that whole period more than fifty days. He was in numerous battles from Long Island to Yorktown. He died in New York City, but is buried in the family vault at East Chester.

³ Calendar of Hist. MSS., vol. i. p. 445.

⁴ Simcoe's Journal, p. 19; Moore's "Diary of the Revolution," p. 808; Sabine's "Hist. of American Loyalists," p. 674.

⁵ Where Mr. John W. Hawxhurst now lives.

order says "Turkehole"). A company was also sent to Wright's Mills, which, it is believed, must have been the mill near Stephen Odell's tavern. The effort was entirely successful. The attack made on Ward's house on the night of the 17th of March was, no doubt, a sequel of this. A detachment of the Royalists, under Captains Brandon and Campbell, overtaking a raiding party which had halted at this house, killed between forty and fifty in the fight, and took twenty-seven prisoners. Captain Campbell was himself killed, the most desperate part of this affair being the hand-to-hand struggle on the stairs.

Just outside the village of East Chester Colonel Aaron Burr, at a later period, tried to intercept General Tryon on his return from an expedition to Greenwich, but failed, not, however, without recovering a large quantity of cattle and other plunder. The Ward house was the scene of another attack of the British, in November, 1778, who had determined to tear it down and use the material in the construction of huts for the soldiers during the coming winter. The building was entirely destroyed.

On Friday, the 28th of May, 1779, the right column of a new encampment of the British forces was placed in East Chester, in all likelihood along the Mile Square road, but extending down to the creek. The left column was at the Philipse house, Yonkers. The regiments at East Chester were the Queen's Rangers, the Legion, the Seventh and the Sixty-third Foot.¹

It would seem that at one time and another small detachments of either of the opposing armies were billeted in the village of East Chester. Colonel Emmerich, for lengthened periods, made his Headquarters at the house of William Fowler, near Quion's tavern.

The sufferings of the inhabitants of this town, in consequence of the presence or proximity of the two hostile forces, cannot but be here recalled.

The English Governor, writing home, says: "On my reviewing, the 4th inst. . . such part of the militia of Westchester County . . . upwards of five hundred men, . . . I could not think it expedient at that time to invite them to take up arms, or to petition the King's commissioners, as either measure at that period would, on the removal of the troops, bring down instant *destruction to their properties and families*. Indeed, what with the conflagrations of the rebels and the marauding of both armies, the inhabitants of that country are *reduced to great distress*."²

The reorganization of the militia of the State of New York, which took place in 1786, and which called, with certain restrictions, for the enlistment of all the able-bodied men of the State, made provision also from the very first for voluntary uniformed companies of infantry, artillery and cavalry. A troop of horse under command of Captain John Mondue, was in

Westchester County in 1787, and into it, on the 15th of November, Isaac Ward, of East Chester, enlisted as appears by a certificate signed by Jacob M. Vermilye, colonel. This troop is supposed to be the same with the Westchester Light Horse which, commanded by Major Pintard, in 1789, escorted Vice-President John Adams from the Connecticut line to King's Bridge, and possibly may have been that troop which at an earlier date, accompanied Governor George Clinton from East Chester into New York City, at its evacuation by the English forces. The Second Regiment of Horse Artillery, of which Peter Underhill, of Tuckahoe, was Major in 1820, and afterwards Colonel, had several companies in Westchester County.

In 1827, Mathias Warner was in command of the company or troop with which Nathaniel P. Ogden, a well-known citizen, at first of Pelham and afterward of East Chester, connects himself, the enlistment requiring him to have "the complete uniform of his Troop." In 1831, however, Mr. Ogden was made Quartermaster of the Twelfth Regiment, Fifteenth Brigade, and Fourth Division of Infantry. A few years after this, John R. Hayward, of this town, became Colonel of the Regiment of Light Horse, having on his staff as surgeon, Doctor G. B. Weed, and as quartermaster, Peter I. Sherwood, both of which gentlemen at the time resided in East Chester. The company to which the ordinary troopers from East Chester at this time belonged was under command of Captain Newberry Halstead, of Rye, who, upon Colonel Hayward's resignation it was earnestly desired should succeed him. The failure to elect Captain Halstead, which caused great disappointment, led eventually to the disruption of the regiment.

The companies of infantry in the southern part of Westchester County appear to have made up the then numbered Twelfth Regiment, and the requisite strength of several, if not all, of them appears to have been obtained by uniting the men, liable to duty in two or more towns, under one command. Under such circumstances, the trainings were anticipated if not welcomed, as scenes of much exhilaration and excitement. The Green in front of St. Paul's Church at East Chester appears to have been frequently the place of rendezvous. That was an evil hour to Marcus Christian, sexton of the church, when he involved himself in the sin of sacrilege by "selling licure in the Belfree of the Church on a Training day."

"Whereupon," says the Minute-Book of the trustees, May 7, 1791, "they did agree that he was not worthy to keep the kee of the Church or to be employed as Sexton, upon which he delivered the kee and was dismissed the said service."

When the War of 1812 invoked the active duty of the citizens of East Chester, the response was the muster into the service of the General Government of a full local organization, Abijah Morgan being the Captain of the company and Thomas Oakley its Lieutenant. The duty assigned was the defense of the

¹ Letters of General Pattison, New York Historical Society Publications.

² N. Y. Col. MSS., vol. viii., p. 692, London Doc. xlvi.

Long Island and Westchester County shores. After the war the old combinations appear again, for in 1820 we find Mr. Morgan as Lieutenant under Captain Maurice Griffin, of New Rochelle.

About ten years after this, some of the more ardent and patriotic young men of the town attached themselves to one or the other of the two uniformed companies of infantry of Yonkers and New Rochelle. The New Rochelle organization was styled the "Cadets," and the Yonkers the "Benton Guards," Lancaster U. Tompkins being the First Lieutenant of the former body and Lancaster O. Underhill First Lieutenant of the latter; these gentlemen were residents of East Chester. For a dozen years these companies awakened much enthusiasm in the County, but the interest eventually so diminished that they were at last discharged. After this for a long period the martial spirit was lying dormant. In 1857 a company of Germans, with Ludwig Jetter as Captain, Otto Wigand as First Lieutenant, and John Begelspacher as Second Lieutenant, was formed in the town, and became Company E. of the Seventeenth Regiment of Infantry, of which Edward Pye was Colonel, and John P. Jenkins Lieutenant-Colonel. At the commencement of the Civil War this company offered its aid to the government, and did duty at Fortress Monroe. Captain Jetter was succeeded in 1864 by John C. Gebman, who continued in command until the summer of 1868, when the company was mustered out of the State service. Its armory was at East Mount Vernon.

The numerous State military organizations which followed and which are now recalled were characterized by remarkable intelligence and vigor, and were made up of material as good for its purpose as could be desired.

COMPANY C, SEVENTEENTH REGIMENT, NATIONAL GUARD, was formed October 27, 1863, with forty-six members, and Wm. S. McClellan as Captain, Abraham C. Beardsley as First Lieutenant, and Wm. H. Van Cott as Second Lieutenant. This company did duty during the Rebellion in the forts in New York Harbor. Its armory was at Union Hall, Sixth Avenue and First Street, Mount Vernon. Mr. John G. Fay, in 1867, and Mr. Robert A. Dimmick, in 1868, were Captains of this company. It was disbanded with its Regiment in August, 1868.

COMPANY I, SEVENTEENTH REGIMENT, NATIONAL GUARD, was organized September 24, 1867. Captain John G. Fay of Company C., was elected, September 28th, as Captain. The First Lieutenant was Mr. E. A. Rockwood, and the Second Lieutenant Mr. William H. H. Barker. This company was mustered out of the service August 27, 1868. Its armory was at Union Hall, Mount Vernon.

COMPANY B, THIRD AND TWENTY-SEVENTH REGIMENTS NATIONAL GUARD, was organized June 14, 1870, when Capt. John C. Gebman was chosen commander. Capt. Gebman, however, having been

promoted to the Commissariat of the Third Regiment, Mr. Henry Huss was elected Captain in his stead. The armory of this company was at Washington Hall, Mt. Vernon. At the execution of Isaac N. Buckhout, in 1872, at White Plains, this company was placed in charge of the prison. When the Third Regiment was disbanded, Company B. was transferred to the new Twenty-seventh Regiment, at which time, Capt. Huss having been promoted to be Lieutenant-colonel of that regiment, Lieut. Joseph Martz was elected to the vacant position. Lieut. Marz did not accept. The following gentlemen were in succession afterward in command of this company: William Wolcott, George H. Thompson and Emil Cardezo. This company was under arms ten days during the railroad riots of 1877. It was mustered out of the service December 27, 1878.

COMPANY C, THIRD AND TWENTY-SEVENTH REGIMENTS NATIONAL GUARD was organized in June, 1870, when Mr. James B. Spicer was elected Captain. The company had its armory at Washington Hall. In June, 1872, Captain Spicer resigning, Lieut. Franklin T. Davis was chosen to succeed him. Company C was on duty with the Third Regiment at the execution, at White Plains, of Isaac N. Buckhout. At the disbanding of the Third Regiment this company became part of the Twenty-seventh Regiment, when Mr. William C. Broughton was chosen Captain, December 16, 1873. In February, 1876, this company was consolidated with Company B.

COMPANY E, THIRD AND TWENTY-SEVENTH REGIMENTS NATIONAL GUARD, was organized June 27, 1870. Mr. Bernard Hufnagel was elected its captain and remained in command until the company connected itself with the Twenty-seventh Regiment, in 1873. Lieut. John W. Coburn was then elected Captain. Captain Coburn, in 1876, was promoted Major, and Lieut. Louis Hagman was chosen Captain. The armory was at first at Scheuerman's Hotel, and next at Oster's, Mt. Vernon. The public service rendered by Company E was, besides the duty performed with the Third Regiment at White Plains, the watch for ten days under arms at its armory in the railroad riots of 1877. This company was disbanded with the Twenty-seventh Regiment, in 1878.

COMPANY D, THIRD AND TWENTY-SEVENTH REGIMENTS NATIONAL GUARD.—This company ranked next to Company A, of Morrisania, in the Third Regiment, as to date of organization (Company A being the Color Company). Capt. Edward Carroll was the first commander of Company D, and held this commission until May, 1873. The armory was at Temperance Hall, in Waverley, a village in the upper part of the town. At Buckhout's execution this company was stationed at the east end of the jail. In 1873 it became part of the Twenty-seventh Regiment, at which time it elected Mr. Allan Hay its Captain. He held this position until the fall of 1876. The company after this was under the com-

mand of First Lieut. Thomas O. Reilly and Second Lieut. Thomas M. Swain until disbanded in 1878.

It is proper here to state that the Colonels of both the Third and Twenty-seventh Regiments, Colonel John G. Fay and Colonel John T. Underhill, were residents of East Chester.

ELEVENTH SEPARATE COMPANY INFANTRY, NATIONAL GUARDS NEW YORK, was organized on the 14th of January, 1876, as a Troop of Cavalry, and soon after Samuel O. Howe was elected its Captain. Its armory was at Union Hall, Mount Vernon. It took part, as did also the Twenty-seventh Regiment, in the celebration at Kingston of the Centennial of the formation of the State Government. Upon the resignation of Captain Howe, in June, 1878, Lieut. James N. Jarvis was elected Captain. On the 23d of September, 1880, the troop paraded in Tarrytown at the centennial celebration of the capture of Major Andre. In October, 1881, the company, at the desire of the State authorities, was reorganized into a company of infantry, with its present name. Captain Jarvis still remained in command, but upon his resignation, in November, 1883, Mr. Charles A. Denike was elected to the vacant position. The company, on Evacuation Day, November 25, 1883, took part in New York City in the centennial celebration parade. At the close of 1884 the company took possession of a new armory on Fifth Avenue, Mount Vernon. The present officers are Isaac N. Pressey, captain; Mr. E. J. Kindler, first lieutenant; Joseph E. Taverner, second lieutenant. Dr. S. B. Carlisle is the surgeon of the company.

POLITICAL HISTORY.—After the confirmation, in 1666, by Governor Nichols, of the sales and grants made by Pell and by the Indians, nothing of interest presents itself in the history of East Chester until the reoccupation of the province by the Dutch, except it be the petition, in 1669, for redress, in which the town joined with Long Island and Westchester in asking for the people a share in the legislation.

It may be mentioned, however, that the Recorder of the town, Richard Shute, copies into his minutes of a later date, a "memorandum" of certain edicts or decisions, in 1666, 1669 and 1672, of the Court of Assizes. These relate mainly to the establishment of land rights and the record of them, to weights and measures, and to the value of the coins in circulation.

In 1673 the Dutch, having recovered New York, summon the people of East Chester to submission, who, uniting with Westchester in a profession of allegiance, are guaranteed the same privileges and rights as are given to the inhabitants and subjects of the Dutch nation. A few days after, John Hoit is appointed magistrate for East Chester, with power to decide all suits in his town to the value of thirty shillings, all suits of greater value to be referred to him and the two magistrates of Westchester.¹ On the

16th of the next month (September) the Governor orders Mr. Hoit "not to suffer any person or persons 'to passe or repasse' through his town, 'to or from New England, Except they can produce a Legalle passe or License from authority for the same.'"²

In little more than a year the Province was restored to the English. Sir Edmund Andross was made Governor, and one of his first acts, in the following January, is recorded in our town minutes. After recalling the strange fact of the low price of grain in a time of scarcity, he proceeds to proclaim, "that for the future, or until further order, of which to be a year's notice, the valuation thereof" "shall be taken in all sales, Bargains and payment,—

	s.	d.
" Merchantable winter at	5	"
Summer Wheat at	4	6
Merchantable Barley at	4	0
Rie at	3	6
Pease at	3	0
Indian Corn at	2	6

" 'But all past sales, contracts or debts upon account of grain to remain in their full force.'"³

As noticed in the history of the county, the town of East Chester took sides most heartily with Leisler in his efforts to resist the restoration of James the Second, and the final result was a matter of much satisfaction. The elections of 1701 and 1733 brought out, no doubt, much feeling in the town, but we linger not with them, as they have already been considered.

A list of the Supervisors and Town Clerks is here presented.

OVERSEERS.

William Hayden, 1679, '80, '82.
Philip Pinckney, 1681, '83.

SUPERVISORS.

John Pinkney, 1690, '91, '93, '94, '96.
John Lancaster, 1693, '99, 1712.
John Drake, 1697, 1703, '05, '07, '15, '20.
Jeremiah Fowler, 1700.
Henry Fowler, 1710.
William Chatterton, 1701.
Thomas Pinckney, 1706, '13, '14.
Edmund Ward, 1708, '09.
Moses Fowler, 1722, '28, '29, '31, '32, '33, '35, '36, '37, '38.
Joseph Drake, 1723, '24, '26, '27, '43.
Palmer Doughty, 1730.
Benjamin Drake, 1739, '40.
John Fowler, 1740, '44, '45, '46, '47, '48, '51, '52, '54, '55.
John Ward, 1741, '49, '50.
Samuel Sneden, 1753, '60, '61, '62, '63, '64, '65, '66, '67, '68.
John Townsend, 1756, '57.
Ebenezer Burling, 1758, '83, '84, '89.
Jonathan Fowler, 1759.
Stephen Ward, 1772, '73, '74, '75, '87, '89, '90, '91, '92, '94.
James Hunt, 1785.
Thomas Hunt, 1786.
John G. Wright, 1793, '94.
Benjamin Morgan, 1795, '96, '97, '98, '99, 1800, '01, '02, '04, '05, '06, '07, '08, '09.
Richard Ward, 1803.
John Townsend, 1810 to 1822, inclusive.
James Somerville, 1823, '24, '25.

¹ On the 24th of August the inhabitants had nominated Mr. Haiden, and their second choice was Mr. Hoit.—*Town Minutes*.

² N. Y. Col. MSS., Vol. ii. p. 659.

³ Town Minutes, Book 1, pp. 23.

Stephen Ward, 1826, '27, '28.
 Nathaniel Devoe, 1829, '30, '33, '35.
 Joshua Hunt, 1831, '34.
 Joseph Lyon, 1836, '37.
 John R. Hayward, 1838, '39, '40.
 Jesse Lyon, 1841, '42.
 Abijah Morgan, 1843, '44, '46.
 William Bertina, 1845.
 John W. Burtis, 1847, '48.
 Lancaster Underhill, 1849, '50.
 Robert Bertine, 1851.
 Grandall Rich, 1851, '52.
 George Archer, 1853.
 Abijah G. Morgan, 1854.
 Darius Lyon, 1855, '56, '57, '58, '59.
 Pelham McClelan, 1860, '61, '62.
 Edward Martin, 1863, '71.
 Stephen Bogart, 1864, '65.
 John M. Masterton, 1866, '67, '70.
 Edward D. Lawrence, 1868, '69.
 William P. Esterbrook, 1872.
 Elias Dusenbury, 1873.
 William H. Pemberton, 1874, '75, '76.
 David Cromwell, 1877, '78.
 David Quackenbush, 1879, '80, '82, '83, '84, '85, '86.
 Henry Huss, 1881.

TOWN CLERKS.

Richard Shute, 1673 to 1703, called recorder.
 Edmund Ward, 1703 to 1711, called recorder.
 Moses Fowler, 1711 to 1723, inclusive.
 John Cuer, 1724 to 1742, inclusive.
 Thomas Shute, 1743, '44, '45.
 John Burling, 1746, '47.
 Samuel Sueden, 1748 to 1769.
 Charles Ward, 1783, '84, '85, '86.
 Benjamin Morgan, 1787, '88, '89, '90, '91, '92, 1814, '15, '16.
 Jonathan Ward, 1793.
 James N. Roosevelt, 1794 to 1801, inclusive.
 John Alstyne, 1802, '03, '05, '07, '08, '09, '10, '11, '12, '13, '14.
 Moses Morgan, 1804.
 Benjamin H. Underhill, 1817, '18, '19, '20, '21.
 Caleb Morgan, 1822, '23, '24, '25.
 Joshua Hunt, 1826, '27, '28, '29, '30.
 Samson D. Valentine, 1831, '32, '33.
 John R. Hayward, 1834, '35, '36, '37.
 Jesse Lyon, 1838, '39.
 Theodosius Hunt, 1840, '43, '44, '45.
 John A. Drake, 1841, '42.
 William Bertine, 1846, '47.
 Darius Lyon, 1848, '49, '50, '51.
 Edmund L. Toumine, 1852, '53, '54, '55, '56, '57, '58.
 John S. Yorke, 1859.
 Joseph D. Fay, 1860, '61, '62.
 Robert M. Foster, 1863, '64, '65, '70, '71, '72, '73, '74.
 Joseph A. Harper, 1866.
 Philip Lucas, Jr., 1867, '68.
 Charles H. Ostrander, 1869.
 A. M. Nolte, 1875.
 George E. Archer, 1876.
 Frederick H. Decker, 1877, '78.
 Edward Pettinger, 1879, '80.
 George W. Hunt, 1881.
 Albert F. Gescheidt, 1882, '83, '84.
 John Bowden, 1885, '86.

The following is the Electoral vote of this town for about sixty years:

1828.	1836.
M. Van Buren, 1st Elector . . . 92	Democratic 164
Smith Thompson, 1st Elector. 56	Whig 14
1802.	1840.
Democratic 149	Democratic 166
Whig 36	Whig 74

1844.	1864.
Democratic 158	Democratic 636
Whig 77	Republican 268
1848.	1868.
Democratic 72	Democratic 719
Whig 104	Republican 512
Fre. Soil 26	1872.
1852.	Democratic 656
Democratic 180	Republican 593
Whig 128	1876.
Scattering 2	Democratic 1092
1856.	Republican 714
Democratic 323	1880.
Republican 188	Democratic 979
Whig 138	Republican 889
1860.	1884.
Democratic Union 535	Democratic 1136
Republican 288	Republican 801
	Prohibition 30
	People's Party 39

A record is also furnished of the vote of East Chester for Governor in the years named,—

1820.	1870.
Tompkins 46	Hoffman (Dem.) 630
Clinton 28	Woodford (Rep.) 423
1846.	1874.
Wright (Dem.) 112	Tilden (Dem.) 799
Young (Whig) 73	Dix (Rep.) 480
Edwards 11	Clark 13
1850.	1879.
Seymour (Dem.) 133	Robinson (Dem.) 722
Hunt (Whig) 79	Cornell (Rep.) 609
1854.	John Kelly 165
Seymour (Dem.) 193	Harris 25
Clark (Whig) 75	Mears 8
Brown 12	1882.
Uiman (K. N.) 148	Cleveland (Dem.) 949
1858.	Folger (Rep.) 349
A. J. Parker (Dem.) 319	Howe 37
E. D. Morgan (Rep.) 172	Hopkins 70
Burrows 61	1885.
1862.	Hill (Dem.) 935
Seymour (Dem.) 450	Davenport (Rep.) 800
Wadsworth (Rep.) 303	Bascom 44
1866.	Jones 7
Hoffman (Dem.) 505	
Fenton (Rep.) 416	

RAILROADS.—There are two railroads running into this town, with stations well located for its convenience.

The New York and Harlem Railroad passes along the westerly boundary of the town for its whole length. The stations which are at West Mount Vernon (formerly called Hunt's Bridge) at Bronxville, and at Tuckahoe, were opened in the summer of 1844. The original location of the stopping-place at West Mount Vernon was where the old Mile Square road crosses the track. It was about ten years afterward moved to its present neighborhood. The Harlem Railroad owns fifty-two acres in East Chester, the assessed value of which is one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. The length of the road-bed in the town is about six and one-half miles.

The New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad carries its travel through this town from the junction

of their road with that of the New York and Harlem, at Washingtonville, in an easterly direction to Hutchinson River, a distance of about three miles. The construction of the road took place in 1847 and 1848, and for several years the station on it nearest to this town was at New Rochelle. In 1851 the Industrial Home Association presented from their property a site and building for a depot to the New Haven Company; but although certain trains made their stoppages during the summer of 1852, not until late in the year was Mount Vernon made a regular station and an agent of the company appointed for it. There are now more commuters from Mount Vernon than from any other stopping-place from New York to New Haven, and it ranks fourth in importance, being exceeded only by Bridgeport, Stamford and Norwalk. The company owns twenty-six and one-half acres in the town, the assessed value of which is ninety thousand six hundred dollars. The length of the road-bed in the town is a little less than three miles.

SOCIETIES.

If there were any associations in the town before the Revolution for any social, political, intellectual or other purpose, their existence, unfortunately, is unknown.

The most important societies in the town since the establishment of the present government are here presented.

WESTCHESTER LODGE, No. 46, F. AND A. M., which was organized at Westchester in June, 1796, was removed to East Chester on St. John the evangelist's day, 1797. The occasion was made a marked one by the attendance of the members of the lodge and visiting brethren upon Divine Service at St. Paul's Church. The Rev. Brothers Ireland and Cooper took part in the service, the latter gentleman preaching the Sermon, for which he received the thanks of the lodge and a request for a copy of it for the press. The place of meeting at East Chester was at first at the tavern of William Crawford, opposite the Green, where it continued to be held until the erection, by Brother Philemon Fowler, of an addition to his tavern, in which, by previous arrangement, he had prepared a room for the sole use of the Lodge. The following Worshipful Masters of Westchester Lodge: Alexander Fowler, Benjamin Drake and Caleb Morgan, and the following members, Andrew and Hachaliah Purdy, Philemon Fowler, George Faile, Benjamin H. Underhill, Joseph Pell, Jonathan Ward, William Bertine and Jesse Lyon, are remembered as honored citizens of this town. Westchester Lodge continued its meetings at Mr. Fowler's until November, 1814, when they were removed to New Rochelle, and there held until the surrender of its charter, in 1827.

EAST CHESTER MARK LODGE, No. 58, in 1809, was granted a warrant,—of course, held its convocations at Fowler's.

HIAWATHA LODGE, No. 434, F. AND A. M.—The name of this lodge was given in deference to the wishes of Brother William H. Pemberton, one of its charter members and a liberal benefactor in its early history. Its warrant of dispensation was granted August 25, 1857, and its charter June 8, 1858. The dedication took place June 24th, in the Methodist Church at Mt. Vernon, and at the same time the installation of the officers. Brother William M. Palmer, Jr., was the first Master, and the meetings were at first held in the upper room of the building of Mr. Van Court, near the depot, Mt. Vernon. The following brethren have been Masters since Brother Palmer, viz.: Amos Cheeny, Charles T. Hathaway, Philip Lucas, Jr., Gideon D. Pond, Beekman Van Gaasbeck, Horace F. Curtis, Daniel M. Van Cott, Max Huss, Stuart B. Carlisle and Franklin T. Davis. The officers of the present year are Rufus B. Disbrow, W. M.; Charles H. Booth, S. W.; Isaac N. Mills, J. W.; P. M. Gideon D. Pond, Secretary; Burr Davis, Treasurer; Frederick B. Bertine, S. D.; Sanford Hallock, Jr., J. D.; Edwin J. Kindler and Frank Butler, M. C.'s; Rev. W. S. Coffey, Chaplain; George H. Cameron, Marshal; William J. Collins, Tiler, and Brothers David Quackenbush and John M. Dearborn and Worthy Brother Stuart B. Carlisle, Trustees.

Hiawatha Lodge has a plot of ground in Woodlawn Cemetery as a burial-place for its deceased members, if need be. Speaking of the value of this organization, the Chaplain, at the twenty-fifth anniversary, June, 1883, said,—“All honor to what, under higher or identical impulses, has been done by others to lessen human misery in our town; but in all records of the story of good works for fellow-man a page is asked for our organization.” The meetings are held in Masonic Hall, Fourth Avenue, Mt. Vernon.

MT. VERNON CHAPTER, No. 228, R. A. M., was chartered February 3, 1869, with Comp. John H. Gray as High Priest. The initiation fee is twenty dollars and the annual dues five dollars. There are sixty-nine members, and the meetings are held at the Rooms of Hiawatha Lodge, Mt. Vernon. The following Companions have also been High Priests: Gideon D. Pond, James P. Swain, Jr., Daniel M. Van Cott, Henry L. Sproul, Theodore Taylor and Charles H. Booth, who is the present chief officer, with Rufus B. Disbrow, King, and Charles J. Nordquist, Scribe, as the other members of the Council.

MARBLE LODGE, No. 702, F. AND A. M., was chartered June 16, 1870, with Rev. Brother Angus M. Ives as Master. The lodge-room is at Tuckahoe.

The value of its furniture is about fifteen hundred dollars. The Past Worshipful Masters, besides Rev. Mr. Ives, are Samuel Leggett, Samuel Fee, James P. Swain, Zebedee Brower, Stephen Higgins, Dr. C. J. Nordquist and Robert Johnston.

The following brethren are now officers of the lodge: William A. Dewitt, W. M.; Samuel McG.

Stevenson, S. W.; David Johnston, J. W.; E. S. Patrick, Secretary; Samuel S. Horton, Treasurer; James P. Swain, S. D.; John Fisher, J. D.; Joseph Johnston and Richard Thompson, M. of C.; and Richard Bennett, Tiler.

MT. VERNON LODGE No. 195, I. O. of O. F., was instituted November 13, 1867, with Brother Thomas R. Jones as N. G., and John H. Jennings as V. G. The initiation fee is fifteen dollars, and the yearly dues are six dollars and fifty-two cents. There is a fund on hand of five hundred dollars, and the furniture is valued at seven hundred dollars. The present number of members is fifty-four and the following brethren occupy the various positions: John Cortes, N. G.; Andrew Jenks, V. G.; John H. Jennings, Financial Secretary; John N. Hoffmann, Recording Secretary; James B. Spicer, Treasurer.

The meetings are held at Odd-Fellows' Hall, Fourth Avenue, Mt. Vernon.

Einheit Lodge, No. 461, I. O. of O. F.—This lodge was chartered April 26, 1878, with John Russell as the first N. G. The initiation fee is sixteen dollars and the annual dues six dollars. The meetings are held in Odd-Fellows' Hall, Mt. Vernon. There is a fund on hand of one thousand dollars, with property in furniture valued at five hundred dollars. The following are the present officers: Henry Raby, N. G.; Ferdinand Metzger, V. G.; Adolph Schindler, Financial Secretary; William Wohlermacher, Recording Secretary; Adam Schneider, Treasurer.

GUIDING STAR ENCAMPMENT, No. 83, was chartered February 10, 1875, with Jesse Law as Chief Patriarch and John H. Jennings as High Priest. The property of the encampment is valued at four hundred dollars. The meetings are held in Odd-Fellows' Hall, Mt. Vernon. The following are the present officers of this organization: Arthur E. Blackmore, C. P.; John E. Marshall, H. P.; Andrew Jenks, S. W.; John Cortes, J. W.; Adam Schneider, Treas.; John N. Hoffman, Scribe; John H. Jennings, Financial Secretary.

FARNSWORTH POST, No. 170, G. A. R.—From 1874, for some five or six years, several gentlemen of military antecedents, in the town of East Chester, were wont annually, under the assumed name of "Mt. Vernon Veteran Association," to decorate the graves of deceased soldiers of the Civil War. This habit led at last to the organization of a Post of the "Grand Army of the Republic," which, after a brave General of that war who was killed at Gettysburg, was styled Farnsworth. The first Commander was Major James H. Jenkins, who is again this year the superior officer, with Captain Joseph H. Porter and Companion John H. Davis as Vice-Commanders. In 1882 Captain Frederick Whittaker was the Commander, and in 1883 and 1884 Companion Nathan Van Horson. As a social, patriotic and charitable body, this Post has a firm hold on the hearts of the community, and is of material service with its funds in relieving the wants

of destitute soldiers and their families. The annual act of devotion of the Grand Army of the Republic to its deceased comrades has been frequently observed by this Post at St. Paul's Church and Churchyard.

EAST CHESTER COUNCIL, No. 477, AMERICAN LEGION OF HONOR was organized March 30, 1881. On May 1, 1886, it had one hundred and fourteen members. The total amount paid by this council since its organization is \$15,658.52. One death only has occurred, and in thirty days the claim, \$5000, was paid. The following gentlemen have been its Commanders: J. Henry Magonigle, 1881; William Gibson, 1882; Charles W. Van Court, 1884; James L. Morgan, 1885; T. W. Dale, present Commander.

It is proper at this point to remember the following Temperance associations:

SONS OF TEMPERANCE, organized October 5, 1865. E. A. Rowlinson, first Worthy Patriarch. It had a membership at one time of nearly two hundred members. It existed for about ten years, meeting at Van Court's Building, Fourth Avenue.

PERSEVERANCE LODGE, No. 830, Independent Order of Good Templars, organized February 18, 1869, of which James B. Spicer was the first Worthy Chief Templar. It lasted about twelve years, at one time numbering one hundred and thirty-four members.

ALLIANCE TEMPLE OF HONOR, No. 17, was organized July 31, 1867, Mr. William H. Oakley being the first Worthy Chief Templar. This association meets in Temple of Honor Hall on the third Tuesday of each month. Mr. George R. Carroll is the present W. C. T.

YOUNG MEN'S CHRISTIAN ASSOCIATION, Mt. Vernon, was organized October 24, 1880. Its first President was Mr. John Van Santvoord. It numbers this year seventy-five members. Mr. Charles R. De Bevoise, who has been a strong supporter of the organization from the first, is now the President of the association. Its Rooms this year are on Fourth Avenue, between Second and Third Streets.

MOUNT VERNON LITERARY ASSOCIATION.—This association was formed on the 12th of January, 1855. The following gentlemen were the first officers of the association: P. L. McClelan, president; J. Q. A. Butler, Vice-President; G. F. Byram, Secretary; and G. W. White, Treasurer. Its meetings were generally held in the basement of the Methodist Church. The interest of the village and town was largely invoked by the able debates which the subjects discussed brought out. Among the questions were the following, which were much considered at the time: "Is or is not the Anglo-French alliance entitled to the sympathies of the American people?" "Do the exigencies of the times demand a distinctive American organization?" "Will the so-called spiritual manifestations have a good or an evil tendency?" "Should Utah be admitted into the Union, with her present laws of polyg-

amy?" This lyceum continued its work of usefulness for several years.

MOUNT VERNON HORTICULTURAL SOCIETY was organized on the 28th of February, 1855. The new settlers at Mount Vernon had already, during the two years previous, exhibited much zeal and judgment in the cultivation of the plots of ground adjoining their residences, and their labor had been attended with encouraging results. Their conferences, in view of the coming season, led them to associate for mutual benefit. Mr. Henry Biggins was elected President, Mr. James Howland Secretary, and Mr. Richard Atkinson, still living in the village, was Chairman of the Finance Committee. The neighboring farmers encouraged this movement of their new fellow-townsmen, and the meetings were sources of much pleasure. In the autumns both of 1855 and 1856 exhibitions were held and premiums bestowed for the best specimens of fruits, flowers and vegetables.¹ Again, on the 1st of July, 1857, a summer display of flowers, early vegetables and berries and small fruits was awarded with prizes.

The organization of the MOUNT VERNON MÆNNER-CHOR grew out of the effort of some of the early German settlers near Hunt's Bridge to provide, for the enjoyment of themselves and members of their families, dramatic and musical entertainments. The society at one time was in numbers one hundred strong, forty of whom were singers. Dr. Doenges is remembered as the director. The meetings were held for awhile at Bock's tavern, and afterward at Diecman's. Mr. Henry is now the president.

MOUNT VERNON QUARTETTE CLUB, organized August, 1867. The first President was Mr. Charles Korn, who now occupies the position. The club meets at Scheuerman's Central Hall.

EAST MOUNT VERNON SINGING SOCIETY, organized 1856, existed for five or six years. Henry Kortlang president. This society met at Hagman's, in Franklin Avenue.

THE MOUNT VERNON ATHENÆUM, which was organized on the 2d of July, 1872, is an association of gentlemen and ladies, having as its avowed purpose, as stated in its Constitution, "the cultivation of literature, music, elocution, art, and the promotion of social acquaintance." Its meetings are held at its members' homes, and have been throughout its history a source of great enjoyment. Mrs. Anna Vermilye was the first President, which position is now held by Mrs. Charles C. Bigelow. Two hundred and fifty persons have been enrolled on its books, and the number present at its meetings have ranged from thirty to one hundred and twenty-five. "The programme for the evening," says one of the most earnest friends of this society, "has usually consisted of an original essay, a recitation and a reading, also

¹ Mr. Richard Atkinson, of this village, was awarded the premium for the best potatoes, three varieties, at the New York Horticultural Exhibition, on Wednesday, 26th inst.—*Mount Vernon Gazette*, September 29, 1855.

music, and has been carried out often with such eclat as to be stimulating in the extreme."

STATISTICS.—In the year 1710 we have the first information, after the settlement, of what was the population of the town. It seems that in that year there were one hundred and fifty-three "male Christians" and one hundred and thirty-six female, while there were seventeen male slaves and eight female residing in it. Of the men, sixty-one were from sixteen to sixty years old, and their names and ages are as follows:

Captain John Drake	55	John Haddon, Jr.	27
Michael Chadderton	52	John Stanton (mulatto).	32
Joseph Tompkins	32	John Lancaster	43
Nathaniel Tompkins	32	Joseph Taylor	24
Joseph Drake, Sr.	47	Moses Taylor	21
John Bloomer	28	John Taylor	17
John Hyat	32	Joseph Gee	34
Thomas Shute	40	Arthur Uaile	19
Jeremiah Fowler	37	Richard Curry	30
Isaac Lawrence	55	Robert Stivers	19
Isaac Lawrence, Jr.	18	John Uaile	24
Roger Barton, Sr.	44	William White	26
Roger Barton, Jr.	17	Edward Fitz Giarral	28
John Shute	39	Isaac Terhill	56
William Fowler	50	John Thompkins, Jr.	26
William Pinkney	29	Lewis Guyon	24
Thomas Pinkney	27	Jonathan Oadele	35
Edmond Ward	39	Moses Hoyt, Jr.	40
Samuel Ferris	34	Eliezer Hoyt	16
Henry Fowler, Sr.	52	Edmond Thompkins	34
William Fowler	23	Abraham Hiatt	29
John Fowler	17	Henry Fowler, Jr.	31
Thomas Pinkney	48	John Ward	25
Isaac Oadele	35	John Lawrence	40
Mathias Valentine	40	Samuel Causten, Jr.	21
John Valentine	19	Jeremiah Looper	38
Richard Osburn	34	Thomas Chadderton	28
Thomas Astin	26	Edward Aury	39
Joseph Drake, Jr.	24	Benjamin Chipp	21
Isaac Taylor, Sr.	45	Moses Foster	26
John Haddon, Sr.	47		

The census of 1712 gives the number of male persons above sixty as four; between sixteen and sixty, as fifty-seven; under sixteen, as seventy-nine; of females above sixty, as one; between sixteen and sixty, as sixty-seven; under sixteen, as sixty-seven.² In 1790 there were in the town white males of sixteen years and upwards, one hundred and seventy-four, and under sixteen years, one hundred and sixty; white females, three hundred and twenty; all other free persons, eleven, and seventy-five slaves.

The number of inhabitants in East Chester, as reported by each census since the commencement of this century, is as follows:

YEAR.	POPULATION.	YEAR.	POPULATION.
1800	738	1845	1369
1810	1629	1850	1769
1814	942	1855	4715
1820	1021	1860	5582
1825	931	1865	5620
1830	1030	1870	7491
1835	1168	1875	8333
1840	1502	1880	8737

² Doc. Hist. of N. Y., vol. iii. p. 949.

As early as January 6, 1670, the following order was made at a meeting of the inhabitants:

"All children that are born in this place or those that decease or those persons that merye belonging to this place shall be recorded and tow penc allowed unto recorder to be paid for each child & six penc for every man."¹

The following certifications of marriages and births are taken from the Town Minutes:

"These are to Certifie whom it may concern that Richard Saniey and Ann Canie weare Lawfully married the 28th day of December 1685 By me Morgen Joans, menester of the gospell."

"These are to Certifie whom it may concern that Joshpe Drake & mary Shute both of East Chester weare Lawfully married The 31th of Decem-ber 1685. By me Morgen Joans minister of the gospell

"Entered according to order by me
Richard Shute Recorder."²

"Sollomon Hoite the Son of Moses Hoite Junr was born on the 9th day of february 170 $\frac{3}{4}$."

How strange to read immediately after this,—

"Hear followeth a pernetre Record of Cattell that have bine killed in East Chester in the yeare 1670 killed by Phillip Pinknie."

We present now, under our own arrangement, a list of other births recorded:

Name.	Parent.	Date of Birth.	Place.
" Samuel . . .	Joshpe Drake . . .	November 3, 1697 . . .	E. C.
Saraha . . .	Joshpe Drake . . .	June 20, 1695 . . .	E. C.
Jean . . .	John Drake . . .	August 4, 1695 . . .	E. C.
Susana . . .	John Jackson . . .	September 10, 1670 . . .	E. C.
John . . .	Richard Shute . . .	June 9, 1671.	
Elizabeth . . .	Richard Shute . . .	September 3, 1672 . . .	E. C.
Rebecke . . .	Richard Shute . . .	July 1, 1675 . . .	E. C.
Rachell . . .	Richard Shute . . .	(Wednesday,) Feb. 13, 1677.	
Jonathan . . .	Jeames Euests . . .	November 12, 1667.	
Jeames . . .	Jeames Euests . . .	February 15, 1669.	
Juda . . .	Jeames Euests . . .	March 16, 1671.	
Samuel . . .	Richard Shute . . .	May 24, 1674.	
Joshpe . . .	Joshpe Drake, Sr. . .	August 18, 1686.	
Samewell, Jr. ³ —	Drake . . .	January 12, 1684.	
John, Jr. ⁴ . . .	Joshpe Drake . . .	November 8, 1689.	
Mary . . .	Joshpe Drake . . .	November 1, 1691.	
John, Jr. . . .	— Jackson . . .	October 27, 1674 . . .	E. C.
Margery . . .	John Jackson . . .	July 14, 1677.	
Ann . . .	John Clarke . . .	March 24, 1681.	
William . . .	Nathaniel White . . .	August 26, 1684 . . .	E. C.
Abigoalle . . .	Moses Hoite, Junr. . .	June 16, 1692.	
Mary . . .	Edward Emery . . .	May 14, 1694 . . .	E. C.
Joshpe . . .	Henry Fowler . . .	October 30, 1701.	
Sara . . .	John Shute . . .	September 22, 1700.	
Abigall . . .	John Shute . . .	August 10, 1702.	
Richard . . .	John Shute . . .	August 10, 1704.	
Ellinues . . .	Edward Hancocke . . .	December 15, 1693 . . .	E. C.
Matha . . .	Ruth Slater . . .	March 31, 1683. Mile Square.	
Elizabeth . . .	Ruth Slater . . .	February 4, 1688. Mile Square	
John . . .	Ruth Slater . . .	May 29, 1687.	
Mickelle . . .	Ruth Slater . . .	November 18, 1689.	
Ruth . . .	Ruth Slater . . .	March 13, 1694.	
Ellinor . . .	Moses Hoit, Jr. . . .	June 24, 1694 . . .	E. C.
Moses . . .	Moses Hoit, Jr. . . .	October 28, 1696 . . .	E. C.
Rachell . . .	Moses Hoit, Jr. . . .	February 6, 1693 . . .	E. C.
Arone . . .	Moses Hoit, Jr. . . .	March 27, 1700.	
Samuel . . .	John Godin . . .	January 26, 1699.	
John . . .	John Godin . . .	May 1, 1702.	
Solloman . . .	John Godin . . .	October 3, 1704.	
Mary . . .	Edmund Ward . . .	May 23, 1694.	
Elenar . . .	Edmund Ward . . .	May 2, 1696.	
Sarah . . .	Edmund Ward . . .	November 1, 1698.	

¹ Town minutes.

² Town minutes, p. 3 $\frac{1}{2}$.

³ "In the third year of the reign of Kinge Jeames the Second."

⁴ "In the first year of the reigne of Kinge Wilham and Queen Mary."

Abigall . . .	Edmund Ward . . .	January 26, 1700.
Meriam . . .	Edmund Ward . . .	January 21, 1703.
Edmund . . .	Edmund Ward . . .	December 9, 1705.
Samuel . . .	Edmund Ward . . .	March 14, 1708. ⁵

The following statistics are gathered of a later date:

	Births.	Marriages.	Deaths.
1847	50	7	13
1848	21		17
1849	32	8	18
1850	49	7	19
1851	43	9	23
1882 ⁶	79	31	182
1883	180	29	339
1884	185	57	215
1885	208	60	330

In the *Mount Vernon Gazette* of October 20, 1855, we have the following announcement: "First twins in Mount Vernon.—On Wednesday, October 17th, Mrs. David I. Smith was safely delivered of a pair of sprightly, bouncing boys. Mrs. S. and her boys are getting along finely."

PROMINENT RESIDENTS.

Of the citizens of East Chester during the first seventy years of its existence, no one is more prominently presented than

JOHN DRAKE.—In the dividing off of the land, in the appeals to the Governor, as an officer of the East Chester company in the defense of the town and the City of New York, as a member of the New York Assembly and opposor of Leislerianism, activity and fearlessness characterize him. He lived to an advanced age and to the last was most useful.

RICHARD SHUTE was the Recorder of East Chester, the first town clerk. The early minutes for more than thirty years are in his antiquated handwriting. He gives us the records of town-meetings, first deeds and early transfers of land, the births, the marks and even private business transactions. He was upon numerous committees, and most important duties and trusts were assigned to him. He died in December, 1703.

HENRY FOWLER and EDMUND WARD both were members of the General Assembly and Supervisors of the town. Mr. Ward was also Sheriff of the county.

As we get toward the middle of the eighteenth century we meet the names of Samuel Sneden and Jonathan Fowler.

SAMUEL SNEDEN was for twenty-seven years, at least, town clerk and for ten years, at least, held the higher office of Supervisor. We say "at least" because he may have been and probably was, after 1768, re-elected, but there are no town records between 1768 and 1774, nor after that year until 1783. Mr. Sneden was also one of the Wardens of the Parish of West and East Chester, Yonkers and the Manor of Pelham. In a list of civil officers of Westchester County, Mr. Sneden is described as an assistant judge.⁷

⁵ Town minutes, Bk. 1, p. 14, 15, 16.

⁶ Last eight months.

⁷ N. Y. Col. MSS., vol. lxxxii. fol. 77.

JONATHAN FOWLER.—For twenty years before the Revolution no man would seem to have exercised a greater influence in the town than Jonathan Fowler. For many years he was on the committee on public buildings, in 1759 was Supervisor and for some time before 1776 was one of the Judges of the Inferior Court of Westchester County. His residence was at what is since called Cragdon. An eye-witness describes the dignity with which he held his court on the Green for the disposal of offenders. At the breaking out of the Revolution, Judge Fowler opposed it and joined in the protest against "unlawful Congresses." With the Rev. Mr. Seabury and Mr. (Lord) Underhill, he was seized, November, 1775, and conveyed to New Haven and there confined. He afterwards recalled his protest, as appears from the following: "Whereas I, Jonathan Fowler, one of his Majesty's Judges of the Inferior Court of Westchester, in the Province of New York, did some time ago sign a protest against the Honorable Continental Congress, which inconsiderate conduct I am heartily sorry for and do hereby promise for the future not to transgress in the view of the people of this Continent nor in any sense to oppose the measures taken by the Continental Congress." Judge Fowler died in 1787, and is buried in the Family Vault in St. Paul's Church-yard. His son Theodosius was a Captain in the American army during the war.

STEPHEN WARD was a son of Edmund Ward, and a Supervisor of the town at the commencement of the struggle for independence, to which he gave his most hearty and valuable support. He was elected a member from this county of the Provincial Congress of May, 1775, and in 1777 of the New York Assembly. After the war he was Supervisor, also Judge of the county, State Senator, member of Congress and in 1792 a Presidential Elector. His early residence was in the historical mansion known as "Ward's," which was burned down in the Revolution. He afterwards lived at what is now the corner of Sixth Avenue and Fourth Street, Mt. Vernon, and there died in 1797, in the sixty-eighth year of his age.

LANCASTER UNDERHILL was a native of Long Island, but in early life removed to East Chester. He purchased two hundred acres on the Bronx, at a point since called Bronxville, where he established his mills. He had been married about two years to Miss Theodosia Hunt, daughter of Dr. Joseph Hunt, a physician of the town, when the Revolution broke out, to which he was thoroughly opposed. His name appears on the White Plains protest. He was subjected to great indignities and losses during the contest. "After peace" he was one of the first Wardens of St. Paul's Church, a position which he held for twenty-nine years. He was greatly respected and lived to the advanced age of ninety-eight.

BENJAMIN MORGAN, the grandson of James, the first of the family of that name, once so numerous and influential in the town, was born in it in 1759.

He was for nine years Town Clerk and for fourteen years its Supervisor. In all important matters he was conspicuous. The map of East Chester of 1797, and which cost £21 3s. 6d., was made through his instrumentality. Mr. Morgan was frequently an executor of the wills of his neighbors, and was one of the most useful men which the town has produced. He died in 1844, aged eighty-five years.

JOHN TOWNSEND, who deceased in 1849, at the age of seventy years, rose to the highest trusts and exercised great influence among his fellow-citizens. As Supervisor, Assemblyman, State Senator, a member of last "State Council of Appointment," County Judge and Sheriff, he was extensively known and highly esteemed. Mr. Townsend was a pronounced opponent of Governor De Witt Clinton, and on that personal issue was elected, with Peter R. Livingston, to the State Senate, in opposition to General James Talmage and General Pierre Van Cortlandt, Clintonians. Mr. Townsend was, for seven years, a Vestryman and for twenty-six years Warden of St. Paul's Church.

JONATHAN WARD, son of General Stephen Ward, was born in 1768 and died in 1842. At twenty-three years of age he was chosen one of the assessors of the town, and two years afterwards town clerk. From 1802 to 1806 he was Sheriff of the county. The succeeding year he took his seat as one of the six representatives of the Southern District of New York in the State Senate, and in 1809 was a member of the Council of Appointment, which at that time controlled the official patronage of the State. In 1814 Mr. Ward was elected to the Fourteenth Congress, and held the position for one term. In 1821 he was a member of the Convention to revise the State Constitution, and in 1828 became Surrogate of Westchester County. The duties of this important office he discharged to general satisfaction, and in 1840, having reached the age of seventy years, retired in obedience to the Constitutional provision.

JAMES SOMERVILLE, a much respected and influential citizen of this town, was a native of Scotland, but very soon after the Revolution settled upon the property lately the confiscated estate of Edmund Ward. This property had been presented by the State to David Williams in consideration of his services in apprehending Major Andre. Mr. Somerville soon rose to positions of honor and usefulness. He was Supervisor for three years, associate Judge of the County for a long time, and for a still longer period Commissioner of Common Schools. He died in 1838.

GEORGE FAILE, a native of Scotland, settled in the town at the commencement of this century, and for forty years was the leading store-keeper in it, realizing a fortune and a wide-spread reputation for integrity and wisdom. His contracts with the government during the War of 1812 essentially contributed to insure his prosperity. Mr. Faile was a public-spirited citizen and a considerate and useful neighbor.

JOHN R. HAYWARD, who was born in New York City in 1811, became, soon after entering upon manhood, an influential citizen of this town. As early as 1834 he was elected Town Clerk, which position he continued to hold until 1838, when he was made Supervisor. This office he held for three years. During this period he was also Colonel of the Regiment of Light Horse Artillery. In 1846 Colonel Hayward was elected a member of the Assembly, and again in 1847 was a candidate for the place, but failing, contested the seat of his opponent, but without success. In 1841 Colonel Hayward purchased of the Executors of Richard Shute, deceased, a farm on the Mile Square road, just out of the village of East Chester, where he continued to reside until the sale of this property to the Industrial Home Association, in 1851. The homestead is still standing on Fourth Avenue, near Sixth Street. Colonel Hayward was, for nine years, a Vestryman of St. Paul's Church, six of which he was Clerk of the Vestry. In 1851 he removed to New York City, where he died in 1867.

JESSE LYON was born in New York City on the 5th of February, 1798, and deceased on the 25th of December, 1879. Mr. Lyon was Town Clerk and Supervisor of this town for a number of years, and in 1850 represented the Second District of this County in the Assembly.

FRANCIS W. EDMONDS, a distinguished financier and father of the New York Clearing-House, took up his abode in this town in 1852, erecting on one of the eminences at Bronxville a substantial mansion of stone. Mr. Edmonds, in his early years of residence, was Cashier of the Mechanics' Bank of New York, and Chamberlain of the City. He was also President, for a short time, of the New York and Harlem Railroad Company. During his hours of leisure he devoted himself with ardor to the production of works of art with his brush, which have had very general commendation. "The Image Vendor" (in the New York Historical Society Collection), "Facing the Enemy," "Scene in a Hayfield," "St. Paul before Felix," (in St. Paul's Church, East Chester, of which he was Junior Warden) and "Christ's Lament over Jerusalem" are recalled with interest and pleasure. Mr. Edmonds died in 1863, and is buried in Beechwood Cemetery.

DARIUS LYON, a son of Hon. Jesse Lyon, and born April 23, 1822, still living, was town clerk and supervisor of East Chester for a number of years; also Sheriff of Westchester County from 1864-67, and Excise-Commissioner of the county for 1867 and 1868. The Lyons have always been noted for their devotion to the interests of the Democratic party.

WILLIAM H. PEMBERTON was born in the city of New York on the 4th of December, 1834. His earlier education was obtained at the academy at Yonkers. His legal studies were pursued under the direction of Mr. J. Warren Tompkins. He was admitted to the bar in 1856, and in 1856, and again in 1859, was

elected District Attorney. In 1873, on the death of Elias Dusenberry, he was appointed Supervisor of East Chester, and was three times thereafter re-elected. Mr. Pemberton, though residing in New York City, still maintains his business and influence in the town. His office is at Mount Vernon.

MR. P. L. McCLELAN was born, December 1, 1832, in New Rochelle, where he pursued his academic studies under Mr. Eels and Professor Gibson. Mr. McClelan read law with his father, Mr. William McClelan, a well-versed and astute practitioner. In 1854 he was admitted to the bar, about which time he became Clerk of the Village of Mount Vernon, a position which he held for twelve years. In 1860-62 he was Supervisor of the town of East Chester, which, in the latter year, he resigned in order to accept the position of District Attorney of the county. Mr. McClelan is still in active practice.

MR. JOSEPH S. WOOD, for many years Principal of the Public School of the Village of Mount Vernon, in District No. 4, founder and editor of the *Chronicle*, and for 1879-81, School Commissioner of the First Assembly District of Westchester County, was born in New York City, and is a graduate of the College of the City of New York. Mr. Wood removed to Mount Vernon in 1865, and assumed the principalship of the school of District No. 4. After nearly eleven years of great success in teaching, Mr. Wood entered upon the practice of the profession of the law. The abilities and energy of this gentleman bespeak for him still greater honor and preferments. To Mr. Wood belongs no small share of the credit of the establishment of the Pelham Bay Park, the value of which, it is believed, will be more and more realized.

ISAAC N. MILLS, the present County Judge, removed into this town in October, 1876. Mr. Mills, who was born in Windham County, Conn., in September, 1851, is a graduate of Amherst College of the year 1874, being the Valedictorian of his class. He immediately entered the Law School of Columbia College, and receiving its diploma, was admitted to practice in 1876. For a half a dozen years he was the senior partner in the firm of Mills & Wood. His election to the position on the bench, which he so ably fills, took place in 1883. The Presidential campaign of 1884 was made memorable in this town by the very able debate on the questions at issue in which Mr. Mills engaged with his late partner, Mr. Wood, and in which both of these gentlemen gained fresh laurels.

PHYSICIANS OF EAST CHESTER.

Dr. THOMAS WRIGHT, son of Edmond Wright and Sarah (*née* Townsend), his wife, of Oyster Bay, L. I., settled in East Chester about the middle of the eighteenth century, and in addition to the duties of his profession, was Trustee of Public Buildings. He died in the Provost, New York, during the Revolution. His wife and two minor sons are buried in St. Paul's Church-yard.

DR. BENJ. HUNT was a son of Moses Hunt, of Long Reach, East Chester, and resided on the road to Bedford and Vermont, at the corner of the road to Mile Square, where Abraham Valentine lived, in 1797. Dr. Hunt's daughter married Lancaster Underhill.

DR. JACOB SHAW.—At the breaking out of the Revolution, Jacob Shaw was in King's College (now Columbia), having entered in 1774. The college buildings were taken for military purposes and instructions were suspended. Alexander Hamilton was in the same class. Dr. Shaw married a daughter of Thomas Butler, of East Chester, and in 1788 is practicing in the town.

DR. JOHN G. WRIGHT was a son of Dr. Thomas Wright, and during the Revolution served in the medical department of the Continental army. He was, until his death, a physician of the town. Dr. Wright, it is said, was especially fortunate in his treatment of cancer sore throat. Dr. Wright was Supervisor of East Chester in 1793 and 1794. He was also a Trustee and Vestryman of St. Paul's Church.

DR. JOSEPH HUNT came hither, it is said, from the South, and settled in the upper part of the town. In 1810, at town-meeting, he was paid "\$4.37½ for attendance on Brown's wife."

DR. MOULTON was a native of New Hampshire, studied medicine at Dartmouth College, and was licensed in the city of New York, but settled in East Chester, Nov., 1819, where he obtained an extensive practice, extending to the neighboring towns. He was an Inspector of common schools in the town. He removed his home in 1835 to New Rochelle, but to the day of his death practiced in East Chester.

DR. GERSHOM B. WEED was born in Danbury, Conn., in 1809, whence his father, but a few years after, removed to Scarsdale. In 1838 he entered upon the labors of his profession at East Chester, where he met with immediate and increasing appreciation. Dr. Weed took a deep interest in the schools of the town, of which he was elected for several years an inspector, and afterwards superintendent. He was well known and influential in the counsels of the Democratic party of Westchester County. He died in 1881.

DR. — BRINCKERHOOF, who was a physician of great prominence in East Chester, left the town and went to California during the gold fever, but returned and practiced at New Rochelle, where he died.

DR. JOSEPH S. GREGORY was born in Florida, Orange County, N. Y., on the 13th of October, 1824. After graduating at Princeton College, N. J., in 1844, he commenced the study of medicine under the celebrated Dr. Willard Parker, attending also the lectures in the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York, from which, in due time, he received his diploma. He removed to East Chester in 1849.

For thirty-three years, over this town's hills and valleys, in heat and cold, often in rudest storms, at every hour of night as well as day, Dr. Gregory carried on the duties of his vocation, and gained that

popularity and fame to which faithful service gives just title. Dr. Gregory was a careful and successful practitioner, a conscientious Christian, an upright and active citizen. In 1853 he was Superintendent of common schools and at a later period President of the Board of Education of District No. 4.

DR. ARNOLD NAUDAIN, a native of the State of Delaware, and graduate of the University of Pennsylvania, came to this town in the year 1852, and soon became distinguished for his great ability and success as a physician and surgeon. Upon the death of his uncle, of the same name, he succeeded to his practice at West Farms, to which place he removed, to the great regret of his numerous friends and patients.

DR. HENRY C. JONES is a native of East Hartford, Conn., where he enjoyed the advantages of its English and Classical High School. Dr. Jones studied medicine in Hartford, and graduated from the Worcester Medical College. In the fall of 1856 he came to Mount Vernon, where he has been engaged, until within a year, in the practice of his profession. Dr. Jones is a member of the "Westchester Homœopathic Medical Society" and the "American Institute of Homeopathy," and has been for many years physician to the Lutheran Orphan Farm School, of this town.

DR. CHARLES J. NORDQUIST was born at Gottenburg, Sweden, July 16, 1821; graduated from the University of Upsal, and from the Medical Department of the University of the City of New York. In 1857 he became a resident of Tuckahoe, and has been a very useful and popular physician. At the beginning of the Civil War Dr. Nordquist entered the army of the Union, and after rapid promotion became surgeon-in-chief of the Second Division, Fifth Army Corps. Resuming his practice he was elected coroner.

DR. WILLIAM M. DORRAN was a native of Ireland, and was born in the year 1831. His earlier years of manhood were spent in mercantile life; but, under aspirations for professional usefulness, he entered the Thirteenth Street College Medical School, from which he graduated in 18—. At the commencement of the Civil War he placed himself under the orders of the general government, and in 186— was in charge of the Hospital at Little Rock, Ark. After the war he practiced in this town until his death in 1884.

DR. WILLIAM MURPHY was born in Ireland in 1811; came to this country in boyhood; graduated in 1832 from the New York County Medical Society; and settling in New York City, successfully carried on his practice for thirty-three years, for two of which (1864-66) he was Health Commissioner. In 1866 Dr. Murphy removed to Chappaqua, and in 1872 to Mount Vernon, where, with great acceptableness and benefit to many families, he continues his career of usefulness.

DR. — CASWELL practiced medicine in East Chester for several years, and then removed to New York, where he now resides and has a lucrative practice.

DR. THOMAS F. GOODWIN, born in New York City in 1855, is a graduate of the College of the City of

New York and of the University Medical College. He removed to Mount Vernon in 1880, succeeding to the practice of Dr. Gregory, an uncle by marriage.

DR. ARCHIBALD M. CAMPBELL settled in Mount Vernon in 1876. He is of English birth, a graduate of Columbia College of the year 1865, from which he received his Master's degree in 1868. Dr. Campbell's medical diploma is from the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York. He is visiting physician of the Home of Incurables, and has held the position of President of the Medical Society of Westchester County. He removed into this town in 1876.

DR. EDWARD F. BRUSH was born in Ireland in 1847; served in the late Civil War as a private in the Sixteenth Maine Volunteers; was licensed to practice pharmacy, in 1872, by New York Board of Pharmacy; and graduated from Bellevue Hospital Medical College in 1875. Dr. Brush is the present Health Officer of the town of East Chester, and also of the village of Mount Vernon. He has also been lately President of the Medical Society of the county, and surgeon of Butler Post No. 32, G. A. R.

DR. WILLIAM F. GREENE, born at New Rochelle, is a graduate of the College of the City of New York (1875) and of the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York (1878). After spending one year in Bellevue Hospital, four in practice in New York City and one year in Hainsburg, N. J., he came, in 1884, to Mount Vernon.

DR. STUART B. CARLISLE was born in the city of New York May 3, 1848; received his academic education in the New York City College, and graduating at the Bellevue Hospital Medical College in March, 1881, commenced here the practice of medicine. He is a member of the Westchester County Medical Society, and Surgeon of the Eleventh Separate Company.

DR. NATHAN NUTTING was born in Maryland on the 5th of August, 1846, and is a graduate of the New York Homeopathic College. In 1883 he removed to Mount Vernon; succeeding to the practice of Dr. Jones, who is retiring from duty. He also has in charge the Orphan Asylum at Union Corners.

DR. JOHN Q. A. HOLLISTER was born at Warsaw, N. Y., in 1839. In 1862 he graduated from Hamilton College, New York, and entered the army in the war against the Rebellion, where he rose to the rank of captain of Co. E, Forty-second New York Infantry. In 1868 he graduated from the Eclectic Medical College of Cincinnati. After practicing medicine in Brockton, N. Y., and West Liberty, Iowa, he removed, in 1879, to Mount Vernon.

FAMILIES.

PINKNEY.—This family, at the first, was the leading one of the town. Philip Pinkney, the original patentee and settler, was regarded with great deference and respect in the management of affairs, and his son Thomas, who was styled "Justice Fowler," succeeded to much of his dignity and influence. The estate extended west from the Hutchinson's River to

the road to White Plains, and along it for one-half mile above and below Ann Hook's Brook, which runs across that old highway into Hutchinson's River. Jonathan, son of Thomas, first married a Ward, and then into a Dutch family. His children were in middle life at the commencement of the Revolution, and removed to Nova Scotia. Thomas, the eldest son of Justice Pinkney, and who survived the war, had a number of children, who intermarried in East Chester,—his eldest son, Thomas, with the Briggs family, Israel with the Rich, Philip and William with the Townsend, Jemima with the Ward. Phœbe married Thomas Fowler and Sarah married John Williams.

William Pinkney's wife, whose Christian name was Freeloove, sympathized, in pronounced manner with her brother, Daniel Townsend, in his strong patriotic feelings, and so much so, that the difference between herself and husband was notorious at the time. Their son Henry, who was killed during the war, had a son William, well known in New York, whose son William is a resident of New Rochelle, where he has been, for many years, Justice of the peace. Micajah, brother of Henry, resided in New York City, as did also his sons, much respected,—William T., James W., Isaac M., Abraham C., Joshua G., Alexander R. and Thomas C.

DRAKE.—This family, one of the most distinguished in the town and county, is descended from Samuel Drake, who had three sons and several daughters. Samuel, the second son, remained in Connecticut. The rest of the children emigrated, with their father, to East Chester. In the laying out of the land voted by the town from time to time, in the settling of difficulties between the freeholders, and in the necessary interviews with the Governor, and in the commissions from him, the services of Samuel Drake and his two sons, John and Joseph, appear to have been most valuable. John Drake was a member of the New York Assembly. The family continued, through the colonial period, to hold its position of honor and trust. In the Revolution, Colonel Joseph Drake was one of the most ardent patriots and one of the most brave and efficient officers of the war. The poet, Joseph Rodman Drake, Charles Drake, an eminent city physician, and the two aldermen, James and Elias G., have still further contributed to keep up the distinction of the family.

FOWLER.—This family was early spread over a large portion of the town. In the poll-list of 1725, of sixty-nine votes given, thirteen bear the name of Fowler. Henry, Moses, John, Jonathan, Solomon, Thomas, Theodosius and Philemon are well known in the history of the town. The family intermarried with the Pell, Pinckney, Hunt and Lawrence families.

WARD.—The name of Ward, which, indeed, is not found in the first book of minutes, and which is, in this neighborhood, almost altogether unknown at this day, was, during the eighteenth, and the first half of

the nineteenth centuries, that of the strongest family in the town of East Chester. Edmund Ward is one of the patentees of the Long Reach grant, fifty acres of which he had been authorized, in 1700, to buy from the Indians and possess. His son Edmund was the colonial member of Assembly, and his two grandsons were distinguished in the Revolution,—Edmund



PHILEMON H. FOWLER.

for his inflexible self-sacrifice and loyalty and Stephen for his services in the patriot cause. Charles Ward and Jonathan Ward, sons of Stephen, rose to offices of influence and honor in the town. Stephen Ward, son of Jonathan, in 1826, '27 and '28, was elected supervisor. A third branch of the Ward family for a number of years held positions of usefulness. The representative of this branch was Isaac Ward, who died in 1826.

HUNT.—This is indeed a family of the town of Westchester, and yet quite early members of it settled in this town. James Hunt was one of the first supervisors of East Chester after the Revolution. Israel resided at Long Reach, as did afterwards his son Joshua, lately deceased. Nehemiah Hunt married Anna Lawrence, and had ten children, the seventh of whom, Aaron, married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Fowler, and had several children, among whom was Theodosius, whose son is Stephen Pell Hunt, at present an active citizen of the town. Basil Hunt, the eighth child of Nehemiah, had several children, among whom were Richard, father of Mrs. Coffin, and George R. and James O. Hunt. Another child of Basil Hunt was Mrs. Elizabeth Duryea, whose surviving daughters are Mrs. States Briggs and Mrs. Lewis Rich. Nehemiah Hunt's third child, Anna, married Carrington Wilson, whose surviving daughter resides in Mount Vernon.

Dr. Benjamin Hunt was a son of Moses, of Long Reach, East Chester, who was a son of Josiah, commonly called Grove Josiah, whose father, Josiah, was son of Thomas, who removed from Rye to Westchester somewhere about 1667.

MORGAN.—James Morgan, from Wales, settled in East Chester, near the Wartburg Orphan Asylum, in the early part of the eighteenth century. No trace can be found of any close relationship between him and Rev. Joseph Morgan, the Congregational minister of East Chester. James Morgan was elected collector of the town in 1718. From his two sons, Caleb and Charles, descended a family whose members, for a century and upwards, largely contributed to the prosperity of the town and were associated with its official duties. Six of the most comfortable homes and most extensive and best cultivated farms of East Chester were for many years occupied by the Morgans. It is an indication of the almost entire change which the population of East Chester has undergone in thirty-five years that not one of those houses are now so inhabited, and that but one of them is owned by a descendant of the first James Morgan.

LAWRENCE.—Isaac Lawrence was brought by his father, Isaac, from Long Island to East Chester in 1689, being then about two years old. His grandson, Thomas (son of Isaac), married Martha Hunt, and resided on the place afterwards the property of Moses P. Prout, on the White Plains road. His son Jesse's daughter, Mary, married Philemon H. Fowler. His grandson, Augustus (son of Aaron), a lame man, who married Elizabeth Heustis, and who occupied a number of positions of public trust, and was well known as "Gus Lawrence," was sexton of St. Paul's Church and church-yard from 1824 to 1842.

BUILDINGS.

ST. PAUL'S CHURCH.—The erection of this church was commenced in 1764, and at the end of three years it was inclosed. Work was not resumed on it until 1787. It is a solid structure of stone in rubble, with brick quoins, having a square tower surmounted by an octangular cupola. The highest stage and lantern are of wood and were an addition made in 1818. It is a matter of satisfaction here to record that these are to be shortly rebuilt in stone, and will hereafter be a witness of the interest in this house of God of Miss Martha Wilson, who desires, also, that the name of her sister, Miss Harriet Wilson, be associated with this recollection of devotion to God and His church.

The great strength of the masonry of this building was realized when, some twenty years ago, two blasts of gunpowder were employed without damage to make an aperture through its walls. On the front of the tower, cut into the stone, are the following letters, evidently the initials of three persons whose hearts the erection of the new church gladdened: P. R. P., P. P. and L. V. Two of the names are detected—Philip Pell and Louis Vincent. It is a curious fact that the funds necessary in the construction of what in its day was an ambitious edifice were partly obtained by public lottery, a common mode at the time of raising money for purposes of general

necessity. The conversion of this building in the Revolution into an hospital, during the British occupation of the town, gives it peculiar interest. The sufferings here endured, and the many deaths within its walls would, independent of its subsequent higher consecration, diffuse around it all the odor of sanctity. It is possible that occasional religious services may have been held here between 1783 and 1787,—such, for instance, as that conducted by the Rev. Benjamin Moore, afterwards Bishop of New York, who came up, it is said, from the city and preached from a hoghead, with this suggestive text: "Let your moderation be known unto all men." However, in the month of June, 1787, the building found an important use in the session in it of the Court of Oyer and Terminer, Chief Justice Richard Morris presiding.¹ The celebrated Colonel Aaron Burr appeared as one

A painting of conceded merit hangs on the walls of this church, which is described by the artist himself as follows: "An oil painting, the subject of which is Paul before Felix; the time chosen is when 'Felix trembled.' There are six figures a little larger than life. The size of the picture is twelve feet high by nine feet wide, painted expressly for the church by F. W. Edmonds." In the tower hangs the old bell, which was cast in the White Hall Chapel Foundry, London, at the order and cost of the second colonial rector. It bears the following legend: "The gift of the Rev. Thomas Standard, 1758. Lester & Peck, fecit."

HALSEY MANSION.—This house at the Revolution was the property of the Vincents, the smiths, of the village of East Chester, who were greatly respected. The violent death of one of them, in consequence of

his devotion to religious duty, makes this spot sacred. An American officer, who insisted upon the shoeing of his horse on Sunday, was as resolutely refused. The angry officer, with his sword, struck Gilbert Vincent to the ground. His brother Elijah took a commission with the enemy, and became the terror of American officers in this region. This place is also notable as the residence of Colonel W. S. Smith, a son-in-law of President John Adams. Mrs. Smith ("Abigail Adams") was a lady of great beauty.² Colonel Smith had been an officer of distinction in the Revolutionary army, lieutenant-colonel of the Thirteenth Massachusetts Regiment and aid to Washington. He had also been Secretary of Legation



HALSEY HOUSE.

A part of which was the original Vincent House.

of the counselors of this court in several of the cases before it, the most notable of which was that of Isamer Granger, charged with horse-stealing, who was, notwithstanding the efforts of his able defender, convicted and sentenced to death. Soon after the adjournment of this court the necessary additions and improvements to the building were commenced, which fitted it for its intended religious service. It was not consecrated, however, until 1805.

In 1853 a chancel was built, which, as yet, serves only for vestry-room and Sunday-school purposes.

in England in 1785, and in 1789 United States marshal at New York. In 1804 he was president of New York Cincinnati, and from 1813 to 1816 member of Congress. During his residence at East Chester he became involved with his son in the celebrated Miranda expedition. It is not at all improbable that its details were planned in this house. While the yellow fever was reigning in Philadelphia, then the seat of government of the United States, President Adams and family made their home at East Chester. A number of letters were here written by Mr. Adams, mainly with reference to the propriety of calling the next Congress to meet in New York City. The following letter is selected:

¹On the 31st of July the Rev. Dr. Cutler, passing on his way to New York, writes: "At East Chester saw a Stone Church which was greatly injured by the British troops; the windows, which were remarkable for their size, were taken out and destroyed, and have not since been replaced."—*New York Historical Magazine*, June, 1873.

²Crosswell's "Republican Court."

"EAST CHESTER, 12th of October, 1797.

"To T. PICKERING, SEC. OF STATE.

"DEAR SIR:

"I arrived here at Col. Smith's last night with my family and I shall make this house my home till we can go to Philadelphia with Safety. . . . If you address your letters to me at East Chester and recommend them to the care of Charles Adams, Esq., at New York, I shall get them without much loss of time, but if a mail could be made up for East Chester, they might come sooner. I know not whether this can be done without appointing a postmaster at this place, and I know of no one to recommend. I shall divide my time between New York and East Chester till the meeting of Congress.

"With great regard, &c.,

"JOHN ADAMS." 1

Colonel Smith's family remained at this house for many years. It was a singular coincidence that the body of President Adams' grandson, George Washington Adams, drowned in Long Island Sound in 1829, should have floated into East Chester Creek, and been recovered by one of the Wardens of St. Paul's Church. The mother of the young man, Mrs. John Quincy Adams, presented St. Paul's Church a silver cup in recognition of the service rendered her.

It is also to be remembered that the bell, with the Prayer-Book (1715) and Bible (1758) of St. Paul's Church, were buried in these grounds for safe keeping during the Revolution. (For a thrilling story, "The Whispering Bell," based upon this fact, see *Holden's Magazine*, April, 1848.)

REID'S MILL.—This structure, which, as we have seen, was built by Shute & Stanton in 1739, after a career of little less than a century and a half, stands yet in much strength, seemingly indifferent of the future, as if conscious of the good work upon which its frame rests. In its earlier history this mill merely met the demands of the farming population around it,² but after the Revolution an extensive grinding of Western grain was for years carried on in it. The miller of those latter years, Robert Reid, was a prompt and thoroughly honest man, and notwithstanding his tartness of manner, much respected. Those were times of much activity upon Mill Creek, and of amazing accomplishments of haste on the part of Reid, and the trim craft that sailed these waters. The quiet which now pervades this locality is a commentary on the uncertainty of everything human, for here, if anywhere, was the promise of unflinching prosperity.

FIRE COMPANIES AND LARGE CONFLAGRATIONS.

The town of East Chester seems to have been without any public provision for the extinguishing of fire until about thirty years ago, when, in the new village of Mt. Vernon,

CLINTON HOOK-AND-LADDER COMPANY, No. 1, was organized. This was effected on the 24th of November, 1855. In 1871 a reorganization took place under the amended charter of the village.

The following gentlemen have held the office of Foreman successively to the present date:

- | | |
|-----------------------|------------------------|
| 1. Drake P. Todd. | 7. George Howard. |
| 2. Chas. E. Raymond. | 8. William J. Collins. |
| 3. Charles H. Weiss. | 9. Charles W. Hick. |
| 4. David Quackenbush. | 10. Minot C. Kellogg. |
| 5. Mathew Morrison. | 11. Edson Lewis. |
| 6. Geo. R. Crawford. | 12. W. H. Van Arsdale. |

The number of members is thirty-five.

WASHINGTON ENGINE COMPANY, No. 1, of the town of East Chester, was organized June 4, 1860, incorporated March 30, 1867, and accepted by Town Board November 10, 1867.

The following persons have been Foremen of this company:

- | | |
|---------------------|---------------------|
| 1. B. F. Durkee. | 7. John Lang. |
| 2. A. C. Beardsley. | 8. Frederick Swift. |



REID'S MILL, BUILT IN 1739.

East Chester.

- | | |
|----------------------|----------------------|
| 3. C. T. Hathaway. | 9. Frank Butler. |
| 4. Philip Lucas, Jr. | 10. E. B. Howland. |
| 5. B. F. Wallace. | 11. Joseph A. Smith. |
| 6. William White. | 12. Peter Walker. |

The present Foreman is Frederick Earle. The present number of members is thirty.

PROTECTION ENGINE COMPANY, No. 1, was organized June 2, 1874, and at the same date accepted by the Trustees of the Village of West Mount Vernon. The present number of members is thirty, and the following members have filled the position of Foreman:

- | | |
|-----------------------|--|
| 1. John Lang, Jr. | 4. Emil J. Volmer. |
| 2. Ferdinand Johnson. | 5. Frederick Swift, the present Foreman. |
| 3. J. A. Lawrence. | |

The two companies of Mt. Vernon are under the direction and control of the Board of Trustees, whose approval is necessary in the admission of members, the election of officers and other important matters. The two companies form a Department and annually elect a Chief Engineer. The following gentlemen

¹ "Life and Writings of John Adams," vol. x. p. 156.

² In 1762 a town committee charged with other duties are, besides enjoined "to regulate Mr. Woldron's Toll Dish." Mr. Woldron owned this mill from 1759 to 1766.

have held the position: George R. Crawford, William J. Collins, James Wilkinson, William Anderson, Charles W. Hick and Emil J. Vollmer, now in command.

In the earlier history of this town an extensive conflagration was not possible, because of the remoteness from each other of the houses. The peril, however, was realized after the multiplication of buildings in the vicinity of Mount Vernon depot. At the burning of Peter Shute's store, in October, 1856, replaced by what has since been called "Van Court's," the danger was alarmingly apparent. The building, in which inflammable material was stored, had to be abandoned to its fate, but the hotel opposite was saved through the instrumentality of the members of Clinton Hook-and-Ladder Company, which was early on the ground. The firemen were congratulated on all sides for their noble exertions.

Seventeen years afterward, with a difference only of two days (October 8, 1873), in this very neighborhood, occurred the conflagration which had thus been averted. It originated on the corner of First Street and Fourth Avenue, and a high wind blowing, the flames swept along both the avenue and street, consuming sixteen houses, including three hotels. The loss was estimated at one hundred and twenty-seven thousand eight hundred and fifty dollars, and not more than sixty-eight thousand two hundred dollars was covered by insurance. The portion of the village over which this fire spread was at the time, as now, the business centre, but as without delay the lost edifices were replaced by others of brick, a very great improvement in the appearance of the locality was soon manifest.

In addition to the legal organizations detailed, the society known as The Exempt Firemen's Association is named, which, though formed so lately as 1885, will in all likelihood, as it increases year by year in numbers, become an instrument of influence as well as source of pride.

BANKS AND BANKING INSTITUTIONS.

With the growth of the population and of the varied business interests of the town the necessity for banking facilities became more and more pressing. In 1868, through the instrumentality of Mr. Cornelius Corson,

THE EAST CHESTER NATIONAL BANK was chartered, with William M. Tweed, of New York, as President, Mr. Corson as Vice-President, and Mr. Henry S. Murray as Cashier. The capital invested was two hundred and fifty thousand dollars. The bank had its office in Mt. Vernon, under Washington Hotel, Fourth Avenue. It continued affording advantages to this and the neighboring towns until the Tweed troubles came on, in 1874, when the stock was sold out to Mason, Cox & Smith, bankers, of New York, who, in the course of a year, wound up its affairs and transferred it to the West.

A short time afterward John M. Masterton, who had been one of its directors, with Philip Lucas, Jr.,

and William H. Pemberton, organized a private banking house, under the name of

JOHN M. MASTERTON & Co.—The business was conducted at first in "Van Court's office," and from April 1, 1874, in more ample rooms in Berry's Building, in Fourth Avenue, Mt. Vernon. Mr. Pemberton, after a few years, withdrew his interest. In November, 1884, the firm was compelled to make an assignment, and its business was closed.

EAST CHESTER SAVINGS BANK was established in 1871 by Act of the Legislature. Its first president was John M. Masterton, who occupied the position until November, 1884. The Bank was opened at Washington Hall, Fourth Avenue, whence, being burnt out in the large fire of 1873, it was removed to Van Court's Building, and afterwards, in 1874, to Berry's Building, where its business is transacted. Its present trustees are Messrs. Joseph S. Clark (who is also President), William H. Pemberton, David Cromwell, John Berry, Ferdinand Holm, Gerard Martens, James S. Van Court, Joseph S. Wood, Azro Fowler, George D. Rockwell, George H. Brown, J. H. Zabriskie, E. P. Fuller.

BANK OF MOUNT VERNON, N. Y.—This bank was started in 1885, with a capital of twenty-five thousand dollars, and has been conducted with marked success. It has deposits to the amount of one hundred and seventy-five thousand dollars. Its president is Mr. Gouverneur Rogers; vice-president, Mr. Henry C. Smith; and cashier, Mr. Jesse Lantz. The following gentlemen are directors: Messrs. John Berry, James L. Reynolds, Joseph S. Clark, James S. Van Court, John Van Santvoord, Gouverneur Rogers, Minot C. Kellogg, Archibald M. Campbell.

This bank has its place of business also in Berry's Building.

CHARITABLE AND BENEVOLENT INSTITUTIONS.

WARTBURG ORPHAN FARM SCHOOL, of the Evangelical Lutheran Church, was established in 1866. The object of this institution is to rear and educate fatherless and motherless children, who are admitted from six to ten years of age. The institution is supported solely by voluntary contributions. The property consists of one hundred acres, with the necessary buildings, and is entirely free from debt. It is located near Union Corners. The present number of inmates is sixty-two. The institution was incorporated in 1869, but the act of incorporation was much altered in 1884. The children receive instruction in the elementary branches, in both the English and German languages, and also in farm work and domestic duties and in their religion. The Rev. W. A. Passavant is the president of the Board of Managers, and the Rev. G. C. Holls the corresponding secretary and director of the Home. The buildings are commodious and well arranged.

NEW YORK INFANT ASYLUM.—This institution, which, according to its charter, has for its object the "charge of foundlings and other infant children of

the age of two years and under, to prevent the maternal abandonment of homeless infants, and to diminish the moral dangers and personal sufferings to which homeless mothers are exposed," in 1878 established a branch in this town, on the White Plains road, about a mile distant from the Bronxville depot, on the Harlem Railroad. In addition to the dwelling found on the place, formerly the residence of Sheriff Townsend, a number of houses have been erected, conspicuous among which are the main building, of brick, another called after the first president of the institution, the Foster Cottage, the Bates Cottage and another after the treasurer. There are at this writing two hundred and eighty-five infants, one hundred and forty-five women and seven officers at the institution.

INNS, HOTELS AND TAVERNS.

In the agreement of 1665 the twentieth point is "that one man, either of himself or by consent, may give entertainment to strangers for money."

It was in accordance with this understanding that, on January 24, 1679, Moses Hoit was "chosen to keep ordinary and entertayn strangers for the year inshuing, for pay." This resolution was passed again in 1683.

In the account of the election on the Green, in 1733, the houses of "Joseph Fowler" and of "Mr. Baker." and, little doubt, of "Mr. Child," whither the contestants betook themselves before the election, were houses of refreshment. And so also it must be supposed that a tavern of a later date is indicated, at which assembled, in 1775, at "Forbes," the officers of Colonel Drake's new levy.

CRAWFORD'S.—How long before the Revolution this house, to the north of the Green, had been a place of public entertainment is not known. During the occupation of the neighborhood by the English forces it was a favorite resort for officers. On the sign-post in front of this tavern a British deserter was summarily hung. Mr. Crawford, familiarly known as "Billy Crawford," continued the obliging and popular host for many years after the war.

GUION'S.—This inn, situated in the village of East Chester, on the road to Boston, not far from its junction with the road to Westchester, was kept by William Baker as early as 1728, but during the Revolution by Charles Guion.

There is a tradition in his family that in this house General Washington was ill for several days, and that in leaving it he asked of the hostess, in recognition of her kindness to him, permission to kiss her cheek, which her husband insisted should never after be washed. It was at this tavern that Governor George

Clinton, in 1783, at the evacuation of New York, assembled the members of the State Council, in pursuance of the act passed October 23, 1779, and entitled "an act to provide for the temporary government of the southern part of this State whenever the enemy shall abandon or be dispossessed of the same, and until the Legislature can be convened."

This inn held its own as a popular stopping-place for a number of years. In the "Journal of a tourist through the Eastern States, 1776," we find the following item: "Thence proceeded on to East Chester, where I slept all night in a good bed at Mr. Guion's."

This *public-house was still later kept by one Frederick Friend. It was at this time that it became extensively known by the exhibition in it of the strange spectacle of the petrified body of Mr. Friend's mother, discovered in this condition on its removal from a city cemetery to St. Paul's Churchyard directly opposite. Thousands, it is said, visited this house during this excitement. For the last



CHARLES GUION'S TAVERN,
East Chester.

forty years it has been a private residence, and is now sadly out of repair.

FOWLER'S.—This inn, originally described as on the southerly corner of the old road to Boston and the road¹ to Mile Square, and which in 1733 was kept by Joseph Fowler, passed to his son, William Fowler, whose private residence it became and continued until the Revolution, when it was known as the headquarters of the Hessian officer, Colonel Emmerick. Several years before the close of the last century Mr. Philemon H. Fowler, son of William, reopened it as a tavern, which soon became a favorite stopping-place for travelers on the way to Boston, also to White Plains, Danbury and beyond.

Mr. Fowler obtained a high reputation for his hospitality and integrity, and this confidence brought to him many responsible trusts. In 1797 and thereafter for seventeen successive years, and in 1823 and 1824, the town-meetings were here held. In 1798 an addi-

¹ Sometimes now called the extension of Third Avenue, Mt. Vernon.

tion was made to the old house, and a spacious room was fitted up in it for the neighboring Lodge of Masons, of which order Mr. Fowler was then an enthusiastic member. The Lodge occupied it until 1815. Mr. Fowler after retiring from business continued his residence in it until his death, in 1861. On occasion of his funeral the Free Masons of Hiawatha and other lodges assembled in the old Lodge-room, and thence proceeded to pay the proper honors to the memory of their valued associate.

ELISHA SHUTE'S.—This tavern was on the easterly side of the White Plains Road, directly opposite where it is joined by the Road styled "to Bedford and Vermont." The house was taken down when this last named road was extended over to Pelhamville. The town-meeting was held here in 1794.

ODELL'S.—This hotel, built in 1875, occupies the site where Dr. John G. Wright lived immediately after the Revolution. The mill on Rattlesnake Creek built by John Jackson in 1670, was in the rear, if not part, of the property "home lot" to which the site of this house belonged. One Vredenburg is supposed to have been the first who here kept public accommodations in this century. He was succeeded by James Armstrong, an Englishman, who was noted in his day as spreading the best table between New York and Boston. After his death the house was kept by his widow, a daughter of Charles Guion. Mrs. Armstrong's management still further contributed to its excellent reputation.

In 1820 it passed into the hands of David Smith, who, in 1824, entertained General Lafayette on his way eastward during his celebrated tour. Mr. Smith was succeeded by Mr. James Townsend and Eden Edwards. The fame thus obtained for an excellent inn has been more than illustrated for the last forty years by the present host, Stephen Odell. The new hotel erected by him in 1876 affords the ample accommodations with which the traveler is glad to meet. A pass was found between two shingles of the old house at the time of its removal. It is likely that an inn may have been here at a very early date, for the "ordinary" of Moses Hoit was in this neighborhood. The pass reads as follows:

"Permit the bearer hereof William Thompson a private Soldier Independent Company of British Fusiliers posted at Fort York, to pass and repass about his lawful occasions to from the date hereof until the twenty third day of April He behaving himself as becometh. And then to return to his Comm to the aforesaid Fort or Garrison. Under my hand in New York this twenty fifth Day of October 173

— HUBERT MARSHALL.

"To the officers, Civil and Military whom these may Concern."

HANNAH FISHER'S.—No public house on the road to Boston, after the building of the turnpike, was better remembered by travelers than Hannah Fisher's, and was patronized as much from curiosity to see her as to partake of the always-good fare provided. The hostess is represented as a woman of large frame and immense strength, and had a beard. She would

readily take up a barrel of cider and drink out of the bung-hole. Stories of Aunt Hannah, her good nature, her strength, her sex, shortened many a mile on the Post Road. Although everything was scrupulously neat and the hostess insisted and maintained propriety and order, the largest number of the raffles and other such lower amusements of the town occurred at her house.

WIDOW MORRILL'S.—For nearly forty years, beginning with the closing years of the last century, Robert Morrill, then his widow, and then Lancaster U. Tompkins kept the tavern on the road to White Plains, not far from the old school-house of the second district,—indeed, immediately adjoining the lot where the new school-house has just been erected. Here the town, after leaving Philemon Fowler's, in 1816, held, for nearly a score of years, its annual meetings and elections.

MARBLE HALL.—This was the name given to the tavern started at the opening of the work in the quarries by Kain & Morgan. It was kept by John R. Hayward, and was the house which Jonathan Ward built on the site of the Ward House, destroyed in the Revolution. The new house is said to have been the exact counterpart of the old. Here the Judge had lived many years, and had reared an interesting family. It was at this tavern that President Van Buren, in his tour of 1839, was entertained by the citizens of East Chester.

GOULD'S HOTEL.—This House, which is directly opposite where stood the original depot of the New Haven Railroad at Mt. Vernon, was built, in 1852, by Mr. George Gould, and flourished under his proprietorship until his death, in 1870. Mrs. Gould and son continued it successfully until 1878, when Mr. Josiah Roe leased the premises, and is now conducting this inn with much satisfaction to wayfarers and permanent guests. There is a large hall in this hotel, which has been, from the first, a favorite place of assemblage for town-meetings, celebrations, political harangues, balls and the like public uses.

WASHINGTON HOTEL.—This was a frame building, sixty by forty feet, and three stories high, on Fourth Avenue, near First Street, Mt. Vernon. It was erected by Andrew Todd, in 1853, and combined in its uses tavern, boarding-house and a large room for public meetings, fairs, balls, exhibitions and other entertainments. In 1866, Mr. Todd leased it to Mr. Benjamin Wallace, who conducted the business with energy and success. The structure was, however, burnt to the ground in the conflagration of 1873. It was in front of this hotel that the first meeting was held in East Chester to sustain the Government in the suppression of the Rebellion, and from the piazza the leading men of the town, the clergy and others addressed the assembled citizens.

Other hotels of less moment are here recorded,—Bishop Underhill's (near Scarsdale); Elijah Rich's, Rock Cottage, Bock's (near Hunt's Bridge), Pugmire's

(at Tuckahoe), Wood's, Gebman's, Scheuerman's, Diecman's, Oster's, Kapp's.

PUBLIC HALLS.

Beside the audience chambers in some of the Hotels which have been named, several large rooms have been popular for larger assemblages, and are here noted:

JOURNEAU'S HALL was on the corner of Fifth Avenue and Fourth Street, Mt. Vernon, and early in the history of that village was the room most used for public occasions. Meetings for municipal, literary, social and religious purposes were continually held in it. Several religious bodies conducted their incipient services in these humble quarters.

CENTRAL HALL was on the corner of Third Avenue and Fourth Street, Mt. Vernon, and was also frequently in demand for meetings of the stirring settlers of that locality.

UNION HALL, on the corner of First Street and Sixth Avenue, in the same village, was, however, for more than twenty-five years the most popular of these public places. Here political meetings, church fairs, lectures, concerts, balls, brought out and displayed the various phases of town life. Here a large number of Sunday-school children were for years instructed, and here its walls were made to resound annually with the sweets carols and unrestrained rejoicings of the children of old St. Paul's around their Christmas trees.

This building is at the present time undergoing extensive repairs and alterations, and will probably regain its old usefulness.

FOURTH AVENUE HALL, which is in Mt. Vernon, near First Street, has an audience-room of eighty by fifty feet. It is frequently used for fairs, concerts, lectures and the like. For a year or two a skating rink has been kept in this room.

FIFTH AVENUE HALL.—This is a new hall, seventy-five feet by fifty feet, with seating capacity for seven hundred persons. It has been the popular place for the opera, for concerts and for fairs. Mr. Charles Hendricks is the proprietor.

TEMPERANCE HALL is in the village of Waverley, and has been found of occasional value for a number of years.

LIBRARIES.—The earliest public library in the town, of which we have any account, is that of the old Westchester Lodge of Masons. At its meeting on September 22, 1806, the following preamble and resolutions were unanimously adopted:

"It being the fervent wish of the members of this Lodge to improve their minds in knowledge, morality and virtue, and believing this end better promoted by reading the writings of good and wise men, do therefore

"Resolve, That in future all moneys remaining in the Treasury, after all expenses have been paid and charitable purposes answered, shall be applied to the purchase of books for the use of this Lodge; and that they may be done according to law, whereby the property will be secured, each member shall subscribe the sum of fifteen dollars and pay three dollars and fifty cents annually."

In a short time a library of six hundred and thirty-eight volumes was accumulated, of Masonic and Religious works, histories, biographies, novels and romances, and the privilege of their use was extended to others than members of the Fraternity on the yearly payment of four dollars. It is said that a great many persons, especially the ladies, availed themselves of this opportunity of self-improvement. This library was removed to New Rochelle in 1815.

In each of the five school districts of the town there are libraries from which books are distributed. The number of volumes in the First District School is four hundred and sixty-five, in the Second, twelve hundred and forty-five; in the Third, (number not at hand); in the Fourth, twenty-eight hundred and fifty; and in the Fifth, seven hundred.

PRESS.

The first paper published in the town was established September 30, 1854, under the name of *The Mount Vernon Gazette*. Mr. Henry S. Hill was the senior editor, and Mr. Egbert A. S. Manning his assistant. After six months Mr. Hill surrendered to Mr. Manning who received the fullest co-operation of the people in his desire to make his journal an acceptable and useful instrumentality. Mr. Manning, however, whose health had been for a long time failing him, was called to his rest in February, 1857, and the paper survived him but a few months. A reference to the editorials of Mr. Manning show that the progress of Mount Vernon has not exceeded his ardent anticipations. The following is an extract from the Carriers' Annual Address of January 1, 1857:

"Your news-boy will venture to say
There's no pleasanter spot upon earth,
Our health is a treasure; then we've parties of pleasure
That abound in innocent mirth,
Making each winter's night pass off with delight,
Whilst the summer's new pleasures do bring.
When pic-nics of glee from our hills to the sea
Make the valleys of East Chester ring.
Oh, could the pale city belles know
Of our health and our honest good cheer,
I am sure they would not long forego
The pleasure to dwell with us here."

After the discontinuance of the *Gazette*, a limited supply of the news of East Chester might be obtained from the columns of the *Yonkers Examiner* and *The Suburban News*. On the first of these journals Mr. Charles E. Manning, of Mount Vernon, was employed. *The Suburban* was started in 1862 in New York City by Thomas E. Towndrow, and lasted for several years. Mr. Towndrow's valuable services to Westchester County, and especially to this town, through his relations to the metropolitan press deserves to be noticed. From the year 1851, in which he started the *Yonkers Herald*, until the present time, twenty years of which he has resided in this town, he has been the unfaltering friend and promoter of all its advance, as he has been the means of communicating for extensive information many things of interest in its passing

history. Mr. Towndrow was born in Derbyshire, England, on the 7th of May, 1810. He came to this country when he reached his majority, and early engaged in giving instruction in short-hand writing, having many distinguished pupils.

The next newspaper, however, published in the town was

THE VILLAGE NEWS, a small sheet which started on the 27th of June, 1868, with A. W. McDonald as editor, who soon associated Mr. S. E. Holdredge with him; but Mr. McDonald shortly after retired. The paper, having been published about seven months, was changed into

THE WEEKLY SENTINEL, I. Edward Ireland being the editor. This paper was first printed in January, 1869, in the early fall of which year a new name was assumed, and the first number of

THE CHRONICLE was issued September 25, 1869, with Charles A. D. Meyerhoff as editor and proprietor. In the second number Mr. Meyerhoff appears merely as publisher, and Mr. Joseph S. Wood as editor and proprietor. The motto of this paper is "Independent in everything, neutral in nothing." Mr. Wood conducted this journal with marked ability and usefulness until 1884, when it passed into the hands of Mr. Daniel Lewis, under whose administration it has sustained its well-earned reputation. It is said that Mr. Wood is a frequent contributor to its columns. A semi-weekly issue of this paper commenced on the 2d of March, 1886.

WESTCHESTER COUNTY DEMOCRAT.—The first number of this sheet was published April 15, 1870, but its career was of such short duration that it barely deserves mention.

The publication of the *Chronicle* was continued without competition until September, 1879, when another paper, also neutral in politics, was started under the name of the

EAST CHESTER INDEPENDENT.—The publishers were David Brown & Co., of Mount Vernon, who were succeeded by Whyte & Young, and at last by David C. Young. This paper was well conducted and deserved a better fate. The last number was published in July, 1879.

THE MOUNT VERNON ARGUS, in March, 1879, was established as a Democratic journal by Sidebotham & McClelan, as proprietors and editors, and soon obtained a commanding influence. On the 1st of January, 1884, Mr. Sidebotham withdrew, and the paper came under the exclusive control of Mr. McClelan. This gentleman is a son of a former District Attorney of the County, Hon. P. L. McClelan, and is himself a Trustee of the village of Mount Vernon and Clerk of School District No. 4.

The proprietors of the *Argus* started, in September, 1885, a daily sheet under the name of

THE MOUNT VERNON DAILY ITEM, which continues to be published.

In 1884 the want, which had been long felt, of a

paper in the town devoted to the Republican party was met on the 6th of February, under the auspices of Mr. James S. Spencer, by the issue of the first number of

THE WESTCHESTER COUNTY RECORD, a six-column paper, twenty-four by thirty-six. Mr. Spencer retired after a short service of four months, and was succeeded on the 23d of July by Mr. Benjamin F. Ashley. Mr. Ashley was formerly editor of the *Jeffersonian* of Danbury—the *Stamford Herald* and the *Port Chester Journal*, and in his two years of editorial labors in our midst has justified his already well-earned reputation of "a workman that needeth not to be ashamed."

MAILS, POST-OFFICES, STAGES.—That the town participated in the advantages of the permanent mail arrangements set on foot by Governor Dongan, in 1685, appears by a record in the second book of town minutes (p. 36): "1694, paid sine in the same year on Church acco. By Mr. pinkn, for a letter brought by the post, 0s. 9d." The delivery was once a week¹ in summer, and once in two weeks in winter. In the middle of the eighteenth century, under Benjamin Franklin, the facilities for communication were increased by a weekly mail the year round. After the Revolution it would seem, from a letter of President Adams of 1797, already given, that there were no postal arrangements with East Chester up to the close of the eighteenth century.

The following persons are known to have been postmasters at East Chester, till the present day: George Faile, Fisher Valentine, Richard Arnow, Alexander Lane, Theodore Pine, William H. H. Barker, James Barker.

A post-office was established at the Bronxville depot of the Harlem Railroad in 1846, and has been continued there until the present day, under the faithful management of Lancaster O. Underhill, who also has been for many years the ticket agent at that station.

Post-office advantages at even an earlier date were given to the quarry people at Tuckahoe. Mr. John R. Hayward, Mr. A. M. Dederer and Mr. Peter U. Morgan are remembered as having had charge of the mail matter at this point.

At the settling of Mount Vernon it was found expedient to establish a post-office in the western part of the town, and one was located at Hunt's Bridge, Mr. Joshua Huestis being the first postmaster. After a short while the office was transferred to the village of Mount Vernon, and Mr. A. M. Hix and afterward Mr. George Gould became the postmasters. Mr. Gould was displaced by J. S. Van Court, who, in turn, was succeeded by Jackson Hart, in 1857. Mr. Jonathan A. Searles, in 1861, and Mr. Andrew Bridgeman, in 1862, were appointed to the position. Mr. Bridgeman retained the office for twenty-three years. Mr.

¹ N. Y. Col. MSS., vol. iv., p. 317.



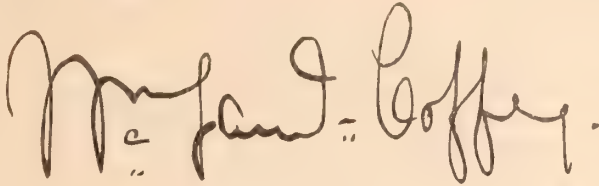






F. W. Cheever

David Quackenbush became the postmaster on the 1st of July, 1885. At the starting of this office, letters from New York were received once a day; now there are four deliveries from that city and four directly from the East.



BIOGRAPHIES.

JOHN B. DUNHAM.

John Barclay Dunham, formerly an extensive manufacturer of pianos, was born in the city of New York, April 2, 1799. His father died when he was a child, and he learned the trade of a cabinet-maker, at which he worked for many years. About 1834 he commenced the manufacture of pianos, as a member of the firm of Stoddard, Wooster & Dunham, their establishment being at the corner of Third Avenue and Fourteenth Street. A manufactory was subsequently built on Thirteenth Street, near the Bowery. The business was afterward removed to One Hundred and Fifty-sixth Street, and here he continued it till his death, which occurred February 9, 1873. It was maintained by his sons till the recent opening of Morris Avenue, which destroyed part of the building. Mr. Dunham was one of the five men who founded the Chatham Bank, and one of the first directors. During the whole of his life he was actively engaged in business, and held a high reputation as a manufacturer and citizen. He married Mary A., daughter of Aaron B. Jackson, a prominent business man of New York. Their children were Edgar (deceased), who married Mary H., daughter of Peter Pirnie, and had one child, Annie, now living in New York; David, who married Josie, daughter of Alexander H. Van Pelt; and John B., who married Carrie Alden, and has three children,—John B., Maud and Alden B.

In 1853 Mr. Dunham purchased a residence in East Chester. The estate, which is the old Pinkney farm, is an ancient landmark situated on the west side of the old road from East Chester to New Rochelle.

Mr. Dunham was a member of the Dutch Reformed Church in Mount Vernon, and one of its most liberal supporters, and left behind him the reputation of an honest and upright citizen, known and honored by all who knew him. In his business affairs he was, in his time, one of the foremost manufacturers of New York, and well known for his integrity and skill.

FERDINAND W. CHIVVIS.

The ancestor of the family of which Mr. Chivvis is the representative was William Chivvis, who came from England, purchased a plantation and settled in Virginia in 1746.

Soon after his arrival he married Rebecca Pendleton, a lady of great amiability of disposition. The children of this marriage were William, born in 1748, and Rebecca, born in 1750. The latter married Rev. Argyle White, of Norfolk, Virginia. They had four children—Mary, Caroline, Wiley and William. After the death of her husband, Mrs. White came to New York with her family, where she remained until her death, in 1830.

William Chivvis the elder died in 1760, and his wife survived him only three months. The children were then cared for by a maternal uncle, who sold the property and took them to his own home, where they received a good education for the times. Some time after, the son William went to reside with some friends in Norfolk, where he remained till the breaking out of the Revolution, when he joined the first volunteer corps that went from Virginia, and endured all the hardships and privations of the campaign, continuing in the service till the close of the war. One who remembered him well thus describes him in after-life: "He was plain but extremely neat in dress. In manner polished, but simple and quiet in his deportment. In business he was strictly just and honest, and required the strictest fulfillment of duty from all in his employ, which doubtless gave him a name of being severe." About 1779 he removed to Monmouth County, New Jersey, where, in 1781, he married Anna Maria Paulson. They were the parents of nine children—Rebecca, born April 15, 1782, who married James Kirk, of New York; William, born April 18, 1786, who married Elizabeth Travers and had one child, Katharine, who died young; John, born April 18, 1786, who married Maria Arrismith, of New Jersey (they were the parents of six children—Benjamin, William, Louisa, John, Edmund and Jane); Cornelius, born July 22, 1788, who married Mary H. I. Woodward, of New York (they were the parents of five children—Jane D. and Anna M. (twins, both deceased), Daniel S., Mary B., Anna M.

Mrs. Chivvis died in 1789 and after her decease Mr. Chivvis married Jennie Doty, of Summerville, N. J. They were the parents of six children—James, born September 17, 1791, who married Margaret Ferdon and had three children, all deceased; Anna, born March 15, 1793, who married John Odell, of New York; Daniel, born September 6, 1795, died young; Margaret, born April 30, 1798, who married Ferdinand Wilsey, M.D.; Jefferson Burr, born March 3, 1800, died young; Elizabeth, born September 15, 1802, married James Meeker; Peter, born December 8, 1804, who married Mary Hipper, of New York City, and had five children,—Ferdinand W., (the subject of

this sketch), Leonora (wife of R. S. Pyke,) William G., Mary A., (wife of William H. Conkling, of the firm of Conkling & Chivvis) and Peter C., deceased.

After his second marriage Mr. Chivvis removed to New York, where he lived until the time of his death, in 1823. He was the owner of the Mulberry farm, below Canal Street, which was so called from the number of trees of that species growing there. Mulberry Street derived its name from the farm, through which it ran. He was a member of the Dutch Reformed Church on Franklin Street, and esteemed as a worthy and useful citizen, and at the conclusion of an upright life was laid to rest in the Dutch burying-ground on North Street.

Ferdinand W. Chivvis was born in New York June 27, 1843. Upon the death of his father, which occurred when the son was only nineteen years of age, he endeavored to supply the parent's place and fulfill the last wish of his mother by keeping the family together until they were separated by death or by removal to homes of their own. His first introduction to business life was as errand boy in the employ of William P. Dayton, whose store was at the corner of Broadway and Bleecker Street. After a year he left to attend school for the next two years, and then entered the employ of Ubstel, Pierson & Lake, the firm after many changes known as James McCreery & Co., and remained with them twelve years.

In 1872 he began business on his own account, having as a partner William H. Conkling (who subsequently became his brother-in-law), and established at 763 Broadway the firm now extensively known in the business world as Conkling & Chivvis. They started with a capital of fifteen thousand dollars at a time when a depression in business brought ruin to many older concerns, but success attended their efforts and their sales during the first year amounted to three hundred thousand dollars. Circumstances enabled them to buy at reduced rates, and by liberal advertising they soon established a large business, which has been constantly increasing to the present time. Five years later (during which period their place of business was greatly enlarged) they followed the course of trade and removed to their present location, at Sixth Avenue and Twenty-third Street. This is the famous Booth's Theatre property, but is so greatly changed that it would no longer be recognized under its former name. The great cost of the theatre made it a financial failure and seriously embarrassed its owner, and it was sold to the banking firm of Fish & Ward, who have, within the last two years, furnished so conspicuous an example of disastrous failure, and it is now rented from the receiver of the late firm by its present occupants. There are few things which recall so vividly the changes that constantly occur in the great metropolis, and one can hardly realize that in the rooms now thronged by busy purchasers crowds once listened spellbound to the thrilling tones of the American tragedian.

The reputation of the firm is fully established and their place of business as well known as any in the city, embracing Nos. 70, 72, 74 and 76 West Twenty-third Street, and 368, 370, 372 and 374 Sixth Avenue. Their sales amount to more than one million dollars annually, and both members of the firm are justly recognized as representatives of the successful business men of the present time.

Mr. Chivvis married Annie E., daughter of Henry McDougal. Their children are Adele, Carrie E., Leonora, Frederick Wilsey, Ferdinand W. and Harry Conkling (the last being a curious instance of a child born with perfectly developed teeth). The last two are deceased.

In 1875 Mr. Chivvis purchased a place at Mount Vernon, in this county, formerly owned by — Morgan, Esq., and later by W. H. Archer, and has since made this his home, while still actively engaged in business in New York.

ALFRED H. DUNCOMBE.

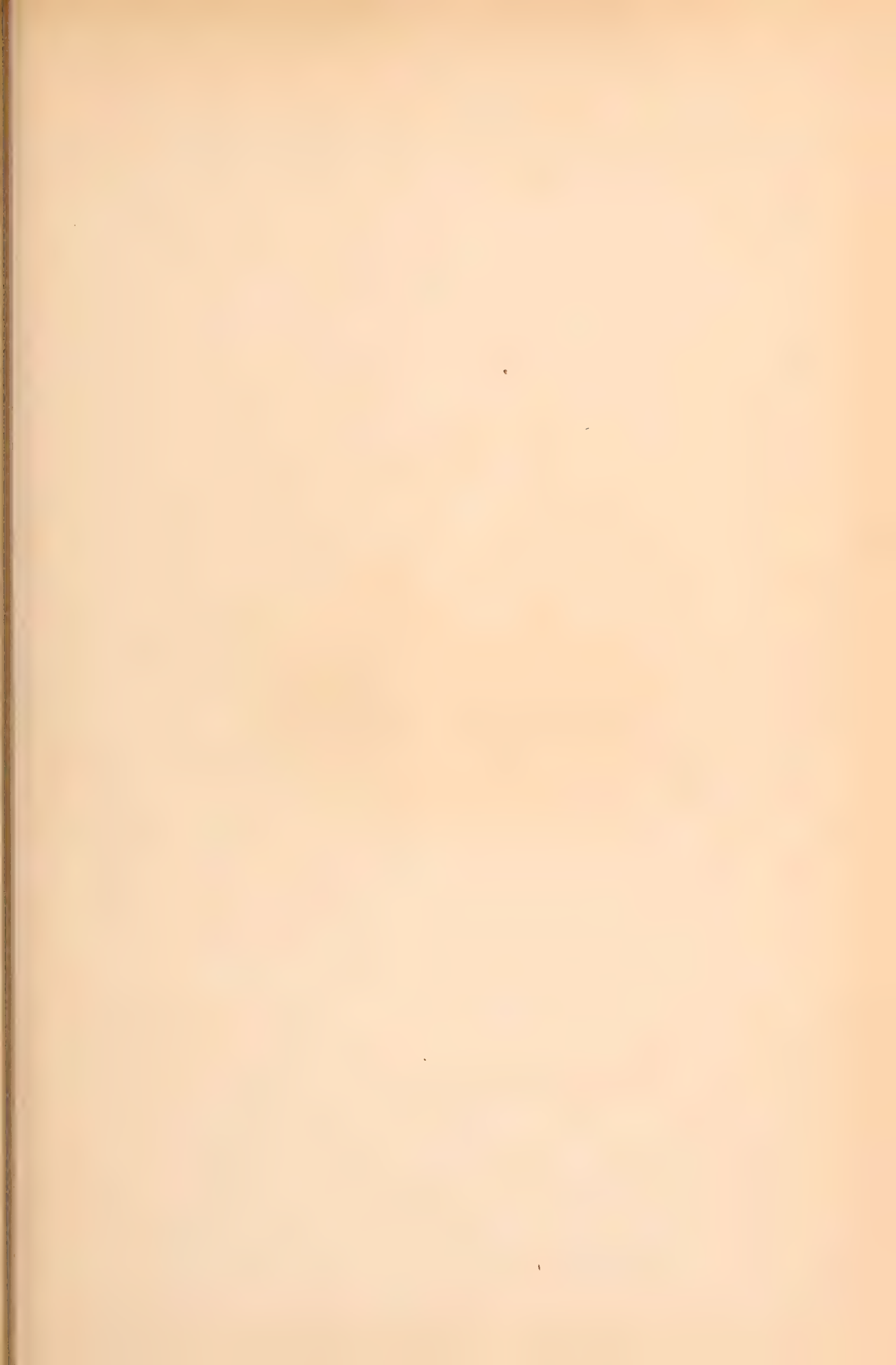
Alfred H. Duncombe, one of the oldest residents of the town of East Chester, was born in Middletown, N. Y., November 3, 1803. His father, Nathaniel Duncombe came from England, and married Nancy, daughter of Samuel Taylor, of Fairfield, Conn. Upon the death of his father, which occurred in 1806, his mother removed to New York, where some of her relatives resided, and her son was apprenticed to Daniel Berrian, a manufacturer of brushes, who was then doing an extensive business at 365 Pearl Street. He remained with Mr. Berrian till he reached the age of twenty-one, when he went into business on his own account, being assisted by his former employer. His establishment was on Water Street, where the United States Hotel now stands. In 1832 he removed to Franklin Square and opened business on a site which is now owned by the well-known publishers, the Harpers. In 1842 he purchased the estate in New Rochelle known as the "Pintard farm," containing about one hundred acres, at what was then considered a fair price, twenty-five dollars an acre. In 1844 he retired from business and resolved to spend his days in the country. In 1846 he sold the farm in New Rochelle and removed to East Chester, where he bought what was known as the "Pinkney farm," and built the house now owned by the heirs of John B. Dunham. About 1857 Mr. Duncombe bought a portion of the farm which was formerly the homestead of Philemon Fowler, the representative of the ancient family of that name. Upon this tract he built the elegant stone mansion which he has since made his home. It is situated on the west side of Third Avenue, in South Mount Vernon, and here he passes the evening of his days in quiet and retirement.

Mr. Duncombe married, in 1828, Helen H. Stockton Opie. They were the parents of three children,



Alfred H. Duncombe







W. A. Cowking

two of whom, Alfred and Charles, died at an early age, and one, Adeline, is now living in Mount Vernon.

Mrs. Duncombe died in 1877, and a stately monument in St. Paul's Church-yard marks her resting-place. He subsequently married Naomi Lamoreux.

Mr. Duncombe is a representative of the successful business men of the old school, and enjoys the reputation of a worthy and useful citizen. For more than forty years he has been one of the wardens of St. Paul's Church, of which he is an active and liberal supporter, and by his financial skill the church has twice been relieved from the burden of embarrassing debt.

Mrs. Nancy Duncombe, widow of Nathaniel Duncombe, died June 10, 1846, at the age of seventy-one, and was buried in St. Paul's Church-yard, East Chester. After her decease Mr. Duncombe tore down the old house, which was built before the Revolution, and erected the residence now owned by the heirs of John B. Dunham.

WILLIAM HOWARD CONKLING.

The ancestors of Mr. Conkling came from Southold, L. I., the first of the name being John Conkling, a native of Nottinghamshire, England, who came to Salem, Mass., before 1649, and settled at Southold about 1655. He was made freeman of the colony of Connecticut, of which Southold was then a part, in 1660. He was a large landholder, a prominent and influential citizen, and has left many descendants in all parts of the country. He died in 1683, leaving his wife, Mary, and five sons,—John, Jacob, Benjamin, Joseph and Timothy.

The eldest son, John Conkling, was born in Nottinghamshire in 1630, and came to Southold with his father. The inscription upon his tombstone, which may be seen in the ancient burying-ground in Southold, states that he died April 6, 1694. His wife, Mary, died November, 1688. Their son, John Conkling, the third of the name, married Sarah, daughter of Barnabas Horton, a descendant of one of the oldest families on Long Island, in 1680. They were the parents of eight children,—John, Henry, Thomas, Joseph, Sarah, Rachel, Mary and Elizabeth. John Conkling, the father of this family, died in 1706.

Henry Conkling, the second son, was born in 1690, and died July 26, 1753. He married Temperance, daughter of Stephen Bayley, in 1716, and after her decease he married "Widow Mary Budd." His children were Henry, (born 1717), Benjamin (1719), John, Temperance, Elizabeth, Jonathan, Thomas, Deborah and Jeremiah.

Henry, the eldest son of this family, was the father of Henry Conkling, who lived at Mendham, N. J., and was born in 1752, and died October 1, 1820. He married Lydia Hudson April 5, 1778. She survived her husband and died June 2, 1831. Their

children were Luther, born January 10, 1780, died October 12, 1845; Polly, born June 20, 1782, died 1802; John, born November 6, 1783, died July 14, 1785; Josiah, born June 14, 1786, died October 25, 1868; Hannah, born September 16, 1788, died June 2, 1793; Puah, born December 22, 1792, married John Byram and died February 25, 1823; Hannah Riggs, born July 5, 1794, died May 26, 1848; Sally, born October 28, 1798, died September 20, 1875.

Luther Conkling, the eldest son, married Rebecca, daughter of Joseph Sutton, August 11, 1803. Their children were Charles Hudson, born August 18, 1804, died October 7, 1871, and Henry, born April 18, 1807, died October 24, 1845. Both Henry Conkling and his son Luther were prominent citizens of Mendham, N. J., and their names are frequently mentioned in the annals of that town.

Charles Hudson Conkling married Jane, daughter of Henry and Rachel Cooper, January 29, 1829. She was born February 14, 1805, and died February 26, 1874. The children of this family were,—

1. Mary, born October 26, 1829. She married Jacob Vough, and had three children,—Henry H., born December 7, 1856 (deceased); William C., born November 13, 1858; and Mary, born December 2, 1864.

2. Henry Cooper, born February 24, 1834, and killed at the burning of a steamer on the Alabama River, in 1867.

3. William Howard (the subject of this article), born December 24, 1836.

4. Charles, born March 2, 1841, now living at Newark, N. J. He married Louise Shafer June 27, 1863, and has one child, Belle H.

5. Isabelle T., born December 2, 1845, and married Horace F. Baldwin, now living in Newark, N. J. Their children are Howard C., born January 22, 1875; Charles F., born December 12, 1876 (deceased); and Horace F., born November 8, 1879.

6. Annie J., born October 17, 1848, died 1854.

7. Clara F., born February 19, 1851.

William Howard Conkling, the third child, was born at Mendham, Morris County, N. J., and his early education was obtained at Mount Science Academy. His father was for many years postmaster of the village and the proprietor of a country store, in which the son was first introduced to business. The store was subsequently sold to a Mr. Boyd, and young Conkling was for awhile in his employ. In August, 1853, he came to New York and entered the store of William P. Dayton, where he remained a year, until Dayton's death, and then found a position with Union Adams, and was afterwards in the establishment of Bowen, McNamee & Co., 112 Broadway. He next removed to Petersburg, Va., where he was engaged with the firm of Davis, Abrahams & Lyon, and remained there until the breaking out of the war, when he came North, and was for awhile a clerk in the establishment of

A. T. Stewart. Having received a very liberal offer, he went to Memphis in 1864, and stayed one year, and upon his return found a position in the employ of Lake & McCreary, in New York, and two years later became the principal buyer for the house of J. & C. Johnston. In 1872 he commenced business on his own account in company with his present brother-in-law, Mr. F. W. Chivvis, under the name of Conkling & Co., subsequently changed to Conkling & Chivvis, an account of which firm appears elsewhere.

Mr. Conkling came to Westchester County to reside in 1874. His present residence is the elegant mansion in Mount Vernon, at the corner of Eleventh Avenue and Fourth Street, and was purchased by him in 1885. He married Mary A., daughter of Peter and Mary Chivvis, May 6, 1878. Their children are Howard Chivvis, born October 24, 1879; Ferdinand Wilsey, born December 12, 1881; and Grace Cooper, born January 6, 1882.

Collateral Branches.

JAMES PIERSON (who was, doubtless, a descendant of Benjamin, the youngest son of Henry Pierson, one of the first settlers of Southampton, L. I., and who moved to New Jersey about 1690) was born October, 1750, and died March 28, 1777. He married Martha Pierson March 11, 1773. She was born July 12, 1754, and died at a very advanced age. Their children were Sylvanus, born December 28, 1773, who married Elizabeth Hinkle; and Rebecca, born March 11, 1776, and died 1778.

After the death of James Pierson, his widow, Martha, married Joseph Sutton, who was born July 9, 1747, and died November 8, 1822. They were married April 16, 1778, and their children were Uriah, born 1779; Shadrack; Rebecca, born 1783, who married Luther Conkling, as mentioned above; Jonathan, born 1787; Elizabeth, born 1789; Martha Lupton, born 1792; James, born 1796, who married Julia Beach; and Joseph Pierson, born 1798, who married Persi Horton, November 13, 1821.

DAVID QUACKINBUSH.

David Quackinbush, who has been for the past six years supervisor of the town of East Chester, and a well-known leader in political affairs, was born in the city of New York, November 11, 1832. His grandfather, James Quackinbush, was a dry-goods merchant, and owned a house and farm on Murray Hill, now the most fashionable portion of the great city. Here he made his home till his death, in 1843, when he had attained the ripe age of eighty-three. The farm, which included the land between Thirty-eighth and Forty-first Streets, was then divided into building lots and sold for one hundred and fifty dollars each. It is said that some of the purchasers considered the price too high and made haste to dispose

of their holdings. His son, Benjamin Quackinbush, was born in 1797, and when twenty years of age established a drug-store at the corner of Charles and Greenwich Streets, with a stock of goods valued at one hundred dollars. He began business on the anniversary of Washington's birthday in 1817. As an illustration of the simplicity of those times, it may be mentioned that his rent for the first year was thirty-five dollars, his average sales two dollars per day, and the cost of living one dollar and fifty cents a week. In this business he is still engaged, and is now the oldest druggist in the city of New York, but in his eighty-ninth year he exhibits a greater vigor than many younger men.

David Quackinbush remained with his parents till 1850, when he entered the employ of the Commercial Fire Insurance Company in the capacity of errand boy. He was soon promoted to the position of policy clerk, then chosen secretary, and in 1874 was elected president. Owing to failure of health, in 1857, he removed to Mount Vernon, which has since been his home. After holding the office of trustee, he was the first president of the village elected by the people, and was also elected to the same position at the time of the consolidation. He was also a member of the Board of Education; in 1879 was chosen supervisor of the town of East Chester, and has since been annually re-elected. In 1880 he was unanimously chosen chairman of the Board of Supervisors. At his first election the town was in debt four hundred and seventy-seven thousand dollars, and the value of his financial skill was fully demonstrated by his reducing the amount to two hundred and seventy-one thousand dollars within the next six years. The amount of reduction during the preceding six years had only been thirty-nine thousand dollars.

Mr. Quackinbush is well known in political circles as an active and influential member of the Democratic party. In his connection with the Masonic order he is a member of the lodge, chapter and commandery. He is extensively engaged in real estate and insurance business, with which he has been connected for many years. He married Mary E. Waterhouse, and has four children,—Benjamin F. (who is now in business with his grandfather), Harry V., George F. and Mary Estelle.

THE THOMPSON FAMILY.

(Copied from a Bible owned by Glorianna C. Thompson, given to her by Rachel Thompson Reed.)

Three brothers, Aaron, Moses and Hur, ancestors of the Thompsons, came from Scotland, it is supposed, in the year 1686. The youngest brother removed to New England, the others continued at Elizabeth Town, and a number of their descendants are now living in Connecticut Farms. They came to this continent to escape persecution.

Joseph, the youngest son of Aaron, removed from



J. M. D. ...

North Farms to Mendham in the year 1739, his son David being at that time in his second year. They lived in the Black Horse Tavern until they built upon the farm now owned by Jacob Thompson, at the head-spring of Passaic. There was at this time but two dwellings between that and Morristown. Joseph Thompson died there in July, 1749, his wife Lydia having died there in March previous.

Between the death of their parents the most of the children died of a prevailing epidemic—the lung fever. Their names were Phebe, Hannah, Aaron, Daniel and Rachel. Three grandchildren also died of the same fever in the month of April, viz.: Temperance, Eleazer and Azuba.

Stephen, eldest son of Joseph, lived on the homestead and died of consumption in 1750, aged thirty years.

His wife Mary was the daughter of Abr'm Besharow, who came from Germany. She was born at Block River, February 4, 1727; died at Pompton in 1768.

The children of Stephen and Mary Thompson were,—

Phebe, born April 10, 1747.
Jacob, born September 2, 1748.
Lydia, born June 8, 1750.

The widow Mary Thompson was married to Dr. Joseph Ogden. Their children were Stephen, Betsey, Amos, Mary, Amy, Benjamin.

Jacob Thompson was married to Hannah, daughter of Elisha Beach, May 6, 1772. Their children were,—

Mary, born September 9, 1774; died October 15, 1774.
Stephen, born December 17, 1776; died May 31, 1856.
Joseph, born November 6, 1778; died May 27, 1824.
Sarah, born June 26, 1781; died.
David, born January 19, 1784; died December 8, 1862.
Phebe, born January 8, 1788; died January 11, 1837.
Rachel, born November 27, 1791; died October 15, 1881.
Aaron, born November 15, 1794; died April 30, 1880.
Hannah, born December 3, 1797; died July 18, 1868.

(From a Bible owned by Mrs. Robert Thompson.)

Joseph Thomson died July, 1749; his wife, Lydia, March 24, 1749.

THEIR CHILDREN.

Phebe, born August 29, 1718; died April, 1749; married Nat. Bonnell.
Stephen, born June 13, 1720; died July, 1750; married Mary Besharrah.
Hannah, born December 3, 1721; died April, 1749; married David Bonnel.
Mary, born November 27, 1723; died 1798; married Jeremy Brown.
Aaron, born December 7, 1725; died April, 1749; married Mary Byram.
Daniel, born December 7, 1727; died April, 1749; married Abigail Byram.
Desire, born November 4, 1731; died 1777; married James Pitney.
Rachel, born March 10, 1734; died April, 1749.
David, born October 4, 1737; died December 29, 1824.

David Thompson was married August 11, 1766, to Hannah Cary, who was born April 26, 1747, and died November 19, 1831.

THEIR CHILDREN.

Mary was born October 1, 1767; married Jonas Willet; died March 2, 1851.
Daniel was born June 28, 1769; died April 3, 1857, in Newark.

Rachel was born February 8, 1771; married H. Cooper, Jr.; died September 2, 1852.

Aaron was born March 3, 1773; died March 19, 1809.

Stephen was born January 16, 1775; died.

Abel was born August 14, 1777; died November 20, 1808.

Martha was born October 20, 1779; killed by lightning May 15, 1813.

David was born December 10, 1782; died December 20, 1831.

Rufus was born March 29, 1785; died November 19, 1818.

Nancy was born June 17, 1788; died January 1, 1792.

Phebe was born October 11, 1790; died June 6, 1836.

Henry Cooper, Sr., was born October 29, 1733; died March 16, 1819. He was a soldier in the Revolutionary War.

Henry Cooper, Jr., and Rachel Thompson were married June 14, 1792, by the Rev. John Joline, minister at Mendham.

Henry Cooper, Jr., born July 14, 1767; died February 27, 1821. Rachel Thompson Cooper was born February 8, 1771; died Sept. 2, 1852.

THEIR CHILDREN.

Lucetta, born June 13, 1793; died.

Nancy T., born December 30, 1794; died February 5, 1866.

Lydia D., born December 8, 1796; died September 12, 1854.

David T., born January 22, 1799; died February 26, 1882.

Aaron B., born December 16, 1800.

Joseph B., born December 22, 1802.

Jane, born February 14, 1805; married Charles H. Conkling; died February 26, 1874.

William B., born July 28, 1807.

Henry Miller, born October 1, 1809; died October 26, 1837.

Mary, born January 29, 1812; died.

Phebe Ann, born February 8, 1814; died.

DATE OF MARRIAGE OF HENRY AND RACHEL COOPER'S CHILDREN.

Nancy was married January 3, 1816, to Samuel K. Gaston.

Lucetta was married May 11, 1819, to Mahlon Pitney.

Aaron B. was married December 16, 1828, to Martha W. F. Hewett, by Rev. Joel Rivers.

Jane was married January 29, 1829, to Charles H. Conkling, by Rev. D. H. Johnson.

Joseph B. was married March 19, 1829, to Phebe H. Losey, by Rev. Daniel H. Johnson.

Mary T. was married August 29, 1836, to Henry Sampson, by Rev. Daniel H. Johnson.

David T. was married October 18, 1836, to Sarah R. Dayton, by Rev. D. H. Johnson.

Joseph B. was married (second time) February 28, 1837, to Susan M. Guerin, by Rev. D. H. Johnson.

William B. was married November 14, 1843, to Phebe L. Dayton, by Rev. Kirtland.

David T. was married (second time) May 18, 1854, to Sabina R. Everitt, by Rev. Scott.

THE CHILDREN OF DAVID THOMPSON COOPER AND SARAH HUNAN DAYTON.

Mary Thompson Cooper, born September 2, 1837.

Elizabeth Dayton Cooper, born May 12, 1839.

Henry Miller Cooper, born May 13, 1841.

Stephen Thompson Cooper, born May 2, 1843.

William Dayton Cooper, born May 24, 1845.

Aaron Cooper, born November 18, 1847.

Sarah Dayton Cooper, born June 18, 1852.

Martha Gaston Cooper, born February 21, 1855, daughter of David and Sabina.

DEATHS.

Sarah, wife of David T. Cooper, died January 10, 1853.

Aaron, son of David T. and Sarah R. Cooper, died February 24, 1849.

Sarah Dayton Cooper, daughter of Sarah R. Cooper, died February 19, 1865.

Elizabeth Birchard died February 3, 1871.

MARRIAGES.

Mary Thompson Cooper was married to Robert Dayton Thompson, son of Aaron Thompson, February 18, 1858. Their children,—
 Hal Sayre Thompson,
 Mary Dayton Thompson,
 Stephen Cooper Thompson
 Elizabeth Birchard Thompson.
 Robert Henry Thompson.
 Elizabeth Dayton was married October 25, 1870, to Charles Birchard ;
 died February 3, 1871.

Stephen T. Cooper was married January 13, 1876, to Mary C. Williams. Their children names are,—
 Isabel Williams Cooper, born December 19, 1877.
 Emily Dayton Cooper, born November 29, 1879.
 Marion Cooper, born June 11, 1884.
 Henry Miller Cooper was married to Stella Canfield. Their children's names are,—
 Sarah Dayton Cooper.
 Henry Morgan Cooper.

INDEX.

A.

Abendroth, W. P., 706.
 Abraham Vosburgh Post, 411
 Acker Post, 265.
 Acker, J., 273.
 Ackers, 233.
 Acknowledgments, 580.
 Actors, 164.
 Adams, M., 564.
 Agate, A. T., 365.
 Agriculture, 472, 531, 540.
 Algonquins, 2, 172
 Alison, Rev. C. E., 86.
 Alcock's Plasters, 359.
 Allen, Rev. J. K., 298.
 Alliance Temple, 744.
 Amawalk, 472.
 Ambler, B. L., 586.
 Ambler, Rev. J. S., 300.
 Ambuscade, 182.
 American Gear Co., 111.
 American Legion of Honor, 744.
 American Stove Co., 403.
 American Traveler, 268.
 Ancient Order of Hibernians, 112.
 Anderson, J., 307.
 Anderson, J. W., 574.
 Andre, 199, 286, 287, 447, 542, 655
 Monument to, 225.
 Monument to his Captains, 226.
 House where Hoogland stopped with
 him, 373.
 House where he took breakfast, 448
 Andros, E., 283, 425.
 Anecdotes, 159, 451.
 Anthony's Nose, 382.
 A. O. U. W., 411.
 Aqueduct Bridge, 38.
 Archer, D. O., 267.
 Archer family, 22.
 Ardsley, 182, 191, 270.
 Arnold, B., 188, 372, 432, 435.
 Arnold, B., 199.
 Arnold, E. S. F., 122, 163.
 Arnold, Mrs.
 Artificial stone factory, 182
 Asbury, Bishop, 455.
 Asbury, Bishop, 60.
 Aspenwall, W. H., 319.
 Association (see Society, etc.)
 Athena, 131.
 Bible, 124.
 Catholic, 125.
 Christian, 127, 412, 744.
 Ladies' Union, 355.
 Library, 129.
 Literary, 131, 744
 Mutual, 140.
 Poor, 119.
 Athena, 131.
 Atlantic Cable, 270
 Aunt Betty, 189.
 Austin, A., 63.
 Authors, 319.
 Autographs, 581.
 Axle factory, 183.

B.

Babbit, Rev. F., 391
 Babcock, Rev. L., 58.
 Badeau, A., 264.
 Badeau, P., 454.
 Bagtolt, 183.
 Bailey, G. F., 519.
 Bailey, H., 480.
 Bailey, W., 479, 480.
 Bailey's Wire Mill, 469
 Baird, E. P., 162.
 Baird, Rev. R., 159.
 Balch, G. B., 163.
 Baldwin, E., 19.
 Band of Hope, 125, 126.
 Bank.
 California, 511.
 East Chester, 744.
 Farmers', 479, 489.
 First National, 114.
 Mills, 511.
 Peekskill, 497.
 Savings, 112, 117, 407, 754.
 Sing Sing, 356.
 Tarrytown, 260, 261.
 Westchester, 497.
 Yonkers, 112.
 Barlow, T., 481.
 Barnum, Rev. F. S., 64.
 Bartow, Rev. J., 724.
 Bashford, J., 143.
 Bashford, J. C., 144.
 Bayles House, 268.
 Banksville, 638.
 Bedell, J. W., 481.
 Bedford, 574.
 Bedford, Map, 582, 597.
 Bedford Station, 577.
 Bedstead Factory, 109.
 Beckman, C., 286.
 Beckman, W., 285.
 Beckmantown, 287.
 Behrends, Rev. A. J. F., 79, 89.
 Bell, W., 319.
 Bellemont, 427.
 Benjamin, Rev. W. H., 149.
 Bethany Union Chapel, 695.
 Bible Association Branch, 124
 Bi-Centennial, 199.
 Bierstadt, A., 245.
 Bischoff, H. W., 623.
 Bishop, W. H., 257.
 Blads, 149.
 Blakeslee company, 338.
 Blakeslee, E. G., 339.
 Blast Furnace, 191.
 Bleakly Rifles, 412.
 Bleakly, W., 444.
 Bleakly, W., 415.
 Board of Masonic Relief, 135.
 Boarding-Houses, (see Hotels)
 Boehm, Rev. H., 61.
 Boswell House, 118.
 Boxer, Rev. J., 339, 340.
 Bradley, D. O., 181, 261
 Brady, E. B., 560, 561.

Branch Bible Association, 124.

Brancheth, B., 356, 357, 360.
 Brandreth, W., 360.
 Brandreth's Pills, 359.
 Brant, 433.
 Brewer, Rev. D. R., 66.
 Brewer, J., 448.
 Brewery, Underhill's, 109.
 Bricks, 415.
 Bright, Rev. E., 80.
 Brinkerhoff family, 347
 Brinkerhoff, 290.
 Brown, Rev. D., 344.
 Brown, F. P., 122, 123.
 Brown, H., 256, 477, 479.
 Brown, J., 544.
 Brown, S., 479.
 Buckhout, 189.
 Buckland, Rev. R. J. W., 339.
 Budd, J., 644.
 Budd's Neck, 645.
 Budsall, E., 719.
 Business Men, 164, 243, 318, 358, 401, 479, 522,
 560, 592, 620, 701, 719, 746.
 Butler, S., 509.
 Butler, W. A., 85, 86.
 Byram Bridge, 679.
 Byram Pond, 656.

C.

Cable, 270.
 Caesar, 189
 Camp-Meeting Grounds, 318
 Carleton, G., 186.
 Carpenter, C. T., 264.
 Carpenter, F. M., 617.
 Carpenter, G. E., 231.
 Carpenter, J. W., 454.
 Carpenter, W., 476.
 Carpets -
 A. Smith & Sons, 106.
 Fern Brook Co., 110.
 Carter, Rev. A. B., 59.
 Carter, Rev. S. T., 83.
 Cartwright, G. W., 323.
 Casino Rink, 449.
 Cattle, 177.
 Cemetery
 Bedford, 607.
 Blind Brook, 637
 Buxton, 607.
 Colored, 698.
 Cortlandt, 388.
 Dale, 337.
 Ivandell, 492.
 Jay, 697.
 Lewisboro, 557.
 Mount Zion, 435.
 New Castle, 628.
 North Castle, 643.
 North Salem, 522, 527.
 Oakland, 628.
 Poundridge, 573.
 Presbyterian, 337, 574.
 Quaker, 711.
 Rye, 697.

- Sheep-Hollow, 289, 293, 296.
 Somers, 492.
 St. Paul, 726.
 Union, 688.
 Yonkers, 149.
- Centric-Peak Foundry,** 103.
Centre of Yonkers, 173.
Centreville, 413.
Chalmers, W., 264.
Chappaqua, 622.
Chappaqua Creek, 629.
Charity Organization, 120.
Charlton Hall, 192.
Charlton's Hill, 277.
Chester, Map, 721.
Children, Society for Prevention of Cruelty to, 122.
Chatham, Co.
- Chivvis, F. W.,** 759.
Chote, Rev. W., 190.
Cholera, 331.
Christian Association, 127, 412, 744.
 Brothers, 398.
 Temperance Union, 129.
- Chrystie, A.,** 183, 184.
Chrystie, F. F., 184.
- Churches—**
 Baptist—
 Bedford, 604.
 Cat Ridge, 527.
 Croton Falls, 527.
 East Chester, 728.
 East, 251, 289, 396.
 Hastings, 183.
 Lewisboro, 565.
 Messiah, 81.
 Nepperhan, 79.
 Port Chester, 700.
 Purdy's, 520.
 Sing Sing, 388.
 Warburton, 75.
 Yorktown, 460.
- Catholic—
 Ascension, 398.
 Croton Falls, 528.
 Holy Name, 421.
 Immaculate Conception, 730.
 Kensico, 642.
 Our Lady, 701.
 Port Chester, 700.
 Resurrection, 683.
 Sacred Heart, 729.
 St. Jacob, 729.
 St. Mary, 72, 285.
 St. Matthew, 188.
 St. Patrick, 116.
 St. Teresa, 300.
 Trinity, 677.
- Christian, 491.
- Episcopal—
 All Saints', 347.
 Bedford, 604.
 Christ, 683.
 Grace, 689.
 Lawrence, 685.
 Marshall Point, 416.
 Old St. John, 56.
 Rye, 688.
 South Salem, 558.
 St. Augustine, 421.
 St. Barnabas, 190.
 St. James, 69, 620.
 St. John, 56, 59, 65.
 St. Luke, 465.
 St. Mark, 301, 625.
 St. Mary, 463, 642.
- St. Paul, 274, 343, 725, 751.
 St. Peter, 385, 396, 700.
 St. Stephen, 641.
 Trinity, 728.
 Zion, 187.
- Friends:**
 Amawalk, 458.
 Bedford, 606.
 Cortlandt, 396.
 Croton, 421.
 Golden's Bridge, 539.
 Harrison, 714.
 New Castle, 628.
 North Castle, 642.
 Orthodox, 458.
 Rye, 693.
- Lutheran—**
 St. Paul's, 729.
- Methodist Episcopal—**
 African, 256.
 Ardley, 270.
 Armonk, 639.
 Asbury, 251.
 Bedford, 606.
 Boscobel, 419.
 Broadway, 62.
 Centreville, 413.
 Central, 63.
 Chestnut, 605.
 Cortlandtville, 388.
 Croton, 421.
 Croton Lake, 468.
 East Chester, 727.
 Furnace, 413.
 German, 730.
 Katonah, 577, 605.
 Kensico, 641.
 King Street, 705.
 Lake Street, 712.
 Middle Patent, 640.
 Mohansic, 459.
 Mount Vernon, 727.
 Mount Zion, 494.
 New Castle, 627.
 North Sing Sing, 354.
 Peekskill, 394.
 Pleasantville, 320.
 Port Chester, 700.
 Poundridge, 572, 573.
 Purchase Street, 712.
 Purdy's, 524.
 Rye, 692.
 Saints' Delight, 414.
 Shrub Oak, 454.
 Somers, 491, 493.
 Spring Street, 344.
 Spring Valley, 669.
 St. Luke, 716.
 St. Paul, 190, 301, 395.
 Wesleyan, 395.
 Yorktown, 469.
 Zion, 398.
- Methodist Protestant:**
 North Tarrytown, 300.
 Peekskill, 396.
 Poundridge, 573.
- New Church:**
 Mount Vernon, 739.
- Presbyterian:**
 Crompond, 416.
 Croton Falls, 493.
 Duxspring, 85.
 Dobbs Ferry, 187.
 Elmsford, 271.
 First, 81, 392, 601.
 Livingston, 490.
- Katonah, 694.
 Lewisboro, 565.
 Mount Kisco, 696.
 Pleasantville, 413.
 Pleasantville, 320.
 Port Chester, 699.
 Poundridge, 570, 571.
 Rye, 682, 686.
 Rye-Interior, 687.
 Salem, 522.
 Second, 293.
 Sing Sing, 410, 441.
 Somers, 491.
 Warburton Creek, 82.
 Yorktown, 456.
- Robinson:**
 Bronxville, 727.
 Cortlandtown, 384.
 Greenville, 277.
 Hastings, 183.
 Ludlow Street, 68.
 Ludlow Street Chapel, 71.
 Montrose, 414.
 Mount Pleasant, 173.
 Mount Vernon, 727.
 Old Dutch, 289.
 Peekskill, 397.
 Second, 253.
 Sleepy Hollow, 55, 173, 288, 289.
 South Broadway, 68.
 Unionville, 316.
 Yonkers, 69.
- Unitarian:**
 Hope, 87.
- Universalist:**
 East Chester, 728.
 North Salem, 526.
- Union:**
 Bethany, 606.
 Chappaqua, 627.
 New Castle, 628.
- Circulating Library, Yonkers,** 129.
- Citizens' National Bank, Yonkers,** 117.
- City Hall,** 29.
- Civil War (see War.)**
- Clan Na Gael,** 142.
- Clapp, D. F.,** 407.
- Clapp, J.,** 630.
- Clark, A. M.,** 587.
- Clark, A. R.,** 225.
- Clark, S. B.,** 574.
- Clarke, Rev. J. A.,** 343.
- Clinton, G.,** 269.
- Close, O.,** 507.
- Club—**
 Montgomery, 112.
 Osceola, 139.
 Palisade Boat, 158.
 Yonkers, 149.
 Yonkers Yacht, 139.
- Clunder, C. F. W.,** 330.
- Cobb, Rev. L.,** 68.
- Cobb, L., Jr.,** 114.
- Cobb, N.,** 257.
- Colden, Rev. W.,** 320.
- Cole, B. W.,** 111.
- Cole, Rev. D.,** 71, 157.
- Colgate, J. B.,** 76, 78.
- Collyer, T.,** 363.
- Commandery, Yonkers,** 135.
- Conkling, W. H.,** 161.
- Constant, A.,** 183.
- Constant, Rev. S.,** 457.
- Corne, Fred.,** 63.
- Cooper, Rev. E.,** 58.
- Cooper, P.,** 391.

Copcutt, J., veneer-mill, 104.
 Copcutt & Myers, 97.
 Copp, J., 588.
 Copper Mines, 323, 324.
 Corley, Rev. C. R., 74.
 Cornell, N., 461.
 Cornell, S. W., 320.
 Cornell, T. C., 103.
 Cortlandt, 365, 422, 437, 470, 504.
 Cortlandt Circuit, 493.
 Cortlandt Manor-House, 426.
 Cortlandtville, 493.
 Cottinet, F., 191.
 Couenhoven, J., 267.
 Council, Nepperham, 185.
 County House, 312.
 Cowden, E. C., 619.
 Cowper, J. R., 263.
 Cowper Milling Company, 263.
 Crane, T., 481.
 Creighton, Rev. W., 312.
 Crompond, 451, 456.
 Crosby, Rev. A. H., 59.
 Crosby, E., 371, 468, 476, 517.
 Cross Blank Book Association, 304.
 Croton, 419.
 Aqueduct Arch, 322.
 Aqueduct Bridge, 307.
 Aqueduct Dam, 464.
 Falls, 504.
 File Company, 358.
 House, 534.
 Lake, 461, 462.
 Lake House, 468.
 Lodge, 529.
 Point, 421.
 Turnpike, 472, 488.
 Cruelty, Society for Prevention of, 122.
 Cruger family, 418.
 Cruger Station, 418.
 Crusade, 125.
 Cryptic Lodge, 411.
 Cuiper, C. C., 234.
 Cummiskey, Rev. J., 72, 346.
 Cunningham, J., 192.
 Currency, 357.

D.

Dacres, M., 9.
 Daly, J. M., 162.
 Davison, I. S., 55.
 Dean House, 268.
 Debating Society, 130.
 De Fersen, 180.
 Degree, Rebekah, 136.
 Demund, Rev. I. S., 70.
 Denham, Rev. T., 684.
 Depew, C. N., 229.
 De Reviere, A., 290, 340.
 Dinners, 181.
 Discovery, 2.
 District Telegraph Company, 111.
 Dixon, Rev. J., 84, 127.
 Dobbs Ferry, 184.
 Dobbs, J., 185.
 Dorcas Society, 412.
 Doty, Rev. J., 386.
 Douglass, H. L., 306.
 Doughty, F., 5.
 Dowling, Rev. J., 75.
 Dows, D., 192.
 Drafts, 377.
 Draper, D. S., 182.
 Drisler, J., 274.
 Dumont, Rev. W. A., 184.
 Duncombe, A. H., 760.

Dundas, J., 418.
 Dunderburg Lodge, 411.
 Dunham, J. B., 759.
 Dunwellin House, 145.
 Dutch—
 Churches, 55.
 East India Company, 4.
 Settlements, 4.
 West India Company, 4, 173.

E.

Eagle, 409.
 Eagle Hat Factory, 91.
 Earthworks, 186.
 East Chester, 720.
 Council, 744.
 Lodge, 743.
 East Mt. Vernon Singing Society, 745.
 East Tarrytown, 312.
 Egan, Rev. P., 300.
 Eickemeyer, R., 104.
 Einboit Lodge, 714.
 Elections, 185, 475, 501, 710.
 Elephant Hotel, 490.
 Monument, 480.
 Ellis, M. E., 162.
 Elmsford, 271.
 Ellsworth Grays, 91.
 Empire Sewing Machine, 473.
 Epitaphs, 184, 294, 297, 337, 477, 528, 574, 713.
 Equivalent Lands, 506.
 European Council, 411.
 Everts, Rev. N. R., 340.

F.

Fagnani, Rev. C. P., 83, 84.
 Factory (see Mill).
 Artificial Stone, 182.
 Blank Book, 304.
 Drill, 304.
 File, 358.
 Gin, 359.
 Iron, 358, 401.
 Shoe, 262, 319, 554, 620, 622, 638.
 Sewing Machine, 473.
 Shirt, 319, 405.
 Straw Hats, 737.
 Stove, 401, 403.
 Spectacles, 620.
 Tool, 304.
 Farnsworth Post, 744.
 Farrington, H. P., 407.
 Fern Brook Carpet Company, 110.
 Ferris, B., 260.
 Ferris, E., 338.
 Ferris, J. M., 226, 253.
 Ferris, L., 482.
 Ferris, S., 546.
 Few, W., 184.
 Ferry House, 126.
 Field, B. H., 414.
 Field, C. W., 191, 270.
 Field Family, 443.
 Finch, R. R., 401.
 FIRE ARMS, 106.
 Fireworks, 157.
 Fitch, T., 162.
 Fire Department—
 East Chester, 734.
 Sing Sing, 333.
 North Tarrytown, 288.
 Peekskill, 408.
 Tarrytown, 259.

Fish, 474.
 Flagg, E., 38, 112, 164.
 Flagg, H. W., 94.
 Flagg, L. W., 163.
 Flannagan, B., 315.
 Fleming's Wool Factory, 109.
 Flint, C. R., 111.
 Floods, 336.
 Flour-Mill, Yonkers, 93.
 Foehlinger, Rev. F. W., 88.
 Foote, W. C., 54.
 Forrest, E., 164.
 Fort, 651, 652.
 Foster, H., 257.
 Four Corners, 314.
 Fourth Separate Company, 144.
 Fowler, P. H., 751.
 Free Library, 133.
 Free Masons (see Masons), 134.
 Free Reading-Room, 133.
 Freightling, 148.
 Freeman, Rev. J. N., 393.
 French Army, 180.
 French Encampments, 450.
 Frisbie, D., 336.
 Frost, J. C., 443.
 Frost, J. W., 420.
 Frost, M. E., 482.
 Frost Family, 419.
 Furnace Brook, 419.

G.

Garrettson, Rev. F., 394, 431, 455.
 Garrison, J., 148.
 Gates, A. W., 163.
 Gates, H. S., 163.
 Gas Company—
 Municipal, 110.
 Peekskill, 409.
 Sing Sing, 359.
 Tarrytown, 261.
 Westchester, 109.
 Yonkers, 102.
 Gassbeck, Rev. D. W. C., 277.
 G. A. R.—
 Acker Post, 265.
 Burnet Post, 265.
 Farnsworth Post, 744.
 Kitching Post, 110.
 Morell Post, 355.
 Powell Post, 355.
 Vashugh Post, 411.
 Garibaldi, 307, 308.
 Galloway Hill, 383.
 Gear Company, 111.
 Gedney, J., 279.
 Gerritsen family, 484.
 Getty, R. P., 44.
 Getty, R. P., 45.
 Getty House, 129, 142, 143.
 Gibson, Rev. J. B., 351.
 Gibson, W. A., 151.
 Gilbert, J., 544.
 Gillette, Rev. A. D., 340.
 Glebe, 12, 57, 150.
 Glen Loch, 305.
 Good Templars, 744.
 Gorton, C. E., 49.
 Gorton, J. Q., 350.
 Gould, J., 242, 243.
 Graham, Rev. J. E., 277.
 Great Stone, 657.
 Greeley, H., 515, 624.
 Greenburgh, 172.
 Ground and Mt. Pleasant, Map, 178.

Green, C., 419.
Green Cove, 416.
Green Family, 483.
Greenville, 277.
Gregory, S., 401, 487.
Grinnell, M. H., 241.
Grove House, 123.
Gundin's Star Encampment, 711.
Guilbert, Rev. E., 301.
Guns - Mrs., 19.
Gulion's Tavern, 755.

H.

Hadley, R., 319.
Hall Oil Company, 359.
Halls—
East Chester, 757.
Peekskill, 412.
Sing Sing, 361.
Tarrytown, 257.
Yonkers, 145.
Halliday, Rev. D. W., 393.
Hallack family, 186.
Halsey house, 792.
Haldstead house, 671.
Hamilton, A., 191, 281.
Hamilton Woodlaid Company, 119.
Hammond, 195, 265.
Hammond, Rev. E. S., 68.
Hanover, 437, 450, 470.
Hardenbrook, M., 9, 175.
Hare, Rev. G. S., 345.
Harmony Lodge, 111.
Harrison, 709.
Harrison Station, 711.
Hart, J. C., 454.
Hart's Corners, 277.
Hartsdale, 277.
Haringari, 141.
Hastings, 182, 646.
Hat Industry, Yonkers, 91, 101.
Hatfield, Rev. W. F., 252.
Haughton, Rev. J., 59.
Haviland House, 669.
Hawley, E., 507.
Heath, 197, 313, 368, 375, 446, 447.
Heathcote, C., 608.
Hempstead, J., 471.
Hepworth & Co., 111, 677.
Herald, 90.
Herald and Register, 352.
Hessians, 182.
Hiawatha Lodge, 743.
Hibernians, 112.
High Bridge, 465.
Hidess Band, 354.
Hill, A., 196.
Horticultural Society, 745.
Hopkins, F. T., 498.
Hobbs, J., 46.
Hoge, W., 238.
Holbrook, Rev. D. A., 351.
Holden, J. G. P., 90.
Holmes, J., 597.
Holmes, J. C., 549.
Holmes, J. C., 550.
Home for Aged, 137.
Home for Poor Children, 100.
Home Lot, 685.
Holston Lodge, 141.
Hooper, Rev. M. R., 54.
Hop Ground, 82.
Hope Band of, 125, 126.
Hope Lodge, 140.
Horton, D., 450.
Hoson, E. Q., 140.

Horton, S. D., 404.
Horton, W. J., 441.
Horton family, 439.
Hospital, St. John's, 122.

Hotels—

Dunwellyn, 145.
Eagle, 412.
Elephant, 490.
Mansion, 145.
of East Chester, 755.
of North Salem, 534.
Peabody, 145.
Penfield, 669.
of Somers, 490.
of Sing Sing, 361.
Union, 362.
of Yonkers, 142.
of Peekskill, 412.

Howe, J., 560.
Howe, W., 198, 277.
Howell's Sugar Refinery, 106.
Hoyt, J. E., 577.
Hudson, Henry 4, 366.
Hudson River Chronicle, 354.
Hueson, 148.
Hulbert, Rev. V. M., 69, 70, 71.
Hull, W., 315.
Humorists, 164.
Hunt, D., 561.
Hunt, F., 268.
Hunt, L., 613.
Hunter, E., 338.
Hyatt, E. T., 157.

I.

Indians (see names of tribes), 667, 723.
Indian Queen Inn, 143.
Indian remains, 540.
Infant Asylum, 754.
Inns (see Hotels), 668, 755.
Inoculation, 695.
Insane, retreat for, 711.
Iron Moulders' Union, 412.
Irving Banner, 258.
Irving Cliff, 192.
Irving, W., 234, 266, 281, 307.
Irving burial lot, 237.
Irvington, 189.
Israel & Zarr, 319.
Italians, 183.
Ives, Rev. A. M., 66.

J.

Jackson, Rev., 385.
Jackson, Rev. H. J., 302.
Jackson, Rev. J. F., 293.
Jackson, Rev. J., 341, 342.
Jaffray, E. S., 239.
Jaggat, Rev. T. A., 59, 122.
Jay family, 578, 672.
Jefferson Guards, 412.
Jefferson Valley, 456.
Jenkyns, J. F., 163.
Jennings, Rev. A. B., 344.
Jerome, L. W., 150.
Jones, C., 67.
Jones, E., 479.
Jones, Rev. E., 683.
Jones, J. O., 264.
Juengst, G., 473, 533.

K.

Kaakout, 305.
Katabah, 79.
Keeler, J., 545.

Kensico, 678.
Ketcham, Rev. W. E., 65.
Keyes, E. B., 162.
Kill Brook, 336.
King, Rev. L. H., 64.
Kingsland, A. C., 309.
Kinnicut, L., 476.
Kirkwood, Rev. R., 85, 169.
Kisco, 577.
Kitchen, J. H., 379.
Kitching Post, 140.
Kitteringham's Factory, 104.
Klunder, C. F., 330.
Knapp family, 441.
Knickerbocker Society, 132.
Knights of Honor, 140.
Knights of Pythias, 411.
Knights Templar, 410.
Krauckhyte family, 367.

L.

Lactopeptine, 110.
Ladies' Auxiliary Society, 137.
Lafayette, 181.
Lakes—
Croton, 461, 462, 481.
Meahugh, 416.
Mohegan, 453.
Trinity, 562.
Lame Will, 653.
Landrine House, 296.
Land Gate, 648.
Langford, Rev. W. S., 59.
Law. Hing Jone, 63.
Laurence, T., 118.
Law, G., 307.
Law, R. D., 305.
Law, W. W., 82.
Lawrence, C., 560.
Lawrence, W. F., 118.
Laws, Duke's, 58.
Lawyers, Yonkers, 160.
Leather Works, Ross, McAlpin & Co's, 109.
Lee, C., 368.
Lee, E., 442.
Lee family, 441.
Lectures—
Sing Sing, 359.
Yonkers, 130.
Ledger Hat, 105.
Leighton, T. F., 55.
Lent, H., 367.
Lent's Cove, 413.
Lewisboro, 535.
Libby, J. S., 513.
Library—
Brooklyn, 280.
Lewisboro, 569.
Sing Sing, 351.
Yonkers, 132.
Association, 129.
Lilienthal, C. H., 110.
Lime—Snow-Flake Works, 319.
Lings, Rev. A. A., 52, 53.
Literary Associations. (See Associations)
Livermore, Rev. A. A., 87.
Livingston, R. V. B., 186.
Livingston, V. B., House, 186.
Livingston, R. R., 455.
Lockwood, C., 86.
Lockwood, E., 573.
Lockwood, N., 567.
Lodge—
Columbia, 138.
Hope, 140.
Halsatia, 141.
Nepperham, 134.

- Orangemen, 142.
 Rising Star, 134.
 Yonkers, 135, 140, 141
- Long View, 306.
- Lord, Rev. G. W., 64.
- Lonsbury, J. W., 709.
- Love, Cup, 138.
- Lovett, L. B., 266.
- Lowrie, S., 161.
- Lycæum—
 Yonkers, 138.
 Young Men's, 257.
- Lynch, Rev. E., 52.
- Lydenhurst, 242, 243.
- Lyon & Deane, 161.
- Lyon & Meade, 161.
- Lyon, S., 581.
- Lyon, W. P., 258, 302.
- M.**
- Macfarlane & Westney, 97.
- Machine Works, 465.
- Mattine Manufacturing Company, 110.
- Mangum, D. D., 384.
- Mangum, W., 345.
- Mangin, J., 43.
- Manhattan Island, 45.
- Manhattans, 23, 174.
- Mann, E., 267.
- Manors—
 1. Indian owners, 31.
 2. Passing new title, 35.
 3. Dutch, 37.
 4. West Indian Company, 42.
 5. Dutch Government Patroonship, 57.
 6. Colen Donck, 66.
 7. English capture, 73.
 8. English system, 78.
 9. What manors were, 85.
 10. Incidents; parishes, 90.
 11. English Church, 99.
 12. Relations with County, 108.
 13. Cortlandt manor, 115.
- Mannussing, 640, 659.
- Mansion House, 145.
- Map.
 East Chester, 731.
 Chester, 721.
 Home Lot, 685.
 Greenburgh and Mt. Pleasant, 178.
 Lemuel Wells' Estate, 19, 21.
 Lewisboro, 537.
 Mount Pleasant, 317.
 Roads, 503.
 Rochambeau's position, 180.
 Sing Sing, 325.
 Bedford, 597.
 Rye, 643.
 White Plains, 661.
 Yonkers, central part, 24.
 Yonkers, village, 26.
- Marble Lodge, 743.
- Marble quarries, 319, 321.
- Marshall, Rev. W., 393.
- Martin Smith House, 267.
- Martlingh, A., 274.
- Mason, J. M., 161.
- Masons—
 East Chester, 743.
 Peekskill, 410.
 Sing Sing, 354.
 North Salem, 529.
- Mathews, P., 595.
- Mathews, R., 364.
- Matthias, 364.
- Mottison, Rev. L. J., 339.
- McCarton, Rev. R., 139, 160.
- McCartney, Rev. D., 62.
- McClord, H. D., 325.
- McDougal, 369.
- Mead, A. B., 513.
- Meade, Solomon, 446.
- Meach Family, 540.
- Medal of Andre's captors, 219.
- Medicinal Manufactures, 110.
- Merritt, G., 242.
- Werritt, S., 679.
- Messenger, 410.
- Mercantile Library Association, 280.
- Mile Square Sunday School, 80.
- Military.
 Cortland, 376.
 East Chester, 740.
 Peekskill, 412.
 Yonkers, 410.
- Milk, 473, 531.
- Millard, Rev. C. W., 65.
- Miller, Rev. A., 81.
- Miller, Rev. D. H., 75.
- Miller, J., 494.
- Mills, Cowper, 263.
- Mills, D. O., 509.
- Mills, J., 599.
- Mills, Rev. W. H., 66, 67.
- Minerals, 323.
- Mimes, 323.
- Minton, R., 55, 181.
- Minuit, R., 5.
- Minute Book, 176.
- Mohegan Chapter, 410.
- Mohegan Lake, 453.
- Mohegans, 3, 173, 322, 437, 490.
- Montgomery Club, 142.
- Montrose Point, 416, 417.
- Montrose Station, 414.
- Morocco Factory, Yonkers, 104.
- Morris family, 281.
- Moses, D. B., 325.
- Mott, A. C., 134.
- Mott, J., 266.
- Mowbray, A. G., 263.
- Mowing machines, 106.
- Mt. Airy, 419.
- Mt. Ararat Encampment, 411.
- Mt. Kisco, 623.
- Mt. Pleasant, 178, 283.
- Mt. Vernon, 722.
- Bank, 754.
 Chapter, 743.
 Horticultural Society, 745.
 Lodge, 744.
 Literary Association, 744.
 Quartette Club, 745.
 Singing Society, 745.
- Municipal Gas Company, 110.
- Mutual Benefit Association, Yonkers, 110.
- Mutual Store Company, 403.
- N.**
- Napoleon L., 235.
- Nappeckamack, 3.
 House, 143.
- National Bank—See Bank.
- Naval Service, 380.
- Nelson, Rev. S. S., 339.
- Nelson family, 487.
- Neperan, 316.
- Nepperhaem, 5.
- Nepperhan Chapter, 134.
 Council, 135.
- River, 216.
 Leather Works, 100.
 Lodge, 134.
- Nevis, 191.
- Newman, A., 575.
- Newman, A. G., 252.
- New Castle, 608.
- New York Elevator Company, 165.
- New York and Harlem Railroad, 722.
- New York and Hudson Railroad, 722.
- New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad, 742.
- New York Industrial Association, 722.
- New York Plow Company, 100.
- Newspapers—
 East Chester, 757.
 Mt. Vernon, 758.
 North Salem, 529.
 Peekskill, 409.
 Port Chester, 699.
 Somers, 490.
 Sing Sing, 352.
 Tarrytown, 258.
 Yonkers, 89.
- Nicholls, E. A., 133.
- Nicolls, 7.
- Niven, Rev. T. M., 187.
- Novine Hill, 2.
- North Castle, 629.
- North Salem, 499, 519.
- North Tarrytown, 195, 265, 387.
- Noxon, I. B., 357.
- Nuts, 194.
- Nursery and Home, 121.
- O.**
- Oblong, 499, 506.
- Old-Fellows—
 East Chester, 744.
 Peekskill, 411.
 Sing Sing, 354.
 Yonkers, 125.
- Odell, H. B., 88.
- Odell House, 179.
- Odell, N. H., 226.
- Odell, Y., 276.
- Odell A. Booth, 262.
- Old Bet Monument, 480.
- Oliver, J. W., 91, 92.
- Olmstead, J., 114, 115, 116.
- Ophir farm, 712.
- Orangemen, Yonkers, 142.
- Ordinances, 213.
- Oriskany, 432.
- Oscawana Island, 419.
- Oseola Club, 139.
- Ossining, 285, 321.
- Osterhold, G., 194.
- Osterheld A. Lockemeyer, 161.
- Otis Brothers, 97.
- Otis, C. R., 100.
- Otis, I. G., 98.
- Otis, James, 98.
- Otis, John, 97.
- Otis, N. P., 101, 102, 153.
- Otis, S., 99.
- Owen family, 484.
- Oysters, 185.
- P.**
- Paine, T., 269.
- Palesole Boat Club, 138.
- Palisades, 185.
- Palmer, S., 320.
- Panton, Rev. G., 58.

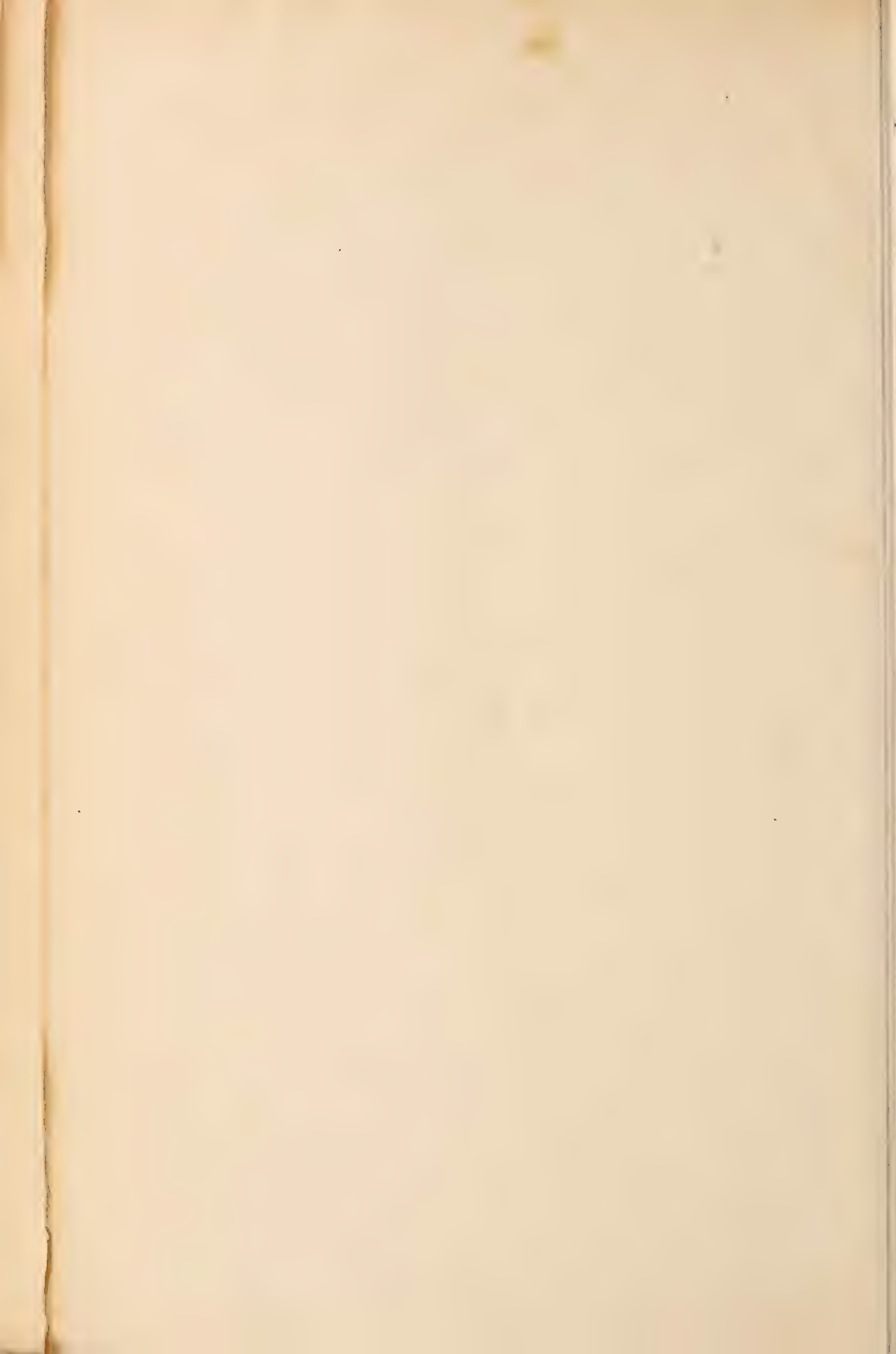
- Park, Joseph, 707.
 Parsons, G. W., 305.
 Parish Society, 181.
 Patterson, Rev. W., 571.
 Paulding, J., 373, 387.
 Paulding, J. K., 265.
 Paulding House, 194.
 Penitence and Repose Houses, 255.
 Papers, 391, 396.
 Peck, Rev. T. R. G., 88.
 Peekskill, 388.
 Peene, J., 149.
 Pell, T., 173.
 Penfield House, 669.
 Penningo Neck, 645.
 Pentz, G. B., 162.
 Perry, 310.
 Perseverance Lodge, 744.
 Philipse, Colonel, 14, 57, 175, 176.
 Philipse, F., 7, 14, 173, 174, 284, 340.
 Philipse family, 9.
 Philipse, Lord (the second), 12, 55, 159.
 Philipse, Mary, 13.
 Philipse Manor House, 309.
 Philipse Manor House and Mill, 311.
 Phillipsburgh Manor, 7, 14, 173, 176, 267, 287.
 Phramer, Rev. W., 342.
 Physicians—
 East Chester, 718.
 Rye, 695.
 Yonkers, 163.
 Pierce, M., 318.
 Pine's Bridge, 468.
 Plaster Mill, 165.
 Pleasantville, 38.
 Plow Company, New York, 169.
 Plumbing Apparatus Company, 111.
 Poecantico Works, 304.
 Pomeroy, S., 387.
 Pond, N. C., 705.
 Pooley, J. H., 163.
 Port Chester, 698.
 Postoffice, 169, 738.
 Post, R., 182, 183.
 Potter, O. B., 327.
 Pottery, 292.
 Potts—
 Sing Sing, 333.
 Poundridge, 561.
 Preston, Rev. Monsignor T. S., 73, 300.
 Price, G., 264.
 Prime, R. E., 161.
 Prisons, 319.
 Provost, Rt. Rev. S., 57.
 Purchase, 712.
 Purdy family, 31.
 Purdy, I., 533.
 Purdy's Mills, 37.
 Purdy Station, 319.
 Pursler, Geo. H., 170 A.
 Putnam, 370.
- Q.**
- Quackenbush, D., 762.
 Quakers, 613, 633, 710, 714.
 Quakers, 519, 522, 513.
 Quartette Club, 745.
 Quaker Banners, 626, 627.
 Quick, E. A., 171.
 Quick, S. B., 508.
 Quick, S. F., 169.
 Quilley, C. W., 319.
 Quilley's Mill, 319.
- R.**
- Radford Hall, 145.
 Radford, T., 169.
 Raas, 146.
 Railroads, 109.
 New York & Harlem, 488, 504, 553, 712.
 New York & Hudson, 23, 147, 327.
 New York & Northern, 117, 280, 305.
 New York Central, 147.
 New York, New Haven & Hartford, 742.
 Ralston, W. C., 541.
 Rand Drill Company, 304.
 Raymond, H. J., 227.
 Raymond, Aaron, 592.
 Reading-Room, Yonkers, 132.
 Rebekah Degree, 133.
 Reid, Rev. J., 82.
 Reid's Mill, 753.
 Relief, Board of, 135.
 Remington Creek, 473.
 Remonstrance, 6.
 Republican, 353, 409.
 Requa family, 443.
 Requa, Q., 266.
 Revolutionary History (see War).
 Reynolds, A., 544.
 Reynolds, A., 545.
 Rider, J., 344.
 Rink, 146.
 Rising Star Lodge, 134.
 Rivers—
 of Bedford, 574.
 Byram, 636.
 Nepperhan, 2, 6.
 of North Castle, 636.
 Saw-Mill, 6.
 of Somers, 470.
 Sprain, 2.
 Titicus, 199, 562.
 Roa Hook, 382.
 Roads, 177, 231, 502, 669, 716.
 Roberts, G. T., 279.
 Roberts, L., 279.
 Robertson, G. W., 405.
 Robertson, H., 590.
 Robertson, J., 591.
 Rocking Stone, 562.
 Rochambeau's Camp, 450.
 Rochambeau's Headquarters, 179.
 Rockwell, S. D., 113.
 Rowce, C., 352.
 Rose, McAlpin & Co., 169.
 Rowe, M. F., 91.
 Romer, R., 273.
 Romer, C., 274.
 Ruton, I., 148.
 Ryan, Rev. J., 72.
 Ryan, W., 708.
 Rye, 694.
 Beach, 672.
 map of, 143.
 Fair, 672.
 Ferry, 665.
 Fort, 651.
 Rycks Patent, 367.
- S.**
- Sacket, Rev. S., 392.
 Salam Centre, 544.
 Sales, Indian, 7, 173, 174, 283, 284, 369, 430,
 427, 535, 562, 578, 608, 629, 644, 653, 659,
 719.
 Sales of manors, 16.
 Satterlee, S. K., 702.
 Sanders, J. P., 136.
 Sander's family, 638.
 Saver's Bishop's Cave, 50.
 Saver's Corners, 634.
 Saunders, 183.
 Saunders' sons, 196.
 Saw-Mill Creek, 6.
 Saw Pit, 698.
 Sawyer, Rev. R. A., 82, 83.
 Schermerhorn, Rev. M. K., 361.
 Schools—
 Bedford, 607.
 Bulkeley, 278.
 Chappaqua, 625.
 Chrestomathic, 695.
 Croton, 421.
 Davison, 53.
 Foote, 54.
 Francis, 53.
 Highland, 352.
 Hollbrook, 351.
 Hones, 392.
 Hooper, 54.
 Irving, 392.
 Irvington, 191.
 Jackson, 302.
 Masters, 188.
 Mohegan Lake, 453.
 Mt. Hope, 258.
 Mt. Kisco, 625.
 Mt. Pleasant, 350.
 North Salem, 529.
 Odell, 352.
 Ossining, 336, 352.
 Our Lady, 400.
 Park, 695.
 Peekskill, 399.
 St. Aloysius, 52.
 St. Gabriel, 400.
 St. John, 351.
 St. Joseph, 496.
 St. Mary, 302.
 Starr, 302.
 Union, 257, 607.
 Vereen, 351.
 Wartburg, 754.
 Wells, 53.
 Westchester County, 460.
 Yule, 55.
 Yonkers, 51.
 Schools, Public—
 Croton, 420.
 East Chester, 730.
 Katonah, 577.
 New Castle, 624.
 North Salem, 530.
 North Tarrytown, 392.
 Peekskill, 398.
 Pleasantville, 320.
 Poundridge, 574.
 Rye, 693.
 Sing Sing, 330.
 Somers, 496.
 Yorktown, 169.
 Scriba, A. M., 417.
 Scriba, J. L. C., 118.
 Scragham, W. N., 102, 160.
 Scudder, M. W., 128.
 Seelick, 658.
 Sentinel, 469.
 Seward, Rev. D. M., 70, 81.
 Seward, F. P., 417.
 Sewing Machines, 135, 173.
 Shaftner Encampment, 136.
 Shookler, 183.
 Sheldon, 565, 595.
 Shethar, S., 133.
 Ship-building, 363.
 Shrub oak, 153.
 Shoe Factory (see Factory), 319.

- Shonard, E. F., Mr. and Mrs., 168.
 Shonard, F., 151, 167.
 Silk works, 26.
 Silver, 434.
 Silver, D., 263.
 Silver-shoe-factory, 262.
 Silver mines, 323.
 Simpkins, B. R., 376.
 Sing Sing, 322, 324.
 Sing Sing map, 325.
 Sing Sing Mines, 321.
 Sint Sincks, 322, 437.
 Singing society, 745.
 Sisters of Good Shepherd, 398.
 Skating rink, 146.
 Skinner, J. R., 96.
 Skinner, H., 107, 108.
 Skinner, J., 107.
 Skinners, 315.
 Slavery, 666.
 Sleepy Hollow, 234.
 Sleepy Hollow Bridge, 306.
 Sleepy Hollow Mill, 362.
 Slevin, Rev. T. C., 73.
 Smith, A., 107, 164.
 Smith, A. & Sons, 106.
 Smith, C., 166, 167, 344.
 Smith, D. H., factory, 109.
 Smith family, 508.
 Smith, J. H., 259, 287.
 Smith, H. T., 259.
 Smith, M., 267.
 Smith, M. H., 50, 51.
 Smith, Rev. T. G., 271, 316.
 Smith, Rev. T. R., 81.
 Smith, W., 86.
 Smith, W. L., 564.
 Sniffin's Hill, 677.
 Snow Flake Works, 319.
 Snyder, E., 592, 593.
 Society—
 Agricultural, 458.
 Cruelty to Animals, 349.
 Cruelty to Children, 122.
 Debating, 130.
 Doreas, 412.
 Friends, 396, 421, 458.
 German, 141.
 Irish, 111.
 Knickerbocker, 132.
 Ladies' Auxiliary, 137.
 Propagating Gospel, 56.
 Singing, 745.
 Soldiers' Aid, 477.
 Soda water factory, 109.
 Solidarities, 347.
 Söhne der Freiheit, 141.
 Soldiers' Spring, 369.
 Sommer, Rev. J. H., 88.
 Somers, 469.
 Somers, R., 470.
 Somers Village, 489.
 Sons of St. George, 138.
 Sons of Temperance, 744.
 Sons of Veterans, 356.
 South Salem, 540.
 Southworth, R. J., 163.
 Sparta, 338.
 Sparta Mine, 324.
 Spencer, J. E., 622.
 Spencer, John S., 622.
 Spencer Co., 623.
 Spencer Works, 621.
 Sprain Brooks, 2.
 Stanton, M., 364.
 Starr, O. W., 302.
 Statesman, Yonkers, 91.
 States Prisons, 349.
 Stedwell, J. H., 91.
 St. John's Rectory and Glebe, 57.
 St. John's Riverside Hospital, 122.
 St. Joseph's Association, 125.
 St. Vincent de Paul Society, 122.
 St. Vincent's Retreat, 711.
 Stewart, Rev. A. T., 274, 288, 293.
 Stewart, G., 165.
 Stewart, J., 165.
 Stillwater, 433.
 Storm, J., 496.
 Storms, H., 227, 303.
 Storrs, Rev. L., 49.
 Stout, J., 142.
 Strang, A., 438.
 Strang, A. R., 437.
 Strang, D., 438.
 Strang, H., 450.
 Strang, M. L., 439.
 Strang family, 438.
 Strange, Theo. A., 241.
 Strang's tavern, 668.
 Stuart, G., 191.
 Sugar refinery, 106.
 Sugar machinery, 111.
 Sunnyside, 234.
 Swayne, J. B., 353.
 Swift, S., 137, 151.
 Symonds, H. G., 351.
- T.**
- Talmadge, Col., 222.
 Tappan Zee, 194.
 Tandy, Rev. P. W., 346.
 Tarryton, 565, 598.
 Tarry, J., 193.
 Tarrytown, 181, 192.
 Tarrytown, 194.
 Tarrytown Heights, 305.
 Taylor, A., 702.
 Taylor, A., Jr., 704.
 Taxes, 332, 671.
 Tedious Point, 147.
 Teed, C. G., 483.
 Telegraph, 149.
 Telegraph Co., District, 111.
 Telephone Co., Westchester, 110.
 Teller family, 366.
 Temperance, St. Teresa's Society, 301.
 Temperance Organizations, Yonkers, 140.
 Temperance Union—
 East Chester, 744.
 Peekskill, 412.
 Sing Sing, 348.
 Yonkers, 125.
 Terry, J. T., 243.
 Teutonia, 141.
 Thackeray, W. M., 130.
 Thayer, S. H., 307.
 Thomas, C. W., 184.
 Thomas, J., 257.
 Thomas, T., 713.
 Thomas family, 672.
 Thompson family, 762.
 Tilden, S. J., 229.
 Tinka, Rev. E., 64.
 Todd, Rev. J. A., 253.
 Todd, O. U., 485.
 Tompkins, J. B., 460.
 Tompkins, J. B., cut, 461.
 Tompkins, R., 484.
 Towndrow, T., 90.
 Townsend, S. O., 638.
 Townsend family, 637.
 Transportation, 117, 156.
 Travel, 147, 337, 362, 669.
 Tracy, Rev. M. T., 67.
 Trevor, J. B., 76, 78.
 Trinity Lake, 561.
 Tryon, C. V., 198.
 Tuckahoe, 722.
 Turner, A., 486.
 Turner, Rev. W. E., 271.
 Turn Verem, 111.
 Tyng, Rev. S. H., 190.
- U.**
- Ulman, Rev. A., 68.
 Underhill family, 139.
 Underhill House, 448.
 Underhill's Brewery, 106.
 Underhill, Rev. C. H., 256.
 Underhill, E. B., 458.
 Underhill, W. A., 421.
 United Friends, 411.
 United States Telegraph Company, 280.
 Unionville, 285, 316.
 Upham, G. B., 163.
 Upham, W. R., 163.
- V.**
- Vail, John, 118.
 Vail, Jonathan, 117, 118.
 Valentine, Q. S., 89.
 Van Cortlandt, 10.
 Van Cortlandt, C., 175.
 Van Cortlandt, R., 383, 430, 436.
 Van Cortlandt family, 123.
 Van Der Donck, A., 5.
 Van Der Donck, C., 6.
 Vanderbilt, E. R., 254.
 Van Pelt, R. W., 161.
 Van Tassel, C., 273.
 Van Tassel, K., 133, 189.
 Van Vleck, S. M., 352.
 Van Vranken, Rev. S. A., 69.
 Van Wart, J., 219, 272 (see Andre).
 Van Voorhees, Rev. S., 289.
 Van Wart, Rev. , 272, 314, 320.
 Veneer Mill, 104.
 Ventilator, 466.
 Verplanck's Point, 414.
 Vesper Rowing Association, 138.
 Vesper Yachting Association.
 Viewville Literary Association, 131.
 Vincent, 186.
 Vincent, H. M., 321.
- W.**
- Wallace, C., 505.
 War.
 Civil, 376, 462, 476, 554, 568, 619, 635, 717, 740.
 Indian, 673.
 Of 1812, 477, 567, 600, 619, 635.
 Revolutionary, 179, 277, 312, 357, 368, 430, 445, 542, 565, 598, 618, 635, 673, 713, 716, 736.
 Warburton Building, 146.
 Warburton Hall Association, 146.
 Ward, A., 349.
 Ward, M., 341.
 Ward's Tavern, 362.
 Wardle, T. R., 127.
 Waring, J. T., 94, 95.
 Waring, W. C., 94.
 Waring Factory, 95.
 Warburg School, 754.
 Washburn, J. B., 625.
 Washburn, S. F., 363.

- Washburn & Moore Co., 111.
 Washburn Building, 146.
 Washington, G., 181, 186, 278, 303, 304, 431,
 434, 677.
 Water closets, 111.
 Water-Works--
 Croton, 461.
 Irvington, 191.
 Peekskill, 168.
 Tarrytown, 261.
 Water-tower, 167.
 Watson, Rev. W. A., 349.
 Weequaskecks, 3, 5, 172, 185.
 Well, J. W., 310.
 Welt, W. H., 245.
 Welcher, Rev. M. P., 320.
 Wells, L., 15, 18.
 Wells, L. W., 23.
 Westbrook, Rev. C. D., 397.
 Westchester Gas Company, 109.
 Home for children, 320.
 Lodge, 746.
 Telephone Company, 110.
 West Patent, 613.
 White, E., 442, 448.
 White, S., 482.
 White Plains, 278, 659.
 Centennial, 279.
 Maps, 661.
 Whitefield, Rev. G., 394.
 Whitlock, A. B., 487.
 Williams, A. V., 143.
 Williams, E., 143.
 Williams, J. H., 143.
 Williams, J. E., 271.
 Willsea, A. O., 250.
 Wilson, W. W., 36.
 Wolfert's Roost, 232, 266 (see Irving, 288).
 Woodworth, W. W., 72.
 Wool Factory (Flemings), 109.
 Women's Christian Temperance Union--
 Peekskill, 412.
 Sing Sing, 348.
 Yonkers, 125.
 Young, 127.
 Women's Crusade, 125.
 Women, Library for, 133.
 Worden, 365.
 Worthington Chapel, 274, 275.
 Worthington, H. R., 275.
 Wright, C. J., 400.
 Wright, M., 482.
 Wyncoop, R., 124.

Y.

- Yacht Club, Yonkers, 138.
 Yorktown, 133, 156.
 Yorktown Station, 458.
 Young's House, 312.
 Young Men's Lyceum, 257.
 Yonkers, 1.
 Yonkers Church, 12.
 Young, T., 361.
 Young Men's Christian Association--
 Mt. Vernon, 744.
 Peekskill, 412.
 Yonkers, 127.
 Young Men's Library Association,
 Yonkers, 129.
 Young Women's Christian Temperance Union,
 Yonkers, 127.
 Young People's Literary Association,
 Yonkers, 131.



TYPE GOD
LITHOGRAPHED BY
AND BOUND BY

HAND BOUND BY
TALIN BOOKBINDERY
CAPE COD



